#1
白米良
shirakome ryo
illust.たかやKi
takayaki
ありふれた職業で
ARIFURETA SHOKUGYOU DE SEKAISAIKYOU
世界最強
OVERLAP

Arifureta Publication Commemoration SS

Publication Commemoration SS

Beloved people of Narou, good evening.

Recently, you know that I’m spending an increasingly good chuuni life.

This is Chuuni Suki, the one who have the privilege of posting「Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou」.

Now then, in this occasion, I have the privilege of reporting that「Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou」will be published by Overlap Bunko-sama.

It seems that there will be even a special site created at the official website of Overlap-sama.

The detail will be announced in the near future.

「Arifureta」will change shape to be on paper page, but please keep taking care of me from here on too.

I write a bit extra story for the commemoration of the book publication.

It’s a what-if story unrelated with the main story.

「Haa, haa, kuu, what persistence-. I should just obediently follow Hajime-san’s warning.」

Shia cursed while nimbly running with her beautiful faint bluish-white hair trailing behind her. Her usual innocent smile couldn’t be seen on her face, her own failure and the evil hand that was currently cornering her into this bitter situation caused her prided rabbit ears to busily twitching around in vigilance against the surrounding.

Shia was pushing her way through the narrow path among the buildings while nimbly evading the trash cans and plumbing like an acrobat. It was as though she was in the middle of a desperate escape……no, in fact Shia was really forced to escape no matter how hard to believe it was.

Shia who was categorized as inhuman person along with Hajime and others didn’t have any existence that could be a threat for her. Her ability was such that even made the magic cheat Yue to say「Your physical ability is bugged」. An existence that could force such Shia to escape……

「I, I found herrr! The rabbit-eared girl Shia-chaaaaan!」

「Hii!?」

A person carrying a backpack on his back, wearing a T-shirt with moe character design, blazing eye glint peeking from the gap of his long hair, with his hand carrying a tough camera——he was The Otaku.

Just before Shia could get out from the back alley, that otaku youth appeared from the back door of a building that opened roughly, which caused Shia to reflexively raise a pitiful shriek.

That was only natural. The reason was because Shia’s rabbit ears detected his presence to be at the other side of the building just a moment ago. Yet despite so, he appeared before her eyes right after she got distracted for a moment. It wouldn’t be that strange even if an absurd existence like this existed at the previous world, but that was impossible.

That was because this was earth, the home world of Hajime.

The otaku youth faced Shia whose face was shuddering. He readied his camera and suddenly he lowered his head in a snap.

「Pho, photo, please!!」

「I told you no already-!」

Shia reflexively retorted back. However, the otaku young man wasn’t discouraged at all. 「E, even so please-!」Even though he was stuttering, but he lowered his head even deeper with a force that strangely emitted a formidable will.

Seeing how she made no progress, Shia used the wall of the building to make a wall-kick jump and flew over the head of the otaku youth. She came out into a street somewhere.

Then, it seemed that the angry yell of Shia was heard, the fellows who were chasing after Shia until just now——the otaku group was gathering bustlingly.

「Ra, Rabbit ear-san, please, let me take a photo-!」

「One snap, just one snap is fine-」

「Ca, can I call you Shia-tan-」

「Tha, that gaze, please turn it over here!」

□Can I ask you, to pose? I, if possible please make gun shape with your fingers. Also, can you make the rabbit ear's shape to droop a bit more? Or rather, I, I have a uniform here, ca, can I ask you to change into it?□

In the blink of eye, otaku young men (middle-aged men included) and the curious onlookers who were wondering if there was some kind of event, were starting to form a crowd.

□Uu, just why this is happening desuu? Even though there are people wearing cat ear or dog ear, why is it only me…… thi, this is just like what Hajime-san said, □the neighborhood of Akiba is rough□desuu□

Shia's face contorted and about to cry. The surrounding was already packed with the warriors of Akiba, they were waiting impatiently for Shia's permission of photo opportunity.

Yes, the place where Shia was currently at, was Earth's Tokyo metropolis, right in the middle of Akibahara. If it was asked about why Shia who came to earth together with Hajime was now at Akibahara, it was because of a reason that wasn't particularly deep……

Putting that aside, Shia who was showing an interest to Akihabara was given a serious warning by Hajme. He said, if Shia entered the neighborhood of Akiba as she was, there would be a great commotion without a doubt.

'That was because Shia's rabbit ear was the real thing', that wasn't the only reason. Thinking normally, no matter how real it looked, surely there wouldn't be anyone thinking that it was actually real. But, in this occasion, it was irrelevant whether it was the real thing or not.

Her beautiful long hair with faint bluish white color that could be mistaken as moonlight, her beautiful face that

could make foreign idol to run away with tail between their legs, her perfect proportion that could put model to shame, her loveliness that came from her gentle atmosphere despite her beauty, which made anyone wanted to look at her forever. That kind of miraculous girl, was completed with twitching rabbit ears.

For the humans at Akiba, no, as long as someone was a man, it would be impossible for their heart to be not stolen!

That was why, Hajime firmly warned Shia to not go to Akiba by herself, and in the case she went anyway, Hajime handed her a disguise artifact to change her look.

Shia was thinking「This is exaggerated desuu」, even so she wore the artifact and in the end she went to Akiba by herself but……here she made a sorrowful miss. Everything at her surrounding was unusual, and her eyes were stolen by girls intentionally putting on animal ears by themselves, seeing that Shia carelessly took off her artifact.

When she did that, naturally Shia’s beauty and charm were exposed. And then, the otakus swarmed like hyenas.

If here the warriors of Akiba committed rudeness to Shia and tried to force her, Shia would send them flying mercilessly and then she would vanish right away.

However, as expected from them who was a gentleman despite being a warrior. They would lower their head and ask for permission without fail before taking their camera, even though they were passionately making request without reservation, but they didn’t bulldoze their way through.

Shia who had received warning from Hajime in the beginning, and what’s more she even committed mistake of

getting rid of her artifact, she became unable instead to act forceful toward the otaku group who was like that.

And so she attempted to escape from Akiba, but the warriors of Akiba weren't that soft. Just like how the craftsmen of Hairihi Kingdom chased after Hajime before, they were earnestly coming to beg at Shia using wondrous tracking skill, physical ability, and coordination between fellow warriors that made Shia couldn't help but making retort「Are you guys really normal human!?」. Their figures made it as though the OTAKU nesting in AKIBA was really a different race.

Shia was thinking, 「The station of Akiba is far away……」, like that.

「Fuu, it cannot be helped. I didn't really want to do preposterous thing in Hajime-san's world but……it's already too late for that like this.」

By the time the voice of「Please, let us take a picture」was starting to become a great chorus, Shia sighed deeply while starting to walk briskly. The crowd surrounding Shia in circle became noisy, but Shia walked straight ahead without minding that and came to a stop in front of a young man.

The young man was muttering「Eh, eh? M, me? By any chance, it's coming? My springtime is coming?」, but as expected Shia didn't pay that any attention and she firmly grabbed the shoulders of the young man.

The young man went beet red from having both his shoulders grabbed by a foreign super beautiful girl wearing rabbit ears that couldn't be compared even with the countless idols he had seen. The surrounding was getting noisier.

The young man was making an expression that was vaguely containing hope. However, Shia gifted him with words that were heartless, that could also be considered as reward for a part of peculiar kind of human.

「I’m sorry. Can I ask you to kneel for a bit?」

「Eh?」

「Can you kneel, for me?」

Shia smiled sweetly while putting on strength that was just barely the limit. The young man was befuddled for a moment, but for some reason his face got even redder, then he bent his knee while breathing roughly in excitement. It seemed that this young man was also “a part of peculiar kind of human”.

Shia put her foot on the shoulder of that young man. The young man gulped his saliva seeing the beautiful leg peeking out from the skirt. The surrounding people were also holding their breath, wondering if an abnormal play was really going to start in front of a crowd this big. Camera lenses were gleaming here and there.

But, the next moment, they were blinking in astonishment.

「Well then everyone, forgive me for making ruckus.」

Saying that, Shia put her weight on the foot stepping on the young man’s shoulder, and then the next moment she leaped high. The young man surprisingly didn’t feel the feedback that would normally come from getting used as footstool for jumping even though he was slightly lurching forward. He felt surprised while coming back to his senses and turned around quickly.

There, he saw the figure of Shia twirling through a rotation midair while making the head of a bald uncle at the back as the next footstool. Like that, Shia was making the warriors of Akiba as footstool while advancing rapidly through the crowd.

「I, I was used as footstool!?」

「Shi, Shia-tan's beautiful foot, o, on my head, haa haa」

「Ste, step on me toooo! Shia-tan's footsie, grind on meee!!」

「Rabbit ear going pyon pyon……it's the real thing. It's the real rabbit-eared GIRLLLLL!! I cannot hold it in-」

「Right now, I'm witnessing a miracle……」

The warriors were greatly stimulated by Shia hopping around overhead the crowd. Her rabbit ears twitching *pyoko pyoko*, her rabbit tail shaking left and right *furi furi*, and then the brutally prancing melons *barun barun* pushed them to the verge of madness.

Of course, Shia wasn't aiming for that by doing this. Originally it was something easy for her to break out of the crowd with a single jump. However, doing that was only possible for a true inhuman person. Using people as footholds and jumped around was barely still in the range that could be processed using common sense.

Ignoring the commotion from the warriors of Akiba, Shia landed firmly at the end with a great jump that was accompanied with a splendid midair somersault that would make gymnastic athlete to go blue, and then without pause she sprinted away like a fleeing rabbit. The warriors who went 'hah' in realization started to move all at once.

「This time for sure, I swear I will reach Akiba stationnn! Don’t look down at the rabbit that overcame even the apostle of god desu!」

Surely the god apostles too would cry in the shadow if they knew they were compared with Akiba warrior.

Like that, Shia dashed through the last alley, and she caught the sight of Akihabara station ahead, her mouth burst into a broad smile thinking that she would quickly return to Hajime and receive punishment, it was at that time,

A second tale that was completely involuntary for Shia was starting.

In the shape of a hole that was like a pitch dark black hole suddenly appeared right under the foot of Shia who was stepping forward.

「Eh?」

Losing the place where her foot could step, Shia lurched forward and she was falling toward the hole. However, this person was one of the inhuman monsterr~s. She instantly activated the Air Force that was instilled into her shoes and used that as foothold in her attempt to escape to the opposite side.

But,

「Wha-!? I’m sucked!?」

Yes, the expression of black hole fitted that hole perfectly. It captured Shia with a radical absorbing force that was hard to oppose, as though it was the Absolute Catastrophe that Yue was controlling.

「Kuh, Hajime-san-!」

Because of the completely unexpected surprise attack, and because her combat senses had been receding since she came to earth, Shia was unable to deal with the absorption and in the end she called at the name of her beloved lover while being swallowed into the abyss.

Silence returned at the alley where Shia vanished. There was already no sign remaining that Shia had been there, a breeze blew through the alley vainly.

◇◆◇◆◇◆◇◆◇◆◇◆

Shia felt a solid ground under her butt after a terrible sense of weightlessness. Light was overflowing her field of vision that she couldn’t see clearly. However, her excellent sensing ability to detect presence detected multiple presences surrounding her at the other side of the light.

「It seems I avoided an instant death but……this place smell strongly with troublesomeness.」

Shia was smiling bitterly while pouring magic power into the ruby encrusted ring on her left hand’s ring finger. At the same time she lifted her palm to the side and clenched it into fist. Wirr Drucken manifested with a superb timing and settled inside her grasp.

It was an unforeseen situation, but the profound weight of her partner caused a fearless smile to emerge on Shia’s face. No matter what happened, she had the confidence that she would smash through all of them and her resolve that she

would reunite with Hajime without fail was dwelling brightly inside her eyes as though it had been engraved there.

Like that, when Shia observed the situation while putting up her vigilance, the light was vanishing before long as though it was melting into the space.

‘Now then, what kind of bunches had done the idiotic action of kidnapping me’, ahead of Shia’s gaze that narrowed dangerously was,

「Oo, is it a success!?」

「As expected from the palace’s head magician-done.」

「Look at that beauty. It is as though she is the goddess of the moon.」

「No, more important than that, that thing growing at that person’s head……it could be, that she is a retainer of Spinea-sama.」

There were around twenty people who seemed to be soldiers wearing clothes like priest robe and armor. They were making noise of shock and happiness. Shia was looking around at the surrounding while keeping silent. A young man that looked slightly exhausted stepped forward to such Shia.

The young man was wearing a robe that was decorated with geometrical pattern of splendid ultramarine and silver, his hand was holding a cane that was created from tree that seemed to be a twisted evergreen oak, a jewel that looked like sapphire was attached on its tip. His vibrant silver long hair was tied at its root. He was wearing a small pince-nez glasses and his eyes of long slits gave an intellectual

impression. He was a dreadfully handsome man of intellectual type.

That kind of intellectual handsome man faced Shia and he opened his mouth, however, someone grabbed his shoulder from behind and stopped him from speaking.

"Wait Reed. Don't approach carelessly. That woman is holding a weapon. We don't know what she might do."

The one who was saying that while sending vigilant and suspicious gaze at Shia was another dreadfully handsome man. He had vibrant blonde hair and golden eyes. His sharp gaze resembled carnivore beast, and his body was obviously well-trained even through the light armor he was wearing. He was a man that gave an impression as though he was a wild lion.

"Ee~, is that so? I think she is a really cute young woman though? I want to approach her right away."

"Phil, just shut your mouth. I don't need to hear the opinion of a playboy."

"Even though you said that, But Erick is also thinking inside your heart 'Su~per cute', right? Besides, look, Greg who normally has no interest to girl is completely charmed there."

The one who spoke with frivolous tone was also a handsome man as expected. His appearance was slovenly with his chest greatly exposed and his hand playing around with his wavy deep green hair.

Furthermore, there was one more man whose body built was larger than the others, however, as expected he was also a

handsome man as though it had been arranged beforehand. This man with short black hair was focusing his gaze at Shia.

Looking at them, Shia who was considerably growing impatient opened her mouth while tapping Wirr Drucken on her shoulder.

「Excuse me, I don’t know what is your objective in kidnapping me, but if you are not hostile, then can you explain the situation already? I also want to go home quickly, so if possible I want you to teach me the method to go home without any antagonism.」

Hearing that, the blonde haired man who seemed to have a really haughty and prideful personality might be taking offense from Shia’s attitude, his eyes narrowed while he opened his mouth.

This time it was the silver haired gentle man who stopped the blond hair. He then made a gentle smile while speaking about their objective.

「My apologies. We are calling you here, is because we wish for you to save this world. My deepest apologies of our rudeness in doing this for our own convenience. But, please, I beg you to bring salvation to our world.」

Like that, the word that was the template, and in a sense was commonplace word was said decisively.

「——Hero-sama.」

After that, during the few months before Hajime was coming to pick her up, a great tale was unfolding, like splattering the monsters threatening the world, or splattering the fighting between countries, or splattering the handsome army that became the prisoner of Shia’s charm, or

splattering the demon king together with the handsome men who weren’t discouraged even with the splattering they experienced, or getting showered with marriage proposals as the hero that saved the world from the princes of many countries, dragon king, spirit king, etc., anyway they were all handsome men, or having Hajime who came to pick her up going *DOPAN-* at them, but……all those would be told at another chance someday.

The End

‘Thinking carefully, Shia is really made up with main character qualities huh’, I tried to write this from that kind of thinking. If you like, please try to have your imagination run wild with a tale of Shia shooing off handsome men in another world that is overflowing with them while playing an active role by grandly beating enemy to death.

Well then, please kindly treat well the published version too.

Table of Content

Manga Vol 1 SS

That Meeting, Was Fate

There isn’t a single sound. An overwhelming silence. Not even a single streak of light shined in. The darkness is crushing and choking.

Something like the sense of time has vanished since a long time ago. The will to live has also dispersed. The harbored hatred has melted into the darkness, not even the meaning of word despair could be recalled anymore. Even so, I’m unable to even turn mad. Because of my ability that I was proud of at the past, but right now I can only think of it as a curse.

Suddenly, I feel like I can hear something. Even though that shouldn’t be possible. This place is the bottom of hell. The place where the uncle I trusted and his retainers sealed me into. So that the monstrous me cannot creep out even in the unlikely chance. A seal was applied.

——Why, am I still alive, I wonder

It’s a question, with obvious answer. I’m alive merely because I cannot die. That’s all.

I understand. I understand, yet I thought about it on a whim sometimes. As though, ‘perhaps there is another answer?’, it’s like I’m clinging to something that cannot even be called as an inexistent hope.

How foolish. Even though both hope and despair doesn’t exist anymore inside me. ——*dopan-*

「-……a?」

It seems that the ear of I who see through my own self-torturing mind and try to sink my consciousness into the bottom of darkness, is catching an auditory hallucination. ——*dopan-, zuun-*——*dopan-*

That’s not just my……imagination? I open my closed eyes. Two voices echoed inside my heart. A cold voice that spit out ‘it’s just hallucination’, and a voice that say ‘could it be’ in expectation of something.

A streak of light, shined in. It come from the wall that is splitting vertically, as though cutting through the darkness.

It’s hallucination, finally I become crazy, don’t hold any hope-. While the cold me is yelling with voice that is somewhat colored with desperation, ——he appeared from inside the light. Wearing an expression of wariness, and suspiciousness, a one-armed white-haired boy.

Our eyes met. Even though there is quite a distance, for some reason I can see clearly. His eyes.

At that moment, my heart jumped. There is no reason. My heart that should be freezing since that day of betrayal, *dokun-* it displayed its existence, it produced heat like a smelter that is burning with flame.

My eyes cannot move away. I’m merely, continue to stare in earnest at him who appeared from inside the light……

「Sorry, I entered the wrong room.」

Saying that, he began to close the door. The salvation that won’t visit for the second time. The space that is closing bit by bit, that is starting to be ruled by darkness once more, the moment the last light vanished, it promised an everlasting darkness for me.

That’s why, I desperately recall the way to let out voice that I have forgotten completely while somehow moving my tongue that cannot move satisfactorily and yelled. 「Help me」I said.

「No way.」

An instant answer. The impact rivaled a direct hit from a magic of the highest class. I am already deathly desperate.

He is going away. I will be unable to meet him. This trivial meeting will vanish completely from his memory-, I don’t want that-. I don’t want that no matter what-. Rather than being imprisoned for eternity in this darkness, rather than going through the torture of being alive simply from being unable to die, I don’t want to lose sight of him more than anything-.

I desperately spun my words, when I notice the door opened once again, and he is in front of my eyes.

He is saying something, but throughout it all I’m captured by his eyes that are really close and cannot even reply properly. *dokun dokun* My heart reverberated. Hot blood is rushing through it as though coming back to life.

――I’m scolded by the irritated him.

After somehow suppressing the emotion that is too much even for me, I talked about myself. If I really want to be saved, then surely it will be better if I invent some kind of

made-up story. However, such thinking doesn’t emerge even just for a bit inside the me at that time. I merely told everything wishing for him to know about me.

Will he, abandon me? Will he yell at me, calling me monster? Will he fear, the undying vampire that won’t die as long as she still has magic power? Sure enough, he……

I, surely won’t, forget the sight at that time, for my whole life. Surely, in the whole world it’s the most striking, and powerful——crimson magic power. It undulate, spreading in ripples, shining brilliantly, bewitching me without any question.

When I’m finally liberated, and I speak the gratitude that is filled with my whole feeling, he——Hajime, for a moment is unable to speak with a complicated color emerging in his eyes, then he smile faintly. My heart is driven until it’s in the verge of bursting.

And then an even further pursuing attack. Hajime give me name. A new name that separate me from the past. It seems to mean the moon. He said that because he could see the moon shining in the night sky from when I was inside the darkness.

——Someone, please use healing magic on me. My automatic regeneration is nullified. My heart isss

I think it’s great that my expression stiffened. Because if not, my face will turn so slovenly without comparison.

When I am wearing Hajime’s clothes excitedly, he suddenly leaped toward me. Do-do-do-, don’t tell me-, he is pushing me down!? Someone-, someone-, use healing magic on my jumping heart-.

I am making a ruckus inside my heart, but right after that, I saw the monster leaping down from the ceiling and my head cooled right away. It is an outrageous monster. It is an opponent that really should be regarded as a desperate situation for the frail me and Hajime who most likely only has a talent as a transmutation master. It’s enough. That a monster like me is saved. That I am given a name. That I am smiled at. It’s enough already, so it’s fine even if I’m left behind. I stare at Hajime with that kind of feeling.

「Bring it on. ……If you think you can kill me then just try it.」

What returned is a fearless smile. A striking killing intent that cause the body to shiver reflexively. And then, with his back toward me protectively, an overwhelming will that displayed determination. While feeling a sensation that paralyzes my whole body, in this situation that should be a desperate one, inside my head suddenly, the usual question was coming to mind.

——Why, am I still alive, I wonder

Aa, I understand. Right now, I understand. I found the answer.

The time of more than several hundred years, is for the meeting in this bottom of hell. That is exactly the reason, that I stayed alive while being dead.

I don’t turn it into words. Because if I do so, it will instantly sound hackneyed.

That’s why, let’s yell it, inside the heart, obeying the welling up impulse.

This meeting——is fate.

Table of Content

Arifureta Manga Vol 2 SS & Afterword

Showing Up Right Away Huh!?

Three hundred years, that was how long the darkness of abyss was imprisoning me.

Tomorrow, I'll get out from here. Together with my beloved who I met miraculously.

When I'm watching the sleeping face of Hajime who is sleeping at my side, everything that has happened until now is coming out to the forefront of my mind slowly one by one. It was a dramatic time that passed by in the blink of eye, to the degree that as though it felt like a mere instant. It was a struggle for survival above thin ice, like a dance with the death god as the accompaniment partner.

Surely I won't forget for my whole life, of the battle against the scorpion look-alike that became our first cooperation activity.

Setting that aside——Hajime's blood was delicious. So much so that I went into la-la land.

The conversation that we were doing after that in front of the camp fire was also deeply memorable. Because, at that time, Hajime said to me. That he will bring me home to his homeland.

I was extremely happy from hearing those words. No words can describe what I felt then.

No matter how you look at it, it was an indirect marriage proposal from someone beloved. No doubt about it. If I say that there is no doubt then there really is no doubt. No objection is allowed. Even if for example it’s from Hajime himself.

Also, Hajime’s blood was delicious just as I thought. I don’t hear anything like Hajime’s scream.

The days of battle against the monsters that were increasing in threat level the deeper we advanced. I can remember everything clearly. Every time we descend into deeper level, every time we overcame a battle, it felt like the bond between me and Hajime was deepening.

Hajime is happy if I burn the enemy. Hajime will smile to me if I turn the enemy into pieces. Hajime will praise me if I carve apart the enemy.

Hajime! I’ll kill more and more enemy! I’ll split the earth, make the air explode, freeze every life, dye the world crimson with flame that will make everything return into dust! That’s why, pat my head a lot! Hug me tightly!

……Nn. I think, the me at that time was too worked up. How embarrassing. As expected, even Hajime seemed like hesitating toward my devotion, he told me act a bit more restrained.

Hajime is so kind. Even recalling it now make me want to push him——cough-. Make me want to hug him tightly.

Although, that one time was unacceptable. Certainly, for me to get manipulated by that disgusting plant monster, was

my great blunder. There is no excuse. In addition, although it was just for a tiny bit, it was a fact that I tasted the feeling of a tragic heroine. Really, I'm reflecting very much.

But still, even with all that, I think shooting unhesitatingly is still out. It made *jyoin-* sound. *Jyoinnn*, like that. The sound of the head skin getting scraped, sounded unexpected…….

I guess at that time, Hajime's thinking about me was still strongly reluctant in considering me as fellow comrade, then he use every word in his disposal to return my plummeting mood back to normal……the truth is I felt happy with Hajime acting like that that my mood recovered instantly, but that's a secret.

At any rate, I sucked Hajime's blood senseless after that. It was a flavor that can melt you.

There was also a lot of drama throughout the time until we reached this lowest level. Of course, it was a romance story of me and Hajime, where we overcame difficulty and our love of each other grew. If everything is turned into book, there is no doubt that it will be a huge story that take a hundred volume in total.

Blowing away everything with the power of love even while plainly falling into a pinch, doing 'chuu~ chuu~' at Hajime, destroying powerful enemies who were lining up one after another without letting even a single one escape, going 'muchuuuu' at Hajime, turning the trap of a cunning monster back to itself and telling it 'serves you right', pushing down Hajime and doing 'chuuu- chuuu- splat*, releasing flame and set ablaze the whole floor……everything is deeply memorable, let's turn them into book someday, yes, let's do that.

What really make my love story with Hajime to be worthy of publishing, is the hydra battle as expected. I think that scene is exactly the climax of the story. That monster, it was really something that has gone off the proper rail.

The foul play that is me, who can fire the highest class magic in no time, and the foul play that is Hajime's artifact, that can fire excessively powerful attack, regardless of the user and the situation. Even with those the victory is only barely reached.

Anyway, unforgivable liberator. I don't care whether it's a trial or something, but the sin of hurting Hajime is heavy. It's unfortunate that the liberator is already died and I cannot do anything to him.

If he is still alive, fuh, fufuh, fufufufufufufufufufufuh.

In any case, I was relieved from the bottom of my heart that Hajime recovered completely in Oscar's hideout. I was relieved, so I dug in deliciously.

If it was a story, then it was surely the happy end. The ending is of course, the mutual love of me and Hajime. However, it wasn't the plain bed scene you can find anywhere. It was in the hot spring, under the moonlight. Fufufuh, the level of the lovers around there compared with us, is just too different, like heaven and earth! Even when I'm recalling it right now, Hajime at that time was……kufuu!

In these two months, I believe that the bond between me and Hajime was deepened from the honeymoon in this hideout. It was a sweet, joyous days. As though, we are newly-wed. As though we are newly-wed! A world of just the two of us, without any nuisance! Actually, I was thinking a bit, that staying with only Hajime like this in the bottom of the abyss, without escaping or anything is also a possible

choice……rather, shutting in Hajime to be with me for eternity is……

Cough-. By no means, I’m thinking anything like that. Hajime want to go back to his homeland, so I will just support him with my all.

Although, I think that if we escape from here then the world of only the two of us will vanish, in its place a lot of encounters will be waiting. I think, that among those encounters, there will be absolutely, without even any doubt, the shitty bitch——nn-, woman who will aim to get Hajime.

The time of escape, will be the time of determination for me, so to speak. It will be time to step inside the battlefield.

No matter what time it would be, no matter what kind of existence the opponent would be, this vampire princess Yue, will take them on right from the front!

——The next day, right after the escape

□I fhound youuu! I finally fhound youuuu~~!□

Showing up right away huh!? I am the vampire princess Yue. A woman who won’t show mercy even against a regrettable-looking rabbit!

Afterword from Shirakome Ryou

This is the author who is in extreme bliss from being able to give speech once more in this place——

This is Shirakome Ryou.

Original development that is distinctive of manga version, and impact that is conveyed exactly because of the illustration…….

Even while the physique condition of RoGa-sensei whose work isn’t dropping in quality is getting shaky,

Every month, Shirakome is looking forward to the manga while grinning widely.

The publishing of the second volume is coming true like this is thanks to RoGa-sensei’s strenuous effort, the hard work of everyone in the editing department, and then, above all else all of you honored readers who purchased the first volume.

I’m wishing so that I can be allowed to give a speech once more in the next volume too.

Everyone! I beg you, please take care of “Arifureta” from here on too!!

Afterword from RoGa

The second volume managed to get published safely too. My apology and gratitude to the OVL editing department about all the trouble I gave them this time too.

My many thanks to Futada-man of composition help and Takeda-man who gave me help too.

Please take care of the third volume in the future too.

Next will Shia become active I wonder!?

This is RoGa.

Table of Content

Manga Vol 3 SS

Don’t Misunderstand Okay!? We Are Still Not Friend or Anything, You Get It!?

–

「……Fly away until the moon.」

Tonight a rabbit is also dancing in the sky at the same time with my declaration. Together with a scream.

I and Hajime who got out of Great Labyrinth Orcus encountered a happy-go-lucky and regrettable rabbit who is receiving wind blow from every direction at midair right now. A regrettable rabbit who escaped from the sea of trees, who got her family taken away by the empire, and who was told by her fellow race that if she returned to her homeland she would be executed.

It seems being born is a sin. It seems this girl’s wish to live is also a sin. Her encounter with Hajime saved her and her family but……what a situation to be put in.

Putting that aside,

「……Become a star.」

The rabbit who is sent flying for who know how many dozens of times already for tonight. Rabbit flying in the sky is beautiful……

「Sti, still not yeeet, hics-, fuee-. Next time for sureee-」

The rabbit who fell on the ground with *dosha-* sound is, right, it's strange to say this when it's me who did it but, she is in terrible state. She is wounded all over, she is smeared with mud, her face is also messed up from tear and snot. And so,

「……Become stain on the ground.」

'Hebua!?' Such bizarre scream is raised while the regrettable rabbit sunk into the ground. With today this is the fifth day of training. Without caring of afternoon or night, without even giving any time for rest, the regrettable rabbit is repeating getting sent flying or flattened on the ground forever. No matter how excellent her physical ability is, no matter how tough her body is, they can't help with her pain and wretchedness. I think her heart will reach the limit soon but……

「So, something like thiiis. Hics-, sniff-. Uuuh!!」

She doesn't break. As I thought, she doesn't break. Even though she is just a regrettable rabbit, this girl……doesn't break! No matter how regrettable her appearance become, the light won't extinguish from this girl's blue eyes. Even though she is crying, she is looking straight at me, she absolutely won't avert her gaze. Unconsciously……I thought, it's beautiful.

It's vexing so I freeze her. 「PYAAAAAH」 A strange scream is raised, but no mercy. Because I am Yue, a woman who goes all out full power even in venting anger!

Sixth day of training. The regrettable rabbit is starting to dodge the wind blows. I can see it from her gaze's movement. She is definitely dodging after confirming with sight. She isn't just charging blindly. This girl is growing. The firm will that is established for the sake of her wish is granting strength to this girl with unbelievable speed.

Seventh day of training. It seems she mastered the control of her strength. The sea of trees become a natural weapon warehouse for the regrettable rabbit. Large tree that will easily snap come flying as buckshot. The soil that is scooped up by impact come attacking as dust and pebbles. If it's just basic level magic, she can send them flying with only physical strength.

Is this regrettable rabbit a monster!? Hajimee! Hajime~! The forest rabbit won't go down! No matter how many times I send her flying, she won't stop! What should I do!?

Eighth day of training. Ora Ora Ora Oraa! Don't you dare underestimate a cheat level vampire princessss. Wait, ah, wait! Time out! Don't come! WAAAAAH.

Ninth day of training. Carelessness, isn't permitted anymore! If I let my guard down, that large tree will smash me. Getting smashed by the regrettable rabbit, that's too humiliating! Training? Who cares about that. O regrettable rabbit, die!

Tenth day of training. ……I lost. This me, this me who in the past was even lauded as one of the strongest in the world is, against a rabbit who was even completely unrelated with fighting until just ten days ago, defeated…….

I look at the rabbit who is going *pyon, pyon* around happily in front of me. Irritating. Unconsciously, I'm thinking to send the highest class of wide range magic flying and

make the rabbit return back to the forest from where she came from. Although…….

「Yue-san! Yue-san! With this I can journey together with you two! I'm looking forward to it!」

'Ehehe~' While laughing like that, this girl hug my arm tightly. Seeing her figure, somehow I'm feeling strange. Throughout the training it was also like that. Eyes that won't lose their radiance, the figure that will stand back up no matter how many times while crying. Each time I see it, a feeling that even I myself don't really understand, which feels itchy, which feels like I want to writhe, which feels greatly constricting, such feeling is welling up. That's why,

「……Fix yourself there.」

「He? Wait, Uwappuu!? It's cruel to suddenly pour water like that desuu! What grudge do you――」

「……Even though you are going to make the confession of your lifetime, what's with that appearance? I'll clean you up, so stay still.」

Shia is looking up at me in a daze with her mouth wide open. And then, the next moment, her expression breaks down flabbily. It's really obvious even without any word. Just from a glance, you can see she is unbearably happy.

I'm, feeling strange again. I focus on cleaning up Shia and cover up the feeling.

「Yue-san. I'll surely get turned down.」

「……Nn」

For a moment, I’m lost for words hearing Shia’s words. Even though, I should be able to reply ‘Naturally’ right away.

Even though Shia should be talking about an undesirable future for her, she is speaking with a really bright atmosphere.

「But, I’ll be able to come along in the journey. ……Yue-san, are you really okay with me coming together?」

This girl is……, even though she had overcome a hellish training with an unshakeable will, and yet getting weak-kneed at this point……what a regrettable rabbit.

While washing the hair with a lot of bubbles, when I noticed, I have naturally opened my mouth toward the rabbit who is gazing uneasily at me.

「……A woman won’t goes back on her words. I am, your ally. If I’m not okay with it……you absolutely wouldn’t win.」

Aah, that’s right. I’m convinced after hearing my own words. This girl’s growth, is certainly abnormal but, if I was serious then there is no doubt that I would be completely unharmed. This small wound, is the proof that this girl’s feeling reached. It’s the proof, of my recognition.

Looking at Shia, with that bubbly appearance, she is smiling with happy and joyful expression.

「Ehehe~. Yue-san, we are already friend, no, it’s not an exaggeration to call us best friend!」

「……It’s an exaggeration, so don’t get carried away, regrettable rabbit.」

‘Ee~’, the rabbit raised a voice that sounded dissatisfied, but happy. I wash her thoroughly a bit violently while repeatedly ruminating on the word “friend” that strangely resounded in my heart.

I have no power to see the future like this girl. But, somehow I thought.

Surely, the relationship with this girl will be a long one.

In the world that was filled with the two colors of Hajime and me, another coloring is born……that’s what I feel.

–

–

–

Author’s Afterword

Celebration! Manga volume 3 is on sale! Congratulations! Thank you very much!

This is the author, Chuuni Suki who now is Shirakome Ryou.

In this volume, Shia suddenly entered the stage for real but,

The Shia that RoGa-sensei drew is cute.

In addition, Yue’s expression also changed all over the place with Shia’s entrance, this is unbearably cute!

The impact that cannot be found in novel, that is unique to manga, it’s overflowing with comical and cuteness.

Shirakome himself has reread this many times over.

Anyway, my overwhelming gratitude to RoGa-sensei!

Above all else, everyone who picked up the volume! Really thank you very much!

Please give your best regards to Arifureta from here on too.

Shirakome Ryou

–

Mangaka’s Afterword

Volume 3 managed to be published safely.

My thanks to the people who cooperated with this.

It’s great how abundant Shia’s expression is.

Next is her breast.

Please give your best regards for the next volume too.

Who will stand out in the next volume I wonder!?

This is RoGa.

RoGa

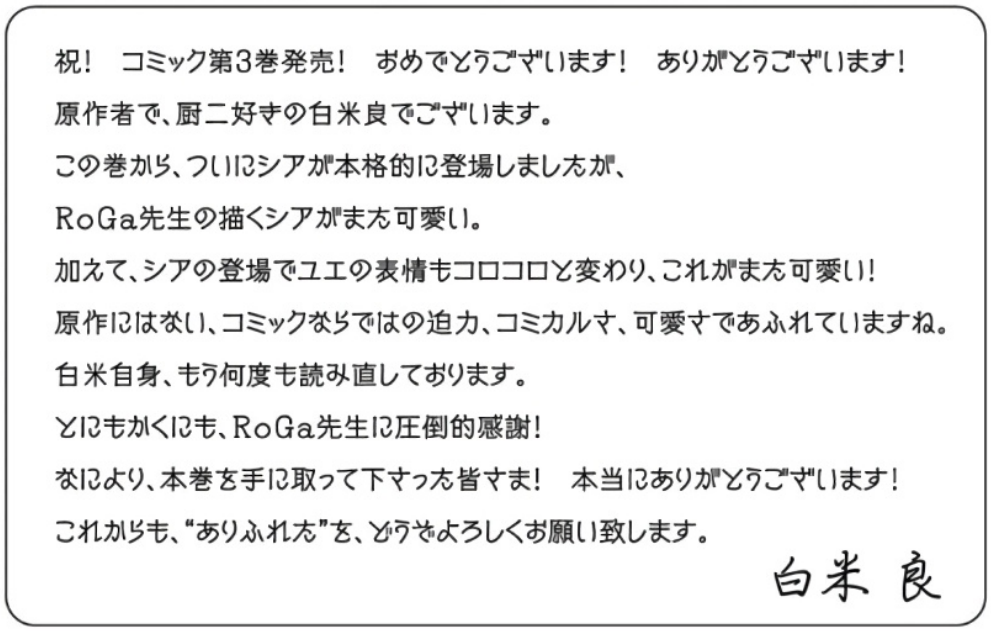

祝！　コミック第3巻発売！　おめでとうございます！　ありがとうございます！
原作者で、厨二好きの白米良でございます。
この巻から、ついにシアが本格的に登場しましたが、
RoGa先生の描くシアがまた可愛い。
加えて、シアの登場でユエの表情もコロコロと変わり、これがまた可愛い！
原作にはない、コミックならではの迫力、コミカルさ、可愛さであふれていますね。
白米自身、もう何度も読み直しております。
とにもかくにも、RoGa先生に圧倒的感謝！
なにより、本巻を手に取って下さった皆さま！　本当にありがとうございます！
これからも、“ありふれた”を、どうぞよろしくお願い致します。
白米 良

Table of Content

Manga Vol 4 SS

I, I Made……A Friend (□□д□□) Fidget Fidget

–

Pissed off……

I’m super pissed off……

That was the whole impression of me who challenged Great Labyrinth Raisen.

If I had to confess, I was a former queen, so I received super first rate education, so since I was born I had never using any words like □Pissed off□.

Someone like me was made to say □pissed off□. From the bottom of my heart I was made to say □Miledi seriously pissed me off□ with overflowing feeling.

Miledi Raisen……she really had done it now.

Very much so.

She was an outrageous person, in various meanings, no exaggeration.

Let me confessed one more thing.

When I who was curious just what was behind the annoying traps that were set up inside the great labyrinth and the

Miledy crest that was like the most annoying ever existed learned the answer.

Yes, when I faced Miledi Raisen herself at the deepest part of the great labyrinth.

When she received our challenge with a firm will.

I trembled.

I was completely overwhelmed. Not against the pressure that she released.

It was by her strength of will.

I thought it was impossible. I almost raised my voice spontaneously to say, that’s impossible.

Because don’t you agree?

To wait all this time. To keep believing until now like that.

On hope, on the future, on human’s strength, on the world changing, no matter how many months and years passed, to think that he wouldn’t give up even now-.

When did the Liberators died? Just how long she had continued to live, alone by herself, throwing away even her body? She was able to continue holding on her sense of self in this bottom of the earth? How in the world she was able to continue believing wholeheartedly, without wavering?

If I was asked if I didn’t feel any sympathy, I couldn’t deny it. The darkness of the abyss, the loneliness, the suffering that were imprisoning me continuously for three hundred years were surely similar with hers.

However, it couldn’t be compared. That was what I honestly thought.

After all even while I was sinking into the swamp of resignation and despair, she was continuing to wait all this time with the believe that someone would arrive in front of her.

That was truly a will of steel that even god wouldn’t be able to violate.

It was completely unbelievable that a mere human would be able to do something like that. It was far surpassing the domain of human.

I was in a deathly battle against her, but even during that I couldn’t help but harboring feeling of awe to her overwhelming strength of heart.

That must be why. I gave her my words when she was vanishing.

Driven by a strong impulse that felt like constricting myself, as though I was floating lightly in the air, an impulse that even I myself didn’t really understand, I wanted to say something, but I didn’t know what kind of word I should give her, and somehow the words that I found out from within was something trite like “Thank you for your hard work”……

Even so, she said 「Thank you」 to me……

Well, putting that aside.

I’ll crush you! You-you little-, damn Miledi-! You are pissing me offff! This bastarddd!

「Ah!? Wait a second blond girl! Yue-chan was it!? Stooop! This body is really delicate you knowww! Miledi-san will breakkkkkkkkkk-」

Who cares! I'll trample on you-, I'll grind on youuu!

I'll clear this vexation of being unable to be really useful for Hajime due to Raisen's traitttt! How dare you making a fool of meee! Ora ora oraaa, the humiliation I received isn't something this smallll! I am Yue! A woman who will give double the payback !

I'm also, a woman who won't hesitate to vent!

「Yue-san! Let's tear off this thing's clothes!」

「……Nn-. Nice idea. Leave behind, all of your possession.」

Like that, I paid back the grandly annoying liberator to my heart's content and became somewhat refreshed, but as expected from Miledi who would surely be the champion of the millennium by great margin if there was a world championship for annoyingness.

This littleee! At the end she flushed us out into toilet hole!

This humiliation! This resentment! It has to be cleared no matter whaatt!

Cough-. In any case, I mean to say that the Pissledy Raisen was an outrageous person.

And so, regarding the comforting rabbit though, right, I think, she really had done her best. Even though just a little while ago she was just a hopeless rabbit.

Just because she wished to be together with us, she was wailing tearfully while desperately clinging doggedly……

Even when she peed herself, even when the rabbit fur at the tip of her rabbit ear were plucked hard, even when her head was hit strongly with metal basin, even when mysterious milky white liquid was splashed on her face, even when she was dropped into a pit full of insect, even when she was rained down with metal basins……she was pitiable huh.

A, anyway! She really did her best to endur all the humiliation and insult and pain!

Such thing had to be recognized. The feeling of this girl who wished to be together with us.

Her wish to me of wanting to become comrade, a friend was also amazing for some reason. It gave me a ticklish feeling but——I'll recognize it.

That Shia Hauria was, a person who was worthy of trust, my friend.

With such feeling, after defeating the Pissledy Raisen. I hugged Shia tightly and patted her head consolingly but……

「Yue-saaa~~n」

……

……

What's this cute creature? She hugged me back clingingly, she was moved to tears while smiling happily, and her fluffy rabbit ears were rubbing on me fawningly.

I've to protect her! I've to protect this girl!

Cough-. I was feeling a bit disturbed but, anyway, I who recognized Shia made a vow.

——From here on, I won’t let anyone hurt this girl anymore.

Because this girl had been hurt enough. Her birth was rejected, she was chased away from her birthplace, her family taken away from her.

Even so she did her best, that was how this girl arrived at this place, the place where I and Hajime were at.

Then, I’d fight everything that tried to hurt this girl with my all.

I would protect her to the end by risking the whole body and spirit of the vampire princess who was once called as the strongest.

That’s why……that’s why!

So, something like a kiss, isn’t any problem you know?

Yue-san, was a friend but she was older after all? She was a big sister after all? The caliber of her heart, was large after all?

Even if it was one that felt a bit like deep kiss, it was fine you know?

It was fine, but……

.

Shia. What did you say about my breast?

.

Fufufu-. Yue-san had snapped after so long. She fully understood that her cute little sister needed disciplining.

Were you prepared? Had you finished praying? Was your preparation to go ‘blub blub’ in the bathtub okay?

Come, squeal like a pig.

And, due to those various things, I firmly punished my troubling little sister and friend who often got carried away while we were departing to a new journey once more.

Somehow, I had a premonition.

Surely, there would be another troubling encounter from now. And I thought that surely, the encounter would be with another woman again. My sharp instinct was whispering to me.

However, I wondered why. It wasn’t a bad feeling.

Before I even thought that it would be fine with only me and Hajime in this world, but after going out from the bottom of Abyss, perhaps even I was changing little by little.

In any case, I thought that it wouldn’t be a problem if that encounter was something good for Hajime.

After all if that was the case, then it should also be a good encounter for me at the same time.

Arifureta Afterword of Afterword

Afterword of Afterword

–

Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou 1

Author – Shirakome Ryou

At the time after about a week passed since the students of earth were summoned to another world Tortus.

At the training place of knights and soldiers in the Hairihi kingdom, there were the figures of the students making wondrous cane or accessories shined while activating magic, swinging around splendorous sword or spear with fairly experienced air.

The students were showing splendid skill like heroes that appeared in fairy tale in just about one week. Their vocation that bloomed by descending into this world and displayed matchless talent in its field, and the pointed support from the kingdom side, those factors were the reason why the students were growing with a speed like sponge absorbing water.

While those students were endeavoring in their training, there was the figure of a boy looking down while moaning ‘hm hm’ at the corner of the place.

□……Slow.□

The young man——Nagumo Hajime was whispering with a voice that could be heard as cursing or feeling exasperated. Before his eyes there were something like a thorn? growing up limply from the ground.

Hajime was hanging his head down while moaning wasn't because he was gasping from stomachache while desperately enduring from spurting out black history from his butt, nor because he was desperately repressing the chuuni soul that was sealed in the deepest part of his heart.

He was merely using his talent the "transmutation" skill desperately. He was repeatedly testing if he could somehow grow out thorn from the ground using transmutation to attaackk! like in a certain manga, otaku style, but the result was totally limp like jelly lump no matter how many times he tried it.

Although he was at a corner, but the visibility of the place was extremely well, so naturally such figure of Hajime entered the sight. Hiyama Daisuke and his gang who came to make fun of Hajime glanced at Hajime's result and then smirked obviously.

The other classmates too, they were also emitting unfriendly air, as though they were making fun of him somewhat, or looking down at him as an existence that wasn't worthy to be taken seriously, or perhaps deciding that Hajime wasn't even worth any interest.

But, at that time, something cold poked at the cheek of Hajime who was starting to concentrate once again……

□Uhyah□

Hajime reflexively jumped while raising a scream that sounded somewhat unbefitting for a man. A lovely chuckle

that sounded like a ringing bell reached Hajime’s ear. That clear voice didn’t sound malicious by any means, it sounded like someone who succeeded in their prank, or possibly an expression of happiness from seeing that rare reaction of Hajime.

「Shi, Shirasaki-san……don’t surprise me like that.」

「Fufu, I’m sorry, Nagumo-kun. For some reason it looked like you were really persevering at it, so I’m wondering that some rest might done you good. Here, it’s nicely cooled already.」

Ahead of the gaze of Hajime who was turning around, there was the figure of a girl——Shirasaki Kaori presenting him with a cold drink. It seemed she came bringing drink in consideration of Hajime who was straying off course into a training without any clear prospect.

Hajime smiled wryly while saying thanks and took the glass. Inside the glass was filled with a mysterious liquid that was rainbow colored with popping bubbles. Actually it was a carbonated drink with a taste that resembled apple, and it was Hajime’s favorite but……it seemed that Kaori-san had grasped Hajime’s preference before anyone knew it.

Hajime shivered a bit in a different meaning. Seeing such Hajime, Kaori said 「Oh no, you are catching cold there」 and quickly approached Hajime with her misunderstanding in full throttle. And then, as expected she was fully prepared, Kaori took out a towel from somewhere and began to faithfully wipe the little sweat Hajime was perspiring.

(Ple, please be conscious, of someone’s personal area, and also the TPO!) (TN: TPO = Time, Place, Occasion)

Hajime was letting out sweat further from the torture of the piercing gazes from the surrounding while taking distance away from Kaori slowly, but the more he was backing away, the more Kaori was advancing with light steps. And then, saying 「Waa, you are sweating a lot」, she was wiping and wiping even more.

Slowly, backing away. Step step, forward forward.

Sweat sweat, wipe wipe.

(No, no good. The eyes of Hiyama and others are looking murderous-. Ah, even the other boys are making their artifact shine-. Wai-, girls!? Isn't that the chanting for the combination magic you all just learned!?)

Hajime's state of mind was exactly like a mouse that was cornered by a cat. But, the cat-san that was really bothered by the mouse-kun that it couldn't be helped looked really worried from the bottom of her heart seeing the worsening color of mouse-san's face, that she approached closer even more insistently.

Hajime class changed from mouse into rabbit and began to seriously think to run away just like a panicky rabbit, but it was at that time that his savior finally arrived.

「Come on, Kaori. You should stop there. You are being too close. Nagumo-kun cannot rest if you are like that, see?」

「Ah, Shizuku-chan.」

It was Yaegashi Shizuku who was Kaori's stopper and also best friend. It seemed Shizuku was completely grasping the current situation, so she made a troubled smile from having to look after her best friend's rampage even while nonchalantly pulling Kaori away.

The temperature of the surrounding’s atmosphere was decreasing. It seemed that the voltage of the classmates was going up and down in comparison with the distance between Kaori and Hajime.

And then, Kaori who became a bit calmer similarly like the surrounding’s atmosphere blushed from how close she was with Hajime and she backed away with brisk steps. And then, she gazed at Hajime shyly with brief glances and upward stare. With an upward stare!

(Kuh, as expected from Shirasaki-san, what fighting strength-. Is she a monster-)

Using such impression that was painted with impoliteness and joke material, Hajime pretended to not notice his heart that was beating like an alarm bell while sending his gratitude toward Shizuku once more. Even though Shizuku shrugged her shoulders at that, but it seemed she saw through Hajime’s pretension and she didn’t bother to hide her amused air.

Shizuku pulled at Kaori’s hand while the corner of her mouth was twitching.

「The, then Kaori. You have finished giving the drink already, we should go back to our own training too, okay?」

「Wait, Shizuku-chan. I have something I want to ask from Nagumo-kun.」

「Something you want to ask? Come to think of it, you were really deep in talk with the maid just for asking about the drink that Nagumo-kun often asked for before this.」

While comprehending that the information source was actually from a maid, Hajime was getting a bad premonition

seeing Kaori who was looking at him with determination.

It seemed that his premonition was right on the money. The next moment, the words that Kaori fired showed how she was still in charge ahead maiden mode.

「Na, Nagumo-kun. You, you see…..Does Nagumo-kun like a girl who is wearing maid uniform I wonder!? I wonder!?」

「Just what are you saying so suddenly, Shirasaki-san!?」

Hajime was greatly shaken at this situation where he was publicly interrogated by a girl classmate about 「Do you like maid?」.The eyes of the girls changed as though they were looking at trash, as for the boys……several of them were averting their eyes.

「Because, Nagumo-kun. Your eys often chased after the maids in the palace……. Sometimes, when you looked at the casual act of the maids, you would nod with a face like a critic somewhere……」

「Stop-. More than this and it will be all over for me!! Shirasaki-san, you actually hate me right!? Isn't that right!?」

The life point of Hajime's heart was being shaved off greatly. But, it seemed that the word "mercy" didn't exist in the dictionary of the beautiful girl who was even praised as the two great goddess along with Shizuku in the school. Beside her, the best friend was looking at the sky with an expression that was mixed with resignation, saying 「This is no good, she is completely in charge ahead mode」. Kaori didn't even notice that and launched her second blow.

「And, and also. I think the work of the palace maids must not get obstructed. Nagumo-kun is also a boy, that's why

you mustn’t do anything even by mistake, that’s what I think.

Hey, Shirasaki-san. Do you notice? You said that my existence is a hindrance for the maids, you are saying cruel thing nonchalantly there you know? What’s more, you said that I might assault the maids……in my heart, right now Shirasaki-san’s words are stabbing all over and over you know?

That’s why, I reluctantly, yes, really reluctantly make this suggestion!

You aren’t listening to me at all aren’t you! Oi Yaegashi-san, your best friend is completely going wild here! Quickly stop……wait, what’s with that face that seem to say Man can only pray to the god!? Don’t give up! If you give up here, then it’s the end for me!

Shizuku made a transparent smile while starting to look at the sky far away. The figure of the pitiful boy was already not reflected in those eyes.

And then, while feeling uneasy, Hajime opened his mouth to stop Kaori somehow, but right after that, Kaori beat him to the punch by dropping the bomb.

So that Nagumo-kun won’t commit any mistake! And also for the sake of the maids too! I’ll wear maid uniform for you!

The tension of the classmates broke through the sky. Of course, to the direction of the negative.

Surely that was something that couldn’t be helped. Listening objectively, in order to protect the maids from Hajime’s sexually hungry gaze, Kaori would wear maid

uniform and exposed herself to Hajime’s gaze in the place of those girls……that was how it sounded like.

Hajime dashed away without glancing left or right like a rabbit on fire. In order to jump into the chest of the reliable older brother replacement of everyone――the captain of the kingdom’s knight order, Meld who was not present because of some business. ‘If it is that person, he should be able to protect me from my frenzied angry classmates!’ That was the lifeline that Hajime was holding on to.

Behind him, beside Kaori who was holding her blushing red cheeks with closed eyes while saying 「I, I said it!」, *dododododo* the berserkers were passing through with steps that were making tremor on the ground.

「……I’m sorry, Nagumo-kun. Forgive this powerless me.」

Shizuku’s powerless voice slipped into the breeze weakly and vanished.

After that, Kaori who noticed Hajime’s escape and the classmates’ misunderstanding chased after Hajime and others in panic in order to resolve the misunderstanding, what she found ahead was the sight of captain Meld who was being embraced by Hajime. She was swallowed by the vortex of misunderstanding, 「I have to bring back Nagumo-kun away from that path!」 and resolved to a completely unfounded direction, and for a while she directed vigilant gaze at captain Meld in every chance and continuously troubled him, such thing happened.

And then, among the palace maids, this and that about captain Meld and the incompetent boy were whispered……

「「Why it become like this……」」

The strongest knight of the kingdom and the weakest boy of the summoned group whispered with overlapping disheartened voice.

–

–

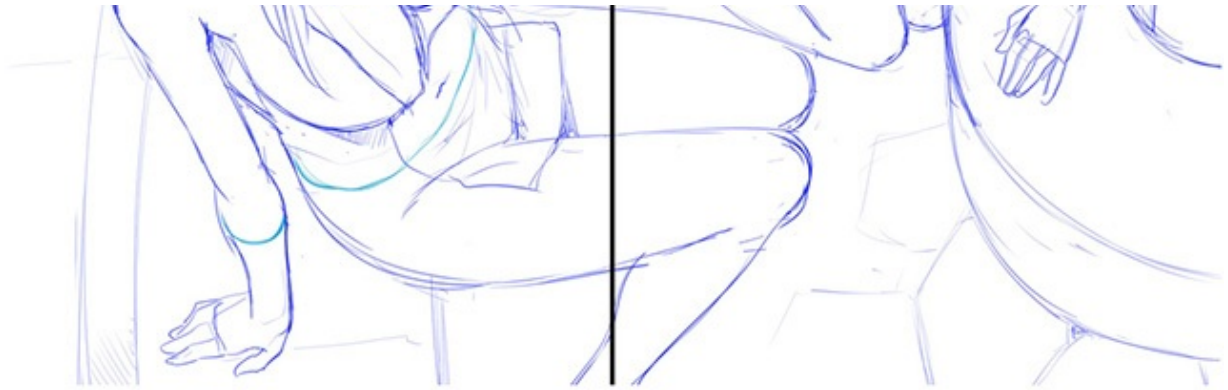
–

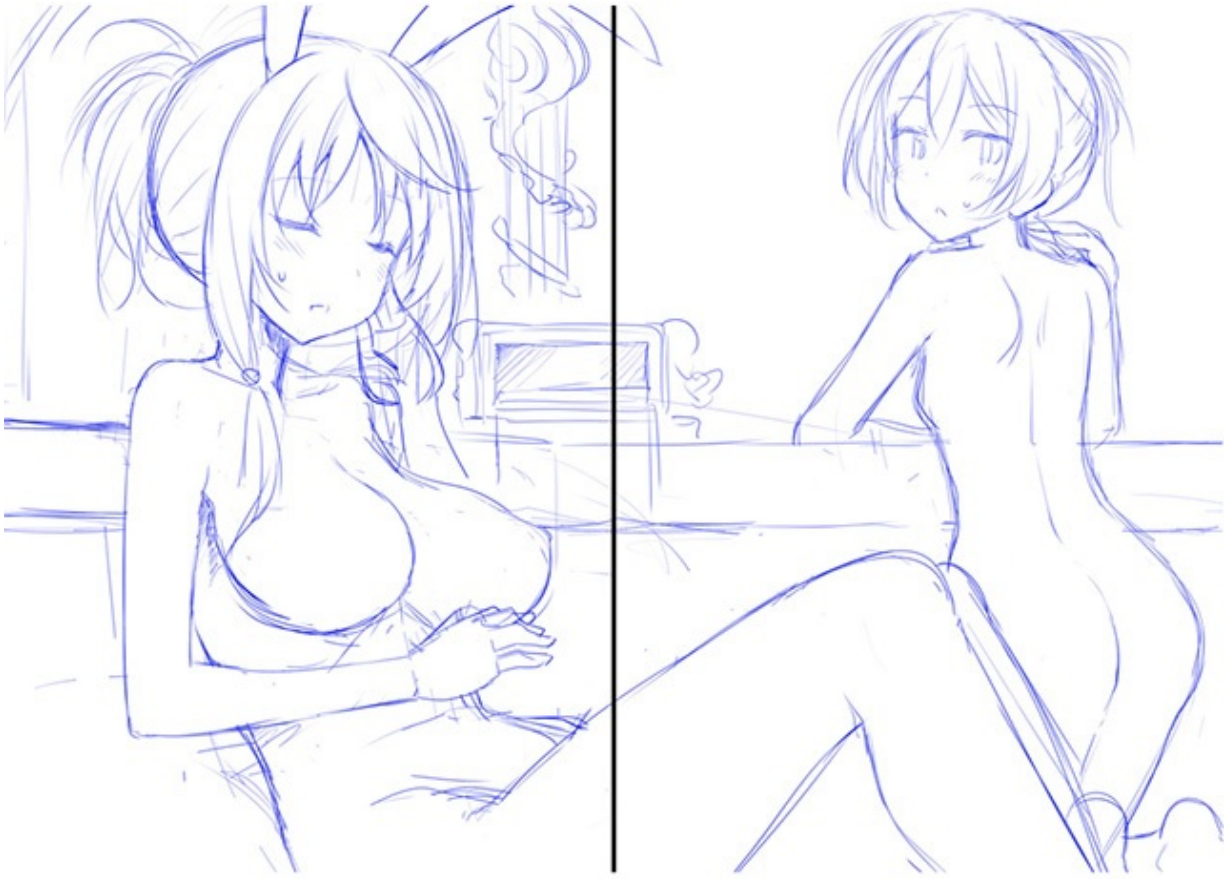
Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou 2

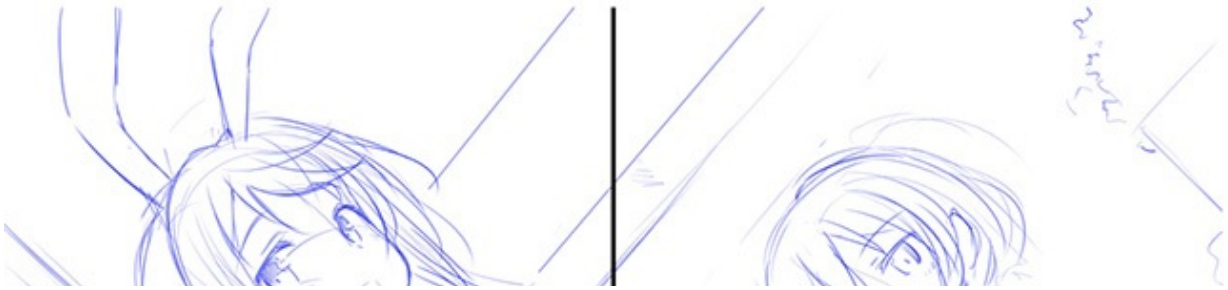
Author – Shirakome Ryou Illustrator – Takayaki

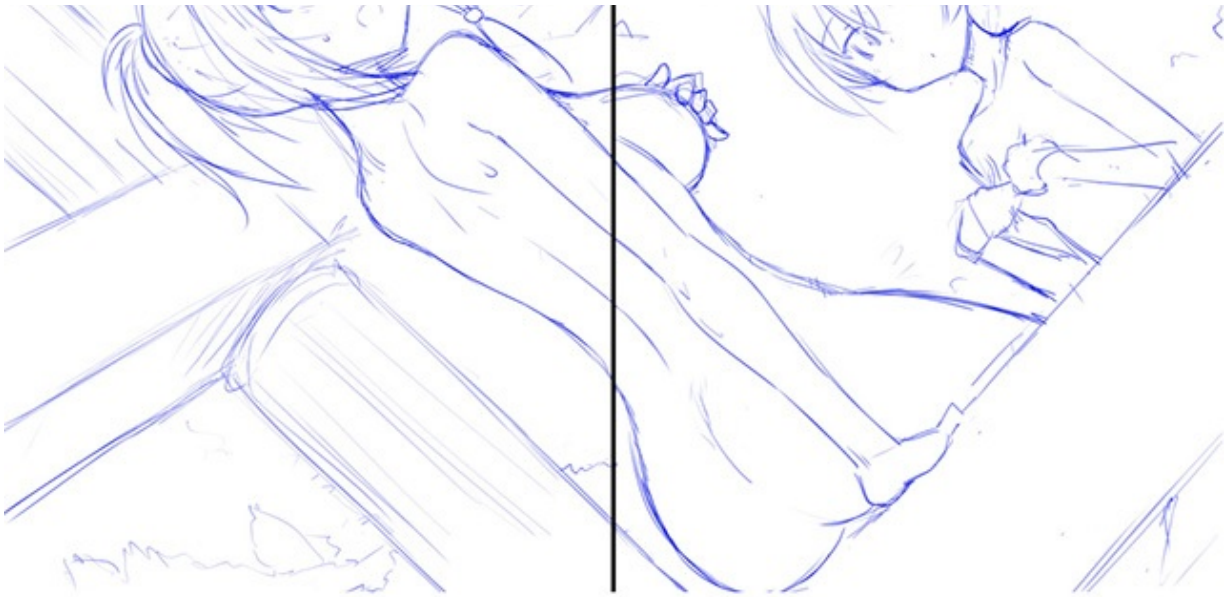
Afterword of afterword’s limited!

Great publication of volume 2’s rough illustration!









–

–

–

Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou　3

Author – Shirakome Ryou

When Shirakome write light novel, what came into mind first is the character.

Character come into mind, the scene I want to write come into mind, and then the story in order to reach that scene is fleshed out……something like that.

The characters that become the origin of such tale. Famous image character is needed for those characters. The impetus for my wild delusion is generally starting when Shirakome is reading some kind of work that cause Shirakome to grin by himself w

And so, I’m thinking to introduce for just a bit of the image characters that become the basis for Arifureta characters.

First, the main heroine Yue-san——the image character for her is the great sage-sama (loli version) of Genso○ somewhere. Seeing a certain work in Niconico douga, Shirakome went 「Uwaa, Yu○ri-san, totally cute」 and my delusion gave out such result.

Next, Shia. It doesn’t even need to be said. You all know right. Yes, she too is based on from a former military officer rabbit-san (however, the not insane version) from that Genso○ somewhere. What’s more, my delusion spread and before I realized a certain Mon○ji black rabbit-san was mixed.

For Kaori, it’s from the class representative-san of a certain tokimeku diary (only love), Shizuku is from a certain magical ○dex’s fallen angel maid-san (saint ponytail swordswoman-san), and Kouki is from the proto Saber-san of F○te.

And, for Tio who made her entrance at third volume……her image character is from world’s number 2 dragon god-sama of Hi○ School DxD. Yes, she is completely different isn’t she? She needed loli-ness, and taciturn-ness, and also pureness. For some reason I cannot just get into goth-loli……yosh, then, I’ll rather do everything in reverse! From such idea that kind of girl was born. Shirakome himself thought it the most, how did it become like this……like that.

Now then, this time there is also characters that I don’t introduce (like the main character), it will be for the next chance someday.

Please look after [Arifureta] from here on too.

–

–

–

Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou 4

Author – Shirakome Ryou

At the□Afterword of Afterword□ last volume, I introduced the image characters regarding the main characters.

What about the other characters!? If there are those who are holding expectation about that, I'm sorry. This time borrowing this place, I'm thinking to introduce the image models for the artifacts Hajime created.

For example, the arms that are representative of Hajime, the two large revolvers "Donner & Schlag", the model is from Constrictor and a certain black cat's ornamental gun, the revolver of tongari(pointed) gunner, and so on.

Doing air reload using two of those revolvers with slightly peculiar design while performing Gun Kata of the movie Equilibr○m……that will be absurdly awesome!! The result of Shirakome's chuuni soul feeling itchy like that gave birth to Donner & Schlag.

For the sniper cannon "Schlagen" and gatling cannon "Metzelei", there is no image model especially for them, but if I'm forced to say, Metzelei is from Black Ro○ Shooter I guess.

Rocket and missile launcher "Orkan" is from that thing of the big bro pastor from Tri○n. Puni○er-san is top ranked romance weapon even inside Shirakome.

For pile bunker, I imaged it from the thing that came out in nico douga's Azatho○ Diva(□□□□□○□□□□□). It's not exaggeration even if Shirakome said that this video series is already sacred video for me. The uploader-sama is god.

The four wheeled vehicle Breeze is from Hummer. The two wheeled Steiff is from around Goldwing F6C. The dearest wish of Shirakome that want to ride both of them someday leaked out.

And the last is Doryukken, this is from RWB○, as expected it's modeled from romance weapon that came out in Niconico. This video is heaped with romance weapons that made one writhed.

Now then, for the time being, this time let's end it until here. When the story is advancing and we come to this section once more, I'm thinking to be allowed to talk about the characters, or the romance weapons, or the behind the scene, and so on.

Well then everyone, please take care of [Arifureta] from here on too.

–

–

–

Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou 5

Author – Shirakome Ryou

I'm thinking to be allowed to talk about the behind the scene of Arifureta in the「Afterword of Afterword」of this volume too.

Honestly speaking, 「Arifureta」, was planned by me to end at volume 4——that is to say, at the scene where Hajime and Kaori's reunion was actualized was planned to be the end of the volume. It was planned to give the readers the feeling of 「Ooyah」 and ended the volume with the atmosphere of 「Our journey will start from here!」.

If asked for the reason, the big reason is because when Shirakome started writing [Arifureta], watching the Gunda○ Seed's episode of 「Descending Sword」, when the main character flew down from the sky and saved his comrades, the wild delusion 「What the hell is this, awesome!」 was overflowing out.

In other words, at the point when Hajime smashed the labyrinth ceiling and saved Kaori, I was in the state of 「Shirakome, is super satisfied☆」 you see.

If so then why, is the story became this long……

That is simply because many people in [Narou] were giving support, no other reason for it. In a sense, the one who gave birth to the story of the volume 5 and the rest of it were everyone, the readers of [Narou[, it's not an exaggeration even if I said that.

Because everyone is skilled in flattering, this stupid Shirakome got carried away and wrote a lot of after stories even after the conclusion of the main story. Rather, it feels like the after stories are the one that get better popularity……

Now then, I don't know how far I will continue writing [Arifureta], but so that the extra stories and the published version after revising become even more fun work, I'm investing all my experience point to delusion power and work hard, so please take care of this work from here on too.

–

–

–

Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou 6

Author – Shirakome Ryou

About the afterword of afterword this time, there is no behind the scene talk like before. If it’s the behind the scene about artifact or character, there is a tiny bit, but it feels like it will end with just a few lines, so I’m thinking to do it in the next chance.

And so, this time is a bit of short story. That guy that was blown up by Hajime in the fifth volume is actually alive, I got that kind of idea at the time. And then, actually it formed this kind of connection with that child that was left behind in Erisen……it’s that kind of story.

–

Myself is a clione. My name is——likely, none.

Myself have heard other organisms calling I things like ancient monster, or devil of the ocean, or repulsive eater, or ‘that guy won’t be killed no matter what you die, he is seriously super annoying’.

Possibly, those might be mine names.

Though myself think that the last one is too long……

Or rather, myself feel like that’s already just a badmouthing……

By the way, mine favorite is the “repulsive eater”. For some reason it sound cool.

Putting that aside, myself has nice sexy body that look transparent like jelly, possess shape like a clione, truly a beautiful and great being, but recently, there was something absurd that threatened the existence of such myself.

Myself met a demon.

That guy, is seriously bad news. Really bad news.

Even like this, myself has lived for a long time. Don’t mention about the race called “human”, myself has been living since the time when even the race called “monster” didn’t exist. However, even in that several thousands, tens of thousands of year of long life, myself had never seen that kind of brutish fiend!

After all, this demon tried to burn myself to death in our first meeting!

Even though myself only tried to eat him a bit!

What’s more, the demon tried to escape into the water, so myself hurriedly chased behind, but then——myself was exploded! What a deed!

Mine body shrunk really much, mine tension also decreased a lot.

It couldn’t be helped, myself filled my stomach and then myself thought to go out to the ocean to take a walk, but as though lying in ambush for myself to do that, that demon flew out from the bottom of the sea toward myself.

After that, it was already a competition of survival. Myself was desperate. Myself was also a tiny bit angry, myself won’t let him escape anymore! Thinking that myself even produced a tsunami.

Thinking back now, that was a mistake. If the demon wanted to escape, then it would be fine if myself let them get away. It would be great if myself didn’t get carried away thinking that it was just a bit more to gulp the demon down! like that.

But, even still. Although it’s certain that some fault lie in myself who got carried away, but still.

Black sticky liquid was splashed all over inside mine body and the demon burned me from inside, and in the end myself was exploded, myself think there is something wrong with that! Myself will get bad dream of death for several thousand years after that!

Normally, will anyone do something terrifying like that!? Furthermore that demon, seeing myself writhing in agony, the demon laughed! How terrifying! Since when the race called human became that much of a fiend!?

Fortunately, in a stroke of good luck a part of mine body the size of a fingertip remained safe, and myself got away just barely alive, but myself is completely traumatized.

Myself didn’t even have the strength to swim and promptly got washed away by the current, at the end myself encountered a kind hearted little girl……her name is, what was it……Nyuu? Muu? Yuu? Her name was something like that. If that little girl didn’t kindly look after I, surely mine mind would fall sick and myself would become fertilizer in the sea.

Human is scary. Human is bad news. That recognition of mine doesn’t change, and don’t even mentions eating human, myself absolutely won’t even approach them, but that kindly hearted little girl, myself has to return the favor someday.

If, there is time when that little girl have a need of I, myself will always be available to rush at her side.

Oh kindly hearted little girl of sea. Please, I wish that you won’t lose your kind heart till the end of time.

I wish you won’t grow to become like that kind of brutish fiend.

Myself pray from the bottom of mine heart for that little girl’s healthy growth!

……There is no way, that girl has any relation with that brutish fiend right?

–

–

–

Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou 7

Author – Shirakome Ryou

The ocean where the sunlight was pouring down glaringly.

Amidst the flow of calm wave and sea wind, the surface suddenly swelled up as though to break that calmness.

Splash- The sea water splashed up, next, 「Puhaah」 a young girl of seaman race rose up from inside the sea.

「Nmyuu~ nano~」

The girl narrowed her eyes pleasantly while her emerald green hair sparkled. It was obvious from that distinctive speaking habit, it was Myuu.

Myuu was relaxing for a while with her face up. She was having her fill of the coolness of the sea water and the warmth of the sunlight while drifting lazily on the sea surface, entrusting her body to the wave.

It was one of Myuu's hobby recently. It was an adult way of having fun for a little girl, normally she would often make merry with friends of the same age, but sometimes she would want to entrust her body to the sea like this very much, and immersed herself in her memory.

It was the memory of the thick and striking adventure despite its briefness. And then, the memory of the people important for her who were irreplaceable. Of her beloved papa.

It was unknown how long she was like that. Myuu who confirmed that the sun had reached the peak was,

「Nn~, it will be noon soon nano.」

She spoke to herself and turned her gaze to far away. A lot of buildings, piers, and then boats could be seen from between the undulating sea surface.

It was Myuu's hometown, the city on the sea, Erisen.

Myuu wanted to entrust her body to the sea's current like this for a bit more, but there was no way she could trouble Remia mama who should be preparing lunch for her, so she took a deep breath.

Hyururi She turned around with flowing body motion. Myuu dove into the water with the elegance that would cause even a first class swimmer to go pale.

The distance until the town was easily five hundred meter, but for Myuu who was of the seaman race that was the heaven sent child of the sea it was a strolling distance. She advanced within the water smoothly with only dolphin kick. Sometimes she would also roll *twirl twirl twirl* around.

If there was a diver from earth here, they would undoubtedly get emotionally moved from witness ing a beautiful mermaid girl.

Like that, Myuu was going home while enjoying the sea world at the same time, then she suddenly felt a gaze.

She looked around restlessly while swimming inside the sea.

There,

「Oops, looks like I became nuisance in your fun. Really sorry, Jou-chan (little miss). I thought I felt a familiar magic power here.」

An old man voice that sounded really thick resounded. When Myuu turned her gaze there——she found it. A human faced fish with old man face.

「Mo, monster nano!」

「O? You can use telepathy? You became even more similar——wait, calm down Jou-chan. I ain't planning to harm you. Look, I'm just an old man.」

The human faced fish swam smoothly with joking gesture. Myuu was about to escape in full speed at the appearance of

a monster, but she stopped seeing the fish’s movement and voice that were really like clown.

「You, can talk nano?」

「Yeah. I’m that kind of species. More importantly, Jou-chan yourself, it’s rare that you can use telepathy. That’s amazing.」

Myuu grinned proudly. She was happy as though her papa was praised.

「That’s right nano! Papa is amazing! This pendant allow Myuu to be able to talk with mama anytime nano. It’s so that no matter what happened to Myuu, this time Myuu will be able to tell it to mama right away.」

Saying that, Myuu showed the pendant with red jewel on it that was dangling from her neck. This was an artifact that her papa, Hajime presented to her when they parted from each other. It had the function of telepathy, barrier, alarm, and so on. Matching item was also given to Remia.

「A present from your father huh. However, this magic power……by the way, what is your papa’s name?」

「Nmyu? Papa is called Hajime nano!」

Hajime boy
「So you’re Ha-bou’s daughter! That bastard, he didn’t say anything that he got a child. Are you his child with Shia missy? No, the race is different……. Kukuh, looks like Ha-bou is a lecher huh.」

While Hajime wasn’t knowing, he got a label as harem bastard attached to him from a monster. Although that label wasn’t necessary mistaken, so nothing could be said.

Myuu guessed that this fish seemed to be an acquiantance of Hajime-papa. She threw away her wariness completley and after that, she enthusiastically talked about hajime with the human faced fish——Leeman.

Like that, Myuu suddenly recalled that she was in the middle going home. Knowing that, Leeman went 「Oops, is that so. My bad for stopping you here. However in any case, if you are Ha-bou's daughter than uncle too got to watch out for you. Myuu-jouchan. If you got any trouble, call for uncle any time. I'll lend you my strength.」

The human faced fish Leeman declared with manliness. Myuu smiled widely and said her thanks.

「Thank you nano! Lee-san!」

「Ou. Aah, also, if Ha-bou come to pick you up someday, tell him this for me. ——At the end pick a nee-san wife. But, don't accept her highness wife. Don't turn into hen-pecked husband okay.」 (TN: Nee-san wife = wife older than yourself, her highness wife = overbearing wife)

「???」

A lot of "?" were dancing above Myuu's head. But, before Leeman could convey to her the meaning of his words, a loud telepathic voice was transmitted like a quake.

「DEAARRRRRR-! How long you need just to go picking up lunch! This useless man!」

「Yo, you……why are you he——gueh」

Another human faced fish with demonic look was yelling angrily while throwing a weapon that was like sea weed vine, which caught the part around Leeman's gill.

「That’s because you didn’t return no matter how long I waited-. Come on, we’re going home right now! You’re always loitering around! I’m going to tie you up inside the house today! Play with your children for a bit!」

The human faced fish who seemed to be Leeman’s wife yelled such thing while dragging back her husband and vanished into the depth of sea. Leeman’s yell 「My regards for Ha-bouu~~~~~」 at the end felt like he was really used with this situation.

「My, Myuu don’t get it nano.」

Myuu muttered that and she stared at the bottom of the sea where Leeman and his wife vanished for a while. And then she returned to her senses with a ‘hah’ and this time she finally returned to her home.

After going home, Myuu tried asking Remia while eating lunch.

「Mama.」

「Whaaat, Myuu?」

「Is mama a nee-san wife nano?」

「……Err. I, I guess. If Hajime-san become Myuu’s papa, certainly mama can be called that. But, Myuu. Where did you hear those wo――」

「Then, is mama a her highness wife nano?」

「……M, my my, Myuu? Mama don’t under――」

「Will Mama put rope around papa’s neck and tie him up nano? And then make him play with Myuu like that nano?」

Clang Such sound rang out. It was the sound of Remia's fork getting dropped. Myuu tilted her head. In respond, Remia was,

「Myuu? Will you talk with mama for a bit, about who taught you those words? Mama has to have a "TALK" with that person.」

「Ma, mama?」

'My my, ufufu. There is a troubling person out there isn't it?' Remia questioned Myuu with a laugh that didn't reach her eyes at all. Frankly, she looked absurdly scary.

'I see, so this is what Nee-san wife, and her highness wife means nano……'

Myuu was trembling slightly while remembering the new words. But, if possible, she wished that her mama's relationship with papa would be a bit more peaceful, not like the Leeman couple nano……was what she thought.

–

–

–

Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou Zero 1

Author – Shirakome Ryou

Great country of technology, Welka Kingdom. Its capital, Welnika.

A weeping voice 'hics hics' bawling sadly was resounding inside a restaurant located in the corner of the capital's downtown.

The time was before noon.

If it was a restaurant in downtown, it was time where the place would be bustling with customer. In fact, adventurers and workers from nearby who were regular customers had also started to gather in this restaurant too.

Normally, the poster girl of the restaurant would be calling out to them energetically and approached them to take their order but……

「Hics hics, uu, sniff. Oscar-san, why did you go leaving me behind……」

‘That’s because, you ain’t his lover or anything.’ The tsukkomi from the adventurers were naturally said only inside their heart because they feared poking the bush where snake was hiding.

‘More importantly can you take our order quickly?’, they tried filling their gaze with such earnest feeling, but the poster girl of this restaurant who was sobbing listlessly right now naturally wouldn’t give notice to them.

「He, hey Ayesha–chan. We are also shocked that Oscar-san left the capital but……look, he was together with that kind of cute girl.」

「As I thought! Oscar-san told me that it’s for work though! But he was actually eloping with that girl called Miledy something!」

The poster girl——Ayesha-chan hit the table *DAN-*. The regular female customers who tried to console her (the group who was aiming for Oscar just like Ayesha) became shaken and said 「Eh!? Eloping!? No one said that!」.

And then, after Ayesha-chan kept going *DAN DAN DAN-* because thing didn’t work out like she wanted and the table became lightly cracked, she collapsed once more on the table and began to cry ‘Waaa-‘.

‘What to do about this…..’ The regular customers looked at each other with that kind of air.

There, the restaurant owner who was also the cook, Ayesha’s father Sergey showed his face from the kitchen.

「Oi, Ayesha. How long you’re going to bawl like that huh? The customers are waiting.」

He didn’t give a damn at his daughter’s broken heart. Sergey told her mercilessly to work right away. Ayesha raised her head in a flash in response to that and,

「Otou-san you idiot! This is why Okaa-san ran away from you!」

「She isn’t running away! Father-in-law’s condition is bad so she went home for a bit, that’s all! Ayesha also knows that right!?」

「That’s just the excuse! Surely Otou-san who doesn’t understand woman’s heart cause Okaa-san to give up on you! The final blow is when Otou-san forgot the wedding anniversary day before this! That’s how it is!」

「Sto, stop it Ayesha. ……She never contact at all even though one month passed already but……that’s a joke right? Isn’t that right?」

The owner Sergey went pale and looked shaken. Ayesha’s broken heart problem turned into the danger of her parents’ divorce unnoticed.

The regular customers looked really interested! 「Come to think of it, recently I didn’t see auntie『』To forget the wedding anniversary……this is why man is just…uugh. Aa~ah, the countdown until their divorce is already ticking」 etc, etc. Their mouths were whispering at each other without hiding it. The popular restaurant in downtown was turned into chaos before noon.

Although, the customers also weren’t people with free time. The adventurer duo that was previously called out by Oscar and Miledy——Vivitri and Hetarei smiled wryly while addressing the father and daughter.

「Now now Ayesha-chan. Don’t vent it at your father. Besides, Oscar and Miledy-chan’s relationship is not like what you are thinking you know?」

「Right right. Also, the guys at downtown rushed at Orcus Workshop asking if Oscar got excommunicated, but seems like the boss himself denied it clearly.」

Even while being dejected, Ayesha-chan reacted to the words of the two.

「Bu, but, when I asked Oscar-san when he would be back, he didn’t answer me clearly you know? In other words that mean, he won’t return anymore to the capital……」

Vivitri and Hetarei wry smile deepened while they shrugged in response.

「That’s not guaranteed yet. Even that guy must have a circumstance he cannot tell other people.」

「……Oscar-san’s circumstance……」

「Besides, Ayesha-chan. Until now you used us adventurer to gather information about Oscar, if you are also concerned this time, you can just make a request to search for Oscar's movement, ain't that right?」

Aisha's big and round eyes widened even bigger.

「That's right. A circumstance, Oscar-san must have some kind of big circumstance! An outrageous circumstance that he cannot tell other!」

「O, oi, Ayesha-chan?」

「Wa, wait, calm down.」

Even the words from Vivitri and Hetarei didn't reach the ears of Ayesha-chan who got a fire lit inside her.

「Oscar-san, surely he didn't say anything so that he wouldn't get me dragged into it. However, he is actually really troubled, worrying about it by himself, and he is looking for someone to help him!」

The regular customers started holding their head saying 「Aa~, Ayesha-chan's wild delusion habit is running wild~」 at their wits' end.

But, Ayesha-chan didn't stop. Nothing entered her sight anymore! She was heating up in such state.

「But surely, Oscar-san won't say help me or anything. Because, that person is kind after all! I understand, Oscar-san. I, Ayesha is the only one who understand you! You are actually looking for your beloved spouse to lean on amidst your loneliness and worry!」

It seemed it became that Oscar was searching for wife before anyone knew it.

The restaurant’s poster girl clasped both her hands in front of her chest and immersed herself into her own world with a praying pose. If there was a spotlight that was directed to her, she would surely be able to job change into stage actress even now.

Inside the restaurant that became 「Uwaa」 in various senses, Ayesha-chan twirled and looked straight at Sergey. And then, she declared.

「Otou-san! You have taken care of me until now! But today, Ayesha will leave the house!」

「Just what are you saying!?」

「Don’t stop me! Everything is for the sake of love!」

Ayesha swiftly ignored Sergey’s question and this time she went toward the adventurer duo with her frilly apron flapping in the air.

「I have request for you two! Please become my guard while I’m searching for Oscar-san!」

「「Haa!?」」

Surely they never even imagined that their remark would send the talk flying until this point. Vivitri and Hetarei’s eyes snapped open wide.

But, Ayesha-chan who was carried away in her mood didn’t stop! She currently had job changed from a scheming maiden to a maiden that would charge forward!

「If it’s the request fee don’t worry! I thought that something like this would happen, so I have a lot of secret saving I saved from the restaurant’s sale that I pilfered!」

「Ayesha. Just now, Otou-san think that he heard something he cannot ignore though……」

Ayesha didn’t give a damn at Sergey whose expression turned serious. Seeing Vivitri and Hetarei who didn’t respond immediately, light vanished from Ayesha-chan’s eyes. And then, she whispered in low voice into the ear of the two with those cold eyes. Then,

「We will accompany you no matter how far yeah, Nee-san!」

「Leave it to us to guard you, boss!」

The two who were drenched in sweat returned a salute in straight and stiff stance. Their gazes were fiercely darting around, and their expressions were grandly twitching, but Ayesha-chan smiled brightly 「Thank god! Thank you very much!」 in return.

It was a scene that invited terror very much.

「Then Otou-san! Be well!」

「Ah, hey, Ayesha! Wait!」

Ayesha-chan rushed out from the restaurant energetically. After that, Vivitri and Hetarei followed behind with their shoulders dropped in dejection.

Sergey was chasing further behind them, but Ayesha-chan’s legs were fast. The distance was opened in the blink of eye, heading toward the sun that was shining brilliantly.

Oscar-san! Please wait for me! Right now, your Ayesha is coming!

She yelled.

After that, whether Ayesha and her two companions could be reunited with Oscar or not.....

It would be told in another chance.

Table of Content

Arifureta Chapter 180

Arifureta After – Morning at the Nagumo House Part 1

AN: Thank you very much for a lot of the review about the completion.

From here on too, I, Shirakome, will enjoy myself while discharging wild ideas bit by bit, and it will make me happy if you readers can keep accompanying me.

「……Wake up. Wake up, Hajime.」

His dozing off awareness was led to awakening by a soft voice and a gentle shake. Because of the brightness that could be seen through the back of his eyelids, he could tell that the curtains had been opened. It was morning, and the sun was insisting on its presence.

「……Don't mind me. Go on, ahead.」(TN: Here, Hajime is using a line like a hero who will stay behind so that others can escape safely)

「……It's no good using a clichéd line like that. Breakfast will get cold. So wake up.」

He tucked himself into the bed like a bagworm and tried to take a journey into the dream world. This man who was trying to journey to the dream world, with a voice that seemed as if it was going to disappear at any moment, was the eldest son of the household——Nagumo Hajime. And the one who was making a troubled smile to such a Hajime, even while urging him gently to get out of the bed, was Hajime's beloved vampire princess that came from another world——Yue.

Yue sat down beside the bed and gently stroked the *black hair* of Hajime who was curling into himself. Her slender fingertips caressed Hajime's hair, combing them down. Her eyes squinted affectionately as she quietly brought her lips towards Hajime's ear.

A small *chuu* sound resounded and Hajime twitched in reaction. Perhaps enjoying that reaction of Hajime's, Yue's look was increasingly bursting open in happiness. Next, she placed Hajime's earlobe into her mouth. Hajime once more twitched in reaction. Yue kept playfully nibbling, while Hajime kept twitching due to such an act.

Yue separated her lips from Hajime's ear with a *chupa* sound before she opened her mouth while blowing a feverish sigh into Hajime's ear.

「……If you don't wake up……Hajime will be the breakfast.」

「I'll wake up.」

It was a lovely speech, but there were his parents downstairs, and other than them there were also the freeloaders and his daughter. Making a ruckus complete with moaning sounds 「aah-」 early in the morning would be problematic in various meanings. The neighbors would be guaranteed to look at him later with grinning expressions

saying 「oh my」. Therefore, Hajime pushed aside the futon with a snap and woke up.

「Good morning, Yue.」

「……Nn. Good morning.」

Hajime's hair that was curling up here and there was fixed attentively by Yue using her hand as a comb. Since the morning the atmosphere of the two was already teeming with mushiness. It even felt like the morning sunlight that was brightly shining in through the window was growing dim in reservation from these two's lack in prudence.

Hajime who was exposing a dazed waking up face, which was unthinkable if it was in the period when he was journeying through the other world, Tortus, was narrowing his eyes toward his lover that was caressing his head in front of him. While he was at it he was also running his gaze through the surroundings relaxedly.

Inside the room, seventy percent of it was buried in bookshelves filled with books and games. There was also a desk and a reclining chair, a good quality desktop PC, and a closet between the bookshelves. A window was attached to the wall that was facing south, and navy-blue curtains, the same color as the bed, were hanging over it.

(…..I'm still feeling that this room is 'nostalgic'. It must be because the experience on the other side was too strong. If I still feel like this even after going home for a year, then it might take a half year more to be able to live without feeling that anything is out of place.)

Hajime sighed a bit inside his heart. And then, he clenched his left hand repeatedly as though to ascertain it. That arm didn't shine with a dull metallic gleam, *its appearance* was

that of a normal human arm. It had elastic skin and slight marks of suntan similar to his right arm.

Furthermore, Hajime also gently traced his right eye with his fingertip. There, he didn’t feel the sensation of an eye patch that was in the process of becoming his trademark in Tortus. Far from that, there wasn’t even the bluish white shine that was the trait of a god crystal. The eye’s appearance was a dark brown eye that looked like the eye of a normal Japanese person.

「……Nn? Hajime, what’s wrong? It feels uncomfortable?」

Yue noticed Hajime’s state. She then brought her face closer until their nose tips almost touched while tilting her head. The sweet fragrance that tickled Hajime’s nasal cavity slightly bewitched him while he shook his head.

「No, there is no discomfort in both my arm and my eye. Thanks to Yue and the others’ cooperation, the artificial skin and the artificial eyes are all in extremely excellent condition. No one would notice them as long as they don’t get scanned in detail at a hospital. If I have to say, perhaps I’m feeling discomfort from this situation where there is no discomfort.」

「……? Hajime feels discomfort from the appearance of your body?」

「Yeah. After all, the experience over there was just too dense. The metallic arm, the crystal eye, and also the white hair, all those were already *me*. That’s why, rather than calling this appearance ‘going back to normal’, it feels like I changed again. Well, it’s going to be really bad if that kind of unknown automail and strange crystal eye got discovered on this modern earth, so that can’t be helped.」

While smiling wryly, Hajime tapped on his left hand using his right hand. The artificial skin that used metamorphosis magic had reproduced a splendid skin texture, making the one touching it unable to sense the existence of the metallic artificial arm hidden beneath it.

The one who accomplished this was Tio. The technique of Tio’s, that was the only expert in metamorphosis magic among his comrades, aided by Hajime and Yue’s help, remade the artificial hand smartly and disguised it as a normal arm in an outward appearance and texture.

Also, Hajime’s artificial eye was something that was remade using creation magic while his hair color was due to Kaori’s regeneration magic returning the hair color to what it was before.

Of course, for Kaori whose hand had reached the territory of time intervention, if she used regeneration magic seriously then it was possible she could even restore Hajime’s altered body to a normal human body. Whether it was his lost limb or his change due to eating monsters, all of those could be reverted if Kaori just returned Hajime’s body back to its previous state.

But Hajime didn’t wish for that. Actually, by returning back to earth, things like a tough body were unneeded. But for some reason, it felt like turning his body back to how it was before would be like making light of his journey in that other world. And above all else, he couldn’t be growing senile first and leave behind Yue who would be living for a long time.

In the end, possessing a monster class body, where it wasn’t even definite that it had a lifespan, was in agreement with Hajime’s own wish. By the way, if they were using Yue’s secret technique of apostle creation, then the problem of

lifespan could be resolved to a certain degree even if they were using their original normal bodies, so Kaori and the others also didn’t view this matter as a problem.

「……Nn. Personally, there is no problem for me because I can enjoy various Hajimes. Rather I feel happy.」

Yue said that and gave kisses in turn at Hajime’s left shoulder, right eye, and his head. Every single action of Yue’s was overflowing with affection.

On that day, after they had established the method of going home, since that day when Yue was proposed to under the great tree of [Haltina Sea of Trees], Yue’s expression of love had increasingly become polished. She had never been seen without the ring that was fitted on the ring finger of her left hand, and when Yue saw the matching ring that was fitted on Hajime’s left ring finger, an aura of happiness would be scattered in full from her.

「Speaking of that, what about Yue? Have you gotten used to the world over here?」

「……Nn. There are still a lot of things that I don’t know, that I am not familiar with. This is really, a different world. There are a lot of unbelievable things……. But, it’s fun. Every day is fun, like opening a jack-in-the-box.」

「I see.」

「……Nn. Besides, I will be happy anywhere if that is a place where Hajime is. Mother-in-law and father-in-law are also really kind. They treasured me like their real daughter, it feels really happy. Everywhere in Hajime’s world, is filled with happiness.」

「I, I see……somehow, it feels hot even though it’s morning huh.」

The gaze of Hajime who ate a straight punch of love was wandering around. Yue who understood that Hajime was being shy chuckled 「Nfufu」while snuggling him like a cat. Hajime’s hand was subconsciously moving and gently caressing Yue’s fluffy hair.

An atmosphere that was overflowing with sugar content was running rampant since the morning. Yue quivered her long eyelashes while quietly closing her eyelids, her faint pink lips were pushing out to Hajime. Hajime easily surrendered seeing that obviously coaxing pose. His face was approaching near……

「Geez~, Yue-oneechan! Is Papa still not awake nano!?」

The one who opened the door of the room loudly with a bang while entering with a huff was a five-year-old girl who puffed up her flat chest. She was Hajime’s daughter Myuu. However, now her emerald green hair became emerald blond, while her fan-shaped ears, that were the trait of the merman race, had changed into small and cute human ears.

The cause of the change was the illusion that was created by the ring artifact hanging down from Myuu’s neck. The artifact was something excellent that could surprisingly reproduce even the touching sensation; so even if Myuu’s ears were touched, the person touching wouldn’t feel the texture of a fin, but the sensation of a human ear instead. And so, Myuu’s appearance was completely that of a beautiful little girl with blond hair.

The moment that Myuu energetically entered the room, she pointed her finger at the clichéd childhood friend morning

scene which entered her eyes and raised a protesting voice 「Aa~~!」.

「Geez-, Yue-oneechan! I always told you every time! Doing that to papa right from the morning is a no-no! Why aren't you protecting your promise nano!」(TN: Here Myuu said 'me-' to Yue. This is the way people in Japanese scold their naughty child or pet, it's like saying 'bad' with a scolding tone in English, though I translated it into no-no here.)

「……uu. Tha, that is because Hajime is……」

「Blaming others is a no-no!」

「……au. I'm sorry.」

Toward Myuu who pointed her index finger at Yue's nose while saying 「Bad-」, Yue could only dejectedly hang her head down regardless of her big sister status.

It had been about a year since they moved to Earth. Recently Myuu, who had grown up remarkably, was acting really proper and strict. When all the onee-chans who often became hopeless characters that couldn't read the atmosphere when they got entangled with Hajime, like Yue right now, Myuu would remonstrate them with a 'Bad' like this.

Actually, in order for Myuu to become used to this world quickly, and also because it was desirable for Myuu to have education in good taste, she was then enrolled into a nursery school about two months ago, but it seemed that in the school Myuu became awakened as 'onee-san' for some reason.

There was the factor of how based on her age she was included in the senior group in the school, but additionally,

there was also how she had been piling up experience that should be too dense for a mere infant. She had been kidnapped, auctioned, traveled through a desert, struggling through a scene of carnage at the Devil King’s Castle, and even participated in a legendary decisive battle. Looking at it from the point of view of such a Myuu, the children the same age as her, who were born in a peaceful country like Japan, were looked upon as really young and naïve, as expected.

Thinking ‘I have to be proper and strict!’, she imitated the outrageous onee-chan group around her and her mother that was overflowing with kindness, like that she acted too helpful towards the other kindergarteners……when she noticed, she had become the trusted and beloved leader of the kindergarteners.

However, her call of 「Gentlemen! And ladies of Myuu’s friend!」 when she was gathering the kindergarteners, or how she said 「Right now is exactly the time to blaze our souls!」when encouraging a child that felt down, or how she showed a fearless grin when there was a child that looked uneasy, those actions that looked a little bit unlike a kindergartener were conspicuous so the teacher there reported it to the Nagumo household……regarding the state of Hajime when he received that contact from the teacher, let’s just say that he was rolling around on the floor for real at that time.

「Really it’s my bad, Myuu. Come on, I’ve already woken up here.」

Yue, who possessed the absolute dignity as the legal wife towards the other wives, was seriously feeling down from getting scolded by Myuu. Hajime sent a glance towards such a Yue while crawling out from the futon. Myuu listened to

Hajime’s words and nodded, then faced Hajime and reached out both her hands.

「Myuu? What’s with those hands?」

「Papa, Myuu wants to be carried nano.」

Even though she was scolding Yue just now, Myuu demonstrated a spoiled kid request. Yue went ‘hah’ in shock and moved her gaze to Myuu. Her eyes were clearly narrating her dissatisfaction 「Even though I was scolded when acting spoiled……」which was looking a bit lacking in maturity.

Toward that, Myuu said,

「Mama said, 「When Yue-san pulls back, immediately act spoiled(attack)」, like that nano.」

「……I’m going to ***speak*** a bit with Remia.」

Yue became enveloped with faint golden light, right after that, she became adult mode. And then, in order to speak a few words with the mother who taught woman’s battle tactics to a little child, Yue silently, but quickly, exited from the room.

And then Myuu, who kept holding her pose asking for a hug, directed a shuddering gaze toward Hajime who was left behind. This little girl in front of his eyes was steadily mastering the lessons from the seniors around her. From here on, just what kind of growth this beloved daughter would show him after accepting the teachings of the women who had one or two peculiarities, Hajime wondered……

「Papa, carry me nano.」

「……Okay」

With a cramped expression, Hajime hugged Myuu who was making a cute request with a cute grin, and then he exited the room while listening to the tumult that was audible from downstairs.

Hajime who entered the living room on the first floor with one of his arms carrying Myuu witnessed the scene of Yue laying down complaints incessantly towards Myuu's actual mother Remia. In regards to Remia, similar with Myuu, she was also exposing emerald blonde hair and human ears, right now she was showing her usual 「my my, ufufu」smile while dodging Yue's complaints flightily――that's how it looked like, but her cheeks were faintly blushing.

With the adult mode Yue as her opponent, as expected even a professional widow would find herself at a disadvantage. Even though they were the same gender, being stared at by the adult Yue fixedly from a very close range would make anyone unable to calm down. Adult Yue-sama, how terrifying.

「Ah, you finally woke up Hajime-san.」

「Fumu, as I thought, perhaps having Yue in charge of waking you up art no good.」

Shia who was helping with the preparation of breakfast was saying such a thing with an exasperated face while giving her morning greeting, and Tio who was watching the morning news in the living room looked behind while also similarly greeting him.

There was no change in Tio's appearance, while Shia's prided rabbit ears were similarly hidden with an artifact like Myuu and Remia. Right now her straight faint blue hair was

put together using a hair tie located around her neck, and the bundle of hair was hung down forward.

「My, Shia-chan and also Tio-chan, you two are saying such things, but if it's the two of you who are going to wake up Hajime won't you two also dive in?」

「Naturally desu, Kaa-sama.」

「Of course, Hahaue-dono」(TN: Both ways of calling have the same meaning of mother, but the kanji they are written with has the meaning of mother-in-law.)

Carrying breakfast from the kitchen……wasn't how she appeared. This person who appeared from the washroom as though to say that she had woken up just now, was Hajime's mother, Nagumo Sumire. Sumire was a famous shoujo manga artist, so there were a lot of times where she was staying out until late at night in her workplace, she was extraordinarily weak in the morning. Because of that, the Nagumo household didn't make a regular habit of taking breakfast properly but……

There Shia, who was in charge of the cooking while in Tortus, and Remia, who was a mother with a child, came in. Hajime took home Yue and the others from the other world and not long after that the girls became freeloaders, so the kitchen became entrusted to the two of them.

「Everyone, good morning. Maaan, it's great that the house is brilliant right from the morning. Even after a year has passed, my heart is still dancing every time I see this. You damn son, how dare you come home after becoming a great man! Really, thank you very much-」

「You are full of energy even in the morning huh, Tou-san. And don't grin like that while looking at them. You are going

to get punched flying you know……by Kaa-san.

The short-haired middle-aged man with a tall stature, who had been continuously in a state of ‘Right now, I’m intensely moved!’ since a year ago, was the central pillar of the Nagumo household, a company president who managed a game company, Nagumo Shuu.

He who was a pure otaku seemed to be deeply moved everyday from witnessing Yue and the others who seemed to come straight out from 2D. And then, most likely, being called as Otou-sama by beautiful girls and women was also undoubtedly greatly related to that.

Shuu laughed in a good mood from being surrounded by his daughters-in-law, Sumire was in a daze, and Hajime was doing Myuu’s hairstyle while the breakfast was lined up on the dining table.

By the way, Shuu and Sumire’s yearly income far surpassed the earning of an average salaryman, so the Nagumo household was quite large. Because of that, even when their family increased all of a sudden, the home didn’t feel that cramped even when all of them lived in one house.

Although, because of the sudden increase in the number of residents right now, the renovation of the house was in progress and after several months the house would surely be completed into a splendid building twice the previous size, that the neighbors would notice.

In addition, regarding the administrative concern of Yue and the others, like their resident registration and the like, Hajime had snuck into the government office and finished forging the documents. For their peace of mind, Yue even used her soul magic on the government workers to plant suggestions in them so that there would be no problem. It

was hard work because there were a lot of documents that needed to be put in order, for example, passport and identification papers and so on, but at the very least there should be no one that could discover any unnaturalness with their existences in Japan.

Even if they got found out, they could just use soul magic to deal with it every time. They were also planning to slowly leave behind evidence of their existences at the foreign governments too. The government officials of the world would be opposed by age of god magic!

「Yup, Shia-chan, Remia-chan, today the food is also delicious. Before this I thought that putting food into your stomach right from the morning, “Is that some kind of torture huh?”, like that……but if it’s like this then I can eat no matter how much.」

「I get what you mean. Hajime, Tou-san is happy. My son became a splendid cheat harem bastard when he returned back. There is nothing that I can teach you anymore like this.」

「Tou-san, I don’t understand whether you are praising me or speaking ill of me from your words, but I have never received any lesson or anything about being a cheat harem bastard at all.」

Sumire sent an exaggerated praise at Shia and Remia excessively, while Shuu was sending Hajime words with a condescending attitude. Hearing that, Hajime replied back with an exasperated state. To that, Shuu opened his mouth with an irritating atmosphere as though to say 「Good grief, yareyare daze」.

「What are you saying? Haven’t I beaten the soul of an otaku into you since you had awareness of your surroundings? In

other words, that was also me beating the soul of a cheat harem into you. The reason that you were able to create a cheat harem in another world, is exactly because of that. How is that? Can you feel the gratitude for your Otou-sama keenly in your heart now?□

□I think I have already talked with you about my experience in the other world, but where is an otaku soul proving useful there――□

Shuu and Sumire had listened to all that Hajime experienced in the other world. About how much effort it took to recover his normal appearance, about how his arm and eye were artificial, about how his gaze turned sharp now, and above all, about how his atmosphere now was completely different from in the past. Hajime told all of those personally without any falsehood or manipulation, nor was he even trying to do those.

In other words, Shuu and Sumire should have known about the sequence of events of their son's grand experience starting from his experiences in the abyss. In spite of that, Shuu now declared that otaku knowledge was useful in those experiences, hearing that Hajime was a bit unable to accept it.

And so, Hajime normally objected to Shuu, but Shuu and Sumire immediately grinned widely while cutting off Hajime's words.

□□Ladies and gentleman-, all of you warriors-□□

□-□

□□Right now in this time, is exactly the time to blaze your soul-□□

□!!□

□□If you said you are going to get in my way, I’ll kill you.□□

□!?□

□□I’ll protect Yue, and Yue will protect me. With that we are――□□

□I got it already-! Otou-sama, really thank you very much-! That’s why, stop it-□

Hajime writhed while asking them to stop with a voice that sounded like a scream. Toward their son who was enduring his shame that much, the father and mother were mercilessly dealing the pursuing attack.

□Oi oi, what’s wrong Hajime? What are you feeling ashamed for? You were cool you know? In real life, there is almost no chance to say those kinds of speeches you know? When Tou-san watched the image recording Tio-san showed to me, my heart was trembling hard. Oh man, it was really an amazing chuu――cough-, really an amazing heroic speech you know?□

□Yes, truly. Not only to the girl partner, but you even said □she is my woman□ to the girl’s parent, when I watched that I thought, “Just from what galgame this conquering character came from?”. Really……□

After giving a glance at Hajime who was shaking while holding his chopstick, Shuu and Sumire paused with a superb timing before continuing with splendid harmony.

□□Hajime-san, those were seriously awesome –ssu. Truly, thank you very much-!□□

「You two are noisy-. Don’t screw around, stop messing with me using that material-」

Shuu and Sumire knew about the events in the other world not only from Hajime’s story. While keeping it secret from Hajime, Tio used regeneration magic to leave behind recording images of every memory――obviously the events in the abyss were not included, other than that, the time when Hajime accepted Shia, the time when Hajime spoke resolutely to Tio’s grandfather Adol, and even Hajime’s speech to his classmates in the Devil King’s castle, etc.――and showed it to Shuu and Sumire. Since then, at every opportunity, Shuu and Sumire would praise Hajime 「As expected from our son-!」 with teasing mixed in it to mess with Hajime.

The corners of Hajime’s eyes lifted up fiercely and brutally put pressure on Tio in an outburst of anger. With a cough, Tio choked in the middle of slurping her miso soup. Miso soup was dripping from her nose while her breathing was getting rough ‘haa haa’.

「A, as expected from the parents of Hajime-san. Recently I have become used to it, but as I thought, seeing the figure of Hajime-san being toyed around, the uncomfortable feeling that I get is not half-baked desu.」

「……Nn. But, the bullied Hajime……is also nice.」

「My my, Yue-san. Recently, it feels that if it is about Hajime-san then everything is fine for you. Fufu, Myuu too has to work hard like this. Also Tio-san, this is the dining table you know? Please don’t go *haa haa* while dripping snot like that, eat your food properly. Right now your face is looking quite “over the age limit” you know?」

Shia smiled wryly towards the exchange between Hajime and his parents, while Yue’s cheeks reddened for some reason, Tio was going *haa haa*, and Remia was going ‘my my, ufufu’ smilingly. This was the ordinary day of the Nagumo household recently.

Just when Hajime was going to snap from the mess, Shuu and Sumire easily drew back and concentrated on their breakfast as though nothing had happened. Hajime who was trembling from losing the target of his anger was then comforted by Yue and the others altogether.

With a sidelong glance at their son who was being taken care of by beautiful women and girls, Shuu and Sumire faced each other and their expressions burst into a smile.

「Nevertheless, that time when Hajime suddenly returned home, and in addition, he also introduced Yue and the others, it was really shocking huh.」

「You’re right. For him to really go to another world and return home bringing a cheat harem, that’s something that I had never even dreamed of.」

While exchanging words with small whispers, both of them recalled that time when Hajime came home.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspellings and omitted words.

For the time being, I’m thinking of writing a bit about the story of post-going home.

After all, there are considerable requests and also hope for a present-day story (lol).

Shirakome himself is swelling out with wild ideas.

Next will be the story of Hajime returning to his home and reuniting with Shuu and Sumire.

I think it most likely can be posted at 6 P.M Saturday next week.

Please take care of me from here on too.

Arifureta Chapter 181

Arifureta After – Morning at the Nagumo House Part 2

AN: Regarding the autograph session at [Tora no Ana] that is planned to be carried out on 22 November because Shirakome is diagnosed with influenza, it was suddenly canceled in a hurry.

Please see the details in my action report.

Really, my deepest apologies to those who are looking forward to it.

I think I will get better if I can recuperate at home.

Please treat me well.

A year after a whole class from a certain high school was spirited away which made a stir in the world.

At first, the impossibility of a group kidnapping in the middle of the day inside a school, within an instant, without any other classes noticing, and the unlikeliness of it being a group disappearance from the half-eaten lunch, the unfinished homework, the kicked down chairs, etc., all of

those heated up the media excessively toward this modern time Mary Celeste case that happened in a school.

However, what was called as the flow of society was quite callous, even the interest towards such a major occult incident didn’t continue for long. After half a year passed, with the news that there was no concrete progress within that short time, there were only impertinent commentators or self-alleged occult researchers harboring ulterior motives trying to use this case as their chance to make it big who kept trying to attract attention to this topic from various kinds of viewpoints while the media was sprinkled with new topics one after another, like some celebrity couple divorcing or getting into an affair, or some big shot politician having their dirty laundry aired.

Like that, the heated mass media calmed down and the interest of the people began to move to other topics. Even so, at that time, the family of the students, who were still missing without any information, and the police were still frantically searching for their whereabouts. However, unable to obtain even a single clue, every one of them was beginning to be encroached by fatigue and resignation.

Shuu and Sumire were also the same. They became exhausted from continuing to search for the whereabouts of their vanished son. While desperately believing that Hajime was safe and that he would definitely return home, they could definitely hear the flow of time that was heartlessly flowing away and the sound of despair that was gradually approaching them.

So that Hajime could come home anytime, they never missed a chance to clean up Hajime’s room for even a single day. And each time they cleaned the room, the coldness of the room that had lost its owner chilled their body. Even

when they were in the living room, or when they were having a meal, what was echoing inside their ears was the voice of their son. While understanding that it was only their hallucination, many times they still suddenly looked around at their surroundings in surprise. It was already forgotten how many times they dashed to the front door every time they heard small sounds from there.

Even the 「family association」 that was formed together by the families of all the disappeared students only seemed to infect Shuu and Sumire with a chill to their hearts from looking at the faces of the parents who were losing their expression day by day.

And then, soon it would be one year since Hajime disappeared. For the two of them, that meant that the shadow of despair would only become thicker.

The tick-tock sound of the clock was echoing excessively clearly. Shuu, who was looking at his PC display, suddenly opened his mouth without turning away or stopping his hand that was clicking on the mouse.

「Sumire, how about going to sleep soon? Yesterday you already stayed until late right?」

「It’s no problem. If you are saying that, then you yourself, isn’t it better for you to sleep? Yesterday at work you had a lot of problems, right? You had almost no time to sleep at all.」

Late at night, Shuu and Sumire who had gotten thin due to their anxiety were checking the bulletin board on the PC and producing the flyer that called for information with a movement that was like a programmed machine. They were both exchanging words without even lifting up their face to look at each other.

「There is no problem with work. After all, my guys are all reliable. Even when the president is not there, it really doesn’t matter for them. Rather, I would just be a bother for them if I go to work with a face that looks like a ghost. Like that, they would even chase me out. Besides, doesn’t Sumire have it worse than me? You missed your deadline again right?」

「……Yes. But, that was only one time. My assistant is also excellent after all.」

Both Shuu and Sumire, in this one year they often took days off in their respective works of managing the game company or the manga serialization. Everything was for the sake of finding their son. Normally that kind of consecutive days off would make them lose the social trust from the people around them, but their coworkers and subordinates who knew about the circumstances of the two showed their understanding and even proactively cooperated with them. Thanks to that, they didn’t end up unemployed.

That was really an appreciated consideration so that in the case that Hajime came home, there would be no complicated situation like him witnessing both his parents becoming jobless altogether. There was also the factor that both of their work environments were special, and also how Hajime often showed his face at both his parent’s workplaces so the people there held favorable impressions of him. So the people at Hajime’s parents’ workplaces were also really worried about Hajime from the bottom of their hearts that Hajime had disappeared after getting involved with a sudden occult situation.

But even those people’s gazes were gradually changing into a gaze that was filled with a lot of pity, as though they were looking at something painful. Surely resignation had already

grown thick inside them. There was no way they could say anything to the parents whose son’s whereabouts became unknown, but everyone had begun to think 「It’s possible, that Hajime is already……」

There was also no way that Shuu and Sumire wouldn’t notice such atmosphere. It also became a factor that cornered their minds needlessly, but the fact that they could take the time to search for Hajime like this now was also thanks to those people, so there was no way they could do something like exploding in anger towards them.

Even with their gloomy hearts, while both understanding that there was no way they could rest, they still exchanged barefaced words like recommending each other to rest.

After a while, Shuu and Sumire still continued to exchange dialogue that was really empty, but before long, after looking at the information board on the internet that was not only lacking in plausible information but filled with obviously fake information or inconsiderate writings instead, Shuu finally took off his gaze from the monitor screen.

And then, while sighing deeply, he put both his elbows on the table and his head hung down with both his hands covering his eyes.

「……Hajime. Just where is he right now……」

「Dear……」

Even though Shuu was still in the early half of his forties, right now he looked like a tired old man. Sumire who saw him like that also stopped her working hand and lifted her face.

「As expected, how about we rest a bit?」

「……You know that’s impossible, right? I won’t be able to sleep soundly anyway.」

「That might be true but……」

Sumire’s words were caught up in her throat. What Shuu was saying was wholly correct, she herself was also like that. No matter how exhausted their body and mind had become, but day by day the fire of uneasiness in their heart only kept broiling stronger. Such a thing stole their ability to have a quiet sleep.

「It will be fine. It’s still only a year. Even if it would take several years, we will find him without fail. No way am I going to collapse until then.」

「……You’re right. It’s just as you say.」

Her husband lifted his face with a wry smile, even so, there was a dark shadow that couldn’t be hidden there. Sumire smiled at him even while feeling concern, and then she stood up from her chair to nestle close to him.

But just before she could do that, suddenly *pin poo—n* there was a chime sounding from the entrance.

Naturally, at this time of day when the date had already changed, there was no way there would be anyone who would visit. If it was a relative then they should have contacted them beforehand, so the two of them faced each other suspiciously. That they were unable to reach ‘that possibility’ immediately, showed how exhausted the state of their heart was.

Shuu slowly raised his heavy waist and took the receiver off the intercom. When he did that, naturally the figure of the visitor was projected at the display……

□……Aa, that, what to say……this is, me, here.□

The state of the sudden visitor who was unable to smoothly decide what words to use while his gaze was wandering incessantly. If the people who knew of this person in this one year saw this attitude, they would surely stare in amazement reflexively.

Even from across the display, they knew.

This person’s air, look, and even height were different from the one in their memory.

Even so, they knew.

Shuu perfectly, and instantly knew. That person, who was looking awkward somehow with a frowning face that looked troubled was……the one who they had continued to search for, the one they believed would surely come home……

——it was their beloved son.

With a smacking sound, Shuu threw away the receiver phone and threw open the door of the living room with a force as though he was kicking it open. Without even hiding his impatience he roughly opened the lock of the front door, and then, he threw the door open.

And then,

□Aa……that……I’m home, Tou-san.□

□□Hajime-□□

Shuu’s voice overlapped with Sumire who had chased after him unnoticed. They called the name of their son with a volume that might rip open their throat. At the same time,

they tackled the son who was scratching his cheek awkwardly in front of the house’s gate.

「Hajime-, you, this stupid bastard! Where the hell have you been running around until now-」

「This stupid son-. Do you know how much you made us worry!」

Father and mother embraced their son altogether strongly, so strongly that it made it hard to breathe. Right now, in this moment, they were confirming that this son was really standing before their eyes. So that he wouldn’t disappear for a second time. They strongly, strongly embraced him.

The dim street light, the lighting leaking out from inside the house, and then the perfectly round moon in the sky were gently illuminating the family who became one once more. Amidst that Hajime was stiffening in a banzai posture while being hugged tightly by the two. (TN: Banzai posture, if you screamed banzai in celebration, usually you will also raise both your hands in cheers right?)

Hajime thought that his parents must be worrying about him. He was convinced that they were believing that he would return home.

But, even so, the figure and atmosphere of the current him, even though his hair color, his artificial eye, and his artificial hand were returned to his former appearance as much as possible, the him right now should be really different from how he once was.

That was why, he thought that they would surely feel confused. He even resolved himself in preparation for them to say doubting words like 「Are you really Hajime?」 in suspicion. Depending on the situation, there might even be

a need to spend the time to reach an understanding, that was what Hajime was thinking in the corner of his heart.

It was just like how Hajime’s false image pointed out in one of the seven great labyrinths——at the 「Ice and Snow Cave of Shuune Snowfield」 before this, that in the depth of Hajime’s heart, he had the fear that the person who had been acknowledged by both himself and other people as a monster couldn’t be accepted by his parents, that was the cause of this emotion of Hajime’s that couldn’t be varnished over, which was both like himself but also unlike himself.

But, now that he had tried to open the lid, this was how it turned out. Shuu and also Sumire didn’t even give any attention to Hajime’s change, they gave him a tight hug that was overflowing with conviction and anger, and also a helplessly great relieve.

Inside Hajime’s body, a hot, yet silently strong emotion that was unfathomably deep was rising up. Every grand experience that he had experienced in the another world, were passing through his brain as though he was experiencing a revolving lantern.

And then, there was only one thing that he was thinking.

——Aa, finally, I came home.

Hajime’s two arms silently held the backs of his two parents. And then, with a trembling voice, he spoke it one more time in a small, but clear voice.

「Tou-san, Kaa-san——I’m home.」

Shuu and Sumire, with their eyes still overflowing with tears, separated themselves from Hajime slightly, and with a firm straight gaze, they gave him those words together with the

escaping smile——surely for Hajime, these words were the mark that informed him of the end of his long and dangerous journey in the true meaning.

□□Welcome home, Hajime.□□

After that, Hajime and others who noticed that the neighbors were stealing peeks at the situation from the gaps between the curtains, excitedly returned inside the house.

It was a home that he left only for a year. Even so, Hajime narrowed his eyes in nostalgia, he couldn’t help himself to lightly caress his hand on the railing and the ornaments.

Entering the living room, Hajime saw a large amount of the leaflets scattered on the table. He took one of them into his hand and stared at it closely. After that, he also discovered the PC that was left opened displaying the site that asked for information on missing people.

□……This one year after you were gone, we tried everything we could to look for a clue. But, in the end, we couldn’t obtain even one clue. ……Hajime, you, no, all of you, just where in the world did you all go?□

□Also, Hajime. A year ago on that day, just what in the world happened?□

□……About that. Explaining it is simple, but also difficult. There are a lot of things that must be talked.□

The deep gaze of their son that already couldn’t be called as young at all, made Shuu and Sumire gulp. And then they guessed that Hajime had gone through a tremendous experience that they couldn’t even imagine.

「I see. Then, let me straighten up the table quickly, we are going to talk a lot after that. Wait a second. I’m going to brew a delicious milk tea now.」

「Yeah. Thank you, Kaa-san.」

「Fufu, somehow you completely feel like an adult.」

While drinking the sweet and warm milk tea that Sumire prepared, Hajime told the truth of the group’s disappearance to the two. Hajime’s experience was too dense to have everything said in one sitting. Therefore, he talked only about the summary of every important point, but even so, the summoning to another world, survival in the abyss, the separation with his classmates, the conquer of the great labyrinths, the legendary decisive battle……by the time Hajime finished talking about those, the sky was already starting to grow light.

Hajime, who had finished talking about the general event, emptied his cup that had been refilled several times, and then he sighed. Shuu and Sumire were also sighing tiredly. Shuu was rubbing on his eye with his finger while Sumire was dropping her gaze at the empty cup. They were silent from feeling lost as to how to respond.

「As I thought, is that hard to believe?」

Hajime asked while smiling wryly.

「That’s, obviously. Tou-san and also Kaa-san, due to our work we have plenty of knowledge about something like that but……thinking, that it happened for real……」

「That’s right. But, thinking about the extremely unnatural group disappearance, we cannot really reject that it might be true. There is also no reason for Hajime to lie in this

situation. That’s why, our worry is, the possibility that someone *is making Hajime believe such thing*.

Haha, indeed, that way of thinking is way more realistic. Me too, if I were in the position of Tou-san and Kaa-san, surely I would also think that at first.

Being kidnapped by unknown people, and then the group was then brainwashed and had the memory of fantastical nonsense inserted into their brain……indeed, rather than believing that he was going to another world and fought against monsters and gods there, that explanation sounded more plausible. Rather than they weren’t believing the words of their son, it was more that they were thinking realistically with worry that if such a thing was really done to their son then they would need to get him treatment quickly.

Hajime’s wry smile deepened to the two who were worrying about him, then he opened his mouth because there was something that he had to confirm no matter what.

Tou-san, Kaa-san. Whether what I’m saying is the truth or not, there is a method to prove that. That’s why, assuming for now that what I’m saying is the truth, I want to ask something. ……Regarding the things that I had done, what do you two think? No, what do you think about the current me?

That was the question that Hajime feared the most from the depths of his heart. If his parents held disappointment and fear, avoidance and disgust toward him then……as expected, that would be hard for him. Surely if that happened, Hajime would exit the house, and then he would leap into the chest of his beloved lover.

But, in contrast with the anxiety and nervousness inside Hajime’s heart, as though they had guessed the concern in

Hajime’s heart, Shuu and Sumire showed a smile that looked troubled, or possibly exasperated.

「Now see here, Hajime. I and also Sumire, we aren’t saints you know?」

「Eh?」

Shuu and Sumire stood up from their seat and approached close to the side of Hajime who was perplexed.

「Rather than other people’s death, our son’s safety is far more important. Perhaps you think of that as cold-hearted, but that is what is called a parent. Good grief, for you to feel that nervous……I wonder if you are thinking of something like, perhaps I’m going to be chased out from home? Really, what a big idiot you are.」

「However……Kaa-san. Indeed, I killed because it was necessary, but I didn’t even hesitate in killing. That was how much I changed. A guy who is not even holding any avoidance or disgust for killing, can you accept someone like that?」

What a hopeless kid, Sumire who was brushing his head as though to say that was replied back by Hajime with an expression that was lost for words. Hearing that reply, Shuu opened his mouth in exasperation for real this time.

「It’s not about accepting or not, we are family you know? Something like stop being family doesn’t exist in the Nagumo family. Don’t you know? There is nothing that can make you stop being my son. The end result is, 「You cannot run away from Otou-sama!」」(TN: Might be a reference to something.)

「No, don’t make any quote at a time like this……」

「Hahaha, well, putting that aside. Hajime is my son, and I am a father. As long as that holds true, then me and also Sumire will be your ally anytime. There is no way anyone can worry about other people while their son's survival is being threatened. Also, if you are feeling guilty, if you say that you want to atone to the family of the deceased then I'll atone for it together with you, and even if you become a psychopath killer then I'll stake my body and life to stop you.」

Most likely, if it was thought from the viewpoint of common sense then the way of Shuu and Sumire were doing things were mistaken. As a parent, no matter what kind of circumstance there was, they had to question the right and wrong of the killer. And if it was something unforgivable then they had to admonish the person. As a parent, they had to reprimand their child about their wrongdoing.

And surely Shuu and Sumire also understood that. But even with that understanding, they were still undoubtedly happy that their son returned home alive even by killing someone else. If Hajime had come to terms with it then that was fine, if for example, he wanted to atone for his sin then they as his parents would accompany him, and if he ended up as a fiend, then they would stake their lives to take him back to the right path. They declared that clearly to Hajime.

「Hajime, do you regret what you have done until now?」

「No, I have not even a bit of regret. I don't even think that I'm mistaken. I decided to do what I did with the resolve against everything.」

「Yep. That's how it has to be. But Hajime, that way of doing things won't work in Japan you know?」

「I know. The journey that I started with the determination to kill all the guys antagonizing me is over already. That's why I too have to change my way of living. Well, I might at least do something like planting trauma to those who stand in my way though.」

「I see, then that's fine. Even if Hajime's heart has grown to become unreluctant in killing people, reasoning and emotion still pro~perly exist inside Hajime. Then, that's fine. It's just as Shuu said, if Hajime actually steps on the wrong path, we are going to take you back even if we have to spank you, and take the responsibility together with you.」

「Kaa-san……」

Hajime thought, even when he had obtained the power to slaughter even god, but as expected, he was still no match against his father and mother. And then, he recalled his beloved daughter that he obtained in the other world, and he keenly felt how he was still lacking as a father.

Shuu and Sumire gently patted Hajime who was closing his eyes quietly. If they actually saw Hajime murdering someone with their own eyes, there was no way they wouldn't be shaken. Perhaps it would become a trauma for them. Perhaps they wouldn't be able to give him their words unhesitatingly like this.

Even so, one thing that they could say with certainty was, that them getting scared of Hajime, their son, and then distancing themselves with him due to that, was the only thing that they would never do.

That feeling was certainly conveyed to Hajime. Therefore, Hajime could only say one thing.

「……Thank you. Tou-san, Kaa-san.」

The eyes of Shuu and Sumire squinted gently.

While feeling the warmth of these parents, Hajime opened his eyes and showed a wide and mischievous grin to them. His heart was perfectly cleared. Hajime recovered his usual self due to the acceptance of his parents towards his changed self.

In that case, what was left was the report that in a sense was the most important report that he had to tell them. It would also become a proof about the other world that he told them about just now, so it would be two birds with one stone.

「Tou-san, Kaa-san. Do you remember, in the past……about the stupid talk of what am I going to do if I am summoned into another world?」

「Hm? Aa, I remember. If you are a man, then in a world of sword and magic you will surely want to defeat the demon king and build a harem, that was what I said, while Hajime, I think you said 『If it's me, it doesn't feel like I can defeat the demon king at all. What I can do, at best is to return home. And then if I find someone important for me there, then I'll return together with them』, right?」

「Tou-san remember that well huh. Well, that's how it is. I think I mentioned it a bit in my explanation before but……I found important people there. I want to introduce them to you, so is it fine right now?」

「Right now? It's already dawn you know? Or rather, you made a girlfriend there!? Furthermore from another world? No, wait, I still don't know whether the story of another world summoning is true or not……」

「Tha, that's right, isn't it? By any chance, that person might be the one who planted false memories in Hajime……. And

then, that person will say something like 「If you want your son to return to normal, then please buy this holy vase. Don’t worry, if you buy it right now, I’ll give you a special fifty percent discount for this million yen vase you know?」!」 (TN: In Japan there were cases of fraud where a salesman was selling a vase/pot, that they claimed was holy, possessing various effects, at a crazy price.)

Shuu who heard the full blown wild delusion of the frankly wary Sumire instantly went 「Sumire, are you a genius!?」 in agreement. While smiling wryly from witnessing his beloved being considered as a crooked salesman, Hajime’s gaze wandered at empty air.

「……Yue, can you hear me? It’s me.」

「Oi, Sumire! For some reason Hajime is talking to empty air see! Is this that? What is called as air girlfriend!? What should I do as a father like this!?」

「Calm down dear. We were careless……surely they had set up listening devices in our house! After this, the woman who will sell us the holy vase will arrive after getting called by Hajime you know!」

「What, the? Bastard, making my son as the stooge of your vase selling……don’t think that this is going to end up well for you. With my marvelous haggling technique, I’m going to beat down the price until below fifty thousand yen!」

Shuu and Sumire who couldn’t possibly understand that Hajime who was suddenly talking to empty air was using “telepathy” were greatly shaken up. Sumire was strangely speaking up a realistic assumption while Shuu became slightly panicked and hardened a slightly off determination. And then, before Hajime knew it, Yue had become a holy vase seller girl.

Hajime continued his telepathy while giving a sidelong glance at such parents.

「Yeah, it’s fine already. ……Yeah, I already talked about the gist of the events. I want to introduce all of you quickly. …… That’s right. You know the coordinates right? Yeah, then open a gate and come here directly. It’s at……let’s see, open it around a meter from my east.」

Actually, right now Yue was at the school building that Hajime attended before. When they returned to earth from Tortus, Hajime made the rooftop of the school building as the place where the gate was opened. From that place, it was easy for him to imagine his home’s position, and even if they arrived in the afternoon, normally that rooftop was locked and people were forbidden to enter there, the location was also outside of the public’s gaze. That spot was convenient to use.

And then, after the classmates returned to their own homes one after another, Yue and the others proposed to stay at the school. It was so they wouldn’t hinder Hajime’s reunion with his parents.

Naturally, Shuu and Sumire who didn’t know about that circumstances could only face each other in wonderment about their son who continued to talk towards empty air――they stiffened right after that.

With a distortion, the space right beside Hajime suddenly formed a vortex, and then it formed an ellipse shape right after that, and then a moment later a familiar scenery――a place that seemed to be a classroom of a school could be seen.

「A, Any**ere, Door?」(TN: Reference to anywhere door from Doraemon)

「E, eh? Wai-, this is just too fantasy so suddenly!」

While Shuu and Sumire were greatly flustered, Yue's face peeked out with a plop from inside the gate. Those crimson eyes were wandering through the room with deep interest, and then those eyes narrowed joyfully when they captured Shuu and Sumire, at the end of which those eyes turned to Hajime and wordlessly inquired 「It's fine to enter?」

「Welcome, to the Nagumo household. Come in without reservation.」

「……Nn」

With Hajime's welcoming words, Yue slowly stepped into the Nagumo house. The space hole that suddenly opened inside the room and the beautiful girl who was like an awakened bisque doll that appeared from there caused Shuu and Sumire to open and close their mouths wordlessly in obvious turmoil.

Hajime stood beside Yue, and while grinning mischievously like a kid who succeeded in his prank, he introduced his beloved lover.

「Tou-san, Kaa-san. Her name is Yue. She is my special person. By the way, she is a person of another world, a vampire, and a former princess.」

「「-, Template attribute!?」」(TN: I think what they mean here is how Yue has so many clichéd character attributes.)

Shuu and Sumire splendidly returned a response that was impossible for run-of-the-mill people. Inside her heart Yue was feeling warm and fluffy thinking 「Aa, they are really Hajime's parents」 while at the same time, feeling a bit nervous in this important event where she was greeting her

lover’s parents, she pinched at the edge of her skirt, and showed a courtesy gesture that was overflowing with elegance and beauty.

「……How do you do, Hajime’s Otou-sama, Okaa-sama. Please call me Yue. Please take care of me for many years to come.」

「E, o, ou. No, I need to be polite here. Please take care of me too desu?」

「Ple, please take care of me, desuwa?」(TN: Both of the parents also used extremely polite language here)

The shock from witnessing the blond-haired crimson-eyed beautiful girl that looked like she came out from a picture book, and also this being the introduction to their son’s lover for the first time in their life, caused the end of their sentence to actually turn strange. The figures of his parents lowering their head repeatedly and incoherently deepened Hajime’s grin, however, as though to say that 「It won’t end with just this much yeah!」 he opened his mouth once more.

「Shia, it’s okay now!」

「Hai desuu! Tou-sama, Kaa-sama, I am called Shia! Please take care of me desuu!」(TN: The Kaa-sama and Tou-sama used by her is the kanji for in-law.)

「「Rabbit eaaar, it cameee—!?」」

Shia leaped out from the gate with a wide smile while her rabbit ears were flopping around. Shuu and Sumire showed a splendid harmonious reaction to the appearance of this second beautiful girl. Without even any composure to reply, their eyes became nailed to the rabbit ears that were moving around.

「Tio, come!」

「Uh huh. This art our first meeting, Chichiue-dono, Hahaue-dono. I am Tio Clarce of the dragon race, a mistress of Goshujin-sama, and also his sex slave. Please take care of me forever from here on.」

「「Sex slave!?」」

With twin hills that looked like they were going to spill out anytime, and dragon wings spread and flapped behind her in order to expose her true form, Tio made that greeting that was relatively no good. Hearing that caused Shuu and Sumire to spontaneously stagger. It appeared that the consecutive shocking developments made their feet unsteady.

「Remia, Myuu!」

「Yes dear. Nice to meet you, I am called Remia. Please take care of me, together with my daughter.」

「E, err, err……I, I am Papa’s daughter Myuu desu! Ojii-chan, Obaa-chan, please take care of me nano!」(TN: Ojii-chan=grandfather, obaa-chan=grandmother)

「O, Ojii-chan!?」

「Da, daughteeer!?」

The beauty who lowered her head politely with a graceful appearance, and the small Myuu who gave her all in greeting. Shuu and Sumire were finally paralyzed from the astonishing words of Myuu. And then, *gigigi* their gaze moved toward Hajime like a machine that had forgotten to be oiled.

Their eyes were speaking their feelings more eloquently than anything. That was to say, 「Explain what is the meaning of this!」

Therefore, Hajime answered concisely.

「Myuu is my daughter, and all of the others are my wives. Well, please take care of them okay.」

「「So casual!?」」

「Ah, by the way, there are four more wives, so I'll have them give their greeting on another day.」

「「Real cheat hareeem!?」」

As expected, the two of them splendidly synchronized in a splendid reaction.

And then, the parental heart that was unshakeable even when their son confessed to being a killer went 「You, are you really my son!?(Shuu)」 and 「You, are you really that son of mine!?(Sumire)」 in great agitation and fluster, and then Shuu suddenly went 'I revealed the trick!' and yelled 「No, wait, Sumire! There is no way girls this cute are real! Everything is CG! Don't get tricked!」, hearing that Sumire yelled 「Dear, you are a genius! Hajime, open your eyes! Even if 2D girls are converted into 3D, in the end, they are just false images. It will only end in vain!」 with a sorrowful expression……

Anyway, the room already descended into a grand pandemonium.

However, even that pandemonium didn't continue for long.

It was because Myuu who sensed that they weren't welcomed from the state of the two parents got depressed, then she asked 「Ojii-chan, Obaa-chan……is Myuu no good?」. The result from that went without saying.

「How do you do, I am Myuu's Ojii-chan you know?」

「How do you do, I am Myuu-chan's Obaa-chan you know?」

They splendidly got back on their feet within an instant. Their figure that was knocked out helplessly by Myuu's sly loveliness was exactly the same as Hajime as expected.

Like that, after they managed to get back on their feet, seeing the fantasy phenomenon that happened in front of their eyes and the beautiful girls who were not human, the two people who right from the start had high resistance to this kind of thing due to their nature of work immediately confirmed the truth of Hajime's words.

After that, there was a great commotion of 'hip hip hurray'. The too real this and that which their son experienced, and the real harem of beautiful girls……their otaku soul ate it up energetically before they threw a barrage of questions at Hajime and the others with eyes shining brightly.

When Tio used regeneration magic to get out the image recording of Hajime's battle that she recorded, strange voices resounded through the residential area in the morning. 「UoOOOOOO-, AWESOOOOMEE! Did you know, did you know huuuh!? That's, that's my son! Thank you very much!」or, 「KyaAAAA-, you heard that!? Just now, he said something amazing you know! This is bad! This child is seriously demon king-sama! And then, demon king-sama is my son desu! Thank you very much!」 and so on. Perhaps because the two were also staying up all night without sleeping, their tension kept raising and raising up, in the

end, the two of them continued to make a commotion until Hajime who became unable to endure the shame made them go ‘abababa’ using Lightning Clad. (TN: That abababa expressed cartoonish electric shock, where the person that got shocked exposed their skeleton and ended up with only smoking body and curled up hair.)

「……Nn. As expected from Hajime’s Otou-sama and Okaa-sama. They are completely out of the ordinary.」

「Certainly, it feels like that they are really Hajime-san’s parent like this desu.」

「It can even be said, that this is only natural for Goshujin-sama’s Chichiue-dono and Hahaue-dono.」

「Ufufu, they resemble Haijme-san, what a unique personage.」

「Yep-, Papa, really resembled Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan nano!」

Yue and others spoke their impression while lukewarmly staring at Shuu and Sumire who fainted with great smiles.

To those impressions, Hajime said a sentence.

「What the hell do you guys mean by that?」

Hajime’s expression turned speechless.

Shuu and Sumire who returned from their reminiscence called with wide grins at their son’s family who were flirting and frolicking in a sense at the morning dining table.

「Which reminds me, Hajime. You are going to meet with Kaori-chan and the others today, right? You are not going to

be late?」

「Aa~, it will be at past noon, so there is no problem.」

「Shizuku-chan will also come, right? What about Ai-chan?」

「It seems that Shizuku will come together with Kaori, but Aiko, I think she can come, but perhaps she will be late. She has her work and also her position after all.」

Hajime shrugged, while Sumire lowered her eyebrow in sympathy thinking 「Ai-chan also has it hard eh.」

Today Hajime had the plan of having dinner with everyone, including Kaori and the others too. The classmates would also participate so it would be something like the class reunion of the people who got summoned to the alternate world. Although currently all of them were still active students, so the nuance was a bit different.

「Oi, Hajime. Tell Kaori-chan and the others to show their faces here more often. About beautiful daughters in law, the more the better.」

「That's right. Or rather, if the houses reconstruction is finished, it's okay for them to live here instead you know? Isn't it the best when the house is lively and merry?」

「……The girls themselves don't really mind that……rather, they seem to want to come normally, but their families don't seem to approve. Well, that's the sensible decision.」

At the corner of his mind, Hajime recalled the time when he met the family of Kaori and Shizuku while shrugging.

「H~mm, there is that. Well, just tell them that Kaa-san will welcome them anytime. Also……fufu. I won't mind if you are

going to stay over tonight you know?」

「Debauchery party eh! What a terrifying child even as my son.」

「You are noisy. I told you already I'm going to come home normally. Really, Tou-san and Kaa-san are……」

Hajime's expression turned somewhat tired right from the morning. The wives from another world watched over that exchange between parent and child smilingly.

What was unfolding before their eyes, was certainly a peaceful and gentle, normal every day of a family.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspellings and omitted words.

I think in the next chapter, I'll try writing about going out around the city with the wives.

It seems that the heartwarming story without much development will continue, but I'm also wanting to write a long extra story before long so I will be happy if you all can read while feeling the heartwarming atmosphere.

……If Shirakome has more time……real life, you bastard……

The next update is planned for 6 P.M Saturday next week too.

Arifureta Chapter 182

Arifureta After – Downtown Date? Part 1

AN: I’m sorry, this chapter is a bit late……

It’s short but, please have mercy.

At the station plaza several blocks away from the neighborhood of Hajime’s house, there was quite a splendid fountain installed. Many people were bustling around on this holiday.

Naturally, there were a lot of young males and females in that spot who seemed to have rendezvous appointments. Their gazes often moved alternately towards their watches and the direction that the person they were waiting for would come from, or they were playing around with their smartphones to kill time.

Amidst those young people, there was the figure of Hajime. What seemed to be different from him compared to other people, was that he never particularly looked at his watch or played with his smartphone, he kept sitting on the bench beside the fountain while staring absentmindedly at empty air, like a father who was taking his children out to play on a holiday while slackening from the fatigue of his everyday work.

Yet, regardless of his slackening atmosphere, there was a vague presence from him as though his back was standing straight, perhaps it was because of the abnormal experience a normal youth of the same age would never encounter that Hajime had piled up.

While Hajime’s body was in a really relaxed posture, the attention of the surroundings was naturally attracted to him because of that presence he exuded. Despite the strange sense of security that his calm atmosphere caused, there was also the slight aroma of danger that came from him.

Due to that, perhaps it could be said as only natural that sometimes there were groups of girls who kept glancing toward Hajime. There were also girls whispering to each other with slightly reddened cheeks among those groups, who were on the verge of doing reverse picking up. (TN: Gyaku nanpa: Instead of a man calling out to a woman on the street, it was the woman who called on a man in reverse.)

It was a popularity that was unthinkable for Hajime before he got summoned to the alternate world Tortus.

「……Should I use presence isolation like this?」

Naturally, for Hajime who possessed monstrous specs, the movements of the surroundings were leaked into his ears, he muttered such thing while his posture and gaze stayed unmoving.

Like that, a group of girls with courage(?) finally approached timidly in order to call out to Hajime, at that time when the surrounding girls and boys were observing carefully, an energetic calling voice that caused them to open their eyes wide in shock resounded.

「Ah, you are there nano~. Papaa~~~~!」

sutetetetete— The one who dashed from the street of the station was Myuu, her emerald blond hair was lightly fluttering while a full smile was pasted on her face. That lovely figure of a foreigner beautiful little girl running with her all caused the gazes of all the people at the station plaza to move to her.

As though to say ‘who cares about those gazes!’, Myuu didn’t show any reaction at all and keeping her momentum she dived at Hajime who was slacking up on the bench.

Like a bullet, Myuu leaped at full power without a single shred of reservation or mercy. Normally, Hajime would match the timing and sway back to perfectly kill the impact and gently catch her, but right now he was sitting on the bench so he couldn’t do that.

And so, one of Hajime’s hands gently scooped the jumping Myuu’s shoulder and he skillfully converted the charging momentum into rotation. So to speak, it was something like Aikido. Just before Myuu impacted the stomach of Hajime in midair, she was twirled in a rotation and like that she was dropped down to sit on the lap of Hajime.

「Oy, Myuu. I told you many times already, don’t jump because it’s dangerous.」

「Ehehe~, I’m sorry nano~」

Myuu blinked for a moment because she didn’t understand what happened, but seeing Hajime who was warning her with a wry smile, she immediately grinned loosely and leaned back snugly at Hajime’s chest.

Hajime made a troubled smile seeing the state of his beloved daughter who didn’t seem to reflect on her action at all. He then used his hand to change the way he held her and then he stood up.

From the surroundings, 「E, eee? Papa? Just now, that girl called him papa?」 or 「Lies, he has a child!?」, or 「Oi oi, how old is that guy……if that kid is his child, then just when was she born……」, or 「Rather than that, just now was amazing wasn’t it? That kid was rotated in a full circle you know?」, the topic was spreading with an amazing momentum in the plaza.

But, the entrance of Myuu was still only the beginning. All of them would witness even more shocking scenes after this.

「My my, Myuu. Mama told you that it’s no good for you to run off alone, right? After all, it’s easy to get lost in this world……」

「Mamaa. But, Papa is here so……」

「Ufufu, Myuu really is a daddy’s girl. Dear……thank you for waiting.」

With her sandals making cute sounds *patapata* from each step, wearing a long skirt and elegant cardigan, also swaying emerald blond hair that was braided with a hair tie, Remia finally arrived.

Seeing the entrance of an older, or rather a foreigner onee-san who had plenty of sex appeal of a widow, *gulp* the sound of someone gulping their saliva could be heard from somewhere. Several men were already sending piercing gazes of envy towards Hajime who had beauties as his wife and daughter.

But, still not yet. It still wasn’t over yet with this!

「Hajime-saa~n, thank you for waiting~.」

「My apologies for making you wait, Goshujin-sama.」

The ones who were saying that with their arrival were Shia, with her faint bluish white long straight hair swaying, wearing a miniskirt from which her white slender beautiful legs were generously exposed, and Tio who wasn’t wearing her usual kimono but instead wore loose trousers and a V-shirt along with a long cardigan.

Both of them were owners of good looks that could make idols or actresses run away barefooted in shame. Two such girls were approaching towards Hajime who seemed to already have a wife and child with obvious good will coloring their whole face.

The gazes of the people at the station plaza were already in a glued state towards Hajime without being able to take their gazes off. Their curiosity kept rising over the limit.

While completely ignoring those people, Hajime shrugged while still carrying Myuu.

「You all wanted to try having a rendezvous, right? I don’t really mind. Spending time not doing anything only staring absentmindedly at nothing is not bad sometimes.」

Yes, it was just as Hajime said, if it was asked for what reason these people who were living at the same house were meeting at the station plaza at an appointed time, that was because of the request of the female camp. Hajime thought in his heart that it was better to go together, but if he was requested for something like this then he couldn’t reject it. It was a cute request for him.

「So, what about Yue? You all came together, right?」

Hajime tilted his head seeing that there was only one of his lovers who hadn't yet appeared at this place.

「Aa, I think Yue-san will arrive soon. There were some guys picking up women in the train, so Yue-san was taking care of them while telling us to go ahead.」

「Taking care……don't tell me, she isn't going to smash them, right? Spare me from that. If the monster of the clothing store will be overflowing even until this world…… I'm prepared to even wage war you know?」

「Even though Goshujin-sama is a godslayer, thou art still not very good against Christabel and the others huh.」

Hajime's expression cramped from listening to Shia's explanation. Tio was being somewhat exasperated seeing that state of Hajime, but when she thought from the point of view of Hajime whose ass kept getting stared feverishly each time by those manly women of another world, her gaze was changing into sympathy thinking that it might be something that couldn't be helped.

By the way, according to Shia's additional explanation, it seemed that Yue would only toy with the guys' memory and mind using soul magic, and she wouldn't use the crotch smash. For the time being, Yue and the others had also learned of the proper method of dealing with trouble in Japan, which had strict laws to maintain order compared to the other world.

While they were talking like that, Hajime suddenly felt a restless sign from the direction of the station street, so Hajime turned his gaze there.

Sure enough, from there he could see the figure of a beautiful girl with crimson eyes and golden hair that looked as though she came right out off the screen, walking with a calm air majestically, and also with elegance and gracefulness at the same time, as though she was a queen walking on a red carpet.

Yue wasn’t in her girl mode that was normally in the appearance of a twelve year old. She had transformed her appearance similar to Hajime, into an age of around seventeen years old. There was no need to mention her bewitching air, the faint smile that was pasted on her lips might be from her feelings towards her beloved that was at the end of her sight. That smile also exposed tenderness, which was magnifying the charm of her perfect beauty by several times over.

Yue, who should be called as a peerless beauty from just a glance, was exuding out an adult charm, but the clothes that she came wearing were a loose parka and lacy skirt that honestly seemed to be rough yet cute. That style of clothing pushed aside the difficult to approach aura that was characteristic in a beautiful person which further boosted up her charm.

Anyone who caught sight of Yue, regardless of their age or gender, they would have their gaze drawn in without exception. The sounds of *gon-*, or *gashan-*, or *bachikon-* that could be heard from here and there, were the sounds of disaster that were played by the victim of Yue. In a sense, she could be called a walking disaster.

A youth crashed into a telephone pole because he was walking while watching Yue, a group of boys that seemed to be students were stampeding over a store’s signboard, a

girlfriend who came back to her senses slapped her boyfriend beside her to drag him back to reality.

However, Yue didn’t pay attention to those at all. She walked forward dashingly, and before long, amidst the gathered attention, she had approached Hajime’s side.

「……Nn. Hajime, thank you, for letting us to have a “rendezvous”.」

Yue then put her lips on top of Hajime’s. That act was really natural, as though doing that was only a matter of course, like how if the wind blew then the leaves would sway.

Yue put her hand gently on Hajime’s chest with her feet standing on her tiptoes to make herself a little taller in order to kiss Hajime. Seeing such a Yue caused the surroundings to get shaken.

「Geez, Yue-oneechan is unfair nano! Myuu is going to do ‘chuu’ too!」

「My my, then I too……」

「Uu, it’s a little embarrassing in front of a crowd like this desu, but……」

「Art that so? Rather, this makes me a little excited though?」

Right after Yue separated from Hajime, Hajime nonchalantly evaded the octopus kiss of Myuu who aimed at his lips and redirected it on his cheek. After that, he accepted Remia and Shia’s kiss while gifting a slap to Tio. In the end, the female camp cheeks were blushing, and one pervert was going ‘haa haa’ while holding her slapped cheek.

The scene of a real harem, where one man with a child was exchanging kisses with multiple beautiful girls and women, caused the tension of the people in the area to break through the limit. 「What the hell is that!? What is going on!? Is this a shooting of some show!?」 some panicked, 「Tha, that man, what kind of person is he!? Is he the son of a financial conglomerate somewhere?」 some were imagining the true identity of Hajime,「Thi, this is Japan right?」 and some were doubting their own whereabouts, the crowd was getting really busy with their thoughts.

At last, some people with smartphone cameras appeared, deciding that there was no way they were going to let go of this rare scene.

But, without a single exception,

「E, eh? Wai-, the screen light vanished suddenly!?」

「What's this, it got noises all over!?」

「No way, is it broken!? Spare me from that!」

Like that, all the smartphones suddenly became out of form and the people couldn't take pictures using their phones. The cause of this was naturally, Hajime. By performing a minute adjustment to his characteristic magic "Lightning Clad", he emitted out electromagnetic waves that disrupted the electronics in the area. Of course, if the electronic device got away from Hajime then they would return to normal.

「……Nn. It became noisy. Hajime, let's go soon?」

「No no, what are you trying to do attempting to depart naturally like that. There are still members who haven't arrived here yet.」

「……? Hajime, you are feeling tired right now.」

「You think I’m Agent Mu**er. Don’t try to avert the topic with X-Fi*e make-believe.」(TN: X-Files series, FBI agent Fox William Mulder. Don’t know what this refers too though, never watched X-Files)

Even while knowing that there were members who hadn’t arrived yet, Yue urged them to depart with a really natural gesture. To that, Hajime smiled wryly while making a retort.

「……It’s fine, there is no problem. Those two had severe constipation and cannot co――」

「Yuee~~~~! What are you saying~~!」

「Wait a second, no matter what, that lie is just too cruel don’t you think!」

Yue’s deceiving words that were too cruel to be targeted to a maiden were cut off by Kaori who was running to here wearing a feminine one-piece dress, with her body returned to her original body, and Shizuku, whose trademark ponytail was swaying behind her.

The further addition of two more beautiful girls caused the surroundings to become hectic. Kaori only gave that a glance before glaring sharply at Yue right away. And then she immediately turned her gaze to Hajime and smiled gently.

「Sorry, Hajime-kun. You’ve waited long?」

Hajime was going to open his mouth, but before that happened,

「……Nn. He waited feeling bored to death. As punishment, Kaori is to go home right away. Now, quickly go home. Now, now.」

「I won't go home! Yue you bully-. Yue who is saying something like that is the one that has to go home!」

Yue kept pushing away on Kaori, to that Kaori reacted honestly and pushed back at Yue. This was what was called as "Hand Four" in pro-wrestling. The two girls were grappling with each other putting all their strength into it. Both of their foreheads pushed at each other without any side taking a single step back. (TN: Don't know if that's the correct name, Yue and Kaori here were pushing at each other with their hands grasping the other's hands and also their foreheads coming into contact.)

By the way, that Kaori was able to face Yue equally despite not being in the body of an apostle was because Kaori's original body itself was inserted with the factor of apostle flesh and changed into a specially made body.

It was a body reconstruction for the sake of clearing the problem of the difference in lifespan between her and Hajime and the others, but that wasn't all, she was also able to activate "Apostle Mode", in that case, her hair would change to silver and she could let out wings from her back. Of course, she could also use the disintegration ability and twin sword arts without any problem. ……Though those were something extremely unneeded in this peaceful Japan life.

Yue and Kaori were always quarreling about something, but the one who took the lead in the body reconstruction of Kaori was none other than Yue. Perhaps due to the influence when she was taken over by Ehito, Yue somehow understood the method to create apostles, so by using all age of god

magic and with the help of Hajime and Tio, the apostlefication of Kaori succeeded splendidly. Their closeness was as great as how much they were quarreling……perhaps this phrase existed to describe these two.

「Err, Hajime. I think we came right on time but……I wonder if we made you wait?」

Even while looking troubled at the quarrel of the two, Shizuku asked timidly at Hajime. Of course, Hajime said no to the question. Shizuku sighed in relieve hearing that, and then after she looked around feeling a bit embarrassed, she asked Hajime with reservation.

「Say……I wonder if I look strange?」

That question was naturally referring to the fashion she was wearing. Shizuku, before she was summoned to another world and even while she was in another world, basically kept wearing pants, but today her appearance was wrapped in a flare skirt and no-sleeve shirt. Although looking from the length of her skirt that reached around above the knee, and the properly fastened buttons on her skirt, this appearance was also really like Shizuku.

「Yeah, I think you look cute. Or rather, before this too, I told you already that you don’t need to get that shy just from wearing a skirt, right? After all, it really suits you.」

「Is, is that so? Fufu, thank you.」

The appearance of Shizuku who was shyly fiddling around with her skirt, if the self-alleged little sisters who idolized her as Onee-sama saw this then they would surely faint without a doubt. That was just how lovely the figure of Shizuku who was letting out her natural girlishness in front of Hajime was.

And then, Yue and Kaori whose hands were still grappling each other with only their heads turned towards that exchange between Hajime and Shizuku were,

「……So nonchalantly, taking the delicious part like that. Shizuku, what a terrifying child.」

「Shizuku-chan……recently, you are not stopping me even when I was quarreling with Yue aren't you……」

Even the whispers of those two didn't reach the ears of the swordswoman-sama whose maiden power was in full throttle right now.

After that, Kaori who noticed that Yue and others had kissed Hajime pressed Hajime for a kiss as expected while Shizuku whose face became bright red thinking 'such a thing is impossible in front of the crowd!' got a little depressed that it would be only her who didn't get a kiss. But Hajime, who was unable to be indifferent to that state of Shizuku, forcefully kissed her which caused her to faint. It went without saying that the station plaza became a pandemonium after that.

Seeing that the commotion was also getting larger, Hajime and the others set out to the city for a date until five o'clock, when the dinner party with the summoned classmates would start.

「I have……seen something amazing.」

After that, someone among the people who were left behind whispered that. That sentence was exactly something that represented the feelings of everyone in the station plaza.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspellings and omitted words.

The next update is planned at 16 P.M Saturday next week=>correction=> 6 P.M Saturday next week too.

Arifureta Chapter 183

Arifureta After – Downtown Date? Part 2

On the street that was slightly distanced from the downtown main street, in the fast-food restaurant that was facing the street, at the window-side seat on that restaurant’s second floor, the figures of three young men who seemed to be high school students could be seen slacking up listlessly on the chair, as though to say that they had too much free time to spare.

Above the tray that was put on the table in front of the three, burger wrappings that had been crumpled up into a round shape and empty French fries containers were scattered about carelessly.

「*Aa*~」

While scowling at the juice which had become thin due to the melting ice, one of the high school students was discharging out a strange groan. Hearing that, the remaining two students directed an annoyed gaze and an understanding gaze at the first student.

「I know that we got nothing to do, but don’t make that kind of voice. It’s embarrassing.」

「You are saying something like that huh. On this precious holiday, three men are jabbering like this……haaa~. On top

of having nothing to do, this is just empty……

Don’t say that. That’ll just make you feel emptier.

These three who had been friends since middle school were currently first-year high school students. Harboring a faint hope that if they advanced to high school then it would be an exciting springtime of their lives that didn’t exist in middle school……that something would happen. In actuality, there wasn’t really anything particular that happened, and they were spending normal days that held no difference with their middle school period.

Actually, the school they were enrolled into, was the high school where the world-shaking occult case happened a year ago, and among the current third-years, there were also the seniors who were directly related with that case. That too became the primary cause that inflated the hope they were harboring that “something” might happen in their high school life (they received fierce opposition from their parents when they chose this school as the first choice but they persuaded their parents) but……there wasn’t really anything that happened.

Of course, there was also a decisively different point before and after the occult case, and that was something that undoubtedly made them delighted from the bottom of their hearts that they enrolled into their current high school. That point was……

Aa, I want to have a date with Yue-senpai.

I want to marry Shia-senpai.

Shirasaki-senpai……is great isn’t she.

The three were facing up to the ceiling while leaking out their wild delusions, that rather than with these male friends with whom they had a stuffily undesirable but inseparable relationship, they would rather walk around the city on a holiday with the seniors they yearned for. And then hearing each other’s words, they exchanged glances among them. And then, they spoke words to each other at the same time.

□□□Don’t say something like that. It feels empty.□□□

The three simultaneously sighed so deeply to the degree that it would surely let out all the happiness that they possessed. While the images of the seniors they yearned for were floating at the back of their minds, at the same time they lamented the fact of how the gaze of their yearned person was directed only at a single person. Furthermore, that person was the same person for the three different girls they yearned for, and that fact was known not only in school, but even the whole neighborhood had already known that fact. (TN: In Japan, there is the saying that sighing will cause your happiness to get away from you.)

In addition to that, it didn’t stop with just those three seniors, something like that was just……

□Shit, even though in this world, there are many people in love poverty like us, that shitty bastard-□

□O, oi. Stop that. Did you forget already, about the guys that were turned like that after speaking ill of that “you-know-who” behind his back?□

□……Are you talking about the captain of the karate club, how he got transfigured into a big sis the next day?□

□There is also that, but there are also people like the ace of the soccer club who got planted with a phobia of females, or

the math teacher who was always acting sarcastically one day suddenly started using polite language at “you know who” like a military personnel……

Bu, but, those were lies, right? Those were just like urban legends, right? Look, those guys, they are the ‘returnees’. Those kinds of stories were created a lot half for fun……in fact, there aren’t any seniors or teachers like in those rumors.

That’s, you’re right but……

Stories that sounded like an urban legend——but speaking about that, even the story about the “real harem” also “sounded like an urban legend” in that case……In the end, that was what the three of them came to think but they didn’t say it out loud. It was the truth that students and teachers that became the basis of the rumors couldn’t be found in the school, but at the same time, there were also rumors that those rumored guys had transferred schools or changed jobs.

It was unknown what was truth and what was a lie, and that also granted uneasy feelings that they couldn’t describe. Especially because the new first-years didn’t know about the ‘returnees’——the people who returned back from being spirited away in mass were called like that by society, and like that the naming stuck—— school life right after they returned from the occult case.

Naturally, there were also a lot of first-year students who were ignorant of the ways of the world and got carried away. They attempted to go on the offensive towards the beautiful seniors and foreign students that were among the ‘returnee’ group; but……most of them were turned into ash after being shown the relationship of those beauties with “that person”,

or they were stopped by the male seniors of the ‘returnee’ group with kind gazes when they attempted to take malicious actions out of jealousy. After a few months passed, those kinds of people eventually became a little bit more adult like from understanding in their hearts that “it’s just how it is”.

Even so, as expected, there was no way the yearning towards the seniors who were so beautiful that even celebrities couldn’t win against them would disappear, and that went even truer with the jealousy towards that “you-know-who” who was literally monopolizing those beautiful seniors like a joke. Grumbles or cursing would sometimes leak out suddenly toward that you-know-who like this.

「Haa……hm? O, oi, that.」

「Hm?」

「Aa?」

One of the male students for some reason turned his gaze outside the window, and then he noticed that group and raised his voice. The other two got curious and moved their gazes to follow his, and there, at an unbelievable timing, the rumored group was walking on the street on the other side.

It was that “you-know-who” ——Nagumo Hajime, and his wives.

「Oi oi, just why are those people here?」

「That is, no matter how you see it, this must be a date.」

「As always, what an amazing line up, huh……wait, that child riding on “that person’s” shoulder, is that the rumored

daughter? So it’s true that he has a child? Isn’t that bad……

bita-! The three boys clung on the window glass, staring hungrily at Hajime who was walking nonchalantly while being surrounded by extraordinarily beautiful girls and women in enjoyment. Seeing it from the viewpoint of the people inside the restaurant, the figures of those three were like geckos that were clinging to a window, it was a relatively strange sight. It almost caused the 0 yen smile of the restaurant waitress to crumble. (TN: 0 yen smile=a free smile, a business smile)

Yue-senpai, Shia-senpai……also Shirasaki-senpai and Yaegashi-senpai are there too. Next are the black haired beauty and the blonde beauty that were sometimes seen at the school festival or after school……

Just what kind of perfect lineup is this. Dammit it all-

Aa, also that child……she is super cute. There is even a beautiful little girl……how envious.

Eh?

Eh?

Eh?

The last statement caused the three to spontaneously leak out stupid sounds while they faced each other. Or rather, two of them were making Eh, this guy is seriously, that kind of guy? look at the last one while drawing back. That last person seeing that tried to solve the misunderstanding in panic.

Ah, those senpai are getting farther see.

「Yosh, we got nothing to do anyway, let’s try following them yeah. What kind of date a real harem man is having, this can be used for future reference.」

「Hey, you guys are misunderstanding, okay? I’m not like that, okay?」

「But, will it be okay? From the rumor, those people for some reason are really sharp I heard. Won’t it be bad if we got found out?」

「This is in the middle of the city. There are also a lot of people so there won’t be any problem. Besides, this is that group of beauties we are talking about. There is a high chance some punks are going to pick a fight with them. At that time, what kind of action “that person” will take…… perhaps we are going to understand a bit, whether those rumors about the senpai that got turned into a big sis or the teacher that got turned into pseudo-military are the truth or not, don’t you think so? You are curious, right?」

「He, heey, listen to me. I really, don’t have any interest for little kids at all. I was just simply……」

「Indeed……wait, this is bad, they are seriously getting farther. For now, let’s go first.」

「Yoosh. Well, even just paying respect to the figure of Yue-senpai and the others in casual clothing on the holiday is already the best anyway.」

「Yeah-」

「Oi wait! Don’t ignore me here! You guys are seriously mistaken! No, really!」

Until the end, the noisy three students didn’t notice the previous waitress whose eyes weren’t smiling anymore even though the lips were still smiling. They exited the restaurant with noisy footsteps. And then, from the entrance downstairs, a yell of 「Rather, I am someone that gets excited from adult woman, like female teachers, or widows heree-」 that would cause headaches could be heard……the waitresses sighed deeply hearing that.

「Heeey, you guys are really mistaken. okay?」

「Geez, we got it already.」

「You like female teachers or widows. That was what you were saying, right? Rather than that, don’t make so much noise. We are going to get found out here.」

「Even though I was on the brink of getting treated like a perverted lolicon just now, you guys……」

By the time he did a coming out with his outrageous fetish at the fast-food restaurant, he was already definitely a pervert, but no one there made such a retort. Rather than that, it was more important to observe carefully the party of Hajime and the others, who were currently enjoying window shopping, at the end of their gazes.

While they were observing, Hajime’s group entered a large three-story store that was fairly famous for its ladies fashion. From across the glass window, the trio could see how the shop employees and other customers were taken aback for a moment, but the shop employees were immediately recovering their usual attitudes like a pro while the other female customers were sending their gazes as though they had encountered a celebrity. The males who were taken along with the female customers were staring in fascination in a daze.

Amidst those, the aforementioned group didn’t look particularly bothered with all the attention and they only looked around inside the store. Sometimes the female camp would ask for Hajime’s opinion and try on some clothes. To that, Hajime changed Myuu’s position from on top of his shoulders to carrying her with one hand, and then he seemed to say one or two sentences back regarding his impressions of the clothes. Just from looking it could clearly be seen that Yue and the others were swinging from joy and nervousness when they were listening to what Hajime was saying.

「……By any chance, is that man giving back different impressions to all of them respectively?」

「If he is just saying “that suits you”, then at the very least it will be said six times from only one round you know. That would make him look like a broken record in that case.」

「Based on the expressions of all those girls, it seems that man is saying different impressions each time without fail. ……Is this, the true power of a harem man……」

The trio were continuing to observe by hiding in the shadows of merchandise even while being seen suspiciously by other customers and employees. Their expressions changed into a shudder. If it was them who were asked for impressions by that many women changing clothes multiple times like that……without a doubt, in their case they would be turned into a broken speaker saying the same thing.

But, after that, after the group was feeling satisfied walking around inside the store, the three mediocre high school students (first-years) were made to taste further the dreadfulness of a real harem man’s deed.

「Wa, wait-. Don’t tell me, he is planning to pay for that many clothes!?」

「That’s a lie right-. This store, it’s really expensive you know! Even if each of them only buys one piece of clothing, there will be six pieces……is that guy’s financial strength a monster!?」

Ahead of the gaze of the trembling trio, were six pieces of clothing that were put on the register. Yue, Shia, Tio, and Remia looked happy, while Kaori and Shizuku looked a bit apologetic. Even so, they were staring with undisguised happiness at the back of Hajime who was speaking with the clerk.

Hajime handed a card to the clerk and finished the bill, then he wrote the address for the mailing destination and turned back. He only shrugged towards the thanks that were said to him by the female camp before urging them to continue the date. And then there was Myuu who repeatedly lightly hit Hajime’s cheek in protest because it was only her who wasn’t bought some clothes due to the lack of size that matched her body, but as though to say that he got it, Hajime turned a gentle gaze at her and nodded before leaving the store.

The customers who were accompanied by lovers or friends, and the employees who were left behind then let out a deep sigh that was filled with various thoughts.

「Come to think of it, once, I heard a rumor. “That person’s” parents seem to be the president of a game company and a popular manga author. Also, it seems the person himself also did some part-time work, and it was said that he earned quite a lot.」

「Aa. I also heard something like that. In addition, there was also some joking rumor that the person himself was starting up a company related to jewelry. They said that that black haired beauty and that blonde beauty are the company director or the secretary or something.」

While following behind Hajime's group, the trio were laughing dryly after conversing about the rumors that originally sounded like a joke but now seemed to have some truth in it after what they witnessed.

In fact, that rumor hit the bull's eye. When Hajime just returned back to this world, he got really busy with taking care of large problems, like the forgery of everything that was related to government administration, including family register, etc., and also countermeasures against the mass media. By the time all of those calmed down, he was faced with the problem about providing for Yue and the others. Although he was still a student, as expected it was unacceptable for a man to keep relying on his parents for that. In order to raise his dependability status, he pondered for a way to earn money.

One of his ideas was starting up a jewelry shop. If he was asked why a jewelry shop, of course, it was because he was a transmutation master, and through that, he possessed an unfair method regarding the processing technology of jewels. Depending on the situation, even without any raw ore, as long as he had the Structural Component skill he could possibly create precious stones from scratch.

As for designs, he left it to Remia who unexpectedly displayed a good sense in her ideas while Hajime only transmuted following her designs. Furthermore, just by wearing these accessories that Hajime created, it would improve the physical condition of the wearer, improve the

skin, or raise the memorizing ability, anyway the accessories had *miraculous* effects.

At present, the business was carried out from a small office, with their sales mainly coming from the internet, but even so, Tio, who in this one year was learning economy and management, carried out the administration of the business so he could work while also going to school. Rather, through word of mouth the good design sense and the miraculous effects were promoted further and the business produced quite an earning.

Furthermore, Remia and Tio who weren't attending school respectively showed their interest in the various design style or economic system of earth, so this jewelry shop that Hajime established wasn't just killing two birds with one stone, it was already killing three birds with one stone where Remia and Tio also could pursue their interests. Hajime himself was also stretching his hand towards various trades in his own way.

「Magic merchandise is selling like magic huh.」 Seeing Hajime who was making a really crooked smile while saying that caused Shuu and Sumire to avert their eyes at the same time while it went without saying that Yue and the others were enraptured with that Hajime.

「O, oi, it's finally the development just as we thought! As expected from those seniors. The predator that snapped at the bait is nothing half-assed.」

「Wait, is this, going to be okay? From their appearance, they feel like college students, they are absurdly huge.」

「Le, let's at least, prepare so that we can contact the police.」

Ahead of the gazes of the trio who were hiding by the nearby signboard while seeing the situation, Hajime’s group, who were going to enter into a children’s clothing shop, were being approached by five men with great body builds that seemed to be college students. The five college students were approaching with smiles on their mouths. Dyed hair, rough clothing, rough expressions, and rough atmospheres, from all those it was obvious that they were the type of people you wouldn’t want to get involved with.

The people in the surroundings were also somehow sensing the trouble that would happen, an uneasy air could be felt from them.

The approach of those fellows caused Hajime to look back and narrow his eyes. And then, the five men arrived before Hajime’s group, the sound of someone gulping could be heard from somewhere, immediately following,

「Hajime-san, also all the girlfriends, greetings —su-!」

「「「「Greetings —su-!」」」」

The five scary guys bowed their head simultaneously. Voices and expressions of 「Eee——!!」 were overflowing from the surroundings. The unexpected development also caused the trio to go 「Whyyyy!?」 with their bodies leaning out from the signboard. Amidst those, Hajime was,

「……Aa? Who are you guys?」

He returned a suspicious stare at the scary guys. Getting flustered and a bit shocked by that reply, a man with dyed blonde hair and piercings opened his mouth in a panicked rush.

「I, it’s me, me. Don’t you remember me?」

「Hmph? So this is a “It’s me, me” fraud right to the face…… you are quite a novel guy huh.」(TN: “It’s me, me” fraud, when someone unknown called your phone and suddenly said “it’s me, me” without saying any name and in a panicked tone. They would claim that your friend or family just got into an accident and rush you to transfer money to them.) 「Tha, that’s not it! Half a year ago, I picked a fight with Hajime-san together with twenty of my friends. I am Hide that got beaten up black and blue at that time! After that, Hajime-san gave me introductions to my current workplace, and from that, I work together with Hajime-san a few times as an information dealer don’t you remember-」

「……Aah, yep. Hide huh. Hide. Yep. I remember you now.」

「Do, do you really remember mee-」

Hajime obviously didn’t seem to remember, but it would be scary later if this Hide kept asking doggedly (half a year ago, he had tasted “true fear”) so he stopped insisting. That scary face changed into a pathetic look like a puppy that was thrown away.

「So, beaten up information dealer Hide, what’s your business with me?」

「That name feels like it’s going to end up as my nickname, so please spare me from that. Eeerr, I don’t really have any business, but I just caught sight of Hajime-san by chance, so I only came to give a greeting, that’s all.」

「I see. What an honest guy huh. Aa, somehow I recall you. If I remember correctly, you guys are that bunch who got the cold shoulder from Yue and the others, and then you tried to take Myuu hostage as revenge, and in the end, you guys did dogeza while crying to me, right?」

「……Please don’t say anything about that anymore. That is a past that I really want to erase……」

The eyes of Hide and his friends turned empty altogether while their bodies were shivering. One of them looked like they could burst out crying anytime.

After that, Hide and the others who talked a bit with Hajime said that if it was children’s clothing then they knew of a shop of an acquaintance nearby that was little-known yet had good merchandise, and upon receiving that information Hajime and the others headed there. Seeing the five scary guys who were like well-trained soldiers from how they continued to lower their heads until the figure of Hajime’s group disappeared from view, it went without saying that it caused the gaze of the surroundings to become wordless.

「Somehow, it was different from expectation……」

「What we expected had already happened, and it was settled by “that person”, and this is the result huh.」

「……“Settlement” that made that dangerous looking older bunch act like loyal dogs, huh……those guys, did you two see they were trembling……」

「「……」」

For some reason, the bodies of the trio shuddered suddenly. And then at that time when they were pondering whether to continue tailing or to just stop it already, they witnessed the spectacle of Hajime’s group exiting the children’s clothing shop and the delinquent bunch who caught sight of that once more bowing their heads to Hajime just like before.

The trio somehow missed their chance to speak of stopping their observation. And while that trio was still watching

attentively, they saw Hajime and the others who asked for a good café this time before they walked away and the delinquents who, as expected, bowed their heads for seeing them off.

Even during the walk to the café, the scene of the young bunch who obviously had preferences of living in a back alley standing up in a panic to give a greeting while bowing their heads when they happened to catch sight of Hajime, entered their sight many times.

Even when they returned back to the main street the same thing happened, bunches of guys who seemed to be of that kind would suddenly lower their head with gazes that were filled with terror and respect when they crossed over Hajime’s path.

And the clincher of all that was when a black foreign car stopped near Hajime and group who were having a pleasant chat at an open terrace café. From that car, a bunch of men wearing suits and clad in a dangerous atmosphere that would blow away the likes of the delinquents until now were getting out, and as expected, even these dangerous men were also greeting while bowing their heads to Hajime. Naturally, the atmosphere of the café froze due to this.

And then, the last man that got out of the car, an old man around sixty years old wearing a hakama……no matter how anyone looked at him, that man couldn’t be seen as anything other than a yakuza boss. That man’s villainous face distorted even more villainous when he talked to Hajime.

As always, you are in a nice position eh. Having women serving you in this kind of open place in the middle of the

day, even though you are just a brat. I want to see the face of the parent of someone like you.」

「If it's the face of my parents than you know them already, right? After all, when you tried to take revenge on me who crushed your idiotic dealings, you thoroughly investigated my surroundings. Rather, just what business do you have with me here, huh? Just as you can see, I'm in the middle of a date now. If you intentionally stopped your car just for saying sarcasm to me, then I'm going to crush you underfoot again you know?」

「Ka ka-, don't say something scary like that. As the side that actually got done in, I cannot take that as a joke here.」

"Don't run off your mouth like that against a yakuza you!" The guests and café employees around, and also the trio were screaming like that inside their hearts, but when they heard the continuing words of the yakuza boss, this time they froze from a different significance. They thought 「Just now, what did the boss say?」

「It's great that this is Japan, and I'm a virtuous Japanese huh. If that wasn't the case, by this time you guys would have already all become dust that dances in the world's sky.」

「……Do you have the self-awareness that your speech is more yakuza than the actual yakuza? Haa, well that's fine. About why I called out to you like this……」

It seemed that the reason for the yakuza boss calling out to Hajime was, once in the past various things happened and one group of this boss's yakuza got annihilated by Hajime (all members of the group were sent to the hospital half-dead while its young leader had no hope of recovery), now this group was revived back, and the replacement of the

former young leader of this group had been formally decided, so this boss came to Hajime in order to make the new young leader give his greetings. (TN: In Japan, the big boss of the yakuza (called oyabun) stands at the top of the organization. The yakuza organization itself is divided into several groups where each group is led by a young leader (wakagashira) that answer directly to the oyabun.)

It seemed that it had become a new common sense, that if you wanted to survive in the area around the city where Hajime was living, then you must not forget about Hajime's existence. Due to that, the new young leader who knew about the hellish scenery of that time now carried out the inauguration greeting to Hajime expressionlessly while being unable to hide the cold sweat that was dripping from his face.

There was no way Hajime would come if he was called to attend the inauguration event, and it was unknown what kind of punishment they would receive if they intruded on Hajime's house or school. However, if the new young leader didn't show his face to Hajime, then they wouldn't be able to calm down no matter what when thinking about the future. While the yakuza boss was at his wits end about what to do while traveling by car he caught sight of Hajime's group by accident. Thinking 「This is a chance-! Let's take care of the unpleasant matter all at once! There is no way we are going to get assaulted in a public place, that's unthinkable!」, he called out to Hajime like this to give his greeting.

……It was really unclear which side was the yakuza.

「I see. Well, as long as you guys don't do anything that involves the people in my surroundings, you can do whatever you want. However, previously there was still some extenuating circumstances that I took into consideration, so

your guys got off with only being half-dead, but there is no next time. If in the future, even if only indirectly, something happens……I'll present you guys with a really lovely second life. Forcefully. Got that?」

Saying that Hajime's mouth split into a crescent moon shape.

「……As expected, you are more yakuza than the yakuza.」

The people at the surroundings heavily sympathized 「It's exactly as you said, Oyabin-san!」inside their hearts. And then, the yakuza boss was attacked with the impulse of wanting to ask "Just what kind of experience it was that produced a brat like you", based on his knowledge that Hajime was one of those "returnees", but his instinct from his long life experience was raising a piercing alarm, so with effort he swallowed back his words.

Before long, the yakuza bunch bowed their heads simultaneously at Hajime before also speaking in chorus to Yue and the others 「All of you Nee-san, pardon us for bothering you in the middle of your enjoyment」, leaving behind that bizarre scene they finally drew back and left.

「Now then, it will be time soon, let's go.」

Yue and the others stood from their chairs hearing Hajime's words. When Hajime asked for the bill, the girl clerk around the same age as Hajime who had watched the exchange just now faced the register while saying 「Hyess! The bhill ishn't hit! Thank you very mhucch!」 in a state that was really like the template that made him wonder if she was actually aiming for it.

However, the fact that this act wasn't something intentional was made clear by the clerk's finger barrage at the register

buttons which looked like a certain kenpou master going 「Aa~tatatatatatata-」 striking the secret points of the human body. It was like a clichéd template so much so that she looked pitiful. (TN: I guess this is a reference to Hokuto no Ken)

The girl clerk was looking for help from her coworkers and manager with a face that almost burst out crying, but they only clenched their fist to convey 「Do your best!」 without any sign of lending a hand. The other guests and the trio were, as expected, only giving support of 「Fight on!」 inside their hearts without any indication of giving assistance.

「……Haah」

「-!?」

Seeing the state of the clerk, Hajime sighed thinking whether this was his fault. Hearing that the clerk twitched and her body trembled, the girl clerk’s secret point strike (register machine only) was increasingly reaching further height.

Thereupon, on the hand of the girl clerk that was striking the secret point(register button) a lot, a small hand was piled up there. The clerk spontaneously screamed 「hih」, but when she understood that the hand came from the little girl Hajime was carrying she stared blankly in puzzlement.

Myuu smiled widely at that clerk.

「Clerk-san, it’s fine nano~」

「A, yes, my, my apologies.」

As expected from Myuu. It was with just one hit. The girl clerk who recovered her calm safely finished her divine fist

training and typed on the register correctly.

Hajime who in a sense got his ass wiped for him patted on Myuu’s head with gratitude, admiration, and praise. Myuu was smiling “ehehe~” while embracing Hajime.

Settling the bill, the clerk prepared the change from the register and watched Myuu and Hajime who were like that, her gaze was attracted at Hajime’s unexpectedly gentle expression and gaze. And then, when Hajime whispered 「My bad for scaring you」 with a slightly troubled face while receiving the receipt, the clerk swung her head left and right energetically in denial.

Hajime exited the café while feeling the reproachful glare of the female camp on his back for some reason. The energetic voice of the clerk 「W, we are waiting, fo, for your next coming――!」 and the voice of the café manager that was trying to stop her from saying that echoed behind him.

「Hey, let’s go home already……I’m already, really at my limit in various meanings.」

「Yeah, me too. I want to go home.」

「The rumors were all true. I am convinced now. “That person” really had become a harem king to the greatest degree……」

A while after Hajime and group exited the café, the trio exited the café with a somewhat exhausted state. Their observation of Hajime’s group forced them to exhaustion in various meanings. At the same time, they also wordlessly convinced that it would be really bad if they stalked Hajime’s group any more than this.

And then, they turned the opposite direction from where Hajime and group were walking…… at that moment,

「Wapuh」

The face of one of the male student got covered by a paper that was carried by the wind with a plop. That male student cursed 「What the hell」 while taking that paper into his hand, he then dropped his gaze to that paper inadvertently……

――That young man stiffened as though he was frozen solid.

「Oi, what's wrong?」

「What are you stiffening for……」

The other two felt dubious while they were peeking from both sides at the flying paper the stiffened young man kept holding, and there on the paper,

――Not a bad moment that you choose to quit. From now on too, be moderate with your inquisitiveness, okay? From senpai.

Naturally, the other two also stiffened. Since when were they noticed? When was this written? Rather, how did it arrive here? Eh, in the first place, just now, the wind was blowing right……

Various questions circulated in their brain instantly, then the three moved their heads *gigigi* with crude movements like machines that were forgotten to be oiled and faced each other. And then, a beat later,

「「「NOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO-!!!!」」」

Screaming like a girl, the trio dashed on the path towards their homes like a startled rabbit.

In the following week, it went without saying that additional anecdotes were added into the urban legend of that “you-know-who”.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Next, I’m thinking of giving a spot to another two people while touching the commotion regarding post-returning home.

The next update is planned for 6 P.M Saturday next week too.

Arifureta Chapter 184

Arifureta After – The Happy Road of a Certain Muscle Brain

AN: I'm sorry to those who are hoping for Aiko and Liliana, or the person with a faint shadow and the rabbit-eared onee-san, or perhaps the rabbit-eared 'hyahha' clan chief and the 'Shia-tan haa haa' perverted princess of the elves

Those are still in the middle of being written……

That place where tranquility was drifting as though separated from the outside world, was a graveyard at a certain outskirt of town. The main building of a temple could be seen a slight distance away, and several gravestones lining up regularly were in the surroundings.

In such a graveyard that was characteristically quiet, in addition to it being a holiday, unusually there was a figure of a young girl there. She was standing alone by herself. Her hair that was reaching her back was fluttering from the breeze. She wasn't stirring even for a bit as though her thoughts were running around in her head while staring fixedly at the family name engraved on the gravestone.

But, at that timing, a rough voice resounded along with heavy footsteps that broke the tranquility.

「Ou, Suzu. What a coincidence. So you also came here huh.」

「Ryutaro-kun!」

The girl――Suzu turned back in surprise. Ryutaro who had just arrived stamped his feet loudly on the gravel path of the graveyard while raising his hand and greeted 「Yo」 really nonchalantly.

「Ryutaro-kun. Why are you here……wait, there is only one thing to do here huh.」

「Yeah, today is the day everyone is gathering. ……So, for some reason, yeah. If we did not come here, then no one would come here.」

「That's not true you know? At least, there was already an offering when I came here.」

「Hm? Aa, by any chance, Kaori and Shizuku perhaps?」

「Maybe.」

In front of the gravestone, there were indeed some flowers decorating it there. There were also flowers decorating the spot other than the flowers that Suzu brought. Suzu was giving her agreement to Ryutaro's guess while opening her mouth with a wry smile.

「……Although, there is not really anything of Eri inside here.」

Saying that Suzu returned her gaze to the gravestone. There, the name of "Nakamura Eri" was engraved. Yes, the friend of Suzu that met her end in another world――Nakamura Eri's family tomb was located here. Of

course, Eri had self-exploded in the [Holy Precincts], so, let alone her remains, there wasn't anything of her in this grave. There was nothing to prove that Eri was sleeping in here.

Even so, when she wished to lament over her best friend who devoted herself to evil due to her unstoppable madness and feelings, Suzu's feet would naturally bring herself to this place. After they returned from the other world, she had only visited this place once. On this day after a year passed, when the members who had gone through a unique experience would gather, before the promised time Suzu and also Ryutaro without even any planning beforehand…… including Kaori and Shizuku who came here beforehand, their feelings were as one.

For a while, the two stayed silent, they only continued to stare at the gravestone without any word, while recalling the Eri of before they were sent to the other side.

It was unknown how much time passed, but before long Suzu stretched her body with a groan 'uu~n', she floated a soft smile as though she had sorted out her feelings while asking Ryutaro.

「Come to think of it, as expected, Kouki won't come to the gathering today, will he?」

「Yeah. Especially because I didn't hear anything from Nagumo about opening the gate. Guess he won't participate. Well, even though we finally got a special class prepared for our sake after much effort, he went as far as leaving high school, going to Tortus saying "I'm going to atone". Something like the gathering for celebrating the one year of our return, even if that guy was on this side he absolutely wouldn't attend it, yeah.」

「I guess. Kouki-kun would say something like, 「I don’t have any qualification for that」, right?」

Ryutaro and Suzu smiled wryly at each other.

Exactly as they said, currently Kouki was on Tortus. Kouki had returned home to earth once together with Hajime and the others, but he was unable to make himself to go through normal high school life. It wasn’t like anyone was saying anything harsh to him, but it was his own heart, his guilty feelings, his will that wished for atonement, that rejected to spend his time with carefree feelings in school life even if it was just for one or two years.

Even with the disappearance of Ehitorujue who was toying around with people with his war game, it didn’t mean that the threat of monsters had decreased. Among the monsters that came out from 「Holy Precincts」, there should be some of them that succeeded in escaping. It seemed that removing those threats even for a bit was one kind of atonement for Kouki.

Naturally, it was widely known that Kouki, who should have been summoned as a hero, didn’t participate in the decisive battle. There was also Kouki’s personal declaration which made it highly known throughout Tortus how Kouki was on the enemy’s side. Therefore, that equally meant that there was no place for Kouki in that world.

But, even so, as a single adventurer, Kouki silently moved busily to be of assistance to someone.

「So there is still a little bit of time until the time, but what will Suzu do?」

「Hmm~. I don’t really have any plans though. Maybe just strolling around aimlessly, or meeting up with Kaorin and

the others……no, I won’t meet up with them I guess. It’s impossible to spend my time normally inside that pink atmosphere. It would be absolutely tiresome.」

「Aa~, yeah. I guess so. Then, how about you kill time aimlessly. Together with me.」

「Yep. Let’s talk about various things, mixed with flashback scenes too for the readers.」

「……」

Suzu was receiving a bit of a wave signal while the two of them stared at the gravestone one more time, and then they left that place. (TN: What it means by the signal here is how Suzu is breaking the fourth wall a bit.)

The pair who were walking around aimlessly while making small talk, before long reached a cozy park. Without any particular confirmation about each other’s thoughts or any previous agreement, the pair naturally sat down on a bench. There they stared at the figures of children who were playing in the public park.

「Aa~, it’s so peacefuul~」

「Oi oi, what are you doing speaking like that. Are you a grandma?」

「That’s cruel. You really are a muscle brain without delicacy like usual, good grief. Even Ryutaro-kun, you would also impulsively think like that sometimes since we returned here, right? About how peaceful it is here. To think that until a year ago we were fighting a battle where it wouldn’t be strange to die anytime, this is a bit unbelievable even for myself.」

「……Yeah. When we first returned here we were busy with things, so I didn’t feel anything like that though. But indeed, recently, now that I have calmed down I often get thoughts like that.」

「……Isn’t that right.」

A year ago Hajime created a gate that connected the other world, Tortus, and earth, and the surviving classmates once more stepped their feet on this birthplace of theirs.

They landed on the rooftop of the school, then they looked around and raised a loud joyful voice at the moonlight night. Among them there were people who were overcome with emotions and broke out crying, there were also those who were consoling those people while crying in sympathy. At that time it was quite a hectic situation.

At that time, Hajime and the others also investigated the possibility, whether in the end, it would be possible to once again open the gate to Tortus, the other world, from here or not. Hajime had consumed an immense amount of magic power, but he used the magic crystals, where he stocked reserve magic power, and whipped up his tired body to immediately attempt it. The result was that they confirmed that, at the very least, even on earth they were able to use magic and artifacts.

Hearing that, the happiness of the classmates who realized that it was possible to once again meet with the people that they had created close ties with in the other world rose to a great extent. All of the classmates swooped down on Hajime and they even did the customary practice of tossing him into the air even though it was in the middle of the night.

After that, the calming down classmates rejoiced in each other’s survival and return before setting out to return to

their homes. In the end, what happened with their houses and families……such anxiety was by no means nonexistence in their hearts, but even so, all of them were dashing through their school route with light footsteps and nostalgia,……with a super speed that would make an Olympic athlete go pale. 「You guys-, stop jumping over the rooftops!」 it went without saying that the angry voice of a certain worrier ponytail-san echoed in the middle of the night.

By the way, regarding how they should explain to their families and other people regarding the events during their disappearance, during the month after the decisive battle they all discussed it, and the conclusion they reached was to “tell it honestly”.

Even if they made lies that sounded realistic, surely if it got investigated by the police and so forth, the contradiction and the suspiciousness of their lies would be exposed. It was easily imaginable how popular the topic of a group disappearance at midday would become and how earnest the police would investigate it. There was no way that those police that were investigating it wouldn’t be able to see through their half-baked lies. To say nothing of how there were students who couldn’t come back. They couldn’t do this half-baked.

Having said that, if they tried to pretend to have amnesia, it would look like they really had something to hide and the police and mass media would surely not leave them alone. A blank period that the disappeared students were obstinately refusing to speak about……something like that was just the favorite of the mass media. Combined with the students who did not return, there would be many sides that would make a great fuss with the mixture of facts and truths.

If the situation would be like that, then wouldn’t it be better if they offered by themselves that kind of information instead, something that would make the surrounding spontaneously draw away in revulsion, or possibly make other people look at them with pitying gazes while secretly distancing themselves.

The information they offered would be,

——We fought monsters and an evil god, in a fantasy world of swords and magic!

Like that.

Of course, this was an idea from Hajime. There was not a single lie in that statement, that was why they could just act boldly saying that no matter how much they were pressed for information. In this way, even the classmates who weren’t as shameless as Hajime could weather the storm without amassing too much anxiety. And no matter what other people said to them, they could just speak back with “It depends on you whether you believe it or not”.

And then, regarding the people who would still pursue the matter deeply even then, or when some kind of problem occurred, Yue-san’s magic would be liberally used to get those problematic people to be “Dear me, what was I doing again just now?”

Also, the people who were applied with “Dear me, what was I doing again just now?” weren’t just the mass media whose tenacity status was at MAX count and the excessively sharp government officials or police. There were also suspicious organizations that seemed to be related with religion, or really suspicious people that seemed to be related with the government, or the absurdly suspicious sorcery——occultist group.

While the majority of their classmates were enjoying television or internet while nibbling at potato chips after so long, behind the scenes Hajime and the others (+ a person with a thin shadow) were doing this and that against the bunch who seemed to be living behind the scenes of the Earth but……that was another story.

「In the beginning, it was really hectic wasn't it. Especially the mass media people, they were really persistent huh.」

「Yeah, many calls were coming asking me to come out in a special program on television, or something like that. The times when I was asked about Eri or Hiyama, "Why is it only you all who came home?", or "Don't you feel any responsibility?", I seriously wanted to send them flying y'know.」

「About that huh. When Nakano-kun and Saitou-kun normally punched the reporter, they got an article 「As expected, is there any disorder in their minds!?」 in the news without any reservation at all you remember?」

「The delicacy of the reporter is also questionable though.」

Recalling the large wave in society at that time, Suzu and Ryutaro smiled wryly at each other. At that time, not only the mass media and police, even some of their acquaintances visited them to pry about just what really happened.

Especially the families of Hiyama, Kondo, and Shimizu. They were doggedly hounding the matter until the end.

The truth was also conveyed without anything hidden toward the families of the students who couldn't return. The ones who were doing the explanation were Aiko and Hajime. Actually Aiko tried to go to talk to those families by herself,

but the topic about Hajime would be unavoidable anyway if the truth was going to be spoken, and above all, Hajime didn’t have the least bit of intention to bother Aiko or make Aiko bear the full brunt regarding the matter of Hiyama and the others, so Hajime forcefully accompanied Aiko in the end.

Naturally, after those families were made to believe the story of another world by showing them magic, the families of Hiyama and the others cursed and insulted Hajime and Aiko in unconcealed rage and hatred, some were even trying to act violent, but……

Giving a glance at Aiko who resigned herself to accept that anger and hatred from her feeling of responsibility of being unable to bring those students back home or reforming their conduct, Hajime who was the perpetrator that put the bullet on those students kept a cold expression and repelled all of that anger and hatred straight from the front.

Even if the families of those killed students were virtuous, no matter how much those families were looking forward to the return of their children, those things weren’t something that could erase the fact that they had bared their fang towards Hajime and Hajime’s important people. For the feeling of a parent, something like what their child did and Hajime’s circumstance were irrelevant. But similar to that, for Hajime, something like the feeling of his enemy’s parent was also something that had nothing to do with him.

——I don’t have any regret for what I did. I don’t even think that what I did was wrong. Therefore, I won’t even apologize. You can think of me however you like, but if you turn your hand at my relatives because of this case then you better prepare yourself.

Those were the words that Hajime spoke to those families. For Hajime who was skilled in subtle deception and speech, to the degree that he was said to possess talent as an agitator, those were really straight-forward words that could even be said to be tactless. To put it bluntly, those words could only be thought of as something that rubbed the nerves of the other party the wrong way.

But, Aiko who was beside him was able to understand that for Hajime those words were his greatest sincerity, those were his resolve. He didn't deceive the other party, and he was resolved that if the hatred that he caused would try to lay their wicked hands on his relatives, then he would face it anywhere, anytime, and eliminate them.

As the result, Hiyama's family acted rashly trying to get revenge on Hajime and the others. Hajime personally broke their hearts. The other families who knew of the state of Hiyama's family then protected their silence. Seen from the side, it was really a result that left a bad aftertaste in their mouth, but Hajime didn't care for it at all.

Now then, including those commotions too, there were also things like the raging journalism battle and whatever that was perpetrated regarding the 'returnees' but……one day, all of those suddenly died down like a drawing back sea wave. And it didn't stop there, all of the news was quietly dying down so unnaturally until it was like nothing had happened at all.

「About that, there is no doubt that was something Nagumo-kun and the others did, isn't it?」

「For sure. Problems like the family register of Yue-san and the others, or the recognition of the surroundings, those kinds of problems were also all easily cleared. It wasn't

something strange at all if they actually did something somehow regarding the awareness of the society while they were at it, yeah. Not to mention how Ai-chan-sensei was made to bear the full brunt of the critic because she was the only adult involved. Ain’t no way that Nagumo was gonna just leave that going on.

Actually what happened was exactly like that. When magic is mixed with information society……something like the world becomes simple, huh, if it was asked who was the one that was saying such extremely terrifying things……it should be rather left unsaid.

Well, there were a lot of troubles, but if there is a small mercy from all that, is that no one got rejected by their families I think. My Otou-san and Okaa-san, also Taeko-san(the caretaker) too, right after I finished giving them the explanation, their faces turned grim and they tried to bring me to a hospital, but after I actually showed them magic and explained several times they somehow could accept it.

Yeah, me too. But, in my case, I showed them my Mode Werewolf so……they became really panicked at that time. My mother fainted, while my old man took out a bat that he swung around wildly, big sis wet herself, and Karashio(pet dog) howled like crazy, and my neighbor old man Fujii said things like It’s waaar~ while shooting out the fire extinguisher……

I don’t know about that old man you mentioned last, but most of it was Ryutaro-kun’s own fault, wasn’t it? Rather, your father who tried to face his son that suddenly transformed into a werewolf using a bat, I really respect him from my heart now.

Receiving Suzu’s exasperated gaze that came from the bottom of her heart, Ryutaro said「That was an accident, an accident」 while averting his gaze in embarrassment. By the way, Ryutaro who thought that he wouldn’t be able to calm the situation by himself at that time made his family and the neighbor old man Fujii to faint for the time being, and then by going all out with the instant movement of a werewolf, he intruded into the house of Kouki who was similarly in the middle of explaining the circumstances.

When a brutal werewolf of a fantasy world suddenly leaped into their house, Kouki’s father fainted, while the mother took out a kitchen knife and went into a rampage, and Kouki’s little sister peed herself. Kouki who immediately guessed the true identity of the werewolf and that his objective was to ask for help, at that time he suppressed his mother for the time being and made his little sister to sleep.

And then he punched Ryutaro, after that even while sighing deeply, thinking that it was just the right timing with all the chaos that had happened, he held a double family meeting along with Ryutaro’s family that had been wakened up and somehow obtained the understanding from both families.

By the way, at Shizuku’s home, there was also an emergency call that came from the Shirasaki family. At that time, the first voice that came from Kaori’s parent that was filled with confusion was「Shizuku-chan! As I thought, you have come home too then, I’m glad! By the way, my daughter is an angel now, do you know anything about it!?」, like that. It seemed that Kaori showed her parents her angel mode but……listening to it normally, that call could only be heard as a doting parent suddenly calling in the middle of the night boasting about his daughter.

On the other side of the phone, the voice of Kaori saying 「Geez-, Otou-san! Don’t make embarrassing calls like that!」 could be heard, then next came the voice 「But, but Kaoriii. Tha, that angel look……that’s just too lovely!」, such hectic conversation of parent and child could be heard noisily…… Shizuku silently put down the phone. While inside her heart, 「I’m also busy explaining over here, idiooot!」 she was cursing.

Like that, the classmates who accomplished returning home each went through different twists and turns to persuade their families, however, in the end, they were able to make their families believe their story about the other world, and together with their families, they dealt with the mass media as planned.

Although, it wasn’t like everything went as planned, or everything was still the same like before……

「Eh? Suzu-chan? Also Sakagami? What are you two doing in this kind of place?」

「Oh, it’s true. Suzu-chan, long time no see~! Wait, don’t tell me, this is a date!?」

「Eh? Lies!? With Sakagami!? Suzu-chan, are you being threatened!?」

Suddenly noisy voices called out to Ryutaro and Suzu who were talking on a park bench. When they looked, there were their former classmates standing there. There were three girls who on that day when they were summoned went to a different place during the lunch break. Because of that, they didn’t get dragged into the summoning. They were friends of Suzu who were relatively close to her.

The three of them saw Suzu spending time with only Ryutaro. It stirred up a bit of curiosity about the relationship between the two and great wariness towards Ryutaro inside their mind, but when Suzu replied that they had planned to join up with everyone else after this and currently they were killing time until the planned time, the expression of the three girls loosened in disappointment and relieve.

They talked noncommittally a bit about their recent condition, and then after exchanging the speech of let’s contact each other again next time~, they parted ways.

「As usual, your communication prowess is high, eh.」

「I guess.」

Ryutaro’s words that were mixed with praise was accepted by Suzu with a shrug, not looking like she was being humble or joking. As expected, it seemed that the decisive battle against Eri that Suzu went through caused a great change, or perhaps a great growth in Suzu’s mind.

Group disappearance——that fact also had a not so little, no, rather it had a big impact on the other students of the same school. The students’ attitudes and atmosphere towards the ‘returnee’ group were as though they were tumors that must not be touched and a group that they didn’t really want to have anything to do with, but in reverse, they were also lacking in delicacy with their curiosity.

Also, when the ‘returnees’ were attending school once more, there were a lot of families that contacted the school and voiced their anxiety about them.

During that one year of disappearance, there was no contact at all from the disappearing group. Other people didn’t understand where they were and what they were doing or

what was done to them. The ‘returnees’ themselves only gave a story that didn’t sound realistic at all. Furthermore, there were also students who didn’t come back with them……sure enough, the families were concerned whether their child would be okay going to the same school together with such a mysterious group.

As a result, regardless of the return of the directly related people, the truth of the case was still not clear. There was also the matter of the students whose whereabouts were still unknown, so finally, the school administration moved.

In order to reduce situations where Hajime and the others got exposed to the inquisitive eyes of society, an exclusive curriculum was prepared in order for the ‘returnees’ to recover their falling behind in their studies, at the same time psychologist were stationed inside the school for supporting the smooth school life of the ‘returnees’……with that official stance, a special class that was separated from other students in order to avoid troublesome problems was prepared.

Because of that, currently, the ‘returnees’ weren’t studying in their original classroom but were now put in a fixed class until their graduation that was located on the top floor of the school. Furthermore, it was at the corner in an unused room.

Actually, a talk of changing the school of the ‘returnees’ itself was strongly raised but……with the opinion of someone that said 「It’s troublesome to change schools」 along with profoundly mysterious phenomena, the creation of this special class was pushed through. The class was formed unnoticed but very naturally. To the degree that it was unnatural……

Anyway, a physical sense of distance between the ‘returnees’ and the other students was created. Naturally, a sense of distance was also spreading between the ‘returnees’ and the students of different classes who they were friends with before the summoning, however, there were also a lot among them who managed to remake their friendly relationships but……even amidst those people, Suzu was the one who was the most adept in building back a relationship with the friends she already had before the summoning into a relationship that was the same like before, no, rather that relationship became even more intimate than before.

That relationship was to the degree that when Suzu met those friends accidentally on a holiday like this, those friends would call to her proactively. It was to the degree that they even glared at Ryutaro with gleaming eyes that were unbecoming for a girl, as though to say ‘If you do something strange to Suzu, don’t expect it to end well for you’.

「Haah, good grief, someone like you really is…… If Nagumo is excluded, surely the one who changed the most by going to the other world is Suzu. It’s an honor to be seen as a boyfriend even though it was only for a moment yeah.」

「Fu-fu-fu. Isn’t that right, isn’t that right. For Ryutaro-kun to be suspected of having a relationship with a beautiful woman like this, you happy man you~」

「……」

「……Oi, try to say the reason why you averted your eyes when I said the words beautiful woman. If you have an objection to my words then how about saying it loudly. Hmm?」

Taniguchi Suzu. Looking from her braided hair that stretched long and the atmosphere she was clad in, she was a girl that looked really adult like. However, the sad thing was……that her height didn’t stretch up for even a millimeter. And then, her breasts were also……. No matter how one looked at her, it was hard to call her a beautiful woman. However, surely she was a beautiful girl. Perhaps, undoubtedly.

Seeing Suzu who was indignant at his attitude, Ryutaro lifted up both his hands and showed a pose of surrendering. And then, seeing Suzu who expressed her displeasure with a huff, Ryutaro was thinking of what to do, what should he do in hesitation, wherein the end he showed an embarrassed gesture and averted his gaze quickly while opening his mouth.

「No, well, that’s……you are, charming enough y’know? No, really, I’m serious.」

「Thank you very much, for the faked follow up. Hmph, I’m not a super beauty like Yue-san and the others anyway.」

Suzu went 「keh」 with her lips pouted looking somewhat timid in an inferiority complex. But, Ryutaro’s words after that which were said with a shockingly serious voice to her, caused her to leak out a dumbfounded voice unintentionally.

「……That ain’t a mere follow up. Suzu is a good woman, who won’t lose to anyone.」

「Eh?」

When Suzu reflexively turned her gaze at Ryutaro, Ryutaro who was supposedly looking away until just now was staring straight at Suzu. The small sound of her heart jumping inside her chest resounded. Suzu understood how her neck and her face was turning feverish.

This time, it was Suzu who was looking aside. For some reason, she couldn’t let out any words. She could only barely let out the sound 「H, hm~m」 that sounded ambiguous even for herself.

A strangely stained atmosphere that Suzu had never really experienced before was flowing, she couldn’t say anything. Both of them were wordless, only the sounds of leaves rustling from the wind were entering their ears excessively clearly.

Stealing a glance, Suzu tried to peep at Ryutaro’s state. There he was looking really nervous, and yet his face was really serious and seemed to be troubled by something. That also caused Suzu’s nervous meter to climb up without stopping.

Before long, with a calm voice as though he had resolved himself, Ryutaro opened his mouth.

「About the matter after we graduate high school……」

「Eh!? Ah, um……」

「I, am thinking of going to Tortus again.」

「That’s……you mean not in the capacity of going there to play together with Nagumo-kun and the others?」

「Yeah. I’m thinking, of living in the world there.」

「……」

Suzu felt like she understood the reason for Ryutaro deciding that. In this one year, they had spent much time together. During that time they talked about various things

that made her think about whether he would do something like that.

「I want to help Kouki there, I also want to be able to help guys in need. I have the power for that. Ain’t no way after this late I can become a salaryman or something with all this.」

「Didn’t you, also think about being a police officer before this?」

「Yeah. But see, as I thought, my nature suits the world over there more.」

「I see.」

It appeared that Ryutaro had genuinely decided his future path. Suzu felt like she was going to get left behind somehow, that her feelings turned a bit lonely.

Towards such Suzu, Ryutaro suddenly stood up, he then moved in front of Suzu and got down on his one knee. With his stance now, the large built Ryutaro was looking up at her. This was as though……

Suzu’s body temperature was rising. Her heart jumped from Ryutaro’s serious expression.

「Ryu, Ryutaro-kun……」

‘What are you doing?’ Suzu was about to voice that but, Ryutaro conferred all his feelings with his words faster than Suzu.

「Suzu. Won’t you, come together with me?」

「Tha, that is, are you asking me to form a party with you sometimes――」

「That ain't it. You got what I meant, right? What I am saying is, for "the whole life".」

「ts……」

Suzu gulped. That was exactly, a love confession. For the first time in her life, a confession with seriousness to the highest degree was right now said to her. The winding of great emotions that were welling up inside her made her voice get caught in her throat that she couldn't say anything. Ryutaro spoke his words further to such Suzu.

「I love Suzu. Rather than a future in this world, pick a future that is together with me. It won't be a calm future but I will treasure you with all my power. Let's go, together. Forever.」

Inside Suzu's heart, something like 「That's too straight!」, or 「Even though you had come to a clean break but even temporarily you once fell in love with Yue-san, do you have a preference for small girls!? You lolicon!」, or 「While saying you love me, you are asking me to fight together in another world, just what are you saying you muscle brain!」, those abusive languages were lining up inside Suzu's stormy heart but……

When she noticed, a reply of――

「……Mm. That's fine.」

That sentence came out naturally. The words came out so smoothly that it surprised even herself. Like that, she became aware.

「Even myself am surprised, but I too, seem to really like Ryutaro-kun.」

Suzu's face was already looking like a ripe apple. The time they ran around in another world, this one year since they came home, the things that she had piled up between her and Ryutaro seemed to have grown bigger than what Suzu was aware of.

Like that, Ryutaro who received a confession acceptance for the first time in his life, and obtained the word "like" from a girl was……

――UosSHAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA-

He howled grandly like that. The children who played in some distance jumped from shock and they looked at Ryutaro while shaking.

「Wai-, you are noisy, Ryutaro-kun! The small kids are making faces like a villager that is encountering an ogre there!」

「A-ha-ha-ha, then how about I use Mode Ogre then! If it's now then I'll give special service yeah!」

「Don't do that! A Monster Appeared at a Park in Broad Daylight! The front page of the evening paper today will be like that! Or rather, how happy are you? Your tension is too high!」

「Obviously I'm happy! It's about my first girlfriend in my life! Furthermore, it's Suzu! This is the best!」

「-, uu, idiottt~~」

After that, a muscle brain’s greatest happiness cheer was booming in the small public park for a while, together with the remonstrating voice of Suzu who even then couldn’t hide the happiness inside herself.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Even though I can imagine a ton of realistic problems waiting after returning home from another world, I cannot think of any stylish solution, and relied on magic in the end. Please forgive this poor brain of Shirakome.

However……something like the transmission of brainwashing magic through the internet using age of god magic, or transmission of subliminal effects using television……I think those are just plain terrifying.

Perhaps Shirakome is unable to leave the PC today too is because……

The next update is planned for 6 P.M Saturday next week too.

Arifureta Chapter 185

Arifureta After – The Gathering of the Returnees

Inside the restaurant that was illuminated by a warm orange light, although the atmosphere wasn’t that of a high-class restaurant, it was filled by a chic and calming atmosphere.

That famous restaurant that would be almost fully occupied on the holiday when the evening came had not even a single guest today, it was completely empty.

「Yuuka, it will be time soon, right? Nana-chan and Taeko-chan too, it’s fine to stop already.」

「Is that so? Then let’s stop around here.」

One of the returnees, Sonobe Yuuka said that and took off her apron. Following her, Miyasaki Nana and Sugawara Taeko also took a breath ‘sigh’ while taking off their aprons.

The one who spoke to Yuuka was the owner of this restaurant, at the same time he was also the father of Yuuka, Sonobe Hiroshi. The mother, Sonobe Yuuri, was also standing at his side. Yes, this restaurant was the western style restaurant that the Sonobe family was managing.

Hiroshi was making her daughter and her two friends that were helping out to stop at this period of time around five o’clock in the evening that originally would be busy for the restaurant because this restaurant would be the gathering place for the one year anniversary of Hajime and the others’ return. Yuuka and her two friends were only helping until the appointed time.

There was around fifteen more minutes until the arranged time. ‘Somebody should be coming soon’, it was at that time when Yuuka was beginning to think that that the door of the restaurant opened with a good timing.

「Yo. By any chance, I’m the first one here?」

The one who was saying that while entering inside was Tamai Atsushi. Behind him, Aikawa Noboru and Nimura Akiro were also entering while giving a similar greeting.

「That’s right. For you three to arrive fifteen minutes early, how admirable.」

「Haha, my stomach is empty here from playing since the afternoon. Can you give me something like a snack or anything for the time being?」

「Look here, the party will start soon enough, so please be patient.」

It appeared that Atsushi and others were starving. It seemed they were playing through the afternoon until this time. Hearing what Yuuka said, they grumbled「Eee~」while going to sit at the reserved seat.

Thereupon,

「Excuse me……I think it’s me who came first though.」

「Uoo!? What the!?」

「E, Endo! So you are here!?」

「Eh, lies. Since when were you here!?」

「Even though I didn’t hear the bell clinking!」

In fact, it seemed the one who arrived first was the man with a shadow so thin even an apostle of god overlooked him——Endo Kousuke. Kousuke was responding「I came in normally, gave a normal greeting, and normally took a seat, that’s all you know?」with a faraway look, hearing that Yuuka and the others spoke words of apology and consolation with an awkward look.

Atsushi and the others took their seats while speaking to Kousuke.

「Nevertheless you are really early huh. You aren’t with Nagayama and the others today?」

「Recently I am not really together with them after all. It seems that Juugo and Kentaro are going out playing with Tsuji-san’s group but……as for me, I was studying.」

Yuuka nodded in understanding after hearing Kousuke’s answer.

「Now that you mentioned it, Endo-kun, you are aiming to become a doctor, isn’t it? And then when you graduate you are going to migrate to the other side, aren’t you?」

「The beastmen like Rana-san and the others of the Hauria clan cannot use healing magic, so it is for their sake you are learning modern medical techniques, aren’t you? Even

though it’s not actually a long distance relationship, but you are really going that far huh.□

Exactly as Nana said, Kousuke who publicly got a rabbit ear onee-san lover in Tortus was studying hard aiming for a medical university, in order to learn the modern medical technique――that was to say, a healing technique that didn’t use magic medicine or healing magic, so that he could become a strength for the Hauria clan even for a bit in the future. Other than that, he was also learning various things extensively to polish his own assassination skills, like army hand-to-hand fighting technique or survival skills, and then also other knowledge like agriculture techniques to negotiating techniques, which made him greatly busy. He was doing all of that, for the sake of his beloved lover.

Although during this one year it felt like his character as a man with a thin shadow was crumbling, he got dragged into this and that behind the scenes of the world, chased after by troublesome people (several people among them were girls)……in a sense, he was the one who got totally immersed at the world behind the scene more than anyone of the returnee group, which made the person himself to be at his wits end.

Looking at Kousuke who was having a faraway look, with a lukewarm gaze Yuuka and the others sent a yell to their classmate who was doing his best day and night. While calling the name that was the proof of Kousuke being welcomed into the Hauria clan as a new family.

□□□□□□Kousuke E Abyssgate-kun, do your best.□□□□□□

□Stop it! I told you guys already to not use that name when there is no Hauria clan beside me, right!?□

The great shame caused Kousuke to suddenly cover his face with both hands and he fell prostrated on the table. It was a name that was given by a beautiful onee-san, so it was a wonder just where was the need of feeling shame from that. Even though he was the great man who was introducing himself with that name while earning the most kill points at the legendary great war with the apostles as the opponent.

「Oi oi, what's the matter, Abyssgate-san. Is your body feeling unwell, Abyssgate-san.」

「Doesn't Abyssgate sound cool, Abyssgate. Didn't the people of the Hauria clan welcome you greatly, Abyssgate.」

Atsushi and Yuuka were grinning widely while poking at Kousuke from both sides. Kousuke was holding his head while pleading「Stooop, stop it already!」, but

「Kousuke E Abyssgate, has arrived!」

「Fuh, so you cannot see me? Obviously. I who am lurking in darkness cannot be caught by anyone……」

「The name of Shippuu Kagetsume, engrave it in that body!」 (TN: Gale Shadow Claw)

When Noboru said that in high spirits, Nana continued after him in the same spirit, then next even Akito took a pose while reproducing how Kousuke once was. The health point of Kousuke's heart was plunging into the red zone. Taeko was earnestly shaking *puru puru* at the shoulders while averting his gaze.

But, at that timing, a voice that sounded as though it was shaking from Kousuke's disastrous condition, filled with sympathy from the bottom of the speaker's heart, such voice was resounding.

「You guys……doing something like that. There is a limit even in being nasty. Just what are you doing to Endo huh.」

「Na, Nagumooo! My kindred spirit! So you finally came!」

Looking at the direction of the voice, having entered the restaurant unnoticed, the group of Hajime's had approached until they were right beside Kousuke and the others. Kousuke energetically dashed at Hajime while half-crying. And then, he hid behind Hajime while raising a voice of counterattack at Atsushi and the others.

「You lot-, saying anything you like wretchedly like that! Just look, at this real harem man! And then recall it, the Nagumo of before! Just what do you think the Hauria clan is calling this guy! Don't you know that it overshadowed someone like!? No, I am not speaking about my naturally thin shadow here you know? Nagumo's chuunib――」

bechikon- A crack resounded, then Endo went through a triple mid-air spin until he crumbled down from both legs.

「……Just now, why did you hit me?」

「……Sorry. I wanted to do that for some reason.」

When Endo calmly asked with teary eyes, Hajime answered awkwardly while averting his eyes. Both of them had mutually received nicknames from the Hauria with gratitude(?), being equally a victim when those nicknames were spread grandly throughout the world, together with their activity at the world behind the scene in this one year, the two of them were actually in quite a good relationship. Feeling sympathy at each other's pain of heart and also their close affinity from both having lovers of a female of the Hauria clan was also the reason for that good relationship.

「Yuuka-san, thank you for lending your restaurant for today. Is there something that I can help with, like cooking or something?」

「It's fine Shia-san. Most of it is finished already with me and Nana and Tae, Otou-san and Okaa-san are also in high spirit.」

Yuuka shook her head at Shia's offer with a smile. And exactly as Yuuka said, Hiroshi who caught sight of Hajime's figure rested his hands and approached Hajime.

「Yaa, Hajime-kun. Welcome to my restaurant. I was thinking of inviting you all someday to here you know.」

「Much obliged for today. Letting us reserve the whole restaurant……that saved us some trouble. Even if we have the gathering at another place, if there are other people then we are going to become a target of curiosity.」

「No no, something like this is nothing much. ……You are the person who brought our daughter back home. Just something like this won't even be enough for thanks. The most that I can do is only to let you all enjoy our family's prided cooking to your fill, but I have put all my skill into this just so you know. Have fun to your heart's content.」

「Yes, I had also heard from Endo and Tamai how delicious the food here is, so I'll look forward to it.」

Seeing Hajime who was exchanging words really politely with Yuuka's father, Atsushi and the others whispered to each other things like「As I thought, hearing Nagumo use polite language really feels wrong ain't it」, or「Demon king-sama has also mellowed out huh」, or「Well, as expected, suddenly pulling out a gun in Japan is just impossible. Naturally, he is going to mellow out like that」, or「No no,

Sugawara. We still don’t know that. If it’s Nagumo, something like hiding the evidence is as easy as turning his palm you know? The possibility that he has already killed several people is…….

The “Treasure Warehouse” that was fixed on Hajime’s left ring finger faintly shined. Sensing that Hajime was feeling like taking out something from the infinite armory, Atsushi and others instantly sat back in their chairs and drank their drinks with an atmosphere that was shamelessly relaxed. It seemed that they had been trained in the way of dealing with Hajime.

Nevertheless, the wives of Hajime-kun are really all beautiful isn’t it.

From behind Hiroshi, Yuuri approached while wiping her hand on her apron, she was saying such a thing and continued with a greetingWelcome for today. Feel free to relax here. Then Yue and others each gave her the greeting while expressing their thanks for lending the restaurant.

Yuuri floated a friendly smile at Yue and others, and then she nodded as though she had comprehended something before turning back her gaze at Hajime, and said a sentence,

So, I wonder, when will Hajime-kun take Yuuka as your wife too?

Wai-, Okaa-san!? What are you saying!?

The words of her mother that were suddenly let out caused Yuuka to spit out her drink *bufu-* while she raised her voice. Looking at that direction, Atsushi and co, Kaori, and also Shizuku were looking taken aback and they turned their gaze at Yuuri, and then their awareness turned toward Yuuka.

On the other hand, Yuuri who suddenly dropped that bomb was chuckling while saying thing like「Is that no good I wonder? Okaa-san is just thinking, that if it's Hajime-kun then there won't be any problem at all though~」.

The mother of Yuuka looked relatively gentle and calm, but it seemed that she was a type of person who would drop a bomb unconsciously. Yuuka ignored her mother that was like that and then she turned to Hajime in order to make an excuse……but her expression grandly cramped after seeing the widely smiling face of Kaori who was right before her eyes.

「E, err, Kaori-chan? You see, I――」

「It's fine, it's fine you know, Yuuka-chan. I pro~perly understand after all. Anyway, how about going to the seat at the back for the time being? Because if you want to be at Hajime-kun's side, then there will be various things that I want you to know beforehand, so I'm going to teach you slowly.」

「No no no no, I'll hold back from that! It's not like I really need to know that!」

「Muu, by that, are you saying that something like the matter of Hajime-kun is trivial I wonder? I wonder?」

「Troublesome-. I have thought this since before, but when it is related to Nagumo-kun, Kaori-chan is troublesome-」

「I won't get tricked even with you saying that! Now, Yuuka-chan, let's talk?」

Saying that Kaori dragged the resisting Yuuka with her hands gripping Yuuka's shoulders and she took her to the seat at the back. While being dragged, Yuuka sent a gaze

that was asking for help at Atsushi and others, but with splendid synchronization, everyone averted their eyes. Yuuka was in despair!

「Haa, Hajime. I'm worried about Yuuka, that's why I too will be at the seat in the back for a while.」

「Yeah, I'll leave Kaori to you. Help Sonobe before her soul is slipping out from her mouth.」

「Roger.」

Even after a year passed since their return, Shizuku's worrying habit didn't change. Although, currently she had the lover who would give her the reward after her worrying, so it seemed that it wasn't a hardship for her at all. (TN: In the raw, the worrying habit implied that Shizuku was worrying for others, not herself, and she would go to great length to help the other party from their trouble even without them asking her. Anyone know a good word to express someone like this?)

Like that, while complicated noisiness could be heard from the back, the classmates of the returnee group were arriving one after another.

Nagayama Juugo and Nomura Kentarou, Tsuji Ayako, Yoshino Mao, the former Nagayama party. After that, with Nakano Shinji and Saitou Yoshiki as first on the list, almost all of the returnee students had gathered.

The ones who still hadn't arrived in the invitation today were Ryutaro and Suzu, and Aiko. Everyone knew about Kouki being in Tortus, so there was no need to wait for him. Also, Aiko would be late because of her work and she had let them knew beforehand, so in actuality, there were only Ryutaro and Suzu left.

「It’s already past the agreed time……」

Hajime looked at the clock and whispered that. The clock had certainly turned to five o’clock in the afternoon. On the table, there wasn’t only the standard western food, there were also small snacks like fried potato, karaage, mini pizza, and non-alcoholic drinks flooding the table.

Kaori was looking worried wondering whether something happened and took out her smartphone. She was thinking of trying to contact them. But, there was no need for Kaori to contact them.

「Whoops, my bad! We are late!」

「Sorry! Ryu-kun got high tensioned like an idiot, it took time until he calmed down!」

Like that, Suzu and Ryutaro rushed in while apologizing. Hajime and others were about to say「Don’t mind it」, but they reflexively swallowed back their words. And then, their gaze focused at one place.

……Their fingers were entangled with each other’s, that was to say, the hands of the two were holding each other’s hand in a lover holding.

The two noticed everyone’s gaze. Suzu raised her voice「ah」and tried to separate their hand in panic. However, due to it being a lover holding with their fingers interlocked, Ryutaro’s large hand was completely wrapping Suzu’s small hand, so if Ryutaro’s hand didn’t let go then their hand wouldn’t separate that easily.

「Come to think of it, Suzu-chi, just now, didn’t you called Sakagami with “Ryu-kun”?」

「……Seriously? No, or maybe I should say, finally. If it's Sakagami and Taniguchi then…」

Nana sharply didn't miss what Suzu said, how the way Suzu called Ryutaro changed (After receiving the confession, Suzu called Ryutaro as Ryu-kun because she wanted to show her affection even more compared to before the confession). Hearing what Nana mentioned, Atsushi leaked out his frustration of having been beaten to the punch, but then he showed an expression that was half purely shocked and half understanding.

「Hee, you two, since when did your relationship become like that?」

Hajime's mouth burst open in amusement while he was asking the two of them. Thereupon, Ryutaro, looking at the situation where it seemed that his relationship with Suzu had been immediately exposed by the classmates, he was growing embarrassed from that, but even so,

「An hour before!」

Saying that, he made a thumb up along with a lively laugh while informing the classmates. Immediately, Suzu's face became red, while the classmates raised an admiring voice of「Oo~~!!」. Right after that, the congratulating voice of 「Congratulations!」from the girls and「Sakagamiii, for a muscle brain like you to get a girlfriend……die!」「Just explode!」「I also want a lover! Someone, go out with me!」 the envious voices from the boys were sent to Ryutaro and Suzu.

By the way, the voice that was soliciting for a lover was smoothly ignored. Shinji was secretly crying after that.

The relationship of Suzu and Ryutaro that changed anew was grandly celebrated by the classmates with Shizuku and Kaori as the first in the list. After everyone had arrived, Hajime stood up and took a glass into his hand. The classmates, Yue and others too, they all took a glass into their hand.

□Now then, we have experienced something idiotic like having a trip to another world, but now, we are able to celebrate a year of our return to the land of our birthplace like this. That one year we spent in another world, and this one year after we returned home, those days were absurdly noisy and full of trouble……but, those days weren't bad. I think so from the bottom of my heart.□

Hajime's gentle gaze and expression that looked deep, calmly meshed into the feeling of all the classmates, including Yue and others, all of them then simultaneously nodded deeply.

There were also people who couldn't come home. But, even with that fact included, everyone certainly felt that "it wasn't bad".

□In the future from here on, it is unclear what kind of path any of us will walk, but, if it is us who know about the meaning of "fighting", then there won't be any problem or anything. Isn't that right?□

Everyone returned back a strong nod. To that, Hajime also nodded deeply.

□That's why, these words are going to be enough for our toast. ……To the two years that we have overcome, and to the hardships from here on! Cheers-!□

□□□□□Chee~~~~rs-!!!□□□□□

Like that the party started.

They talked to each other about their memories in the other world Tortus, they expressed their feelings of this one year since their return home, they jeered loudly at the couples of old and new, they bullied Kousuke, they made an uproar without any meaning, they ate and drank a lot, they lost sight of Kousuke, and they got really noisy.

In the middle, Aiko who finished her work joined them and unfolded a lovey-dovey flirting with Hajime quietly. There Yue nonchalantly cut in with her adult mode, then Shia and the others also crowded Hajime undauntedly and formed their usual pink space. Seeing that, the classmates went into an uproar once again, they felt for real the joy of living right now from their heart, and displayed great excitement in this first year return anniversary.

Before long, when the party was in full swing, without any particular feeling there were voices that began to state their wish of wanting to go to Tortus. Of course, the meaning of that wish wasn’t for living in the other side, those were only frivolous words of wanting to meet with their friends and acquaintances in Tortus.

While they were talking about their memories to each other, the want to meet Liliana and the maids at the palace, the war comrades they fought together with at the decisive battle, and the people they were cooperating with at the time of restoration steadily grew.

Hajime grinned widely to those classmates,

「Then, how about we go meet them for a bit right now?」

That sentence actually also sounded lighthearted.

To open a gate that crossed over the worlds, a vast amount of magic power was needed. When they returned to earth from Tortus, they had to do all kind of processes to capture the magic factor of mother nature into a pseudo-god crystal, then poured the magic power of the cheat group in full into it, and even so it took a month until the gate could be opened.

In the earth where there was almost no magic factor, to open a gate that crossed over the worlds, it should take at least five months at the fastest even with Hajime and others stocking all the magic power in their body.

Five months after they first returned to earth, they opened the gate once, and then after a further five months, they opened the gate again. And so, thinking normally it should take three more months before the gate could be opened.

「Oi, Nagumo. We ain’t going to get surprised by what you are doing after this late, we ain’t gonna start doubting you either. That’s why just spit it out right away. What are you gonna do?」

Ryutaro asked with an expression that was a mix of exasperation and admiration. The classmates were also focusing on Hajime, in the middle of that Hajime suddenly lifted his right hand and activated “Lightning Clad”, causing crimson sparks to crackle through him.

「This lightning clad is a characteristic magic that converts magic power into lightning strikes. Magic power can be converted into electricity……then, don’t you think that the reverse is also possible?」

「Please wait a second, Hajime-kun. I have a really bad premonition of this.」

Aiko’s cheeks convulsed from Hajime’s words. And then, with a small voice, she said something like「A month ago, there was a city that blacked out completely. The electricity was immediately restored but……if I remember correctly, it seemed that there was a nuclear power plant nearby that city」, hearing that the classmates also realized what Hajime had done and their cheeks convulsed greatly.

「Exactly as you imagined. I converted the electricity of a nuclear power plant into magic power, just for a bit. It took a bit of labor to create the exclusive artifact for establishing this conversion method, but finally, I succeeded in realizing it.」

「”Success”, that’s not it! Aa, what have you done when I took off my eyes of you for just a bit……」

Looking at the triumphant look of Hajime who sto——received the electricity of a nuclear power plant, Aiko held her head as though enduring a headache, while the other people were getting a faraway look.

By the way, the city getting blacked out was also something unexpected for Hajime, so he had fixed it so that right now he was able to do magic power conversion without affecting the power supply of the city.

Giving a glance to them who were being absentminded, Hajime took out “Crystal Key” and “Compass” from “Treasure Warehouse II”, he then stabbed the key without any hesitation whatsoever into an empty air and easily opened a gate to another world.

「What, you guys aren’t going?」

Even though he was guilty of something preposterous, as expected, Hajime was acting like there was nothing wrong.

The classmates thinking “ah, screw it” slipped through the gate while shouting.

The destination was a reception hall that was located at a corner of the new palace of Hairihi Kingdom.

Liliana and some other people were carrying artifacts that would inform them of Hajime and the others opening a gate, so surely their arrival had been noticed.

As expected, the footsteps of several people immediately became audible.

And then, at the other side of the door that was opened loudly, there was the figure of Liliana breathing hard. The moment Liliana caught sight of Hajime, *daa————* she dashed.

Like that, everyone was thinking that she would embrace Hajime with a deeply moving expression just like usual but……

There, an unexpected sentence flew out from Liliana’s mouth.

「Big trouble-! It’s a really big trouble! ——Kouki-san, he seems to have been summoned to another world somewhere!」

「Ha?」

The classmates also went「Ha?」as though empathizing with Hajime’s idiotic sounding voice. That was only natural. Even with Liliana speaking about summoning, this was the world that summoned Kouki. It couldn’t be helped even if they tilted their head wondering what Liliana was speaking about.

To them who were like that,

"It's true! Suddenly there was a voice that came from the sky saying"I found you, hero-sama. I beg you, please save my beloved world", then a magic circle that I had never seen before spread below Kouki-san——then he vanished! It happened about a week ago!"

Hearing that, the situation finally penetrated the classmates' head.

In other words, it seemed that in this world where Kouki was summoned as the hero, Kouki was further summoned as the hero into another world somewhere……

"WHAT THE HEEEEEEEELLLLLLLL-"

Ryutaro who looked forward to meeting Kouki was the very first person that yelled up the tsukkomi that represented the voices of the heart of everyone here.

It appeared, that the world was still not intending to leave alone Hajime and the others.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Currently, the story of Kouki's second summoning hasn't been planned currently.

If I have to say, I’m thinking that ‘I want to write the story of Abyssgate-kun running around busily with teary eyes at the underworld sooon’.

From next time the chronological order will be all over the place too, I’m thinking of posting the after story and an extra story that I want to write little-by-little.

First of all, something like the story of Myuu that had grown to about ten years old.

The next update is planned for 6 P.M Saturday next week too.

Arifureta Chapter 186

Arifureta After – As the Daughter of Demon King Part 1

In the middle of the night, in a room inside the Nagumo household, *tap tap* the small sound of a keyboard being tapped and the light of the display that faintly illuminated the room were spreading.

With a notebook PC being placed beside the pillow, and a posture of lying down with both elbows supporting the upper body, the one who was moving her small legs backward and forward in the air while staying up late was, the princess of the Nagumo family——Myuu. It has already been five years since she arrived in this world. Currently, the ten-year-old Myuu was still small statured as usual, but it appeared that the factor of “beautiful” had slightly entered into her “cuteness”.

At the end of the sentences that she spoke there was still “~nano” attached, the person herself was aware of it and wanted to fix that habit, but even with that she had become a person of firm character that was like a big sister as could be seen from how she had been given an individual room like this.

Although her mother and big sisters seemed to still worry about her because of her similarity with her father that often

stayed up late and forgot the time completely due to the subculture. (TN: The subculture here might be talking about the otaku culture, maybe.)

「Nn~. So, Na-chan will also participate in that ceremony nano?」

「That's right. I will sing a hymn as a member of the choir.」

When Myuu wrote a question by operating the keyboard *tap tap*, the chat partner Na-chan (real name, Natalia) replied back like that. This girl seemed to be a girl of the same age as Myuu, a ten-year-old that claimed she was living in America. The two of them got to know each other by chance through the heartwarming net game they played, and sometimes they even contacted each other like this outside the game. This girl was a friend of Myuu's.

By the way, Myuu's language capability was helped by Hajime's handmade artifact that was inserted with "Language Comprehension" (exclusive for Myuu, provided with voice recognition and letter projection), with this Myuu could not only comprehend languages all over the world, but she could even comprehend ancient languages. Even now she was actually chatting using English.

「Choir huuuh~. That's amazing nano.」

「Is that so? I think in my country there are a lot of children that enter the choir though.」

「Then, Na-chan's country will be fine even if the apostles attack anytime then nano. If the country people mobilize altogether and hit hard with the sacred song, you will be able to shave off the apostle's status by ninety percent. They will become just a mere wooden doll nano.」

「I’m sorry, Myuu. I don’t understand what Myuu saying here……」

Of course, it was natural that she didn’t understand.

Now then, according to their talk today, it appeared that on Sunday Natalia would accompany her parents (who seemed to be fairly high officials) to a large ceremony where government officials would be gathering. There, it seemed that a chorus of hymn would be done by a choir that was comprised of the ceremony participants’ children, so Natalia would also participate in the choir.

However, from Natalia’s viewpoint, there would be nothing that she could really do there other than sing the hymn. At the buffet party after the end of the ceremony, the children had to wait while their parents were having “adult talk (long time)”. Natalia didn’t have any friends there that she was particularly close to, and there was also her parents’ instruction to get along with the children of such-and-such families. It seemed it made her feel constrained and gloomy.

「A~a~, if only Myuu will also attend this party.」

「You can use this chance to become friends with the other children, right?」

「I don’t wanna. Even if I get along with them, if the person is actually a child of a family that is in opposition against father, it will be awkward……there is also some children among the older ones that will come to talk to me because of the instruction of their family, you know? I don’t want to become friends with those kinds of children.」

「Muu, you sound like a noble.」

「Ahaha, what are you saying? Myuu saying that makes it sound like you know some noble. By any chance, is Myuu from Britain?」

「No, Myuu is a sea dweller race.」

「Ahahaha, I always heard you say that, but, what kind of people are this sea dweller race~~」

「We are the women of the sea.」

「Ahahaha~」

Perhaps feeling that the way Myuu talked was amusing, words that expressed laughter were listed on the display screen. Natalia who seemed to calm down after a while wrote a sentence that seemed to be pleading with her unique friend who obviously had a different atmosphere and rhythm compared to her normal school friends.

「Hey, Myuu. I wonder, can you talk with me like this during the party?」

It seemed that the ceremony would be in the afternoon, so even thinking about the time zone difference Myuu would be able to become her talking partner. However, if seeing the figure of a young girl who didn’t properly participate in the party while earnestly playing with her smartphone in the corner, in the end just what would the family and also the surrounding think about Natalia……

However, even if only slightly, Natalia’s atmosphere that was really quite gloomy was conveyed through her sentence.

Seeing that, inside Myuu, the big sister soul was welling up!

「Muu, can’t be helped then.」

「Eh, is it fine? You said that recently you were scolded because you played on the internet too much though……it would be, really late, you know?」

「It’s fine. There is no problem. If it’s for the sake of a friend, then surely I will be allowed. That’s why, Na-chan, I won’t let you get bored and enjoy the party instead nano!」

「Ye, yes. What’s this, I’m happy but, for some reason, I have a bad premonition.」

That premonition of Natalia would splendidly come true during the weekend.

At a certain place in America, on that day, a certain ceremony was being held. At the ceremony that Natalia mentioned, where a lot of government officials were attending, mass media people were also going in and the situation of the ceremony was even broadcasted on the evening news in Japan.

Naturally, the hymn that was sung by the participating children, including Natalia, was also performed as one of the ceremony’s decoration, the figure of the children singing with their all was also broadcasted in the news.

After the ceremony program ended it was time for the standing buffet party. The ceremony was using a floor of a certain high-class hotel that was reserved, so the served cooking was also first class.

The adults were immediately involved in slightly difficult talks of this and that, and then Natalia, who was left alone

just as expected, was now trying to become a wallflower and the heaven-sent child of the smartphone.

「Eh, I wonder if Myuu is still not online? By any chance, is it just as I thought, that she was stopped by her mother or her big sisters or someone?」

Natalia confirmed that Myuu wasn't logging in on the chat room that the two of them usually used. Looking disappointed, Natalia sighed due to the gloomy time she had to spend until the end of the party.

But, it was at that time,

「Young lady. If you sigh like that, then happiness will run away, you know?」

「Eh?」

Natalia was startled and turned her gaze toward the direction of the voice that suddenly came to her. There, the one who spoke a line like a certain skirt chaser was unexpectedly a cute girl about the same age as her.

No, it was a beautiful girl to the degree that the word of cute felt a little lacking for her.

Emerald blond hair that looked fluffy and smooth, and clear jade eyes that looked mystical. Faint pink lips and dreamy rose colored cheeks. That figure which was wearing a dress with a gentle green tone was like a fairy that came out of a fairytale. That faint mischievous smile which had a close resemblance with a Cheshire cat somewhere despite her gentle look also spurred on that imagination.

After a while being in a daze, or possibly being enraptured, Natalia who was staring at that emerald fairy girl saw how

that girl was peering into her wonderingly「Nn~?」which caused her to return to her senses with a ‘hah’.

「E, err, you are, who?」

「Muu, that’s mean. Even though I came here because Na-chan said that you are lonely.」

「E, e? Na-chan? E?」

Although this was a wide world, the only one who called her with that pet name was only that amusing friend which was living in Japan.

However, yes, however, Natalia who was relatively clever for her age and parentage immediately rejected that possibility.

Well, of course she was. What was the chance of a friend in Japan to rush here to America just because she was saying that she was lonely? Furthermore, the two of them had the talk about this at three days ago before the ceremony. Myuu wouldn’t be able to make it in time if she didn’t depart immediately, thinking normally this was something impossible.

Even if, just for argument’s sake, Myuu was really coming here for her sake, just how did she enter this place? This was a place where several big shot officials were gathering. Naturally, anyone other than related people would be checked strictly before entering here. There was no way for people other than the invitee that had been registered beforehand could enter.

In that case, there could only be one possibility, that Myuu was actually a child of a family that was invited into the ceremony today just like her family, which meant she had been lying to her all this time. But fundamentally, the two of

them had only been talking with internet chatting, or using their net game avatar, they didn’t know each other’s face. Then, as expected this girl in front of her eye was…

「That’s not it nano. Myuu is Myuu herself, the genuine one that is living in Japan you know?」

「-, y, you, as I thought you are Myuu? But how are……」

Myuu who seemed to guess Natalia’s thought talked looking like someone who succeeded in her prank. Myuu then approached Natalia who twitched in surprise and took her hand without hesitation. And then, Myuu brought her lips close to Natalia’s ear, and she whispered softly, as though she was blowing her breath on the ear, just as if she was exposing a secret.

「Myuu is the daughter of the demon king-sama, and also the top disciple of his wives so……」

「……」

「If it’s for a friend, then something like this is no problem nano.」

Myuu stared from really close at Natalia whose face was glowing red for some reason, and then, while smiling and looking slightly troubled,

「Or else, is it a bother for Myuu to come here?」

Myuu asked that.

Natalia’s head was swung left and right at high speed, to the degree that it felt like an afterimage could be seen from that movement. Her expression expressed her feelings more eloquently than anything.

Natalia, who was made to toss away the worthless minor details and felt like Myuu was somewhat forcefully having her way with her, became able to spend her time in this boring and gloomy party with her friend.

By the way, Myuu was here in this place because of Hajime who she asked to send her using the compass and crystal key.

Right now in Japan, the time was already night, so beforehand Myuu had explained about the circumstance and her destination to Hajime and the others. Papa Hajime couldn’t say anything toward his daughter’s global acquaintance and the lightness of her movement, but Yue and the others were feeling warm and fluffy seeing a Myuu that had grown to become completely tough and they sent her here gladly. The one who prepared Myuu’s dress was also Yue and the others.

Although, if they knew that Myuu was making her friend red-faced by her actions and speech that was similar to a handsome man from an otome game performing a wall sandwich to the female character then……there was no doubt that the Nagumo family emergency meeting would be held right away. (TN: Otome game, a game like your usual visual novel, but here the MC is a girl while the targets to be conquered were handsome men instead of beautiful girls. While wall sandwich is slamming one’s hand into the wall in front of somebody (e.g. to stop them from leaving; often viewed as romantic))

□Geez, I was really surprised there!□

「I won’t let you get bored――that was what Myuu said, Myuu is keeping Myuu’s own words.」

「Aah, this rhythm, you are unmistakably Myuu.」

Natalia dropped her shoulders while intensely accepting the situation after seeing Myuu, who was saying such a thing, with a stiff and crisp expression. She accepted that the beautiful girl in front of her eyes that could be mistaken for a fairy was exactly her friend Myuu.

「I won’t ask about the details, but you really came here huh.」

「Nn. If Natalia is lonely, Myuu will rush to your side even if you are in another world.」

「-, thank you Myuu. ……For some reason, I got the hunch that in the future Myuu will be someone that is really no good you know.」

「Strange……recently Myuu is often told of something like that. Even though Myuu is just imitating all the onee-chans and papa.」

「Those onee-chans and papa-san, aren’t they also getting called as no good people?」

「Hah!?」

Even while having idiotic talk like that, Natalia’s heart was beating livelily inside. Her heart was beating fast because if the existence of Myuu, that shouldn’t be listed on the invitation list, got found out, it would become a really great uproar. But even more than that nervousness, she was feeling really happy that she could unexpectedly meet her friend, which she had wanted to meet, like this.

Furthermore, her friend was cuter than what she imagined. Myuu was humorous and for some reason, Myuu also looked adult-like. Myuu was exactly a friend that made her want to boast about her to other people.

Their talk was naturally turning lively, both of them were turning into wallflowers, yet they were looking more animated and purely having more fun than anyone there.

But that enjoyable time was suddenly broken.

Along with a sound *gashan*, one middle-aged male knocked over his glass while collapsing down. The surrounding people rushed to that person in a panic to check the situation, and they found out that the person appeared to be sleeping. The people got exasperated and explained to the surrounding that this person surely drank too much alcohol, but in the middle of that, suddenly another person at a different spot also collapsed similarly like that.

With that as the beginning, the people at the party venue were crumbling down one after another and fainted at different intervals.

「Wha, what? What is going……a, u?」

「Natalia?」

Natalia was bewildered, but in the middle of speaking her words suddenly cut off. When Myuu turned her gaze to her, she found the figure of Natalia falling to her knee with her eyelids looking like they would close anytime. She was obviously being assaulted by unnatural sudden sleepiness.

Myuu immediately caught Natalia who looked like she was going to fall, and then she became aware that she was also

getting sleepy.

「This is……by any chance the cooking is? Uu, even though this should be a normal party……is this also because Myuu is papa's daughter nano?」

While murmuring something that might damage Hajime relatively if he heard it, Myuu said「It's fine」to Natalia who looked like she would faint anytime. She then took out a magic medicine from her "Treasure Warehouse" and drank it. With that, the sleepiness was blown off immediately.

Myuu thought of giving Natalia the medicine too, but because she felt a doubt whether Natalia would be able to get a hold of herself in the event of what would occur from here on. In the end, Myuu didn't do that.

She then decided to send a mail to Hajime but noticed that the transmission was being jammed. At that point in time, she caught the sound of the footsteps of a group approaching.

Myuu groaned「Muu」while looking around. Most of the people seemed to have consumed the cooking that was laced with a sleeping drug, and they were all sound asleep or almost falling asleep. No, when Myuu saw that the security and the waiters were also falling asleep, it seemed that another method other than dosing the cooking was also used.

To do something like making all people in a strictly guarded party of politicians to faint without killing or wounding anyone was impossible with just average planning and organizational capability.

「Can't be helped nano.」

Myuu looked at Natalia with a troubled expression, and then she laid down in that spot snuggling close to Natalia. Then she pretended to sleep while opening her eyes only slightly so that no one would notice.

「Wake up, Na-chan. Come on, wake up.」

「Mmm-」

The squishy sensation that was gently touching her cheek, the sensation of her head getting patted slowly caused Natalia's consciousness to become half awake. On the other side of her faintly opened eyelids, there was the upside down figure of Myuu peering into her face.

「Myuu?」

「Yes, it's Myuu. Good morning, Na-chan.」

「Un, good morning. But, why is Myuu in my room?」

「Na-chan. If you are seriously mistaking this room that is surrounded by concrete and an iron door as your own room, then Myuu has to have ***a talk*** with Na-chan's family at once, you know?」

「E? .....-!?」

Natalia, who finally recovered from her sleepiness, rose her body suddenly and ran her gaze over the surroundings. She confirmed that the place she was in was exactly just as Myuu said, a room of dreary concrete and an iron door.

At the same time, she caught sight of children other than her and Myuu. Nearly ten children about the same age were huddling in the corner of the room where they were already awake. Looking at how everyone was wearing party outfits, it seemed that they were children that were also in that party venue. Several of the children had faces that she knew as members of the same choir with her.

Every one of them was sitting down looking scared. Natalia's gaze then turned back at Myuu who seemed to be giving her a lap pillow.

「Myu, Myuu. Just what in the world, how did this……where is here!? What happened to us!? Where is father!?」

Natalia was on the verge of panic. To that, Myuu closed their distance smoothly and embraced Natalia's head closely. And then, Myuu gently clapped Natalia's back several times while saying「It's fine, it's fine nano. Myuu is together with Na-chan here nano.」, this sentence was whispered to Natalia with an extraordinarily gentle tone.

Having those done to her, Natalia gradually relaxed 'funya' with her composure returning back.

Judging that Natalia had calmed down, Myuu separated their body, and then she also turned her gaze at the other children and opened her mouth.

「First, all of us were made to sleep by the drug that was laced on the cooking, and then we got kidnapped nano. After that, we were taken to this place by car after traveling for about forty minutes. The ones who are kidnapped are only the children that were in the venue, the adults were left alone in the venue.」

The word ‘kidnapped’ made the children almost cried, but before that happened Myuu continued her words.

「Not everyone is in this room but at the very least all the children that were taken away from that venue seem to be inside this building. According to the perpetrators’ conversation, it seems that they are making various demands just as expected. All of us are the hostages for that. The perpetrators are a really large organization, all their members are equipped with firearms. It looks like it will be some time before help will come for us nano. Anyway, the current situation is something like that. Are there any questions?」

「First, I want to ask just how can Myuu understand that much!」

Myuu’s well-reasoned explanation made everyone’s face turn into something like「Ah, yes」, but from among them, Natalia howled. In response to that, Myuu answered frankly.

「Because Myuu has been awake all along!」

「The sleeping drug!?」

「Detoxified!」

Natalia didn’t even ask about ‘how?’ or anything anymore. While her words got caught in her throat, Natalia exclaimed,

「Wh, why, are you this calm?」

She threw that natural question at Myuu. To that,

「Because Myuu has an abundance of experience of getting kidnapped nano.」

「Just what kind of life have you had!?」

「Getting made to cross a desert, getting locked in an underground prison, getting washed away in a sewer, getting displayed in an auction, getting kidnapped by a monstrous sister……」

「Stoooop, I don’t want, to hear more than thaaat!」

When Myuu explained this and that of the kidnapping cases she experienced while counting with her fingers, for some reason Natalia then hugged her while crying. Surely Natalia was getting the impression that Myuu was an unfortunate girl that had went through a gruesome life.

「Uu, but, then, why is Myuu here? If it’s Myuu, then shouldn’t you be able to escape?」

「Myu?」

While wiping her eyes roughly with her sleeve, Natalia asked a question that if it was Myuu she should be able to escape. Despite being the center of attention for the other children, due to the conversation of these two, Myuu was tilting her head as though to say「Just what are you talking about I wonder?」while answering.

「Even though Na-chan is getting taken away, just why would Myuu run away nano?」

「u」

Hearing Myuu’s answer that sounded like she was saying, ‘even though 1+1=2, why would you answer with 3?’, Natalia couldn’t say anything anymore. Myuu was just too much of a handsome guy, the young maiden Natalia-chan couldn’t say anything! Her face was that of a ripe apple!

In order to avert her mind, Natalia asked what they were going to do from here on.

「For the time being, Myuu will contact papa nano.」

Saying that Myuu took out her smartphone from under her dress's skirt. The boy hostages were whispering, 「Eh, weren't all the smartphones confiscated……」but……under the skirt of a girl was a grand mystery. Surely that was how it was.

The boys' face delicately blushed at the thighs of Myuu that they caught sight of from the flipped skirt, and they averted their gaze (it seemed that their tension and terror were softened from watching the exchange between Myuu and Natalia) while Myuu was trying to contact Hajime……

「!? Now I've done it, nano……」

Suddenly Myuu hung her head down while on all fours. On Myuu's hand, was a smartphone that displayed a lightless pitch black screen.

Actually, this smartphone was different from the normal smartphone that Myuu took out previously, it was a communication artifact that Hajime created. So that Myuu could use it, it was a type with a magic power storage loaded inside just like Myuu's other exclusive artifacts; but if it was asked what was its difference with a normal smartphone, then it was at how it was able to communicate with another world.

If one possessed this smartphone, at the very least it would be impossible for the owner to be unable to contact Hajime and others who possessed the same device no matter where they were on earth, so even if the normal smartphone was

taken away then there would be no problem, was what Myuu was thinking but……

「I forgot, to recharge it nano……」

It would cost much energy if it was used to contact another world. Before this, Myuu, who was in that age, against her better judgment got too engrossed in talking with her friend, and she used up too much of the stored magic power and got scolded by papa Hajime. This time too she recently unconsciously used the phone too much. Fearing the scolding she avoided asking to recharge the phone, which caused the phone to be completely empty currently.

「E, err, Myuu?」

Natalia who somehow guessed the situation after seeing Myuu who kept feeling down on all fours, sent Myuu a faint smile. Myuu who noticed that raised her face all of a sudden, and opened her mouth while averting her gaze.

「For humans, it’s no good to pay attention only to the past nano. Looking to the future is exactly what is right nano. Isn’t that correct, Nataliaaa!!」

「Ee!? E, err……」

「This is not a failure nano. This is a discovery that this method is not working nano!」

「Ye, yes?」

「And so, let’s give up contacting papa.」

「……」

Myuu cheerfully stored the smartphone inside the skirt (was how it looked like, but it was actually stored inside her “Treasure Warehouse”). While Natalia and the others were staring at Myuu with an expression that couldn’t say anything, Myuu crossed her arms and begin to think while nodding ‘yup yup’ to herself.

(Eerr, promise number 1 to papa, don’t expose your true identity, and don’t show the artifact. Promise number 2 to papa, at the time it’s necessary, always discuss it first with someone, whether it’s papa or one of the onee-chan. Promise number 3, when there is no time to protect promise number 1 and 2, at the time that Myuu thinks that it’s necessary……)

――”Do as you like. As for the clearing up afterwards, I’ll do it”, papa said nano. Yup, right now is that time nano.

Myuu, who had reconfirmed her important promises with papa, was whispering Papa is just too cool nano. When Myuu recalled it Myuu got to fall in love all over again nano inside her head while deciding on her plan from here on precisely.

Anyway, she had told Hajime the time the party would end, so even without her contacting him, no, exactly because she wasn’t contacting him, Hajime should get suspicious and he would open a gate to the party venue to pick up Myuu. Combining the time that they were being kidnapped and the time she spent at the party, Hajime should notice the abnormality in less than an hour.

When that happened, Hajime possessed the “Compass of Guidance”, so he would be able to instantly search for Myuu’s whereabouts. With that, this kidnapping incident would be resolved.

In the case that, for example, the situation changed before Hajime noticed, Myuu would use all the power she was gifted with and settle the problem without holding back. She planned to fight for the sake of her life and her friend’s life while entrusting the information concealment after that to her papa who was the most reliable person in the world.

In the case that she was fighting she would recover her smartphone, that should be somewhere in this building, and contact Hajime. With that, all the problems would be resolved.

With that being the plan that she decided on, Myuu fired herself up with「Yosh-, nano!」while her speaking habit that she was usually being careful so that it wouldn’t come out was going out in full throttle. Natalia and the other children, who were staring fixedly at such a Myuu, saw Myuu turn around to them, and they spontaneously gulped at Myuu’s wide smile toward them.

「It’s okay to not be that worried. Because everything is fine nano.」

That sentence wasn’t a mere consolation, or a wishful thinking, or even a bluff. A strength that made anyone who listened to be convinced, existed in her words. The tension in the children’s bodies naturally lessened and their expressions slightly recovered their natural color.

Myuu nodded once at those children, and then while whispering「Just in case, Myuu will make preparation nano.」, Myuu gathered the children to the corner of the room, then she began to set up small crosses in their surrounding.

Perhaps there was no meaning to wonder about it anymore but for the time being, the children watched Myuu putting her hand under her skirt once more. Although she had

shown for real how she was taking out crosses from there, the size and number of the crosses were obviously surpassing the range that was possible to be stored inside a children’s skirt. That profoundly mysterious phenomenon caused Natalia to have a faraway look while the other children’s eyes were sparkling brightly from watching Myuu’s every single move.

「You……who are you?」

One blond-haired young boy, who blushed from Myuu’s smile, leaked out that question in a small voice.

In response to that, Myuu, who was nodding in satisfaction after finishing setting up the crosses, then proclaimed with brimming confidence and a grandly triumphant look, as though it was exactly her pride.

「Myuu’s name is Myuu. The beloved daughter――of the god-slaying demon king-sama nano!」

It went without saying that the faces of the children went blank hearing that.

A little bit after that.

In just a few minutes Myuu was becoming the center of this imprisonment room. It was obvious that the children would gather under Myuu, who even in this situation was still smiling without even a single agitation. Everyone huddled together wanting to be at Myuu’s side.

Seeing that, for some reason, Natalia wasn’t feeling amused. Myuu had asked for all the children to introduce themselves, and after everyone finished their introductions Myuu stated that Natalia was “a close friend nano!”. If Myuu didn’t do

that, then perhaps right now Natalia would be acting sullen regardless of the current situation.

(Besides, that guy, isn’t he being too close?)

Natalia was occupying one of Myuu’s sides while at the opposite side there was a blond young boy talking passionately to Myuu. The sharpness of Natalia’s gaze toward that boy was growing without end.

It was unclear whether the blond-haired boy noticed it, but the boy was continuing to talk to Myuu while sometimes feeling concerned of Natalia’s gaze.

「Err, I don’t really understand but……anyway, Myuu-chan’s papa is absurdly strong, and he will immediately locate us and then beat up those guys, is that true?」

The blond-haired young boy――he who had the name Emile asked Myuu. The children had sparkling eyes from hearing Myuu’s story about how strong her papa was, but Emile, who was comparatively calm, was thinking realistically during Myuu’s story and had noticed some things that should be impossible without using magic mixed in the story, so his impression became like that.

By the way, the total number of the children inside the room was nine. Every one of them were all children of the government officials that attended that party.

「Yup. If it’s papa, then against that kind of guys it would be instant kill nano. And if it is the onee-chans, then even if it’s just one of them then the bad guys will go splat or go boom, or go zap, or go pew.」

「I, I see. Yep, I see……」

For some reason, Emile felt like he was hearing excessively graphic sound effects, but he did his best in ignoring it.

「But, in that case then it seems that it will be all the better to not do anything uncalled for then. If within thirty more minutes our whereabouts will get find out, then let’s not do anything dangerous. Myuu-chan too, it seemed that you did something like pretending to sleep but it’s no good to do risky things, you know?」

「It will be fine. Nn~, Emile is kind nano.」

「-, no, no such thing, though……」

Myuu smiled sweetly at Emile who was worrying for her even in this kind of situation. The youth Emile noticed that something was shot through inside him. 「Aa~, Emile is getting red!」or「Emile, you actually like Myuu don’t you!」 and so on, jeering characteristic of children was breaking out from the others seeing Emile’s face.

Natalia’s gaze was rapidly growing sharper. It was to the level that made one doubt whether this girl was really a ten-year-old!

Emile’s face went bright red while he made his objection inside that atmosphere, but the more he got worked up and denied the jeering, the deeper he was digging the hole for himself. Natalia’s face was growing to resemble Hannya. The tragic feeling that enveloped the children at the beginning couldn’t be found anywhere anymore.

In exchange, the youth Emile had to taste the tragic feeling instead.

「I’m sorry nano. Myuu, cannot answer Emile’s feeling!」

「I got strongly rejected! Wh, why? No, it, it's not like, I like Myuu-chan or anything though. I'm asking here, because I'm just, feeling curious, or something……」

「Emile is not my type nano!」

「I got struck with a straight ball! The, then, what is your type……no, this is too, just because I'm curious, or something, it's not like I really want to he, he, hear though……」

「Myuu like papa!」

「That's an overly sharp curve ball! No, see here, Myuu-chan. It's fine that you like your papa but, you cannot actually marry him……also, that, that's different from liking a lover or something……」

「*aAA?*」

「Hii, I got threatened by a cute face that looked like a gangster! No, because, your papa, he is your father, you know?」

「We are not related by blood so there is no problem.」

「Unthinkable development! Lo, look here, Myuu-chan. Even though you two are not related by blood, he is your mother's beloved person, isn't he? Then, if Myuu-chan is feeling like that to your father, won't your mother feeling troubled?」

「Mama said, 'if there is an opening then take it!' to Myuu nano!」

「Unthinkable backup! Such a thing……just what kind of family is Myuu-chan's family……」

「There are mama and papa, then Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan, then in addition to papa's wife there are also seven more wives, it's a normal family.」

「There is something wrong with Myuu-chan's father, you know!?」

「*aAA!?*」

「Hii, I'm sorry! I beg you here, don't make a face like a mafia boss with that cute face!」

Emile-kun's first love was showered with blows.

The surrounding children cackled. Natalia was hugging Myuu's arm while making an expression of「Serves you right!!」. Natalia's character was in danger of crumbling.

Amidst that, a blond girl looking slightly older than Myuu was asking with sparkling bright eyes, as expected it seemed that love stories being the favorite food of any girl were a common point that was shared by all worlds.

「Hey hey, Myuu-chan. Then, when will you confess to your papa?」

「Nn~, confess? Nn~」

Myuu tilted her head a little, then after showing a thinking gesture「Nn~」, her eyes slowly narrowed.

「If it's confession then Myuu does it every day. Every day, Myuu says Myuu love papa nano.」

「Ee~, your papa won't get it like that you know, absolutely~」

「Nope. Papa is sharp so he understands. But, Myuu is still little, so papa is not thinking of Myuu like that nano…… that's why……」

「That's why?」

The girls' eyes were sparkling with their heart beating fast, Emile was being crushed under a tragic feeling, Natalia was staring at Myuu with a complicated expression, and the boys were directing their grin at such an Emile. Amidst all those, Myuu……

「That's why……eventually, Myuu will eat up Papa nano.」

Saying that Myuu licked her lips. She chuckled「Fufu」with faintly blushing cheeks and eyes that were moist from passion. It was a bewitching figure that closely resembled a certain vampire princess, to the degree that it made one want to retort「Eh, she is ten-years-old right?」.

Spontaneously, the girls were shaken「Hawawa-」, the boys were overcome with a surprise to the point that their souls almost flew away while Emile and Natalia pressed their hands on their heart as though they were shot through.

As expected, it seemed that Myuu had inherited properly even the things that didn't need to be inherited from her uncommon older sisters.

But, it was at that time, that the symbol of terror that was blown away thanks to Myuu became a footstep that resounded from the other side of the door. The children suddenly realized and they huddled close to the wall.

「Myu, Myuu……」

「Nn, it’s fine. I won’t let them touch even a single hair of Na-chan.」

「Un, I, believe in Myuu.」

The door opened with a creaking sound, and from the other side two men with their faces hidden by masks and something that seemed to be assault rifles hanging on their shoulders entered the room.

「Oi, which one we are going to take?」

「They are all the same, right? Anyway, other than that brat, these brats are all the kids of government or army officials. The effect will be the same no matter which one we kill. We also kidnapped a lot at other bases too anyway. It will be fine even if we used up all the brats here.」

「I see. It’s us two first for the time being huh. One will be killed right away as an example, right?」

The two who were exchanging in conversation, which could only be associated with a dark future no matter how you looked at it, were acting as though the lives of children were worth nothing. It caused the children’s bodies to shrink and shiver. And then, one of the men reached out his hand to a girl that he just happened to catch sight of——at Natalia who Myuu covered behind her. But, that hand was stopped by the surprisingly strong grip of a small hand.

「……in the end, the time limit came first nano.」

「You are in the way, brat.」

A cold gaze that robbed all warmth pierced Myuu from behind the mask. Myuu talked to that man without even hiding her atmosphere of ‘it’s impossible huh’.

「This is a warning. It’s better for you all to immediately release all of us without doing anything at all to us. Ojii-san, you all have no chance of winning nano.」(TN: Ojii-san=uncle)

「……fuh」

That unthinkable speech which came from a ten-year-old girl in this situation made the masked man to be lost for words spontaneously, but the moment his mind caught up, a snort came out from his nose. Thinking that the little existence before his eyes really didn’t know anything of what was called reality, caused ridicule to well up inside him.

At the same time, a color of sadism came into being inside his eyes. When he looked closer, it was a little girl with a very pretty look. This pretty little girl who didn’t know anything about reality, if he made her taste overwhelming violence, just what kind of voice would she be chirping with then, the man wondered.

Myuu who *knew about the unreasonableness of reality* understood what was in the mind of this kind of man like the back of her own hand. Therefore, while she was sighing in her heart that as expected, words wouldn’t do anything anymore now, at the moment when the masked man was about to strike Myuu, her lips curved up fearlessly.

「Enemy is to be killed nano!」

「-, wha!?」

Before he knew it, a small pistol for Myuu’s use was gripped in her hand and was pushed against the man’s stomach forcefully.

Just why a kidnapped child was holding a gun——even while feeling chaotic confusion from the incomprehensible situation, the man immediately twisted his body but,

pan-

A dry sound rang out, at the same time, the man received a fierce impact on his stomach, without even being able to scream the man turned in a somersault.

□Shit-, this brat-□

□……□

The other man aimed his assault rifle at Myuu——but, faster than the man, Myuu summoned a similar pistol in her other hand without even changing her posture or turning her sight. A bullet flew below Myuu's armpit and impacted the stomach of the man who was at the left behind Myuu.

Once more, a dry sound *pan-* resounded along with the man groaning with a small voice while crumbling down. And then, even with an unbelieving expression, the man was trying to pull the trigger of his assault rifle.

□Fly away you asshole nano!□

Before anyone realized, Myuu stepped in and in her hands was a comical hammer that was gripped——at the head of the hammer there was a rabbit character that looked like Mif○y attached colored in red and yellow——the pico pico hammer's full swing pummeled the head of the man mercilessly and sent him flying. (TN: Search in google using this word □□□□□□□□ to find the illustration of pico pico hammer)

The man crashed on the wall *bekyo!* before crumbling down powerlessly. Giving that man only a glance, Myuu shouldered the pico pico hammer while turning around, and then toward the first man who was trying to stand up somehow.

「Hey-, wai――」

「No waiting nano!」

The pico pico hammer struck violently in full power. The hammer that flew with a force that was unthinkable when coming from the strike of a ten-year-old girl hit directly at the man’s face. *pikon-!* Such comical sounds and star images were scattered while the man was sinking down.

「Myuu……」

「A, amazing……」

Natalia’s eyes opened wide while Emile was letting out a murmur of admiration. That expression and murmur represented the heart of everyone there. After all, two adult men armed with guns were instantly killed by a girl whose age was not that different from them. In addition, there was also the weapons that appeared one after another like a magic trick.

However, Myuu’s expression didn’t show any sense of accomplishment. Rather, with a grim expression from her wariness that was raising up further, she was staring at the other side of the door and gave an instruction to the dumbfounded children.

「Na-chan, everyone. Until I say that it’s fine, you all absolutely must not get out from behind those crosses. Understand?」

「Eh, Myuu, we are not going to escape even though those men have been defeated?」

「Yup, several people are heading here after hearing the commotion just now nano. Even if we want to escape, right now it's dangerous to go outside.」

「Go, got it.」

Natalia led the other children and they huddled against each other behind the crosses that Myuu had lined up. During that time, Myuu took out a new weapon. This time she chose something that would make as little sound as possible.

Right after that, three men stepped into the room. They were taken aback after seeing that two of their comrades were defeated before they aimed their rifle muzzle at the children. They were going to question the children what happened when,

hyun hyun-

The sound of something cutting through wind entered their ears. At the same time, one of the men received a fierce impact on his head that blew his consciousness to the beyond.

「Wha-」

「This brat-」

Voices of shock and curses resounded. Right after that, Myuu, whose dress waved from her elegant twirling motion, directed the weapon in her hand to the enemies and launched it with that twirling motion and her wrist snap.

hyun the sound of something cutting apart the air resounded and pulverized the ankle of one of the men while wrapping around it at the same time.

――Myuu’s exclusive use Black Whip “This is Weapon Desu”

The emphasis in the naming was surely the consideration of the papa so that the perverted character of the whip art teacher wouldn’t be transferred to his beloved daughter even in the worst case. It was a caution toward the daughter so that the whip would never, ever be used for any other purpose other than as a weapon.

“This is Weapon Desu” crashed the man whose ankle was pulverized into the man at his side before letting go, and then it struck the wrist of the man whose balance was broken. Just with that the bone of the wrist was smashed and the man screamed while dropping his gun. The collapsed man tried to ready his rifle while the man whose wrist was broken tried to take out his pistol from his waist, but the tip of the whip bent and hit the head of the two men hard almost at the same time and robbed them of their consciousness.

「Mu-, there is still one more nano!」

「-, what the, you-」

The last man who was standing by outside the room showed his figure while pulling his rifle’s trigger toward the girl who instantly made the three men entering the room faint. *da da da da da-* Amidst the fiercely reverberating sound of a gun shooting Myuu threw away her black whip and took out the “Pikko Piko Hammeeer” once again and threw it forward.

Myuu, who was in the line of fire, was hiding in the shadow of the “Pikko Piko Hammeeer” so that the bullets didn’t hit her. The stray bullets that missed Myuu passed through to the back——toward the group of children behind.

【Kyaaah, wait, eee!?】

【Li, liees……】

Before the eyes of Natalia, Emile, and the others who spontaneously screamed, the bullets were stopping with ripples spreading throughout midair.

——Myuu’s exclusive use　Barrier Artifact “Don’t Touch, You Pervert!”

The lined up crosses were artifacts where a barrier would be deployed with those crosses as the base. So that bullets wouldn’t hit the children even in the worst case, Myuu made a simple safe zone inside the room beforehand. The naming made apparent just what kind of situation that the creator imagined this artifact would be used for.

And then, Myuu herself who had completely protected the children from the wicked bullets was……

【Sleep nano.】

【aAA!?】

The thrown “Pikko Piko Hammeeer” instantly blocked the sight of the enemy and within an instant Myuu circled to the back of the opponent with low steps as though she was crawling on the ground, and with two kodachi in her hands, she rotated while severing the tendons of the enemy’s two legs. At the same time, the head of the man who became unable to keep standing and crumbled down was hit and hit

by two consecutive pommel strikes, causing the man to faint with the white of his eyes exposed.

――Myuu's exclusive use Twin Katana "Muuramasa-Kotetsuu"

This artifact would react to Myuu's image and could activate high-speed vibration-slash wave-impact generation, on top of that, just by holding it would cause Myuu's perception and physical ability to rise. These two kodachi were truly worthy to be called as "demon sword".

By the way, the twin sword art that Myuu learned was based from Kaori's twin large sword art combined with Shizuku's Yaegashi-style. Especially the combo of the rotating slash continued with a pommel strike just now was a technique that was just one step short of being the secret technique of the Yaegashi-style.

「For now we managed to endure through emergency, but reinforcements will surely come soon, so everyone, prepare to escape.」

Myuu twirled the two kodachi before like a magic trick, and the two swords disappeared somewhere. Looking at Myuu, the children finally raised their joyful voices and rushed out from behind the crosses. Their mouths sent Myuu words of praise like「Myuu-chan is amazing!」「So cool!」「Stro―ng!」.

「Myuu! Are you okay? You are not injured?」

「Myuu-chan! You are okay!?」

「Na-chan, Emile. Myuu is fine nano. Rather than that, the next enemy will come soon, so we are going to move to a place where it's easier to fight while we have time. It will be

dangerous if they throw a grenade in a dead end closed room like this.

Even though Myuu had cut a swath through grown-up men like butter, she didn’t look particularly proud and instead calmly gave the children the next instruction. Witnessing this, Natalia and Emile raised an enraptured voice「Fuai」 sounding extremely stupid.

Myuu gave a glance at the two of them who were like that, and then she took an action that made Natalia want to scream while making the boys feel both really happy and embarrassed. After all, Myuu’s dress suddenly vanished.

「Fuwah」

「Wai-, hey-, you guys, don’t look-」

The dress was only stored inside the “Treasure Warehouse”, but from the point of view of the children who didn’t know about such a thing, it looked like Myuu was suddenly only wearing underwear. Furthermore, the undressed Myuu was wearing a green baby doll that wafted off an adult air which made one want to say ‘isn’t that a bit inappropriate for a ten-year-old?’

Myuu’s white skin that looked transparent was exposed generously, but there was no color of shame at Myuu’s serious expression. For Myuu who once went through an adventure in a world of sword and magic, something of this degree wasn’t worth feeling bothered about at all, to say nothing of how it was in the middle of a battle right now.

And then, in this battlefield, there was one reason why Myuu took off her dress.

Right after that, Myuu’s body was enveloped with a faint light, and then in the next moment, Myuu transformed into a new outfit.

A dress shirt that really resembled what Yue was wearing, and white-hot pants that resembled the one that Shia was wearing. White knee high socks that exposed the absolute territory of her legs, and cute frilly short boots. Her waist was wrapped with two gun belts like what Shizuku wore crossing each other.

A miniaturized “Picco Pico Hammeeer” was attached to the back of the gun belt on that waist while colorful gems were fitted on the countless slots that were usually for storing bullets. On Myuu’s two thighs at opposing sides were two gun holsters fitted with “Donneerr-Schlaaag” while on her back were “Muuramasa-Kotetsuu” attached crossing each other.

This was exactly the complete battle readiness of Myuu! She transformed instantly. That figure with an outfit change and weapon change was just like a magical girl somewhere!

In fact, all of the children that were directing yearning looks at Myuu said□Myuu-chan is a magical girl……□.

But, at that time, sounds of angry voices and many footsteps running to here entered Myuu’s ears. It appeared that she couldn’t expect the enemy to only send a small number of their forces anymore, and she also couldn’t hope to just wait-and-see. The enemy had clearly understood that they weren’t attacking but were receiving a counterattack, so they were sending their “battle force” to here.

Most likely, it would be thirty or forty more minutes before the time limit where Hajime would notice the strangeness. If Myuu was asked whether she could buy time until then by

holing up, then as expected, no matter how many times she was reassessing the situation the answer that she came up with was doubtful.

Above all else, teachings like a nonaggressive defense of constantly being in defensive while kept being getting done in——was something that Myuu didn’t get taught with!

「You all are enemy nano. Enemy is to be pow-wowed nano!」

With her two beloved guns that were gifted to her by her beloved papa in two hands, *click* Myuu made a wide fearless grin.

Right now, the daughter of the demon king was starting to move.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

It feels like, I’m just doing whatever I like……

But, I’m not reflecting or regretting. Aa, I’m having fun writing.

About the trivial detail, I will be happy if everyone turns a blind eye with your usual tolerance of [Well, this is Shirakome after all].

The next update is planned for 6 P.M Saturday next week too.

Arifureta Chapter 187

Arifureta After – Christmas Commemoration Santa-san's Present

To all the riajuu, and to the villagers of loneliness village too, to everyone.

Merry Christmas!

Part 1

People dressed in colorful costumes, mysterious creatures(mascots), shrieks that contained joy and excitement, sound effects and music that were resounding here and there.

That place, which looked unreal and extraordinary, was a certain famous theme park.

The season was winter. Furthermore, today was the day when the end of the year would soon arrive——it was Christmas.

It was natural that there were more lovers than usual, but there were also people who came with their family or fellow friends. They all came in droves to enjoy, to their heart’s content, this theme park that had been remodeled for only a limited time, dyed in the color of Christmas.

The theme park, which had amassed such a number of visitors that it made the face of the management to burst out in a chuckle, was visited by a group that was a little special. It was a group that consisted of one man and eight beautiful girls and women. On the shoulder of that man was a little girl with sparkling bright eyes. It went without saying that this group was Hajime and the wives (Yue, Shia, Tio, Kaori, Shizuku, Remia, Aiko, and Liliana). Shuu and Sumire had work. It also went without saying that the two of them were shedding tears because they couldn’t come.

By the way, in the current time, Liliana was still unable to separate herself from the kingdom, so normally she was staying in the kingdom. However, in this long-awaited holy night, it would be too cruel to leave Liliana alone, so Hajime opened a gate and kidnapped Liliana who was in the middle of work.

For the moment, by using the system to convert electricity into magic power (Hajime had built a personal geothermal electric power generator deep underground so he could convert magic power as he pleased), the number of times they could freely come and go between Tortus and earth had increased, so there was no particular problem with doing this.

「Papa, papa! There, let's go there nano! That one with shark-san going haup!」(TN: Seems Myuu is referring to a shark opening its jaw and then swallowing in a flash.)

「Yes yes. Even though it's cold here, but you intentionally chose water attraction huh. Is this because of Myuu's race trait?」

Myuu was given a ride on Hajime's shoulder, her legs were swinging back and forth while she was squealing merrily. Her head was covered with a fluffy Santa hat, and her appearance was that of a mini skirt Santa costume. Her legs were wrapped with white stockings, and her boots were white with a pompon attached, each time her legs moved they would flutter around.

With emerald blonde hair that flowed down from the Santa hat, her well ordered gentle features that were inherited from her mother, her innocent merriness, and her fawning over her papa with all her might made this little girl stand out despite all the onee-chan surrounding the papa. The

gazes of the people in the surrounding were unconsciously pulled toward her, and when they caught sight of her they wouldn’t be able to help themselves from loosening up their expression warmly.

Just as Santa Myuu wished for, papa Hajime was heading toward the aquatic attraction where they would have an adventure on a river, where a giant shark was lurking.

While waiting, the other visitors kept stealing glances toward the beautiful appearance of Yue and the others…… however, there was no such thing happening. Due to an artifact that obstructed people’s recognizance, the surrounding wasn’t paying any attention to Yue and the others.

In exchange, it was Yue and the others whose gazes were wandering around restlessly. Especially Liliana whose familiarity with this world was still faint. She seemed to be receiving culture shocks from various things, and from behind the eyeglass of the recognizance obstruction, her gaze, that was possibly sparkling even brighter than Myuu’s, was running through the area.

They had entered the theme park in the morning, and by now the sun had gone down considerably, but Liliana’s excitement hadn’t settled down yet.

□……Really, Hajime-san’s world is just like a jack-in-the-box. They are building a facility like this only for the sake of amusement. The scale of this is just like a small city, you know? The sightseeing ward at Furen is also something, but this place is on a different level. No, should I perhaps call this as the difference in passion and seriousness toward amusement? Even though this is a large scale facility, I can see their fixation even on the minor details. It has surpassed

the rationality as a mere business, and I can feel the zeal of the people affecting the construction. I wonder about how much they spent in building this. And the profit? The number of visitors per year? The development in the future? The owner of this facility is a common merchant……no, the owner is a corporation, isn’t it? If this can be managed by the country instead……. No, if the substantial aspect is left to Furen while the country becomes the contract partner……

It seemed that Liliana was getting excited at a point that was slightly off. Even though she had arrived here in this rare chance to the world of dreams, furthermore, it was on the holy night, this princess of another world seemed to be curious about the selling point of the theme park instead. And what was mysterious from this was that the sparkling eyes of a dreaming maiden now strangely looked like the fiercely glaring eyes of someone aiming for money.

After Hajime returned to earth, it could be imagined just how hard Liliana. who was left behind, was working, so if it was asked if this couldn’t be helped then perhaps it really couldn’t be helped……but perhaps she had been neglected a bit too much. Hajime, Yue, and the others were sending lukewarm gazes mixed with pity toward Liliana.

While that happened, the turn for Hajime and the others had arrived. They boarded the boat that had drifted in in front of their eyes. The boat had a roof attached and could be boarded by around twenty people, with a vertical bench set up at the center so that the occupants could sit while facing the outside.

Myuu sat down on Hajime’s lap like it was only natural and was staring at the route looking thrilled.

Before long the boat slowly advanced. At the same time, an onee-san, looking like an adventurer with a rifle in one hand, was talking with a lot of realism about just how dangerous this adventure would be and how brutal the existence that was lurking at the bottom of the water was.

Just as could be expected from a worker at a large-scale theme park, her talking skill was first class. The adults were enjoying the atmosphere like an adult, and the children were looking at the water looking scared while their hand grasped their parents' hand tightly.

「Papa.」

「Hm? What is it Myuu?」

Hajime tilted his head at the call of Myuu above his lap who was looking up over her shoulder at Hajime while he was fixing the position of her Santa hat that had shifted. Myuu was asking her papa cheerfully.

「If the shark-san attacks, that onee-san will be the one who defeats it nano?」

「Yeah, I guess. She will shot it with that rifle to protect us.」

「Hm~mm」

When Myuu heard what Hajime said, she began to stare fixedly at the onee-san. The onee-san smiled pleasantly toward the gaze of the cute Santa-san, and she waved her hand a bit. As expected from an onee-san of a theme park. Her zero yen smile was also super first class.

But, if it was a normal child they would be a bit embarrassed before hiding in the shadow of their parent, or they would

smile back normally, but in this scene Myuu’s reaction was……

「Fuh」

For some reason, Myuu sighed a little while she shrugged as though to say「Yare yare daze」. A crack entered the onee-san’s super smile! A cramp entered papa Hajime’s expression! (TN: Yare yare daze, I think in English it’s something like ‘oh dear, good grief’)

Using the indispensable technique for a theme park worker, the “Instant Switch”, the Onee-san immediately fixed her smiling face, but Hajime’s expression was still cramped while tapping Myuu’s head. And then, when he asked the reason of Myuu’s attitude just now, she answered「Because, that onee-san looks weak」. It appeared that just now was Myuu’s way of wanting to say「Don’t force yourself okay」.

While that was happening, an event began in the attraction. On the water’s surface, there was a fin that was beginning to appear. The onee-san then shot a warning shot with her rifle. It was a fake rifle without any bullets, but a water splash occurred with matching timing. From the viewpoint of the children, it looked like the onee-san was shooting her rifle and drove away something. In fact, the little kids were raising voices of joy.

However, the boat suddenly shook as though something had pushed it up from below, and wreckages of seriously damaged ships from shark attacks were beginning to appear. The expression of the children began to show nervousness and fear once more. And those feelings reached the peak when a giant shark with its giant jaw opened wide leaped out from the water’s surface.

‘waa—’ ‘kyaa—’ Amidst those resounding excited voices, the onee-san drove away the giant shark with her rifle. However, the shaking boat caused her to slip and fall down. It appeared that her ankle got twisted (of course it was the setting), then saying that she couldn’t shoot the rifle like this, she called to the crowd ‘someone work with me!’. Naturally, the one who would cooperate would be the little kids.

「Go on, Myuu. You too go there.」

「Yes nano.」

A group of little kids fired the rifle given to them by the onee-san looking nervous, or possibly excited. Myuu also joined into that group.

「……Uu~n, how unexpected desu. If it’s Myuu-chan, she should know already about *more than the real thing,* doesn’t she?」

Shia tilted her head even while pleasantly watching Myuu who was making merry at the imitation shark. Myuu was different from normal children because she knew about real monsters of the sea and also about the struggle for life. Yet Myuu’s figure, which was seriously looking excited with this regardless of all that, was a bit strange.

「Fufu. Of course Myuu understands what is going on. But, the strange amusement of a dangerous experience with guaranteed safety caused Myuu to feel that it’s something unusual and interesting instead.」

「……Nn. Recently she’s been getting engrossed in battle games, this is a little bit troubling.」

「There is also our training, and there art also her staying up late at night.」

「Lack of sleep for young children will cause a bad influence on their growth. Hajime-kun, it's not good unless you firmly warn her, you know?」

Papa Hajime was smiling wryly toward Aiko's warning while he nodded. That was also something that Hajime was worrying about recently.

「Ah, it's Myuu-chan's turn now.」

「Leave the camera to me. Myuu-chan fighting a giant shark, I'll catch it in the picture perfectly.」

Hearing what Kaori pointed out, Shizuku readied a single-lens reflex camera. The target of that lens was the figure of Myuu who was having a rifle handed to her right now.

Normally the onee-san would gently teach the kid the way of holding the rifle and also help prop up the kid. Then by aiming at the timing when the shark jumped out, she would say「It's now! Fire!」where sparks would scatter from the shark's body and mouth, giving a show as though the shark had been shot.

But, the small Santa who received the rifle was a super little girl that had become thoroughly familiar with gunpowder smoke, sparks, and firearms in another world. Furthermore, right now she was a trained little girl that had been forged by her all cheat onee-san and her demon king papa.

Therefore, the moment Myuu received the rifle, she twirled it with a familiar motion and shouldered it on her shoulder before turning her gaze to the water surface. The hands of the onee-san that were going to support the little child were

wandering about in the air. That figure which was shouldering a long rifle was strangely looking appropriate on the miniskirt Santa little girl, which caused the eyes of the visitors to blink. Shizuku released the camera shutter. Consecutively.

「Err, I wonder, what is your name young miss~?」

With a professional spirit, the onee-san asked her name.

「It's Myuu. I am six years old. A woman of the sea.」

「……S, so it's Myuu-chan! Yoosh, Myuu-chan, if we advance just a little bit more we should be able to escape, so let's do our best and drive away the scary shark, okay?」

Onee-san is a pro! No matter what kind of tricky customer she faced she wouldn't waver!

She wouldn't waver, but Myuu, who heard onee-san's words of「drive away」, sent a glance at the onee-san as a fearless smile floated on her lips……

「Drive it away nano? That's also not bad but……no one will mind even if I do the shark in right?」

「No, that will be troubling.」

Onee-san plainly replied!

But, in the next moment, the giant shark jumped out all of a sudden while raising water with it. Myuu instantly readied her rifle. She placed the stock part on her shoulder, her left hand supported the barrel, and her sight lined up with the rear sight. She really looked the part.

The eyes of the onee-san were starting to get far away. The children were going ‘waa’ raising voices of admiration. The adults were directing complicated gazes at Hajime and the others who were Myuu’s guardian.

On that boat which was gradually turning chaotic, the small Santa’s lovely speech resounded.

「I’ll blow off your head nano!」

The sound effect of *dopan* resounded and sparks scattered inside the mouth of the giant shark. The giant shark vanished into the water. Light was also vanishing from the onee-san’s eyes. The voice of the adults cheering the children was already disappearing.

Amidst all that, Myuu, who twirled the rifle with an experienced gesture as expected before resting it on her shoulder, a beat later made a resolute thumbs up with 「Myu!」. (TN: Here she is not saying her own name, it was more like a peculiar voice that Myuu sometimes makes.)

On the boat, where various things had vanished, relentless sounds of shutter clicks were resounding.

Part 2

「Oh, it’s starting nano!」

The sun had already completely sunk, however, the dazzling light of the theme park that was spreading, as though to exterminate the darkness of night, was illuminating Myuu who was in a good mood. On Hajime’s shoulder, Myuu was pointing at the lead group of the parade.

A night parade was starting in the theme park. Tonight was also Christmas, so the parade was showier and more extravagant than usual. The people who were gathering on the streets were also crowding around until the place was jam-packed.

Hajime’s group were watching the parade that earned a full score in its entertainment, but after a while, suddenly Hajime lowered Myuu down from his shoulder. And then, Hajime put the puzzled Myuu on Tio’s shoulder. If it was Tio, whose height was only a bit shorter than Hajime, then Myuu would still be able to watch the parade.

Hajime exchanged a look with Yue and the others. For the sake of this day, he had prepared this and that and made arrangements with the others beforehand. Due to that, Hajime intended to go away from this spot.

「Myuu. Papa will go away for a bit to do some errands. I’ll come back soon, so wait for a bit here.」

「……Yes nano.」

Hajime felt like something was pulling him back looking at Myuu who made a bit of a lonely expression, but he somehow shook it off. Today was the first grand Christmas event for Myuu. They didn’t make it in time for the previous Christmas because they had only made it back to earth and there was no time, so they only did something like a small party for the family. That was why, no matter what papa Hajime wanted to do that for the sake of his beloved daughter.

Hajime slipped into the crowd of people and vanished. Myuu stared at his figure as he left but was urged by Yue and the others until her gaze returned to the parade. A joyful smile immediately returned to her face, but as expected, when her beloved papa wasn’t with her she seemed unable to go all out enjoying the event.

But, that gloominess too was immediately cleared up.

shan shan shan shan Clear bell sounds could be heard. Everyone seemed to think that it was a sound from the parade, but that sound was getting larger which caused the people to go「Hmm?」while tilting their head. Yes, the sound of the bells that were growing increasingly audible was coming from up above.

As though they were guided by an unknown source the people began to look above, and over there was,

「Ah, that’s Santa-san-」

A boy somewhere pointed while raising his voice. Following where the boy pointed the people looked up, and they raised their voices with「Eh, lies, it’s flying!?」, or「Re, reindeer? The real thing!?」「Ama~zing!!」and so on.

Yes, at where the boy was pointing, there was the appearance of reindeer pulling a sleigh that Santa Claus was riding, gliding through the sky.

The normally impossible supernatural phenomenon was something that should make anyone scream, but this place was a country of dreamers. A fantasy world decorated with the unreal and extraordinary. Therefore, everyone was thinking that it was the theme park’s production, their shock was gradually turning into cheers. The staff, whom were doing the parade, were looking up open-mouthed, but the people who were looking up were to busy to notice that.

Before long, Santa Claus, who was riding through the starry sky of the holy night, was swiveling down as though going down through a spiraling staircase that was drawn midair. And then, the sleigh slowly approached the crowd.

The approaching sleigh made the crowd part naturally. The destination of that sleigh was a small Santa-san.

「Merry Christmas, my small compatriot young lady.」

The Santa Claus who got down from the sleigh had a face that was difficult to understand with his white beard and round glasses. He then kneeled in front of Myuu who was put down from Tio’s shoulder.

In response, Myuu blinked her eyes and responded.

「Papa, what are you doing nano?」

「……It’s not papa. It’s Santa.」

「Eh, but……」

「It’s Santa.」

「Pa――」

「It’s Saaan, taaa-」

「Ah, yes.」

Myuu nodded repeatedly at the Santa that felt a little desperate. She was an obedient and good child.

Santa nodded in satisfaction at Myuu while ignoring to the utmost Yue and the others whose shoulders were shaking. He then put the large white bag that was piled on the sleigh in front of Myuu.

「Now then, for you who have been a really good kid through this year, here is this present from Santa.」

「Present?」

To Myuu who tilted her head, Santa took out a box that was inlaid with sparkling stones that looked like lovely pink colored gems from his bag. That box was a feminine box that could be presented as a treasure box by itself.

The people who were surrounding them and watching over the development began thinking that this must be an event of the theme park were also going「Ooo」with warm expressions. A voice of a girl somewhere begging to her father「I want that」could be heard.

Amidst all that, Myuu who was receiving the lovely box asked pa――Santa if it was okay to open it with her gaze. Santa nodded.

When the lid was opened……

「Ah」

Myuu unintentionally raised her voice, but that expression which looked perplexed became colored with joy right away. That smile was like a flower bud that bloomed all at once, it was such a full and beautiful smile like a blooming flower.

The present that was inserted into that box was surely a girly present, something like a children’s accessory or a good of some cartoon character. Everyone was thinking along those lines.

But, what was taken out by Myuu was……

「It’s Donner and Schlag nanooo-!!!!」

A pair of handguns…….

People falling down were heard here and there, one after another. There was no doubt that they were people from Osaka (TN: Seems like the custom of falling on their butt from shock came from Osaka). Other people also made tsukkomis from their mouth. However, Myuu herself was swinging around the two handguns going「Finally, Myuu could have this nano!」while expressing great happiness.

The figure of a little girl Santa dancing boisterously from receiving as present during the holy night, a pair of handguns that she seemed to have been begging for previously, could be seen there.

「Young lady, those aren’t Donner-Schlag. They are “Donneer-Schlaag”.」

「Donneer-Schlaag?」

「Yes, Donneer-Schlaag.」

After Santa corrected Myuu like that, he further fished into his white present bag with rummaging sounds.

「Also this, “Pikko Piko Hammeeer”」

「Pikko Piko Hammeeer!!!」

「”This is Weapon Desu”.」

「This is Weapon De~su!」

「We also cannot forget this one, “Muuramasa” and――」

「Muuramasa!!」

「”Kotetsuu”.」

「Kotetsuuuuu!!」

Myuu’s tension was breaking through the heavens (TN: Reference to Gurren Lagann)! She hopped up and down and swung around the weapons she received heartily!

From there Myuu received even more presents. One was a gun belt and another was a present that was named as Yue-oneechan’s love. Myuu then said「Pa――Santa-san! Thank you nano! I, I, I love you nano!!」and leaped into Santa’s chest.

After that, at the other side of the crowd of the dumbfounded people, figures that seemed to be the security staff appeared. Santa, who confirmed the appearance of those staff, immediately boarded his sleigh, and then he snapped the reins and returned to the sky once more. In the middle this everyone was having a question of「Just how in the world it is flying?」while Santa then made his next move

so that Myuu and others wouldn’t be bothered by the security.

「Merry Christmas.」

Saying such thing, a lot of parachutes were dropped from the sleigh. The absurd amount of parachutes that were raining down from the sky were all attached with Christmas presents. Obviously, there were presents consisting of toys or stuffed animals, and even some accessories or game systems. Every kind of present was raining down from the sky.

When the bewildered people heard an awfully clear voice that said「They are meager presents from the park. Please help yourself to it.」, they raised a joyful voice of「Waa!!」and rushed toward the parachutes. Because the people were pushing and jostling against each other, Yue nonchalantly supported them with magic so that no accident would happen.

By the way, the number of presents was obviously too many to be loaded on the sleigh, but everyone ignored that in their excitement. They were presents from Santa who was riding on a sleigh driven by lovely reindeer. The atmosphere of the place might’ve caused their mind to feel ‘who cares about the trivial things’.

Although, if they knew that those reindeer were actually mechanical Grim Reapers that were fully loaded with weaponry inside……surely they would panic without a doubt. In this world, there were some things that were better to not know.

The next day, it went without saying that the unprecedented theme park was grandly reported in the news. It also went without saying that the sophisticated production and the generous treat of presents raised the selling point of the park while the higher-ups were searching ‘just who was that Santa!’ with bloodshot eyes.

The really happy expression of the small princess of the Nagumo family also naturally made everyone in the family to writhe from her cuteness. However, her figure that was sleeping together with handguns and a war hammer, whip, and kodachi, while rubbing her cheek on them was……

He was the one who gave her those presents, but now papa Hajime was having a complicated worry of「Is this really fine, for my daughter?」.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Even though today is Christmas, Shirakome that is a villager of loneliness village suddenly got an idea and wrote this.

If you like, please read it together with a Christmas cake by yourself.

Shirakome had chocolate cake.

Tomorrow too, I’ll update as usual you know~

Arifureta Chapter 188

Arifureta After – As the Daughter of Demon King Part 2

AN: I posted a Christmas commemoration chapter a page back.

If you came directly to this chapter, then if you'd like please take a look at the chapter before this too.

Part 1

A group carrying assault rifles and wearing masks were rushing through an underground corridor in a dark building. The place they were heading toward was the place where the children who were taken as hostage were imprisoned. Their comrades who were going there went out of contact one after another, so understanding that something strange had happened to them, this group rushed to that place in a panic.

In total there were nearly twenty people in this armed group. One of them, who was running at the very back, heard a sound like something jumping in a room the group was passing by so he came to a stop reflexively. His other comrades were gradually rushing ahead, but the comrades nearby him also stopped running and looked at him questioningly.

He made a gesture that conveyed to his comrades how he had heard a sound come from inside the room, and just in case, he proposed to investigate inside. The men who came to a stop were six in total, they nodded to each other and left behind two people in the corridor as they passed through the opened steel door and stepped inside the room.

Immediately after, *kii* the door was making a sound while it automatically, no, a small hand that wasn’t noticed by anyone was quietly reaching down from the ceiling and closing the door.

One of the men who was left in the corridor spontaneously charged at the door while the other man tried to let out a warning voice, but just before that, gunshots echoed inside the room.

□Gah!?□□Guah□Pained voices could be heard as bullets that flew from the ceiling granted a severe impact to the two men who exposed the back of their head defenselessly. Their consciouses were instantly blown away. The remaining two men turned around and sprayed bullets at the door from where they entered, but there was no scream from the enemy that resounded inside the room.

In exchange,

click

A sinister sound resounded from behind them. The two men moved only their eyes to look at each other. Then matching their breathing they turned around all at once. There――

□Slow nano.□

Dangling upside down from the ceiling, with a pair of handguns――”Donneer-Schlaag” aimed at the forehead of the two men, was a figure of a little girl. The two men were about to spit out some swear words, but before they could do that, the girl――Myuu―― pulled the trigger. The heads of the two snapped backward grandly.

gon Their heads crashed on the door and interrupted the intrusion of the two remaining men that tried to enter inside for an instant. That instant was a fatal opening against the beloved daughter who had received the teaching of a monster gunner.

The moment the door opened with a force that knocked back the bodies of their comrades, the dry sound of *pan pan* resounded, and at the same time, the two men crumbled down.

……The figure that was dangling from the ceiling, who had lured the enemy into the room before shooting them down, while still in an upside down posture――was truly like the hit man Le○n! (TN: A character from a French movie, ‘Leon’.)

「Now, everyone, before those guys come back, we are going out nano.」

When Myuu called out to the corner of the room, right after that, the corner of the room where there should be nothing suddenly distorted and the figures of the children appeared. Every single one of them was holding a large cross in their palm. Those crosses were the artifact “Don’t Touch, You Pervert”, but as a supplementary function, they also had the concealment ability that made use of light reflection.

「He, hey, Myuu. Just now, how did you *stand up* on the ceiling?」

While moving, Natalia became unable to endure and asked that. To that Myuu answered with one word「Guts」. Natalia’s shoulders dropped while saying「At least I want you to say that it’s magic……」. Of course, the cause that Myuu could be like Leo○ wasn’t because of guts, but because of the “gravity stone” and “Air Force” inserted into her boots.

But, at that time, the sound of an explosion came from quite a distance away.

「Myuu-chan, just now……I think that came from around the place where we were at earlier.」

「Myu. Perhaps they got caught up in the trap that Myuu set up there and went pyuu nano. Their weapons are excellent, but those criminal-san's movements are relatively rough.」

「Is, is that so……」

Emile's cheeks cramped from knowing that it appeared that Myuu had even done something like that by taking into account the movement of the enemy while they hadn't notice. Or rather, to listen to a ten-year-old girl finding fault in an armed group……it caused him to become bothered about Myuu's true identity all the more.

Myuu beautifully used gun kata with twin gun art, war hammer art, whip art, and two sword art to thoroughly take care of the enemies she encountered while moving. The children were sending sparkling eyes at Myuu as though they were looking at a hero while following behind her. Finally, they discovered a door that had the word "EXIT" written on it.

It was a door that connected to the outside.

While the expression of Natalia and the others burst bright in joy, Myuu's expression turned complicated instead. But, at the same time, she could hear the sound of a lot of footsteps from deep within the path they had just passed through, so while sighing deeply, she opened the door while telling Natalia and the others to hold onto the cross firmly.

There,

「So, you are the devil that slipped in among the children, huh.」

A masked group of nearly thirty people that was fully armed was lying in wait while aiming their rifle muzzles at the door.

Natalia and the others screamed「Hii」when witnessing that.

Myuu didn’t answer the question of the man who seemed to be the leader of the armed group, instead, she ran her gaze around the surroundings. The place they came out to appeared to be a huge warehouse. If it was normal, there should be a lot of material put in each container that was placed in here.

The nose of Myuu who was a sea dweller race sensed the smell of salt, from there she understood that this place was adjacent with a harbor (she understood that from the beginning already though). Yes, this place was a warehouse district to deposit the luggage of cargo ships.

Right now they were in a warehouse that was jointly established with the management building at the corner of that district. However, inside that warehouse was quite a good amount of strict security. Not to mention the dozens of armed people, there were also a lot of heavy weapons and a lot of computers for the command room lined up. In addition to that, there were also things like an armored vehicle that was in the middle of being camouflaged and a vehicle that looked like an ice cream truck on the outside but it had a gatling gun and so on attached on the inside.

「Uu~n, from the weaponry and the hostage-taking, I have imagined that by some chance it might be like this but…… as expected, you all are not mere kidnappers, but a terrorist group nano.」

「Just what the hell are you? A bodyguard prepared by the government?」

The terrorist leader was recalling a kid soldier of his own country in the back of his mind while speaking out his conjecture. Be that as it may, it was hard to believe the fact

that a single girl like this was able to beat up his organization’s soldiers, and he was also concerned from where this girl got her weapon.

By all rights, this girl was an irregular existence, someone like Myuu whose identity they couldn’t confirm should be quickly killed, but her abnormality made this leader question her.

「Myuu’s smartphone, where is it nano?」

「……Answer my question.」

Even though it should be a checkmate with nearly thirty guns aimed at them, Myuu’s composed attitude didn’t break and she instead questioned back. This caused the leader’s voice to go lower.

「I want you to answer first nano. If you do that, then I’ll answer.」

「Do you think you are in the position where you can negotiate?」

Myuu’s way of speaking was retorted by the leader with the rise of one of his hands. Immediately, a gunshot resounded. One of his underlings had aimed at Natalia and fired. But, naturally, because Natalia’s hand was clutching “Don’t Touch, You Pervert”, the bullet was blocked by an invisible wall and stopped midair.

The terrorists became agitated and went noisy. Amidst all that, the leader was also looking in wonderment, but he then opened his mouth without losing his calm.

「……What is that? So America has even developed something like that.」

「Rather than that, where is the smartphone nano?」

The leader guessed that the cause of Myuu's composure was because of that invinsible shield, however, in the back his mind a solution appeared immediately, that they could just directly take away the shield if a gun didn't work. If they could steal that shield, it would be advantageous for their terrorist activities from here on. Thinking that he snickered in his heart.

Perhaps the leader felt whimsical from the composure that he had just obtained because he answered Myuu's question by moving his gaze. The place where his gaze pointed was a corner of the simple command room where there were a lot of computers gathered. Most likely the smartphones of the other children were also there.

「So, who are you?」

This time the leader questioned her. Because he had taught Myuu the smartphone's location, he felt that this time it was Myuu's turn to answer. In response to that, Myuu was making an exasperated expression.

「There is no way I will answer nano. You must have something wrong in your head if you are accepting what your enemy said seriously like that nano.」

The leader was wearing a mask, but surely right now a vein was throbbing visibly on his forehead. Really, he wanted to see the face of the parent that was raising this girl.

「Are you thinking that because you have that shield that all of you are absolutely safe? Something like that can just be wrestled off directly and taken away, and that's it. I thought that you were someone that had received special training, but you cannot even make a proper situation assessment.

Did I overestimate you? Or else, are you thinking that you can do something against this number of people with those tiny guns or those primitive weapons?」

「……」

The hand of the leader rose quietly. A man at his side guessed what the leader wanted and whispered something into a wireless earpiece, and then another group of armed men with more than ten people appeared from the door behind them. In addition to that, a group of thirty men flooded in from outside the warehouse and surrounded Myuu and the children.

「Don’t take up our time too much. We are going to be busy with our operation after this. There are still more than fifty men outside. There is no place for you all to escape. Go back to your prison obediently. Perhaps you kids will be able to return home alive depending on your parents’ attitude, you know?」

The leader slapped the children with despair. He showed them the overwhelming difference in battle strength and also dangled a slight hope in front of their eyes. Natalia clutched tightly to the sleeve of Myuu’s clothes. The other children were also snuggling Myuu with scared expressions.

Myuu looked over her shoulder to them while showing a smile that had not even a speck of despair. It was a fearless smile that would make anyone gulp. Her canine was exposed, her eyes were glaring with fierce atrocity, and her back was straight and imposing.

Myuu turned to the leader again, then stored “Donneer-Schlaag” in their holsters.

「That’s right, that’s how you――」

「Difference of strength? That’s too much even for a misunderstanding.」

The leader took a step forward thinking that Myuu had resigned herself, but his step reflexively stopped from Myuu’s words that interrupted his own words. At the same time, he saw the figure of Myuu quietly rising her hand straight up.

And then, the crimson jewel that was fixed on the ring finger of that left hand was beginning to shine for some reason. Noticing that, the leader gazed in astonishment.

Myuu fearlessly grinned while resounding her words boldly.

「Since when were you under the delusion that Myuu is alone?」

「Wh, at?」

Right after that, a crimson light burst out. The terrorists who pulled their triggers spontaneously witnessed it. The bullets they fired were blocked, not by an invisible shield, but by a physical obstruction.

Six metallic arms. Multiple legs like a spider. On the back, and on the front, were multiple weapons that looked brutal even from just a glance. Stylish heads, and eyes that suddenly flashed! Strange looking warriors with a metallic composition——there were seven of them.

Walling in Myuu and the children, those bodies that boasted the greatest hardness blocked all the bullets, yes, they were……

——Grave Sin Squadron Demon Rangeeeerrr!!!!

DOPAAN! Out of nowhere smoke screens of seven colors exploded, and the seven living golems took cool poses as they pleased.

Dumbfounded amazement.

Without distinction of enemy or ally, all the humans stiffened.

‘Because, this is impossible mon!’ It felt like such a tsukkomi of someone that had retrogressed into an infant could be heard from somewhere.

「If you want to stop Myuu, then at least prepare apostles of god in double digit numbers before speaking, nano.」

「Wwha-, wha-」

Myuu smiled fearlessly at the agitated leader while giving her order.

「Everyoneee~, kill them nano!」

“Aye aye, Ma’am–!!” As though saying something like that, the demon rangers saluted smartly with adoration, then in the next moment, *gashun* their weapons deployed with mechanical sounds.

The curbstomp began on the terrorist who was threatening their princess.

The two gatling guns that were attached to one body turned everything inside the warehouse into mere trash while the small missile pods attached on the shoulders rained down missiles like a meteor shower and turned the area into a sea of crimson all the way until it reached the outside of the warehouse.

Rushing around freely with high-speed movements as though they were gliding using the rollerblades attached on their multiple legs, the portable Acht Acht as their back weapon and the super electromagnetic cannon fired. The opponents who carried explosives launched suicide attacks with the resolve to explode themselves were instantly cut into pieces using the laser blade attached on their two arms and many legs. The person who tried to use the heavy weapon loaded on the camouflaged truck was pulverized and sent flying together with the truck body by the giant stake “Pile Bunker” fired by a Demon Ranger who showed a jump that didn’t suit its large body.

「Impossible, America has created even this kind of weapon-」

(I think, that’s absolutely not it……)

When the terrorist leader yelled that loudly while desperately commanding his comrades to fight back, Emile-kun whose father was actually a US army lieutenant general showed a dry smile while making such a retort inside his heart.

「It’s that brat-, kill that brat! They should stop if she is dead!」

“Lucifeeer” and “Mamon” and “Leviatan” were already rampaging outside the warehouse, screams and explosions echoed from outside. The leader who survived obstinately amidst all that glared at Myuu like a demon while shouldering a rocket launcher.

In response to that, Myuu took one of the jewels that were fitted on the gun belt on her waist. It was a jewel that shined yellow like a topaz. But, inside that bullet sized jewel, some kind of geometrical pattern――a magic circle was carved in.

Myuu held that jewel using her index and middle fingers, and thrust it toward the terrorist leader, as though to oppose the rocket launcher.

She then spun toward the leader while using the power of words to cause a supernatural phenomenon.

「Order(Myuu commands)! Syvil Aul Tonitors(Get shocked by the golden lizard)!!」

In the next moment, the topaz emitted a golden radiance, and then in a flash that light emitted an enormous spark while taking the shape of a huge dragon.

「Ah? Ha? Eh?」

While coiling above the head of the princess who had summoned itself, the dragon that was clad in golden lightning——the “Thunder Dragon”—— glared fiercely at the leader who was leaking out idiotic sounds. Right after that, the dragon raised an intense lightning roar.

「NOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO-」

The leader raised a scream like a girl and tried to escape, but there was no way someone could escape the thunder dragon using human legs. The surrounding underlings were also dragged into the roar and the dragon’s mouth snapped them up.

——Myuu’s exclusive use jewel type magic invocation artifact “Yue-oneechan’s Love”

This artifact would react to Myuu’s soul and power of words. Where she would then be able to use the magic that Yue sealed into the specific jewel (one time use). The colorful jewels fitted into the gun belt in place of bullets were each

charged by Yue’s handmade magic, and only Myuu could invoke them.

It was just like the magecraft that was used by a certain careless family some…… something like that surely couldn’t be said. Before, when Myuu was watching a certain anime, she was saying「Jewel magecraft is really cool nano. But, Yue-oneechan’s magic is more amazing nano」. Even though this artifact was the result of Yue’s affection that gushed out when she heard what Myuu said, if it was said that there was no connection with that then there was no connection!

「Myu-myu-myu-myu, Myuu! Just now! Just noww! Ma, magic, magiicc!」

Natalia was getting all flustered while asking for confirmation that ‘as expected, Myuu is a magician!’ with inarticulate words.

「Uh huh, that’s “Yue-oneechan’s Love” nano.」

「Eh? No, that was magic, wasn’t it?」

「Uh huh, that’s “Yue-oneechan’s Love” nano.」

「Eh? Huh? Love? No, but magic……」

「As expected, that’s “Yue-oneechan’s Love” nano.」

「……」

Natalia’s mind was in chaos! It seemed, that after guts, next Myuu was causing a supernatural phenomenon with love! ‘Geez, isn’t it fine already even if you confess that it’s magic!’ Natalia shouted in her heart.

A hand was put gently on the shoulder of Natalia. When Natalia looked back, there was the youth Emile beside her who spoke「Isn’t it fine, love」with an enlightened expression. The capacity of the youth Emile seemed to have met its permitted limit since long ago. It felt like he could accept whatever was spoken or did as it was if it was by Myuu. For the time being, Natalia shut up Emile with her fist.

The screams of the terrorists stopped less than five minutes after that.

Myuu left the liberation of the children who were imprisoned at another room to the Demon Rangers and she headed to the command room. There, she discovered her normal smartphone and sighed in relieve.

「Hey, Myuu-chan. This is……」

「Nmyu?」

The youth Emile was taking back his own smartphone while looking at the PC’s display which he pointed at Myuu. The PC was mostly broken, so what was projected in that display was only an image that stayed frozen but, what was reflected there, was the scene of a destroyed airport somewhere and a smoking stadium.

It appeared the terrorists not only did the kidnapping this time, but they also performed terrorist activities at other places somewhere.

Myuu nodded with「Fumu」and walked away *tote tote* briskly, and then she stood still beside the leader who was charred black while smoking up, though it seemed that the man was still barely breathing.

While Natalia and the others were watching over Myuu wondering what she was going to do, toward the leader who was lying upside down unmoving, Myuu……kicked his crotch.

「Ohooo!?」

「Quickly wake up nano.」

Leader-san opened his eyes while raising a queer shriek. He was writhing and rolling on the ground while pressing on his crotch. Myuu called “Satan” to pinion the arms of the leader to stop him from moving around. That figure who was limply restrained with his arms spread wide, looked as though he was being crucified.

「Yo, you, bast――」

「Don’t talk as you please, nano.」

Saying that, Myuu once more launched a splendid yakuza kick at the crotch of leader-san.「Hahiiiiii」leader-san raised a queer shriek once more from that. With the young Emile as the first, the other boys were also turning pale with their hands pressing on their own crotch while standing pigeon-toed.

「The thing that is happening right now. Your plan, your objective this time, spit out everything nano.」

「Who, who will――」

Myuu suddenly took some distance with brisk steps, then she took out the black whip “This is Weapon Desu” into her hand. And then, *hyun hyun* she made the whip move in a spiral around her that caused the sound of cutting air.

「I want you to talk nano.」

「Su, such, th, threat won――*aa*――!!?」

As expected, the crotch of leader-san who was refusing Myuu's demand while turning pale was whipped hard by the tip of the whip that was swung fiercely along with *hyun* the sound of cutting air. Leader-san who was shrieking, and the paling boys, and the girls who were staring fixedly *jii* at the event's development from between the gaps of their fingers that were covering their face.

「Now now, quickly speak nano! If you won't, then your son's life will be gone nano!」

「Thi, this, *DEMON* girl-――*Aa*――!!!」

「Riight, leeft, riight, leeft, nanoo!」

「Stoopp-, don't lay your hand on my son anymoreee-」

「Until, you talk-, the whip-, won't stop nanoo-」

「NOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO-」

「Ora ora ora ora ora ora ora ora ora ora-, nano-」

pan- pan- bishiiii, bashi bashi supaaaaa-, the whip became a black storm, however, with a superb strength management, "This is Weapon Desu" was torturing leader-san's son. To left and then to the right, the son was tormented with hellish torture as though it was receiving Dempsey Roll!

The figure of a male terrorist shrieking from getting his crotch whipped hard by a ten-year-old beautiful girl was right there.

Before long, everything of the large-scale terror plan this time was spoken by the leader who was weeping his eyes out *hics hics* while pressing on his crotch with his body rounding up like a turtle. Myuu, who listened to him, then stored away “This is Weapon Desu” and walked toward the leader.

「I, I beg you. I’ve, talk already……that’s why, please――」

Leader-san was earnestly entreating. The brutal haki that he displayed at first couldn’t be felt in the slightest anymore. Toward such a frail leader-san, Myuu smiled sweetly like a fairy. Leader-san, and also Emile and the others, were forming a smile that was colored with relief thinking that Myuu’s forgiveness would be given……

「You can become a manly woman nano.」

「Wai-, do-, *AAa*――――――!!」

A single gunshot roared. On this day, leader-san’s son was called to heaven.

Blowing ‘fuh’ at the smoking gun muzzle, Myuu then turned on her heels while leaving a backward glance at the leader who didn’t even twitch anymore. It caused the boys to curl themselves thinking「That’s just too merciless」 while Natalia and the other girls were sending Myuu heated gazes with red cheeks thinking「Myuu, how lovely……」.

Myuu who returned back to those children then took out her smartphone.

「Myuu, what are we going to do?」

「Tha, that’s right. Terrorism is happening here and there, isn’t it? Quickly, we have to inform this.」

Natalia and Emile talked to Myuu, telling her that they had to inform their fathers what was happening right now to the government.

「Nn. That's also good, but I think that surely they won't be able to do anything about the places that have been blown up already, or the plane that is being hijacked right now, or all those besieged soldier-sans that are stationed at that foreign country nano. If it's normal.」

Indeed, it was just as Myuu said, the current situation was grave. There were already several airports and stadiums that were blown up, there were also several planes that were being hijacked. Near the coast, there was a ship loaded with missiles anchored where it would soon fire toward the city while the army that was being stationed at the country of the terrorists were currently even now being besieged and annihilated in an isolated situation.

In addition, the terrorists had another base other than this base. There were a lot of hostages that were being imprisoned there too, and it appeared that even an attack targeting the president was being carried out right now. It seemed that the president was attacked when he was in the middle of returning to the White House from his outdoor official business in order to deal with these terrorism cases.

Like this, it would surely be impossible to resolve everything without any problems. It was easily imaginable that from here on too, within a few hours, there would be a tremendous amount of damage that occurred.

Yes, it was just like Myuu said, that was if it was normally.

Natalia and the other children were showing anxious expressions, however, Myuu was ahem-ing proudly while

puffing out her chest before making a declaration with a voice that was filled with absolute confidence and trust.

“I’ll call papa after this nano. That’s why everything is fine already nano!”

Part 2

jiriririririri, A ringtone of a black rotary-dial telephone ringing was reverberating in the living room of the Nagumo household.

「Hm? Is that from Myuu? I guess right now is about time that the party is over huh.」

The receiving phone was Hajime's smartphone. Hajime was smiling warmly by recalling his beloved daughter going out in high spirits all dressed up while taking his smartphone into his hand.

「Ou, Myuu. Is it the time to pick you――」

「Papaa! Right now, it seems that the world is in a pinch, so I want help nano!」

「……Yes?」

The first sentence of his daughter's that came out from the smartphone caused Hajime to spontaneously leak out an idiotic sounding voice. Yue, Shia, Tio, Remia, Kaori, Shizuku, Aiko, Liliana, Shuu, and then Sumire who were relaxing in the living room went「Oh?」and directed their attention to the conversation. Hajime turned the voice to speaker mode and then he asked just what she meant.

「Uu~n, see, when Myuu arrived at the party I was then kidnapped by terrorists. At the place where Myuu was kidnapped, Myuu acted rashly. As the result of Myuu having

a talk with terrorist-san's son, it turned out that the world is in a pinch. Right now that's how it is nano.

I see, I can understand……not-! Just what were you doing that it became something like that……

Because Myuu is papa's daughter nano.

□□□□□□□□□□I see, I get it.□□□□□□□□□□

Yue and others nodded deeply at Myuu's words. While staring at them all with reproachful eyes, Hajime changed his expression quietly.

So? What do you want papa to do? I don't really get it, but Myuu had annihilated the kidnappers. right? Of course, I'll cover it up, but where do you want papa, papa and everyone else to go and what do you want us to do?

Ehehe~, as expected from Myuu's papa nano. Myuu loves papa nano.

Myuu hadn't given any satisfactory explanation, but Hajime comprehended only the important points and left behind the trivial circumstances while asking for Myuu's wish. Hearing that Myuu replied in a joyful voice. Since Myuu was an infant she had been straight with her expressions of love like this, but recently, perhaps it was just Hajime's feeling, it felt like there was a charm that was excessively filled into her voice.

When Hajime took a glance at "all the onee-san", for some reason, all of them gave him a thumbs up at once. Hajime could only smile faintly.

After that, Hajime used the compass and determined the locations of terrorism that were currently happening. He left

the house sitting to Sumire and the others before using the crystal key to teleport to the locations all over the world.

Although it was unintentional, the terrorists had kidnapped Myuu and intended to publicly execute her important friend. The wish of his beloved daughter was to help with that……

For Hajime, the ideal or the sense of value or the objective of the terrorist organization was already something of no concern to him.

The one who indiscriminately scattered tragedy was them the terrorists. For the daughter of a monster to be included amongst those tragedies, it caused them to be exposed to irrationality because it was nothing more than reaping what they sowed.

And that would be proved to them within a few hours after this.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

This became the last update by the end of the year.

Throughout this year, there were various things, like the publication or the completion of the main story.

The real life is always like real lifee, and the work is always seriously like workk, but thanks to Narou, and thanks of being able to have fun with all of your readers too, there is no doubt that it has been a fun year.

Narou-san, thank you very much!

Thank you very much to everyone who comes here to read too!

Have a good new year!

And then, please take care of me next year too!

I think next week I can update for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 189

Arifureta After – New Year Commemoration Happy New Year

AN: Happy New Year.

I somehow wrote this chapter in the middle of the leisurely atmosphere of New Year's morning while being buried inside a kotatsu.

Recently, Yue's component was few so……

If you like, please read it leisurely.

---

hou hou White puffs of breath dissolved into air. The cold air of mid-winter pierced the skin keenly, dyeing the nose tip and ears of the people, who come and go, red. The fallen snow making the sounds *shak shak* when being stepped on and the icicles hanging down from the eaves of the buildings caused the people to feel the cold atmosphere of the few hours before the end of the year.

Although, if it was asked whether that coldness was also freezing the heart of the people who were coming and going through this place, then the answer would be no.

This place was a famous hot spring district. It was a tourist attraction that was colored with orange lighting and the

white vapor of natural hot springs. Therefore, the people who were coming and going through the streets that were lined with street stalls and souvenir shops were mostly families or lovers who wished to welcome the end of the year in relaxation at this hot spring district.

No matter how low the temperature became, these people who were snuggling close to each other wouldn’t feel any coldness in their heart. When they came back to their inn, they could even warm their body in the hot spring.

Among those tourists, there were the figures of a pair, a male and a female.

「Yue, you don’t feel cold? If it’s necessary I’ll take out an artifact, you know?」

「……Nn. I’m fine. Winter is a time of cold. It’s fine too to feel this cold air.」

「I see. Yeah, I guess so.」

A pair of lovers closely snuggling with each other――it was Hajime and Yue.

Hajime was wearing a moss coat with fluffy fur attached to the collar while Yue was wearing a cute duffle coat that was cream colored. Hajime and Yue were putting their hands inside their pockets and walking through the main street of the hot spring district at their leisure. By the way, the pocket that one of Yue’s hands was entering was Hajime’s pocket, naturally, their fingers were entangled closely inside that pocket.

「……Is this fine with Shia and the others?」

「It’s fine to be only the two of us like this occasionally. Or else, is it better if it’s with everyone?」

Hajime shrugged his shoulders and answered like that toward Yue who was looking upward at him with her head tilted slightly. He strongly gripped the hand of Yue inside his pocket. He saw from the side that Yue’s cheek, which was facing down, was faintly colored scarlet.

There was no need for an answer. That gesture of Yue’s displayed her answer more eloquently than words. There was no way Hajime wouldn’t be able to comprehend Yue’s wordless answer, so their hands inside the pocket were tightly closing on each other’s.

By the way, all members of the Nagumo family came to this hot spring district. Unfortunately, Shizuku had a gathering with her family with all the disciples of the Yaegashi dojo that was a custom every year. Kaori’s father was crying 「Don’t go, my angel!」while clinging to Kaori, so she could only see off Hajime and the others tearfully without being able to participate this time.

In the afternoon the Nagumo family finished their sightseeing and entered the inn, then Sumire commanded ‘charge the hot spriiing!’ every one of the Nagumo family. Hajime used that chance to activate presence isolation at full power and secretly abducted Yue, and like this, the two of them were enjoying their only time alone after so long.

Currently, Shia and the others who had noticed the fade out of Hajime and Yue were thinking「Well, perhaps it’s fine occasionally~」while they were turning boneless from the magic of hot springs. Of course, they intended to ask for compensation from Hajime later on.

「Oh, hot spring egg. You want to eat that?」

「……Nn? Soft boiled egg?」

「No, it’s a bit different from soft boiled eggs. Its white egg part is also soft boiled. Well, it doesn’t really sound like a big deal, but it’s a standard good of a hot spring district.」

「I’ll eat♪」

Yue instantly answered. Yue was sensitive and also weak to things that were “standard” on earth. Her feelings of wanting to know about Hajime’s world even, just for a bit more, was making her to naturally lean toward that direction.

「……Hot spring egg, two of them. Please.」

The male worker of the stall petrified from seeing the soft smile of Yue who was humming cheerfully at the purchase of the hot spring eggs. There was no need to even mention the reason why he petrified. Currently, the two of them were more or less using magic to obstruct the recognition of other people, so the usual mass production of petrified people and people picking a fight that normally happened when they were walking didn’t happen anymore. But, as expected, when they were the one who was starting the conversation like this, that magic effect would get fainter, in addition to seeing that smile of Yue from really close range.

While smiling wryly, Hajime lightly emitted “Pressure” that he had fine-tuned. The male worker returned to his senses with a ‘hah’, and then with a bright red face, which looked like a boiled shrimp, he handed over two small cups and two hot spring eggs in a hurry. It seemed they could choose whether to crack the egg themselves or made the worker crack the egg for them, but Yue chose the option of doing it herself.

They moved near the trash box where they could throw away the eggshell, and there Yue tried to crack the hot spring egg on the cup that Hajime was holding with her fingertips trembling. Her expression was absurdly serious. Her spirit conveyed that she wouldn’t let even a single fragment of the shell fall off. The expression of Hajime, which was watching Yue, was actually looking warm.

「……Nn-. ……Jiggle jiggle.」

Yue stared fixedly at the hot spring egg that jiggled when it fell in the cup with a splat. Then Yue guided Hajime’s hand and made him present in front of her eyes the cup that he was holding on his other hand. It appeared that Yue would also crack the egg that was Hajime’s share for him.

Yue was staring at the hot spring egg challengingly with a seriousness that was even greater than previously. Hajime’s expression was increasingly slackening watching that.

「Nn-. The egg is splendidly cracked.」

「Thank you for the delicious material.」(TN: I don’t know what joke material Hajime is referring to here.)

Both of them cracked jokes at each other and then chuckled, then they ate the hot spring eggs with small spoons.

「……It’s syrupy. Also it’s really, thick.」

「Isn’t it. Looks like they are using an egg that is relatively good compared to its prices. If salt is sprinkled on this, then perhaps the taste will be locked and become tastier.」

Hajime immediately took out salt made from another world from “Treasure Warehouse” and sprinkled it on the egg. As

the result, the expression of Hajime and Yue clearly turned into broad smiles.

The two of them looked satisfied after finishing eating, but when Hajime saw Yue, he slipped out a chuckle. Yue tilted her head slightly.

「At the corner of your mouth, there is egg yolk left.」

「……Embarrassing.」

Yue tried to wipe off the egg yolk with reddened cheeks, but Hajime's fingertip stretched faster than her. His index fingertip softly crept on Yue's lips. 「Nnu」For some reason Yue leaked out a captivating voice and before Hajime's finger could deal with the leftover egg yolk, that fingertip got nibbled with a snap.

The soft and warm sensation of a licking tongue on his fingertip caused Hajime to look troubled. Graphic sounds *chupa chupa* even began to be audible, so Hajime forcefully pulled out his finger.

「Muu, even though it was delicious……」

「Bear in mind about the TPO(time, place, occasion). We are smack dab in the middle of the hot spring district, on New Year's Eve. I don't want my lover to become an erotic terrorist in that kind of place. There are already victims over there, you know?」

When Hajime turned his gaze, there the worker-san of the hot spring egg stall before this, and the couples who were similarly enjoying hot spring eggs like Hajime and Yue nearby, were all simultaneously averting their eyes. While the male camp was strangely crouching a bit forward.

「……I’m sorry. Looks like I got too high spirited in this date with just the two of us after so long.」

「Those were really joyful words. Anyway, let’s move on. Let’s look around leisurely while eating. It’s New Year’s Eve after all, so there are a lot of stalls. Also, it looks like there will be fireworks matching with the countdown at the riverside ahead, surely we will be able to have fun there.」

「Nn-. ……Ah, but, the end of the year is――」

「Together with everyone, right? I got it. I will take Yue around only until before the countdown. As expected, if we neglected them alone until the change of the year, then Shia and the others would snap.」

Hajime shrugged, but he had already resolved himself to give compensation to Shia and the others. This was also the so-called duty of a real harem man. ……Though if other people were asked of their opinion about this kind of resolve that would make anyone speechless, then it felt like they would say things like「Get stabbed a hundred times over」or 「How about you try dying for once?」.

The two of them began to walk around the hot spring district leisurely once more.

For a bit they fed each other ‘aa~n’ with the foods of the stalls, relaxing in a footbath while snuggling closely to each other, taking commemoration pictures at places they got attracted to……Each time they were mass producing merlion that was spitting out sugar even while not particularly doing anything special, they were really passing their time leisurely.

And then, when it was about one hour before the changing of the year, both of them finally arrived at a bridge where

they could have a good view of the fireworks. It was an arching wooden bridge with a romantic appearance. Its handrail was colored scarlet and it was maintained really well.

Yue was settled in Hajime’s bosom snugly with her back leaning on Hajime’s chest. Hajime’s hands were reversely put into Yue’s pockets this time, and then like it was only natural, their fingers entwined with each other inside.

「This is our first New Year’s Eve since coming to this world huh, Yue. So what do you think, not even a year has passed but this is more or less a turning point. Do you think you can get used to it in this world?」

「……? Getting used to or whatever, any place where Hajime is is the place where I belong. That is the best place for me. I have no feeling other than happiness here.」

「Aa~, that’s not what I mean.」

Hajime’s expression turned itchy from Yue’s words, then he placed his chin on Yue’s head and rubbed his chin there. While listening to Yue chuckling from feeling ticklish he asked again his question with the intention of asking whether she was simply forcing herself or not from the changed environment or if she felt any inconvenience.

「……Nn~. Not particularly. Regarding the returnees, the society is still in an uproar. It feels inconvenient in that kind of meaning, but everyone is also feeling it similarly. The prospect of resolving it can be seen, so it doesn’t feel like a problem. Rather than that, there are a lot of things here that don’t exist in the world over there, so there are a lot of times where I have fun.」

「I see. I’m glad hearing that. After all, I don’t want Yue to feel stressed or anything. It is the world that is bad if it causes you any stress. If you feel any inconvenience then I’ll reform it no matter what method I have to use, so just tell me anything without holding back, okay?」

「……Fufu. I won’t hold back at all toward Hajime. The time you are changing the world, let’s do it together?」

Maou and vampire princess was making terrifying talk nonchalantly. At this moment, surely world-san was feeling a chill and twitched without a doubt.

Time was flowing away gently for a while without any words. The stream of the small river, the snow that beautifully colored the blackness of the night sky, and the clear air were felt by the two of them. There were also other people in the surrounding, but it was like only the area around the two of them was a separate world that was cut off from everything else. Solemn and silent, sweet and warm, it was such a world.

But, at that time, from afar「Yue-san yaa~I, Hajime-san yaa~i」「Papa-san yaa~I, onee-chan-san yaa~i」, familiar voices that sounded a bit theatrical could be heard. Hajime shrugged「Looks like time’s up」toward Yue who was looking up at him from his chest.

While the two were like that, *pata pata* sounds of footsteps resounded. Shia, who was giving a ride to Myuu on her shoulders, was rushing toward the two of them while she was waving her hands around together with Myuu. From behind those two, Hajime and Yue could see Shuu, Sumire, Tio, and Remia walking toward here.

「I found you nano, phantom thief papa. Obediently get handcuffed nano!」

The moment Shia arrived at Hajime’s side, above Shia, Myuu pointed sharply while saying such a thing. That dramatic gesture of his beloved daughter caused Hajime to chuckle while tilting his head.

「Phantom thief papa? Just what are you accusing me of stealing?」

This time it was Shia who answered. Her finger pointed sharply just like Myuu.

「Phantom thief maou. You have stolen something really enormous. Yes, that is my Yue-san desu!」

「Yue, you, since when did you belong to Shia?」

「Since around a hundred million and two thousand years ago?」

「Thank you for the lovely material.」

As expected the whole Nagumo family was smeared with material. Shia and Myuu were bulging their cheeks while pleading that this time they wanted to be the one kidnapped.

「Oi oi, calling me kidnapper and so on, that sounds bad in people’s ear, you know. You don’t think that Yue was slipping out voluntarily with me?」

Hajime seriously in all seriousness used his presence isolation in full throttle and full power, he instantly carried Yue and escaped. Shia and the others should be unable to reject the possibility that Hajime and Yue were slipping away as accomplices. Hajime was thinking like that and asked with a mischievous expression, but Shia was looking blankly at Hajime.

「He? Because Hajime-san, didn’t you *erase* your presence, then carry Yue-san under your arm and jump out the window?」

「You, don’t you notice the contradiction in your own words? Even though you understand that I vanished, just how were you able to grasp the detail until that much?」

「About that, like this, it just suddenly came into my rabbit ears. The rest was by me confirming it myself with a sidelong glance, I think. Even though Hajime-san was fast but it wasn’t as fast as a railgun anyway, so it’s possible to confirm your escape using eyesight.」

「……Is that so. You are a bug character……」

Hajime was plainly feeling down from his super high-speed secret action that he performed with his all getting detected normally like that. And then, he recalled how at their recent training so that their skills wouldn’t dull, Shia was casually evading electromagnetically accelerated bullets with normal eyesight. Hajime once more sent Shia an exasperated gaze due to that bug character behavior.

Without change Hajime didn’t let go of Yue from his bosom, Myuu was clambering up on Hajime’s back and secured her designated place on Hajime’s shoulder, then Tio and the others who caught up snuggled close to Hajime. Shuu, who was looking forward to the naked socializing with his son after so long, sent a sulky gaze at Hajime who was feigning ignorance while Sumire was cackling from witnessing that. During all that the countdown to the New Year was finally beginning.

Facing the beginning of a new year, the vapor of the hot spring district was rising high.

Hajime and the others also let out their voices for counting down the seconds. This was the first New Year for the group members that originated from another world. Each second Myuu’s feet went taut, her toes were tensing straight while she was showing a wide smile, Shia was equipping the artifact of recognition disturbance while the illusion hiding her rabbit ears went off, showing her rabbit ears jumping around *myon myon*. Tio was looking up to the sky with a deeply moved expression and Remia was smiling from watching over her beloved daughter’s high spirit. Shuu and Sumire quietly linked their hands together and snuggled on each other watching over their son and daughters-in-law that were like that.

A beat later, the countdown reached zero.

□□□□□Happy Neeeeww Year!!!□□□□□

At the hot spring district, the yell of the people celebrating the new year reverberated. In the next moment, in the night sky of the hot spring district, *dodon* flowers of light bloomed along with reverberations that shook the bottom of one’s stomach.

□Papa, happy New Year! Nano!□

□Ou, happy New Year Myuu.□

Myuu tightly hugged Hajime’s head while saying that, and hearing that Hajime ruffled Myuu’s head with one hand while returning the congratulations.

□Very happy New Year, dear. From here on too, please take care of me along with my daughter, okay?□

□Yeah. Happy New Year Remia. Take care of me this year too.□

Remia gently touched her hand on Hajime’s back while sending those words to Hajime along with a calm smile, then Hajime also looked across his shoulder and replied to her calmly.

「Goshujin-sama. This year too I beg thou for a lot of puni――ehem, a lot of rewards.」

「Don’t try to varnish it over, you pervert. Later I’ll promptly give you the first punishment of this year, so prepare yourself.」

The pervert was shuddering all over.

「Happpy~ Nee~w Yeea~ar desu. Hajime-san. Let’s enjoy this year too, a lot, okay!」

「Looking at the result, you who in a sense is the one with the straightest common sense has helped with a lot since we returned to this world. Thanks. This year, I’ll take you to a lot of fun places more for sure.」

Hajime’s words caused Shia’s rabbit ears to happily flap up and down.

「Hajime, this year too you have perpetrated various things, but just spare me from you disappearing all of a sudden anymore, okay?」

「Right right. It’s fine for you to go anywhere, but at that time take us along too with you. Especially when you are going to Tortus okay! Okay! Over there is a treasure box of material! No need to even mention every one of the Hauria clan, but even Gahard-san is unexpectedly a material character isn’t he. Especially when he is in front of Hajime and Shizuku-chan. I want to meet him again~」

「Tou-san, I got it already. Also, Kaa-san. Stop toying with Gahart. Spare me from an aged middle-aged man clinging on me tearfully.」

Shuu was sending a gaze that was a mix of worry and anticipation, while at his side Sumire was speaking of something terrifying. The emperor of the empire seemed to be fated to getting thoroughly embarrassed by the whole Nagumo family. Already, once when Hajime went to Tortus while taking along Shuu and Sumire, it had become a famous story of how Gahart became a shut-in due to Sumire's persistent and tricky interview with him.

「……Hajime.」

Yue who was at Hajime's bosom looked up while calling on Hajime who was exchanging words with everyone. When Hajime turned his gaze to her, Yue's eyes stared fixedly at him. It was as though she was ascertaining something. As though she was thinking of something. Her eyes were like a movie film, it was as though memories were streaming in succession inside.

Before long, Yue returned her gaze to the fireworks. Then with a calm and mysterious voice, with the sound of the fireworks smoothly fading, she formed her words.

「……It might be too late for saying this, but it's somehow strange.」

「What is?」

「……Nn. At the bottom of the abyss, the journey with the resolve to turn the world into an enemy began. But, when I noticed, there were a lot of important people around me while I am celebrating a new year in a different world like this staring at the flowers of the night sky.」

「That’s right isn’t it.」

「……Seeing objectively, the bitter time in my life is overwhelmingly a lot. Getting saved by Hajime, meeting with everyone, knowing about the truth of Ojii-sama, and also spending time with my new family like this, looking at it from the entirety, all of those are equal to a blink of an eye. Like a dream.」

「……」

「……But, my feeling is the reverse. It feels like the long nightmare vanished instantly like a bubble, and like this, I am enveloped in happiness, as though this is how it has been all along.」

Hajime strongly embraced his lover inside his arms, who was mysteriously colored with the illumination of fireworks light.

Yue’s gaze, which was surely staring at somewhere different inside herself even while it was reflecting the fireworks, returned to Hajime once more.

「……The world is unreasonable, irrational, and absurdly malicious. But, surely at times, it will give a considerate arrangement to those who do their best. Meeting with Hajime, I came to think like that.」

「I see. ……I guess so. Surely, it’s just like you say. No matter what happens, if you struggle, then surely, anyone is able to reach this kind of place in due course.」

「Nn-」

Hajime softly dropped a kiss on the forehead of Yue who was looking up at him. Yue’s expression melted limply.

Even on earth, there was still a mountain of troubles. And surely in this new year, there would be a new unreasonable, irrational, and malicious fate lying in wait for them.

But, surely, the world would show its kindness to those who struggled. Yes, they believed in that, whether Hajime or Yue.

Yue was feeling the heat on her forehead while running her gaze toward Shia and the others too. And then, toward the family who responded to her gaze, toward her beloved people, Yue showed them her greatest smile and gifted them her words.

「……Thank you for everything. Please take care of me from here on too.」

AN: All of your honored readers, Narou-sama, and everyone else thank you very much for everything last year. Please take care of me this year too.

Tomorrow there will be an update too.

Arifureta Chapter 190

Arifureta After – As the Daughter of Demon King Part 3

AN: Update even at 6 P.M. on New Year’s Day……is nice isn’t ittt.

In a room of a certain building, the fierce sound of a gunshot reverberated. A man past his middle-ages with ruffled silver-gray hair was confirming his smartphone with an expression as though he had bitten something bitter.

「No good. As expected, there is interference. What about the others?」

「No, it’s no good. The transmission device is also not reacting.」

「Mine too……President.」

A black person clad in a black suit holding a hand gun shook his head while answering. It was as he said, the man with silver-gray hair was the President of America. He received a terrorist attack on the upper level of a skyscraper where he was undergoing some concealed official business, and he somehow managed to escape and survive thanks to the do-or-die spirit of the secret services.

However, they were unable to escape from the building itself, their communication was also being interfered with, and like this, they were hiding in one of the rooms. Although, their opponent was a few dozen terrorists that were fully armed. In this situation where they were unable to expect reinforcements, it was clear that it was only a matter of time until their fate ran its due course.

The President――Artold Schwarnenegger, could feel the sound of the god of death creeping up gradually from behind him.

「……The existence of the person who leaked out the information needs to be dealt with, but it looks like our lives will run out first before that, huh.」

「Something like that……」

「But, we ran out of bullets already, right? You all have done well. George, Chris, Bacchus, Keyes, Neil, Hank……you all have protected me well until now. It's an honor for me that I can fight together with all of you at the end.」

「President……no, we are the ones who are honored.」

The President smiled calmly while holding out one of his hand. The male secret service which was called George, instead of a handshake, he handed over his spare gun. It was because the gaze of Artold was demanding that.

It was exactly as he said; he was planning to fight until the very end. He was a former commando even with his age that was nearing fifty-years-old but seeing his body that was still clad in muscles that looked like armor; he wouldn't drag the others down. Not to mention this was the man who was once called the "End Bringer", a man who had amassed numerous

legends behind. It was impossible for him just to sit around waiting to be killed.

Artold and George nodded to each other. But, right after that, 「Gaah」a pained voice was raised, and Bacchus somersaulted from the other side of the door and returned inside the room. Just by looking at him you'd notice that his stomach and shoulder were fiercely bleeding. Furthermore, 「Shit-」along with such cursing, Neil, who was shouldering Keyes, also entered. It seemed that Keyes also had his stomach shot and his consciousness was already hazy.

The front line holding back the armed group from the corridor outside had crumbled. In the next moment, *kon-* with a light sound a black object was thrown into the room.

「President-, get down-」

「tsk」

George threw his body in order to cover for the President. Chris covered the two of them further to turn his body into a shield.

In the next instant, explosive light and sound trampled inside the room. All the people inside the room were feeling a sensation of weightlessness, perhaps from having their body getting blown away, at the same time their breathing got blocked due *to the impact from below* toward their body.

「Gehoh, gehoh?」

「Guu, aa? We are alive?」

「-, what? How?」

Even though a grenade should’ve just exploded from a really close range, they survived while only feeling a dull impact and hearing an explosive sound. That situation caused Artold and the others to make dubious faces while looking up. And then, their eyes opened wide in astonishment for sure this time.

「The, the room is different?」

Yes, exactly like those words implied, what the eyes of Artold and the others were witnessing wasn’t the scene of a room that was trampled by an explosion, far from that the scenery of the room was completely different from the room they were in just before.

Suddenly, a clear voice called out to those who were being dumbfounded.

「I’m glad, looks like I made it in time.」

「-, yo, you are……」

The surprised Artold turned around, and there he witnessed a further unrealistic sight.

At the window, with beautiful black hair in a ponytail that was swaying due to the wind from outside, and a black katana that was held in one hand, there was a dignified female of orient——it went without saying, that this was Yaegashi Shizuku. (However, this was the recognition obstruction glasses equipped version)

「I had you all fell to the lower floor by directly cutting the ceiling. It was a rough method, but because this is an emergency, please forgive me, okay?」

「Ye, yeah. Eh? No, cutting the ceiling?」

「O, oi oi, this is a lie, right?」

Artold's mind was in chaos while George was at a loss for words when he looked up. Up above, there certainly was a ceiling that was cut up in a triangular shape. When he then turned his gaze under their feet in fluster, there was the fallen floor there, and when he further ran his gaze over the surroundings, there were also Neil and the others a bit of distance away who had also fallen into this lower floor with them.

「Just who in the world――」

「I'm sorry, but there is no time to explain. Go to the corner of the room, right now.」

The president was overpowered with that strong tone that didn't tolerate any question. But, at the same time, the hunch that it would be bad to stay where he stood pushed his back, and he dragged off Neil and the others to the corner of the room along with George. The swiftness of that decision was just as expected from the person who stood at the top of a country and his bodyguard.

Right after that, multiple masked men peeked down from the hole in the ceiling. They then saw Shizuku who was grinning, and they gazed with puzzlement for a moment before aiming their guns at her. But, before the triggers of those guns were pulled,

「――Sword Draw – "Flash Cut"」(TN: Battou – "Zendan")

The drawing hand couldn't be seen. The blade also couldn't be seen. There was just a small whisper as Shizuku's left hand that was clutching the sword hilt turned hazy. However, the result was an obvious phenomenon――it was displayed by the collapse of the ceiling.

With a thunderous roar, the terrorists who stepped into the room upstairs fell down, along with the ceiling. There was no way they could land properly, so the terrorists tumbled down unsightly. At the next moment, *chin-* a clear sound entered their ears, and like that their consciousness fell into the darkness.

「President. I heavily acknowledge about how you must be brimming with questions and how suspicious I look, but if you want to survive, then please believe in me. I will protect you.」

「……」

The situation was too absurd. Was this reality? The beautiful woman who appeared before his eyes, was she actually the personification of the devil, and she would demand an enormous compensation in exchange for her help? Such questions were running around in his mind. But, he had no option. If he was only looking at the fact that was currently happening, putting aside the impossible phenomenon, they were certainly being helped.

Then,

「Got it. I'll follow what you are saying.」

「How decisive. Then, give the people over there this――」

Shizuku's words cut off in the middle. She could hear a lot of footsteps from the corridor coming here.

「President, please give this medicine to them.」

Shizuku took out some magical recovery medicine from her "Treasure Warehouse" and threw them to Artold. Artold opened his mouth about to say something, but before he

could do that, the door was knocked down, and bullets assaulted the inside of the room.

What he could hear next was *gin gin gin gin-*, such a hard sound. The jaw of Artold and the others dropped down comically. It was understandable. After all, countless beautiful curves were drawn in the air, and at the same time, remnants of bullets were getting scattered in the surrounding.

Consecutive god speed sword draws. From a glance, they could only see Shizuku standing still holding a sheathed katana, but when they looked carefully, Shizuku's right hand was blurring. That was exactly the proof that even right at this moment the small pebbles that were attacking her with speed surpassing sound were being slashed apart altogether.

There was no way the terrorists could comprehend the abnormal situation occurring inside the room, but even so, the terrorists who sensed that their target was still going strong inside the room kicked open the door and tried to charge inside.

But, within an instant, Shizuku drew out her katana with a large motion. She didn't immediately sheath the katana just like before, so the blade of the black katana that was being swung could be properly seen.

After that, what could be heard from outside the door was the thudding sound of collapsing bodies.

——Yeagashi-style Katana Art – Black Katana Kata Secret Technique "Zenith Severing – Soul Demolition" (TN: Shizetsu – Hakuhou)

By ignoring all the obstructions in the path of the blade, this technique cut only the target that was aimed for regardless whether it was the flesh or the consciousness. Against the current sword art of Shizuku, the option of blocking couldn’t be taken. People who couldn’t evade would have everything of theirs that were aimed by Shizuku to be cut apart by that one attack without harming anything else.

Shizuku quietly closed her eyes and searched for any presence. She captured a total of seven presences on the same floor as her.

「——”Zenith Severing – Soul Demolition”」

The sound of the drawn sword, which was like the ring of a bell, rang out once more. In every direction, the invisible sword flash penetrated every obstruction and severed the consciousness of the lurking terrorists. Surely they felt it, the sensation of a cold blade caressing their insides, just before their consciousness was severed. And then, they surely hallucinated it, the scene of their body being bisected into two.

「President. All the attackers on this floor have been suppressed. They won’t wake up for a few days, so when you have time send someone to apprehend them. Wait, just what are you doing! If you don’t make them drink the medicine quickly, they will be dead for real, you know! Now, don’t just stay dazed like that and move, move!」

「Ah, yes.」

It was an unbecoming response for a President. Artord made Keyes and the others drink the recovery medicine with a mechanical movement and expression that was still dumbfounded. After the medicine was taken, Keyes and the others bleeding stopped, and their complexion was clearly

becoming better. Witnessing that, Artold couldn’t do anything anymore other than laugh dryly.

“Well then, let’s go. I will guide you all to the first floor like this. Right now there are terrorisms being carried out toward this country everywhere, so please quickly return to the White House.”

“Ah, yes. Thank you, very much.”

The man who was once called as the “End Bringer”, a former commando, and the one who stood at the top of this country, seemed to have become a mere yes-man.

After that, the terrorists who had half-occupied the skyscraper and were moving to murder the President were annihilated by Shizuku using a slash that penetrated the wall, or by a charge after cutting apart the wall and hitting them with the back of her blade, or by flying kick or slap, or after making them lose their spirits when they saw their bullets get cut apart. Then Shizuku succeeded in escorting Artold and the others safely to the White House.

It went without saying, that due to Artold, George, and all others of the surviving secret services, the black haired samurai girl became a hot topic not only in the White House but also all over the world through mass media.

At the same time as Shizuku was slashing apart through the terrorists attacking the president, in a certain airport.

That airport became the target of terrorists just like several other airports and was destroyed, so currently, the site had

been transformed into a picture of hell in pandemonium. Here and there the fire was bursting, crying and yelling voices were reverberating, and the rescue squad was trying to rescue the people who were buried alive under the debris in desperation.

In that place, there was nothing but despair. There was not even a single factor that could be considered as salvation. Inside the destroyed airport there was a spreading hellish scene that could only be expressed by using the word tragedy. Everyone understood that.

"Aa, damn it……"

A young man from the rescue squad was desperately performing first aid on a heavily wounded infant before his eyes while cursing with a face that could break into tears anytime. The bleeding was not stopping. An arm was torn apart, and a deep wound was on its stomach……he couldn't stop the bleeding no matter how much he treated the injuries. The blood that was flowing out was the life of that young child, and the child's face was already colored by the shadow of death.

The child couldn't be saved. Such feelings beat down the young man from inside his body. Inside this maelstrom of a tragedy that was like the personification of hell, this young man was completely powerless. Just why the hell had he joined the rescue squad? Even these thoughts were passing through the back of his mind.

"I don't care who, someone, please help. Please, just help this child."

While talking to himself like that, only his hand was continuing to keep moving following his training. However, reality was ridiculing the result of the young man's effort.

Right now, in front of the eyes of the young man, the light of a small life was vanishing.

His hand stopped, the young man hung down his head crestfallen. His head understood that this wasn’t the time for this. Right now, there were still a lot of people waiting for help other than this scattered life. Even so, he couldn’t put strength into his four limbs.

The young man looked up to the sky, with an expression and tone that could be thought of as hatred, as a courtesy, as escapism, or as prayer.

「……God……I beg you. If this voice can reach you then, please save this child……」

He whispered.

At that moment,

Pure white light poured down from the sky. It was powerful like a flash. However, it was soft and gentle like a moonlight. Such light, all of a sudden, without any advance notice, was pouring down, enveloping the whole airport.

And then, right after everyone had looked up to the sky wondering what was happening,

「Wha-, th, the airport, is vanishing!」

「Ju, just what is, that!?」

「What!? Just what is happening!?」

People unanimously yelled. They pointed their fingers with a shocked state, and while getting half-panicked they turned their gaze, and there, indeed, just like those words were

implying, an abnormal situation was occurring where the destroyed airport was vanishing into dust from the top as though it was going through an accelerated weathering.

The great mass of rubble that was touched by the pure white light was vanishing without effecting the surrounding people at all.

「O, oi, that-!」

「A person? No, but, he is floati……wait, wings?」

Someone noticed the silhouette that was descending slowly from the sky. But, they hesitated whether it was really okay to call that silhouette a person. Even though there was no parachute that could be seen, even though descending down slowly from the sky itself was already an extremely strange phenomenon, that silhouette was even witnessed having a pair of pure white wings.

The people were in a stupor from the disappearing mountain of rubble and the winged silhouette descending from the sky, and it was at that time,

「——The wind of blessing to the children far and wide, the light of salvation driving away the calamity——”Mighty Breeze of Turning World”」(TN: Kaiten no Ibuki)

Such a prayer was echoing with a voice that sounded like a ringing bell. Right after that, every single person was wrapped in pure white light. Without any reason, emotions of relieve and joy were welling up in the heart of the people. Without any reason, they understood. That currently, they were being aided by a large existence.

「Aa, good lord……」

The young man was trickling tears while his gaze turned toward the child that was already gone.

A miracle had occurred there.

The arm that should have been lost was returning to its former shape as though going through a rewind while the injury on the stomach was healing in the blink of an eye. The expression that showed the color of the shadow of death was changing into a gentle color with good complexion.

Right now, from the site where the rubble had been completely erased, the buried people who were lying down on the ground were showing their figures, and as expected they were being healed into perfectly good health from being enveloped in pure white light.

The airport site was flooded with the light of a miracle. The people were following the hard to describe great impulse that they couldn’t hold down and shed their tears.

Before long, all the wounded people were healed, by that time the space around the silhouette in the sky undulated and like that the figure was quietly vanishing along with space.

「Angel……」

「Oh god, my greatest gratitude to you.」

The people who were left behind were shedding tears that weren’t stopping while offering their feelings of gratitude with words or with the whispers inside their hearts toward the angel that caused the miracle and the god who sent her.

……Actually, that god, was the man that was called as the godslaying maou and so on, while the angel was the

mistress of such maou……such a thing though, no one would even guess even in their dreams.

After that, the angel that was Kaori flew around to all the sites that became terrorist targets and healed absolutely all the victims.

Through the internet, a certain recording was being broadcasted to all over the world in real time. The place that was reflected in the recording was a large room that was painted pure white, with small children whose heads were covered with a cloth made to kneel. There were about forty children.

Surrounding the children, were masked terrorists holding rifles, they were staring at the scared children with cold eyes.

With those children and the armed group as the background, a terrorist was standing in front of the camera while unfolding a speech with a smooth tone. The contents of the speech were bullshit that wasn’t worth listening to. Something like the vested interests of the large country, or the god that they believed in, or the liberation of their compatriots that were being held in injustice, or the simultaneous terrorisms that were being carried out as the punishment of not recognizing their grievance, or the withdrawal of the stationed army, the contents were things like that.

And then, the people watching the recording began to harbor suspicion「This is, not a trick?」while the government officials were gritting their teeth watching the children of their country that were going to be publicly executed. In front of all of them, the terrorist speaker commanded his subordinate to drag one of the children in front of the camera.

「The judgment ceremony that will be carried out after this, everything, is the proof of the sin of you all. Carve it into your heart, you foolish people.」

The terrorist put a large knife on the neck of the kneeling child. If that knife was pulled back, then a tragedy that even the word tragic would be insufficient for would spread in front of the camera.

The common public reflexively covered their eyes while the government officials yelled「Stop-」even knowing that it was meaningless. Perhaps guessing those reactions, the terrorist's cloudy eyes shined darkly with unbearable joy, and he put strength into the knife his hand was gripping.

「Now, judgment's ti――」

「Time to stop, desuuu――!!」

The man was sent flying. The beautiful woman with faint blue hair that leaped into the room from the pulverized wall along with a thunderous sound made the man eat a jumping kneepad on the back of his head. The man was spinning in midair.

dokusha With such a graphic sound, the terrorist crashed into the wall at the opposite side. Blood was flowing like a river from his eyes, nose, ears, and mouth while his body was convulsing *twitch, twitch*.

The common public, and also the government officials, had the same feeling. That was, 「What the hell happened!?」.

「Hey hey, you criminals. This lovely rabbit ear onee-san will give you all a beating all over. Have you all resigned yourself desuu!?」

At that moment, rabbit ears appeared from the head of the beautiful woman with faint bluish-white hair, at the same time, a huge war hammer materialized from the empty air that caused a sudden gust when it was swung.

The gust toppled the camera down, and the recording went sideways with a blurred image but……

「GIIYAAAAAH」

「BUBERAH」

「GOBOSUH」

「KUPEH」

Such sounds that sounded like screams along with crash sounds resounded, and then, a masked man flopped down in front of the camera with the white of his eyes exposed. The people who were watching that recording guessed that the beauty with rabbit ears growing on her head just now was beating up the terrorists using that huge hammer.

Before long, when all sounds were dying down, the white eyed terrorist that was lying down in front of the camera got blown away with terrific force, and in place of that terrorist, a white slender, beautiful leg was projected.

「Ee~, I think that you all are likely to hear this, the people of the government? Anyway, all the criminals in this base

have been all beaten up, for the time being, so please quickly safeguard the children. Very very please okaayy~」

With such words as the last, the recording cut off.

The people who were watching the recording were all dumbfounded while they sputtered out「What the hell?」

A few minutes after that, at another place, a different terrorist with a similar background of children hostages was about to recite out his principle and position「We are~」, but 「CHEEESTOOO——!!」as expected a rabbit eared beauty leapt and curb stomped that place.

Such a scene repeated for three more times in succession after that but……the government officials who narrowed down the places where the recordings were taking place were all greatly cocking their heads in puzzlement. After all, each of the terrorist bases were all separated by a great distance of more than a hundred kilometers. Thinking from how the recordings were all taken in real time, it was unimaginable that the same person could run around to all those places in such a short time.

「Just who in the world, is that woman……」

That was the honest feelings of all the people watching the terrorists' recordings.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Today I updated even at 6 P.M.

My writing brush is moving and moving by its own will writing the curb stomping drama. When I noticed it felt like it will easily surpass 20,000 characters……. If next time, I don’t make it in time by 6 P.M., I will split it further and post it even if it is between 8 and 9 P.M., and finish the compilation of the demon king’s daughter before the day is over.

It’s New Year’s after all, even updating in one sitting is okay isn’t it.

Arifureta Chapter 191

Arifureta After – As the Daughter of Demon King Part 4

AN: The second chapter for today.

There is a third. Pay attention.

Ten kilometers above the sky.

There was a jumbo airplane. With a sea of clouds below, while the powerful jet engines were rumbling loudly, the plane was heading straight for America.

But, the flight of that airplane was in a situation that wasn’t normal at all. It was because there were multiple fighter aircrafts following behind that airplane from a close distance. It wasn’t because there was a near miss between planes, or because this airplane was actually the exclusive airplane of the president. There was an entirely different reason why fully armed fighter aircrafts were flying behind a passenger airplane as if though they were keeping watch.

It was for the sake of shooting down the airplane in the worst case scenario before damage could be inflicted to the country because an airplane that was hijacked by terrorists wasn’t any different than a flying cannon shell possessing great mass.

Yes, that passenger plane was currently hijacked by terrorists. Due to the terrorists that somehow slipped handguns aboard the plane, the inside the plane was now being ruled by nervousness and fear.

「Oi, you……」

「?」

Everyone was staying quiet, and only waiting for this fearful time to leave. A passenger businessman stole a look at a patrolling terrorist before calling with a small voice to the young man across the aisle from him.

So that he wouldn’t be standing out, the young man only lifted up his hanging head slightly. When he directed a glance at the businessman that was calling him, immediately a small paper scrap was thrown on the lap of the young man.

The young man was startled, and he directed his gaze at the businessman, but at that time the businessman was already looking down and sitting quietly on his seat as though nothing had happened.

The young man was feeling a sensation of cold sweat going down his back while being careful of the patrolling terrorist; he spread open the folded paper scrap inside his palm.

——17:35

That was the only thing written on the paper. Normally such writing would be too cryptic, but the young man felt a shock as though electricity was running through his body. He guessed it. The written time, which was ten more minutes from the current time, was the time where the situation inside the plane might change greatly.

With a glance, the young man gazed at the businessman at his side. The businessman also moved his gaze without moving his face and gave a small nod. The will to rise in a counterattack in order to resolve this hijacking incident existed in that businessman.

Most likely this paper had gone not only to this young man but also to other people. It was unknown who was the one that started circulating this paper, but the person who dispatched this paper should be expecting for even more people to answer the call.

Surely it was because that person had vaguely guessed the objective of the terrorists that he decided to make a sink-or-swim gamble. In the recent news, there was an abundance of topics regarding suicide bombing. The features of the terrorists' faces obviously looked like the characteristic features of the people of the country where the famous terrorist organization that was reported every day in the news belonged. In that case, it was possible to imagine the worst case regarding the objective of this plane hijacking.

The young man, thinking that they would die anyway if this situation kept on, scolded his heart that was withering in fear and nodded briskly at the businessman. And then, in order to increase the number of courageous comrades even just by one, he secretly handed over the paper, where the time for the counterattack was written, to another person.

Before long, inside the plane where eerie silence was ruling, the watches of the passengers were about to reach the time that was written. The tension was suddenly rising. Beside the young man, the businessman was wiping the sweat on his forehead. The young man also understood really well that feeling. Their fate might be decided in a few minutes. The tension the businessman was feeling wasn't something

average. The young man himself was feeling the sweat that was trickling down his back and neck and the feeling of his body growing cold.

But, at that time, the back of the plane suddenly became noisy. Angry yelling and screams, and then *pan* the sound of a gunshot resounded. The young man lost color. It finally began.

The young man and the businessman, and then several men——a father with a family, a middle aged male who seemed to be riding the plane with his wife, and so on, they were looking for a chance while their faces were straining with tension.

And then, the terrorists who noticed the strangeness at the back of the plane rushed from their posts while saying something. It was at that moment,

「UOOOOOOOOH」

「Hold them down-」

「Steal the gun-」

The passengers who had conspired beforehand simultaneously revolted. One of the terrorists who turned his back was tackled from behind; the tackler desperately held down the hand of the terrorist who hadn’t let go of his gun even when he fell. One other terrorist, when he turned his gaze at his tackled comrade, was also immediately wrestled by the father with a family who was right at the terrorist’s side and both of them fell on the floor.

It became noisy inside the plane. At the same time, the hope that perhaps at this rate they would be able to subdue the terrorists were beginning to spread between the passengers.

But,

pan-

A single gunshot resounded, at the same time, the businessman who was holding down a terrorist slumped down while groaning. And then one more shot. *pan* A gunshot resounded, and the father with a family, who was holding down another terrorist, screamed and fell.

Immediately, the terrorists punched away the other passengers, and then they further shot with their handguns while cursing and standing up. The young man who was similarly shot on his leg was making a pained voice while turning his gaze, and there he saw the figure of a flight attendant holding a small handgun.

「No way……why……」

The young man leaked out a bewildered voice. That was only natural. The flight attendant was a blonde haired Caucasian, no matter how he looked her nationality was different from the terrorists.

Due to the feature of the terrorists and the everyday news, the passengers were completely under the impression that the terrorist organization was made up of the race of that country only. But in fact, the terrorists had taken methods of abducting people of various countries, which they brainwashed, before they returned the people to their original country in order to cooperate with the terrorisms, so terrorists were not necessarily limited to the race of only that country.

「Father-, father-」

「Dear-, hang in there-」

Anxious voices mixed with screams reverberated. Looking there, a young girl and a mother were crying while clinging to the shot father.

The male terrorists who were swearing while venting their anger at the revolting passengers, the moment they saw those family crying, their expression changed into something ugly as though to say that they had found a good target to be made into a lesson. They then walked toward that family.

「The sin of treating with disdain our kindness of making you all accompanying us in an honorable death is heavy. Just die meaninglessly, along with your whole family.」

The terrorist aimed his handgun at the family. The shot father, even while his expression was growing pale from bleeding too much, desperately tried to cover his daughter and wife.

Everyone imagined the tragic end of the family. The fact that their revolt ended in complete failure would be planted inside the passengers with this public execution.

But, when the terrorist was about to pull the trigger, suddenly a gunshot thundered from the back of the plane. The terrorist’s hand stopped moving due to that sound. However, guessing that the same thing as here was happening at the back, he immediately put strength into his finger on the trigger.

Right after that, gunshot sounds in succession could be heard once more. The terrorist’s movement stopped once more while thinking that they were really flashy back there. At that time, the terrorists who were in this area were believing without a doubt, that their comrades were also making example back there.

After all, there was also a brainwashed conspirator from another country hiding back there too, so no matter what happened they could launch a surprise attack. There were also more terrorists that were stationed at the back compared to the front. Regarding the consecutive gunshots, there were a lot of hot-blooded guys amongst the terrorists, so the terrorists here thought that it was because of that.

「Oi oi, just what are those guys doing back there?」

「……Yeah. As expected they are shooting too much. Just what are they going to do if a stray bullet hits the window.」

The terrorists looked at each other's face dubiously. The cause of that was because of the intense shooting sound that was reverberating even now.

The objective of the terrorists was a suicide attack on the capital of America using the hijacked plane. They couldn't let the plane crash until then so they had to pay meticulous attention even when they were using guns. Yet regardless of that, right now, the gunshot sounds audible from the back of the plane made them think that the shooter wasn't making any consideration to that, and instead, it sounded like a shooting that was done in desperation to avert death.

「Oi, Nadim, Karim, what are you all doing? Report the situation.」

Because the front and the back areas of the plane were partitioned from each other and they couldn't see what was happening, they were unable to grasp the situation by eyesight. And so they used a communication device to contact the others, but what they could hear was only 「Impossible-! What, is that-」an incomprehensible voice that was a mix of terror, unease, and confusion.

「Oi, Nadim! Just what is going on! Report-」

「A woman is-, it’s impossible-! The gun doesn’t work-. The blonde woma――」

The voice of the man called Nadim cut off. At the same time, the fierce gunshot sounds also stopped.

An eerie silence enveloped inside the plane.

The terrorist who was staring at the communication device gave a signal using his gaze to the other man and the flight attendant. Both of them nodded and aimed their gun at the partition toward the back area.

「This is Yosef. Saeed. What happened to Nadim and the others? Just what is happening over there?」

A communication from the terrorist comrade that was occupying the cockpit came through. The door to the cockpit was solidly closed, and it had been arranged previously so that the door couldn’t be opened no matter what happened in the passenger area. And so, the terrorist who introduced himself as Yosef didn’t come out from the cockpit, but he could still communicate and asked for a report that the other terrorists couldn’t ignore.

Furthermore, Yosef was able to accomplish trespassing into the sturdy cockpit that normally couldn’t be opened by any mean in the middle of flight because beforehand the terrorists had taken the pilot’s family hostage. The pilot was pressed with a mortifying choice even while vaguely understanding that he would be killed anyway in the end, comprehending that this option would only worsen the situation, but when he was shown the image of his young son’s soft skin being pressed with a knife, he finally chose to

obey the terrorists. The one who carried the guns inside the plane and opened the cockpit door was also the pilot.

「I don’t know. We will confirm it now.」

Saeed said that, and then he approached the partition to the back area while readying his gun.

But, before he reached the partition, the cause of the abnormality finally arrived from the other side. A slender finger peeked out from the edge of the partition, and then like that, the partition was casually opened wide.

「Oo」

「……」

For a moment, Saeed forgot the current situation and leaked out an admiring voice. The other male terrorist was also wordless, but his eyes opened wide in obvious shock.

The one who showed her figure from the back area, with smooth and fluffy golden hair fluttering and crimson eyes narrowing with a sleepy look, was a peerlessly beautiful girl that was like a bisque doll. It went without saying, that it was Yue in girl mode.

In order to trample all the schemes of the terrorists and make all of their actions become meaningless, she boarded the hijacked plane using space teleportation.

Yue’s eyes ran through the terrorists in turn. Saeed, whose gaze met Yue’s, felt his body temperature rising against a girl who could only be seen as a girl in the first half of her teens. Even though the appearance of this girl could only be seen as a small girl no matter how he observed her, the atmosphere she was clad with was the personification of

bewitchment itself. It felt like he was an insect that was lured by an insect trap; if he let his guard down, then it felt like he would assault the girl while staggering on his feet.

Yue turned his gaze to the family who was trembling at Saeed’s feet. The family was also directing dumbfounded gazes at the beautiful girl who suddenly appeared.

「……It’s fine.」

Yue smiled at the little girl who was clinging to her father and gave her those words. And then, casually, without any wariness, she walked toward the family.

That extremely defenseless figure reversely caused Saeed to return to his senses, and then his gaze moved toward the back area through the opened partition. Over there was……

「-, What, are. What are you doing……Carlo-」

There, he saw a scene of his comrade on his knees, strangling his own neck by himself. It seemed that the man was already unconscious, the white of his eyes was exposed while foam was coming out of his mouth. It was really an abnormal scene.

「……I’m no match for Kaori, but this much is no problem.」

Saeed returned to his senses once more due to that voice which came from below him. With a ‘hah’ he lowered his gaze, there the figure of Yue holding her hand over the shot father, and the figure of the father being enveloped in a faint golden light could be seen. It was as though time was being rewound as the blood was flowing back into the wound of the father before the wound visible closed. The bullet that had entered the body was also pushed out from

the wound and fell down with a ‘plop’. The mother and daughter were dazed, staring at that miraculous scenery.

Yue, who ascertained that the wound had been closed, quietly stood up. She was right in front of Saeed and perhaps because he had witnessed unimaginable scenes one after another, the inside of Saeed’s head was already all messed up.

Even so, his long years of training and experience of terrorism that he had moved his body on its own accord, telling him only that the too beautiful girl in front of his eyes was a threat for him and his comrades. His gun muzzle aimed at Yue’s head and his hand thrust forward the gun.

「Yo, you, just who in the――」

「……All of you too, it’s fine already.」

Even with the gun muzzle thrust at her, the girl didn’t show even a bit of agitation. Rather, Yue, who looked like she didn’t even acknowledge his existence, caused Saeed’s expression to cramp.

Yue acted as though she was not concerned of Saeed, and waved her fingertip like a baton and scattered golden light. After that, the businessman who was on the verge of death from the heavy wound, the young man, and the other passengers who participated in the revolt had their wounds healed similarly like the father just now. It didn’t stop there, even the people who had already lost their lives had their heartbeat brought back, and they recovered their consciousness.

For the passengers, that was exactly a scene of miracles.

But, for the terrorists, it was a scene of nightmares.

Therefore,

"Kuh, this monster-"

pan-, Saeed pulled the trigger, and the bullet flew toward Yue. It was a shot that was impossible to miss from this close range. Everyone's mind showed them the scene of death where the brain of the girl who manifested this miracle would be splattered from her head.

But,

"Such, thing……impossible."

The bullet stopped still at the space in front of Yue. In the air where there was nothing, as though something soft was blocking the way, without any change to the shape of the bullet it was floating still.

Yue's gaze was turned to Saeed once more. There was no emotion at all in those cold eyes. The moment Saeed saw that he was made to understand whether he wanted to or not. That for the girl before his eyes, he was something without value, just like a pebble on the side of the road. There was no meaning in him getting born; he brought nothing but harm by living, just a hindrance to be removed, he would vanish without anyone even lifting an eye of it…… that was the kind of existence he had.

"Uh, aaAAAAAAAA-"

His very existence was rejected. That terror and that humiliation caused Saeed to burst. From very close range, he continued to pull the trigger as though he was possessed. Following after him, the other terrorist and the flight attendant also aimed at Yue and fired.

The passengers screamed. However, that too happened only for a bit. When they saw that all few dozen bullets were floating still in midair around Yue, their screaming was gradually dying down.

Saeed and the others desperately changed their handgun’s magazine and continued to shoot until all the bullets that they had run out.

Like that, *kachink* such a transient sound echoed. The handgun that had its top slid back still, informed them of the end. Yue, who was completely unmoving during all this, slowly ran her gaze through Saeed and the others. The bullets floating around Yue fell on the floor all at once and scattered. And then, a word.

「……so?」

「-」

「Ua……」

「Hih」

Saeed and the others staggered backward. Their handguns fell on the floor with a thump. Already there was only fear that could be seen in their eyes.

「You are, you are, what are――」

「…….You have no need to know. For now, 「Shut up」.」

「-」

Saeed’s mouth opened and closed trying to ask Yue’s true identity. But the moment Yue told him「Shut up」, his voice

couldn’t come out. While Saeed was staring in a daze, Yue’s words came out further.

□……□Kneel□□

Saeed and the others simultaneously kneeled. There, Yue let out the finishing——”Divine Statement”.

□……□Slowly strangle, your own neck□□

Until the end, Yue’s crimson eyes possessed no color of emotion at all toward them. That became the last sight that Saeed and the others saw.

Yue’s gaze moved toward the last enemy, toward the terrorist who was occupying the cockpit. And then, when she walked toward the solid door between her and the cockpit, as though such a thing was only something trivial.

DOGOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOON-

□-□

A fierce shock and thunderous sound assaulted the inside of the plane. Right after that, the plane tilted down with a jerk, and oxygen masks fell down from overhead all over the place. The passengers screamed. The passengers who were seated at the back area witnessed black smoke spouting out intensely from the two wings of the plane, and their face turned pale all at once.

It appeared that all four engines that were installed on the plane were destroyed. Perhaps it should be said that it was a miracle that the wings themselves were still intact. Or else, perhaps it had been calculated to end like that.

Yue’s gaze quietly narrowed toward the cockpit. The cause of this was obvious. The last terrorist judged that at this rate there was a high possibility that the suicide attack on America’s capital would fail due to the abnormality happening inside the plane, so he activated the set up explosive.

As a matter of fact, this was the third hijacked plane that Yue had boarded and suppressed. The judgment of Yosef, which was made with great resolve, was surely because of the thought that even if the plane he hijacked himself couldn’t fulfill the objective, there were still the other hijacked planes. Rather than having this plane completely suppressed and taken back, he would prefer to crash this plane down sacrificing the many American passengers, bringing as much tragedy as possibly for America. The fact that he didn’t directly destroy the body of the plane and instead only the engines were surely because of his thinking of making even greater damage by choosing the place where they plane would fall.

「……Nn, this is my error. I’ll correct this mistake.」

Right after Yue was talking to herself like that, she used “Heaven Existence” to erase her figure from the inside of the plane.

「Am I, dreaming?」

The one who muttered that in a daze was the pilot who was following after the passenger airplane. There was a voice demanding a situation report resounding from the radio, but the pilot didn’t have the composure to answer that.

But, surely it would be cruel for anyone to criticize the pilot for that. The reason was that at the end of his gaze, the smoking plane that had just been falling due to the sudden

explosion, which was then enveloped by golden light in the next moment, continued to fly straight even now. It was because of this extremely absurd sight that caused the pilot to be like that.

And what caused the pilot’s gaze to be nailed in place, what forced him to be dumbfounded, was the figure of a girl standing on top of that airplane. A person was standing on top of a plane that was flying at a high altitude——even though just that was enough to make him doubt his own sanity, there was also how that girl was enveloped in the same golden light like the plane, and furthermore, a pair of shining wings were spread from her back.

Perhaps noticing the gaze of the pilot, the golden girl, Yue, turned her face in his direction. And then, she suddenly showed a smile. ——The fighter aircraft jerked violently. The pilot was pressing on his chest as though he had been shot through by something. He should quickly grasp the control stick instead of that.

Yue returned her gaze to the front, and then normally began to walk on the plane, as though the wind resistance and the temperature had no effect at all. She got down in front of the cockpit.

「A, a girl? No, but, eh?」

「Wha-, wha-, wha-wha-wha-wha-」

The pilot who was bleeding from his head and Yosef were making really funny faces. The copilot was lying down from being shot. It seemed that he was still barely breathing, but perhaps he could only keep his life for a mere few minutes more. Yue, while being enveloped in golden light, quietly pointed her fingertip at the copilot.

Immediately, a faint light enveloped the copilot and healed his wound.

「Yo, you are-. This, monster-」

Yosef guessed the reason why he couldn’t contact his comrades in the passenger areas and raised a trembling angry voice. And then, he aimed his handgun at Yue who was outside the cockpit and was about to pull the trigger. He planned to crash this plane anyway. After this far he wouldn’t even hesitate about something like breaking the window of the cockpit.

However,

「……「Don’t move」」

「-」

Naturally, his movement was easily stopped. The pilot was bewildered at Yosef whose movement hardened with a snap like a stone. But, in the next moment, Yosef’s figure vanished into thin air.

Yue teleported him. Yosef then appeared right above the plane at the blind spot from the cockpit. Yes, he appeared outside of the jumbo airplane flying at the altitude of eight kilometers with the speed of a few hundred kilometers per hour. Furthermore, he was looking up with his hands spread apart as though he was being crucified; he was completely attached to the top of the plane.

「……Die while freezing.」

Yosef opened his eyes wide. Normally a normal human would immediately lose consciousness in this condition, but

savagely he was given protection against cold and an oxygen supply, so he wouldn’t die that easily.

Yue softly flew backward. She flapped her golden wings and then she was flying while matching her speed with the airplane speed. Looking from the point of view of the pilot and the copilot who had recovered his consciousness, it looked like there was a girl floating casually in front of a flying airplane.

Yue floated a smile at the two people who were staring at her in astonishment and added,

「……Do your best.」

After saying that, her figure vanished with a puff.

Even after Yue vanished, the plane was still enveloped in golden light. There was only one engine that was still operating, but the plane could still maintain its altitude. The difficulty of the piloting was going up, but mysteriously the two pilots didn’t feel any anxiety of the plane crashing.

「……William. I am a criminal.」

「Captain……」

The pilot was holding the control stick while squeezing out those words from his throat. Hearing that, the copilot William made a complicated expression that couldn’t say anything. From the conversation of the terrorists, he had guessed that the pilot’s family was kidnapped and he was threatened that his family would be hurt right in front of his eyes. Perhaps because he could see the expression of the pilot that was filled with bitterness, that even now after he had almost just died William was unable to say any word of vilification.

The pilot told to such William.

「But, god has told a criminal like me, to live. Do your best, deliver the passengers safely home. If you cannot agree with this, then I'll stay quiet and yield the control to you. But, if――」

「Captain. I too have a family. If my son meets the same experience as your son, a confidence that I can say that I'll prioritize the passengers still……is something that I don't have.」

The words of the pilot were cut off in the middle by William. And then, he nodded with a serious expression while returning to the copilot seat. That gesture indicated more eloquently than any words that he would leave this plane to the pilot one more time.

「……My thanks. This is my last flight. No matter what happens, I swear I'll land this plane safely.」

「It's going to be fine, captain. After all, the protection of the goddess is with us.」

「Yeah, you're right.」

The captain's face warped difficultly. That was a complicated expression that was a mix of relief and regret, gratitude and apology, and various other feelings.

(Goddess. Please, I beg you no matter how shameless this sound. My family…….please-)

The captain couldn't help but pray like that in front of the miracle that he witnessed.

Half a day later, the tattered airplane that was enveloped in golden light safely landed. In the middle of the airport that was in an uproar due to the unprecedented situation, the captain who was receiving questioning heard how his family was saved by a beautiful rabbit-eared woman. And then, he became a zealous believer of the golden goddess and the rabbit eared beauty.

AN: As I thought I need to split it.

I’ll update at 8 or 9 P.M.

Arifureta Chapter 192

Arifureta After – As the Daughter of Demon King Part 5

AN: This is the last for today.

I cannot write anymore……

So far as it goes, today I have posted 2 chapters before this chapter (Part 3, Part 4), so please pay attention.

Part 1

Off the shore of the America East Coast.

There a large cargo ship was anchored. It was an unregistered cargo ship, so the coast guard immediately rushed to the ship and called at it, but there was no reaction. The coast guard kept calling for a while, but not a single response was given. With no other way left the coast guard decided to board the ship.

Suddenly, several people appeared on the deck of the cargo ship. The coast guard spontaneously stopped moving and called to those men. However, those men didn’t respond at all and instead took off the sheet that was covering the cargo that was placed on the deck.

□-, those guys, are they sane-!?□

One of the coast guards turned pale while cursing. That was only natural. What appeared from behind the sheet was a missile launching pad. At the same time, the men——the terrorists——leaned their bodies forward from the deck. What was held in their hands were familiar weapons for the coast guard.

□-, Get back-□

As the coast guard captain yelled out those orders, the terrorists pulled the triggers. Violent bursting sounds rang consecutively, *poshu-* along with a stupid sounding sound;

the grenade launcher that was attached to the rifle mercilessly lobbed an explosive onto the coast guard ship.

Several people got caught up in the explosion, and they fell to the deck of the coast guard ship while screaming. Next, the steering room erupted in flames.

Naturally, another coast guard ship returned fire, but the attack of the terrorists was fiercer than they imagined and caused the coast guard to be unable to get near. They called for reinforcements from the navy, but in the end, whether the navy would make it in time or not before the missiles were launched to the city was……

「Shit-, don’t-. Stop itt-」

Several of the coast guards yelled. Right at this time, their beloved birthplace, the coastal city, was about to be destroyed. Thinking about the range of the missile, it could aim at anywhere in the coastal city. The place the missiles landed could perhaps be where their acquaintance, friend, lover, or family was.

But, emotionlessly, a mechanical operating sound was reverberating while the missiles were aimed toward the coastal city, and then……they were launched.

From the multiple launching pads, a total of six missiles were sent flying toward the city.

「Aa……how can this be.」

Someone whispered in a tragic voice.

The missiles crossed above the coast and kept flying toward the center of the city; it was at that moment,

GOU-!!

A black flash cut through the sky. A very thick laser that no one had ever seen before, except in a SciFi movie, suddenly flew out from further behind the cargo ship.

The black laser instantly swallowed the missile that was at the very right, and then the laser kept moving horizontally and annihilated all the missiles.

The coast guard, and also the terrorists, felt the same astonishment from the unimaginable happening. As though they had made an arrangement beforehand, all of them similarly turned their heads to the direction from where the laser came with botchy movements *gigigi* that was similar to a machine that hadn’t been oiled.

There, ahead of their gaze, the sea was beginning to swell up as though a mountain was forming. Like that, what appeared from there was……

□GO, GOZIRA-!!□

A dragonified Tio. By no means was it Godzi○ but with that appearance, it couldn’t be helped even if they thought like that. Dragon eyes with vertical slits on its pupil and jet black scales. Sharp fangs lining up in a row. Such a monster was appearing while stirring up the sea!

Tio spread her wings and flew up and descended toward the terrorists who were staring vacantly with mouths wide open. And then, ignoring those who were screaming, Tio’s sharp claws pierced the hull of the cargo ship and lifted the ship up all at once.

The terrorists were screaming while firing bullets and grenades at Tio. Having the experience of fighting a giant

monster was an experience that was too valuable in a sense; however, the fact that they couldn’t make a single scratch caused the terrorists to expose their expressions of terror.

“Foolish people. Thou can cool down thy head a bit.”

Suddenly a majestic voice came down from the sky; it was at that moment that the ship was powerfully thrown. The cargo ship fell on the coast while the terrorists were scattered out from the deck like snack scraps. The ship split into two with a thunderous sound.

“I guess these gentlemen will have questions, that’s why I will go easy on *all of ye.*”

The voice poured down once more, and then within an instant, thunder fell on the cargo ship from empty air. Thunderous roars and lightning trampled the coast. The terrorists inside the cargo ship were grandly electrocuted and collapsed without even a single exception.

Right after that, a slight sound was reverberating. It was something like the sound of something flying overhead that was created by an aircraft. When Tio turned around, she could see a large missile coming at her.

Actually, further offshore there was a ship that was loaded with long range missiles standing by. The cargo ship at the coast was also acting as a decoy in this attack on the coastal city.

“How lukewarm. Thou foolish people can perish.”

Such an attempt couldn’t even be considered as an attack. Tio, who proclaimed that, opened her jaw wide open. Inside, a black light of ruin was converging.

Right after that, a second dragon breath was fired. The breath instantly reached the missile and annihilated the missile without causing any explosion. It continued its path and impacted the ship that was anchored several dozen kilometers away.

Just before the breath impacted, the terrorists who were on board the ship saw the black wall approaching them. There wasn’t even time for them to pray to their god. Just as they were aware that an incomprehensible black shining wall was approaching near everything blew up altogether, along with their consciousness.

Tio, who finished firing her breath, gave a glance at the coast guard members who were unable to stand up due to fear before she used regeneration magic and healed the wounded. Even people who had stopped breathing were also similarly healed by soul magic’s resurrection.

The scene of their comrades being enveloped in black light before their wounds were closing up was truly far removed from reality.

In the eyes of the coast guard members, the pure terror began to be replaced by awe.

“O protectors, be strong.”

Tio left those words and began to dive into the sea once more.

The coast guard members sent their salutes while staring wholeheartedly at the greatness of that figure. No matter how separated from reality this happening was, no matter how atypical the existence of this figure was, it had protected, saved, and gifted them with valuable words.

There was not a single person who stopped saluting until Tio’s figure vanished from view.

And then, with awe and respect, they called that name.

「Thank you, Gozira.」

Currently, an American army was stationed in a ruined city in a certain country in the Middle East. The reason for their stationing there ranged from apprehending or killing the leadership of the terrorist organization to humanitarian aid to the vicinity.

If it was normal, the evening was supposed to be the time when the army would distribute food rations that were given out twice a day even while staying alert of terrorist attacks. The army garrison should be crowded with the local residents visiting in order to get water or food, or visiting the army medical facility to have their injury treated.

However, at present,

「Reinforcement request from east gate-. Many are injured. Delta and Zeta are almost isolated-」

「Take some men from the second division-」

「An enemy tank appeared at the west gate-. They are receiving concentrated fire-. Request for air support-」

「Someone-, three people got done in-. Send the medic-」

「South gate, they can’t hold on anymore-」

The bellows of the American soldiers, the fierce gunshot sounds, and the thunderous sounds of explosions were everywhere.

The America army base of this city right now was in the middle of receiving a large scale attack from the terrorist organization.

The base that was using several buildings of the city, surrounded with barbed wire, was now receiving simultaneous attacks from the east, west, south, and north of the city. Because the attack time was matched with the ration distribution time, there were already many citizens that had gotten involved and departed for the next world.

Although the American army immediately evacuated the people, who had barely gotten away from the disaster, into the base and the soldiers quickly fought back, the fierce attack which was to the degree that it made everyone wondering if this was actually the gathering of all the war potential of the terrorist organization, caused the American soldiers to fall behind and they were forced into a hard fight.

Shit-, are the reinforcements still not here-. At this rate……

The leader of this base, Armando Aston’s fist hit the desk in the command room loudly. Aerial bombing toward the enemy force was already impossible because the enemy’s distance to the base was too near. There was one other American base at the scale of one division in the neighboring city, but it would take them twenty minutes to reach this city. If they used a combat helicopter, then it would be even faster, but……without crushing the enemy’s anti-air weapon first, it would be too dangerous for the helicopter to give their support.

In the end, whether this base could hold out until the reinforcements came or not was……Armando scowled with

impatience and roughly wiped the unpleasant sweat that trickled on his jaw.

But, at that time, a fierce impact sound assaulted the command room; clouds of dust were scattering down from the ceiling. Armando, who almost stumbled unintentionally, held onto the desk and braced himself while「What happened!?」yelling angrily at the communications officer.

A transmission that deepened the impatience of Armando further came from the radio.

「The enemy, they have a great number of unmanned attack aircraft-! Currently, the east gate is receiving aerial――」

「Impossible, just how far did those guys go to prepare their equipment-. There is no intelligence about that at all! Just what was the intelligence department doing!?」

After hearing the cut off the transmission, even while understanding that this wasn’t the time, Armando still spontaneously cursed. He immediately gave out instructions but……in the back of the mind of everyone in the command room, the word “annihilation” was floating.

Armando was considering whether he should abandon the citizens and instead escape from the city even if they had to bulldoze their way through. Despite understanding how low the success rate of doing such a thing, and the risk that they might lose their great cause for deploying their army in this foreign land, he was still about to make that decision. It was at that time, *hyuuuuu* an ominous sound of something cutting through the air entered his ear.

「-, all hands, get down-」

Armando’s immediate instruction made the surrounding soldiers’ faces grow pale while they dived to the floor. Right after that, a violent impact and thunderous roar assaulted all of them. Their consciousness was shaken as though they had been entered into a mixer and got whipped up.

「Guh, someone-, situation report-」

Armando was feeling a painful ringing in his ears as he was pressing his hand on his forehead. He somehow stood up and looked around him. And then, a part of the ceiling crumbled down, the sight of many of his subordinates being crushed under rubble, and the sight of the outside that was completely visible from the blown up external wall entered his eyes.

When he stepped outside with staggering steps, he could see many black smoke columns rising from the south gate. And then, he witnessed the enemy tank force advancing while crushing cars and humans on the street; they were flattening people underneath them as if they were bugs while forcing their way through.

The south gate had been breached. In the end, just what happened with the unit that was defending that spot……

「……To all hands, retreat by following the judgment of your own commanding officer while maintaining your force as much as possible. We are abandoning this base. Aim to link up with the third battalion that should be heading here.」

Armando, who was speaking into the communication device, was quietly watching the countless tanks that were approaching from the other side of the street while running over everything in their path. He made a bitter smile. He ridiculed himself, at how powerless and incompetent he was.

And then, he saw the tank that was running at the lead moving its turret toward him, or more accurately, at the command room behind him, and he discerned his end.

「……You demons. Even though I am incompetent, my country is different. Someday, the hammer of god will――」

DOGOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOON!!

A terrific impact rushed through, cutting off Armando's last words. The tank's shelling――wasn't the cause. Instead, it was the sound of that tank getting pierced by a jet black stake three meters long.

「Fue?」

A stupid voice leaked out from the middle-aged man named Armando.

His shock was only natural. The movement of the tank force belonging to the terrorist organization was also stopping.

While time on the battlefield had stopped, on top of that jet black stake, without anyone knowing just from where he could possibly have come from, a single young man landed down with a thud. With a face that looked oriental, it was a normal young man that seemed like could be found anywhere, if you didn't pay attention to the giant things on his two hands, which seemed to be weapons, that couldn't possibly be carried by flesh and blood human.

Everyone had already stopped moving. That young man――Hajime―― shouldered the pile bunker while his right hand casually lowered down the gatling gun, and then he opened his mouth with an expression that was like a yakuza.

「Now then, it will be a curb stomp after this, but is there anyone who wants to surrender? Good, there is none huh. Then, die.」

In this battlefield where sounds of gunshots and explosions were still knocking incessantly on the eardrum, for some reason, those words could be heard clearly as though they came right from the communication device. Hearing those words, Armando and several of the terrorists made a retort in their heart「Fast-, you've got no intention of listening right from the start, right!?」but……in the next moment, such voices of the heart were sent flying.

Along with the situation, where the tank force was literally sent flying.

DOU-DOU-DOU-DOU- Consecutive heavy bass sounds and *DURURURURURURU* peculiar rotation sounds sounded off. Those sounds were the indication of the pile bunker stakes that were fired rapidly and the crimson swarm of bullets cutting through the air becoming countless flashes that were like meteors.

The two ton stakes that were fired six times per second pierced through the tanks with a force that made the tanks look like toys and pulverized the tank crews inside one after another. The gatling railgun was instantly changing the buildings into scraps just like paper scraps while mercilessly changing the terrorists that were at the other side into meat lumps.

「We surrender-. Stop it-」

Several of the terrorists riding in the tanks came out with both their hands raised. This was honestly unexpected because he thought that these people were all having

martyrdom mentality. And then, Hajime who received the surrender proclamation was,

「Eh? What did you say?」

While saying something that sounded like a deaf protagonist that came out in a gal-game somewhere, he fired his pile bunker as though he hadn’t heard anything at all. The tanks somersaulted in midair from the impact. The man who declared his surrender was squashed underneath as a red stain was slowly spreading.

「Wh, why-. You heard already that those guys are surrendering, right!?」

One of the terrorists raised his voice at Hajime’s unreasonableness. In response to that, as expected, Hajime without even replying properly……

「No negotiation with terrorists. This is international common sense. Don’t you know that?」

「A surrender declaration, is not negotiation, right!?」

If it was asked whether that statement was too much or not, then it was too much. However, the terrorist couldn’t even object for the second time as he received the strafing of the railgun and ended up as mere pieces of meat.

「Chih, they are like bugs huh. I don’t like those guys who only swarm in numbers. Annoyingg.」

The tank force that broke through the south gate, which should be called as the greatest land battle force of the terrorist organization, was literally instant killed. Hajime stored away his gatling railgun and pile bunker, and then he kicked on the building wall and jumped to the rooftop.

Following the rooftops, he reached the rooftop of the highest building in the city.

Armando who saw that sight with a faint smile,

「……It appears that salvation isn’t bestowed by god, but by a demon, huh.」

Whispered such thing.

Hajime fired a lot of missiles from the rooftop using “Agni-Orkan”; the fire trails of the missiles covered the sky of the city like a spider web. The unmanned aircrafts were easily shot down, and grand explosive sounds could be heard resounding from everywhere in the city.

After that, Hajime, who annihilated the large scale troops of the terrorist organization, next operated his smartphone to activate the satellite artifact “Bel Agarta” (By pouring down light exposure that had been enchanted with regeneration magic, it would regenerate the target at the above ground. Hajime developed it, so it was possible to immediately heal his friends and family even when they were far away) that he willfully launched in stealth mode using space magic until it settled above the satellite orbit before this, and healed the American soldiers.

Looking at his subordinates that should have died coming back to life (It was impossible for those who had died too long ago), at the enemy force that was easily turned to ash, and at Hajime who was interrogating several terrorists before leaving the battlefield like nothing had happened and vanished, Armando could do nothing except laugh.

Armando later returned home to his country. Even though he was a pious believer of god, his new tendencies, which were starting to have an excessive interest in demons, greatly

worried his family and colleagues but……that was another story.

On the other hand, Hajime had asked about the current whereabouts of the leadership of the terrorist organization from several of the terrorists attacking the city and teleported there.

The location seemed to be in a suite at a high class hotel in the capital. Surely, the choice of this location came from the thinking that the possibility of aerial bombing was nonexistent in this location where there were a lot of common people, making it into a safe place.

It seemed that they were reserving the whole floor as their base; thinking about the extravagant terrorist force just now, it appeared that the terrorists were in possession of considerable financial clout. Actually, Hajime became curious about the connection of the terrorists with that area.

Hajime ignored the front desk, directly teleported to the floor, and advanced through the corridor with brisk steps. Then, men who seemed to be guards immediately pulled out their guns——faster than them, however, Hajime floored the guards with a double lariat.

While confirming that the presences inside the room suddenly became noisy, Hajime kicked open the splendorous door with a yakuza kick. Immediately, countless bullets rushed at Hajime. While carelessly warding off the bullets with his left hand, Hajime entered the room with a rude entrance and,

□Who the hell are-gobohaa-!?□

The first thing Hajime did was launch a yakuza kick at a middle aged old man that seemed to be the terrorist leader.

The man seemed like he was about to say something, but he was made to swallow his words back, so it was unknown what he was going to say. Even terrorists weren’t a match to the approaching of old age.

The people around the middle aged man were about to fire at Hajime further, but as expected, Hajime’s slap was overwhelmingly quicker. The guards were all artistically rotating twelve times in midair before getting floored, or getting buried into the wall, or breaking through the ceiling and losing consciousness.

「Now then, old man. You are the mastermind of the simultaneous terrorisms this time, huh?」

「Guh, gohoh, you bastard――」

The yakuza kick burst down on the middle aged man’s solar plexus for the second time today. Trampling on the middle aged man that was vomiting while screaming with a voice that normal people wouldn’t be able to endure, Hajime grinded his foot further as though to add on the pain.

「Well, it’s actually inconsequential whether you are the ring leader or not though. I’ll have you spit out the information about the shitty bastard financing you all here.」

The middle aged man who seemed about to prattle “Who will tell you huh!” got the muzzle of Donner pressed hard on his forehead by Hajime who searched for the company and person who was financing the terrorist organization.

「Wait, you, do you understand what the meaning of this revolution is? The exploitation by America is――」

「Aa, enough about that.」

DOPAN-

The head of the middle aged man that was about to start talking about something got blown away. That act of Hajime who seemed as though he didn’t know of the existence of the word mercy itself caused the remaining leaders to back away while shuddering.

Hajime turned toward those leaders while tapping Donner on his shoulder. The leaders were desperately begging for their lives, saying things like they would give him money, or they would prepare women or anything he liked, but,

「Oy, look here you guys, it seems you tried to execute my daughter and her friend publicly. I won’t let you guys get off with the excuse of not knowing, you know? Indiscriminate terrorism is something like that, isn’t it? You guys tried to push for your own conveniences, indiscriminately. And then among those people there was a relative of a monster. That’s why you guys die. That’s all there is to it. Think of these in your mind, ‘I have done something stupid huuh’, ‘I failed huuh’, and then die.」

Like that……on this day, one terrorist organization, which was once the biggest, was annihilated from this world. Just in case, it seemed that there were two or three people of the leaders who were thrown at a garrison of the US army in a state of beaten up black and blue, where they were safely(?) retrieved.

Part 2

In the living room of the Nagumo family, Hajime and the others were enjoying tea time while watching a special news report. If it was asked what kind of special news it was, then naturally, it was regarding the simultaneous terrorisms that occurred in America the other day and the many miracles at those attack sites.

The male presenter was moving the news report forward with a voice and expression that looked excited.

「Now then, there were existences that changed the many tragedies that were caused by the cowardly terrorists on that day into miracles that will remain in history. Many people killed and wounded were healed by holy light, a passenger plane that was protected by golden light just before it crashed, the hostages that were on the verge of execution were saved from the terrorists by flying kicks and a giant hammer, the president was protected by someone using a single katana……just what in the world were those women? No, just what in the world were those existences? Were they secret agents of the country? Such opinions also seem to exist, but no matter how, it was unimaginable that what they had done was the work of a human. It-was-truly, the work of god! Many people who witnessed them had spoken unanimously.」

There, the male presenter put a long pause before,

「They spoke that those women were exactly “goddesses” that descended to this world.」

Kaori and Shizuku fell prostrated on the table. Their ears were dyed bright red. When Hajime sniggered, the news report moved to the recording of the interview of the witnesses.

A young man of the rescue squad that was carrying out the rescue operation at a destroyed airport was answering the interview in an excited state.

□Eh? You are asking me what I think of the woman’s true identity? Such a thing is obvious. She is a goddess, a goddess that is overflowing with kindness. If possible, I want to know her name but, no, that is too disrespectful perhaps. At any rate, that person is too beautiful, noble, and warm. The light that rained down on those injured people, it was truly divine. That was——□

The interview cut off. Surely if that young man was allowed to keep talking, then he would keep at it even for several hours. The screen changed back to the male presenter.

□He was really excited, wasn’t he! But that too is only natural. Clad in whitely violet light, with a beautiful pair of wings, raining down the light of healing that resurrected even the dead. Furthermore, she appeared almost at the same time at multiple locations that were damaged by the terrorisms, protecting the people with warm light. This existence that cannot possibly be human has been called with a certain name by the people, and this program will recognize that given name. Now, everyone in the studio, and then, you who are in front of the television, let’s extol that great existence! Her name is——Angel of Kindness!□

□□□□□Angel of Kindneesss!!!□□□□□

Kaori sunk down. She crouched while plugging her ears and entered the posture of seeing no evil, hearing no evil, and

speaking no evil. It appeared the limit meter of her shyness had already surpassed its max number.

Wasting no time, Yue was making a sadistic expression while she was trying to make Kaori stand up and watch the television. After giving a glance at Kaori who was saying ‘no no’ with her head shaking in refusal and Yue that kept pulling on her, Hajime and the others then paid their attention to the next interview in the news program.

The one who made the next appearance was the unit members that belonged to the coast guard of the West Coast (TN: I realize that at the beginning of the chapter it said East Coast. But it was written West Coast now here.).With body and hand gestures, they excitedly spoke about how tremendous the existence that saved them before protecting the city from the missiles.

And then, they said it. With their mouths in unison, they called that existence as——

□□□□□It was Gozira-!!□□□□□

Like that.

□Why——!! No matter where and how thou see it, it was a dragon, wasn’t it!? It was a legendary existence that everyone loved art not it!? What’s with this fictitious character treatment!!□

Tio went ‘UGAA—’ while standing up in protest. However, the coast guard members in the television were all greatly excited saying□Thank you Gozira!□□We won’t forget Gozira forever.□□Gozira-tan, haa haa□□Gozira, FOREVER□extolling Tio=Gozira.

「Oh maaan, who ever thought that Gozira really exists! And, it appeared at the same time as the angel, and saved the people……the world is just too lovely! Does everyone also think so!? It will come you know; it will absolutely come you knoow~. The GO-ZI-RA Boom is coming-!!」

The tension of the male announcer was already reaching ecstasy. And then, the tension of Hajime and Shuu who had anticipated the coming boom and had already bought a lot of the stock of the company that was selling Godzi○ goods were also in ecstasy.

The next interview subject was the army colonel that was stationed in the Middle East. When the colonel was asked, just what he thought about the kind of existence that had annihilated the large scale army of the terrorist organization attacking his garrison, the colonel floated a nihilistic smile while answering.

「Fuh. That's obvious. He was a demon――no, he was the demon king-sama.」

Hajime spurted out the black tea he was drinking. No, certainly he was called as demon king, but he had never imagined that of all thing he would also be called with that name here in earth too……his cheeks were cramping from that. The colonel inside the television was passionately speaking just how merciless, ruthless, unreasonable, and overwhelming Hajime was, how mere humans were like trash compared to that existence. It was as though the colonel was being possessed by a demon.

「Whoops, it feels like this program will be banned if we broadcasted more than this, so let's finish the interview with the colonel there. It's concerning what will become of the colonel from here on though, isn't it! Now then, it seems that

this man who repelled an army of the terrorist organization by his lonesome has many female fans with their number rapidly increasing. For some reason, all recording of this man is blurry which caused us not to be clear about his appearance, but the girls all over the world are going heart-eyed from that mercilessness you know. It seems there is even a fan club formed up already!」

The high tensioned yell 「How enviouuus!」of the male presenter, and then the calm yet excessively cold gazes that were in contrast with that yell, were all stabbing Hajime. Hajime was pretending not to notice anything while he drank his black tea once more.

「But, his popularity among men is also not losing! The gays from all over the world also seem to go heart-eyed. Really, my condolences!」

「Buhoh」

Hajime spurted out his black tea. And then, he was sunk by the kisses and fierce winks that seemed like they were making *bachikon* sounds thrown at him from across the screen by the many “big sis” who were excessively wriggling and acting flirtatiously despite their muscular build. Hajime fell prostrated on the table with a *gon-* sound that sounded painful.

While Kaori, Tio, and Hajime were plainly receiving damage, the news continued with the interview of the pilot that witnessed Yue; he was making a statement that sounded like he was somewhat awakened to lolicon, the male presenter wasted no time to cut that off before moving onto the last interview with the president who was treating Shizuku as a Valkyrie. Furthermore, the male presenter mischievously disclosed how the bodyguards of the president had formed a

fan club for the black haired Valkyrie, causing Shizuku to turn red greatly.

「I have done the information manipulation and recognition manipulation through the net on a world scale, so no one will know that those people are us but……in the end, we still received damage huh.」

Hajime's tired words were nodded by the people who had saved the world and now were drinking tea in the living room of the Nagumo house.

「Come to think of it, Myuu. After that, what happened to your friend? Just in case, at that time I took out Myuu from the recognition of the children that were in that place but……that child named Natalia is the only one whose recognition I didn't tamper with. Will it become a problem?」

On that day, Hajime applied the measure on the children that Myuu saved so they would only remember that a blond haired girl annihilated the terrorists while making them forgot that the girl was Myuu. Hajime used a silver tube artifact to go flash on the children. That thing which was exclusively used by the black suited agents who protected the earth from alien.

But, regarding Natalia, with Myuu's wish and the strong hope of the person herself, she was not given the recognition manipulation treatment. Natalia herself also promised that she wouldn't reveal anything about Myuu to other people no matter what. Just in case there was a situation where for example someone knew about Myuu and tried to do something to Natalia, Natalia was given an artifact to make other people believe the girl's deception as truth.

「Yep, no problem nano. But……」

「But? Is there something?」

「Uu~n, perhaps it's just Myuu's feeling but, it feels like the way Na-chan is looking at Myuu has changed……」

「……Like how?」

「It's like, Altina-san when she is looking at Shia-oneechan……」

「Myuu, cut off your relationship with Na-chan, right now.」

「It's fine nano. Because Na-chan's face looked satisfied when Myuu gently patted her, and she immediately returned to the usual Na-chan.」

「……I see.」

Hajime's expression turned into one where he couldn't say anything. Shia was directing a gaze that was shuddering at Myuu while saying「Myuu-chan, has she surpassed me before I realized it……」. It appeared that Myuu was steadily climbing the stairs of "wrong person".

「Ah, that's right, papa. Have you flashed Emile-kun too properly nano?」

「Hm? I don't know which one is this Emile that you refer, but all the children at that place other than Natalia, every one of them has been treated for sure. What's the matter?」

「……Emile-kun, for some reason, he remembers about Myuu nano. It looks like he doesn't know that the one who was fighting at that time was Myuu, but he remembered that Myuu was there as Na-chan's friend, and it looked like all this time he was contacting Na-chan saying that he wanted

her to let him meet Myuu. Although Na-chan is refusing it all.

.....Hou.

It appeared, the youth Emile was unable to forget the battling fairy of that day. Strangely he was remembering Myuu and seemed to wish for a reunion. Surely it would be boorish to ask what kind of feeling that drove him to do so. After all, if it had to be said, then it was the case of ‘Boy meets girl”.

The doting parent papa Hajime who guessed that emitted a voice that sounded a level lower than usual. He was thinking, so there was one more pest that was approaching his beloved daughter. Since Myuu was advancing to elementary school, the number of pests that were approaching Myuu was increasing day by day.

Young Emile, now what to do about you, was what papa Hajime was beginning to ponder. Myuu who was seeing Hajime being like that looked excessively happy, and she cheerfully sat down on Hajime’s lap. And then, she looked up at Hajime with a wide smile while speaking.

Papa doesn’t need to be that worried. Myuu will forever be papa’s Myuu nano.

Mu, that’s, well, I don’t have any intention of doing anything about such a brat though.....

Papa, Myuu said that Myuu understands.

.....

Hajime was making a troubled face and turned his gaze at Yue and the others asking for help, but before his face could

move, Myuu’s small hands caught Hajime’s cheeks from two sides and fixed Hajime’s gaze on herself.

And then, while she was showing a bewitching smile that reminded him of a certain someone somewhere,

「It’s better for papa to think, that you won’t be able to escape forever nano.」

「……」

She said such a thing.

Hajime thought. In this five years, Yue’s magic, Shia’s taijutsu and war hammer art, Tio’s whip art, Kaori’s twin swords art, Shizuku’s Yaegashi-style, and then, Hajime’s gun-kata were all learned by Myuu at a high level. Originally, the sea dweller race didn’t have a body that was particularly excellent in battle, yet regardless of that Myuu had achieved all those.

That was surely because all the cheat characters around her taught Myuu their essence to her without sparing anything, and Myuu who trusted and adored those girls from the bottom of her heart was seriously working hard, but even with those factors, Myuu’s learning rate could still be praised without reserve.

Perhaps because of that, Hajime hallucinated, of his own figure that was being held down by Myuu even after he used all the methods in his possession and yet he still got outdone……

(No, no way that could be……)

「Nmyu?」

With a surprising switching speed, her bewitching expression of just now had gone somewhere, Myuu had returned to the usual innocent Myuu with her tilting her head, that appearance……

For some reason, it caused Hajime to shudder with a sudden shaking.

AN: The New Year holiday will end soon too.

Let’s work hard throughout this year too!

The next update is planned for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 193

Arifureta After – Nagumo Family's Bride Riot

AN: Attention, the timeline of this chapter is going back again. This chapter happens in between the return home and the one year anniversary gathering.

The after story is written as the author pleases (the main story was also haphazard though), so the chronological order is also all over the place. Perhaps it's hard to read, but please treat it well.

「I wonder……what to do about the marriage ceremony?」

In the living room that was illuminated by the bright sunlight, Sumire, who was drooping limply on the sofa, whispered to herself.

This day was a holiday for the society. However, Sumire was a famous manga artist from the beginning and didn't have a holiday. In order to sail across the time of judgment with the name of the deadline that was approaching her today too, she class changed into a zombie and headed to her workplace, but……in the end, Sumire, who ran out of material, couldn't advance, and instead of sulking in bed she was sulking in her house acting sluggishly.

At present, Hajime and Shuu weren't at home, only the female camp of Yue and the others were home. What was

unusual was that despite Hajime going out he left behind Yue and the others.

Hajime and Shuu were going to a meeting regarding the new game that was being created by Shuu's company, but putting aside Hajime, who was recognized as an important battle strength even while he was still a student, for Yue and the others who only had meager knowledge about games, they couldn't participate in the meeting just with the reason of wanting to be together with their lover, that was the *surface* reason.

In addition, today Myuu was also going out. It appeared she was taking along her friends(underlings) in the kindergarten to make clear of their position with the kindergarteners from the neighboring town. When Myuu got out of the house entrance, Myuu said「Today is the decisive battle nano. Myuu will teach those pretentious kids, just where their place in society is nano」with a fearless smile; just who she was taking after……such a question didn't even need to be asked.

Because of that, Kaori and Shizuku were also invited into the house, and they spent a laid back holiday with only the females but……

That silent explosive which Sumire threw brought about a ripple that by no means was small among the females. Above their head, there was the "!?" mark floating like a certain soldier, who loved using cardboard boxes, when he was discovered by an enemy soldier, and they turned their gaze to Sumire with a momentum that seemed to give off the sound *bat-*. It was only Yue who was drinking black tea while directing a gaze at Sumire as though she was looking at a somewhat good-for-nothing person.

「E, err, Kaa-sama? What do you mean by just now?」

Shia represented everyone and asked the true meaning of Sumire's whisper. In response to that, Sumire sluggishly raised her face that was buried on the sofa and opened her mouth with a really uneasy expression.

「There is no deeper meaning to it, Shia-chan. Sooner or later, we intend to hold a grand wedding ceremony of Hajime with Shia-chan and the others, but as expected, it's impossible for all of you to do it, right? See, in this Japan, a country with a constitutional government, polygamy is prohibited by law.」

「Ce, certainly……」

Shia nodded up and down. Kaori and Shizuku went「Hm?」 and tilted their head, they were about to open their mouths to say something, but Sumire's words continued to forestall them.

「Everyone's parents should absolutely want to see their daughter in a wedding dress too. But, how sad, based on the law of Japan, there can only be one bride in the wedding ceremony……that is to say, there is only one person among you that can wear a wedding dress!」

zugaaan! While lighting was roaring behind her back, Sumire loudly yelled the shocking truth(?). Shia and Tio, and also Kaori and the rest made a face that seemed to say 「What did you say――!!」. Shizuku was about to make a retort at what Sumire pointed out but……

「Shizuku-chan……don't you want to wear a wedding dress?」

「Wh? N, no, Sumire-san. That is, that, of course, I want to wear it, but……」

Sumire firmly grasped Shizuku’s shoulder and asked that question to her while peering at her face from really close. After hearing that question, Shizuku’s body leaned back from the pressure and expressed her honest feeling. As though taking advantage of that opening, Sumire’s verbal attack was not stopping!

「Shizuku-chan. Also, Remia-chan who is acting ‘my my ufufu’ over there, and also Yue-chan who for some reason is staring at me with a lukewarm gaze as though I am a good-for-nothing person. Everyone too also wants to wear a wedding dress, don’t you? You want to walk along with Hajime on the wedding aisle wrapped in the ceremonial dress, don’t you?」

「That……yes.」

「……Nn. Of course, Okaa-sama.」

「I also feel the same here, Okaa-san.」

Sumire nodded with ‘yep yep’, however, immediately after, she looked up above with a gesture that was excessively dramatic.

「Isn’t that right. But, only one person can do that. And then, about the marriage registration, that is the notification for the sake of being seen by the people outside as Hajime’s wife, it’s also only one person who can have that……in this Japan, only one person can be formally recognized as Hajime’s wife.」

After saying that Sumire ran her gaze over Yue and the others with a sad expression. And then, Shia and the others, when they heard the words「There is only one person among these people here who will be Hajime’s formal wife」they sent each other gazes containing slight nervousness at each

other. Amidst such an atmosphere, Sumire released those words that would push the Nagumo family down into chaos on this day.

「Now, I wonder, who among these women is truly worthy to be Hajime's wife? I wonder, as his mother, who should I choose? Hey, all of you, Hajime's "self-proclaimed" wives?」

「「「「!?」」」」

Shock ran through the body of Shia and the others!

Self-proclaimed――that word deeply, truly deeply, pierced their chest. Indeed, they hadn't submitted any marriage registration or even held the ceremony. No matter how much they insisted that they were husband and wife when seen from the eye of the society, there was no proof of that. The word "self-proclaimed", for some unknown reason, caused a violent discomfort to well up to the point that they couldn't negate it!

「Ka, Kaa-sama-! What, what should I do desu!?」

「Ah, Shia, that's unfair! Okaa-san! I will do my best for Hajime-kun's sake! That's why!」

「E, ee, me too, I'll do my best so……」

「Hmmm, I too, perhaps it wouldth be soon the time to show mine seriousness.」

Shia, Kaori, Shizuku, and Tio, who got all flustered and shook up, gathered around their mother-in-law and begged for her teachings. Even Yue and Remia, who had somehow guessed Sumire's ulterior motive, only slightly exchanged glances and troubled smiles before closing in on Sumire's side.

Sumire was smiling complacently inside her heart looking at her obedient(?) daughters-in-law. However, she didn’t show even a speck of the inside of her heart, and then with a force that seemed to make a sound *zubishi-* she thrust up her finger. And then, she proclaimed.

「Yue-chan, Shia-chan, Tio-chan, Kaori-chan, Remia-chan, Shizuku-chan! Do all of you want to wear a wedding costume at Hajime-sideee――!」

Naturally, the wives replied back「Oo~~~」in high spirits.

「Do you waaant, to be seen as Hajime’s wife by the neighbooors――!!」

Naturally, the wives replied back「Gung ho, gung ho, gung ho!!」in high spirits.

「Do you waaant~, to have your name written in the marriage registratiooon―――!!」

Naturally, the wives replied back「Uu~raaraaraaraa―――」in high spirits.

The trivial things already didn’t matter.

After that, with Sumire’s incitement, Yue and the others progressed the preparation for the sake of「The deciding match of who is the most worthy as the wife in the Nagumo Family!」.

In the evening, Hajime and Shuu finished their work and went home. They were passing through the house entrance

while talking about this and that regarding the meeting today about the new game production, and they put their hand on the entryway’s door. And then,

「I’m home~」

「We’re back~」

They said the returning home greeting while opening the door……

「……Nn. Welcome home, dear, Otou-sama.」

「Welcome home desu!」

They were welcomed, by Yue and Shia who were *only* wearing frilly pure white small aprons. Shuu spoke「O, oo!?」from the side, but in the next instant, 「pugeh」a scream was raised, and he crumbled down. The swift inescapable attack from his son sent his consciousness flying.

「What are, you doing, Yue, Shia.」

Those figures of pure white, tight, beautiful legs and slender arms and shoulders, and then, the breasts that were bared by more than half, which was too lascivious, caused Hajime’s cheeks to cramp up while asking.

「……Of course, toward the husband who has just worked hard and returned home――」

「The wife welcomes him with her all desuu.」

「With a naked apron?」

「「With a naked apron.」」

Yue and Shia twirled on the spot. Their naked back and jiggling butts were shown to Hajime.

「You aren’t happy?」

「Is this a failure desu?」

Yue and Shia tilted their heads while confirming to Hajime. Naturally, Hajime bowed his head saying「Thank you very much」. It was the sad nature of man. Seeing such a Hajime, Yue and Shia asked him something strange「From 1 to 10, what is our score?」. Even while feeling suspicious, Hajime answered「Full score」without hesitation.

Yue and Shia took a guts pose「Yosh-」, then they took off Hajime’s coat and baggage before vanishing inside the room with their lovely butts exposed to him throughout.

「What is going on……」

While feeling as though he was watching a waking dream, Hajime shouldered his fainted father and opened the door to the living room.

There, this time it was,

「You guys too!?」

「uu, we, welcome, home, Hajime-kun.」

「We, we, welco——impossibleee, as expected I cannot endure this!!」

「My my, fufu. Welcome home, dear.」

「Yes, welcome home, Goshujin-sama.」

Kaori and Shizuku, also Remia and Tio were wearing naked aprons as expected while welcoming him home with a bow with their three fingers of each hand pressing on the floor. Hajime's spontaneous retort caused Shizuku's face to turn bright red from shame while she was rushing out of the room. However, it didn't change the fact that she was wearing a naked apron, so it went without saying that her captivating jiggling butt was exposed to him.

「Uu, what, suddenly an impact hit my jaw……hah!? What is this place, is this Shangri-la abeshih-」

Shuu, who Hajime had discarded on the sofa, appeared to be opening his eyes, but as expected he received a swift, unavoidable attack that made him collapse with the white of his eyes exposed.

While glancing at Shuu, as expected a question of「The score?」from the wives came at him. Hajime livelily told「2 points」only to Tio before he said to Kaori and Remia「Full points」. Ignoring Tio who twitched before starting to pant, Kaori and Remia made a guts pose, and as expected they disappeared into the kitchen with their butts exposed to him.

「So, Kaa-san. What are you making them do this time?」

Hajime was sighing while asking Sumire, who was grinning broadly while making a cool pose for some reason in the corner of the room.

「My, what's with that? You make me sound like I am a problem child. I am merely accompanying everyone in their homemaking training, you know?」

「This is the first time I heard that a naked apron is bride training.」

「Welcoming the husband home is also one of the creditable bride training. You see, Yue-chan and the others, right now they are competing with each other, you know? About who is the worthiest as the bride of the Nagumo family. As their husband, you have to watch them properly. The conclusion won't be reached if everyone gets full points, so you have to grade properly! Okay!?」

「……」

Hajime was sending the most reproachful gaze he could make to Sumire. Before, the girls had done training for housework, laundry, and cooking as bride training. And now they were competing with each other after this late with abnormal ways like naked aprons; no matter how he thought about it this must be a prank. And the mastermind of this prank could only be one person in this place.

Hajime was about to question Sumire further, but at that time, Yue approached him with small steps. Her clothing was still the same.

「……Hajime, the preparation for dinner and a bath is finished.」

「O, ou, I see.」

「……Nn. So……」

Yue tightly clutched the fringe of her apron while fidgeting. If she did something like that, then the apron that had already been in a risky length from the beginning would be further rolled up and become something dangerous. Naturally, Hajime's gaze was pulled to that territory like a monster who was being sucked into the mouth of a thunder dragon.

Toward such a Hajime, Yue mouthed that template speech.

「……Will you not take a bath, and do me? Or will you not take the dinner, and do me? Or else, will you do me, or do me?」

「……In the end, there is no option for me though……」

It was off by a bit from the template! As expected of Yue quality, but the matchless vampire princess wasn’t finished with just this level!

「Then, will you take a bath while doing me? Or else, will you have dinner while doing me?」

「What does that mean!?」

「……As expected, it will be embarrassing, doing it in front of Otou-sama and Okaa-sama. But, if Hajime wishes for it.」

「I don’t wish that! There is a limit even at being abnormal!」

「Myy, Hajime you! This pervert son!」

「Kaa-san, shut up a bit there!」

Hajime’s retort gushed out. On this occasion, he left alone Yue who was blushing while fidgeting with both her hands on her cheeks. For the time being, he should make her wear some clothes and recover the order in the Nagumo household. Hajime was about to act with that objective.

But, before he could do that,

「I, I cannot let, only Yue take the spotlight! Ha, Hajime-kun!」

「Ka, Kaori?」

Still in her naked apron, Kaori, who peeked out from the cover of the kitchen, leaped out as though she had been waiting for her turn. While she was fidgeting pigeon-toed looking embarrassed, she yelled with an expression that was filled with resolve.

「Won’t you eat me as dinner!?」

「What are you saying!?」

「What seasoning do you wanttt!?」

「Calm down-, what you are saying is just too lacking in common sense!」

「Myy, Hajime you! This Mr. gourmet master-」

「I’m going to throw you out of the house, Kaa-san!」

After that, Shia and the others similarly leapt out after that and were saying similar things which Hajime retorted back at severely. Sumire, who watched that, stirred up the place. Shuu, who recovered his consciousness with a ‘hah’, was made to sleep with a swift unavoidable attack, and in the end, it was one hour later before they could have dinner normally.

By the way, as expected everyone was wearing clothes when eating dinner. For some reason, everyone was wearing risqué cosplay appearances though……

In the middle of dinner, a young delivery service man was making a delivery, but he was startled by the blonde miniskirt police woman that came out from the house. He stepped back after seeing the miniskirt nurse that came out from behind the police woman saying「You forget the stamp heree」. Next, he sweated coldly due to the miniskirt shrine

maiden that came in a panic saying「What are you two doing going out with that appearance!」. In the end, the young man expressed his gratitude「Tank ou hery much-————」that was filled with various meanings with a red face and also panic.

At any rate, the cooking showdown had everyone make one dish; which then got judged by Hajime, and it went mostly peacefully.

「Haa」

「Nmyu? What's the matter papa?」

In the bath, Hajime was washing the hair of Myuu who came home just before the dinner while unintentionally making a tired sigh. Myuu was tilting her head that was covered all over with bubbles.

「Myuu……grow up into a normal girl for me okay.」

「??」

「No, it doesn't matter. Just forget it.」

Looking at his beloved daughter that was tilting her head in incomprehension, Hajime was smiling wryly thinking 'just what am I saying' before rinsing off the bubbles on Myuu's hair.

But, at that time, Hajime's senses detected the presence of several people approaching the bathroom!

「Wait, Kaori and also Shizuku, those two haven't gone home yet?」

Before Hajime entered the bath, he had told the two of them that they should go back home soon. But regardless of that, Hajime could sense the presence of Kaori and Shizuku among the presences that were approaching; it made Hajime be at his wits' end. Immediately after, the door of the bathroom was opened loudly. Just as he expected, there were the stark naked figures of Yue and the others boldly standing imperiously! Not even a single string was covering their bodies; it was to the degree that Hajime wanted to tell them to at least use a towel to cover their front. (For the moment, it was only Shizuku who was using a towel to hide her body.)

「……Nn. Now-」

「Charge desuu!」

「I won't lose! The one who is the most skilled at washing Hajime-kun's body is meee!」

「Ufufu, today is the day I'm washing the front.」

「Haa haa, Goshujin-sama, haa haa」

「……Pardon me.」

It appeared this was a competition about who could wash the body of the husband the best. Hajime's eyes were twitching while he quickly headed to the bathtub and urged Myuu to follow. It was as though he was asking her if she could accompany him.

But,

「I won't let you!」

Along with those words, *whoosh* Yue instantly appeared before Hajime’s eyes.

「Wai-, don’t use “Heaven Existence” in this kind of place!」

「Level X–」

「Maximum body reinforcement!? Ah, idiot, let go, this pervert rabbit!」

「Even me-, Limit Break-」

「What kind of limit are you planning to break, huh!?」

Hajime was completely surrounded by the vampire princess, the bug rabbit, and the angel mode maiden! Using that opening, Remia secured Myuu while Tio used wind magic to form a barrier and shut out the voices from leaking outside by laying out a veil of air.

Like that, in the next moment, the bathroom was turned into a battlefield. A battlefield of carnivorous maidens.

「Kuh, who can stay in this kind of place where there are only beasts! I’m going back to my room!」

While holding up a strange flag, Hajime slapped Tio severely to the point that it made her pant while he attempted to rush out of the bathroom. There Yue teleported, and Kaori activated her God Speed and leapt at his back while Shia clung on to his waist with her greatest body reinforcement. Because of his wet feet and the polished floor, Hajime slipped and fell down.

There Yue and the others jumped further at that chance; even the revived Tio also got on top of Hajime.

At the corridor of the Nagumo household, there was the figure of Hajime who was lying upside down while being covered with beautiful women and girls.

At the same time,

There was the figure of Sumire, cackling loudly while rolling on the corridor holding her stomach from seeing that situation.

Somewhere, *snap* the sound of something snapping resounded.

Right after that, Yue and the others raised「Aahn」coquettish voice. Their weak spot was fondled by Hajime. Strength reflexively left their bodies~, using that opening Hajime stood up. Kaori was saying something foolish「Hau, Hajime-kun's Hajime-kun is in front of my eyes」, but he ignored that.

「Kaa-san, it seems that a family meeting is necessary between us. Also, it has to be an extraordinarily harsh meeting.」

「My, Hajime. I don't think that such meeting is necessary though?」

「No, it's necessary. ……The meeting for the sake of making Kaa-san reflect on yourself!」

Hajime's store of patience had run out from his mother's prank that was too much. He took a step forward. He intended to wrap his mother in a bamboo mat then hang her up for a night so she could reflect a little.

But, it seemed that Sumire had already predicted that action of Hajime's. While saying「I've thought that this will

happen!□with a triumphant look, she took out a vacuum cleaner that was leaning in the shadow of the corridor.

——Cleaning Artifact “Sniper Mark II”

By any chance, do you have the experience of sucking even the thing that must not be sucked carelessly when cleaning using a vacuum cleaner? It can become a cause that broke the vacuum, but opening the lid to fish it out every single time is troublesome, isn’t it? In that kind of time, use this. The next generation vacuum cleaner “Sniper Mark II”.

If you have this, you can select the target that you want to suck and the target that you don’t want to suck! Furthermore! If you put this to practical use, it’s even possible to suck the soy sauce or the remote control that is far away into your hand, just with a single push of a button! The next generation vacuum cleaner is already not limited for just cleaning in its utility!

The absorption force will never fall. The era from here on is the era of multiple absorption forces that suck only the prey you aimed for!

The vacuum cleaner (exclusive for the Nagumo household) that Hajime developed with such a catchphrase was held in Sumire’s hand.

In front of the suspicious eyes of Hajime, Sumire took out the degraded version Crystal Key from her breast pocket. It was handed over to her so in the case that something happened to his parents because of the matter of Hajime and the others, they could immediately teleport away.

Before Hajime could say□What are you□, Sumire stabbed the degraded crystal key to the front. Immediately the space distorted, and a gate materialized. At the same time, Sumire

pushed the max mode button on the vacuum cleaner. Naturally, the powerful absorption force pulled on the target from inside the gate.

「Wha, wha, what!? What is going on!? Nooo――, I’m being pulleeeeeeed-」

Like that, a familiar scream could be heard, then from the other side of the gate, a petite female figure in a suit tumbled out. Sumire turned off the switch at the same time when that figure came out, but following the law of inertia, the female that leaped out from the gate rolled into the corridor of the Nagumo house, the figure finally stopped when her face crashed *munyu!* on the obstacle in front of her.

「……」

「……」

The female that rolled out from the gate and plunged into a certain thing with her face――Hatayama Aiko-sensei, wordlessly, slowly, pulled her face away from that place where her face was buried into. And then, looking at that thing dangling in front of her eyes that seemed to be familiar, she tilted her head while saying……

「Hajime-kun?」

「Aiko, can you spare me from you calling my name while looking at my crotch?」

「Hah!? Awawawawawa, I, I’m sorry~」

Yes, the rolling out Aiko, due to the momentum, her face landed on the son of Hajime that was currently standing imposingly stark naked.

Aiko instantly blushed hard while her mind was in chaos thinking ‘I don’t understand the situation!’. Looking from her suited figure, perhaps she had work regardless of the holiday and she only just came home. Despite so, she was suddenly made to teleport, and on top of that she dived face first into the crotch of her lover that was hidden from society except to some people……it was only natural for her to be astonished.

「Yo, you are wanting me and are using this kind of forceful method!?」, or「No, it’s not like I hate it but……waiting naked like this is a bit……」, or「Pe, perhaps I cannot go home tonight……」, it also couldn’t be helped if she was talking to herself like that, perhaps.

Anyway, after Hajime wrapped a towel on his waist, he ran his gaze around once more, but Sumire’s figure had already disappeared; he could only see the door of the entrance that was closing and a piece of paper fluttering midair. It seemed her plan was to make Aiko a distraction while she escaped. It was a splendid escape.

Hajime picked up the memo paper that fell at his feet, and his gaze fell on it. There,

「I received enough material. Thank you, very much. Mama is going back to her work now!」

Such a thing was written.

「Haa, I thought it was something like this……Yue, you noticed it already, right?」

Hajime was sighing to his mother’s deed while questioning Yue who was standing at his side unnoticed. In response, Yue nodded. Hearing that, Shia who had similarly recovered tilted her head and asked what Hajime meant.

「Look here, whether the wedding ceremony will be done one by one, or with everyone all at once, either is fine, but there is no rule that only one person can do it. Besides, if need be, we can also just do the ceremony at Tortus.」

「Aa~, now that Hajime-san mentions it that's true isn't it.」

「Besides, even the marriage registration, I have already faked the official papers about you all itself, so fussing about the marriage registration for everyone right now is meaningless, isn't it? Something like the consistency of the data or whatever, it can be taken care of later as we please.」

「Now that you mention it, that's true. Then, why did Okaa-san do something like a Bride deciding battle……」

「That's obviously for her material collection. Just why do you think she was slacking off in the house this afternoon?」

In short, Sumire said whatever sounded appropriate to incite Shia and the others, and then the uproar that was caused due to that would be turned into the material for her manga that currently was reaching the limits. That was Sumire's scheme.

Shia and the others thought that it was also their own fault that they got caught into the provocation thoroughly like that, but Sumire's capability of letting out a flowing speech just by adlibbing like an agitator, it was just as expected from the mother of Hajime.

And then, Yue who noticed the intention of such Sumire still participated without really objecting was because,

「Today too was a fun day.」

「I see.」

That seemed to be the reason. For Yue, this kind of stupid uproar was also included in her lovely ordinary days. Something like boorish fair arguments could be tossed into the trash can. The satisfied expression of Yue made Hajime shrug「Well, then, it's fine」.

「Say~, I really don't understand what you are all taking about though……」

Aiko called timidly at Hajime and the others that were feeling warm and fluffy by themselves. Hajime glanced at Aiko and,

「My body got completely cold now……let's enter the bath again. With everyone this time.」

Saying that Hajime picked up Aiko in a princess carry. 「Eh? Eh?」Giving a glance at Aiko who was in confusion, Yue and the others raised an「Oo~」in harmony and returned to the large bathroom of the reconstructed Nagumo house.

After that, including Aiko who was stripped by Hajime's hand, Hajime and the wives relaxed and enjoyed the bath without particularly any competition.

……There was no one who paid any attention to Shuu who was still passed out in the living room.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The next update is planned for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 194

Arifureta After – Protector of Angel

AN: My nose won’t stop dripping……

Everyone too, please be very careful against the cold.

Part 1

A famous foreign manufactured car (Mercedes Benz) that was reputed to be the firmest in the world was gallantly driving on the road along the coast. The car’s exterior, which was shining silver, showed how well polished it was, making anyone who saw it understand how much the owner cherished it.

Inside that car, the sea breeze flowed in from the opened window and the classic song, which was the favorite of the car owner, was playing making the time of the people riding that car to pass in relaxation.

“This sea route still feels pleasant every time we come here.”

Yes, the refreshing voice that expressed the feeling of this drive, was the driver of this car and also its owner——Shirasaki Tomoichi. He had hair that was lightly flowing down his back, long slitted and gentle eyes, and a balanced body type while his age was only that of being in the middle of his forties; just from his appearance, he was a handsome man that could pass as a man that was still in his late twenties.

Sitting beside Tomoichi was a woman that nodded at Tomoichi’s words while saying“You’re right, no matter how many times we come here, this is a really good place.”, was Shirasaki Kaoruko. Looking at her straight black hair without any white hair, her droopy eyes, and the neat and clean atmosphere she was clad with, she was a woman that felt

like a lady. She was the same as Tomoichi as her age was in the middle of her forties, but she still looked like a young woman in her late twenties.

Just like their family name showed, they were a married couple. Just from their atmosphere, it could be clearly seen how they had been building a satisfactory marital relationship.

But even while Tomoichi’s consciousness was concentrating on the driving, it didn’t seem like he was paying attention at his wife. Since before, he kept glancing at the rearview mirror and repeatedly paid attention to the rear seat. Even his impression of the drive just now seemed to be a bit forced if someone listened carefully, rather than saying that it was his true feeling it was more a lure for starting a conversation. And then, it was clear that the cause of that was the passenger in the rear seat.

Hearing no other response to his words other than from his wife, Tomoichi coughed「A, ahem」, this cough also seemed to be forced, and then he once again formed his words to try to attract the attention of the person in the rear seat. This happened while his wife beside him was giggling at him.

「O, Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan, their ages are already quite old, so how about we move here soon? A home near the sea is nice don’t you think? Hey, what do you think? Kaori?」

「……Absolutely, no.」

The cold voice and words that came back caused Tomoichi to let out a small groan「Uguu」. He once more began repeatedly glancing at the rearview mirror to look at his beloved daughter——Kaori’s expression who was sitting in the back.

Kaori was emitting an assertion「I am displeased desu!」from her whole body while staring fixedly on the outside as though to say that she absolutely wouldn’t meet Tomoichi’s eyes. But even with such a super displeased mode being turned on, her posture, without putting her elbow on the window or crossing her arms, of having her two hands were put on her lap with her back straight, was really Kaori like.

Tomoichi attempted to talk further with an expression that looked a little desperate at Kaori.

「I, is that so? In the past, each time we came to play here, wouldn’t you always say ‘I don’t want to go home!’. Remember Riko-chan who lived next door, or your cousin Sakura-chan, you always played together with them, right? I think moving here is not really ba――」

「Then, isn’t it fine if Otou-san moves here alone?」

「!? No way!? That’s too much you know, Kaoriii!」

With a snap, Tomoichi turned around to the back seat. The Benz of the Shirasaki family was zigzagging! A string slap landed on Tomoichi’s face! Tomoichi’s face was forcefully faced to the front!

A call「Dear?」from Kaoruko that made Tomoichi fell a small but intense chill resounded inside the car. 「Forgive me」 Tomoichi honestly apologized. Tomoichi knew really well that the true anger of his wife was like a production machine of trauma. In his dream, the Shiro Yasha-san was making an appearance! (TN: Shiro Yasha=white demon)

「Geez, dear you really……there is no way Kaori will accept that suggestion, right? There is Shizuku-chan, and also her friends at school back there.」

「Pe, perhaps that’s true but……」

Tomoichi’s eyes were swimming while he was still feeling the stinging pain on his cheek. Seeming very reluctant, he whispered「Even so, I think that idea is not bad though……」

Currently, the Shirasaki family was heading to the home of Tomoichi’s parents where both his parents and his older brother and his wife were living. Tomoichi’s elder brother and his wife had a daughter that was four years older than Kaori. That daughter was a really helpful daughter even though she could be a bit frank; she was an existence that was like a big sister to Kaori. The house was near the sea, so the two of them often played at sea together with Riko of the Ayasaki family who lived next door.

Kaori was an only child, and because of that she really idolized Sakura. When Kaori was little she often clung to Sakura while throwing tantrums and yelling「I don’t want to go home yet」. Due to that, Tomoichi was thinking, could Kaori possibly consider moving there even now……could she be distanced from that nasty shitty brat……and so on, but…….

Kaoruko, who seemed to grasp those thoughts dwelling inside of Tomoichi’s heart clearly, was giggling while speaking about the thing that Tomoichi didn’t want to hear the most. About the real reason why Kaori was displeased. About the young man that was the reason that Kaori absolutely wouldn’t accept moving from home.

「Besides, you see? There is no way that Kaori will leave the town where Hajime-kun is, don’t you think?」

「Stop it Kaoruko! This is our long-awaited family’s homecoming without any outsiders, you know!? Don’t say

anything about that shitty brat who dares to make a pass at the cute angel of our family――

Otou-san?

Tomoichi felt a chill at his back and twitched. He understood even without looking. This was a presence that really resembled his wife's! It would be there if he looked back! The incarnation of fury that his daughter inherited from her mother before he noticed――the Hannya-san!

But, just with this much, Otou-san wouldn't lose. For the sake of his beloved daughter, the apple of his eye!

Ka, Kaori, calm down. My words just now were a bit poor. But, as expected Otou-san, about that bagwor――ahem-. That tras――ehem-. That shitty――

……I'm going home right now. I won't listen anymore to what Otou-san has to say.

Nooo! Kaori, listen to what I'm saying! Otou-san is thinking about what is best for Kaori's sake……(TN: Here Tomoichi is saying nooo in English.)

Otou-san is badmouthing Hajime-kun because Otou-san is thinking about what's best for me? I never thought that Otou-san is that kind of person.

You are wrong, Kaori! Even Otou-san doesn't want to say bad things about, Ha, Haji, Haji――about that guy. But, but still? While that bastard already has Kaori, he still made many other girls to serve him and open their legs for him; on top of that, instead of feeling guilty, he is acting defiant, you know? Do you think there is any father that can entrust his daughter to that kind of shitty bastard? No, such a father

doesn’t exist! I’m telling this for your own good. Kaori, cut your relation with that cocky rubbish scum――

I hate someone like Otou-san so much!

Gahah!?

Tomoichi, who was hit by the speech that would empty the HP of any father in the whole country if it was said to them by their daughter, caused the car to zigzag once more. With tears gathering at the corner of his eye, Tomoichi was leaking out the voice No waaay, Kaorii, My Angeeeel~ looking really pathetic. (TN: The ‘my angel’ here is said in English.)

A few months after Kaori returned home from the other world, Tortus. Tomoichi and Kaoruko were already introduced to Hajime. From the beginning, before the summoning, Tomoichi and Kaoruko already knew that Kaori had a boy in her mind, but putting aside Kaoruko, from the start Tomoichi was already unable to stomach that boy――Hajime.

It wasn’t like Tomoichi had a clear reason. It was the feeling of a father whose treasured daughter might be taken from him, that feeling might even be called as a conditioned reflex. Tomoichi sometimes even bared his hostility toward Kouki and Ryutaro. If he acted like that even to the childhood friends of his daughter, then Hajime, who had started to live inside his daughter’s heart before he noticed, was already like his sworn enemy, that really couldn’t be helped.

Naturally, because this was Tomoichi, whose level as a doting parent had already reached the max value when Kaori disappeared, it was already a disaster for him. At that time, Kaoruko’s physical condition also worsened, but the Shirasaki family somehow held on by borrowing the help of

the elder brother’s family and their parents, and also their whole relatives.

And then, his beloved daughter returned home like a miracle. They were told about the truth of the disappearance which scared them out of their wits from various things, and then they were shown many mystics in order to prove Kaori’s story, naturally all of those were a succession of astonishment for them but……there was a matter that was really hard to forgive, to the degree that all those absurdities seemed like trivial matter.

Yes, it was the matter about how his beloved daughter(My Angel) had made a lover.

Furthermore, that lover had several other lovers other than Kaori, he didn’t even have any intention to separate from any of those lovers, and in the end, he started talking about taking them all as wives. ‘Are you making a fool of me-, you bastard!’ Tomoichi roared angrily like that many times……

On top of that, the daughter in question was accepting of such a harem situation and making a really happy expression that even Tomoichi had never seen before. She was also saying things like ‘together with the other girls!’, and upon hearing that several times Tomoichi yelled angrily ‘You bastaaard, you are putting my daughter under some strange magic, aren’t you! No, it absolutely must be like that, you harmful pest-!’……

Furthermore, the speech that all the fathers in the whole country feared that someday might be said to them, no, the speech that the fathers had resolved they wouldn’t let any man say! ——「Father-in-law, please give your daughter to me!」, instead became「Father-in-law, I’ve received your daughter. Please take care of me from here on too」. When

that curve ball was thrown to Tomoichi, he very naturally thought this, 「Yosh, let's kill this guy」.

Everything was for the sake of his beloved daughter, to protect her from a bad man. Yet despite so, when he was about to punch the bastard, the one who pinioned him from the back was the daughter herself. While Hajime, who was about to be punched, kept sitting calmly and composedly. That self-assured attitude (Hajime himself was aware that he had something that was considered the worst, so he was only waiting to be punched) was also something he couldn't stomach! Tomoichi was raging「This shitty bastarddd-, I'll beat you to deathhhhh!」like that, but in the end was stopped by Kaori「Otou-san, calm dooooown!」with a suplex. Because Tomoichi lost consciousness, the meeting at that time was dissolved just but……

After that, Tomoichi knew that actually, Kaori had already climbed the stair of adulthood, which caused Tomoichi's killing intent to climb without knowing a place to stop.

This time too, actually Kaori wanted to participate in the Nagumo family's little gathering. But Tomoichi who thought 'No way I'll let my daughter go to the devil's place' hurriedly scheduled a visit to his parents and took Kaori along half forcefully.

When Kaori was in the middle of talking to Hajime about the arrangement, Tomoichi took away Kaori's phone and said to the phone「Kaori has plans! She is going to spend her holiday with me! From here on too she won't have any openings in her plans! Don't call anymore, you scum bastard!」, and then he cut off the connection as he pleased.

Naturally, Kaori was getting angry at her father's doing, but Tomoichi only looked aside with a huff and turned a deaf ear

to Kaori. While that was happening, Hajime used telepathy to Kaori to tell her 「You should spend time with your family this time. Actually, I really understand how your father is feeling.」with a wry smile, and so Kaori reluctantly acquiesced to visit her grandparents.

Although, Kaori's mood, who had her phone call taken over as it pleased on top of the fact that her lover had abusive language spouted at him, was at its lowest, so since they departed from their home, Tomoichi was desperate in currying favor to his daughter.

「Come on you two. Leave it at this; we are going to arrive soon, see?」

While smiling wryly at the cold war (one-sided) between father and daughter, Kaoruko intermediated between them. Just as she said before they realized it, they had entered a residential area, and in front of the car, a splendid house with two buildings that they were really familiar with began to become visible.

While being concerned about Kaori's state, Tomoichi stopped the car at the shoulder of the road, in front of the house. In the middle, *garigari*, an ominous scraping sound that should not come from a high class car could be heard, but such a thing was only a trivial matter for Tomoichi who was hopelessly bothered over his daughter's state. He left aside the expression of his wife that was looking like she had a headache.

Kaori immediately got out of the car without saying anything. Tomoichi also hurriedly got out of the car and took out the luggage from the car's trunk.

「Kaori. Otou-san will carry the luggage for you!」

They planned to stay for three or four days, so Kaori's luggage was in a Boston bag sized bag. Tomoichi carried the luggage while speaking smilingly, but Kaori walked briskly to him and tore off her luggage from him with a huff.

「It's only until the entrance, Otou-san is too exaggerating. ……If it's Hajime-kun, he will naturally bring the luggage without saying anything like that.」

「!? Is, is that so!? Ha, Haji……that bastard, earning a point in a petty way like that. (Hajime-kun, really is a considerate child isn't he~)」

「……Haah. Dear, your true feelings and surface attitude are reversed there you know.」

Kaori averted her face 'Puiihh!!' from Tomoichi who was plainly leaking out his true feelings without hiding it at all, and then she ignored Tomoichi and walked away briskly. Tomoichi fell to his knees at the entrance of the house. His figure that was on all fours with his head hanging down was really inviting pity……

「……Just when I thought that you all finally arrived. Oji-san, what are you doing in that kind of place? The neighbors are looking, so I want you to stop doing that though.」(TN: Oji-san=uncle)

When Kaori was about to ring the chime of the door, a resident of the house, that seemed to come from the backyard while circling the house to the front, called with a voice that sounded exasperated and astonished.

「Sakura-oneechan!」

「Welcome Kaori. As always, it looks like it's difficult for you involving various things, but I'm glad that you look

energetic. Just relax slowly here.

Kaori smiled widely at the owner of that voice——her cousin Shirasaki Sakura and embraced her.

Sakura, who was a female college student, had straight brown hair. She was a beautiful woman with a well proportion body like a model (TN: The words used here have the meaning beautiful, well-proportioned woman (body 8 times longer than the head)). The features of her face itself vaguely resembled Kaori, but the atmosphere she was clad in was basically cool. She felt like the so-called frank girl. Her hand was holding a hose that was trickling water, so surely she was just watering the garden before this.

Sakura's cool gaze softened at her cousin that was like a little sister who leaped into her chest, and then she used her empty hand to caress Kaori's head gently.

When she heard that Kaori was involved in a group disappearance, she was really worried to the point that she felt lost. Naturally, when she was notified that Kaori had come home, she immediately went to meet her directly. And so, different from the other distant relatives, she had already met with Kaori several times since Kaori's return.

Even so, the society was still in commotion in regard to the topic of the returnees. The topic could be seen enough on the television, so as expected, it was something joyful to be able to see Kaori's energetic face directly like this.

Having the sharp words of his niece directed at him, Tomoichi hung his head down even lower. Kaoruko was dragging Tomoichi while entering together with Kaori and Sakura into the house where the grandparents and uncle were living.

Part 2

The sun had already gone down by this point. On the coastal street where the veil of night was beginning to fall, Kaori and Sakura were walking close to each other like true sisters.

「The live show was amazingly lively, wasn’t it? I don’t really go often to that kind of event, so I was really excited.」

「Is that so? Then that’s good. There were only local bands, so I wondered if it was strange for you.」

Kaori, who received a passionate welcoming at Sakura’s home, had passed a relaxing time there while talking to each other about their families’ recent state for a while. And then when it was evening, she was told that there was a live event of the local bands at the coastal venue starting at that time, so she was taken along by Sakura to attend at the live to kill time.

Sakura responded to her cheerfully smiling younger sister that she would be glad if Kaori was able to enjoy the show, however, Sakura’s expression was twitching a bit. The cause of that was one person. Sakura glanced over her shoulder behind them.

「Uu, Kaoriii. My angeeel. Can you make eye contact with Otou-san soon? Otou-san is going to die here from the loneliness.」

Yes, it was Tomoichi. For two women to go to a live show by themselves, they didn’t know what could happen to them. Giving that argument, Tomoichi went along with Kaori and Sakura, but the attitude of Kaori that treated him like he didn’t exist caused Tomoichi to make a contorted face that was about to cry. Furthermore, Kaori didn’t change her attitude at all even after looking at her father acting like that; instead, she was still smiling cheerfully, and looking at such a Kaori, honestly speaking, it was a bit scary.

The cold war between the father and daughter was definitely inflicting damage to Sakura’s stomach.

By the way, the reason Kaori was taking such an attitude wasn’t only because of the quarrel in the car, or Tomoichi’s accompaniment to the live show. Actually, when the families were talking at Sakura’s house, a topic about Hajime came up and urged by Sakura, Kaori made a call but……anyway what could be said was that Tomoichi bombed that phone call once more.

「……Hey, Kaori. How about you forgive Oji-san soon? Oji-san, he looks like he is seriously going to cry there. Honestly, having an uncle with a face that’s about to cry following behind you on the street at night, it’s scary.」

「Fufu, sheesh Sakura-oneechan. What are you saying? No matter where you look, there isn’t anyone like that here, you know?」

「Kaoriii! Otou-san is right here! Now, look here, please!」(TN: The ‘please’ is said in English.)

「See? There is no one, right?」

「Haa……」

Sakura’s stomach received further damage. For Sakura, if her cute little sister made a boyfriend, then she also wouldn’t be so accepting of that boyfriend. Therefore, it wasn’t like she couldn’t understand Tomoichi’s feeling. But, in reverse, to have a parent saying this and that about the person that she liked was……as a girl in the same position of being a daughter, she was also able to understand Kaori’s feelings. She was stuck between a rock and a hard place.

‘Geez, anything is fine, so won’t something happen that will end this father-daughter fight that has become quite troublesome’, when Sakura was running from reality by thinking that……

□Eehh? You girls there, you two were at the live show just now, right? What a coincidence! Want to talk a bit?□

It came. Inside her heart, Sakura held her head thinking □What kind of timing this is.□. Ahead of the gaze of Sakura, there was a group of youngsters with a really flashy atmosphere as though they were someone that really liked messing around. When judging from their similar appearances, there were about ten people. Sakura grandly made retorts, like why they were calling out to two girls when there were about ten people in their group, or whether they even saw the man who seemed to be the father behind the two of them. Of course, those were done inside her heart.

□My bad, but we have plans after this.□

□Plans? It’s plans to go play, right? Then, let’s go together yeah. The more, the merrier.□

Sakura politely refused, but the seducer group was grinning while surrounding Sakura and Kaori. No matter how they looked at this, it didn’t seem like they were planning to let

the two of them go home merely. Because Sakura and Kaori were a beautiful woman and girl that really couldn’t be found that often in this area, these men wouldn’t give up that easily.

But, naturally, seeing his beloved daughter and cute nephew getting hit on, there was no way Tomoichi could just stay quiet.

「You all. My daughter just said that she doesn’t want to go with you. Now, open the way. We all just enjoyed a nice live show. Let both of our groups avoid any troublesome matter.」

「Aa, what is it, old man? Rather, your daughter? Eeh? By any chance, are you coming along with your daughter? Uwaa, that’s seriously disgusting.」

「Hey old man, being overprotective is no good. Is this what is called an over-demanding parent? Have some self-awareness. Seriously, how uncool.」

「Rather, the one harassing these two here is you old man. Seriously, realize that. Come on, you two too, let’s leave this stalker father and come play with us, yeah?」

The men who were trying to pick up the girls guffawed loudly from the words of Tomoichi who came to the front while verbally abusing Tomoichi. Hearing their words, Tomoichi didn’t even look particularly angry, far from that, he didn’t even show any fear being surrounded by more than ten people. He firmly said something more to stop the men from picking up girls more than anything but……

Perhaps feeling that Tomoichi, who was blocking their way, was irritating, one of the men passed beside Tomoichi and stretched his hand out toward Kaori.

「Can you not touch my daughter?」

「-, you really are noisy huh.」

Tomoichi suddenly gripped the man's hand, his almond eyes quietly narrowed and he gave words of restraint. Tomoichi wasn't particularly strong in a brawl. In his occupation, he was a first class architect, and there was no chance for his physical strength to be questioned in such an occupation. Even so, as an adult male who had piled up experience, furthermore, as a father who was witnessing someone trying to lay their hand on his daughter, the light of his eyes contained a considerable amount of pressure.

Therefore, the man was reflexively overpowered mentally. However, it seemed the man felt some shame from that fact, and his face immediately turned red indignantly. The man shook off the hand of Tomoichi that was grasping his hand, and at the same time, he hit Tomoichi.

Tomoichi let out a muffled voice, and something red oozed from the corner of his lips.

The man, driven by his indignation, swung his arm further, while the other men also stepped forward to further hurt Tomoichi who was a hindrance for them. Sakura was raising her voice to stop them while her fingers were gliding on her smartphone to contact the police, but it was at that moment,

「What are you all doing, I wonder? I wonder?」

Dread rushed through all the people in that place.

And then they noticed it. Before they even realized it, Kaori, who was already at Tomoichi's side, had stopped the fist of the man that was swinging downward with one hand.

A chill that was impossible to understand lathered on their skin causing bumps and the strange situation of a girl smiling while stopping the serious punch of an older man with just one hand caused everyone to stiffen. In the middle of that, Kaori let out words with a flat tone that was the opposite of her smiling face.

「I’m asking you here, just what are you doing to my Otou-san, I wonder?」

「Wha, what the hell, are you!? Aa!? The father of you bitch was screwing around, so I was only giving him a lesson!」

The intimidating air that Kaori emitted caused the man whose fist was stopped to go into a frenzy while ranting. And then, the man’s other hand tried to strike in order to “give a lesson” to Kaori.

「Otou-san was screwing around? I guess so. Indeed, he is a troubling Otou-san who is always screwing around. He is overprotective, treating me like I’m still a small child. He immediately sulks if he is not paid attention to, and he keeps badmouthing Hajime-kun.」

「hrk, wha, what the hell-. This stupid strength-」

Kaori was talking with a small voice in a murmur, leaving the dumbfounded surrounding to lurch.

All the while gripping the two wrists of a man with a build far larger than herself.

From a glance, it was clear that the man was trying to pull his hands away with all his strength, but the hands holding him didn’t even twitch, as though he was being shackled with iron to a wall. Kaori’s words reached toward the man who was half falling into a panic.

「But you see, Otou-san is kind you know? He always thinks of me, no matter how busy he is with his work he always tries to make time to speak with me, he always protects me even though he is not strong in a brawl. When I worked hard, he praised me a lot, and when I made mistakes, he scolded me a lot.」

Kaori lifted her face. However, that gaze wasn't directed at the man in front of her eyes. What she was looking at was Tomoichi at the side.

「……Otou-san, I'm sorry. I should have stopped it before you got hit. I recalled many things, so I was late to move. Thank you, for trying to protect me.」

「Kaori……」

Tomoichi only called Kaori's name while looking at her wry smile. He could do nothing else but that. The reason was that his daughter's figure was looking really grown-up for some reason. It was as though she was letting go of his hand; as if she had already left the nest since a long time ago. Even though they were in the middle of a situation like this, the loneliness that flooded his chest clogged up all his words.

Kaori moved his gaze from Tomoichi toward the men surrounding them, and then she let out her words along with an icy gaze.

「My father is the greatest father in the world. Don't you dare, humans at the level of you all, make fun of him!」

「You bitch, let go of me alre――bugeh!?」

A kick that pointed to the sky was launched immediately after the angry yell. That kick impacted the jaw of the man

whose both hands were gripped, and like that, that man was blown away like a joke in a parabolic arc.

The air returned to dead silence.

「If you all disappear right now, then I'll overlook this.」

Kaori's words resounded dignifiedly. A dainty girl was sending a young man with good physique flying with one kick——normally, the group of men would surely sense the abnormality of the situation; however, the difference in number between both sides and the common sense that said there was no way ten men could lose against a high school girl caused them to mistake their choice for the sake of their tiny pride.

The men were breathing roughly in agitation, their mouths hurled out unrestrained abusive language, and they adjusted their stance in preparation to attack.

「Yep, I guess it can only be like this. People like you all surprisingly all have the same pattern.」

Kaori lightly waved both her hands. Immediately, *kyakin!* a satisfying sound resounded, and two metallic poles appeared in both her hands. Those were extendable batons.

Kaori was wearing short sleeve clothes, which made anyone want to retort just where she hid those batons, but those who knew knew that it was great that what came out were only extendable batons, wasn't it. Inside the ring that was attached with a crimson jewel dangling on Kaori's neck, there were even brutal large swords that could easily split a great rock into two; those swords were exactly Kaori's specialized weapon.

In the end, the two sword style using the extendable batons (Adamantium made-Lightning Clad enchantment) flashed on the coastal street at night; it became a fierce society study for the young men. Along with a trauma that wouldn’t disappear.

「Oji-san. It’s great, isn’t it? Kaori got angry like this for Oji-san’s sake. See, she is just like Oba-san. Please look at this goosebumps. It’s also like this when Oba-san is angry.」(TN: Oba-san=aunt)

「……Yo, you are right. Also, is, is it just my feeling? It feels like I can see “something” on Kaori’s back just like Kaoruko though.」

The last man ate a fierce blow at his butt that would make even a Thai kick look like mere child’s play; that man screamed「Aaa――――!!」while flying through the air. Sakura and Tomoichi were looking at that scene with a distant look and raised a dry laugh.

After that, Kaori tampered with the memory of the seducers with her own soul magic before she returned toward Tomoichi and Sakura with a really nice smile. It went without saying how Tomoichi and Sakura shivered altogether.

After that, seeing Kaori getting all fidgety looking like she wanted to talk with Tomoichi, Sakura read the mood and went back home first. Currently, Tomoichi and Kaori were walking silently with just the two of them on the path home.

「Otou-san, it doesn’t hurt anymore?」

「Yeah, it’s fine already Kaori. ……Magic is really amazing huh. You have shown it to me many times, so it feels too late saying this, but even now it still makes me feel admiration witnessing it.」

The wound on his lips had been healed by Kaori’s healing magic. Tomoichi said his thanks to Kaori with admiration just like he said. Feeling relieved hearing that, Kaori’s expression softened. And then, her gaze began wandering as though she was searching for words.

Seeing that state of his daughter, Tomoichi half-guessed just what she wanted to speak about and sighed inside his heart, then he urged Kaori to speak.

「Kaori, if there is something you want to say, then you can just say it as it is within your mind. After all, I’m the best father in the world. No matter what is it, I’ll listen to what you have to say.」

Kaori chuckled at the way her father spoke, and she opened her mouth.

「Say, I noticed this just now but……Hajime-kun, he resembles Otou-san doesn’t he-, that’s what I think.」

「……Can you pause there, Kaori? Even Otou-san has this thing called limit to what I can and cannot accept, you know? I’m similar to that harem man that is like a walking and talking haughty arrogance? I wonder, can Otou-san go out for a little bit of a journey? It’s okay; I think after finding myself for about a year, Otou-san will be able to stand up again.」

「Ahaha, that’s not what I meant. What I mean is not the current Hajime-kun, but the previous Hajime-kun.」

「The previous?」

Kaori nodded toward Tomoichi who showed a questioning face. And then, she narrowed her eyes in nostalgia and began to talk.

「Yes, previously. He couldn’t fight or anything at all, but when he thought that it was necessary, then he would step out without hesitation, that kind of weak but strong person. Yep, surely, that was why I became curious about Hajime-kun. Because, if I can be with a person that is similar with Otou-san, then I will be happy, I know that from looking at Kaa-san.」

「Kaori……. Right now, Otou-san’s feelings are really complicated. I’m happy but perhaps not happy……. However, that’s really hard to believe huh. That him, and the him of the past that Kaori talked about, I really cannot connect the two of them……」

「Isn’t that right. I too, when I reunited with Hajime-kun I was really shaken then. That was how much he changed. It was really terrible for him, to the degree that it was absolutely necessary for him to change. But, even so, deep inside he didn’t change. That’s why there are people that love Hajime-kun that much. A person who is merely insincere and like women, it would be strange if that kind of person is surrounded by that many people, isn’t it?」

「……Perhaps it’s just as you say. But, even so, as expected as a father it’s hard for me to consent. No matter who, if it is a father who has a daughter, then he will surely want to entrust his daughter to a person who will treasure her the most and only her.」

Tomoichi scratched his head looking troubled. Kaori took Tomoichi’s arm and then hugged him happily.

「Thank you, Otou-san. But, I have confidence. Indeed, it’s not just me alone that is with him, and I might not be the number one, even so, I’m confident that I can have happiness that won’t lose to anyone. Even though there are

many people that are walking together with him, even so, I can puff up my chest and say I am cherished. Because, the person who had crawled up from the bottom of the abyss just with the thought that he wanted to go home to his important family, and defeated even god just because he wanted to take back his important person, such a person is the one who gave his promise to me, you know?」

Kaori showed Tomoichi the ring that was dangling from her neck. Different from the treasure warehouse, it was just a ring, but it was the eternal ring that was filled with the oath of her loved one.

After seeing that ring, Tomoichi's expression turned extremely bitter.

「Otou-san. Hajime-kun, he is a person that will treasure every aspect of his important people, even the treasured people of that treasured people. That's why he said that he wouldn't give up no matter how much Otou-san hates him. He told me that he would treasure Otou-san and Okaa-san too.」

「……」

「That's why, I understand that this is not normal, that this is something outlandish, but it's fine even if it will take time. I want Otou-san to treasure Hajime-kun too. I want Otou-san to treasure my treasured person too.」

Kaori's words rode the flowing night wind that carried the aroma of salt and vanished. Tomoichi's expression was still bitter without any reply. If anyone looked at his eyes, they would be able to see a horrible discord whirling inside.

The long silence was continuing. Only the sounds of footsteps and sea waves were resounding in the ears of the

two.

It was unknown how much time had passed, but before long Tomoichi deeply and grandly sighed. Toward Kaori who was staring at Tomoichi anxiously, his shoulders dropped while one of his hands held out to Kaori.

「Kaori. Can you contact that guy……Hajime-kun for me?」

「Otou-san……yes, wait a little bit.」

Kaori took her smartphone and called Hajime with a few rings. Hajime, who answered the phone, was told by Kaori that Tomoichi wanted to talk. Hajime consented readily without sounding particularly worked up. Hajime's attitude that sounded composed caused Tomoichi's face to turn bitter once more. Kaori handed over the smartphone while smiling wryly at that expression of his father.

「……It's me.」

「It has been a long time.」(TN: Hajime used extremely polite language here.)

「Hmph! We just met around two months ago. Saying it has been a long time from that……it appears that within you, the matter of me is just like a mere stone at the roadside, huh.」

「No, that's unthinkable. The family of Kaori is as important as a jewel for me.」

「Hmph! As always, it's only your mouth that keeps spouting out pretty words, isn't it? Is that how you trick my daughter?」

「Never. If pushed to say, then I think it is me who got caught.」

「Hmph!! Is this that? 「Not really, I am not really feeling anything here, but Kaori said that she wants this no matter what sooo, I'll just give it a try」That's what you think huh! Just what in the world are you――」

「Otou-san?」

「I'm sorry.」

When Tomoichi heard Hajime's voice, his hostility flooded out like a conditioned reflex. At the same time, when he heard*「Otou-san?」*from his daughter, he also let out words of apology from a conditioned reflex. He wasn't a mere father. He was a trained father.

While keenly feeling the gaze of Hannya-san from the side, Tomoichi cleared his throat while trickling cold sweat and opened his mouth once more.

「Ahem-. That, see, today, I called because……well, I too have various things in my mind. A father that has a daughter, no matter what, he cannot be gentle toward the man who is the partner of said daughter.」

「I understand. After all, I too have a daughter that makes me resolved to be a father. If I am in your position, and my daughter brings along a man like me, then there is no doubt that I will break all the bones in his body and bury him inside concrete, and in the end, I will throw him in the middle of Pacific Ocean.」

「Eh? Ah, yeah, tha, that's it. I, I too, am thinking of doing at least that much, yup, to such a man, you know?」

「Yes. That's why I understand how your blood must be seething. So much, that you must be thinking that you want to drop a nuclear bomb on me right now even if it drags the

surroundings into it; that you want to dye everything in dark red, isn’t that right?」

「……Yo, you really got it huh!」

This time Tomoichi was trickling cold sweat from a different meaning. Hajime’s hostility was too extreme that far surpassed him. Furthermore, just by imagining the imaginary loved one of that daughter who might appear in the future, Japan might fall into a pinch in the future. Tomoichi was thinking, 「Ee? Isn’t the scale of hostility a bit too different from mine?」, which caused him to succumb to a complicated sense of defeat.

「Ahem-. It feels like I somehow came to understand really well how you are thinking, so let’s put this matter aside for a bit. More than that, I want to confirm something with you.」

「Yes.」

「You don’t have any intention to separate with Kaori. Conversely, you also don’t have any intention to separate from the other girls. You are planning to remain married with them all for life, and you don’t have the intention to bend that will. Isn’t that right?」

「It’s just as you say. I understand how such a thing is outlandish, how it goes against ethics, and how there are people like you who think unpleasantly of such a thing. But even knowing that, let me say it once more. Everyone, they all are my wives. That will of mine won’t bend. No matter what can possibly happen from here on, I won’t yield that will at all. My deepest apologies, but I will stick to this will for my whole life until you can possibly accept it.」

「tsk, you are brazenly acting defiant huh.」

「I will do everything in my power so that someday, you can possibly accept this as sincerity and determination of my own way.」(TN: The way Hajime used you to call Tomoichi here is also done in the politest way.)

Tomoichi's hand that was holding the smartphone tightened. His fury was welling up hearing that nonsensical thing being spoken so brazenly. However, he saw the eyes of his daughter that was staring fixedly at him from the side, and then Tomoichi sighed once more to let out the heavy thing inside his chest.

「I really want to punch you flying right now, you know? The ideal future for me is that I won't see your face anymore with my daughter, completely forgetting you once and for all.」

「I guess so. The troubling thing is, I understand your feelings painfully well. I also understand how it must be irritating for you that I am acting sympathetic like this. This is really a highly difficult problem, even more than adventuring in another world that was filled with death and absurdity.」

「I don't know about the absurdity of another world, but there is not even a single doubt in me that this is the greatest trial that I have ever faced in my whole life. Aah, really, just why did my daughter encounter you in the past?」

「Surely, that's because there is no one who can stand superior to this mean world.」

「No doubt about that. Good grief, this world really makes me go through something uncalled for. ……However, what is really, reall~y unfortunate is……my daughter, is happy with this, with an expression so lovely that I have never seen before.」

「……」

Tomoichi stood still there. His parent’s house had come into view. But he couldn’t muster any will to enter the house like this. First, there was something that he had to ask, for the sake of the words and wish of his daughter that he had heard in this night, and above that, for the sake of producing a conclusion inside himself.

「Let me ask this to you, the shitty bastard who is trying to have your own way for a screwy future. Can you vow, that you will able to make, my daughter, my Kaori, to keep having that kind of expression forever? Can you vow, that she will be able to throw out her chest, and declare without hesitation that she is happy, can you make her continue to be that kind of girl forever?」

On the other side of the phone, Tomichi felt that the atmosphere suddenly changed. It was something that made Tomoichi feel Hajime’s serious feelings beyond any doubt before even hearing his next words……

「If it’s that vow, I have vowed it since a long time ago. This life is for that sake. It will never change, no matter what.」

「……」

Standing still in place, Tomoichi looked up to the sky. While feeling the gaze of his daughter that was looking up at him, he repressed the excessive urge to yell 「BASTAAARDD————!!」inside him. And then, breaking the silence, he formed the words while feeling a strange sense of defeat; he summoned up all his strength to the limit, in order to grant the earnest wish of his daughter.

「……Next time, come to my home. You can have dinner there.」

「……Thank you very much. I will surely visit to trouble your hospitality.」

An impact run through Tomoichi's arm. When he looked there, Kaori was hugging Tomoichi's arm with a full smile. With a small voice,「Otou-san, thank you. I love you!」she sent him the greatest words for a father. His feeling that almost made him scatter bloody vomit from working up the sentence just now, and also his murky feeling, all those feelings were somewhat cleared up if he could receive such words.

At the same time, when he thought that he received those words due to Haijme's existence, as expected, he couldn't help but feel a sense of defeat.

「Do, don't you misunderstand! It's not like I recognize you or anything! Until the end, I'm just thinking of keeping an eye on you for a bit, that's all there is to it, don't you dare make Kaori sad even for a bit! If you dare do that, then it will be that, that! It will be concrete and the Pacific Ocean and Nuclear I tell you!」

「Haha, that's really terrifying. I will engrave those words deep in my heart.」

Tomoichi's speech that was just like a tsundere caused Hajime and also Kaori to leak out chuckles reflexively.

It was at that timing when the talk almost end with a good feeling,

「Goshujin-samaaa~. Thy beloved servant has returned~. For the reward, please, chastise mine butt a lot toniiight!」

From the other side of the phone, some kind of voice that was filled with a mix of excitement and charm resounded.

The moment that voice became audible, the atmosphere of Hajime changing into astonishment could be felt transmitted through the phone receiver.

「Tio, you, how did you come back!? Even though as the punishment of making merry in front of my Jii-chan and others before this I had wrapped you in a bamboo mat and tied you up to a missile before launching it……」(TN: Jii-chan=grandfather)

「Of course, it's obviously by crawling back without untangling Goshujin-sama's love(rope)! The kindness of not exploding the missile……if I didn't answer that kindness, how could I be Goshujin-sama's servant!」

「That's a lie right……I sent you flying until the other side of the mountain; you shouldn't be able to come back without crossing through the downtown……」

「Yes! When the people saw this crawling figure, that art like a caterpillar, cheers(screams) were raised everywhere. As expected even I felt shy. Furthermore, the authorities came out, so I traveled with a higher speed; everyone was already loudly cheering(pandemonium) then.」

「You are making a new urban legend in the city where my Jii-chan is living……」

「Now, grant the prize to me who hath worked hard in coming back. Specifically, a reward using that black, hard, and large thing, to chastise mine butt! Recently, Goshujin-sama didn't do it much, so it feels lonely!」

「You stupid idiot! What kind of thing are you running your mouth about with that loud voice!」

Of course, the perverted exchanges that were done with loud voice were properly transmitted through the phone, to the father and daughter with cleared feelings.

「……Oi, perverted bastard.」

「! ……This is a misunderstanding desu. Give me a chance for explaining――」

「You think I'll give you a chance? You think I'll let you? Fufu, isn't it strange? Aa, you are really, a strange man. Fufufufu.」

An eerie chuckle came out from Tomoichi. At his side, Kaori was holding her head while murmuring「Tio you idiooot」. And then, she tried to cover for Hajime and tried to talk to Tomoichi, but before she could do that, Tomoichi exploded.

「I take back my words-. You shitty bastaaaaarrrdd-! I absolute won't hand over my daughter to a perverted bastard like you! I prohibit you from approaching her until the end of the world-! Someone like you, just explode with a nuclear bomb in the Pacific Oceaaaannnnnnnnnn――――!!!」

「Wai-, ple-――」

Hajime tried to make an excuse, but before he could do that, Tomoichi swung up his hand holding the smartphone, and then he threw the phone to the ground. A grievous scream 「My smartphone――――!!」could be heard from the side, but such a voice didn't reach Tomoichi who had transformed into a warrior that was a father protecting his daughter.

Far from that, as though the smartphone was a nemesis that couldn't be allowed to live under the same sky, or possibly so that the hateful scum wouldn't be able to call from the

other side of the phone anymore, he stepped on the smartphone and grinded it many times.

Naturally, Kaori’s smartphone was invited into heaven.

「O, Otou-san! What are you doing!?」

「I am severing ties with that maggot-, with all my strength here! Kaori, don’t meet with that perverted bastard, until the end of the world! This is a promise with Otou-san!」

Indeed, if there was a father who would still entrust the daughter after hearing that kind of dialogue from the other side of the phone, then it would be better not to waste time to take such a father to a hospital. To a hospital for the brain.

However, from the point of view of Kaori, who had thoroughly witnessed Hajime’s unique relationship with Tio in the other world, she had already accepted it as an ordinary happening. Although she could understand her father’s feelings perfectly, witnessing her smartphone trampled and heard the person she loved being called a maggot caused her to want to object against her better judgment……

Tomoichi sensed his daughter’s atmosphere that obviously didn’t seem to obey him even after hearing that kind of exchange on the phone, and on top of that, even after he told her that she must not meet that man anymore. Tomoichi was trembling all over while declaring with all his strength in the residential area at night.

「Otou-san! Is abso~~~~~-lutely! Not appro————————ving-!!!」

「Ah, wait, Otou-san! Where are you going————!!」

Tomoichi suddenly started to run. ……To the direction that was the opposite of the house. And then, in the blink of an eye, he disappeared toward the residential area.

If he went back to the house, then he would be talked to by his daughter about that hateful shitty bastard again. That was why he wouldn’t go home anymore. Until Kaori understood, Otou-san will run away from home! It was such a thing.

The shoulders of Kaori, who somehow guessed her father’s intention, slumped down.

□Normally, the one who runs away from home because they are not being understood should be the daughter, isn’t it?□

After whispering that, Kaori then chased after Tomoichi.

The father who absolutely didn’t want to approve the person that his daughter loved, and the daughter who wanted her father to approve no matter what; both of them began to race at night.

After that, whether Hajime could be accepted or not by Tomoichi……

Anyway, let’s just say that Hajime worked even harder than even god slaying for that.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Everyone, do you know about [Aozora no Kishi] series on Ni○ Dou? (TN: This refer to Nico Douga)

I found it recently, and it was totally enthralling.

Watching that, my hand reached out to Ace Combat again (it makes me have misgivings about the update next week……)

I want to try writing a light novel with an idiot and cool fellows like that as the characters someday.

Uploader-sama, thank you for making my holiday lovely.

Perhaps, surely, maybeee, I think I’ll update by 6 P.M Saturday next week.

Arifureta Chapter 195

Arifureta After – Secret of Yaegashi-style

AN: Yaegashi-style……how did it come to be?

It was just before the sun approached the zenith of its climb. Hajime was walking expressionlessly through the residential area on a certain riverside.

It wasn’t like he was in a bad mood, but when he thought about the location he would be visiting after this, it made him feel somewhat melancholic. On top of all that, it also caused him to rack his brain about this and that when it came to how to deal with it, so his expression was naturally stiff.

Although, no matter how much Hajime worried about it since he had no intention of yielding the status quo or his will, resolving this was extremely difficult and finding a solution that could work in one go was next to impossible. Compared to this difficult problem, conquering a great labyrinth was something really simple.

「Well, that’s obvious, it can’t be helped, huh?」

He let out a small sigh while staring at his destination that came into view on the path ahead.

It was a spacious ground that was surrounded by splendid hedges with a large Japanese house inside of it, or rather than a house it was an estate. History could be felt from its appearance alone.

With a glance at that hedge and estate, Hajime finally arrived in front of the entrance. The front gate was also a heavy and splendid structure. The wood and iron were clearly conveying the months and years they had been piling up until now. If an ordinary person visited this place for the first time, they would unconsciously straighten themselves up.

The family name written beside the front gate was——”Yaegashi”.

Yes, this place was Shizuku’s house, and adjacent to the house was the long-established dojo of the Yaegashi-style.

For some reason Hajime looked at the nameplate where the name “Yaegashi” was carved while pushing on the button of the interphone installed beside the gate; the only piece that approached the modern age here.

「Yes, who could this be?」

A female voice immediately responded. It sounded young, with a pleasant tone that sounded calm, a voice that gave the feeling of maturity. The owner of that voice——if his memory from when he met her the last time was correct, then it was the voice of Shizuku’s mother, Kirino. She was the one who responded to Hajime.

「I received the invitation. This is Nagumo Hajime.」

「You are right on time, Hajime-san. Welcome. The gate is not locked, so please come inside as you are.」

「Excuse me for disturbing.」

Hajime put his hand on the gate. And then he pushed it open while sighing once more at “that” which he felt when he was walking the path that was facing the hedge.

Immediately after that, *hyu-* a sound of cutting wind!

「As expected huh……」

He carelessly lifted his hand in front of his forehead. Between the gaps of his fingers were several spheres held in place. Those things flew the instant Hajime opened the gate which he caught between his fingers. When he put a little strength into his fingers, those balls split with a cracking sound, and from inside them, colorful powder came out.

When he brought his nose near, the aroma of multiple spices like pepper or cayenne pierced his nasal cavity severely. If the spheres hit the forehead and their content scattered out, then a normal person would shed tears grandly while writhing in an unstoppable sneezing attack.

「I want to make a retort about just what kind of period this is but……really this house. Besides, if I am told this is reaping what I sow then that…..can’t be helped.」

Hajime strode across the threshold of the Yaegashi residence while smiling wryly.

First, the scenery of a considerably wide garden, which extended all the way to the entrance of the main building, entered his eyes. It wasn’t something like a Japanese-style garden where one could enjoy the sight, but a garden with normal weeds and gravel spread evenly throughout that looked well maintained. The path from the front gate to the main building’s entranceway was shown by stone paving;

there was also a small pond distanced in between. Next, there were also garden lanterns hung irregularly and relatively big trees growing.

There was another independent one-story house a slight distance away, that place had become the dojo of the Yaegashi-style. But, on this holiday normally there should be the zealous voices of a lot of disciples practicing coming from there, instead, eerily there was no sound.

Hajime, who spontaneously wanted to sigh after guessing the reason of that silence, advanced on the stone paving, approaching a spot where a tree nearby with dense leaves had one of its branches extending out until it reached above the stone paving. It was at that time,

A killing intent was suddenly-!!

When Hajime looked up, there was a figure of an old man jumping down from the branch above his head, the hakama of the old man was fluttering while his hands were holding a wooden sword aloft! The sword ki the old man was clad with wasn’t something normal, a determination of sure defeat with one hit was residing in his eyes! That figure which swooped down from the sky, swinging down a mighty attack, was just like the technique of a certain wandering swordsman!

But, toward that sudden attack,

「It has been a long time, Shuuzou-san.」

Hajime, who stopped still with one hand the attack which looked like it could pulverize at least a boulder, lowered his head normally and gave a greeting. The opponent in front of his eyes that looked like he was around 80 with a deeply wrinkled face and white hair, was an instructor of the

Yaegashi-style and the grandfather of Shizuku, so Hajime must show manners to him.

「Yes, long time no see, Hajime-kun. Nice of you to come. You can relax here.」

「Thank you very much.」

Shuuzou was speaking words of welcome normally as though nothing special happened while looking completely expressionless with his hands pushing down the wooden sword to the very limit. In response to that, Hajime too also returned the greeting familiarly.

Hajime and Shuuzou stared at each other wordlessly for a while, but as expected Shuuzou then quietly pulled back his wooden sword as though nothing happened and he turned on his heels.

「I think Shizuku is in her room. But, it’s a little unacceptable for you two who are still students to seclude yourself inside the same room. There are also delicious tea cakes, so come to the living room.」

「Aa~, yes, thank you-」

Shuuzou turned his back on Hajime and returned toward the dojo while talking. But, in the middle of that conversation, in an awkward timing, a new killing intent attacked Hajime!

Hajime quickly crouched, and over his head, a sharp, violent gale blew past. Furthermore, a cuff of a hakama was reflected at the edge of the sight of the crouching Hajime. A low kick aiming for Hajime’s head was rapidly approaching.

While evading that by leaping aside, Hajime used one of his hands in a handstand posture to roll before landing. Ahead

of his gaze, there was the figure of the attacker still in continued alertness.

「Yaa, Hajime-kun. Nice of you to come. You can relax here.」

「……Thank you, Koichi-san. Excuse me for my intrusion.」

Yaegashi Koichi. He was the father of Shizuku and an instructor of the Yaegashi-style. He was a handsome middle-aged man with a rather harsh look, which was due to the gash in his cheek that he got from somewhere that was his trademark. While saying a speech that was the same with his father Shuuzou, and also with the same expressionless look as expected, he put his wooden sword on his waist as though nothing happened.

At that moment, a wooden sword was thrown at great speed from the side! Hajime, who quickly turned his head and evaded it clearly, heard a clicking tongue echoing from behind the nearby lantern basket.

Even furthermore, from behind the evading Hajime, a *zapaa-* sound resounded. The moment he heard that one of the pupils who seemed to be lurking inside the pond threw countless iron rods the size of a palm from a pose that looked like a wild falcon!

Hajime evaded that with a flowing feet movement like a fish swimming in the air, but right after that, he noticed something and back flipped highly from that place. When he did that, in the next moment, a young pupil smeared with soil leapt out from under the ground in the garden holding a wooden sword. The pupil was whispering「Chiih, so I failed in bringing him down-」with a small voice.

Hajime, who landed while smiling faintly to those words, quickly lifted his hand and grasped something that flew

toward him. An arrow was caught by that hand. When he followed the trajectory, above the roof of the main building was a figure of someone that seemed to be a pupil holding a bow.

「I'm thinking this every time but……Yaegashi-style is absolutely not a kenjutsu dojo, right? Rather I think this place is a ninjutsu dojo instead.」(TN: Kenjutsu=sword art, ninjutsu=ninja art)

「What are you saying, Hajime-kun. Something like shinobi cannot possibly exist. Are you reading too much manga? It's troubling that someone trying to become Shizuku's partner is doing something like that.」

Hajime whispered his conjecture while staring fixedly at the pupils who were returning to the dojo quickly while likewise also acting as though nothing happened. Hearing that, Shuuzou said something like that with a tone that sounded really stumped.

The soaking wet pupil, who was lurking in the pond, quickly took off his dougi uniform and underneath it, there were black clothes, but……his face looked as though saying「So what?」. Surely, even though the iron bars thrown at him looked similar to shuriken that he previously saw at museum, or even though the pupil who climbed down from the main building's rooftop was using a special descending tool where the tip of the rope had something shaped like a rake to be fixed onto the roof's edge, or that one of them wasn't making any footsteps while running, surely, everything was just Hajime's misunderstanding.

Even if right now, in front of Hajime's eyes a pupil was quickly running with a forward-bent posture――the so-called

ninja run right past him, surely that was just his misunderstanding!

「Hajime, welcome!」

But, at that moment, a slightly lively voice called out to Hajime who was seeing off the back of the figures of the people of the Yaegashi dojo with a complicated expression. When he turned toward the voice, he could see the figure of Shizuku dressed in a gorgeous kimono waving her hand at him from the porch of the main building.

Hajime lifted his hand with a greeting of「Yo」while approaching her. Shizuku's expression burst brighter the closer he got. Looking from up close, it seemed that she was wearing a cosmetic even if just for a bit. It appeared that she was dressing up a little with Hajime coming here from being invited.

Shizuku, who was lovable as usual in the small things, quickly cleared up his gloomy feeling that had been piling up due to this and that since he stepped past the gate of the Yaegashi house, which he couldn't retort at even when he wanted to.

「As expected, Shizuku is more suited to Japanese clothes. Though it doesn't look like a pure yukata……」

「Ye, yes. I received this as a sample of a prototype that Tio designed. It seems that this is a combination of the Dragonoid race's clothing with Japanese clothes.」

「I see, she is a pervert, but she has good sense. It's like it was order-made for Shizuku. Besides, the sakura color also suit you.」

「-……thank you」

Shizuku looked shy while she quietly touched her lips. She couldn’t hide her happiness from Hajime noticing and praising her. The person who was there wasn’t the usual gallant knightly Shizuku, but a normal girl in love that could be found anywhere.

Instantly, Hajime put his hand into his breast pocket and summoned a mini Donner that had a silencer attached. Without even showing a drawing motion, he rapid-fired to the right side with the gun barrel hidden under his arm! Right away, countless sparks and metallic sounds scattered in midair!

Shizuku came to her senses with a ‘hah’. When she turned her gaze there she found a bulge on the ground so small that no one would notice it was there without paying attention to it; from there several small things that looked like bamboo pipes peeked out……

It seemed, there were still several pupils hiding underground. Most likely there was a tunnel that could be entered by a person under the surface, by slightly lifting up the lid that was camouflaged as the ground, they sniped at Hajime using blowpipes.

「He, hey-, you all! You all are doing something like that again! Come out here!」

Shizuku raised an angry yell with a bright red face. But, they didn’t respond to Shizuku’s words, the ground was making slightly lumpy moves, and they vanished away somewhere.

Shizuku was trembling all over. Hajime was sending her a slightly sympathizing gaze while trying to ask her about the matter that bothered him as expected.

「Hey, Shizuku. Your family, just as I thought, they are the descendants of ninjas or something, right? It's true, isn't it?」

「……There is no way that's true, I think. Before we were summoned, there was nothing like this. It's only been like this since Hajime came to my house. Even I didn't know that kind of technique existed in the Yaegashi-style. In reality, I was only taught the katana, martial art, and throwing art.」

「I don't think that's at the level of "only" though……. Or, how should I put it, you didn't ask them? Like, 「Did I receive kunoichi training while I do not realize it myself?」」

「I questioned them already. I asked, what is the Yaegashi-style? Like that.」

「And the answer?」

「It's commonplace kenjutsu and a little bit of acrobatics. That was what they told me.」

「So they concealed it from even their daughter ……」

Shizuku was whispering「This family of mine……」with a faraway look, to which Hajime was sending her an increasingly sympathetic gaze while to the Yaegashi family's mystery——not only were they not hiding it at all even though they were obviously ninja-like, even their deception was so noncommittal it made him want to retort 'do you all even have the motivation to hide it huh'——he was smiling dryly.

After that, Shizuku, who knew about her grandfather and father's assaults, apologized to Hajime with teary eyes while heading to her room for the time being. However, even during their walk there, spears stabbed at them from the gap between walls, a pitfall suddenly appeared on the

corridor floor, the wall in the middle abruptly turned, and an expressionless Koichi came at Hajime with a kodachi swinging, and when they thought they heard someone say 「Muh, my hand slipped」, from the corner of the corridor a chain scythe flew making a pillar as its fulcrum which altered its trajectory using the centrifugal force toward Hajime……

「Shizuku……just accept it. Your house is a ninja's residence. Your family are ninjas.」

「I, who didn't know until this year that my own house had these kind of contraptions, am…….I mean, Ojii-chan! A chain scythe is no good! Look, it got stuck into the wall! That's obviously the real thing, isn't it!? Just where are you keeping that kind of weapon!」

Shizuku angrily went to the corner of the corridor while waving her yukata's cuff, but there was already no one there. Shizuku crumbled down on all fours. This was the first time she saw the other side of her family since she returned from another world. It appeared Shizuku was burdened with the fate to go through hardships even inside her family.

「Hey, Shizuku. As expected should we go to the living room instead of your room? Shuuzou-san also told me that. Like this, I don't know what kind of contraption will activate the moment I entered your room. It won't be a problem for me, but your treasured collection(plush dolls) might be in danger you know.」

「……Uu. There is nothing like these odd contraptions in my room, supposedly. There is undoubtedly something in the living room……or rather, I'm already terribly angry by the fact that Hajime was attacked! I'll have Hajime together with

me in my room until the meal timeee! If anyone becomes a nuisance, I aa~bsolutely won’t forgive them you hear!

Surely, Shizuku was raising her voice loudly toward her family who must be lurking behind the ceiling and on the other side of the wall.

They finally arrived at Shizuku’s room. Inside, there were many plush dolls placed around that it made the room cramped. There was a lovely animal and cat calendar, pink curtains, a cushion attached with fluffy rabbit ears, the whole room was enveloped in a soft atmosphere with a faintly sweet fragrance wafting off. It was a really sly girly room.

Shizuku put the sitting cushion of a droopy raccoon in front of a small round table made of glass. When Hajime sat on the cushion, it made a pukyu sound. The figure of the demon king of another world sitting down on a mascot cushion that made that type of voice, if it was seen by the classmates and the fellows of the other world (especially someone like the emperor) surely it would be a foregone conclusion for them to burst out in laughter.

Wait there. I’ll prepare tea and snacks right now.

No, you don’t really need to do that. Rather, I don’t want to be left alone in this house……

Uu. I, it will be fine. Because my room is a safe zone.

Even while faltering in her words, Shizuku guaranteed that ‘my room is safe!’, immediately following that, however,

Hajime-san, welcome. This is a sweet bean jelly from a long-standing shop. Please have some.

Shizuku’s mother——Kirino appeared carrying tea and snacks.

——From the ceiling *sucha-!* she jumped down.

「Okaa-san!? Where did you come down from just now!? Wait, the ceiling board is out of place!? No way……even though I should have properly investigated my room when I knew that the house was a residence with contraptions……」

Kirino was smiling friendly as though nothing happened with a sidelong glance at Shizuku who was dumbfounded while looking up at the ceiling. That figure which was gentle and calm exactly like a Yamato Nadeshiko, yet with an atmosphere where a straight core could be felt from her caused Hajime to comprehend something ‘I see’; that she was indeed the mother of Shizuku. She was a woman that made him think or even made him anticipate that when Shizuku aged beautifully, surely she would become a woman like this.

However, the fact that she jumped down from the ceiling while properly wearing kimono, with a tray in one hand that had tea and snacks on it, with not only her clothes unruffled but not even a drop of tea was spilled, she wasn’t someone normal at all.

「He, hey, Okaa-san. Let me ask this, putting aside the matter regarding my room’s ceiling for later; it’s just as I thought, that Okaa-san is a kunoichi? Hey, is that true?」

Since she returned home up till today, different from her father and grandfather, her mother didn’t show that kind of sign at all. Shizuku was asking her mother with a really complicated feeling that was half「Say that this is not true, mama」, and half「Okaa-san, so you too」.

Toward such Shizuku, Kirino was,

「My, Shizuku. You are too much in high spirits just because Hajime-san is here……. Forgive her okay, Hajime-san. Geez, this child, surely she is trying her best to make a joke that is in line with Hajime-san's hobby but……by nature, she is a serious person, so like this, her joke is not really funny, isn't it? A joke like「You are a kunoichi?」toward her mother of all things, see? She is a child like this, but please don't desert her no matter what.」

「……Please rest assured. I don't think that it's not funny, or anything, even for a little bit. Rather, I'm greatly in sympathy with her. ——Are you okay, Shizuku?」

「I cannot do this anymore, Hajime. I want to become the child of Hajime's family already……」

Hajime did his best to console Shizuku who was hanging her head down with an expression that was like a tired old man with a 'there-there' gesture. Seeing that harmonious(?) figure of her daughter and Hajime, Kirino said「My, geez Shizuku, acting like that in front of your parent. Yes yes, Okaa-san will leave right away」and left the room.

Of course, *hyupa-!* she jumped up to the ceiling.

Seeing the ceiling board that was returned back to normal soundlessly, Shizuku then looked at Hajime with an expression that could break into tears at any moment.

「We, well, what……like this Shizuku is also taught the secret of your family little by little yes? I don't know if that's because you returned from another world, or because you were able to make a lover like me but……good for you.」

「In this world, I wonder if there is a matter that is better off not to be known……. I feel like the thing they are doing is gradually escalating……」

Shizuku was comforted while being caressed by Hajime.

Hajime thought while looking at Shizuku who was like that. It was normally hard to imagine that she wouldn’t know about her family and the house’s contraptions until she entered high school. But, there was no way that Shizuku was lying, in that case, that meant that Shuuzou and the others were seriously hiding it from Shizuku.

Furthermore, before the summoning, in other words, even when she became a high school student this matter hadn’t been told to her. That could possibly mean that Shizuku wouldn’t be told any of this for her whole life; such a possibility couldn’t be discarded.

Then, why did a matter about one’s own family be hidden from their only daughter or granddaughter?

At the great labyrinth of another world, Shizuku’s true feelings were exposed. After that, Hajime became aware of the things that Shizuku was harboring from the story that he heard from Shizuku herself. About how happy her stern grandfather was when Shizuku displayed the talent for kenjutsu. About how much the people around her were putting their expectations on her.

And also about how as a result, just how much of Shizuku’s true feelings were suppressed because of those.

Hajime recalled the words that were said to him the first time Hajime first faced Shuuzou and Koichi.

——I see, so Shizuku, is fine already.

——My thanks, for letting Shizuku be a girl.

It seemed that rather than the return from another world, the two of them were feeling gratitude from the bottom of their heart at the fact that Shizuku fell in love with her own true feelings, at that growth of her. Relief also exuded out from them.

Hajime didn’t ask much at that time, but he was able to guess.

By some chance, Shuuzou and the others might be regretting that they made Shizuku studying the Yaegashi-style. It was impossible to tell a grandfather not to be happy when his granddaughter had a lot of talent for the family style, and that a parent having expectations for their children was also something natural.

That was why they got too passionate against their better judgment, and like that when they noticed, Shizuku already couldn’t even make a complaint to her family, creating a Shizuku who killed so many parts of herself.

Seeing such a Shizuku, surely Shuuzou and the others didn’t teach her anything more than kenjutsu so that she wouldn’t kill a part of herself any more than that. They thoroughly concealed the family secret.

This was just his guess, but Hajime was convinced that it was the truth.

Hajime spoke with a gentle tone while caressing Shizuku’s head.

「Perhaps they are a troubling family, but……you are treasured by them, right?」

「……I don’t deny that.」

It appeared that Shizuku also guessed that somehow. Though she couldn’t help but unintentionally look sour because it was hidden from her, and how extremely troubling the absurdity of that secret was.

「Now then, putting aside for the time being how one of my wives became a kunoichi」

「I didn’t become a kunoichi, don’t put that aside.」

Shizuku’s look grew increasingly sour with Hajime’s words, but when she noticed the presence of many people that were spreading out little by little in the surroundings, her cheeks cramped.

「Well, there is also Shizuku getting taught about your family I think, but……more than half of this is a test for me I guess. This must be something like revenge for a harem man who dared put his hand on their important daughter. Even Kirino-san was merciless, even though her face was smiling like that.」

「Okaa-san? As far as I know, Okaa-san didn’t do anything to Hajime though……」

「No, she is taking action even now you know. ……This tea and sweet bean jelly, something was put inside. Poison doesn’t work on me, but from the sensation, it’s something like a paralyzing drug I guess. Perhaps they intend to attack while I cannot move.」

「OKAAA-SAAA————————N!!! WHAT ARE YOU GIVING TO YOUR DAUGHTER’S LOVER!!! STOP SCREWING AROUND; I’LL CUT DOWN ALL OF YOU TOGETHEEEERR-」

Inside the Yaegashi residence during midday, the angry yell of an infuriated Shizuku reverberated. She jumped out of the room with a black katana in one hand.

Hajime, who was left alone in the room, properly tasted the last piece of the sweet bean jelly before he whispered.

「Well, compared to the father of Kaori's place, this brute force approach saved me the trouble.」

From the garden, sounds of「Ojii-chan and Otou-chan, and Okaa-saaan-, kneel seiza over there!」, the sound of something being blown away, or「Ojou, she is going mad! Send reinforcements!」, or「Muu, Shizuku, your skill's improved!」, or「Don't think that the current Shizuku can be stopped normally! Form formation! Prepare the Four Cardinal Thousand Execution formation-」, or「We are going to separate Ojou from that brat for sure! White Tiger squad, kill that guy now!」; sounds with that kind of impression could be heard coming from here and there.

Hajime was feeling the multiple presences who were approaching him while spitting out words「Whether, at earth or another world, there is really not much change huh……」 really emptily.

After that, whether Shizuku finally knew all the secrets of her family, and then whether Hajime was recognized by Shizuku's family or not……

For now, let's just say that the pupils of the Yaegashi-style (hidden school) got along really well with the rabbit ears of another world.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I seriously don’t have time to write.

Even so, when I wrote following my whim, the Yaegashi-style became like this……

The next update is planned for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 196

Arifureta After – Aiko-sensei's Worry

AN: This time too, why did it become like this……

Bu, but, well, I think that it's fine if there is at least one of this kind of troublesome person isn't iiit.

Sporadically growing weeds, old stone walls, and a blue sky that looked discolored were spread out. Things other than those which entered the field of vision were only the laundry stand, a rusty drum can with uncertain usefulness, and also the granny bike with a punctured tire leaned listlessly on the stone wall.

(Nothing has changed other than Okaa-san's bicycle huuh~)

On the porch, with the cry of cicadas and the refreshing sound of the wind chime as BGM, the one who was kicking her legs back and forth while staring into nothing in a daze 'bohee~' was the eldest daughter of this household——Hatayama Aiko.

That day, Aiko, who had managed to return from another world, received interrogations not just from police and mass media, but also by school officials and government officials that spanned many days. After all, she was the only adult among the group disappearance. Even if the students were talking about fantastical stories they had experienced, the

ratio of sympathy toward them was high, but for Aiko who was a working adult, she was seen with a sterner gaze by the society.

Having said that, all of them had talked about it beforehand and the conclusion that they reached was to talk about the events in the other world Tortus as it was without changing anything; also, Aiko herself didn't have the confidence that she could fabricate "a really convincing story" that could convince the surrounding. So in the end, she could only give an explanation with content that was the same as what the students were talking about, which made her feel really ashamed as a working adult.

Naturally, in regard to her inability to bring back some of her students and how the students became obsessed with "wild delusions", even though in reality those weren't Aiko's responsibility at all, but a flow which was pressing the responsibility to Aiko was starting to appear.

That flow was powerful. Furthermore, even idiotic opinions which said that perhaps the disappearance itself was actually the full responsibility of Aiko was also beginning to appear.

It was an incident with too many mysteries. The culprit was unknown. Some students didn't return. The returnee's wild delusions. Because all these affairs wouldn't settle down without someone taking responsibility, a scapegoat so to speak, it was Aiko who was chosen to hold that role.

Aiko, who was completely exhausted with various things every day, was carried away by the flow of the surrounding, and she tried to respond to the demand of the surrounding and wore the stigma as the person responsible for the group disappearance incident. She accepted the severe bashing

and the end of her job as a teacher——no, the end of her social life. Seeing this, the parents of Aiko, who couldn’t bear to witness the figure of their daughter that was reported every day in the news, also came to persuade her to return home. That was also one of the primary factors that affected Aiko.

But, just when Aiko resolved to distance herself from her students’ side, suddenly the topic was going toward its end surprisingly and unnaturally; however, bizarrely no one thought that nothing was strange with this development.

The culprit of that was of course Hajime.

Using the internet and media, he manufactured a super large scale awareness manipulation artifact, and he forcefully and powerfully, without letting anyone complain, interfered with the consciousness of the people all over the world.

Aiko, who knew that, made a grandly convulsing expression and leaked out「What have you done……」. After all, what Hajime did was brainwashing on a world scale. An evil deed that would make even an evil organization of a story go ghastly pale.

But Hajime shrugged toward Aiko who was haggard in various senses.

「The world who put false accusations on you and made their own interpretation as they pleased is the bad one. Returning tit for tat at them is only the matter of course, isn’t it?」

In other words, the flow of society, who had laid their hands on Aiko, was Hajime’s enemy. He didn’t kill them, so at least they could obediently get brainwashed, was his reasoning. They tormented his relatives with their curiosity,

irresponsible remarks, and so on, so it was a punishment they deserved.

As for Aiko, she couldn’t say anything anymore having those things said to her. It’s unforgivable for you to leave my side because of the irresponsible flow of society. The person she fell in love with said that to her. Because of that, he made the consciousness of the world into his own.

A demon king-sama to the extreme was here.

No matter what she said, it wouldn’t stop Hajime anymore.

Aiko’s shoulders dropped limply, even so, inside her heart she felt flattered, she felt light as though she was floating, yet inside her chest, she also felt so tiiiiight that she writhed.

And so, in the end, Aiko managed to get reinstated in the school where Hajime and the others were attending. Furthermore, there was also the administration’s plan that wanted the returnees to be lumped together, which even caused her to be employed as the homeroom teacher of the special class of Hajime and the others, the returnees. Thinking of how before the summoning she was just a teacher without a class in charge with, in a sense, she could have said to have risen up in life.

Now then, through this Aiko safely managed to get reinstated as a teacher without getting separated from her students who were more important than anything since they had entrusted their lives to each other in another world, but here, a dilemma arose.

That dilemma was,

——I am a teacher. Hajime-kun is a student……It’s too late already but-

Yes, now she clearly remembered the relationship between her and Hajime. Of course, after the legendary decisive battle, she had already spent many passionate nights together with Hajime, so that thinking was reaa~lly something too late already.

Still, however, now that they were here on earth and in Japan, when she actually returned to her teaching job and stood on the teaching podium, from there she saw the figure of the student Hajime in his seat……

——Me, what have you doneeeeeeeee-. You laid your hand on a studenttttttt-

Like that, she rolled around on the floor when she was alone. Her personality that was too serious by nature, and her extraordinary sincerity toward the teaching profession, when she had returned to the normal everyday life and calmed down, those two aspects mercilessly pierced Aiko’s mind all over *gussa gussa* with spikes and gouged it *chiku chiku* with marking pens.

Naturally, she was starting to avoid Hajime, however, looking at him flirting with Yue and the others exacerbated her heartrending, but as expected her guilty feeling, and whatever else, became an obstacle that made her avoid Hajime completely……like that, a really troublesome person had arrived here.

These past few months, far from spending time with Hajime, she didn’t even properly talk with him. Hajime being Hajime, he was running around fighting the government officials of the world, manufacturing artifacts to make it easier to open the gate to the other world Tortus, opening a business in

order to provide for Yue and the others with his own hands, and so on. Spending busy days like that, he didn’t even go to meet Aiko.

——Lonely

That was the true feeling of Aiko without any falsehood in it.

——But, a teacher and a student, it’s just……as expected……

That too was the true feeling of a troublesome person.

——As expected, Hajime-kun and I are……uu, there is also the difference in age……there is also my social standing……

That was the true feeling of a very troublesome person.

While worrying endlessly like that, ‘There are thoroughly charming girls already around Hajime, perhaps a middle-aged woman like me should withdraw away……’ she was getting closer to such a conclusion while using the summer holiday to return home, and she became a no-good human like this on the porch.

「Hey, Aiko. You are making a very stupid face there. Isn’t your soul leaking out from your mouth?」

「Even if it leaks out, it can be returned back to its place you know, Okaa-san.」

Indeed, something like that wasn’t any problem if the age of god magic was used, though it was a different story whether her mother could comprehend that or not.

While making an exasperated expression at her daughter’s dazed reply, Aiko’s mother——Akiko asked「You want some

watermelon?. Aiko rolled over lazily and without stopping she kept rolling to the table. It was a wordless answer of I want.

Aiko waited for a bit while bathing in the wind of the electric fan. Akiko arrived carrying a watermelon that had been cut into beautiful triangle shapes. It was cold, juicy, and looking delicious just from a glance. Aiko was messing with the watermelon seeds with the provided toothpick before she bit into the edge.

The gentle sweetness spreading inside her mouth slackened the expression of Aiko loosely. Her appearance was completely an elementary student……an extreme of being child faced. She really couldn't be seen as an adult woman at the age of 26. Her awakening to magic power also, for some reason, put her skin condition in an extremely excellent condition, surely that was also a factor that showed a childish look in Aiko.

……When you are like this, I cannot see at all that child whose face was shown a lot on TV who was involving herself with various tragic resolutions.

Mass media is scary. Government officials are scary. Board of Education is scary……fighting god's apostle was still better.

Indeed, perhaps rather than magic, the flow of the society that cannot be seen by eyes is more frightening isn't it. But, isn't that fine. You have the strongest prince, don't you?

……Not prince Okaa-san. He is the devil. Rather, he is the demon king-sama.

Anything is fine, but stop delaying already, let Okaa-san meet with my daughter's benefactor soon. Otou-san, and

Ojii-chan, and the others too, they are totally curious, you know?」

「U, uu~m……well, I'll think about it.」

Aiko's halfhearted attitude caused Akiko to sigh exaggeratedly.

The composition of Aiko's family was her two parents and the grandparents from the mother side. Her family was fruit farmers, with her father marrying into the family. Even now, that father was telling his daughter who came home for the summer holiday 'if you are free then help out here~', going out to work hard in the farm energetically.

Currently, or rather recently, such Hatayama family had a matter that they were really concerned about.

That was regarding Aiko's "lover".

That day, the day their daughter who disappeared together with students unexpectedly came home, naturally the members of Hatayama family who received the explanation of the situation didn't believe Aiko at first, but when Aiko's magic extremely improved the farmland of the Hatayama family, and their crops also became the highest class product, they believed in Aiko while saying 'well whatever!' to the trivial matter.

In the middle of their talk, although Aiko didn't make any declaration, they understood that somehow their daughter seemed to have made a lover. That she was able to return back to Japan was also thanks to that "he", and the unthinkable pacification of the kangaroo court which tried to denounce Aiko previously was also "his" doing.

If this person was their daughter’s benefactor and the person who her heart had decided on, then they wished to be introduced to him by all means, but, for some reason, Aiko was evasively avoiding that and didn’t listen to them.

They were suspicious that this person could possibly be a horrible person, but seeing the figure of their disappointing daughter who grinned from seeing the ring that was always dangling on her neck, smiling cheerfully when she looked at her smartphone, talking to someone on the phone with her feet kicking back and forth and her face love-struck, holding her red face between her hands while shaking her head when she suddenly recalled something while doing nothing, they could understand that she was thinking of the other party from the bottom of her heart.

The family of Aiko was worried in their own way about the future of their daughter whose growth stopped completely when she was in middle school for some reason and had no romantic story at all. Because of that, they were, even more, looking forward to being introduced to the person who was chosen by their daughter.

But, as expected, no matter how long, Aiko kept acting elusive……

「Good grief, if you are like this, then “he” will get away from you eventually, you know?」

「Uguh!?」

Hearing the terrifying warning that was given by her mother regarding her relationship with him that she was currently worrying about, caused Aiko to spontaneously press her hand on her chest while a moan slipped out from her mouth.

「Even though you finally came home, you are just in a daze the whole day without even helping around the home. After all, you are worrying endlessly about “him” and ran away using going home as an excuse, right? Ah, or else, perhaps “he” actually already got away from you and you returned here because of heartbreak……」

「What are you saying, Okaa-san? That, I, don’t really have a, lo, lover or anything……」

Aiko averted her gaze, her volume turned smaller, and she toyed with the watermelon seed in high speed.

For Aiko, she understood her family’s wishes for her to introduce “him” ——Hajime. But, as expected, their relationship of teacher and student made it difficult to speak about even toward her family. No, it was extremely difficult exactly because they were family……

Inside her heart she was whispering「He is not my lover, I’m already treated as his wife, so I’m not lying……」which sounded like an excuse, making her have a vivid resemblance with someone somewhere.

「……Well, that’s fine. I guess you also have various things on your mind, and you are not a kid anymore. But, just remember that no matter what kind of person “he” is, we will welcome him warmly any time.」

「……yes.」

In the end, Akiko backed down, and the hand of Aiko that was playing with the seed slackened a bit. Akiko was smiling wryly at her daughter who was oozing out a relieved air while changing the topic.

「Speaking of, there is a festival this year too. It's good timing, how about you try to change into yukata? You haven't gone there anymore for these last few years, right? You loved Yamashiro-ojiisan's cotton candy, didn't you?」

「Yeah, now that Okaa-san mentions it, it's this time……wait, Yamashiro-ojiichan, he is still alive……」

「You are really rude.」

「Because, when I was in high school if I remember correctly, he was already past 90 years old, right?」

「Yes, this year he will be 102 years old you know.」

「At, at that age, he is still opening a festival stand? Is he okay? He won't ascend to heaven while making cotton candy?」

「You are really rude. Even now he is still lively. Even the person himself said that he would live for thirty more years.」

「He is planning to challenge even the Guinness record?」

Despite the silly talk, in the end, Aiko decided to participate in the nostalgic local festival, also for relaxing the gloominess inside her chest.

In the evening, when the beautiful sunset was about to disappear behind the mountains on the other side of the river, Aiko was at the front door with her body wrapped in a pink yukata. In her hand was a small and cute pouch, with her feet wearing refreshing Japanese sandals. When she was wearing a yukata, to some extent, a unique charm could be felt from her usual childish figure; perhaps that was because she was a Japanese.

「You are really going alone?」

Akiko asked while tilting her head.

「Yep. I'll just aimlessly wander there. Otou-san and the others are also helping there, so I'll show my face at their place for a bit.」

「I see……even if this place is in the sticks that doesn't mean that there aren't idiots, so be careful. Especially because on the day of the festival there are also people who cut loose too much.」

「I understand. Rather, after everything that happens, the likes of hoodlums really won't matter much.」

「Don't be conceited. If you like, should I call Taichi-kun to go with you?」

「Geez-, I'm really fine. Besides, Taichi-kun will be angry if he is called for something like this, you know?」

The one called Furukawa Taichi was a young man who, as it were, was Aiko's childhood friend. In the past, the houses of the Furukawa family and the Hatayama family were close to each other. Since their farms were next to each other, the two families were closely associated. Taichi and Aiko also went to the same school all the time from kindergarten up to high school, so he was her trusted friend.

There was also a time when they temporarily distanced themselves from each other because of this and that at the puberty period. When they grew into adults they also never became a couple, but their relationship after that was friendly enough that met when they both came back here in an extended vacation where they would have a chat.

Taichi graduated from a university in another prefecture, and he immediately got a job at a company. But his father was hospitalized for a time, and he resigned from his job where he then succeeded his family’s farm about a year and a half ago. And so, in the festival this time around he was recruited as one of the young peoples’ group to help around……

「Is that so? I think that if it’s Taichi-kun, he will rush here happily though. Well, asking him to do that is too harsh perhaps.」

「That’s right. Taichi-kun is good-natured, but, as expected, he will get angry if he is taken advantage of too much.」

「That’s not what I mean though……well, that’s not where a parent should stick her nose into.」

「??」

Aiko tilted her head at her mother’s suggestive words, but Akiko didn’t look like she planned to talk more than that, so Aiko turned around and departed toward the festival.

She walked calmly on the familiar country road. Compared to the city, this place was accompanied with colors like the stars of the night sky, which were exceptionally visible, illuminating the path at night, the frogs staying on the fields, and the chorus of the cicadas burning their life on the trees.

(Although, as expected, the clearness of the air cannot compare with Tortus……)

What was revolving in the back of her mind while she was muttering to herself was her days in another world. Even amidst those memories, the one that she recalled vividly

due to how dramatic it was, was……that reunion, that undesired result, and then the kiss that saved her life.

(Uu……)

There was also when she was imprisoned by god’s apostle Nointo. For her to be captured at the top of a tall tower, it was as though she was a princess in a tale. And then, he came for her who was in depression from anxiety and impatience, and that battle at the altitude of 8 kilometers.

She exposed her unsightly appearance after the result that she caused, and not only was that shameful figure of her seen, she was even looked after by him.

(Hau……)

After that, the words that he conferred to her beside the cenotaph was something that Aiko surely wouldn’t forget for her whole life. If the rescue drama before that was a salvation for her physical body, then the event in front of the cenotaph that evening was unmistakably the salvation for her heart. Thinking back, she was captured by an ardor that she couldn’t deceive herself from anymore since that time.

(Au……)

And then, with the battle at the devil king’s castle, and going through the legendary decisive battle……the gifted object. As the result of her attack after she let loose all her restraints, he let out a smile that looked as though he gave up, or possibly it was a troubled smile; and then to prove that Aiko was his——that she belonged to the demon king, he gifted her with a ring.

Aiko crawled her fingers on the thing behind her yukata, at the ring that was connected with a chain dangling behind

the chest part of the yukata.

And then what she remembered was, the this and that of the night, that she thought might be staying unrelated with herself for her whole life, with how herself was a shorty. Just by remembering it she was still getting bright red. That was, that was……done too much.

「Awawawa-」

On the night path, Aiko fidgeted around while getting red-faced by herself. Seen from the side, she looked just like a suspicious person.

Even though she was getting like this so much, with her head suddenly getting full with Hajime even without anything particular happening, but the person herself was still harboring conflict (lol) inside her heart, worrying whether it was okay to continue this relationship. That was why if the wives' group heard this they would undoubtedly get exasperated.

In the other world, she was titled a goddess and splendidly incited the people, this female teacher, who stood up against even the kingdom and the pope of the biggest religion for the sake of her students, was, in fact, a troublesome person that was super awkward when it came to love.

「Ai? What are you doing?」

「Ohee!?」

Suddenly a voice called out to her which caused Aiko to hop up *pyon* for real. Complete with a strange voice. Her face turned bright red in a different meaning this time while she turned her gaze toward the direction of the voice. There, she

found a tall and sturdy young man, wearing a T-shirt with short sleeves in which the sleeves were further rolled up to his shoulder.

「Ta, Taichi-kun……don’t shock me like that.」

「No, Ai who was making a hundred comical faces alone in the road at night was the one who shocked me there……」

This young man, who was scratching on his cheek while calling Aiko with the pet name “Ai”, was just as Aiko called him, the person named Furukawa Taichi.

「Forget that……rather than that, Taichi-kun yourself, what are you doing in this kind of place? Aren’t you helping with the festival?」

「Aa~, no, I was but……because Ai said that you were coming. See, stupid bunches are also coming out in this kind of day yeah.」

「By any chance, you are intentionally coming here to pick me up?」

「We, well yeah.」

「Is that so, fufu, thank you.」

Aiko felt somewhat warm with Taichi’s nonchalant “good person act” that she knew from the past, and she smiled while expressing her thanks. Seeing that, for some reason, the young man Taichi quickly turned aside his face while his hand covered his mouth. When Aiko got curious「Oh? What’s the matter?」and circled around to look at his face, Taichi turned around hastily, and he walked toward the festival while urging Aiko ahead.

「Co, come to think of it, yukata. You are wearing it, huh?」

It was a somewhat sudden change of topic, but Aiko responded to the talk without being particularly bothered by it.

「Yep. The atmosphere is important in this kind of event. This is also the festival after so long that I rarely attended.」

「I see, you are right. ……That, what to say, it suits you.」

「Is that so? Thank you.」

Aiko responded to Taichi's praise frankly, a little bit too frankly, by saying a normal thanks. She wasn't at the age where she would be greatly concerned with words like that. ……Although that also depended on who was the one saying it.

Taichi felt a bit down, even so, he continued making trifling talk with his trusted friend, including reminiscent talk. Those two finally entered the busy festival and crowd of people.

There, the neighborhood uncle and aunt that knew the two of them since they were young bantered with them. Aiko clearly declared that the two of them were not in that kind of relationship even while responding calmly. Seeing such an Aiko caused Taichi's cheeks to cramp. Seeing that situation, his comrades from the young persons' association sent him a gaze that was mixed with sympathy……

Old man Yamashiro displayed his artistic skill that was pointlessly polished by making a Michaelangelo statue using cotton candy. Then the two of them encountered a female classmate of Aiko, who also brought along a child. Seeing that caused Aiko to hold a really complicated feeling, and when that classmate told Aiko that if she also married then~

half teasingly. The matter of Hajime floated inside her head which caused Aiko to turn a bit red though, and she didn’t speak any denial, which in turn caused Taichi to get pointlessly fired up……

And, with various things like that Aiko enjoyed a lot the festival that she hadn’t attended for a while.

With the festival, which was still lively, in the background, Aiko sat down on the porch of the shrine ground to rest while she was at it. Beside her there was Taichi who even though he was supposed to be a member of young persons’ association, he had been following Aiko all the time while she was walking around the festival; even now, he showed no sign of going to help at the festival.

In the silent atmosphere, Aiko was dangling her legs back and forth while listening to the bustling of the festival and looking up to the night sky. It was in the height of summer, but the shrine ground had a nice open space for wind, in which the night breeze felt pleasant on her skin which was damp from sweat.

Taichi was looking at Aiko, who had narrowed her eyes due to feeling good from the wind, with a dazed gaze……a beat later, he returned to his senses suddenly, and he slapped his own cheek. *pan-* That nice dry sound made Aiko startled, and she turned her gaze there.

Taichi opened his mouth, looking somewhat nervous toward such Aiko.

「Hey, Ai. Recently, are you okay? See, just a bit before there were various things that happened, right?」

「Yep, I’m fine. It’s over already. Right now, I’m a teacher normally.」

「I see. But, the class that Ai is in charge of, it's that class, isn't it? Then, won't there still be a time when Ai would have to take the full brunt of the trouble?」

「……What do you want to say?」

Taichi's gaze wandered from the dubious Aiko; however, right after that, he looked at Aiko with firm eyes and spoke.

「Isn't it, enough already? You have, already, worked hard enough for your students' sake, don't you think so?」

「……」

「That's why, just like Obaa-san and the others were saying before……come back home here already.」

「……」

Aiko didn't answer, as though she didn't want to respond to that topic, and then she stood up and started to walk toward the festival. Toward such Aiko, Taichi added on to his words looking impatient.

「It's not like, you need to be at that place if you want to be a teacher, right? You can also try to find a job here.」

「That's not why. I also have a responsibility, and above all, I myself, want to be at the side of those children.」

「Then, when those children graduate, what then?」

「That's……but, even though that kind of incident happened, the school still trusted me enough to take charge of the class. I'm indebted to them.」

「That's only because they want to gather the returnees in one place, right? Rather, if the current children graduate,

you won’t know whether you can continue to stay there, don’t you? If it’s Ai, your face is widely known here, it’s convenient if you live here, and you also have connections to a certain degree that can help you.」

「Perhaps that is so but……that’s, still in the future.」

Aiko’s complicated attitude finally made Taichi irritated, and he stood up vigorously.

「……What Ai is concerned about, is actually not something like your duty to the school, or your responsibility to your students, am I right?」

「Eh?」

「What Ai is concerned about……is actually the matter of your lover, isn’t it?」

「Wai-, what are you saying……I, something like a lover is……」

「The one who thinks that it’s a secret is just Ai. Obaa-san and the others, me, we all know. That in the middle of your disappearance Ai made a lover. And also, how that lover is……your student.」

「!!!!?」

Aiko went「How do you!?」, an action that was really easy to understand. Seeing that act of Aiko’s, which was too honest in a sense, Taichi continued his words while his expression turned complicated.

「There is no way we wouldn’t know. Since the past, Ai is just too poor at hiding a secret. It immediately comes out in your behavior. Besides, even after you returned back you

frequently contacted someone, you made a lover while you disappeared, yet it wasn’t a relationship that you could introduce to your parents, it must be a relationship that stimulates your guilt or morality by continuing it……When you searched for the answer that satisfies all those requirements, then it can be nothing but a student.」

「……Taichi-kun. Since when did you become a detective?」

Taichi said「I told you, it’s not just me, Obaa-san and the others also know that」toward Aiko who was stunned. When Aiko realized that the secret was actually exposed to her mother too, she was finally at her wits end with her hands holding her head.

Seeing such Aiko, Taichi resolved himself and spoke.

「A relationship between a student and teacher……you understand, don’t you Ai?」

「tsu」

「Ai yourself, you are feeling tortured like that. I don’t know what happened in the middle of your disappearance, but surely that was just how much of an abnormal situation it was, right? Then, that was just your momentary loss of judgment. I don’t care about that.」

「Taichi-kun?」

Taichi approached Aiko, and he stared at her fixedly with a serious gaze. Aiko took a step back from being overwhelmed, but when Aiko drew away, then Taichi would also close the distance accordingly.

「Ai, let’s stop that kind of impure relationship already, and come back here and start from zero. At first, it might feel

lonely, but……I will be at your side from here on.」

「Taichi-kun, what are you saying……」

「I told you that I returned here because of my father's sickness, but actually that wasn't it. My father's sickness was healed in one week……the truth is, when Ai disappeared, I felt uneasy, I couldn't even focus on my work, and so, I resigned from my work to search for you full time.」

「Was, was that why?」

Aiko's eyes turned round from this truth she didn't know. And then, now that Taichi had spoken that far, then even the dull Aiko could guess just with what kind of feeling Taichi had been speaking about until now. That fact made Aiko astonished precisely because she had never thought of that possibility for even a bit until now.

「When I heard that Ai was gone, I thought that my heart got crushed. At that time, I noticed it. For me, Ai is, an existence that is that important to me.」

「Ta, Taichi-kun, fo, for now, let's calm down a bit?」

「I am calm. Ai, come home. And then, marry me. I will treasure you, so be together with me forever!」

「No no, wait a bit! That's too sudden! I, am not thinking of Taichi-kun like――」

「You relationship with your lover, it's not going well, right?」

「Uguh」

「There is no way it's going well. The other party is just a student. There is no way he can make Ai happy. If it's me, I

have seceded my house and also have resourcefulness, even my age matches yours. It will absolutely go well between us.」

Aiko's back was already glued closely to a pillar of the shrine ground. The approaching Taichi suddenly tightly grasped the shoulders of Aiko. Taichi's eyes had a seriousness that Aiko had never seen in them until now; they were overflowing with sincerity, including passion, so hot it was scalding.

If Aiko didn't have a lover, yes, if this was before she was summoned to the other world, depending on the situation, her heart might be stolen even if she thought nothing of him until now except as someone like a brother. That was just how much of a "man" her childhood friend, who she thought she knew, was to her. As for his speech, she couldn't help but feel that it was somewhat hurting but……or rather, now that she thought calmly, it was a bit, but it felt like a somewhat dangerous pick-up line……

But, even now when that much feeling was expressed to her, what floated in the back of Aiko's mind was, the matter of him……

「Hajime-kun……」

「Ai-」

The name that unintentionally leaked out in a small murmur caused Taichi to frown, but in the next moment, he tried to close his distance with Aiko in one go. Perhaps he intended to return his beloved woman to her sanity from the impure relationship she was imprisoned in, even if he had to take a little forceful method……or perhaps, it might be simple jealousy……

The shocking situations that happened in succession, and her mind that was split between her feelings toward him, caused Aiko to react late. She immediately tried to twist her body, but…..behind her was a pillar, both her shoulders were pinned down, it wasn’t that she couldn’t shake herself free but, it was unclear whether she would be able to avoid from injuring Taichi!

Therefore, even while she was putting on strength to the level that was a bit dangerous for normal people, spontaneously, inside her heart, she yelled asking for help.

(Hajime-kun!)

「What is it Aiko?」

「Eh?」

「Eh?」

Taichi and Aiko leaked out similar voices, and then before Taichi’s approach could reach Aiko, or rather before he could get blown away by Aiko, he stopped. No, he was stopped. His neck was grabbed tightly from behind.

meri- An unpleasant sound could be heard.

「-, who, who are you-. What are you doing-」

「Oi oi, that’s my line you know? Just what are you doing to my woman?」

Right after that, Taichi’s figure vanished. No, he was sent flying backward with a force to the degree that it looked like he vanished. It seemed that his neck didn’t bend a strange direction or anything due to the superb moderation of

power. But, he was fiercely sent flying to the ground where he rolled many times, the impact made him cough fiercely.

With a sidelong glance at such Taichi, Aiko was flustered while she stared at the person before her eyes feeling dumbfounded.

「Ha, Hajime-kun?」

「Yeah, it’s me.」

「Wh, why, are you here?」

「Because, Aiko is here?」

「No, even if you are saying something like a mountain climber somewhere with a question mark like that……」

Hajime smiled wryly seeing Aiko at a loss.

「Recently, you looked like you were thinking too much about various things. We also didn’t really have time to talk, on top of that you came home here. I thought it would be troublesome if you were persuaded by your parents to make an annoying decision, and because of that so I planned to visit here. And, when I used the compass to move here, you were in the middle of some kind of festival, right? I thought that by some chance, you were going around the festival feeling lonely by yourself, so I flew here but……the result turned out all right in the end.」

Hajime’s eyes narrowed dangerously toward Taichi who was standing up and glaring at Hajime even while coughing. Seeing that, even while feeling happiness welling up inside from understanding that Hajime was worried for her and he rushed here to spend some festival time with her, she also felt intense shame and fretfulness because her figure that

was approached by someone else just now was seen by Hajime.

「U, um, that’s not what you think! There is, nothing like that going on between Taichi-kun and me! I don’t, have any intention like that at all!」

「Aa~, yeah, I see……」

Taichi, who was walking toward them, went「Gahah」with his hand pressing on his chest. Seeing that figure caused Hajime to make an expression where he was unsure of what to say. The woman he liked denied him with all her strength——indeed, hearing that would make anyone press on their chest spontaneously.

「But, recently you were worried a lot about your relationship with me, right? Perhaps you were worrying endlessly when we became student and teacher once more……it’s already really too late to think like that.」

「Hau!?」

This time, Aiko was the one who pressed her chest. Her gesture really resembled her childhood friend. That fact made Hajime’s wry smile deepen while he suddenly circled behind Aiko and embraced her. 「Ha, Hajime-kun!?」or「You-」could be heard, but Hajime ignored it.

Hajime kept embracing Aiko while he talked with a voice that was oozing a bit of exasperation into her ear.

「Even this relationship that Aiko is worried about will resolve itself not even two years later. Even so, if you are bothered with that two years, then both of us just need to hold back until that time arrives, right? If Aiko wishes for it, then I won’t mind something that small.」

「A, u, that's……bu, but, I, am far older than you……」

「……Aiko, I'm telling you this for your own good. Just absolutely don't say those words in front of Yue. You don't want to have air travel ten kilometers high with your flesh body, do you?」

「Aa……」

Thinking really really carefully, something like a difference of age……above the sky there was still sky. It was something that she must not speak of no matter what.

「Good grief. Humans are a living thing that will think of various stupid things the moment they calm down, and Aiko is the very model of that kind of human huh. On top of it already being too late for that, it's a problem that can be resolved easily. For you to become irresolute due to that…… if you are that much fixated on "being a teacher", then you at least have to be like how you were once before, where you remonstrate even me.」

「Uu, I have nothing I can say……」

「Or rather……just who do you think I am, huh? When I accepted Aiko, I should have declared it already.」

Aiko recalled. One month after the legendary decisive battle, when she wished that she also wanted to be loved by Hajime. There, she was accepted, on top of what was presented——the term of demon king-sama.

——When I decide to accept you, there won't be any getting away.

There was no concept of "parting" for the woman of the demon king. Even if Aiko herself hated it, Hajime wouldn't

let her get away, no matter what kind of situation there was. It was impossible for him to accept any woman other than his beloved while there was any possibility of parting. That was the minimum distinction of Hajime who was someone preposterous and the worst from keeping relationships with multiple women.

The only one he could accept was only a partner who could offer her whole life to him and vice versa.

Therefore, it was meaningless for Aiko to worry about ethics, common sense, or whatever because Aiko had already offered that body and heart of hers to the demon king.

And the consequence was, that she couldn’t get away from demon king-sama.

「You understand?」

「……yes.」

Just with a sentence, when Hajime questioned her, Aiko easily surrendered. She nodded up and down repeatedly with her face bright red.

There, Taichi directed a severe gaze at Hajime who was still embracing Aiko from behind and opened his mouth.

「……You. Get away from Ai. You are, if I’m right, you are Ai’s student, aren’t you? I guess you don’t understand because you are still a student, but your existence is hurting Ai. This world is not so sweet that you can make it somehow with just feeling――」

「Thanks for the warning. But, You have mistaken the process too much to put on air as an adult with good sense. Your persuasiveness is nonexistent at the point of time you are

reaching out your hand toward someone else’s woman. If you weren’t Aiko’s childhood friend, then I’d do the Inugami family to you but……well, this time I’ll magnanimously overlook it. Give up on Aiko and search for another suitable wife.」(TN: About Inugami family. I tried to google it, but the only thing I can find is a mystery novel about serial killing.)

Having a man that was younger, furthermore, someone that was still a student, talking back to him so frankly caused Taichi’s mouth to open and close wordlessly. And then, with a complexion that was busily turning blue and red intermittently, he was about to yell angrily at Hajime,

「Yaahn」

「tsu!?」

Yet he turned speechless due to the coquettish voice that Aiko raised and the spectacle happening in front of his eyes. Of all things, Hajime was thrusting his hand behind the chest part of Aiko’s yukata before his hand started to grope around! What an act! It was truly like a demon!

Then Hajime casually took out a ring that had been turned into a necklace from Aiko’s chest. Aiko, who had something embarrassing done to her in front of her childhood friend that was already like family to her, glared at Hajime with teary eyes + upward glance, but Hajime warded off something like that like a willow swaying in the wind.

「Understand that we are already at a stage where words won’t do anything. Just as you see, rather than my lover, Aiko is already my wife. Her body, her heart, I have received them all.」

「Yo, you-」

Hajime’s speech was completely like the villain. No matter how anyone looked at this, this was a composition of a gentle and sincere young man having his childhood friend snatched away by a bad man. The speech that Aiko could say in this kind of time should be「Stop-, don’t fight each other because of meee!」as expected. Although, the moment Aiko said such a thing, she would surely receive Hajime’s iron claw of love.

Taichi was about to condemn Hajime along with his emotion that felt like erupting, but before that could happen Hajime threw his words at him with a cold expression.

「You reap what you sow.」

「What-」

「You should have a powerful weapon that I don’t have. You have time and the same living environment that you spent together with Aiko since childhood, and even after you two became adults you must have met her many times too since then, isn’t that right? You should have had so many chances to exchange your feelings with Aiko, but you passed up all those chances. Don’t make any excuses now. You couldn’t even become a “reason to go home” for Aiko to give no place in her heart to go toward me. You didn’t try. The result of that is this. That’s all there is to it.」

That was a sound argument. Snatched away——such a thing was a serious case of barking up the wrong tree. While Taichi was in a position that was closer to Aiko than anyone, he didn’t fight so that he could walk together with her. That was why, before he realized it, Aiko had been at a place so far that his hand couldn’t reach. That was all there was to it.

Talking like this was strangely remonstrating considering it was Hajime. He crushed his enemy mercilessly, and if it was

someone who he couldn’t stomach, then he would ignore that person without speaking too much. When that person couldn’t be ignored, then, as expected, he would crush them. That was Hajime. It was unusual for him to speak like this to someone who had tried to place their hand on Aiko.

Looking carefully, even though Taichi got thrown away that showily just now, there was no wound on him which looked that serious.

(Because he is my childhood friend……)

That must be the reason.

Aiko changed her embarrassed expression and raised a tightly stiffened face. And then, she softly untangled from Hajime’s hand that was hugging her tightly. Hajime didn’t oppose her.

Aiko took a step forward and calmly opened her mouth.

「Taichi-kun, thank you for worrying about me a lot. Thank you, that you think of me so strongly.」

「Ai……」

「But, I cannot answer Taichi-kun’s feeling. I, cannot look at Taichi-kun like that.」

「……Because of that, you are with that guy――」

「Yes. Because the one I have feelings for is Hajime-kun. I was worried about a lot of things but……yes, it’s really too late already for that. I even think to myself just what in the world I am doing worrying like that.」

「……Society won’t tolerate it. That’s something that must not be done.」

「Yes, I know. But, I cannot help it. Because the person I fell in love with is hopelessly like a demon, let alone the society, even the world or the god are no match for him. I too am a wicked woman huh.」

「……Wicked woman. Those words don’t suit Ai the most.」

「But, I think that’s not bad.」

「Haa, is that so. So it’s just like that guy said, from the beginning, it’s “too late” already for me.」

Aiko smiled wryly as though to state her agreement.

Taichi glared fiercely at Hajime. Hajime accepted it with an unruffled face. Understanding that something like his glare wouldn’t shake this guy even a little, and then, having the painful sound argument thrown at him just now, on top of how his body was thrown before this, showed him that he couldn’t even possibly match this guy in physical strength. Strength abruptly left his shoulders after glaring at Hajime for a while.

And then, he wordlessly turned around and left the shrine ground.

「My bad. Perhaps your relationship with your childhood friend will be bad after this……」

「No, it’s fine. Perhaps, it will take a bit of time, but we will be able to return back to our brother-sister relationship again.」

「Then that’s fine……but, as expected, if he reaches his hand to Aiko one more time, then I won’t have the confidence to

not do the Inugami family to him.」

「……Why, are you that obsessed with the Inugami family?」

Aiko smiled wryly at Hajime's manner of speaking, then a beat later, she faced straight at Hajime once again. And then, she bowed her head.

「I'm sorry that I made you worry because of me worrying irresolutely about strange things. Thank you for coming to meet me today.」

「Yeah, I definitely had received both your gratitude and apology. But, don't mind it too much. I said it before too, but I really like that part of Aiko.」

「Hee? Tha, that part?」

The unexpected word of "like" made Aiko become red once more. Toward such Aiko, Hajime said that before in front of the cenotaph of the Hairihi Kingdom, he thought that Aiko who was worrying there looked dazzling to him, and then he asked her whether she remembered what they talked about there. That was what Aiko remembered just not long ago. It was clearly etched in her memory; surely it was an important memory when her feeling toward Hajime became definite.

「You who was running forward swiftly with all your might, and then you who was holding your head when you failed or when you noticed your contradiction; but even so you endured it and found a conclusion in your own way which you tried to carry through. I found those parts of Aiko dazzling; those parts look really lovely to me. That's why Aiko, you can stay just as you are.」

「……I think it's foul play for you to say something like that.」

Aiko turned around with her back toward him, her face looking down so Hajime couldn’t see it. But even without seeing that face, it was easily imaginable that her face was becoming complicated with shame and delight.

Perhaps because he understood that Hajime made an expression that was delicately holding back his laugh. Really what a bad guy.

「Now then, let’s go to Aiko’s house. I have to give my greeting to your parents.」

「Eh?」

Those sudden words that were said aloud so suddenly with a light tone as though asking her to go to some convenience store for a bit caused Aiko to go ‘hah’ and she turned around toward Hajime.

「It looks like your worry is resolved already, so there is no more reason that you cannot introduce me, right? If I have to greet them sooner or later, then I’ll at least show my face to them while also sending you home. It is late already, so I’ll do the formal greeting once more tomorrow.」

「A, as always, what proactiveness……n, no, you know, the greeting can be done next time……I too need to prepare my heart……」

「Hmm, Aiko’s house is over there……oh? So your father and the others are going out to the festival. They are right nearby. Yosh, let’s spend some money while greeting them at the same time.」

「Ah, wait, don’t use something like the compass for this! Wait, please don’t ignore me and go off like that! Just what

in the world are you planning to say to Otou-san and the others!?

Of course, I'll say "Otou-san, I accept your daughter. I won't accept any objection or refusal". That's the standard speech, right?

The standard where-!?

Or rather, Aiko. I'm bothered, just why are you speaking using polite language to me while you spoke casually to that bastard? Isn't that cruel?(TN: Aiko has been using polite language all this time with Hajime while using peer language when she talked to Taichi.)

Eh? That's, it's about the atmosphere or something…… wait, don't change the subject! There is a lot of my acquaintances here from the paaast! If you are saying something like that to Otou-san in this kind of place…… tomorrow all the neighbors will know it!

If you properly talk casually with me too then I'll think about it. ……Well, the time extension won't even be one minute for you to decide though. Oh, that's your father, isn't it? The first impression is important. First of all, let's binge shop the stall's goods.

Please wait! Wait, wait……I get it! I get it already! I'll properly talk to you without polite language so don't keep walking rapidlyyy!(TN: Here finally Aiko didn't use polite language.)

Aiko who was making racket 'gyaa gyaa', and Hajime was handling her unseriously while charging toward the direction of her family with a fearless smile on his face. Naturally, Aiko was clinging to Hajime's arm while Hajime was advancing while carrying such Aiko in his arm, and

coupled with their noisiness the degree of attention to them was at MAX!

The madams of the neighborhood, and the old people who were affectionate to Aiko, they all went□Oh my!□seeing the two’s situation.

And then, finally, the father of Aiko, who noticed Hajime walking toward him with his daughter in his arms, opened his eyes widely, expressing his shock, then he smiled wryly as though he had comprehended something.

After that, Hajime, who loudly proclaimed that he was Aiko’s boyfriend right in the middle of the festival that was overflowing with Aiko’s acquaintances, was awarded clapping and the cheering of hooray. Hajime kept restraining Aiko, who was trying to run away from shame, with a princess carry and was causing cheers to be raised.

Furthermore, it was supposed to be only Hajime showing his face, but with Aiko’s father and grandfather inviting him to come to their house no matter what, Hajime visited the Hatayama house and also met with Akiko and the grandmother. Then he talked to them about his wives other than Aiko and his intention.

With everything that happened at the Shirasaki family and the Yaegashi family, Hajime had resolved himself to be slapped with rejection and rage for sure, but unexpectedly both Aiko’s parents, and even her grandparents, all the people of the Hatayama family accepted Hajime. Of course, it wasn’t like they weren’t frowning, but with the feeling of wanting to respect the will of their daughter who was already an adult, and above all, their debt of gratitude to Hajime because he had saved their daughter from danger many times, it seemed that it led to their trust for Hajime.

In the end, due to the kindness of the Hatayama family, it became a course of event where Hajime stayed for the night, and by using gate the next day, the people of the Nagumo family also visited the Hatayama family, where the words of Yue and the others which said “together with Aiko” promoted the trust to grow even deeper.

After that, it was as though the Hatayama family and the Nagumo family became like a family group but……

As a result, Aiko’s hometown became well-known as the “Land of Miracle” where every kind of crop could bear fruit regardless of the soil quality or the season. Surely that was due to the mixing of the family of “Goddess of Harvest” and the family of “Demon King of Another World”……

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Actually, I also planned to write the reason why Aiko is fixated on being a teacher, but there wasn’t any time, and I couldn’t think of any idea. Despite so, when I began to write thinking [Anyway if I just write then perhaps I’ll think of something…], this kind of Aiko was created……

Well, continuing from before, Shirakome’s condition is a bit bad, so I’m thinking of getting a change of pace.

Even though I say that I’m writing a bit of a longer extra story.

I’m thinking ‘Should I promote him to a main character I wondeeer~’.

Remember, it’s him you know, him. Come on, his name is……eh?

The next update is planned for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 197

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Prologue

AN: This is extra story where that guy is the leading actor.

It’s totally undecided just how far this will go!

Anyway, here’s the prologue.

Caution

- This is a work of fiction. The appearing character, organization, and everything else is different from in reality!

(Shirakome’s excuse=>When making the earth in reality as the stage, various names and settings cannot tamper around as I pleased. What if it’s actually different from the actual condition because of my lack of knowledge……then, it’s similar, but actually, it’s different from the actual earth! That’s why, things like organization names, country names, or weapon names, it will be okay even if they are subtly different!)

And so because of that, please take care of me.

Part 1

It shouldn’t be like this.

Everyone, without exception, surely must have said that in their life. Or even, if not, then surely they must have thought those words in their mind.

Looking at an ideal, setting a target, making a resolve, with seriousness, one pushes forwards toward the future that they wish to have.

But, what was called life, and what was called the world, were extremely malicious. As though it was the norm, matters went left when one wanted them to go right, and then it went right when one thought it would be left, and in the critical times it would go “right outside the expectation”. That’s impossible, absurd, it’s unreasonable, etc., even if one was thinking those they would still be toyed around by the raging stream of absurdity as though they were swallowed and washed away by a flash flood, and then thrown out onto a beach(reality) somewhere like driftwood.

People with their dreams destroyed and their hearts broken, just like a scrap of wood, would stand up and start walking once more, or else, they would keep being buried under the sand(reality) and vanish……It depended on the person. Although, in most cases, there would be salvation from somewhere else for them. While someone might come to clear away the sand, there was also a possibility of someone pulling at their hand to drag their buried body out. Perhaps

there would also be someone who would stay by their side waiting for them until their wound was healed.

But……

(Surely, there will be no salvation for me. It’s beyond hope for me to meet someone like that. Aa, I, just what have I done……)

They were inside an equipment storeroom that was overflowing with iron shelves and crammed with cardboard box and fixtures. The place wasn’t that spacious, but it was a place to temporarily deposit fixtures that were taken out from the large storehouse for the time being. There a girl was sitting down while hugging her knees.

That girl’s body twitched from the sudden large impact sound, and she froze from fear. *gan-gan-gan* The impact reverberated consecutively. Someone was hitting the storeroom door from the outside. The girl lifted her face fearfully.

She was a cute——or more accurately, a beautiful girl. Her age looked around 16, 17 years old. She had blonde hair that was tied into a side tail using a scrunchie. Her almond-shaped eyes that resembled a mischievous cat was colored with jade pupils and long eyelashes. On the whole, she had a slender body type while her legs that were stretching out from her skirt were long and slender, wrapped in black stockings. She was a girl that could even pass as a model.

But, this girl was not a model by any means, and that was shown by her clothes that a normal girl wouldn’t wear in the first place. Yes, the girl was putting on “lab coat” over her blouse.

She wasn’t wearing a lab coat because she was forced to wear it due to some kind of event, or because of some particular hobby which could be obviously seen from the lab coat’s worn out state and her appearance that looked familiar wearing the coat, which for some reason could be thought of as “fitting”.

That girl dressed in a particular look screamed「hii-」when a strong impact sound *gan-* reverberated once more, and she held her head with both her hands. She shrunk her body really small; you could tell that she was in a state of fear. However, it seemed that fear wasn’t because the ringing impact sound outside the storeroom was unknown for her, rather she was scared because she knew the true form of that impact sound.

Because despite the girl’s scared expression, at the same time colors of pity, sadness, and guilt were coloring her face.

「I’m sorry, I’m sorry, I’m sorry……」

The girl in the lab coat was repeating words of repentance with a voice so small that it could melt into the air and become nothing. Just what was that apology referring to……

But at that time, the resounding impact sound stopped completely. The lab coat girl thought 「What is going on?」 with tears gathering in the corner of her eyes. The behavioral principle of “them” that the lab coat girl created was extremely instinctual. Therefore, they shouldn’t be leaving that easily from the storeroom where the “prey”, which was the girl, was inside. Then, perhaps something different that attracted the interest of “them” had appeared.

The girl wiped her eyes roughly with the sleeve of her lab coat and advanced through the space between the shelves slowly and quietly on all fours. And then, the girl finally

arrived like a scared cat until beside a shelf in the inner part, where it became a blind spot from the door of the storeroom, and quietly peeked out from the cover of the shelf; her gaze moving toward the door that stopped making a sound.

「Hiu」

She raised a strange scream that normally she wouldn’t let out. The inside of her throat reflexively tightened from looking at the state of the door. Ahead of the girl’s gaze, the door of the storeroom was——dented all over to the point that it was on the verge of breaking down.

It was a storeroom to deposit items temporarily, so the door was made from iron and fitted with a lock. Regardless, a large number of dents were created on the door as though it had received abnormal and concentrated impacts which distorted it terribly. The outside corridor could be seen from the edge of the door. If the door received one more impact, then it would collapse inside the room.

「……」

Killing her breathing, the girl stared fixedly at the door for a while; before long strength suddenly left her shoulders. It seemed “they” had gone away somewhere just before the door broke……

But, it seemed it was a bit too fast to think that.

GOGAANNN The door was blown away inside the room at the same time as that terrific impact sound.「Hih」The girl screamed, and her body froze. In the next moment, the door that flew inside with fierce momentum cut a swath through the shelves near the girl.

The girl fell on her butt, and then, perhaps because it was her habit when she was surprised, she hugged her head with both her hands once more, tears gathered in the corner of her eyes while she fearfully opened her shut eyes.

「Fuuh――, fuuh――」

「a, ua」

Ahead of the girl’s gaze was a man. It was a young man in the middle of his twenties wearing a lab coat similarly like the girl.

「Se, senpai……」

A whisper leaked out from the girl. The young man seemed to be a “senpai” that the girl knew. But, if a person that didn’t know the situation was in this place, surely they would be unable to comprehend the girl’s words at all.

Because, no matter how anyone saw it, for someone who was called a “senpai” by this girl whose intellectual eyes weren’t clouded even with her scared expression, he didn’t look like that type of person, no, in the first place he didn’t even look like a human.

The man’s eyes didn’t have a fixed focus, those were abnormal eyes that sometimes fully bared the white of the eyes, his face and arms had blood vessels rising to the surface, despite how his body should have slim figure originally, his flesh was swelling bizarrely like a bodybuilder, his breathing was rough and saliva was dripping down from his mouth, and he was raising a low growl like a beast. There was no reasoning that could be seen from him. While he was wearing a similar lab coat with the girl, that appearance was truly out of place.

What was even stranger was that his fists were tightly clenched. Those fists were likely continuously hitting the iron door until it was broken just now, their skin was peeled, the flesh gouged, bones were jutting out, and they were soaked in blood, but those fists were rapidly returning back to normal in a speed that was obvious in a glance. No, perhaps to say more accurately, the flesh was swelling up, the bones that were cracked were connected back, and the fist was repaired to the shape of a fist that was still warped.

「uUUa-」

「A, a……」

The girl backed down while still on her butt slowly. The abnormal young man kept growling while heavily pursuing after her. The storeroom wasn’t that big. Therefore, the back of the girl was immediately blocked by a wall.

The man was standing like a mindless beast in front of the cornered girl. Something warm was flowing out from between the legs of the girl who was holding her head. It was something that she did because of the extreme fear, but the girl herself had no composure to care about that.

Toward such a girl, the fist of the young man, which destroyed a door made from iron, was raised without even a shred of hesitation.

(I’m, sorry……. If only I didn’t do that kind of research……. I’m sorry, senpai……everyone……)

While trembling toward her death that would surely arrive a few beats later, the girl repeated her repentance inside her heart.

Like that, the fist that could easily crush the face of the girl was swung do——

「Doctor Grant!」

An angry voice of a young woman and a dry bursting sound reverberated. The fist of the “senpai” stopped. And then, slowly he turned around while growling. The lab coat girl also directed her gaze toward the door from the shadow of the “senpai”.

There, was the figure of a tall woman wearing a black suit with both her hands readying a handgun.

「Doctor Grant, please get down!」

「tsu」

Hearing the sharp instruction that shook the air like an electric shock, Doctor Grant——Emily Grant reflexively flopped her body low on the floor.

Right after that was the sound of a gun discharging resounding consecutively. And then, a beast’s roar. Footsteps that were like an earthquake was heading away from Emily. When Emily moved her gaze while lying low on the ground, she could see the figures of the black suit woman firing toward the “senpai” and “senpai” who charged ahead without caring about that.

At first, it seemed the woman was aiming at the shoulders and legs of “senpai”, but then she clicked her tongue after seeing that he didn’t even seem to itch when the bullets hit. The next moment, with an astounding speed that it wouldn’t be an exaggeration even if it was said that it was nearly instantly, the “senpai” closed the distance and he pushed out his fist toward the woman while screaming.

In no time, it seemed that the woman would become a mere lump of meat just like that, but in the next instant, it was proven that the woman wasn’t an ordinary person.

「Haa-」

Along with short breathing, the woman *stepped forward.* Like that, she weaved through the approaching fist and stepped inside the bosom of the “senpai” and grasped at his collar, and turned around. Without stopping she performed a splendid shoulder throw.

The “senpai”, who’s charging momentum was used for a throwing technique, had his posture turned upside down and thrown onto the wall on the opposite side. Even so, as expected, it was like he didn’t feel any pain but……

「……Forgive me.」

That sentence was audible. At the same time, a dry bursting sound rang. The fired 9mm bullet penetrated an eye of the “senpai” and mercilessly pulverized the brain. The body of the “senpai” twitched, and before long he stopped moving as though all strength had left him.

The woman held her handgun with both hands while observing the body with a fixed stare for a while. Then with a sigh, strength left her shoulders, it seemed she had judged that the “senpai” wouldn’t move anymore. She then exchanged the gun’s magazine with a trained motion while making contact using her communication device to somewhere, with her quite expressionless face moving toward Emily that was sitting dumbfounded inside the storeroom.

「Doctor Grant, it’s great that you are safe. I am Vanessa Paradis of state security. I came to pick you up. I will guard

you until we arrive at a safe place from here on.

The woman who introduced herself as Vanessa quickly approached Emily's side and calmly held out her hand. The girl who saw her from nearby comprehended it that this woman had an appearance and air where it could be glimpsed that she was used to these rough scenes. Long slit and sharp eyes, with very short hair that was colored between grey and beige. Her height seemed to surpass 179 centimeters easily. Her whole body was emitting a cold presence that was sharp like a knife.

Surely it was because of that that Emily wrinkled her eyebrows in vigilance.

.....I have grasped the gist of your circumstance. It's natural for you to be cautious. However, we don't have any leeway time wise. This facility is filled with the infected personnel. My colleagues are attracting their attention, but even so, they cannot hold for long. That's why, please believe me for now and come with me.

.....senpai is.....

.....Forgive me. My priority protection target is you. I had no leeway to leave him as it was. Also, it was already too late when he became like that, that matter——

Yes. I am the one who knows that the best.

Emily stared for a while at the mere shadow of "senpai's" former self-sinking in the sea of blood behind Vanessa. After that, she moved her gaze to Vanessa. She still had a cold atmosphere around her and looked expressionless, but in her eyes, which were so close Emily's figure was reflected in them, sympathy and apology toward her could be seen somehow.

Emily stared fixedly at those eyes; then she took the hand of Vanessa that was still held out toward her.

「This doesn’t mean I trust you but……I still, cannot die.」

「Yes, I don’t mind that. Don’t separate from me no matter what, please follow me.」

Emily roughly wiped the tears gathering at the corner of her almond-shaped eyes that looked like a cat’s with her lab coat, and then she sternly raised the corner of her eyes. Vanessa who saw that nodded briskly. And then she exited the room while leading Emily.

「……Senpai, I’m sorry. I swear, that I’ll stop this.」

「……」

Emily left behind her words for the “senpai” at the end.

Emily, who was still young and unfamiliar with the world, even though she was called a genius was always alone in the university that she was enrolled into by skipping a grade. Her personality that hated losing by nature caused her to use speech and conduct that seemed to say ‘I’m totally okay!’ even in such an environment, but as expected for Emily, who was still very young, it was something tough……

What let Emily, who was pretending to be tough, to be a researcher in the true meaning, was the professor and the students of the laboratory where she was currently attached to. If the professor who she was indebted to for anything and everything was like her father, then the seniors were like her big brothers and sisters. They were affectionate to her like she was their little sister, and yet they treated her more than an equal as a researcher.

Even amidst those people, the completely changed “senpai” whose breathing stopped atrociously in front of her eyes was a benefactor who especially helped Emily warmly.

The silent prayer of Emily that went for less than a beat was filled with really, really strong feelings that couldn’t be expressed with words.

Even while staying vigilant of the surrounding, Vanessa sent a glance without emotion at such Emily. No, there was a slight tremor in that gaze. It was something like sympathy, or possibly worry……

However, the moment Emily finished her short silent prayer, Vanessa’s gaze returned to its former expressionless look where her emotion couldn’t be discerned.

「Let’s go.」

「Yes.」

Inside the facility where faint gunshots could be heard, while staying vigilant toward the mindless super humans infesting it, or possibly, fearing the worst reunion with the completely changed substitute father, big brothers, and big sisters, the two vanished inside the gloomy corridor.

Part 2

「Oo, so that’s the famous clock tower. Yep, as expected something like this is best seen with your own eyes.」

There was a young Japanese man making click-clack sounds with his smartphone while making a satisfied voice. Shouldering a largish rucksack, this young man wearing plain clothes with a blackish tone didn’t have any particular trait in his appearance.

That blackish young man took photos for a while, and then while confirming the resulting picture, he lifted his face suddenly in realization.

「Crap, this is not the time to keep sightseeing. I’ve got to accomplish the instruction from my demon king-sama.」

The clock taken inside the photo was already showing the closing of the day. The surrounding scenery was already becoming quite dark with cloudy weather although it wasn’t as far as snow.

The young man put away his smartphone and shouldered his rucksack before he turned around while breathing out ‘haa’ white breath.

「Even though this doubled with my private business, but this is still a rough way of using someone. Well, I too am his relative more or less……there is no way I can refuse. Let’s do my best.」

The young man vanished between the people hurrying to return home while talking to himself like that. Before long, his figure was completely buried in the surrounding scenery, and he couldn’t be seen anymore.

Although, before that young man slipped into the crowd, there was not even a single person who sent their gaze toward him. He was too much normal, and too much without presence.

Someone who was able to notice that abnormality, of course, didn’t exist there.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

This might make me sound obstinate, but one more time.

This is different from the real earth! That’s why, if you want to retort ‘What the hell is state security bureau, somehow various things are seriously wrong here!’, I beg you to do it only inside your heart.

……Really, sorry.

Ah, also, I uploaded my activity report. I also placed a cover image and special illustration there.

If you don’t mind, please look over there too.

The next update will be for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 198

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Fuh, who am I you ask? I am——

The London outskirts were wrapped in a thin mist. In a corner of a retro street, where it felt like some old fairy-tale or folklore might be hiding, there was a splendid residence where history could be felt from it conspicuously.

It appeared to be prudently maintained as it didn’t look worn out. The garden that was spreading out in the front, the small path made from spread out white gravel, the flower bed where seasonal flowers were blooming, and a small fountain where a beautiful goddess was sitting, all of those were first class work that gave an elegant impression. From those, it could be understood that a good amount of labor, expense, and time was spent on the appearance of the house.

And that was how it should be since the master of this residence——Jefferson Allgrey was a famous, wealthy person even in Britain. He was from a family lineage that was titled as the so-called “Real Estate King” that for generations possessed countless plots of land and buildings, buying and selling them.

Jefferson, who was the current master of this generation of the Allgrey family, also properly inherited the business talent from his ancestors. Not only did he also seem to possess political talent, but he was a capable human that

raised definite results while engaging in two trades, the political world and real estate magnate, at the same time.

The residence of Jefferson was normally visited by many people. The type of people visiting varied. If there were people from the same political world visiting, then there were also people from real estate companies who visited; there were also a lot of people visiting who were his personal friends.

Anyway, it was a house where the flow of people visiting it never ceased, and that was a well-known fact for the people in the surrounding area.

Today too, a few hours had already passed since the sunset, and there was also the shrouding mist that signaled that it was a time where darkness had completely descended. The principal residence of Allgrey was illuminated with brilliant lights. Several high-class cars were parked nearby the main gate; showing how there were many guests visiting.

Although each of the visitors today was definitely well-known characters, it seemed they weren’t friends that were invited for a simple dinner. They also didn’t appear to be guests who came for work-related matters to speak about politics or business.

Now then, chief. Don’t you think that we should get down to business soon? For you to assemble more than half of the society’s upper echelons……it must be something really considerable, isn’t it? My guess is that it must be a matter about them.

A middle-aged man whose body was wrapped in a suit that was obviously high quality, with a splendid mustache and belly meat, addressed Jefferson as “chief”.

Even though Jefferson was called with that designation that wasn’t used that often in general, he still behaved naturally. By looking at that attitude of his, it could be understood that it was only the matter of course for him to be called like that by the people who were called to this place today.

Jefferson slowly ran his gaze over the surrounding. It seemed that he had finished his meal since there was only wine in front of him. Other than them, there were several servants of the Allgrey family and the respective bodyguards that were brought by each guest.

Tonight there were nine guests gathered. Every one of them was prominent figures that owned phenomenal results in their respective fields, but the fields they participated in were completely scattered. Seen from the side, this was a gathering that really couldn’t be seen as normal. The biggest possibility was that these people were personal friends of Jefferson. Even if there was an outsider who knew of this meeting, then surely they would only be able to think of this as a meeting of fellow friends all the same.

But, from how Jefferson was sitting at the seat of honor while the others were sitting around a long table, it seemed that there was a clear pecking order here. And that became even clearer from the atmosphere they were clad in.

「……They are the real thing.」

A short sentence. For people who didn’t know the circumstance, they would tilt their head wondering what he was speaking about. But, all the people at the dining table were instantly going astir from that sentence that was said by Jefferson with an oppressive tone.

「Is that……is that, really true?」

「Wasn’t that just a mere group kidnapping……」

「Certainly it was an inexplicable case, but……」

「A case of that degree is not that rare. Chief, do you have any basis saying that?」

While their mouths were speaking words where confusion and expectation were mixing together, their gazes were concentrating on Jefferson.

「There is still only circumstantial evidence. But, I have no doubt about it. ……I have confirmed that all the people who were sent to investigate returned to their daily life without getting any information. Far from investigating, they forget even the society.」

「No way……」

「However, just with that……. It’s not as though the method to induce such a situation doesn’t exist, you know?」

「Yeah, I know. Of course, I didn’t make my conclusion just with that. ……This is the situation that can be currently confirmed. I judged that it is already at the level where there would be no problem calling it as *supernatural*.」

Saying that, Jefferson urged a servant with his gaze to distribute a written report; the upper echelons set their eyes on it. After they did that, they went astir once more.

The contents that were written in that written report was as follows.

——The house of the target group that had been confirmed once before, for some reason, couldn’t be approached a second time. Even when they walked following a map, by

the time they noticed something was amiss they were walking in a circle at a completely different place.

——The observer was observing from a distance of 800 meters, but regardless of that their gaze would meet without fail.

——The family register of the target that shouldn’t exist until a few days ago was registered before they knew it.

——That abnormality wasn’t noticed by anyone in the administration side. They didn’t even feel that anything was out of place.

——Every day, their partners were disappearing one by one.

And then,

——The people who were tasked to investigate, without exception all of them would have a blank period in their memory after a while. Even the matter that was being reported right now, whether it was really true or not……was unknown.

Surely everyone was scanning the report up to the very last sentence. Silence descended on the dining table. Everyone was fixated on the content of the report.

But, after a while……

「Fu, fuha, fuhahahahahaha-」

One person raised a laughing voice looking like he couldn’t hold it down. It was a hideously distorted laughter that was composed of joy and madness. However, such laughter, which would grant discomfort to anyone hearing it whether

one wanted to or not, was gradually spreading to the other upper echelons too.

"Finally, we found the *real thing*! Magnificent! I wonder just what kind of supernatural ability they know!"

"At the very least, it seems they have the skill to interfere with the human brain. That's something beyond the position of mere students."

"It cannot stay like this. Chief! We have to immediately send an assault force and secure one or two samples!"

Excitement was ruling over the place. It was a mad excitement, just like how when someone who was lost in a desert finally found an oasis, that feeling of insane arousal before their craving could be fulfilled.

Perhaps this was only natural for them because these people had been secretly maneuvering and searching for "that" through so many years and months that they couldn't keep count anymore.

"Calm down……well telling all of you that is impossible I guess. I understand well everyone's feelings. Then, everyone agrees to the plan to move with the purpose of obtaining a sample? There will be many troublesome things if we kidnap all of them……"

"What, they are people who have gone through the group disappearance once you know, chief. Even if it happened a second time, surely there will be no one who thinks it strange. Not to mention, there are also those among them who didn't return previously."

"The ability possessed by the samples are a concerning matter but……they are just children after all. It shows how

they are content with being students while possessing such power. We can do whatever we like if we involve their family in it. I will immediately begin to prepare the experiment site.

The returnees, they obtained supernatural abilities while they disappeared……I’m bothered with the whereabouts of those that didn’t return. Perhaps, they are still in the place that had to do with the supernatural? If we grasped that, even us……

The upper echelons let out their opinions after Jefferson’s words. The meeting tonight was obviously filled with a passion that was never seen before.

When they finished deciding most of their plan from here on, Jefferson opened his mouth.

Then, all of you, proceed with the matter at hand by paying meticulous attention to details for the sake of accomplishing our dearest wish. The priority target will be the girl who is called as “Yue” as she is the first on the list——

About that, I think it’s better if you stop with that though.

And also the girls who aren’t Japanese that are around the returnees——Jefferson was about to say that, but his words were suddenly cut off.

For a moment Jefferson thought that it was someone among the upper echelon who cut him off, but he immediately discards that idea as impossible. The returnees from the group disappearance in the middle of the day that agitated the society——if it was asked what the aspect that was clearly different in them compared to before was, then the first thing that would attract the attention was the existence of the non-Japanese girls who suddenly appeared.

Thinking about how their family register was created before anyone noticed too, then it would be valid to think of them as “visitors from the supernatural side”. Then it was natural to prioritize securing them as samples.

That was the common understanding between Jefferson and the other upper echelons that they obtained from continuously investigating the series of turmoil of the returnees that started from the group disappearance. For that reason, it was impossible for anyone to object here. And above all, the *voice of the young man* that cut him off was a voice he wasn’t familiar with!

Jefferson felt something cold running through his spine while raising an angry voice that questioned the identity of the person.

「Who! Where are you!?」

「No, I’ve been right in front of you from some time ago. I was eating a normal meal here.」

A voice that contained resignation resounded. At that moment, not only Jefferson, but the upper echelons, the servants, and then the bodyguards too, they all were finally aware.

「Yo」

With a really light mood, at the chair that was positioned on the opposite side of Jefferson, with his mouth stuffed with the same cooking that Jefferson and the others were eating just now, was a young Japanese man greeting with his hand lightly raised!

「You bastard……where did you enter from? What is the guard at the entrance doing?」

The upper echelons and the servants were greatly shaken, the bodyguards were in the middle of taking out their handguns in order to recover from their disgrace while Jefferson was restraining them from firing before he opened his mouth calmly. It seemed that he was also shaken, but the speed of him rallying back his mind ought to be said just as expected from an authority of the political-real estate world that managed this meeting.

Right after he took back his calm, a dominating aura overflowed from Jefferson. That aura was something so intense that if an ordinary person felt it, then not only would they wither down without being able to say anything, they would undoubtedly trickle cold sweat while getting all flustered.

But, that young man warded off such a dominating aura like a swaying willow……or rather, in the first place the young man didn’t even pay attention to that aura, he kept eating the cooking of the Allgrey residence with gusto while talking.

「Nguh. You asked me from where, I entered normally from the door you know. Mugu mugu, I even said excuse me. …… Though I was normally ignored.」

「……That, seems to be the cooking of my residence, right?」

「It’s awfully delicious, as expected from the place of a big shot politician and the real estate king. There were leftovers in the kitchen, so I loaded it onto a plate by myself. ……I, I pretty much asked, okay? I took the silence to mean OK, but I properly asked, okay? I’m not stealing, you know?」

For some reason the young man kept reminding them with something like「It’s true, you know?」. Jefferson knitted his eyebrows at the young man. The more he looked, the more

this young man looked like a normal youth. No, in a sense, he was too normal in presence and appearance that if he didn’t concentrate it felt like he would naturally forget him, perhaps he should say that this young man wasn’t normal in that sense……

「Who are you……or perhaps it’s too unsophisticated for me to ask that? That remark of yours just now in this situation. And then that ability that managed to infiltrate here without anyone able to notice. You are……a returnee, huh?」

Jefferson spoke his conjecture with conviction, but for some reason, the young man who heard his words frowned and his face looked a little sad. While Jefferson was perplexed by that inexplicable reaction, the young man asked with a voice that also sounded sad.

「’A returnee, huh?’ you ask. If you investigated about us, then shouldn’t you know about me too? I expected a reaction like「You bastard-, you are a returnee, huh!?」, but……」

「What? A report of you is not……」

Jefferson was perplexed. He had looked over all the reports of the returnees; he had driven into his head all the information of the returnees’ profiles from their family up to their relatives. If the young man before his eyes was a returnee that had been reported, then there was no way he couldn’t recall him.

But, when one of his servants excitedly showed to him the returnees written report that had been converted into digital data on a tablet……

「……Returnee list No. 28——Endo Kousuke?
……ah」

「Yep, you forgot, didn’t you? Isn’t that right? That’s fine, I understand. Hehe, I’m used to it. Although my shadow is thin even in digital data, I’m not co, concerned at all, you know? I am a riajuu, you know? That’s why, I’m really, really not concerned at all, okay?」

A strange silence descended in that place. The young man――Kousuke, who seemed to have a thin shadow even when inside digital data, was making *kacha kacha* sounds with the spoon and fork. Only that sound was resounding with clarity inside that room. The word 「Delish-」that he was whispering until just now was changing into「It’s salty huh」.

「S, so this is the supernatural ability that you possess.」

「……I had this since birth. Even my mum, she often forgets to do things like picking me up from kindergarten……」

「……I, I see. That, you know, must be hard for you huh.」

For some reason, Kousuke received gentle words and sympathy from the man who was aiming at him and his friends. The salt content of the high-class cooking was increasing! A female servant was wiping her eyes with a handkerchief. The eyes of the bodyguards who were readying their guns until just now were turning lukewarm!

While spouting a complaint「If you sympathize than give me some presence」inside his heart, Kousuke cleared his throat *cough*, he stopped eating and opened his mouth.

「So, about the reason I came here.」

「Mu, that’s right. Certainly, I’ve never thought that a returnee would directly march into here. It appears that your side has also investigated us to a certain degree. ……You, don’t tell me, you came here alone?」

「Well, yeah. Actually, I was in the middle of some personal travel though. But suddenly you guys started making a conspiracy, so I was told to go here for a bit to crush all of you.」

Kousuke was looking at his smartphone while saying「In front of Rana, I cannot refuse that guy's request」with his shoulders dropping down. Seeing that Jefferson exchanged look with the upper echelons and the bodyguards while his expression turned ridiculously.

「Crushing us, is it? It looks like you are growing impudent after obtaining a supernatural ability, huh. It is overwhelmingly faster to shoot your four limbs with lead bullets at this range. It seems that you have the technique to interfere with your opponent's awareness, but in this limited space, can you crush us faster than a bullet?」

gacha Hard ominous sounds resounded countless time. The bodyguards were focusing their gun muzzles toward Kousuke. They numbered a little less than twenty people. The place was a large dining room where sixty people could enter with room to spare, but certainly, in this limited space, it was equivalent to not having any way to escape from twenty gun muzzles.

Jefferson, who thought that this young man was showing composure because he was a child who was drunk on his own power, reversely showed a composed attitude. He crossed his arms above the table, and then while hiding his mouth behind his conjoined hands, his sharp gaze was striking toward Kousuke.

「Young man. Won't you come to our side? According to the report, it seems that the livelihood of all of you didn't change much before and after obtaining supernatural

abilities. It’s worthy of praise that not one of you is running wild, but surely that’s only because you all don’t understand the way to use the power you obtained. Then, we will teach you what the right way to use that power is. This Jefferson Allgrey can promise you a life that is filled with riches and fame that is beyond your imagination.」

「……You really can say that with a straight face after calling humans as samples, huh. They said that the skin of a politician’s face is thick, but that’s really true. Scaryyy.」

Kousuke didn’t look like he was particularly moved by Jefferson’s persuading words, rather he showed a creeped out look. While raising one of his eyebrows over the fact that money and fame didn’t resound in Kousuke’s heart, Jefferson continued his words.

「Then what about women? You are ――」

「I have a girlfriend; I’m fine in that regard. Rather, my girlfriend is a super beauty already. She is already the best-, yep.」

Having his words cut off and hearing Kousuke suddenly speaking fondly of his girlfriend in front of him caused Jefferson’s gaze to become something severe.

「……It’s natural for you to feel almighty if you have a special power. But, what is called reality is something that is more heartless then what all of you are thinking. Perhaps if it’s just you, or possibly if it’s just all of you returnees, then you all might make it work out somehow. But, what about the people around you? Your family, your friends who are not returnees, relatives. Can you protect all of them? Our society is not just about violence, you know?」

Jefferson looked over his surroundings. Ahead of his gaze were the upper echelons of their society ——every one of them were successful people who possessed *social* power. And then, the gaze of Jefferson spoke more eloquently than anything.

That this wasn’t everything their society possessed.

In other words, even in the one in a million chance that all the people here died, their society itself wouldn’t be finished. There were still other people with power gathering in their society.

「I’ll recognize your ability to gather information this far, and your guts to infiltrate into here alone. But, for you to be under the impression that the situation before your eyes is everything there is, you are still just a child. We had sought the supernatural from long ago when the society had first been laid out; it now stretches its roots everywhere in the world, we are——」

「Hydra, right?」

Jefferson, who implicitly pressed for obedience under the name of cooperation to Kousuke with a condescending attitude, was about to disclose the name of their society with plenty of emotion, but right before he could, Kousuke easily revealed that name.

Jefferson twitched in reaction and was about to open his mouth further, but ignoring him, Kousuke ate the last of his food and operated his smartphone with one hand, then he spoke out the content that was displayed there.

「Abduction, murder, robbery, human experimentation, and on top of that even inducing war, a group of supernatural fanatics that will do anything——Hydra. Certainly, it looks

like you guys have a long history. The origin of the name is because no matter how many upper echelons and parts of the organization are crushed, the survivor of the organization that is hiding somewhere will restore the organization back. The organization has existed since before the colonial period. Historically the organization has been crushed several times, but before one knows it, the organization is revived. The current chief is you……

After that, Kousuke read out loud the internal conditions of the secret society Hydra. And then the information of the upper echelon bunches which were here like their name, surface information, family, friends, work relatives, and on top of that even the name of their illegitimate child or relationship with another organization that they kept secret from even inside the organization. He didn’t stop with just that, the concealed upper echelons who weren’t here and the location of bases, and even further and further, things like the innermost thoughts of the upper echelons toward each other and so on, Kousuke disclosed everything.

It was clear that what was disclosed wasn’t nonsense because the upper echelons opened their mouths so wide it looked like their jaw might come off and their expression which turned completely pale.

Everything that they had done was impossible to be known by the information network of children or even by ordinary adults. The color of Jefferson’s face, who had that fact thrust right back at his face not just by two-fold but by ten thousand fold, clearly showed how the capacity of his trained mind had completely gone over capacity.

When you peer into the abyss, the abyss will also peer back at you——su~ch a famous expression, if it’s you guys who love the supernatural, then surely you have heard it before.

We are standing in the superior position. Just how are you guys able to blindly believe such a thing without any basis at all?」

「You, you bastard……」

「Well, you guys, you all are veteran through many adversities in *the surface world* huh. You guys must have never even dreamt that the children who are going through school life without a care in the world after getting their hands on magic would be able to overwhelm you even in information volume……」

「Why……just how, do you know that much……」

「That's, if we know that there are some guys aiming for us, to say nothing of us, there is no way our demon king-sama will stay silent. Because despite that guy looking like a cruel and heartless savage bastard, he actually totally spoils the important people around him.」

「Demon king, you say?」

「Yeah. A god-slaying demon king. That guy even killed a god for the sake of a woman, and now you guys try to lay your hands on that exact woman.」

Kousuke's gaze was continuously filling with limitless sympathy. Jefferson's expression was grandly convulsing. There was no more dominating aura of a big-shot that could overpower an ordinary person coming from him. Because he was a veteran manager and a politician, who had piled up many experiences of going through adversity, that he was able to understand Kousuke's experience and felt a sense of danger welling up inside him.

That was――they had touched something that should not be touched.

But, however, the people who were still relatively young among the upper echelons didn’t have enough of that intuition.

「What is, what is, what demon king-. Just, what god-slaying! Even nonsense has a limit!」

「Tha, that’s right! As expected, you are just a kid. It seems that you don’t even know how to bluff. Something like god-slaying, as expected, you have exaggerated too much.」

「Chief, no more words are necessary! Let’s make this brat pay the compensation for looking down on the society! You guys, just keep him alive! Do it!」

They started a reckless action without waiting for the order of the chief which was normally impossible. Jefferson immediately tried to raise his voice to stop them, but faster than he could, several of the black-suited bodyguards, because of the strange atmosphere and the mysterious uneasy feeling they had, as though aroused by their impulse were aiming their gun toward Kousuke’s limbs while jumping forward.

「……Haa. I had more or less tried it, even though I thought of doing this and getting spared from releasing the shackle.」

Inside the situation that was moving all at once, there was *only* that whisper resounding.

「Wha-. Where is-」

「Shit-, what is going on!? Where did that guy go!?」

「No way, he vanished!?」

The jumping forward black-suited bodyguards were surrounding a chair that had no one on it feeling dumbfounded. The chair should have had Kousuke sitting on it until just a moment ago. From the beginning until the end they didn't take their gaze off him for even an instant.

He was certainly there. Right in front of their eyes. They would grip him up, pull him down from the chair, and hold him down. They reached out their hands without leaving any place to escape while even imaging how he would counterattack; they were certainly aware of him until the moment they could touch him. Yet despite so, their hands moved through empty air and "when they noticed" the target had vanished. It was as though he wasn't there right from the start.

「-, our mind has been interfered with already!? Be careful; our awareness is being manipulated!」

Jefferson, thinking that it couldn't be helped now that it had come to this, pushed on the emergency button at the other side of the table to summon the bodyguards standing by everywhere inside the residence while giving a warning. And then, he himself also took out a handgun from his breast pocket; at that time Kousuke's voice resounded once more. However, it was a voice with a slightly different air than until just now.

「Interference to awareness? Fuh, what exaggeration……. My Ground Shrinker was beyond the pale of your perception ability, isn't that's all there is to it?」

「Wha-, impossible, standing on the ceiling!?」

Jefferson and the others who were staying on guard against the most likely possibility of Kousuke sliding under the table was thinking in the corner of their mind ‘doesn’t it feel like his tone is a little strange?’ while they looked up in surprise, and then they exposed a really stupid expression from shock.

Although, surely such reaction was something that couldn’t be helped if they saw a human standing really naturally on the ceiling as though to say ‘Gravity? What’s that?’.

Furthermore,

(Why, why, is he making a strange pose!?)

Yes, Kousuke was standing upside down on the ceiling while covering his face with one hand with his eyes glaring down at Jefferson and the others from between his finger gaps! On top of that, before they knew it his body was already in an appearance of totally black clothes, on his eyes were a pair of sunglasses that were a one-lens type, and his other hand was holding a black knife in a position that was crossed with the hand that was covering his face! Surely if the rabbit-eared assassination group of another world saw this, they would undoubtedly clap and cheer while giving high praise of□What a cool pose!!□!

□Fools who fell into the abyss of selfish desires and fanaticism. I’ll teach into your body, that in this world, there are things that you ought not to know.□

For some reason, while rotating once before displaying a chuuni pose (version 24) again, Kousuke, no, the assassin of the strongest class who was awakened in various meaning in the other world, threw a declaration of war toward the fanatic occult group. Together with that chuuni self-introduction!!

「The shadow of the demon king, the vanguard of the dark rabbit ear family――Rapid Fang Shadow Claw, Kousuke E Abyssgate. Has arrived!!」

What does rabbit ear mean…….. Abyssgate, gate to where……. Those retorts of Jefferson and the others didn't form into loud words.

Because right after that, the peerless one even against the god's apostles in another world, the one with the thinnest shadow in the world, the best assassin in the world, bared his fang.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Everyone's review that it is like it has been planned beforehand blew away Shirakome.

Like, Endo-kun, you are loved huuh. ……He is loved, right?

I properly got his name out this time, so please remember it properly.

He is Endo Abyssgate-kun, okay.

PS-

I placed the information about the special SS for each bookstore-sama in my activity report.

Please confirm it if you please.

The next update is planned for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 199

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Foreign Country is Scaryyyy

Haaaa~~~~~

It was past noon, and the warm sunlight was showering down. In the corner of a certain city, at a lovely café with a wooden entrance and terrace, a groan of a zombie was resounding. People who got startled from that groan that sounded like it was reverberating from the realm of the dead was nonexistent.

Whether it was the couple that was feeding each other cute cakes on the terrace, the male customer with a businessman appearance operating his tablet alone, or the old man walking his dog who just passed through in front of the terrace, none of them showed any sign of being bothered by that groan. Or rather, they didn’t even look like they noticed the groan.

aaa~~~~~~

The groan resounded once more. As expected, no one noticed, but the owner of the groan who wasn’t being paid attention to also seemed to be used to not being paid attention to, so he groaned without any reservation regardless of him being in a public space.

To say more while on this topic that zombie imitation had his face pressed down on the café’s table with both his hands

holding his head. He looked like someone who had made a mistake that couldn’t be taken back and lamented his very life.

Just to make sure, this wasn’t a zombie that escaped a research facility somewhere and slipped into the street, as made evident by the glass with the logo of the café filled with a beverage placed in front of him and the sandwich that still wasn’t touched but had already been properly ordered.

But, at that time, the smartphone that was placed on top of the table of the zombie imitation was starting to play the BGM of a certain epic RPG’s demon king battle. That ringtone caused the zombie imitation to twitch in reaction, and his hand crawled on the table, with his face still pressed on the table, to pick up the smartphone.

He then put the phone to his ear and took the call with his face still pressed against the table.

「……*hai*」

「What’s with that voice? That voice sounds like you are going to drop dead anytime.」

「Yeah, I feel like dying. I caused my shame to overflow……」

「……I guessed it already. So you’ve done it again huh, Endo.」

「I’ve done it……I’ve really done it, Nagumo. Perhaps, I’m no good already.」

「Endo……」

From the other side of the phone receiver, the conversation partner——the one who requested for the annihilation of the occult fanatic group Hydra, Nagumo Hajime guessed the mental damage of Kousuke and seemed to be exasperated, or perhaps it was sympathy in his voice that called Kousuke’s name.

And then,

「Well, that doesn’t matter——」

「It does matter! Don’t put it aside that simply! Give me more sympathy here! Have some more care! You are my kindred-spirit who knows the same pain as me, right!?」

Having his problem simply put aside like that, the excessive sadness caused Kousuke to succeed in coming back from a zombie. *Gabacho!* His face that was pressed on the table flew up as he raised a scream from his soul as though he was willing it to reach the other side of the sea.

「Even if you say that, in my case, I have a strong position as the victim of Hauria, but in your case, recently it came from yourself, right? Not long ago you were still okay if it was just a little scuffle. Or was the case this time that difficult?」

「Uguu. Stabbing me right where it hurts……. That’s, it wasn’t really that bad, yeah, but……when I entered battle, unconsciously I……. Maybe this is because of before when I asked you to open the gate, and I spent a while with Hauria. Somehow, it feels like the more time I spend with them, the more easily I “become” that……」

「Becoming Lord Abyssgate, huh.」

「Don’t say that nameee!」

gon- Kousuke’s face pressed down on the table once more, along with that painful sounding sound.

——Endo Kousuke

The one with the scouting role in the former hero party. At the legendary decisive battle which was carved into the history of the other world Tortus, he was the strongest assassin that boasted peerless performance against the apostles of god. ……Though such a thing couldn’t be imagined at all from the figure writhing in shame while groaning with his face pressed on a café’s table.

The reason for him, who casually had a status of strongest, turning into a hopeless person like this at a café in the middle of the day was needless to say because of the battle last night. Yes, that thing which was manifested at the battle, that chuuni conduct which was just too painful to look at and listen to.

Just why was he performing that kind of chuuni conduct in full drive even while understanding that later on, he would receive mental damage like this, where it felt like he wanted to bash his head at the corner of a block of tofu and die? There were some unavoidable reasons.

One of the reasons was this.

==========
==========
==========

Endo Kousuke 17 Years Old Male Level:92

Vocation: Assassin

Physical Strength: 800

Stamina: 940

Endurance: 450

Agility: 1700

Magic Power: 560

Magic Resistance: 560

Skill: Assassination Technique [+ Dagger Art] [+ Concealment] [+ Tracking] [+ Throwing Art] [+ Hidden Weapon Art] [+ Transmission Wave] [+ Escape Art] [+ Abyss Lord] – Presence Manipulation [+ Presence Isolation] [+ Phantom Step] [+ Dream Illusion III] [+ Clarity Phantom] [+ Minimum Mind] – Shadow Dance [+ Water Dance] [+ Leave Dance] – Gravity Magic – Language Comprehension

==========

As for the detail of those skills, [+ Dagger Art] to [+ Hidden Weapon Art] had the meaning exactly as the name implied, [+ Transmission Wave] was an ability to strain one's ear to pick up vibrations in the air, or in the wall, to listen to conversations from someplace a good distance away, and [+ Escape Art] was a skill that gave aptitude correction to magic if it was used for escape.

[+ Phantom Step] was a skill that left behind a presence with an afterimage piled up on oneself to blur one's own figure, [+ Dream Illusion III] was a skill that produced up to three illusionary clones of oneself, and then [+ Clarity Phantom] was a skill that gave substance to the clone. [+ Minimum Mind] was an invisibility assistance skill, while the user was invisible this skill would make the user's breathing,

heartbeat, presence, and even the fluctuation of the mind, and so on, to be in a flat state.

“Shadow Dance” was a skill that Kousuke often used which allowed him to run on walls. It couldn’t let him stand still on a wall, but as long as he had momentum, he could continue to run on walls. Its derivation [+Water Dance] was the water version while [+Leaf Dance] was a skill that let him use things like leaves that were falling in the air as instant footholds for jumping.

Now then, have you all noticed? Nonchalantly there was a skill of a different disposition that could be seen just from its name mixing in among all those skills. Probably, that skill was exactly the one that awakened at that legendary decisive battle as the end derivation of the assassination skill. The cause of which made Kousuke’s shame rocket into Mach speed.

——Abyss Lord (Abyssgate Lord)

The explanation from the status plate was like this.

Effect: In the middle of the bloody battle, the Abyssgate Lord arrived from the dark bottom that is even darker than darkness. Now, o veil of darkness, o the dead of darkness, offer thy strength to the abyss! That is, the infinite power of dreams……

The moment Kousuke saw this explanation needless to say he threw his status plate on the ground with all his strength. It was also needless to say that he also ground the plate with his foot while he was at it.

First, the effect explanation was something cryptic that didn’t resemble an explanation. In the first place, a nickname (?) that was given to him by chance at a

battlefield becoming a skill name just like that was also cryptic, or rather, the explanation text was just too painful. He didn’t want to believe that this was really the final secret skill of his vocation.

However, just because of that that didn’t mean that he could neglect a power that he finally obtained without knowing its effect, and above all, there was a reason why Kousuke had to know it no matter what, and so he ascertained the effect while his SAN (TN: sanity) value was being shaved off grindingly. And the result that he came to understand was that it appeared that this skill had the effect of a gradual Limit Break. It didn’t raise his strength explosively like Limit Break, but a skill that strengthened all his specs little by little while the skill was activated.

Furthermore, while being different from Limit Break, this skill didn’t have the side effect of strong lethargy after use. It could really be said as an extraordinary ability.

However, if it was asked whether it really had no demerit at all……the world wasn’t that sweet.

The demerit of [+Abyss Lord]. That was……

While it was activated, the user’s speech and conduct would be forcefully be made into a flawless chuuni(Abyssgate Lord)!

Furthermore, what was troubling was that the activation of the skill was essentially possible by the user’s discretionary, but there was a time when this skill activated on its own without the user’s discretion. Perhaps the cause of that was merely because of Kousuke’s inexperience in handling this skill, or possibly there was another factor……

Just like Kousuke said himself, it seemed that the ratio of the forced activations was increasing in proportion with the time he spent with the members of the Hauria clan, so most likely the cause was due to the latter……perhaps.

「I had recommended this to you before but try a skill sealing artifact. Do you really not need it?」

「Uu. Tha, that's……I want it, but….」

Hearing Hajime's words, Kousuke's expression turned bitter while his speech sounded hesitant.

Previously, when Hajime saw Kousuke, who because of his speech and conduct was looking too much like he was really going to sink into the abyss, said「I cannot watch this anymore……」 and offered to Kousuke that he would manufacture a skill sealing artifact for him. Just seeing him made even Hajime feel like his chest was struck with a pile bunker.

Kousuke's eyes turned bright right after he heard that offer, but his expression immediately changed as though he had recalled something and refused the offer with an expression that was oozing out bitterness. The reason for that was,

「……Rana, she will be dejected then.」

「Really someone like you is……」

That.

Rana——Rapid Shadow, Ranainferna Hauria (Real name: Rana, just Rana. This is important, so I'll say it for the third time, it's just Rana).

At the legendary decisive battle, Kousuke used his ability——including his skill and also his nonexistent presence that he had by nature——with all his power, and with all his seriousness to stay invisible, yet regardless of that this rabbit ear lady of Hauria clan found him normally. She was the woman who stole Kousuke’s heart. She was also the perpetrator who brought forth the Abyssgate Lord to this world.

Above all else, Kousuke feared that if he sealed Abyssgate Lord, then she would fall out of love with him.

「Well, you went through many hardships to go out with her. No, that’s already crossed over the level of hardship. I think that you are the most amazing guy among our classmates you know, in various meanings. Or rather, I can even say that I’m holding respect for you.」

「I, is that so? It’s not really something that much……」

「Don’t be ridiculous. Just what is this guy who conquered the『Raisen Great Labyrinth』by himself only for the sake of getting recognized by the woman he fell in love with saying huh.」

「A, hahaha……yeah. I thought I was going to die that time. No, if I didn’t use Abyssgate Lord state 24 hours that time, enduring that black history that made me dying in shame, I’d normally die there.」

Yes, just as shown by that skill which was casually written on the status plate, Kousuke had actually conquered the 『Raisen Great Labyrinth』. Furthermore, he did it alone. At the battle against the occult group Hydra his act of standing normally on the ceiling wasn’t because of his skill to wall run, or because of Hajime’s artifact, but by using his own gravity magic.

Even though the master of the「Raisen Great Labyrinth」, Miledy Raisen was already gone, even though there was nothing but the half-automatic type interceptor golems that she left behind, the labyrinth's trap and the situation where magic was unusable there were still going strong. Also, even though the golems were half-automatic types, they only lost the tactical capability like when Miledy controlled them, but their battle ability didn't decline even for a bit.

And Kousuke conquered such a labyrinth by himself in a week and returned alive. Because he was always in a state of Abyssgate Lord, his physical ability and willpower, and then his chuuni speech and conduct, in various meanings they all broke the limit even more than Limit Break. Because he challenged his limit like that, his body and his heart, especially his heart!, were all tattered, but even so, he returned alive with all his limbs intact. It was only natural that Hajime and others were shocked by that.

「Really, you did well to survive. That was a savage condition that made even princess Kaguya look cute. You, just how much do you love that woman, huh?」

「That's, so much that I'd challenge even Nagumo!」

「That so huh……」

Yes, Kousuke was challenging the great labyrinth with even more preparedness for death than at the decisive battle when it was already completed the epilogue scene if it was a story where the final battle had ended. That was because of the lovely rabbit ear onee-san Ranainfe……Rana gave a condition to Kousuke.

Since that day of the decisive battle, during the one month before they returned to earth, Kousuke was making his approach to Rana with great vigor.

However, Ranai……Rana was a Hauria clan, and all members of Hauria clan worshipped Hajime without a single exception. It was to the degree that if Hajime wished it, then any female of the Hauria would instantly offer their body to him.

Of course, Hajime had the strongest hitting type bug character Shia Hauria who was the same Hauria clan like them, so there was no hero among them who would proactively try from themselves to obtain Hajime's affection. But even so, they made their "Boss" Hajime, the "demon king-sama that slaughters even god" as their standard for men, so……to speak the unvarnished truth, their ideal was absurdly high.

And so, naturally, Kousuke's approach also didn't sway Rana.

「Fuh, I am a shadow that is serving "that person". A shadow doesn't need love……」

Like that,

「You too have a strange taste, don't you? Know that you won't get away with just a scalding if you touch me, for you to pursue a dangerous woman like me……」

Or like that,

「Stop it already. A resolve to continue to walk together with me, in the bottom of the darkness that is even deeper than the abyss, there is none of that inside you, am I right?」

Or like that. Those sentences were told to Kousuke with a fearless, or possibly a bewitching, smile on her face.

No matter how many times he confessed, Kousuke was shot down with a speech that was undeniably excessive. Kousuke

was seen by Hajime with a gaze as though he was witnessing a hero while Shia was staring with intensely reproachful eyes (at Rana).

Even so, Kousuke didn't get discouraged; he kept approaching her repeatedly seeing that, as expected, even Rana seemed to be moved just a little by his persistence. In the end, it became like this.

「……Uu, do, do you want me that much? Not that, cough-. If you wish for this cursed body to that degree……. But, I belong to boss……not that, cough-. It's unfortunate, however, my body already belongs to "that person". That's why, okay? Give up……not that, cough-. Shadows live in shadows, and light in light, that is the law. Bu, but, well, if you conquer a great labyrinth or something like boss……or maybe, if you can make even a scratch on boss……it's not like I won't think about it, maybe? Not that-, cough-. Fuh, if you still wish for this body even then, then try to challenge the king of the abyss and splendidly exert yourself and win.」

The beautiful rabbit-eared onee-san said such a thing while fidgeting and looking restless. It went without saying that seeing that caused the inside of Kousuke's chest to contain an explosive heat that was equivalent to the eruption of the 「Guryuen Grand Volcano」before.

Yes, the condition that Rana gave him was to conquer a great labyrinth as well as landing an attack on the demon king Hajime…….

Just as Hajime said, it was a savage condition that might have made even princess Kaguya to go「Wai-, you-」.

However, Kousuke, who was blazing with the pathos of a feverish love that could burn him to ash, didn't even listen to the voices of the surrounding that tried to stop him. His

figure vanished while no one noticed. He picked the「Raisen Great Labyrinth」because it had the highest possibility for him to conquer, and also because the age of god magic that he could obtain from there suited him the most, and then he jumped right into it.

After that, a week passed by. As expected, Nagayama Juugo and Nomura Kentarou were anxious because Kousuke hadn’t come back. They discussed it with Hajime and the others when the person concerned, Rana, was also acting ‘perhaps I have said a little bit too much……’ with her gaze swimming around, so Shia who was already familiar with conquering that dungeon was about to go out searching (by no means that they finally noticed that Kousuke wasn’t there only after a week passed), it was at that time,

Kousuke returned.

He was tattered all over, but he properly obtained the age of god magic——the gravity magic. And then, while making the surrounding dumbfounded with his incomprehensible behavior of obtaining a new power after the final battle, for some reason, Kousuke made a declaration. He pointed his finger with a snap, and then boldly, with a fearless smile on his face,

「Demon king Nagumo Hajime-. Fight me!」

He said.

Naturally, Juugo yelled「Kousukeee, come back to your sanityyy! Stop doing something like suicideee!」, Kentarou begged「Shirasaki-san-, Ayakoo, anyone is fine! Quickly a recovery magic-. I beg you treat his head carefully!」, Aiko-sensei clung to Hajime while pleading「Hajime-kun, don’t be hasty-. Endo-kun is, that, he is just a little tired! His head is-」, and then Kouki, Ryutaro, and Suzu stood in the way

between Endo and Hajime. They were trying to buy time for Kousuke to escape while getting drenched in cold sweat with the preparedness of death.

All those caused Hajime to say「You guys, just what do you think I am……」with his cheeks cramping, but he was reaping what he sowed, so no one consoled him.

In that place that was filled with chaos, Kousuke completely ignored his friends who were stopping him, his gaze turned toward Rana, and then he proclaimed with a loud voice, willing it to reach into her heart.

「Rana-san-. I love you! The condition that you gave me――if you can put even a wound on boss, then it's not like I won't think about it, those words, I believe in them! In front of Rana-san's eyes, I'll put a wound on Nagumo, clearly and distinctly-!!!」

Hearing that proclamation, the classmates who didn't know that Rana's condition was just her hiding her embarrassment finally guessed the reason of Kousuke conquering a great labyrinth and his war declaration to Hajime which could only be thought as a suicide wish, and they thought.

――So it's Hauria again-!!!!!

Everyone simultaneously directed criticizing gazes of「What the hell have you said to him!」to Rana. Rana, who received those gazes, was drenched in cold sweat while her gaze was swimming around as expected. Her cheeks reddened a bit from Kousuke's declaration while the Hauria females in the surrounding were giving her broad grins and teasing.

Now then, Hajime who received the challenge because of all that felt some sympathy to the scenario of a boy challenging

a powerful enemy for the sake of the woman he loved and accepted that challenge.

Of course, he had no plan to get done in that easily. Even he had women that he loved, doing something like an unsightly fight in front of those women, was something that wouldn’t do no matter what kind of circumstances it was, and above all, Kousuke himself would ask to be excused from “being gifted a merciful win”.

And so, Hajime and Kousuke carried out a duel, and the result was――

The fact that currently, Rana was accepting Kousuke’s feeling was the clearest proof there was. The strongest assassin character, + full power Abyssgate Lord state, the combination of those weren’t just for show.

It was a grand battle in various meanings but……that would be told in another chance.

Kousuke who accomplished the great feat of conquering the 『Raisen Great Labyrinth』solo, as well as dealing a blow to the godslaying demon king, splendidly shot down Rana’s heart with that challenge that put his life at stake.

But, naturally, although Rana had entrusted her to Kousuke, the fact that Rana was a Hauria didn’t change, the time that he spent together with her, and also the time when he was welcomed by Kam and others as family, all of those times were basically spent as a chuuni. Naturally, because of that, his Abyssgate Lord time was also increasing……

『Nagumoo, perhaps, I cannot go back anymore……. Perhaps, I should just go until the very end just like this instead.』

「You are really driven to the wall, huuh. But, even if you stop being Abys――chuuni, I don’t think that girl Rana will fall out of love from you though. The fact is that you broke through that girl’s savage condition right from the front. That is something that nobody else will be able to do. No matter even if you are chuuni or not, there is no way she will abandon you who have gone that far for her sake after this late.」

「Perhaps, that’s so. But try to think from the opposite. From here on too I’ll spend time together with the Hauria clan as a relative. If I act normally among them by myself……won’t the away game feeling get bad like that? See, it will be like a guy that cannot read the mood who will make a realistic retort like「This kind of thing is impossible in the real world」 when you are playing a fantasy game.」

「Wha, what a difficult guy……. Well, that’s an example that is easy to understand though. Indeed, doing that will dampen the mood.」

「Right? This guy, he can’t read the mood, huh, or what a boring guy, or he is not fun huh……if Rana thinks of me like that, I don’t have the confidence that I can keep living even then.」

「Don’t assert so surely like that geez. Rather, you cannot be helped anymore, in the end, Endo, you have already found the answer inside yourself, right? That’s why I too just tried to put it aside casually……」

「Listen to me here! I too know that I’m just complaining! But I want someone to listen to me still! Recently when I talked about this to Juugo or Kentarou, both of them would just act ‘saying this again huh~’ and won’t listen to me at all! You

are my kindred-spirit that knows the same pain, aren’t you!?」

「Aa, got it, got it. That’s why don’t scream like that into the phone.」

In the end, it seemed that Kousuke had the resolve to shoulder by himself (?) his shame or his mental damage, the point was that he just wanted Hajime to listen to him grumbling. Because Hajime understood that, which at first he tried to put it aside, it seemed that Kousuke wanted him to keep him company in him letting out his stress.

Hajime who was faithfully keeping company with Kousuke was also completely different from the time when he was at Tortus; perhaps it should be said that he had mellowed. Though perhaps there was also the feeling of sympathy in him as a comrade who knew the same pain of heart just like Kousuke said.

After that, for a while Kousuke spoke his grumbling at length, between times he also asked for love consultation (?) like a way to progress his relationship with Rana, before Kousuke’s mind was recovered, it was at that time that Hajime finally spoke the main topic of why he called――the detailed story of the occult group Hydra.

「So? I don’t think that you will make any mistake, but was the treatment to those guys well?」

「Yeah, no problem with that. Hydra has become a charity group inside those guys. I think they will direct the funds of their society to unfortunate children from here on. I didn’t do anything to the bunches that weren’t at that place though.」

「I don’t mind that. After all, they are a big organization. It seems that they have members everywhere, I’ll deal with

those. Well, perhaps I'll ask you to do something like this again if you happen to be nearby the target location while you are in your private business like this time.

No, I wasn't really close to this place. I was in North America, you know? You, isn't your sense of distance getting weird because you can use gate?

Kousuke glared with reproachful eyes while understanding that Hajime couldn't see him, which wasn't surprising. In the first place, Kousuke leaving Japan wasn't to purposefully respond to Hajime's request. If that was the case, then no matter how extremely busy Hajime was, it would be faster if he opened a gate and directly marched into the enemy base.

This time Hajime requested Kousuke to deal with the antagonistic organization because the timing was just right when Kousuke was overseas in a private business using his winter vacation. And then, the private business of Kousuke was to observe battlefield medical treatment in practice boldly. Therefore, the destination of Kousuke was a country with inadequate medical systems, where he learned directly on the spot, and by the time he thought 'well, perhaps I should go back soon?', an imperial command came down from the demon king-sama to him.

By the way, for the moment Kousuke was a student preparing for examinations to enter the medical university he wished for, but perhaps it was a present for doing his best at another world, his skill "Language Comprehension" also could be used for all languages on earth; he was already like a native speaker right from the start of the foreign language subject, and the other students preparing for examination were in the state of teary eyes in that subject, so Kousuke had relatively more leeway there.

Also, Kousuke wanted to enter a medical university not because he wanted a doctor’s license, or that he wanted to become an elite doctor, but only because he wanted the knowledge and technique that could be put to use in Tortus someday, so there was no need for him to enter into a university with that high of a standard. Sometimes he would go around like this relaxing while also observing real practice of medical treatment.

The base of the occult group Hydra which was the Allgrey residence was located in Britain, so thinking with common sense, it couldn’t be said that it was a place that was close to the place that Kousuke visited this time. It wasn’t like Kousuke had a gate, so he made use of a commercial airplane (he had quite a lot of request fees transferred to his account from Hajime though) to travel until here which made it even farther.

「I told you before that if it’s you, I’ll at least make a degraded crystal key for you, didn’t I?」

「……I’ll refrain from that. Nagumo’s artifact is too convenient. If I grow to rely on it like it’s only natural, then it feels like I’ll think of normal life as inconvenient, that’s scary. If I’m traveling, then I’ll limit myself to my own feet and public transportation.」

「You, even though you have a thin shadow, you sometimes say something with depth huh.」

「You don’t need to add the thin shadow-. Just the request fee you transferred is enough. About this much is just right for a timid person like me.」

Kousuke could feel Hajime smiling wryly on the other side of the phone from his words. Kousuke didn’t receive a really high assessment from the surrounding because of the

thinness of his shadow and fundamentally had low self-esteem. Even though he always produced an outrageous result “when he noticed”, he wasn’t evaluated by others, and that was why he wasn’t aware that what he had done was amazing.

「Well, anyway, you saved me the trouble there. I planned to crush them sooner or later, but recently I’m seriously busy. If those guys start to move all out it will be really troublesome, but now their heads are crushed before that happened, so I guess they won’t move for a while. Now I can devote myself to what I want to do with this spare time.」

「That’s great. If I remember right, you are doing various things like making it easier to open the gate to Tortus, right? If that works, then I’ll be able to meet with Rana more casually.」

Leaving aside Kousuke’s low self-esteem, their talk came to a finish after Hajime heard about what he wanted to ask. Kousuke earnestly reminded Hajime that he would cooperate with this kind of odd jobs, so he should hurry with establishing a way to make it easier to come and go to Tortus, after that he was about to hang up the phone.

「Then, later. Nagu――」

It was at that time.

Suddenly, *gyagyagyagya-!!* such a sound of something slipping fiercely resounded.

「Wha, what is!?」

「Oi, Endo, what――」

The shocked Endo turned his gaze toward the street where the sound of slipping and screams of people were reverberating from. Right after that a thunderous sound that drowned the words of Hajime came, a car was drifting through the street corner rushing out toward here.

The thunderous roar was the sound of that car running wild coming into contact with the car parked on the street. The parked car that was hit had its mirror blown away and its tail lamp popping off. However, while it clearly caused such an incident, the car that made its entrance with a drift didn’t show any sign of stopping at all, far from that it accelerated further.

Toward the café where Kousuke was.

「Wha-, wa-――!?」

The couple, businessman, and then the beautiful waitress who were also on the terrace screamed while tumbling over trying to escape inside the café. The next moment, the black car that looked tough pulled its emergency brake just before it charged into the terrace and its rear part mowed the terrace heartily.

Wreckage of the terrace danced midair, and then tableware and cooking……

「Uoh. That’s a waste!」

Kousuke was evading the wreckages of the terrace by jumping into the air, and with *hyupapapa-* caught the sandwich that he still hadn’t touched! In his hand was a plate that he secured unnoticed while the sandwich was put on it before it was blown away still beautifully untouched due to Kousuke’s exquisite skill. While he was at it, he had put away his smartphone into his pocket unnoticed and in

exchange used his hand to use the glass that he had secured to secure the blown away beverage to a certain degree skillfully.

And then, he caught midair the last piece of the sandwich with his mouth and lightly landed on top of the café's signboard that was placed on the walkway.

「Mugumuguh, puhah. Good grief, a car suddenly came charging, just what in the world――」

Kousuke swallowed the sandwich that he caught in his mouth and he spoke his complaint with his two hands holding the plate and glass, there his gaze suddenly met someone.

The black car that was temporarily stopping after crashing into the terrace. From the window of that car's passenger seat, there was a blond haired girl with her mouth opened wide looking as though 'I had seen something unbelievable!', her gaze staring fixedly at Kousuke.

Beside the girl who had pretty blonde hair that was tied into side tail and almond-shaped eyes with an unyielding spirit that reminded one of a cat, was also a beauty with a crisp appearance and very short hairstyle who was the perpetrator of this reckless driving. That very short hair lady was also staring fixedly at Kousuke.

「A, aa~, he, hello? Are you two, injured?」

Kousuke was making a bit awkward expression from the stares of the two that was too straightforward while he tried to say such thing for the moment. Perhaps reacting to that, the cat eye side-tail girl was opening her mouth to say something but,

「Eh, wai-, again!?」

A fierce slipping sound that suddenly could be heard made Kousuke's cheeks convulsed, and he turned his gaze there. Ahead of his gaze, there was the scene of similar black cars, two, three of them drifting while rushing out from the street corner.

The woman with very short hair also seemed to notice that, she recovered her time that stopped from witnessing Kousuke's absurd movement. She immediately moved the steering wheel, stepped on the accelerator and rapidly took off right away. The cat eye side-tail girl passionately kissed 「Mugyuu-!?」the side glass due to the centrifugal force.

The black car boarded by two females seemed to, no, they were really running away from the black cars that came from behind, their car was driving dangerously once more while vanishing to the other side of the road. After that, the three black cars passed through in pursuit.

It was a scene that happened out of nowhere. In a hair's breadth, the couple and businessman that had escaped from the terrace into the café fearfully peaked outside, while Kousuke was drinking up his beverage with *zugo-———* sound.

「Oo~i, Endo. What happened?」

Actually, the call was still connected all this time, the voice of Hajime resounded from the smartphone.

Kousuke jumped down from the signboard and gently put down the glass that he had just drained on that signboard. His gaze was moving to the other side of the road where the cars were disappearing while he took out his smartphone, and then he responded to Hajime seriously.

「Nagumo, as expected, foreign countries are scaryyy.」

「……You, what are you saying?」

Hajime’s retort drifted lightly into the blowing wind and vanished completely.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Now then, about the custom (?) heroine attribute.

Blonde side-tail + Lab coat girl + unyielding cat-eyes + ○○ + ○○

Something will surely be entered into those ○○. Please use your imagination if you like.

By the way, the model for her is Akita Neru. Tda-style is goddess. (TN: Tda-style is a character model that is used at Miku Miku Dance, Vocaloid)

The next update is planned for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 200

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Wai-, It’s Misunderstanding! Misunderstanding I Told You-

Inside the room that was merely old rather than retro, orange light of a fluorescent lamp illuminated the place. The wall was wooden and looked thin, only the synthetic leather sofa with a fading coloration and the bed looked excessively big, but the sheets and curtains with the same color gave a vaguely worn out impression.

“As expected from a cheap hotel. It really gives the atmosphere of a hotel in a movie where the fugitive will take refuge.”

Even the floor creaked. Kousuke threw his body on the bed while was smiling wryly and speaking to himself a sentence that sounded like a flag. The springs of the ancient bed were making creaking sounds as though to protest to the one treating it roughly.

Because Kousuke had a need to stay for one night due to his plane’s schedule, he rented a hotel room like this. And why was he intentionally choosing this kind of dilapidated hotel when he had just received a considerable amount of request fee from Hajime, which someone with the social status of a

student wouldn’t be able to obtain normally? That was merely because of Kousuke’s poor person’s mentality.

Even if he stayed in a high-class hotel without any particular necessity just because he had a lot of money, Kousuke would definitely be unable to calm down, coupled with the gaudiness of the room. Staying in a capsule hotel……isn’t it strangely calming? Those were the words that Kousuke once said to his parents when they were going on a family trip.

The parents of Kousuke at that time were, as expected, a little bit solemn at their son’s sense that was somewhat too small as a person. At the very least he should be demanding for a business hotel or pension.

「But well, I at least splurged a little and rented the upper floor. This has nice scenery.」

The reason Kousuke picked this hotel was because this hotel had fifteen floors despite its oldness. The higher the floor, the more expensive the cost for just a smidgen, but after thoroughly worrying, Kousuke finally decided「A, around floor ten, this is a rare chance so it should be fine……」so that he could enjoy the scenery. If his classmates or his family knew that, then they would surely be looking at him with a lukewarm gaze.

When he opened the worn-out curtains, the lighting of the city was like stars that were spread on the ground; they were sparkling with glitters. It was quite a night scenery that he could be satisfied with, just like what he expected and hoped for.

「……Next time, let’s look at this with Rana for sure, yup.」

Kousuke spoke to himself once more. Inside his mind, the imagination of him doing romantic this and that with his

older rabbit ear lover were rushing about. ……If Juugo and Kentarou were at his side, they would surely give a retort that before things like a night scenery and so on, he should at least raise the hotel’s grade a little bit higher.

He was enjoying the night scenery for a while having a wild delusion inside his brain about rendezvousing with Rana. During that time he took out his smartphone and smiled cheerfully while looking at his photo with Rana that they took the last time the gate was opened to Tortus. He repeated this kind of things for several hours.

Kousuke headed toward the bathroom, thinking that he should take a shower soon and retire to bed.

The bathroom also had an antique structure as there was a shower nozzle that could be directly taken out off the wall with several handles below it. For the time being, he would first ascertain the knack of the old shower. When he rotated the handle which played a *kiko-kiko* sound, water gushed out rapidly. While saying「Naïve-, you think I’ll get my head drenched just like the cliché huh!」by himself futilely, he adjusted the handle *kiko-kiko* so that the warmth would be the optimum temperature.

He ascertained the warmth with his hand while whispering ‘This temperature is enough I guess’, it was at that time――

Noisy hustling, bustling, and fierce shaking came from the upper floor. The troubling thing was that dust fluttered down in sprinkles from the ceiling.

「Kehoh. What’s this, don’t make a racket in this kind of worn-out hotel you there. ……The ceiling wouldn’t be thin like the wall, right?」

He had finished confirming the thinness of the wall. He wanted to believe that this building wouldn’t go as far as having even its ceiling selling a fight right from the front toward the law regarding construction standard. Kousuke’s expression was turning slightly anxious while he was looking up at the ceiling that was energetically spraying down dust.

There was no way that the people in the upper floor were intensely making love, where the excessive intensity would cause the ceiling to come off and fall down, where Kousuke would face the couple――ain’t no way such thing would…… While Kousuke was having wild delusions that would make him red-faced if his acquaintance asked him about it, for some reason, a bad premonition was welling up inside his chest. He shook his head like a dog in order to shake off the dust raining down on his head.

Instantly, *pan-pan-pan* bursting sounds that he was familiar with struck Kousuke’s eardrum.

「E, ee? Wai-, just now was that gunshot? Isn’t that too intense for lovemaking!?」

Kousuke looked up at the ceiling again from being startled. Even during that time, the gunshot continued to sound without pause. No matter how he thought about it, the guest on the upper floor was having a fierce gunfight with someone else. Moreover, *papapapapa* from how the consecutive bursting sounds like that could be heard, one of the sides, or possibly both sides, were even coming there equipped with a machine gun type.

「I, I just witnessed a car chase in the afternoon, you know? Just how dangerous can a foreign country be, huh? Or else, is it Japan that is too peaceful!?」

Thinking that it would be unbearable if bullets pierced the ceiling and rained down at him, Kousuke made his body smaller while exiting the bathroom. And then, just to be sure, he should look at the situation of his own room’s floor whether it was safe or not, so he quietly opened the room toward the corridor. His face peeked out a bit, and he ran his gaze to the left and right of the corridor, but for now, it seemed that there was no one in the corridor.

Kousuke went『Who can stay longer than this in a hotel that has guys having a gunfight like that!』, he was raising a weird flag while deciding to start running away.

But, before he could do that, from the direction of the window, there was a flash that was too intense bursting out. It appeared that the guest upstairs was even using a flashbang. Right after that,

『Doctor Grant-, hold on! We are jumping!』

『We, we’ll really do it!? Ya, wait, wait I told youuuuuuu~~~』

Just when he heard the loud voice and screaming coming from the window, right after that, *pan-pan-pan* the window of Kousuke’s room had several holes opened in it and it cracked in spider web shape. In the next moment, *gashaaan-* the window glass was blown away inside along with that pulverization sound.

——Along with a woman in a black suit, and a blonde haired side tail girl that was being held by that woman.

『Are you injured, Doctor Grant?』

『Uu, I’m fine here Vanessa. But, my lifespan is shrinking.』

The tall woman wearing a black suit——an agent of the State Security Bureau Vanessa Paradis helped the blonde haired side tail girl wearing a lab coat——Emily Grant to stand up.

Emily was making a pale face while shaking her head around as Vanessa was giving that a glance while quickly replacing the magazine of the automatic gun she was holding with her gaze moving to the entrance.

「Let’s hurry Doctor Grant. We will be surrounded soon.」

「Yes, I understand. Even so, I’m glad that *there is no one* in the room below.」

「Yes. Thinking of their method, they will be willing to involve even civilians after all……」

Both of them were jumping down with a comparatively reckless method of using bed sheets as an extempore rope to leap down from the upper floor to a lower floor, but they stroke their chest in a relieved sigh that *there was no one* in that lower floor room.

Whether it was with the car chase this afternoon and also the attack before that, the pursuer of Emily and Vanessa was gradually growing to not choose their method carefully anymore. If there was a civilian not in a public place but in an inconspicuous place like this room of a dilapidated hotel, those guys would undoubtedly remove that person without any second thought.

(……No, well, this happens every time, so it’s not like I’m bothered. But I entered your field of vision right in front of you here, and it’s not like I’m putting on invisibility or anything you know?)

The sudden situation caused a certain someone with thin shadow somewhere who stiffened while half opening the door’s room to slip out grumble while his cheeks were convulsing. And then, he thought that instead, it was better like this that he wasn’t noticed by this two females who were intensely smelling of troublesome thing, perhaps he ought to plan to flee right away without delay.

However, Kousuke’s luggage——although there was nothing really valuable in it, he couldn’t leave behind his passport and wallet that were in there.

Besides,

(……These two, aren’t they the two at the car chase this afternoon?)

Yes, Kousuke remembered. These two were the females who witnessed his beautiful midair sandwich catch and ginger ale catch, and then they exposed the silliness of getting dazed with mouths wide open regardless that they were in the middle of a car chase.

They gave off an intense smell of trouble as one of them was obviously not a person with a respectable position; while the other one, even though she was around the same age as Kousuke, she was wearing a worn-out lab coat. But even so, for some reason, Kousuke was paying attention to these two who were in a desperate situation.

That was perhaps because he had seen the figure of these two feeling relieved that no unrelated person was getting dragged into their situation even while they were confronting an outrageous situation like a gunfight in an intense action movie.

(But, I won’t be moved. Even though this is a coincidence that looks like there is even some kind of compelling force working in it, but a coincidence is a coincidence. These two look like they are good people, and they are beautiful, they are beautiful! But I who is a riajuu and have Rana as a lover won’t be swayed! I will also have a summer cram school short course the day after tomorrow. And so, I’m going home!)

Kousuke proclaimed this inside his heart while using stealthy footsteps, stealthy footsteps, sloo~wly and quii~etly he returned inside the room. It wasn’t like he had a callous sense of value which would cast away everything unrelated to him like Hajime when he was on Tortus.

However, Kousuke who was on Earth was a man of valor at a supernatural level who could annihilate the main base of a secret society that possessed a history of several hundred years by his lonesome. Someone who possessed such power could do almost anything. And then, in this world, everywhere there were troubled people asking for help, and someone like Kousuke who was traveling around here and there would witness that to a “frequent” degree whether he wanted to or not.

If he moved just because of his emotions to all of those with the only reason being “because they are in trouble”, then there wouldn’t be an end to it. Something like pursuing his own dream would become secondary or tertiary.

And above all, Kousuke also wasn’t someone like Hajime who possessed the strength to the degree that was almost almighty. In addition, he didn’t happen to have a sense of value of relying upon others just for his own objective that would let him say□Something that can make me almighty□ and request an artifact from Hajime.

There were several times until now where he had had a bad aftertaste from turning a blind eye or feeling ashamed due to his action, but, even so, what was the thing that ought to be prioritized, and where he should draw the line……the importance of those had been carved into his heart by his days in the other world, the way of the demon king that guided them, and the time that he spent with Rana and the family of the Hauria.

Like that, Kousuke decided not to get involved with Emily and Vanessa. Right at that time, the two females were being on guard while moving toward the entrance――in other words, toward Kousuke’s direction, the two sides passed each other, and it was at that time, a situation arose as though to ridicule that decision of Kousuke.

「VANESSAAAAA-!!!」

「-!?」

An angry voice was thrown toward Vanessa. The origin of that voice was the window with nice ventilation that Vanessa and Emily had just jumped through. Looking in that direction, there was a man who was wrapping his hand with a bed sheet as a rope replacement similarly to Vanessa, using centrifugal force to leap into the room.

Vanessa reflexively aimed her gun to shot at the man, but the gun muzzle of the handgun that the man’s other hand was holding was aimed not at herself but toward Emily. Seeing that, Vanessa immediately jumped and pushed Emily down.

The man grinned widely at that reaction of Vanessa as in the end he didn’t even pull the trigger and rushed into the room agilely. With a forward roll, he killed his momentum while his

gun was thrust out with a flowing motion right toward Vanessa who had just lifted her face.

「……Tsk. So you are faster even in this situation. As always, it's *only* your technique that is first class.」

The man dropped his gaze toward his own chest along with a click of his tongue. There he found Vanessa's gun silently propped.

「That word "only" is saying too much, Kimberly. I'm also planning on having the sincerity to not betray my comrade unlike you.」

「Hah. That is not called "sincerity". That's called "naivety". Just like how you covered that missy just now even while you understood that I wouldn't shot.」

The man called Kimberly lambasted Vanessa with a tone that sounded as though spit would spittle out. Brown short hair and a toned body that was obvious even behind the suit he wore. Eyes that looked like a bird of prey and lips with their corner raised cynically. Looking at it objectively, he had a well-ordered feature of a wild-type that could even pass off as an actor.

Judging from their way of speaking, it was obvious that Vanessa and Kimberly knew each other, no, that they were coworkers. At the same time, Kimberly, who seemed to be the pursuer of Emily and Vanessa, could also be seen to have a turbulent background of having betrayed Vanessa.

(Waiiit! What the hell, things keep happening one after another here! Is this a movie-, am I in the middle of an action movie that excited all of America, huh-! Are you two aiming for this scene where you point a gun at each other while cracking jokes, huh! Aren't you two cool, huh!)

Vanessa and Kimberly both slowly stood up while aiming their guns at each other. Right around the middle of them was a man with a thin shadow who was furiously making a retort even though he didn’t say it out loud. He should be inside their field of vision normally but……

「Give up already Vanessa. Hand over the doctor. You two, come with me. You can get a lot of money that will still have change left even if you used it for playing your whole life, you know? That’s far better than eating a lead bullet in this kind of place, right?」

「Did you kill everyone on the team for that kind of reason? Just because of money? There is no way I’ll be swayed by that kind of vulgar reason. I’ll accomplish my duty. I won’t let you lay a hand on the doctor.」

Kimberly clicked his tongue once again in irritation. Behind Vanessa, Emily, whose face was stiffened in nervousness, was directing her gaze at Vanessa with a face that looked like she wanted to cry.

「Uhah, this woman is so cool……. If this is a movie filming, then you must be the protagonist for sure, yep.」

Someone somewhere spontaneously let out his impression.

Kimberly glanced at Emily while continuing his words with a mocking tone.

「Duty is it? Hah, do you seriously think that something like that is still valid?」

「……What do you mean?」

「Who knows? Just what does that mean I wonder? Won’t you get it if you return to headquarters?」

「Don’t tell me……」

Vanessa, whose expression was scarce in variation even after these chain of events, opened her eyes slightly wider at this point. The words of Kimberly gave light to the possibility that perhaps they were already falling into a hopeless and isolated situation. Even though it was already hopeless to break through the current situation, if she lost her backing, then would be the same as being placed in a check.

Were Kimberly’s words the truth? Who was her ally and who was her enemy? Who could she believe?

In contrast with Vanessa’s scarce expression, inside she was wracking her brain. It was at that time that sounds of footsteps running down the corridor reverberated like a time limit ticking down. While Kimberly was obstructing them here, the other pursuers were using the stairs to come here.

「tsu」

「This is the end, Vanessa. I understand you know? Normally, you wouldn’t follow along with this kind of pointless task and would try to suppress me swiftly. You didn’t do that because you are injured somewhere, aren’t you? My surprise attack at the research lab——seems like you didn’t manage to deal with that completely, huh. Your driving this afternoon too, you were continuously making mistakes that are unlike you.」

Kimberly quickly ran his gaze all over Vanessa’s body, then he said「Is it your side?」while laughing. Vanessa didn’t show any reaction, but in exchange, Emily’s sorrowful expression completely exposed the truth in Kimberly’s words.

「Aa, then that accident this afternoon, so that wasn’t simply because she is unskillful in driving, huh.」

Inside that strained situation, a certain someone with a thin shadow, which was sneakily and quietly collecting his luggage, was whispering in a small voice. As expected, surely someone would noti……

「Even so, you aren’t pulling the trigger, is that because you don’t think that you will win for sure even against the wounded me?」

「……I wish you’d say that I’m careful instead. There is no need for me to intentionally brave more danger even though it will be checkmate already soon.」

「No, that attitude of yours isn’t what is called “careful”, but “cowardice”.」

Perhaps that was her payback for before. Kimberly ate a splendid word counter and narrowed his eyes looking daunting. 「That’s really an excellent payback. You’re doing great, do it more! Get humiliated, you’re handsome!」Such a small voice that cheered Vanessa and cursed Kimberly resounded, but the voice was normally passing into the right ear and came out the left ear unnoticed.

Right after that, six armed men rushed into the room with noisy footsteps. Vanessa frowned, and Emily turned pale while huddling close to Vanessa. Kimberly’s expression became completely filled with joy, and the young man with the thin shadow had shouldered his baggage unnoticed while looking back from nearby the door with an awkward expression.

「Now then, this is the end of the road of your meaningless escape drama. Sorry, but I won’t ask you already whether

you will join me or not. I’ll kill you here and take away the missy. You spat on your last chance just now. You stupid woman.」

「Vanessaa!」

「tsu, Doctor-」

When Kimberly signaled with his eyes, a man with a solid build wearing a leather jacket caught Emily’s arm and tore her away from Vanessa. Vanessa gritted her teeth and then took a deep breath as though resolving herself.

「Doctor Grant, my apologies. It seems that I cannot protect you until the end. But, that doesn’t mean I have run out of cards. Please don’t give up.」

Saying that she smiled faintly while taking off her gaze completely off Kimberly as she defenselessly turned around toward Emily. She casually slid out something from her pocket while――

「Do you think, how many times have I teamed up with you?」

「tsk, guh」

Instantly a gunshot echoed, at the same time Kimberly’s kick stabbed onto Vanessa’s flank. The gunshot came from Vanessa. She pretended to avert her attention toward Emily while firing at Kimberly; then she tried to use her last flashbang.

But, Kimberly appeared to have predicted that as he brushed off Vanessa’s gun with his gun that he pointed at her and simultaneously he launched a fierce kick at her flank.

Vanessa fell on her knee due to the intense pain, and a red stain seeped out on her flank. At her side *clonk* a small flashbang with its pin still attached rolled. Vanessa was drenched in sweat, but even so, she tried to aim her gun muzzle toward Kimberly but her arm was kicked once again, and her arm let go of the gun.

And then, Kimberly's gun muzzle pushed heavily on Vanessa's forehead as though to show that it was checkmate for sure this time.

「I got no carelessness and openings. That's my respect to you.」

「……」

Kimberly looked down at Vanessa with a gaze that contained no more emotion. Emily was being pinioned from behind while desperately raising her voice to stop him, but Kimberly didn't even spare a glance at her. His unwavering gaze that informed her of the checkmate glared at Vanessa's long slit eyes that reflected no despair which also glared back at him.

In a moment, Kimberly narrowed his eyes in displeasure, and his finger on the trigger tightened. There was no more margin between the on and off of the trigger. With a click, the internal mechanism's operating sound rang.

「Stooop! Vanessa! Run away-!」

Emily's scream reverberated. 'No matter what happens', the woman who had said that to her and protected her just as those words meant, was going to have her head blown up in front of her eyes. Even though she had already had a lot of her important people die, fate was still going to expose another tragedy in front of her eyes again. Emily's heart creaked.

「See ya, Vanessa.」

「Fall to hell, ugly man.」

A betrayer, and a knight of a girl, they exchanged the last words.

Someone, anyone is fine. Anyone is fine. She is expressionless, blunt, but this really good natured and sincere woman, please save her. Just like how this person saved me, please save her-!

Emily screamed. She wished for salvation that her wish would reach a miracle, that surely should exist somewhere in this world.

「Someone-, save――――!!」

「Aaa, geez-. Come on, don’t say something like that!」

Instantly, a single gunshot echoed. It was the small embodiment of death that scattered human’s life easily, however, the room wasn’t dyed red.

Sprinkles of woodchips fell from the ceiling.

「He?」

「Ha?」

「Wha, what is……」

Vanessa leaked out a stupid voice that was unlike the clever beauty that she was, Kimberly raised an astonished voice that was unable to understand the situation, and Emily unconsciously slipped out a question. The man who was restraining Emily, and the other men too, they were

dumbfounded with their eyes turned into dots at the strangeness that suddenly happened inside this room.

「Haah, I did it. But, a man, or rather a human that doesn't react in this situation, they are just no good huh.」

「tsu, yo, you-. Just where in the world, did you come from――」

Kimberly stepped back. But he couldn't step back further than that. The reason was that while everyone in that room was focusing their attention, he――Kousuke suddenly appeared and grasped the arm that was holding the gun and moved it to aim at the ceiling.

Just where in the world did you come from, those words that expressed the agitation of Kimberly caused Kousuke to smile wryly.

「From where you ask? This place is my room. I was here right from the start. Can you spare me from using another person's room for a Hollywood scene as you please?」

「Chih, so you hid somewhere-」

Kimberly tried to shake off Kousuke's hand, but even though he had the appearance of a Japanese boy who wasn't even a young man yet, the trained arm of Kimberly felt like it was being constricted tightly by a vise that he couldn't move even for a bit.

The other men who returned to their senses with a 'hah' aimed their gun at Kousuke in panic, but at that time, Kousuke smoothly moved behind Kimberly and turned him into a shield. With that, the men hesitated to pull their trigger.

Using that opening, Kousuke twisted Kimberly’s wrist and restrained his hand to the back. Kimberly grimaced from the pain at his wrist while raising his voice to ask the identity of this intruder.

「You-, who are you! Your movement just now……you aren’t a civilian, huh!?」

「No no, I am a normal student that you can find anywhere――」

Kousuke took Kimberly hostage for the time being while his gaze urged Vanessa to take Emily and escape quickly.

However, the Vanessa in question, right after she received Kousuke’s gaze, her expressionless face crumbled for some reason to be replaced with relieve. And then, she cut off Kousuke’s words and said something like this.

「Fuh. So it seems you made it in time didn’t you, Mr. K.」

Her way of speaking was as though she knew from the start that support would arrive. Now that she mentioned it, just now she said something like she still hadn’t run out of card yet, however, there was no way she was referring to Kousuke. Kousuke being here was a coincidence, there should be no way for her to recognize Kousuke’s existence, in various meanings.

For some reason, there was this unpleasant coincidence where she called him with just his initial even though it was the correct one……

「Eh? No no, you are absolutely mistaking――」

「What-!? Mr. K, you said!? You are that person!?」

Kousuke’s words were cut off once more by Kimberly who was shocked and got taken aback for some reason.

「Wait a second! You guys are absolutely misunderstanding here! Indeed, my initial is K but――」

「Just as I thought, you are really Mr. K!? It’s no wonder that I got taken by surprise……. This way of killing your presence, I have never seen something like this before. Shit-, Vanessa. I detected that you were making contact somewhere while you were fleeing this afternoon, but who’d ever thought that you were bringing in support like this man-」

Unstoppable misunderstanding. Kousuke’s words were easily treated like passing wind similar to how thin his presence was. Inside his heart he went「Or rather, just who is this Mr. K!?」, screaming at the situation that was showing him with this unexpected development.

「The freelance hitman that won’t show his figure no matter what……. He will accept a hit for anyone depending on the reward. Honestly, I hesitated until the end whether to request assistance or not from someone that has been blacklisted by the security bureau. But, to protect Doctor Grant, this is unavoidable. ……Although, I never thought that Mr. K is a Japanese and he is someone this young, it shocked me.」

Kousuke thought. Thank you for the explanation.

It appeared this Mr. K was a hitman that was put on the blacklist of the government.

For Vanessa who wouldn’t desert Emily no matter what, this was a really difficult situation that she would even rely on this option although it pained her. Most likely she was thinking that this person who would kill anyone depending

on the reward, someone who absolutely wouldn’t betray his client, and would accomplish the request without fail, would be someone that was relatively easier to request from compared to other characters that were put on the blacklist.

「Oi, notice already the inconsistency inside your own words. You said that this Mr. K wouldn’t show his figure, but here he is showing himself normally see. A Japanese this young, this kind of Japanese youngster, I don’t know from which organization he came from, but there is no way he is a hit man that is put on the black――」

「I, I remember! He, at the café that Vanessa crashed into this afternoon, he is the person who caught sandwiches and a drink in midair!」

「From this afternoon, you say? Shit, so even the escape route was predicted, and you were observing us! We were planning to pursue, but actually, we are the one that was being pursued here huh.」

The misunderstanding was accelerating. Emily-chan, what an exquisite interruption in unbelievable timing. Kimberly gritted his teeth, and Kousuke’s cheeks were grandly convulsing.

「Excuse me; I beg you, please listen to my sto――」

「Kimberly. I requested Mr. K to murder the attackers who come in the middle of Doctor Grant’s protection. You understand what the meaning of that, don’t you? Although he is a young hitman that rose to prominence in this two, three years, it’s already proven that his skill is the real deal. In front of this cruel and heartless person, I cannot recommend you to do anything rash.」

Kousuke was a cruel and heartless young hitman……. Something shiny was starting to gather faintly at the corner of Kousuke’s eyes. The hand that was restraining Kimberly was shaking as though expressing the inside of his heart.

Seeing that, the armed men went「Kuh, this is bad. That guy, he is desperately holding back his urge to kill」etc., they were making an expression that shuddered with fear and whispered to each other. Kimberly too, the shaking that he felt was starting to make him flustered while saying「Kuh, what a crazy guy-」.

「Vanessa. Just what is different between you and me? You are insane, using this kind of a fiend for the sake of your objective. In the end, you are going to do anything if it’s for your objective, aren’t you?」

「Wai-, calling me fiend is rud――」

「Indeed perhaps that is so. But, I plan to discern at least the line that shouldn’t be crossed. If he is really a fiend in the true meaning, and he directed that killing intent to Doctor Grant or people who are not related at all, at that time I’ll stake my life to stop him.」

「Listen here, can you stop so naturally calling me a fiend, a fiend like――」

「Don’t lump Vanessa together with someone like you! Someone like you, after all, is just a wretched petty scoundrel whose eyes are blinded by money! That devilish homicide -san over there is still better than you!」

「Oy you, I’m going to cry here. Do you think that if you add “-san” it’s okay to call other people devilish homici――」

「Hmph, those are words of a kid who doesn’t know the value of money. But, do you forget? The one who created that devil medicine is no other than you missy. If you are talking about fiends, then it’s you yourself who――」

Beautifully ignoring a certain someone somewhere. Kimberly’s words became an unseen blade that hurt Emily. Emily’s expression distorted in pain and guilt and her hand unconsciously gripped on her chest……but, at that time, suddenly Kimberly’s words stopped and in exchange a scream of「Ouchh-」was raised.

Finally, everyone noticed with that scream, the figure of Kousuke behind Kimberly with his eyes getting teary while his hand was carrying a glittery object that he was holding before anyone noticed.

「I don’t know the circumstances of you all? I am an outsider. That’s why, I was thinking to let these two escape without harming both sides with my all, yet for some reason, I got normally left behind? No, it’s not like I’m bothered though. I am used to it. I am not bothered at all. I’m totally fine. But, because I think that communication is important, I say that ignoring someone is no good, yep.」

「Mr, Mr. K?」

「tsu, calm down Mr. K. We didn’t mean to make light of――」

Somehow feeling the atmosphere that seemed to be dangerous, Vanessa spoke with halted words while Kimberly was spinning his words with cold sweat trickling down his body. The gaze of these two were looking in the same direction as Emily and the armed men. All of their attention was poured toward the thing that was being carried by Kousuke while he was trembling all over as though to display the emotion inside his heart.

Amidst the running nervousness, the lips of Kousuke who finally obtained everyone’s attention burst out in a smile looking just a smidgen happy. Seeing that, Kimberly and the others showed a faint relieved express——

「And so, eat this-! The insane lethal weapon that produced fire ash——Ashtray Assault!」

「What do you mean ‘and so’, wai-, wait a-——goheeh!?」

The sparkling object——the excessively heavy glass ashtray that for some reason was put inside the room even though this was a worn out hotel was swung down by Kousuke whose expression was still smiling broadly toward Kimberly’s head.

gochin- Such a painful sound echoed, at the same time stars floated in front of Kimberly’s eyes. Like that Kimberly slumped down hard to the floor powerlessly. Seeing how the white of his eyes were fully exposed, it seemed that everyone’s beloved lethal weapon of Tuesday had properly accomplished its role. (TN: The Tuesday is some kind of wordplay I think. Tuesday in Japan is written with the kanji of fire, maybe that’s why it was related with ashtray here.)

The gazes of the armed men were lured toward Kimberly, right after that, they re-aimed their gun nuzzle with the intention of turning the intruder who had lost his shield into Swiss cheese for sure this time.

But, a small object lightly danced at the height of their gaze.

「You two-, we are running away now!」

The moment Kousuke yelled that the object midair exploded with a flash. An intense flash that burned the retina trampled the inside of the room. Yes, that was the brightness

of the flashbang grenade. The thing which Kousuke nonchalantly picked up was tossed at the same time as when he gave a blow to Kimberly.

The armed men screamed「Not again-」while covering their eyes. During that time *goin-* a painful sounding sound and 「buberah」a short scream became audible once more. Kousuke's Tuesday lethal weapon sent the men who were nearby Emily flying.

「Mr. K! Take Doctor Grant-」

「Yes yes, I know. Also, don't call me Mr. K.」

「Fuwah, wh, who!? Mr. K!?」

「……」

While the light was trampling the inside of the room, it seemed Emily was flinching from having her eyesight stolen because her eyes got done in by the flashbang that was thrown without any advance arrangement this time. She made her body as small as possible by squatting with both of her hands holding her head. Somehow it was a defensive posture that made anyone looking at her feel a hint of charm without reason.

Kousuke cursed while carrying her on his shoulder. The truth was he yelled at them with a plan of having the two protect their eyes from the flash just like they had done the first time; using that opening he would quickly mask their whereabouts, but it seemed that his plan couldn't proceed that well.

Vanessa also had her eyesight robbed, but it appeared that she had memorized the position of all the people inside the room and their distances from her accurately using the

measurement of the number of her steps. That she was able to move even while having her eyesight crushed quickly, it was to be expected from her.

The armed men, even while being unable to see, immediately aimed their guns toward the direction of the voice, but there would be no meaning if they didn’t capture Emily alive. Therefore they could only move about in confusion without pulling their triggers. Seeing how they were unable to immediately chase these two to this room from the upper floor like Kimberly, and how their eyesight was easily crushed for the second time like this, it appeared that they weren’t at the level where they could introduce themselves as agents.

「Go outside. There is a car at the street one block from here.」

「Roger. Or rather, you can run really well, huh. Aren’t you still unable to see?」

「E, excuse me, M, Mr. K-. Can you, stop your shoulder-, from bumping my stomaaach!? M, mhy schomach is-, heguh」

「I can see a little, and I have grasped the approximate number of steps. Please guide me in the case that I make a mistake.」

「Got it.」

「Tha, that, that’s why-, my schomach is-, heguu. Before, I missed, going to the toileeet-. I’m in a bad situation hereee.」

It seemed that Emily’s stomach was in a pinch, but in the case they encountered the enemy, Vanessa who wasn’t carrying a gun couldn’t really be counted as battle strength nor did Kousuke want to, so there was a need for him to keep

one of his hands empty. And so, he couldn’t carry Emily on his back when she could slip off anytime or carry her in his arms which would make both his hands full.

That was why, even though Emily who was attacked just on the verge of her going to the toilet now had her bladder screaming, there was no way he could listen to her request. In no way at all was it because his words were ignored or Emily brought up the subject of him at the café this afternoon with miraculous timing that he was doing this for meager revenge. If he said it was not then it was not.

「Muh, just as I thought there are some more. Eat this-, sure kill, Tuesday’s unpredictable attaaack!」

While Emily-chan was in the middle of a desperate battle which concerned the protection of her dignity, Kousuke threw the lethal weapon of Tuesday toward the armed man that appeared from the door that connected to the stairwell. The Tues——ashtray that soared while displaying a splendid rotation like a boomerang splendidly made a clean hit on the nose of the man who had just peeked his face out.

docha- The ashtray fell beside the man who was collapsing in a heap with blood spurting out grandly from his nose. The ashtray was already dyed red from absorbing the blood of several people. It was worrying whether that would cause it to become like a cursed katana or rather a cursed ashtray.

Vanessa casually stepped on the crotch of the collapsed man and approached the staircase. For an instant, Kousuke thought of giving a warning toward the woman whose eyesight was declining, but Vanessa was descending down the stair with a lightness that made him doubt whether she was really unable to see.

□M, Mr. K? I vaguely guessed it. I’m begging you here; please let me do――□

□I’m not Mr. K.□

□Do, don’t! The staircase is no good I told youuu! I beg younyaaAAAAAAAAA-□

Kousuke ran down the stairs by skipping steps. That movement was truly nimble, chasing Vanessa from behind gallantly as though he was performing dance steps. It must be remembered that he was rushing like this only to match Vanessa’s pace, he had no ulterior motive, not in the least.

Even though hearing Emily-chan’s sorrowful voice like □Stoooop-~□, or□Fo, forgive me alreadyyyy~□, or□My schomach, stop tapping thereeee~□, or□It’s comiiiing, it’s coming alreadyyyyy-□, or□Mr. Kee, I’ll kill you after thiiiiiis□, or□Ah, that’s a lie, I’m not seriouuuss! I’m sorryyyyy-□caused his heart to flutter for a bit, but he had no ulterior motive at all, and that was that!

□Doctor Grant, please lower your voice a little. Perhaps there is still enemy around.□

□Tha, that’s what you are saying, in this kind of situation!?□

□It’s okay. The situation is like this so……there is nothing to be ashamed of at all.□

□Right now, I understand! I have no ally at all hereeee~~~□

Emily-chan’s sorrowful voice knew no end. This was concerning the dignity of a girl. Although right now was an emergency situation, but in a sense, this was a critical moment for the inexperienced Emily.

As expected, even for Kousuke it would be unbearable if Emily really did that while she was still on his shoulder, so he was thinking of changing the posture into carrying her under his arm soon. Kousuke was very much a normal person. Although Emily was a beautiful girl, he didn’t happen to have a fetish of feeling happy if she was *peep*-ing on him at all.

However, regardless of Kousuke having an ulterior motive or not, that decision of his seemed to be just a bit late.

「Hm? Wait a second lab coat miss? Can you release me? I’ll carry you under my arm now okay.」

「I, impossible……if I move……it will come out.」

「Wait wait wait, there is no shaking anymore, right? I’m properly descending the staircase softly here.」

「Impossible……I, I’m sorry, father, mother……Emily is……a bad daughter.」

Emily was clinging onto Kousuke tiiiiiightly while staying unmoving without even a twitch. Seeing it from Kousuke’s viewpoint, her eyes were empty while her lips were making a dry smile.

Emily who was suddenly whispering repentance to her parents caused Kousuke to make a flustered expression that said「Shit, I overdid it!?」. He had even used his skill so that no vibration was transmitted to Emily in the middle, but it seemed that Emily had been comparatively in her limit from the beginning.

「Do, do your best lab coat miss! Don’t give up-, if you give up, that will be the end of your dignity!」

「……(shiver shiver)」

「You cannot even speak anymore!? Wait the person in the suit over there! This child is seriously at her limit here! Stop for a bit! Let’s stop at the corner over――」

「There is no time for that. Mr. K. If you are a man, then please shut up and accept it like one.」

「You, what are you saying!? Eei, lab coat miss! I’ll put you down right now so――」

「――a」

「Wai――」

Escape drama that happened late at night in a worn-out hotel.

Kousuke and the others who splendidly escaped were pursued by Kimberly and others who regained their consciousness.

……while following the water trail that stood out with its pungent smell.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Now then, this is a quiz about the heroine attribute from previously, you already know the correct answer, right?

The correct answer is,

Blonde side-tail + Lab coat girl + unyielding cat eyes + peeing + charisma guard (however defense power is zero) (TN: Search □□□□□□□ at google to look at the image. The term came from a fighting game of Touhou where the guard pose of Remilia is called as charisma guard.)

Like that. How was it? Was it just as you imagined?

I'll be happy if you readers have fun.

Now then, a bit of a report, the third volume was released.

This too is thanks to the people who kindly picked up the book (probably it's especially with the power of the reader from Narou-san).

'The extra story is terrible (lol)', that is something that I and others are recognizing, but if you readers can have fun with it then it will make me happy.

Please take care of me from here on too.

The next update is planned for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 201

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

You, Well Then Ota—

Part 1

“I’ll kill you, Mr. K, kill. What virtuoso hitman. Don’t make light of researcher? I’ll absolutely, kill you dead.”

With the occasional lamp in the street and the light of the car coming from the opposite lane as the only sources of light, from the back seat of the quiet car interior, words that sounded like a curse were spun in whispers.

Vanessa, who was driving, was sending her glances at the rearview mirror repeatedly while looking alternately at the figure of Emily who made herself tiny in the back seat by holding her knees together, her eyes looking like dead fish’s with her mouth continuously spouting out resentment and bitterness, and the figure of Kousuke beside Emily, drenched in cold sweat while taking as much distance as possible from her.

Looking at Kousuke’s coat, that was placed at his feet and the window that was opened regardless of the cold air flowing into the car, as though to disperse some smell from inside the car, it could be understood that the cause of this situation should be rather left unsaid.

The gaze of Kousuke and Vanessa met through the rearview mirror. Kousuke was shaking his head while trembling with teary eyes; his gaze was directed toward Vanessa as though seeking help.

Vanessa quietly averted her gaze. *gon-* From behind, there was a sound echoing that sounded like a head knocking into

the glass window.

(……Nevertheless, Mr. K. He is, really……a mysterious person isn’t he.)

While feeling the gaze from the back seat that was sending an SOS signal stabbing her cheek, Vanessa talked to herself like that inside her heart.

——Mr. K

He was a hitman with an unknown history and appearance that appeared around two years ago, assassinating big shots with strict security one after another. It seemed that he wasn’t attached to any organization; if someone made a request to him using the specified method, then he would carry out any kind of murder no matter how difficult it was, depending on the amount of the reward.

Even the security bureau that Vanessa belonged to put him on a blacklist as a dangerous person starting around one year ago. His skill in killing was without question, but in addition, even when the state’s intelligence agency investigated him the information grasped was always dummy information. Full-scale investigations had been started since half a year ago and were still continuing now, but his true identity still hadn’t come to light. It was enough to comprehend how dangerous this person was just from that fact.

However, while Mr. K was in possession of that much skill, even when his description was analyzed and compared to all the people registered in the existing blacklist, there was not even a single person who could be thought of as him there. The intelligence department was now putting their attention on Mr. K, considering him to be a wholly big rookie.

By the way, the national security bureau possessed the right to investigate and the right to arrest in a wide area regarding a serious crime that concerned the state’s security; furthermore, the national intelligence department, which was an agency that carried out things like the protection of important personal, was literally a secret service. Each department was further divided into subdivisions, but let’s omit that for now.

For a time, Vanessa joined an investigation team that investigated an assassination case that was caused by this Mr. K. The modus operandi of the murder was exceedingly simple, and traces of him playing around in his work was nonexistent, two bullets to the vitals killing the target with accurate shots. He left no message that seemed like a killer who took delight in murder or made any declaration of his crime. And then, after he accepted a request and agreed to it, no matter how difficult it was, or even when the contract detail was mistaken and the difficulty level jumped up, he would never stop until he succeeded. His professional policy could be seen from that.

Mr. K was undoubtedly an atrocious killer. However, no matter how much of a coldhearted and inhuman person he was, he was a professional who would comply only with his contract no matter what happened.

She was betrayed by Kimberly, her comrades were annihilated, and before she was able to link up with reinforcements from headquarters, continuous attacks came without pause from the enemy that had found her. She was forced to flee, unable to break out from the isolated and helpless situation. In order to protect Emily in such a situation, there was a need to spend a trump card even for just one more moment.

Permitting murder in the process of guarding——it was a choice that Vanessa made with bitterness. When this case was over, disciplinary action would surely await her.

In the first place, she didn’t know whether her request would reach Mr. K, or even if it reached him, would he accept it and be within the range where he would be able to link up with them immediately. Would he who was hiding his true identity respond to the contract? By that point in time, this choice of hers was already a gamble.

After all, the content of her request was a guard mission. Naturally, in such a mission the protector had to be nearby the protection target, and that meant that Mr. K would inevitably need to expose his true identity. Mr. K was also known to be an expert in disguise, but it was still a risk nevertheless for him to expose himself in the open.

To say nothing of how if Mr. K investigated for even a little bit, then for him who was strong in the information war he would surely notice that the client was a person related with the government right away.

Therefore, Vanessa made contact under the faint hope of luring Mr. K somehow with the reward amount, but unexpectedly the reply from Mr. K was “I accept.” Vanessa was suspicious, but Mr. K demanded a large amount of money and explained that his protection would be done fundamentally while hiding, so Vanessa accepted it for the time being and tied a contract with him.

(Yet despite so, he exposed his figure in that place. I never even imagined that he is Japanese of the age that can still be considered a teenager though……. Is he in disguise? Still, I cannot spot any disguise even from this range that face

looks like his natural face……. If that is his natural face, then, just what in the world is he thinking about?)

It was difficult to guard someone indoors from a distance. There was no way someone could protect someone indoors from outside using a sniping method and the like. Mr. K should have understood that from the start. That was why Vanessa thought that maybe she was just deceived by Mr. K and made the preparation and advance arrangement with Emily about using a flashbang and jumped to the room downstairs.

Inside her heart she thought that her profiling of Mr. K was mistaken, it was possible that he was a devilish homicide who was just greedy for money. Vanessa didn't discard the possibility that Mr. K might bare his fangs on them.

(Even now, looking at his personality there is the possibility that he is in disguise……)

When Vanessa glanced once more at the rearview mirror, Kousuke's expression was visibly getting brighter in a flash, as though it was saying「Finally you look here!」. And then, he was sending eye signals to Vanessa while sending brief glances at Emily.

……A virtuoso hitman who was greatly perplexed against a single girl and looking for help desperately.

(I don't understand……)

From the back seat a small voice of「Oy you, just now, your eyes met me, right? Why are you averting your eyes!」was calling at her. The Mr. K that she had imagined before, and the figure of the teenage Japanese male who was whispering 「Heey, wait-. Don't ignore me. ……Don't tell me, even though we are riding the same car I'm already out of your

awareness……?」with teary eyes, those two images couldn't be connected inside Vanessa no matter how long she pondered about it.

「Excuse me, Mr. K.」

「! I'm not Mr. K but, what?」

Seeing Kousuke who leaned his body forward, looking a bit happy when he was addressed, Vanessa once again made the request that she had already made and rejected just now.

「My apologies, but can I ask you to replace me and drive the car? As expected, it has become a bit hard for me.」

「Eh? No, I told you already just now, but I cannot drive, I have never even drive until now. I haven't taken my driver's license test yet. Or rather, even if I have taken the license test in Japan, is it okay for me to drive a car in a foreign country?」

「……You really have never driven a car before?」

「Never. I have never even driven a scooter. That's why it's impossible. Sorry to make you drive while you're injured but……」

「No, it's not like there is any problem with my consciousness, and I was also able to stop the bleeding.」

After they escaped from the worn-out hotel, Vanessa and the others arrived at their car. At that time, Vanessa was injured, although it wasn't a big problem, in preparation for pursuers, she asked Kousuke to drive, but at that time he refused with the same reason as now.

At first, Vanessa thought that he was joking or he was keeping himself free in case of battle, but when she saw Kousuke frowning and even now looking apologetic, she came to think that it was the truth that he really couldn’t drive.

Mr. K who carried out assassinations of important people not just in Britain, but all over the world, there was no way he was unable to drive a car but……

(Or rather, why is he still obstinately denying that he is Mr. K even in this situation……. By some chance, is he thinking that he can hide his true identity like that? No no, no way that’s true……)

Inside Vanessa, Mr. K was increasingly turning into a stupid person.

For just a little bit, a thought that said『Perhaps, he is really not Mr. K?』just like Kousuke told her floated inside her mind, but that terrific concealment to the degree that no one noticed him, his experienced aura that didn’t flinch even when a gun was pointed at him, and then his skill that enabled them to escape without firing a single shot while instead using only the hotel’s ashtray……no matter how she looked, it was unthinkable that this person could possibly be an “ordinary person”.

Therefore, inside Vanessa, her impressions of Kousuke couldn’t mesh at all into a complete picture, and her evaluation of him was going in the direction of “mysterious” or “bizarre”.

There was no way for Vanessa to think even in her wildest imagination that the concealment ability was the sorrowful ability that he possessed from birth, or that there was a person close to him that fired a railgun, so he was used to

guns. Also, it wasn’t that Kousuke didn’t fire a gun, but he simply didn’t have a gun, and he couldn’t fire a gun or anything. As expected, Vanessa wouldn’t even think of such a possibility……

Mr. K was a hitman. Kousuke was certainly a virtuoso hitman, but he wasn’t Mr. K. He was unable to do the feats that could be done ordinarily by *Earth’s* hitmen. But, he had plenty of experience when it came to killing and carnage.

Vanessa’s impression of Kousuke’s character spurred her confusion.

「He, hey, this topic has been left alone until now but, this girl, what do we do with her? It looks like her grudge toward me has already reached a level that can only be considered as a curse. Even though her eyes are dead, it looks like she is starting to make a faint smile. Ah, just now, she was chuckling『kekeke』you hear that!? That is absolutely bad news somehow!」

Kousuke glanced at Emily with a convulsing expression and shivering body. Vanessa looked at the figure of Emily who even now looked like she could fall into the dark side anytime, so she put aside her discomfort that she felt toward Kousuke for the time being and she finally talked to Emily.

「Doctor Grant. Please cheer up. I told you already at that time that the situation was as it was. It’s not something to be ashamed for.」

「……Vanessa.」

Inside Emily’s empty eyes, a smidgen of light was lit and she lifted her face. Vanessa’s gaze met Emily’s through the rearview mirror, and her expressionless face crumbled a

little as her eyes loosened up. She then formed more words of consolation for her.

「Besides, didn’t you also pee when you met me? At this late hour――」

「Uwaaaaaaaan-, I’m just a peeing girl after allllllll」

Correction, she formed words of a finishing blow. Kousuke put a retort out「What are you doing adding a blow like that!?」. Emily buried her face in her knees once more, and this time she was holding her head with both her hands while turning even smaller than before.

The chaos in the backseat was making Vanessa’s expression to become somewhat flustered, and she did her best to recover the situation somehow.

「It, it’s fine you know, Doctor Grant. If I and Mr. K stay silent, then nobody will know. Something not known is the same as though it doesn’t exist.」

It was a really forceful line of argument. It gently reached Emily’s stormy heart like a refreshing breeze. Although, maybe that reasoning would work if it was just Vanessa, but as expected, if it was known by someone of a different gender, in addition, it was a different gender whose age was close to her’s, the damage to her mind was just that great. She couldn’t be convinced that simply.

「Bu, but……」

Emily’s gaze repeatedly glanced at Kousuke. But, as though to say that she had already calculated that factor too, Vanessa spoke comforting words to Emily with an expression that could be seen as a self-satisfied look this time.

「Doctor Grant. Please rest assured. Mr. K is Japanese.」

「A, and?」

「In Japan, there is this kind of phrase. ——”Rather that is a reward”.」

「Wha. what is the meaning of that?」

Kousuke’s pleading words of「I told you already, I’m not Mr. K. I’m Kousuke.」were beautifully ignored like passing air. Emily was tilting her head at Vanessa’s words. And then, Kousuke who guessed the meaning of Vanessa’s words tried to hold her back「Wait a secoooond!」but……

「It means, if it is done by a beautiful girl, then whatever it is will bring joy, a side benefit. Yes, if the other party is a beautiful girl, then even if they get their crotch stepped on, even if they get punched in the face, even if they are abused with harsh words, and then, even if they are peed on! Rather that will be a reward for them!」

「Wha wha wha wha wha, what did you saaaay!?」

The world that was unknown to the genius girl Emily Grant, just how deep ran the karma of the Japanese. A shudder ran through Emily’s expression. Kousuke yelled「Stoooop! Don’t lump together all Japanese into one category!」, but such a thing was beautifully ignored, and Vanessa’s words continued.

「Doctor Grant. You are a beautiful girl, and Mr. K is Japanese. In other words, Mr. K who was peed on by Doctor Grant is dancing madly with joy inside his heart!」

Truly, a perfect logic. There was no chink on it! Vanessa unusually snorted *mofufun-* proudly and concluded her

consolation words.

「Therefore, Doctor Grant, even though you had grandly peed while being carried by Mr. K, even though because of that he became completely drenched, for him that was an unanticipated reward. He owes you one. If you use that as a pretext and tell him to keep his silence, he will surely agree to it happily. No, rather he will even be happy with that comma――」

「You shut up alreadyyy! Or rather, why do you know about that kind of subculture――」

「Thi thi thi thi this, pervert-. How can you be happy having m, my, pe, pee――something like that getting on you! Just what kind of nerve you have there!」

Kousuke cut off Vanessa's words, but immediately after, Emily whose face was bright red grasped Kousuke's collar and began to shake him back and forth, causing Kousuke to groan「gueh」and to get his words got caught up in his throat. Emily was yelling「Forget it! Forgeeet it! Just forget it alreadyy!!」while rocking Kousuke desperately.

It seemed that after catching a glimpse of the abnormal world, Emily's mental state that was already at the limit finally entered the half-deranged state. The back of Kousuke's head banged *gon-gon-* on the door, but Emily didn't show any sign of noticing that.

Furthermore,

「……Doctor Grant.」

「What!」

「It’s not like I don’t understand your attempt to send Mr. K’s memory flying but……」

「That’s why what!」

「No, if you take a mounting position like that……Doctor Grant, you haven’t even taken off your stockings right now, so Mr. K’s clothes, it’s now soaked even further by Doctor Grant’s “that”, I think.」

「!?」

「Mr. K, won’t he become even happier?」

「You, it seems you want to frame me as a pervert to the end huh-. Bring it on then; if you are picking a fight, then I’ll take you on! Come outside! I’ll beat you up black and blue!」

Emily who jumped in a panic hit the back of her head on the door due to her overenthusiasm and held her head while writhing in pain. By doing that, her skirt got flipped up, the black stocking enveloping her slender legs was exposed, its color was strangely changed, but it was fortunate that Kousuke’s mind was now like a warrior who had just met his bitter enemy and was directed at Vanessa, so he didn’t notice.

However, just as Vanessa warned, “that” was firmly soaked into Kousuke’s trousers……

The groaning voice of Emily who felt pain at the back of her head and her shame entering mach speed due to her soaking the other once more, and the angry yelling of Kousuke toward Vanessa, caused Vanessa to tilt her head wondering「Just what in the world is he getting angry about?」……

Inside the fleeing car deep at night, it was the continuation of the time at the worn-out hotel—— chaos.

Part 2

It was a motel along the highway, with a dazzling billboard lit up by showy and stale neon. Inside one of the rooms there, there were the figures of Vanessa, whose upper body was only in underwear, and Kousuke right beside her with his face strangely blushing.

「Nn-」

「Oops, sorry. Does it hurt?」

「No, there is no problem. Rather than that……you are skilled.」

「Well, it’s just this much. I have had a lot of chances to practice.」

「Indeed, your movements seem experienced.」

It wasn’t like the two of them were doing anything indecent. After they entered the motel and calmed down for the moment, Kousuke treated Vanessa’s flank with the emergency kit that he happened to have.

In the first place, he was taught first-aid treatment to a certain degree in Tortus (they were taught that in the case that they ran out of magic power and couldn’t use healing magic), and after returning to Earth he also learned by self-education and going around to the medical treatment spots in battlefields, so Kousuke’s first-aid skill was high. His personal trips seem to be already paying off.

He spread the haemostatic agent, pressed a clean gauze on the wound, and a wrapped bandage around it. During that time he also stimulated her healing just a little with a method that didn’t exist in this world.

「Yosh, something like this I guess. It missed your vitals, and the important vein is also uninjured. The bullet, you treated that yourself huh. I guess you will be fine because your first aid, in the beginning, was done properly. But, there is the risk of infection, and it’s not a light wound by any means. You need to receive medical treatment soon.」

「I understand. However, right now is not the time to say that. Although you have come for us, it can be said that we are still in an isolated and helpless situation……at the very least until reinforcements can take over the protection of Doctor Grant, there is no way I can rest.」

「That’s, well, perhaps that’s so.」

Vanessa wore her shirt while showing a grave expression; however, next, she showed a wry smile while turning her gaze to Kousuke.

「Having said that I don’t think that I can even operate at my original 50%, so from here on, it seems that Mr. K, you will be considerably burdened.」

「……No, look here, I’ve said this many times, but I’m not Mr. K. I’m Kousuke. I’m a student in Japan. In this kind of situation, isn’t it better to contact that real Mr. K one more time――」

Kousuke didn’t admit that he was Mr. K no matter what causing Vanessa to think of speaking the doubt that she was harboring. Her penetrating gaze was attempting to grope around for Mr. K’s true intention.

But, before she could start, the *shaaaa* water sound that Kousuke tried to ignore to the best of his ability stopped at the same time with the *kyu-kyu-* sound of handle turned. Kousuke twitched in reaction, and he suddenly became quiet. For some reason, his expression was turning strangely nervous, but……that couldn’t be helped. Because he was a boy.

A vivid rustling sound from the other side of the thin glass door slightly leaked out and became audible……

「……What’s the matter you two, staying silent like that?」

From the door that was only half-opened, only half of Emily’s face peeked out dubiously. Her eyes were containing a clear wariness. Especially toward Kousuke.

Kousuke settled on the figure of Emily who had just finished taking a shower for only a moment, and then he quickly averted his face to the side. The sight was relatively brutal for him.

Emily was undoubtedly a beautiful girl. Such a girl was showing an appearance that was only wearing a blouse, and a short skirt with her damp hair let down. Two buttons around her chest were unbuttoned, and her beautiful nape was exposed. Her black stockings were dirty, so naturally, she didn’t wear them. In other words, the bare slender and supple legs of Emily were being exposed with nothing to spare.

「Doctor Grant, it’s nothing. Right now, I have just received treatment.」

「I see. Vanessa, are you okay? You were shot you know? Are you really okay?」

「Yes, perhaps it should be called a small mercy. I'm still not feeling at my limit currently. It's not a wound that can threaten my life.」

Emily rushed at Vanessa while still barefooted and climbed on the bed while looking worriedly at Vanessa's wound.

At that time, Kousuke's gaze that was similarly returning to Vanessa sharply noticed the skirt of Emily who was on all fours peering at Vanessa's flank. The light bulb of the room had a warm color type, so the room was dim, "that part" became dark and couldn't be seen but……

(Oy wait, the dirty stocking was thrown away but, then, the dirty underwear……what happened to it?)

Electricity ran through Kousuke's muscles. No way, no way……

「You are……not wearing it?」

「!?」

Emily pressed down on her skirt with a force that seemed like it could make a *hyuba-* sound while taking a girls sitting posture. Her face was dyed bright red, and her almond-shaped eyes glared up with shame and rage.

「Ah, no, just now……」

「I can't help it! It's still not dry right now!」

「Ah, yes.」

「Mr. K, as expected, just now is too lacking in delicacy.」

「Yes, I'm ashamed.」

The person who she had just grandly peed on now pointed out her no-panty state; however, for the moment it was someone who had saved them so she also couldn’t frankly throw her anger at him, the peeing no-panty Emily-chan crawled into the bed and turned small while holding her head.

As expected, Kousuke was also aware that he had made a verbal slip, so he apologized to Emily who was trembling *purupuru* beneath the blanket while leaking out his impression「This girl, she is a girl that often turns small huh」. Of course, that one was said inside his heart.

「I want to talk about what we will do from now on, is it fine?」

Seeing Emily who heard Kousuke’s apology and peeked out her face from inside the blanket like a cat with its wariness in full alert, Vanessa opened her mouth with a serious expression.

In contrast with the nodding Emily, Kousuke lifted up his hand to hold them for a bit.

「Before that, can you teach me something first? Can’t you contact people who can help you two right away? Since we’ve arrived here, I’ve seen no sign of Vanessa-san contacting anyone……I guessed it somehow but, Vanessa-san, you are a member of a state organization, right? Why don’t you report and request for reinforcements from your organization?」

That was the major premise needed to let their talk progress. Kousuke saved the two of them was because Vanessa was almost killed and also because Emily sought for help. As expected, Kousuke couldn’t draw a line from other people to

the degree that he could pretend not to see someone else getting killed in front of his eyes.

But, at the same time, he also couldn’t continue helping Emily and Vanessa and judge Kimberly and his group as evil without grasping the situation. He chose to flee with these two at that scene, but if Vanessa contacted her comrades and arranged a force that could oppose Kimberly and others, Kousuke planned to vanish right away then.

For that reason, before he heard about the details of the circumstance, he asked Vanessa to quickly contact her comrades but……

「Doctor Grant, I will talk about that matter――about 『Berserk』. Is it fine?」

「……Yes. In any case, we have passed the stage where it can be hidden. I don’t mind.」

「Oi you. What are you doing ignoring me so naturally like that? Just quickly contact your comrades already.」

Vanessa asked Emily(ignoring Kousuke) with a serious air, Emily looked down while agreeing(ignoring Kousuke) with a voice that was vanishing down. Her expression was shaded with a dark shadow that was darker than the shadow created by the room’s coarse light bulb. Kousuke’s shadow was getting thinner.

Kousuke who until now only saw the figure of Emily flustered, or shaking all over, or snapping in anger was feeling concerned that such a girl was covered with this much deep shadow. Even so, he demanded an explanation from Vanessa「Heey, why aren’t you contacting your comrades? Heey, come on tell mee-」.

「The start of this matter is the medicine that is the byproduct created during the course of Doctor Grant's research――「Berserk」getting out to the outside.」

「I cannot hear-. I cannot hear anything! Something like that medicine with a naming that sounds chuuni, I don't know any――」

「「Berserk」――it is the root word of berserker, the powerful warrior of god that rampaged in the battlefield without differentiating enemy or ally. It's unknown who named it with that word, but it's a naming that's really to the point. After all, 「Berserk」is the worst medicine with the effect of "Berserkerification". Just as the name implies, the victim cannot return to a normal human for a second time.」

「……」

Besides Emily who was holding her knees with a dark expression, Kousuke was also sitting down with the same posture while blocking his ears and shaking his head in refusal. The sound of the talking Vanessa was piercing the ears of Kousuke, as though the sounds were forcefully being screwed in.

「Doctor Grant is being targeted by the people who are pursuing that knowledge. This is a serious incident that's concerned with the country's safety, so, for her protection, we, the national security bureau moved but……Kimberly's betrayal annihilated the whole team except me.」

Perhaps thinking of her comrades, Vanessa slightly narrowed her eyes while adding more words.

「At first, I thought that it was only Kimberly's betrayal but……thinking back now, I couldn't link up with the reinforcements. That is also the reason that I contracted with

you in the preparation of the worst case scenario……
Anyway, this situation is enough to make me think of a “possibility” toward headquarters. Until I can be clear about this matter, I cannot make contact with headquarters that easily.」

「Aa, yes. You more or less answered my question. But, there were a lot of unnecessary things included there……」

Kousuke was turning over the content of what he heard inside his head while hanging his head down crestfallenly, and then he slowly looked up at the ceiling.

Ahead of his gaze was the ceiling that was blotted with stains in various spots, and the electric light bulb that was earnestly driving off the night’s darkness. The deep black stains that represented ill will, and the night’s darkness that was trying to swallow the light of hope……it was as though those things were representing the current situation of Emily and Vanessa.

He accidentally came to this country due to the demon king-sama’s instructions to him, he accidentally encountered these two at the café that he stopped by at, he accidentally needed to wait for the airplane schedule, and he accidentally entered the hotel where these two were at.

What a prank of fate.

Even though he was burdened with the unpleasant title of the man with the world’s thinnest shadow, the world discovered him only at this kind of time.

Even so,

「It was already too late by the time I got summoned to another world huh.」

Yes, for the demon king party who survived that rigorous world, getting involved with this kind of case was certainly, something too late.

□? Mr. K?□

□What’s the matter?□

Vanessa and Emily tilted their head, unable to understand the meaning of Kousuke’s whisper.

Shaking his head saying□It’s nothing□while smiling wryly to those two, thinking that it was hard for his conscience to just run away from this matter without hearing their story, for the time being, Kousuke decided to lend his ear to these two’s explanation.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Above the bookshelves fully loaded with light novels (area fill type), coffee splashed……

The light novels dyed black. Shirakome’s heart is also dyed black.

The world, is always full of things that shouldn’t be like so……

The march of self-destruction, will also be at 6pm Saturday too. Perhaps, surely, if I revived.

Arifureta Chapter 202

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Emily Grant’s Recollection

AN: This is an exposition chapter that reminisces over what happened before the prologue’s scene.

Part 1

"Why……why is that……how……"

While whispering under her breath, Emily Grant was walking on the path that was leading to the research building of the university with quick steps that raised a loud clopping sound. Her blue eyes were swimming around without composure due to her mind that was thinking in a hectic pace, as though to display the impatience and irritation inside her heart, her mouth was busily biting on the nail of her thumb repeatedly.

——Emily Grant

A girl with blonde hair tied into a side tail and almond-shaped eyes like a cat with a white lab coat as her trademark. A genius that in her eleven years of age managed to enroll into Percival University which has a prominent research facility of medicine even in this Britain. She was a first-class researcher that had already published several theses which were highly evaluated.

At first, when she enrolled, due to her age and examination results that were outstanding, she received a lot of attention, which contained traces of jealousy, and was treated like a tumor. Therefore, the girl who was still young laid out a defensive wall using bluffs, stubbornness, and composed expressions while making a habit of not letting what inside her heart come out in her expression.

Because she was a girl like that, her current situation gave no leeway to hide the agitation and impatience inside her heart which was something unusual; it caused several students that could be seen scattered inside the campus to blink in surprise.

The surrounding students sent Emily puzzled or curious gazes; however, Emily didn’t notice them at all seeing how immersed she was inside her mind. Despite being immersed in her thoughts like that, she suddenly returned to her senses due to the melody that abruptly echoed from her small feminine pouch.

Emily stopped still without even being bothered by her shaking side tail and frantically searched in her bag before she finally took out her smartphone.

“Ye, yes, this is Emily. Is this, teacher?”

“Aa, it’s me Emily. Where are you now? Are you still in your place? Have you seen the news this morning?”

Teacher——Professor Reginald Down was someone who normally gave off an atmosphere of a good-natured old man in contrast with his age, which was only in the fifties, but he was now asking questions rapidly with a voice that was a mix of impatience and bewilderment that was similar to how Emily was until just now.

Professor Down was a professor in this Percival University and the person in charge of the laboratory Emily belonged to. He had a habitual “professor” appearance with short black hair that had white hair mixed among it, a body that was slightly widening to the side, thick glasses, and he carried a tobacco pipe. In fact, if someone merely spoke “professor” in this Percival University, most students would be reminded of Professor Down.

His appearance that was “really” like a professor was also the cause, but more than that it was because he was someone that was very excellent as an educator. It wasn’t like Professor Down himself had any great achievements, but many of his pupils were first class researchers who made great contributions to society; every one of them spoke unanimously that “Professor Reginald Down is the teacher that they were indebted to”.

Even though he didn’t leave behind any particular results in scientific society, looking at his professor status, the fact that he was given a laboratory, and how all the other professors would take off their hats to him at the university’s faculty meeting, it was clear just how high his ability as an educator was.

「No, I will arrive at the lab soon. What about teacher?」

「I too will be at the lab soon. From your voice, it seems you have seen the news then.」

「Yes, I saw it together with Hendricks-senpai and Lizzie-senpai. Both of them are contacting all the other senpais. I left home ahead of them.」

「I see……. Then, everyone will come to the lab won’t they?」

「Yes, after meeting Rod-senpai and others, Hendricks-senpai and the rest will also head toward the lab right away.」

「Got it. Then, let’s talk in detail at the lab. ……Emily, sorry. Surely you are really anxious right now. Although I had that conference, I’m sorry that I didn’t return home yesterday.」

Professor Down’s caring words that seemed like it came right from his heart almost caused Emily’s gaze to burst into tears for a moment.

Emily’s home was really far from this university. In order to make her dream come true she left her parents at the age of eleven, and then she entered the dormitory at the same time as her enrollment to the university.

At first, Emily who received inquisitive gazes, thoughtless whispers, jealousy, and treated like a tumor, put up a bluff and obstinacy□I came here to study! I’m-, totally fine-□, but such a bluff from a little girl who felt loneliness from being distanced from family, and with her heart exhausted from solitude every day of just coming and going between the university and dormitory, couldn’t be sustained for long.

Because she had an intellect that towered above the rest, to a certain degree, she was used to excessive expectations and special treatment from the surroundings. So that her heart wouldn’t be warped due to such an environment, both her parents endeavored toward an education policy that allowed Emily to live a life that wasn’t any different from normal children. Their deep love also raised Emily to have the same sensitivity as a normal girl.

Because of that, Emily’s heart that was only being supported by the letter from her parents that would surely reach her once a week with not only writing but also with pocket money……was close to the limit.

Such a scream from a young heart, suddenly stopped on a certain day.

——If you like, how about doing a homestay in my house?

The one who called her with that offer was Professor Down. As someone who had the reputation as Percival University’s greatest educator, he had a relatively large residence located in a quiet residential area as his house. Professor Down, whose wife died early due to sickness and with no

child of his own, often explained with a wry smile that it was lonely to live in a spacious house by himself, so he offered homestay to students with circumstances that had no financial surplus.

It just so happened that there was a vacant room, and at the time, a young researcher in the making who attended his lecture looked like she was going to be crushed at any moment. Professor Down couldn’t bear to see that and spoke such an offer while holding out his hand toward Emily.

There were a lot of elder brothers and sisters at the house. Rather than calling it a homestay, they were mostly like a family. They ate meals together, they studied together, and they made memories of university students together.

Those words of Professor Down’s was an irreplaceable treasure for Emily.

「Emily? What’s the matter? Are you okay?」

「……I’m fine teacher. Thank you very much.」

Four years after her homestay began. As always, even now in this situation, he racked his brain for her sake as though she was his own daughter. For Emily, he was like one more father. To the degree that her real father Carl Grant was plainly feeling vexed「My father role is stolen-」.

She felt her heart that was disarrayed by the shocking news that she saw this morning with Hendricks and Lizzie was slowly calming down.

Emily said that she was okay one more time to Professor Down who was worried for her and cut the phone; she then started walking toward the laboratory, this time with firm steps.

Part 2

A large facility located inside Percival University——Research facility building C. Inside one of the rooms there, an oppressive atmosphere was hanging in the air.

The people here were the person in charge of this laboratory, Professor Down, Emily, and then the students of Professor Down’s, who like Emily, were having their homestay at Professor Down’s house——Hendricks Wesk and Lizzie Ashton. In addition, there were Rod Hurst and Dennis Litton who were also Professor Down’s students.

「Tha, that’s just coincidence, right? Right? Isn’t that so?」

Rod who was handsome but had a frivolous air about him was speaking wishful thoughts with an unusually stiff expression.

He was a self-styled feminist who had a personality just how his appearance suggested, someone who couldn’t help to call out if he saw a girl, but at the same time, he was also the mood-maker of the class. In a serious mood like this, he would be the first one who cracked jokes to melt the atmosphere.

But, even someone like him, when he saw the PC monitor displaying the news this morning that was picked out from the internet, as expected, even his usual talkativeness was lacking in luster.

「The “cause” that caused this phenomenon, do you think there are that many of them? Furthermore, in this kind of timing?」

Dennis tilted up his glasses with his middle finger while rebutting without even hiding his bitter expression. His hair was cut short, his shirt was buttoned properly up to his neck, and then his glasses. He who was the most serious in Down’s classroom, just like his appearance, often quarreled tit for tat with Rod, but his rebuttal this time was obviously different than his usual war opening signal.

Because Rod understood it, he too closed his mouth with the same expression as Dennis.

「Rapid muscle swelling, abnormal recovery power, behavior without reasoning in it……I don’t know any sickness or medicine that gives those kinds of symptoms. Except “that”……」

Hendricks stiff words caused Emily at the side to twitch and tremble. Hendricks was a senior who started his homestay in Down’s house since before Emily came, an existence that was already like a real big brother for Emily who supported her both at home and also at the university.

Hendricks himself also didn’t understand at first how to approach a young genius girl and only looked at her from afar, but with the homestay as the impetus, he knew that other than her intellect Emily was a girl with really normal emotions, and since then he took care of her like she was his real little sister.

It was a common knowledge between the members of the Down classroom and close friends that when Emily simply spoke “senpai” that she was referring to Hendricks.

The words that came from the senior that Emily trusted and loved dearly from her heart caused Emily, the creator of “that” to shake like a kitten. Hendricks immediately noticed that and patted Emily’s head with a gentle motion while saying「Sorry Emily. I didn’t mean to blame you.」.

「Hendricks. Pay attention to what you say. After all, my little sister is delicate.」

「No, Lizzie. It’s not like she is your little si――」

「Shut up! Or rather, you’ve pat her too much already! Come on, Emily, come to big sis here?」

Emily who was obediently receiving the pats of Hendricks was stolen in a flash by Lizzie who hugged her into her breasts. She then said「It will be okay you know~, big sis is with you after all~」while consoling her like a little child with ‘good girl, good girl’.

As expected, that treatment was embarrassing for a girl who had turned sixteen which caused Emily to forget the serious atmosphere and ran away from Lizzie’s breast saying「Wait, Lizzie-nee! I told you to stop treating me like a child! It’s embarrassing!」.

Lizzie had long red hair that was tied with a scrunchie dangling from her shoulder to the front loosely. Although her attitude was strict, she was actually an extremely helpful woman with deep emotions. She was in the same year as Hendricks and a homestay at Down’s house from the same period. The truth was she had feelings of love toward Hendricks.

At first, with how Hendricks was taking care of Emily, Lizzie’s relationship with Emily was strained, but Emily’s figure that

was chasing her dream with her all gradually moved Lizzie and now she was completely Emily’s big sis.

Emily too knew about Lizzie’s love, so sometimes she teasingly said「You should just marry him already」and so on, but each time Emily teased her like that, Lizzie’s face would blush bright red, and she would be fidgeting. That appearance was that of a lovely woman that even Emily, who was the same gender, would feel something.

Currently, the scrunchie that had also become Emily’s trademark just like her lab coat, although she had never said it to anyone, was something that she imitated from her prayer of wanting to become a kind and lovely woman just like Lizzie. However, it was somewhat embarrassing to imitate exactly the same appearance, so Emily didn’t dangle her hair to the front over her shoulder but to the side instead.

Inside the room, the mood softened slightly from the dialogue of the two sisters. Professor Down smiled slightly at that and made a small cough. Just with that Emily and the others immediately focused their attention on him. Even though they had a harmonious relationship, they wouldn’t make light of the words of Professor Down whom they respected. His cough was the signal for them to switch their relaxing minds.

「Just as Hendricks said, there is only one phenomenon that can turn a human into this. I won’t say that there is nothing else that can do this, but even so, this kind of radical transformation——is impossible. In all probability, this is「H3-α4」.」

Professor Down declared that while his gaze turned to the monitor once more. There, the figure of a man with a big

build covered in an armor of muscle was projected; the man was rampaging like a beast without reasoning.

That man didn’t even show any reaction to the voice of the police telling him to stop. Far from that, he slammed his body toward the nearby street lamp and unbelievably broke it, then swung the broken street lamp around with one hand and turned the two police cars surrounding him into scrap.

That violence made the police start shooting all at once, but the man roared, and without even paying attention to the bullets gouging his body, he charged toward the police with unbelievable speed and routed them. The struck police were thrown into the air like a joke with a parabolic trajectory. The sight of that was just like a scene in a B-movie.

The person who filmed the video was a passerby who was at that place by chance; the video seemed to be taken using a smartphone because the person ran away as fast as his legs could carry him after the police were sent flying, causing the video to be greatly blurred. Before long, the video taker who had taken enough distance was frequently saying□Oh my god-□while directing his smartphone’s camera toward the scene once more.

Screams and angry roars were raised from everywhere. The police were desperately fighting back, which was proven by the resounding sound of gunshots, and amidst all that, that time came before long.

Suddenly the rampaging man stood still then fell on his knees as though it was a machine that had ran out of electricity. And then, at that place which was in an uproar, a faint sound of anguish could be heard coming from the large man, it was a sound as though his neck was being strangled.

Right after that, a transformation appeared in the large man. His muscles that could be mistaken as armor were visibly starting to shrink. No, perhaps it would be more appropriate to express the phenomenon as “withering” instead. In the middle of being observed by the dumbfounded people in the surroundings, the large man covered his face with both his hands and moaned in anguish; his body withered until it was the size of a normal adult male, and then his hands parted from his face while his body was convulsing in small shivers.

The face of the man that became visible from there was completely different from the brutal face without reasoning that he showed until now, it was the face of a young man that looked ordinary, which could be found anywhere, no, rather than that kindness could even be seen from that face. That young man made an expression that almost burst into tears for a moment——but in the next moment, he raised an anguished voice once more while he collapsed down with both his hands covering his face.

The body of the collapsed young man withered in the blink of an eye, it lost moisture, deep wrinkles were carved onto his skin, and bone that lost the flesh was starting to stand out. After that, the young man didn’t move anymore.

The police looked at each other then nodded, and then they carefully approached the young man. When they didn’t receive any response even after calling out to him, to make sure a policeman used his foot to move the hand of the young man who was still stiffened, and then the police screamed and backed away.

That couldn’t be helped. The face of the young man that they caught a glimpse of just now was completely desiccated like a mummy, reduced into a tragic state.

The news announcer was speaking about this abnormal incident with a grave expression, speculating whether the cause was a new virus or a drug.

"But, but teacher. How can that have gone outside……. In the first place, the only ones who know about that's existence are only us……even though the data and the deposited part are scattered and managed strictly, yet…"

Emily's doubt came out with a voice that sounded strangled. Hearing that, the truth that the members of the laboratory tried to not think about reared its head.

——"H3-α4"

That was the name of the byproduct medicine that was created by accident from Emily's research.

Emily's research was to create a specific medicine for the Alzheimer's disease. That disease was the cause that was changing Emily's kind and gentle, beloved grandmother little by little. She was the reason that Emily was determined to enroll in a university at the age of eleven. It was a problem in the territory that a lot of researchers hadn't reached yet, and it was also the life work of Emily.

That research which obtained the cooperation of Professor Down and Hendricks and co who were research students was something that put its linchpin on the point that was the regeneration of destroyed neurons. It was also a path that a lot of researchers in the past had tried their hand at.

What was born from that research process was"H3-α4". If it was used, the muscle would break down and regenerate repeatedly and swell up in the blink of an eye; every kind of external injury would instantly recover due to the cells' superactivity.

Of course, it had demerits. As the compensation for the drastic muscle strengthening, the user would lose their reasoning and life. If someone was injected with a small dose, then they might hold out for around a week to ten days; however, in the case that someone was injected until it was just before the limit of the cells self-destructing from being unable to endure the drastic stimulation, they would die in less than an hour in exchange of obtaining regeneration power that couldn’t even be compared to with the former case.

At first, Emily and co thought that they might be able to possibly cut open a path of creating a wonder drug after witnessing the dramatic result of this「H3-α4」, but after seeing the lab rats transforming brutally without being able to stop the drastic stimulation and the breaking down of the reasoning, they thoroughly hid this drug as something that was too dangerous.

They dispersed the data, even disguised the chemicals used, deposited each data at different places, and put them under strict control.

Therefore, it should be impossible for the medicine to be stolen. Because in the first place, the people who knew about the existence of「H3-α4」were only the members of the Down laboratory. They were all in this place right now, except several people who couldn’t assemble here because they couldn’t immediately come.

「……Hey, what about Jessica, Sam, and Milo? Even those guys should know about the news, right? Why aren’t they coming? By any chance, those guys――」

「Stop that Rod. We cannot doubt our friends at this kind of time.」

Rod was about to say “that possibility” that everyone was intentionally avoiding, but Professor Down stopped him. Everyone was looking at Professor Down with anxious expressions.

「There is many other possibilities. We are the “Down Laboratory”, aren’t we? Emily’s genius is resounding not just in this university but even throughout the scientific society. It is a well-known fact that all of my prided students are really excellent. It’s possible that perhaps someone who came here to steal something else accidentally realized the existence of『H3-α4』and stole it. A researcher cannot ignore any possibility no matter what situation they are in.」

The words of Professor Down caused Rod to scratch his face awkwardly. When Dennis spoke sarcastically to Rod, he lashed back saying「What did you say」. However, their exchange was done with their usual atmosphere without any sign of paranoia against each other.

「Then……teacher. We, what should we do from here on……. As expected, is it better if we go to the police?」

Hendricks asked for advice from Professor Down to get back to the topic. Professor Down crossed his arms and groaned 「Hmm」while pondering for a while, then before long he suddenly lifted up his face.

「This is my suggestion but, for the time being, I think we should keep this matter a secret.」

「We aren’t going to talk to the police?」

「Yes. No, sooner or later we will have to talk no matter what. However, I believe that right now what we should prioritize is making the antidote for『H3-α4』even for a second faster. Surely it would take much time if there was an investigation

about that kind of uncommon drug. It would be a waste of time.

Bu, but, teacher. H3-α4is……

I guess. Indeed, we haven’t found a way to stop the stimulation……. However, there are still several approaches that we haven’t tested yet. We have talked about destroying the research data and also the materials, but it won’t be too late to do that even after we’ve tested those approaches. This research has leaked outside already; there is no guarantee that the second or third victim won’t appear. At that time, the scope of the damage will change depending on whether there is an antidote or not.

Hearing Professor Down’s suggestion made Emily desperately restrain her impulse that wished to destroy the research data and product as fast as possible. Hendricks and the others were also nodding Certainly, even if we do that after trying out those approaches……

Emily. I understand really well your feeling of wanting to make it gone from this world quickly. I also feel the same. But, the responsibility of creating that lies in us. Then, before we succumb to our terror and erase everything, we should do what we can. Am I wrong?

……Teacher. Yes, no, you aren’t wrong. I think that the possibility is almost none……but, if we are just trying it……

Seeing Emily’s pained expression, Professor Down’s expression also distorted slightly, then he caressed Emily’s head with his usual gentleness.

In the end, they decided that their policy from now on was to try the approaches for making an antidote of the leaked out H3-α4, keeping the whole matter secret from the outside,

and also forbidding the members of the Down Laboratory that weren’t here from speaking. With that decided, each member of the Down laboratory began to move to do what they could.

Part 3

"And? I want to ask about the detailed story soon though. Can I ask you to talk?"

Two days after the day where the members of the Down laboratory decided to keep quiet about the drug and continue their research, there were currently two suited men in front of Emily and others. Both of them were police officers that came here to investigate about the"Berserk case"——the case that was caused by the person who consumed"H3-α4"was called that by the news——that happened two days ago.

If it was asked how the police were able to arrive where Emily and the others were after only two days, then that must be because someone had squealed to the police. For Emily and the others, this was a sudden visit that was completely unexpected. Just what was the meaning of that decision that even made them feel guilty if it turned out like this anyway……

Emily sent her gaze toward Professor Down looking for help. Professor Down was crossing his arms while making a complicated expression, but then,

"Well, we can also get a warrant and then search the place whether there is really such a drug here or not you know? In the case that we do find the drug, well, I think nine out of ten we'll find it though, as it is perhaps the professor and others here will be arrested as mad scientists that dragged

unrelated people into their experiment for the sake of their own research.

Give me a break! There is no way we will do something like that!

Emily finally snapped hearing the words of the police officer and yelled. The eyes of the middle-aged police officer instantly shined fiercely.

In other words, you are admitting that the drug itself exists?

-, tha, that’s……

Emily immediately flustered from that. Professor Down who was beside her shook his head seeing that and feeling that it couldn’t be helped told the police about the existence of H3-α4. He also told them about how it was stolen and that they didn’t contact the police because they were hurrying to make its antidote.

……Whether that story is the truth or not, well, how about we listen to the details at the police station to make the judgment?

We didn’t report this because we thought that it would be like that. Detective, I beg you even knowing that it’s unreasonable. Can you wait just a week more? At least until the approach we are trying out right now is showing preliminary results. It’s possible that perhaps we will be able to make an antidote.

Please don’t say something so unreasonable professor. No matter how high your position or how prestigious of a teacher you are, you are still the most important witness of a case with a lot of casualties you know? As you can see we

are not even calling you a suspect here, we are even giving you an option whether you will come with us or not. I hope you can guess just how much consideration we have given you already.」

「That's……」

Professor Down's expression looked like he was chewing up a hundred bitter bugs all at once. Seeing Professor Down like that, for some reason, the middle-aged police officer made a faint smile on his lips. And then, that gaze moved toward Professor Down's side, at Emily who looked anxious with her gaze wandering around. And then he said it was fine if it was here, but he wanted to speak with just Emily alone.

When Professor Down suspiciously asked why the middle-aged police officer answered that he wanted to hear the story of the girl who was the linchpin of the drug development in a place without her guardian.

「I……what harm will there be even if she is with her guardian?」

「Let me ask you the opposite, what harm will there be even if the professor is not with her?」

After getting told that, the side of Professor Down who claimed that they only got the drug stolen from them couldn't even refuse. When Emily also bravely said「It's fine teacher」, Professor Down could only acquiesce even if he was worried.

Emily and the two police faced each other inside the room Professor Down had exited from.

「Now then, I find it a little hard to believe but, is it true that you young lady are the developer of that monster

transforming drug?

Right after the professor was gone, the attitude until now that more or less paid attention to decorum completely vanished. The middle-aged police officer suddenly took out a shabby cigarette while asking. The appearance of his swept-back hair, loose necktie, and kinked suit really made other people feel unpleasant. The man that seemed to be his partner looking a bit younger sitting quietly at the side while taking memo was also sending an appraising gaze at Emily.

Emily was feeling somewhat scared at the two men who suddenly changed their atmosphere, even so, she somehow feigned calmness using the bluff she had learned whether she wanted to or not when she first enrolled into the university.

That's, right. I, developed it. Or rather, perhaps I should say, that it was by accident, that that drug got created.

H~mm. How shocking. See here, isn't it completely like in a movie? For a drug that can make a human into that kind of monster to really exist, I have been a detective for a long time, but I've never heard of anything like that.

……Just, what do you want to say?

The middle-aged police officer that was making a broad grin for some reason was causing Emily's discomfort index to climb up rapidly. Perhaps it was because the police officer was having fun reading inside the heart of Emily, that in the next moment he said something unbelievable.

The data of that drug, how about you hand it over to us, all of it.

「Ha?」

Emily's pupil turned to dots, wondering just what this person was saying. Seeing Emily's expression, the middle-aged police officer whispered「Even though you are called a genius or something, you are really slow huh」as though he found it troublesome while continuing on.

「Surely there will be a lot of people interested in that kind of abnormally lovely drug. It will be good money. That's why, I'm telling you to hand over all the data.」

「Wha-, what are you saying!? You, you are police, right!? Do you know what you are saying!?」

「What a noisy missy that can only go 'gyaa gyaa' huh. When you have become a police officer as long as me, you will meet a lot of delicious stories by chance. Missy, do you know how much a policeman's salary is? It's laughable y'know? That's why I'll bet my life for something that will make that much money. You've got to treasure connections with money that you meet by chance. Just this much side benefits is forgivable, isn't it?」

There was no way that was forgivable. She didn't know how much the salary of a policeman was, but even so, there was no way they who were burdened with the mission to safeguard the people and apprehended the criminal would be all the same as the men before her eyes. These guys were the so-called dirty cops or immoral cops! Like that, Emily realized their true nature from her knowledge of drama movies.

「There is no way that's forgivable. I, I'll tell, this matter to other police! I absolutely won't hand over the data! Just go away right now!」

Seeing Emily who stood up right away with the corner of her eyes raised like a threatening cat, the middle-aged police officer shrugged as though he was facing a child that couldn’t be reasoned with.

“Then, the professor and the other research students, I wonder, perhaps all of them should take on the sin of a killer.”

“Eh……”

“I said it before, right? I hope you can guess just how much consideration we have given you already, remember?”

“-, yo, you coward-”

Emily yelled angrily when she heard the middle-aged police officer implicitly threatening that if she didn’t want Professor Down and Hendricks and the others to be arrested with a false charge then……. There was even emotion of hatred welling up inside her toward the scoundrels who were putting on the skin of police officers taking hostage of her important people that were like family to her.

The middle-aged police officer shrugged without even caring about Emily’s reaction and stood up with the talk ended.

“Decide quickly, okay? Will it be your important family, or the drug, yeah?”

“……”

Leaving behind Emily who couldn’t say anything, the police officers exited the room. In exchange, Professor Down and Hendricks and others entered inside with worried expressions.

Professor Down noticed Emily’s unusual state and asked her if something happened. Like that, he showed a shocked expression at the answer that Emily gave him.

「What the hell, just what the hell with that! They are police, aren’t they!? Why the hell are they threatening us! I don’t get it!」

「Calm down Rod.」

「You think I can calm down like this! Dennis-, aren’t you irritated huh!?」

「Obviously I am you idiot Rod. But, what are we going to do if we don’t calm down? Even though our important little sister was threatened, if we are all shaken up like that then that will be just what they want.」

「-, that’s, you are, right, but……」

Rod whose fist was shaking from frustration, and Dennis who was desperately suppressing the rage in his heart even while sighing.

The unbelievable situation with this threat from the police also visibly shook up Hendricks and the others. Amidst that situation, Professor Down, who was wracking his brain with his eyes closed, opened his mouth.

「There is also the option to report this to other police but……right now we don’t know how many comrades they have, so I cannot say that it’s a good option. In the worst case scenario, there is also the possibility that they will arrest just us and take Emily away. Right now, we cannot possibly leave Emily alone.」

「That’s, right. But, then, what to do……they will soon come back to hear our reply you know?」

Hendricks asked Professor Down with tormented feelings. But, perhaps it was as expected from an adult with the wisdom of age, the professor seemed to have the answer.

「Let’s contact the national security bureau. Now that the case this time has been exposed this far, then it’s not the level where we can keep hiding it or anything. Given how dangerous「H3-α4」is, there is a high possibility we can make the security bureau move.」

「I see……. Their system is different than the police. If we receive protection from the security bureau, then the police won’t be able to meddle.」

Hendricks nodded in understanding. Lizzie and Dennis and the others were also nodding to each other, thinking that there was no other way than that. However, only Emily was still looking down with a complicated expression.

「Emily, it’s fine. No matter what happens, I, we will absolutely do something about it.」

「Lizzie-nee……yes, thank you.」

Hearing the words of Lizzie who hugged her to give her assurance, Emily buried her face to Lizzie’s chest while returning words of gratitude.

However, the anxiety whirling inside Emily’s chest, rather than lessening from her trusted big sister’s words, it seemed that it was getting thicker instead. She couldn’t help but feel something, like a great bad premonition coiling around her heart, as though something fatal was approaching with loud footsteps.

Emily was staring at the back of Professor Down who was going to contact the security bureau without knowing yet that this ominous creeping feeling would become a reality.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

About the drug’s name, I wanted to check up a bit more and write it properly with a name that sounded likely, but……

It was impossible. There ain’t any time. Seriously. The update for next week is also in a dangerous state.

And so, well, this is a spin-off, please pardon the flighty explanation.

PS

At Overlap-sama’s homepage, the first part of the comic’s first chapter was updated.

Really dangerous. Kaori and Shizuku are just too cute.

For those who haven’t seen it, please take a look without fail.

PS 2

Thank you very much for a lot of ‘don’t mind’ comments.

Thanks to that, I was able to update somehow.

The mysterious sense of unity that the honored readers of Narou show sometimes, Shirakome loves it.

The next update will be for 6 P.M Saturday if possible, desu.

Arifureta Chapter 203

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

The Beginning of the Tragedy 1

Part 1

That day, an investigator of the security bureau’s dangerous drug countermeasure section, Vanessa Paradis, was in a bad mood. Usually she was someone with limited expressions, but right now anyone who looked at her walking through the bureau corridors would immediately understand that her expression was sullen.

“You look like you’re in a really bad mood huh, Paradis.”

When Vanessa shifted her gaze toward the voice that suddenly addressed her, she saw a man with a goatee around his early forties, clad in a sharp atmosphere.

“Hughes-san. No, not really, I’m not in a bad mood……”

“Don’t lie. You carried a secret investigation for half a year, and just when it will be time soon, you got taken off the team. It can’t be helped if even you get in a bad mood. If it was me, then there is no doubt that I’d be in a bad mood.”

“That’s……it’s”

Vanessa stuttered, feeling lost to what she should say and her gaze wandered.

Davy Hughes. He was a senior investigator in the same security bureau’s dangerous drug countermeasure section as Vanessa, a veteran senior who would soon reach his twentieth year in this career. He was also an eccentric that was fixated with his current post to the degree that he

refused the chair of the section head regardless of his numerous achievements.

「Well, the one pulling you out was me though.」

「……」

Hearing Hughes exposing his own deed without looking the slightest bit sorry caused Vanessa to be truly wordless this time. She was also staring fixedly at him at the same time.

Hughes made a wry smile at Vanessa who was in such a state. He urged Vanessa to continue her walk toward the bureau chief's office that was her destination before he started his explanation while walking at her side.

「Don't glare at me like that. My team is in need of you right now. I got squad leader Ahmed to reassign you to me while enduring a storm of sarcasm from him just so you know.」

「……If I remember correctly, Hughes-san became the leader of the 「Berserk Case」investigation team, right? Not even two days should have passed since the team's formation…… but, is there some development already?」

「Yeah. The situation is confusing in various aspects. From the beginning, this case was something unrealistic, so it also can be said that it cannot be helped. There was a report right from the origin themselves. It's likely that they will use the protection program, but……the protection target is a girl that is still 16 years old.」

「I see. So an agent of the same gender is necessary then.」

「Right. I'll let the chief tell you the details. I'm also going there now. I'm sorry that I'm asking unreasonable things

from you, but there is no female agent stronger than Paradis for protection duty. I’m relying on you.」

「If Hughes-san is evaluating me that high; then I also won’t throw a tantrum. Please take care of me.」

Hughes chuckled from Vanessa’s words while replying「Take care of me too」. Regardless of how veteran he was, he wasn’t putting on air against Vanessa who still hadn’t graduated from newbie territory. Perhaps this too was one of the reasons he was able to leave behind his numerous accomplishments. For a senior investigator leading a team, it was important how one treated their subordinates.

Vanessa’s mood that was falling to the bottom just moments before taking a sudden climb with a *gyuin!* sound from hearing the words that were highly evaluating her by a respected veteran investigator. Unexpectedly, this Vanessa was easy to handle.

Although Vanessa’s expression didn’t change at all from receiving the sharp glint of the gaze of the national security bureau chief, Sharon Magdanese, inside her heart she was tasting a nervousness as though she was made to do a tightrope walk.

Chief Magdanese was a woman with age that looked like she was in her sixties, but she had been entrusted with the seat of national security bureau chief far before Vanessa even entered the bureau. Her pressure and dominating aura that pushed those who faced her into a crucible of nervousness didn’t seem to weaken throughout her age but polished even more instead.

□Agent Paradis that is the current state of the□Berserk Case□. You understand, don’t you?□

□Yes.□

It wasn’t “Do you understand?” but it was as though she was saying “You understand, don’t you? Don’t you? I won’t let you say you don’t”, Vanessa responded back□Yes□while thinking that if she gave any other reply than that, then she might get fired.

Hearing her reply, Chief Magdanese nodded with a single word□Good□really naturally; then her gaze moved to Hughes.

□Senior Agent Hughes.□

□Ma’am.□

□I will recognize the application of the protection program for Emily Grant and her relatives, as well as the people connected with the development of□H3-α4□headed by Professor Reginald Down. However, make Emily Grant as the prioritized protection target. You get it, don’t you?□

□Roger. Are we going to head there right away? If possible, I want to have a briefing session beforehand with my team first.□

□……I don’t mind. It would be conspicuous if several agents of the security bureau visited while the sun is still high. Do it late at night. I’ll let you know later about the time. If Kimberly is among the current bodyguards, then I don’t think there will be any problems, but just in case, place some of our men among the university’s security and janitors.□

「Understood.」

There was no worry of any complication with Hughes's responsive reply. While Vanessa was staying quiet, Chief Magdanese and Hughes did two, three more exchanges, and in the end, Chief Magdanese asked「Are there any questions?」.

Vanessa who noticed that the gaze was directed to her gave a nod.

「Chief, in the case that we encountered someone that took that「H3-α4」and became the alias「Berserk」, what will be the method to deal with it and the order of priority?」

「Silence the target. I won't question the method.」

It was an immediate answer. Vanessa who asked the question was spontaneously lost for words. The chief telling her to silence the target without questioning her method meant that "it was okay to kill".

「……Is there any method to save the people that are affected by the drug――」

「Agent Paradis.」

「-, Yes.」

「According to Doctor Emily Grant, currently there is no medicine that can return people who turned Berserk back to normal. It's not like I don't understand your feelings of wanting to apprehend this drug's victim with the hope that someday a cure will be developed. However, that is the role of the enforcement section, at the very least, that's not your job. I won't let you say that you don't understand, you know?」

□Of course, chief. My apologies.□

Vanessa lightly lowered her head while feeling Hughes smiling wryly at her side before she asked one more question.

□Just now, there was the explanation that the culprit that leaked out the drug's data is unclear, but how much of the progress of the analysis about that is currently available?□

□Let's see. Analyst Parker, explain.□

□Yes, chief.□

In response to Vanessa's question, Chief Magdanese addressed the man standing by beside her who looked like was still in his twenties. The slender young man was wearing glasses and looked timid, and for some reason, his eyebrows were constantly forming the figure '□' looking troubled, which further strengthened his timid impression.

Analyst Allen Parker who became the chief's direct subordinate after his excellence was highly evaluated around three years ago, operated the note PC on his hand while starting to explain.

□To inform you first, currently, we still haven't obtained information to the degree that we can analyze. After all, it's only been two days since the□Berserk Case□, and the notification from the university only came several hours ago so……. Currently, rather than an analysis, please think of it as conjecture instead.□

Allen confirmed that Vanessa and Hughes had nodded and projected the content of the note PC he operated into a large display. There, the profiles of Emily, Professor Down,

Hendricks and the others that were obtained from who knows where, complete with their photos, were projected.

From there, there was a brief explanation of the background of Emily and others, and it was reported there that「H3-α4」——nicknamed「Berserk」(it was named so from the media's naming of the previous incident as「Berserk Case」) was kept secret until the incident.

「Based on the present situation, it appears that the highest possibility is that someone among Down's laboratory team that leaked out the data. The motive is unknown. Grudge, craving for fame, destructive wish, stress venting, or possibly……playfulness, perhaps?」

Allen said something like that while winking, perhaps with a joking intention. Vanessa's intensely chilly gaze pierced into him. From behind, the tundra gaze of Chief Magdanese stabbed him. It was only Hughes who sent Allen a praising face that said「You, are you a hero」as though he had changed his evaluation of Allen.

「Hn, hn, cough-. E, ee, next possibility, is the case where outside people, or perhaps an organization was involved with this. Those with the high possibility to be able to know about the existence of「Berserk」, even if just a fragment of it, we included them and the people related to them——for example, friends, family, the staff of the laboratory, the shop they went to, scientific society, part-time workplace, et cetera~——into the list. And then we eliminated the unlikely possibilities by investigation. Next, we added various conditions like who wouldn't be able to bring out the data without anyone knowing and produced the rough list of the suspects like this.」

The data on display was switched between roughly ten enterprises, people, organizations, and so on. Each suspect’s display was also accompanied with their respective possible motive and also the conjecture of the method of stealing.

Vanessa came to a comprehension. Certainly, this person was at the level that was worthy to be working directly at the side of Chief Magdanese. The person himself said things like「It’s not in the level of analysis」or「There is too little time」, but the average analyst would surely be unable to form a logical conjecture to this degree.

「……I see. Thank you very much for the easy to understand explanation, Analyst Parker.」

「Ahaha. I said it before that this isn’t in the level of *analysis* or anything. Please don’t have something like strange preconceptions, okay? But, if you are giving me thanks, then please, by any means don’t be so unfamiliar and call me “Allen”――」

「Hughes-san. Looking at this, even if the protection program is applied to them, there is no way we can let them stay together, isn’t it?」

「……Yeah, you’re right. There is enough possibility of an inside job, and it’s unthinkable that the culprit is sane seeing they released「Berserk」in the middle of the city. At the very least, Doctor Grant has to be placed separately from the others. But in that case, I’m worried that the girl’s mental state would be increasingly burdened. Paradis, I’m really relying on you here.」

「Please leave it to me.」

Analyst Allen’s face was twitching from being ignored as though nothing happened. Hughes made a sidelong glance

at him with a thought「What a guy……」, his gaze was as though he was looking at a hero as expected. Chief Magdanese was covering her eyes.

Chief Magdanese glared at Allen at the side; then she asked whether Hughes or Vanessa had any other questions, to which the two shook their heads, and she commanded them to leave. After lightly bowing their heads, the two exited the office; Chief Magdanese saw them off before turning her gaze to Allen who was plainly feeling down.

「Allen.」

「Haa, just why am I having no luck with women like this? Just what is not good about me? I think my face isn't that bad, and I'm always paying attention to being humorous and friendly, yet――chief, is it okay for me to focus myself in analyzing the method to be a bit more popular among women?」

「……It's fine. You don't even need to come anymore tomorrow.」

「Eh!? Why is the talk suddenly about firing me!?」

As I thought, perhaps I'm mistaken with the personnel selection――Chief Magdanese recalled the thought that she had been thinking about all this time since three years ago while restraining her feeling that was wanting to fill Allen who was vehemently objecting「No way……chief. If you take even my paying job from me, then how will I become popular!?」with lead bullets. She then gave her command.

「Stop joking around that much. You get it, don't you?」

「No, I'm not joking here……no, nothing at all. I totally understood.」

When Allen was about to object, he was pierced by the serious eye glint of Chief Magdanese which made him to tensely salute in panic. Chief Magdanese sighed seeing Allen who was like that.

Part 2

A heavy atmosphere was hanging in the air inside a room of Percival University’s research building. Emily was looking down with a pale face while her eyes were shaking, Professor Down was holding the girl’s hand tightly in kind consideration, and at their opposite side was Lizzie who was patting Emily’s head.

In this place right now, other than Hendricks, Dennis, and Rod, there were also the remaining members of the Down Laboratory whose names were Jessica Cubit, Sam Redman, and Milo Yenny.

Jessica was a female student with a relatively light attitude who recently poured her energy into fashion rather than research, but her normally light atmosphere was now quietened down, and her expression looked grim.

Even Sam who was often told「You are absolutely more suited to be a martial artist rather than researcher」by Dennis and Rod with his muscular body that was taller than 190 cm, and also Milo who was black and came from America as a transfer student, normally they were youths with bright atmospheres, but now their expressions were turning grave.

Inside that heavy air that was catching them into a quagmire, a light voice that couldn’t read the mood, or perhaps it dared to ignore it entirely instead, was resounding.

"Well, that's how it is. Missy, you just focus yourself on the research for the antidote *alone* without worrying about anything. You can look forward to a flawless facility and security there."

The owner of the voice was an investigator of the national security bureau's dangerous drugs countermeasure section——Kimberly Warren.

In the afternoon, he and Hughes came here after receiving the report from Professor Down and questioned everyone about the situation. After that, Kimberly remained here in order to guard Emily and others while Hughes finished his report and preparation to lead a team back here.

And then, while Kimberly made arrangements with the dispatched undercover agents and waited for the decision of the concrete planning from here on, finally a communication came from Hughes just now.

According to the communication, the adoption of the protection program was recognized, and the team would wait till late at night before coming to pick them up. Regarding the protection program, in consideration of the possibility that there was someone among the Down classroom aiming for Emily's research, Emily would be protected at another place that had an environment that could be used for research, where she would be asked to endeavor at researching the antidote there. The communication also mentioned that until the antidote was completed, don't mention the members of the Down classroom; even her parents wouldn't be able to meet her.

"Agent Warren. Is it possible for even just one person, whether it's me or someone among the students to accompany Emily?"

Professor Down argued vehemently at Kimberly who looked like he wasn’t mindful at all about Emily’s state. However, Kimberly was making an expression as though he was facing an unreasonable kid while saying「Haa?」and curtly rejected the request.

「I’m troubled here if you are saying a stupid question like that, professor. In this situation where the culprit is unclear, even all of you are included among the suspects; you should understand that, right? There is no way the missy――the doctor can be left together with you.」

「Then, at least, her parents can――」

「Please spare me from your begging. This is the decision from above; it’s not something I can do anything about.」

Kimberly scowled feeling that it was really troublesome and looked away while cutting off Professor Down’s words.

「Why-. Emily’s parents are not related to this! Then――」

「Teacher, it’s okay. I’ll be okay! I’ll finish right away if it’s just making something like the antidote!」

Emily stopped Professor Down who stood up with a menacing face looking as though he would grip Kimberly’s collar. Emily puffed up her chest while chuckling「Fufufu」to show that she was okay just like she said, but looking at her from the viewpoint of the Down classroom’s members who had accompanied her like family until now, it was obvious that she was forcing herself.

The lonely time when Emily first enrolled at the university became a little trauma for her. That little girl in an environment where not only she didn’t have any

acquaintance, on the contrary, everyone around her was all far older than her, causing her to be cornered.

That was why, if she was told that in this kind of urgent situation she would be separated not only from her substitute father and her substitute older siblings, and she also wouldn’t be able to contact her parents, then even if she understood that it was only for a limited time until she managed to make the antidote, she couldn’t help but feel the great tightening in her heart.

「Well, no matter how much you protest here, the decision stands. Just resign yourself and make the antidote right away. You are a genius, right? Then you will be able to meet them again before long.」

「Someone like you is……the person with you before, Hughes-san, wasn’t it? Don’t you think you should learn a bit from your superior?」

Professor Down shook his head while sighing hearing the careless remark of Kimberly’s who irresponsibly made light of Emily’s brave bluffing. Kimberly grinned broadly in amusement to that and only shrugged at the fierce glare of the professor.

However, as expected, when he was glared at not just by Professor Down but also by Hendricks and others, he seemed to feel uncomfortable and lifted both his hands as though he was surrendering before exiting the room right away.

「Perhaps the investigator’s quality of the country’s organization has been really falling these days.」

Professor Down whispered while sighing.

「But, teacher. Didn’t Hughes-san who came with that person earlier look like a sincere person? He said that he would also assign a female agent for me.」

「But still, Emily. Agent Warren said it, right? It’s “the decision from above”. The one that decided that Emily is alone is that Agent Hughes. Or perhaps, it’s a person even more above, you know?」

「That’s……」

The expression of Emily’s who earlier bluffed by saying「It’s okay!」slightly clouded from anxiety from the words of Professor Down.

Even Hendricks, Lizzie, and others were also making dark expressions. Amidst them, Professor Down closed his eyes in worry before he moved his gaze to Emily with a determined expression.

「Emily. I have a really bad premonition. No matter how I think about it, it’s strange that they are trying to separate you from even your parents. By any chance, perhaps the security bureau has some other objective, something more than merely protecting Emily to have you create the antidote.」

「Teacher……. But, we have already reported to them……」

Finally, Emily’s bluffing expression fell off and she displayed a face where anxiety was mixed with bewilderment. Professor Down spoke more words to her.

「We can just deny that. Even so, if they still try to take away Emily alone even after that, then that will be proof enough that they have no good thoughts in their mind.」

Professor Down then cut off his words, he crossed his arms and closed his eyes. After falling silent for a while, he opened his mouth slowly.

「……Emily, I have an acquaintance that has a research facility.」

「Research facility?」

「Yes. He also has a high social position, and he is reliable too. He should be able to give us shelter while lending us his research facility until we finish making the antidote. What do you think? Though as expected, it's impossible for everyone to go, but if it's there, then it's possible for your parents and me to come along. Besides, you will also be able to contact Hendricks and the others. That's why, before we are separated from each other before you are isolated alone, won't you evacuate there for the present?」

Emily stared at Professor Down without moving after he made an unexpected proposal with a serious expression. Hendricks and the others were also sending shocked gazes at Professor Down.

「I know it's strange coming from me who was the one that suggested to report to the security bureau. But it seems that the government cannot be trusted at all. There is no way I can entrust Emily who is already like my important daughter to that kind of place. To say nothing of how you will be alone there……」

「Teacher……」

Emily's gaze wandered around in hesitation. She could be together with everyone——that plan rang really nicely in her ears, it was a tempting proposal for her……however, it was unthinkable for her that the security bureau would overlook

them in this abnormal situation where a drug could change a human into a berserker, and it was urgent for its antidote to be developed. Furthermore, it was themselves who reported it.

Naturally, there was a possibility that she would cause much trouble for Professor Down who said he would shelter her, and also his acquaintance that would be the one actually sheltering her. Perhaps all of their social statuses and prestige could be destroyed because of that.

However, Professor Down who seemed to guess what Emily was thinking grasped the trembling hand of Emily tightly, and then he sent her a gentle gaze just like when he reached out to her the first time.

"Emily, you don't need to worry needlessly. You are a first-class researcher, but at the same time, you are also still a sixteen-year-old child. It's mistaken for a good child like you to shoulder everything in this kind of emergency. That's why it's okay for you to depend on others. No, rather I beg you as someone that is like family to you. Please, I want you to depend on me."

Emily looked down to hide her expression. It wasn't because she was hesitating, but because if she didn't look down, then her welling up emotion would become flowing drops of tears.

"Emily, let's depend on teacher's kindness here. Even we are also unable to let Emily be alone in this current situation."

"That's right……. If it's Emily, then surely you will be able to make the antidote right away. That's why, let's agree with teacher's proposal, okay?"

Starting with Hendricks and Lizzie, the other members also raised voices of agreement with Professor Down’s proposal.

Every one of them was worried about Emily without exception; they were wracking their brains to look for the best possible future for Emily.

She was really blessed. Emily was thinking that from the bottom of her heart while taking a deep breath, then she nodded while firmly looking at Professor Down.

“Great, it’s decided then. Everyone, please cooperate with me. Even if we talk to Agent Warren about this, he would only stop us. Then, let’s ask for his approval only after it’s done. Emily and I will head to my acquaintance’s place ahead, so can you all distract Agent Warren’s attention for us?”

“Got it. This is for Emily. We will do it somehow.”

After Hendricks nodded strongly, the other members also nodded with resolve in their face.

“Hahah, who’d ever thought that a time will come where we will think about outrageous things like outwitting the security bureau agents in active duty like this. Isn’t this like in a movie?”

“Rod. Don’t get too optimistic. After all, you are the one with the highest possibility of making a mistake here.”

“What did you say-, Dennis! Ain’t you the one who is always getting cold feet at critical times and causing blunders?”

“It’s the cliché that normally the guy who is spouting big words is actually the one getting cold feet. Rod that refers to you.”

「Okay, I rea~lly get it that you are picking a fight with me. Let's go outside Dennis. I'll make that glasses get sticky all over with my finger's sweat.」

「Bring it on. I'll perfectly stitch your slovenly chest so that you won't be able to expose it for the second time.」

A small giggle echoed inside the room that had its atmosphere lightened up with Dennis and Rod's usual swearing. When Dennis and Rod turned their gaze there even while their hands were still grasping each other's collar, they found the figure of Emily who leaked out that chuckle from being unable to endure the scene.

Lured by that, Hendricks, Lizzie, Jessica, Sam, Milo, and the Professor Down began to laugh.

Emily made an amazing smile while tears were gathering on the corner of her eyes. With a really lovely smile that was like a blooming flower she said……

「Thank you, Dennis-*oniichan,* Rod-*onii-chan.*」

「」……「」

Dennis and Rod who were given the greatest present with the designation that was seldom used for them silently tidied up their clothes and made a fake cough. And then they sat back quietly with their face dyed red up their ears.

「Now then, with the return of Dennis, Rod, and Emily's smiling face, let's focus on the detail of how we will outwit the security bureau.」

Professor Down's command, as usual, it instantly made the students renew their focus. For the sake of their cute little sister's future, they talked about their opinions to each other

with an expression that was even more serious than usual when they were at research or lecture.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The chapter is short, and on top of that it doesn’t progress, I’m sorry.

The writing time is, already……

Forgive me for keeping all of you in suspense but, one thing, it will be a bit more time until that guy crawls from the abyss, so I wish that all of you readers can possibly wait for it.

The next update will be for 6 P.M Saturday too. There will be no stopping midway next time!

Arifureta Chapter 204

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Beginning of Tragedy 2

"Good grief, it feels like I am an actor in a B-class movie here."

While Emily and others were in the middle of their discussion, Kimberly, who was leaning on the wall in the corridor while staring at his smartphone, was letting out a chuckle that he couldn't keep restrained inside himself any longer. It seemed that what he was watching on the smartphone was something that really pleased him.

Kimberly moved his fingers quickly across the display several times. Then the display displayed Kimberly's bank account. When he saw the amount of money that was displayed there, he let out his chuckle once more. When seen from the side, he really looked like a dangerous character. How his expression was dyed with greed that was unthinkable coming from an agent of the security bureau also encouraged such atmosphere.

"This much just from acting a little as an agent. Really, this makes me feel that risking my life fighting criminals is really stupid."

Kimberly put his smartphone back in his pocket while saying that to himself. At the same time, he recalled his schedule from here on inside his head. ——Due to his *real* employer's request, it would be a schedule where he would risk his life

kidnapping Emily Grant and then bet his life to pull the carpet from under the security bureau.

Kimberly was making a show of standing guard outside the room where Emily and others were inside while actually, he was confirming his betrayal toward his comrades and his criminal act. It was at that time, *kii* the door’s room made a sound and opened.

Dennis and Rod came out.

“Hm? What’s the matter? It will still be a while until the pick-up time you know?”

“We are thinking of making the final check of the things we are going to bring.”

“Sheesh, you guys already made that check a lot, haven’t you?”

“That’s just our nature. This kind of confirmation won’t be enough no matter how many times you do it.”

Dennis shrugged while pushing up his glasses sharply. Kimberly nodded“Is that so……”to that before he turned his gaze to Rod at the side and asked“And you?”.

“It’s this for me.”

“Smoking huh……. Well, fine. But, don’t move away too far, okay? After all, you guys are also protection targets here.”

“Yes sir—”

Rod jokingly returned a salute while lazily dangling the cigar he grasped in his fingertips. Like that, he and Dennis

disappeared together further in the corridor while receiving Kimberly’s gaze.

Of course, Dennis and Rod’s words to Kimberly were lies. They were planning on raising a commotion after this so that it would be easier for Emily and Professor Down to escape. The specific plan was to raise a commotion nearby the laboratory where「Berserk」was in safekeeping by taking other harmful chemicals before yelling「We made a mistake, and it got scattered~」.

Of course, what they would scatter was harmless chemicals, but if they made a commotion saying that ‘It will affect your life if you don’t take medicine right away!’, then the agents of the security bureau that couldn’t confirm the authenticity should be panicked. The others would use that opening to try escaping from the research facility.

Surely, the bodyguards from the security bureau would never think that the people who requested protection for themselves would actually escape by their own decision. On top of that, this research building was already like the back garden for the researchers who often spent the majority of their day inside of. There was a high possibility they would be able to escape.

And, at that time, the door of the room opened once more. Who came out next were Sam and Jessica. Jessica was leaning coquettishly on Sam’s arm, generously pressing her voluptuous body that peeked out from her clothes that had an intense exposure.

「So you guys too……what’s your business?」

Kimberly talked to them while still leaning on the wall.

「Ee~, you understand just by looking, right~? We are going to where it will be just the two of us~. It seems like it will be difficult in various things after this~, so while we still can~」

「Ye, yeah, that's right. Si, sir, it's fine, just for a bit, right?」

Jessica was leaning even more on Sam while her way of talking was stretching even longer. Sam's eyes were swimming around, but he somehow responded to Kimberly.

In reality, Jessica and Sam were just friends, they weren't lovers or anything, but they were just getting out of the room to be a distraction like Dennis and Rod. They pretended to be lovers with the motive of trying to find an agent somewhere and trick him into something like a blackmail scene using a beautiful girl.

However, for Sam, it was unexpected how passionate (?) the acting of Jessica was. His unrest was fierce from her way of talking that was completely different from usual and the soft sensation that his arm was feeling.

「……Yes, yes. Do whatever you like.」

「Ye~s, we will do whatever we li~ke. Rather, I'll be made to do whatever Sam li~kes.」

「……」

Jessica grinned widely while waving her hand at Kimberly who gave his permission with an exasperated expression. Sam was feeling a bit of terror from Jessica's acting while nodding wordlessly.

Like that, Jessica and Sam's figure vanished at the turn of the corridor.

Kimberly kept leaning on the wall with his arms crossed while waiting silently until the time came.

Sometime after that, when Kimberly was starting to crave for a cup of coffee, an abnormal event happened.

Bii—, bii—, bii—, bii—!!

A warning sound suddenly echoed. Kimberly made a faint smile, and then he brought his mouth closer to the communication device attached to his sleeve.

「This is Warren. All members, situation report.」

Kimberly wasn’t shaken. Everything was just as planned. He had already seen through the ulterior motive of the students exiting the room. Therefore, he expected for the report that reached him from each bodyguard to be「Nothing strange」or 「The students are~」.

Yes, everything was just as planned——was how it should be.

「? Oi, Clayton, Muller. Respond. Oi, what’s wrong?」

All bodyguards that reported to him said there was nothing strange. Kimberly thought that there would be reports coming from at least two places telling him that some kind of commotion happened, but he got doubtful when in the end all the reports that he got told him nothing strange happened.

Furthermore, there was no report at all coming from the last two people he called. There was no reaction no matter how much he called into their communication device.

「……Oi oi. Don’t tell me they got caught off guard by mere students.」

Kimberly’s cheeks convulsed from imagining the unimaginable development. But, the moment he noticed that the place that the two bodyguards he lost contact with was where「Berserk」was deposited, his face complexion changed right away.

「-, Dickson! Russell! Come here right away! Take over for me for guarding the missy!」

「Haa? Warren, what are you saying? Just now two of the kids came here. They are surprised by the alarm but――」

「Just leave that alone! A different lot might be coming! 「Berserk」is being stolen right now!」

「Wha-, wait a second! Something like that is not in the pla――」

「There ain’t any time for chatter! I’m going to take a look at the place where Clayton and Muller were! Just in case of the worst case, you mustn’t let the missy get snatched away!」

Kimberly roared angrily. Right after that, the door of the room opened slightly, and Professor Down’s face appeared from there.

「Did something happen? We――」

「There might be someone infiltrating. I’m putting two guards here, so don’t come out of the room.」

「No, but――」

Kimberly turned his back toward Professor Down who was going to object while saying this.

「Someone is aiming for「Berserk」!」

□!? Co, could it be, Dennis and others□

□No! Those guys are confirmed to be in another place! That’s why I’m panicked here. Just listen, stay quietly inside the room!□

□Go, got it.□

Professor Down returned inside the room while feeling shaken. Right after that, two bodyguards dressed as garbage men came running.

Kimberly entrusted them to be the guards in that place before running through the corridor with fierce momentum.

□Dammit all. Please let it be just some kind of mistake. My livelihood depends on this plan here!□

Kimberly was cursing while rushing up the emergency staircase. □Berserk□was four floors above——inside the chemicals vault that was strictly managed on the tenth floor, but if there was an intruder, then there was a high possibility they would use the emergency staircase. This staircase was also simply the closest to Kimberly’s position.

The vault on the tenth floor could only be opened using an ID card, fingerprint confirmation, twelve digit password, and voice recognition, those four locks. In addition, there was also a security camera.

Therefore, it was unthinkable that the drug could be stolen in so short a time but……

Although *they weren’t agents that received training*, the men standing guard there were muscular and armed; however, they might’ve already been neutralized without even given time for calling for help.

If this wasn’t some kind of mistake, and there was really an intruder, then that intruder must be a considerably skilled one.

Kimberly was feeling cold sweat down his back while rushing through three floors in one go and stepped on the staircase landing between the ninth and tenth floor. It was at that moment,

“Oops”

“A? You……”

Ahead of the gaze of the shaken Kimberly, was a man that was just about to go down the staircase from the tenth floor. It was a man without any peculiar traits. He looked like he was in his twenties, or even in his forties. He looked flat, had a medium build body, and brown hair that wasn’t long or short. His suit didn’t look high-class or cheap. And then, a doctor’s robe.

The man raised a really light voice when he saw Kimberly. If they met in a normal situation, then Kimberly would surely think that this man was a researcher here, he might even say“Excuse me”while passing through the man and like that he wouldn’t even recall the man for the second time in the future.

But,

“You, what is inside that suitcase?”

The lack of any peculiarity, the handy suitcase, and then Kimberly’s instinct as an agent, made him be conscious of the man.

"It's just a research document though? Rather, I should be the one asking who you are? I have never seen your face here, and you also don't look like a researcher……eh, don't tell me you are related with this alarm? Could it be, I'm in a pinch here?"

The man's face was convulsing while he took a step back on the stair without turning around. Looking at the man's speech and gesture, in a glance he looked like a simple researcher encountering someone suspicious.

"I am an agent from the security bureau. There is a possibility that an important medicine was stolen. Sorry, but I'll have to confirm the contents of that case."

"No, no, it's impossible to let outside people to see research data I tell you. How suspicious, are you really someone from the security bureau?"

If Kimberly took a step forward, the man would also take a step back. Kimberly narrowed his eyes slightly at the man's attitude, then he said"I'll show you my badge then"while his hand moved to take out his proof of identification as a security bureau agent from his breast pocket……

In order to take out and fire a gun.

"Ah maan, this person is sharp. You are really a dangerous man, trying to shoot someone so suddenly like that."

"……You yourself, you bastard ain't normal. Who and where are you from?"

Kimberly's gun muzzle was pointed at the temple of the man from *point-blank range*. At the same time, the neck of Kimberly, who had the distance *closed*, instantly got a knife pressed on it.

Yes, the man in the doctor’s robe closed the distance faster than Kimberly could take out his gun and shoot on an unstable place like the staircase. Furthermore, surprisingly that knife flew out from the man’s sleeve, it was obviously a knife with a launching mechanism.

Kimberly felt cold sweat drenching him. He planned to be a wanted man in this case anyway, so he wouldn’t shirk from cleaning up one or two researchers that might be unrelated rather than having his important money tree be stolen. But, when the lid was opened, what he was confronting was actually someone far more skilled than him.

‘This is bad, bad, bad’ His instincts were ringing the alarm bell loudly.

In an instant,

「Warren!」

「Kimberly-」

Voices called Kimberly’s name, and gunshots roared. Bodyguard agents had gathered below. The man said 「Whoops」still with a light tone while instantly pulling his body back. The bullets hit the wall a slight distance away. The shooters didn’t plan to hit right from the start; they fired only to separate the man away from Kimberly.

The man seemed to give up going down the staircase and tried to climb up.

「I won’t let you-!」

Kimberly pulled his gun trigger continuously. The fired bullets passed through nearby the man who twisted his body right away and opened up holes on the wall.

□Are you sane!? You are firing at someone carrying a case filled with a hazardous substance here!□

□That thing cannot infect through the air! Even if anyone gets hit with droplets, if it’s just a little then it cannot cause secondary infection! It’s better to destroy it rather than have it stolen!□

Indeed, □Berserk□wouldn’t infect someone without injection or contact regarding secondary infection from a person that had□Berserkification□. *If the intake amount was only a little,* then even if another person came into contact with body fluids of the victim, then they wouldn’t get infected.

Even so, Kimberly who dared to brave the danger of scattering around the extremely dangerous chemicals caused the man’s expression to cramp a bit while he finally took out a gun from his breast pocket and returned fire. While Kimberly leaped aside, two bodyguard agents that had climbed up the stairs got their legs shot through, and they crumbled down.

Kimberly cursed while aiming his gun muzzle at the man, but right after that, his eyes opened wide.

□Are you bastard a ninja!?□

The man unexpectedly jumped off the stairs, then kicked on the handrail and leapt further and passed through above Kimberly’s head. Furthermore, he then kicked on the wall to turn around and attacked Kimberly.

Kimberly changed the direction of his gun, but the man’s flying kick hit his chest faster. An impact that caused him to hallucinate his ribs breaking made the air in his lungs to be forcefully ejected out. Kimberly groaned□Gahah□and got blown away.

In no time, Kimberly was sent flying and would be struck by the stairs behind him where he would then be neutralized, was how it appeared it would turn out……, but Kimberly was formerly military and an expert at military hand-to-hand combat. He immediately discarded his gun and caught the kicking leg, dragging the opponent into the momentum that sent him flying.

「Guah」

「-kh!?」

That man made Kimberly as his stepping stool and somehow evaded being struck by the stairs, but his balance was broken, and he fell.

Even so, Kimberly still received the bigger amount of damage, and different from the man who immediately stood up, Kimberly became unable to move from the impact.

The man shrugged as though to say ‘oh dear’ before trying to leave that place.

It was at that time, an incident that could only be said to be the devil’s work happened in succession, which would lead to tragedy.

「Agent Warren!」

「This bastard! That’s Emily’s! Return it!」

Dennis and Rod appeared. They heard the alarm and saw the agents going off somewhere. They became worried that 「Berserk」would be stolen again and came here to look at the situation. By using the elevator, they came to the tenth floor and there they listened to the gunshots from the staircase. And then, the two caught sight of the man’s figure

and guessed the situation. When they saw Kimberly and the other agents get defeated, their sense of justice came out. It came out fiercely.

The hot-blooded Rod leaped at the man while Dennis threw the harmless but smelly chemical they had prepared.

Naturally, the man easily kicked away Rod, but the chemical vial accurately hit the ceiling and broke apart, throwing out its offensive smell. Naturally, the liquid fell like a shower at the man below, Kimberly, and the agents.

The man immediately lifted his suitcase over his head to protect his body from the unknown chemical.

Instantly, along with a single gunshot, the suitcase was shot and sent flying from his hand. The one firing was one of the agents that was shot in the leg and fell. That agent was crawling slowly toward his gun that was sent flying before his hand finally reached it, and he aimed at the head of the man whose attention was taken by Rod and Dennis.

Therefore, it was a coincidence that it was the suitcase that was hit. Rather, it was because the man was holding the suitcase with his hand lowered that the agent aimed at the man’s head. But, the unexpected situation where a chemical was thrown at the ceiling caused the man to make an unforeseen move.

And then, there was one more devilish coincidence. The bullet hit the lock of the suitcase with pinpoint accuracy.

As a result, the suitcase that had its lock broken flew away from the man’s hand and crashed on the wall which caused the suitcase to be opened.

Yes, the vial of【Berserk】that was put inside the suitcase, was exposed to the open.

The people in that place sent their gaze at the falling suitcase in slow motion. Obeying gravity, 【Berserk】flew out from the suitcase that fell on the ground. There were two vials in the suitcase.

One vial flew out from the impact and broke at the center of the landing stair. The content scattered out.

【Don’t get hit!】

【tsu】

Kimberly roared angrily. Ahead of his gaze was the figure of the other agent that was still lying on the floor.

The agent covered his face with his arms right away but…… he was too late.

【a, a? Gii! aAAAAA————!!】

The splash of【Berserk】flew into the agent’s eyes and mouth, and a beat later, the agent screamed thunderously, *beki baki goki* his body began to transform along with raw sounds.

【Now that it’s like this, he is beyond help, eh.】

The man, with an expression as though he was chewing something bitter aimed his gun muzzle at the head of the enlarging agent. And then, he fired without hesitation and blew away the head. If the person only came into contact with a small amount of the splash, then there would be no problem if he was killed before transforming.

The agent easily crumbled down.

Dennis and Rod were greatly shaken seeing a person die before their eyes, but even so, they felt relieved, the same as Kimberly and the man, that the Berserkification was stopped.

It was at that moment,

——aAAAAAAAAAH!!!!!

The first cry of birth came from downstairs. The birth cry of Berserk.

-, the other one!?

Not here……shit-, it fell down! We got too distracted with this one!

Yes, the other vial wasn’t anywhere here.

The other vial had fallen downstairs from the gap between the handrail’s railings. And then, midway it crashed on the railing, and its content was thrown out. If it was just that, then there would have been no problem. However, in a stroke of bad luck, no, perhaps in a sense that it ought to be said as an inevitability, downstairs there were a lot of people that stuck out their heads from the handrail to look upstairs.

The alarm and the gunshots that came from upstairs. There was no way that those would go unnoticed by the students and professors who were staying behind in the research building, the security guards, and others.

That was why, the drug that gave birth to berserker, raining down from upstairs, showered them plenty. It wasn’t at the level of a splash anymore. It was the whole contents of a

bottle. Even though, it actually didn’t even take a full injection at the time of the「Berserk Case」.

「Aa, geez-. This is really an awful failure-. The luck of me today is undoubtedly the worst!」

The man cursed out like that while jumping down the stairs.

「Guh, fuck-. Stop damnit!」

Kimberly’s face distorted due to the damage that was still remaining in his body while standing up somehow. He then chased after the man by rushing down the stairs.

「Rod! We are going back!」

「Eh? A, Dennis? But, something like this……」

「Get a hold of yourself! We have to let everyone know! Besides, that man might be going to where Emily is!」

「ts. Tha, that’s right.」

Dennis scolded the greatly shaken Rod and made him stand up.

And then, they turned a pained expression at the agent’s remain that got his head blown off before they rushed out toward the room where Emily and others were waiting

While listening to the *countless* roars and continuous gunfire resounding downstairs.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Even though I planned to finish the reminiscence in two chapters……

Seriously I got no time for writing. This time it stopped at an incomplete point too.

It will be a bit harsh for the update for next Saturday.

Arifureta Chapter 205

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

I’m Not Mr. K, But I’ll Become Your Strength

AN: It’s a little bit late.

Sorry.

Part 1

When Kimberly finally arrived downstairs where screams, bellows, and beastly roars were flying past each other, he witnessed the manifestation of the picture of hell there.

Men and women were enlarged atrociously without distinction. The strengthened monsters were trampling down everything in the surrounding following their instincts.

At first, there were only several people that had been splashed with【Berserk】, but the body fluids that were scattered along with the roar, the biting, the scattering of blood due to the security guard’s gunshot, all of those were increasing the number of the infected like rats multiplying.

If it was only a small amount of【Berserk】, then surely there wouldn’t be anyone in the surrounding that would get infected just like when that young man rampaged in the middle of the city a few days ago. However, this time, the people that got infected at first were absorbing a lot of the undiluted solution of【Berserk】. The ability of【Berserk】 should be lower if it was by indirect infection, so at this level, there would be no worry of an explosive contagion happening.

Even so, there was the need to be resigned to at least tertiary infection or quaternary infection. And above all else, the people who got hit at the beginning with the undiluted solution were now scattered about somewhere and kept producing the secondary infection.

The hell was only starting just now.

「Fuck-. It’s really a B-class movie like this.」

Kimberly was cursing while aiming his gun muzzle at a berserker that was just now snapping the waist of a small statured female student in the *opposite direction*. He consecutively fired life-reaping bullets within an instant.

The former student that was Berserkified carelessly tossed away the female students who died in a way that was beyond imagination by getting snapped right in half, and then it covered its head using its arms that were like logs while rapidly rushing at Kimberly.

Kimberly’s bullets that flew straight to the berserker’s head were easily stopped by that muscular armor. Its flesh was gouged, and blood was flying, but that was all. The wound was immediately starting to regenerate, and its charging momentum didn’t decline at all.

「Nine milli is just like a peashooter huh-」

Kimberly immediately jumped forward into a head-sliding. A strong wind of death and madness passed through above his head. He evaded by slipping through between its legs.

Kimberly was sliding while instantly rolling face-up, and then he aimed at the back of the head of the berserker and pulled his trigger. Inside the corridor that had turned dim due to the broken lamps, muzzle flashes flickered along with consecutive gunshot sounds.

At the same time, skin, flesh, and blood scattered from the back of the berserker’s head. The berserker that got hit with the fierce impact on the back of the head while in the

middle of charging pitched forward and fell on the corridor with a slide.

「I heard that it doesn’t have a weak point other than the head, but……it’s more troublesome than I thought.」

Kimberly stood up while smoothly replacing his gun’s magazine. He whispered with an expression as though he was chewing something bitter.

Right after that,

「aAAAAAAAH」

「-!? Shit-, it’s infected!?」

Behind Kimberly, the female student who was snapped into two just now shrieked while standing up. When he looked there, the girl’s face was really wet. Probably when she was caught, she was also covered with a lot of salivae that was scattered together with the berserker’s roar.

Kimberly aimed his gun to deal the finishing blow before it could finish its transformation. But, before he could pull the trigger, the presence of death blew from behind him.

「-!?」

He obeyed his instinct’s order and jumped to the side, an instant later, a war hammer was swung down. The fist attack was so fierce that he mistakenly thought that. Cracks in the shape of a spider’s web were created on the floor by that fist.

「So I failed to finish it off-」

Yes, the attacker from behind was the berserker from just now. Actually, the angle of Kimberly’s bullets was too bad to pierce the skull; they could only slide on the skull’s surface and shaved the skin.

And then, the worst thing was that the second berserker finished transforming in front of Kimberly who lost his chance.

“This is bad……”

He muttered those words unconsciously. Cold sweat trickled down the temple of Kimberly. He was sandwiched between two berserkers from behind and in front, in a corridor that wasn’t that wide. Kimberly’s cheeks were twitching in this dangerous situation.

But, at that time, a severe earthquake suddenly came. The corridor wall slightly away from him was blown away along with an intense thunderous roar, and from there a berserker came out. However, it appeared that the berserker wasn’t intentionally smashing the wall. The berserker flew out with a somersault, and its head struck uncouthly at the corridor’s opposite side with a tumble.

It was as though its charging momentum was made use of to send it flying and crashed into the wall. That conjecture was proven to be correct by the man in the white doctor’s robe that jumped out from the broken wall right after that.

“My stomach got cold inside here because I need to imitate a matador against that berserker.”

The man made such frivolous talk while kicking the berserker’s arm that was trying to stand up. When its balance broke, the man drilled its head with point-blank range shooting and finished it off with certainty. The

berserker fell down like a puppet with its string cut, and then it withered up while spewing white smoke. The man in the white doctor’s robe attentively put in a bullet toward the heart’s location from the back.

「GAAAAAAAH!」

「Oops. Spare me from any more chicken races, okay.」

One of the berserkers aiming at Kimberly roared and charged toward the man in the white doctor’s robe. Immediately following that, a black object lightly flew in the air.

「Wai-, you stupid bastard-」

Kimberly got down in a panic. The next moment, the dim corridor was overrun by an intense flash. The white-robed man was using a flashbang.

Kimberly was sweating coldly that he was crouching defenselessly right beside a berserker while desperately covering his eyes, then gunshots roared four times in the corridor that was filled with a flash. At the same time, a heavy crashing sound resounded for the second time.

(He sniped in this kind of situation!?)

Kimberly shuddered in his heart while sweating coldly at the white-robed man’s skill. However, he still jumped out by relying on the slight presence that he felt.

「Uwah, that’s dangerous-」

「Chih, I missed-」

The flash was already settling down, and the dim corridor came back into view. The two people crossed through each other among the falling bodies of berserkers, and now they were opposite each other. The white-robed man that easily slaughtered three berserkers tried to cross in front of Kimberly to go down the corridor, but Kimberly assaulted him with the knife that he was secretly carrying.

Kimberly already perceived that it was impossible to catch this man for interrogation due to the difference in strength between the two of them, but rather than letting him escape just like this, he thought that he would instead kill the man and search for even a scrap of information about who this man was from his dead body.

However, the attack that was filled with that killing intent was easily dodged. Kimberly reflexively clicked his tongue.

Although, as expected, perhaps the man in the white robe didn’t expect Kimberly to attack using his instincts when his eyes were burned to some extent by the flashbang and he kept them closed, the man exposed a slightly pained expression.

「ts, ……you, that face」

「……Geh, this is bad!? Aa, can you pretend not seeing anything?」

The white-robed man still talked with a light tone. The place on his face that was grazed by Kimberly’s knife had something dangling down. However, it wasn’t blood. There was unharmed skin that could be seen from under the peeled off skin.

It was obviously a disguise mask that was using advanced technology. It was something on the level that couldn’t be

prepared by a low-level organization.

(Wait, wait a second. He is using a disguise of this level just for sneaking into a university’s research facility? He is extremely vigilant toward having his face known? In addition, he knew about Berserk’s existence and acted in this timing. Also, an organization that has a skilled member above my level?)

Kimberly stared fixedly at the white-robed man who was holding his head in exaggeration while saying「Ooh my, goddd!」because of his failure of exposing the fact that he was in disguise. And then, with the information that he had as the premise, and the speech and conduct of the man that he felt déjà vu from……

「You……don’t tell me……」

The eyes of Kimberly, who guessed the true identity of the white-robed man, turned round. The man was flustered even more at Kimberly’s state that was like that. The man muttered in small voice「Even though I’m already at risk of getting fired from making this great failure, seriously spare me from more than this!」before turning on his heel.

「Wait-」

「I’m not waiting! This is out of control already! I have taken care of all the first berserkers already, take care of the rest, please! This is what you call collective responsibility!」

「Don’t screw-――――」

Kimberly tried to chase after the man, but the white-robed man vanished in the blink of an eye deep in the corridor ahead. Furthermore, with some bad timing, more berserkers

showed their figures from the opposite side of the corridor that Kimberly was forced to stop running in.

"This is really a shitty B-class movie. This one and that one are just doing whatever they please."

With a pained expression, Kimberly gave a sidelong glance at the berserkers charging at him while roaring. He then dashed up the stairs to the floor above.

At the very least, he had to secure his money tree, the girl that was the creator of "Berserk".

Part 2

On the other side, when the berserkers were starting to scream for the first time, Emily and others were tormented by bewilderment, anxiety, and fretfulness while hesitating on what to do, whether they should go out to look at the situation or not, or was this the diversion caused by Rod and the others, or if they should get out of the research building right away.

At the very least, this surely wasn’t the diversion that they planned when the noticed Kimberly’s state before this and from how the two agents that came to be the guard replacing him suddenly dashed away in a panic and abandoned their guard duty.

「……Everyone, let’s escape.」

Professor Down made his decision in the middle of the oppressive atmosphere. Hendricks was about to make an objection reflexively, but Professor Down continued his words before Hendricks could form his words.

「This feels too strange to be something caused by Rod and the others. Perhaps something else is happening right now. However, it’s certain that the agents are directing their attention elsewhere. I think we shouldn’t let go of this chance.」

Those words caused everyone to look at each other’s face. And then, they nodded at Professor Down’s suggestion even while feeling anxious.

They slowly and quietly opened the door, and after confirming that there was nothing strange going on outside, Emily and the others came out. Violent sounds of clatters and impacts resounded from the corridor. Emily’s body spontaneously froze from that. Hendricks showed his usual kind smile at Emily who was showing a small fear while her body stooped a little, their eyes met each other.

「It’s fine Emily. We are with you. Surely everything will go smoothly.」

「Senpai……」

Emily looked anxious, but she obediently nodded. Hendricks then tousled her head in encouragement.

「Wait Rick. Don’t tousle Emily’s hair like that. Good grief, you just don’t understand how to treat a girl.」

「Oi oi, Lizzie. If Hendricks understood how a woman’s heart worked, then you two would’ve already been married a long time――」

「Stupid Milo-, close that mouth of yours!」

The cheerful overseas student Milo ate Lizzie’s slap with a ‘hebuu’ and his body half-rotated. But he kept rotating for a half more and returned to face the front and sent Lizzie a wide grin. A vein emerged on Lizzie’s forehead.

Seeing the exchange between the seniors――no, her big brothers and big sisters who were always jovial, Emily’s anxiety was also eliminated a bit. She said「Thank you」inside her heart while returning back a powerful smile in place of words of gratitude.

Emily and the others arrived in front of the staircase.

「Then, Hendricks, Lizzie, Milo. We'll rely on you to recover the research data and the drugs. Emily and I will leave from here. Let's meet again at the meeting place.」

「Yes, teacher.」

Hendricks replied with a determined expression at Professor Down's instruction. Lizzie and Milo also nodded.

Like that, Hendricks and the others went upstairs while Emily and Professor Down went downstairs. However, just before they could do that, *zushin-, zushin-* a sound that was like something heavy hitting the floor resounded from downstairs.

「What?」

Hendricks and Milo looked at each other's face, and they peeked downstairs hesitatingly. Even while they were doing that, the heavy sound was gradually getting louder while transmitting vibration regularly.

「He, hey, Hendricks. You see, I, feel like I have seen this kind of scene, in a movie before……」

「He, hee? What, coincidence. I, I also recall something like that.」

The two were feeling cold sweats drenching their body while they couldn't take their gaze away from downstairs. However, they muttered in a small volume simultaneously.

——Juras○c Park

They said.

「This ain't a joke. Why, the hell. Why, are those guys……」

「Ha, haha. I wonder, if this is still better, than a T-Rex……」

Milo stepped back while shuddering in fear from that――the berserker that finally showed its appearance. Hendricks also stepped back while making a dry laugh.

Right after that, a scream that pierced the air was raised.

「ts, RUN-」

Hendricks’s voice warned so loud that it felt like his throat would tear. Milo came back to his senses as though he just got punched while Emily and the others who were similarly stiffened also turned on their heels and started running through the corridor.

「Go down from the other staircase!」

「No, use the elevator! Get into that!」

Lizzie mentioned the other staircase at the end of the research building. But midway, Hendricks saw the floor display of the elevator and wasted no time to tell the others about the change of plan.

Emily jumped forward and pushed the elevator button. The elevator was currently on a floor above them. The sound of the elevator operating sounded a beat later after the button was pushed. Emily and the others would be able to ride the elevator in just a few more seconds. But, right now, those seconds felt like an eternity to them.

「Quick-, quick-!!」

Emily spoke impatiently while pushing the button repeatedly.

A roar reverberated. The berserker climbed the stairs and arrived at the floor where Emily and the others were at right now. The figure of Emily and the others were reflected in its bloodshot eyes. And then, it screamed once more. However, this time the sound was accompanied by the shaking of the floor from its forward charge.

At the same time, the elevator door opened. They all rushed inside and pushed the button with all their might. Seeing the door slowly began to close was really frustrating. However, it closed just in time.

Just before the door closed, the wicked look of the berserker peeked in from between the door’s gap and a fist approached, but the door closed completely. A thunderous sound and impact ran through the door. Milo and Hendricks fell on their butt seeing the door now became greatly dented.

Lizzie was covering her mouth with her hands; her expression showed how she couldn’t believe what had happened. And then, Professor Down was dumbfounded while muttering「Impossible. This……what happened……」.

While the floor display of the elevator was slowly heading to the lower floor, Emily let out her words using a voice that was filled with uneasiness.

「We, we have to contact the police. After that the security bureau too. After that, after that, the research building needs to be sealed……but, the way to seal it is……」

That voice caused Hendricks and the others to return to their senses quickly. Their little sister was desperately thinking even while they were in a stupor. That fact made them recover some part of their composure.

「We don’t know what happened but, it’s unthinkable that Rod and the others were the one scattering「H3-α4」——no, 「Berserk」. Anyway, let’s get outside for the moment and then contact the police. If they don’t send armed men here……」

「……Yeah. We don’t know how much「Berserk」is scattered, but it will be a disaster if it gets outside.」

「Are Dennis and the others safe……. As for the security bureau, surely Agent Warren has contacted them though.」

Hendricks and the others desperately calmed down themselves while talking to each other. Before long the elevator arrived on the first floor. The door opened, and then they caught sight of armed men in janitor uniforms a slight distance away. Those must be the bodyguard agents from the security bureau.

With that conclusion, Milo felt a slight relieve, and then he rushed out of the elevator in order to seek help from them.

「You guys! Help us! Upstairs there is berse——」

Milo’s figure disappeared.

「Eh?」

It was unknown who whispered that. Hendricks came out of the elevator with shaky footsteps and turned his gaze to the right.

He already knew. Right after Milo got outside, something big nabbed Milo from the side. He knew——that this something was a berserker.

「A, a, aah」

Hendricks trembling voice echoed. His eyes opened widely and he sunk down on the floor as though strength left his waist. He didn’t avert his gaze away. He couldn’t.

He couldn’t avert his gaze from the figure of his friend that got his head crushed. He couldn’t avert his gaze, from the monster straddling his friend while madly punching with its fist that was like a rock.

The roar of the berserker that easily snatched Milo’s life reverberated. It sounded like the war cry of victory.

The agents fired. From the direction they fired at, a further two, three more berserkers appeared.

“Senpai!”

“Rick-”

The agents fired blindly in a panic. Several of the bullets hit near the elevator, but even so, Hendricks kept standing stock still without being able to avert his eyes from the tragic appearance of his friend. Emily and Lizzie jumped at Hendricks who was like that. And then, both of them dragged him back into the elevator.

“Milo is, Milo is-”

“Rick-, get a hold of yourself!”

Lizzie scolded Hendricks who was holding his head in panic. A painful slap flew onto Hendricks’s cheek. Hendricks returned to his senses due to the pain running through his cheek and the expression of Lizzie before his eyes that looked like it would burst into tears at any moment.

「Right now……that’s no good. You still, cannot break down yet. Live, search for help, after that…….protect our little sister! Think just those for now! You are a big brother, right?!」

「Lizzie……yeah, you’re right. Sorry.」

Hendricks stood up and turned his gaze at the little sister who was standing still in the elevator’s corner.

(She looks like a corpse. Shit-, it’s just as Lizzie said. I’ve got to pull myself together-)

The look of Emily’s expression that lost color was certainly like a corpse inside a coffin. Hendricks who treated her like family all this time understood really clearly that Emily now was getting crushed by guilt.

The drug that she created turned a lot of people into monsters. And then, those monsters finally killed a person that she loved like a brother. That was really no different than Emily herself getting killed……

Of course, from the viewpoint of Hendricks and the others, that was nothing more than barking up the wrong tree. But, surely, even if they said「This isn’t Emily’s fault」, their words wouldn’t reach the heart of Emily who was drowning in guilt.

That was why,

「Emily, I want you to lend us your strength.」

「Eh?」

Hendricks entreated to Emily.

□It’s only Emily who can stop □Berserk□. There is no doubt that we will be unable to make the antidote. It’s only you who had grasped the whole thing and possess the insight that we won’t even be able to imagine, that can stop the monster that *we* created.□

□Senpai……□

□Please, Emily. Save us, save everyone. Lend us, your power.□

There was no time for them to stop still. There wasn’t any time to drown in guilt. Exert Emily Grant’s whole strength. Hendricks who pleaded like that made Emily notice his true intention.

Emily’s almond-shaped eyes sharpened even more fiercely. She wiped her eyes with the sleeve of her kinked lab coat and slapped her own cheeks so hard that it made a sound. And then, she gave a sharp nod at Hendricks.

Hendricks looked fondly at Emily’s gaze, and he nodded back, and then he suggested that they took a look at their own laboratory. He was thinking of the possibility that perhaps Dennis and the others or Agent Warren returned there.

Of course, there was the possibility that the berserker before this was still there. Therefore, they had to stay on guard so that they could evacuate back into the elevator anytime.

However, when they peeked out of the elevator, what entered their eyes was——a disastrous sight.

□Sa, m?□

□A, e, a……this is, lies, right?□

There was the figure of Sam who had been reduced into a berserker, and then the figure of Jessica who was dangled in midair with her neck broken. And then, there was the figure of Dennis soaked in a sea of blood at the side, and the figure of Rod sitting down while leaning on the wall. ——It was really, a nightmare.

Right after that, the elevator that had its button being pushed by Emily so that they could escape anytime was suddenly assaulted by an impact. *zuhin-* Something fell on the elevator from above. The elevator was making an unpleasant sound while sinking below.

At the same time, a roar and an impact struck the elevator's ceiling. The elevator was dented with each roar. It was clear that a berserker was invading from above the ceiling.

-, Emily! Teacher! Get out quickly!

Hendricks and Lizzie stretched their hands out to Emily and Professor Down in panic. The elevator entrance had turned narrow like a guillotine. Emily and Professor Down crawled out from there desperately.

The next moment, the elevator finally surpassed its endurance limit and fell below with a screech. The berserker that was on its ceiling reached out its hand and grasped the edge of the elevator entrance that was still opened.

Emily and the others moved away from the entrance in panic, but there was no way that such a commotion wouldn't attract the attention of the berserker that was once Sam.

Sam threw away Jessica like a doll and raised a groan. And then, a berserker crept up from the elevator.

In this hopelessly deathly situation, a gunshot suddenly rang.

□DAMN ITTTTTTTTT-□

The one who yelled in a frenzy like that while pulling the trigger toward Sam——was Rod. He kept leaning on the wall while still sitting down, perhaps he had no strength to stand up anymore, yet he was still pulling the trigger of the gun that he likely borrowed from a dead agent.

It seemed that Sam whose attention was taken by Emily and the others got taken unaware by this surprise attack. The moment he was about to turn toward Rod, one of the fired bullets pierced the side of his head, and he fell down. His body was smoking white while rapidly withering.

Hendricks and the others had no word toward the figure of their important companion that was so miserable it was painful to look at, and then, Rod who was the one that did that was crying while muttering□Damn it……□one more time.

□Rod-oniichan!□

□-, Rod!□

Emily rushed ahead. She dashed toward Rod who was dropping the handgun powerlessly. Hendricks and the others were also sprinting to Rod’s side in a panic.

Midway, Hendricks took a look at the condition of the fallen Dennis but……there was a single shot in his temple. He had already expired. And then, looking at Dennis’s figure that was smoking even though it was only a little, Hendricks guessed how Dennis was already infected.

「……Den, nis, he did it, by himself. He got splashed, by Sam's blood……, midway here, he picked……the gun…… that was why, he said, he didn't want to become a monster……and he」

The gasping Rod was sending his gaze at Dennis with a hollow look. It seemed that it was Dennis who dealt with himself. Dennis and Rod always quarreled when they met each other, they weren't compatible with each other at all, but even so, they were "buddies". Surely the feeling inside Rod's chest was something that couldn't be expressed by words at all.

「You idiot Dennis. ……When I go to the other side……I'll yell at……you again. ……I'm going, to beat you……up」

「Enough already-, don't talk, Rod!」

「Rod-oniichan! Don't, please don't! You must not die!」

「Stupid Rod! Get a hold of yourself!」

Emily and the others clung to Rod. 'Gofuh' Rod vomited out blood while making a wry smile. The shadow of death was emerging on his face. Looking at his caved-in chest and his stomach that looked discolored, it was clear that his internal organs had received fatal damage.

No matter how they looked at it, Rod was already beyond help.

Surely even Rod himself understood that. His gaze was calm in acceptance while his trembling hand patted Emily's head.

「……Sorry, yeah, Emily. This is, our fault…..because, we did……something, unnecessary……but, we wanted to do something……really, sorry」

「No-. This isn’t Rod-oniichan’s fault! I, I-」

Rod’s hand fell down limply.

――Youu, live on

Those were Rod’s last words.

Emily and the others were dumbfounded. Their companions who were like family, who were laughing with each other only just now, were gone already. That fact, that reality, they couldn’t accept it.

But, reality wouldn’t give any consideration to their feelings.

The berserker that crawled up from the elevator showed up. Its bloodshot eye glint captured Emily and the others as its prey without any room for hesitation.

Hendricks stood up. And then, he slowly pulled out the handgun that Dennis’s hand was still holding, and he ascertained its magazine. Hendricks sent only his words to Emily and the others without looking back.

「I’ll lure that guy away somehow. During that time, you guys escape.」

Emily and Lizzie reflexively were going to shout just what was he talking about, but Hendricks didn’t allow any objection.

「Go-. I’ll meet up with you guys again for sure!」

Saying that Hendricks charged at the berserker alone. Emily yelled「Senpai-」and she was going to rush out, but Professor Down pinioned her from behind. Emily struggled, but when

she was yelled at with「Don’t waste Hendricks’s feelings here!」, strength left her.

「……We are going!」

「Wha-, Lizzie-nee!?」

At the corridor ahead, Hendricks was shooting while he passed through the berserker’s side with a slide. And then he fired again to attract the berserker’s attention. The berserker turned on its heel and determined Hendricks as its target. During that time, with the monster between them, Hendricks and Lizzie’s gaze crossed each other.

That was enough.

Lizzie grasped Emily’s hand, and she turned around. Emily made an expression that was unable to believe the actions of Lizzie who should be harboring feelings for Hendricks, but she shut up when she saw the blood flowing from Lizzie’s lips and her bitten lips.

Emily and the others ran off with the figure of Hendricks running to the other side of the corridor behind them.

「Let’s use the emergency staircase. The first floor is dangerous, so let’s use the plumbing pipe from the second floor to go down.」

Lizzie wordlessly nodded at Professor Down’s words, and she pulled Emily’s hand.

They opened the door to the emergency staircase and ran down toward the second floor. But, right now the research building was a berserker nest. Their developed sense of hearing could sense the prey’s existence even across walls.

「GAAAAAAAAH!!」

「KYAAAH」

「UWAH」

The door of the emergency stair was blown away together with a roar. The steel door that was flown together with its clasp became a brutal weapon, and in a stroke of bad luck, it separated them from each other. Professor Down fell on his butt on the stairs that connected the upper floor, while Lizzie and Emily fell on the staircase landing because they embraced each other.

The eye glint of the berserker caught Professor Down.

「Do, don’t come-」

Professor Down stood up with a yell and escaped by climbing up the stairs. Lizzie and Emily also stood up desperately, but because the steel door stood in their way and they couldn’t pass through, they had no other choice but to run down the stairs.

The berserker seemed to choose the group with more prey. He sent a crushing blow in the direction of Lizzie and Emily.

「Emily-. Don’t stop no matter what!」

「Lizzie-nee-」

The two somehow escaped from the range the fist could reach and immediately stood up again even though they were entangled with each other due to the impact. However, the berserker immediately caught up to them. It really looked unlikely that they would be able to escape to the second floor.

Lizzie instantly made an expression that was filled with resolve. Emily who noticed that was caught by a bad premonition. Lizzie pulled at Emily’s hand and wasted no time to open the door right below them and ran through it. The berserker destroyed the steel door again and entered the floor to chase after Emily and Lizzie.

Lizzie who was pulling Emily’s hand continued to run without hesitation as though she had a destination in mind.

「Lizzie-nee!」

「It will be fine! I swear I’ll protect you!」

Lizzie turned the corner several times to shake off the footsteps resounding behind them before she came to a stop in front of a certain door. And then, she desperately suppressed her fingers that were trembling from tension and fear while she entered the password into the electronic lock that was installed beside the door.

The door opened accompanied by small mechanical sound. Lizzie pushed in Emily inside. Emily who had no doubt that they would be hiding together inside turned pale seeing Lizzie didn’t enter. She guessed what Lizzie’s intention was.

Toward such Emily, Lizzie showed her a gentle smile even with a stiff face while opening her mouth in persuasion.

「Emily, hide here. You absolutely must not go out.」

「Wa, wait, Lizzie-nee-. We can――」

「The door here is sturdier than any other room, that’s why it won’t be broken down that easily. The security bureau people should arrive soon, that’s why you need to do your best to endure until that time.」

□If that’s the case then Lizzie-nee too, quickly get in!□

□I’m sorry, that guy has to be lured away. There are no more places to escape to inside here, so in the worst case scenario that that guy notices then that will be the end. That’s why, okay?□

□Who cares about that! It doesn’t matter, just come in quickly!□

Emily desperately pulled at Lizzie’s hand, but Lizzie smiled sweetly and pushed her down on her butt.

□It’s okay. I’ll find that idiot Rick and teacher, and we will return here together. So believe in your big sis.□

□Lizzie-nee-□

Emily reached out her hand. But the steel door obstructed that. Emily’s small fist desperately punched on the steel door, but of course, it didn’t even twitch. Yet even while losing composure, Emily recalled in a flash that the door could be opened from inside too, and her hand reached out to the door button but,

□Emily-!□

□-□

Lizzie’s angry voice resounded from behind her. Emily’s body spontaneously stiffened. This time a gentle voice reached her.

□No matter what happens, never give up. If it’s Emily, then it absolutely will be fine, I, we all believe that.□

□Lizzie-nee……□

Those words of her big sister that came from across the steel door made Emily’s hand that was reaching to the button to fall powerlessly. Hot tears were falling along her cheeks without end.

“I love you, Emily. Don’t forget that. No matter what happens, you are the little sister that we are proud of.”

“Lizzie-nee-”

A roar reverberated. Lizzie’s presence was getting farther away. A beat later, heavy footsteps were passing through in front of the door.

Emily backed off unsteadily before she powerlessly sank down on the floor helplessly. And then, she hugged her knees and buried her face in it, both her hands held her head, and she turned small.

Emily waited, obeying the command of her beloved big sister.

However, what returned was only the completely transformed Hendricks.

Emily’s important people, in the end, not a single one of them came back.

Part 3

(This is baadd……. Heavy. This is just awfully heavy. Honestly, that’s too heavy that I want to run away right now……)

After she finished recalling the past, Emily hugged her knees once more, buried her face, and turned small. Kousuke was sighing inside his heart while looking at Emily. Honestly speaking, he couldn’t help but feel sympathy for Emily’s circumstance. Emily had even forgotten that she wasn’t wearing anything down there that it felt like her secret place down there could be visible with her current sitting position, but right now Kousuke was in the middle of much regret after hearing the story that he didn’t even have the composure to be aware of such thing.

“When we arrived, there was almost no survivors anywhere inside the research building. We met up with Kimberly who ran out of bullets and went into hiding; then after we shared information, we split up to search for Doctor Grant, I managed to secure her but……”

“That handsome bastard betrayed you then.”

“Yes. It was when we met up with our comrades and gathered on the first floor to escape. We were surrounded by berserkers and put up a fight, and when we somehow managed to secure an escape route, we were gunned down by Kimberly and an armed group from somewhere that had replaced the bodyguard agents.”

Because of the attack at that time, the agents who came for the pick-up were annihilated. Vanessa was able to survive even while getting wounded on her side because she was immediately covered by Hughes. But in exchange, he was also lethally wounded. Even so, he fought hard in order to let Vanessa and Emily escape.

As a result, due to Hughes's last stand, Vanessa and Emily managed to escape.

There, Kousuke spoke his doubt.

「Hm? After that, you didn't contact the security bureau right away?」

Kousuke witnessed the car chase this afternoon. From the story that he heard, the incident occurred at midnight. That meant that Vanessa and Emily were fighting alone for more than half a day.

「My smartphone that can connect with the private line was broken when we were ambushed……. Doctor Grant's phone also seemed to break somewhere in the middle of our escape.」

「You can just use a public phone, right?」

「That's true. I also tried to do that. However, that……it's embarrassing but, after I performed first aid on my wound, I fainted.」

It appeared that Vanessa ran out of strength because she even performed the bullet extraction inside the car. After that Emily nursed Vanessa for the whole night.

And then, the next morning, Vanessa who woke up from her fainting finally made contact with the headquarters, but

right after, perhaps they were detected or something, they were assaulted by Kimberly and his group then.

After that, they were chased around relentlessly without any time to meet up with the people from headquarters. Also, the meeting site that was decided beforehand was also known by Kimberly so it couldn’t be used, and that was why they were doing nothing but running away.

「I see. ……Then, what are you going to do from here? The security bureau seems to be suspicious too, right?」

「That’s right. However, it’s also the fact that we won’t be able to do anything by ourselves. It’s only in a movie when an individual can oppose an organization as their opponent. ……We have to determine, the true intention of the chief.」

In this situation, even though the security bureau seemed suspicious, it was unthinkable that the whole place was pitch black. If it was just as Kimberly insinuated, that the security bureau was pulling the strings of the attack, then Chief Magdanese was exceedingly close with “black”. In that case, then Vanessa would ask for help from bureau members listed up inside her head that seem to be trustworthy, and also from other places like the intelligence department and so on.

But if it was the opposite, that Chief Magdanese was “white”, they would be able to get a rescue from the most direct place.

In any case, in order to investigate the organization behind Kimberly and further, to oppose them, Vanessa would need to obtain the power of an organization too. Because of that, no matter what, it was essential to clearly determine the position of Chief Magdanese, whether she was white or black.

「First, it’s important to classify which is the enemy and which is an ally. I plan to move with that direction, so during that time, I want Mr. K to protect Doctor Grant.」

Kousuke scratched his cheek with a troubled look after listening to Vanessa’s plan. And then, he was about to open his mouth to say something. However, his voice that was going to sing an objection was interrupted.

「I’m not looking for protection or anything.」

「Doctor Grant?」

Vanessa turned her gaze in surprise. There, Emily, who had turned small, was slowly lifting up her face and looked back. The dark flame dwelling inside those eyes, which contradicted her frail atmosphere before this, caused Vanessa to gulp unconsciously.

「That drug,『Berserk』, it’s something that mustn’t exist in this world. It has to be erased from this world, all of it without leaving anything behind. I who created it, have to erase it no matter what.」

「That’s……」

「I absolutely don’t want to be just protected, only waiting for the situation to end without understanding anything. That’s why, Vanessa. Please, bring me along. I want to ascertain with my own eyes, who was the one that spread around『Berserk』, and, what will happen from now on.」

「……My apologies but, Doctor Grant. You are――」

「A burden? I don’t think so. 『Berserk』is a defective merchandise that was created by chance. Whether it’s to improve it or to make its antidote, those are out of the

question without me. In other words, I am the best shield you can ask for.

Vanessa was greatly troubled by Emily’s point. Indeed, for the people who were seeking Emily’s knowledge and ability, Emily’s life was something they had to absolutely protect. To put it another way, if she turned Emily into a shield, then they wouldn’t be able to pull the trigger.

If Vanessa said that she would search for information against an organization in this isolated situation, then indeed it could be said to be a useful card. However, even though she was fighting to protect Emily by nature, if she made her into something like a shield than that would mean putting the cart before the horse.

Besides, there was nothing absolute in a battlefield, on top of that, an “accident” could possibly happen. And even if those didn’t happen, the enemy had no reason not to make the decision “it’s fine if she is at least alive”.

For Vanessa, taking Emily together with her from here on was something that couldn’t be permitted. However, even with all those reasons, why she was unable to simply reject and leave her was surely because of Emily’s eyes. If she forced her to stay behind, then she would run off by herself. That risk was something possible with the current Emily.

How should she persuade her……Vanessa was at a loss, but before Vanessa could say something, the one who spoke to Emily who said rash things, was Kousuke who was being reserved.

Look here……as I thought, something like this, I think it’s better if we leave it to the pro, you know? Emily is a researcher, right? A researcher has their own battlefield that can only be fought by a researcher, isn’t it? If Vanessa-san

finds an ally and they prepare a place for you to research 「Berserk」, then Emily’s battle would be from there on, isn’t that right?」

For Kousuke, it would be the best for him if Vanessa could quickly find an ally organization that could give heavy protection to Emily. Because at that point in time, Kousuke would become unnecessary and he could leave. Thinking so, Kousuke tried to back up Vanessa, but

「No.」

His opinion was rejected with one word. Emily didn’t even meet his gaze.

「Saying no like that, are you a child throwing a tantrum, huh? You understand, right? You said you are going to become a shield or whatever, but you are virtually still a burden. There is no way Vanessa-san will be able to use Emily as a shield. That’s why here you shou――」

「If I said no then no-!」

Hearing Kousuke’s words, this time Emily’s almond-shaped eyes glared fiercely while saying a rejection that sounded completely childish. As expected, Kousuke was irritated hearing Emily’s words that weren’t even an objection but simply selfishness.

「Seriously, this isn’t the time to throw a tantrum. How about you understand your own position a bit more? You are genius, right? Then at least understand that much.」

「……」

Kousuke’s obviously pathetic atmosphere until now faded, and in its place, he replied with an expression and tone that

were visibly irritated. Emily trembled in shock from that. However, the flame dwelling in her eyes didn’t die down for even a bit. She couldn’t say any rebuttal and tears were oozing out slightly from her eyes, but even so, she still radiated a rebellion to Kousuke.

Kousuke continued his words while holding down his irritated feelings toward the unreasonable Emily.

「Look here……if you keep being obstinate, and Vanessa-san get hurt again because of that――」

「What’s wrong with being obstinate, huh!」

Emily interrupted Kousuke’s words and exploded.「OoU」 Kousuke raised a strange voice in shock. Emily approached Kousuke who was like that and gripped his collar.

「I know already! It’s better for Vanessa-san to move by herself! That I won’t be useful if I’m with her! I know that! But, I still cannot help it! Because, because-」

「Ca, calm do――」

Kousuke caught Emily’s shoulders to try to calm her down, but right after that, he tasted an impact that shot through his heart from the words that Emily yelled next.

「Everyone, they died!」

「-」

Emily who was shedding tears with her emotion exploding kept yelling without noticing Kousuke’s condition.

「Everyone, everyone died there! In order to let me get away! In order to let me stay alive! Everyone died! They

died there……

——I told you they died! Captain Meld and Alan-san and the others, all of them! All the knights that entered the labyrinth died! In order to let me get away! Because of my fault! They died! They all died there!

The wailing that he once raised was resurrected in his head.

I was entrusted. Everyone, they entrusted me with their hope. I, I cannot stop. Or else, or else everyone……

He was entrusted. At that time, Kousuke was entrusted with his comrade's hope. The knights, they entrusted their hope to Kousuke. They kept him alive and let him escape, just him——

As a result, he could save his friends but, Emily……

Kousuke stared at Emily. She was hanging her head down, clinging onto Kousuke while sobbing. At the side, Vanessa's hand reached out to stop Emily, but when she saw Kousuke's face, her breath got caught unconsciously. Vanessa didn't understand how to describe it; it was a mysteriously transparent expression.

Kousuke gently caressed Emily's head. And then, to the surprised Emily, he spoke with a voice that was calm, and yet it mysteriously penetrated deep in her heart.

I'll become your strength.

……Eh?

Emily slowly lifted up her disheveled face. Kousuke scooped the tear trickling down her cheek with his finger, and then he smiled with a troubled look.

「I’ll become your strength. I’m not Mr. K though. But, surely, it will turn out well.」

「Mis, ter K――」

「It’s Kousuke. Emily. I’m Kousuke.」

The tear on her cheek was gently wiped. It was like, the warmth of her brothers and sisters.

Emily was half in a daze while she repeated Kousuke’s name 「Kou, suke?」just like how she heard it.

Even Vanessa at the side was wide-eyed. Kousuke showed a grin that was full of confidence and declared.

「It will be okay, Emily. After all I’m――」

――The right-hand man of the demon king-sama, yeah?

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The next update is planned for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 206

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Just a Second-Hand Telling From a Friend

Part 1

The time was early in the morning where the sun still hadn’t ascent to the peak. The cool and clear air felt pleasant on the skin, and the eastern sky that was starting to grow light was gentle to the eyes. The sound of human activity began to be audible from the townscape of old alleys that were made from brickwork here and there.

Although, as expected, there was almost nobody walking outside. The only living thing outside was only a dog with its head plunging into a fast-food bag thrown near the garbage bin that looked like an old drum can.

That dog suddenly lifted its head with a snap. The paper bag attached to its snout looked like a mask that covered its head. The dog hurriedly shook its head left and right to shake off the paper bag.

Right after that, the thing that made the dog react——a single car stopped right beside the dog with intense breaking. It made a *kikit-* sound from its break which caused the dog to twitch and run away at full speed.

「Doctor Grant, Mr. K. This way.」

The one who got down from the driving seat was Vanessa. Her movement had a sharpness in it that was unthinkable coming from a person who had a gunshot in her side even if it had been given first-aid already. Actually, medicine from another world was smeared on her gauze which displayed quite the restorative strength……but the person herself

didn’t know that. She was only thinking that『Oh my, me. I am more sturdy than I thought……』, like so.

『……Heey, is that stubbornness or something? Or else is that harassment to me? How many times do I need to tell you that I’m not Mr. K until you get it?』

Kousuke was piercing Vanessa with an extraordinarily reproachful gaze while getting down from the backseat. Mysteriously, no matter how much he appealed that ‘I’m not that up-and-coming assassin-san you know!’, Vanessa still addressed Kousuke as Mr. K.

In her own way, Vanessa also thought『By any chance, is this seriously the wrong person?』just a smidgen but……last night, from Kousuke’s behavior, that said『I’ll become your strength』, she then changed her mind that ‘just as I thought he is really Mr. K.’ Surely he simply hated that nickname Mr. K, but there was no doubt that he was a virtuoso hitman, she thought.

And so, she unconsciously called him Mr. K. But unexpectedly, words that backed-up Kousuke against Vanessa who was like that were spoken out.

『That’s right, Vanessa. After all, Mr. K has finally taught us his name. Let’s properly call him, Ko, Ko Ko, Kousuke okay.』

Emily, who was also in the back seat with Kousuke, got down, but for some reason, she looked shy. She advised Vanessa to call Kousuke with his name while stuttering. Emily also had the same thinking as Vanessa, that Kousuke wasn’t an average civilian. She thought that Kousuke had taught them his name that was concealed by the initial. That was why she thought that they should call him by his name after he had finally told them.

Emily had strangely taken a distance from Kousuke since last night. Kousuke himself was thinking「……Now I’ve really done it. Just what is the right-hand man of the demon king? She must be creeped out. That was just nonsense there. The Lord inside of me, it peeked out its damned face randomly like that……」, he believed that Emily was surely thinking him creepy and put some distance between them, so he was a bit shocked with this cover fire of Emily’s, and he smiled widely in joy.

Seeing that, Emily behaved in a strange way. Her gaze was intensely wandering to empty air. And then, perhaps something in her heart had reached its limit, her cheeks reddened, and her almond-shaped eyes glared fiercely while she threatened「Don’t look here!」. Her hairs stood on end *fusha—* as though she was the great haughty cat itself. Her trademark side ponytail turned unruly.

Kousuke felt down. On top of having a younger girl putting distance between their heart (Kousuke was thinking so), he was also told「Wait, can the chuuni bastard not look at me like that? It’s seriously gross!」(That was how Kousuke heard it). The mini Kousuke inside his heart was already going ‘orz’. (TN: orz = Watch the shape, it’s like someone on all fours.)

「Excuse me, our situation is comparatively urgent here, so if you two can put off your youth’s springtime for later……」

「The, there is no youth’s springtime here! What are you saying!」

Vanessa was sending a lukewarm gaze at Emily even while she scratched on her cheek looking troubled. The redness of Emily’s face turned a deeper red. Her *fusha—* ratio also rose up. She might let fly her cat punch before long like this.

As though to say that she couldn’t associate more than this with the other two, Emily flapped her white lab coat that she still didn’t take off even now and entered the alley with loud and fast steps.

「Doctor Grant.」

「What now!」

「It’s not that way, but the next alley.」

「……」

Emily came to an abrupt stop. And then she backed up without turning around before starting to walk with loud stomps to the left while she went red up to her ears.

「Doctor Grant!」

「What now!」

「Not the left one, it’s the right alley.」

「……」

A high-speed turn. Her lab coat stylishly flapped! However, the shame of the person was already at max.

Vanessa and Kousuke looked at each other’s face and smiled wryly at each other before following behind Emily.

By the way, this was one of Vanessa’s personal hideouts, so Emily wasn’t familiar with the area. And so, Emily who was leading in the front set off into an unknown place three times after that.

In the end, when she finally noticed that she could just follow behind Vanessa, Emily had become a white ghost with

her lab coat covering her whole body from the head. ……It appeared that the lab coat had this kind of use too.

Part 2

The wooden door opened slowly while making a small sound *kii*. Vanessa’s face peeked inside fully on guard. There was no sign of anyone inside the room.

Kousuke and Emily also entered the room after Vanessa urged them. Inside the room, there were signs of someone living there quite often for a hideout. There was a table and a leather sofa that looked like they were often used, and magazines were scattered randomly on the table.

「It seems my friend is away. Well, she is often going outside, so perhaps this is natural.」

Vanessa who had just taken a quick look at the other rooms and bathroom returned to the living room while saying that. It appeared that this hideout hadn’t been discovered by the enemy.

「This is the room of Vanessa’s friend? Isn’t this a personal hideout that you created by tacit misunderstanding from the security bureau?」

Emily tilted her head while recalling the explanation that she was given before this. Vanessa had lost her weapon. She was unarmed. After this, she would need to do various things like contacting headquarters and probe about the true intentions of Chief Magdanese, but regardless of what she would do, first things first, she needed to procure a weapon.

For that, they made their way to a hideout that Vanessa didn’t report about to even the bureau which she prepared based on the tacit understanding among the security bureau’s staff.

「I am sharing this with my friend. She is a freelancer cameraman that is bustling about everywhere around the clock. We are sharing the duty for maintaining the room, so it works out just right that both of us are similarly out often.」

「H~m」

While Emily nodded in understanding, Kousuke took a magazine off the table with his expression strangely convulsing.

「……I see. So the source of the prejudiced knowledge of Vanessa-san about Japan is that friend is it.」

The magazine in Kousuke’s hand who was whispering something like that, if it was a magazine that young woman read, then normally it would be something like a fashion magazine. However, this magazine had this name written along with a picture of a girl that had colorful hair.

――Anim○e (TN: Animage)

When his gaze dropped further, every single one of the scattered magazines were things that were fully loaded with information of Japanese anime and manga he was familiar with. Inside the room, there were several large bookshelves that were decorated with pretty cloth covers, but Kousuke obeyed his hunch and checked one of them.

As he expected, the content was packed full with Japanese comics, light novels, and anime DVDs.

「What do you think, Mr. K. My friend’s collection is quite something, right? By the way, the three bookshelves over there are my collection.」

「What are you hiding in your hideout……」

Emily passed with a small run in front of the exasperated Kousuke and brushed open the cover of Vanessa’s collection shelves. And then while saying「Hee, so this is Japan’s subculture……」, she took a Japanese manga into her hand with deep interest. It seemed this was her first time seeing something like that.

However, it was an excessively thin book.

「Hinyaah. What’s this!?」

Emily screamed, her face was bright red, and she held the book away as far as possible from her face. The book’s front cover, it should be said that it was immodest, or that it actually easily surpassed such an expression, anyway the picture’s skin exposure rate was too high, and on top of that, there was the illustration of a girl making an outrageous posture drawn on it.

「Aa, Doctor Grant. Please don’t handle it so roughly like that. That’s a treasure you know.」

「Wh, who cares about that-, pervert Vanessa!」

「Why do you even have doujin huh…..」

Emily swung around the thin book with her hand stretched out with all her might while moaning「Uu—」, doing her best so that it wouldn’t enter her sight, but she didn’t show any sign of letting it go. It was unclear whether she was simply handling it more or less carefully because it was Vanessa’s

collection, or perhaps *there was some reason* that made it hard for her to let go of it……

From how she was sending glances at the front cover, surely it was because of the latter. When she noticed Kousuke's awkward gaze, Emily made the excuse「Tha, that's not it! I, I'm not someone like that!」while returning the book in a panic to the bookshelves.

「Doctor Grant. If you have an interest to it, then after we take care of this case, I will lend it to you, so please be patient for now.」

「I'm not impatient or anything! I'm not a pervert! It's true, okay? Kousuke, I'm really, really not like that, okay?」

「Aa, yep.」

Kousuke who didn't know how to react when a younger girl was pleading to him「I'm not a pervert! Believe it!」could only nodded vaguely.

Vanessa sent a glance at Emily who was desperately making an excuse for some reason before she suddenly approached one of the bookshelves. And then, she sent brief glances at Kousuke. She looked like a child that was going to show the toy she took pride in to her parents while saying「Look! Look!」.

Kousuke tilted his head while turning his gaze in that direction. After confirming that, Vanessa pulled out one book from inside the bookshelves, a book titled「Chupacabra Encyclopedia」.

Right after that, the bookshelves started sliding. It made a half-rotation, showed its backside and returned to its original position.

「Se, secret bookshelves?」

Emily also turned her gaze to the bookshelves when she heard Kousuke's whisper. And then, her jaw fell down. There, many firearms were lined up orderly.

「Fufu, surprised, aren't you? But, still not yet. It's still not over with just this.」

The very short haired beauty wearing a black suit was making a triumphant look. While Emily and Kousuke felt some complicated irritation to that face, Vanessa walked toward a bed that was inside a room, and this time she twisted the lampshade of the lamp beside it.

Right after that, the back of the bed sprang up and exposed the firearms stored behind it.

「What do you think? All these hidden armories were made DIY(Do-It-Yourselfer). I spent most of my holidays on this. I threw away all of the summer and winter bonus pay to prepare this prided arrangement of mine. Don't you two feel something seeing this?」

「Holy cow……. Vanessa-san, you, are really something.」

It was settled with this. Inside Vanessa-san's heart, there was a burning soul similar to Kousuke! The "Lord" inside Kousuke suddenly made a nihilistic smile. It came out a bit to the surface at Kousuke's act and speech, which Vanessa nodded at, her face looked like she understood what he felt for some reason. Emily was getting creeped out at the two of them!

Vanessa quickly chose her equipment and stuffed them into her holster and rucksack when she suddenly noticed something.

「……Come to think of it, Mr. K. Are you okay with your gun? Like your bullets or the spare gun……」

That question came because thinking back really carefully, until now, Kousuke didn't show any kind of firearm even once. Far from that, Vanessa who was able to decide whether someone was bringing a weapon or not just from looking at the clothes' surface couldn't sense any presence of arms from Kousuke at all no matter how hard she observed. She thought that he was hiding his weapon really skillfully but……

「? No, I didn't bring anything like a gun though.」

「……Mr. K. Didn't you say that you will become Dr. Grant's strength? It's necessary for us to grasp each other's equipment. It's troubling that you are hiding your capability.」

「No, no, I'm not hiding anything. I'm really not carrying anything like a gun here. Or rather, I told you already that I'm a student in Japan. Please listen to what people say seriously. I'm not an assassin, that's why I didn't bring any guns!」

Mr. K was an assassin that would corner all his targets into death with one shot to the head and one shot to the heart no matter who they were……. Vanessa was making a complicated expression, and not just her but Emily too.

Vanessa wordlessly approached Kousuke and began to pat all over his body. It seemed that she was performing a body check to confirm that he really wasn't carrying a gun. Kousuke felt flurried inside his heart with the body touch that came from a pretty onee-san. For some reason, Emily was hiding her eyes with both her hands saying「A, a, you

even touch that kind of place!?」while in a clichéd act she was peeking from her finger gaps.

「……You are really not bringing anything.」

「That's why, I told you that already.」

Vanessa took a step back while looking somewhat astonished. She made a difficult expression for some reason then she shook her head.

「I understand. You must have some kind of circumstance. I won't pursue it any deeper.」

「Oi, you. What are you doing convincing yourself like that as though assuming that I'm usually carrying it? I'm telling you that I'm never carrying something like that.」

「However, thinking of from here on, you also cannot be unarmed like that. I don't know what you are usually using, but please carry mine if you don't mind something like this.」

「……Like that it suddenly appeared, this unnaturally natural disregard like I'm not here. I know it. That on Earth there is also an evil god like Ehito, and I caught his eyes when I was born.」

Kousuke made a dry smile at Vanessa who was giving him a recommendation 「Would you like a Glock? Or would you like a Beretta? Or else, would you like a Desert Eagle?」while he averted his gaze.

「No, I don't need a gun. It's meaningless even if I carry one. Firing them, well, I got to experience it before, but I couldn't hit anything at all with it. It's also dangerous. Seriously, that guy, just what kind of skill does he have.」

It went without saying just who “that guy” referred to. Kousuke recalled the time when he asked to be allowed to shoot a gun half playing around, and he shook his head from the bad memory. After all, at that time, he got his face struck by the gun due to recoil, then the bullet that should be flying forward miraculously ricocheted and pierced his own buttocks. The used cartridge that flew out in a piping hot state entered into his clothes, and then when he tried to fire again and pulled the trigger, the trigger couldn’t be pulled, but the moment he released his shooting stance to look for the cause, the gun discharged accidentally, and it almost blew away his son on his crotch……

If there was a god of guns, then there was no doubt that he hated Kousuke as though Kousuke had killed his parents. Even that demon king warned him，You, don’t carry a gun anymore. ……You are going to die, by self-explosion，with an expression that was a mix of fear and pity.

The confusion of Emily and Vanessa who didn’t know about that circumstance was increasingly getting deeper. An assassin that wasn’t carrying a gun and made a disgusted expression from the bottom of his heart when he saw a gun……. The words of Kousuke，I’m not Mr. K，raised its head high inside the two. However, at the same time, his confident words，I’ll become your strength，and his accomplishment of enabling them to escape before this forcefully pressed down that raising head with a single push.

Perhaps in the subconscious level they simply weren’t thinking that Kousuke wasn’t Mr. K. If Kousuke wasn’t Mr. K, then that meant that at that time, there didn’t appear anyone that could save Vanessa and Emily who were surrounded by Kimberly’s group, and that meant that they didn’t obtain the cooperation of the real Mr. K.

No matter how skilled Vanessa was, she was someone who was still in the realm of a newcomer. On top of that, she lost all her reliable allies because of another ally’s betrayal. And in this situation where the organization she should rely on itself was suspicious, she was also being chased by an organization of an unknown scale. If in this kind of time what she thought as a trump card was actually just a throwaway card, then there was no way she would want to recognize that even though she understood that being optimistic was taboo in this line of work.

Kousuke put aside the bewilderment of Vanessa and Emily who were like that and spoke indifferently.

「Well, it will be fine. No matter what happens, I’ll manage somehow. Rather than that, let’s get going if you are finished with the preparation. Emily’s house is really far from here, right?」

Emily and Vanessa looked at each other’s face after that urging from Kousuke to depart. Their bafflement still hadn’t disappeared, but seeing Kousuke who declared that he had no problem being unarmed even though he understood that their opponent was an armed group, they decided to postpone their question for the moment. Or rather, it could also be said that they had no choice other than betting that Kousuke was the real Mr. K.

They had talked with each other last night, and they concluded that first, they would head toward Emily’s parents first. Securing and sheltering Emily’s parents who were her weak point was an indispensable matter that had to be prioritized first.

However, Emily’s home was a long way from their current position. It would take more than half a day by car. They

would have to evade places with a high possibility of being monitored like highways and so on. In that case, they would reach the destination around the evening if they took taking a rest into consideration even if they were taking their meal inside the car.

「……You're right. My equipment is in order. Let's depart.」

「Okay. ……But, before that, tell me. Vanessa, why are you bringing those comics along?」

Vanessa excitedly finished her preparation, and then she returned the lovely secret bookshelves and secret bed back to normal. While she was at it, she nonchalantly pulled out several volumes of comics from the bookshelves. One she put in her suit's inside pocket, and the others were stored in the rucksack. Seeing that, Emily asked with her eyes twitching.

Vanessa's expression went puzzled as though to say「Eh? You don't get it?」. Both Kousuke and Emily got plainly irritated.

「Even if you asked me why……. After this, we will challenge an extremely difficult situation. So to speak, it's like a soldier heading to the front line.」

「Well, perhaps it's something like that……」

「Isn't that right? Then, it's normal to bring along comics, right?」

「Why does it become like that!? I don't understand your thought process!」

Emily made a splendid retort at that incomprehensible logic. Seeing Emily like that, Vanessa made an expression that

irritated Emily, as though she was a teacher facing a dim-witted student, and then she explained carefully and thoroughly.

「Listen, Doctor Grant. In a movie or film, have you seen a scene where a soldier heading to the battlefield inside a car or helicopter, they will take out a bible and pray?」

「Ri, right. I've seen something like that before. ……Wait a second, in other words, those comics……」

「Yes. They are my bible.」

「Apologize to god! Apologize to the believer of Christianity!」

Emily howled. Grant's family was also a believer more or less. And so, she couldn't help making a retort when someone talked as though the bible and a comic had the same status.

Vanessa snorted「Fuh」at that retort mixed with protest from Emily and ignored it.「Why did you snort just now!?」Emily's cat eyes glared fiercely once more while she raised her voice, but Vanessa who was in perfect form left the room without breaking her attitude that seemed to say「The doctor is also still young, huh」.

「……Shura no ○, Gra○ler Ba○, and then Na○to, to treat them as bible like that. In a sense, perhaps this is also Japan's karma.」(TN: Shura no Mon, Grappler Baki, Naruto)

Emily rushed after Vanessa with her side tail swinging wildly while saying「Hey wait-」. Kousuke was getting a bit of faraway look when he saw the title the comics that Vanessa brought before he followed behind them.

Part 3

The sun went down in the west. By the time the sky was starting to be colored vibrantly orange, the car Vanessa was driving was running through a road that was extending straightforward as though the car was gliding.

Inside the car, Emily and Kousuke satisfied their stomachs with burgers and fried potatoes that they had purchased from a certain famous restaurant that they visited midway.

「……Emily, what's the matter?」

Kousuke suddenly asked. Emily was eating her fried potato bit by bit like a hamster while her gaze was directed outside the window. She then turned her gaze at Kousuke.

「What do you mean?」

「No, it looks like you are getting a faraway look there. You are tired?」

「Aa~, no. I'm fine. It's just, I'm really familiar, with this area. Seeing this, it feels that I really have come home. But, even though I had a lot of stories to share when I went home before, but this time……something like that.」

It seemed that when she compared the current situation with the time when she went home previously, it caused a deep and heavy emotion to stir up her heart. Just like how the orange color of the setting sun aroused loneliness in people without reason, it seemed that Emily's heart was also

aroused with an indescribable feeling by the scenery of her hometown and the orange color of the burning sky.

Kousuke who knew about the gruesome circumstances Emily went through in these few days, hesitated about what to say back. He thought that he should say something, but he could only let his gaze wander unable to find any good words. At this time, he became envious of a certain agitator who could spin words smoothly.

Emily made a faint smile at Kousuke who was in such a state. She then gulped up the drink in her hand in one go before she said one more time「I'm fine」.

Vanessa who was watching through the rearview mirror at the exchange between the two in the back seat, opened her mouth tactfully, as though to be the replacement of Kousuke.

「Excuse me, Doctor Grant……」

「Geez. Vanessa too, don't worry about me. I told you I'm fine.」

「No, I really cannot believe that. Doctor Grant. What is called limit, is something that will come faster than what we thought.」

Vanessa's unexpectedly serious expression could be seen through the rearview mirror. Emily's words unconsciously got caught in her throat. Kousuke was thinking「As expected from an agent of the security bureau. She also knows various things about how to care for a person who is dragged into a case」while sending her an admiring gaze――

「Is your urinary bladder, really okay?」

「What kind of thing you are worrying about there!?」

Of course, it was a worry about the dignity of the peeing girl Emily-chan.

「At the restaurant just now, and also at the gasoline station before that, I noticed that Doctor Grant didn’t go to the toilet. And yet, you were drinking two large size cokes and coffee. I’m extremely worried whether you will get more wounded like this.」

「Tha, tha tha tha, that’s-」

「However, I cannot believe that Doctor Grant who has already had a severe failure twice already will be so easy-going to take an optimistic action like this. Doctor Grant……」

「Wha, whattt」

Emily was already turning small into half her original size while her wariness and shame were on full display. Vanessa’s eyes shined glaringly through the rearview mirror at such Emily.

「By any chance, were you awakened?」

「Wha, what does that mean?」

The pure Emily-chan couldn’t grasp the meaning of that question. Of course, the young man beside her grasped the meaning. Vanessa asked with determination.

「To the pleasure of urination.」

「ARE YOU AN IDIOTTT————!! There is no way I’m awakened to something like that!! Do you want to make me

into a pervert!?

World Unknown to Emily Part 2. There was no way anyone would feel good from wetting their pants in public! If there was anyone like that, then that person was a pervert without a doubt!

Of course, there was no way Emily had awakened to an overly special pleasure like that. And so, Emily turned to Kousuke with a fretful expression and pleaded That's wrong! That's completely wrong! I'm not that kind of pervert! Believe me, Kousuke-.

Ca, calm down. It, it's not like I'm thinking that you are a pervert or anything.

Really? Really, really? Kousuke is——

Emily was about to say something. However, carrying out a beautiful intercept at that timing was how Vanessa Paradis rolls.

So Doctor Grant isn't awakened to that……it's unfortunate for Mr. K, isn't it?

There ain't no way that's true! Don't make me into a pervert so naturally like that!

Ko, Ko Ko, Kousuke!? Yo, you are aiming for my "that"? You are happier if I'm a pervert!? That……that's troubling for me!

There is no way that's true! Why are you feeling a bit troubled like that!? What do you mean troubling!? You need to deny strongly there at all cost!

Chaos maker Vanessa. She displayed that ability of hers without sparing any effort, driving Kousuke and Emily into the crucible of bewilderment!

「Fumu. Great difficulty is waiting ahead for us. It’s better to be energetic like this. Both of you are full of fighting spirit there.」

「You, just shut up already!!」

「You, shut up already!!」

The retort of Kousuke and Emily burst out in harmony. Vanessa made an expression that seemed to say 「Incomprehensible」by herself.

Giving up on Vanessa who was scattering word bombs so naturally like that, Emily was making a justification desperately to Kousuke while Kousuke was desperately soothing Emily. During that time, the scenery of the surrounding was starting to change entirely.

They entered the town. There was some high construction, but most buildings were giving off a retro atmosphere.

「Vanessa. Follow this path to go across the town center and head to the north. A river will come into view after some time. There is also a restaurant that makes delicious pie nearby there. You will understand right away because they have a cute signboard.」

「Roger. This is the first time I’ve come here, but……this is quite the beautiful townscape.」

There was a chic building with brick color, and there was also a glass building. But, those two types of buildings didn’t mutually harm the scenery. It was as though the new thing

and the old thing accepted each other, giving anyone who watched a gentle impression.

In this downtown, at the time where the sun was mostly sinking, the local people had calm expressions. They were strolling with a relaxed pace on the stone paving while holding a bag that was stuffed with food. The sight had a comfortable impression where they could slowly feel the flow of time.

And that impression became even more striking when they left the town center and entered the suburb. There was more greenery, houses of the same color and same style lined up in order, forming similar shapes of shadows. Somehow, it felt like even the light of sunset also became gentle.

Vanessa ran the car following Emily’s direction. In contrast with Emily, who was somewhat restless with this long time homecoming, Kousuke was tensing his body in moderation. Of course, he was considering the possibility of an ambush by another force waiting for them.

But, in contrast to his expectation, he couldn’t find anything like a black car or the like parking nearby. They could see children noisily playing with lots of energy, and the figures of fathers and mothers urging them to return home soon with wry smiles. There weren’t any signs of conflict; the area really looked peaceful.

Ah, over there. That house with the white van parked! The light is on. It looks like father and others are home.

Emily leaked out a relieved sigh. The white van was the car Emily’s father, Carl owned. It was a car that was bought as a replacement a few years ago so that the grandmother, Syla, who was using a wheelchair, could also ride in. They still hadn’t finished paying the loan for this car. There was also a

light blue motor vehicle parked beside it. That was the car of the mother, Sophie.

Vanessa stopped the car in front of the house. Emily was going to rush out right away, but Vanessa halted her back. And then, Vanessa observed the surrounding's situation carefully from inside the car while sliding out her gun from her breast pocket.

「Let's be careful. I'll stress this to you, Doctor Grant, please don't separate from me no matter what.」

「Ye, yes. I understand.」

Vanessa's hand reached the engine key, and she glanced at Kousuke. Kousuke's usual light atmosphere disappeared, and he looked around with a serious gaze, but before long his expression turned perplexed.

「Mr. K. What's the matter? Do you see any sign of something wrong?」

「.....No, there is nothing wrong. There is none but..... that's exactly why it feels wrong.」

「? What do you mean by that?」

Kousuke didn't answer right away at Vanessa's question. He stared for a while at the direction of the house. Emily's expression was tinged with a shadow of anxiety seeing Kousuke who didn't seem normal. Endo shook his head, and then he spoke with reservation in consideration of Emily.

「.....Inside the house, there is no sign of people.」

「Eh?」

Emily tilted her head. Her parents’ cars were parked, the lighting inside the house was also turned on. Those were the proof that the family was home. Despite so, there wasn’t anyone inside. A bad premonition bloated up inside her heart.

On the other hand, Vanessa raised one of her eyebrows, and her expression turned dubious. The “sign” that Vanessa mentioned before was something like any traces of fighting, or if there was anyone peeking at them from the cover of a building somewhere, or parked cars that looked out of place with this neighborhood, she meant about “human traces” that was visible to the eye like that.

Just how did he know about the inside of the house that was out of sight…….

「Anyway, we cannot do anything from here. Let’s try to enter. Perhaps they are only going outside a bit in the neighborhood.」

「Ri, right. Surely, it’s like that.」

Kousuke noticed the anxious expression of Emily, and so he urged them to act quickly. And then, he hurriedly got out of the car to move in the lead. Vanessa buried her doubt inside her chest from that action of Kousuke.

They crossed the lawn that was well maintained, went up the slope that still looked like new from the renovation so that it could be passed through using a wheelchair, and they arrived in front of the entrance.

Emily sounded the chime. And then she called「Father! Mother! Grandma! This is Emily! You there?」. However, as though to prove the correctness of Kousuke’s words, there wasn’t any reply coming from inside the house.

Emily took out a key of the house from her pouch, thinking that the door was surely locked if there wasn’t anyone home. And then, she put in the key and was about to open the door……

「E, eh?」

The door wasn’t locked right from the start. Even though this was a quiet neighborhood, it was impossible for the whole family to be out leaving the house not locked. Emily’s cheeks spasmed.

「Father! Mother! This is me! You aren’t here!? Grandma! Where are you!?」

「Doctor Grant! Calm down!」

Emily opened the door loudly and stepped into the house without being unable to contain herself. Vanessa hurriedly stopped Emily who was like that.

However, Vanessa’s warning didn’t enter Emily’s ears. Her heart that was thinking of her family was in disarray from the abnormal condition of the house. She desperately supported her heart that felt like it would be crushed under unease and terror while running around the house. She did that while calling for her family. She wanted to say her usual “I’m home.” She wanted to hear “Welcome home.”

However, whether it was in the bright living room, in the kitchen where her mother was usually standing wearing her apron, in the bathroom, in the second floor’s bedroom, or even in Emily’s room, there wasn’t anyone at all.

「It, it must be a mistake. Everyone, they must be going out for a bit right now. Tha, that’s right. Surely, they are going to Mr. McBurney’s place, or at Aunt Hannah’s place.」

「Emily.」

「Wait, okay. I'll call them back right away. And then, I'll properly introduce Vanessa and Kousuke to them――」

「Emily Grant!」

「-」

Emily was about to go out of the house with a dry smile. But Kousuke called her name with a strong tone to stop her. Emily twitched and stood still before turning around with a stiff movement like a machine that hadn't been oiled.

Emily's eyes were catching sight of Kousuke picking up a tablet that was put on the living room's table. It was something that Emily overlooked before. But, that item was definitely not Grant family's property.

The reason was,

「It's addressed, to me……」

Yes, the name of Vanessa Paradis was displayed on the screen of the tablet that was left turned on. There was no way Emily's family who didn't know about Vanessa's existence could prepare something like that.

In other words, this home was visited just a few hours ago, by someone other than Grant family members, someone who knew about Vanessa……

Emily's face went white. Her body unconsciously staggered unsteadily. Kousuke swiftly supported her.

Urged by Kousuke's gaze, Vanessa touched the tablet.

Then, the table projected the image of a room somewhere. The room didn’t look particularly desolate; it was a normal room. There was a sofa with a cloth cover and a wooden table. There was no one there. It seemed that the tablet was just put in place to take video.

But, a beat later, the door in the corner of the camera opened. What entered from that door was a wheelchair, and an elderly woman sitting on it. And then, a man past his forties that looked somewhat weak-willed was pushing that wheelchair. A woman about the same age was holding the hand of that man while looking around restlessly.

-, grandma-, father-, mother-

Emily’s voice echoed like a shout.

The people in the video didn’t look like they would be harmed. However, from their expression and gesture, it seemed that were taken away without really knowing anything. However, even so, it still couldn’t make Emily who was watching the video to have a peace of mind. Emily looked at her kidnapped family and powerlessly fell down.

And then, the video cut off and the display became pure black. And yet when they thought that was it, slowly an image of a clock that displayed the time of a few hours from now appeared, next, a map from an aerial photograph was starting to get displayed. It was a show that was like the embodiment of the bad taste of the maker.

That place……looks like a warehouse district. They are screwing around.

Vanessa spat out those words. Beside her, Emily was turning small by hugging her knees and head. She was getting

flashbacks of the chain of events that should be called as her trauma, where she lost her important people.

Perhaps, she would also lose her family……that terror pushed aside the mission she was entrusted with by her big brothers and sisters and pushed her off into an abyss of terror and despair. She wanted to cry while begging, that she would listen to whatever they say, so please don’t hurt my family.

A voice spoke to such Emily. That voice was soft yet harsh, warm yet sharp, that kind of voice.

「Emily, it will be fine. I don’t know who did this, but there is no sign of a struggle in your house, and there is no sign of violence on your family. Those guys want Emily’s cooperation, so even though they can use your family to threaten you, they cannot hurt them that easily. That’s because they understand, doing that will only push Emily past despair and into hostility.」

「Kousu, ke.」

Kousuke gently took the hand of Emily who was holding her head and softly pushed it down.

「Emily knows the pain of being kept alive and left to escape alone, and having something entrusted to you. If you stop here, then, surely the same thing will happen again.」

「No, I don’t want that! Something like that, again-」

Emily raised her voice with her expression distorted in tears. Kousuke nodded「Right?」, then this time he pulled up her hand and made her stand.

「——”If there is a time where you must muster your all for once in your life, then now is exactly that time. Right now, in this time, blaze your soul”」

「Eh?」

「That’s a second-hand telling from a friend. But, in the past, when I was going through a crushing defeat, I was able to stand up one more time from these words. I was able to risk my whole body and soul against bunches of monsters as my opponent. Thanks to that, I can be here right now.」

「Kousuke……」

Emily lost her words. That was just how “heavy” the words of Kousuke just now were. They reverberated at the deepest depth of her weak heart profoundly.

Kousuke’s sharp eye glint that looked like a veteran warrior pierced straight through Emily.

「For Emily Grant, surely right now is exactly the time to blaze your soul. Brace your legs, grit your teeth, and then yell until your lungs burst. “Who is going to do anything that you say! Don’t look down on me, you shitty bastard!” Like that.」

Those were passionate words like boiling magma. Kousuke’s gleaming eyes were still piercing through Emily.

Therefore, there was only one reply Emily could make.

「Yeah. Yeah!」

Her soul that almost sunk into the swamp of despair, now, it blazed up once more. Emily strongly clasped back the hand of Kousuke that was clasping her hand.

「Kousuke, will also lend me your strength, right?」

「Yeah. That was what I told you. I'll become your strength. Emily's family, let's save them for sure.」

Emily's eyes shined like a starry sky. The distance between the two was so close they could feel each other's breathing. It was as though that was the current distance between their hearts――

「……Should I read the mood and go outside? Or else, should I cut in saying "Don't forget me, pleazeee"? That is the question.」

Vanessa muttered.

It went without saying how Emily leapt back from Kousuke like a nimble cat. And then, it also went without saying how she turned small from shame when she recalled how she was super close with a boy just now.

Part 4

In a time when the curtain of night had fallen completely, the darkness of the night of a warehouse district on the outskirt of the town was cut apart by a car’s headlight. The car that was carefully advancing slowly and quietly soon entered a spot that was surrounded from four directions by tall buildings.

The headlights illuminated a black car ahead.

Vanessa, Emily, and then Kousuke got out from the car with the headlights still turned on. Vanessa walked to the front with Kousuke and Emily following behind. Emily was clutching the sleeve of Kousuke’s clothes tightly.

The black car at the opposite side turned on its headlights as though to oppose their side. A person got out from the black car in front of the vigilant Vanessa. The person’s figure wasn’t clear due to the headlights’ backlighting, but Vanessa could make it out vaguely.

And then she thought. 「Aa, so it’s like that just as expected」. At the same time, she also thought「It would still be better if it’s Kimberly」.

「Agent Paradis. You really have put us into much trouble. By all rights you should get a disciplinary discharge, you know?」

That figure walked with clopping footsteps and showed themselves. It was a reality that if possible Vanessa wanted

to deny.

Chief of the national security bureau——Sharon Magdanese, it was this person who appeared.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The next update is planned for 6 P.M Saturday too, desu.

Arifureta Chapter 207

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Are You Prepared?

"How do you do, Doctor Grant. I am Sharon Magdanese, the person who is entrusted with the chief position of the national security bureau. I will bring you into a safe, protected place. Now, this way."

Chief Magdanese prompted as though it was only natural that the situation went like that. In the middle of where the headlights of the two cars collided against each other in rivalry, the door of the black car for the backseat opened, from there the analyst Allen Parker and one other male agent climbed out.

Allen was spreading both his hands wide in an exaggerated posture, as though to say"Now, you were scared, right? Jump into my chest!". Although for some reason, the tip of his nose had a large gauze affixed there, he cut a really painful figure or a stupid one.

"What do you mean "protection"! How dare you brazenly say that after kidnapping my family-"

The gesture that was too impudent caused Emily's boiling point to be reached instantly. By all rights, she should behave modestly in consideration of her family's well-being, but right now, she could depend on a reliable boy regarding that. Emily was able to honestly raise her voice in anger that even surprised herself.

Chief Magdanese showed a really troubled bitter smile at Emily who was like that.

"Doctor Grant, it seems that you are under a really great misunderstanding. There is no way that we, the people of the security bureau, will do anything like a kidnapping. We are only safeguarding every one of the Grant family."

Chief Magdanese talked with a tone and attitude as though she was admonishing a child that was throwing a tantrum toward Emily who reflexively was going to object.

She meant to say, that they secured Grant family in order to protect them from the organization that annihilated Hughes and the other agents of the security bureau. The tablet that they left behind would only react to Vanessa's fingerprint, without her other people wouldn't be able to grasp the information in it. It was valid for them to be at the side of the Grant family to make contact with Vanessa and Emily who cut off contact with the bureau. In the first place, the bureau had approved the adoption of the protection program, so they had planned to move in order to take them into protection since the beginning.

"Bu, but……"

Emily was at a loss for words after receiving the logical explanation. Vanessa took a step forward in place of Emily.

"Chief, can I ask a question?"

"Refrain yourself Agent Paradis. Your skill in protecting Doctor Grant by yourself is worthy of evaluation, but you are acting too arbitrarily on your own. Even though there was the attack of Warren and others, you should be able to get in contact with us more frequently."

The knife-like words of Chief Magdanese cut off any argument with a single stroke. Her eye glint was also pressuring with several times the intensity compared to the usual. However, Vanessa, who normally would falter in a panic inside her heart against this, instead took a further step forward and displayed her will with action.

「……Do you understand, what are you doing right now?」

「Yes. I understand very well. Until my question is answered, I won't lower down this gun.」

Yes, Vanessa was aiming a gun at Chief Magdanese. Her gaze was sharp and showed that she wouldn't draw back even against Chief Magdanese. Her will of determination was emitted from her whole body. Allen whistled「Hyuu~」behind Chief Magdanese in admiration. The other agent also gulped down his saliva.

「This won't end with just disciplinary dismissal.」

「I'm resolved for that.」

Chief Magdanese stared fixedly at Vanessa for a while, and then she sighed a bit. It was unclear what kind of meaning that sigh had……. A complicated expression flashed briefly on Chief Magdanese's face while she urged Vanessa to continue with her gaze.

Vanessa opened her mouth with her gun still aimed vigilantly.

「Why are you, the chief herself, in this kind of place?」

「I lost five agents that I sent to execute the protection program, where one of them was that Hughes. And then, the culprit is also an agent from the security bureau……if this is

leaked outside, surely the media will be jumping wildly in joy. Furthermore, seeing how this is related to the『Berserk』 case that greatly agitated the world then it will be all the truer. This case is already the biggest case even amongst the cases that the security bureau is currently facing.』

『Are you saying that it’s not strange for you yourself to come out?』

『Naturally. To say nothing of how we currently don’t know how many people there are inside the bureau that are like Warren, or more accurately, those under the patronage of the organization behind Warren. The optimal solution is for me to move.』

That explanation had consistency. There was a double agent coming out from the bureau, and on top of that, there wasn’t any time to clean up the organization right now. Under such situations, it could rather be said that it was a heroic decision for the top herself to take action accompanied by her few trusted subordinates.

Chief Magdanese sent Vanessa a cold gaze that said 『Finished already?』, however, Vanessa didn’t avert her gun even now.

『Then, one more question. What caused『Berserk』to be scattered in the research building was because of the dispute between Kimberly and someone to contest the possession of『Berserk』. According to what Kimberly said, that someone was a skilled person on a level that even he couldn’t match.』

『……And?』

『An organization that possesses an operator skilled enough to handle Kimberly whose combat ability is high even in the

security bureau, it knows about the existence of『Berserk』, and the operator came to steal it at that timing. And then, naturally, that operator belongs to an organization that is different from Kimberly's. There is only one organization that I know of that fulfills all those conditions.』

『Are you insinuating that I ordered for『Berserk』's usurpation?』

『Am I wrong? Kimberly who attacked me hinted of that possibility.』

Chief Magdanese shrugged with an expression that seemed to say how worthless this talk was.

『Don't tell me that you are accepting the words of a betrayer seriously? If that's actually the case, then I can only doubt your qualification as an agent.』

『Putting aside my qualification, there is no doubt that you chief are under suspicion of ordering the attack. Please answer. Was it you chief, the one that gave the order to steal 『Berserk』?』

Vanessa's gaze pierced Chief Magdanese through her gun's aim. From the beginning, Vanessa didn't think that she would receive an honest answer. Therefore, with the determination to challenge her superior who should be regarded as a monster that had shouldered a bureau of Britain for many years until now, she concentrated to fathom the truth or lies.

But, as expected from the living legend who shouldered the national security, she wasn't someone common. Her face didn't change a single color even against Vanessa's sharp gaze and the fact that a gun muzzle was pointed at her. To the end she opened her mouth with naturalness, it even

made anyone who heard her voice to feel her exasperation as though she was facing a problem child that wasn’t obedient.

「The answer, is No.」

「……Is that, the truth?」

「Proving something that I haven’t done is like proving that the devil exists. If you are telling me to show the proof, then you have no more qualifications to introduce yourself as the bureau agent. In the first place, why do you think that I have to order to steal『Berserk』?」

Certainly, for the security bureau that didn’t know how Emily and others planned to escape, it was a done deal that Emily and others would come to them. Even if the chief didn’t intentionally order the stealing, the security bureau should be able to obtain everything, whether it was 『Berserk』, the creator Emily, or the antidote that Emily would create.

Therefore, it could be said that Chief Magdanese had no need to secure『Berserk』at that kind of timing.

The sources of Vanessa’s doubt were all circumstantial evidence; her own instinct was also playing a large part in it. In the end, Vanessa, who was self-aware of that, could only attempt to thrust all those facts before the chief to try to shake her and then see through the chief with her own eyes.

Vanessa couldn’t say anything back. She focused her eyes to try to see through the truth, but Chief Magdanese wasn’t shaken even for a bit. Vanessa was starting to doubt her own instinct……could it be, that the first attack was really caused by a completely different organization?

「Are you finished with your question? Then, Vanessa Paradis, you will need to be restrained. Don’t tell me that you are thinking you will be able to continue in your post after pointing a gun like that at me?」

「That’s……」

Chief Magdanese raised one of her hands. The agent that was standing by beside the black car walked forward wordlessly. It appeared that he planned to restrain Vanessa.

Emily raised her voice seeing that.

「Wait! Vanessa did that only for my sake! Even until now, she has been protecting me all this time! That’s why――」

However, that pleading was silenced forcefully by Chief Magdanese’s eye glint.

「……Doctor Grant. I wish that you would stop with your childish selfishness too. Have you thought about how many sacrifices have appeared in this case that you are involved with?」

「-, that’s……」

「You are a prodigy, aren’t you? Well, perhaps that is only limited to a specific field but……I wish you can have the discernment to know right from wrong when it’s actually necessary. I have the authority to have you restrained as the person who created『Berserk』and make you create the antidote. After all, this is a situation that threatens the security of the country. But, in that case, the protection of your family won’t be included in it, you know?」

「Such a thing-. Didn’t you say, that you are giving safeguarding them properly――」

“Yes, that’s because of our goodwill.”

In other words, she meant that if Emily planned to complicate this case, then the security bureau wouldn’t safeguard the Grant family. And then, Chief Magdanese would restrain Emily with the authority possessed by the national security bureau and force her to research the antidote. Most likely, even if Emily took this matter to court, it wouldn’t go through. After all, this was a case that threatened the national security just like Chief Magdanese said. And Emily wasn’t a third party in this; she was literally the origin of the case.

Vanessa lowered her gun. Her instinct was still ringing the alarm bell loudly in doubt of the security bureau. However, there wasn’t any hole in Chief Magdanese’s logic. She also couldn’t detect any sign of lying. And then, even Emily was also feeling that she was only being outrageously selfish after hearing Chief Magdanese’s words, her shoulders dropped. Her anger deflated when she was told that her family wasn’t kidnapped or anything.

Chief Magdanese sighed as though to say how troublesome all of this was, and she was about to turn around. In her place, the agent walked forward to restrain Vanessa and take Emily into custody.

Then, a voice suddenly came into hearing.

“Don’t you think it’s better for you if you read up what the meaning of the words goodwill is in the dictionary?”

It was an aloof voice that didn’t match the place. Even though the voice wasn’t raised too loudly, it resounded with extreme clarity.

Every single people in that place were taken aback without exception. Vanessa and Emily, who was emotionally standing beside her, quickly turned around so fast that their momentum could make a whoosh sound.

「……That reaction. That hurts you know. Why are you all looking like『WHO-!?』like that? Even Emily, even though you were holding on to my sleeve until just now.」

Kousuke twisted his lips into the shape of '「' in dissatisfaction. Vanessa and Emily averted their gaze awkwardly. There was no way they could say that they had completely taken off their mind from Kousuke who was right behind them and they were plainly shocked just now. Kousuke had already completely seen through that already from their reaction.

「……Who are you? It seems that you were hiding inside the car?」

『No, no, I got out of the car together with Emily there! When you were questioned by Vanessa-san, I was also standing normally behind her!』

「……」

Chief Magdanese's dubious expression! Kousuke was wounded further! But, he was used to it, so he was fine!

『Answer the question.』

For now, Chief Magdanese ignored Kousuke's retort and repeated her question. Kousuke simply ignored her order and replied back with a really "nice smile (complete with a vein on the forehead)".

「It doesn’t matter who I am right? Rather than that, stop lining up pretentious statements and bring Emily’s family here right away. No matter what you are going to talk about, everything will only start after you do that, right?」

「A foreigner boy like you, do you know who you are talking――」

A cold air that was incomparable with before struck out from Chief Magdanese. But, even when Vanessa was reflexively sweating coldly from that, Kousuke only deflected it away in stride. So what if she was an authoritative figure of a country. Compared to the god’s apostles that were smeared with inhuman killing intent, or the pressure of the demon king that was lacking even a speck of mercy, this woman looked like a puppy making a menacing look.

「Something like the words of someone who was behaving worthlessly to fan up the talking partner’s anxiety, no matter how consistent it sounded like, it cannot be trusted at all.」

「Fanning up anxiety?」

Chief Magdanese tilted her head as though she didn’t know what he was talking about. Seeing that caused Kousuke to replace his expression into a cold one.

「Wasn’t that what you did? What the hell was with that message in the tablet? Don’t tell me that it was just for keeping it a secret from other people. Stop it already with the stupid excuse. After all, if you want to make contact with Vanessa-san, then there are so many other ways to do that.」

They could simply leave behind a single cellphone that was filled with only one contact number to call. There were many ways to make Vanessa make contact with the bureau. Even if

the one that made contact wasn’t Vanessa, then that could also be a chance to investigate just who they were facing against. There wasn’t any need to expressly leave behind the video recording of Emily’s family in that way.

They were leaving that kind of message using that kind of method in order to carve a message into Emily’s subconscious. That if they felt like it, then they could do anything they liked to her family. That they were still safe, *for now.* All of that was to make it easier for the scale in Emily’s heart to tilt to one way when she was approached with the option that was putting on the face of protection. To instill into her what the pecking order was in their relationship.

Kousuke understood that, he understood just how much Emily was worrying for her family. He had already heard from her of her feelings that didn’t want to lose her important people for the second time.

Those were why the voltage of Kousuke’s anger was rising up without stopping.

「Even now you are acting like that. You dare put on air as though everything is Emily’s fault. The ones that caused this case in the first place, and then everything after that, all those, they are all the fault of the stupid idiots who got their eyes blinded by greed. The scramble for that thing that was created accidentally, and even dragged in the important people of this child, are the doings of some other stupid idiots somewhere. Don’t get mistaken here. This child is the victim, not the perpetrator.」

Of course, she had the responsibility as the creator of 「Berserk」. That was why Emily was here. She even had the option to hold her head down, turn small, and wait until

everything was over. But she resolved herself that there were things entrusted to her, that there were things that she had to do no matter what, and so she was standing here.

「She is still sixteen, you know? And yet, she lost the important people that were like family to her, and she was also not allowed to meet her blood-related family……and against a child like that, here you are fanning up her anxiety and guilt. I absolutely cannot trust someone like that.」

「……」

Kousuke's aloof words were mixed with anger. It was unthinkable that this was the man that was forgotten even by Vanessa and Emily until just now. Something that couldn't be ignored by any means was oozing out from him. Chief Magdanese was staying quiet; however, her body was facing straight toward Kousuke. That attitude of hers was the proof of the existence of that unidentified pressure.

Kousuke walked forward passing through Vanessa and Emily. And then, he stopped walking when he was in-between Chief Magdanese and Vanessa, and then he asked without looking back.

「Hey, Vanessa-san, what is your instinct telling you? Who cares about logic. Your heart that has been protecting Emily wholeheartedly until now in any kind of situation no matter what anyone said to you, what is it telling you now about that woman?」

Vanessa's gaze wandered around. However, even that was only for a moment. She responded with a cold expression, as though to cut off her hesitation.

「My instinct says that she is black.」

「Isn’t that right. I also think so.」

Kousuke’s gaze shifted quietly from Chief Magdanese, and then he cast his gaze to behind her.

「In the first place, just what is the woman who was sending her shitty subordinate, the one that pointed his gun at Vanessa when we escaped from the hotel, saying at this late hour?」

Kousuke’s gaze flowed smoothly toward Allen.

「Eh, m, me? What are you, saying so suddenly……I’m just a humble analyst――」

「Don’t play dumb, gauze man. Is that your true face? Your disguise is pretty good. But, the scar from my ashtray attack isn’t something that can be treated somehow right away, isn’t it?」

「I really don’t understand what are you talking……」

「I’m not merely bluffing or just guessing. I remembered your presence. That’s why, the hoodlum standing in our way that time, was unmistakably you.」

The analyst with gauze on his nose, Allen Parker’s gaze was wandering around in bewilderment. He was muttering「Oh maann, really, what is this about……」, but Kousuke lost interest already, and he took his gaze off of Allen. Behind Kousuke, Vanessa believed Kousuke’s words, and now she was making a questioning face about why was a mere analyst was present in that hotel.

Chief Magdanese sighed once more.

「……And, you cannot believe me, so then what will you do? As you know, the organization of Kimberly's will be chasing after Doctor Grant mercilessly. They won't even care how many sacrifices will turn up from the surrounding.」

She implicitly declared that in the end, they had no choice but to obey the security bureau. Normally, that was how it would be. An organization could only be opposed by another organization. That was the reason why Vanessa was trying to ascertain the true motive of the chief.

Just what could one agent and one foreigner boy do only by valiantly speaking sharply?

「I'll protect her then.」

「……What did you say?」

Chief Magdanese reflexively asked back after she heard those words that were said really casually. That was so natural. Even though the speaker was a boy from Japan that was often said to be peace loving idiot country, that big talk was really far away from reality. There was a limit even in being out of place.

However, Kousuke didn't show even a speck of shame or looking like he was drunk with the situation, he continued his words matter-of-factly.

「I said that there isn't any problem. It's fine if Emily carried out her duty through the path that she decided herself. Together with her family. Of course, the best thing would be if the security bureau "respectably" give her protection without doing any messing around. Even if we cannot obtain the backing of you guys, there will be no problem. It doesn't matter, I won't let anyone be a nuisance. Whether it's Emily or her family, I'll protect them with my all.」

「……It seems that you are getting a little high spirited after experiencing boy-meets-girl. I wonder if you have been watching too many movies?」

Behind Kousuke, a girl was pressing on her chest saying 「hauu-」as though she was shot through by something. Chief Magdanese gave that a passing glance with an exasperated look on her face. Seeing that, Vanessa objected with a self-assured gait.

「Chief, he isn't a normal boy, you know? At the very least, if he becomes serious, then the likes of one analyst and one agent won't be his match. In addition, he excels in the information war and can assassinate any kind of opponent. Chief, you are not an exception.」

「……It looks like you evaluate him really highly, Paradis. And so? This boy who no matter how I see it is nothing more than a dreaming boy that misunderstands himself as a main character, who are you saying he is?」

Vanessa made a smile that while small was clearly a fearless smile, and then spoke of her greatest trump card.

「He is the one, who got his name recorded on the blacklist of the security bureau just from a few years of activity――Mr. K.」

'That's why, don't do anything imprudent. Protect Emily and her family properly. And when she finishes the antidote, dispose of all the「Berserk」that currently exists. Promise us that.' Vanessa conveyed that. 'I don't know what kind of ulterior motive the chief has, but concentrate only on resolving this case.' She meant.

Vanessa returned threatening words in response to Chief Magdanese's similarly threatening words. For a moment,

Chief Magdanese showed an expression as though she was looking at a surprising scene, but in the next moment, she sniggered.

「……What is so funny?」

Vanessa's gaze sharpened in irritation. Chief Magdanese's shoulders trembled seeing that.

「No, you headed toward the house of Grant family on your own accord, you pointed your gun at me, and there are many of your actions that were really self-assured. I was wondering just what was up with that, but to think that the basis of that confidence is "Mr. K" of all things. Well, though certainly, you were contacting Mr. K, so perhaps it's understandable for you to mistaken that boy like him.」

「What are you saying――」

「He is not Mr. K.」

Her trump card was laughed at, and in the end, it was denied decisively like that. Vanessa became speechless. She was about to argue back just what was the basis of her saying that.

Chief Magdanese showed a gesture as though she was thinking of something for a moment, and then she answered with a gaze as though she was looking at something pitiful.

「Paradis. You see, Mr. K is a member of the security bureau.」

「……Eh?」

Vanessa's eyes turned into dots in incomprehension. Toward such Vanessa, Chief Magdanese continued her words slowly and thoroughly as though to grind her hope into dust.

"It's natural that you don't know. He is a staff that is outside the law. ——"JD(John Doe) Agency". Intelligence bureau and security bureau, these two large organizations of our country oppose the dangerous and disturbing people and organizations inside and outside the country. But JD Agency is *a non-existent organization* that extends over these two organizations. The members are all called with alphabets or numbers."

"Bu, but, Mr. K, he is an assassin——"

"Yes, that's why I told you didn't I? That it's outside the law, and non-existent."

Vanessa was speechless. Of course, she would be. After all, the organization she belonged to was carrying out murder outside the boundary of law. It was truly like the world in a movie. How darkness was an unavoidable part of a huge organization.

And then, this information that was originally known only to the highest class of leadership other than the chief was now disclosed here; it was in order to break the heart of Vanessa and Emily. In order to convey to the two of them that the bureau wouldn't pull back, they wouldn't let them get away. In order to display the mightiness of the state organization.

"It was a surprise that you made contact with Mr. K and separated your contact to the headquarters. Because it was an unthinkable method to be taken by you who are still young with a sense of duty and justice more than others even if you usually endeavor to be cool-headed. Although, even though I dispatched him to give back-up to the two of you, for him to be taken out by a passing ashtray……I wonder if your ability ought to be reassessed, what do you think, Allen——no, agent "K"?"

Chief Magdanese looked behind and stared with a pressuring gaze that even emitted killing intent. Ahead of her gaze, was analyst Allen.

Yes, just as Kousuke said, the man that fainted due to the ashtray throw when they escaped the hotel, and furthermore, got his crotch stepped on by Vanessa, was Allen in disguise. At the same time, he was actually Mr. K who received Vanessa's request for back-up. The reason that Mr. K, who was supposed to be an assassin, agreed to receive the work of being Emily's bodyguard was now said here.

"The, then, Kousuke, is……"

Beside Vanessa who was astonished from catching a glimpse of the organization's darkness, Emily muttered with trembling eyes.

Allen was walking forward with a tablet in hand while shivering from Chief Magdanese's gaze. He had been operating that tablet all along right after he confirmed Kousuke's presence here, and the result of that seemed to be the answer to Emily's question.

"Chi, chief? Certainly, I have been continuously committing failure in these few days, but that's because I'm an assassin, everything other than that is like outside of my specialty, can you see……that's why, what I want to say is, please don't be so angry……"

"Shut up, incompetent."

"Yes, Ma'am."

Allen who got the tablet snatched from him dropped his shoulders dejectedly. Chief Magdanese's gaze moved toward the information Allen gathered. There, the face photo of

Kousuke that was taken from who knows since when and his photo in the airport a few days ago was projected. And then, Kousuke’s age and nationality were calculated based from the passenger list, and Kousuke’s true identity was pinned down.

Even though Allen was calling himself an assassination specialist, his skill as an analyst was super first class. He was famous as an assassin that was strong in the information war, but it seemed that fame wasn’t merely because he was backed by the security bureau.

「Kousuke Endou. Japanese, 18 years old. Born from a really normal family, and goes to a really normal high school student. Are you traveling abroad using your winter vacation? ……My, you are one of those ”returnees” that agitated the world previously. I see, so you aimlessly traveled like this and poked your nose into this case. That baseless confidence of yours, I wonder if that is because of your optimistic thought that you will be okay this time too because you had come back once from that disappearance?」

Vanessa and Emily were shocked. Sometimes they got the thinking「Is he really a virtuoso hitman?」. He couldn’t drive a car. He didn’t bring a gun, and far from that he even said that he couldn’t shoot properly. And above all else, the atmosphere he was clad in was too light. To the degree that saying that he was really a student from Japan fit him to a tee.

Even so, they thought that he was Mr. K because they could cut their way through the assault in that hotel thanks to him. And then, the expression that he sometimes showed them made them get the expectation that “as expected he really is the one”.

But, it turned out he was really just a student from Japan.

「That's why I told you two many times already. I'm not Mr. K. You two didn't believe me at all……」

Kousuke looked behind with a wry smile. Chief Magdanese announced to such Kousuke.

「Mr. Endou. I'll consider that nothing happened if you just go home now.」

「Hee. You don't think that I will blabber about JD Agency or that various other things?」

「Just who will believe that kind of story when it's a Japanese boy who is telling it? Stop putting on air like you are a main character in a tale already.」

Right after that, a single gunshot rang, and a bullet gouged the ground near Kousuke's feet. Allen said「Sorry, okay」while firing so fast his gun drawing movement was unseen. That was the last warning. If Kousuke didn't turn around and run away with his tail between his legs here, then there would be a news report about how a Japanese boy met an unfortunate accident in his travel.

That was conveyed to Kousuke really clearly. But,

「Well, I cannot go home though.」

「Are you still unable to look at reality?」

「No, I'm aware of it. ——There are thirty-two armed men. They are lurking inside the buildings around us and completely surrounded this spot. I know at least that much.」

Chief Magdanese’s expression changed for the first time since coming here. Her eyes opened really wide with her shock laid bare. Even while she was like that, Kousuke’s gaze ran through places like a building’s window, the shadow of a street corner, behind a pillar, and so on. ——All those places were the spots where the special squad of the security bureau’s assault section was hiding based on Chief Magdanese’s arrangement.

“You are moving personally, bringing only those two because you have no one you can trust. That was what you say, but it looks like you are really bringing a lot despite that.”

“You are……”

Chief Magdanese’s words got caught in her throat when she saw the piercing eyes of the person that should be just a student. Her preparation for the worst case scenario backfired on her. A faint indication of agitation leaked out from the surrounding. Allen, who was standing at the side, narrowed his eyes slowly with his frivolous act thinning down.

The night breeze felt like it was growing warmer and damp. Even after seeing through the squad’s position, Kousuke was still not showing even a fragment of agitation; his hands were still inserted inside his pockets with composure. He then said.

“I’ll say it one more time okay. You cannot be trusted. And then, in this three-way fight, the enemy of the enemy actually can be trusted more than you. After all, that hint from Kimberly is spot-on. The shitty bastard that infiltrated the research building and dragged this child’s important

people into their death, it’s that Mr. K over there. Just now, he said that he already failed continuously.

……I also said this before. There is no need for me to do something like――

The talk about motive? Something like that is not important. If it’s a reason, then I can imagine many. It can be to use it as a weapon, or for pursuing profit, or because of the country’s decision, or maybe it’s for your own greed……

Chief Magdanese stared at Kousuke for a while. And then, she suddenly lifted up her hand.

Right after that, the members of the special squad showed their figures all at once. The muzzles of their machine guns that could shoot in full-auto were aimed at Kousuke. At the same time, Chief Magdanese gave an order through the wireless on her collar. Her command was to bring the people of the Grant family here.

In order to protect the large ship that is the country, there is a time when evil is necessary. There are opponents that the law or negotiations cannot do anything against, and yet something still has to be done against them to protect the large ship that is the country. The incarnation of that necessary evil is the JD Agency, this Mr. K. Berserk is also like that.

The gaze of Chief Magdanese caught Emily.

I wonder if you know how many personnel, how many soldiers died in the battle against terrorists each year? If we can turn captured terrorists into mad monsters to send them in as the substitute of those noble people……just how useful that will be. How can we save the noble life of our country

without paying a sacrifice? However, surely Doctor Grant won’t be able to understand that.

That’s why you tried to steal Berserk itself while making her create the antidote?

Correct. Because Doctor Grant seems to hate Berserk, there is a possibility that she would build some kind of bug in the data through the process of researching the antidote. It’s necessary to secure the original drug. There is a necessity to have on hand the antidote that the girl creates voluntarily and the unaltered Berserk. Next, if the girl disposes of Berserk by herself, we can just advance the improvement of the drug by ourselves using the stolen data.

But, even that farce would end here. Now, they would force Emily to improve Berserk for the sake of the country. Rather than making an antidote, she should make the control drug for Berserk. And then, what would be used to motivate Emily was her family that was taken hostage.

Emily’s face turned pale. She must be imagining the future where Berserk was put to use as a weapon. And then, she also imagined one other thing at the same time. The reason why Chief Magdanese was starting to talk like this.

Chief Magdanese’s gaze returned to Kousuke as though to prove that.

This too is a necessary evil. You know too much about this case. This is incomparable with something like gossip about a state organization that doesn’t exist. It will be a little troublesome if you talk about Berserk to the media that is currently heated up. The cost of getting carried away with boy-meets-girl like this is a costly one. This time, you cannot be a “returnee” anymore, you know?

「Run away Kousuke! I’m sorry! I’m sorry to drag you into this! Quickly run away!」

「Kousuke-san……my apologies.」

Emily yelled. Even while she understood that it was already impossible, even so, she couldn’t help herself from yelling. Vanessa tried to rush at once, but she saw the red lights of laser pointers showering her body and her movement stopped reflexively. And then, when she saw Kousuke who was similarly covered with red points of death like her, she spoke her apology with an expression that was colored by regret and guilt.

Seeing the two who were like that, Kousuke who had death thrust before himself was,

「Don’t be so worried like that. I told you right, I’m not Mr. K, but……I’m the right-hand man of the demon king.」

Kousuke’s face couldn’t be seen. His face that was slightly looking down was hidden by his forelocks. Like that, it even looked like he was assaulted by fear of the fate that would happen to him after this, where he looked like he would crumble down anytime. But, even while he looked like that, his voice that spoke back to Emily and Vanessa resounded pleasantly like a gentle breeze.

And then, hearing Kousuke saying something like “right-hand man of the demon king” now that the event had reached this point, Chief Magdanese sighed thinking that this was a pitiful boy who was living in a world of delusion while she was about to give the signal for the execution.

「Hey, chief-san.」

Her attention was diverted for a moment from Kousuke addressing her. And then, she noticed how her own arms were getting goosebumps without her noticing it. Toward Chief Magdanese who was feeling doubt about her own state, those words softly reached her.

——Emily’s family, they still haven’t arrived yet?

Feeling taken aback, Chief Magdanese spoke into her wireless, questioning just what her men were doing. *zaa-zaa-* After listening carefully to the grating sound from the wireless that felt excessively eerie for some reason, an impossible voice replied back.

「Just now, they resigned from their duty. For the chief who has business with them, please do over your life again from the beginning after the beep sound.」

She understood even through the wireless. That voice was unmistakably the voice of the person who had been talking with her until just now. It was impossible. How could the voice of the young man that was here in this place come from the communication device of the personnel that she was sending to monitor the Grant family?

She couldn’t comprehend it. A chill was creeping up her spine like a worm. Chief Magdanese was slowly raising her gaze from the wireless on her collar while feeling terror——and then, she saw.

With his expression still hidden by his forelocks, only Kousuke’s mouth was splitting wiiiidely. It was as though she was looking at the crescent moon shining in the sky tonight.

「You dogs of the state that sing the praises of a necessary evil. Are you prepared? Are you resolved? If not then you better hurry. The abyss is already here.」

Chief Magdanese was feeling a terror that was like a black ink painting out her whole consciousness while swinging down her arm half unconsciously.

It happened at the same time with the appearance of “that guy”.

Now, it’s showtime.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

He is coming, that guy, he is cominggg.

The next update is planned for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 208

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Showtime Beginning Part

AN: This chapter became long, so I split it into beginning and end parts.

I will upload the later part in one more hour.

「Do it!」

Chief Magdanese’s command that unusually sounded like a shriek was handed down. The elites lurking in the shadows showed their loyalty without even the slightest lag even though they were agitated from having their existence discovered.

A storm of death swept from all directions along with a thunderous roar. Muzzle flashes flickered in the darkness of the night as though to color the victim’s journey to the next world. Bullets cut through the air mercilessly and arrived at their target through the shortest distance.

「KOUSUKEEEEEE-」

Emily’s shriek resounded along with the thunderous roar. Her eyes reflected the figure of Kousuke whose body was rocked by overwhelming violence like a badly made marionette. His body was pierced countless times, and when the body was going to fall down, the storm of lead from the opposite direction would strike and make it stand up.

There was not the slightest ground for doubt, Kousuke was definitely pierced by several hundred bullets in front of everyone at that place.

However,

「He, doesn’t fall?」

「Aha, haha, this is really a harsh joke. ……Why, is there no blood flowing?」

Vanessa murmured in astonishment while Allen’s expression was twitching grandly. Just as they said, Kousuke was still standing in the middle of the ground that had been desolated and pierced by bullets.

The shooting was finished. Was it stopped because the loaded bullets ran out? Or else, was it because the elites who shouldered the country’s safety shrank back from the manifested bizarreness? In any case, silence filled the area, as though all living things were holding their breath.

A beat later,

「It’s over already? Then, next is my turn.」

The mutter that came from Kousuke who was hanging his head destroyed the silence. And then, the moment everyone opened their eyes wide thinking「Impossible」, an even further irrationality assaulted their brain nerves and common sense.

pon- Such a light voice that could be called as stupid sounded, and Kousuke’s figure vanished along with a slight smoke!

「Where are you looking at?」

「Gueh!?」

Everyone in that place directed their gaze toward the direction of those words and the shocked voice raised by Allen that was mixed with pain.

There, they saw Allen, who without anyone noticing, was lying on his face, his body stepped on by Kousuke above him. One of his hands was inside his pocket with his upper body slightly turning away, while the middle finger of his other hand was pinning down the sunglasses that had been on his face without anyone noticing when he put them on. Sunglasses, even though it was night! Sunglasses, even though it was night!

「What coolness!」

「Vanessa!?」

A shout of joy that sounded out of place was spontaneously raised. The side tail-san beside the voice owner goggled in surprise!

「You-」

Perhaps it should be said that it was just as expected from the real Mr. K. Even in this situation, the shadow of the country that was bestowed with a license of killing still showed a movement that would make anyone who saw that have a chill on their back. He pulled out a small gun hidden inside his sleeve with his wrist’s motion and fired at Kousuke while still lying face down.

What was terrifying was that the fired bullet was soaring toward Kousuke’s head accurately even though it was shot from that kind of posture. Normally, if someone was abruptly

fired at from that close, that person would immediately travel into the next world, but……

「Oops, you are really energetic there.」

Kousuke smoothly tilted his head while saying those words and the bullet rushed through toward the sky in vain. Allen didn't show even the slightest bit of agitation of having his attack evaded and wasted no time in pulling his trigger in succession.

However, the bullets didn't even graze Kousuke. He only tilted his upper body slightly and evaded all the bullets with a paper-thin difference. His figure that even looked blurred in double and triple layers was just like the agent in Matr○x!

「Don't tell me, your sight can follow the bullets!?」

「Naturally. As long as this "Heavenly Eye" given by my friend is with me, any kind of attack won't be able to escape from my perception.」

kaclick- That kind of sound rang from the trigger. Allen's bullets ran out. Kousuke sharply pushed up the sunglass artifact that was enchanted with "Lightspeed" and "Foresight".

……By the way, the creator of this artifact didn't give it a name like "Heavenly Eye" or anything.

The agent and Chief Magdanese returned to their senses and fired toward Kousuke. Kousuke magnificently danced in the air. Using a somersault with a form that could even be called as beautiful, the bullets from the two passed through below Kousuke in vain.

「Don't just stare stupidly like that! Finish him off quickly!」

Chief Magdanese’s order released the squad members from their petrified mind. They attacked Kousuke from all directions once more with a barrage of bullets that was similar to heavy rain.

「Fuh. Nice killing intent. But, it’s not enough. It’s not enough at all to catch this abyss without form!」

Kousuke said such a thing while speedily evading the approaching bullets smoothly. He then finally took out a weapon. Before anyone noticed, his hand was holding a jet black short sword that was unknown just from where he took it out from.

「Don’t take your eyes off, from mine power of the abyss! ――Purr, “Demon Sword of Destroyer Calamity Crawling the Earth”.」

Kousuke called out some kind of chuuni name while leisurely caressing the blade of his short sword. When he did that, black light that could be mistaken as the night was starting to envelop the jet black short sword! And then Kousuke stabbed that short sword into the ground.

In a moment, the ground instantly bulged out and covered Kousuke completely. The surrounding ground became an omnidirectional protection that blocked the bullets.

「――”Doton – Saryuu no Shiro(There is No Hope of Touching the Abyss)”」(TN: Earth Escape – Castle of Sand Bump)

Kousuke’s words resounded the moment the ground bulge completely closed. Those words had no meaning; this was important, so it needed to be said twice, those words had no meaning. If it had to be said further, the name of the short sword and the gesture of caressing the blade were also meaningless. So far as it went, the magic circle of the short

sword artifact wouldn’t activate without chanting, so it was necessary to say something, but if the user had to chant the name of the short sword and the skill name each time, they would be turned into Swiss cheese by the enemy.

And so, the ground already started bulging by the time Kousuke said “Pu” from the “Purr!”.

Then, why did Kousuke chant the meaningless skill name……

Of course, because it was cool!

「Do, Do Do Do Do, Doctor Grant! Did you hear!? Just now, he said “Doton” you heard that!? What to do!?」

「What to do is my line there! That’s not what you should be surprised with! The ground was suddenly moving you know!?」

「That was a Doton skill, so the ground moving is only natural, isn’t it!? Just what are you talking about! Rather than that, Kousuke-san was using “Tonjutsu” (TN: Ninja art of escape)! Aa, how can this be! He is, he is――a Japanese ninja!」

「I don’t get what you mean!」

Vanessa was so excited that it seemed her character was breaking down, and Emily was desperately making retorts back. The members of the special squad were giving them a glance while losing their patience to how the bullets weren’t working. They then took out grenades.

The grenades directly hit the mass of rock while at the same time making stupid sounds *poshu*. Fierce thunderous roar

resounded, and the mass of rock was instantly pulverized, its fragments were scattering everywhere showily.

「He isn’t there!?」

「Watch your surroundings. This is a trick! That guy is using trick! Don’t get lead astray!」

The person who seemed to be the captain of the special squad spoke loudly and gave words of warning. The squad members whose minds were painted white by the supernatural phenomenon that was repeatedly happening were recovering their calmness from the word「trick」that the captain said as a temporary explanation.

Although, when they collected themselves, it didn’t change that what happened before their eyes wasn’t any trick or mechanism, it was a genuine “mystery” where any explanation was futile. Therefore,

「Gaa!?」

「Gueh」

One of the soldiers hiding on the third floor near the window whirled in the air. It was as though he was run over by a truck from behind. He cleared through the window and was blown away outside. That was how it seemed, but in the next moment, from the fourth floor of the opposite building, the soldier that threw the grenades just now shot out like a human bullet in a spiraling motion and crashed into the opposite soldier whirling in the air with a graphic sound.

The two crashed into each other mid-air and fell toward the ground. Right underneath them was the figure of Allen who was pulling himself back together. Allen tried to dodge right away. But,

「From the bottom of the earth, the dead captures――”Doton – Naraku no Jigoku(The abyss seize thee)”」(TN: Naraku no Jigoku = Prison of hell.)

「Wha-」

Allen’s ankle was caught. The hand thrusting out suddenly from the ground was seizing Allen. The abnormal situation that was like a horror movie caused him to feel shaken. Even so, he immediately attempted to shake off the hand, but he only felt pain from being caught tightly as though by a vise and the hand didn’t even twitch.

And then, right after that, Allen was dragged into the ground just like the words of the resounding voice. The ground wasn’t paved by asphalt or anything, but it was a hard ground that couldn’t be easily dug by human strength, yet regardless of that, he was buried from his waist below into the ground without any resistance, as though he was swallowed into a smooth quicksand.

「Shit-, what is this――gueh!?」

Allen thought that his whole body might be completely swallowed under the ground like this, but unexpectedly he was dragged only until his waist before the pulling strength was gone. At the same time, the surrounding ground also recovered its former hardness. Allen struggled and hit the ground, but in the next moment, he was crushed under the falling two fully armed men, and he shrieked like a flattened frog.

「Serves you right! Mr. K, serves you right! Doton rulez!」

「I beg you, please come back Vanessa! I really like the usual cool you!」

Vanessa turned toward Allen who vanished from view due to being squashed by the two soldiers that appeared to have fainted; then she pointed while going ‘hyahhaa—’. While Emily was making a retort with teary eyes, chaos and screams resounded from inside the buildings surrounding the open space from four directions.

「Shit, what is going on!?」

「Just where is he aiming from!」

「Be careful of friendly fire——gua!?」

The soldiers of the special squad were cursing while their gun muzzles were wandering about in doubt. But, they were unable to catch sight of their formless enemy(Kousuke). They sometimes caught something like a black shadow in the corner of their eyes and at the nook of their mind, but the moment they turned their gaze there, the splash of their comrade’s blood would fly from a completely different direction; or they would get blown away like a joke.

「The stillness of the dark night is splendid. Don’t you think that something like the sound of explosives is boorish for it?」

「Wha-——gih!?」

hyuu- Wind blew, and right after that a soldier got the tendons of his hands and feet cut, and he collapsed.

「You feel it don’t you? The cold yet gentle arm of darkness.」

「DAMN YOUUUUUU-!?」

The smooth sensation of being caressed on the nape of the neck caused a soldier to have goosebumps throughout his

spine. He cursed while drawing out a handgun without delay and shot behind him, but what he felt was a hot touch caressing his four limbs instantly.

「Don’t you know, there are things in this world that you ought to not know. Do you know what I mean? Yes, it’s me.」

「This-, monster――」

His partner should be beside him shooting his gun desperately. Yet, what was standing there was only a black shadow. Where did his partner go? Why, didn’t his comrade back him up? Without even any time to speak out such doubts, one more soldier had his consciousness fall into the bottom of the darkness together with the hot touch that he felt on his limbs.

「What is this……just, what is happening……」

Chief Magdanese muttered in blank amazement. The thunderous sound of shooting in full-auto, consecutive muzzle flashes, and then screams and angry roars reverberated from all the surrounding buildings. Her gaze ran through the buildings around her as though she was a country bumpkin looking up at a skyscraper. She took a few steps back with shaky footsteps.

This was impossible. Even if Kousuke was skilled, this was strange.

How could soldiers get blown away from her right and behind at the same time when a soldier was thrown out from the building on her left? Was the enemy removal being carried out in all the four buildings surrounding this place?

Kousuke was alone. The enemy should be one person. Even if the enemy possessed a strange fighting technique using

tricks, it was only this fact that should be certain.

「Who in the world are you all fighting!? The enemy number!? All teams-, report!」

Chief Magdanese raised an angry voice. Normally, there should be concise and swift replies coming back to her.

The moonlight was hidden behind a small cloud, and darkness swept the area. The headlights illuminated her as though she was an actress standing alone on the stage. Replies returned to Chief Magdanese who was sweating coldly.

「This is Beta 2. The enemy's identity is unclear. The shadow, the shadow is attacki――」

「This is Delta 4! I don't know! I don't know anything! Shit-, my partners are disappearing!」

「Alpha 3-. The enemy is a Japanese young man! That guy is a monster-! The bullets-, the bullets cannot hit-. I can see him-, yet it's not hitting!」

Reports were screamed from the communication device. *DADADADDADADA-* The voice of the soldiers that were dyed with panic mixed in the interval between the unceasing sounds of gunshots. Not a single one gave a clear report that Chief Magdanese could comprehend.

「All troops, get outside! Form a circle!」

A harsh voice that was tinged with a dominating aura resounded from the communication device. That was the command from the captain of the special squad. The soldiers obeyed that voice as though it was their lifeline. They all jumped out from the windows simultaneously without even a

glance, without even thinking of the consequence, wishing only to take some distance as far as possible from the terrifying something that was lurking in the darkness inside the room.

The soldiers that jumped out from the second floor took skillful landing postures that were expected from trained operatives, and then they sprang up to their feet and rushed to Chief Magdanese’s side. The soldiers who were on the third floor and higher descended down to the ground by using the stair’s handrail, window frame, and so on to decrease their speed, but the dread filling their chest threw their limbs out of kilter, and more than half of them struck the ground and writhed there.

Even so, they were dragged by their comrades to gather around Chief Magdanese and formed a circle formation around her. They aimed their guns at the surrounding buildings with desperate looks. They strained their eyes toward the windows they jumped through just a moment ago while desperately holding down their rough breathing that was unrelated to the exhaustion of their stamina.

Inside the windows, it was as dark as though all light was being sucked in. Surely, even if they were told that it was a hole that connected to the realm of the dead, the troops would easily believe it right now. Their gun muzzles were busily wandering around searching for the enemy, which displayed the state of their hearts. Surely. in their hearts, there was also the ashamed feeling that they had left behind many of their comrades inside that darkness with whom they had shared joys and sorrows with.

The personnel of the special squad that was at first more than thirty people were already decreased to seventeen people, including Allen who somehow managed to crawl out

from the ground and the agent that was standing by beside Chief Magdanese.

It hadn’t even been five minutes since Kousuke vanished. In just that much time, a platoon of the special assault squad owned by the state’s organization was pushed into a partially destructed state.

The sound of breathing that couldn’t be pushed down resounded. The sound of rustling clothes from the rough wiping of sweat that was flowing from some other reason other than heat resounded. No one was making a sound. Even Allen who often joked around was desperately searching for the enemy’s position with his wandering eyes. Even Chief Magdanese was also feeling cold sweat trickling from the tip of her jaw while her gaze looked around from the center of the circular formation.

Then, a strange sound resounded.

——clop, clop

It was footsteps. Footsteps were echoing in the world of night that was ruled by silence.

——clop, clop

But, there wasn’t anyone that could react to those footsteps. No, to be more accurate they were reacting. However, aiming their guns when they learned the enemy’s position by hearing——wasn’t the reaction they made.

——clop, clop

The expression of everyone was twitching because the sound of those footsteps resounding in their ears right now was coming *from an impossible place*. Their gun muzzles

were clattering. It wasn’t because they didn’t understand who they should aim at. The assaulting terror finally caused the tough elite squad soldiers to be unable to repress the trembling of their fingertips.

——clop, clop

Slowly, teasingly, the footsteps reverberated in the dark night. *gulp-* Sounds of swallowing saliva pierced the ears clearly.

Chief Magdanese sighed deeply. And then, she slowly *lifted up* her face toward the place where those footsteps resounded from, to the place where the owner of the footsteps seemed to be at.

「——Impossible.」

That mutter where it felt like the soul of the speaker also came out at the same time with it, made the other soldiers, and Allen, and then Vanessa and Emily to lift up their gaze too.

「Once again, good evening, ladies and gentlemen. Don’t you think that tonight is a really good night?」

There, a man in black was standing.

That black outfit was darker than even the darkness of night as though it gave anyone who saw it a hallucination that the black of night was melting into the outfit. A mask hid the mouth, completed with sunglasses of the one-lens type. In one hand was a mysterious black short sword that gave anyone chills.

His voice resounded with an echo that conveyed the night of night, and the darkness of darkness. Absolute confidence

and a domineering aura dwelled inside it; however, at the same time, it contained dread that tightly held the entrails of the heart.

In midair, footsteps echoed on invisible stairs, like a ruler that was descending from his throne. Behind his back, was a beautiful crescent moon that looked like the sneer of the devil. A step, a step. That figure that descended from the night sky to the lower world while making darkness colored ripples under his feet was truly an existence of myth.

「I like the crescent moon better than the full moon. It's not so bright that it will drive away the darkness of night; however, it garnishes this wonderful darkness with color. Its shape that draws an arc looks like the smile of the goddess of night.」

He——Kousuke was looking down on everything, with an exaggerated gesture like a stage actor. He spread his hands as though to embrace the whole night; however, seeing no one replying back he shrugged his shoulders. And then, he slowly made a rotation, placed his hand that was holding the short sword behind his back, and his other hand propped up his sunglasses; he then drew back his left foot a bit.

By the way, that rotation, and also his chuuni pose, of course, they were all meaningless.

「You……you, just what in the world, are you?」

As expected from the chief of the security bureau. Chief Magdanese asked Kousuke's true identity while everyone was at a loss of words and fell into a stupor seeing the impossible situation. The situation was too abnormal to be dismissed as a trick. In the end, was it really okay to classify the man that was making that pose in midair even now as mankind……

That question came from such doubt.

In regard to that, Kousuke’s answer was,

「”What are you”――I believe that question ought to be asked to all of you instead.」

「What, do you mean by that?」

Chief Magdanese returned a sharp gaze even while feeling perplexed. To that, Kousuke twirled in rotation once more, and then, he pushed up his sunglasses with one hand while at the same time he threw his head back a bit with the tip of his short sword pointed in a sharp motion.

「O guardian of the country. It’s exactly as you said before, there are few things that can be protected using beautiful ideals. Without the resolve to dirty oneself, what is waiting ahead will be a trampling.」

The eyes of Chief Magdanese turned round from Kousuke’s words. She didn’t even imagine that he would make a statement that affirmed her own words. It seemed that Vanessa and Emily were also similarly shocked by that. Emily was still wholly shook up without being able to get back on her feet from her agitation, and Vanessa opened her eyes widely from the shock that she received.

「Just feeling is insufficient. Nothing can be done without resolve. Trying to resist fate without dirtying one’s self, something like that cannot even become a funny story.」

Those were heavy words. Even though they didn’t know anything about this young man, they understood that he had gone through a tremendous experience. They understood, how it had been engraved into his flesh and bones.

「One has to choose what they ought to protect. One has to persist in carrying their own will, surpassing the distinction between good and evil. To wish for everything, that is only possible for someone who transcends the extremity of that will.」

To protect the great ship that was the country from the ill will and hostility that lurked all over the world, was impossible with just law. It was impossible to resist with only the right conduct and beautiful ideals. By the point in time when someone cursed that the other was cowardly or the worst, what they lost wouldn’t come back.

To “protect”, was a next to impossible undertaking more than humans could imagine.

Therefore, Kousuke didn’t deny the hidden face of this country. The act of the non-existent organization that was called the JD Agency. If there were things that couldn’t be protected without such an existence, then that was inevitable.

However, still, however.

「Even so, there are things that one mustn’t throw away.」

Yes, that was why Kousuke was here. He was here, with his blade unsheathed. He unleashed the technique and strength that he obtained at the end of the deadly combats, along with a bitter experience, in another world.

「The humanity and justice in one’s soul.」

Those must not be forgotten. Even if the body was dirtied with a necessary evil, the soul must not get rotten together with it. If not, then the necessary evil would someday be degraded into mere evil.

「The faith in one’s heart.」

The people had faith in them that they would protect the safety of this country. That faith must not be betrayed. If that was betrayed, then the whole foundation would be shaken.

「The sincerity in one’s resolve.」

Their established resolve, their oath, those must be carried on faithfully. The moment they made a compromise, that resolve would run wild and bare its fang even toward those that it ought to protect.

Just like the current situation.

「O guardian. Is Emily Grant not someone that you also ought to protect?」

「……」

Chief Magdanese didn’t answer. Or possibly, she couldn’t answer.

「She was born in this country, raised in this country, lived in this country. A girl like her, isn’t she someone that you ought to protect? Necessary evil——I won’t reject that. But, in the end, is Emily someone that ought to have such a thing pointed at her? Cornering someone who is desperately doing her best, a girl who wishes to create a remedy of an incurable disease, is that the national safety you are talking about?」

Hearing Kousuke’s question, there were people who made complicated expressions among the special squad troops; there were even people who were obviously looking guilty. The expression of Chief Magdanese didn’t change. Right

now, she was staring straight at Kousuke without any discomposure.

Kousuke also stared back at Chief Magdanese as though to wait for her answer. Still in his chuuni pose.

Just how long were they like that? Before long, Chief Magdanese sighed, and quietly opened her mouth.

「I too, am the dog of my country. I feel no self-depreciation or regret of that. Not to mention hesitation, I have none of that. ……I have made my determination already.」

That was her answer.

Allen sent a sharp gaze that only lasted for a moment at the captain of the special squad and the agent. The captain of the special squad tensed his jaw slightly, and at the same time, the agent slightly moved back.

Kousuke sensed it. They were planning to make Allen and the special squad into a disposable pawn, in order to evacuate Chief Magdanese from this place. The agent intended to rush to the car to allow Chief Magdanese to escape.

Should that be admired, or be exasperated at? What made Kousuke hesitate in making a conclusion, was how lacking Allen and the special squad’s soldiers were in hesitation. In order to let their boss get away, they accepted their end without even a moment of hesitation.

「Is that the resolve and sincerity of you guys?」

They would coerce a girl from their own country, in order to protect the people of the country. Despite Kousuke’s opinion that it was putting the cart before the horse, that was the

answer of the security bureau. They knew only too well of that, even so, if that was what their homeland decided, then they wouldn’t hesitate. For that, they had made the resolve to put their lives on the line a long time ago.

Chief Magdanese spoke.

“About the research building, that was a sorrowful miss on our part. We were also unable to detect the betrayal of Kimberly, and also how the students of the Down classroom were going to raise a commotion. ……It was my misjudgment to make Allen infiltrate by himself.”

She had never expected that the bodyguards safeguarding “Berserk”had been replaced by Kimberly’s accomplices. At that time, Allen caused the alarm to sound because of the reaction of the bodyguards that was different from the usual trained agent, and he completely got taken by surprise by the unexpected conduct of the fake bodyguard agents.

“I have no excuse for that.”

“Such a thing, even if you say that-”

Emily was enraged hearing that apology which was directed at her. She questioned whether this woman planned to beg for forgiveness only with that one sentence. Did she not understand just how great of a loss she suffered due to her actions?

But, it seemed that in contrast with her sentence, Chief Magdanese didn’t have even a speck of intention to ask for forgiveness. Her eyes were still cold even while receiving Emily’s rage right from the front.

“All of you, this is an order. Carry out your duty.”

□□□□□Yes, Ma’am-!!□□□□□

Chief Magdanese drew back. At the same time, Allen rushed out from the circle toward Emily while the agent turned around toward the car. The eyes of the troops shined with their last killing intent, and they were about to pull the trigger at Kousuke midair.

It happened at that moment.

tan-, tan-

Two gunshot sounds resounded faintly.

□Muh□

□-!?□

Those didn’t come from the special squad. It also didn’t come from Allen.

One shot splendidly drilled into Kousuke’s flesh, and the other shot pierced through one of the troops while gouging Chief Magdanese’s left shoulder.

Chief Magdanese collapsed from the impact with a splash of blood scattering. And then, Kousuke fell to the ground in an arc trajectory.

□KOUSUKEEEEEEE-□

□KOUSUKE-SAN-□

Emily and Vanessa screamed loudly.

□Chief-□

□-, protect the chief!□

The sprinting Allen made a turn that disregarded the human’s body structure while raising a voice that exposed his agitation and uneasiness for the first time. With the command of the captain of the special squad, several of the soldiers used their bodies to cover Chief Magdanese like a shield and dragged her body toward the wall.

Emily and Vanessa dashed toward where Kousuke was falling. Emily embraced Kousuke with an expression that could break into tears anytime, and together with Vanessa, she pulled his body to the cover of a car.

The second wave of attack didn’t come. It seemed that the sniper became unable to take a line of fire. Even so, everyone there stayed still while staying on guard to the surrounding. Kousuke’s body was limp without any movement.

It was unclear how long time passed. Perhaps it was about a few dozen seconds. The captain of the special squad gave a glance and saw that the first-aid to Chief Magdanese was finished, and he was about to order them to move out, but several lights cut through the area.

Those were lights from car headlights. And they didn’t come from merely one or two cars. More than ten cars were rushing at them with fierce speed.

Several of the cars arrived with a drift before stopping and took a position that encircled the people of the security bureau and Emily’s group. The cars were all stopped horizontally and blocked any path of escape.

Vanessa and Chief Magdanese scowled their face from having a certain person coming to their mind from seeing this method that was repulsive yet cunning.

It seemed that their expectation was right on the mark.

「Yoo, honored Chief Magdanese. How envious for you to have a clandestine meeting outside the city at night. Let me join in too, okay.」

「Kimberly.」

The one who got out from one of the cars was Kimberly who was sporting a really disgusting smile. With that as the start, dozens of armed men also got out from the other cars. They didn't look trained like the special squad soldiers. They looked more degenerate and violent; if it had to be said, then they were fellows that looked like mafia members.

Allen and Vanessa tried to move nonchalantly. But, as expected, Kimberly gave no opening and sharply noticed them.

「Whoops, both of you, don't move from there. Especially the analyst-kun. You are bad news after all. Just try it. If you move even for just a bit, then I'll slaughter everyone without mercy.」

Kimberly commanded his men to release their weapon's safety. Although the people who had resolved to die just now wouldn't obey that instruction that easily, both of them glared with their gun muzzles raised even with that overwhelming difference in battle strength.

「Well, guess so. There is no way the chief will comply that simply. No matter what, you are the "cornerstone of Britain's protection" or "the iron woman that married Britain" huh. What's more, you also got strong bad luck.」

Kimberly shrugged while watching Chief Magdanese's left arm that was oozing blood. And then, he turned his gaze to

the reason why he didn’t kill Chief Magdanese and everyone else here right away.

「So, chief-sama. Just what the hell is that?」

At the end of his gaze was the limp Kousuke who only looked like an unmoving corpse even now, and the figure of Emily who was embracing Kousuke.

「The elites of the security bureau assault section were half-destroyed under a few minutes. What’s more, he unveiled an amazing technique similar to floating in the air. When I heard the sniper’s report and watched the recorded video, I thought my eyes were gonna pop out of their sockets y’know.」

Kimberly’s gaze left Kousuke and wandered to the air. 「Well, there must be a wire or something place in the air」It seemed that he thought what Kousuke did was a trick from those words that he said.

Although, even though he was a traitor, he was formerly a member of that security bureau, and because of that Kimberly knew how powerful the assault section was. It seemed he wanted to know the reason to how a group like them could be cornered into devastation helplessly like that. That was the reason why he let the troops stay alive even now.

Chief Magdanese distorted her expression cynically at such Kimberly.

「There is no way I know what that is. That is……yes, it’s “something” that human knowledge doesn’t reach. According to that thing’s words——he is the right-hand man of the demon king, something like that.」

「Demon King’s, what? Just what kind of joke that is huh. That’s――」

――Calling me “that”, “that” from some time ago, that’s a little bit impolite, isn’t it?

A voice suddenly reverberated echoingly. Kimberly and his groups were taken aback, and they looked around the surrounding. Chief Magdanese shook her head with an expression that looked a bit tired while saying「Aa, just as I thought」.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The later part will be uploaded in one more hour.

Arifureta Chapter 209

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Showtime End Part

AN: This is the later part of two parts.

For those who came here directly from the bookmark, please pay attention.

---

kii kii Such a small sound resounded. That was the sound of a wheel. At the same time, multiple footsteps also echoed.

The sound came from the building behind where the car of Chief Magdanese was parked. Everyone focused on the steel door of that building.

And then,

「Fumu, Mr. Carl. About the wheelchair of Syla-dono, don't you think it needs some maintenance? It's making this kind of sound each time it moves. It's causing various anxieties hearing it.」

「A, aa, no, I planned to bring it in to give it maintenance just today you know? I, isn't that right, honey?」

「Yes, tha, that's right. But, just when we were about to go out, the people of the security bureau came so……」

「I see. That's impolite of me. I have acted impertinently there.」

The people that came out from the opened door while making normal talk were a middle-aged man and woman who were making twitching expressions. There was also a woman who was definitely passed her seventies sitting in a wheelchair that was being pushed by the man. It went without saying that these were Emily’s family. And then, a man wearing sunglasses and a black outfit was leading them.

「Father! Mother! Grandma!」

「-, Emily!?」

「Emily-」

Hearing the shout of Emily’s that was filled with joy, the father, Carl, and the mother, Sophie, called back the name of their beloved daughter without being unable to hide their happiness. It seemed that the grandma Syla was sound asleep. Perhaps Kousuke had done something to her. Surely he had judged that this hectic situation would be harmful for her who was afflicted with Alzheimer.

The two parents had been told about their daughter’s current situation to a certain degree. And so, they were about to rush toward Emily driven by their worry and the joy of reunion.

But, because of the pressure of the armed men that was standing between them and their daughter, and the ominous sound *kaclick* that came at the same time with the gun muzzles moving toward them immediately, they stumbled and came to a stop. And then, blood was leaving their expression when they saw the scene of the men that really resembled mafia, the personnel of the security bureau who looked cornered near the wall, and then, the collapsed person whom their daughter was holding in her arms.

They now painfully understood the situation. The terrifying situation their daughter was confronting, it was different from the explanation of the security bureau that was a mix of truth and falsehood. They grasped just how dangerous the situation their only beloved daughter had been placed in.

It was in the middle of that that a dumbfounded voice resounded.

「Thi, this is a joke, right? He, should have been sniped……」

It was Kimberly. At the same time, what he spoke represented what was in the mind of everyone there.

But, the right-hand of the demon king exaggeratedly shrugged his shoulders saying「Good grief」to the crowd that was a hindrance to the family reunion, completely unconcerned with that kind of question of bewilderment. And then, he suddenly formed a hand seal with both his hands. Yes, he formed a hand seal! As though, just like a NINJA! Just like a NINJA!

It was unknown just where the expression that was worried for Kousuke just now had gone. The female investigator that might be beyond hope already yelled「Handseals come-————!!」while she desperately tried to copy it. It seemed that she was trying to memorize the hand seals. But, the girl lacked a certain bloodline eye, on top of that, Kousuke's hand seals that were super complicated and super-fast due to its lack of meaning weren't something that could be copied just from a glance.

'Your level is insufficient!'The hand seals didn't really have any meaning, but with a glance, those words were whispered toward Vanessa-san who was grinding her teeth.

「To disturb the family reunion like this, what a really boorish bunch. ――”Kuuton – Banji Saikuu(I exist, in the desired spot)”」(TN: Air Escape – Air Reside in the Whole Earth)

Something like black mist instantly whirled around Kousuke, but in the next instant, Kousuke disappeared, and not just him, but the whole Grant family too. In their place, the corpse of Kousuke that was inside Emily’s arms until just now appeared! And then, right after that, the corpse vanished with a *pon-* sound as though it had accomplished its role!

「Thi, thi thi thi thi, this iiis!? Mikawari no Jutsu!? Isn’t this Mikawari no Jutsu, Kousuke-san!」(TN: Mikawari no Jutsu = Kawarimi no Jutsu/Substitute Technique)

「It’s a little bit different. Naturally, I can also use Mikawari no Jutsu, but Banji Saikuu is something that is not limited to just myself. It designates things within a certain range around me and replaces them all with my clone body along with the space. Fufu, this is a more advanced technique.」

In response to the yell of Vanessa who was in a state of ‘Excitement Climax!’, Kousuke answered while brushing up his hair with a ‘fuh’. Kimberly and the bureau staffs came back to their senses from hearing the exchange of the two, and when they turned their gaze in that direction, there were the figures of Kousuke and the Grant family that had teleported to Emily’s side unnoticed.

「Wha wha wha, what happened? Thank god Emily! You are safe!」

「Emily, you are not hurt. Just what happened!?」

「Ca ca, calm down mother, father! You two are safe, but I am also confused here!」

The Grant family was in a state of ‘Bewilderment Climax!’. The parents and daughter hugged each other while showing quite the skill where they were rejoicing with their reunion while acting bewildered at the same time. The grandma opened her eyes a tiny bit saying「My? Is it morning already?」, but she soon went ‘munya munya’ and went to sleep again. What a grandma.

「Impossible, what kind of trick is that. Was that thing just now a puppet!?」

Kimberly raised an angry voice in half-panic, trying to find an explanation that his understanding could accept.

Toward such Kimberly, and then also toward the armed men and Chief Magdanese’s group, Kousuke suddenly lifted up his right hand to the sky and opened his mouth.

「Puppet? Ku-ku-ku-. Certainly, you can call it that. Isn’t that right――right me?」

Kousuke waved his lifted up right hand elegantly as though he was an orchestra conductor while making a finger snap *pachin-* and pointed at the right building. There,

「Or, you can also say that it is a dream, or an illusion, or even darkness. ――front me」

At the window in the right building’s second floor, a man in exactly the same appearance appeared as though he was oozing out from the darkness. The Kousuke that was called as “right me” then stepped out to the empty air without any hesitation and walked down in the air while spreading ripples that looked like black miasma.

「At the same time, it’s a reality, a counterfeit, and also a real thing. Right, ――left me.」

Kimberly and the others turned unbelieving gaze at the right building, but right after that, the same voice resounded from behind them this time. When they turned around in a panic, as expected, there was also the figure of a man in sunglasses and a black outfit showing his appearance, oozing out from the darkness of the building over there, as though he was born from the darkness itself.

「Although, there is no need for you all to understand. After all, understanding the true abyss with a human body, is something that cannot be done.」

The same voice entered their ears once more. When Kimberly and the others turned to the left as though they were being toyed around with, there, on the roof of a car that was parked horizontally to block the path, was the same man standing elegantly with his arms crossed and one of his feet drawn back slightly. Leaving aside a female investigator who was being greatly noisy「Real clone! Real clone!」in high spirits, everyone was lost for words feeling dumbfounded and astonished.

「Ko, Kousuke is, Kousuke is, four people……」

Emily’s whisper echoed faintly at the place where silence had descended. Right after that, the four Kousuke smoothly unsheathed their jet black short sword and made a cross shape with their arms.「Camera-, where is the camera-」 Leaving aside the female investigator looking around with a desperate look who was surely beyond hope already, the right-hand man of the demon king chuckled at the words of the girl who he had promised to protect while he called out to her.

「Emily.」

「Ye, yhesh」

Emily’s voice spontaneously squeaked because she didn’t think that she would be addressed here. Seeing the girl like that, the nearest Kousuke chuckled while asking her.

「I’m not an ally of justice. If those who don’t balk from harming others for the sake of their own will are called evil, then without a doubt, I am extraordinarily evil.」

「E, err……」

Emily-san was bewildered. She didn’t understand the meaning of those words, and she also totally didn’t understand Kousuke’s speech and behavior! But Kousuke didn’t pay that any attention to that because the one who was here wasn’t Kousuke anymore.

「But, I plan to at least bear in mind the moral code that I should stick to. Therefore, I will protect you. I will protect my promise to protect you. That’s why will you believe in me, and let me protect you?」

「……Ye, yes. I believe you, Kousuke.」

It didn’t seem like she wasn’t a little bit creeped out, but even so, the cheeks of Emily reddened when she was told: “I’ll protect you”. She joined her hands in front of her chest and returned back her trust as though in prayer. Toward her who was like that, Kousuke went「fuh」for who knew how many times today, and then lastly he spoke.

「Emily. And then, everyone here in this place. Listen-」

Each of the four Kousukes displayed diverse chuuni pose’s different from their original arm-cross pose that even left behind afterimages, while he raised a voice that echoed in the dark night!

And then, Kimberly and his group went ‘twitch!’ from witnessing that somehow amazing movement while they came back to their senses and aimed their guns toward the four Kousukes. Toward them, Kousuke declared! With a voice that was loud, proud, and echoed from the bottom of the abyss.

「I, am the shadow! The right-hand man of the godslaying demon king that was born from the bottom of the abyss! I came from the deep abyss, from the darkness that is deeper than even darkness! Now, engrave into your soul, this taboo name!」

The jet black short sword was swept, and the empty-handed left hand spread open its five fingers while covering the right eye. The left eye that sharply glared over everything emitted a penetrating light!

Kimberly gave his order「Fire! I don’t really get it but, anyway, fire!」. The armed group broke out of the bizarre atmosphere that restrained them, and they pulled their triggers simultaneously. In the space that was blanketed with a thunderous roar and muzzle flashes, “his” introduction rang out clearly.

「——Rapid Fang Shadow Claw, Kousuke E Abyssgate. I have arrived!」

The bullets that were fired without thinking of leaving behind any reserve, all of them cut through the empty air in vain. *shu-* Together with such a sound, Kousuke——no, Lord Abyssgate’s figure vanished!

Right after that,

「Crawl on the ground. Embrace the infinite hellfire! ——”Katon – Kouen no Ryuu(The flame of the abyss

extinguishes all creation)!”(TN: Fire Escape – Prominence Dragon)

Lord Abyssgate appeared behind the armed group and stabbed his short sword on the ground while saying such a thing. Instantly, vividly crimson blazes *gou-* were spreading out in a radial shape like a great snake crawling on the ground.

Uwah-, what!?

Hot!? Shit-, the fire, the fire is coiling around me-

The flame was crawling below the armed group coiled on the men and twined around them burning them mercilessly.

——Short sword “Heaven Destroying Sword of Brilliant Lightning Flame”

It was one of the treasures bestowed to him by the demon king. Originally, it would create a flame snake that randomly ran around to make the area fall into chaos. It was an item that was enchanted with a sublimated flame element magic circle to assist in escape. Just as the name showed, it was also possible to do the lightning version of the attack, not just the flame version. It was possible to instantly activate two elements of magic for escaping or assisting in battle.

By the way, he thought up the naming himself. Together with a rabbit-eared woman of another world.

Some of the men were about to rush out reflexively, perhaps to help their comrades to put out the fire, but a black shadow slowly appeared right beside them, and they turned their guns with great reflexes. However,

「The surge of darkness, corrode everything――”Rasetsu no Mashu(It is beyond your means to touch the abyss)”」(TN: Rakshasa’s Evil Hand)

「Ugoh!?」

ton Lord Abyssgate’s palm lightly touched the man’s chest, and at that moment the man was blown away like a joke, as though he had been hit by a truck.

――Fingerless glove “Rakshasa Black Hand of Second Advent and Rejection”

This artifact was inserted with “Magic Shockwave” that converted magic power into a shockwave――”Rasetsu no Mashu(It is beyond your means to touch the abyss)”, and regeneration magic “Daten no Ote(There is no end to the abyss)” that could regenerate what it touched to a certain degree. (TN: Daten no Ote = August Hand of Fallen Heaven)

By the way, the chief of the rabbit-ears thought and groaned for three days to come up with the naming.

「Die-, die-, this damned monster-」

Several men who fell into a panic and were brandishing their guns indiscriminately. The bullets that flew out randomly were something dangerous that might drag Emily and others, which they originally should’ve secured, into danger instead.

「How could you guys appeal to Emily and others while ignoring me. I feel lonely――”Zekkou Senjin – Shin’en no Kaina”」(TN: Light Severance Thousand Blades – Abyss’s Arm)

Lord Abyssgate had jumped to the sky unnoticed by anyone, and in midair, he swept his arm in a large motion. With that, four kunais appeared from empty air. Those kunais flew as though they had their own will; three of them stabbed the ground around Emily and the others *ka-ka-ka-* while the remaining one came to a stop still above them.

And, just before the stray bullets reached Emily and the others, they were obstructed by an invisible wall that had manifested in the space slightly ahead.

——Offense and defense dual-use gravity control kunai “Zekkou Senjin”

This artifact’s ability was almost the same as the demon king’s bit weapons. It would lay out space isolation defensive walls by making each other as a fulcrum. It flew freely using gravity control and could accomplish space teleportation by replacing their position with the user.

By the way, Kousuke didn’t have a thousand of these kunais. He had twelve. The one who named it as thousand blades was the rabbit-eared sniper boy. It seemed that the naming reason was「Heheh, stylish, right?」

「Don’t screw around-」

Kimberly howled. Lord Abyssgate was about to land on the ground with several kunais orbiting around him like satellites. Kimberly aimed for the moment when he would land and pulled the trigger. It was superb timing. Even while he was in a panic and confused, that was still an amazing judgment and technique. Furthermore, foreseeing that as a chance, even Allen also gave support fire to make it, so there was no place of escape. Perhaps this was the so-called the enemy of my enemy is my friend.

Lord Abyssgate smiled wryly. He fired a single kunai to the ground while falling and his body made a single rotation midair.

Invite to the abyss――”Doton – Shin’en Ryuusa”(TN: Abyss Quicksand)

Instantly, the ground undulated like a whirlpool, Lord Abyssgate slipped through the bullets and then smoothly dived into the ground. The true worth of Doton, IT COMES-――――!!The frenzied voice of the female investigator who was already beyond hope, startled Kimberly. At the same time,CALM DOWN VANESSAAAA-every one of Grant family was also startled from their beloved daughter’s shriek.

That became an opening where Kimberly was made to pay a painful compensation.

――Bulge, breaking wave. “Doton – Raiton Combination Art – Raika Hourai” (TN: Raiton = Lightning Escape, Raika Hourai = Lightning Flower Phoenix Arrival)

Such words were propagated from the whole darkness of night. Right after that, the ground underneath Kimberly bulged up with explosive momentum. And then, a roaring lightning attack burst out, like a roaring dragon climbing up to the sky.

-, gah!?

Kimberly was hit hard by hard rocks that came at him like a buckshot while an intense lightning attack showered him. Kimberly who couldn’t even make a proper scream was launched into the sky like in a cartoon.

For a moment, everyone’s eyes were fixed on that sight. In the middle of that,

「Be aware of your own sinfulness, o shadow of the country.」

「Wha-, the ground is again――」

Before he could finish speaking, Allen turned his head from the fright that attacked his spine. There, he saw the figure of Kousuke who flew out from the ground with a momentum similar to him being launched out. His figure, with both his hands spread and his legs lightly folded, was truly the pose of a savage eagle!

But, Allen also didn’t lose. Even while his eyes opened wide in surprise, he aimed the gun in his right hand with an amazing reflex and pulled the trigger.

But, Lord Abyssgate who floated in midair, with his body that could be said to be exposed to death, went「fuh」, something he had done a lot today, and dodged the bullet with a stylish midair spin.

And then, he kicked and sent flying Allen’s gun with a midair spinning kick fully filled with centrifugal force. In the next instant, Allen’s left arm moved. Of all things, a hidden gun came out from his left sleeve too.

「Got you-」

「No, that’s your illusion.」

Lord Abyssgate’s other leg cut through the air. Using the centrifugal force of the midair spinning kick; it was a second leg attack that wasn’t unlike a second sword. Allen’s hidden card was sent flying too quickly. Even so, the movement of the shadow of the country didn’t stop; he fluttered the

sleeve of his coat and his right hand that should be snapped away reached toward his waist. There, a revolver for a quick draw was stored.

However, that out of the norm movement was already a step late in front of Lord Abyssgate.

「Shih-」

「Wha!? Gah」

A third kick attack. By twisting the upper body after the second spinning kick, it further connected to the third spinning midair kick. The right kick that returned to its original position after a rotation cleaved through the wind *gou-* while hitting hard the jaw of Allen who immediately tried to pull back.

Allen's body was blown away, and his body danced in midair while making a triple spin. The white of his eyes was exposed as he bounced on the ground. At the same time, Lord Abyssgate's feet also touched the ground.

「.....Abyss-style assassination martial art – kicking form.....”Hien Renkyaku(The bird of the abyss chirped three times)”」(TN: Flying Abyss Tempered Leg)

That unnaturally long pause was of course because he only thought up that name just now!

Putting aside the former investiga——the mere otaku who said「Aa, not just ninja art, but even martial art.....it's lovely」and the father-daughter who conversed「Emily, i, is this person alright?」「No, it's already too late for her, father」, the battlefield where the abyss lord had descended was filled with screams of chaos and despair where

everything was merely trampled helplessly by the darkness that he brought about.

「I didn’t hear anything about this! What the hell is that guy-」

「Damn it-, don’t come here!」

A barrage of bullets surged along with thunderous sounds. But, Lord Abyssgate that was the target wasn’t even grazed. No, to be more accurate, the bullets actually hit. To the double or triple layers of afterimages following him every time he moved. It was as though the bullets were sucked in, shifted slightly from Lord Abyssgate’s body, and drifted toward the afterimages.

「――”Juuton – Keishi no Kage”. No one is able to seize the abyss.」(TN: Gravity Escape – Shadow of Unusual Death)

The combination technique from the skill “Phantom Step” and gravity magic――”Keishi no Kage”. While generating afterimages using “Phantom Step”, those afterimages were enchanted with gravity magic that averted every attack.

「……This is like, a B-class movie.」

Kimberly cursed like that while somehow raising up his body that was finally freed from the numbness. He vomited blood ‘gahah’. He looked at his surroundings while on all fours and made a dry smile.

The incarnation of death boasting overwhelming force that surpassed the speed of sound couldn’t even graze the existence before his eyes. Even though they were able to see him, even though they could perceive him, they were unable to grasp his real state. Even though they were fully observing him like this; yet when they noticed they would

suddenly lose sight of his existence, and the next time they noticed would be when they were on the verge of having their consciousness swallowed by the darkness along with intense pain. And only the back figure of the lord that was in unrelaxed alertness.

Flames crawled on the ground, lightning flew wildly about, wind blades raised up blood splashes, and the ground swallowed everything. The shadow ran whether it was on the ground or the sky, vanishing and disappearing, while cloning itself into several bodies and sent kunais rushing through the sky ignoring gravity.

「Aa, shit. I really cannot go along with this-」

「That too, is the consequence of your choice, isn't it?」

「-」

Kimberly whispered once more while somehow crawling toward the nearest car, but right after that, a cool voice replied to him from right behind him.

When Kimberly looked back, there was the figure of Lord Abyssgate looking down on him. At the same time, *dosha-* a body of his comrade fell with a raw sound beside Kimberly. That body's neck was clearly twisted into a direction that a neck mustn't go.

「This, monster」

「You who prey on humans, who doesn't feel any hesitation at involving unrelated people, and slaughter your comrades for money, aren't you the monster?」

It was a scathing reply. Kimberly faced Lord Abyssgate with his body falling on his backside. When he noticed, he

couldn’t hear any gunshots anymore. He looked around with just his gaze, but there was already no one standing on this battlefield.

No, there were barely some people. The soldiers of the special squad. With their backs facing the wall, they formed a half-circle to become the shield of Chief Magdanese. They were standing even while trickling cold sweat. Beside them was a clone body of Lord Abyssgate, they weren’t allowed to run away, but even so, they didn’t seem like fighting each other.

On the other hand, the organization members that Kimberly led here seemed to have passed on already without even any time to feel pain. There wasn’t anyone with a showy wound. A single stab in the heart, an internal organ destroyed using impact, the stopping of a heart with electricity, or the severing of an artery using a wind blade. Even the people that were enveloped in flames had their life severed by a single attack of the flying kunai before they died by the fire.

「Oi oi, what the hell. You overlook them, but slaughter us all? Just what is the difference between those guys and us huh?」

Kimberly cracked jokes even with his cheeks twitching while his body was sweating from pain and unease. Lord Abyssgate changed his hold on his short sword into a reverse grip while shrugging his shoulders at Kimberly.

「Evil with conviction, and a mere fiend. Is it fine to consider that both will meet the same end as a result? The answer, is no. ……Well, there is also the difference at the level of troublesomeness for the cleaning up afterward though.」

Lord Abyssgate was Lord Abyssgate. He wasn’t that demon king. A method of annihilating anything and everything when hostility was directed to oneself, was a method that he couldn’t take based from his sense of value and also his lack of means to clean up afterward, nor did he want to take it. Not to mention how this was Earth.

But, the experience that he had gone through was also not so sweet that he would let alone fiends scattering around malice for their own selfish desires, for their own pleasure. Therefore, he made his choice. That was all there was to it.

From the slight movement of Kimberly’s gaze, Lord Abyssgate guessed that he was wracking his brain for some kind of solution to escape from this situation. He unhurriedly walked toward Kimberly. And then, he violently grasped Kimberly’s collar and lifted him up with one hand easily.

「Uoh. Wait-, just wait! What happened wasn’t my real intention-. Even I have a circumstance; I cannot help it! Listen to me!」

Kimberly desperately beat at the arm of Lord Abyssgate that lifted him up from behind while speaking an excuse that would overshadow even the word unsightly. Lord Abyssgate lifted him up as he was like that, like a criminal that was crucified on a cross.

At the same time,

「Uh. I, I was……aa, if I’m not mistaken, I fainted!? Why am I lifted up!?」

Allen who fainted until now with the white of his eyes showing was lifted up similarly like Kimberly by a clone body and carried near.

The special squad soldiers starting from Chief Magdanese, and then Vanessa who was sending Kousuke a strangely sparkling gaze, Emily who was completely creeped out by such Vanessa, and the Grant husband and wife who were turning pale from the surrounding situations in a silent panic where they couldn’t even hide their bewilderment, were all paying full attention.

Amidst that, the lord drew back and recovered the kunais protecting Emily and the others while raising his voice.

「Emily Grant! Vanessa Paradis!」

「Fua, fhyes!」

「Yes, what is it my god?」

Emily who was suddenly called by her full name responded with a shaken stutter. As for Vanessa at her side, for some reason, she wasn’t shaken at all. Instead, she fell on one of her knees *sucha-!* right away, and replied with reverence as though she was kneeling before her lord. The end of her sentence caused Emily to goggle at her in shock.

But, even that no-good investigator Vanessa who wrecked the serious atmosphere like that immediately corrected her expression from the next words.

「I have captured the perpetrator that snatched away your precious family, your precious comrades.」

Yes. Kimberly snatched them away. Her esteemed superior Hughes. And also the life of her colleagues.

Yes. Allen snatched them away. Even indirectly, the lives of her substitute father, of her big brothers and big sisters.

「Can you two stay quiet?」

There was no way they could. Their hearts that had been paralyzed by the unusual situations started to move again. The scorching rage they had been holding in all this time started to blaze again like a fire that was put into a fireplace.

Emily stood up. The figure of her family floated around her mind. Because it was a command? He didn't directly do it? So what. It was beyond doubt, that what was scattered by the man in front of her eyes, had snatched away the life of her important people.

Vanessa stood up. What filled her mind, was the figure of the superior that she should aim for. And then, the figures of the comrades with whom she entrusted her life to and vice versa. Who was the one that shot at them from behind with a reason like "for the sake of money"? Who was the one who snorted at the offered trust while trampling on it? It was the shitty bastard before her eyes.

「O, oi, Vanessa. Wait, just calm down! I――」

「Silence.」

Vanessa slowly stepped forward.

「A, aa~, young miss? That, it was my bad that I blundered――」

「Shut up.」

Emily stomped forward loudly.

Both of them, the two woman who had survived to this point, walked forward side by side. Their expressions couldn't be seen from the shadow covering their face. But,

their lips that were tightly pursed into a line spoke of their emotions more eloquently than anything.

They clenched their fists. Both of them broke into a run. The two men who became the origin of calamity imagined the future that would befall them and sighed. In their actions, there was contempt that could be seen, after all, what they faced were just females; furthermore, one of them was nothing more than a girl. Getting punched wasn’t really a big deal.

But, that contempt too disappeared right after that.

——There is no end to the abyss. The deep darkness envelops everything.(Now, beloved children. Let’s bestow the protection of the abyss to you.)

The moment that whisper was uttered, the night suddenly coiled about on the greatly clenched fist of the two. The blackly whirling light that gave such an illusion was increasing in strength with pulses each time the two took a step forward! Yes, it was as though, the abyss lord was increasing that strength with each passing of time!

Unease ran through the expression of Kimberly and Allen. Both of them didn’t understand what phenomenon that was. But, their soul understood this much. ‘That’s bad news-!’ Following that impulse, they raised their voice to stop the two.

□Wai——□

□Sto——□

□□No more discussion-□□

But, at that time the two were already right in front of them. Their hidden expression became exposed. What was there was a wicked look that even resembled evil Rakshasa.

ZUDAN- An impossibly loud footstep resounded. Cracks in the shape of a spider web ran through the ground! And then, it was unleashed. It was like a cannonball that blasted through the air, the fist clad in the abyss!

□FLY AWAY-□

□DIE-□

Emily’s fist at Allen, and Vanessa’s fist at Kimberly. Both of them put their whole feelings and their billions of rage, they spit out everything, and struck!

□□THIS SHITTY BASTARD-!!□□

GOU-!! The thunderous sound of hitting flesh and, □GUPEE!?□□GEHAH!?□such screams resounded. In the eyes of the lord that had the perception ability raised by “Heavenly Eye”, the sight of Kimberly and Allen’s cheeks getting ran through by a fist, their cheekbones were broken, their teeth pulverized, and their flesh squashed in undulation, was projected.

When the lord timely released his hand, Kimberly and Allen were blown away in a tailspin as though to prove that might and they bounced together on the ground. And then without any lessening in their momentum, they crashed into the car behind. Both of them cordially plunged through the windshield head first together, and in the end, only their butts were sticking out without even a twitch.

The sound of someone gulping their saliva *gulp* echoed. The soldiers of the special squad were making an expression

that was shuddering in fear as though to say「Those fists are really damned bad news」.

Amidst that atmosphere, Emily and Vanessa who were standing still with their fist still outstretched slowly relaxed their tension. And then, they lifted their faces and gazed at the lord.

There on their faces floated a smile. Just by looking at their smiles, it could be clearly understood that even though it wasn't wholly, at least their expression had cleared up a bit.

「Both of you. ……That attack felt like it would make me fall in love.」

The lord gave words of praise while once more going「fuh」 that he had lavishly displayed throughout this day.

Emily and Vanessa looked at each other's face, and then, they turned their face to the lord one more time. Wordlessly, they both fixed a thumb up resolutely.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

This is not over you know? It's still continuing you know~.

The next update is planned for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 210

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Please Kill Me Instantly Instead……

AN: This one is short. There is a big possibility it will be rewritten, or added to.

"Now then, here we are o guardian. I'll grant you the chance to choose."

After Emily and Vanessa made their settlement with a fist of all their might (plus abyss), the lord that was observing Chief Magdanese and her group said such thing with his eyes shining.

In the silent night where the tumult of death and strife had passed, leaving behind the heaps of corpses of armed men all around, the voice of the lord resounded clearly. Emily and Vanessa, and also the Grant husband and wife duo who were a slight distance away, they all went 'hah' as their gazes turned toward that voice.

Even the special squad soldiers whose awareness had slackened slightly from the extermination of the enemy and the *observing* act from the lord began to put on a tense air once again.

"Choose?"

Chief Magdanese was pressing on her arm that was soaked in blood while standing up with the help of the agent beside her. Her cheek was dirtied by blood and painted her gruesomely, but she responded at the lord with a straight, calm gaze without even a grimace on her face.

「Yes, choose. Will you be exterminated in this place? Or will you take the second option?」

「What nonsense……I already told you my, no, the security bureau's will. If you want to kill us, then kill. Even if the country loses a pawn like me, it won't affect this country's system.」

She had made her resolve. Her cold gaze without any emotion in it discarded the lord's proposal as nonsense.

But, the lord wasn't making a "proposal" here.

「Certainly, I don't think that your death will affect this country's decision considerably. But, I believe that the influence of the living you is powerful, isn't that correct? Don't you think that influence ought to be used for the sake of the country's safety?」

「? What are you……-, such thing. That's a contemptible threatening isn't it.」

Yes, this was the "ultimatum" that was only dressed up as a "proposal".

Even if Chief Magdanese died, it would be impossible for the upper brasses of this country who knew about the appeal of 「Berserk」to retract back their hand. There would be some remaining that would keep trying. The successor of Chief Magdanese would succeed her duty or else that duty would simply be moved toward another organization.

But, if this great woman who could even be said to be a living legend used her position and all her influence to insist that【Berserk】was unneeded, or even dangerous, what would happen then? Chief Magdanese said that she was nothing more than a dog of the country, but sure enough, could the upper brasses ignore her full report?

From the lord’s conjecture, there would be no way for them to ignore her.

For the lord who was lacking in the means of cleaning up the aftermath with the country as his opponent, the method of bringing over Chief Magdanese to his side and make her revoke the【Berserk】case could be said to be the most realistic means.

Of course, the lord also had the means to make the top brasses of this country forget everything regarding 【Berserk】. He could make a request to that demon king. If he did that, the whole case would be settled without leaving any loose end.

But, the lord didn’t choose that. The dignity of the lord wouldn’t forgive him if he left this case’s resolving to other people wholesale even though he was the one that poked his nose into his case by his own. Above all, he thought of that person as a friend, and so there was no way he could treat him as a convenient existence. If he did something like that, then the lord wouldn’t be able to say that he was the friend of that demon king while raising his head high.

Therefore, for the lord, it would be for the best if Chief Magdanese herself put an end to this【Berserk】incident.

And in the case this option couldn’t be practiced, then it would be a war against the new security bureau without

Chief Magdanese, no, against the country itself that was backing the bureau.

「This is different from threatening. This is a declaration. If your side wishes for a fight to the bitter end, then I will fight until this body is reduced into a worthless thing. Now, guardian. You can imagine using that sagacious mind of yours. In the end, just how many sacrifices will be necessary to stop this abyss lord.」

「……」

Chief Magdanese stayed silent. Her gaze surveyed the surroundings slightly without even speaking any words. What entered her gaze was the mere shadow of the armed men's former self. In contrast, the man before her eyes had not even a single wrinkle on his outfit.

In front of this person who utilized supernatural techniques that surpassed the realm of understanding, even the special squad of the security bureau would be powerless. His conduct and speech were also beyond comprehension.

Although, it was by no means that the winning percentage was zero inside Chief Magdanese's thoughts. No matter how much irrational strength this person had, as long as he was only an individual, he would be in a losing battle against an organization. Inside her head, she had already pictured several routes of killing the lord by using the "strength of organization".

But,

「Haa……」

She let out a deep sigh. From how the agent standing by beside Chief Magdanese was blinking his eyes, perhaps it

was really rare for her to act like that.

But, if that agent knew about what was inside Chief Magdanese's heart, then surely he would feel that it couldn't be helped for her to make that deep sigh from the overwhelming fatigue drowning her heart, he would even feel sympathy to that.

(The right-hand man of the demon king……what's more, the "returnees", is it.)

Yes, the lord had proclaimed before. That he was the "right-hand man of the demon king". In other words, this embodiment of irrationality before her eyes *was nothing more than a subordinate.* In the end, was that existence which was referred to as a demon king, an existence that was even more powerful than this lord? That was something that Chief Magdanese didn't understand.

But, here, for some reason, her mind was naturally under the impression that *this information was nothing significant*——from that, and when the keyword "returnees" emerged in her mind, terrifying possibilities were welling out from inside her, one after another.

The returnee incident had shaken the society for a period. Naturally, the intelligence department of Britain also didn't ignore that incident. But rather than the boys and girls who were called "returnees", the intelligence department focused more in observing and dealing with the disturbing elements who were sniffing at the occult aspect of these "returnees". Even so, there was no doubt that Britain was paying attention to the『Returnees Incident』.

But, at one point in time, the heated up media and suspicious organizations that were showing disturbing

movements suddenly stopped showing any movement. It happened so quickly, like the tide that was drawing back.

(Yes, that incident came to an end so naturally that it was unnatural. And then, I, and also the intelligence department, didn’t feel that it was unnatural!)

The existence of the lord and the few keywords that he put before her eyes opened up Chief Magdanese’s eyes.

——This person wielding supernatural power, is a “returnee”.

——The “returnees”, numbered thirty people in total.

——At the very least, there is an existence that this person looked up as above him.

——The recognition toward the “returnees” is weak and much less in their own country, but almost the whole world was like that.

——Even now, she doesn’t feel that it was unnatural about how weak this recognition is.

‘Just what’s with this situation’, Chief Magdanese thought. ‘The opponent is an individual’, such an assumption was an excessively hopeful conjecture.

「Let me, ask a question. Among *all of you*, how high are you in comparison?」

When that question left her mouth, she thought that there was really no meaning in asking that, even so, Chief Magdanese couldn’t help but asking the question. She wanted to know even if just a part, about “they” who managed to hide from the whole world even after having the attention from all over the world gathered on them at once.

Hearing the question from Chief Magdanese, the lord hummed「fumu」while touching his chin. He showed a gesture of thinking for a bit, and then he shrugged his shoulders in overreaction and answered.

「I can boast that I’m top class even among my friends. However……」

「However?」

The lord was putting on airs; however, Chief Magdanese only asked back quietly without showing any irritation. Toward her, the lord held his head high, and then he spoke in pride.

「Compared to our demon king and his ladies, I cannot hold a candle to them. Even in a one-on-one, using my whole body and soul, where I take out all of the trump cards that I have……dealing a scratch is the best that I can do.」

「……I see.」

The special squad soldiers were going slightly astir. An opponent that cornered them until they were in a half-destroyed state, and on his back there was still someone else waiting, someone that this person could do nothing except put a scratch on. What’s more, there were several such people. What’s more, he said *ladies.* Ladies-! The fingertips of the soldiers that were on the triggers were trembling! How envio——terrifying!

「Although, perhaps it won’t even become a fight against you guys, to begin with.」

The detail that was added like an additional blow convinced Chief Magdanese. It was just as she thought, even their awareness was being guided. That conviction caused a sigh to leak out from Chief Magdanese’s mouth once more.

And then, she asked the scale on her heart, and a bitter smile emerged on her mouth.

「Indeed, it's not worth it to continue this just for the merit of turning『Berserk』into a weapon. By the way, I wonder if there is any room for negotiation?」

「None.」

「Is it fine for you to say that even without asking that demon king-sama you respected?」

「Of course.」

A curt response. Chief Magdanese sighed for the third time.

「The effect and usefulness of『Berserk』are already known by the top brass. I cannot assert that this case will be resolved by me advocating for the opposing argument. It's my specialty to make an argument armed with theoretical backing; however, I cannot guarantee anything with certainty if I have to omit your existence in my argument.」

「Are you implicitly telling me to expose the information about me and the one behind me? Know this, guardian. In this world, there are things that shouldn't be known. ……Or rather, if I told you about them then it will be seriously bad news for me and for you too. Especially if anyone tries anything to the wive~s it seriously will be the end. It will be totally over for this country. If this is known, then there will absolutely be some fellow coming out to do a stupid thing, and this country will disappear from the map yea——cough-. Anyway, I have no intention of telling you anything about us.」

「……」

For some reason, it was as though the bare face came out from Lord Abyssgate. It was a momentary shiver that was obvious even through the sunglasses and black costume. Other than Chief Magdanese, even the soldiers were horrified. Just what kind of existence could make this aberrant existence to return to his bare face unconsciously!?

"Hhn, a, and, what is your answer?"

The lord cough unnaturally as though to pull himself together, and then he pressed the choices once more on them. The mind of Chief Magdanese was groping frantically for the best solution to her country even now at this moment, but she was aware that the answer had already come out from inside herself since some time ago.

The country's safety was everything for Sharon Magdanese.

Then, if what was waiting at the end of the path of pursuing that goal would be a war against an unknown, and furthermore, a powerful organization without equal that could even possibly overthrow this country, then that would really just be putting the cart before the horse. At the very least, she knew that in the current time she was overwhelmed in the information aspect and battle strength.

A long silence descended. The cold gaze of Chief Magdanese pierced straight at the lord.

The lord was also staring straight back at Chief Magdanese while crossing his arms.

Just how much time passed? Before anyone realized, Emily and Vanessa were already standing close to the lord; the soldiers were nervously gazing alternately between Chief Magdanese and the lord. It was at that time that the words that would decide their fate was finally spoken.

「……Fine then.」Berserk」is uncontrollable. Refinement of the wonder drug for it is impossible. At this rate, there is a high possibility of it adapting to the environment and starting an air-borne infection, the damage, in that case, will be vast. ……What do you think about that? Of course, I will put seasoning on that story sufficiently.」

「Wonderful. With this, there will also be no need for a joke like all the upper brasses of Emily's country showing the same symptoms as Alzheimer, despite that being the illness that she is fighting against. My greatest respect for your decisive judgment.」

「I don't need your respect or anything; however, I think that it's a silver lining that you are someone rational. ……Though honestly, I think there is something wrong with your speech and act.」

The words that were muttered in a whisper by Chief Magdanese in the end there, surely those words came half from being a sore loser, and half came from her heart.

The lord pretended not to hear that while his gaze moved to Emily beside him. By sending flying one of the causes that cornered her important people to death, her feeling had been diverted somewhat, but as expected, the flames of her hatred were still directed at Chief Magdanese who was the ringleader without weakening in the slightest.

「Emily. Just as you heard, we have procured a method to end this case. But, I know that this method is not something that you can really agree with.」

「……right」

Emily clutched the sleeve of the lord tightly. Her tightly pressed lips looked like she would bite on her lips anytime.

That look of hers eloquently exposed the inside of her heart that was yelling「These kind of people, it’s better if they all just die!」.

The lord questioned such Emily.

「I was the one who said that I would become your strength. That’s why, if Emily wishes for revenge, I’ll draw my blade against them. Emily, what do you want to do?」

Those words of the lord that came this late in the game caused the soldiers who were breathing a sigh of relief to make a tense expression just when they thought the talk was concluded already. It was only Chief Magdanese who was sending a calm gaze at Emily, as a criminal waiting for judgment.

The strength of Emily’s hand that was clutching the lord’s sleeve became stronger. Her figure that was looking down while trembling a bit as though she was holding down a great emotion looked even more painful to look at. But, the first words that were let out from such Emily was strong, it resounded with a dignity that made everyone there to be taken aback.

「Don’t look down on me.」

The gaze of Emily who lifted up her face stared straight from the shoulder of the lord. In that distance where they could feel each other’s breathing, there was a light other than hatred shining in those eyes of Emily.

「You are asking me that kind of question after finishing the talk, are you testing me? I’ll say it one more time. Don’t look down on me, Kousuke. I decided to walk this path because I wanted to become the strength of someone who is suffering from sickness because I want to keep alive even just one

person more. There is no way I will trample on the best path you have grasped for me!」

Her voice resounded clearly. That will spread like a ripple. Surely, that will was something that wouldn’t lose even against the will to safeguard the country that Chief Magdanese displayed.

「Besides, I don’t happen to have a shamelessness that allows me to entrust others with killing people for my own sake. Vanessa that has been helping me all this time, and Kousuke who told me that you would become my strength, even though you are not related to this I absolutely won’t make that kind of horrible request to the two of you!」

Her cat eyes glared intensely. She was holding a blazing hatred in her chest; however, she didn’t mistake her path. This girl would immediately turn small in a crisis, she was a scaredy cat, and obstinate; however, it was obvious that inside this awfully straightforward girl, there was a strength that couldn’t be mistaken.

A faint smile emerged on the lips of the lord. Different from the fearless smile that he showed before this, it was a smile that was vaguely fleeting, and gentle. The lord’s hand reached toward Emily’s head in a natural motion. *pon pon* Light touches were conveyed to Emily.

「Emily. As I thought, you are a good woman.」

「.....Boe!?」

Instant petrification. Next, she turned into a completely ripe tomato when she comprehended what was said to her. The garnish was a weird shocked voice. And then, she noticed how their faces had approached each other’s until they were at a super close range where her lips would be able to touch

if she stretched herself up a little, and how she was tightly clutching the lord’s arm. She went ‘awawa, hawawa’ while backing off in shaky footsteps.

And then, she noticed Vanessa who was giving her a thumb up, for some reason, while Chief Magdanese and the soldiers who were making complicated expressions, and then her family that was sending her a strangely lukewarm gaze……
「Do, don’t looook!」she said while turning small. She crouched and held her head with both her hands as her body was trembling from shame. That figure was truly that of a small animal.

The lord made a pleasant smile at Emily before his gaze returned to Chief Magdanese.

「That’s how it is. Guardian-dono, please, for the sake of this country’s safety too, persuade this country with desperation. There is no worth in effort. Results are everything. If anything is going to harm this child and the people in her surroundings, no matter what kind of shape that is――then know this, the abyss swallows everything without exception.」

「……I know.」

Chief Magdanese nodded quietly at the abnormal killing intent and pressure that was filling the last sentence. And then, she proposed that she would like to dispatch personnel to clean up this place and prepare a place to talk to each other regarding the organization behind Kimberly.

Indeed, they couldn’t just neglect the heaps of corpses, and it was essential to know about the organization behind Kimberly to save Emily completely. And so, the lord accepted that proposal while teaching them one fact.

That fact was that the number of body bags they needed to prepare was only for Kimberly’s comrades. Yes, actually the soldiers of the special squad, although they were all seriously wounded with their limbs’ tendons severed, or their internal organs terribly damaged, not a single one among them received lethal damage, none of them had died.

Thinking from the beginning that bringing over the security bureau to his side was one of the methods to end this case, the lord left them alive so as not to leave behind a seed of future trouble as much as possible. Although, even though the soldiers felt joy that their comrades survived, at the same time, their mind felt down from the terror that they were partially annihilated even when the opponent was holding back that much……but that was just a trivial matter for the lord.

Now then, for the moment, a relationship of cooperation was built with the security bureau, and the matter had reached a point where they could pause. It was at this time.

The lord, no, Kousuke heard. The sound of *saa—*. It came from inside his body. It seemed that he could hear for real, the sound of blood leaving his face.

Kousuke’s hand was moving toward his sunglasses with small shivers. And then he slowly took off his sunglasses with the item clattering *rattle rattle*.

What appeared from behind the sunglasses was a grandly convulsing expression.

Other than the agent who received Chief Magdanese’s instruction and made contact for personnel dispatch, everyone there noticed Kousuke’s pale expression that was

obvious to see even under the faint moonlight. His eccentric atmosphere until just now was vanishing.

Kousuke turned on his heels wordlessly; however, everyone could clearly see his dead eyes. He started to walk unsteadily, and totteringly. Before long he reached the gap between the wall and stairs on the building, he flattened himself into the gap and turned small. Just like Emily-chan.

In front of the people whose eyes turned round in wonder, Kousuke buried his face in his knees and whispered in small but clear voice.

「Someone, please kill me instantly instead……」

He wished to be beheaded in the middle of the warehouse district.

It seemed that the compensation to become peerless was great.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Actually, I wanted to write more about the entanglement when Kousuke returned, yet the time wasss~.

Four months of work is seriously bad news.

The next update is planned for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 211

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

No More, I Want to Go Home……

AN: I’m sorry.

In the end, just posting the next chapter is the best that I can do.

Just what is golden week I wonder? Does it mean a week of demonic work?

Haha-

Because of that, I’m thinking of putting aside the rewriting and improving the previous chapter for the time being.

If there is anyone holding hope for that, my apologies.

「Hold on! Get a hold of yourself, Kousuke!」

Emily’s tragic call that didn’t suit the warehouse district at night echoed. Kousuke sat on the floor while hugging his knees; he was staring at empty air with the eyes of a dead fish, and a dry smile pasted on his lips. Emily was holding the collar of Kousuke while desperately jolting his body back and forth.

Everyone of the Grant family was staring at the situation with a bewildered feeling in wonder of what was going on

while Vanessa was also throwing a doubtful gaze at Kousuke who suddenly became useless. Even so, she was running her gaze over the surroundings vigilantly in his place.

And then, at the end of her gaze were several bureau staff members and the surviving soldiers.

Yes, currently there were many bureau staff members in this place. When Chief Magdanese finished her talk with Lord Abyssgate, Kousuke suddenly turned into a state as though he was a stain on the wall. After that, Chief Magdanese called in bureau staff members to clean up the aftermath.

After all, the phrase of heaps of corpses all around perfectly suited this place right now. They couldn’t just leave the corpses like that, and the cars Kimberly and his group rode in to this place needed to be confiscated too. They needed extra hands for dealing with all those.

In addition, they needed to share information between the two sides regarding the organization behind Kimberly and also interrogate him. It was for that reason that Chief Magdanese and her group, and also Kousuke and others, were remaining here.

Both Kimberly and Allen now looked as though their former handsome look was only an illusion. Their caved-in faces were too tragic to look at, and they were still unconscious without even a twitch, and the white of their eyes was exposed. Several soldiers were watching over Kimberly, but he looked so atrocious that they questioned□Is there really a need to be guarded?□.

And so, they were still unable to hold the interrogation. Or rather, Kousuke’s heart was hurled to far beyond as though he was on the verge of being swallowed into the abyss, so currently, they couldn’t even exchange information with

Chief Magdanese. Emily was doing her best, so Kousuke would return to his sanity but……the damage to Kousuke-san was deep.

Chief Magdanese received treatment on her arm that was drilled by a rifle bullet beside a car that was equipped with first-aid facilities, mixed among the injured troops. She was narrowing her eyes at Kousuke who was in such a state.

Although they had reconciled, or rather, formed a cease-fire agreement for the moment, but the other party was the great woman who carried both good and evil in her method. With Kousuke's state where he was currently murmuring in a broken language「I'm, fine. I'm, working hard. I'm, fine」, Vanessa also needed to endure various things and kept a watchful eye on the other side.

However, she wished that Kousuke would return to his sanity soon already. And so, looking at Emily who was desperately calling at Kousuke while her arms were circling on his head as though she was going to embrace him. Toward such Emily who was starting to reduce the sense of distance into one where it was hard to claim that they were just mere friends, Vanessa gave her advice.

「Doctor Grant. Can I say one thing?」

「Whaaat. Right now I have no free time to look after mere otaku heree!」

「That's impolite to call me a mere otaku. I'm not just an otaku. Even if I'm an otaku, I'm an otaku that is an agent——no, I'm the SOUSAKAN.」(TN: Sousakan means investigator in Japanese. All this time when I referred to some people from the security bureau as agent, the raw was actually calling them as sousakan or investigator. I changed them to agent in the translation though.)

「I don’t get it!」

For some reason, Vanessa and Emily pulled a smooth, funny man and straight man routine a little bit like a comedy duo. Emily went ‘fusha—’ like a cat while her gaze insisted「Be quiet a little!」. Of course, Vanessa-san was unstoppable.

「About my god, it appears that state of his that was overflowing with awesomeness not long ago, for some reason that I don’t understand it, put a burden on his mental state. And so, how about trying something that will make my god’s feeling to lighten up? Something that will make him happy.」

「That’s some good advice you have there……but you see, let me point out at just one thing! What’s with that “my god”!」

Emily Grant didn’t fail to notice that opening to be the straight man.

Vanessa showed a really irritating face that seemed to question「Just now, is that really something important?」, even so, she explained with the sense of values of good old Japan.

「Doctor Grant. The origin of why I call Kousuke-san as my god comes from the tradition and culture of Japan, that is the correct way of displaying respect, because that is a title of honor.」

「Wha, what do you mean?」

「In Japan, people who display transcendental skill, producing a result that cannot be matched by any other and ought to be given high praise, they would be called “~is god” (TN: Kami in Japan can mean god, but can also mean

incredible or fantastic) in praise. Therefore, I’m praising “Kousuke-san is a god!”, or “Kousuke-san’s awesome style is seriously godly!!” is something that is really natural and par for the course!

I, I didn’t know that……

Vanessa’s finger snapped out powerfully and pointed to emphasize her claim. Emily’s expression changed just like when she received new knowledge from a university lecturer. ……She didn’t even notice how inside her arms, Kousuke was shot by Vanessa’s word bullets and he convulsed *twitch twitch twitch*.

It seemed that the SOUSAKAN’s mood became pleased looking at Emily’s attitude. Her tongue moved even more fluently.

Doctor Grant. This is a digression, but in Japan, every day new gods are being born.

Li, lies……in Japan, there are a lot of people like Kousuke!?

Emily showed a frightened expression. Her side-tail stood on end. Beside her, the expression of everyone in the Grant Family was grandly twitching. The eyes of Chief Magdanese narrowed so thin it looked like string now, and the soldiers’ expression turned grim as though to say Despair!.

……It seemed that the people of the security bureau were also pricking up their ears and listening really attentively.

Whether she actually knew that or not, Vanessa shrugged her shoulders with an overreaction that looked like a certain someone somewhere and said No no, how can that be and denied Emily’s words.

「As expected, even Japan(the country of fantasy) won't have anyone that is on the level of my god. However, it's the fact that gods endowed with technique and zeal which shake the soul exist there. ……Doctor Grant. Even you should've at least heard about it before. The other popular name of that country. Bringing forth gods into existence day after day, this alias displays that essence!」

「I, I don't know, I don't know what it is, Vanessa!」

It seemed that the strange switch inside Emily-chan was turned on. Or perhaps, she was simply someone that got easily swept away by the place's atmosphere. Speaking in terms of a story's tale, then she was definitely in the category of easy heroine. (TN: Easy heroine is those heroines in the story that easily fall to the main character just because of a few kind words or gesture, or sometimes without any clear reason at all)

Vanessa, who obtained an amazingly excellent audience, was showered by the supporting light that was the moonlight while she raised one hand to her chest, her other hand was spread widely, and with an air as though she was an actress on stage, she made the alias of the country she would forever love to resound.

「People call that country like this. ——The country where eight million gods are born.」

「That's not it-. Apologize to the sense of values of the good old Japan! You representative of a misunderstood foreigner!」

That statement of Vanessa was really too much this time, which caused Kousuke to flew out from the bottom of the abyss like a launched missile. He reflexively stood up while roaring angrily. Emily also got carried up to a standing position by his momentum, she said「Standing! Kousuke is

standing!」which sounded like a joke material while revealing her joy.

「Congratulations of your revival, my go――」

Vanessa immediately fell on her knee with a thud and bowed like a retainer revering her lord, but her words were cut off in the middle. By *hyu-* the sound of cutting wind and the wind pressure grazing her cheek.

「Oi, Danessa. The next time you call me “my god” again……I won’t miss.」(TN: Danessa, in the raw, the katakana of ‘Va’ here is replaced with the kanji of ‘da’ which could mean, worthless, hopeless, useless, etc. Sorry, but I cannot think of any fitting translation to English for this)

A cold sweat smoothly trickled down Vanessa’s temple while she quietly looked across her shoulder. There, she could see a jet black kunai stabbed deeply in the ground. But, she wouldn’t get discouraged by something of that level. Such a thing didn’t fit for this SOUSAKAN!

「……Then, I’ll call you master.」

「Why!? Isn’t it fine if you keep calling me “Kousuke-san” the same as always!?」

「No, there is no way I can do that. As a person begging for teaching, I wish to take up an attitude that adequately expresses that!」

「Somehow I’m feeling an amazing spirit from you though. Somehow it feels a bit scary though. Or rather, begging for teaching?」

「Yes. Please accept me as your pupil by any means!」

「This development, is unexpected!」

The spirit of Danessa-san was full to the brim. After a total of five minutes of explanation that hit Kousuke like a surging wave……in short, she was awfully moved by Kousuke's strength, so please accept me as a pupil by any means, something like that it seemed.

To expand further, Vanessa was giving her explanation with an enthusiasm that was at the peak of the peak, so it went without saying that a lethal wound was dealt once more on Kousuke's shame.

She said how magnificent the pose of Lord Abyssgate was while reproducing it with a perfectly copied motion; she also chuckled 'fuh' while saying「The moon tonight is wonderful!」……. Kousuke was covering his face with both hands while shaking his head screaming「Stooop! Please, stop it alreadyyy!」.

「Why a pupil huh. I don't get how your thought process is working anymore.」

「I think that if anyone witnesses those numerous techniques which look like a Japanese ninja, it's only natural that they will want to receive teachings though……」

「Have some self-awareness. The natural that Vanessa is saying is generally unnatural you know. Or rather, you are an agent of the security bureau, right? What are you going to do about that, huh?」

Kousuke averted his face looking rather unpleasant after seeing Vanessa's fierily sparkling gaze while gently giving his refusal.

Vanessa glanced at Chief Magdanese before, for some reason, she went□fuh□with a smile that looked really irritating. Chief Magdanese's eyes twitched in reaction.

□In the first place, I entered the security bureau because I thought that□Isn't something like an agent that fights against evil really cool?□□

□That motive is like an elementary student huh……□

□Even after I safely became an agent, my heart was throbbing from thinking□Won't I get dragged into a national conspiracy, I wonder?□while I went through the days.□

□Your way of thinking is seriously like an elementary student.□

Chief Magdanese covered her eyes with one hand. Her emotion could be easily guessed. There were several of the soldiers that averted their eyes a bit and others that sent Vanessa a lukewarm gaze. Surely, they were the same kind as this Danessa.

□I was moved when I met with the chief the first time. She is the living legend that handed down swift yet cool-headed judgment. When I actually met her and felt her atmosphere on my skin, I thought□Eh, what, isn't this a real-life M!□. I instantly decided then. □Yosh, I'll become a real ○07□□

□Oo~i, chief-sa~n! It seems that this otaku SOUSAKAN wanted to become your 0○7!□

Chief Magdanese whispered□……The Paradis that I knew, was just an illusion□with a tired expression. And then, when she averted her gaze away as though to say that she couldn't bear to see any more than this, ahead of her gaze she witnessed the soldiers and bureau staff who were giving

out an air that said「Yep yep, I get that~」. Her cheeks were twitching grandly.

「However, yes, However! I had seen it! I had known it! That there are things in this world that not ought to be known! Yes, it’s you!」

「Guhah. I, I let my guard down. It all came back at once.」

「Compared to master’s awesomeness, this M wannabe chief is just too shabby. What I should aim for is right here! Master, I beg you. Please, accept me as your pupil.」

Saying that Danessa-san bowed her head. As for the chief-san, after getting arbitrarily treated as a fictional character, getting an expectation arbitrarily put on her, and in the end, she was called shabby, she pulled out her handgun with a gaze that was like a tundra. Seeing that, the squad captain beside her holding her from behind while saying「Ca, calm down-, chieef!」to stop her.

While sending a glance to that commotion, Kousuke, who was given a petition from someone to be his pupil for the first time in his life, sighed loudly while saying a word.

「Rejected.」

He cut down the request resolutely.

However, it seemed that Vanessa had predicted that from the beginning. She nodded once without particularly losing her composure. And then, she spoke a request that she seemed to have been prepared beforehand, or rather, this one seemed to be her heart’s actual desire.

「Then, please sleep with me.」

「Your crypticness just knows no bound there! What are you saying!? Just what the hell you are saying!?」

「Vanessa!? Wha wha wha wha, what is your intention!?」

Kousuke was greatly shaken while Emily, who was previously in a daze from the exchange between Vanessa and Kousuke, was revived in a single shot.

Vanessa was explaining with her gaze staring at Kousuke without any trace of shame in it, or rather, her gaze was like a hunter aiming at a prey. According to her explanation, the point was that if it was impossible for her to become his pupil then ‘I will become your woman!’, something like that. If she received the privilege to stay by his side like that, then later she would steal his technique by herself, she said.

「Impure! That’s impure-, Vanessa! So, something like that, if it’s not properly between two people who love each other――」

「No, Doctor Grant. I wish that you won’t misunderstand me like that. I won’t offer this body just for the sake of my objective whatever it is. I have fallen in love normally. Or rather, I have gotten wet.」

「W, we, weeet――」

Emily-chan buried her face in Kousuke’s shoulder. Her face went bright red until not only her ears but even down her neck. And then, the confession that was too much of a straight ball caused Kousuke to forget the hopelessness of his talking partner temporarily, and he unconsciously turned red.

「Please don’t worry, Kousuke-san. Perhaps I don’t look like it, but actually, I’m a devoted woman.」

「N, no, even if you appeal to me like that. In the first place, you see, I actually――」

「Tha, that's right! For Kousuke and Vanessa, such thing a is……no good! It's absolutely no good!」

Kousuke was about to say「have a lover」, but Emily-chan, who was at her absolute limit, pulled tightly on Kousuke. She embraced him as though to cover him, or possibly to claim that she wouldn't let him get taken away while her almond-shaped eyes glared really threateningly.

「Please don't worry, Doctor Grant. I'm completely okay even just as a mistress.」

「Thi, this is not that kind of problem!」

Vanessa-san's freedom was unstoppable. The bureau staff who were working hard at dealing with the corpses laying all over the place without getting any late night overtime pay already stopped still. They were gazing fixedly at the conversation of Kousuke and co. With bloodshot eyes, shaking fist, and then curses that were leaking out unintelligibly.

「E, excuse me. Can I interrupt a little?」

In the middle of the growing pandemonium, a timid voice called out to them. Looking toward that voice, Emily's father Carl was staring at Kousuke, Emily, and Vanessa with a really complicated expression feeling unsure of what to say.

「That, Abyssgate-san, should I call you that?」

「It's Kousuke. Are you listening? My name is Kousuke.」

Carl’s natural mentioning of Abyssgate caused the mini Kousuke inside his heart to vomit out blood. Even while he was plainly eating damage, Kousuke vigorously pressed on to correct Carl. Carl nodded obediently at that even while he was feeling creeped out.

“Err, Kousuke-san. First, let me say my gratitude. You are the benefactor of the Grant family. If it’s something that I can possibly do, then please ask anything from me so I can express my thanks to you. I won’t inquire about that mysterious power of yours. Surely, there are various circumstances about that……. But, there is one thing that I want you to tell me no matter what. ……Just what is your relationship with my daughter? You two look really intimate with each other……”

A color of awkwardness was residing inside the gaze of Emily’s father, Carl. That gaze was seeing the figure of his beloved daughter who was hugging Kousuke firmly even now.

There, it seemed that Emily finally noticed how she was clinging all over Kousuke. She raised her voice“Awah!?” while backing away with her hands going banzai. (TN: Like when people yell banzai, they will raise their hands high)

“Aa~, no, it’s not, our relationship is not like what Carl-san is thinking. I am just her bodyguard, just a friend.”

“Friend, is it……”

Carl’s gaze was directed to his daughter once again. He could see the vision of a dark cloud with the sound effect *doyoo~n* behind Emily. She was obviously feeling down when she heard “just a friend” said so easily. Even if he wasn’t her father, it was completely clear that Emily wasn’t thinking of Kousuke as just a mere friend anymore.

Carl made a complicated expression at that condition of his beloved daughter. And then, the one that threw a stone and caused ripples there was obviously this person.

「Kousuke-san. The way you are saying that is just too much. Even though Doctor Grant had already offered her precious thing(peeing)……」

「Offering her precious thing!? E, Emily! What is the meaning of this!? Explain it to your father!」

「Yo, you are wrong, father! That, isn't something like that……that was because Kousuke was mean to me, it couldn't be helped at all!」

「Wha-. You are saying that your precious thing was stolen because you got bullied!? Su, such thing……」

Emily's cheeks were dyed red from shame, and she turned small. It was her usual style, but right now, in this place, it also could be seen as a girl who crouched down because she got hurt. Actually, even Emily's mama Sophia went「Emily! Aa, you are trembling like this, how pitiful!」and hugged her tightly with a tragic expression.

As for Kousuke,「"Being mean" and "bullying" has a really different nuance there!」he made a retort inside his heart, but it was the fact that he acted mean and shamed Emily because of that, so he was hesitant of what to say. He absolutely didn't do an atrocious thing like what Carl and Sophia were imagining but……. Or rather, it was him who got dirtied that time…….

The Carl's gaze, who was desperately holding down his rage, was cornering mini Kousuke inside his heart.

□Abyssgate-san. You are my family’s benefactor. My words that I want to repay you with anything that I can possibly do aren’t a lie. But, but-, please spare just my daughter! Like this-! Please, I beg you don’t shame my daughter more than this-!□(TN: The word shame here can also mean rape or violate in Japanese)

□You are wrong! It’s a misunderstanding! I’m telling you I’m not that kind of brute!□

Starting from Chief Magdanese, the bureau staff were all giving Kousuke a cold gaze. It was as though they were looking at a criminal.

After that, the misunderstanding was resolved somehow by Kousuke’s desperate justification and the flustered words of Emily who noticed that an outrageous misunderstanding had been generated.

Although, because of the fault of Danessa who put in a timely interruption with mistaken good intentions, the misunderstanding that Japan was overflowing with boys who hungered for a “reward” from a beautiful girl permeated not just the Grant family, but even the bureau staff. In the end, Emily’s blunder of wetting her pants became known far and wide, and her soul embarked on a journey. When Kousuke consoled her, seeing that and thinking that the two would go into a relationship by themselves, Danessa casually added in her mistress application. Kousuke was flustered by himself with□This isn’t an affair! This isn’t an affair at all!□……

Through this and that kind of ruckus, the cleaning up of the site somehow finished, and finally, really finally, the discussion between Kousuke and co with Chief Magdanese’s group could start. It was at that time, one of the bureau staff

that was holding a communication device rushed toward Chief Magdanese.

From the condition of that staff member who had a tense expression on his face, it seemed that some kind of uncommon situation was occurring.

The staff handed over the communication device that seemed to be connected to somewhere to Chief Magdanese who was looking doubtful.

「Chief. This is the smartphone recovered from Kimberly. …… The caller said to hand it over to you.」

「……I see. The preparation?」

「All okay. But, it’s likely the other side is taking countermeasures. Please prolong the talk as much as possible.」

「I know. Everyone, don’t make any sound. I’ll put it on speaker.」

Chief Magdanese accepted the smartphone that was put on hold and quickly gave out instructions. Nervousness spread between the staff and soldiers. From the situation, it seemed that the organization behind Kimberly was attempting to contact them. The call was put on speaker so that Kousuke and the others could grasp the situation too.

The one on the other side of the call most likely was the organization that was the ringleader of everything. Perhaps they finally contacted the phone because there was no result report from Kimberly or because he failed to make contact regularly.

Emily’s expression vanished, Danessa returned to Vanessa, and Kousuke’s eyes quietly narrowed.

Inside the back of the car that was loaded with specialized equipment, one of the staff wearing a headset made the OK sign. Chief Magdanese nodded once and pushed the call button.

「This is Sharon Magdanese, the chief of the national security bureau. You are?」

「How do you do, chief-dono. Although it’s only through a phone, it’s an honor that I can talk with a living legend like you. I, let’s see……can I ask you to call me Odin?」

「……Pretending to be the chief god of Norse Mythology? It’s really painful listening to you trying to match your theme with Berserk’s naming like that.」

For some reason, Kousuke pressed on his chest. Vanessa’s lips grinned broadly just for an instant. But, right now was a serious time, so everyone cordially ignored them.

「How biting. As expected from the iron woman who has shouldered the country’s safety for many years until now. Even though I granted Kimberly-kun quite a lot of manpower, as expected, it seems that it’s too heavy of a burden for him to be your opponent.」

「Enough with the idle talk. Get straight to the point.」

「It’s really sad that you are lacking in playfulness……well, I guess it’s fine. I only have one demand. Hand over Emily Grant that the security bureau is sheltering.」

Emily’s shoulders shook from shock. Seeing that, Carl and Sophia nestled close to her and gave her a hug to support

her.

"Do you think, that I'll comply with that demand?"

"You have no choice but to comply. If not, berserkers will raise the first cry of their birth in the middle of city. Just like this."

Right after that,

"a, Ga, aAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA!!"

A shriek resounded in the warehouse district at night. Everyone was startled, and their gaze moved toward the source of the roar.

Over there was the figure of Kimberly convulsing fiercely with the whites of his eyes still exposed. The handcuffs restraining his hands on his back were raising a creaking sound, displaying how great the pressure that was being put on it.

"Get back! Everyone get back! Take distance and surround him in a half-circle!"

The chief's order resounded, and the soldiers moved simultaneously. The staff was also moving quickly even with an uneasy look emerging on their face so that they wouldn't be a hindrance to the special squad.

Everyone understood. The abnormal state of Kimberly's was the symptom of him transforming into a berserker. But their expression was overflowing with bewilderment and doubt. That couldn't be helped. Kimberly wasn't seen consuming the drug of"Berserk". If someone was dashed with the drug, then they would turn into a berserker in a matter of seconds.

The question was how could Kimberly, who was in restraints until just now, display this kind of symptom at this time.

Kousuke and Vanessa shifted their position to protect Emily and the Grant family while taking a wait-and-see stance. During that time, Kimberly finally tore off the metallic shackle using his enlarged body and reinforced muscle.

「oOOOOOOOOOOOO!!」

Kimberly, whose looks now had overreached a little bit too much from being a wild-type, glared at the surrounding with bloodshot eyes. No one understood how Kimberly suddenly turned into a berserker, but even so, it didn’t change the situation that there was a threat before them.

Therefore, the captain was about to give the shooting order.

「Kimberly-kun. Thank you for the great demonstration. …… You can die already now.」

「Gih, gah!?」

The voice of the man who introduced himself as Odin streamed out from the phone speaker. It was a death sentence that sounded really light. In the next moment, Kimberly, who even now was deciding on which prey to attack, suddenly twitched and convulsed, and then began to writhe in agony while raising an anguished voice.

While everyone was feeling baffled, white smoke was rising from the whole body of Kimberly, and his body was enlarged even further while an unpleasant sound *book book* could be heard. And then, the moment when his body height reached three meters, he dried up and shriveled all at once like a balloon that was leaking out air.

□……This is……Berserk overdose?□

Emily whispered in a daze. The symptom occurring in Kimberly’s body was exactly as Emily diagnosed. It was indeed due to a□Berserk□overdose.

□What, did you do?□

With an expressionless gaze, Chief Magdanese was staring at her former subordinate who was meeting his end in an excessively gruesome fashion while she threw a question at the smartphone she was holding.

□You can guess, can’t you? It’s not something that is especially difficult. A capsule filled with a normal dose of □Berserk□, and another capsule made from concentrated □Berserk□that is three times the amount for an overdose; those capsules were set so they would break using a remote control, and then I made Kimberly-kun swallow them. Even without the antidote, I can dispose of him using the overdose, that’s how it is.□

Odin’s words caused most people to be speechless. Even calling this man as inhuman still felt lacking. This act should be called as fiendish among the fiendish. But, Odin continued his speech as though to say that there was no need to even pay attention to something like that.

□Now then, I think you understand already, but if you refuse to hand over Emily Grant, perhaps a berserker will suddenly appear in a city somewhere. You know, I have faith that you who is shouldering the safety of this country will not commit any foolish action that will lead to that.□

□No negotiation with terrorists. That is the international practice.□

「Terrorist? Let’s not make a joke. I am a businessman. I’m merely doing the best I can for the sake of profit. This is a transaction. I think it’s only common sense for the side that makes the proposal to obtain an advantage in the negotiation.」

「……」

Chief Magdanese fell silent. This man didn’t think anything of murder. No matter how many sacrifices it would result in, if it was for his own profit, then he would surely discard everything. Her abundant experience told her that Odin’s warped and broken sense of values was the real thing.

She felt a slight hesitation. The figure of Kousuke was reflected in Chief Magdanese’s quietly opened eyes. He was staring straight back at Chief Magdanese.

Next, Chief Magdanese looked at the Grant family. Carl and Sophia who were hugging Emily close were looking so pale they looked like they could faint at any point; their expressions were grievous ones. But, as for the daughter in question Emily,

「……」

「……」

There was no word. For a moment, Emily’s gaze moved away from Chief Magdanese toward Kousuke at her side. And then, within a moment, a small smile emerged on her lips. Like that, a flame was blazing within the eyes that returned toward Chief Magdanese. It was the flame of rage and resolve. That passion was certainly conveyed toward Chief Magdanese.

「Fine. I’ll hand over Emily Grant.」

Carl and Sophia were about to protest loudly with despairing expression, but Emily herself stopped them.

「That’s a heroic decision, chief-dono.」

Odin’s voice turned slightly lively. His superiority complex oozed out from being put on an overwhelmingly dominant position.

After that, Odin told them the delivery place and the method of delivery before cutting off the communication.

「How is it?」

「……I’m sorry. We were led astray by a dummy.」

Chief Magdanese returned a brief『I see』to the vexed staff. It seemed she really didn’t expect much from that venue. In exchange, her gaze captured Kousuke.

「And? What will you do?」

Kousuke shrugged. He looked back across his shoulder at Emily. No word was exchanged between the two. But, when Kousuke nodded with a grin, Emily smiled softly without even a speck of unease there.

Kousuke who turned toward Chief Magdanese again then smiled fearlessly while replying.

「The other side expressly showed their tail to us. There is no reason to stay quiet, isn’t there? This is where both sides alternate the offense and defense turn. I am the hunting dog, and they are the prey. It’s time to punish them grandly.」

Chief Magdanese sent a brief glance at the shivering Vanessa before making a deep sigh, and then she whispered with a faint smile.

「Hunting dog? Call yourself Fenrir instead. I’m feeling like going along with that god make-believe, just for a bit.」

The soldiers who seemed to catch that whisper were smiling wryly while nodding. Vanessa-san was sending Chief Magdanese a gaze that seemed to say「Even the chief can also speak a really excellent line huh」.

……For some reason, Chief Magdanese felt like she wanted to go home very much.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Postscript

I also wrote this on my activity report, but the latest chapter of the comic version was updated.

I put up the activity report late at night, so just to be sure, I reported it here too.

Kaorin is a superheroine, so if you have interest, please try to have a look at Overlap-sama’s homepage without fail.

The next update is planned for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 212

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Salmon Sandwich is Justice

Part 1

The sun was just reaching its peak, when the warmth could be felt even in this chilly air.

It was also time for an afternoon break. Places like cafés in the downtown area were bustling as they began to fill with housewives and company employees.

In one such café, the wooden building, complemented with furniture, tables, and chairs that were similarly made of wood, brought out a chic, calm atmosphere. It was an old shop that was locally famous. Kousuke was also there.

The inside of the café was spacious. Even the second floor was usable, which was rare for an old shop. About a third of the café, starting from the entrance, was used as an atrium, so someone standing near the banister on the second floor could observe the situation on the first floor. Kousuke and co were sitting around the table near the banister on that second floor.

「Britain has a strong image of bad food, but a delicious shop is normally delicious, isn’t it?」

「Kousuke……it’s not like I’m saying that it’s bad, but what are you doing eating normally like that? Even though this is a place that the enemy designated……」

Kousuke was stuffing his cheeks enthusiastically with a salmon sandwich, one of the specialties of this café. Seeing

that, Emily made a troubled expression while she took a sip of her own tea that had been mixed with a lot of milk.

「Isn’t it fine, Doctor Grant. He doesn’t lose his presence of mind even in moments like these. As expected from Kousuke-san. I’m getting wet.」

「Paradis, please bear the TPO in mind. I’ll arrest you for public obscenity.」

Vanessa, who at a glance looked serious with her crisp expression, ran her mouth saying such obscene things. Before her partner, Emily could make a retort as the straight man, an intensely chilly warning was given. It was Chief Magdanese, who was drinking black tea with a composed atmosphere.

Yesterday, after they received contact from the mastermind who introduced himself as Odin, an email that detailed the time and place to hand over Emily Grant was sent to the smartphone Kimberly left behind.

It was this place. It was a bit unexpected for the delivery to be done in this café in the afternoon when it was overflowing with people, but when an additional instruction that stated that Chief Magdanese would be the one doing the handing over at that place, this method could be said to be very clever.

The habitual practice for something like this would be for Emily alone to be present at the designated place, but naturally, the enemy would be on guard against tracking. And then, what they would be worried about the most was in a case that a countermeasure that was beyond mere tracking was applied.

Yes, they feared that the security bureau would take a step to erase Emily. It was hard to imagine that the security bureau would let go of Emily under their very nose to the hand of the enemy after they knew the value of「Berserk」. In this situation, such last measures had to be kept in mind.

Emily going alone to the designated place where she then got retrieved by the enemy, if she wasn't attached with a tracking device but an explosive instead……. Honestly, that would be unbearable. Even the enemy was a creature that belonged in darkness, which was why they knew about how lacking in mercy Chief Magdanese was.

But, if they designated a place that was crowded like this, and furthermore, they also made Chief Magdanese attend, then as expected, even Chief Magdanese wouldn't be able to take that kind of measure without a doubt. And then, they would ascertain that Emily really didn't carry anything unnecessary at the scene.

By the way, Kousuke and Vanessa attending the handing over were due to Chief Magdanese's instruction. Naturally, the enemy instructed for Chief Magdanese to do the handing over alone, but it seemed that she would take a stance of「I brought them by mistake. It can't be helped that they are here, right?」.

Kousuke wasn't even hiding himself but from the perspective of the enemy who was desiring Emily so much so that a hand could reach out from their throat. It seemed that they wouldn't be able to do anything other than complain about the violation of instruction of this level. Leaving that aside, it was better for Kousuke and Vanessa to be at Emily's side to show that they weren't yes-mans, and also to support Emily's heart.

Although, honestly, putting aside Kousuke, perhaps it was a bit of a failure to let Vanessa attend too. That was what Chief Magdanese was thinking.

「And, it’s okay that you are entranced by the salmon sandwich, but what about the state of the surroundings, Mr. Abyssgate?」

「It’s Kousuke. Are you listening? My name is Kousuke, okay, chief-san.」

「Yes, I understand Mr. Abyssgate. And? There aren’t any reports about something suspicious from the deployed personnel, but I wonder if there is anyone suspicious slipping in the crowd?」

「……The plump middle-aged man in the grey suit entering the café just now, and the emaciated middle-aged female arriving right now. It’s vague, but they are looking strangely nervous for someone who only arrived for lunch.」

Chief-san didn’t change the way she called him no matter how many times he said it. Perhaps she was unexpectedly bearing a grudge from getting her prided squad half-destroyed. She gave no damn at the reproachful gaze of Kousuke. While pretending to drink her black tea, using a receiver attached to her arm cuff, she called the attention of the personnel that were standing by without showing off any unnatural movement, or sign.

Emily, who was smiling faintly seeing that exchange, then sighed a bit. It was as though she was unraveling her breathing that she didn’t realize was tense. Kousuke, who sharply noticed that, moved his reproachful gaze from Chief Magdanese toward Emily.

「What’s the matter, Emily? As I thought, are you feeling scared?」

It seemed Emily was happy that Kousuke noticed the small change in herself. She returned a soft smile at Kousuke’s worried gaze. Inside that smile, there was a heat that was unmistakably filled with immense trust and an even more immense special feeling that could be seen in a glance.

「I’m fine Kousuke. I was a bit tense, but I’m not scared or anything. Because Kousuke is staying by my side. Surely this spot is the safest place in the world.」

「Uh huh.」

Kousuke replied curtly. However, that wasn’t because he was apathetic, but because he was shy from the trust and goodwill that a beautiful girl was sending to him without any doubt. His faintly red ears showed that more eloquently than anything.

By the way, the Grant family was currently being safeguarded in the truest meaning at a facility of the security bureau. The elites of the security bureau and Kousuke’s clone body were standing on guard there, so it could be said to be completely safe. That too made it, so no unease and fear existed in Emily’s heart.

「I’m also not scared you know, Kousuke-san. I believe in you. I love you.」

「Wait Vanessa! What are you saying out of nowhere! It’s no good if you say something like that so lightly!」

Vanessa-san nonchalantly confessed her love with an extremely serious expression. Emily’s cheeks turned red while she retorted, or rather, she intimidated. The voice of

her heart「Get your hands away from my Kousuke!」felt like it was audible somehow.

Kousuke, who got goodwill directed at him from two women, was troubled. Should he convey the truth that he couldn't properly say since last night due to the all the mess――that he actually had a beloved lover who his heart had decided on? No, he definitely should tell them about it, but the problem was choosing the timing.

Just what kind of change would occur in Emily's mental state if Rana's existence was shed light on during this series of events that showed no sign of stopping……. It was a matter that ought to be informed to her quickly, but in the worst case, it would bring about a bad influence during the situation from here on.

Even while Kousuke kept worrying 'uu~n', he saw how the straightforward (?) confession of Vanessa, who knew no shame, was causing Emily's face to turn red before she shook her head with her side-tail shaking left and right, her mind worriedly thinking「Uu, is it better if I properly speak out too? But, that's really embarrassing!」. That caused him to determine himself that it was better to say it clearly with urgency.

「He, hey, Emily.」

「Whaaat, Kousuke.」

Emily-chan's cheeks loosened up broadly in a smile, as though she was happy only from getting called. There was a theory that it was easy for a man and woman who were sharing a dangerous situation to convert the nervousness they felt at that time into the emotion of love, but in Emily's case, it seemed that theory was spot on. As expected from an easy heroine.

Seeing how Emily was like that, Kousuke went「Uuh」as his words got hitched inside his throat. From Emily who was waiting for Kousuke's words, he could see the vision of dog ears on Emily's head and a dog tail on Emily's lower back. Those visions were shaken to the left and right energetically. She looked like a loyal dog that was waiting for her owner's word.

――Genius girl wearing a lab coat, cat eyes, blond hair, side-tail, charisma guard, peeing girl, straight-man attribute, easy heroine. And then, loyal dog attribute toward someone she liked.

Just how many attributes was she planning on adding……

Honestly speaking, the figure of Emily waiting for his words with a wide smile was really lovely and charming. But, exactly because of that, Kousuke resolved himself and opened his mouth.

「Yo, you see, I, actually――」

「They are coming. Stop with the youthful scene there, focus yourself.」

Chief Magdanese's cool voice interrupted him decisively. Kousuke's cheeks were twitching. Emily's expression turned puzzled, but she immediately tensed her expression.

Chief Magdanese and Vanessa were looking downstairs. There were three men wrapped in black suits and coats. Their expressions couldn't be read because of the sunglasses they were wearing, but their atmosphere was obviously different from a civilian's. Those who understood would understand. These three had a heavy air coiling around them, the air of someone used to immorality and violence.

The three men were slowly looking over the inside of the café, and then they noticed the gaze of Chief Magdanese looking down at them from the second floor, and they lifted the corner of their lips. And then, they climbed the stairs that connected to the second floor.

"Hmph? Chief-san, what is the meaning of this?"

"Is there any problem?"

One of the men stood still and shifted his sunglasses while glaring at *Vanessa.* But, Chief Magdanese calmly replied to the question, so the man only snorted before sitting down on an empty chair. The other two were sitting on chairs at the neighboring table.

The moment the man sat down, his gaze crawled all over Emily without any reservation. Emily looked aside without even hiding her disgusted look. And then, perhaps because it was his habit, the man snorted again. And then without even asking permission, he took the ginger ale Kousuke ordered and drank the content in one gulp.

"Well, no matter. Our side won't make any complaints if you hand over Emily Grant to us. I think you understand, but don't have any stupid ideas. Including tracking."

The man lightly lifted his hand. In response, one of the men took out a small device from his breast pocket. And then, he pointed that device at Emily. It seemed that it was something to search for transmitters.

At the same time, the man took out something square from his breast pocket. It looked like a Zippo lighter which made a *kin-* sound when its lid was opened. Inside it wasn't anything like incendiary apparatus, but a button.

"It's interesting, isn't it? Just by scattering a little bait to cornered people, they will do anything you want. Just with a single cheque, they will believe shady words like being a test subject for new nutrients and swallow an unknown thing. They will even obediently follow sudden cryptic instructions to go into this café for example."

The speech of the man who was putting on a warped smile caused Emily to grit her teeth audibly and Vanessa to glare wrathfully. Needless to say, the man meant that people who had taken the capsule-type "Berserk" were inside this café. And then, the detonator that looked like a lighter that the man was holding could destroy the capsule and transform those people into berserker that wouldn't be able to go back to normal. In the middle of this crowded café with the sun high in the sky.

The man pretended to tremble at Emily's and Vanessa's wrath.

"It doesn't seem like you are that Odin. And then, what are you going to do after taking away Doctor Grant? Will you make her create the antidote, cause a pandemic of "Berserk" to outbreak, and then make a killing in profit……by that point in time you will be tracked down you know? It will be the same even if you sell it to some organization somewhere in the underworld. Do you think you will be able to get away from the security bureau?"

"Who knows. That's not something that a lowly bunch like us will know. That will be the boss's decision. Now then, we also cannot keep making pointless talk. How about we excuse ourselves soon?"

The man directed his gaze at the man who was checking for a tracking device. The man who seemed to finish his

checking already shook his head and reported that he found nothing. The first man nodded in satisfaction hearing that and put his hand on Emily’s shoulder. *twitch* Emily’s body trembled, not from shock or fear, but simply from disgust.

Vanessa was about to reflexively drive off that hand, but then the man showed off the lighter detonator.

He showed――

【Kufuh】

【Puh】

【Fufuh】

Vanessa spontaneously snorted. Emily also averted her face with her shoulders shaking. And in a very rare occasion, even Chief Magdanese had a small smile on her lips.

That couldn’t be helped. After all, what the man was lifting with an expression of contempt that was full of a sense of superiority as though to say ‘you cannot do anything can’t you huh’ was……

A salmon sandwich.

Furthermore, it was the remains of one that had been eaten to a size that was about the same as the lighter, a bite-sized salmon sandwich. It was accompanied by a lot of splendid bite marks.

【!?】

The man raised a soundless voice of shock and threw that salmon sandwich to the ground. And then, he stood up while

kicking down the chair before taking one, two steps away from Chief Magdanese and co.

「You bitches, screwing around with me!」

The man immediately guessed that the detonator had been replaced when he didn’t notice and that the perpetrator must be Vanessa who was attending here for some reason. He was about to take out something from his breast pocket. Most likely it was a spare detonator.

The man quickly took that out and thrust it forward threateningly.

Yes, it was another bite-sized salmon sandwich.

「What the hell!?」

Emily, Vanessa, and Chief Magdanese burst out「pufuh」once again. Hearing that, the man turned beet red from shame and confusion.

「Oi-! Take out the spare! Blow up the first and the second!」

The man ordered the third man. It seemed that the third man was also in possession of the detonator. A spare on top of a spare. They were really prepared.

Although, there was no response from the third man toward the first man’s order. The reason was…

「Oi-. You listening!? Quickly——wait, why the hell are you bastard stuffing your mouth with a salmon sandwich, huh!?」

Yes, the third man had his mouth stuffed full with a salmon sandwich. The first man was enraged, and he gripped the shoulder of his subordinate who had the sauce of the salmon

sandwich trickling down from the corner of his mouth, and he pulled him up forcefully.

Then, with a shake the third man fell face-up limply, exposing his face, the white of his eyes were laid bare with the salmon sandwich still filling his mouth. The man unconsciously raised his voice「Oo!?」in shock and backed away. *thud* A sound came from behind him, and he turned around in reaction.

Over there was,

「You got a salmon sandwich too!?」

There he saw another of his subordinates fainted with a salmon sandwich stuffing his mouth and the white of his eyes exposed. In addition, both of his hands were joined together on his chest for some reason, like a corpse that was put inside a coffin.

「What, what is happe――」

「Isn’t it simple? The salmon sandwich of this café is just too delicious. So much so that the moment they ate it, they ascended to heaven. That’s all.」

「-!?」

Hearing the unknown voice resounding from right behind him, the man twitched while turning around. Over there he saw Kousuke stuffing his mouth elegantly (?) with a salmon sandwich. He might be transformed halfway to Lord Abyssgate because even though his attire was still the same, he was wearing sunglasses.

While the man stiffened seeing the unfamiliar Japanese young man with the strange atmosphere, Kousuke called

「Isn’t that right?」to a young female waitress stiffening a slight distance away due to the commotion, looking for agreement.

The waitress who suddenly got the attention directed at her shook her head left and right forcefully while strongly denying「Our salmon sandwich is not that delicious!」. Surely she meant to imply that ‘No one will want to eat a sandwich that can send people to heaven!’……

The voice of the waitress that unexpectedly resounded really well reached the first floor. A middle-aged man that seemed to be the shop manager looked up in wonder about what was going on there. Seeing the beautiful vein emerging on that man’s head, it seemed that the waitress’s implication wasn’t conveyed correctly to him. The future of the girl’s employment in this café from here on was in doubt.

「Yo, you think you can get away by doing something like this? We are not the only ones carrying a detonator you know? Even now, in this place――」

「Are you talking about the five men who are monitoring*ed* this place? Or perhaps, about the people who *were* watching the image being sent by the hidden camera set up inside the café? If it’s them, then right now they should be heading to a special hotel escorted by the kindly considerate soldiers I think. Everyone is sound asleep. It seems they cannot stand their everyday exhausting work. Don’t you think that your company is too black?」(TN: Black company = a company that exploits its employees too much)

「I, impossible……」

The man tried to take out a communication device from his pocket in panic.

……What came out was a salmon sandwich.

Also, the one that made the enemy observing this café from outside to faint was of course Kousuke. The hidden cameras inside the café were searched around by Kousuke in full invisibility last night while the bureau staff traced the communication channel and determined the location of the observers.

During the time Kousuke was searching for the hidden camera, the enemy force that was observing the café in case the bureau was setting up something in the building sometimes witnessed a black shadow displayed in the camera out of nowhere. They all shrieked in complete chaos yelling things like「Tha, that's Shadowman! This is the first time I saw it!」or「Lies……even though I shouldn't have any supernatural sense」or「AMEN-, AMEEEN-!」.

Even when Kousuke normally entered their room, they were replaying the recorded video while,

「Don't you think this will be big money if we bring it to a TV station?」

「Wa, wait. This is the real Shadowman you know? I, heard something before. That there are dangerous guys researching something like this.」

「Aa, I also heard that from mummy. In this world, there is an occultist group who is extremely fond of something like this, so be careful she said. She also said, that even if you see it, just pretend you never saw anything. If not, you are going to get kidnapped somewhere, and turned into a sacrifice for a black magician.」

「Seriously……it's scary, this underworld organization……」

They said things like that to each other while making a fuss. It went without saying that Kousuke made a retort「No, your color is different, but you guys are also members of an underworld organization」.

And then, Kousuke, who was suddenly driven up by his mischievous heart, took how he was unnoticed as a good opportunity and tried to cause several bizarre phenomenon. For example, he made the door open and close on its own accord; then he made a knocking sound from outside the window. He then kidnapped them one by one unnoticed, and wrote「next is you」using magic on the monitor while the panicked people didn’t notice, and so on; in the end, he twined a steel thread on the legs of one of them, and pulled that person out from the room……

The expression of the remaining people who were witnessing the figure of their comrade screaming while reaching out his hand to them, however, went in vain and he was pulled by something unseen and disappeared deep in the corridor…… those were expressions that had trauma completely planted in it.

And then, the bureau staff that was watching that from the side exploded in laughter all at once. It also went without saying that Chief Magdanese covered her face with both hands while sighing.

All the enemies fell into the bottom of terror, in addition, they were perfectly apprehended. Kousuke, who had accomplished that, was welcomed by all the bureau staff with a high five and「Iyahha—!」. Seeing that, Chief Magdanese whispered「I should just go home already」. It could be seen how tired she was from that.

Now then, putting aside Chief Magdanese who was having a faraway look from remembering the event that gave her a headache last night, the man who possessed nothing but a salmon sandwich and whose comrades were annihilated without him noticing was drenched with cold sweat while he tried to turn around.

「Well, don't be in such a hurry. I'm thinking of making you as our guide. That's why it will be troubling if you go home by yourself.」

「Gu, guide you say? To the boss's place? Hah, that's pointless. I'm not going to say anything yeah. I know really well the boss's scariness. If I betray him, just what kind of hell I'll taste then……it's better to die.」

「I see. You will surely guide us gladly after this. I'm convinced of that. Anyway, we will become a nuisance by staying here. Let's have a slow talk over there, okay?」

Kousuke stood up from his chair and put a smile on his face. Seeing that, the man yelled「Shit-」while trying to jump out from the terrace of the second floor. Because Kousuke was blocking the stairs, he thought that he would be able to escape somehow if it was just from the second floor.

But, there was no way Kousuke could be taken by surprise from just that much.

「Abyss-style Martial Art's Secret Technique――"Inconsiderable Banquet of Gluttony(Salmon Sandwich Got No Match!)"」

「Mugah!?」

Kousuke circled behind the man and instantly stuffed his mouth with a salmon sandwich. The writhing man was

completely pinioned from behind with his mouth being pressed down, unable to run away or spit out the sandwich.

The man became half-panicked, and for a while, he kept struggling and kicking around, but before long, his eyes rolled up and exposed the whites of his eyes, and he fainted powerlessly. A scrap of salmon slipped out from the mouth of the limply falling man.

「Yep, as I thought, the salmon sandwich of this café is amazing. It instantly sends people to heaven.」

Kousuke nodded in satisfaction while looking at the fainting man. Everyone inside the café thought this. 「No, you just made him suffocate normally there」. But they didn’t say it out loud because it was scary.

Chief Magdanese, whose sighs remarkably increased in number these past few days, was sighing even deeper while sending a sign to her subordinates. The rushing subordinates quickly apprehended the three men and furthermore, they also politely led away several of the guests that seemed to have「Berserk」administered into them.

The café fell into uproar from the sudden arrest. In the middle of that, Emily was making a complicated expression while asking Kousuke who was going to leave the café following behind Chief Magdanese.

「Hey, Kousuke. Why are you so fixated with the salmon sandwich like that? Do you love it?」

「Yep, I love it.」

「I, is that so……」

Of course, Kousuke answered that he loved the salmon sandwich. But, Emily’s face turned red from seeing Kousuke saying ‘love’ with a serious face that was staring straight at her. With a glance toward Emily who was like that, Kousuke climbed down the stairs while he started to explain with an exposition that was at the same level as a certain gourmet reporter whose catchphrase was ‘jewel box of taste ya~’, about just how amazing the salmon sandwich of this store was. (TN: In Japan there is this famous gourmet reporter named Hikomaru, with a catchphrase of ‘jewel box of (insert food name here) ya~’. It seems this guy’s cheerful personality and impactful comment made him the face of the present era gourmet program)

After Kousuke left the café, it went without saying that the sale of this café’s salmon sandwich increased explosively.

Part 2

That night the moon was completely hidden by the clouds. In this dark world without light from the night sky, there was a high-rise building illuminated brilliantly by artificial light. For a normal company, at this time most of the employees would be home already, and there would be few lights, but it was only this building that was leaking out light from all of its floors.

The entrance of that high-rise building, and the outer wall near the highest floor, were drawn with the company name and emblem. The company name was「Gamma Pharmaceutical」.

A car's headlights were illuminating the back road of that 「Gamma Pharmaceutical」. The car was stopped by the guard in front of the gate of iron bars. The man behind the car's steering wheel showed his face to that guard and also his identification card.

It seemed that the guard knew the face of the driver. The guard showed a wry smile while giving words of appreciation 「Must be hard work to come at this kind of time even though you aren't even a researcher」. He then took the identification card to the guard room and used a card reader to read the card to open the gate.

The man behind the driving seat shrugged his shoulders, and said「It's the superior's command. I cannot go against it」while receiving his identification card. At that time, the

guard saw the person sitting in the back seat, and he raised his eyebrows questioningly.

When the driver told the guard，This person is a genius doctor even though she looks like this. It seems she will be our company’s hidden ace you know，, it seemed the person in the backseat noticed that they were talking about her. The girl wearing a lab coat with her hair tied into a side-tail then faced toward the guard and smiled friendlily.

Being smiled at by an amiably beautiful girl, the middle-aged guard slackened down, and he smiled broadly. And then he said，Even though you are still young, you mustn’t force yourself too hard to work until this kind of time you know，while drawing back.

The car then passed through the gate and kept running until its figure vanished into a rear entrance for the underground parking area.

The car parked in a corner of the underground parking area before the driver and the girl in a lab coat——Emily got out.

，Is this place really where the mastermind is staying? This is a large company that can even be counted amongst the top 5 even in Britain.，

，So you don’t believe it, Miss? I said already that I am the direct subordinate of this place’s president——Kaysis Wentworks.，

，Shut up. I won’t talk to you.，

，……Ou.，

The man who received that really piercing reply got sullen. Even so, he obediently backed down. He, the man who

fainted after eating Kousuke’s secret technique——Woody, urged Emily to move with a pouting face.

Following Woody’s guidance, they rode an exclusive elevator that would only move using an employee ID card. This high-rise building had 66 floors in total, with a height that surpassed 200 meters. They could see the night view of the city from the high-speed elevator that was attached to the outside. The higher the elevator got, the wider the view that could be seen.

「It’s beautiful……」

「Yeah, this scenery——」

「I’m not talking to you.」

「……Got it.」

Woody’s feeling was hurt from that second piercing reply. A beautiful girl with sparkling eyes clinging to the scenery outside, and a tough man exposing a pouting face beside her. The scene was really surreal.

Before long, *ting* along with such sound, the elevator’s floor display showed they were on the highest floor. Emily, who came back to her senses from that sound, turned around and followed Woody who had exited the elevator first. They passed by several corners and rooms, through several electronic locks, and in the end, reached a heavy door that was engraved with the company’s emblem.

Woody walked toward the display installed beside the two-leaf door and pressed a button.

「Boss, this is Woody. Just like my message, I arrived just now. I’m bringing Doctor Grant.」

「Finally. I’m opening the door now.」

The door of the president’s office was constructed so it could only be opened from inside. Because of that, Woody and Emily waited for the room’s owner, Kaysis, to open the door.

pushu With the sound of air spurting out, the two-leaf door opened. The two of them entered with Woody in the lead. The door immediately closed behind them. Emily looked at that across her shoulder, and inside her heart, she evaluated that the enemy was really cautious.

When her gaze returned to the front, she saw a man in his early thirties sitting deeply on a luxurious chair. He was a slender and blond man. His narrow eyes that looked like a fox’s and his loose and slovenly smile gave a frivolous impression that didn’t suit a president of a large company.

But, the moment that man saw the figure of Emily behind Woody, Emily saw inside the man’s slightly opened eyes and unconsciously felt goosebumps up her spine.

She thought that this man was like a snake. His gaze was that of a snake catching sight of a mouse that would be the prey. She must not be deceived by this man’s external frivolous impression. Cunning and malice were compressed inside this man. Yes, a detestable aura that made her unconditionally believe that was expressed in this man’s eyes.

Emily unconsciously stopped walking all of a sudden. Seeing that caused Kaysis’s smile to deepen further. His evil smile that gave no hint of humanity made Emily to spontaneously gulp loudly. Even Woody that was slightly in front of her also gulped loudly like her. Surely, he understood just how evil that smile was.

「Hey, Emily-chan. Nice of you to come. My company welcomes you with open arms.」

Kaysis stood up and detoured around his large desk while spreading his hands open in a welcoming gesture. Emily almost shrank back from the approaching mass of malice; however, she suddenly noticed what she was about to do and she gritted her teeth.

And then, she returned her drawing back foot to its former spot and glared back threateningly with piercing cat-eyes.

Kaysis displayed an emotion of surprise for a moment, but he soon started to stare with a gaze of unconcealed sadism.

「How nice, that aroused me. A girl making that kind of eye is just my favorite. How about it Emily-chan? Won't you become mine instead of just being a researcher in my company? You will be able to obtain anything you wish by doing that you know?」

「And you will torment me who naturally is going to refuse, and then want to make me say that with my own mouth, isn't that right? Anyway, go through plastic surgery first. The vulgarity of your character is coming out on your face you know?」

Even while Emily was still shaking a bit, she threw back a scathing reply boldly. Woody looked back at her with a slightly shocked expression. Kaysis's expression was increasingly changing as though there was a delicious fruit put in front of him.

「That's a hurtful way of speaking. But, it arouses me instead. Just how long can you continue with that kind of attitude, aa, I'm really looking forward to it more and more.」

「Your disgusting behavior doesn't matter. Rather than that, are you Odin?」

While nodding, Kaysis approached until he was a short distance from Emily, who was asking that to him with undisguised revulsion.

「Indeed, that's correct. I am Odin. Well, that name is just for jest though. My real name is Kaysis Wentworks.」

「You were……the one that stole『Berserk』? The one that released the infected person in the middle of the city?」

Kaysis's fingertip stroked Emily's cheek. Even while feeling nausea from that touch, Emily asked for confirmation from him. She wanted to confirm, 'are you the main culprit of everything?', like that.

「You can say that, but you can also say that it's not so.」

「What do you mean? Answer me!」

「Fufu, you are really strong-willed. Just like a cute cat.」

Kaysis dodged Emily's questioning noncommittally. His snake-like eyes shined while his hand touched Emily's slender neck. Of course, just with that, it would be impossible to choke the neck and kill a person. But, most likely he just wanted to see Emily's suffering face for fun.

Emily's face slightly grimaced when that hand jerked with strength. Kaysis's expression was increasingly filled with joy by that but……

「……What are you doing?」

"I cannot just stay quiet watching more than this. Can I ask you to take off that hand from the miss?"

The one that grasped Kaysis's hand and forcefully jerked it away from Emily's neck was the man at her side——Woody. Kaysis sent him a dangerous gaze. Kaysis's eyes were tinged with a dangerous light from how his subordinate had shown an unforeseen rebellious attitude, and from how he called Emily as "miss".

"I wonder if you understand just who you are opening your mouth to. Or else, don't tell me you are cajoled by this child? No matter how unlikely I think that is."

"No way, such a thing is unimaginable to happen between miss and me. Besides, I'm doing this with a full preparedness for everything."

Kaysis shook off Woody's arm roughly, then he took out a handgun offhandedly from his breast pocket and pointed it at Woody. At the same time, he snapped his finger *pachin* and armed men appeared from hidden doors set up everywhere inside the room. They pointed their gun muzzles toward Woody.

However, Woody who knew about the existence of the guards standing by inside the room naturally wasn't perturbed.

"Full preparedness? I really don't get you. Just what in the world happened?"

"Nothing special. If I'm forced to say, then it's because I found a place with a better employment term than here I guess. Any humble salaryman will change their job to a place with a better condition, right?"

「Hou. I see, so you were cajoled by the security bureau. Just how much can you receive from them? Aa, just to be clear, I'm not planning to ask you to come back by offering you more than their offer. Your fate is decided already here.」

「Even if you told me to come back, I absolutely won't. After all, it's remuneration that you cannot possibly prepare.」

「……It's that much money? Answer, how much did you get?」

So much remuneration to the degree that a president of a large company that was in the top five in Britain couldn't match it. Kaysis's expression was slightly colored with interest when he was told something like that. He was wondering, just what kind of world the security bureau used to steal his subordinate.

Seeing Kaysis like that, the corner of Woody's lips rose up in a wide grin. And then with a boastful, elated, and joyful expression that couldn't be suppressed!!, he spoke the detail of the remuneration he obtained.

「Kukuh, listen and be astonished! My reward iiis, the finest quality of salmon sandwich, FOR A YEARRRR-!」

「……hm?」

Kaysis-san was confused. His heinous air was unconsciously scattered apart, and he tilted his head plainly thinking「Am I mishearing?」. The other guards were also the same as him.

Amidst such confusion, Emily, who knew about the circumstance, made a complicated expression. And then, for the second time, she asked the same question as before in the café.

「Hey, Kousuke. Why is it a salmon sandwich? Do you like it that much?」

Hearing Emily calling a name of a person he had never heard before, Kaysis sent a suspicious gaze at her.

But, at the next moment, he turned around in shock.

「Aa, yeah. Honestly, even I myself am thinking that perhaps this hypnotist is wrong.」

The guards also turned around.

Over there, before anyone knew it, a young man in black clothes was sitting on the president's chair while scratching his cheek with a wry smile.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

About the salmon sandwich pressuring of this chapter.

If I have to say why, then that's because the author is getting fixated with it.

Salmon sandwich that is unexpectedly off-the-shelf.

If I made a handmade one, it was doubtful that the chapter posting would've made it in time……

I'm sorry.

The next update is planned for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 213

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Become……A Splendid Villager

Part 1

With a magnificent night sky as the background, a young man in black clothes was sitting on the president chair.

Such a sight made even Kaysis to be struck dumb and lost for words. The guards in the surrounding too, they were guards that were under the direct control of the president, usually no matter what the situation was they wouldn’t be shaken and be able to react swiftly, but it was only at this time that they exposed a stupid expression without being able to aim their gun.

「Emily, over here.」

「Yes!」

Kousuke beckoned with his hand, and Emily rushed toward him with an excited voice. Even though her external appearance was like a haughty cat, dog ears and a dog tail could be hallucinated to be attached to her. That energetically shaking ears and tail truly made her fit to be doggy Emily-chan……

Emily circled around the large desk with a cute sound of footsteps *pata-pata* without stopping she until she was right beside Kousuke.

After that, ‘Don’t leave me behind!’ with such a feeling, Woody followed behind in a hurry while his footsteps were loudly resounding. And then he came to a stop at the opposite side of Emily and slightly behind.

……Someone sitting snugly on the president’s chair, waited on by a beautiful girl beside him and a scary-looking man standing by behind him.

No matter how anyone looked, it was Kousuke that looked like a mastermind. Perhaps it should be said that it was just as expected from the right-hand man of the demon king.

「……What are you? Where did you enter from?」

Kaysis recovered quickly from his agitation, and then he asked Kousuke, who was now sitting on his chair while staring angrily.

That question was only natural. The elevator that Emily and Woody rode in was the only route that could lead to this president office. Naturally, that elevator was installed with security cameras which could be watched through from the president’s office. There were countless security cameras existing between the elevator and the president’s office, and naturally, there was also a security camera in front of the door of the president office.

Naturally, Kaysis himself checked on all those cameras, and the guards, who now finally moved their gun muzzles, should have also checked the monitors in the observation room located on the other side of the hidden door of the president’s room.

But, there wasn’t even a single one among them who detected Kousuke’s existence.

To enter this room located on the highest floor could only by through the front door that could only be opened by Kaysis from inside. If that door was closed, the room would become completely closed off. The air duct’s size couldn’t be entered

by humans, and it would be absurd for someone to enter from the window.

From the point of view of Kaysis and others, in this situation, there was no other way to describe it other than this young man suddenly appearing out of nowhere.

Although, the answer of Kousuke was simple.

「Even if you ask me from where, wasn't it you who invited me in? From that door over there.」

「Impossible. I don't know someone like you……」

「Well, that's because I'm just a little bit inconspicuous. I won't be bothered even if you overlooked me, not at all. I'm speaking the truth you know?」

Kousuke shrugged. This time, he was following Emily from behind using the full power of invisibility while making use of the blind spots of the security cameras, so it was justified that they didn't notice him, and he was also really not bothered by it. It was his habit, of making the excuse「I'm not bothered, okay? I'm really not hurt, okay?」when other people couldn't notice him.

Kaysis naturally couldn't believe Kousuke's answer, and he guessed that Kousuke didn't plan to disclose the trick. So he straightened up his collar and took a pompous attitude before changing the topic.

「……Well, no matter. By the way, you, the one sitting there in my chair as though it is your own. Who are you? You seem to be Japanese, and I cannot believe that you are from the security bureau, but……even so, you infiltrated this place by yourself. By any chance, is there even a young Japanese man among the agents of the "JD Agency"?」

Kaysis’s expression was clearly displeased seeing his chair occupied by someone else while he spoke his prediction. But indeed, that prediction was the most probable one.

「Hee, that “JD Agency” is supposed to be a “non-existent organization” but……it’s normally known like this.」

「It’s not normally known. But, that’s common knowledge among the highly positioned people of this side of the world. They are paying the maximum caution toward the security bureau chief and intelligence department chief, and toward the “erasure organization” these two are leading.」

「Well, if you are the top of an underworld organization, I guess you would have them getting in your way many times and dealt you a hard blow. That kind of people should be able to grasp their existence from the piling up facts……but, won’t it be a problem that the name of the organization is exposed?」

Chief Magdanese was grasping the situation in this place through a device that was attached on Kousuke. She was shrugging inside a surveillance car that was a slight distance away from the building.

「This is what you call an open secret. Having it be known to a certain degree will also become a deterrence.」

Kousuke nodded「I see」to the words transmitted to him through the device. Kaysis guessed from that that Kousuke was communicating with the outside and he became convinced that Kousuke was a member of the security bureau.

Though in truth he was the vanguard of a more dangerous group……

「Fumu, should I say that it's just as expected from the chief of the security bureau. To be able to subvert an enemy during that kind of situation and then sending in a skilled agent……. Yet, I cannot help but say that you are a little bit too rash.」

Kaysis said that and took out a smartphone from his breast pocket. Then his finger suddenly slid through its display.

「Aa, that again. That's a switch for the「Berserk」activation, right?」

「Fufu, so you understand. Once I pushed this button, a lot of berserkers will rampage in the middle of several dozen cities. Aah, let me correct one thing. This is certainly an "activation" button, but this smartphone is originally used for "cancellation".」

「……I see. I had been thinking about it even before entering this room, but you are really a wary person huh. If a password isn't entered into that smartphone in a regular interval to cancel the activation state, then the drug will activate on its own accord. Is it something like that?」

「You have a good understanding. Exactly. Therefore, even if you steal this from me, even if you kill me, it would be meaningless. Rather, that will become the opening curtain of an unprecedented disaster. It's not something that can be risked by you people who are shouldering the security of this country, isn't it?」

Kaysis talked with a broad grin and snake-like gaze. Surely the cancellation password wasn't known by anyone except Kaysis. And it didn't seem like he would talk even if he was captured, and if he was killed, then a great disaster would definitely occur.

Kaysis believed without a doubt that he was in an overwhelmingly superior position. It seemed his selling point was this craftiness of him. He lifted the smartphone that was his lifeline in one hand while his other hand moved forward in inviting gesture.

「Now then, Emily. Come to my side. That is if you don't want a great number of sacrifices to be created in this country because of something that you created.」

「-, this low-life」

Emily's skin felt goosebumps from the gaze of Kaysis who was immersed in joy. She cursed him without even hiding her feeling of disgust. But Kaysis's smile was deepening. It seemed that even that disgust felt pleasant for him.

「That's right. It's already inevitable that you will become mine, but a punishment is needed after you dragged this uninvited person here, isn't it? How about you give me a kiss of oath after you come here.」

「Wha, what are――」

「Fufu, it seems that young agent-kun over there is a special existence for you. Then, it will be a lovely punishment if I make you offer that body to another man in front of his eyes as the proof of parting. Don't you think so?」

Surely, when someone talked about the height of low-life, it would refer to a person like this. Making other people submit and to be able to smear them with humiliation and shame was the greatest happiness for this man. The unhappiness of other people was exactly the nourishment for his life. His smoothly moving tongue moved even smoother from imagining the future that was smeared with unhappiness.

「Aa, while we are at it, perhaps it will also be good to torture him in front of you who are crying pleadingly. And then, after he becomes unable to endure the pain, I will make him say this. ――「Please, just do whatever you like to Emily, spare me already」like that. When I imagine the face of Emily's at that time――」

「So it's true that third-class villains like to prattle on and on.」

A calm voice reached Kaysis who was continuing to talk with an expression of ecstasy. That voice sounded exasperated, as though it was directed to a worthless existence, an apathetic voice that was really lacking in emotion.

Kaysis stared suspiciously at Kousuke who wasn't showing even a speck of unease at this situation.

「You are saying, that I'm a third-class villain?」

「Yeah. I don't know if it's because you have prepared an absolute superiority(trump card) or because you are like this from the start, but you who can play around in *this situation,* is without a doubt a third-class.」

「……」

Kaysis fell silent. He wracked his brain and reconfirmed whether there was anything that could shake his superiority, but he was holding a switch that could instantly open the curtain of tragedy if it was pressed, and if something happened to him then the tragedy would act on its own anyway in less than an hour. Such a card was something that wouldn't become a worthless card that easily.

Kaysis reached a conclusion that this might be a bluff. But Kousuke suddenly stood up while speaking.

「According to the demon king, it seems that what is called a trump card is something mass produced……what about you I wonder?」

「What? Demon king? Just what are you talking a――」

Kaysis talked in suspicion, but instantly, he opened wide his eyes and his word cut off.

That was because, without any advance sign, Kousuke was right in front of him.

Kaysis immediately tried to draw back his body, but the next moment, his field of vision was reversed, and he was falling into confusion. But, he immediately felt an intense impact hitting his back, and his voice got caught in his throat.

His gaze was wandering while he was filled with pain and confusion of what in the world had happened to him. And then what entered his sight was only the ceiling and the LED lighting. From that, he understood that he had been thrown on the floor.

「Yo, you bastard, do you not care, what will happen to the city――」

「Well, that will be for later.」

His mind was flooded with pain; however, Kaysis made use of his astonishment to wring out words from his mouth. But the reply he got was a casual sentence along with the back of a shoe that filled his field of vision. Simultaneously an intense impact assaulted him, and his consciousness was cut off with a snap.

Inside his hearing that was rapidly getting farther away, he felt like he could hear gunshots and angry yells, and also

screams……but Kaysis was swallowed by darkness without even being able to process that.

Part 2

「Bubeh!? Hah, wha, what!? What happe――hih!?」

The pain and impact suddenly running on his cheek made Kaysis wake up. His face grimaced from the dull pain he felt on his back and forehead, but even in such a state, he tried to rally his confused mind somehow.

However, the moment his hazy visual field became clear, he raised a shriek that he had never made until now.

Although, no one would be able to laugh at him from doing such a thing. After all, the cause that made Kaysis scream was a sight that was just that bizarre.

「Wha, what!? You guys, just what the hell you are doing!?」

Kaysis called out with an obviously shocked voice. Ahead of his gaze, there were his subordinates that he was familiar with.

……However, each of his subordinates were perfectly making a chuuni pose.

They were the guards under Kaysis’s direct supervision who were inside the room with him just now. One of them had a pose where one of his legs was lifted with both his hands extended straight to both sides. It was a magnificent pose, as though he was a savage eagle that would fly away anytime.

Another person was standing in a low stance with his legs spread apart widely, one of his hands was on his hip while his other hand was held crossing his chest diagonally. That pose looked as though the man was going to transform into a masked warrior at any second now.

And another person was taking a pose where his body tilted slightly forward while his right shoulder was lifted slightly, his right arm extended to below and his left hand was covering his face with his five fingers spread wide open. The angle of his waist was extremely sexy. That pose looked as though something would come out at any moment from his back.

The others too, the guards who were inside the room just before Kaysis lost consciousness, all of them were lined up with everyone taking some kind of chuuni pose. So to speak, it was like a museum of posing statues. The gallery was using the whole spacious area of the president’s office.

Those people didn’t answer even when Kaysis was yelling in extreme panic. Every one of them was wearing sunglasses so their eyes couldn’t be seen, but perhaps they were unconscious seeing how they weren’t reacting at all. When Kaysis strained his eyes to the limit, those posing guards had their body and four limbs entangled in very fine strings, and he could see that they were being hung up like marionettes.

At the same time, Kaysis noticed that he was being restrained in his chair. His four limbs were being restrained by a similar super-fine string.

「Hey, Kousuke. Is it necessary to do this?」

「……If you ask whether there is any necessity, then the answer is definitely negative. This is bad; the damned Lord

Abyssgate is easily showing his face. Perhaps, it’s hopeless already for me.

Hearing that casual conversation in this bizarre space caused Kaysis to return to his senses in surprise. When he turned his gaze toward the voices’ direction, he confirmed that there were several people right beside him.

Three of them were Kousuke, Emily, and Woody who were inside the room before this. But, in addition to them, there were a further three more people.

As expected from Kousuke-san. You don’t forget this thing called “beauty” even in the middle of battle. I have underestimated you.

……Indeed, you suppressed the enemies in less than a minute, and during just a few minutes from you contacting us, you created this kind of artwork. This can be said as terrific. Though now I’m completely filled with the desire to go home.

Ahahaha, it’s great that I can move now after having something unknown done to me but……this case that made even the chief to be haggard is really a heavy burden, huh. I wish I could keep losing consciousness without waking up……

Vanessa, who for some reason looked dejected even though her expression was enraptured, praised Kousuke. Chief Magdanese was having a faraway look while her gaze wouldn’t move toward the posing men no matter what. And then, Allen, who was made to drink some restorative medicine made in another world and healed until the point where he could at least move.

In Allen’s case, Emily wished that he would exit the stage with his face still disfigured like before, but Chief Magdanese said「This idiot who kept making mistakes cannot be allowed to rest more than this. He has to be made to work like a cart-horse」. And so, without any other choice, he was healed.

Even so, he was still far from being fully healed, for the time being, his swelling was suppressed and his broken jaw repaired so he could talk. His broken teeth and lacerated nose and cheek were left alone. His face was wrapped with bandages all over like a mummy, making Allen’s figure look really painful, but there wasn’t anyone who cared about that.

By the way, regarding the restorative medicine made in another world that healed Allen (the highest class of product sold for the general public), Kousuke skillfully hid it and explained that Allen was healed using his ability, so it was currently ignored by everyone thinking that Kousuke also had that kind of power.

Though it seemed that Emily was really bothered with a power that could heal bone fractures in the blink of eye……. Naturally, there was no power that could heal people turned into berserkers, so Kousuke told her that while saying that he would explain to her later. Hearing that caused Emily to withdraw obediently.

「……My word, for the chief-sama of the state security bureau to personally be here. What an honor. However, you have made an extremely poor move. As expected, even a living legend has finally gone senile, hasn’t it?」

Kaysis implicitly conveyed that at this rate berserkers would be released in the middle of cities with his sarcastic and

obstinate words. His expression was also sneering at Chief Magdanese.

At a glance, he looked composed, but if observed carefully, it could be seen that his eyes were twitching faintly, and his voice was slightly shaking. The cause of that went without saying.

Because, there were his subordinates making chuuni poses within his view after all!

「Mister Abyssgate. I'll leave this to you.」

「That's why I told you that my name is Kousuke.」

Chief Magdanese didn't show any particular concern to Kaysis's words and her gaze moved to Kousuke. Kousuke punctually said his request for correction before sighing. Then he put down a chair in front of Kaysis roughly.

Kousuke put the chair so that the back of the chair was facing Kaysis and he sat down on it. He put his arms on the top of the chair's back and gazed straight at Kaysis.

「Mister Abyssgate……. So that's your codename inside the agency. Fufu, I'll remember that. I will surely investigate your background. And then, your important people will――UBAoAa!?」

「Just who do you think you are talking to? Hold down that tongue.」

Right in the middle of Kaysis's curse toward Kousuke, he directly received a kick on his crotch from Vanessa who had been reduced into a believer of Lord Abyssgate, and he raised a weird scream. Actually, he wanted to writhe around, but he couldn't do so because he was tied to the chair and

he could only twitch repeatedly while desperately enduring the pain.

「Aa~, Vanessa. Let me do it, okay?」

「Forgive me. Against my better judgment, it annoyed me seeing his attitude that is making light of Kousuke-san.」

Just where had the Vanessa-san who was always calm, cool, and collected gone to? Even though she absolutely wasn't someone who would instantly make a 'Direct Attack!' to the crotch because of provocation……

Allen and Woody similarly turned pigeon-toed while drawing away from being creeped out. Kousuke faced toward the writhing Kaysis once more while they were like that.

「Now then, Kaysis. I'll have you spit out everything. Not just the cancellation code, but also how this case started, your plan from here on, and then the location of all the『Berserk』that you stole.」

「Do, do you seriously believe, I'll talk――」

「You will. I said it, right? The one who doesn't understand the situation is you. Why do you think you who is holding the trump card is getting captured like this without question? Why did Woody change sides? Didn't you think about that?」

「That's……」

Of course, Kaysis noticed those abnormalities. No matter how unthinkable it was that his subordinate would get lured away by a salmon sandwich, he didn't want to think about it. Also, it was unthinkable that the security bureau would make a gamble that could involve a lot of people's life using

a baseless method like torture because there was no way he would easily confess just from that.

But, even so, there should be nothing that could shake his absolutely superior position with him taking hostage of this country’s people, as long as he didn’t confess anything, then there was nothing the security bureau could do except whatever Kaysis told them. It was undeniable that such a belief was curbing down his feeling of fear toward the abnormalities. It was when he was thinking like that,

「I also told you this, didn’t I? That’s why you are a third-rate. Honestly, regarding the mastermind of this case, well, I have no doubt that it’s really you, but I think there is a high possibility that there is still another existence behind you. The existence that granted you the seat of president of this large company……something like that.」

Kaysis’s expression didn’t change. There wasn’t even any turmoil inside his eyes. His breathing was also not shaken at all. But, there also wasn’t any sarcasm coming from him right away. Kousuke was convinced just from that.

Surely there was another person that knew about the existence of『Berserk』and stole it the very first time. After all, an impetus was necessary for Kaysis to know about the existence of『Berserk』.

At the same time, there was no doubt that this man was cunning, merciless, and excellent, but, no matter how, Kousuke couldn’t believe that Kaysis had the status that counterbalanced with the organizational power Kousuke expected, so surely his conjecture that this『Gamma Pharmaceutical』wasn’t at the deepest bottom of everything was correct.

While thinking so, Kousuke suddenly took out from his breast pocket a string that was attached with something that looked like a five-yen coin. The size was about the same as a five-yen coin, but the material looked like an amber crystal. There was a round hole in the center, and the string was tied there.

Once Chief Magdanese and the others saw that item, they made a really complicated expression.

「……I don't know what you are planning to do, but if you don't release me, a lot of people will die you know? After all, no matter what you are going to do to me, I absolutely won't speak.」

「You know, the world is overflowing with irrationality. Did you forget that just because you are on the side that is scattering around irrationality?」

Kousuke then dangled the string. The crystal shaped like a five-yen coin swung back and forth in front of Kaysis's eye.

Kousuke coughed once *gohon* for a moment, and he straightened up his sitting posture before he suddenly opened his mouth.

「You are gradually becoming stra~ngee~; you are gradually becoming straa~ngee~」

「??? Just what are you saying……. Is your head having a screw looseee-hee~」

The crystal five-yen coin systematically swayed like a pendulum in front of Kaysis's eyes. At the other side of the coin was a suspicious incantation (?) that sounded strangely stupid. Kaysis's was doubting Kousuke's sanity that matched

Kousuke’s expression that looked complicatedly embarrassed.

But, right after that, the end of Kaysis’s sentence crumbled. Light slipped off from his eyes, and his snake-like atmosphere dispersed as though it was just a lie, where now he seemed like a mere simple man.

□You are gradually wanting to taa~lkk~. You want to talk about everything, everyy~thii~ng□

□I, I want to taa~lkk~. I want to talk about everything, everyy~thii~ng□

□If you are asked you will want to anss~werr~. You will be unable to not anss~werr~□

□I will want to anss~werr~. I become unable to not anss~werr~□

□You will be happy by telll~ingg~. You will want to tell everyy~thii~ng□

□Will will wiilll~□

The slow and stupid voices resounded inside the room. Kaysis was completely transformed into a repeating machine. At the same time, a light of expectation was starting to grow inside those eyes. His atmosphere was like a Villager A who was called out by a hero party, who for some reason knew about a local legend and would tell it to the hero party without leaving anything out.

——Soul magic enchanted-type brainwashing artifact “Staking the Pride of a Villager”

The villager in an RPG would tell everything they knew if they were talked to. If they were addressed by the hero party, ordinarily they would obediently listen. They also wouldn’t voice even a single complaint when their house was entered by a hero party as they pleased, and even if their home was rummaged and, in the end, their possessions got taken away without permission.

This artifact would turn the targeted human into such a lovely villager. This was an artifact for dealing with the aftermath of an incident, bestowed by the demon king to the abyss lord for his personal use.

A minute later, the president of a large company that could be counted as one of the top five even in Britain finished his job-change into a splendid Villager A. He happily spouted out everything that he knew.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Thank you very much for the festival of salmon sandwich’s review column.

It’s a happy feeling that something I liked is shared by other people!

Now then, the end of this extra compilation too is gradually coming into view.

I think it will be 2, or 3 more chapters.

But even though I say that even Shirakome doesn’t know how this tale without any plot, or anything, will roll in the

future.

When it’s over what will I write then I wonder?

The next update is planned to be for 6 P.M. Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 214

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

DAS

Part 1

「Welcome, this is「Gamma Pharmaceutical」desu. Welcome, this is「Gamma Pharmaceutical」desu. Welcome, this is 「Gamma Pharmaceutical」desu. Welco――」

「Yosh, it's a success.」

Kousuke nodded in satisfaction seeing Kaysis who was continuously saying the same line like a broken record with a friendly smile.

Chief Magdanese's and Allen's, who were watching from behind, eyes began to twitch as though they had seen something repulsive.

Both of them were people that had been fighting in the underworld where it was a vortex of schemes and violence, or rather, it wouldn't be an exaggeration to call them residents of the underworld; yet, even the two of them were creeped out by the brainwashing technique that was bestowed directly from the demon king……. And then, seeing Kousuke who was making a satisfied smile from seeing the result…….

Both of them were honestly thinking「That returnee group……they are seriously, bad news.」.

Kousuke firmly ignored the gaze of the security bureau duo that pierced the back of his head. He put away the artifact "Staking the Pride of a Villager", and began the interrogation――or rather, the inquiry.

「Now then, Kaysis. First, tell us your plan, just what were you going to do by using「Berserk」?」

「Welcome! This is「Gamma Pharmaceutical」desu!」

「……No, not that, your plan――」

「Welcome. This is「Gamma Pharmaceutical」desu-」

「No, that's why your plan――」

「Welcomee! This is「Gamma Pharmaceutical」desuu!」

「……」

Kaysis was already a splendid villager. Most likely he was a high-class villager even among all the villagers, the one without any particular meaning, the one that wasn't doing anything even in the afternoon, the jobless villager loitering around near the village entrance――Kaysis had his job-changed into "the villager of the beginning".

「……Hey, Kousuke. Could it be, you have overdone it?」

「N, no, such a thing should not be……」

Kousuke scratched on his cheek while denying Emily's words. However, in reality, they couldn't question Kaysis because he was transformed into "the villager of the beginning". Seeing no other way, Kousuke's hand entered his pocket to take out "Staking the Pride of a Villager" once more.

However, Vanessa stopped Kousuke from the side. Or rather, her shocking action stopped him from moving.

「Do it seriously.」

After saying such a thing, Vanessa suddenly dropped her elbow on Kaysis’s head. *boguu* A raw sound that mustn’t be made by a living thing resounded. Emily raised a cute scream「Hya!?」.

「A problematic machine can be fixed by hitting it.」

「Jelgome-. Ghighis is-, Janma Khalpageudical, -, desu!」

「Wai-, wait Vanessa! Humans are not machines, this person became all the more stranger, see!」

Kaysis-san was moving ominously *kaku-kaku* while starting to making sounds ‘gyogyogyo! gyogyogyo!’. Emily was pointing her finger while making a retort.

「How strange? In Armage○n, the Russian astronaut used Wrench Attack to fix the shuttle engine though……. Perhaps my angle was bad.」(TN: Armageddon movie)

「No, wai-, Vanessa. Wa――」

Kousuke tried to stop Vanessa, but before he could, Vanessa’s pointlessly refined beautiful left hook captured Kaysis’s temple. *ZUPAN-!* A beautiful sound also resounded from that. At the same time, Kaysis’s head was snapped away to the right as though it got blown away.

「△☆□○□□×□□□□♡□□□□□□□

「Muh. Is it not a problem of angle, but power?」

Kaysis-san’s head was blown away to the left this time. Vanessa’s backhand that could even be said to be artistic captured the right side of the head, filled with the centrifugal force of a body rotation.

However, Kaysis-san was only discharging broken words and facial expressions that were increasingly turning into a person in a straitjacket; he wasn’t returning any proper answer.

Vanessa looked dubious, even so, after that she attempted various things like「The spin is not enough?」, or「Should I use a combo?」or「Perhaps I should use a shake rather than impact」or「Neko Damashi!」…… (TN: Neko Damashi, the signature move of Nagissa from Ansatsu Kyoushitsu)

Finally, Kousuke went「Stop iit! Just stop it alreadyy!」and pinioned Vanessa from behind while dragging her back. With that, the curtain of the short torture scene was finally closed. Chief Magdanese was sending Vanessa a gaze that was filled with a smidgen of admiration, was that originated from mercilessness or something else?

「Aa, geez. This looks like it will be bad without healing……. First thing first, let’s examine him before using the artifact one more time――」

「Nice to meet you, honored guest. I am Kaysis. The president of this「Gamma Pharmaceutical」. And, do you perchance have any business with me?」

「He got well somehow!? It feels a little strange though!」

Kaysis recovered his sanity (?). As expected, it seemed that something that almost broke really could be fixed by hitting it. A light of intelligence was shining from his eyes, and a dignity that was like a village chief could be felt from his tone. ……However, he had a nosebleed that was pouring like a river, his front teeth were gone, and the area around his eyes was bruised to look like a panda.

While feeling a little irritation at Vanessa’s triumphant look beside him, Kousuke cleared his throat once and asked about Kaysis’s plan once more.

「Fumu, so it’s about my plan. Where should I start I wonder……」

「First, tell us the outline.」

「I guess. Speaking simply, I plan to turn people all over the world into latent berserkers, where they have to drink the suppression medicine daily, and obtain a profit from that. Like that my position within the organization will become firm, and with the organization power and『Berserk』I will become the one leader that can manipulate the world from behind……something like that.」

The plan was told promptly, but the detail was absurdly demonical. This man didn’t think of humans as humans, he only saw them as pawns that produced a profit. This repulsive plan laid bare the nature of Kaysis Wentworks.

Emily unconsciously gulped while Vanessa’s gaze turned grave. It was only those like Kousuke and Chief Magdanese who looked unperturbed; even the smile was disappearing from inside Allen’s eyes.

「Transformation into latent berserkers, and then the suppression medicine, what do you mean by that? Something like a capsule attached with a detonator would surely be ejected out of the body eventually, what you mean is something different from that, isn’t it?」

「Correct. What I mean isn’t physical means like that, but by using an improved drug of『Berserk』. Right after『Berserk』was created by accident, we performed repeated

experiments using the data and product that were brought to us by our cooperator.

Kaysis continued his talk after saying that. If summarized, it would be something like this.

Berserk was a drug that abnormally vitalized the cell of the consumer. That overly rapid vitalization would repeat self-destruction and restoration forcefully, creating that kind of enlargement and super humanization ability.

But, just like how the extent of the vitalization would be in proportion to the consumed amount of the drug, the vitalization rate of Berserk could be controlled to a certain degree. It seemed that they had already gathered the data regarding the effect and time limit of the Berserk transformation and the necessary dose after going through many human experiments.

Even so, no matter what they did, they couldn’t go as far as controlling the vitalization and transformation right after the consummation of the drug. That was the reason they used a cheap trick like using capsules attached with detonators……

But the story would be different if they had Emily who was the drug developer.

What Kaysis and his group wished from Emily was the development of the improved drug with a delayed vitalization rate——in short, a drug where after consuming it, there would be a time delay before the vitalization could reach a stage where transformation occurred. At the same time, they also wished for Emily to develop not the antidote that could give complete recovery, but a suppression drug that would only suppress the vitalization as long as it was consumed continuously.

In such a case, the people would have to drink the suppression drug created by「Gamma Pharmaceutical」every day if they didn’t want to become a monster that lost all reason.

「However, how are you planning to turn the people all over the world into latent berserkers? If they understand that it would affect their lives, people will stop buying even the cold medicine sold in the market.」

「You’re right. But, if it’s mixed into something that humans have to drink every day, they will not be able to avoid consuming it.」

「Every day? ……Don’t tell me」

「Yes, it’s just like what you are imagining right now. It’s water.」

The cultivation of「Berserk」could be done as much as anyone wanted as long as they just had the data. Kaysis planned to use them to pollute the waterworks and not just that, but dams, rivers, water purification plants, and so on, all the places that supplied water.

There wasn’t any antidote for「Berserk」. Once the water was polluted by it, there wouldn’t be any method to purify it. There would be no way other than evaporating the polluted water or draining it into the sea. It seemed that Kaysis was planning to pollute even the rainwater and seawater with 「Berserk」eventually.

「Such a thing……you are insane.」

「As expected this isn’t a laughing matter. Originally, erasing this kind of fellow is my role though.」

Vanessa didn’t even hide her disgust and glared at Kaysis while Allen, understanding that they had fallen behind in front of this danger that threatened the world, said something like that as though spitting it out.

Emily’s face was pale. But, there wasn’t any despair in her cat-eyes. She glared even more at Kaysis while her eyes were shining with the color of strong determination.

「I see. In such a situation, even if you are exposed by the government as the mastermind, it wouldn’t be any problem then. After all, the government people would be in the same danger of turning berserk too. As long as they are unable to secure the formula of the suppression medicine, they won’t lay their hands on you at all. After all, even if they try to do anything, the world might end.」

Chief Magdanese sighed deeply with her gaze still looking severe. And then, she asked one more thing about Kaysis’s remark that caught her attention.

「Tell us about the “organization” that you mentioned.」

「Information regarding the “organization” is it? Let’s see…… perhaps I should say, that it’s a gathering of old codgers captured in a fanatical ideology and deep-rooted delusion. It has an ancient history, its members are also an unknown number, and it possesses political power, economic power, and raw power en masse. Yet despite so, it’s a gathering of brainless idiots that is doing nothing except secretly chasing after the occult.」

Even though it was the organization that he belonged to, Kaysis was expressing a really piercing evaluation about it. When Chief Magdanese wordlessly urged him to continue, Kaysis, who just for a moment returned from being a village

chief into a snake-like company president, then spoke the name of that organization.

「The underworld organization that has been continuously searching for genuine mystics since far in the ancient time. Its name is “Hydra”. If it’s you chief-sama, then you should at least know that name, don’t you?」

「Is that so……that “Hydra”. They are a stereotypical occultist fanatic group. Supposedly, they have been crushed on countless occasions; however, sometimes they would show a glimpse of their face in some kind of case, an organization that is difficult to eradicate.」

Chief Magdanese who seemed to know the name of that organization showed an expression as though she had swallowed something bitter that she rarely showed. From her words, it seemed that in the past she might have confronted them several times. It seemed that Allen also knew at least the name, his expression was half-surprised and half-understanding that this name could come out here.

On the other hand, Emily and Vanessa had “?” floating above their head while beside them Kousuke was looking up to the sky「Aa~」. It was an organization name that he was awfully familiar with.

「It’s a multi-headed monster that comes out in Greek mythology. No matter how many of their heads that are crushed, it will revive if there is just one head remaining…… so they came out here once more. However, you are talking really bitterly about them. Do you have dissatisfaction against your organization?」

「Yes, yes, if it’s dissatisfaction, then I have it. Prattling about things like a mystic or supernatural phenomenon in this modern time, they can only be called as insane. Even

though they can stand in even more superior positions in the world if they use the power of an organization of that scale, when it comes to those old codgers, they are making light of the power of science too much. What do they mean by contradicting the ideal of the organization, huh? It’s because they are obsessed with something like mystics that is unclear whether it exists or not, that the organization is still a social outcast even now.

Kaysis talked as though he was spitting out. It seemed that Kaysis had a way of thinking that if they obtained a power that could interfere with the world using the power of science, then it was fine to use that. In contrast, the leadership of Hydra was searching for mystics to the end, and their objective was to interfere with the world using that mystic and wouldn’t recognize any means other than that. That seemed to be their way of thinking.

Because the origin of the organization establishment was to obtain mystics, then indeed, Kaysis’s way of thinking was contrary to the organization’s founding ideal. Kaysis perceived the organization not as a gathering of researchers, but as mere “power”, in a sense, his nature was the exact opposite as the organization members——he was a realist.

I will change the world using Berserk——if so, as expected even they surely won’t be able to disregard me as a greenhorn. Fufufuh, even that guy, Jefferson Allgrey, who is always looking down on me thinking he is the superior one, making fun of me, he will kneel in front of me, begging for forgiveness. I’ll carve into his flesh and bones, just who is actually the superior one! ……That’s how it should be.

Kaysis, whose ambition had fallen apart, dropped his shoulders in dejection.

On the other hand, Chief Magdanese reflexively stepped forward in excitement and grabbed both of Kaysis's shoulders. She then began to shake him back and forth.

「Just now, did you say Jefferson Allgrey? That real estate king and also politician?」

「Ye, yeah. That Allgrey.」

「Who else! Who else is a member of Hydra that you know about!? Tell me!」

「Go, got it. The others in the leadership are――」

The names that were spoken after Kaysis said that was an unimaginable luxury. Several of the names were people that even the security bureau was suspecting. There were also names that were under secret investigation, but even so, it was tremendous for these big names of a listed up occultist fanatic group to be exposed like this.

When Kaysis finished telling the names of the leadership that he knew about, Chief Magdanese confirmed with her gaze that Allen had recorded the names before her face turned toward Kousuke.

「Mister Abyssgate. I'm grateful. These bunches are people whose real forms we cannot get a hold of despite the dark rumor about them. With this, perhaps we can perform their funeral.」

「Aa~, yep. I see……」

Kousuke's reply was really evasive. Kousuke's gaze wandered around for a while before he asked Chief Magdanese timidly.

「Err, chief-san. That Mr. Allgrey or something, as expected, you are going to arrest him?」

「What are you saying? Obviously we will. Even though he isn't related to the case this time, there is a mountain of cases that are thought to be related with Hydra. Each time, we only treated the case as unresolved, or we ended up capturing the underlings, as though they are a lizard that cut off their tail to escape. And now we might be able to finish them all at once.」

「Ye, ye~ah. That's, how it is huuh~」

As expected, it seemed that Chief Magdanese sensed the strangeness in Kousuke's attitude. She looked suspiciously while speaking out the question whether there was any problem.

But, at that time, a shocked voice「Eh!?」resounded from behind her. When she looked there, she saw the figure of Allen, his eyes opened wide obviously shocked, with his gaze fixated on the tablet in his hand.

「? Allen?」

「A, aa~, chief. Just now I was pulling up information about Allgrey and his cohorts but……this」

Allen showed his tablet with a troubled expression. Chief Magdanese received it, and after her, Vanessa and Emily also turned their gaze to peek at the tablet's display.

There,

「Then, you are saying that the donation this time will continue in the future too?」

「Correct, it’s just as you say. It feels like the me before this had been wandering inside a nightmare all the time. I was clinging obsessively to my current position, and in collecting money and influence. But, just how much value do those things actually have! It’s a smile. The children’s smile is exactly where value can be found. The future where children can live with a smile on their face, that is exactly something with a value that is worthy for me to devote my life to!」

Of all things, on the display, there was the real estate king-san giving a powerful speech.

Chief Magdanese went「WHYY!?」in a voice that had never been heard from her before, her eyes looked like they almost flew out from their socket. She was the chief of the security bureau, that was why she knew painfully well about the dark rumors regarding Mr. Allgrey. Therefore, seeing his radiant smile and his speech that was overflowing with kindness and sincerity was honestly a nightmare for her instead.

The interview toward Mr. Allgrey in what seemed to be a special television programme was continuing on the display.

「That is wonderful thinking Mr. Allgrey. I also heard that there are a great number of people who are in agreement with your thinking, can you tell us more about that?」

「That is a true fact. They are my personal friends, my comrades. From here on, my comrades and I are wishing to act by exerting our best, in order to make this world become better even for just a little!」

「I see. And as the symbol of that resolution, you are founding this charity organization “Staking the Pride of a Villager”, right?」

「Exactly. Perhaps it is a single hero who is moving this world. But, what is supporting the world is every single one of the villagers. I am not a special human. But I wish to support the world as a single villager even with my meager strength!」

Hearing that emotionally moving speech, the audience in the studio stood up in unison and gave a thunderous applause. At the same time, a scrolling caption appeared on the screen. The names of the people supporting Mr. Allgrey were scrolling there. ……All the names, were the names that were spoken by Kaysis just now.

Chief Magdanese and everyone else was petrified. Among them, it was Emily who came alive before others. With a twitching expression, she asked Kousuke whose gaze was staring toward the day after tomorrow.

「Hey, Kousuke. The name of the charity organization is “Staking the Pride of a Villager” the news said……」

「Is. Is that so……」

「Hey, Kousuke. The name of Kousuke’s tool that can hypnotize other people, what is its name again?」

「……”Staking the Pride of a Villager”, I guess.」

Right after that, Chief Magdanese threw away the tablet. Allen raised a strange voice「Howah」while performing a diving catch.

Chief Magdanese power walked with loud footsteps, and this time she grabbed Kousuke’s shoulders.

「Explain, Mister Abyssgate. Concisely and swiftly.」

“YE, YES, MA’AM! In, in the first place, I came to this country in order to crush those guys! After crushing them, I brainwashed them at once! They became compassionate villagers! End of report, ma’am!”

Kousuke who was being demanded to explain with bloodshot eyes and a stifled voice reflexively saluted while answering toward Chief Magdanese’s overwhelming intensity. Vanessa and Allen nodded deeply, understanding how he felt.

Chief Magdanese gazed fixedly for a while at Kousuke who was drenched in cold sweat that was similar to a waterfall, and then she sighed deeply and drew back. While she was at it, she covered her eyes with one hand and looked up at the sky.

Seeing the figure of the chief that was like that, Vanessa said a brief comment.

“As expected from Kousuke-san. It feels like the saying “Everything is Abyssgate’s fault” will spread far and wide sooner or later.”(TN: ‘Everything is Abyssgate’s fault’, in Japanese it’s translated as ‘Daitai Abyssgate no sei’, which can be abbreviated as ‘DAS’)

For some reason, Kousuke was unable to make the retort ‘You’re noisy’ to Vanessa.

Surely from here on, Mr. Allgrey and his cohorts would use their fortune for charity work without sparing anything. Naturally, because of Mr. Allgrey’s reputation as a politician, at first he would also be ridiculed that this was only a bid for popularity, but it wouldn’t take that long for his fame to soar through the roof.

Sure enough, what would the society think if he was then arrested when he had saved a lot of people and obtained the

trust of the mass……. Of course, it wouldn’t be a problem if there was definite proof, but even so, surely there would still be a problem. It was not difficult to imagine Chief Magdanese’s heartache level going up.

kohon- Kousuke cleared his throat. He faced back toward Kaysis who was looking on blankly, and then he questioned him in order to clear away the complicated atmosphere.

「So, Kaysis. The data and drug of『Berserk』, are all of those in this place?」

「No. Naturally, I decentralized it. If it’s the list of the laboratories that are in charge of safekeeping the data and drug, it is saved in the flash drive inside the drawer. You can confirm it there.」

Chief Magdanese somehow pulled her mind back to normal and sent her gaze to Allen. Allen who received that gaze moved to investigate the drawer. Like that, when he checked the flash drive he discovered, certainly there was the data of the storage areas, and not only that, it was also filled with the detail of the plan steps and so on.

With this, they now understood most of what should be known. If they destroyed all the data and drug next, the threat of『Berserk』would vanish. Emily wouldn’t be drowning in guilt for more than this, and the regret of her important people who became a sacrifice would also clear up a little.

That was why, perhaps now there wasn’t any need to know, about the answer to the question that Kousuke was putting off from asking, the question that until the end she was hesitating whether she should ask it or not.

However, right now, the one who was here was a strong girl who by her own will had resolved to face a great evil and the

truth. She was a coward and often turned small, but even so, she was a girl who wouldn’t stop advancing forward.

That was why,

「The last thing. Tell us. ……The one who told you the existence of『Berserk』……who it is?」

「Fumu, that’s――」

Emily knew the truth.

Part 2

Time had passed until it was late at night. There wasn’t a star in the sky, and there was also no moonlight. The night sky was covered by cloudy weather, making the gloomy atmosphere to hang in the air.

The night view of the city could be seen from the veranda of the hotel that was prepared for them by the security bureau. Regardless that it was the dead of night, what was called the city center knew no sleep. Therefore the stars on the ground illuminated the dark night radiantly, granting comfort to the spectator of the view for just a little.

「……Emily. You cannot sleep?」

「Kousuke……yes. Just a little.」

Emily was on a veranda, both her arms leaned on the handrail while she was staring at the night view for some reason or another. A voice called to her from the neighboring veranda.

「You aren’t cold?」

Emily was wearing a nightgown. Although it was created from thick fabric for use in winter, it was only a piece of clothing. Kousuke knitted his eyebrows seeing that. Emily smiled wryly while shaking her head.

「I see. Well, certainly the night air in winter feels pleasant.」

Saying that, Kousuke copied Emily by using both his arms to lean on the handrail of the veranda beside Emily’s and he stared at the night view.

Both of them didn’t say anything for a while. They were merely looking quietly far away. Emily couldn’t express into words the reason she was unable to sleep. After all, it was something obvious. Also, because right now there wasn’t anything that had to be said regarding tomorrow.

That was why Kousuke only muttered a brief sentence.

「Just a bit more. Let’s do our best, together.」

「-……yes. Yes-」

Emily cast her eyes down, as though she was reflecting upon something. But, her voice that replied to him was reverberating really well in the chilly air.

Silence visited the place once more. It was unknown how long they were like that. Suddenly, Emily asked Kousuke.

「Hey, Kousuke. When this matter is over, what will Kousuke do?」

「Hm? That’s, I’ll return to Japan. I said it, right? I’m a student, yeah? Even though this is still winter holiday, I’m skipping through my short winter course here. I’ve got to return quickly and participate in it.」

Emily was looking blankly for a moment after hearing that reply, but right after that, she burst into laughter as though she was unable to hold it in.

「Fu, fufu……the person that toyed with not just the underworld organization, but even with the security bureau,

needs to join a short course……kufuh, fufufufuh」

「O, oi, don’t laugh. Just between you and me, even the demon king is living as a normal student, you know. It’s not strange at all that I’m a student, right?」

「Bu, but. A person that introduced himself as Abyssgate something, fighting against armed men, someone like that is going through lessons normally……ahah, no good; it’s too surreal when I imagine it, I cannot hold my laugh. Ahahahah」

「Gufuh. Do, don’t say Abyssgate……」

Seeing Kousuke hanging his head down while his hand was pressing on his chest, Emily’s laugh was increasingly sounding more amused.

She had never laugh like this since the chain of incidents was starting.

Surely tomorrow would be the day where everything was settled. Nervousness, uneasiness, and pain that was the truth inside her heart. Actually, it was something that she was vaguely aware of. It was something she desperately averted her eyes from. The result was that all those were thrust before Emily now.

――If I am alone, could I endure it?

Thinking about that Emily shook her head inside her heart.

――Could I come this far, only with Vanessa and me?

As expected, she shook her head in her heart.

——In this time that is cruel, uneasy, painful, and difficult, even so, would I be able to laugh just like this?

There was no way she would be able.

Emily glanced at the sullen Kousuke beside her, and then she smiled softly while wiping the tears gathering at the corner of her eye with her finger.

「Kousuke, thank you.」

「It’s still too fast for you to say that. Say it after everything is over tomorrow.」

Kousuke’s words were blunt and slightly filled with sulkiness that hadn’t disappeared. But, for Emily, those words felt ticklish somehow.

Emily stared fixedly at the side profile of Kousuke who was looking far away with his chin resting on his hand. Kousuke seemed to notice her gaze, and he looked slightly uncomfortable.

Emily was thinking ‘my body will get chilly soon’ while she resolutely made a request to Kousuke.

「Say, Kousuke.」

「Hm?」

「You see, tomorrow, when everything is over……I want Kousuke, to tell me about yourself.」

「About myself?」

Kousuke raised his eyebrow and turned his gaze toward Emily. Emily nodded to his gaze while her cheeks reddened slightly.

「Yes. Like, how come you are able to use that kind of mysterious power. Like, just what are the returnees. Those kind of things, various things about Kousuke.」

「……」

「Uh. I, I understand that it's a secret matter you know? But, I absolutely will protect the secret. I'm serious, okay? Besides, next time something happens, perhaps I will be able to become Kousuke's strength then, besides, err, besides……」

Seeing Kousuke who spontaneously fell silent, Emily added to her words with a little bit of fluster.

For Kousuke, he didn't have any particular problem teaching her about the returnees. In the first place, they had honestly talked to the media, that they had been fighting the army of an evil god in another world. It depended on the other party whether they would believe it or not.

Emily had witnessed Kousuke's power, so naturally, she would believe and accept it. Therefore, it wasn't anything that particularly needed to be hidden from her.

As expected, if it was known by the whole higher-ups of the government, it would cause hindrance to their private life, and it would be putting the cart before the horse, so in that case, a large-scale countermeasure like pulling out the brainwashing technique of the demon king (especially his wife) would be necessary, but doing something like telling an individual like Emily, or Chief Magdanese, who knew about the scariness of the returnees like Kousuke and wouldn't easily act against them, there wouldn't be any problem.

Then, if it was asked the reason why Kousuke was falling silent, that was of course because he was told something

like「I want to know more about you!」by a beautiful girl while that girl's cheeks were reddening.

Sure enough, for someone with a lover, it wasn't good for him to step further than this. He was deeply lamenting why he didn't immediately tell her about the existence of his lover. Thinking back, he wouldn't be lying if he said that there was no timing to tell the truth. But, as expected, it would be bad if he told the truth now. If asked what would be bad, of course, it was about the possibility that Emily's mind would turn to ash.

Kousuke instantly ended the mini Kousuke meeting inside his heart, and then he replied toward Emily who was still speaking in a fluster.

「No, I don't mind, doing just that――」

「Really!?」

「O, ou」

Emily's body leaned forward from the veranda, with her sparkling gaze capturing Kousuke. Kousuke thought that if Emily wanted to know about himself, then he would inform her about how he had a lover at that time, but……

Seeing Emily whose whole body was radiating「I'm, happy!」, the mini Kousuke inside his heart was rolling around from guilt and various other emotions.

Emily noticed how because she was leaning forward, her distance with Kousuke was so close they were almost touching. She became flustered from shyness while pulling back her body.

And then, Emily was showing quite the sly cuteness from her act of sending Kousuke glances to confirm that he wasn't creeped from her getting too close like that. The song of Rolli○ Girl (from a certain smiling video) was playing out inside Kousuke's heart. (TN: Rolling Girl. Also, a certain smiling video refers to Niconico Douga. Shirakome disguised niconico as nikoniko here, which mean smilingly in Japanese)

「I'm looking forward to it Kousuke. Ah, but, that, can I, ask just one thing right now?」

「Wha, what is it?」

Emily fidgeted, her finger played around with her untied hair twining the hair around while her cheeks reddened so much that it felt like the chilly air would be warmed up from it. Kousuke put up his guard, but the question Emily released still hit him like a body blow.

「You see, I'm asking this only out of curiosity, nothing else, but……what kind of girl, that Kousuke prefer?」

Seeing that kind of transparent attitude, the mini Kousuke was shouting「What do you mean just out of curiosity!? Sly! As expected from Emily-chan! That's sly!」while tumbling down the hill road inside his heart.

The unblinking gaze from Emily caused Kousuke's gaze to wander restlessly, and then he answered honestly.

「Rabbit-eared onee-san.」

「……Eh?」

A counterstrike at Emily. Emily's eyes turned into dots and was lost for words. The figure of herself wearing a bunny girl

costume seducing Kousuke with a bewitching air was emerging in the back of her mind.

Emily instantly became a completely ripe tomato, so much that it almost felt like a sound of *puff* could be heard. She went ‘awawa-, awawa-* in panic, looking left and right, and in the end,

「Ko, Kousuke you pervert!」

She said such a thing while rushing inside her room.

「……When everything is over, I should make a phone call to Nagumo before talking to Emily.」

Kousuke decided in his heart to consult with his friend, his senior who had gone far ahead on the road to understanding this and that about girls.

Although, him noticing that this choice of his was mistaken……it was a story of a bit later.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Thinking back, it feels like the first smiling video Shirakome first saw was Rol○ng Girl.

I forgot what the impetus for me to see it was, but it was impactful.

The next update is planned to be for 6 P.M. Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 215

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

YES-, ABYSSGATE-!!

---

bara-bara-bara-bara- The peculiar sound of a rotor was reverberating.

Under the early morning cloudy sky, the things that were spreading such a noise were three large helicopters. The three were forming a triangular formation and pushing on through the cloudy sky in a straight line.

Each of those helicopters was carrying a fully armed special force of the security bureau, in addition to Kousuke, Emily, Vanessa, and Allen, who was wafting off a pathetic aura, who were also located on one of the helicopters.

「O, oi, Allen. Are you okay?」

Riding on the same helicopter was the commander of the special forces, who was also the captain of Alpha squad, Bernard Pays. He asked Allen with some hesitation. He belonged to the security bureau's assault section, so he was quite acquainted with Allen who was working as an analyst on the surface where they often shared information.

Even though they weren't quite friends, their relationship with each other was at the level of close co-workers at least. Therefore, when he saw Allen, who was usually acting flippant with a light atmosphere, sitting on the bench in a style akin to a certain boxer who had burned out into pure white, he couldn't help but call out to him.

「Aa, Pays-san. Thanks for your concern. If I have to say whether I'm fine or not, I'm not fine, so it's fine.」

「No, that reply is already not fine there.」

Bernard made an expression that didn't know what to say to Allen whose face was changed to look similar to a mummy man's face.

「You see, Pays-san. I'm specialized in killing secretly. My job is to stealthily and quietly go 'pshuu'. Yet despite so, I was told to steal, spurred on to become a bodyguard, made to be beaten viciously by a demonic young man, sentenced with the caving in of my face by a beautiful girl, and on top of all that, I was told 'go fight a war against monsters' you know? Even though this is the order from the chief that I respected so much, I'll still feel tired from it. I'm just a step away from getting burned out. It's nice isn't it, for Pays-san and others. All of you received healing. As for me, my molars or inside my nose are still throbbing with pain……Head-on fighting isn't my territory you know? Yet despite so, I'm being sent out in this state; I'll die for sure this time.」

'Heheh' Allen chuckled while his gaze was getting distant and his mutter getting sluggish. Bernard's cheeks couldn't stop twitching seeing such an Allen. Inside his heart, he was thinking「This is bad. This guy, he is seriously getting cornered」, like that.

Allen's figure was like a salaryman who had become worn-out from continuously working in a black company, sitting melancholically on a bench of a public park while visioning an impossible dream of changing job. The final blow was dealt to Allen, who was exposing such an appearance.

「That's depressing, Mr. K (lol). Even though it will be the final decisive battle after this, what are you doing getting

low spirits like that? I’ll gouge you out you know?」

「Scary-. What do you mean gouging!? Where are you going to gouge!? Or rather, what did you add just now when you said Mr. K?」

The cold words that came from Vanessa who was sitting beside Allen had gone passed being sharp and inspired terror instead. Allen was shivering while talking back.

「Please read the mood a little. Right now is a serious time. A lot of lives are hanging on this, and we have to fight an army of berserkers after this you know? Please don’t make that kind of funny face and act seriously.」

「The one turning my face into a funny one like this is particularly because of the fault of you guys though! Besides, I don’t want to be told to act seriously by Vanessa――」

「Oi, who said you could call my name casually like that. You want me to turn your face into something that will inevitably invite a roar of laughter?」

「I, I’m sorry. But, even if you aren’t so angry that your tone change……a, it hurts-. It really hurts I said! Please don’t grind on my injury! Please forgive me, Paradis-san.」

When Allen casually called Vanessa’s name, he was given back with indignation that surpassed the imagination. His injury was getting ground from above the bandage which caused Allen to scream while writhing around.

Certainly, Allen was the perpetrator that scattered around 「Berserk」in the research building. But, in the first place, it was the chief that ordered the theft, and then unexpected

situations happened on top of another unexpected situation. So to speak, what happened was something like an accident.

Allen too pretty much felt guilty about the tragedy that occurred at the research building, and he was also feeling apologetic toward Emily; but because his habitual frivolous attitude was ingrained deeply in his self, he didn’t look like he was reflecting at a glance, which invited biting attitudes from others no matter what he did.

A situation that could only be said as tough luck and behavior that didn’t convey the inside of his heart. If it was said that it was him reaping what he sow then that would be the end of it but……

Starting with Bernard, the squad members boarding the same helicopter couldn’t help but send gazes of sympathy toward Allen who was still screaming while his face was getting ground by Vanessa.

Vanessa and others were unfolding a scene that could be seen as comedic in a sense. The one who was seeing them acting like that with a faint smile on her face was Emily. But, there was gloom in that smile.

Vanessa stole a glance at Emily while grinding on Allen. From that, it could be understood that the dialogue to some extent was also to clear up Emily’s feelings.

「Emily. Are you okay……I won’t ask you that. There is no way you are okay. It’s just like what Vanessa said, right now is the critical moment that will be the turning point. That’s why, keep standing firm. We are with you.」

「……Yes. Thank you Kousuke. Also Vanessa too. I was saying selfish things to be able to come along with you all, so I

won’t run away with my tail between my legs in the middle of it.

There wasn’t any change with the gloom in her smile, but the strength dwelling in her eyes wasn’t withering. Kousuke nodded at Emily before quietly peeking outside through the window.

Outside was the cloudy sky spreading, looking as though rain might pour at any moment. While thinking that the sky currently was like Emily’s heart, Kousuke focused his mind on the operation that was currently unfolding.

After destroying all the data and drugs of Berserk they found in Gamma Pharmaceutical, Kousuke and others scrutinized the flash drive they confiscated from Kaysis once more. Inside that flash drive, the data listed the multiple research facilities where Berserk’s data was transferred to.

Most of them were research facilities inside a corporation that was unrelated to typical medicine manufacture, but there were several places among them that couldn’t be ignored. Those places were dams or water purification plants. Every one of those places were facilities that were related to Hydra in some kind of shape, and it seemed there was also a research facility inside them.

It was a terrifying story after they knew about Kaysis’s plan.

Naturally, for the security bureau, it was urgent to suppress those irrigation-related facilities. An improved version of Berserk still didn’t exist, but in the small chance that the existing Berserk was spilled, it would create a tragedy that would be unbearable to witness.

And so, because the number of facilities was a lot, it was insufficient with just the manpower of the security bureau.

They also cooperated with the army, and currently, a simultaneous suppression operation was unfolding toward those multiple research facilities.

「O, oi, Paradis. Don’t go further than that. Even like this, he is more or less a precious fighting strength. We really aren’t planning to lose, but the opponent is an army of berserkers. We have prepared the best equipment, but it’s still an unfavorable comparison compared to the army.」

「Muh. I can only drawback if Captain Pays tells me that. Mr. K, you narrowly escaped death.」

「U, uu. Is there, any girl that will be gentle to me somewhere in this world……」

Allen broke down crying as though he had been assaulted by a hoodlum. Gazes of sympathy were focused on him. Bernard was sighing deeply toward that state of Allen’s before he moved his gaze toward Kousuke.

Inside Kaysis’s flash drive included the list of the many people that were transferred to the research facilities. There were many people who were unrelated to the research work in it……there was no way they wouldn’t understand what the meaning of that was. Most likely, they were for human experiments and in addition, to be put around as *senseless fighting strength.*

A group of berserkers that would continue to fight without knowing pain and fear, and they would recover instantly as long as their head wasn’t destroyed……putting it bluntly, this was completely outside of the security bureau’s domain. This was obviously a scene where the army should move out.

But, it was undesirable for both Chief Magdanese and also Kousuke to have Kousuke’s true identity be exposed to a

group that didn’t belong under the security bureau. Therefore, the special forces of the army were heading to other facilities, but the facility that they were currently heading toward had to be dealt with somehow with only the special force of the security bureau and Kousuke and co.

Bernard had the resolve. He wouldn’t hesitate to offer his life anytime if it was for the country’s safety. But, even so, he couldn’t avoid having his hand get sweaty. He was planning to be meticulous in putting up countermeasures and vigilance, but depending on the situation, there was also the possibility that he would have to shoot his comrade that had turned into a berserker.

Despite the fact that he was a veteran leader of the assault section and someone that was appointed as the captain of the special force, it still couldn’t be helped that he would unconsciously send a gaze of expectation and prayer toward the being(Kousuke) that wielded supernatural power.

Perhaps noticing the gaze of Bernard, Kousuke, who was gazing outside through a small window, suddenly returned his gaze and looked at Bernard.

“What’s the matter, captain-san?”

Bernard reflexively smiled wryly seeing that light attitude where he couldn’t feel any particular fervor from it.

“Nothing, I just think that you are really calm there. I think there is nothing as terrifying as you as an enemy, but when I think that you are fighting together with us as an ally, there is nothing as reliable as this.”

“Well, even though you said that they are lying in wait for us, they are just a muscle-brain group after all. I feel regretful for the people who were simply tricked and turned

into berserkers; but based on the data, it seems that the majority is underworld people, so I don’t feel that much guilt. They also have a clear weak point. Even if it’s just captain-san and others, I think if you fight calmly, you will manage it somehow you know?

You are saying that really lightly. It’s like you are a warrior that has gone through much more bloodshed than even me. Do you have experience fighting similar things like this?

Bernard’s wry smile was increasingly getting deeper from hearing Kousuke’s light tone. He suddenly asked something like that. The other squad members were directing their gazes at Kousuke with deep curiosity. It seemed that they were thinking that it might be a reference for the battle after this depending on the situation. But more than half of that interest was just out of curiosity though.

Kousuke returned a wry smile at Bernard’s question. When Emily and Vanessa were also directing a gaze of deep interest to Kousuke, Kousuke answered while getting a faraway look.

Well, I actually have, if it’s a battle against warriors of god. Although, those guys weren’t cute bunches like these berserkers.

Ber, berserkers are cute?

That’s right. Their face was super beautiful, but their fighting ability was bad news on top of bad news. They were moving so fast they didn’t even leave behind afterimages, flying freely in the sky, disintegrated everything while ignoring something like defensive power, they neutralized all attacks using twin swords and wings; furthermore, they were gushing out like cockroaches……I made do somehow by dealing one hit kills from behind using invisibility, but if I

fought them right from the front, honestly, whether I can survive or not is……yep, thinking back, it’s a miracle we could survive.」

「「「「「……」」」」」

The soldiers, including Bernard, turned wordless hearing Kousuke’s reminiscence that was said with a bitter smile. Inside their heart, all of them were fiercely retorting「What is that joke-like existence!? It’s a joke, right? Right?」, but no one said it out loud.

At the same time, a faint confidence「Compared to that, we can win can’t we?」was welling up inside them. Unexpectedly, it seemed that their morale was raised from the question of Bernard who was wondering how to encourage his squad.

「We will arrive at the point soon! Start preparing!」

The helicopter pilot gave his report. Bernard nodded to that and gave out instructions to the troops. Emily’s and Vanessa’s expressions were containing nervousness.

The place where they would land at was a lumber storehouse that was distanced slightly away from the water purification plant. The water purification plant was on a riverside that was surrounded by forest. It seemed that the research facility was jointly established with that water purification plant.

As for their plan, they would land at a lumber storehouse that was slightly away from the water purification plant, and from there they would advance through a land route and suppress the facility while the enemy wasn’t aware of their presence. The biggest point was to raid them with full

secrecy and make the related research facility not realize the attack.

They would silently and swiftly suppress the area without even giving the enemy a chance to activate「Berserk」. That was their greatest objective ideally.

They would attempt to land at a vacant lot that was a temporary storage site for lumber that was lumbered from the forest; then they would approach the water purification plant from an angle that was on the completely opposite side. Even if they couldn’t land, there would be no problem if the helicopter descended down to a height where they could drop down using rope.

But, it seemed that the matter couldn’t progress that easily……

「-, wait a second pilot-san! There are people inside the forest! There are more than ten!」

「Wha-. Don’t tell me」

Kousuke threw a warning at the pilot who was making the helicopter descend for the landing. Bernard rushed toward the cockpit and Kousuke’s side.

「Mister Abyssgate. You don’t think those people are workers of the lumber mill?」

「It’s Kousuke. Certainly, there is a possibility that they are lumber mill workers. But, even though a helicopter is approaching, they are moving inside the forest *as though to surround the lumber mill*……do you think that lumber mill workers would surround the landing point when they see a helicopter?」

「……I see. I don’t want to see that kind of woodcutter.」

Bernard’s expression turned bitter from the information he was given. Obviously, the enemy was on guard against an approach from the lumber mill and had placed their personnel here. Inside the list, there were also people who were formerly police or members of a violent organization. Every single one of them was a criminal that had dirtied their hands thickly in crime and backed into a corner. They were useful resources to be ordered to act like this.

Most likely they themselves didn’t even imagine that they could be changed into monsters. However, they were undoubtedly lured by money and told to eliminate the approaching enemy.

「Most likely they have reported our approach too……」

「That’s likely. The plan to silently suppress them is meaningless already now.」

「Aa, we can only assault them hard.」

When the grim-faced Bernard instructed the pilot, the pilot made the helicopter climb back up to head directly toward the water purification plant. The next moment, one of the soldiers who was looking at the situation below from a window made a report that sounded like a shout.

「Missile-! Evade!」

「-, Bastard-」

The pilot cursed while tilting the helicopter greatly to the side. Emily screamed from the radical motion while a portable surface-to-air missile was flying out from inside the forest and approaching them in a straight line. The pilot’s

reaction was splendid, but in the end, it was doubtful whether they would be able to evade or not.

The color of resolution dyed the face of Bernard and the troops, in the middle of that, however.

「——”Black Vortex”」

The moment Kousuke muttered those words with one of his hands on the floor, the helicopter lowered its altitude drastically with a jerk. It was unnatural, as though something grasped it from below and dragged it down.

——Gravity magic “Black Vortex”

It was the gravitational field generation magic that Kousuke specialized the most in. If a gravitational field was generated at the selected spot, then he could stand on the ceiling or perform pseudo flight in the sky by “falling”. It was a technique that could be said as the basic of the basics of gravitation magic, a magic that could be used without a chant right from the start by someone like Yue.

Due to the gravitational field that was suddenly generated, the helicopter received a gravity that was several times the norm, and it descended down drastically. At that moment, the missile was passing by above the helicopter.

「Wha, what!? Just now, what happened!?」

The pilot raised a bewildered voice, but surely it was the group on the ground that was looking at the situation who wanted to say that. After all, the helicopter shifted lower with a jerk just before the missile hit, and it was just in the middle of swiveling widely. That maneuver could only be considered as abnormal.

□I won’t let you fire that for the second time.□

Kousuke unraveled the gravitational field and took a glance at the pilot who was recovering control over the helicopter while he muttered so with his hand forming a seal. He formed a seal even though it had no meaning!

Right after that, with a *poof* a clone body of Kousuke popped up outside the cockpit screen. The clone could be called out within a radius of three meters with the real body as the center, so it was possible to perform a pseudo wall slip by using that.

The pilot was busy screaming from seeing a person materializing outside the window. The soldiers also went□It, it came ouutt!□; they were screaming as though they had encountered a ghost. It seemed that multiple Kousukes had become a considerable trauma for them.

The existence that was barely Kousuke silently put on a pair of sunglasses outside the window, and then he leapt down while deploying twelve kunai around him like satellites. The next moment,

□I won’t ask for forgiveness. Die while resenting me as much as you want. ——”Zekkou Senjin – Hikuusen”□(TN: Hikuusen = Flying Devouring Flash)

The twelve kunai floating around Kousuke flew out all at once. Each of them was heading to a different target like a streak of light. It went without saying what their targets were.

Including the person who somehow recovered from the shock of witnessing the abnormal maneuver of the helicopter and now was in the middle of preparing the second shot, all the latent berserkers lurking inside the

forest immediately got the crown of their heads pierced in unison and breathed their last.

Kousuke stood midair with black ripples spreading out from below him while making the floating kunai flying freely. Bernard gave a lukewarm gaze at the pilot who was flustered from seeing such a sight while giving him instruction to haste toward the water purification plant.

The pilot cursed「What the hell this is, shit」in a small voice; however, he still controlled the helicopter without faltering, as fitting for a veteran pilot.

Before long, they could see an open space. The water purification plant and adjacent white building that at a glance was unclear what its purpose was, were coming into view. They could also see the water supply facility further downstream a slight distance away. The whole water purification plant was surrounded by two layers of fences with barbed wire on top of them. It seemed that traveling using a helicopter was also taken into account from the start as they caught sight of a large open space and a heliport.

「Chih. They had called in just as expected. They are coming one after another. ……Doesn’t seem like they are normal security, huh.」

Using a pair of binoculars, Bernard saw a great number of people coming out in groups from the adjacent building toward the open space that was in front of the water purification plant. His face frowned. Most of the people didn’t look like honest people, they were people with an air about them that was obviously thuggish at a glance, but among them, there were also the figures of slim young men, females, and also old men.

「Oi oi, you mean all those people are going to get turned into monsters? What now Captain Pays? If we descend to an altitude where you can drop down using rope, we are going to get shot down if we are hit by a rock that is thrown by a berserker's power you know?」

「Can't be helped. We can only use sniping or grenades from a slight distance away to decrease their number as much as……」

The heliport was already crowded with latent berserkers. The pilot's had a point with his worry, so Bernard decided their tactic with a bitter expression. It was at that timing that Kousuke told them to wait.

「Captain-san. I'll go there. Please open the hatch when we arrive above them. I'll secure the landing zone.」

「Don't tell me, you are going there alone? The opponent is a monster group that can only be killed by destroying their brain you know?」

「Yes. But, sniping won't work unless you go through the trouble of making a headshot from a flying helicopter while it's uncertain if grenades can destroy their brain reliably, even if it can blow them away. The more time passes, the more the berserkers will come out one after another, and we won't be able to take control. There is also the possibility that the crucial targets will run away during that time.」

「That's……certainly, it's just as you say. That was why we decided to land at the lumber mill five kilometers away from here so that the enemy won't notice us.」

Bernard scratched his head roughly. They got their start spoiled right from the very beginning, and now to make up for that they would make Kousuke, who originally should be

an unrelated person with this case, to clear up the problem. Surely, this matter was something shameful for him as a member of the security bureau’s assault section.

Kousuke, who seemed to see through that sentiment of Bernard’s, clapped on his shoulder thinking that it was unexpected.

「Please don’t think that I’m unrelated or anything. Rather, this is *my* battle. I’ll eliminate those who stand in Emily’s way, protect her, and lead her to wherever her hand is reaching at. Rather, it’s captain-san and the others who are our cooperator here.」

「Mister Abyssgate……」

「It’s Kousuke. Well, that’s how it is, so everyone, please give me *covering fire*, okay? Aa, also just to make sure, I’m Kousuke.」

The words of Kousuke that were said with a fearless smile naturally caused Emily’s eyes to grow moist from feeling moved while Vanessa was making a triumphant look, for some reason. And then, because the soldiers knew about Kousuke’s monstrous power, they felt cheered up and a sense of trust in their hearts.

All of them saluted with a crisp expression and responded to Kousuke’s instruction.

「「「「「YES-, ABYSSGATE-!!」」」」」

「That’s why-, I told you already that I’m Kousuke-!! Is this intentional!? You are doing this intentionally!?」

「Mister Abyssgate-! We are going to arrive above them before long! It’s really okay that I don’t lower the altitude, is

it!?」

「Aargh-, pilot! So you too-! The altitude is fine as it is, damn it all-!」

「Abyss! Those guys are starting to turn berserk!」

「Captaiiin! What's with that friendly call name! You want me to punish you with compulsory rope-less bungee jump!? There are about twenty berserkers there huh, son of a bitch!」

「Abyssgate-san! I'm opening the hatch! Good luck!」

「Thank you for the perfect salute! But I'll punch you later! Then, I'll go become the vanguard now!」

「Come, all of you! Fix your eyes without blinking! This is the descent of Abyssgate-sama!」

「Danessa. I'll turn you into a lovely villager later you bastaaard! Prepare yourself!」

「Abys――Kousuke-. Do your best!」

「Oi oi oi oi, Emily-chan. You almost called me Abyssgate just now, didn't you!? What's the meaning of this!? That's quite shocking, though!?」

Even while making fierce retorts, Kousuke leaned out his body from the opened hatch with his head turning toward Emily. Emily was averting her eyes toward the direction of the day after tomorrow. It seemed that she had plainly gotten carried away by the soldiers saying Abyssgate on and on.

But in the next moment, the helicopter tilted greatly. It seemed that one of the berserkers had thrown a block with a force equivalent to a cannon shooting, and the pilot took emergency evasion.

As a result,

「Aa」

Kousuke whose guard was down with his head turned toward Emily left behind that kind of stupid voice and got thrown out of the hatch. The troops went「Aa」in unison while staring at Kousuke who was getting smaller.

「Ko, KOUSUKEEEEEE-」

While Emily's voice was echoing, Kousuke was freefalling face-up while his shoulders skillfully dropped in dejection. To fall like this from the helicopter by accident was really a sloppy way to start a fight.

「Well, I'm this kind of character after all. Surely.」

Kousuke muttered that with a sigh, and then with a twirl he rotated midair and looked down to the ground. There, berserkers, who were already nearly twenty in number, roared while waiting impatiently for the prey.

With those terrifying monsters below, Kousuke took out a pair of sunglasses from his breast pocket and calmly put it on. Right after that, the corner of his lips grinned widely. That was the mark of the descent of the abyss.

「Good work with the welcome. As thanks, I'll present you with a magnificent headhunt!」

He kicked on the air. One of the berserkers waiting on the ground reflexively waved up his hand around like a child seeing the falling prey suddenly changing direction.

Lord Abyssgate shifted his landing point. It wasn’t because he wanted to avoid getting surrounded by berserkers. Rather, it was the opposite. He flew toward the middle of a spot with the highest concentration of berserkers without hesitation.

And then, just before the landing, *shan-* a clear sound resounded while two short swords were drawn out; his body rotated like a spinning top. Jet black sword flashes that could be mistaken as a spiral gale was blowing violently, caressing the thick neck of the berserkers that looked like a log.

step While a light landing sound that was unthinkable when coming from a high-altitude descent resounded, the lord stayed unmoving in a chuuni pose. He was kneeling on one knee, the two short swords were held in a reverse grip, one in the front and the other one in the back.

In the next moment, four sounds *goto-* resounded from behind the four berserkers surrounding the lord. Those sounds unmistakably came from the neck of the berserkers. Looking at them again, all the four berserkers had cleanly lost everything above their neck. The wounds might’ve been burned or frozen because no blood spurted out.

The terrifying monsters lost their heads that were their only weak point. It was done so easily, as though the berserkers were toys that had interchangeable heads. *dou-* They fell down while raising such a noise.

The lord stood up quietly. Of course, he didn’t forget to sharply push up his sunglasses with one hand while making a cool pose of half his body leaning to the back. Seeing the

lord like that, the berserkers growled while throwing their killing intent.

The lord took it in stride while going□fuh□before he introduced himself.

□A battle is killing each other with strength and will. You all who are lacking will, you won’t be able to stop this abyss. Now, let’s pull down the curtain. ——Kousuke E Abyssgate, has arrived!!□

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I caught a cold……

When I went to buy cold medicine, my bicycle’s wheel got punctured……

When I was ironing my suit, I noticed that a part was torn……

It couldn’t be helped, so I drank the cold medicine and Nico Douga.

John Wick’s Udonge is super cute……

Shootout Dream and Battle of Koumakan are lovely.

The next update is planned for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 216

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Wai-, You Raised Too Many Flags!

Part 1

The bodies of the berserkers who were surrounding a figure from four directions were slowly collapsing like a blooming flower.

The figure that appeared from behind the tough meat wall that lost their head was the lord whose body was wrapped in a black outfit with two jet black short swords held in reverse grip. The one-lens type sunglasses was reflecting light even under the cloudy sky; it glittered with a sparkle. Surely, it was an optional feature.

「GAAAAAAAAAAH!!!」

It was a dissonant sound of many overlapping roars. The roars of the berserkers shook the air.

Lord Abyssgate, who was cool at any time with his body kneeling on one knee and his short swords readied to the front and back, wasn’t perturbed by that shriek that stimulated human fear. He stood up silently while putting away one short sword.

And then, he took a half-body stance toward the berserkers who were tightening their encirclement and thrust one hand forward; his palm was facing up——*kui kui* he moved his fingertip. It was as though he was telling them ‘come at me’.

「Let me tell you this, this lord isn’t so soft that the like of mindless beasts can possibly win.」

It was as though that whisper became the signal because the berserkers roared and began charging from three directions. The vibration of their steps made it feel like the ground was shaking. Normal people would surely lose strength from their waist and feel their groin going cold from feeling that pressure. Just like Emily-chan the other day. Just like Emily-chan!

In contrast, the lord――vanished.

It happened in an instant. The berserkers that came from three directions were blown away all at once. They went back down the path they just advanced through with a fierce momentum as though they had just been hit by a dump truck. Naturally, the berserkers approaching from behind also got grandiosely dragged into it.

At the spot where the berserkers were just at, there was the lord in an unmoving pose――three of them.

「Abyss-style Assassination Martial Art – Phantom Attack Form――”Roukyouka”」(TN: Haze Frenzy Flower)

It seemed the lord was pleased with the naming of the Abyss-style. He looked pleased that he could unveil the numerous naming (centered on existing techniques, especially the martial art moves that weren’t named before this) he had thought up of through the whole night last night. The smile on his mouth indicated that.

By the way, what he did was only make clone bodies and simultaneously blew away the enemies that were coming from the three directions using palm heel. The ability of the lord’s lovely fingerless glove produced unrealistic power that could make huge bodies in the middle of charging forward to double back. Of course, the lord properly transmitted the

impact to the brain, so he didn’t fail at dealing the fatal blow.

□aAAAAAAAAA-!!□

Three berserkers swung down their stout arms like a hammer from behind the three lords. In the next moment, the clones easily vanished along with a comical sound. The attack from two berserkers ended up striking the ground in vain.

And then, the true body of the lord——

The enlarged fist the berserker was attacking with was already larger than the lord’s head. That fist hid the figure of the lord and without stopping it plummeted toward the ground without compromise.

That was how it looked, but there weren’t any remains of the lord in the small crater. The lord that was supposed to be the real body shouldn’t be vanishing like a phantom. The berserker who lost his target moved his bloodshot eyes everywhere in search of the target.

□If you lost your reasoning power, then at least sense using instinct.□

□-□

A voice came. From below the berserker.

The berserker looked down at his own feet in shock. His figure that was peering at his own feet with his body leaning forward looked as though he was bowing. He looked really comical acting like that with his large build and the mad atmosphere he was giving off.

A short sword that stretched out from the ground, as though it had been growing there all along, attacked the berserker that was peering at his own feet. The short sword flew straight at the berserker’s head, pierced the eye of the berserker, destroyed his brain, split the skull, and flew out from the back of his head.

Light left the eyes of the berserker that received the lethal attack as his body tilted unsteadily, and at the same time, the other hand that was reaching out, similar to the short sword, grasped at the berserker’s hair and pulled it into the ground.

Using that recoil, the lord flew out beside the berserker that was buried in the ground, making it look like its upper body was prostrating. Of course, the lord flew out in the pose of a wild eagle!

「GAAAAAAAH」

The approaching berserker leapt at the lord in midair. Using their charging momentum, they threw their body into the air like a cannonball to shoot down the lord.

「How unfortunate. That’s an illusion.」

The body of the berserker passed through the lord’s body without hindrance. The one jumping was the clone body of the lord, which didn’t have any substance.

Then, where was the real body?

Of course, the lord was normally right beside it with his painfully thin presence. Even now, he was closely nestling beside the berserker-san. However,

□Be embraced by the dark hellfire――”Katon – Enryuuga(Annihilating all creation – The abyss’s world-destroying conflagration)”□(TN: Fire Escape – Flame Dragon Fang)

von A unique sound resounded. The true shape of that sound was by the body of the lord that was dancing midair beside the berserker, the flaming short sword that appeared in the lord’s hand without anyone noticing――it was the sound of “Heaven Destroying Sword of Lightning Flame” cutting through the wind.

―― Katon – Enryuuga(Annihilating all creation – The abyss’s world-destroying conflagration)

The highest class of fire elemental magic “Azure Sky”――that magic was in a compressed state enveloping the short sword. The sword that was clad in the super-hot blue fire cut and melted the target. It made a unique sound *von* when it was swung. Because it was a sword that was filled with magic power, it could repel magic attacks.

Yes, it was a peerless sword that melted and cut every obstacle while leaving a beautiful trail of light behind in midair――so to speak, it was a lig○ saber!

When this ability was first unveiled, it went without saying how the creator and the lord wordlessly exchanged high-fives. And then, unable to contain themselves, the two did make-believe of a certain knight. It was a little bit of a black history for the two of them when they received a lukewarm gaze from the two rabbit-ears witnessing their act.

The berserker whose neck was melted and cut by the light sword rolled on the ground right after. Berserkers were attacking the landing lord one after another.

□It’s hard to move with that large body, right? I’ll make it lighter for you――”Demolish Yoke”□

The lord made a sonorous finger snap. Right after that, the surrounding berserkers were blown away into the sky.

――Gravity magic “Demolish Yoke”

The magic that Miledy Raisen once used at the legendary decisive battle, a magic that forcefully liberated the target from the wedge of gravity. The berserkers who lost the shackle of gravity were thrown into the air helplessly due to a reason that couldn’t be resolved using physical strength.

And then, if someone looked far above the sky, there were two lords standing back to back in bilateral symmetry, as though looking at the mirror reflection. They both were taking a stance with half their body shifted to the back, and both of them were holding kunai between their five fingers while displaying a throwing stance.

□□Thy art judged by the dark god――”Juuton – Saika no Seitsui(Inescapable Judgment of Abyss)”□□(TN: Gravity Escape – Star Fall of Calamity Judgment)

What was launched was a downpour of kunai that multiplied in weight until they reached several tons.

The dozens of berserkers became helpless due to the restriction that was zero gravity in midair. The only thing that they could do was to use their hands instinctually to cover their head. Even so, perhaps they could possibly defend using those thick arms that looked like logs.

Although, in the first place, Juuton – Saika no Seitsui(Inescapable Judgment of Abyss) *wasn’t a technique for piercing* the target. This was an attack that was labeled

as judgment. And then, from time to time, judgment was carried on *by reaping the head.*

The result,

"At least have a peaceful life in the next world."

Surrounding the lord on the ground, a sudden squall poured down on the berserkers, where their heads were separated from their torsos like a joke.

The cause was one thing. The rain of kunai was something to reap the head from the beginning. The super heavy kunai falling to the ground had super-fine steel string tied to each other. Yes, so to speak, the steel string was like a guillotine falling down from the sky.

White smoke was rising from here and there. The ability of "Berserk" was trying to keep the berserkers alive by repeating super-regeneration, but there was no way it could regenerate the whole body from the head, and it was also impossible to regenerate the brain from the torso. Before long the bodies reached their limit and withered as though in resignation.

The rising white smoke looked like the soul of the people that were liberated from the "Berserk" transformation.

The lord standing in the middle of the white smoke shifted his sunglasses slightly and offered a silent prayer to the white smoke, and then his eyes narrowed quietly toward the remaining berserkers.

Around him were floating kunai that were connected to each other with steel string. *step* The two clones landed down on both sides of the lord. The lord swung the short sword clad in azure flame while it made a *von* sound, and then

the clones also started swinging similar swords of azure flame.

“Now then, let’s end this quickly. ……This futile fighting.”

The lord muttered, and at the same time, his presence got drastically thinner. Even though he was right in front of them, the berserkers looked around in puzzlement.

Right after that, the lord rushed out.

Five minutes.

That was the amount of time the mindless beasts who were given the name of the legendary mad warrior were able to survive in front of the abyss lord.

Part 2

……Impossible. What the hell is that……just what in the world is happening……

A man’s voice that sounded shaken was resounding in a dim monitor room located in the corner of the research facility. What that person clad in a lab coat looking like a researcher was looking fixedly at with an intense concentration was the image from the security camera that was facing toward the heliport.

It had been anticipated that someday the security bureau, or the army, would come to assault this place; therefore, the closest place that a helicopter could land at and the path that could be passed through by car were all monitored. When a communication came from the lumber mill, the people here only thought Aa, they are coming here really early, huh.

As long as they had groups of berserkers, they didn’t need to fear most armed groups. It wasn’t like they needed to hold the place and carry out do-or-die resistance. The berserker group was simply for buying time. While the attacker was spending their time dealing with the monsters, they would carry the research data and escape using the prepared method. After that, they would continue research at another research facility.

If they kept repeating that method later, then they wouldn’t be able to be captured that easily. That was what they were thinking.

Yet despite so,

「Impossible. This is impossible-. Just what is that brat-. This is ridiculous! It’s like a poorly made American comic-. Who can accept that such a thing exists in reality-」

「……Ingram.」

Beside the man, an armed man with an air that seemed used to battle punched down on the desk loudly while shouting.

The armed man——his name was Weiss Ingram. He was a guard that Kaysis put in charge of for the security for this research facility. Narcotic smuggling, human trafficking, inducing war, arms trade, and so on, he was a leader of a mercenary group that would do anything as long as it produced him money.

Weiss had a large scar running from his cheek to his right ear. His face was distorting as though that scar was twitching while he gave some kind of instruction to his subordinate through a wireless device. And then, his gaze turned toward the man in the lab coat.

「Oi, what the hell are you doing staring idly like that? Finish your preparation to skedaddle right away. I don’t wanna die fighting that kind of incomprehensible American comic bastard here. We are going to use all the remaining berserkers and “that” to buy time. We are going to leave this place in five minutes.」

「A, aa, got it. No, wait a second. You are going to use “that” too?」

「Aa? Isn’t that obvious? We cannot bring that kind of thing with us anyway. We only need the data of the result of the

experiment; there won’t be any problem releasing that to send it to those guys.」

「That’s……certainly, you are right. Got it, I’ll prepare――」

The man in the lab coat was nodding while he was going to say「I’ll prepare right away」, but his words stopped in the middle. Weiss turned dubious, and his gaze moved to the man, where he saw the man in the lab coat had his gaze fixed on the monitor.

In the monitor was reflected the picture of the helicopter landing on the heliport that had been safely secured, the troops of the security bureau’s special force quickly getting down from the helicopter, and then a girl with blonde hair tied into a side-tail getting down with the help from the man who annihilated the berserker group using supernatural skills.

The man in the lab coat opened his eyes wide while muttering「Why, in this place……」. Weiss got irritated seeing the man in the lab coat acting like that and called「Oi-」with a rough voice. The man in the lab coat seemed to come to his senses from that, and with a ‘hah’ he took his gaze off the monitor and shook his head once before saying「I’ll prepare myself」while exiting the room.

Weiss’s gaze returned to the monitor, and he narrowed his eyes, staring at the girl who, for some reason, seemed to embrace the young man, or rather, she somehow looked like she was clinging to the young man.

「A girl on the battlefield, huh. Well, she is wearing a lab coat, which might mean that she is someone like that.」

Weiss pondered something before a wide grin that looked disgusting appeared on his face. He then followed after the

man in the lab coat and exited the room. He did that while giving instructions to his subordinate through a wireless device.

Part 3

The research facility had a white outer wall. Alpha squad was lining up along that wall in an orderly formation. Bernard, who was in the lead, had his gaze fixed on the door that his subordinate was trying to break.

The other squads, Beta squad and Gamma squad, were trying to infiltrate from other entrances. Each of those squads was accompanied by a clone of Kousuke.

Kousuke was vigilantly sensing his surroundings at the back of that formation while being aware of Emily who kept glancing at him with a complicated look.

「……Emily. I'm really not bothered, so Emily too don't get bothered by it. Rather than that, focus your mind for now. Even though we are protecting you, that doesn't mean it's okay for you to not be careful, okay?」

「Ye, yes. I'm sorry Kousuke.」

Actually, Emily thought that because she almost called Kousuke as Abyssgate just before he was about to jump from the helicopter, Kousuke accidentally fell out of the helicopter. Because of that, she was a little down thinking that she had held the other back right away from the beginning.

Emily apologized right away when she got down from the helicopter, but Kousuke, who had offhand knowledge that it was the easiest to get aimed at the moment when a

helicopter was taking off or landing, was being busy acting vigilant toward the surrounding, so he only replied「Aa, yeah, it’s fine」that sounded really curt.

Of course, he also really didn’t mind, so his words sounded light coupled with that factor too, but from Emily’s point of view, she felt that Kousuke’s words had a different nuance. So to speak, for her it sounded like「Emily is the same as the other guys, huh? Well, it doesn’t really matter though.」.

As a result, Emily leapt at Kousuke. Kousuke was startled, and he drew back, but Emily kept clinging to him while yelling things like「You are misunderstanding Kousuke! The bad one is the idiot soldiers of the security bureau! I just got unconsciously carried away by them, I actually wanted to call you by your name properly! Please, believe me, Kousuke!」

On site of a recent battle where a curb stomp had just been performed, in a situation where they were surrounded by the special force troops around them, furthermore, in a time where they were going to march into the enemy’s base after this, Emily-chan clung while imploring「Don’t hate me!」unashamedly. It seemed that her nerves had unexpectedly become thick and sturdy through the case this time.

「Oi, Aby. We are going to charge in. Keep your flirting with your girlfriend for later.」

Bernard warned with an exasperated voice seeing the love comedy of the two that was completely lacking in tension (seen from the side) just before they broke in.

「Oi, captain-san. The way you call me got even friendlier huh. If you want to get along with me that much, it’s fine to call me Kousuke you know?」

「Is that so? Then you can also call me by my name you know, Aby.」

「……I'm absolutely not going to.」

The ignoring phenomenon occurred really naturally. It wasn't like it was caused because of sarcasm, ill will, or teasing. In fact, Bernard calling Kousuke as Aby with so much naturalness that it felt like a leaf that would fly if it was blown by the wind.

Beside Kousuke who was making a sour look, Emily, who was called as "girlfriend", had red cheeks while her mouth was smiling broadly. She was also throwing a gaze that was mixed with slight jealousy to Bernard who called Kousuke with the pet name Aby even though it was Kousuke's alias. She was busy with various things.

「……How envious. How jealous. Flirting with a cute girl in this kind of situation……damn Abyssgate.」

「Who do you think you are addressing without any honorifics just now? I'm going to get rid of you while dressing it up as an accident you know?」

Allen had a handkerchief that he took out from somewhere and bit on it while going 'mukii!'. It seemed that he was considerably broken. In response to such an Allen, Vanessa was giving a warning with a voice that didn't sound like a joke……as for her, surely, she was already at a point of no return.

The soldiers, including the captain, who were emitting nervousness from preparing themselves with the possibility that they themselves might get infected with「Berserk」exchanged looks at each other wry smiles seeing the exchanges of Kousuke and co.

「Captain, we can proceed.」

Bernard received the report from the soldier that succeeded in unlocking the door and used his radio. Both Beta squad and Gamma squad also returned affirmative signals for their breaking-in preparation.

Bernard started counting. Inside the tightly tense atmosphere, the count――turned to zero.

「GO-!」

The soldiers were invading the facility with a fluentness akin to flowing water starting from Bernard’s signal.

Emily was desperately following in the middle of the soldiers while being surrounded from three directions by Kousuke, Vanessa, and also Allen.

The safety confirmation「Clear」reported back through the radio from each squad.

The corridor was dim. It seemed that the place was only installed with fluorescence lamps for emergency use. The existence of Kousuke and co was known from the battle on the helicopter landing pad. Therefore, the facility personnel must have already turned off the facility’s function and started to escape.

The squad’s objective ranged from capturing to erasing the essential personnel that were important even among the staffs of this facility. And then, their most important duty was to not let the water supply be polluted by「Berserk」no matter what happened. There wouldn’t be any advantage for the enemy to spill the current version of「Berserk」, but the possibility of what these cornered people might do……it couldn’t be viewed optimistically.

Therefore, now that they had been detected, they had to suppress the whole facility swiftly. The soldiers were confirming their current position with a device in hand while advancing without hesitation inside the ominous facility without any human presence.

They could see the end of the corridor ahead. It seemed that the path became a T-junction there.

It was at that time,

「Enemy-. At the front, they’re armed!」

「Spread out!」

Kousuke’s yell reverberated. Bernard gave out instructions swiftly in a flash. The soldiers parted to the left and right in a second and took cover behind pillars or room entrances. Kousuke also hugged Emily and dived behind a pillar.

Almost at the same time as that, *dadadadadada-* consecutive gunshots were reverberating. Muzzle flashes blinked in the corridor ahead, and in the next moment, impacts ran on the walls and pillars where Kousuke and others were hiding and smashed up the surface.

It seemed that it was an ambush by *humans.*

The reaction of the soldiers was also swift. They aimed toward the spot where the muzzle flashes were visible and began firing with polished accuracy.

「We cannot waste time in this kind of place! Jazz-, grenade!」

「Yes sir—!」

The soldier called Jazz pointed the grenade launcher attached under his rifle muzzle and fired deep into the corridor. Right after that, a heat wave blew through along with a fierce roaring sound.

「Go-, Go-, Go-!!」

Bernard’s command resounded while the wave of the explosion hadn’t ended yet. The soldiers were firing simultaneously while rushing deeper into the corridor. Their gun points were directed ahead at where the corridor was divided to the left and right. At that moment, they could see the figure of a man running away toward the corridor turn.

The following soldiers saw men collapsing on the ground; perhaps they were late to escape from the grenade explosion and crouched down. The men were groaning in pain, but right after that, they started to convulse. At that moment,

tan-tan-tan-

Gunshots echoed. The soldiers drilled the head of the men without hesitation.

「Clear」

「Clear」

The soldiers reported the confirmation of safety with calm voices. And then, as though nothing happened, the soldiers advanced forward once more with a flowing movement toward the direction where they saw men escaping to just before.

(……As expected, the real deal special force is amazing huh.)

Kousuke reflexively sent praise with a small voice. Vanessa beside him showed her affirmation with an expression that looked slightly proud.

(Naturally. They aren’t anything overwhelming like Kousuke-san, but the assault force of the security bureau is unmistakably elites. As long as their opponent isn’t a mass of absurdity, they wouldn’t fall behind that easily.)

As though to prove those words of Vanessa, Alpha squad, led by Bernard, was exterminating the armed groups lurking everywhere inside the facility to buy time, as though they were facing children. The squad kept advancing without stopping.

It seemed that the other squads were also the same from the report coming through the radio. There also wasn’t any report of someone being injured. Kousuke, who was sharing information through his clone bodies, also understood how his clone bodies didn’t really need to do anything, so he once again felt for real the strength of the special force.

While they were advancing like that, Kousuke and co arrived in a spacious room. According to Kaysis’s data that they had downloaded before, this room should be the main research room.

As though to show that, there were several types of machinery that seemed to be for research use, incomprehensible items left around on a desk, and several personal computers here and there.

「Captain-san.」

「Aa, I know.」

Kousuke called with a small voice, to which Bernard nodded. He already finished giving out hand signs and the troops also aimed their guns to cover all blind spots.

「Yoo yoo, ain’t this the great elites of the security bureau. Just what are you doing, standing around silently in this kind of place?」

The one who was saying such a thing with a joking mood was a frivolous man with a large scar on his cheek as his peculiarity, Weiss. Perhaps as the expression of his composure, he didn’t even touch the light machine gun hanging on his shoulder by a strap. Both his hands were raised up as though to show his surrender.

「……Weiss Ingram. I never thought that you were in this kind of place.」

Allen sighed with his gun pointed. When Vanessa asked with her gaze「Who?」, Allen said that he was an inhuman mercenary who some time ago was failed to be caught by Agent L from the JD Agency and then went missing after that.

Hearing that, Bernard’s motivation to leave the man alive turned zero, and he was about to give the erasure order in a snap.

「O, oi oi, wait a second. If you kill me, something disastrous will――」

「Fire-!」

Weiss was about to say something, but Bernard was merciless. He signaled the men to fire without compromise. Weiss jumped to the side without delay, and countless

bullets passed through the spot where he was just at a few moments ago.

Weiss hid behind a desk while cursing「This is why I hate the spoiled elites-」and sent instructions through his radio. The subordinates of Weiss who were hiding everywhere inside the room pulled their triggers toward the troops right away.

The troops immediately scattered to positions where they could cover each other and began firing back at every direction. Kousuke was also starting his half Abyssgate transformation in the off chance some stray bullet would go to Emily while suppressing the enemy force.

「Shit-. That Kaysis bastard. The pay is not worth it at all for something like this! Oi-, old man! Not yet!? We cannot hold on any longer here!」

「――」

Weiss threw an angry yell while firing back with his light machine gun. Right after that, a man was crawling out on all fours from the shadow of a desk located deeper in the room. It seemed that the man was crouching because he couldn’t move due to the intensity of the gunfight.

Weiss who saw that clicked his tongue and took out a smartphone from his breast pocket, and without hesitation, he pushed on one of the buttons lighting the screen. When he did that, a scream immediately surged.

「My bad. Die for my sake a bit.」

The button Weiss pushed was the detonator for the 「Berserk」that he made his subordinates drink.

Naturally, Weiss’s subordinates knew the true nature of the thing they were made to drink. They knew yet they still drank that kind of thing. If they were asked why they did it, then it wasn’t because of loyalty but because of fear. Simply because if they didn’t drink it, then they would be killed by their boss Weiss. That fear allowed them to take the drug even knowing the true identity of the drug.

Because in Weiss’s mind he didn’t think that he would be able to escape while leading all his subordinates, he made this inhumanly ruthless decision. He made everyone except his close aides and useful subordinates take the drug.

「Chih. All troops, concentrate on the berserkers! Don’t get hit by any residual splash!」

Bernard’s order was given, and at the same time, Kousuke began to deal with the berserkers. He didn’t neglect to guard Emily, but there were Vanessa and Allen beside her. It was Danessa-san who recently only showed her unfortunate side, but her strength was an authentic one.

After all, by herself, she protected Emily from the dozens of pursuers led by Kimberly while being isolated and helpless; she was a formidable fighter that could overcome even a berserker if it was a one-on-one with leeway to spare.

As for Allen, it went without saying that he was a murder specialist that could take on, at the same time, several berserkers that were the primary source of infection who had been dashed with the undiluted solution of「Berserk」. Even now, he wasn’t letting any enemy get nearby by means of martial arts that looked like Gun-Kata using two handguns resembling a certain demon king.

But, even so, in this kind of situation where they were surrounded by berserkers from all directions, and it was at a

range this close, it couldn’t help that the attention would be directed that way……

「Ah」

Emily unconsciously raised her voice. Ahead of her gaze, there was Weiss who was trying to get out of the room quickly where right now he was opening the door, and a man in a lab coat who got his collar grabbed by Weiss before he got thrown into the place behind the door.

Kousuke lopped off the head of a berserker, and then he was about to set forth to capture Weiss――but just before he could do that,

「Then, sayonara everyone. Please enjoy your welcoming party until the end no matter what.」

Weiss then pushed the smartphone button, and the solid door closed loudly.

It was unclear just what his reason for pushing the button was, but that reason was immediately turned clear.

「Guruuruuruuruu」

A low growling voice resounded between the gunshots.

「Captain-san! The door deeper inside!」

「-, oi oi, what’s that……」

Kousuke was pointing ahead. There, the door that was on the wall on the opposite side of the door Weiss and others went through was being opened before they knew it. And then, Bernard stiffened reflexively when he saw the thing coming out from there.

The thing coming out from there was a large body that might reach two meters in length——a beast. Its appearance looked like a cat. It had lean limbs and a tail swaying relaxedly. However, it had a large body that couldn’t be found anywhere on earth. Its eyes were bloodshot, and saliva was dripping down from its mouth.

From behind that beast, there were also things that weren’t cats, but they were also enlarged beasts that looked hungry without any sanity. There were dogs, mice, and also monkeys. Every one of them was literally a monster.

「I see. There is no reason to not use『Berserk』on animals. And this place is a research facility. It would be stranger instead if there were no animals for guinea pigs……」

Bernard muttered that with a disgusted expression. He then gave instructions to his subordinates, and they rearranged their formation. But, at the same time, there were angry yells resounding from the radio. It came from Beta squad and Gamma squad. It seemed that at their side they also encountered berserk animals.

Thanks to Kousuke’s clone, currently, there wasn’t any soldier who became unable to fight, but they didn’t seem to be in a situation where they could link up with each other soon.

「It can’t be helped. We don’t know how many of this things there are, but I’ll clear——」

「No, Aby. You go chase Ingram and others together with Doctor Grant.」

Kousuke who was in his Abyssgate transformation once more was about to take on the berserk animals——the Berserk Beasts. But Bernard stopped him.

Kousuke reflexively turned an expression of disbelief「Are you sane?」to Bernard. Bernard gave a glance to Kousuke before throwing a flashbang and tear-gas grenade. If they were animals, then even if they were turned mad, they might falter a bit in front of objects that intensely stimulated their sight and smell. That was Bernard's thinking but……

Unexpectedly, it seemed that his thinking was right on the mark, the Berserk Beasts didn't falter, but they leapt back greatly.

Bernard included that useful information into the tactic inside his head while he spoke to Kousuke using the time he bought.

「Both Ingram and that man he took away are both prey that cannot be allowed to escape. We don't know what kind of escape method they have prepared, on top of that, we cannot let them buy any more time. Besides, there won't be any meaning of you taking the girl here if they get away, right?」

Bernard said that with a smile. His gaze turned toward Emily who was desperately looking at the situation around even while she was turning small with both her hands holding her head.

It was exactly as Bernard said. The reason they picked this place from among the places that should be suppressed was for Emily's sake. Emily herself knew that she was asking for something selfish, but even so, she earnestly requested and arrived here. It wasn't for the sake of the world, or even for the sake of the security bureau. It was for the sake of Emily that he came here. It was none other than Kousuke who declared that.

Kousuke looked at Bernard once again. The berserkers around had mostly been dealt with by the soldiers, but even so, if they had to face the Berserk Beasts, then it would be a struggle between life and death for them.

But the gaze that Bernard returned to Kousuke contained not even a shred of hesitation or fear. He would give his all for the sake of doing what must be done. There was only the resolve as a professional in his gaze.

「I'll send my clones here quickly when they finish taking care of the guys in the other places. Don't be reckless and focus on buying time.」

「That's really reassuring. If it's just buying time, then it will be too simple that I might let my guard down unconsciously.」

Bernard smiled fearlessly. Kousuke also returned back a fearless smile while he helped Emily stand up.

「Bernard. You are a good guy.」

「You noticed it this late? You are unexpectedly slow huh, Aby.」

Kousuke and Bernard thrust their fist at each other. For some reason, Vanessa's eyes were sparkling at the exchange of manly smiles between the two, but they ignored it for now.

Kousuke pulled on Emily's hand and broke into a run right away. Vanessa and Allen were also following behind.

At the same time, the Berserk Beasts instinctually hate letting their prey get away more than feeling disgusted toward the tear gas, so they all rushed off toward the four.

「Don’t let them hinder Aby and the others-!」

The soldiers laid out a barrage following Bernard’s order. The Berserk Beasts were blown away to the side were unable to stop the charge of Kousuke and co.

Using that opening, Kousuke was able to reach the door where Weiss went into. Kousuke opened the door while he looked at Bernard and the soldiers who were facing the Berserk Beasts who had changed targets.

Seeing Kousuke and the others stop moving and looking here, Bernard yelled angrily.

「Don’t mind us, just go quickly-! Heh, no need to worry, we are going to catch up with you guys soon.」

「Wai-, stupid-! Just why did you say that just now!?」

The speech of Bernard that was said with a fearless smile caused Kousuke to make a retort. Just how could Bernard say that kind of lovely speech in this critical hour? There was no way Bernard, who wasn’t an otaku, was running a joke here, which made that speech sound excessively ominous.

But in a perfect form, Bernard added a more lovely flag as though he was being possessed in this critical hour.

「Aby! Let’s get some beer when this case is over!」

「Stop it already! In the battlefield,「When I go home~」type of speech is something that mustn’t be said the most!」

Of course, Kousuke’s words were ignored so naturally, it was unnatural as usual.

「Doctor Grant! There is one thing I want to say to you along with my subordinates if we can meet again later! Will you hear it then!?」

「Eh? Ye, yes! It's a promise!」

「That's why stop ittt! Emily too don't reply back! It's seriously not funny at allll!」

'As expected, perhaps it was better that I remain here.' Kousuke thought so, but right after that, one of the Berserk Beasts approached Kousuke and co. Because Allen pulled the other three through the door to the other side while saying「Please hurry!」, the beast didn't manage to get near.

The solid door was closed, and in the end, the sight of Bernard giving them a thumbs up with a nice smile was seared into their brain.

The door was dented then from the tackle of the Berserk Beast, and after that, the sound of gunshot resounded *gan gan gan*.

「Now, let' stop standing idly here and proceed!」

Vanessa and Emily stood up from Allen's words. Kousuke also stood up with a speechless expression.

Like that, Kousuke and co started running deeper into the corridor. Vanessa suddenly whispered.

「What a sorrowful affair.」

「You are annoying!」

Kousuke's retort exploded toward that extremely imprudent line. *bachikon* Vanessa's head was struck with such a

sound while Emily and Allen were bewildered at that incomprehensible act of the two. Kousuke then prayed.

□Bernard. I'll send help there as soon as possible so seriously, don't die.□

For some reason, the figure of Bernard giving a thumbs up with a nice smile couldn't vanish from Kousuke's mind.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I don't have any writing time at all with 7 days of continuous working, but this chapter made it in time somehow with just a little bit of lateness……but I'm sorry for the lateness.

Next chapter will be the climax.

The next update will be for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 217

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

The Snapping Abyss Lord

Kousuke and co dashed through the dim corridor that was only illuminated by emergency lamps.

They couldn’t see the figure of Weiss and the man in the lab coat they were pursuing, but there was no hesitation in the steps of Kousuke who was in the lead. He was advancing while his gaze was focusing on the ground of this complicated passage that seemed like an underground labyrinth. There weren’t any maps for this place, even in Kaysis’s data.

Kousuke was following the trail and presence of the escaping Weiss using the skill of the “assassin” vocation, [+Tracking]. He didn’t miss even the faintest trace that was even vaguer than mist, which a normal person wouldn’t be able to perceive. Putting aside Vanessa who was ecstatic, even Allen’s face was twitching for who knew how many times already from seeing that figure chasing after the prey accurately.

□□oOOOOOOO-□□

□Don’t mind them. Run!□

Berserkers appeared from the corner of the passage. The two berserkers were charging at them right from the front, causing the ground to vibrate. Allen and Vanessa spontaneously began to stop their feet to intercept, but

Kousuke accelerated faster instead and raised his voice. The two of them reflexively obeyed him.

Kousuke tensed his legs and put strength into them. He soundlessly accelerated and approached the wall. Emily and the others followed behind thinking that he was going to pass through from the side, but they soon knew that wasn’t his intention.

Kousuke put his foot on the wall and ran on its surface while his body was turning sideways. When he climbed up to the ceiling where his body became upside down, he kept running on the ceiling without pause. ——Skill “Shadow Dance”. It was Kousuke’s favorite skill.

「Hah」

Kousuke sprinted on the ceiling. The movement of the two berserkers, who were about to tackle them, halted for a moment after seeing the impossible position of their target. Kousuke rushed between the two.

While still upside down, a short sword flashed in a rotation like a whirling wind. A beam of light the color of the blue sky gently caressed the necks of the berserkers, melting and cutting without reservation. Shockwaves flew from the fingerless glove too as though it was only done as an extra, blowing the berserkers against the wall.

Kousuke landed lightly, and then he resumed running in the lead as though nothing happened.

The body of the berserkers convulsed in vain on the wall without any residual splash or without being an obstacle at all.

Even before reaching this far, there were berserkers and berserk beasts attacking them incessantly. Most likely, they were prepared by Weiss to hinder them, but they only came sporadically and couldn’t hope to stop Kousuke from his hunt.

Before long, Kousuke and the others ran into a steel door at the end of the passage. The width of the passage was quite wide, but there were so many large boxes and machinery parts cluttering the floor that if multiple people wanted to pass through, then they would need to line up in a single line.

「Vanessa-」

「Roger.」

When Kousuke called, Vanessa moved instantly in understanding. She hugged Emily who was at her side and hid behind a large machinery part. Allen also took cover smoothly after her.

A beat.

DA DA DA DA DA DA DA DA DA- A thunderous roar echoed. A machine gun in full auto spouted fire, and a great number of bullets scattered the packages filling the corridor. Kousuke smoothly evaded the flying bullets and threw a kunai.

「Kousuke-san. Your Vanessa is desiring to see the scene of cutting bullets with a katana.」

Vanessa-san was loyal to her own desire even while being exposed to gunshots. Emily, who was being embraced inside Vanessa’s arms, was dealing the slaps of a straight man repeatedly *pechi pechi* even while turning small.

「No, putting aside getting out of the line of fire, but a stunt like cutting apart bullets from a full-auto machine gun with unparalleled accuracy is beyond me, okay?」

Vanessa's eyes turned round while she went「Ee……」hearing what Kousuke said. It seemed that the Kousuke inside Vanessa had been turned into someone who could do anything.

Vanessa turned a gaze that seemed to want to say「You're kidding; you say that, but the truth is?」. Kousuke smiled wryly to that.

「Something like cutting all the bullets fired in full-auto without even missing one, that kind of stunt is only possible for the demon king or the demon king's wife, the swordswoman-sama. As for me, I'm fine with sticking to petty surprise attacks.」

Kousuke shrugged his shoulders, and then in the next instant, his figure vanished. In exchange, there was a kunai at the spot where Kousuke had been at until now. That was the kunai that Kousuke had thrown just before.

Naturally, for the kunai to be there meant,

「Guah!?」

「Shit-. Since whe――」

「Gafuh!?」

Kousuke was in the middle of the enemies.

It was one of the abilities possessed by the kunai. Space substitution. The subordinates of Weiss were panicked at the sudden appearance of Kousuke on the wall where the kunai

had stabbed. They aimed their gun muzzles without delay, but at that time, they could do nothing but have a tearful separation with their head and body.

A single slash attack of heat gave them an unreal death. Their torso and head rolled like broken toys leaving them no time to transform into berserkers, and they departed for their journey to the other world.

Even so, different from a berserker's last moment who would have their body dried up completely and broke down to the degree that they couldn't keep their original shape, now the space was filled with human corpses rolling around everywhere. That factor was enough for Emily who wasn't used to death to turn pale and bile to rise up in her throat.

「Emily, right now, think only about what's in front of――」

「I, I'm fine, Kousuke. Let's go!」

Her smiling face was twitching and pale, but Emily stopped Kousuke's words with a strong voice. And then, she stared at the solid-looking steel door in front of her eyes, as though she understood something.

「Kousuke. Ahead of this is……」

「So you realize. Yeah, that's right. They are on the other side of this door. It looks like they are flustered, but they still aren't escaping. Looks like we made it in time.」

「I see……」

Emily took a deep, deep, deep breath. And then, she closed her eyes just a little. By doing that, scenes revolved behind her eyelids like a revolving lantern. The days she spent in the Down classroom. The smile of Hendricks and Lizzie who

looked after her, the quarrel between Rod and Dennis in place of greetings, Jessica’s mischievous smile, the joyful and fun joke exchange between Sam and Milo.

They were Emily’s beloved big brothers and sisters. They weren’t here anymore. She could never meet them again, her precious family.

Emily opened her eyes quietly.

「Kousuke, please.」

「Ou」

Her words were few, but the response she got was strong. Kousuke’s short sword left an azure trail behind and pierced the steel door. It was as though a knife stabbing through butter, the short sword smoothly pierced without meeting any resistance. The place pierced by that super-high temperature had the surrounding area melting in the blink of an eye.

plop, plop The steel door was turned red hot and melted down. The sight behind the door was starting to turn visible bit by bit from there.

It seemed there was an underground parking lot on the other side of the steel door. There were several passenger cars and freight cars; there were also particular vehicles like forklifts and so on.

Beside one of those cars, on the side of a medium-size pick-up truck, there was the figure of two people. They were on the side of the truckload that seemed to be filled with luggage, but it appeared they were astonished by the steel door melting. They were standing still without a twitch.

plop, plop The door was vanishing, The door separating Emily and the man was vanishing.

Their knees were starting to be visible. One set was Weiss’s that they saw before this while the slacks of the other man’s was something really familiar for Emily. Those slacks were dark brown, and Jessica and Lizzie always said that it was too plain. Surely, if the slacks were seen from nearby, there would be a small fray that could be found around the right knee.

The belt was starting to get visible. That belt was slightly thinning recently, and the holes were shifted. Everyone was worried if the wearer of that belt was eating properly because he often went on trips.

The necktie was visible. It was a bright navy blue necktie with sharp stripes on it. To tell the truth, it was a present from Emily to him for his birthday. The expense choked out her pocket money while she chose the necktie with the help of Lizzie and Jessica.

「Aa……」

Emily unconsciously leaked out her voice. That voice came from her fleeting hope——that ”It could be a mistake by some chance”, that hope which she herself would laugh at. It was now crushed to bits.

Kousuke swung his arm. The steel door was blown away without leaving any trace.

There was nothing that stood in their way anymore.

The remains of the steel door illuminated the surrounding with a bright red light even though it was rapidly cooling down. Emily slowly walked forward while the remains were

scattering. On her right was the protector from the Far East who was wielding the mystic, on her left was the heroic protector who would stand up even against her motherland if it was necessary, and behind her was the protector who shouldn’t exist that symbolized the necessary evil. She entered while taking them along.

The fluttering lab coat was Emily’s pride. The proof of her pride in the things she had piled up and of the place to belong that was given to her by him. But right now, that pride felt really heavy, really empty.

Beside Weiss who was cursing「This is too fast, this damned monster」while holding his head, there was the man who was still petrified in astonishment. Emily looked like she was going to burst out crying at any moment; however, her expression was filled with the resolve that she absolutely wouldn’t cry. It was with that expression that she opened her mouth to that man.

「Why did, you do it……teacher?」

There was no way the man couldn’t understand the meaning of that question.

The first voice Emily spoke out made him, Emily’s teacher that was like a substitute of her father——Professor Reginald Down to come back to his senses.

「Emily……」

「Why did you do it, teacher?」

Hearing her name called by that voice that she thought she wouldn’t be able to hear for the second time caused Emily’s heart to be shaken whether she wanted it or not. The words

that she repeated had no intonation, perhaps because she was forcefully holding down her emotions.

「……Emily, I――」

Professor Down’s words got caught up in his throat once more. He bit his lip hard, as though he was in pain, or as though he was holding back something. Kousuke and Vanessa watched over the scene.

Silence ruled over the place. In the middle of that, Weiss suddenly glanced at his wristwatch. At that moment, Allen, who had never taken off his gaze from Weiss, reacted.

He exchanged a glance with Kousuke for an instant. That was him signaling to let Emily keep talking while he would capture Weiss ahead. There wasn’t any reason to let an enemy at large, so Kousuke also showed an agreement with his gaze.

Like that, Kousuke and Allen were about to leap out, but just before they could,

「Whooops, don’t move you two. If not, then I’m going to make this beloved papa of that missy get riddled with holes, yeah.」

Weiss anticipated that quickly move and circled his arm around Down’s neck and pinioned him from behind. He was hiding behind Down and turned him into a shield while his gun muzzle stuck out on Down’s side.

Weiss hindered Emily’s talk with his gun muzzle not wavering. Vanessa gazed at him with a suspicious gaze.

「What are you planning?」

「What, nothing. *Even though he is threatened*, but as expected, with the girl who is like his daughter in front of him, perhaps this guy might do something stupid. That's what I think, you know?」

「Threaten? ……Are you saying that Professor Down is here because he is being threatened?」

「Hm~~, it's a bit of a faulty expression to say threaten I guess. It's that, something like unwillingly complying with a forced request for cooperation.」

It seemed that Weiss wanted to say that Down was here unwillingly. Down's face grimaced from the sensation of a gun being pressed hard on him. Weiss grinned smugly while he jerked his chin toward Emily.

「Genius missy. This substitute father of yours is really gallant see. He will even lick other people's shoes with the term that they won't lay a hand on you. Even I got moved into tears by that devotion and thought that maybe I'll overlook you missy, but it's a different story if you come here by yourself.」

「Wa, wait, that's not what we agreed on. You said that Emily wouldn't――」

Down showed his panic hearing Weiss being talkative. Just from looking at that, it really seemed that Down was obeying without any choice because Emily was used to threaten him.

Weiss sent a vulgar gaze at Emily as though he was going to ridicule Emily's agitation――

「Teacher, please answer. Why, did you come to do something like this?」

「……」

What was there was an Emily who wasn’t shaken even for a bit, her straightforward gaze was unchanging while her expression looked as though she was desperately stifling her overflowing emotions. Rather, her expression was showing something that was dirtied from how Down was still displaying that kind of farce at this point in time. Be that as it may, a strong will could be seen from her that made it clear that she had no plan of going along with that kind of farce.

Kousuke and Allen spontaneously made a small smile seeing how Emily acted. Vanessa too, even though she was gazing at Emily with concern, her expression was proud toward Emily who was showing her “strength”.

「What’s this, I thought you were going to get shaken at least a little. Well, I didn’t expect that much from this anyway. It’s fine because the true thing will be from here on.」

Weiss easily separated from Down and shrugged his shoulders, and then he cleared away in one go the cover enveloping the large box that was put on the back of the pick-up truck.

「-, you-」

「Ooh, so you are shaken by this. I’m glad I brought it here just in case.」

Emily glared at Weiss with a furious look. Kousuke and the others weren’t an exception. That special case with a transparent surface was filled with children who hadn’t even reach five years old. They looked really scared. Three children were snuggling each other in the corner of the

cramped case as their bodies huddled down while trembling fiercely.

Weiss pushed his finger on the smartphone on his hand while his vulgar grin deepened.

「The American comic bastard over there, also the agents, and even Emily, don't move, okay? If my finger slipped because of the spur of the moment, then these brats will end up going out with a cheery monster debut, yeah?」

Because Weiss knew about Kousuke's ability, he didn't take his gaze off of Kousuke for even a moment despite his frivolous attitude. Most likely, the moment Kousuke's presence vanished even for an instant in this situation; he would move his finger without hesitation and activate the detonator switch for the『Berserk』that was consumed by the children.

……And so, Kousuke was normally vanishing just like usual.

「You scum. Just the fact that you are living is a crime.」

Vanessa who guessed what Kousuke was doing cursed to buy time. Weiss's expression turned amused instead at the abuse from an opponent in a situation where he was overwhelmingly superior and shrugged. Of course, he didn't take his gaze away from Kousuke……he didn't take his gaze away……

「It's better for all you dogs of the government to increase your cursing variation a bit more. I already got too used to what you guys will say, and recently, it was boring for me. Well, no matter. Come on, first of all, you guys toss the dangerous items to the floor.」

His gaze toward Kousuke wasn’t taken o……wasn’t tak……it was taken off.

Weiss’s gaze smoothly flowed toward Vanessa who was talking to him. He did that really naturally, without any doubt, as though it was only the norm. He slowly lowered down his gun, and he made a satisfied smile toward *Allen and Vanessa.*

「Not using this skill is also advantageous sometimes……it’s not like, I’m crying here.」

「Wha-, guwah!?」

Kousuke-san who was normally at your side, weeping like usual, was here. He ignored Weiss who jumped in shock, held his wrist and made him drop the smartphone, and then held him down to his knees.

「Guh, god damn it-. This American comic bastard! Just why the hell did something like you come out here, huh!」

「It’s not like I don’t understand your feelings, but be quiet for a bit. Right now is Emily’s time.」

When Kousuke increased the pressure at Weiss’s joint, Weiss leaked out a small anguished voice「Ngih」before he shut his mouth.

Down backed away from Kousuke who suddenly appeared at his side where Emily’s gaze then pierced through him.

But, right after they thought that Weiss’s farce was over and they could start talking,

goun-goun-goun-

A suspicious sound that sounded like it was resounding from the bottom of the earth resounded on the eardrum of Kousuke and co. It was the sound of some kind of machine activating. And it also sounded really loud. Kousuke and co ran their gaze suspiciously to the floor.

And then, their gaze caught a crack running through the floor. No, it wasn't a crack, but a circular line with its center split by a vertical line.

「Is that, an elevator?」

Vanessa muttered. It was just as she said; there was an underground space further underneath this underground parking lot/cargo storeroom. The diameter of the circularly shaped elevator was around seven to eight meters. It was a large elevator for transporting large machinery and material.

It was climbing up. Kousuke and the others had a bad premonition welling up inside them fiercely. This time a muffled laughter resounded in their ears.

「Ku-, kuku-, fuhah. It finally arrived. It took a lot of time to lure it to the elevator, but it's barely safe. I was wondering just what would happen when the distractions got easily broken through and we were caught up with, but it's worth it making up that kind of farce.」

Weiss said that kind of thing while being pushed on the floor by Kousuke. They were about to question what he meant by that, but before they could, the elevator's door opened. The floor split to the left and right, and a hole was opened wide in the floor――

Countless somethings instantly flew out from there.

「-, Get down-」

Kousuke yelled while taking a position in front of Emily right away. And then, he mowed down those things attacking them with a flash of his short sword. Vanessa and Allen also quickly got down, and they succeeded in evading the first attack somehow.

Those things intercepted and severed by Kousuke made raw sounds *bicha* and fell on the floor. The fallen things convulsed with watery sounds while the sources of the things that lost its tips were pulling back into the elevator.

「Te, tentacles?」

「Looks like it. Those guys, just what in the world are they calling here?」

The things that Emily mentioned while her face went pale were indeed tentacles. They were skin-colored, fleshy tentacles that even looked like human guts. Those things flew out simultaneously from the elevator.

「Old man. It’s plan B! Run to the meeting point somehow!」

「-, Go, got it!」

The moment Kousuke left him, Weiss sprang up to his feet and jumped to the side. He barely avoided those things that also came attacking him. And then he took out an attaché case from the pickup truck’s driver seat that had its door opened all this time. At the same time, he started up the engine.

But, he didn’t enter the truck but started running at full speed while still holding the attaché case.

On the other hand, Down also seemed to know what was coming from underground as he rolled under the truck the

moment the elevator’s door opened. Like that he came out on the other side and hid there, so he was safe. And then, just like Weiss, he took into his hands a shoulder bag and a rectangle case. He then started running toward a door the opposite side of where Weiss was going.

Naturally, Kousuke and the others aimed their kunai and guns to stop Weiss, but a lot of tentacles flew out before they could and hindered them.

On top of that,

「Ah, Kousuke-. Those children-」

「That bastard-. So this was his aim from the start-」

The tentacles attacked the pickup truck as though they were reacting to the engine sound. Even though each of the tentacles was only as big as an arm of a child, they instantly toppled the truck sideways without any difficulty. Naturally, the case holding the children was thrown out from the truck. The children who were jostled inside the case screamed.

The tentacles reacted to those screams and entangled the case. It seemed that it was a tough case, so the case wasn’t crushed or squashed, but the case was dragged toward the elevator.

「Vanessa, Allen. Take care of Emily!」

「Acknowledged!」

「Aah, geez. This is completely out of my field you knoww」

They followed Kousuke’s instruction and went to Emily’s side to protect her; then they led her away to take some distance from the elevator. Most of the rushing out tentacles was cut

apart by Kousuke, but even so, as expected from the two, their skill allowed them to accurately blow away the remaining tentacles using bullets.

Kousuke judged that it would be fine to leave them to fend for themselves for the moment, and he was going to rescue the children.

However,

「No way I'll let you do that so simply yeah!」

「You-, this shitty bastard!」

Weiss fired his machine gun from the other side of the door. He was aiming at Emily. As expected, a feat of shooting down bullets using bullets could only be done by a certain demon king. It was impossible for Vanessa and Allen.

Therefore, Kousuke couldn't help but defend against that using his kunai to deploy out a barrier. Although it was only for a little while, Kousuke was still being held in place.

「Yoo, American comic bastard! If you are a hero, then don't abandon those pitiful children just like a hero yeah.」

Weiss's disgusting laugh echoed, then in the next instant——it flew out.

Like a spear that was thrown by an expert, countless tentacles stretched out and stabbed the ceiling and walls. And then, by using expansion and contraction, and recoil, something that could be described as a lump of meat appeared from the bottom of the earth.

It was weird and repulsive, like minced meats that were haphazardly kneaded to each other, with tentacles

haphazardly growing out from there. That figure stirred up instinctive revulsion from anyone seeing it.

It wriggled with a flabby motion and crawled up like a muddy stream. It scattered around flesh and liquid while moving to the nearest prey. ——Yes, toward the case where the children were inside.

「That case is a solid one, so it will be able to hold for a bit even if it was swallowed by that ruined experiment. Do your best and go all out to rescue those children. We won't mind it, okay?」

A ruined experiment——just as those words stated, the meat lump was a product that was created from a process of an experiment. The reason this thing ended up as this ugly meat lump was only one was because of a demonic deed that was done for the sake of knowing the limit of 「Berserk」's ability.

「Berserk」would repeatedly cause regeneration by forcefully invigorating the cells until it was past the limit of the flesh. Then, what would happen if「Berserk」was continuously administered while also continuously giving healthy and young flesh to the subject? The subject would fuse its former flesh with other flesh in the form of it getting swallowed inside regeneration. Such a thing was repeated.

Like that, what resulted was the worst monster that didn't even retain its shape as a living thing——a Berserk Chimera. It was already incomprehensible just what the former organisms that entered into the fusion were.

It took time to lure this thing from the underground's deepest experiment room to here using any kind of bait. But Weiss believed that it would be impossible to hold back this existence that was wielding the supernatural without using

the Berserk Chimera. This was his genuine trump card. That farce and all his talkativeness were for buying time to guide this Berserk Chimera.

Weiss immediately vanished behind the door at the same time as his spoken out parting remark. After the berserk chimera took the children’s case, it continued to attack Kousuke and the others without pause using its tentacles like a storm.

Kousuke defended against all those while gritting his teeth hard. Behind him, Emily called to him with a trembling voice.

「Kousuke, those children……what to do! They have to be saved!」

「……」

There was no reply. Normally, Kousuke would reply right away with words that were overflowing with confidence, but now he didn’t reply right away. A bad premonition welled up inside her. By any chance, perhaps even with Kousuke here, those children were beyond salvation already. Was this the end, just like what Weiss said……

「Kousu――」

Emily slowly peeked at Kousuke’s side profile with an expression that almost cried. She instantly swallowed back her words unconsciously.

Kousuke was always like a whistling wind or making a troubled smile on his face. Sometimes he showed a serious face, a resolved face, or a nostalgic face. Emily had seen all those faces until now, but she had never seen Kousuke’s current face.

There was nothing in it, an expression of “nothingness”.

Honestly, she shuddered. The eyes without any emotion in it, staring straight at the berserk chimera, and the expression where all emotion had slipped off cleanly from it, it was as though the person there wasn’t Kousuke.

「I somehow, understand. Even though I don’t know what your former appearance looked like, I understand somehow. ……It’s scary, isn’t it? It’s painful, isn’t it? You were brought to this kind of place, and ended up like that……」

Those words lacked intonation. There, not just Emily, Vanessa and Allen also noticed.

Kousuke had “snapped”. It wasn’t at the level of the anger he showed when Emily was cornered by the security bureau. At that time, there was still some saving grace. The Grant family was in good health and they were already rescued, Chief Magdanese and her group were also people with conviction, and the incident at the research building had a strong aspect as being an accident.

That was why, even though Kousuke was angry at that time, he wasn’t totally angry. But, right now was different. What was in front of Kousuke was an inhuman act, an avatar of malice and greed. He understood. Even though he didn’t know the details, he understood just what the material used to make the lump of meat before his eyes was. He understood just who was crying and screaming at that time.

That was why, the feeling that Kousuke held——was rage.

「Allen.」

「Ye, yes-」

Allen who was suddenly addressed twitched in reaction. Allen was sweating coldly from the terror that was silent but surely eroding him. Kousuke commanded at such an Allen still with a voice that was lacking intonation.

「Chase after “that”. Stop him in his place until I catch up after I rescue those children.」

「Ye, YES SIR-!!」

Kousuke stabbed his short sword into the ground and made a path of flames run on the ground. A path that was protected by a flame wall ran straight to the door where Weiss entered. Allen dashed through it.

「Emily.」

「Hy, hyes-」

「Chase after the professor. Vanessa.」

「Yes, Kousuke-san.」

「Protect Emily.」

「Acknowledged.」

Flames ran toward the door Down went through. Emily was hesitating, but Vanessa held her hand and pulled her. Even so, Emily was worried about the children, and also about Kousuke. When she looked back, there, Kousuke was putting on his sunglasses while opening his mouth.

「Don’t worry Emily. I’ll save those children. I’ll destroy this pitiful monster. I’ll make “that” regret that he was born. I’ll leave only Down to Emily, but I also won’t let anyone other than those guys get away. That’s why, go.」

「Ye, yes, I understand. ……Kousuke, please, save those children!」

「Yeah, leave it to me.」

Emily started running, led by Vanessa. The berserk chimera instinctually shirked away from the flame wall, but even so, it still tried to capture the prey by stretching its tentacles in a roundabout way through the ceiling, but all its efforts were pushed back by the barrier from the kunai, and it couldn’t approach the prey.

Emily and the others chased after their respective target, and their figures vanished from the room. Detecting that, Kousuke, no, the abyss lord declared calmly without even taking a cool pose.

「This rage surely belongs to all of you who are toyed with by others as they pleased. In return, I’ll dispel your chagrin for you. That’s why, please, sleep peacefully.」

The abyss lord who was driven by rage began his battle for the sake of salvation.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Now then, in the last chapter, I said that next would be the climax but……this chapter is one step behind the climax.

So far as it goes, Shirakome is looking on warmly from managing to put out a cool development following the template “the mastermind is the father” but,

Actually, I wanted to end this all in one go with one chapter.

Everything is the fault of reality and the workplace. I’m sorry.

Next week, I will receive consecutive holidays, so I think I can go until the end.

It will make me happy if you readers can look forward to it.

The next update is planned to be for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 218

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

I Wanted, to Have a Date……

AN: This chapter was late. I’m sorry.

He was running without making any sound while paying the greatest attention to the surroundings, yet his running speed was still top speed. The agent of a nonexistent organization——Allen, was chasing after the escaping Weiss with astounding speed.

It seemed that Weiss was heading toward the installation of this facility’s power generator, Allen could see various pipes and electronics, big and small, throughout the corridor.

But at that time, Allen’s gaze suddenly caught something that he ought to be careful against. It was a very fine wire that was set up in the corridor inconspicuously. A simple trap.

Allen’s face didn’t change, his running speed didn’t decrease, and he went to the wall and jumped. And then by kicking on the wall, he climbed until near the ceiling, his hands caught one of the pipes, and he flew over the wire like a pendulum.

That jump looked excessive just for jumping over a single wire, but actually, that wire was a bluff, there was an infrared-type trap set up ahead of that wire, so Allen’s action

was correct looking at the result. It was an instantaneous judgment based on Allen’s experience of many years.

“This would be easier if I could run on the ceiling like him though!!”

“Chih. You bastard are also monstrous enough to be able to react to that-”

Weiss, who was hiding behind some cover, aimed at the moment Allen landed and fired. However, Allen also read that ahead of time and got down looking as though he was clinging to the floor the moment he landed, so the bullet futilely passed over above his head.

Still lying down on the floor, Allen pulled his gun trigger without any time lag. His bullet counterattacked Weiss. Weiss leaked out a“Uoh-!”voice, but even so, he managed to dodge by hiding his body with the agility that was on the level of a cockroach.

“Eat this too!”

“Are you an idiot, doing that in this kind of place!?”

Weiss threw a hand grenade while roaring angrily. It was a cramped place, and furthermore, the place was packed full of pipes that he was unaware of what their functions were. ‘Just what the hell he is thinking throwing explosives in here!’ Allen sprang to his feet even while cursing and aimed in a kneeling posture using both his hands.

The bullet he fired accurately shot through the midair grenade, and it exploded right in the middle of Weiss and Allen. Allen rolled to the passage’s wall at the same time as his firing, and then he covered his whole body with his coat that possessed the material to be bullet-proof, knife-proof,

and some impact resistance. Even so, he grit his teeth from the impact that made him feel enough pain while trying to snipe Weiss. At that time,

"Ih!?"

"Light is with you, I guess?"

Allen's cheeks twitched from looking at "that" rolling below him. Right after that, *kat-* intense light surged out.

Weiss, who in a sense believed in Allen's skill, had predicted that Allen would shoot down the hand grenade, so he also threw a flashbang at almost the exact same time.

With this, he ran out of grenades and flashbangs. The double-layered trap and the hand grenade was a preparation to steal Allen's sight at this moment.

At the same time, when the light was starting to settle down, Weiss sent machine gun bullets at the spot where Allen was. His tactics were flowing smoothly without any hesitation and mercy, brought about by his overwhelming battle experience. He became the target of the JD Agency because he was using this skill of his to accomplish immorality and turned the table on the many police and agents coming to capture him.

He was even able to escape once from an agent of that JD Agency; his skill was something authentic, in contrast with his frivolous attitude.

Although, if it was asked whether that skill could work that easily against the man who was positioned to work directly beside the chief of the state security bureau even from among the JD Agency,

tan- tan-

「Tsua!? Son of a bitch-」

Two gunshots echoed, and at the same time, Weiss's machine gun was blown away. It was merely luck that his fingers didn't get blown up too.

Weiss immediately drew out his handgun to fire back. But, he whispered「That just ain't possible」with a displeased expression seeing what appeared at the space where the flash had settled down.

「It's the standard for a spy to have seven gadgets, right? My organization is a nonexistent one, but the guys affiliated with it are all comparatively a believer of romance you know?」

Allen said so with his hand holding that――a coat that hardened like a shield and blocked the bullets. He waved it lightly. Inside his heart, he was going「That was dangerous just now!」while sweating coldly, but he was hiding it with his usual foolish smile.

「Spare me from a real ○07. Don't tell me that the developer of that thing is named Q or something, that's not it yeah?」

「……No comment.」

「So it's really Q, huh!? Your organization is screwing around too much!」

「No, no comment.」

Both of them were acting the funny man and the straight man like television performers while, at the same time, they pulled their gun triggers. They were trying to take each

other’s life smoothly while talking jokingly. It was a black communication between a veteran mercenary and a first-class assassin.

As expected, it seemed they had predicted each other’s movement as the bullets grazed the cheek of the two who were in a half-body stance. (TN: This half-body stance is like karate stance, where you directed one side of your body toward diagonally behind, so to make your body a smaller target)

Allen made his coat a substitute for a shield and charged forward in a dash. The passage wasn’t that wide, so when the shield of the hardened coat that was spread widely launched a shield bash it was impossible to dodge.

Weiss had a future vision where he got pushed down——so he instead stepped forward. If he were to show his back, then he would undoubtedly get shot in the back and die. He judged that his path of survival only existed going forward.

Weiss slid the moment just before he came into contact with Allen. Perhaps he was trying to slip through between Allen’s legs, but there was no way Allen would allow that as he swung the shield down——Right before that, however, Weiss fired repeatedly toward the ceiling.

□-□

The fired bullets hit a pipe on the ceiling and came back toward the ground through a complicated ricochet. Allen immediately lifted his coat shield and blocked the ricochet. At that moment, Weiss was sliding on the floor while passing through……during that time he unsheathed a knife to slice Allen’s foot.

Allen blocked that knife using his shoe that had a metal plate inserted inside, and then he discarded his coat and, at the same time, used one hand as a fulcrum and kicked with a reversed foot. The shoe of that reversed foot had a mechanical knife flying out from its tip.

Weiss blocked that using his gun barrel while retreating from the kick’s range using the momentum of his sliding. He rotated once and then aimed toward Allen from a kneeling stance. Allen also aimed his gun from a kneeling stance.

“Just die quickly, dog of the state.”

“Please die quickly, mercenary.”

A beat.

tan- tan- tan-

Bullets showered each other from point-blank range. Although the firing line of Allen’s gun was slightly shifted by Weiss’s knife, Weiss’s gun also had its firing line shifted by a retractable baton that Allen took out unnoticed. It finished with only their cheeks being grazed.

jako- Their magazines ran out at the same time with that sound echoing. Weiss pretended to retract the knife in his left hand, and in the middle of that motion, he threw that knife to his right hand. His left hand caught Allen’s baton without pause while the knife landed in the right hand’s grip, as though it was attracted to there, as he approached to carve Allen’s throat.

Allen easily abandoned the baton and stepped in so low that he looked like he was crawling on the ground. He dodged Weiss’s murderous blade while he grasped his collar, and

then he turned around. He threw up Weiss with his waist’s motion.

Weiss that was flung away with a so-called shoulder throw then had his back strike the floor.Gahah Air was driven out from his lung.

Yep, the end.

Well, not yet actually.

Allen pulled out his spare gun, and he pressed the gun muzzle on Weiss’s forehead. At the same time, Weiss also talked lightly even with his face grimacing, and he pressed a button on his wristwatch.

In the next instant, a thunderous roar and an explosion blast blew violently from behind Allen. Allen’s gun muzzle shifted slightly due to that, and because Weiss’s head swung aside, the bullet veered away.

Weiss jumped to his feet and dashed fiercely toward the nearest door. Allen immediately fired, but Weiss stepped on Allen’s coat while passing through and sent it flying to block the bullet. Even so, he couldn’t avoid all the bullets, and his shoulder got hit, but he didn’t pay it any attention and opened the door with a tackle and jumped inside.

Good grief, what obstinacy. I can understand how J can let him get away.

Allen made a bitter expression at his failure of letting Weiss slip away while he immediately moved to resume the chase.

He clung to the door and slowly peeked in. Right after that, a storm of bullets rained down like hail. It seemed that Weiss had a spare machine gun. Most likely, Weiss was someone

wary, so he had put weapons here and there throughout his escape route.

Allen took out the magazine from his gun and confirmed his remaining bullet. He only had few bullets left, and there was only one more magazine on his waist holster.

"Haa, I used up too much on the berserkers in the first half of this mission."

Allen smiled bitterly while exchanging his magazine with the new one and put away the half-used magazine. And then, he pulled out a pin from his wristwatch and dropped it on the floor. Immediately, small legs like an insect's flew out from the pin.

Allen rotated the rotatable bezel of the watch halfway round. Right after that, the windbreak part of the watch turned into a display that projected the image on the floor level.

"This is the prided article of a real-life Q. Just watch it thoroughly to your heart's content."

The small metallic bug moved its legs with a rattling sound and advanced toward the location of Weiss who was shooting his machine gun while talking provocatively. Allen was watching his watch's display while controlling the small insect using the bezel's rotation.

Like that, the feet of Weiss were visible inside the display. Allen grinned widely, but as expected, the one over there was Weiss, whose obstinacy was on the level of a cockroach. Just before Allen could press the button, Weiss suddenly noticed something below him. He discovered the metallic thing with strange legs crawling below him, and his cheeks twitched grandly.

The next instant, *DOOON-* an explosive sound echoed, and the gunshots stopped.

Allen rushed into the room with his gun readied and guard up. It was a large room. It was an atrium with a height of around two floors, and there was also the second floor with a wire-net type floor. It was a room that had a lot of power generators in it.

When Allen intruded deeper, he could see a crushed machine and a pipe that snapped in the middle and was spouting out white smoke. Allen was instantly alerted in wonder if it was a poisonous gas, but there wasn’t any warning from the air composition that was displayed on his watch.

Guessing that it was just vapor, Allen circled around the white smoke while he aimed his gun in a snap toward a cover that had a human presence.

「Yoo, doggy. That thing, ain’t it a foul?」

「That is a power I have exactly because I’m a dog of the country. That’s not wrong, is it?」

「Don’t screw with me. This is why……I hate, the elite young master.」

Weiss talked frivolously. Allen talked frivolously back with his gun aimed at Weiss once more. But, although there wasn’t any carelessness in Allen’s eyes, there also wasn’t any great cautiousness in it. That was understandable. Weiss had his side largely gouged, and he was already fatally wounded. Allen guessed that he would only have a few more minutes to live.

Weiss vomited out a glob of blood while limply leaning on the wall. He took out a cigarette with a trembling hand. Allen was about to pull the trigger without caring about it but,

「Hey, doggy. You want……Hydra's, information right?」

「……No, not really?」

「Is that so? The case, this time, is from that bastard Kaysis's arbitrary……action. Hydra, has their own, different……plan. There won't be any harm……in knowing it, right?」

Indeed, 「Berserk」's case was something Kaysis had done on his own authority in order to triumph against Hydra's leadership. And then, Kaysis's data didn't include the big plan of Hydra's that would be carried out soon. If Hydra had a different plan in progress, then it was something that the security bureau ought to know.

Therefore, Allen's finger slackened slightly from pulling the trigger. Weiss grinned smugly while his hand carried the cigarette toward his blood soaked lips. His figure enjoying the cigarette smoke didn't look like someone who would die with certainty.

「Why are you going to talk?」

「Just, for harassment. Because they gave me……this job that's not worth it, yeah.」

Allen showed a slight hesitation, and a beat later, he urged Weiss to continue with his gaze.

The light in Weiss's eyes was dimming already; his voice was small. His voice was whispering in a subdued tone, making it really hard to be heard in this room where there was the

echoing sound of vapor jetting out. Without any other choice, Allen got closer to Weiss.

Of course, Allen anticipated that this might be a trap and the moment he got closer Weiss would pull out a knife or a gun. Even so, Allen had confidence in his reflexes, and he judged that he would undoubtedly be the faster one in this situation; he got closer while putting up the maximum caution.

So……after this, Hydra……

Please give it your all if you are going to die anyway. I cannot hear anything here.

This guy, how harsh……. But see, if you, get this close…… that's enough, yeah?

Both of Weiss's hands sprang up right after that. He caught both of Allen's wrists instantly with a speed that was unthinkable coming from a half-dead man. Although Allen was calm, he was slightly late in his reaction because he was mostly cautious against a gun or knife, but it wasn't any problem at all getting caught like this.

Allen made the knife inside his shoe to jump out, and he kicked Weiss's stomach. Weiss vomited out blood with his body lifted in the air.

But, here an unexpected situation occurred. Weiss should have no more physical strength with his dying body, and he should be blown away from Allen's finishing blow; but instead, his grip strength was increasing further. He didn't let go of Allen's hands like a magnet.

-, so this is what they call the great strength when at death's door!

「Hihih, this is a desperate grab for a fellow traveler to hell.」

Allen kicked repeatedly. He broke Weiss's ribcage, his mechanical knife hacked Weiss's stomach into shreds, and furthermore, he also stabbed Weiss's heart. But, Weiss didn't die. The pressure on his captured wrists was increasing!

「Don't tell me-, the cigarette just now-」

「Spot on-! I'm not gonna let you aim at the head y'knoww」

With both his hands caught, Allen had no way to destroy the head. Being too close like this sealed his legs from destroying the head.

Allen twirled his gun using his fingertip, like a sleight of hand. His pinky held the trigger, and he aimed at Weiss's head with the gun in a reversed position, but Weiss's arm strength that was increasing further didn't allow Allen to aim accurately. Allen was continuously landing strong knife-attached kicks, but the created wounds were smoking white and gradually began to regenerate.

「Hahah, I'm easy to get lonely see. At least accompany me a little in my journey to that world 'kayy」

「You-. Release me already-」

Weiss laughed ghastly while getting drenched in blood. The cigarette that was crammed with「Berserk」had its content soaked with the drug. Weiss was pretending to smoke while actually he was biting off the cigarette and swallowing it. That was why Weiss was transforming bit by bit.

Because his transformation was slow, there was merit in that he didn't change into a berserker right away and could still think. At the same time, there was also a demerit that it

would be the end if his head was shot in the halfway stage before he completely transformed into a berserker.

That was why Weiss was sealing both of Allen’s hands.

As expected, Allen was losing patience while he unleashed kicks like a storm at Weiss that was starting to rapidly change before his eyes. However, Weiss’s regeneration ability was also gathering speed, and the first stab wound was already completely healed.

「Guh-」

「Then, let’s meet on the other side yeah, doggy.」

Weiss’s insane words stabbed at Allen who groaned from the feeling that both of his arms were being gripped so hard that they were on the verge of snapping from the pressure. Right after that, a roar rose from Weiss. His muscles enlarged and his wound closed in tremendous speed.

「DON’T UNDERESTIMATE MEEEEE-」

Allen pulled up both his arms together with a loud yell that was rarely heard coming from him while he struck Weiss’s stomach with a fierce kick. Weiss’s body was lifted up before it fell down right away, but before that, Allen made his body slide to the floor and put Weiss’s body on his lifted leg. And then he pulled both his hands while his leg struck up with all his strength.

The body of Weiss that was in the middle of the transformation got turned over with an overhead throw. He was sent flying face up to the opposite side. Even so, Weiss’s hands didn’t let go of Allen, but Weiss that was turned over was in Allen’s line of fire.

Allen twirled his gun once more with just his fingertip and pulled the trigger repeatedly. He didn’t manage to aim at the head, but it was enough to strike the shoulder. Perhaps the bullet hit a good spot because one of Allen’s hands was released.

Allen quickly got up and aimed at the other hand that was growing like a log while holding his hand and fired. The moment his hand was released, he rolled away to take some distance while firing toward Weiss’s head.

But here there was a further unexpected situation occurring.

「Wha!? He dodged!?」

「AAAAAAAAAAAH!!」

Yes, he dodged. A berserker dodged. It detected the approaching bullet and leapt aside.

A berserker was a lump of instinct. It would at least cover its weakness the head with its arms, but fundamentally, a berserker would only charge forward like a boar. It could do nothing but charge forward relying on its body and super regeneration. Until now, there wasn’t a single berserker that had ever taken “evasive actions”.

「Chih, a troublesome guy even after becoming a berserker huuh!」

Allen took out a throwing knife and threw it toward Weiss’s eye. Allen thought to fire at the head the moment Weiss dodged. But, as expected, this berserker——Berserker Weiss, didn’t seem like a normal one.

The throwing knife was struck down this time without dodging. Furthermore, it didn’t keep charging without

pause, but it dipped its waist deeply like a beast while groaning□uUUUUU-□and glared at Allen.

Yes, as though it was observing Allen’s move.

□Wa, wa wa wait……this is different from what I heard! A berserker that can “fight” is not a joke-□

Allen was complaining greatly but fired at the same time. The moment Allen aimed his gun, the berserker charged forward with a terrific step. Although that charge wasn’t a bull rush like every berserker before this, it was a counter rush that was accompanied with the evasion of the bullet by lowering its stance instantly.

□Seriously, spare me-□

This time Allen jumped to the side. Berserker Weiss rushed through the place he was in just now and created a crater on the concrete floor.

Allen jumped to the side while doing a handstand with one hand and fired further. The bullet approached the head with terrifying accuracy, but Berserker Weiss lifted its hand as though it had predicted it from the start, and the bullet was blocked by that hand.

Berserker Weiss raised a war cry while grabbing the nearby broken pipe. He tore it off with brute strength and threw it toward Allen.

□HiIlH□

Allen screamed pathetically while clinging to the floor and rolling away. He somehow managed to dodge it. However, the fact that the berserker was using a tool caused Allen’s expression to shudder with fear.

But, at that time, a light machine gun on the floor was reflected in the corner of Allen’s sight. Most likely, it was the weapon that Weiss used before which probably got sent flying due to the explosive of the insect gadget. Allen leapt so close to the floor that he was hugging the ground and pulled the trigger toward Berserker Weiss that was bending down in preparation for a charge.

dadadadadada- A rhythmical sound resounded, and a swarm of bullets assaulted Berserker Weiss.

「GAaH」

「He dodged as expected! Aa, geez-」

Berserker Weiss dashed to the side at the same time as when Allen pulled the trigger. And then, it sometimes used obstacles for cover while running in a circle around Allen.

gachin- That sound echoed showing that the light machine gun ran out of bullets. Allen’s face paled.

With a timing as though it had aimed for the moment the bullets ran out, Berserker Weiss turned on the offensive. Its step made a *DON-* sound as though a cannon had fired, and it approached Allen.

「Shi, shit-」

Allen took out a small cylinder from his belt’s buckle and fired it at the pillar of the second floor. A wire stretched out, and its tip then clung tightly and fixed itself on the pillar. Allen pushed his belt’s buckler at the same time, and the wire reeled in quickly pulling Allen to the air.

Below him, Berserker Weiss passed through just within a hair’s breadth while smashing some kind of machinery into

pieces overenthusiastically.

「This isn’t a joke. Just what part of it is a lump of instinct! A berserker that is this used to battle is just……」

Allen was drenched in cold sweat while taking refuge in the air, and suddenly a conjecture welled up inside from his own words. The berserkers that he faced until now were basically just civilians or fellows that more or less used to some scuffle. That was why charging like a bull was only natural for them if they followed their instincts.

But, if it was a first-class fighter whose body moved on a subconscious level to predict the chance to attack and took the optimum evasive action when in battle, then what would happen if that kind of person was turned into a berserker? A person with a combat skill on the level that it was engraved into their subconscious, would they become a monster that only charged forward like a civilian in the end?

By any chance, the answer to that might be this Berserker Weiss before his eyes. A skilled mercenary that could battle a top-ranking agent equally was transformed into a berserker resulted in this. Of course, it was nothing more than a conjecture; perhaps there was another factor contributing to this.

「Hahah, perhaps this will be seriously bad if this is turned into a weapon.」

Allen reflexively muttered such a thing, but his face tensed right away. Berserker Weiss was tearing apart the fixing implement of a machine that was almost as big as a car so that it could lift it up.

It was obvious what its reason for doing that was.

□Crap crap crap crap-□

Allen manipulated his buckle to cut the wire and fell to the ground. After that, the car-sized machine came flying. The pillar Allen fixed his wire on was pulverized with a thunderous sound, and then the second floor's path was also destroyed by the machine.

Allen landed with an ukemi technique, but naturally, Berserker Weiss didn't overlook that opening. The rock-like fist was already approaching by the time Allen was recovering his stance.

□Gahah□

Allen could only guard by crossing his arms while taking a back-step with all his strength to lower the impact as much as possible. He was blown away horizontally above the ground, and his back crashed on a machine behind him. He couldn't even scream with how intense the impact was, and then his body slipped down slowly to sit on the floor.

'Kahah' Blood was mixed in the breath that he finally could spit out. It seemed that his internal organs were injured. Both his arms limply hung down with their direction facing to strange angles.

But even so, he was alive. What's more, he was conscious, and he was able to watch the Berserker Weiss slowly approaching him. Surely, that was thanks to his miraculous impact neutralization and ukemi technique.

□Aa……gehoh. This is really, not a laughing matter. …… Haven't I, bought enough time already? Ayssgate-sa~n, it's fine if you rush here……gohoh, anytime noww□

Allen smiled bitterly at his body that couldn’t even twitch from the impact while calling for help with a listless voice. But, even Allen understood. This was checkmate.

Berserker Weiss had arrived until it was right before him. Perhaps it was just his imagination, but it somehow looked like the berserker was sneering at him.

Allen was always side-by-side with death in his duty. Therefore, he didn’t feel fear. However, if he had a regret, then that would be……

「Before the end, just once. I wanted to have a date……with a super beautiful woman or girl.」

‘Even though I’m also an agent, but why is Jame○ Bond that popular while I’m not? Regret……’ Allen whispered.

Berserker Weiss’s fist was lifted up. And then just before it was swung down,

「FIREE-」

A command. A storm of bullets assaulted Berserker Weiss. It was a concentrated fire from four directions above. Berserker Weiss couldn’t endure and threw its body between the machinery in evasion.

「Chih. It wasn’t finished off from the first attack. Its instinct is really something. Oi, Allen, what’s with that berserker?」

The one saying that while jumping down from the second floor using other machines as footholds was,

「Be, Bernard-san!」

「Ou, you really got done in huh, Allen. You didn’t get splashed by any liquid, right?」

Yes, the one firing from the second floor was the person who had displayed an outrageous skill of raising death flags in high speed, that Bernard!

It appeared that he had struggled through that deathly battlefield and came here as reinforcements. Allen who was saved by a hair’s breadth like a heroine in some tale felt an emotion welling up inside his heart. Driven by that feeling he spoke to Bernard who was making a fearless smile.

「Anyway, I request a change.」

「How regretful. He is infected with『Berserk』already.」

click Bernard’s gun muzzle locked on to Allen’s forehead. Allen made a justification「I’m lying, lying! You aren’t a beautiful girl, but I’m really happy that you came to save me!」in a panic.

Bernard made an exasperated face at the agent whose talkativeness didn’t decrease even when wounded all over like this while helping him to stand up.

「Err, you saved me Bernard-san. But, that guy, he is really bad news.」

「No, it will be fine.」

Allen suggested caution against the out of norm Berserker Weiss, but Bernard was indifferent. Bernard opened his mouth with a wry smile toward Allen who looked dubious.

「We are here. So there is no way he isn’t here too, right?」

「A. Aa, that’s right. Hahah, really I’m saved……」

Right after that, *GOBA-aAAA-* Berserker Weiss flew out from the cover along with a terrific impact sound. However, it flew out not by its own action, but with a black whirling sphere settled on a hand palm. That palm was thrust forward in a palm attack stance by Kousuke――no, Lord Abyssgate, which blew away the berserker.

「I received the information from my real body. It looks like you have acted really inhumanly. ――Don’t think that you can die easily.」

The lord that was walking out calmly had his eyes filled with rage, his hands unsheathing two short swords. One sword was clad in the azure flame, and the other sword was clad in glimmers that looked like diamond dust. The melting and severing sword of superheat “Enryuuga”, and the ice sword of absolute zero that formed its counterpart, “Touryuuga”. (TN: Enryuuga = Flame Dragon Fang, Touryuuga = Frozen Dragon Fang)

Berserker Weiss made a war cry while standing up, and then it threw pipes and machine parts toward the lord.

The lord stepped in. Right after that, he jumped and rotated midair while stepping lightly on the pipe. And then, without stopping he stepped on the machine parts and splinters flying at him one after another and charged toward Berserker Weiss in a straight line.

Berserker Weiss might’ve felt a threat because it then tried to dodge to the side. But,

「Where are you going?」

Such a sentence reached the berserker. From right beside the position where it was going to dodge to. At the same time, the figure of the lord approaching from in front of it flickered and vanished. The lord had already switched with an illusion in the middle of jumping by using the skill “Leaf Dance”.

Berserker Weiss wasted no time in swinging its fist. The arm was as thick as a log, and it was swung with a force equivalent to a cannon firing in order to flatten the enemy. And then, something flew in the air. An arm severed from the elbow was rotating in midair.

Berserker Weiss that didn’t feel pain launched a deadly attack with its other arm without delay, but the figure of the target had already gone. And then, the berserker fell on its knee with a jerk because one of its legs was cut and sent flying while encased in ice.

The lord slipped into the blind spot behind the Berserker Weiss after he cut the arm. And then he swung “Touryuuga” while passing through. The blade of ice that was formed to an extreme thinness had a slimness of a single molecule already. The chill coating the blade froze the target instantly.

□AAAAAAAAA-□

□Who said that you could howl?□

Berserker Weiss launched a backhand blow even while on its knee, but its body was slowly tilting in contrast with its will. What was flying midair was the arm that was launching the backhand blow. What was rolling on the ground was its other leg.

Berserker Weiss that lost its four limbs was starting to regenerate its hands and feet by activating its super

regeneration. But, the two short swords were swung again right after the limbs were starting to grow and sent them flying.

After that, it was routine work. The regenerating part was chopped off before it could be restored to normal, and the berserker couldn’t escape its state of limbs shortage. It tried to take some distance by prancing up its upper body, but even so, it was pressured down by a whirling black sphere, and it couldn’t hope to move because of the suppression of the supergravity.

「You can regenerate however much you want? Fine then. I’ll keep you company until you die in that case. Regenerate as much as you like, squirm as much as you like. Until that time when the end arrives.」

The lord’s arms went hazy. Each time the limbs of Berserker Weiss danced in midair. In the first place, the amount of 「Berserk」that was crammed into the cigarette didn’t amount to much.

Berserker Weiss writhed, the state of its instinct was different from other berserkers, and before long, something other than madness was starting to enter its eyes, welcoming that time. The speed of its regeneration dropped down drastically, and the vigor of the rising white smoke was decreasing.

The limit of the regeneration had come.

Its flesh body was gradually shrinking. Due to that, the withered Weiss who was on the verge of death recovered his awareness.

「Son of a bitch-. Damn it, if you ain’t gonna accompanying me then just diee」

Weiss didn’t stop his cursing and frivolous talk even at this kind of time. In his eyes, there was a disgusting color, that he wouldn’t grant them the reaction they wanted from him no matter how much he got tortured.

After all, he would die in less than a few seconds. In that case, he would rather spit out curses even if just by one more. Weiss opened his mouth with that kind of intention, but the lord firmly grasped his head. And then, he took out a five-yen coin crystal that was tied with a string.

「Just an instant is enough to grant you regret and despair.」

「What are, you planning——hih, ah, aAAAAAAAAAAH」

A shriek that was unbearable to listen to was reverberating. That was undoubtedly a voice of regret and despair. Weiss was screaming while his body was completely withering and rotting away.

「Sca, scaryy. Aby, just what did you do?」

「Hahah. I don’t want to know though……」

Bernard, accompanied by his subordinates, arrived while lending Allen his shoulder and asked. His expression along with his subordinates were all twitching extremely. Allen was going ‘no no’ in refusal to hear, but he couldn’t move properly, and on top of that, both of his arms were broken, so he couldn’t even block his ears.

The lord spoke with an expression that seemed sickened toward Bernard and the others.

「I just showed him a nightmare. A nightmare where he is eaten alive by the dead. For now, I set it so that his mind experienced it a hundred times in a moment.」

□□……□□

It would’ve been better if he didn’t ask. Bernard and the others were wordlessly holding the same thought inside their heart.

Then, the lord suddenly raised his head. Bernard and the others asked the lord what happened with their gaze, to which the lord spoke.

□It seems it’s necessary for me to head for my real body’s reinforcement. Bernard. I’ll leave the rest to you.□

□Roger. I don’t know what is going on, but leave this place to me. I won’t let even a single one of the remaining staff here get away.□

The lord nodded at Bernard’s words before his figure became smoke *bofun-* and vanished.

Right after that, an intense shaking attacked the facility. It was clear that the vibration came from a distant place.

□He is really going at it flashily huh, that Aby. The vibration just now was intense.□

□I think Bernard-san who is calling him with a pet name is also amazing you know?□

Bernard was staring in puzzlement at Allen’s words before he pulled himself together and began giving orders to his subordinates.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

This time I was late too.

Coupled with the work for publication too, Shirakome’s sleeping time is……heheh

Next week for sure, I’ll write the story until the very end in one go for sure!

Please, follow the lord’s adventure for just a little bit more.

The next update is planned to be for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 219

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

It’s Me You Know, A○derson-kun-

AN: ↑

For those who don’t understand the meaning of the title, please watch the movie Matrix Reloaded without fail.

Smiths-san’s「Me, me, me――and then, me」is strangely pleasing for Shirakome.

The lump of meat squirming before his eyes――Berserk Chimera, didn’t try to chase after Allen who chased after Weiss or Emily and Vanessa who chased after Down.

The Katon flame wall blocking the tentacles’ path had already vanished. If it was a berserker that was faithful to their instinct, then it would at least try to stretch its tentacles to chase, but this berserker didn’t even do that and stopped trying. Surely, most likely, that was because it was cautious against the human in black clothes standing in its way.

「Now then, I don’t know just how deep you have carried the case of the children, so I won’t give any mercy no matter what you were formerly.」

Kousuke unsheathed two short swords. *shaan* A clear voice echoed and the unsheathed swords were held in a reverse

grip and, at the same time, Kousuke’s body sunk really low to the floor. It was a stance similar to a crouching start so to speak.

In an instant, the berserk chimera launched countless tentacles. Those tentacles that were fired with a speed that resembled a bullet became like a wall as they attacked Kousuke.

And then, a hard sound, which was really unthinkable when coming from a lump of flesh, resounded as it began stabbing the metal floor.

Yes, they stabbed at a space where there wasn’t anyone.

「Chih. As I thought, even the weakness’s position is haphazard.」

The sound of someone clicking their tongue and a curse resounded. That voice came from behind the berserk chimera. There, the figure of Kousuke was unmoving with his arms crossed. Looking carefully, the top of the berserk chimera’s head was entirely cut off, and a beat later, the lump of meat fell on a distant spot along with a graphic sound *docha-*.

At that instant, Kousuke rushed forward with a momentum that would give anyone who saw it the thought that he liberated the power he saved up, slipped through the barrage of tentacles, and then split the upper head of the berserk chimera.

Although it didn’t look like the berserk chimera received any pain, it was spouting out white smoke while the top of its head regenerated in what should be called an instant. At the same time, it created new tentacles and launched them to Kousuke.

(I cannot see the position of its weakness, the brain. In the first place, there is no guarantee that it only has one brain. It’s not like I don’t have a method to blow it up altogether, but then the children inside will die with that. And then, that super regeneration is a hindrance for me to scrape off its body……this is difficult.)

Kousuke cut apart the swarm of tentacles, dodged with acrobatic movements, and handed out attacks by using the tentacles as stepping stones. He grumbled inside his heart while analyzing the enemy as a wry smile suddenly emerged on his lips.

To add as a side note, it was also forbidden for him to get touched by the liquid that was scattered when the tentacle was grazed. Even if it was Kousuke, he wouldn’t be able to suppress the transformation of his body if he got splashed by『Berserk』.

Then, at that time, the senses of Kousuke, who was pondering on how to approach this, detected an assault from behind him. When Kousuke immediately twisted his body midair, just as he thought, there were countless tentacles the size of human arms flying toward him from behind.

『Oi oi, so it can also grow from the part that I cut off. Just what kind of organism has this thing consumed that it can do something like that?』

What attacked Kousuke from behind was the lump of meat that Kousuke cut flying before this. It was squirming despite being separated from the main body and grew out slender tentacles.

There were tentacles and flesh, which he had cut apart, lying all over the place. As expected, Kousuke’s expression couldn’t stop from twitching.

The moment Kousuke muttered「This is bad」, a barrage of tentacles approached from all directions. In addition to that, there was also the lump of meat clinging to the ceiling unnoticed that began attacking like a shower, leaving no place to escape. Their numbers already surpassed three digits.

Normally, it would be a hopeless scene. If the one who was here was the soldiers of the special squad, then they would undoubtedly sigh and make a bitter smile at the same time as their resignation.

But, of course, for the right-hand man of the demon king, something of this level, no, no matter what kind of situation it was, it was an impossible story for him to carry an emotion of resignation.

「――”Juton – Todokienu Kuroki Sei’iki”」(TN: Gravity Escape – Unreachable Black Sanctuary)

Immediately after, four whirling black spheres as big as pinballs expanded around Kousuke. At the same time, all the approaching tentacles crashed to the ground as though they were struck down.

「Abyss-style Assassination Martial Arts – Sword Form――”Senretsu Kokujou Yaiba”」(TN: Flash Rend Black Fortress Blade)

Furthermore, Kousuke lifted both his arms and rotated his two short swords like a pinwheel using the movement of his fingertips and his wrists inversely. The tentacles attacking from overhead were shaved off and blown away as though they were hit by an excavator.

Even the tentacles that circled around the shield of slashes and attacked were repelled back by the kunai that were

unnoticeably flying around Kousuke like satellites. Furthermore, those kunai were rotating at high speeds. Not a single tentacle could reach Kousuke.

「Burning all these……will put the children in danger I guess. Then, let’s smash them apart after freezing them——Rage, silver wind. The breath of the eternal world of ice and snow. Hinder the path of the traveler and seize at the cold arm. Thy art the prisoner of the white ice coffin——”Tougoku no Hana”」(TN: Flower of Frozen Prison)

Kousuke lightly made a sound *ton* with his step. Immediately after that, a sound *bikibiki* echoed and the floor was dyed white. Mist was generated as well. With Kousuke as the center, the white wave was spreading as though it was eroding the world. The tentacles and liquid scattered everywhere were frozen altogether.

But, it didn’t end with that. The lump of meat which was dyed pure white and hardened was then enveloped by a prison of ice right after that, like a blooming flower.

A cluster of ice flowers was blooming proudly everywhere.

The white erosion also reached the berserk chimera through the floor. Perhaps sensing the danger, the berserk chimera stabbed its tentacles in the ceiling and made its body leap into the air. It already had the composure to launch a random barrage of tentacles to Kousuke despite just escaping from the floor.

However, the tentacles needed for attacking were all touched by the chill that froze them. The berserk chimera obeyed its instinct and severed all of its tentacles by itself. The countless tentacles that bloomed into ice flowers instantly were now falling to the floor.

「There is no way I'll let you get away don't you think?」

Kousuke used the falling ice flowers as stepping stones and jumped toward the berserk chimera. He used the tentacles he cut down and the tentacles approaching wildly as further stepping stones while he somersaulted; then using that momentum, he threw his short sword.

The short sword cut straight through the air like a single streak of light. It stabbed the berserk chimera that had no leeway to evade.

GI, GI, GIIIIIII

A bizarre voice reverberated. Kousuke guessed that it was the scream of the berserk chimera that let alone having a mouth, it was doubtful that it even had vocal cords. Inside the space where the scream that sounded like the scratching of metal was echoing, the area that was centered on the stabbing short sword was playing a dissonant sound *bikibiki* as the berserk chimera started to freeze over.

「I won't freeze your insides. I'll shave and smash you from your outer layer.」

If its separated part could still move after getting cut off, and if it could regenerate no matter how much it got slashed, then he would restrain it using an ice coffin, and then freeze all of the parts he scraped off and pulverize them. It was a method that paid attention to the safety of the captured children as much as possible while rescuing them with certainty.

Before long, the tentacles that stabbed into the ceiling and supported its mass were frozen, and they became unable to endure their own weight and snapped. The berserk chimera

fell to the floor, and its body’s outer part was smashed apart from the impact of the fall.

Squirming lumps of meat could be seen from inside the smashed lump of meat. It was trying to regenerate. But, the stabbing short sword didn’t allow that. The mist was coming down faster than the regeneration could start and froze them.

When Kousuke snapped his fingers, the frozen outer layer broke apart once more, and frozen lumps of meat were scattered into small block shaped pieces.

「If I continue to smash it like this until those children become visible――」

‘I should be able to save them.’

Yes, Kousuke was about to say that, but right after that, his cheeks cramped from the squirming presence he felt near him. When he quickly looked around, *piki-, paki-* he could see cracks forming in the ice flowers.

「O, oi oi. This is a joke, right?」

Kousuke unconsciously let out those words. It was understandable. After all, the countless lumps of meat locked inside the ice flowers were squirming and bloating from the inside.

baki- Hearing such a sound, Kousuke returned his gaze to the berserk chimera, and there, the same sight of it bloating from inside entered his eyes.

Kousuke opened his eyes wide. No matter how he looked at it, the lumps of meat in the room, and also the berserk chimera, were increasing in volume. When a human

transformed into a berserker, their super regeneration was caused by the repetition of breaking down and regenerating. It could be said to be similar to the phenomenon of muscles swelling up.

But, even that had a limit. It wasn’t like a berserker would transform endlessly until it was a giant. It was impossible for them to multiply new flesh from a small fragment of flesh. It wasn’t an ability that a human was equipped with.

「No, wait. In the first place, this thing is *stretching out* tentacles……」

Kousuke suddenly noticed. This thing was stretching out tentacles endlessly――that was an impossible trait for all creatures that he knew about. Even though there were creatures that had tentacles, there shouldn’t be any creature that was able to grow several hundreds of it or more.

But, in reality, the berserk chimera before his eyes was propagating itself with a force that could even destroy the ice coffin from the inside using pressure――

「Propagation……haha, come to think of it, there is this organism called the planarian huh. Even if they are cut, they will regenerate the same specimen, right?」

That was correct. Certainly, the berserk chimera had taken in a lot of organisms. Not to mention animals and insects, it had also taken in plants and so on. Of course, it had also taken in a few human adults and children. And then a lot of planarians were added into that flesh.

Super-regeneration wouldn’t occur if there wasn’t any flesh that became the base. Then, if that flesh was able to multiply automatically, wouldn’t infinite regeneration become possible with that? This was the result of the

experiment that was carried out with an idea that had gone past madness into exasperation.

The berserk chimera had not even a fragment of the souls of the animals and humans that became its base. What it had was a more primitive instinct. ——Only the instinct to eat and survive, that was all.

Kousuke shuddered while returning from his own thoughts back to reality, and right after that, all the ice flowers smashed apart.

「These guys here created something like this, just how were they planning on stopping this thing when the time came?」

What was truly frightening was the deed of man. The spirit of inquiry and tenacity, madness that pushed on ahead until the end of the road without considering the future or other people. Just like the magicians of the former world's mad god——Ehitorujue that invited the destruction of themselves.

It would endanger the children if he burned this thing to ash. It was useless to freeze and smash it. If he slashed it, then it would regenerate and multiply endlessly just as much as he slashed. Exterminating it using great firepower would endanger the children. If he was touched, then it was game over.

However,

「Good grief. Just when I thought that I finally went home from a fantasy world, this side is also fantastical like this. It seems that I, no, we are deeply loved by the extraordinary, huh.」

The Kousuke’s expression contained no despair as he shrugged with an air of “dear me”. He also didn’t believe in the possibility that he might not be able to save the children.

Why?

It was obvious.

「So you returned, me.」

「Yeah, I have returned, me.」

「I too, me.」

「Bernard……it was seriously just barely for him. That guy is really loved by the god of death so much that it’s a wonder how he has been able to survive until now y’know. But it looks like he is also loved as much by the god of fortune.」

The berserk chimera had swelled up until it was twice, no, triple its former size while making a bizarre scream. And then, the innumerable number of lumps of meat had already transformed into tiny berserk chimeras. Clones appeared at both sides of and behind Kousuke while all those were surrounding them.

These were the clones that accompanied Bernard’s group and the other squads.

The clone that reinforced Bernard had a faraway look. Its information was also shared with Kousuke’s real body, so he also got a faraway look from the scene「you are already a fantasy」where Bernard was continuously collecting death flags per second; however, he was also continuously escaping from the clutches of the god of death due to strong fortunes that continuously came at him per second too.

GIIIIIIIIIIIIH!!

A wave of flesh attacked at the same time as the shriek. Yes, it was a wave. The small chimeras were also adding onto it, turning the attack into a grandiosely spreading wave that looked like a thick membrane. It spread out everywhere toward Kousuke and his clones.

「Now then, the clones have also come back, except the one guarding the Grant family, so let’s settle this quickly. …… Haa, I actually don’t want to use this thoughh. I rea~lly don’t want to use this thoughh. But there is no time, and it’s for the sake of the children. It can’t be helped, huh.」

Kousuke leapt on the roof of a large truck and looked at his three clones that were in the three corners of the room. They were showing a wry smile, or possible a melancholic expression. He then took out something from his breast pocket.

It was a crimson jewel.

The shining jewel the size of a pinky had a metallic vine coiling around it, and it was linked with a thin chain. Kousuke wore that on his neck, and then he gripped the crimson jewel tightly.

Perhaps the berserk chimera had its survival instinct stimulated by Kousuke’s freezing magic because ahead of his gaze there was its figure already swelling up until it nearly reached the ceiling without stopping its regeneration and propagation. The case holding the children seemed tough, but surely it would reach its endurance limit soon. There could be no more postponement; they needed to be rescued even for a second faster.

Then, there was no way he could hesitate.

No matter how much Kousuke himself shirked away from it. No matter how much compensation he would need to pay for it.

He liberated it.

That taboo power! It once caused even the demon king to raise an anguished voice, the true and tremendous power!

「Endure this, my willpower! Here we go! ——”Limit Break-“!!!」

Right after that, a crimson magic power burst out from Kousuke. The intense magic power spiraled and blew up violently as though it pierced the ceiling. Magic power and storm howled thunderously. Kousuke’s figure was enveloped by the radiance of the demon king and became indistinct.

The berserker chimera pulled back the tentacles that it was going to stretch out. It was as though it was getting frightened of the existence before its eyes.

Ki, GiiIIIH The berserk chimera cried. A voice resounded toward it from inside the crimson tornado.

「O pitiful existence. Your time of liberation has come.」

That voice sounded as though it reverberated from the whole space. The crimson torrent was starting to converge, and a shadow of human appeared from inside the dazzling radiance.

The black silhouette took a step forward from the large truck. Naturally, it didn’t fall down or anything. A ripple appeared in midair, and the shadow advanced on it.

「This abyss lord, will save thee.」

The raging magic power torrent dispersed in a flash. In exchange, the crimson radiance was increasing in might and enveloped the shadow. The shadow swung one hand widely and turned his body magnificently. The shadow lowered one leg slightly, and his other hand moved toward his chest. His sunglasses glittered with a flash despite the impossible angle.

Shadow.

Yes,

「My name is Kousuke E Abyssgate-! The noble of the abyss, and the right hand of the demon king! The next patriarch of the head reaper rabbit (planned)-! I am the one that brings salvation and the end for thee! Now, welcome it with the shriek of heavy thunder!」

It was the abyss lord who was highly spirited more than usual!

The berserk chimera went, ‘anyway, tentacles first!’, it attacked following its instinct.

「EE—XCELLEENT-! No matter what is going on, it’s a good thing to not hesitate.」(TN: The ‘excellent’ is said in broken English, ‘eeekusereentoo’)

The lord who finally used Western language called a clone to appear in front of him. The clone destroyed the tentacles using “Enryuuga”. Behind the clone that became a shield slashing down the tentacles, the lord pushed up his sunglasses sharply while continuing his words.

「Although, whether it will work or not is a different matter. Fix your eyes. At the true form of the endless abyss!」

Right after that, multiple presences were born. A further four clones were created *from the clone* that became the lord's shield.

Not only that but besides the original three clones that evacuated to the room's corners, four clones materialized at each of their sides.

Those four clones leapt toward the chimeras, and at the same time, each clone created four clones midair. Those four clones then created four more clones. And from those four additional clones came a further four clones. Four clones, to four clones, to four clones, to four clones-!

――Abyss Lord's Exclusive Limit Break Artifact "Last Zell(just don't use it on me okay?) Ver.2.1"

The last derivative skill of the "Assassin" vocation, "Abyss Lord", originally raised the foundation ability of the user, breaking the limit along with the passage of time. The crimson jewel that was bestowed by the demon king blew away this passage of time and forcefully multiplied the user's ability by five times.

And then, regarding this Abyss Lord's activation state――Kousuke divided it into five stages that he called "Depth I" up to "Depth V"――He would be able to create one more clone when he entered "Depth III", and when he entered "Depth V", the clones that originally could only be created by the main body of the abyss lord could then be created by the clones themselves too.

It would usually take a considerable amount of time for Kousuke to reach this "Depth V", but Last Zell cleared away that limitation.

However, naturally, there was compensation for it.

□□□□□□□□□□□The abyss is without end——□□□□□□□□□□□

The lord multiplied into sixty-four people almost within an instant. They charged from four directions while saying something simultaneously.

The tentacles stretched out from the small chimeras that were scattered everywhere inside the large underground parking area, and with the tentacles that were launched from the main body, their number was already enough to form a cage of piercing spears that left no place to escape. Even if some of them got mowed down by the short sword shining with the azure flame, it was a herculean task to handle all of them.

Half of the sixty-four lords were cut down within an instant. However,

□□□□□□□□□□□There is no end to the darkness of the hell□□□□□□□□□□□

In the next moment, more than 160 lords manifested. Using their skills and bodies, they became the shield for the clones behind them and cut open a path of survival.

□□□□□□□□□□□There is no hope to capture the abyss——□□□□□□□□□□□

The small chimeras widened the membrane of flesh in an attempt to swallow the lords. The attack with a vast surface area was already an area attack. The lords used other clones as stepping stones, or they threw the others to escape from the range of the membrane. The rest enveloped their bodies with Katon and launched kamikaze attacks at the small chimeras.

□□□□□□□□□□□There is no meaning in touching the abyss——□□□□□□□□□□□

No matter how many of them were pierced, no matter how many of them were splashed with liquid, in the first place, the clones weren’t made of flesh despite having a solid body. There was no way the clones could be altered; the small chimeras were helpless against the overly extravagant suicide bombing skill.

□□□□□□□□□□□It’s a pipe dream to destroy the abyss——□□□□□□□□□□□

The number of lords that disappeared from suicide bombing already surpassed a hundred easily; however, by the time a beat or two passed, three hundred lords began attacking in waves.

□□□□□□□□□□□Despair to the resentful——□□□□□□□□□□□

They were pierced and vanished. Twice the number came back in their place.

They were pulverized and vanished. Twice the number came back in their place.

They were smashed and vanished. Twice the number came back in their place!

□□□□□□□□□□□Hope for those who searched——□□□□□□□□□□□

The small chimeras were reduced to ash one by one in succession with certainty by unceasing attacks that had no hesitation of being a sacrifice. The berserk chimera was surrounded by more than three hundred lords and got its body thoroughly scraped off from the outside.

□□□□□□□□□□□O you that stand in our way, engrave into that body□□□□□□□□□□□

GIIIIIII-, the berserk chimera shrieked as though to drive away the terror it felt. It shrank its body for a moment, and right after that, it launched tentacles in every direction. What was different about that, was that all its tentacles that previously were as thick as a child’s arm, were now reduced to the size of a finger.

It might be sensing the danger of being obliterated. It might be doing this to fulfill its survival instinct. It seemed to optimize its attack method toward the enemy.

It would be appropriate to call the thin and sharp thrusts as an intense rain. They were assaulting straight ahead, from the ceiling, or from the floor. The flesh thrusts that might reach in the several thousands were a symbol of despair.

More than a hundred lords were terminated by that.

□□□□□□□□□□□Moan from the endless nightmare□□□□□□□□□□□

And so, it was opposed by a thousand lords.

They wielded a short sword of azure flame, but be that as it may, the weapon they utilized was their own body. Like a nightmare without end, each vanishing was filled with manifestation, and each time the number was increased in an infinite hell. Even with Last Zell put into operation, it didn’t change that he was in the “Abyss Lord activated state”. His spec that was continuously increasing finally outdid the propagation and regeneration speed of the berserk chimera.

□□□□□□□□□□□We art the incarnation of the abyss. The dream of darkness, the black ephemeral, everything—□□□□□□□□□□□

This was exactly, the right hand of the demon king.

This was exactly, the true form of the one that was said by his comrades to be “actually the one who was nonchalantly on the level of humanity’s strongest”.

This was exactly, what accomplished that grand feat of inflicting a scratch on that demon king.

More than a thousand abyss lords launching unceasingly, multiplying chuuni speech, and gestu——not that, waves of attacks without end!

「Lukewarm-. Do you think you can bring me down with something of that level! If you wish to drive away the abyss, then you need to bring at least a gatling railgun!」

The name of him who spoke of such absurdity, let’s say it, one more time.

「Now-, this is the closing of the curtain! You can boast to king Yama in that world-. You can say, that the one who granted me my end is that person! Yes, it’s by this me, Abisuuge—to-!」

The lord yelled his own name a bit like a native speaker (?), or rather, his pronunciation sounded like his tongue got rolled up. The lord then crossed his arms with the short sword, still in a reverse grip, as his body bent forward with tension.

The small chimeras were already annihilated. The regeneration and propagation of the berserk chimera also couldn’t catch up anymore; its body had been reduced to the size of a big truck.

Like that, one of the clones scraped off the flesh even while its body was pierced by tentacles. At that place, a solid glitter could be seen faintly. Without a doubt, that was the case where the children were locked in.

「Gather-, my compatriots-. This is the time for salvation!」

The lord’s order thundered. Several dozen clones lined up instantly in front of the lord and took the same stance.

The lords grinned broadly with fearlessness, and his eyes opened widely in a snap (Warning: It was done behind the sunglasses, so other people couldn’t see it).

「Mine abyss, can you see through it? ——Abyss-style Martial Art – Attack Form Secret Finishing Move「Kokusou – Arashi Kage Ryuuha(Surging fang, shadow claw, know the nightmare of the dark abyss)」–!!」(TN: Black Phantom – Storm Shadow Flow Rending)

The abyss lords sprinted. They became a single vertical row and charged the berserk chimera.

The berserk chimera tried to launch its tentacles, it tried to leap and become a cannonball with its lump of meat, but the clones in the front row handled it, and even if they couldn’t handle it and vanished, the next lords would eliminate it.

And then, the clones that arrived at the berserk chimera in the blink of the eye used their bodies to whittle the flesh wall down and got annihilated. The following clones each recklessly hurled themselves to the berserk chimera and opened up a hole with certainty on one point of the flesh body!

It was a storm-like assault without any pause by the black shadows. That waves of attacks that could be mistaken as a

single great lance, it looked like, yes……

Jet Strea○ Attack!

In the next moment, a sound *boba-* came into hearing, and the flesh on the other side of the berserk chimera was blown away. At the same time, a lord flew out from there. A beat later, a case that was wrapped with steel string flew out.

The lord rotated in midair and swung his short sword at the case that was flying and following him. The case was instantly split apart into pieces, and three screaming children flew out from there.

It seemed that they didn’t faint even after getting swallowed by the berserk chimera. Normally, anyone would lose consciousness from excessive fear but……. What could be done now was only to pray so that they wouldn’t get traumatized by this.

The lord, along with his clones, caught the children that were thrown out in midair and landed lightly.

「Boy, it’s safe already.」

「E, eh?」

The boy that was let down was looking around with greatly restless eyes due to his great confusion. And then, the boy witnessed the unrealistic scene of countless humans with the same appearance surrounding the berserk chimera, and he exposed his shock with「EeEEEEH!?」.

The boy and girl that were let down by the clones beside him were also similarly flustered while on the verge of tears.

□Hmm. I guess this is a bit too intense for children. But, I ask you to be relieved. This nightmare is over already. I’m ending it!□

The lords spread out. In the center was the berserk chimera.

While the eyes of the boys and girl turned into dots, the lords simultaneously touched one hand to their sunglasses (of course, the stylish pushing up motion couldn’t be forgotten), they averted half their body slightly behind, and then their other hand pointed quietly toward the berserk chimera.

□□□□□□□□□□The sky of hell, the world of fabrication, the revolving black sun——□□□□□□□□□□

That was a chant. The only magic that the lord learned, the magic of destruction that once tore down the logic of the world.

□□□□□□□□□□The night sky collapses, the star of calamity shines darkly. What is released is a fragment of the abyss——□□□□□□□□□□

A finishing move among finishing moves that couldn’t even be invoked by the lord if he wasn’t in a state of “Depth V”.

□□□□□□□□□□Converge, disintegrate, swallow without pause, smash without stopping——□□□□□□□□□□

Sparks surged. It was a phenomenon of electrical discharge that looked like black lightning. It was generated with the berserk chimera as the center.

The berserk chimera launched its tentacles looking somewhat desperate, but the clones blocked them in front of the chanting lords and cut them down altogether.

□□□□□□□□□□That is a world of interstice without light. The embrace of demise. The birth of a new providence――□□□□□□□□□□

And so, that thing propagating into the world, which destroyed even the Holy Precincts――the attack of the protector that brought about the dawn.

The main body of the lord made a beautiful turn that was without any meaning, and then along with a really magnificent pose, he spun the last sentence, and let it resound to the world.

□Be swallowed by the infinitude of darkness and perish――Gravity magic ultimate secret art □Kokutenkyuu(black whirling darkness of abyss)□□(TN: Black Heaven Suffering)

At the center of the surging black sparks, a small black sphere manifested.

The sphere was whirling in disorder, and right after that, it swelled up to a size with a diameter of a meter and began to suck anything and everything in the surroundings with a fierce might. No, perhaps it should be said that rather than sucking, it was already twisting the space altogether while compressing it to the center.

――Gravity magic “Black Heaven Suffering”

It was the gravity magic’s secret art that the liberator Miledy Raisen once used in order to save the world.

Compared to what she used, this magic here was a shoddy one where its immatureness was standing out. But, even so, here in this place, it possessed enough strength to destroy this monster that could possibly regenerate and propagate if

there was even just a fragment of its cell remaining——it was truly legendary magic.

GIIH, GIIIIIIIIH!!

Perhaps that should be called its shriek of death and agony. The berserk chimera was pulled in as though the lump of meat was crumbling from the edges, expulsed toward a world of super compression and destruction.

A beat.

The large truck that was entangled by stretched out tentacles so that the berserk chimera wouldn’t get pulled in was sucked in without any resistance and crushed by the pressure. In the end, the berserk chimera became completely terminated.

The black celestial sphere shrunk before vanishing as though it melted into space. At the same time, the many clones also dispersed, as though to say that they had finished their role.

The end was very silent.

「……Onii-chan, who, are you?」

The boys and girl forgot their trembling, their crying, and also their huddling with each other. Their heart was stolen by a piece of legend before their eyes. One of them asked with a small voice toward the lord while still feeling astonished.

The lord looked back over his shoulder. The gaze of the little children turned toward him.

The lord went□fuh□toward them, and then he answered while sharply pushing up his sunglasses.

□Oneself? I am……just a hero that you can find anywhere.□

Thinking that it would be inappropriate to say things like “demon king” or “abyss” toward the cornered children, the lord answered after showing a thinking gesture for a while. Hearing that, for a moment the children looked puzzled and they looked at each other’s face.

But, the next moment, they showed a smile that was like a blooming flower. It was the greatest sparkling bright smile, one that children would show toward a hero just like in a movie. It was a smile that was overflowing with conviction, that heroes certainly existed, with admiration, and with hope filling their heart——it was the greatest reward there was for a hero.

The lord that received that——crumbled down right after.

□O, Onii-chan!?□

□Hero-san!□

□Ninja-lookalike something-san!□

The children rushed in a panic toward the lord that abruptly fell on all fours with his head hanging down. And then, their face approached looking worried, and they heard that whisper.

□Hahah fuhihih, I messed up saying “oneself”. Even I don’t understand what I’m saying……it hurts, my heart hurts~□

The children lifted their face and exchanged gazes once more. Even though they had no words, what they wanted to say was conveyed to each other clearly.

That was,

——Just what is a hero?

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

When I wrote in high spirits, the number of letters become like this……

I will post one more chapter today or tomorrow.

=>Was what I thought, but I forgot my Sunday work……

I’m sorry, looks like the update will be as usual.

I also wrote this in my activity report, but Overlap-sama’s homepage is uploaded with the newest chapter of the comic version.

Kick rabbit is really bad news.

If you are interested, please go take a look without fail.

Also, it’s also uploaded on the homepage, but volume 4 seems to be for sale.

Please treat it well.

It seems the next update will be at 6 P.M. Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 220

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Berserk, Was in Your Heart Right From the Start

---

go-go-go That sound that sounded like earth rumbling, and impact sound *DON-* that resounded to the bottom of stomach, could be heard.

And then the one who screamed cutely「Hyaah」to that while hopping *pyon* was Emily who was chasing after Professor Down.

Vanessa, who was running beside Emily, wasn't perturbed at all. Perhaps also because it was just the two of them right now, Vanessa was currently in the cool beauty Vanessa-san mode like when they met for the first time. Seeing Vanessa like that, Emily looked down feeling a little embarrassed.

「An expression of shyness――priceless.」

「Aa, yep. Even when you are in work mode, the inside is still Danessa.」

While the sound of *gan-gan-* from the shoes hitting the metal floor was resounding, Emily made a dry smile at Vanessa who was saying that kind of thing with a crisp expression.

「At any rate, Kousuke-san is really going at it flashily.」

「You're right. That must be just how absurd that berserker is.」

「A lump of meat――just what in the world, that……」

Emily spoke her deduction to Vanessa's whisper. It was in line with the answer that Kousuke reached personally. It was a deduction that showed the depth of humanity's sin.

The berserker chimera possessed the ability of regeneration and propagation that humans, in general, couldn't possibly stand a chance against. When Vanessa heard the true identity of it, her expression moved slightly. That wasn't because she was worried for Kousuke, it was something that was directed to Emily who could talk about her deduction so calmly.

「I understand now that it has absurd abilities but……Doctor Grant, you don't look like you are particularly worried.」

Emily felt the glance of Vanessa on her. However, Emily replied without averting her gaze from straight ahead.

「I am worried. No matter how strong Kousuke is, there are many ways things can possibly go wrong. He might even get injured. It was the first time I saw Kousuke that angry, so I'm also feeling uneasy that he might do something reckless.」

「Is, that so?」

Even so, Emily looked relatively calm. Vanessa tilted her head at that. Seeing Vanessa like that, Emily smiled wryly while continuing to speak「But」.

「Even so, that person……is my hero after all.」

That was why she believed. That no matter what kind of difficulty he encountered, no matter what kind of irrationality he was exposed to, no matter what kind of pinch he fell into, in the end, he would surely overcome it all and fulfill his promise. He would save the children, liberate that pitiful existence from the wedge of this world, send flying that mercenary who was rotten to the core and then rush to her side. Yes, she believed.

「That's why, I, I have to do what I ought to do. I have come here by acting selfishly. I cannot afford to be flustered or anything. Looking back will be an insult to Kousuke who believed in me and sent me ahead.」

「……」

Vanessa kept sending sidelong glances at Emily. And then, she nodded「yep yep」as though she understood something.

「Doctor Grant.」

「What?」

Emily stared straight ahead and advanced without hesitation. A smile emerged on Vanessa's lips while she spoke.

「You are a good woman. Surely, Kousuke-san too will accept you. Leave the hotel reservation to me.」

「Bufuh!? Wha, what are you meowtering out!? Really, what are you meowtering, Danessa!」

Emily slid down due to the flow of the talk that suddenly went toward a vulgar direction. She almost kissed the floor lightly. She stood up in a hurry and started running once

more, then with a reddening face she glared piercingly at Danessa. She prepared the firing of her cat punch.

Although, the Vanessa in question was making a puzzled expression instead. That irritated Emily excessively.

「Doctor Grant. In a movie or film, in the last scene, the main character will kiss or bed the heroine. In the case this time too, it will be the best if it's concluded with Kousuke-san and Doctor Grant acting a passionate bed scene. Leave the scene recording to this me, Vanessa.」

「Be be be be be, bed scene!? Idiot-. Danessa you idiot-! There is no way we will do something like that! No, I'm not saying that we will never do it but……that, I only thought a little about it, like 'I too someday will~', but if I'm asked by Kousuke it's not like I'll refuse……wait that's wro――ng-! That's not it! Or rather, what's with you! What do you mean recording huh! Just what kind of position!」

「Any kind of event needs to have a memento about it left behind. So please feel relieved. I'll also participate in the middle. A sticky and wet, passionate threeso――」

「Don't say any more than that-!」

Emily howled. Her straight-man skill had already reached the maximum number. At the same time, a cat punch was let fly. That punch which was unleashed under the straight-man skill splendidly bored in on Danessa's cheek.

「? Why, was I punched?」

「This person is hopeless already. I have to ask Kousuke to turn you into a splendid villager.」

Surely, Vanessa was gifted with the skill Serious Breaker. Emily was feeling disheartened but still managed to resolve herself to use the final option.

Like that they advanced forward, passed through several doors, and before long, the two of them came out into a passage with a waterway in it. It seemed that they had passed through an underground passage below the research facility and came out in the water purification facility.

After they passed by a place that had several things that seemed to be pipes and tanks lined up, the two of them put their hands on the door in front of them. Vanessa made Emily back away while she entered the room.

That room seemed to be placed above, and was wholly dedicated to, a water tank. Half of the room was used up by machinery while the other side of the fence became a watering place.

Perhaps this was a place to temporarily store the water that was flowing in from the waterway. It seemed that it was being opened right now, so under the floor was a fierce water current that was flowing toward somewhere.

It was a vertically long room, so they could see a stair that continued to an upper floor, a passage, and then a door. The door of the second floor was located at the southern end of the room, and there was a bridge-style passage that connected both doors.

Emily and Vanessa sent their gaze toward the door of that second floor――

「Ah, teache――」

「Doctor Grant-」

There was a flapping lab coat. It was clear whose coat it was. Emily was trying to call out because Down’s figure had vanished to the other side of the door. However, Vanessa pulled Emily closer to her cautiously.

Right after that, *gan-* a loud voice entered their ears. Something fell behind Emily and Vanessa, in front of the door they had just gone through. When they looked back in surprise, there was a large rectangle case the size of a Boston bag there. It was the thing that Down carried, along with a leather bag, when he escaped. It seemed that he threw it at the time when Emily and Vanessa entered the room.

The sound *batan-* of the door on the second-floor closing resounded.

At that moment,

□□□□□KIIIIIIIIIIIII-□□□□□

Such cries struck the two’s eardrums, and at the same time, the case bloated up from inside, and it was destroyed. It seemed that it wasn’t made from a material that was really tough in the first place as the cracks spread in the blink of an eye and the clasp snapped.

Instantly, something leapt out and attacked Emily and Vanessa. Vanessa placed Emily behind her for protection while she fired.

However, that creature’s speed wasn’t normal. Also, its movement was strangely irregular, and so the bullet Vanessa fired missed.

That creature kicked on the floor and leapt toward her face right away; however, Vanessa only narrowed her eyes

quietly without even any agitation. Her long leg kicked up vertically to deal with it.

go- The thing was kicked up together with the vivid sound of bones breaking; it then twirled in midair before it then crashed on the floor some distance away.

「That is……a monkey.」

「Seems like it. It looks like an adult, but seeing that case's size, it seems that before this it was an infant monkey.」

A bullet struck the infant monkey in a flash when it slowly stood up. The moment it raised its face a splendid headshot finished the berserker animal——Berserker Monkey, and like that it crumbled down and white smoke rose from its corpse.

However, they couldn't let their guard down. The reason was the presences that spread out to surround the two of them——the Berserker Monkeys still numbered four in total.

「Strange.」

「……Indeed. Doctor Grant. Please back down slowly to the wall. Toward that gap between the machine and the pillar.」

Vanessa guessed the meaning of Emily's mutter, and she increased her cautiousness to the maximum while slowly backing away as though to make herself a shield.

Yes, they had the leeway to back away. The berserkers that usually rush ahead following their instinct were taking a fixed distance from Vanessa and Emily, as though they were observing the situation, or they were being careful.

Actually, these Berserker Monkeys had wariness toward danger instilled inside them using a method similar to the

Pavlovian dog experiment. It was an experiment to make berserkers that usually only rush forward foolhardily cope to a certain degree toward firearms. Seeing a gun muzzle and hearing a gunshot, those conditions along with the awareness that “something painful would come flying”, at the same time, were planted into them.

It could be seen whether the experiment failed or not from this. The four berserker monkeys were surrounding Vanessa and Emily. Their wariness was plain to see. However, they also didn’t retreat due to their instinctual belligerence, or their desire to eat.

Vanessa made Emily withdraw to the gap between a machine and a pillar before she pulled the trigger as though to say that she didn’t give a damn about that wariness.

However, the berserker monkeys who tried all they could to not stand in front of the gun muzzle were already out of the firing line by the time the trigger was pulled.

So this means that even without an antidote, the progress of converting the drug into a weapon is advancing steadily, isn’t it.

Even an expert marksman like Vanessa couldn’t hit the target easily in front of the berserker monkeys that were taking evasive actions with all their strength by using their beastly agility.

gachin- Such a sound rang out, and the gun’s chamber was fixed in place in a slide-out position. It ran out of bullets.

As though aiming for that moment, the berserker monkeys went out to attack simultaneously.

Vanessa was in danger——was how it seemed.

「An agent of the security bureau isn’t so soft that they can be taken off guard by the likes of monkey.」

That muttered words were the truth. Vanessa’s hand thrust out smoothly toward one of the assaulting monkeys, and the moment that hand made contact, the monkey was blown away in another direction.

And then Vanessa stepped forward without pause and threw the empty gun magazine she had taken out. A berserker monkey rapidly approaching from the left was checked with that before Vanessa crouched down swiftly and launched a fierce upper roundhouse kick.

By crouching down, the berserker monkey that approached from the right lost sight of its target, and it sailed over above Vanessa’s head. The monkey that leapt from the front received a fierce roundhouse kick that sprang from a blind spot and got blown away.

The left berserker monkey that got checked by the empty magazine came flying in with a time difference. Vanessa had recovered her posture by that time, and she thrust out her arm once more.

The berserker monkey opened its mouth with a shriek *kiiii-*; however, in the next instant, the monkey felt a faint touch on its arm, but at the same time, its field of vision reversed, and it fell into a panic. Then it noticed that it had received a severe impact on its back and was staring at the ceiling.

And then, a gun muzzle cut into its field of view. The sense of danger instilled into it ordered it to evade but——too slow. *pan-* A light sound rang and with it a wind hole opened in the berserker monkey’s forehead.

The berserker monkey that was the first to be blown away in another direction was going along the ceiling and assaulted from overhead.

But, as expected it couldn’t reach. A hand that thrust out in a flowing motion softly touched the berserker monkey’s head as though in a caress, and then it was forced into a backflip with fierce momentum. Even the physical ability of the monkey was in vain, and the berserker monkey crashed on the ground. It then met the same fate as the previous monkey.

Without even any time to wake up, a shot to the head splattered its brain.

The last monkey moved as though it was crawling on the ground in order to bite at Vanessa’s leg. In an instant, a knee fell down. Perhaps because of its instinct, the berserker monkey leapt to the side right away, but its wrist was grasped.

Its wrist was twisted, and its joint was instantly locked. For a berserker that didn’t feel pain it was possible for it to shake off the hold without balking at getting a broken bone, but even so, for a few moments, it couldn’t avoid moving while following the limit of its body’s mobility. And then, the berserker monkey’s vector of inertia and center of gravity were directed at that instant, and it quickly got pressed down with its face against the floor.

A knee fell on its back to stop it from moving. Because the right point was pressed, it had no room to use its physical strength. It wasn’t even given a chance to even struggle. *gorit-* The gun muzzle pressed on the back of its head and fired its bullet with no hesitation.

“With this it’s all of them.”

Vanessa’s sharp gaze ran through the surroundings.

What she used was a technique of jujitsu and aikido. Vanessa’s body was that of a female. No matter how much she tried to deny it, it was a fact that her pure physical strength was inferior to males. That was why she polished numerous techniques based on ‘soft and fair goes far’.

What about powerful offensive abilities? A single bullet would serve that purpose. No matter how muscular the opponent was, even if it was against a monster, she could knock them down unquestionably if only one of her hands could touch them. For the rest, she just needed to pull the trigger.

This was the strength of Vanessa who was said to be at the top level in close-quarter combat among the agents that belonged under the security bureau. Even though recently she was called as Danessa a lot, her strength was the real thing.

——That was exactly the reason he created this moment because he didn’t underestimate the people of the security bureau by any means. The moment when Vanessa was away from the protection target.

Agent, protect her if you can.

-, Doctor Grant!

Unnoticed, Down’s face peeked out from the door on the second floor with a gun muzzle aimed. ——Toward none other than Emily.

Vanessa leapt in front of Emily as though she was flying. It was at the same time as when Down fired.

A dry bursting sound rang consecutively. Vanessa’s body jerked. Fresh blood scattered in a splat and dirtied Emily’s cheek.

「Kahah, gaa, a」

「Vanessa-」

Vanessa crashed on the ground and rolled several times. She then tried to stand up right away, but the impact clogging her lungs made her unable to breathe well. She could only crouch from the intense pain cruising through her whole body as she was unable to move.

Emily, whose facial expression changed, rushed to her. She made Vanessa face up and embraced her inside her arms. Blood could be seen flowing from her shoulder, arm, and thigh, but Emily couldn’t see any blood from the torso that got shot first. Even while panicking, Emily took off the suit’s jacket and took a look. There she saw four bullets squashed inside a bulletproof vest that blocked those bullets.

It seemed that the bulletproof jacket barely saved her life. Although, putting aside the gunshot wound in her arm and shoulder, the bleeding on her thigh was at the level that couldn’t be left alone. Most likely an important artery was grazed there.

「As I thought, I’m no good in something like this. Just what do I need to do to get a headshot I wonder?」

Footsteps rang while Down advanced on the upper passage of the second floor. He stopped in the middle and aimed his gun while staring at the defeated berserker monkeys. There weren’t any particularly strong feelings that could be felt from his words and voice, whether from shooting a person or aiming a gun at Emily. Emily bit her lip strongly from that.

But, right now wasn’t the time to complain. Emily took out a container that looked like an experiment vial from her breast pocket. She opened the lid and made Vanessa drink half of it while she poured the remaining bit by bit on the wounds.

Immediately the blood that was flowing out like a river was clearly lessening. Vanessa’s pained breathing was also recovering its regularity slightly.

「……My god. Emily. Emily, by any chance, have you improved『Berserk』in this short amount of time? Or is that a product of an idea that you didn’t tell anyone, even me? As expected, you are really outrageous.」

Down’s eyes were shining ominously at the unknown medicine that was displaying a recovery ability that was impossible for existing medicine.

However, his deduction was completely off the mark.

What Emily used was healing medicine from another world that Kousuke handed to her in preparation for the worst case scenario. As expected, its effect couldn’t give a complete recovery until the bullets remaining inside the body were taken out, but it was able to at least stop the bleeding completely, soften the pain, and heal to a certain degree.

Vanessa didn’t look like she could move properly, but even so, she conveyed that she was okay with her gaze. Emily sighed in relief.

And then, her gaze struck at Down who was looking down at them from the second floor. It was a calm gaze; however, a rage that couldn’t be hidden was dwelling there.

「Teacher. You shot at me there. Without any hesitation.」

「……That’s right. However, I want you to not misunderstand. I wasn’t trying to kill you there. For a researcher like me to stop that security bureau’s agent, I have no other way than that.」

Down, who knew that he wouldn’t be able to shake off the pursuit from the beginning, implemented a strategy that used berserker monkeys to separate Emily from the troublesome bodyguard, and then he shot at Emily so that Vanessa would cover her without any leeway to dodge or counterattack.

In other words, because he had no confidence that he would be able to snipe Vanessa, he did it in a way so that Vanessa herself would be the one that entered his line of fire.

However, that didn’t change the fact that Emily was in his line of fire. If Vanessa didn’t make it in time, then there was no proof that Emily would be safe.

「But, it’s fine in its own way even if I got shot. Isn’t that right?」

「……I didn’t want you to die though.」

It seemed that it would’ve been fine as long as she was just alive. But even that was suspicious if it was true or not in this situation.

「Teacher, please tell me your motive. I came here in order to listen to that. Surely, it will be meaningless, and nothing that I have lost will come back, but……even so, I want to listen to your true feelings. Teacher-, these five years that you spent with me, with all of us, is there any meaning in it? Do we mean anything to you? The thing that you want to obtain even by betraying all of us, just what in the world is it?」

That question was said calmly, but it sounded as though she was going to vomit blood.

Weren’t they a family? Didn’t he save her when she was cornered? Didn’t he love her? The five years they had spent together since that day, when she was welcomed as family, was all that a lie? Was it something so light that he could easily betray and abandon them?

Down looked down. Her gaze toward Emily was calm, but there was a darkness somewhere in it. He kept aiming his gun without letting his guard down. And then, he answered.

「What I want to obtain, is it? Indeed, it’s a meaningless question. But, if you want to know that, then I’ll tell you. You see, Emily, I merely want to leave behind my name in history.」

「Leave behind your name, in history?」

「That’s right. Some people have their name entered into the textbooks to be read by the future generation; I want to become that kind of human. I want to stay behind in the memory of the people forevermore as a historically great character. Do you understand?」

「For, for something like that……」

「As I thought, you don’t understand.」

Perhaps, there was some kind of reason that left him with no choice but to do something like that. Perhaps there was no other way but for him to abandon them for the sake of something important which he couldn’t let go of no matter what. Those kinds of fleeting thoughts were now splattered with mud and thrown away by Emily.

Emily trembled, perhaps from anger, or perhaps from frustration. Down made a troubled smile.

「Surely you don't understand. The fear of being a human that doesn't matter whether they exist or not, or the emptiness of being forgotten, or the hopelessness to vanish without leaving behind any proof of leaving.」

「Such a thing-, that kind of thing-. There is no way that teacher is a person who doesn't matter whether you exist or not! Just who in the world can forget you!? Me!? My seniors!? Lizzi-nee!? Everyone in the Down classroom, they are going to forget you!? There is no way such a thing will happen! Aren't we who have received your teaching-, the proof of your life!?」

A scream that sounded like pleading reverberated. But, even those words only made Down give a troubled smile; he then shook his head slowly.

「It's not something like that Emily. It's not that kind of a small story. I said it, right? I want to leave my name in history. It's no good with only the personal memory of you all. Something like that cannot erase this terror, this despair, this emptiness inside me.」

「You are……」

Her words, her feelings, they didn't go through. Emily understood that from seeing Down's eyes.

Just what in the world was driving him like this? Emily couldn't understand that.

The person called Reginald Down was born in an average family, graduated from university with an excellent result, entered the path of a researcher, encountered his wife,

became a lecturer, his wife died from a sickness, he welcomed distressed students and sent out a lot of excellent disciples to the outside world. Emily heard such a story from Down.

Was there any factor somewhere in that life that drove him to madness?

"You cannot understand? I guess that's how it is for you. Even if other people can understand, Emily, you surely cannot understand it."

"Why, do you say that?"

"Because, you are a genius."

"Eh?"

Emily Grant was a genius. That was why it was impossible for her to understand Reginald Down for eternity.

Emily was dumbfounded after hearing that statement from Down. She felt as though her whole self was denied. Emily who was lonely because she was a genius, the one who taught her that such a thing was irrelevant was none other than Down. But now he discarded Emily because she was a genius.

"You won't understand the feeling of a mediocre person who saw off the back of a genius. That what someone can achieve is decided by the ability that person is provided with from the start."

"But, but teacher, you are an excellent educator even throughout the university, even the other professors respected teacher——"

That’s because I’m a mediocre person. Because I’m mediocre, I understand just what it is that someone doesn’t understand. I understand what needs to be done so that they can understand. I have kept searching, that’s why I understand what other people search for. I understand what makes anyone happy, and what I need to do to push the back of others. That’s because all of those were also paths that I myself had gone through. That’s all.

Down sighed deeply and looked at somewhere far away with empty eyes while continuing his words that sounded like he was talking to himself.

No matter how many efforts I piled up, the geniuses are clearing over all those efforts easily. When I thought of one idea, they will already create a hundred ideas and produce results. Just how much emptiness I felt each time that happened, is surely something that they don’t understand.

Surely what was reflected inside his eyes, was the figure of his students who were already graduated and had been recognized in society.

Emily didn’t understand. Every time teacher saw the seniors that came out on television shows or in magazines; he would make a proud expression. He would be happy as though it was about himself. Was all of those just acting?

Was he actually boiling with emotions of hatred and jealousy, that he should be the one that got praised, that he should be the one that was granted with glory?

Even so, they would say that I am their teacher and that somehow consoled my heart. Having all of them, including you Emily and everyone in the Down classroom, adoring me as “the educator Reginald Down”, it supported me. It gave

me acceptance and a small satisfaction that it’s enough with this.

His affection was the real thing. His feeling of wanting to become other’s strength was true. Even if he couldn’t stand on the front stage, Down was able to maintain his self by doing that. The trust and gratitude of his students somehow diverted Down from his dirty vanity that should be called a deep-rooted delusion.

Then, why?

Isn’t that obvious? That was because Berserk was created.

A hitch leaked out from Emily’s mouth.

Berserk, was?

Yes, Berserk. Emily, you are without a doubt a genius. That is a miraculous drug. It changes humans into something that is not a human, aa, that’s right. It’s a miracle! Just how many applications can be found from it if it’s continued to be researched!? The result is clear! It will be a revolution of the world!

Te, teacher……

Down put one hand on his temple in excitement and laughed loudly. That figure was truly abnormal. The figure of the kind and gentle Down inside Emily’s memory was vanishing.

There is no doubt! This is a great exploit that will leave the name in history! All those results left behind by all my students until now are just like trash in front of Berserk! You will become a historical character! And I am the father of

that! I will leave my name as the father of a revolution! Do you understand!? ——No, surely you don’t understand. That’s why in front of this miracle you were able to say bullshit like「This is dangerous so let’s destroy it」-「

」-「

pan- With a dry sound, the floor nearby Emily burst open. The excited Down unconsciously shot. Down went ‘hah’ at the bursting sound he made and readjusted his breathing, and then he made a gentle smile with a disgusting easiness.

「I got flustered at that time. No matter how much I explain to you about the “possibility” of「Berserk」 you won’t change your decision to destroy it. If I tried too hard at persuading you, I’d lose your trust and my standing as “father”. There also wasn’t any leeway timewise. After all, I didn’t know when you would erase the data.」

「That was why, you took it out?」

「That’s right. There is my disciple at the leadership of Gamma Pharmaceutical, and I relied on him. But never in my wildest dream would I have thought that it would be an underworld organization that has this kind of facility though. I thought it was the will of heaven. Finally, the time to be rewarded has come even to this me who continued to only perform services for other people.」

But, it couldn’t go that easily. No matter how much he researched the stolen data and drug, he was unable to create the antidote. The research about「Berserk」’s use as a weapon was producing data and application methods to some degree, but the plan of Kaysis and others to scatter 「Berserk」themselves before selling the antidote was quickly coming to an impasse.

They also could only do extremely simple things with the application too; he was unable at all to create something that would shake the world as a “miraculous drug”.

No matter what, he lacked the decisive something to create those.

Yes, he lacked the existence of Emily Grant who was the creator.

「The first incident, those police officers, and then agent Warren too, they were all people under Kaysis. Isn’t that, right? Everything was all to corner me and direct me so that I could only rely on teacher. In order to make me research and develop『Berserk』by my own will.」

「Exactly. It was going well until the middle, but……. Really, they were all doing needless things. Whether it’s the security bureau, or Rod and Dennis too.」

pakit- There was the sound of something snapping. It came from inside Emily’s chest. It was the sound of something important, something really important snapping and then breaking.

Scenes were resurrected in her mind. The nightmare that she absolutely couldn’t forget.

——Milo-oniichan died. He was run over by a berserker, as though he got hit by a truck.

——Sam-oniichan died. He was reduced into a berserker in the end.

——Jessica-oneechan died. Her neck was snapped by the gentle Sam-oniichan.

——Dennis-oniichan died. In order to avoid being transformed into a berserker, he shot his own head.

——Rod-oniichan died. While he was apologizing ‘sorry”.

And then,

——Hendricks-oniichan died. In order to protect Emily and everyone else.

She thought of him as her real older brother. He was slow in some areas, but he was sincere and gentle; a person that was like a pleasant breeze. There wasn’t anyone that could ease the heart by being at their side like him.

——Lizzie-nee died. In order to hide Emily. She made herself as the bait.

She was someone Emily idolized. Sometimes she wasn’t honest, but there wasn’t any other woman that was as gentle and lovely as her. She saw a dream. The scene of Hendricks and Lizzie who she liked very much getting wedded together, smiling with happiness.

She believed.

That everyone in the Down classroom would someday be able to witness such a lovely sight.

All of those——

□So it was I, that pulled the trigger.□

□Hm?□

Emily averted her gaze from Down who tilted his head and slowly stood up. Vanessa called at Emily with a small voice

that was still pained, but Emily only smiled fleetingly and averted her eyes from her.

"Do, Doctor, Grant-. You, cannot. That's-"

"I'm sorry, Vanessa."

Vanessa couldn't hope for a complete recovery with bullets still remaining inside her body. Her internal organs that received four shots, although the bleeding could be stopped, her broken bones still weren't healed. Therefore, it was the best she could do to reach out her hand that was trembling from enduring the intense pain. Yet she failed to grasp Emily's hand.

"Can you not move, Emily?"

Down aimed the gun muzzle at the standing up Emily once more.

"If possible, I don't want to kill you. Even what happened with Hendricks and the others was just an unfortunate accident, it wasn't something that I wished for. That's why, you obediently——"

"I, pulled your trigger."

Emily's mutters cut off Down's words. Her figure with her head hanging down looked really sorrowful. Her worn-out lab coat seemed to be the representation of her heart.

Down seemed like he didn't understand the meaning of Emily's words and tilted his head once more. Emily continued her heavy and dark words toward him.

"You, weren't simply a virtuous person. Inside your heart, there was a madness nesting there all this time. A conceit

that is far, far stronger than other people. A heart that is wishing for praise, was gnawing inside you.」

「……」

「Everyone suppressed those down. The many seniors, everyone in the Down classroom, your family. Despite so, I broke that. The trigger that you wanted to pull but you managed to hold back from, I pulled it――I awakened, the Berserk that was inside of you right from the beginning.」

「So, there was a Berserk in me right from the start. Now you really said it, Emily.」

It was unclear just how the expression of Emily who raised her face slowly should be described as. She looked troubled, she looked as though she would cry anytime now, and she looked like she was resolved about something――it was a strangely transparent expression.

「I was the one that pulled the trigger that awakened the monster, that's why――that's why, I will be the one that pulls the trigger too for ending it.」

「……You will, shoot me?」

There was a small handgun in the hand that Emily lifted. It was Vanessa's spare gun. It seemed that Emily pulled it out when she was standing up. From behind her, Vanessa yelled 「You must not, Doctor Grant!」with a hoarse voice.

「Emily. You will shoot me, who you saw as a father? This me who rescued you?」

「Yes. I'll shoot. I, will end you.」

「For revenge?」

「No. It’s for your own sake. And then, for my sake. Surely.」

「……I see.」

The two who once called each other as father and daughter were now aiming a gun at each other.

There wasn’t any undulation of great emotion that could be seen from their crossing gazes. But, surely they were holding back emotions that couldn’t be expressed with words like an explosive that was on the verge of exploding. Perhaps it wasn’t just Emily who was like that, but Down too.

「Then it can’t be helped. Sayonara, Emily.」

「Yes, sayonara. Teacher.」

The triggers were pulled. Dry bursting sounds thundered.

At the same time, a shadow sprang out in the air. *kin-* A metallic sound resounded.

The bullet was bisected into two. The split up bullet greatly diverted from the target and pierced the wall behind.

「Ko, Kousuke?」

A shadow landed down lightly. That was without a doubt, the catching up Kousuke.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

It will finish with just about two more chapters.

It will make me happy if you readers can enjoy it until the end.

Arifureta Chapter 221

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Kaclick, Like That

AN: This is the second posting for today.

I also posted a chapter before this, so for those of you who didn’t read the previous chapter yet, please pay attention.

Part 1

With a short sword in hand, Kousuke stood between Emily and Down.

Kousuke was staring at Emily from the *front*.

Yes, Kousuke split apart the fired bullet in midair, in order to protect Down behind him. What he cut was Emily’s bullet.

“Ko, Kousuke……why-”

Emily questioned with the gun still raised in her trembling hand.

Kousuke slowly walked forward without any words; he didn’t even glance at Down behind him. And then, when he arrived right in front of Emily who was shaking her head left and right, he put his hand softly on the gun barrel and gently lowered it down.

“Stop it, Emily. This is not your role.”

A calm voice and a composed gaze enveloped Emily.

But, Kousuke felt a slight resistance at his hand that was put on the gun barrel. Emily was rejecting it. He could see a tragic resolve in the eyes of Emily who was shaking her head left and right.

Kousuke didn’t know about the words exchanged between Emily and Down.

Even so, he was able to guess. Just what kind of feeling caused Emily to pull the trigger. Just what kind of feeling caused her to direct killing intent at the man who she thought of as a teacher and also a substitute father.

Surely, she felt hatred. Surely, she also felt resentment. But, her action didn’t come only from being captured by those kinds of negative emotions and madness.

Inside her eyes, there was a sense of purpose. Or possibly, a sense of duty. And then a sense of responsibility.

Kousuke smiled wryly in his heart, thinking that it was just like Emily. Even so, his hand didn’t let go of Emily’s gun that refused to be lowered.

「Kousuke-, this is something that I started, that’s why-. That’s why-」

「Is that really so? I don’t think so though. Well, even so, if that’s what Emily yourself thinks, then I won’t really deny it. However, the end of this path is no good. It’s not a destination where Emily should go.」

He wouldn’t let her go down the path of a murderer. Kousuke responded with a feeling that was as equally strong as the feeling Emily held.

Even so, Emily was about to object further, but Kousuke added his words.

「Because, that’s something that runs counter to the wish of Emily’s big brothers and sisters, right?」

「-」

Yes, no one was demanding this kind of conclusion from Emily. Even though Kousuke had never met them, even though he had never exchanged words with them, just from hearing Emily’s story it was something obvious to Kousuke.

There was no way those who risked their lives to protect their important little sister would wish for this.

「Emily’s dream is to save those who are suffering from sickness, right?」

She wished to heal her grandmother. Emily’s steps that were starting from such a wish, surely it was them who were rooting for it more than anyone.

「They should believe, more than anyone. Emily’s hand, it isn’t something to hurt others. It’s something to heal, to save others.」

That was why not a single one of them blamed Emily for creating the drug of madness. They didn’t escape by saying that it was unrelated to them. They understood that it was an outrageous situation, yet they didn’t leave Emily’s side by any means.

That was why.

「My bad, but I’m not going to allow this, yeah? I absolutely won’t allow only this. No matter how strong Emily’s will is, I’ll stop you with my all. Endo Kousuke, the right-hand man of the demon king and also your protector, this me will stop you with my whole body and soul. Emily Grant has reached this far by doing her best to save others. Something like the closing of a curtain by such a girl murdering someone who was family, I won’t let that happen.」

「Kou, suke……」

Strength left Emily’s hand. *gatan* A sound rang. The handgun that slipped unhindered from Emily’s hand fell to the floor.

Surely, there wasn’t any way to express the overflowing emotion inside her. All the words that existed in this world were too inadequate for that. She wondered, just how many times this body, this heart had been protected. When she needed it, help would be given to her without fail, by Emily Grant’s hero.

Softly, Emily’s head leaned on Kousuke’s chest. *drop, drop* The falling tears on the floor were surely the result of her emotions that couldn’t be spoken aloud appearing in a definite shape.

Kousuke gently put his hand on Emily’s head as she was burying her face on his chest while trembling. He exchanged glances with Vanessa who was relieved while still lying down on the floor and nodded to each other.

「……So even that berserker cannot stop you. I’m keenly feeling the irrationality of your existence thoroughly.」

Down said that with an astonished expression. He wasn’t running away or shooting while Kousuke and Emily were talking. Kousuke turned a suspicious gaze at Down who was like that.

「You aren’t running away?」

「Will you let me run away?」

Down replied so while smiling bitterly. There wasn’t any hostility, or fluster and desperation that were particular for a cornered person that could be seen from him. Kousuke’s gaze narrowed in wonder of what this person was thinking.

And what bothered him above all, was the reason why Down *didn’t shoot.*

At that time, Kousuke only cut Emily’s bullet. He used gravity magic to suck in the bullet toward his blade and slashed the bullet that shifted slightly. Naturally, he planned to use his kunai to repel the bullet that he thought would approach from behind him but……

In the first place, Down didn’t pull his trigger at that time. Down had no intention of killing Emily.

「Just what in the world you are planning?」

「Of course, I’m thinking about myself. I have been thinking only about myself since I stole『Berserk』.」

Kousuke thought that perhaps, by some chance Down actually hesitated to shoot because of his affection toward Emily, but it seemed that wasn’t it. Down’s calm and composed gaze and voice seemed even eerier.

「……I don’t know what you are thinking, but for now, surrender.」

「Oho, you won’t kill me?」

「I just don’t want Emily to lose another person close to her. ……Even if that person is only “formerly” close to her, or even if that person is an unforgivable traitor.」

If Kousuke had to say more, he also had the calculation of wanting to hand over the case’s ringleader to Chief Magdanese. Kousuke thought that it would also be necessary for Emily’s life from here on that there was the result of “the culprit was captured” regarding the『Berserk Case』that had shaken the world.

Kousuke’s words caused Emily to raise her face from his chest, and she looked at Down. Her gaze was certainly wishing not for Down’s death, but for him to be judged by the administration of justice.

Down listened to Kousuke’s words, and then he saw Emily’s gaze before he sighed deeply.

「Haa, really, nothing has gone well at all. Perhaps this is also because I’m mediocre.」

Down took one, two steps back. Kousuke leapt out without any question. He would hold him down and rob him of his consciousness. With the danger of『Berserk』, it was a great concern even to just speak to him.

When Kousuke stepped on the second floor’s passage, it was at the same time as when Down fell into the water reservoir behind him. Emily reflexively yelled『Teacher-』.

Kousuke jumped in to overtake Down and caught him in midair. But, when he tried to hover in midair, his body lurched forward with a jerk. Kousuke launched a steel string from his sleeve in a panic to seize the handrail of the passage, and he dangled down.

Kousuke’s movement was lacking in luster. Originally, he should’ve been able to make Down unconscious before he could jump down, but he was unable to do that because of the effect of the previous battle.

The rapid Limit Break by using Last Zell. Naturally, he was unable to escape from the side effect. Currently, Kousuke was in the middle of a remarkable weakening. He was unable to create a clone, and his physical abilities decreased by sixty percent. He was being assaulted by fatigue that made him want to just fall asleep right now. Honestly, he

already felt his consciousness getting farther away when he used gravity magic to suck in the bullet.

「You plan to suicide huh!」

「That's right. Though actually, I wanted Emily to kill me. After all, I understand that I won't be able to escape. If that's not the case, do you think I would talk that long even after understanding that a monster like you is here?」

Down spoke about his own end really easily while dangling in midair after being seized by Kousuke.

「Although, I didn't think that that berserker would be defeated this quickly though.」

「Teacher-, what are you doing!? Didn't you want to leave your name in history!?」

Emily's words caused Down to answer with a mysterious expression that was a mixture of resignation and madness.

「That's right. I'll leave my name in history. If I cannot escape anymore, then I'll leave my name as the tragic father who tried to stop the girl that scattered disaster in this world!」

With those words, Kousuke finally guessed the thinking of what Down was trying to do. And then, he said「This stupid bastard-」while trying to throw Down on the floor.

But, before he could,

「If even that cannot come true then-! Aa, fine then. I will become that very disaster itself! I'll leave my name in history not with a great achievement, but with a great sin!」

Saying that he exploded the moment Kousuke threw him.

doon- The moment that muffled sound rang, Down’s stomach exploded. Naturally, his blood and flesh scattered. Emily became unable to move due to the abnormal situation that was too gruesome.

Kousuke desperately maintained his creaking body and his distant consciousness. He activated gravity magic while leaping toward Emily right away.

Even gravity magic that was unable to completely display its effect was able to at least knock off the approaching blood and flesh.

But, for the current Kousuke that was his limit. Down changed his route using the impact and fell into the water reservoir along with his scattered blood and flesh.

A grand spray of water rose to create a fierce ripple in the water reservoir. At the same time, the clear and transparent water was dyed red as though ink was spilled into it.

「……」

「Damn it-, he got us-」

Emily was dumbfounded without any words while staring at the water reservoir that was dyed red while Kousuke laid bare his irritation.

「Kousuke-san-, this is!」

The lying down Vanessa threw a radio at Kousuke. Kousuke guessed what she meant and received the radio before speaking into it.

「Bernard! Can you hear me!?」

「Mu, Aby. What's the matter?」

「Berserk spilled into the waterway! The water gate is open, and it's flowing somewhere! Anywhere is fine, just stop the flow before it can go through the water supply facility!」

「-. Wait a second! ——Control room-. Seal all the waterways!」

Bernard who received the contact gave instructions to his subordinates that suppressed the control room.

Just as Kousuke said, Down didn't just blow himself up. "Scattering disaster"——just as those words meant, he wasn't trying to transform himself into a berserker, but he exploded himself to scatter the「Berserk」that was stored inside his stomach and spilled it into the waterway.

Most likely, this aberrant plan was hatched because of the irregularity that was Kousuke. This was Down's final attack from thinking of the possibility that anything he did would be prevented.

No matter what place it was, no matter what reason it was for, a person who staked their life on the line was terrifying. Kousuke, who got outwitted, painfully realized that once more while he grit his teeth.

Then, it was at that time that a voice that sounded like a shriek rang from the radio.

「Captain-, the control doesn't work! Both the clean water facility and the water supply facility, all of them won't move from the opened gate state! The control is completely on the fritz!」

「What did you say-. What's the meaning of this!?」

「Those guys, perhaps they are inserting a virus into the computer-. If I have time, then I think it’s possible to recover the control though.」

「How long that will take?」

「……Ten minutes. No, if I have just eight minutes, I’ll somehow……」

「Tsk, get on it right away.」

「Yes Sir-」

Silence ruled over the place for a while. At this rate, the irrigation that was polluted by「Berserk」would flow into the city. Even before that, it would pass through several towns. If that happened, a wave of berserkers would be spreading as though eroding the country from the edge.

Most likely, it wouldn’t take five minutes until the polluted water passed through the water supply facility. The time limit until the overwhelming tragedy, was just five minutes.

「Kousuke……」

「Kousuke-san……」

Emily, who was staring at the water reservoir in a daze, and Vanessa, who had a grim expression, were calling Kousuke.

Kousuke thought of something with a grim expression, then he suddenly smiled bitterly, and strength left his shoulders. And then, he ran his gaze toward Emily and Vanessa while taking the radio into his hand.

「Bernard. I’ll do something about it. Well, it will become flashy, so don’t let anyone get near the water supply

facility.

! Aby. Got it. I’ll leave it to you-. Please, save this country!

Bernard’s trust and slight entreaty reached Kousuke through his voice from the radio.

The same thing was also dwelling inside the gaze of Vanessa and Emily.

Kousuke kept smiling bitterly while opening his mouth to those two.

Actually, I didn’t want to rely on him. At the very end, it became a pathetic story like this but……I’ll ask a bit, for help from his majesty the demon king.

Emily and Vanessa looked puzzled. Kousuke’s bitter smile deepened at that.

Part 2

Kousuke and the others came out to the rooftop of the clean water facility while lending a shoulder to Vanessa.

There was a water supply facility downstream, and even further downstream they could see a town.

「Kousuke, what are you going to do?」

Kousuke said「I'll do this」to Emily's question and took out his smartphone. And then, he called. After a few call tones, there was the sullen voice of the speaker on the other side coming out from the phone.

「……What is it, Endo――」

「Nagumo! My bad but there is no time! Don't ask anything and blow up the water supply that is near my position!」

「……」

The call partner was his majesty the demon king who was currently spending an enjoyable time making dinner with his beloved daughter. His majesty the demon king was wearing the frilly pink apron that was created by Myuu for him, spending an enjoyable, enjoyable time while Yue and the others were holding down their laughter!

Normally, if someone was suddenly phoned, and then requested to destroy a public facility without even getting told the reason, that person would either doubt the sanity of

the other party, or they would cut off the phone without delay thinking that it was a joke before returning back to the happy family time.

But, the other party here wasn’t normal. Rather, this person was the synonym of abnormal irrationality.

Therefore,

「’Kay. Don’t move from where you are.」

「-. I’m in your debt, Nagumo!」

A presence of a wry smile was transmitted from the other side of the phone.

At the same time,

「E, err, Kousuke? Who are you talking to? Or rather, what are you doing? Or rather, there are various things I want to ask but, anyway, can I ask? ――What is, that?」

「Kousuke-san……I cannot believe it but……」

Emily was looking up to the sky with a completely cramping expression while asking Kousuke as Vanessa was also similarly staring at a spot in the sky with a flustered expression that was rarely seen from her.

Kousuke shrugged his shoulders at them who were like that and said.

「There won’t be any airborne infections from『Berserk』. Even if it is in a liquid state, it will become invalid if it is vaporized. Then, I’ll blow it up all together with an overwhelming heat. ――Well, that kind of thing can only be done by the demon king though.」

It was right after he said that.

Far high in the sky, a dot of light was starting to shine brilliantly as though a second sun was born. It could be seen clearly even through the clouds. It then looked as though it swelled up instantly before suddenly a pillar of light descended from the sky.

The cloudy sky was blown away, an enormous hole was created in the sea of clouds in the sky, and the atmosphere was burned down. That pillar which pierced the water supply facility along with a thunderous roar instantly destroyed the facility with a brilliant light, melted the ground, and created an outrageous crater in the blink of an eye.

The light flooded the world.

The world that was gloomy from the cloudy sky was being dyed pure white. The heat wave and shockwave were spreading like a ripple and turned the area surrounding the facility into a circular-shaped piece of empty land.

——Sunlight convergence laser “Burst Hyperion”

The demon king detected the location of the water supply facility using the “Compass of Crossing Guidance” with Kousuke as the reference point, and then he teleported the “Burst Hyperion” to the satellite orbit above the facility using a space substitution artifact.

Next, the demon king pushed the button *kaclick*, like that. Just with that the laser cannon that converged sunlight annihilated anything and everything.

It was truly heaven’s judgment. The manifestation of myth.

Though the person who pulled the trigger was currently wearing a frilly pink apron at home.

「……」

「……」

The faces of Emily and Vanessa turned into something that really couldn’t be shown to other people. Their eyes opened wide with their mouths gaped open unmoving. Drool was trickling from the corner of their mouths, and not a single word leaked out.

While they were in the middle of being like that, the water supply facility was eradicated entirely. Next, the light pillar that changed even the topography was getting thinner bit by bit, and before long it vanished as though melting into the air.

Color returned to the world, and the sound of a waterfall flowing into the deep crater resounded.

『How is it, Endo? Is it okay like that?』

『Yeah, thanks, Nagumo. Sorry that I suddenly made an outrageous request.』

『I understand that you are trying to not rely on me. And now someone like you came to rely on me without even saying the reason. You must have a reason that is that important, right? Well, I’ll trust you on that. That’s why I don’t need your apology.』

『Hahah. As I thought, the demon king is just too doting on his relatives yeah. That’s why I cannot rely on you too much.』

Kousuke scratched his cheek awkwardly while making a wry smile. And then, he reported that he meant to return to Japan in a few days, and he would speak about the circumstances when he went back and cut off the phone.

Kousuke let out a long exhale.

Putting aside if it was related to a request from Hajime, Kousuke had promised to himself that he wouldn’t rely on Hajime for anything in a matter that he poked his nose into by his own collision. But now he relied on him in the end. His shoulders dropped in dejection while he patted down his chest in relief that they had avoided a great disaster (excluding the crater).

And then, his gaze slowly turned toward Emily and Vanessa who was still petrified wordlessly.

「Aa, Emily, Vanessa――」

「Hyuuwa!?」

「Afuh」

The moment he called to them, Emily jumped in surprise while raising her voice as though she was liberated from a binding curse before she became unable to stand up from shock and fell down. At the same time, Vanessa who was borrowing Emily’s shoulder also fell down, and her butt impacted the ground.

Kousuke thought that their reaction was understandable while he was about to lend a hand at the fallen two――and he stiffened.

choro choro choro~

Slipping through the sound of the waterfall, there was the sound of water from right nearby.

The source was, of course, the Emily-chan who kept lying down on her butt while shivering all over. It seemed that her bladder loosened up completely from witnessing the situation that surpassed human knowledge. ‘Come to think of it, she gulped down a lot of coffee before riding the helicopter because she was nervous huuh’, Kousuke recalled.

「……Kousuke-san. It feels like I’m going to leak out too. Is it fine?」

「There is no way it’s fine.」

Vanessa who noticed Emily’s disgraceful behavior and made a wry smile while talking to Kousuke. There Emily finally seemed to recover her sanity. Naturally, she also noticed her current situation――

「HiiIIIIH. SToOOOOOP-. Or rather, DON’T LoOOOOOK-, DON’T LOOK AT THIS KIND OF ME, KOUSUKEEEE-」

Emily was on the verge of tears while tightening her bladder. She was desperately hiding within her lab coat while her hands held her head down and she turned small.

While Emily’s shriek was echoing,

「Oi, Aby! What was that just now!? Something came out there you know!? From the sky! Something came out!」

This time Bernard’s voice was transmitted from the radio. It seemed that Bernard and others also witnessed the light of “Burst Hyperion”.

「DON’T LOOOOOK-! PLEASE, STOPPPPPP!」

「Oi, Aby! Respond! Explanation please!」

「Kousuke-san, instead of “pi—”, the bleeding is not stopping. My wounds seemed to open because of falling just now. Please help.」

Emily who screamed while turning small. Bernard who yelled together with his subordinates from the radio asking for an explanation. Vanessa who was on the verge of death.

Kousuke sighed again in a different kind of manner this time.

「Now then, what to do about the clean-up I wonder……」

He looked up at the sky during this scene that was chaotic even when everything was over.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Really, thank you very much for following this extra compilation for so long.

In the next chapter, the epilogue will be the end for this extra compilation.

Those people are also planned to come out you know~

I will talk about the detail of my plan from here on or the epilogue’s afterword on my activity report.

The next update, surely perhaps, can be finished by 6 P.M. Saturday, I think.

Arifureta Chapter 222

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Epilogue First Part

AN: Even though this is the epilogue, there is a first and second part……

I’m sorry. I couldn’t finish it.

But, I’ll upload the second part within this day!

TN: The segment above was a note from the author, not from the translator. Sorry, but please wait for two or three more days for the next chapter.

Part 1

The sound of a deep sigh leaked out in a room that boasted of its excellent soundproofing. The wooden desk and leather chair that was overflowing with a high-class aura were originally there to add to the dignity of the owner, but right now, the owner of the sigh was enveloped in a tired atmosphere that made such a thing be meaningless.

「Aa~, chief? Are you okay?」

The room owner――the state security bureau's chief Sharon Magdanese was addressed by Allen while he was smiling wryly.

Chief Magdanese was putting both her elbows on the desk with both her hands joined together supporting the forehead of her hung down head. She lifted her face slightly and replied with a slightly exasperated expression.

「Isn't that my line instead? Allen, are you really okay?」

「Ahaha, I'm really fine. I more or less received "healing", so my health is not as bad as my appearance.」

「……A "healing" that cured both arms that had the bones pulverized in less than a day until they became usable again, is it? Haa~~~」

She once more sighed not just deeply, but dee~ply. Allen's wry smile deepened in proportion to that.

Chief Magdanese felt Allen’s gaze that seemed to say that he understood her feelings while her face turned toward the large display hanging on the wall with an expression that didn’t even try to hide her sullenness.

What that display projected was the manifestation of the mystic. An unimaginably abnormal spectacle.

She wondered just how wonderful it would be if the image was just a scene that was cut from a movie.

「The devilish hand of the demon king that is fired from the sky……I wonder, since when did this world get eroded by fantasy?」

「Oh maaan, chief. That’s a really poetic expression there. It’s just like Aby-san――buberah!?」

Chief Magdanese’s paperweight bullet burst out. Allen pleaded「I’m an injured person! An injured person! Be gentler to me, please!」with teary eyes.

Chief Magdanese easily ignored that as her eyes fell toward the display on her hand. She read the analysis result that was written there with a powerless voice.

「A satellite that is able to fire a laser of converged sunlight……the point of it, that it was just a simple thing that merely focused heat. It’s more or less theoretically possible to be constructed using the present-day science, it said.」

「However, it’s impossible to make it the size of the silhouette that we captured for an instant. If we try to make it, then the result will be on a really big scale. What’s more, this one was able to not only blast away a whole facility, but

its power was even able to change the topography. Considering it, such a thing is――」

「It’s impossible for such a thing to not be noticed by our nation……no, by all the nations on earth when it was in the satellite orbit. In addition, for it to be able to fly to the position for a pinpoint sniping at that timing, that is even more impossible.」

gii The high-class chair raised an unpleasant sound. That must be because it was pressed with a weight from an unnatural stance aided by the body’s stirring. Chief Magdanese noticed how she had tensed unconsciously and took a breath.

It wasn’t unreasonable. The image of the light in the sky was captured by the aircraft monitoring the operation area. It was launched suddenly from the satellite orbit by an orbital weapon that appeared without any advance notice, and as soon as it blew up the surface, it then abruptly vanished without any trace.

If that was the joker of the unfathomable power that was possessed by Abyssgate, then Chief Magdanese would instead feel her stomachache softened because she could believe that she had confirmed the bottom of his strength.

But, that was a weapon. Certainly, it was overflowing with mystical aspects like how it was ignoring technological problems or how elusive it was. But, even so, that thing was without a doubt a weapon that was created by human hands.

It wasn’t something unfathomable and unique that could be recognized to be owned just by a person, but a weapon that *could be used by anyone if they wanted to*.

The cold reality that was contained within that fact, even while it possessed fantasy aspects in it, was causing Chief Magdanese's blood to run cold. She felt a blunt terror that was far closer to herself more than when she witnessed the mystery of Lord Abyssgate.

「……His majesty the demon king is it. I knew that around him there must be people with the same power assembling but……」

「To think that Aby-san is really just someone in an underling position. Hahah, there is nothing to do but laugh here. Even though I cannot see the future where we will be able to stand a chance against even just him alone, there is still the demon king-sama waiting behind him who can go *kaboom* just with a phone call. What the hell.」

「If we believe his talk as it is, the best he can do is just scratch the demon king even when fighting with his whole body and soul on the line. Furthermore, he also said that it's unclear whether he can even match the wives or not.」

「Chief. The instant I saw that light in the sky, I understood just why the person who exterminates a demon king in a tale is called as a hero. Indeed, that person must be a hero. For that person to be able to challenge something like that」

'Certainly, that's so', Chief Magdanese nodded deeply. At the very least, she who shouldered a part of the national defense really couldn't fan up any thoughts of trying to stand against that.

Chief Magdanese sighed deeply for who knew how many times already while she suddenly took out a USB memory from her breast pocket. She toyed with that using her fingers while leaning on her elbow.

「What's the matter, chief?」

「……No, nothing really. It's just, I think that perhaps this thing is a Pandora's box.」

「Aah. Certainly, that's a perfectly fitting phrase. By the way, is Aby's faction the calamity? Or the hope?」

Chief Magdanese floated a vague smile as her answer to Allen's question. Even Allen didn't understand what she really meant.

However, the one thing that was definite was what was inside of that USB memory――the research data of 「Berserk」, and if they tried to use that for evil, then a calamity would descend upon them without a doubt. That didn't merely refer to the fact that berserkers would be created once again, but in the meaning that they would enrage the bearer of mysteries by doing that and turn them into enemies.

「Oh man~. Even so, if it's known by Aby-san that the security bureau is hiding「Berserk」, it would absolutely be bad news, wouldn't it? All the data and drugs from every facility were completely destroyed, and in some places, they were destroyed along with the facility……That is a bomb in a sense you know? I think it's better to destroy it right away though……」

Allen didn't even hide his disgusted expression and said such a thing to Chief Magdanese who was still toying with the USB memory with her fingertips.

After that infiltration into the clean water facility, Kousuke, who was greatly exhausted, took a rest at a facility the security bureau prepared, but……after resting for half-day, he temporarily disappeared, along with Emily and Vanessa.

Without permission, they borrowed the pilot and helicopter that were with them during the mission.

The security bureau fell into an uproar from that, but because they guessed the reason that Kousuke vanished, they waited until they were contacted.

As a result, it became an uproar with how all the『Berserk』that was recovered from the facilities that were stormed by other special forces (including the army's special forces) were wholly destroyed by someone unknown. Like that, it became clear what Kousuke and co were doing.

The feat of completely destroying the data and drugs by easily breaking through the strict security of the army caused the members of the security bureau to make a dry laugh altogether.

After that, they started taking independent actions for a while before there was a contact that came through Vanessa in order to confirm whether the『Berserk』that was recovered by the army had really been destroyed with nothing left. Chief Magdanese offered her full cooperation and exchanged various information with Vanessa.

If it was known that Chief Magdanese was in fact shrewdly collecting the research data of『Berserk』that remained from the university's research building……

Allen couldn't stop his trembling.

Chief Magdanese made an exasperated expression at such Allen.

『Please don't say anything thoughtless. I'm not hiding this or anything.』

「Eh? But, the fact is chief is carrying that right now though.」

「Look here, after Paradis and Doctor Grant escaped from the research building, just who do you think cleaned up there?」

「That's of course, us the security bureau……there was also the matter about Hughes-san and others there.」

「Yes, that's right. And then, Doctor Grant and Vanessa who barely escaped from the research building with their life didn't have the time to bring the research data with them. They, and also Abyssgate, understand that.」

In other words, it was clear as day that the security bureau who went there for cleanup would recover the extremely dangerous drug and data.

Although, even Allen understood that much. In short, Allen was thinking that exactly because everyone understood that, Kousuke and co should be thinking that the「Berserk」possessed by the security bureau was destroyed already. But contrary to that they still possessed the data. Wouldn't that be bad for them, he wondered.

Chief Magdanese who guessed Allen's unexpressed fear shook her head and answered.

「There is no way that person will swallow what I say as it is. I destroyed the data, ok thanks, you think it will be like that?」

「That, well……. Then, chief will destroy it. But, then why are you still carrying it like that?」

「For caution's sake, I want to destroy it in front of his eyes, so that he won't be able to just vanish compared to if I destroy it at a distant place from him.」

From Chief Magdanese’s viewpoint, she was thinking that Kousuke might just return home to his country without even showing his figure anymore in front of them. If it was with his profoundly mysterious power, then doing something like sneaking into the security bureau without anyone noticing and destroying the data before disappearing should be a piece of cake.

But, Chief Magdanese wanted to talk with Kousuke eye-to-eye no matter what. It would be unbearable if she let Kousuke go home when their relationship with Kousuke, who was able to do that much, and the demon king faction behind him was still vague like now. Chief Magdanese who had the self-awareness that she was already really old didn’t want to have her stomachache get worse than this.

And so, even if with a roundabout meaning, a conversation was indispensable. The fact that she hadn’t destroyed the USB memory stick yet and walked around carrying it was also a move for that, she wanted to destroy it in front of Kousuke’s eyes to help in building a relationship of trust between them.

Surely, perhaps, there wouldn’t be that much of an effect that could be expected from doing that, but it was Chief Magdanese’s principle to not make light of even the small moves.

Allen nodded with a look of ‘I see’. Chief Magdanese sent a sidelong glance at Allen with her fingertips holding the USB memory stick before she suddenly threw her gaze to a space of empty air and opened her mouth.

「That’s how it is, so if you want to destroy it then do as you please, Abyssgate.」

「Eh? Chief?」

pachin- The chief put the USB memory stick on the desk with a sound like a shogi player putting the piece on the board. Allen’s eyes turned into dots. For a moment he thought「Is she finally turn senile?」, but he got a gaze of absolute zero turned to him instantly, so he straightened his posture in panic.

Right after that,

「……How surprising. To think that you are able to feel my presence.」

「Oou!? Aby-san!?」

Allen jumped to his feet reflexively from hearing the voice that resounded from the room’s corner.

When Allen turned his gaze in a fluster, there he saw the figure of Kousuke leaning on the wall with his arms folded. His expression was displaying a clear emotion of admiration.

「A, Aby-san, since when were you there? Or rather, how did you enter……」

「I have been shadowing right behind you all that time you know? I entered this room together with you.」

「I, I didn’t notice at all……」

Kousuke turned his gaze to Chief Magdanese while putting aside Allen who was plainly shocked. His gaze was filled with admiration and a question of since when she noticed him, and also a little bit of happiness mixed there.

Chief Magdanese displayed a wry smile at Kousuke’s gaze while she shook her head.

「I didn’t notice you or anything. However, thinking of the number of operating forces, their affiliation, the base’s location, the information sharing with Paradis, and so on, I thought that you would be coming soon. I’m glad you are really here. If not, then I would be a pitiful person who is talking to empty air there.」

「……As expected from the chief. You completely got me there.」

Kousuke smiled wryly while his back moved from the wall. Surely, his face looked very slightly regretful because his hope of「By any chance did the number of people noticing me increase!?」had crumbled away.

Kousuke walked up to the front of the desk and took the USB memory sticks. And then, he crushed it inside his fist without confirming its content.

「Is this all the data?」

「Yes, that’s right. With this, it means that the data of 「Berserk」only remains inside Doctor Grant’s head.」

「You are sure?」

「You can just make sure, can’t you? I believe you have the method to know with certainty whether the data and drugs of「Berserk」still remain or not in this world if you feel like it. I don’t plan to be an idiot that makes a bluff to that kind of opponent.」

Indeed, if Kousuke hypnotized the authorized people and asked them the information, he would be able to ascertain the truth. Also, Chief Magdanese didn’t know, but if he relied on that person to have him use the “Compass of Crossing

Guidance”, then the truth would be ascertained in an instant.

Chief Magdanese seemed to be resolved even if she got hypnotized, so she stared straight at Kousuke. Kousuke who received that gaze shrugged and shook his head.

「I’ll believe your words chief. Besides, I don’t want to do something really cruel to the side that will protect my friend and her family from here on.」

It felt like a threat was mixed into it just for a bit. Chief Magdanese scowled while asking back.

「……You are telling us to protect the Grant family?」

「Even if the chief advocates that『Berserk』is unnecessary to the VIPs, there surely will be those who question the uproar this time. If the Grant family is aimed at and Emily meets misfortune then……yeah? This too is for the sake of the nation’s defense, isn’t it?」

「Because if that happens then what we will face won’t be the people of that side or even the very『Berserk』itself, but the “abyss lord” huh. Indeed, this is the most important matter that concerns the nation’s defense.」

‘If something happens to the Grant family, then it’s not gonna end well’——Chief Magdanese made a slightly tired expression at that veiled warning, but even so, she promised that she would protect the Grant family from the stupid bunches.

Surely, within a few days, there would be pairs of lovers or spouses with a lot of friends moving to the neighborhood of the Grant family. Those people would watch over the Grant family with handguns hidden in their pockets while rousing

up themselves with「Whether the lord will rampage or not is hanging on our shoulders!」.

「Well, I'll agree to the matter of protection. However, I have one condition――no, a request.」

「……I don't think that this is a situation where there will be a condition attached normally. Just as I thought, as expected from the chief.」

「It's an honor to receive the praise. It's not like I plan to ask for anything excessive. Just, if you are going to do something in this country, or if by chance someone related to this country is going to do something, I wish you will contact us beforehand.」

This was the promise that Chief Magdanese wanted to extract from Kousuke by talking to him. It was too dangerous to leave him without supervision. But, it was impossible to attach a collar or anything to him. Then at the very least, she wished to know what he would do and where. She wasn't telling him to ask for permission, but at least she wanted him to keep them informed.

「Depending on the situation, surely there will be a time where it will be better for me to be the one that takes care of it. I believe that you are able to take care of most things, but surely it won't be troubling to have a connection to the authorities.」

「Hm~m. Well, as long as that authority doesn't reach out their hand to us. There would be nothing more depressing then having someone move to try to get our information even if just non~chalantly.」

「The consideration of that area would be something we wish for you to trust us with.」

Seeing Kousuke hesitate with a ‘h~m’, Chief Magdanese muttered a few words.

「……The cleanup was really difficult this time.」

「……」

「We got severely criticized by the intelligence bureau, and then the water supply for that area and also the information control……. After this, we have to falsify the written report about the Berserk Case in various things, and surely I will be severely criticized again when I advocate that「Berserk」is unnecessary at the meeting……」

「……」

「I don’t want to say this, but I’m really past my prime now. Recently, it’s become hard to endure my stomachache. Do you know that medicine is not effective anymore? Perhaps this is already time for me to think of retiring. Well, I don’t know whether my successor, whoever he is, will be able to build a connection nicely or not though……」

「……」

「Come to think of it, my arm that got shot really hurts. Even though Allen got healed, I need to normally depend on modern medical care here. As I thought, perhaps I should just retire. The motivation necessary to win the argument against the intelligence bureau at the meeting is just……」

「Got it! I got it already! I’ll contact you properly if I’ve business or something in this country okay! That’s why stop suddenly looking far away with an expression like an old man that has sensed his time of death like that! Feels like your image is crumbling down!」

「Wonderful. Then, leave the protection of the Grant family and the cleanup of the「Berserk」case to us of the security bureau. I will hand over a private line to Abyssgate that connects to the staff under me, so if there is something, please exchange information through it. ――I wish that from here on the security bureau can continue a good relationship with the demon king faction.」

Even though just now she had been pretending to be like an old man that was going to be led away by the death god, Magdanese instantly returned into the face of the chief of the state security bureau clad in a dominating aura and concluded the talk. Inside his heart, Kousuke's cheeks were twitching while thinking「As I thought, I'm no good with this person huh」.

After that, they talked for two, three more minutes. And then hearing Chief Magdanese added a terrifying request like 'if there is a chance, please let me talk with his majesty the demon king no matter what', Kousuke once more felt admiration that this woman was really a big shot before he put his hand on the doorknob.

And then, just before he exited the room, Kousuke suddenly recalled something and turned around.

「Come to think on it, thanks chief-san. I planned to confirm it myself before this, but it helps that you told me.」

「? ……Aa, about her you mean.」

Chief Magdanese tilted her head for a moment thinking just what was Kousuke talking about, but she immediately realized and then surprisingly smiled. Allen was taken aback.

「Thanks is unnecessary. Although it’s a fact that we had no breathing room due to the situation, if only we could confirm it quicker, it would be a relief for that girl’s anxiety.」

「I wonder. There is no use talking about ‘what if’. If she can think of it as a prize for working hard, then the world can be a little kinder to her, that won’t be bad won’t it?」

Perhaps feeling a little embarrassed by his own speech, Kousuke scratched his cheek awkwardly after saying that. Chief Magdanese looked even happier at that while she nodded.

「I don’t have the qualification to answer that ……but if that’s really the case, then certainly, it won’t be bad. I think it’s great that there is a salvation for her even if just one.」

Those words from the great woman of iron and blood that shouldered the country’s protection sounded like her true opinion which she showed in the end. Kousuke also nodded back to her with a calm smile and exited the room.

Allen who saw the chief’s smile was petrified throughout all that until the end.

Part 2

It was at a café located in a place that could confirm the high-rise building of the state security bureau by sight. There was a girl with her blonde hair put in a side-tail——Emily, looking absentminded inside.

Her hand kept holding the cup of steamy coffee latte in front of her. However, she showed no sign of drinking it. She was only staring blankly at the rising steam.

Other than emotions of sadness and pain, her side profile also contained various other things. There were people who were mysteriously charmed with that. In the first place, Emily was a beautiful girl, yet right now she felt like a “woman” rather than a girl of her age. Surely, that was because the experience she had gone through these few days was an unusual experience.

The young men and male employees inside the café kept sending glances at the beautiful girl that was sitting alone in melancholy. That was the proof of the charm Emily was emitting.

Her long and slender legs wrapped in black stockings were crossed. Finally, a young man whose gaze was attracted to that resolved himself and stood up. It appeared that he would call out to Emily.

But, right after the young man took a step forward, his foot stopped still.

That was because Emily suddenly lifted her face. It seemed that was because she noticed the young man’s secret intention. Her reaction looked as though she was called by someone. Yet, he couldn’t hear anything that called the girl’s name other than the sound of car engines.

The young man tilted his head in wonder of what happened, but even so, he was about to step forward again――

「Ah, Kousuke! Over here!」

He saw a flower blooming proudly. The melancholy until just now disappeared like a lie, and in its place was a dazzling flower that was blooming in full. Emily made a full smile and waved her hand, which caused the young man to stop walking once more. However, this time he was purely fascinated.

「……Emily, looks like you have become able to notice me normally huh.」

The one who appeared while saying that was of course Kousuke. The young man too finally noticed after he heard that voice that there was a male that had approached this spot nearby without anyone noticing. The male was Japanese without any particular characteristics that stood out.

For a moment, the young man compared himself with Kousuke and he self-assessed himself that he won, but he instantly withered when he saw the trust and affection that emerged on Emily’s expression. His shoulders dropped in dejection while he returned to his seat with heavy steps. The other customers and male employees were looking at the young man with a complicated expression.

「I guess. Somehow, when Kousuke comes near, the area around my forehead goes tingling.」(TN: Imagine in Gundam when the newtype sense danger or a formidable enemy)

「You are awakened to a strange ability huh. Well, I'm happy though so it's fine.」

Kousuke saying that he was happy made Emily smile even happier instead.

「So, are you finished? Did it go all right?」

「Yeah, everything went well. With this, 『Berserk』doesn't exist anymore in this world. Looks like the security bureau has also worked hard.」

「I see……thank you, Kousuke. Really, saying this is not enough at all but, thank you.」

Emily leaned her forehead on Kousuke's shoulder naturally. Seeing that, several males including the young man just now clicked their tongue. Surely, they wanted to say 'damn show off'.

Kousuke reflexively smiled wryly while hearing those clicking tongues. He then gently tapped on Emily's back while urging her to exit the café.

Kousuke started walking on the street. Emily asked him where they were going.

「H~m, there is a place I want to go for a bit. Can you come with me?」

「Yep, it's fine. But Kousuke's plane schedule is……it's fine because it's in the evening, isn't it?」

Today, Endo was going back to Japan. He had finished reserving a ticket for an evening flight. Naturally, Emily was feeling lonely, but there was no way she could neglect her parents who were piling up mental worry due to the attacks against their daughter, so she was planning to spend her time in her home for a while and couldn’t go with Kousuke.

Although, there would be a clone body staying with her for a while to guard her, and Kousuke also firmly promised to her that this separation wouldn’t be forever, so she wasn’t that sad.

「Which reminds me, what about Vanessa? Midway she said that she has a business, so she went somewhere but, is it about the security bureau’s business?」

「No, it’s another matter. Vanessa is also going to the place we are heading to right now. There is something I want her to check on just in case.」

「Hm~m. You are speaking ambiguously. ……It’s just me that is out of the loop here.」

Emily’s lips pouted a bit sullenly. Kousuke reflexively almost said「How cute」, but the body blow of his heart made him shut his mouth decisively.

「That’s not it though……. Rather, this is about Emily. Well, you will understand when we go there. Depending on the situation, perhaps it will be necessary for me to go on ahead for various measures but……you know, there were things I wanted to take care of first at the security bureau. Just in case.」

「I don’t really get it but……fine then. If that’s what Kousuke and Vanessa think is the best then okay.」

Emily smiled gently. The height of her trust toward the two could be seen from that.

It would take about thirty minutes of walking, so the two didn’t use a taxi or anything and walked there while strolling at the same time.

There was no talking; however, the atmosphere wasn’t awkward by any means. Both of them were walking at a relaxed pace. After a while, Emily leaked out some words in a mutter.

「You see, I’m thinking of teacher even now.」

「Hm?」

Kousuke tilted his head. Emily continued while slightly looking up at the sky.

「He betrayed us, did inhuman things like that, and in the end, he tried to take along a lot of people with him in death……even so, I cannot hate him. Even now, somewhere inside me, I’m thinking of that person as “our teacher”. …… Do you think it’s strange?」

「I wonder. After all, I don’t know what has been accumulated between Emily and Down.」

Emily smiled a bit happier knowing that Kousuke didn’t make any denial.

「Yep, there are a lot of things that we had accumulated. I cannot forget them. Whether when he reached out to me, or how he saved me, or the warm place and important teachings that I received, I cannot forget them.」

「Because, those weren’t a lie, right?」

「……Yes. Those weren’t a lie.」

At that time, the young Emily who was cornered by the environment was saved, it was a fact. The fact that she was given the warmth of a family, and also everything else. The important things residing in Emily’s heart weren’t a lie.

A shadow of melancholy fell on Emily’s expression once more.

「That’s exactly why, I feel it’s scary.」

「……」

Emily kept looking down without showing any sign whether she noticed or not the gaze of Kousuke who was looking at her from the side. She continued talking in mutters.

「Surely, Berserk is inside everyone. Just a little impetus, something that is trifling for other people will become the trigger, awakening it. Surely, it’s easy to occur on a particular field. That’s what I think.」

Everyone had the seed of madness at the bottom of their heart. Kousuke couldn’t deny that. The face of the classmates that didn’t manage to go home together with them passed through Kousuke’s mind. The binding of their hearts slipped off under a unique situation.

Just as Emily said, even in a situation that wasn’t that unique, it was still something that could possibly occur. And then, her remark that meant that the binding of the heart was easier to come off for those who tried to walk through a path to the extreme was likely to be an accurate statement.

「Even now, I’m thinking it. If teacher didn’t meet me, perhaps teacher would be able to live normally as an

excellent educator.」

It was a meaningless what-if. Emily also understood that. But, she couldn’t help but think about it. She thought and thought, but even so, she continued to wander the labyrinth of her pondering, of what she actually should do.

It was terrifying. Thinking that perhaps ahead of her path she would once more pull the trigger of someone’s Berserk. She didn’t have any intention of giving up her dream, but even so, no matter what, when she thought of the future ahead of her path of research, her hands and feet stiffened, and something cold and heavy was sinking to the bottom of her guts.

Kousuke averted his gaze from Emily and looked up to the sky. It was likely that Emily wasn’t asking for anything from Kousuke by talking about this. The proof of that was how the light of determination could be seen inside her eyes that were tinged with melancholy, that even if that was the case, she wouldn’t draw back, she couldn’t draw back. Therefore, why she was making Kousuke hear her heavily agonizing thoughts even just for a little was merely her depending on Kousuke.

Kousuke scratched his head awkwardly at Emily who was showing such awkwardness in depending on others. And then, he started a strange talk.

「In the past, at a certain place a long time ago, no wait, it wasn’t that long ago, it was something relatively recently, anyway, at a certain place, there was a single hero.」

「Heh? Err, Kousuke?」

‘What’s up so suddenly?’ Emily tilted her head. Ignoring that, Kousuke continued to talk.

「The hero was super handsome; he excelled in both brain and physical aspects. He was fair and kind, overflowing with a sense of justice, and a super popular male. He made others feel ‘just explode’, but anyway he was a really good guy.」

「Yo, you wanted him to explode even though he was a good guy?」

「Nn, well, just ignore that. Anyway, one day the perfect superhuman hero was summoned to another world together with his comrades. He was kidnapped along with the people around him by a damned shitty god somewhere just out of curiosity.」

Seeing Kousuke who was talking in annoyance caused Emily to go ‘hah’ in realization. The fairytale that Kousuke was suddenly talking now was surely not a fairytale. It was a part of the tale of the beginning when this profoundly mysterious hero was born.

Emily closed her mouth and concentrated on her ears. The person she loved was trying to tell her something by going as far as disclosing his secret. She focused so that she wouldn’t overhear even one word.

「Putting aside the intention of the shitty god, the people of that world said to the hero and his group. Save us they said. Defeat the enemy they said. The hero responded, that if there are people in trouble then, of course, they should help. The hero and his comrades who had crossed through worlds had managed to obtain great power, so surely it will go well he thought. But――」

It didn’t go like that.

「Bit by bit, bit by bit, something black was starting to pile up inside the hero.」

「Something, black……」

Emily could guess. That must be the seed of Berserk. Something everyone possessed, a negative emotion.

「The justice that the hero believed in, it didn’t work on anything. He lost his fairness and became as though he was possessed by the deep-rooted delusion that he should be the correct one. His comrades and childhood friends also remonstrated him, but the hero who was instigated by the enemy――betrayed everything.」

「-」

Emily had her breath taken away. Emily didn’t know what happened to the hero. But, she could somehow see her teacher overlapping with the hero. Just what did the hero feel at that time? Just with what kind of feeling did the hero betrayed his comrades? And then――how did the hero end up in the end?

Matching Emily who came to a stop, Kousuke also stopped walking and continued while staring at Emily.

「The hero pointed that tremendous power of his toward us. He pointed it toward his childhood friends who should be important to him. He pointed it, toward the people that he said should be protected. At the time of the decisive battle when that guy was needed the most, that guy was on the enemy’s side. Everything was in order to prove that he was exactly the correct one. In order to take back the time when everything went well for him.」

「……What happened then, to the hero?」

Emily asked by squeezing out her voice. In response to that Kousuke,

「Yeah, he got beaten up black and blue by a girl, his childhood friend until he apologized tearfully. He came back with his face swollen up so much it made us feel ‘seeerves you right you handsome’.」

「Eh?」

This was the aftermath of a grand betrayal. Emily thought that surely this would be a tragic story but with a bit of salvation in it even then. But seeing Kousuke laughing casually while talking「Oh mann~, at that time that guy came back with a pathetic face! He apologized while looking like he was going to cry, but his front teeth were some broken up that it made everyone almost break out laughing! That was seriously a serious breaker y’know!」, Emily’s face went blank in a daze.

Kousuke who noticed Emily who couldn’t follow at all then cleared his throat *cough* once.

「Well, what I want to say, that……sorry. I couldn’t save your teacher.」

「Eh? E, ah, no, that’s not-. I, don’t mean something like――」

Emily tried to make an excuse in a panic, but Kousuke stopped her with his hand and smiled wryly. However, he then directed a strong gaze at Emily that made her heart jump.

「I know. But, even so, I swear here, Emily. If ahead of this path Emily is walking through someone gets their madness awakened, that time I won’t let you lose them. Even if I have to sock them in the face, I will drag them back to you without fail.」

「u, a」

She was at a loss for words. While Emily’s mouth was opening and closing wordlessly, Kousuke gifted her with words that illuminated her path.

「That’s why don’t make that kind of pained face and just advance ahead through your path.」

Emily leapt. Where to? That was obvious. Toward the chest of her beloved hero. Emily leaked out sobbing ‘hics hics’ from something hot filling inside her chest while Kousuke gently caressed her hair.

It was unknown how long they were like that. Before long, Emily lifted her face. Kousuke pulled her hand and began walking once more toward the destination.

Silence was descending once more, but this time it was with a really awkward atmosphere. Emily kept glancing at the side of Kousuke’s face with moist eyes while Kousuke being Kousuke was writhing inside from his own speech.

Trying to change the atmosphere a little, Kousuke spoke a proposal that he actually had been thinking about since some time ago.

「Hey, Emily」

「Whaaat, Kousuke」

Her voice was sweet. It was dripping sweet. The sugar content in the air was increasing. Kousuke went「I, I might have really done it now……」while sweating coldly.

「About your research from here on.」

「Uh huh. Continuing it in the university……will be hard I think. But, somewhere else――」

「About that, if you want, how about trying to go to another world?」

「Another world……」

Inside Emily, it already had become a fact that Kousuke was summoned to another world together with his comrades. She didn't think that his story was fiction. Rather, she comprehended that Kousuke's mysterious power had its root from there.

And now, she might be able to go to the world where Kousuke obtained his power of a hero. That was enough to fill Emily with happiness.

「Is it okay?」

「Yeah, you more or less need the permission from the demon king to go to the world over there, but well, surely there won't be a problem. You see, on the other side, there are a lot of mysterious plants and minerals that don't exist here. There is also something like a pharmacy study there more or less, and if Emily learns that and puts it into use for your research, won't that become a shortcut for a breakthrough?」

「Pharmacy study of another world……certainly, that is really interesting. That healing medicine is also made from there, isn't it?」

「H~m, I guess. Though it's roughly not pure chemicals but a magic medicine though……」

Emily's eyes were sparkling bright with the idea of going to Kousuke's world, and also that it might be useful for her lifework. Her gaze looked far better than her enraptured gaze before this. For Kousuke, it was a poison in various meaning. Though it was him reaping what he sowed.

「Also you see because there is magic in the world there, the technology there is not that developed. Currently, I'm studying medical science here, but I'm doing that with the objective of wanting to heighten the medical technology there without magic.」

「……Kousuke, by any chance, are you planning to go to that other world in the future?」

Emily looked up anxiously at Kousuke. He nodded in response without hesitation. A shadow fell on Emily's expression.

「Well, currently, the demon king is taking measures so that it will be easier to come and go from here to there, so I'm not going to be on that side forever without coming back though……」

Hearing that, Emily began pondering something. Kousuke went「Hm?」seeing that and tilted his head. And then Emily suddenly snapped her head up and declared to Kousuke.

「Then, at that time I will accompany Kousuke too! At that time, I'll show you that I can develop the other world's pharmaceutics more!」

Seeing Emily declaring 'I absolutely will be useful to Kousuke!', Kousuke was thinking from the start that he wished for Emily's cooperation in improving the medical treatment without using Tortus's magic, so he accepted immediately. However, he somewhat felt a strange weight from the word「accompany」that Emily said……

No, let's stop lying to himself. Kousuke was convinced. That word absolutely meant「accompany」in that meaning. Kousuke was sweating coldly. Emily's cheeks were dyed red, and her eyes were sparkling fierily perhaps from thinking of

the future. There was no doubt that in her brain she was surely imagining the development where the two of them were examining patients at the clinic in another world.

Even though she would be in another world, if there was a method to return to earth, then it would be safer to do her research in another world rather than on Earth where there was a possibility she would be targeted. She would also be able to defeat Alzheimer with the result of that research.

For Emily, immigration to another world was completely a good thing.

He, hey, Emily. There is also something that I have to tell you……

Kousuke was opening his mouth to speak about the matter that he missed the chance to say until now because of one thing or another. Right now, he was going to say it loud and clear. But it seemed that the goddess of fate was quite detestable.

A familiar ringtone interrupted Kousuke’s words. It seemed that Vanessa was the caller. Kousuke cursed Vanessaaa inside his heart, but thinking of the thing that he asked her to confirm, he couldn’t ignore this.

Like that, what entered the ear of Kousuke who took the call was good news that came in with a truly miraculous timing.

AN: Continue to the second part

Arifureta Chapter 223

Arifureta Extra Compilation – From Abyssgate Lord of The World

Epilogue Second Part

AN: This is the second part of the two parts epilogue.

There is the first part before this; please pay attention.

「Hey, Kousuke. Is this the place you wanted to take me to?」

「Yeah, this place.」

The Emily's gaze couldn't hide her perplexity and was wandering around without any calm. That was reasonable. The place Kousuke brought her to at a fast pace after the call from Vanessa——was a hospital.

The question of「Why?」was whirling inside Emily's head.

「You see, this hospital is under the influence of the security bureau. They make use of it for the criminals and the victims of a case, or people with circumstances.」

「Security bureau's.....eh, wait, then」

「Yeah, the people related with the「Berserk」case are also hospitalized here.」

Emily gulped. The people who got「Berserk」stored inside their stomach but didn't have it explode yet, the people who were confined for experiments but luckily could be rescued just in time, and the research facility personnel who got

injured during the suppression operation and so on, they were all here.

Emily looked around with a sorrowful expression, but she suddenly noticed something. Even with all those people here, it wasn’t a reason to bring her here. If someone turned into a berserker, then it was too late for them, and in the case that they hadn’t turned into a berserker, then it would completely be the domain of a doctor. There wasn’t any reason for Emily who was a researcher to be here.

Yes, if there was a reason for her to be brought here, then it would be the same reason as the families of the patients who were gathering in the patients’ room or corridor even now――

With a shudder, an indescribable emotion that was different from a chill was welling up inside Emily.

「Wa, wait, wait Kousuke! By, by any chance, in, in here…… but, I, definitely remember that everyone was-」

「It kept bothering me all this time. In Emily’s story, it was only your parting with her that was different. I didn’t say anything because I thought that it was a slim chance, but I believed that the possibility wasn’t zero.」

“Her”――Emily understood who that word referred to.

That’s right. Indeed it was right. It was only her who Emily didn’t see directly. When they parted from each other in the end, she lured away the immediately approaching berserker and vanished. But Emily didn’t confirm her last moments at all.

The repeated death, the overwhelming presence of death of 「Berserk」, the heavy tremor that was chasing after her, all

of those pushed Emily into despair. That was why she thought that must be the last moment for that person, yet……

「I was thinking about confirming it by myself, but before I could, chief-san found her and contacted me. It looks like she hadn't recovered her consciousness yet, so just in case, in order to confirm it directly and find out the details of her condition, I asked Vanessa to go ahead……」

There was already no more words. The hope rising up inside was making Emily's heart quiver.

「The call from Vanessa just now. ——She said that she was awake. She was heavily wounded and needs complete bed rest, but there is nothing threatening to her life.」

「a, a……」

Emily covered her mouth with the hand that wasn't being pulled by Kousuke, and then her blurry gaze caught the figure of Vanessa talking with a person who seemed to be a doctor.

Vanessa, who noticed Kousuke and Emily, then lowered her head to the doctor before turning her gaze to the two of them. Her expression was a gentle and relaxed one that they had never seen until now. Just from that expression, Emily discerned that there wasn't anything bad at all. She grasped that her hope wasn't a lie.

「She is all right, Doctor Grant. She is also really lucid, and the doctor also said that there would be no problem if she is going through treatment. Now, she is waiting. Please meet her.」

「Vanessa……yes, yes-」

Kousuke let go of the hand he held and gently pushed Emily’s back. Vanessa sent her off with a gentle smile. Emily couldn’t endure it and tears were trickling down her face while she opened the door to the patient room and entered inside.

pi-pi-pi- Other than the resounding sound of medical equipment, the patient room was enveloped in silence. The sunlight poured in through the window that had its curtain opened, illuminating the patient room brightly.

With staggering steps, Emily approached the bed slowly. There, she saw the woman whose both legs were fixed in place, her head bandaged, and her hand was receiving an intravenous drip.

Perhaps that woman noticed Emily’s presence because she slowly opened her closed eyes.

And then,

「……Emily. Aa, I’m glad. You are safe.」

While sleeping on the bed with wounds all over her body, the words that came out the very first time from her mouth were words that rejoiced of the safety of her little sister——

「Lizzie-nee-!!」

With her mind still pure white, Emily only surrendered her body to her great joy and leapt into the chest of her big sister——Lizzie Ashton. Lizzie, who received the embrace of her beloved little sister, naturally,

「Ouch ouch ouch ouch-. Wait-, it hurts, it hurts I told you, Emily! Your big sis is dying! I’m dying for sure this time!」

「Fueah!? So, sorry-, Lizzy-neee!」

She fainted in agony. A person who was in a total bed rest mustn't be jumped at. This was important. Emily was flustered and all shaken up while Lizzie smiled wryly「What a hopeless girl」with teary eyes that endured the pain.

「It's fine if you do it slowly. Look, come here, Emily.」

「Lizzie-neee」

Softly, as though she was touching a delicate artwork, Emily timidly embraced Lizzie, and then she began to leak out sobbing 'hics hics'. Lizzie partly closed her eyes at her little sister that was like that while caressing Emily's head with a gentle hand manner.

「Fufu, you really have become a crybaby while I fainted just for a bit, didn't you? Just where has the usually obstinate person gone to I wonder.」

「Fho, fho cares……hics, sniff-」

Emily grumbled while hugging tightly without any signs of letting go. Lizzie's smile was getting increasingly broader.

「I heard about the matter this time, just for a bit from that cool female agent. Looks like you have gone through a great adventure.」

「I'm, not. It wasn't, adventure……. I just, needed to do, something somehow……but, I couldn't, do anything……I only, kept getting, helped……」

「Yeah. That Paradis-san also said that she wanted to protect Emily because you were working very hard. Also, there is

one more hero-san? I heard that he too lent his strength because Emily worked really hard.

Emily stirred restlessly and lifted her face from Lizzie's chest, and then her face that turned terrible because of the tears and mucus distorted.

Lizzie wiped up Emily's face that became like that while she proudly gifted Emily her words along with a gentle smile that Emily idolized.

You have worked hard haven't you, Emily? As expected from the little sister of us all. Surely those guys, and Rick, and also teacher, they must be proud of you.

Lizzie-n*eee*-

Ah, ah, geez. Even though you are a beauty, it is wasted like this……come one, blow your nose, blow

Emily blew her nose just as she was told. And then, she restlessly buried her face into Lizzie's chest once more. Right now, she only wanted to earnestly feel her beloved big sister.

And then, Lizzie also embraced tightly such an Emily. She was only showering her love to her little sister who survived and gritting her teeth against the loneliness toward the person she loved and their comrades who had protected them.

Part 2

The airport's lobby was really bustling with people waiting for their departure and people waiting for the arrival of flight

passengers. At a waiting place where there were several rows of bench seats in place, Emily, whose eyes were still red, was staring at Kousuke apologetically.

「Sorry, Kousuke. Because of me, there is barely any time left. In the end, you cannot go buy souvenirs or do anything else.」

「No, it's fine. That was a special reunion for you. I'm not that boorish that I would be a nuisance with that.」

In the end, after Emily, who had transformed into a sticky burr on Lizzie, was finally pried off after the nurse noticed that Lizzie was almost fainting with the white of her eyes half exposed. (TN: A burr is prickly seeds or seed heads that stick to fur and clothes)

However, even with that, it seemed that Emily hated to exit the room, and when she was scolded by the nurse and got dragged outside, Emily spontaneously yelled「ONEE-CHAAAN!」and reached out her hand. Lizzie, whose eyes snapped open in a flash hearing her little sister's shout, then reached out her hand「EMILY――」, which got the intravenous drip torn off from her hand which turned it into even more commotion. The two of them were really sisters that were similar to each other.

The nurse, who was treated as a mafia member who was trying to tear apart the loving sisters from each other because of an unpaid debt, then got a throbbing vein on her forehead. Even then, the nurse kept treating the situation. It went without saying that Kousuke and Vanessa then earnestly apologized to the nurse.

Because of this and that, in the end, they arrived at the airport with barely any time left until the departure, which caused Emily to be apologetic.

「Well, at any rate, it’s great that Lizzie-san is alive.」

「Yes-」

It was a blunt topic change, but Emily responded with a broad smile. The lost things wouldn’t come back, and the wounds from that time wouldn’t vanish for her whole life. But, even so, there was salvation, even if it was just one. It was really as though the world rewarded a little to someone that had done their best.

And, at that time, Vanessa, who left them for a bit because she received a call, returned to them.

「Kousuke-san. Bernard is coming to see you off.」

「Yoo, Aby. I came as the troops’ representative.」

It seemed Vanessa had gone to the entrance to welcome Bernard who came to the airport to see off Kousuke.

「Coming expressly here like this, is your work okay?」

「No, it’s not okay. That’s why I need to go back right away, but it will be no good if we don’t give even a single parting salute when you return home to your country like this. Besides, you see, here is a souvenir from the guys in the troops.」

「Eh, my bad, troubling you like this. But, if that’s the case, then I’ll accept gratefully――」

Kousuke got a bit shy while he peeked inside the bag before his cheeks convulsed. Inside there were various combat knives and bullets that were carved with strange letters. There were also hand grenades that were written with

obscene jokes, a Zippo lighter, and a high-class cigar crammed inside.

「Are you an idiot!? There is no way I can bring this back!」

Kousuke turned into a straight-man reflexively, but Bernard replied with a puzzled expression.

「Eh, but, you. You are normally carrying something like this, right? Remember, that small katana, or the knives.」

「Ah……yeah, I guess. Sorry. Also thanks.」

He had no words to retort to that. Like that, Kousuke put the souvenir into his rucksack. He planned to throw them into the Treasure Warehouse later.

Bernard, who finished handing over the souvenirs, then nodded in satisfaction before he swiftly turned around. It seemed that it was true that busy.

「See ya, Aby. When next you come here, show your face no matter what. I'll introduce you to a delicious restaurant.」

「Aa, thanks. Bernard too, don't be too reckless.」

Kousuke smiled wryly while saying his thanks to Bernard who he could only think of as someone that was loved by the death god and the goddess of luck simultaneously. And then,

「What are you saying? I have a wife and a cute daughter waiting at home for my return. No matter what happens, I will go back home for sure.」

「That's why-, don't say those kinds of lines so easily like that!」

「Just you wait Annie (the six years old daughter). Father will get home soon……」

「Wai-, Bernard! You, seriously be careful! There is absolutely a death god right behind you there!」

Bernard so easily built a dangerous flag as naturally as breathing like always. And then his figure vanished into the crowd.

「What should I say, in a sense, it feels like he is the one nearest to Kousuke-san. I cannot help but feel amazed that he doesn’t die with that.」

「I can agree with that.」

Vanessa, for some reason, was staring at Bernard vanishing into the crowd with a gaze that seemed like she was looking at a rival while saying such a thing.

「Kousuke, it will be time soon.」

「Oh, is that so. Then, perhaps I should go soon.」

Kousuke stood up and shouldered his rucksack. And then, he was about to walk toward the boarding gate. But then his sleeve got pulled.

「Hm? Emily, what’s wrong?」

「……」

While staring at the floor, Emily pinched at Kousuke’s sleeve tightly without showing any sign of releasing it. Kousuke reflexively looked at Vanessa looking for help, but Vanessa only shrugged and didn’t say anything.

「Eeer, Emily. I’m leaving behind my clone, and I also told you my contact number, right? We will be able to meet again soon, don’t look that reluctant; it’s embarrassing somehow.」

「……」

Kousuke said that kind of thing with an exaggerated gesture a bit jokingly, but Emily’s state didn’t change. No, her ears that could be seen from between her blond hair were in the progress of changing. They were gradually getting redder. Looking closer, her neck and cheeks were also dyed red.

Kousuke then grasped the situation「Come to think of it, in the end, I failed to say anything of it! Not good!」, and he opened his mouth to say something. But, before he could,

「Yo, you see-. You see-, Kousuke! I, I actually-, that, about Kousuke I――」

The Emily’s face snapped up in a flash and was truly that of a bright red apple. Her eyes were moist, and inside them, there was an immeasurable heat. At a glance, it was obvious that she was about to liberate into words the flame that was already blazing up thunderously inside her chest currently.

The Emily’s voice unexpectedly reverberated loudly and stopped the activity of the surrounding people and the people from walking along. Their attention gathered at the two of them. The onlookers guessed the atmosphere between the two「Oh my? Could this possibly be……」and their eyes sparkled with deep interest.

And then, Emily-chan, who was already at her wits’ end, was about to carry out her first confession in her life, and her mouth formed the shape of saying「lo」, it was at that instant,

「Ah, there you are! Kou-ku~~~n-♡」

A dignified and clear voice rang through the lobby. That voice was so refreshing, and also vaguely contained a sweet sensuality, that everyone spontaneously searched for the owner of the voice.

Naturally, Kousuke, who was familiar with that voice, thought「Don’t tell me-」while he reflexively averted his gaze from Emily and turned his face toward the direction of the voice.

It was in the middle of her once in a lifetime confession, yet Kousuke turned his gaze toward the other. That caused Emily’s expression to turn ‘funya’ into a pitiable look. But, it was no good for her to be like that. Emily had to take her battle stance right away before it became a sorrow for her.

After all, right there, the person who would become the fated enemy of Emily was approaching near.

「Kou-kun!」

「Rana!?」

Emily and Vanessa also turned their gaze when Kousuke called a name. There, they could see a super beautiful onee-san running toward them from the other side of the crowd.

Two hills were jiggling up and down with each step of the run. Beautiful dark blue hair. Tight waist and beautiful legs that looked unreal. With a beautifully well-proportioned body that was 8 times longer than the head, which was realized in real life. And looks that harmonized both cuteness and beauty perfectly.

That beautiful onee-san was rushing toward them with an attractive movement like a rabbit hopping forward *pyon pyon*. She decided that the crowd was a hindrance and shifted her route a bit.

And then, while the people were paying attention to her in various meanings, she leapt and used the nearby pillar as a foothold to easily fly over the crowd with a beautiful rotation in midair. The onlookers unconsciously raised admiring voices「Ooh」seeing that acrobatic performance, but the beautiful onee-san Rana Hauria ignored them and leapt toward Kousuke with a *pyon*.

「Kou-kun, long time no see. I wanted to meet you.」

「Eh, ah, yeah. I also wanted to meet you but, no, before that, why are you here!?」

Kousuke asked with his eyes darting about in surprise. Rana chuckled seeing that while answering.

「You see boss opened the gate for me. He said that it was for an experiment. And then the boss said that it seems Kou-kun is in trouble, so he asked me if I wanted to meet you for a bit and helped to send me here.」

「So, this is Nagumo's doing……」

「Yes, I'm grateful for boss's consideration. But, it's strange you know. For some reason, boss was really impatient just now. 「It's no good if you wait until he comes back. Go there right now. Right now! It's better if you ambush him at the airport. Perhaps there will be someone near him, but don't worry of it and just jump at him!」boss said.」

「Tha, tha, that bastaaard-. He knew and still did this!」

Kousuke guessed the reason why the demon king sent Rana here. It was complete harassment. Or perhaps, he did this from a sentiment of「Comrade♪ Comrade♪」.

In any case, Kousuke was swearing inside his heart while trying to separate himself from the clinging Rana for the time being because of the attention he was showered with――

「Kousuke, that woman, who?」

「Hih」

He could hear a broken language. It was a voice without any emotion in it, a mechanical voice that sounded like a machine. Kousuke moved his gaze with a crude motion like a machine that forgot to be oiled. Toward the girl who was about to confess to him.

「Hih」

And then, he shrieked for the second time. Because Emily-chan's eyes, they were completely a single color. She was smiling faintly, but the pupils of her largely opened eyes were opening. It was a face that must not be shown by a beautiful girl.

「Kousuke? Who. That woman?」

「Hm? Ara, nice to meet you young lady.」

The one who reacted first to the repeated question was Rana. It seemed that Rana noticed Emily's existence for the first time when she separated from Kousuke. She then smiled sweetly. And then, she guessed from how Emily called Kousuke's name that she must be his acquaintance, and so she introduced herself.

With the decorous method, Hauria-style.

First of all, the sunglasses were necessa~ry!

「Mine name is Ranainferna Hauria! The wind shadow of the head reaper clan, and the lover of the right-hand of the demon king Lord Abyssgate! If you are a friend of the lord, then I welcome you without any reservation. However, please never forget that I'm a woman that belongs to darkness. You won't get away with just a mere scalding near me.」

There was a rotation. There was a cool pose! From the sunglasses that was slightly lowered, there was a perfect wink *pachin-*.

It was done. The perfect greeting was done toward the friend of her beloved lover. Ranainfe――Rana went「fuh」and her face turned into a triumphant look.

Kousuke crumbled down. The onlookers couldn't catch up at all with the development! Vanessa was nodding「Hohou, so there is a lover already」with an expression that was somewhat admiring.

And then, as for Emily,

「Lo ve r? Lo ve r……Lo ver……Lover!?」

She recovered her sanity. And then, she turned her face toward Kousuke with a motion just like Kousuke before this; it felt like there would be a *gigigi* sound ringing out from her neck with how crudely it moved. And then, with an expression that looked half-smiling, or perhaps it was half-crying, on her face, Emily asked.

「Kousuke……you have, lover?」

「……err……yes.」

The onlookers were starting to make the noise ‘A carnage, it’s a carnage’. Kousuke glanced at the commotion with a cold sweat while searching for words. Rana was looking alternately at Kousuke and Emily with a puzzled gaze while Vanessa was staring fixedly at the transition of the situation.

After knowing the fact that Kousuke had a lover, Emily’s body was trembling all over while her eyes were looking down.

「He, hey, Emily? I thought many times of telling you this――」

「WHYYY! WHY DO YOU HAVE A LOVER! WHYYYYYYYY-!!」

「Whoaa!? Ca, calm down Emily!」

「UWAAAAAAAAAN-, this is just strange-. Just why didn’t you tell mee! I would still absolutely fall in love even sooo-, but all the same, this is just too muuch-. UWAAAAAAAAAN-」

The loud scream echoed in the airport lobby. Even the staff of the airport were approaching in wonder of what was going on.

Kousuke, who got his collar grasped and was shaken back and forth, tried to stop Emily, but Emily, in her deranged state, was unstoppable.

In that chaotic scene, Rana was holding her chin with her hand while thinking of something「Uu~n」, then she clapped her hands *pon-* and walked closer toward the two briskly.

「Yes yes, Emily-chan, can I call you that? How about stopping at that, and talk a bit with me?」

Rana, who took off her Hauria mode, talked to Emily consolingly.

By the way, Hauria mode referred to the chuuni mode in full power. It was always on 24-hours when she was together with the Hauria clan. But, at the time when she was just alone with Kousuke, and at the time when there was no Hauria around, Rana had become able to talk normally in a normal mode!

Rana was taught that this was the decorum on Earth by Shia. It was a secret art that she learned desperately for the sake of greeting Kousuke’s parents!

「Uu, what do you want? Is this where you tell me to not approach your man-?」

「No? I just want to confirm to you, Emily-chan.」

「Just whaaat」

「You like Kou-kun? Not as a friend, but as a man?」

「Uuh……that’s right-, I like him! I love him! I’m sorry! FUEEeEEEEN-」

Emily confessed that she loved him by throwing all caution to the wind, and then right after that, she thought that she had done wrong to Rana and apologized, and she wailed once more. Seeing that, Rana judged that Emily’s feelings were a serious one――

For some reason, her eyes were sparkling brightly. And then, she tightly hugged the wailing Emily *mugyu-*.

「You did it, Kou-kun! The wife is multiplying!」

She blurted out such a thing.

「Eer, Rana-san? Just what could you possibly be talking about desu?」

Kousuke's speech was turning polite language, for some reason, while he asked with convulsing cheeks. In response to that,

「Eh? That's why, 'finally the second wife get!' I said.」

Rana responded back with a puzzled expression.

The surrounding fell silent. Kousuke also fell silent. Emily's wailing stopped.

Kousuke's expression looked like he was enduring a headache, and he asked while massaging his temple.

「Wh, what's with multiple wives? Isn't the premise strange? I'm planning to marry Rana though?」

「Eh? It's not strange, is it? Kou-kun marry me, then marry Emily-chan. After that, you need at the very least five more people!」

「Why!? Why do I need seven wives!? Polygamy is forbidden you know! Or rather, normally a wife is just one person!」

Kousuke shouted. Toward that, Rana tilted her head with an expression that was confused as expected,

「That's if it's in Japan, isn't it? Kou-kun will come to my place, right? Besides, one day you will become the clan head, so having just one wife——that's no good, right?」

「Ka, Kam-san only has one wife, right!?」

「That’s true, but the elder folk usually have multiple wives you know? Don’t you know that? Besides――」

「Besides?」

While hearing the sound of his common sense crumbling, Kousuke asked Rana timidly. Rana clinched a broad smile and a thumbs up while she responded.

「Even though our boss created a harem, if Kou-kun, who is his right-hand man, only has one wife then you will get looked down on! It’s fine! You don’t need to be that worried because I have arranged so that I can get along well with the fellow wives!」

「That’s not the proble――m-」

Kousuke cradled his head in his hands. In Kousuke’s mind, he had imagined a future where he and Rana would be a husband and wife like a pair of swans as the head of the clan, yet the Rana in question was actually having expectations of ‘won’t the next wife get found out soon already’. Somehow, Kousuke felt like various things inside him got smashed.

He felt like he could vaguely hear the voice of the demon king「You too, have a taste my feelings, my bosom friend」. He got the mood of wanting to punch him flying very much.

「Wai-, just wait a second. You, you are saying that it’s fine even if I’m included?」

Emily somehow managed to pull out from Rana’s chest and asked in agitation.

「But of course. Let’s support Kou-kun together, okay?」

「No no no, that’s absolutely no good! Something like that! That’s just, im, impure! As I thought, a married couple has to be a pair that is being the best partner for each other……」

Emily, whose head was messed up already, was talking about what a married couple was. But Rana was directing a meaningful expression「Fu~hn」at such Emily. Seeing that, Emily bluffed「Wha, what is it」to which Rana smiled complacently.

「Then Emily-chan, you can just give up on Kou-kun. If you say that it’s no good unless there is only one wife, then that position is mine. There is absolutely zero chance for you to replace me.」

「-. Tha, that’s……」

‘Fufuhn’, Rana showed a fearless smile. Emily was plainly flustered by that. Rana wore her sunglasses once more and made a rotation.

「Hmph, it’s absurd to believe that you can win against this me. The heart of Abyssgate is the prisoner of my hand of darkness. There is no hope for anyone to liberate it from me. Fufufu-」

Well, in other words, it seemed that Rana was saying ‘Kousuke is deeply in love with me, and I also have no intention of letting him go at all~’.

Emily saw Rana sharply pointing her finger at her, and she understood one thing.

「……I got it. So you are the cause.」

「Hm? What are you saying I wonder? Oh, cute little kitty?」

「That’s why-, I’m saying that you are the cause! That speech and act of Kousuke that was painful to look at, that’s because of you, right!?」

「Gafuh!?」

Kousuke was shot. A girl said that she loved him, but it seemed that actually, she thought that he was painful to look at. Cracks entered his heart.

「Actually, he is a cool and lovely person! Yet the moment the battle starts, he becomes strange! It’s you who made Kousuke become like that, isn’t it!?」

「Gofuh!?」

「Fuh. Indeed, it’s not an exaggeration to say that it was me who awakened Lord Abyssgate. And? If that’s the case, then what are you going to do? Do you think that a kitty like you can do anything?」

Rana chuckled ‘ku-ku-ku-‘ looking really crooked. She was in high spirits. She was in super high spirits.

Not noticing Rana’s mood which was absurdly enjoying this, Emily-chan, who was resolved to rescue her beloved, proclaimed a war declaration.

「I swear, I swear that I’ll turn Kousuke back into a proper human!」

「Gahah!?」

「I wonder if you are able to do that?」

「It’s not about being able to or not. It’s about doing it or not! Besides, I also won’t let you get away.」

「Me?」

「That's right. Even though you are this beautiful, you are doing an embarrassing act like that! It's unforgivable as a fellow woman! I swear I'll turn you back into a proper human too!」

「Ku-ku-ku-, you can howl really loud, small hero! Then just try it! I won't run or hide anywhere! However, never forget. When you peek into the abyss, the abyss will also peek back toward you!」

「I won't lose! I will not lose! Just watch Kousuke! Because I won't let you be that kind of pitiful human!」

「……」

Rana's loud laughter that couldn't hide her feelings of 'This is super fun!' was reverberating, and the war cry of Emily's, who was threatening like a cat going *fushaa-*, that was echoing caused Kousuke to feel like his heart died.

The airport was enveloped in chaos.

In the middle, Vanessa appealed「This loyalty, is higher than a mountain. This love, is deeper than the sea」while announcing her candidacy as the third wife. Hearing that, Rana said「You-, are pretty good! I warmly welcome you!」, to which Vanessa said「My greatest thanks」and fell on her knee theatrically. It was at that time that the security of the airport finally arrived.

While everyone was taken to the security office cordially, Kousuke took out his smartphone powerlessly and made a call.

「Ou, Endo. What's――」

「Just you wait, Nagumo.」

「Ha? Ah, you had met Rana already? From that sentence, it looks like it became something interesting huh?」

The voice of Hajime cackling loudly could be heard from the other side of the phone.

Kousuke spoke with a deeply held resentment.

「This time I'll sock you on the face! I'll make you regret handing Last Zell to me!」

「Eh, wai-, you-――」

Kousuke cut off the call.

In front of him, there were Emily and Rana who were still continuing to quarrel with each other even while receiving the exasperated gaze of the security staff. Sure enough, a new objective that was added into Emily's lifework――the grand objective of stopping the chuuni of Rana, and also the Hauria clan. Would the day it was accomplished come in the future?

「Kousuke-san. Four more wives left. They should be somewhere in the world. Let's do our best from here on. I'm feeling excited for some reason.」

「Which RPG is that huh? Just stay quiet a bit, Danessa.」

Kousuke averted his gaze from Danessa, who was staring at him with an excited gaze just as she said that and let out a deep sigh.

「Come to think of it, I'm not studying at all throughout this holiday.」

It seemed that Kousuke’s dream was still far ahead.

The strongest assassin who nonchalantly saved a country, or possibly even the world, was worrying about the national mock exam that would be carried out on the first day after the holidays, and then he breathed out a deep sigh once more.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Finally, it is finished……

This is really an extra long compilation. Shirakome never thought that he would write this much (wry smile).

Really, thank you very much for accompanying me to the very end.

It will make me happy if this can become a good thing for you to kill time with.

The development after this is completely undecided.

I also want to write about the characters that weren’t written about in the Afterstory, like the hero or Shia. I want to try writing an extra for the others too.

However, I think I want to rest a little due to my circumstance in real life and so on. I’m wondering whether to rest for the whole of August.

I might nonchalantly update again when I raise my spirit, so at that time, it would make me happy if you readers would

come read again.

Then, let’s meet again later.

I pray so that lovely chuuni will be with everyone who loves Narou.

Arifureta Chapter 224

Arifureta After II The Obstinate Princess Lily

AN: The title is different from my advance notice?

Yes, when I noticed that I had written too much, I couldn’t reach the part-time work leader Lily part in one chapter.

Part 1

tap tap tap tap- The sound of a typing keyboard resounded. The force of that typing was fierce. It was as though it represented the typing person’s fury, or perhaps their desperation. That sound ruined the chic atmosphere of the office that was consolidated with wooden furniture.

Uu, there is work today too. Tomorrow will be work too. The day after tomorrow too, and the day after that too, and the next day after that will be work too-! Even though, I’m not a princess anymoreee!

The sound of *tap tap tap-* finally became a *da-da-da-da-da-da-* sound that resembled a shooting machine gun. Right now, the fingertips striking the keyboard were leaving behind afterimages……such a thing didn’t happen, but the force of the finger taps was to the degree that gave such an illusion.

The one who was skillfully using the modern earth device as a matter of unpleasant necessity with teary eyes, for some reason, was the beautiful girl who once was the princess of the Hairihi Kingdom in the other world Tortus——Liliana S. B. Hairihi, that person.

Liliana was fourteen-years-old when the other world summoning was carried out, with a face that still had childishness remaining in it at the time. But now she was about to reach twenty. The six years, and also the rich experience she went through during that time, had polished her beautiful face even further.

Her hair that was like flowing gold threads, her eyes that were overflowing with gentleness and intelligence, her rose-colored cheeks, her gracefully moist lips, and then her elegance and personality that were oozing out even without her particularly doing anything, all those factors were enough to captivate anyone regardless of gender.

In fact, Liliana who accepted the invitation of her beloved and migrated to this earth had been receiving immense fame——no, rather than fame, it was more accurate to call it worship from a lot of people.

It showed from this.

knock knock, a knocking sound resounded a bit loudly, and when Liliana responded, a woman entered the room.

"Excuse me, your holiness. About the additional material for the case that will be discussed this afternoon……"

"I had finished it-! Yes, I finished it already! After all, I was dealing with that since six o'clock in the morning you see!"

The woman who was wearing a business suit looking perfectly like a career woman was handed over the document by Liliana in a snap.

The woman, who was Liliana's secretary——Sandra Winchester, slightly opened wide her intelligent eyes and accepted the document while replying"As expected from your holiness"with a voice that was crammed with admiration.

Now then, about this designation that Sandra called Liliana with——"your holiness".

Yes, it wasn't "your highness", but "your holiness".

They were on Earth, where there was only a limited number of people who could introduce themselves as royalty, so naturally, Liliana had abandoned her title as a princess in this world, but the title “holy woman” then clung to her as though in replacement.

This was exactly the reason why Liliana was teary-eyed since six in the morning as she exhibited her typing skill that was like a storm while discharging grumbles of complain.

「Your holiness. About the inquiry from the several countries that will question regarding the standing of “Hairihi Faith” at the conference today……」

「It’s not “Hairihi Faith”, it’s “Hairihi Volunteer Association”! ……cough-. Anyway, give them the answer as indicated in the document. This is the draft. Please send it to the media correspondence department. I’ll entrust them to proofread it to a certain degree, but please caution them earnestly that they are not to use any words that will endear to any faction.」

「Acknowledged. After all, this will affect the hundreds of thousands of believers from here on. I will enforce your holiness’s will thoroughly. Also, the madam chief of Britain’s state security department has called so about that.」

「It’s not “believer”, but “association member”. Please delegate the whole thing with Magdanese-san to Kousuke-san. Also, I think that the Vatican will also come with the attempt to make contact, but delegate that to Kousuke-san too. He has a relationship with the leaders of both organizations, so delegate it wholly to him even if he comes crying or complaining. If he tries to escape, please tell him that I’ll tattle to demon king-sama then.」

□Yes. Aa, also, about the secretary general that will be our conference partner, it seems that he has already arrived.□

□Uguh. He, he arrived really quickly. I guess that goes to show just how much expectation and suspicion he is holding. If the conference this time recognizes our “association” formally as an “international volunteer group”……then we will be able to clear the strange misunderstandings, and I too will be able to throw all the work wholesale to someone e——*cough*, to reach out my helping hand to a lot more people. No matter what, we have to sweep away the perception of our association that see us as a suspicious “newly rising religion”……□

□That’s right. By using that kind of official stance to make use of the UN, we will permeate into every religion, and someday the teaching of your holiness’s sublimity will spread to the whole wor——□

□It won’t spread-. I’m not someone like a certain scheming demon king somewhere! Our association is purely a volunteer organization to the end; it’s not a religious organization I tell you-. Or rather, recently I tended to ignore it, but don’t call me “your holiness”, but “chairman”!□

□Yes, chairman-sama(your holiness).□

□Hey you. Just now, you were attaching brackets there right!? It’s plain to see you know! Ah, wait, what’s with that expression that seems to say□It’s fine, I understand everything clearly□! You completely don’t understand anything!□

While Liliana’s voice, which was mixed with straight-man retorts, was reverberating, Sandra was directing a gaze that was filled with affection and respect toward the holy woman

who was also modest today, and then she reverently bowed before taking her leave.

Inside the office that was filled with silence once more, the *tic tac* sound of the clock was echoing excessively loudly.

Liliana dropped her waist powerlessly on the chair and hung her head down while holding it with both hands.

And then, she muttered briefly right from her heart.

「How, did it turn out like this……」

Now then, Liliana was supposed to be a normal girl without any titles whatsoever on Earth, but in less than two years her believers swelled up to the hundreds of thousands, and she got worshipped as the founder of a new religion——a “holy woman”. The government of every country and other religions were unreasonably cautious toward her, she had overcome brutal events like schemes behind the scenes and assassinations, and now she was preparing for a conference with the top brass of the United Nations in order to turn her association into a publicly recognized volunteer organization. Wherein after that, a press conference that would be broadcasted to the whole world would be opened up. In the end, just what kind of sequence of events made her end up falling into such a situation……

Liliana put her hand on her stomach that was making a cute sound「kuu~」in protest of her failure to eat breakfast while her gaze was looking at the faraway scenery outside the window. And then she began to reminisce about the happenings in these two years and few months.

Part 2

Inside the office where there was silence and bright sunlight shining in, the sound of a moving pen *scratch scratch* and the sound of the clock that sounded like a chirping bird *chirp-chirp-chirp-chirp-* resounded.

It was a really calm atmosphere that was optimum for doing paperwork.

But the owner of that room was in a state that couldn’t be said to be calm at all. The hand moving the pen didn’t stop, but her gaze kept glancing briefly at the clock many times over. She then looked at the mountain of paperwork and sighed; her shoulders dropped after measuring the height of the paperwork……then she started reducing the mountain of paperwork diligently, got fidgety, and got dejected……

「Liliana-sama……I understand your feelings, but no matter how many times you check the clock, the time won’t progress faster you know?」

「-, I, I’m not, worrying about anything you know?」

「No, I’m not fooled at all. Because you are already fidgety like that.」

Liliana moaned「Uh」having that pointed out by her exclusive maid.

「Today is the day your beloved husband can cross over here, isn’t it? Starting from that “Kouki-kun is abducted too many

times- Case”, demon king-sama seemed to be busy with various things and got dragged into turmoil, so it has been five months since he could properly take time to meet you. That’s why, isn’t it fine even if Liliana-sama doesn’t force yourself to do your duty just for today?

I cannot do that. If I shirk off my duty by using that person as an excuse, then there will be no meaning to my resolve that decided to be left here in this world.

The maid suggested so; however, Liliana rejected it while smiling wryly.

A month after the legendary decisive battle. Even though at that time Liliana was worked to death with the revival of her motherland, she still fiercely appealed to Hajime firmly. Perhaps that also worked in her favor because after many twists and turns (especially with the first wife), she managed to be accepted by Hajime along with Aiko who was also fiercely appealing like her. She then spent a brief time of happiness with him, but……

Liliana was a princess.

Furthermore, his majesty, the king of the country, was absent, and her younger brother, which would be the next king, Randell was still immature. Although Liliana’s mother Luluaria was working hard, as expected, there was a limit to the situation wherein the kingdom’s capital was annihilated. The postwar processing that was done by Liliana, who had gathered much sympathy from her great effort as the commander-in-chief at the decisive battle, became something indispensable for the kingdom.

Therefore, although Liliana was conflicted, she made the decision to not abandon her position. It was unknown whether Hajime and others who would return to their home

would be able to open the gate to Tortus once more. And so, there was even the possibility that it would become a parting for their whole life.

Even so, Liliana couldn’t abandon her motherland.

Liliana told Hajime that she would stay behind with the resolve for everything. She declared that resolve of hers, however, Hajime smiled happily instead. Liliana remembered that smile clearly. Of course, that smile wasn’t because Hajime was happy that he could part with Liliana. If that was actually the reason, then Liliana might’ve thrown herself off the tower regardless of her resolve or anything……

Anyway, that determination became one of the great reason, and there was no doubt that she had accomplished joining the wives group. The night before the return to earth, it went without saying how the resolved Liliana was blazing more than usual.

「……Princess. Please come back to reality. And please wipe up your drool. Your face has turned into something that must not be shown toward other people.」

「Hah!?」

Liliana had gone completely into a trip from recalling the passionate night she spent with Hajime. The exasperated voice of her exclusive maid caused her mind to return to reality with a ‘hah’. And then, she took out her handkerchief and thoroughly wiped the saliva trickling from the corner of her lips.

「Princess and Hajime-sama’s relation is really harmonious, isn’t it? The voices of envy among the maids also still hasn’t stopped. Similarly, I also feel really envious.」

「It, it’s not that great……」

The words of her exclusive maid caused Liliana’s cheeks to go red, and she began to deal with the paperwork in high-speed to hide her embarrassment. For her to hide her embarrassment with high-speed paperwork processing, perhaps it was just as expected from the talented princess of the kingdom.

「……Princess. At the “gate opening” this time, what will you do?」

「What do you mean?」

The exclusive maid who was gazing smilingly at the embarrassed Liliana then went through a complete change and asked with a serious expression.

「With the help of the artifacts that Hajime-sama exclusively left behind for the craftsmen, the royal capital reconstructed at an astounding speed. Seventy percent of the whole capital has been finished in this year and a half. The plan for the new royal capital’s formal ceremony of the revival proclamation has also begun.」

「……That’s right. Certainly, with the help of everyone from the empire and the beastmen, the truly new royal capital is in the process of being built by also taking in the style of many nations. The functional beauty of the empire’s capital, the natural beauty of Fea Belgen, and then the traditional beauty of the Hairihi Kingdom……it’s a wonderful city that harmonizes all of those.」

「Yes.」

「It will become a symbolic city that is worthy of the new era that has freed itself from the rule of the mad god. The

ceremony has to be a grand celebration that indicates a fresh start toward the new era.

Liliana’s gaze was directed from the window to the outside. Ahead of her gaze, there was a beautiful townscape taking shape. If she sharpened her ears, she would be able to faintly hear the hustle and bustle of the reconstruction and work activity.

Liliana’s cheeks loosened, and her eyes squinted fondly at that. She felt like it was worth it for her to work so hard in which there was barely any time to sleep for her.

Yes. This matter should be almost fixed already with the agreement of the empire and beastman clan too. And above all else, as long as Liliana-sama’s spouse is that “Goddess’s Sword”……no, the “Godslaying Demon King”, there won’t be any problems that can occur that easily.

……What is it that you want to say?

Liliana returned her gaze from the window toward her exclusive maid. A suspicion dwelled inside her eyes. The exclusive maid told her master that she respected with a voice that was filled with gentleness and sympathy.

Isn’t it enough already?

Enough……

Yes. His highness Randell-sama has grown remarkably; he also has excellent retainers with him. The reconstruction of the capital and the relationship with other countries, they have reached a point where we can take a breather. It’s my humble opinion that even without Liliana-sama leading in the front, the kingdom is already able to keep advancing forward even then. Then, Liliana-sama, don’t you think that

it’s better for Liliana-sama to start chasing after your own happiness?」

「……」

‘Is that really the case?’ Liliana questioned herself while staring once more at the new capital outside the window.

Even so, certainly it was the fact that recently the work that absolutely needed Liliana to handle had decreased remarkably. And then, at times where she could relax, her thoughts would run toward her beloved every time. She would think of him especially vividly at night when she was all alone by herself, constricting Liliana’s heart painfully.

「Hajime-san……」

「Fufu, isn’t that the answer, Liliana-sama?」

「-」

A voice that wished for her beloved unconsciously leaked out. The exclusive maid that caught that voice laughed merrily with loosened cheeks as though she had seen something delightful or perhaps something charming. Liliana felt somewhat awkward getting seen through like that, and she averted her face with her cheeks reddening.

The exclusive maid chuckled even more from seeing Liliana like that. Surely, if in this place there were other servants who were serving under Liliana, every one of them would surely have made similar smiles from seeing their master’s cuteness.

Everyone was holding really deep thoughts of respect and gratitude to Liliana.

Liliana was already loved by the servants and the people due to her personality. And yet, she didn’t stop just there, when the capital was once attacked, she slipped out of the palace by herself and went to call for help. Such an event was well-known due to a certain merchant with a name that was similar to an energy drink.

In addition, it was also known how she tried to offer her body to the empire in order to save the kingdom that was weakened by the attack.

And then, in that legendary decisive battle.

While the people of the capital were sent to evacuate toward the empire, they asked what she would do with unease in their heart. To that, Liliana said with a smile.

——”Even though the royal capital will become a battlefield, if I, the princess, don’t fight, then who will fight.”

She became the commander-in-chief and took the command of hundreds of thousands of warriors in the battle that staked the existence of mankind. That gallant figure was spread far and wide by the surviving soldiers, mercenaries, and adventurers.

Her fame had risen up with a momentum that pierced the sky. Regardless of man or woman, young or old, in spite of race or occupation.

That was why the exclusive maid could say the words□it’s enough already□with conviction. It was the general consensus of all the people.

Liliana threw her gaze outside the window once more, at the reconstructed city. She felt the warm gaze of the exclusive maid while wearing an ambiguous expression, unable to be

convinced whether it was really fine for her to be liberated from the responsibility of royalty and chase after her own happiness by crossing over the world.

But, at that time, *ri—n* a sound that was like a wind chime rang. That was a signal from the room in a corner of the palace that was used for “gate opening”. The sign that the door to another world was opened.

-. Hajime-san!

Her gloominess until just now vanished elsewhere. Liliana’s expression bloomed brightly in a flash like a child. She said to her exclusive maid I’m going to welcome him! before going out of the room with energetic footsteps without even waiting for a reply.

The exclusive maid was silently bowing toward the door that was opened vigorously.

Hajime, who appeared from the gate, was jumped by Liliana with obvious happiness. And then without stopping she pulled Hajime’s hand like a kid and guided him to her own room.

Midway, they passed by the servants of the palace and several nobles, each time they faced Hajime with unconcealed respect while their expression greatly softened seeing Liliana who kept tugging on Hajime’s hand in her grasp as though to say Hurry-, hurryyy.

Every time Liliana passed by someone, she would greet them politely, but it seemed she didn’t notice their warm expressions. Surely, after some time passed and she calmed down, she would become like a ripe apple then.

Hajime was wearing a troubled smile seeing such a Liliana while he was getting dragged cutely. In Liliana’s room, he received black tea that was personally brewed by her.

「Nevertheless, today Hajime-san comes alone then. I thought that Yue-san and the others would surely come too though.」

Liliana was placing a tea snack that looked like a cookie on the table while asking Hajime with her head tilted. Hajime made a smile that vaguely looked mischievous and asked back.

「What? You don’t like being alone with me?」

「Suc, such a thing……couldn’t possibly be true.」

Liliana cheeks faintly reddened and she dropped her waist on the chair with a thump. Hajime’s gaze that was oozing a bit of S aura caused her gaze to wander, and her body to fidget around without any composure. And then, Liliana became unable to endure Hajime’s atmosphere that seemed to enjoy her state and changed the topic.

「And, what about Hajime-san? It seemed that you were really busy from “Kouki-kun is abducted too many times-Case” though……」

「……That naming, it really caught on?」

「Yes, well. After all, after that other world summoning, Kouki-san was further summoned again and dragged Hajime-san then, right? I heard the story that during the third summoning Kouki-san got dragged in with teary eyes while also dragging in Hajime-san. That story is already spread around here. Ryuutaro-san and others were telling that story looking really amused.」

Hajime half-smiled at Liliana’s words.

Just as Liliana said, Kouki went into an atonement journey in this Tortus, but in the middle of his journey when he stopped by in the palace, he got summoned into another world somewhere.

There, Kouki faced his own way of living, and through many twists and turns, he saved the world but……

At that time, when Hajime who was begged by Kouki’s childhood friends and his wife rushed to where Kouki was for assistance, just when the series of event was resolved, and they were going ‘no, let’s go home’, another summoning assaulted Kouki as though to say「Next one, please take care of ii~t」.

Kouki was on the verge of tears while yelling「I don’t want anymoreeeeee~~~」and wasted no time clinging tightly to Hajime who was nearby. Demon king-sama got flustered 「Wai-, you-」but it was already too late.

While the childhood friends and wives were staring in a daze, both of them intimately went through another world summoning for the third time.

To tell the truth, after various things were happening in that world, they got summoned for the fourth time. Kouki was a softhearted person, but as expected, it seemed that he snapped toward the goddess that requested「I want you to save the world」, and in front of the watching Hajime he,

「You stupid idiot-. Why are you giving up like this! Do your best-, do your best! You are a goddess right! If it’s you then you can do it-. You can do it by yourself! You surely can! Believe in me who believes in you! If you give up, then it’s the end of the world y’know!」

Like that, entrusting himself to the momentum, Kouki insisted「Please manage it somehow by yourself」. In a sense, he had done something astounding. It was a heartfelt insistence to the degree that it made Hajime to unconsciously admire him.

As a result, currently, there was her majesty the queen of the second world and the materialized goddess of the fourth world on both sides of Kouki, staring at each other with sparks scattering between them.

Back to the story.

Hajime recounted the experience with a bit of a faraway look. He then noticed Liliana who was staring at him in wonder and coughed before returning to the topic.

「Well, it has calmed down somehow. Right now, I'm going to college while trying to expand my business. Well, even though I say that, on Earth there are also dangerous bunches and guys with dozens of loose screws in their head as it is, so I'm busy there in its own way.」

「Is that so. Come to think of it; I heard that Kousuke-san is running around to resolve that kind of case. He introduced several women who will be living on this side.」

「……Those Hauria bunch are sprinting to even weirder directions after obtaining Earth's knowledge. It's tiring already thinking about those guys.」

The 'hyahha' life of the head-reaping rabbits that exhausted even the demon king. Just where in the world were they going toward? In a sense, it was worthy of admiration how a certain girl in a lab coat with a side-tail hairstyle was still working hard. And then, as for a certain agent who recently became obsessed with wearing a rabbit ear hairband and in

a mistake forgot to take it off and casually went into her workplace, surely she was completely beyond hope.

Hajime was about to get a faraway look once more. In order to make him return to reality, Liliana opened her mouth with a slight panic.

「Even so a college student is it……how should I say it, I have some doubt if there will be anything that Hajime-san and others can learn in college after this far.」

「Well, I cannot deny that. But, you know, the college students all over the world are relatively noncommittal don't you think? We too. It's not like we took the examination seriously thinking of wanting to learn something. It will be a long life after all. We just thought that it wouldn't be that bad having the experience of being a college student.」

「I, is that how it is? I heard that what is called a college in the world over there is the highest institute of education, so I thought that it would be a gathering of those who are serious with their studies.」

「Of course, there are also the serious bunches there, and that's also the correct way of going through college. It will be a different story if I'm using my parent's money, but I'm paying for everything, the tuition and also the living expenses with the money that I earned myself. Whether anyone will do it seriously or loosely, it depends on each person. What I'm saying is, just what is bad about going there in order to enjoy the student life?」

Hajime said that with a shrug. His feeling of wanting to experience university was true, and it was also a fact that he was learning the major of archeology and folkloristics because he was interested in them.

Although, his biggest reason was something that couldn’t be helped; that was “wanting to see the female college student Yue”. The experience of hearing a lecture while sitting side by side with Yue with the appearance of a twenty-year-old really satisfied Hajime. Of course, he wouldn’t say it out loud.

By the way, just like always, his harem situation and the wives’ beauty caused a university somewhere to still be in the middle of chaos and mayhem.

「Enjoying school life…..is it.」

Liliana let out a small mutter. It wasn’t like there was particularly great emotion filling that mutter, but the small hope that was implicitly included in that mutter couldn’t be hidden.

Because she was a princess, Liliana was unrelated with student social status. Something like the springtime of life in the middle of school life like a normal girl was something that she only knew from books. She had a longing for it, and she also dreamed about it.

It was possible that she could experience high school life with Hajime and the others if she acted selfishly in the past. If she abandoned the kingdom and her status as princess and shook off everything, then perhaps such a dream could’ve become a reality.

After thinking that far, however, Liliana thought「How stupid」with a self-depreciating smile and shook her head. Abandoning the people to run toward the dream with a man, that kind of woman wasn’t herself.

——I am Liliana S. B. Hairihi. The only princess of the Hairihi Kingdom.

She had a longing for being a normal girl. But, if she discarded being a princess for that, then the brilliant soul of Liliana would die out. It would be none other than Liliana herself that wouldn’t forgive her if she abandoned the people and ran away from her obligation. If she did something like that, surely Liliana would continue to scorn herself for her whole life.

Just when she thought about her own personality as「What a difficult personality 」, a small laugh suddenly reached her ears. When she raised her gaze in puzzlement, there was Hajime with a smile on his lips staring fixedly at Liliana while resting his chin on his hand. His gaze was awfully kind in contrast with the smile on his mouth.

「E, err, what is it?」

For some reason, she couldn’t look at Hajime’s eyes and turned away slightly while asking. Her heart was beating fast, hammering in her chest.

「No, nothing. I’m just thinking, that you are proud as usual.」

Liliana tilted her head from not understanding what Hajime wanted to say. Hajime’s smile was turning increasingly kinder seeing that while he spoke the main topic that he came for today.

「Enough about me for now……what about the kingdom? I more or less let out reconnaissance planes right after I arrived, and had a look at the situation. Based on what I see, it seems that the reconstruction is going along well.」

「That’s, right. I also talked about it just now with my maid, but even the plan for the celebration ceremony of the new royal capital completion has begun. I also haven’t heard of any serious problems with the empire, the beastmen, and

the rebirth of the holy church. I believe that we will be able to proclaim our revival in less than half a year. Of course, the new capital has the concept of “an open city to other countries and races”, so there is a huge mound of small problems.」

Even while feeling perplexed with the radical topic change, Liliana answered like that with a wry smile. She also said 「Come to think of it; I came here after leaving a mountain of paperwork that I have to go through」with her tongue playfully sticking out.

But, Hajime only narrowed his eyes at that joking gesture of Liliana without particularly laughing back, and he then asked quietly.

「About that, is that a problem that cannot be resolved without Lily here——without princess Liliana S. B. Hairihi here?」

「Eh?」

Liliana lost her words hearing Hajime’s question. The content of the talk was similar to her conversation just now with her exclusive maid.

「Is this country unable to progress forward without Princess Liliana? Will it mean that you abandoned “the responsibility of royalty” by leaving now? Is it crossing over worlds that will hurt your pride?」

「Pl, please wait a second. Just, what is this about……」

Liliana waved around her hands from being unable to understand the surge of questions and asked Hajime to stop.

……Of course, she actually understood just what Hajime was saying to her. The fast beating in her heart didn’t show any sign of stopping. Her face was so heated that she was aware of it herself.

But, honestly, she also felt perplexed. She had been a princess since she was born. It wasn’t an exaggeration to say that it was her identity. Even though she understood that her happiness lied in another place, it wasn’t easy for her to make the decision.

As though seeing through that perplexity of Liliana’s, Hajime smiled wryly「You are thinking too hard on it」while further adding on to his words.

「I’m not asking you to abandon being a princess. This is just a matter of the order of priority. Leave the role of being royalty to other people for a bit and live for your own sake a bit more――won’t you be like that any time now? That’s what I mean.」

「I, I am……」

‘Is it really fine?’ Liliana tilted her head again with such doubt.

Hajime’s expression turned half concerned, and half exasperated from seeing the princess who was still conflicted with the feeling of reluctance and guilt to leave her country *for her own sake*.

And then, he scratched his head a bit roughly as though he had finally grown impatient.

「Good grief……you really are an obstinate princess.」

「Hajime-san?」

Liliana who understood what was the intention of Hajime giving her that kind of question gazed anxiously at Hajime who was looking like that thinking「By any chance, has he fallen out of love with me?」.

Hajime also returned an exasperated gaze at that gaze of Liliana while replying,

「Stop acting like this already, if you won't act at least a bit selfish……I'm going to kidnap you, you know?」

「Hee!?」

He said such a thing.

Liliana raised a hysteric voice while jerking her body which caused the chair to make a bumping sound. Hajime then grinned broadly while making an additional blow by saying 「A demon king kidnapping a princess……that's not strange at all, right?」.

Naturally, it caused Liliana's face, no, all of her visible skin to be dyed bright red to the degree that it looked like she might explode.

Liliana kept opening and closing her mouth wordlessly. Hajime shrugged at that, and then, thinking that there wouldn't be any progress like this, he suddenly took out a crystal ball from "Treasure Warehouse II" that looked like the item used in fortune-telling and put it on the table.

「If you are that doubtful whether it's okay for you to live for your own sake, then let's just ask directly instead.」

「Wha, what are you planning to do?」

The demon king took out an artifact——that fact caused Liliana to feel a bad premonition blaring in her mind, and her cheeks twitched. The princess laid bare her wariness in a complete change while the demon king activated the artifact with a really nice smile.

And then, he took in a deep breath facing toward the crystal ball that was faintly shining and,

「AT~~~~~TENT~~~~~ION-!!」

He yelled really loudly with that kind of voice. Instantly, there was exactly the same voice and word 「AT~~~~~TENT~~~~~ION-!!」resounding from outside the window.

Liliana turned her startled face to outside the window, and while her mind was in chaos「E? Eee!?」, the demon king-sama who was also in perfect form today raised his voice uncompromisingly toward the people of the new capital projected inside the crystal ball, where they were also similarly looking around at the surroundings with their minds in chaos.

「This is too abrupt but——I'm the demon king!」

「Certainly it's just too abrupt!」

Liliana acted the straight-man from her heart. From the crystal ball, there were also the voices of several people who similarly acted the straight-man, resounding inside the room.

It seemed that this artifact had the function that connected the image and voice. Just now, Hajime said that he launched reconnaissance planes over the new capital right after he arrived, so surely this artifact was linked with those

countless planes by a two-way connection to broadcast the voice.

Hajime smoothly ignored Liliana’s retort and sent his voice to the middle of the capital.

「People of the new capital, I’m asking all of you. ――Do you still need Princess Liliana?」

「Ha, Hajime-san!?」

The capital people inside the crystal ball were showing a bewildered expression. The amplified voice that was reverberating everywhere caused the people indoors to come outside too, and they all looked at each other’s face. Hajime told them that he was using an artifact to talk all over the capital and that if they answered from where they were, their voice would reach his ear.

Liliana who guessed what Hajime was trying to do went ‘awa awa’ in a great panic.

「Right now, I’m in the middle of courting Liliana. I told her, just come with me to my world right away. But, the situation is unfavorable. It seems that this princess-sama is worried about you guys, she is really worrying so much that she cannot bear it. ――What do I do now? At this rate, I’m going to get dumped like this, even though I’m the demon king.」

「REA~~LLY, JUST WHAT ARE YOU TALKING ABOUTTTTTT-」

The demon king-sama was venting his anger「Because of you bastards I’m about to get dumped here, asshole」to the people all over the capital. Liliana was getting teary-eyed from shame and everything while screaming at such a demon king. She stood up so quickly the chair fell down and

then she kept hitting repeatedly *poka poka* at Hajime’s head to make him stop.

His head was shaking all over *ka-kun ka-kun*, however, the demon king-sama didn’t stop.

「Therefore, I’ll ask, one more time. Does all of you, does this world, still need Princess Liliana? Are all of you toddling chicks that are so helpless that she cannot take action from worrying about you guys?」

The people looked at each other after hearing that question thrown at them once more.

And then, with a bewildered expression on his face, a stern-looking uncle that seemed to be the foreman of a construction site,

「No, even if I’m asked that……Liliana-sama, she is still staying in the palace until now?」

He said such a thing.

Hearing that voice resounding from the crystal ball, Liliana went「Heh?」with a really strange voice. Even while she was astonished like that, the voices of the people of the new capital who were talking to the people beside them in a mood like gossiping were starting to reach through the crystal ball.

「Oh dear me. I was completely under the impression that her highness has been living happily in the other world since a long time ago already.」

「Eh, how strange. I heard that she already has a child with his majesty the demon king already though……」

When the wife of an ingredient shop said that, the shop's owner the husband cocked his head in puzzlement and replied like this,

「If I'm not mistaken, the demon king-sama has been living in the world over there with his other wives since a long time ago I'm told. By any chance, our princess-sama, she got left out?」

「Eh, Liliana-sama, she is alone?」

「No, wait. The relationship between the wives should be great. Yet, for Liliana-sama to be still here means……by any chance, she didn't get along with her mother-in-law……」

「Princess, she got bullied?」

In front of the new main gate, when the soldiers of the kingdom were talking to each other, the male and female adventurers nearby were looking to the sky with sympathizing expressions.

Liliana's cheeks were starting to twitch uncontrollably. She had never imagined even in her dreams, that during the time she was desperately taking care of the works day by day, the people that she worked for actually thought that she had eloped since a long time ago. Furthermore, her still being in the palace was starting to make strange misunderstandings spread!

「Wai-, wait everyone~~! I'm not being left out and also not being aloneee! I even get along well with my mother-in-law Sumire-sama! A, also, something like chi, children……I don't have them yet. I am just doing my work pro~~perly here!」

Liliana reflexively gave an explanation with a loud voice, but that voice was picked perfectly by the artifact that was

pointlessly high-spec and was sent to every corner of the capital.

The pathetic sounding explanation of their beloved princess caused the people to look at each other for the third time, and then they laughed with each other as though they had arranged it beforehand.

There wasn’t even a shred of emotion that was poking fun in their laughter. That laughter was overflowing with warmth.

The foreman of the construction site whose voice got picked up first tensed his dirty face while sending his words.

□In that case, there is only one answer to that question of his majesty the demon king.□

The foreman then glared all around him, there his several dozen subordinates made similar expressions. And then, with their voices matched together,

□□□□□□We don’t need the princess anymore!□□□□□□

The wife and husband of the ingredient shop just now, and the surrounding people were,

□□□□□We are fine already!□□□□□

The soldiers, adventurers, mercenaries,

□□□□□Please don’t treat us like a helpless chick!!□□□□□

Liliana’s eyes were nailed toward the crystal that kept changing the projected image with the voices of those people getting through.

The people of the capital right now were facing the palace, and they raised their voices.

The people who were in the middle of working stopped moving their hands, the people indoors got outside, regardless of adult or child, they all were saying things like 「Just how long is the princess going to keep working」or「Her highness worries too much」or「If princess does nothing but work, then his highness demon king will fall out of love you know」that pierced relatively deep into Liliana without batting an eyelid.

But, their expressions were uniformly warm, that was why the heart of the people was conveyed toward their beloved princess Liliana with nothing to spare.

Namely,

——Enough with the tedious talk. It’s fine already, so just chase your happiness right away.

That.

The warm, lovely thing overflowing out from Liliana’s heart turned into tears that trickled through her cheek. She leaked out a sobbing voice and formed her words desperately even while her voice stuttered many times.

「E, *ever*yone! Thank, youuu!!」

The formed reply became a ripple that spread throughout the new capital. Whether those words of gratitude were conveyed or not, the expressions of the people that seemed to say「That’s our line」gave the answer more eloquently than anything.

Hajime hugged the small shoulder of Liliana who was letting out large drops of grateful tears. That small shoulder had been continuously burdened with the country until now.

Hajime circulated his words of conclusion through the artifact.

「You guys, that really helped. Even the obstinate princess finally folded. This is sudden, but I'll take Liliana right away.」

「Eh? Eeh? Hajime-san!?」

Liliana turned bewildered feeling her body floating lightly, and then when she noticed that she was being held in a princess carry, her face turned red instantly.

Liliana turned small in Hajime's chest from shyness and happiness. Hajime gave her a glance while taking back the crystal, but his movement suddenly stopped from remembering something.

「Aah, that's right. I'll say this in advance to the people of the new capital. Liliana, in the end, cannot stop being a princess, she is a woman with kindness, sincerity, and love. Therefore, from here on too she might unexpectedly come home here to take a look at your situation. At that time, if you guys show Liliana a predicament that makes her sad…… know that my 108 harassments will rain down on you all.」

「Wait, what are you saying there!」

A demon king was someone unreasonable. And this one here was an extreme one.

Liliana retorted with a convulsing face at the demon king's proclamation of disaster, and the faces of the new capital's people were also convulsing all at once. And then, the people swore in each of their hearts. 「Let's live seriously with our all」like that.

It was the day that people would live with their all, half threatened.

On that day, the princess who had continued to devote herself to the kingdom and the people was kidnapped with a princess carry by the demon king to another world.

……By the way, regarding Liliana’s personal effects, thanks to her exclusive maid standing by in front of the room of “gate opening” with complete preparation, they were crammed into a large bag, so there was no problem at all.

The bag of Liliana’s personal effects that was presented right away was received by Hajime like it was only natural along with a praise「Good work」while the exclusive maid acted humbly saying「It’s a great honor」like it was only natural. Needless to say, Liliana yelled「You act more like a servant to him compared to when you’re with me! Or rather, you two absolutely plotted this behind my back already!」when she saw that exchange.

AN: Next chapter will be uploaded around seven.

Arifureta Chapter 225

Arifureta After II The Part-Time Leader Lily First Part

AN: I'll submit one more chapter for the commemoration of the resumption.

Part Time Leader Lily Second Part will be around 8 or 9 o'clock.

□Hafuu~□

That kind of sigh, which was free of tension, resounded inside the room that gave off a sense of cleanliness with its white tone.

Her own sigh unexpectedly echoed loudly causing Liliana to be taken aback, and then she frowned with a speechless expression, perhaps because she was letting out that sigh unconsciously.

For some reason or another, she kept leaning her back deeply on the reclining chair she was sitting on, and then she kicked on the floor with the bare tips of her toes and tried turning around. The good quality chair lightly rotated and the state of the room was reflected in Liliana's sight in order.

It was a room that was half the size of the room that she was using until just some time ago in the palace.

Liliana herself thought that this size was just right, but if the nobles and servants in Tortus knew about this, then they might yell「How can the princess be made to live in this kind of small dog house!」with a look like Edvard Munch's The Scream.

A few months had passed since the day when "Princess Liliana" went inactive and arrived on Earth. The more the months and days passed, the more she made in Earth accessories bit by bit.

The puppet "Dancing Davis-kun" that she received from Myuu at the moving celebration was emitting its presence excessively. Surely, the expression "quivering" suited the puppet more than "dancing". It was vibrating *jiggle jiggle* like a dangerous person who was going through withdrawal symptoms.

Just from where in the world did Myuu obtain this Davis-kun……

Honestly speaking it was eerie, but when she recalled Myuu's smiling face whenever she thought of throwing it away, she was unable to throw it away.

「Fuu~~n」

Liliana was letting out a strange exhalation that lacked in tension while rotating her chair one more time. She then stepped a bit and rotated in reverse. Whirl whirl. Whirl whirl.

「Nothing, to do.」

It seemed she had spare time.

「How amazing. Liliana is now experiencing by myself that "spare time" I heard from rumors.」

It seemed she really had spare time. To the degree that she narrated the present condition of herself by herself.

For Liliana who was born as royalty, what was called “spare time” was the same as a fairytale.

After all, she was the sole direct descendant of the royalty until her little brother was born. She began going through education for the gifted ever since she was old enough to be aware of her surroundings, and even when Randell was born and her possibility to ascend to the throne decreased, the necessity for her to receive much training in her role as a spare, or in order to function as a rope toward the empire, didn’t decrease at all.

And then, when she was in her youth at the age of fourteen, she went through a year of a chain of events that was like surging waves, to which the word dense wasn’t enough at all to express that experience. And after that, she was swamped with work for the sake of the reconstruction.

From the time since she was born until the moment before this, she was in a position that was understandable for her to never experience this thing called “free time” or the like.

That was how Liliana was before, but then she was taken away by Hajime, had her official papers made in forgery, deceived the administrative official, obtained social status peacefully by slapping public safety in the face, and currently, she was going to the same college as Hajime and the others.

Before this, she had been taken to visit Earth several times, so she understood that earth was a world that was like a jack-in-the-box. Even so, the “school life” and “learning experience of another world’s college” that Liliana yearned

for tickled her curious mind and gave her fresh enjoyment. It was, but……

Whirl whirl. Whirly whirl. The princess of another world was rotating in twirls using the chair of another world. And then, she came to a stop,

「……Davis-kun. It’s nice to be you huh. You look busy quivering.」

Finally, the princess started talking to a doll. Davis-kun quivered back and forth looking troubled.

But, at that time, the sound of the entrance opening could be heard faintly.

If Liliana had animal ears growing in her head, then right now they would surely be snapped up in attention *pikon*. She wore her indoor slippers and exited her room with rhythmical steps *te-te-te—* in order to welcome the person returning home.

She went down to the first floor and encountered Sumire who was holding a large quantity of bags, for some reason.

「Welcome home, Sumire-okaasama.」(TN: The kanji for okaa-sama(honored mother) here is written with the kanji of mother-in-law)

「My, you are home early today, Lily-chan. I’m home!」

Sumire fixed her hold on the large amount of bags with a rough huff before Liliana went to help her in a hurry. She took several of the baggage, and when she glanced inside them, it seemed their contents was a large number of side dishes.

「Say, Sumire-okaasama, this is?」

「You see, this is today's dinner.」

「Dinner?」

「Yes. The dishes that were served in the event had leftovers, and I pilfered them all! They were really delicious. I heard that they called a really famous cook to make the dishes. So I thought that I should let my uncute son and his cute wives to try them.」

「Is, is that so. Thank you very much, Sumire-okaasama.」

「Your welcome!」

Liliana's expression crumbled softly seeing her mother-in-law who was all smiles.

Frankly speaking, this is Sumire they were talking about, so she surely must have forcefully swiped the dishes for "takeout" without even minding the eyes of others drawing away from her. If not, normally someone would stop anyone from bringing home this much.

It seemed that today there was an event for the live-action film of the manga that was authored by Sumire, so the people there too must be only looking at Sumire who was packing up the food happily while thinking「No way we can anger sensei at this event huuh~」.

The Nagumo Family was in prosperity.

Sumire herself was a big name shoujo manga artist, and her husband Shuu had made his company bigger in these few years. And above all, the businesses that Hajime reached

out his hand toward here and there were making absurd killings.

From the standpoint of royalty, it wasn’t like Liliana didn’t think that they had the allowance, so they could just directly employ that chef to cook directly for them.

But, no matter how much they were earning, no matter how prosperous they were, displaying a dynamism that was not forgetting this kind of “fun” was the shared trait of the Nagumo family. It was a tacit precept of the family.

Liliana became really ticklish seeing Sumire who showed off the dishes「I came with the delicious cooking that I snatched off――!」for the sake of herself who was a daughter-in-law.

They carried the large number of dishes to the kitchen before Sumire tilted her head「Come to think of it」while speaking out her question.

「You aren’t together with Hajime and the others?」

「Yes. Hajime-san and the others still have a lecture, so they are still at the college. The lecture that I was scheduled to have canceled……」

「My, that’s nice. Doesn’t a sudden lecture cancellation make you happy for no reason?」

「Eh? Eer……」

It seemed that Sumire’s common feeling wasn’t transmitted to the serious and diligent princess. After all, this princess was someone that would start talking to a quivering doll when she had too much free time.

「Or rather, even if you didn’t come home, you could’ve just gone to the lecture that Hajime is going to. Even just chattering aimlessly will be fun, right?」

「No, Sumire-okaasama. As expected, thinking that it’s fine to chatter while receiving a lecture is just……」

「Eeh~. It’s fun exactly because you are doing it secretly behind the teacher’s back.」

「Sumire-okaasama……」

Liliana’s shoulders dropped in dejection. Her blood-related mother Luluaria was fundamentally a sincere character that was strict and diligent to herself. And so, Liliana couldn’t say anything anymore to the irresponsible statement of her mother-in-law whose sense of value was completely different with her real mother.

But mysteriously, the relationship between Sumire and Luluaria was good despite this, which was why it was something mysterious.

They put down the dishes for the evening dinner with a thud in the kitchen. Sumire was moving the many dishes that were her war booty while she threw her gaze to Liliana who was helping her serving the food with similar nimbleness.

「And, how are you recently? Have you gotten used to this world? At the time when you only just came, you spent all your time studying various things, but recently you aren’t like that anymore.」

「Yes. I have grasped Earth’s affairs in general. The economics and politics, the religion and history, the situation of every nation, culture, fashion……every book in this world is compiled systematically, and even if there is

something I don’t understand I can investigate it immediately using the internet. It’s really convenient.」

「Aa~, yeah, I see.」

「Yes. Especially the more I learned about economics and the study of statistics, the more I feel how deep they are. The density and the fruits of labor that has been accumulated by the predecessors of this world are something that I cannot find in Tortus. Every day, I feel like I am shown just how behind the study of the world other there is compared to here.」

「I, I see. How amazing~」

「Yes. Right now, over there they are still in the middle of reconstruction, so even if an advanced system is suddenly introduced, I can see that it will only end in failure. It won’t be able to happen right away, but someday, I believe that the kingdom has to adopt this. Regarding the field of economy, the coordination with Fhuren――」

「St, stop! Sto~~~~~p! That’s enough there, Lily-chan!」

「Heh?」

Sumire hurriedly raised her voice to stop Liliana who was spouting a torrent of speech.

Liliana was lifting her face in puzzlement, but even now, her hands were moving continuously without pause and served up the packed dishes as though they were palace cooking. Her speed was twice Sumire’s while her courteousness was triple.

「Geez, Lily-chan, even though you should have left the position of the princess and came into the family when you

are talking about your mind, you are only talking about the kingdom.」

「a……」

Liliana finally noticed herself what she was talking about after getting stared at by Sumire's half-admiring half-exasperated face. Her cheeks reddened.

「When you just arrived here, you felt like 'Everything attracts my interest, so there is no time for that!', but when you calmed down after grasping the situation to a degree, as expected, you become concerned with your homeland, don't you?」

「N, no, such a thing……is not true.」

Seeing Liliana who stuttered, Sumire put her index finger on her chin muttering「Uu~n」in a thinking gesture before she spoke something that was shocking for Liliana.

「Is that so? But recently, Lily-chan is making a face that looks like a lost child somehow you know?」

「Eh……」

Sumire walked toward Liliana who was staring at her in blank amazement with her eyes turned round, and then she stooped down a bit to put their eyes at the same height. And then, after Sumire confirmed that those blue eyes were reflecting herself properly, she asked calmly with a gentle and kind expression.

「Do you want to return home?」

It was a gentle voice that was filled with concern and sympathy toward Liliana without any blaming tone in it.

For a moment, the questioned Lily showed an expression that didn’t understand what the meaning of the question was. But right after that, she unconsciously raised her voice.

「I’m not thinking anything like that!」

「Wawah, wait Lily-chan, calm down.」

「Sumire-okaasama, it’s true! I’m not thinking of going home or anything! I’m not feeling any discomfort or dissatisfaction! I love everyone! I’m happy I can come here! It’s true!」

「I get it, I get it already!」

Sumire spontaneously hugged Lily tightly.

It seemed that Liliana jumped to the wrong conclusion thinking that Sumire’s question had the implicit meaning of 「If you are dissatisfied with the life here, perhaps it’s better to go home?」

Of course, Sumire didn’t mean anything like that. She was only concernedly thinking「Perhaps she is slowly getting homesick?」, thinking that anyone would be driven by their feelings for their homeland. She wouldn’t say anything like ‘go home’ even if she got her mouth ripped open.

Because, Sumire’s feeling toward Liliana was,

「A princess! The real thing! From another world! Just who would let you go! Fuhehe, everyone in the world! How can this be, this lovely princess-chan, she is my daughter! Thank you very much! Dyufu, dyufufu」

It was fixated like that.

Liliana, who knew nothing about that, was tightly embraced against Sumire’s chest and guessed that she was misunderstanding and her cheeks reddened once more.

「I’m sorry, Lily-chan. Looks like I’m off the mark.」

「No, it was me who jumped to the wrong conclusion…… thank you very much for worrying about me.」

「I’m your mother. Isn’t it natural for me to be worried about my daughter? If there is something, then don’t be reserved at all and consult me, okay?」

「Yes-」

Liliana smiled softly at the gentle hand of the mother-in-law that was caressing her head. And then, they began moving the dishes on to the plates once more. Liliana didn’t even suspect that inside her heart, Sumire was jumping in joy thinking「No good-, the destructive power of a genuine princess’s smile is extraordinary yaa~~!!」

After that, Liliana was enjoying tea with the kind mother-in-law until Hajime and co returned home.

A lively family.

A quiet time with the beloved people.

Liliana was feeling the happiness she hoped for. There wasn’t any falsehood in it.

However, for some reason, Sumire’s words were remaining inside her head, and it didn’t vanish, like a small bone that got stuck in her throat. It caused her to have a feeling that she couldn’t express in words.

That night. Liliana, who returned to her room, had finished all her preparations to retire to bed; however, she didn’t lie on the bed and sat on the swivel chair while being in a daze.

The words「Like a lost child」from that afternoon were replayed many times over inside her head.

When she suddenly dropped her gaze, there was the unmoving Davis-kun there. It was unmoving without even a twitch with an expression that was like it was going to raise an American laugh「HA————-, HAHAHAHA-」anytime now.

「——O wind」

Liliana spoke a verse of chant. Immediately, a breeze flowed, and Davis-kun started to move *shiver shiver, tremble tremble* as though it came to life. It was really comical. As though it was making fun of Liliana who was even now harboring a mist that couldn’t clear up.

「……Damn you, Davis-kun.」

She tried hurling abuse with a tone that was out of the norm for her. Hurling abuse when it moved even though she was the one moving it herself, it seemed that Liliana was considerably “loosening”.

But, at that time, a knocking sound suddenly rang out. Liliana twitched, and in shock, she replied even while her voice slightly turned shrill.

Like that, the one who entered was Hajime.

「Yo, can I bother you a bit?」

「Ye, yes. No need to say a bit, please feel free to do as you please. But, there will be a lecture first thing in the morning, so if I can possibly be let to sleep by the early hours……」

「This isn't night crawling. Or rather, you think I'm a really frivolous guy that will say something like "let me do it a bit" huh.」

Hajime smiled wryly at Liliana who was in a thorough misunderstanding while retorting. And then, he sat down on the bed and directed his gaze at Liliana who was red-faced from her misunderstanding.

「Well, it's also not something as big as a business or anything though……how are you doing lately?」

「……Fufu. I was also asked that this afternoon by Sumire-okaasama. Do I really look that unusual I wonder?」

Seeing how the mother and son were equally worried about her caused Liliana to leak out a chuckle of amusement.

Hajime scratched his cheek awkwardly while answering.

「You aren't acting unusual or anything. It's just; it's the fact that you look like you aren't energetic. And from that, it looks like you are gloomy because it seems that Lily yourself doesn't understand just why you aren't energetic.」

Liliana felt a ticklish feeling 'he really is looking properly at me huuh' while she hugged her knees on the chair. Her figure that turned small on the chair with only her toes peeking out from her largish and loose negligee was really charming.

「Thank you very much for worrying about me.」

「What are you saying. I'm your husband you know? It's obvious for the husband to worry for his wife.」

Once again it was a similar line from the mother and son. This time Liliana became so excessively amused that she chuckled a bit louder.

「I'm fine, Hajime-san. Really, it's only that sometimes I felt a bit gloomy. It's nothing big at all.」

Hajime sighed at Liliana who was saying such a thing. And then, he suddenly stood up and lifted up Liliana in a princess carry.

Hajime sat down once more on the bed. However, this time he put Liliana on his lap in his arms.

「Err, Hajime-san? As I thought, yo, you will do it?」

「I'm not gonna. The inside of Lily's head is unexpectedly pink colored huh. No, perhaps it's not unexpected. In the first place, you have a hobby of creating delusions.」

Liliana's cheeks reddened with her hand on her own clothes. Hajime directed a warm gaze at her. Liliana turned sulky.

「Don't sulk like that. Recently, I'm bothered. I'm asking not for Lily, but because I want to know. Listen to your husband's request.」

「u. That way of talking is not fair.」

Liliana groaned in a small voice.

And then, strength left her body as though she was giving up, and she began to talk about her emotions lately that she

herself wasn’t clear about.

According to her, the time she spent in the Nagumo family was really happy.

According to her, the lecture at the college was also really interesting.

According to her, there was nothing more easeful for her heart than this situation where she could play, learn about what she likes, and having a day where she didn’t do anything.

According to her, right now, she was living just like in her dreams, without any anxiety or pressure, spending happy days being surrounded by her beloved people.

According to her, every day was really meaningful.

The more she talked, the more it felt like there wasn’t any problem. But, Hajime’s expression, who was staring fixedly at the talking Liliana, was gradually turning amazed, no, to speak more accurately there was a color of exasperation that was starting to dwell in that expression.

If asked why his expression was like that, it was because even though Liliana should be talking about happy things, her expression looked vaguely unsatisfied.

Liliana didn’t notice Hajime’s expression that was like that, and in the end, she summed up her own feeling.

Most likely, I’m lacking in an objective inside myself. Surely, what I ought to do is find a great objective and devote myself to it just like Hajime-san and the others who are doing their best in order to manage the businesses. Yes, that must be it. It feels like I can see it while I was talking.

For the time being, I’ll learn economics to the end because it will be useful in the futu――

「No, that’s not it.」

Liliana finally looked up to Hajime after getting interrupted midway. And then she noticed. That Hajime’s face, for some reason, was absurdly exasperated!?

「Ha, Hajime-san? Did I, say something strange?」

「Aa~, yep, what to say. You are strange. Especially in your head.」

「That’s cruel-!? That’s an unthinkable abuse! Just where is it in me that is strange!?」

As expected, Liliana couldn’t forgive Hajime’s abusive language, and she snapped angrily while questioning him. It caused Hajime’s expression to turn speechless.

Liliana guessed that somehow Hajime had noticed something that she didn’t notice herself. So she waited for an answer even while puffing up her cheeks.

Hajime suddenly stood up and the, he casually tossed Liliana on the bed. Liliana bounced *poyon* and looked up at Hajime in a girl’s sitting posture.

「Listen well, I’ll say it starting from the conclusion. The true identity of your gloominess is “insufficientness”.」

「Err……that’s why, I said that I’d find an objective and work hard.」

「No, that’s not it. Even if you do that, you won’t be satisfied. It won’t be enough at all. Your murky feelings won’t get

cleared up for even a bit. I can guarantee it.

Ee~. Then, what is it that you mean?

Liliana tilted her head in wonder as though asking ‘In the end, what is it that you want to say?’. Hajime opened his mouth while looking like he got a headache, as though this was something unexpected.

Work that is forced on you.

Yes?

Approaching deadline.

Err……

Cases that cause stomachaches. Tremendous pressure.

Excuse me~, Hajime-san? What are you……

A problem where running away is not permitted. The word responsibility that crosses the mind.

A, are you listening, Hajime-san?

The mountain of paperwork that is piled up mercilessly despite you being on your last legs already from lack of sleep.

……

Liliana finally fell silent before Hajime yelled as though to deal the finishing blow.

Work, work, work-, so much so that you are literally “swamped with work”!! A work with a grave responsibility that you feel like vomiting-!!

「……kufuh」

Liliana twitched. She looked around while saying「Just now, did you hear some kind of strange laugh?」. Naturally, there was no one inside the room except Hajime who was standing imposingly and the quivering Davis-kun.

「No, it was you just now, you.」

「Eh? What do you mean me……」

The gaze of Hajime whose hypothesis had turned into conviction, it now had gone past exasperation and turned instead into pity while his hand took a mirror that was on the table.

「Lily. Try to confirm, just what kind of face you are making right now.」

「Hajime-san's words and actions are cryptic since some time ago though……」

Even while saying that, Liliana obediently accepted the mirror then looked at her own face and――she stiffened.

That was understandable.

After all, in the mirror, there was an incomprehensible expression that was scowling in displeasure, yet even so, for some reason, the eyes of that expression were blazing fierily while a fearless smile was merging on the lips. If it was said without any dressing up, then it was a really creepy expression. And that expression was pasted on her own face!

Liliana tilted her head thinking「Dear me? By any chance, is there another world inside the mirror?」while she tried knocking on the mirror, turning it upside down while waving

it around. But no matter what the creepy Lily there wouldn’t disappear.

Liliana stared at her own face for a while before she suddenly tossed away the mirror *pei-*. And then she turned her gaze at Hajime while putting her face between her hands.

「Ha, Hajime-san! Just what have you done to me! It’s cruel that you make my face turn like this!」

「I ain’t doing anything. It’s only Lily’s real nature surfacing on your face.」

「What do you mean with real nature!?」

For the time being, Liliana laid the blame of her terrible face on Hajime, but Hajime then pointed his finger with a snap at her.

‘What does real nature mean? If you don’t understand, then I’ll tell you.’

With eyes glinting like a detective cornering the criminal, Hajime exposed the truth to the world!

「Lily. You are——a genuine, and what’s more it’s at a super level, or rather it’s at abnormal pervert level, WORKAHOLIC!」(TN: Here Hajime said it in Japanese English, wookaahorikku)

「WHA, WHAT DID YOU SAY———!! ……No, wookaa……what is that?」

Liliana tried to get shocked following the mood, but she then tilted her head at the vocabulary that she heard for the first time.

「It refers to work addiction. First on the list is work, second is work, third and fourth is also work with work in the fifth. Personal life? What's that, is it delicious? Hobby? It's work; you got a problem? It refers to that type of person. Furthermore, in Lily's case, it doesn't apply to mere normal work. You aren't able to feel sufficient anymore unless it's something forced on you, with heavy responsibility, and its quality and quantity are in super hard mode. You are a work addict on an abnormal pervert level.」

「E, ee!? Yo, you are wrong! Rather, I actually hate working!」

「……Actually, recently there is this case where friction is appearing which concerns the public safety, and there might even be dead victims coming if the discussion fails. Lily, I'm thinking of leaving it to Lily――」

「Eh!?」

Lily-chan's eyes were sparkling brightly.

Hajime quickly picked up the mirror that was thrown *pei-* just now and thrust it in front of Liliana. It entered her eyes, the sight of her own face with an incomprehensible expression that looked displeased while also looking delighted. In a sense, it was an expression with a superb harmony between the two emotions.

「My, my real nature is, a workaholic……what's more it's at an abnormal pervert level……」

Liliana crumbled down. She fell from the bed, and then she trembled *quiver quiver* just like Davis-kun while her eyes were losing focus.

Even though she should have gotten away from the duty of royalty and crossed over worlds to chase the happiness as a

normal girl, as expected, it was insufficient when she didn’t have any duties……

However, when it was pointed out to her like this, then certainly it was exactly like that. Even when she obtained the knowledge for living, even when she strived to study at the university, even when she built new human relations, and even when she went somewhere and did something, all of those were *for her own sake*.

No matter what happened, the consequence would only affect herself. When she failed, there wouldn’t be any considerable loss or anything. Even if, for example, an unexpected situation that surpassed the acceptable range occurred, in front of her new family, everything would be nothing more than a trifling matter.

It was truly a life of Easy Mode.

Compared to standing at the top of a country, leading the people, and fighting a mighty enemy, this life was truly, truly……

——Lukewarm

「Hau!?」

「O, oi, Lily? Are you okay?」

The feeling toward her life on Earth that was spontaneously welling up inside her caused Lily to crouch down with her hands pressing on her chest.

——Liliana S. B. Hairihi, 17 years old. The princess of the Hairihi Kingdom.

Since she was born, she had been continuously immersed in “things that must be done no matter what”. From that, her body had become something that couldn’t be satisfied with “things that she can choose and want to do herself”!

Give more work! Work that troubles the mind so much it feels like the head’s blood vessel will burst! Pressing problems that are nothing but excessive-. Paperwork that is piling up like a mountain range, that makes you hallucinate like it won’t end for eternity-!

「I’m not that kind of dangerous woma――――n-!!」

「Oooi-. Seriously, are you okay, Lily!?」

Liliana held her head while writhing around due to her real nature. Even while feeling creeped out, Hajime went to soothe her somehow.

Thirty minutes later.

Liliana, who calmed down somehow, was now sitting while hugging her knees feeling dejected. While she was like that, Hajime folded his arms and wracked his brain「H~m」.

「……Hajime-san. Perhaps it’s better if I go home.」

「Hm? I somehow understand what you are thinking, but why?」

Liliana’s body was stirring restlessly; she raised her chin that was put on her raised knees and spoke with a complicated sulky expression.

「As I thought, no matter where I go, I’m still a princess. No matter what I do, in the end, I’ll summarize it into the point whether it will become advantageous for the kingdom or

not. And then, the “insufficientness” in Earth, it caused me to trouble Hajime-san and Sumire-okaasan like now.」

Her shoulders drooped, and she delicately muttered something incomprehensible「Someone like me after all, is just a princess that cannot become a normal girl」.

Hajime smiled wryly while answering.

「Well, whether you are going home or remaining here, it doesn’t really matter which one you are going to choose though.」

「That’s cruel-!? Is that something you can say to your wife!?」

Hajime’s wry smile deepened saying「I’m joking」at the enraged Liliana while he continued speaking.

「Look here, I understood from the start that you could not stop being a princess, you remember? Your princess level is a bit above my expectation but……if you want to do work as royalty, then I won’t stop you. If Lily wishes for it, then I’ll make it so you can even come and go there from here every day. I’ll need to concentrate a bit and improve the gate, but……well, I’ll manage somehow. That’s why don’t say you are going home looking desperate like that.」

「Hajime-san……」

Of course, Liliana herself also didn’t seriously say that she was going home. But, as expected, it was something joyful to be told「Don’t go」by her beloved like this.

Hajime continued talking to Liliana whose cheeks loosened up.

「I told you this several times already, but Lily, speak more selfishly. After all, no matter what kind of impossible demand it is, I'll do it somehow.」

「……yes.」

Hajime said that while patting her head gently. Liliana's body trembled as though she was in anguish. Her eyes were starting to carry heat. Hajime averted his gaze from such a Liliana and returned to the talk.

「And so. Becoming a commuting princess is also one way……」

「Commuting princess……it's the first time I heard that kind of vocabulary. But, I have the feeling that like that. in the end. I'll be swamped with work where I cannot stop even if I want to stop.」

「Yeah, I also think so. And so, how about doing work other than the work of the royalty? Even though I said that you will still get swamped with work, all the same, so you will be moderately busy doing things with moderate responsibility, like that little by little you will get used to "moderate work", and eventually your body and heart will get accustomed with "enjoying free time". Something like that.」

「So it's like, a rehabilitation then. I somewhat feel complicated……」

'Am I a sick person, ah, I'm an addict……' Liliana made a complicated expression with that thought. Hajime then suggested to Liliana whether he should leave several businesses for her to manage.

Liliana pondered for a little before she shook her head.

「No, I’ll refrain from work where I act as Hajime-san’s representative. I know that even by doing anything else I’ll still have the sense of security that everything will be fine no matter what happens, but even so, I believe that doing work that is unrelated with Hajime-san for my first rehabilitation will be just right.」

「Hm~m? Is that so. However, in that case, what will you do then?」

Liliana suddenly stood up, and while bouncing *poyon* on the bed, she thrust up her fist and proclaimed.

「Yes, I decided. I’ll do part-time work!」

Honestly, it wasn’t like Hajime wasn’t thinking「Is it fine doing part-time work?」, but it seemed better for Liliana to be in a place where she didn’t have the backing of Hajime, so he didn’t really say anything.

And then, Liliana said「My aim, is to be a normal girl! I won’t let anyone say that I’m a workaholic anymore!」with rough breathing from her boiling up motivation while Hajime was giving her a noncommittal applause「Oo, do your best~」.

Arifureta Chapter 226

Arifureta After II The Part-Time Leader Lily Second Part

Part 1

ding ding The bell chimes rang. It was a withdrawn sound that felt pleasant to the ear.

「Welcome.」

The two young male customers who entered were immediately addressed by a voice. The voice came from a small distance away, but it was a pleasant and refreshing voice that didn’t lose to the bell’s chimes.

When they turned their gazes due to the lure of the voice, there was a stunningly beautiful girl there. It was a blonde-haired and blue-eyed girl wearing a cute apron. Her luxuriant hair was tied on the back using a largish frilly ribbon.

Looking from the logo on the apron, the silver tray in one hand, and the plate placed on the other hand, it was obvious from a glance that this was this restaurant’s employee.

「Dear guest. I will guide you to your seat right after this, so can I please ask you to wait for a bit?」

『『Ah, yes』』

The two male customers replied in beautiful harmony. The waitress-san smiled cheerfully. The two of them staggered.

The waitress advanced smoothly through the gaps between the tables with light footsteps and set down the plates she

carried with a movement that even displayed elegance somewhat. The two female customers who received their orders were staring in a daze at the waitress.

After that, the waitress once more gave a stunningly beautiful bow and smiled like a blooming flower at the two female customers who unconsciously returned the bow. The two female customers were shot through.

The waitress returned to the two male customers and bowed. A sweet aroma spread gently from the swaying hair of golden threads.

「I’m sorry for making you wait. Smoking seats or non-smoking seats, which one will be your preference?」

「E, either is fine.」

「Me, me too.」

The two male customers followed the waitress as though they were being lured by the constant smile. Even after they were sat, their gazes were kept glued to the waitress who was going to bring some water and wet towels.

They were handed the menu by the returning waitress. She then said「Please call me when you’ve decided your order」 before she was about to withdraw, but one man reflexively called out.

「He, hey. Before this, you weren’t working here, right?」

It was a sudden question, but the waitress that guessed this customer had gone to this restaurant before this nodded briefly.

「Yes. I started working part-time here just recently――I’m called Liliana. If I can become the acquaintance of you honored customers from here on――that will be great.」

She cutely smiled while bowing with her fingertips slightly clutching the tip of her skirt. That gesture swiftly shot through the two males. With the way how at the end of her sentence her polite language broke down slightly, it caused a sense of familiarity to well up inside the two male customers.

「I super will become your acquaintance.」

「Rather already we are become your acquaintance.」

The Japanese of the two male customers crumbled.

After that, there was a profoundly mysterious happening when Liliana came to take their order, for some reason, they ordered things from the menu one after another, even things that they didn’t feel like ordering were ordered following Liliana’s recommendation. The two looked like they were satisfied on the whole.

「Yuuka-san, I’ll be bringing more orders. Please take care of it.」

「Yes ye~s」

The chef who was wielding the frying pan inside the kitchen――Sonobe Yuuka replied back lightly.

It seemed that she had just finished cooking. She beautifully served the contents of the frying pan on the plate and faced toward the counter with the plate in one hand.

She was wearing a pure white chef coat and a crimson scarf on her neck. The limp beret on her head was also crimson colored.

In her student days, she had a serious character, but her appearance was showy, so she gave an impression of a frivolous gal. But right now, she was a splendid war potential of the western restaurant that was managed by her family. She was a chef who would become the second generation of this restaurant in the future.

It was only her dyed chestnut colored hair that didn’t change, but the atmosphere she was clad in was somehow mature and kind. The look in her eyes that could be called as sharp, if it had to be said, also seemingly looked like they had softened. Naturally, those factors also boosted her charm, which had existed since the beginning, by several times over.

In fact, there were a lot of regular customers who frequently visited this western restaurant□Wisteria□aiming for the beautiful chef. Also, this restaurant was established just a bit before Yuuka was born, so it had already welcomed its twenty year anniversary; there were also a lot of veteran customers who extremely enjoyed seeing the growth of Yuuka who they often helped since she was small.

□Yes, this is Kuban-san’s meat pie, take it, please. So, the next order is……□

Yuuka looked at the order tag she received from Liliana, and her eyes blinked repeatedly. And then, she leaned her body out from the kitchen counter and took a look at the table where Liliana had taken the order just now.

Over there were two young male customers.

Yuuka dropped her gaze at the order tag once more. No matter how she looked at it, there was an order for about six people written there.

「……Since Liliana worked here, the customers became really big eaters huh.」

「Yes, Japanese people are all gormandizer, aren't they?」

Yuuka lifted her gaze from the order tag and sent an unblinking stare at Liliana, but then she sighed seeing Liliana putting on a friendly smile.

「Well, they all ate the food without leaving any, so it's not a problem but……be careful not to make them force themselves too much okay.」

「Please leave it to me, Yuuka-san. It's my specialty to see through to where the limit is. I'll use every method available and make the sales and repeaters to be double the last month's. I'll bet on my honor as a former princess!」

「It's fine even if you don't bet that. Anyway, calm down first, former princess.」

Seeing Liliana whose nose breathed roughly with overflowing motivation, Yuuka acted the straight-man while smiling wryly.

「Now then, it will soon be the time when the customers will come in force. Let's put on our fighting spirit. I think it will be fine because Otou-san and Okaa-san will also be returning soon, but until then, spare me from the number of orders that I cannot deal with alone, okay?」

「It's fine. I have finished grasping Yuuka-san's ability. I will take orders in the amount where Yuuka-san can just barely

manage!

Ah, yep. ——This, rather than being a rehabilitation for Liliana, isn’t this actually a trial for me?

Liliana said ‘Leave it to me!’ while putting the meats pie on her tray and headed out to give it to the customer. Yuuka murmured so while seeing her back.

After that, the two parents of Yuuka returned from their business, and the number of customers sharply increased when it approached evening. Liliana, who made the Sonobe family scream from the number of orders that were coming in like a surging wave, then clocked out when it was time for her to depart for another part-time job.

After that, everyone in the Sonobe family was left behind looking dead tired.

The customers also became sparse and after about an hour till it became time to close the restaurant for the day, *ding* the bell rang.

Welco——wait, what, isn’t this Nagumo?

Yuuka had left the kitchen and was now sorting the cash register’s sales slip. Just as she stated, ahead of her gaze was Hajime.

What do you mean by ‘what’ when you are greeting a customer.

Hajime entered the restaurant with a wry smile while sitting on the seat at the edge of the counter with a practiced movement. That spot was tacitly a reserved seat for Hajime who had now become a regular customer.

Since the party of the one year anniversary of returning home, Hajime, who was pleased with this restaurant’s cooking and coffee and also because of the friendly atmosphere due to the management who was his classmate and her family, sometimes visited now and then.

The other classmates too, even after graduating high school they would aimlessly drop by several times a month, and when they gathered for a meal, they would mostly gather at Yuuka’s restaurant, so this place became something like a hang-out place for the other world summoning group.

……Although, Hajime was also made to feel an extremely unwilling feeling because, for some reason, he received an extremely disgraceful impression that said「He is like a man going to his mistress’s place for an affair」from his family and friends.

Even though most times when he was here he would be with one or more of his wives, yet why he was still evaluated like that……. It was something that was greatly baffling for Hajime.

And then, those wives who were mostly with him when he was here, especially recently, would be staring at Yuuka with a fixed gaze; just why was it like that…….

When Hajime sat down, Yuuka’s father that had replaced her to cook in the kitchen——Hiroshi, and Yuuka’s mother Yuuri, addressed Hajime「Welcome」looking very happy.

Hajime returned the greeting and then Yuuka, who left behind the sales slips, asked him.

「And, are you coming to eat? It’s rare for you to come alone.」

「No, I finished having dinner already. I came here just to drink coffee a bit and also ask about how our part-time princess is doing.」

「Aa, I see.」

When Yuuka turned her gaze to her father, Hiroshi nodded as though to say「I don't mind」. In exchange, Yuuri moved to take over sorting the sales slip. For some reason, she was giving a thumbs up at Yuuka while she was at it.

Yuuka asked while pretending not to see her mother who was like that.

「Are you okay with blended coffee?」

「Ou. Or rather, are you the one making it?」

Hajime tilted his head because if he remembered right, even though Yuuka had become able to be entrusted with cooking, she shouldn't have been entrusted with making coffee yet.

Seeing Hajime's questioning face, Yuuka showed a bit of a triumphant look while she swiftly prepared to make the coffee.

「Yesterday I finally got the okay. I also took the barista qualification test already. This is more or less the first blend that I will serve to a customer, so drink it with care.」

「What's with that condescending attitude huh?」

A wry smile leaked out once more. The exchange between Hajime and Yuuka was very relaxed between each other from this kind of visit that spanned for several years. This was related to the impression of「He is like a man going to his

mistress’s place for an affair, but the two of them didn’t have an awareness of that.

A fragrant aroma enveloped the space. Hajime made a wondering expression at the coffee that was presented to him and brought it to his mouth to test how good it was. And then, a beat later, he went Oh with his eyes snapped open in admiration. And then, without pause, he took the second and then third gulp. From that, it seemed that Yuuka’s first blend was a good work.

Yuuka made a delighted expression that was mixed with a little bit of relief while she slouched forward a bit and rested her chin on her hand above the counter. Her other hand was playing around with her crimson scarf with her fingertips twirling it, and one of her feet was tapping *ton ton* on the floor with her toes.

So? What is it that you want to ask? Lily is doing really well here though?

Is that so? She is a princess and shouldn’t have any experience in a service trade, but she doesn’t become a bother about various things because of that?

Nope, rather she is serving the customer so perfectly it is wasted for this kind of neighborhood western restaurant. She is elegant and refined——and it looks like there are already customers coming here for Lily.

Just from two weeks?

Yep, just from two weeks. And not just that, she even gave advice for the management. It’s to the level that it feels like we got the scale falling from our eyes. You know, she was having fun when she calculated how much the expenses this month got reduced.

「As expected from the addict of an office job. Just why is she doing consultation even though this is part-time job huh?」

Hajime sighed in exasperation. A smile emerged on Yuuka's lips with a chuckle seeing such a Hajime.

「Well, I too was anxious at first though. Suddenly, a call came from Nagumo telling me「Won't you try hiring a former princess for a part-time job」, what's with that? I myself am still a novice, and it's the best I can do just doing my own part. But, well, now I'm glad that Lily came to work here.」

「Is that so……. I too was really worried about letting Lily go part-time at a place I don't know about at all. At that point, if it's Sonobe, then I can trust you; and so, I entrusted her here……it's great if her being here also benefited this place.」

「……As always, you are overprotective toward your relatives huh. Today too, you came directly here to expressly check on her.」

Yuuka's expression turned into an exasperated one. However, her fingertips were twirling and toying her crimson scarf even more. The tapping of her foot became even more rhythmical *ton, toton-*.

For some reason, the mother who was in the middle of sorting the sales slip was grinning broadly seeing such a Yuuka.

「Well, I can't deny being overprotective but……I'm coming today because that girl is starting to act unexpectedly, no, in a sense, it's just as expected from her I guess. Hey, Sonobe. When she was in the middle of working, did Lily's atmosphere feel like she was unsatisfied somewhat?」

「Eh? ……H~m, I didn’t really feel anything like that. She was in really high spirits when taking orders, and she was scattering around courtesy so much it was starting to increase repeaters. Why are you asking? By any chance, did she say that working part-time here is dull for her?」

「No no, she isn’t saying anything like that. Rather, she was saying that she is having fun.」

Yuuka tilted her head at Hajime who spoke evasively.

Hajime hesitated a little before he confirmed it with Yuuka 「I’ve told you the details about why Lily is working part-time, right?」. When Yuuka nodded, Hajime continued.

「Since a week ago, that Lily, she often didn’t come home.」

「Somehow, that line sounds like something that would be said by a no good husband who let her wife run away.」

「Shut up. And then. When I tried asking what she is doing, it seemed that she is also starting to work part-time with the supplier that is doing business with your place. She said the work is completely desk work.」

「Eh? Is that so?」

That fact caused the eyes of Yuuka who didn’t know that to turn round. But, it appeared the story didn’t stop there.

「It seemed the fare configuration of that supplier is problematic, and then while Lily was talking about various things to the supplier, she then got scouted by the person of that company. I don’t know what kind of talk she had with them though.」

「He, hee. I wonder since when it became like that.」

「Yeah exactly. But, even with that, it’s unthinkable that she would be so busy that she needed to be absent from several lectures at the college and became unable to come home. I’m only guessing but……」

「She is doing more part-time work?」

「Yeah.」

Hajime nodded while looking like he got a headache. Although it seemed he didn’t have positive proof, that was why he thought of asking Yuuka, whether Liliana was feeling insufficient just working part-time in this restaurant.

「You can just ask her directly.」

「That girl is giving me the slip. I don’t want to get the answer out of her forcefully. And observing her with artifacts will make me look like a controlling husband, so I don’t feel like doing that.」

「Oh, really.」

Hajime drank his coffee miserly while looking really worried, or perhaps overprotective, and yet for all that, he behaved indecisively. Yuuka replied curtly with an expression that looked disappointed to that.

「In the end, what are you going to do? When she is working part-time at our place, she doesn’t look like she is feeling insufficient, she looks like she is having quite some fun you know? Should I indirectly tell her that Nagumo is worrying? I don’t know if the workaholic Lily will be able to restrain herself by doing that, but perhaps she will talk to you by her own initiative what part-time work she is doing right now.」

「I, see. Can I ask you to do that?」

「Yes yes. It’s fine, doing just that much.」

Yuuka nodded while lazily waving her hand. Hajime drank his coffee and said thanks before standing up.

「My bad that I sounded like whining there. I feel relaxed when I come here every time. I guess it’s not just for show that you are the second generation owner of the place for relaxation that lured even the demon king.」

「Even if you praise me I cannot give you anything except delicious western meals and coffee okay. There also won’t be any discounts.」

「Uh oh, that’s unfortunate.」

The two cracked jokes to each other. Yuuka’s scarf was twirled around so much it was already starting to fray while her tapping toes were already like a tap dance.

Hajime said his goodbyes to Hiroshi and Yuuri and then exited the restaurant. Yuuka saw him off before closing the door, and when she turned around, there were her two parents there with truly nice smiling faces.

「……What?」

Yuuka asked with obvious wariness. In response, the gentle Yuuri,

「What to do, Hiroshi-san. This daughter of us, her trait is completely a mistress.」

「H, h~m. But from my standpoint, I wish that she will marry properly though.」

「Lo, look here! Just what are you two speaking about your daughter! I'm not Nagumo's mistress, and I also got no plan to enter that guy's harem!」

Yuuka howled. However, the chain of events just now was where a man with wives and kid unexpectedly showed up; then she treated him with food, heard his complaining, and gave him comfort——those acts, even considering that this place was a restaurant, seen from the side looked enough like a mistress.

Seeing her parents who lightly deflected「We get it, we get it」toward her words of denial, Yuuka became especially displeased.

However, it was natural that her words didn't have any persuasiveness.

After all, Yuuka's toes tapping *ton ton* on the floor was her habit when she was in a good mood. And furthermore, that habit wouldn't come out just from being in a good mood; it would only come out if she also felt embarrassed at the same time.

In addition, there was the crimson scarf and limp beret that Yuuka was wearing. Actually, those items had a lot of color variety, but Yuuka only had those items in the crimson color, even including the spare. When she went to buy a replacement, as expected, she would pick crimson again. The same color as the light of the magic power of a certain someone.

And then, her habit of rolling around her scarf with her fingertips was a new habit that was formed these past several years. It was an unconscious habit that came out only when she was talking with a certain someone.

「Heey, Otou-san, Okaa-san? Are you two listening?」

「Yes yes, we get it already. We better start closing up the restaurant soon~」

「The most important thing for Otou-san is that Yuuka is happy, that’s all.」

「I, told, youu~~~」

The famous western restaurant「Wisteria」. The frequently changing emotion between joy and anger of the second generation owner was also the specialty of this place.

Part 2

A month after Hajime showed just a bit of a good-for-nothing act at Yuuka’s restaurant.

Currently, everyone was gathering in the living room of Nagumo residence. The 120th something of the Nagumo Family Meeting was opened.

The one who sat at the center of the large dining table was Hajime, and right in front of him was Liliana who was sitting with an awkward expression.

“Now then, Lily. Do you know what the meaning of this family meeting is?”

“u, mo, more or less……”

Liliana averted her face quickly to the side, but ahead of her gaze, there were Yue and the others who weren’t even hiding their exasperated expression. What gouged her heart especially deeply was that even Myuu was looking at her with eyes that appeared to be looking at someone hopeless.

Hajime was about to open his mouth toward Liliana whose gaze was swimming *sui~* to the opposite side.

But, before he could speak, *pururururu* a phone’s ringtone rang.

“Ah, I, I’m sorry. Please excuse me a bit.”

「Ah, oi, you」

Liliana looked the other way even when Hajime raised his voice while putting her own smartphone on her ear. And then, what could be heard after that were only words related to business like contracts or clients and so on.

Before long, it seemed that they had reached an end and Liliana cut off the call. Seeing that, Hajime sighed while opening his mouth.

But, before he could speak, *pururururu* a phone's ringtone rang.

「Ah, I, I'm sorry. Please excuse me a bit.」

「……」

She answered the phone. This time, it seemed that there was a problem occurring regarding the shift at her part-time workplace. Liliana was listening to the phone while going 'uh-huh, uh-huh' before she quickly started to give out instructions, like who to call, who to substitute for the shift change, what to do about the lacking place such and such, and then what she wanted to be dealt with next and so on……

Hajime wanted to act the straight-man 'Managing shift schedules obviously ain't the work of a part-timer right!?', but for the time being he endured it.

Before long, the talk came to an end, and Liliana cut off the phone. Hajime then sighed while opening his mouth.

But, before he could speak, *pururururu* a phone's ringtone rang.

「Ah, I, I’m sorry. Please excuse me a bit.」

「……」

Liliana answered the phone. For some reason, there was a sobbing voice coming from the other side of the phone. Liliana was consoling her talking partner while sometimes also reprimanding, and then in order to deal with a grave problem that seemed to occur from some kind of miss, she took out one more smartphone from her pocket and quickly began to give out instructions.

Before long, it seemed that she finished and Liliana cut off the phone. Hajime, who got a vein pulsing on his forehead, was opening his mouth.

But, before he could, *gatari* the sound of someone standing up from a chair resounded.

「I’m sorry, Hajime-san. It seems that the section chi――cough-, a regular employee who was entrusted with an important project made a miss, and it turned out into something that a part-time worker like me has to deal with. And so, I’ll go out for a bit!」

A part-time worker that followed up for a regular employee’s miss. Or rather, a regular employee who came crying to a part-time employee even though it was his miss. Furthermore, it seemed this regular employee was a section chief.

Since when did the definition of part-time work change drastically like this.

Liliana quickly put her outfit in order while saying things like 「At this rate, the two hundred employees there will be out in

the cold! As a part-time leader, I have to do something before she tried to go outside.

snap- One more vein emerged on Hajime's forehead. And then a word.

"Shia."

"Yes sir desuuu"

From behind, the rabbit-eared wife who was dancing to the same beat as the husband embraced Liliana who right now was about to exit the room.

"Shi, Shia-san? I'm sorry, but I'm going to wo——"

"Yes yes, I'll just make you cool your head a bit heree"

"Eh? Wai-, NOOOOOO-"

Liliana screamed, and then after that, she received an artistic German suplex and the floor struck the back of her head."My head-, my head hurts like it got splitttttt-"The former princess was shouting while rolling around on the floor in agony.

"Uu, just what are you doing. After this, I have an important work……"

"Is that, something more important than the family discussion?"

Liliana complained while rubbing the back of her head with teary eyes. Hajime asked her with a sigh mixed in it."Uu-" Liliana was at lost for words, and Hajime said in response.

"If that's how it is, then I'll attempt to solve the root of the problem and make it so that you lose your reason for going."

「E, err, Hajime-san, what do you mean specifically?」

「……Today's weather is sunny, but it seems that there will be a random meteor shower later.」

「Let's have a discussion.」

Indeed, the root of the problem would be cleared. If there wasn't any troubled person, then there also wouldn't be any trouble.

Feeling how unbearable it would be if the meteor shower that once annihilated the capital of her own country was dropped on her part-time workplace, Liliana took her seat in a panic.

「Look at you, even though recently you were grieving because not to mention me, you weren't able to even converse satisfactorily with anyone in the family because of work, work, work, but then you tried to get out abruptly from the discussion to talk about that, just what's with that?」

「Tha, that's, obviously, even I am also fed up here you know, Hajime-san? I really want to yell out loudly, 'just why are they all relying on just me, please manage it somehow just by yourself.' But, before I realized it, everyone relied on me, and I was placed in a position with responsibility, and now it's really hard to break out from it.」

「Even though it's part-time work?」

「Even though it's part-time work, yes.」

Hajime sighed for who knew how many times already. He then handed over the mirror he had prepared to Liliana who was talking with a voice that couldn't hide her emotion of 「I'm fed up already」.

The face that was reflected in the mirror was the creepy face of the workaholic Lily with fierily blazing eyes.

Liliana gently put down the mirror.

「This is a mistake. It’s not like I’m starved or anything. This is a misunderstanding. Thanks to doing a moderate amount of work from the part-time job, day by day, I’m in the process of getting closer to becoming “a normal girl” ――」

「Including the part-time job at Sonobe’s place, how many part-time jobs are you currently holding?」

「……I, it’s, seven.」

「The job description?」

「A, a bit of managing inventory and dealing with the client.」

「Other than that?」

「Something like fast food restaurant.」

「The specific.」

「……I’m in charge of the part-time workers at the main restaurant while being entrusted to coordinate the surrounding seven branch restaurants.」

「The call just now?」

「At another establishment related with food and drink where I’m working part-time, various things happened, and I work as an advisor of the head office trade section……It seems there was a miss at the transaction that was started from my advice where the company’s fortune is at stake, and at this rate, it would get a complete revocation. If that happens,

depending on the situation there, then there is even the possibility that the company will go under.

Hajime wordlessly pushed out the mirror. It was as though he was an exorcist that was pushing out a cross toward a girl who was possessed by a devil! What was reflected in that mirror was a creepy face that seemed to sayThis is a heavy responsibility you know, Lily! Gufufuh……

Immediately,Stooppp——. Don’t show me the mirrorrr——!!Liliana writhed in agony.

……She was completely like a girl who was possessed by a devil.

Yes yes, at~~ten~~tion! Now that we have confirmed that presently Lily-chan’s workaholic level hasn’t improved at all, everyone, please state your opinion!

Sumire, who held the role as the chairman of the meeting, tapped the table *kan kan* with a spoon and asked for the opinion of everyone.

Yes!The one who raised her hand first was Myuu. Sumire pointed with a fork at MyuuYes, Myuu-chan!. Her manner was really bad.

I think that Lily-oneechan’s addiction won’t be fixed even if she died!

Kafuh!?

Myuu launched her words like a bullet of an anti-material grade rifle with a cheerful smile on her face. Liliana pressed her chest and collapsed.

Next,「Yes desuu!」was Shia with her rabbit ears standing straight. Sumire pointed sharply with long chopsticks「Yes, Shia-chan!」. Just where did she take it out from?

「I think that something like rehabilitation is meaningless to fix a person's core nature desuu!」

「Guhih!?」

That opinion actually had much persuasiveness. A~ll of Shia's family were people with screwed up core natures. Incidentally, Shia's self-proclaimed best friend, the princess of the elves, was also a pervert at the core. Soon, she might turn from her best friend into her step-mother. However, regarding this case, Shia was averting her rabbit ears from the reality.

The next one who hurriedly raised her hand was Tio. After her, Remia also raised her hand while smiling. Sumire said 「Yes Tio-chan, Remia-chan!」while pointing with a snap using a ladle. For a moment, it looked like the ladle materialized from empty air……was that just an illusion?

「For example, if I hath mine butt spanked moderately in the name of rehabilitation, and then asked if this nature of mine can be fixed by that or not, then the answer is it's impossible! This art the same.」

「What a hardship. Even though she wishes to stop working and be together with her family, without working she will be frustrated……it will be great if there is something else other than work that she can do.」

「Uu. I'm the same as Tio-san……even if you ask me something other than work……after all, I'm just a hollow person……hics-」

Liliana lost her nerve. And then she fell down before starting to trace circles on the floor with her fingertip in an easy to understand gesture.

「Nn-」Yue raised her hand. Sumire said「Yes, Yue-chan!」while pointing with a frying pan for rolled eggs so hard it made a *buon* sound. ……It looked like she took it out from her cuff though.

Beside Sumire, Shuu's eyes were sparkling, 「Sumire, you, your party performance skill has gone up again!」his tension was climbing up to the sky.

「……You want, remodeling?」

「Hiih!? No thank you!」

'That difficult nature, want me to remodel it along with your soul?' Yue wriggled her hands while standing up from her chair. In response to that, Liliana screamed while dragging her body backward.

Hajime gave a glance at Liliana who was trembling like Davis-kun before he scratched his head and opened his mouth.

「Well, it's positive that this nature of Liliana cannot be fixed just from doing part-time work.」

「Uu, Hajime-san?」

Liliana's shoulders dropped despondently.

Hajime's gaze ran around toward Yue and the others. He judged that they all had reached a conclusion. And then, he made Liliana sit on her chair in order to tell her that conclusion.

「Lily. Anyway, these two months of rehabilitation turned out meaningless, that's why, how about if in the next two months you don't do anything?」

「Not doing, anything?」

Liliana was bewildered. Hajime nodded「Yeah」. In a sense, this was a shocking proposal for Liliana.

「Resign from all your part-time jobs, and then, become a shut-in NEET for two months.」

「Eh?」

Like this, with the unanimous vote from「The 80th or 130th, well it doesn't matter which, of the Nagumo Family Meeting」, it was decided that the princess of another world was to become a shut-in NEET.

By the way, regarding the mismanagement of a certain trade department that made a miss, it was resolved in moderation by Hajime due to Lily's entreaty. Of course, it was resolved using a way that wasn't a random meteor shower on a sunny day.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I uploaded three chapters consecutively for the celebration of this story's resumption, but for some reason, this Lily arc didn't end.

Unexpectedly, I had fun writing, and unconsciously the story got dragged on.

Especially how it became as though this is Yuuka’s turn even though this is Lily’s arc……Lily, how pitiful.

Now then, my deepest apologies, but next week’s update for Saturday will be Lily’s arc too.

In this After II, I’m thinking to try to write about the wives or classmates that didn’t get spotlights.

And when I finish with that, unexpectedly there are a lot of wishful voices, and Shirakome himself is also getting in the mood for it, so I’m thinking that perhaps I should try writing about the story of Kouki-kun who got kidnapped too muchhh.

Well then, please take care of Arifureta from here on too.

Arifureta Chapter 227

Arifureta After II I Become the God of the New World? First Part

---

AN: I’m sorry, the Lily arc hasn’t ended yet……

Next chapter! I will finish it next chapter without fail!

PS-

The chronological order was pointed out to me, so as soon as I have time, I’ll revise it.

Until then, it will help if you readers can think that this is how it is with the hopeless Shirakome just like usual and look the other way.

Part 1

☆NEET Queen Lily

Two months had passed since that『It’s troublesome already to count the number y’know, Nagumo Family Meeting』, where it was decided that Liliana had to become a shut-in NEET.

During that time, in order to rescue the workaholic former princess, Liliana, who was constantly drifting around from too much free time, was consoled by every one of the Nagumo family with every kind of amusement. It was so that she could forget the matter of work even for just a little.

Everyone was worried from the bottom of their hearts about their family member who was addicted to work at an abnormal level.

Then, specifically what kind of amusement was provided for her? For example, there was something like this.

The one who was the first to move even among the Nagumo family was Myuu. She visited Liliana’s room with toys in her hands.

『Lily-oneechan, let’s play this!』

The thing that Myuu brought and presented to her with a lot of energy caused Liliana to tilt her head.

『Err, what is this, Myuu-chan?』

「It’s Raptor nano.」

‘I’m not asking in that kind of meaning.’ While thinking that, Liliana dropped her eyes on the thing that was handed to her――a 1/48 model of an Earth’s fighter plane, multi-purpose tactical fighter F-22, alias Raptor.

Myuu nodded in satisfaction at Liliana who accepted the model even while she was in bewilderment, and then she took out another model fighter plane. 「Flanker-tan is also hard to discard, but it cannot win against the charm of the variable wing. Tomneko-tan, I pick you!」She did that while saying such a thing.

「Now, Lily-oneechan. Shut-in NEET Lily-oneechan who is only staying indoors. In order to master being a shut-in NEET, let’s blast off to the sky while secluding yourself inside the room nano!」

「Err, Myuu-chan? I wish you won’t repeatedly call me a shut-in NEET too much like that……. It’s more or less something decided at the family meeting; it’s something like a medical treatment……」

「Shut your mouth, Warrant Officer Lily. Do you want me to beat you up? nano」

「……Recently, you are increasingly growing similar to Hajime-san aren’t you, Myuu-chan. Especially in that unreasonable aspect.」

Surely, if there was an entry for “unreasonable” in the status plate, then Myuu’s parameters would surely extend out with terrific momentum.

Before Liliana realized it, Myuu, who seemed to change completely into a military personnel, was clad in something

like a pilot suit, equipped with a short mustache, teardrop type sunglasses, and sharply put *sucha!* on her face.

And then, she handed over matching sunglasses and a short mustache, along with something like a game joystick, to Liliana. Perhaps for Myuu, speaking of military personnel meant having a short mustache……

「Warrant Officer Lily. This is a flying toy that papa created. Something like a drone. A distant viewing stone is used for its cockpit screen, and its field of vision can be shared through these sunglasses. The controls are performed using this joystick. Do you understand? nano」

「Ah, yes. No, I don’t understand. First of all, what’s with the Warrant Officer?」

「Ah, Myuu is the flight lieutenant and is above Lily-oneechan, that’s why properly call Myuu as Captain nano.」 (TN: Should I use lieutenant here or captain? This is how the raw is. I don’t really get the structure of military command.)

「No, that’s not what I’m asking……」

Myuu already opened the window and put her F-14 Super Tomcat in standby. Whether when she was a princess or when she wasn’t a princess anymore, the point where she was ignored didn’t seem to change.

「Preparation OK. Demon squadron, Demon 1 Super Tomcat. Launch- nano!」

「Eh, do I need to say that too? E, err, Demon 2, Raputar? La, launching!」(TN: When the word Raptor is Japanized, it was spelled as raputaa)

The fierce gleam from Myuu’s eyes emitted a wordless demand. Liliana, who sensed that, spoke while matching with Myuu’s launch sequence. There wasn’t any runway, but Captain Myuu’s first aircraft and Officer Lily’s second aircraft floated lightly using gravity control, and then they both flew outside the window.

After that, the sight of the vast sky that was visible through her sunglasses cleared up, even if just temporarily, Liliana’s gloominess, who was feeling depressed from not working.

Liliana was opening her mouth to thank Myuu for her consideration and her invitation for this wonderful playing time, but when she glanced to her side, for some reason, Myuu was making a fearless smile that was just like her father. Seeing that Liliana was assaulted by a fiercely bad premonition.

Right after that,「Finally they are coming huh. Fine then, I’ll play with you nano」Myuu spouted out ominous words. Liliana was glancing at Myuu through the corner of her eyes as she became speechless from the scene that was visible through her sunglasses.

After all, there was a “real fighter plane” flying in parallel with their model aircraft.

Liliana questioned Myuu with naked agitation, but according to Myuu’s careless reply, it seemed that the place their toys were flying was right above the base of the JDF.

Actually, before this, Myuu already had previous offenses of flying above the JDF base while raining down missiles that were crammed with ketchup and mayonnaise.

The vehicles and facilities on the base, and also every one of the JDF who came outside to shot down the aircraft model

was dripping with ketchup and mayonnaise at that time. It seemed that they flew into a rage from that. Perhaps because of that too, this time even the fighter planes of the JDF finally scrambled just to face a small model aircraft。That damned drone came around again!。that was displaying a performance that was unbecoming when compared to the existing drones of the modern era.

The pilot of the aircraft flying parallel with them, for the time being, moved his hand in the cockpit in a pointing down gesture; he was demanding them to land down.

。Myu, Myu Myu Myuu-chan! What are you thinking! As expected, this is crossing over the limit of things that can be done!。

。Lily-oneechan. There are great sayings in Japan nano――it’s not a crime if it’s not exposed.。

。Hajime-saa――n! Remia-saa――n! Myuu-chan here is dashing in an improper directionnn! Please revise the education policy-! Or rather, stop her quicklyyy!。

。Fuh, naïve. Both papa and mama, and also everyone else, are away from home nano. Myuu has made no oversight!。

Ignoring the shaken Liliana, Myuu said something like 。Demon 1, engage!。while controlling the plane with pointlessly refined piloting. And then, the cockpit of the startled pilot was fired at by Vulcan.

Right after that, *bichi bichi bichi-* small bullets hit the canopy of the JDF aircraft. Naturally, the canopy was dyed bright red. It wasn’t the pilot’s blood, but ketchup. Furthermore, there might be some kind of particular component included in it because the ketchup was clinging well without getting blasted away by the wind pressure.

The pilot’s movement stopped. No, he was starting to move slowly. He was moving his hand. His hand was once more moving lower——tracing his neck, and then his thumb dropped downward. It was obvious what the pilot meant. 「Fall to hell」he gestured.

It went without saying that after that it had turned into a grand dogfight against the JDF aircraft.

Even while pleading for them to just go home already while half-crying, Liliana continued to escape from the JDF aircraft with excessively skilled piloting. Myuu said「If we escape here, it will be the shame of the women of the sea!」while displaying beautiful midair maneuvers one after another like an Immelmann turn, Cobra, and so on. She didn’t stop her grand rivalry with the JDF aircraft. Naturally, even Liliana’s straight-man act「Woman of the sea you say……this is the sky!」was ignored as if it was nothing.

But, the end came so suddenly.

Because out of nowhere, the back of Myuu’s head was tightly held in an eagle grip.

gi gi gi When the short mustache and sunglasses Myuu turned around, like a machine that didn’t get oiled, there was the figure of her papa half-smiling.

After that, the drone forcefully self-exploded in the blink of an eye;「Aa!? Myuu’s Tomneko-tan!」even such a scream echoed in vain and signaled the end of Myuu’s “playing”.

And then, the main offender Myuu met a punishment of a hundred strikes on her butt by Hajime from going too far in playing, and on that day a sobbing voice was echoing in the Nagumo residence without stopping until dinner time.

Liliana, who got the feeling that recently Myuu's attitude was becoming too flashy, was looking at Myuu who was reflecting with teary eyes. She thought, 'perhaps it ended all right like this'.

……She felt like for an instant she saw a color of ecstasy on the expression of Myuu while she was rubbing her swollen red butt, but surely, without a doubt, that was just her imagination. Because if that wasn't just her imagination, then one black dragon would surely vanish from this world without a trace.

At another time, she was also invited by Yue and Shia and tried working diligently at sewing steadily.

Yue had the experience of tailoring Hajime's outfit during her period in the abyss, so by now, sewing was becoming half a hobby for her. Shia was a rabbit skilled in housework from the start, so sewing was her forte. Taught by the two of them, Liliana's sewing skill was improving conspicuously.

There, Remia, who recently became known as an up-and-coming designer who was enveloped in mystery with an unknown face, offered up an idea, and Liliana tried to sell the clothes and accessories she created through the internet.

When she did that, it unexpectedly sold well, and Liliana was having fun more and more……

She established the marketing and advertisement of the internet sales, and what's more, she started to investigate the procedure in order to start up a company——and got a knuckle dropped on her head from Hajime.

It was understandable why Hajime did so. After all, she got a shadow under her eyes from thinking of the prospect of

internet marketing in the future from morning until evening.

Most likely, the environment where she was made to be a shut-in NEET caused her to manifest withdrawal symptoms. No matter how much work she was chased with, it didn’t show up at all on her face even once. That was why it showed just how much she was starving for work that her face’s complexion changed.

And in the end, at midnight, Myuu rolled out from the closet of Hajime’s room looking scared because she could hear a strange voice. She was clinging to Hajime while in tears.

……Let’s put aside for now just why she was hiding in the closet of Hajime’s room at midnight.

Let’s also put aside, for the time being, the appearance of Myuu who was wearing adult lingerie with a black tone unbecoming for a ten years old girl.

While we were at it, let’s also put aside the fact how without anyone noticing there was a hole opened in the closets of Hajime’s and Myuu’s rooms with a size that could be freely entered through by a child.

Even while his expression was grandly twitching, Hajime carefully wrapped Myuu inside a futon and put her to sleep. He then entered “the place of strange voices”——the Lilianna’s room. When he confirmed the inside, he found Liliana making noise from a nightmare there.

She was roughly breathing looking like she was in pain while moaning. ……While sometimes,□fuheh□she was raising a strange giggle. Her expression was the usual creepy face.

It seemed, even inside her dream, she looked like she was going□Ge, geez-, this is really hopeless. Fine then, I’ll do it

already. If I don’t do it, then who else will do it☆□. It seemed that in her dream she was happily chased by work even while acting displeased.

This princess couldn’t escape from work whether in dreams or reality.

Hajime devised a plan.

In the first place, Liliana had a habit of fantasizing. Especially regarding love affairs. And then, in this house, there was a leading person on that road. Yes, it was the famous shoujo manga artist Sumire.

With the work of Sumire as the first on the list, the book collection of shoujo manga that was deposited in large amounts at her workplace was given to Liliana.

Because of her seriousness that came since birth and her workaholic nature, and since Liliana came to earth, she was busy in learning various things and didn’t really come into contact with this thing called manga. For Liliana, her reading was mostly thick learning books. She wasn’t familiar with books that had mainly pictures in it.

Because of that, at first Liliana was smiling wryly from the really unfamiliar experience, but because it was something prepared for her with effort, she gave it a try.

And the result was,

□Munch munch-, gulp-……puhah. Aa, what’s with this good-for-nothing. What are you doing just seeing her off there? Good grief, you don’t understand a woman’s heart……. Nn, continue to the next volume. Eerr, the next one, the next……□

She got addicted, and she was not just merely but totally addicted to the world of shoujo manga.

Liliana was lying down on the bed while right beside her was a bottle of Co○ Cola and a bag of potato chips constantly on standby. She brought them to her mouth while still lying down as she dragged her body forward while reaching her other hand toward the next volumes of manga piled up without raising her body at all. She had reached this kind of advanced level by now.

In addition, she was in a state that wasn't concerned at all with her rolled up skirt, generously exposing her thighs that recently had become somewhat plump; in addition, she sucked up *chupa-* her fingers that got gleamingly oily from the potato chips before wiping those fingers on her flipped up skirt.

Already, there wasn't even a shred of the atmosphere of a former princess from her.

She was an existence that shut herself inside her own room in broad daylight, equipped with carbonated drinks and potato chips, and continuously adventured to the world of literary creation without getting tired of it.

Liliana S. B. Hairihi.

Right now, she had become a genuinely splendid shut-in NEET without anything that could be complained of from her!

□How did it turn out like this……□

Hajime who was standing beside the door of Liliana's room while looking at the state of Liliana was pressing his head with one hand looking pained.

Certainly, it was Hajime who handed over the great amount of shoujo manga so that Liliana could enjoy her free time a bit. But, while that might be the case, he wondered just why in a mere month that work addict on an abnormal pervert level could become a splendid shut-in NEET like this.

Hajime sighed while feeling troubled□Was the recoil from the work addiction too powerful?□at the former princess whose way of living was overly extreme.

And then, he approached Liliana who didn’t even noticed that Hajime was right behind her while she kept lying down indulging in manga with her bare legs swinging up and down.

Standing beside the former princess whose panties visibility wasn’t just a glimpse anymore but already at a completely exposed level. Hajime let out a deep sigh once more and held that plump butt in an eagle grip.

□Hinyah!? What is thisss!?□

Liliana’s butt twitched up with her panties still fully exposed. Even so, she didn’t let go of her manga and also didn’t even stand up and only looked back across her shoulder. She then went□What, it’s just Hajime-san□in understanding and smiled before returning to the world of manga without pause.

□No, don’t go back there. Look over here, butt-naked princess.□

□Bu, butt-naked princess……that’s a really cruel remark.□

As expected, Liliana couldn’t just accept the way Hajime called her and raised her body squirmingly. Yet, even so, she

only moved to a girl’s sitting posture with her slovenly state unchanged seeing her skirt was still flipped up.

「And so, what business do you have Hajime-san? As expected, it’s to grope my butt? Ufufu, even though the sun is still high up……the love of my husband is strong.」

After saying such a thing, Liliana fidgeted around while closing her eyes and she pushed out her lips「Nn」. With oily lips that were gleaming from potato chip remains.

Hajime’s shoulders were falling in dejection at Liliana who didn’t have even a shadow of the proud princess in the past while inside his heart he was complaining「In a sense, Liliana might be number one if speaking about the level of things not going as planned」.

And then, he gently used a tissue to wipe up the lips of the potato chip princess who was waiting for a kiss.

Liliana felt an out of place sensation on her lips and showed a puzzled expression at Hajime who kept wiping.

「Your current appearance, I wonder what the bunches at the kingdom will feel if they see it.」

「? Won’t they think, ‘she is really living in happiness’, like that? I’m happy you know?」

「……You also have potato chips and cola with you.」

「No, not really, that’s not……certainly, they are really delicious though. I also think that they are the strongest combo. ……Want to eat?」

Liliana tilted her head thinking「Perhaps, he wants to eat too?」while she rolled her body and took a bag of potato

chips that was placed beside the pillow. And then, she rolled once more and returned to her former position with a really natural motion to get back to a girl’s sitting posture.

And then, when she felt the lightness and silence of the potato chip bag she was presenting, she blinked「Eh?」and confirmed its content. The inside was already empty.

「Err, I thought it still has some remain……」

Giving only a glance at Hajime whose expression was gradually turning speechless, Liliana rolled and rolled once more to move to the edge of the bed. And then, she reached out her hand while still lying down and rummaged around under the bed searching for something.

「A, there is. ……Here, Hajime-san. Please take one.」

She lifted up a box with a familiar movement, and then she took out that from the bag while hiding it with her body before she held out her hand smoothly toward Hajime. Right after that, from her arranged fingers, *chakin!* a po○ky flew out.

Liliana’s face looked triumphant. It seemed she saw a commercial and wanted to imitate it. And then while she was at it, her other hand that was held in front of her chest also had a po○ky *shakin-* flying out. She ate that one herself.

「……」

「This is really delicousss」

Seeing Liliana who was smiling cheerfully while wordlessly doing ‘aa~n’ at him, Hajime was starting to show a tired expression all the more.

□……So, about my business.□

□A, that’s right. What’s the matter?□

□No, it’s not really a big matter, today is exactly the second month. I’m wondering how it turned out.□

□……Ah, now that Hajime-san mentions it.□

It seemed that she had completely forgotten the aim of being a shut-in NEET. Liliana was making ○cky sticks *shakin shakin* from her fingertips while nodding in understanding. ……Her fingertips *shakin* was surely using magic. Truly a waste of magic use.

Liliana smiled cheerfully and spread her hands widely as though to flaunt herself.

□Please look, Hajime-san. Hajime-san’s strategy is right on the mark! I am splendidly free from any withdrawal symptoms even without doing any work, and not just that, I have turned into a normal girl who can think from the bottom of my heart that I don’t want to do anything like work anymore!□

Liliana proclaimed energetically. An ambiguous groan □uboa□leaked out from Hajime’s mouth.

It was truly just like this princess-sama who was unable to live except in an extreme way of living. No, perhaps it was exactly because she was royalty that she could only live extremely……

□Lily. I don’t know if you remember, but in the end, this is a rehabilitation to cure your workaholic symptoms. It doesn’t mean that it’s fine for you to just roll around like this for your whole life you know?□

「Eh……but, Hajime-san. If you work, you lose isn't that right?」

Hajime went「uboa」once more. This was no good; this former princess was no good already. Just within two months, she had thoroughly become a regretful princess.

「Listen, Lily. I am also an otaku at my roots, so I'm with the indoor faction. That's why I cannot unsparingly reject the saying to work is to lose. Tou-san also told me in the past, that a person who can become shut-in with their own money is the winner in a sense.」

「Hear that, just as I thought, we lose if we work!」

「Oi, are you listening to me? I said "your own money" just now.」

「Ee~rr, but, I am Hajime-san's wife……in short, Hajime-san's money is my money――higyahn!?」

An iron forehead flick burst out toward Liliana who was talking like Giant.「My forehead-, my foreheaaad-」Liliana screamed while writhing around.

Liliana's skirt inevitably got rolled up once more with her panties completely laid bare. A vein pulsed on Hajime's forehead while he spit out「I'll stop being gentle」and put an eagle grip on her plump thigh.

「Fuwah. Wha, what are you doing Hajime-san. As I thought, you are craving me right from the afternoo――」

「This thigh has become really plump huh. It feels chubby.」

「Eh? Is, is that so?」

「Yeah. Far more than two months earlier.」

Hajime was giving an unblinking gaze while「This place too, and also here too huuh」he grasped at Liliana's butt and her upper arm.

Guessing what Hajime wanted to say, Liliana's girl power finally reacted. Her complexion was turning drastically pale.

Hajime's fingertip was sliding toward the most dangerous place on her body. Hajime's eyes kept being unblinking, and he ignored even when Liliana tried to stop him and pinched at that place.

――puni-

「Stooppp――!! Don't pinch my stomachhh-」

「Oi oi, what's this. What's with this flabby stomach? Hmm?」

「Tha, that's not it! This is, there is just a bit of that going this, should I say that it's……」

Liliana was pressing on her stomach while her eyes were rolling round and round while she was desperately searching for an excuse, but the scattered wreckage of snacks, the remains of carbonated drinks, they all stole the persuasiveness from her.

Hajime turned his heart into a demon king and dealt the finishing blow to Liliana.

「At this rate, in one more month……the overweight princess Liliana will be complete.」

「O, overweight princess.」

ツイてる おいしさ!
やさしい
ハッピーターン
やさしい
ハッピーターン
アレルギー特定原材料等
27品目使用しておりません。
グルテン不使用
5袋

おかげさまで
30周年
亀田製菓
化学調味料
無添加
おばあちゃんの
ぽたぽた焼
さとうじょうゆ味
おしょうゆ度UP!
おばあちゃんの新レシピ♪

Liliana crumbled down. It seemed that a sense of danger for her current situation was finally sprouting. She threw her poc○y *pei-* still with teary eyes. Furthermore, she took out Hap○y Turn from under the sheets and *pei-*. She took out a great number of gummies from under her pillow and *pei-*. She reached her hand under the bed and took out every kind of potato chip, Tonga○ Corn, Pota○ta Yaki, Do○tachos, boxes of ○maibou, Country ○'am, Cho○ Pie, etc……and threw them all *pei-*. And for the last, she hopped up and down *pyon pyon* which caused candy to fall down from all over her clothes. She threw *peeeeei-* all of them altogether. (TN: , , ,

,

,

,

)

The snacks built a mountain in the corner of the room. Just how much had she piled up?

「Hajime-san. It appears that I have the fate of needing to work no matter what.」

「You are going to the extreme again. Why can’t you do things in “moderation” huh?」

「I am Liliana. A woman who can only choose white or black, one or ten!」

「No, even if you proclaim like that, it’s still」

Liliana who was growing somewhat completely desperate caused Hajime to scratch his cheek wondering what to do.

But, at that time,

「I have heard the story!」

The closet of the room was thrown open *bam*. From there, the one who leapt out with a pointlessly refined somersault was the mother of the Nagumo family――Sumire. Just what was going on with the closets of the Nagumo residence? It was terrifying because it felt like it would access another world at this rate.

Hajime ignored Sumire and investigated inside the closet. While he was doing that, Sumire made a cool pose while pointing with a snap at Liliana.

「Lily-chan! Become mine(my assistant). If you do that, then I'll give you half the work!」

「Yes, happily!」

In response to that sentence of invitation that was like a certain demon king somewhere, the former princess replied swiftly like a certain pub worker somewhere. (TN: Anyone know the reference here?)

「Saay, Okaa-san. Just from where in the world did you enter this closet from? There is no hole inside, and there is no way I won't notice if it is hidden……」

Hajime turned around while his head was cocked in puzzlement. There was already no one else there.

「What……the……」

Hajime who didn't notice their presence exiting the room at all was astonished.

Hajime couldn't suppress his shudder against his mother who recently seemed to learn the skill of appearing at unexpected places and at unexpected moments. Actually, in

the world of publishing business, there was a rumor that Sumire-sensei was a real-life Dorae○n though……

It was a story for a bit later when it was finally known that it was because Sumire was using and applying the artifacts that Hajime created in preparation for the worst case, or artifacts for making the daily life convenient.

Hajime, knowing the fact that his mother was using the artifacts even more skillfully than himself, fell on all fours. It was also a story of a bit later.

Part 2

☆Shoujo Manga Artist Lily

「Thank god~, you really saved me, Lily-chan. I thought that you could become a battle-ready force because your fingers are dexterous, but this surpassed my expectations.」

「I'm honored that I can be useful. I myself am having fun getting involved with the creative work of manga……」

It was about a week after Sumire took away Liliana without Hajime even noticing to become her work's assistant.

Because several of Sumire's assistants who were working with her until now suddenly got sick or had family problems, she became shorthanded all of a sudden and was in need of substitute assistants in a hurry.

Of course, because Sumire was a big-shot manga artist, the publisher would prepare excellent assistants even in such a situation. But, Sumire who knew that recently Liliana got really addicted to shoujo manga thought that this was a good chance, and she tried making Liliana become her helper.

As a result, Liliana, who was skillful and possessed uncommon concentration power from the start, managed to learn the skill, that wasn't inferior even when compared with veteran assistants, in just a week. Now, she had become a very satisfactory battle force.

It appeared that manga creation work suited Liliana. The work also had a moderate pressure where she couldn’t bear to make a mess of the manuscript that was drawn by Sumire, who was someone she loved, it needed precise attentiveness, it had a clear time limitation that was the deadline, and the work amount was also quite much.

And then, the best thing for Liliana above all else, was that this work “wasn’t a work that she was forced to do”. It was a work that Liliana liked, where the factor that she was helping Sumire was strong.

In a sense, it could be said that this work was fit for Liliana to a T.

「Fufu, Lily-chan. Right now, you are making a really good face you know? You have a shadow under your eye, but it feels more like something healthy and fulfilling.」

「Yes. Perhaps this is the first time that I’m getting absorbed in work with an excited feeling like this.」

They had just somehow finished the manuscript in time right before the deadline. Now, they were talking to each other leisurely while drinking café au lait that was filled with a lot of milk. The other assistants were also unanimously praising Liliana’s work attitude.

Here, she wasn’t standing in the lead. They were all working hard together where everyone was praising their peers. It was something really fresh for Liliana and gave her a great sense of fulfillment.

「So Lily-chan. I asked you to come help for the time being but what will you do after this? If it’s okay with you, I’ll employ you formally.」

「Sumire-okaasama――no, Sumire-sensei, if it's fine with you then please, by any means.」

The two exchanged a firm handshake with each other.

Like this, the workaholic part-time leader had gone through being a shut-in NEET and finally become a shoujo manga artist's assistant.

Half a year after that.

「Haa, Sumire-okaasama. As I thought, it's just no good. It's fine already, so please go back to your own work.」

「What are you saying now. There is still time. It's too fast for you to give up.」

「Uu, but……」

Liliana dejectedly turned her eyes to the clock on the wall. It was just a bit more until the time limit.

Well-balanced meal and the fierce and violent battlefield that was the approaching deadline had shaved off the excessive fat from Liliana's body. However, in reverse, her body build became just right――even though she was slim, her style became voluptuous and her sensuality increased considerably. There was also how her age had turned seventeen years old, and her charm as a woman was increasing by far and away.

Liliana, who was putting on such an adult sensuality, was now in a state that was being down, for some reason, which caused anyone who was looking at her to harbor various desires without reason.

「Come on, don’t be that down. Lily-chan is the prized pupil of this Sumire-sensei, that’s why you need to hold yourself more confidently.」

「Sumire-okaasama……that’s right. Besides, even Hajime-san is a person who won’t give up until the end. It’s no good if I give up now.」

Liliana clenched her small fist and made an appeal of not giving up.

Now then, if it was asked what Liliana and Sumire were waiting together for, they were waiting for a call.

In this half a year, Liliana, whose heart was completely stolen by the world of literary creation, had increased her skill by a great margin. And then, she made her superabundance delusion to erupt and secretly drew her own shoujo manga, but Sumire knew that and invited her to apply for the Rookie of the Year Award.

Today was the day where the winner would be announced. If someone won a placement, then they would be told by phone. If there wasn’t any call until the appointed time, then that meant that their work was rejected.

The work that she poured her heart and blood into got evaluated by other people. This experience that was the first for her was heightening Liliana’s nervousness to a new level.

Seeing Liliana who was staring fixedly at the needle of the clock, Sumire thought inside her heart「The nervous face of Lily-chan who recently grew into a completely lewd body——not that, she recently looked like an adult……it’s unbearableee」and unconsciously reached out her hand squirmingly, it was at that time,

——pururururururururu-

□!?□

□I’m sorry-, it’s just a sudden impulse! Forgive me!□

The resounding ringtone caused Liliana to stand up in a flash. She left behind Sumire who, for some reason, was apologizing while making an excuse and took her smartphone into her hand.

She answered the phone timidly, and a beat later, her expression turned bright in a flash. She expressed words of thanks□Thank you very much-□many times while bowing her head repeatedly as though she was a pure Japanese person.

Like that, after Liliana cut off the phone, she leapt toward Sumire who was smiling broadly from guessing the result.

□I did it, Sumire-okaasama! I, I did it!□

□You see, it’s just as I told you, right? I told you it would be fine if it’s Lily-chan. And, which place did you win?□

□Yes, it’s the first place! The number one! The grand victor!□

□Oh my. I thought that it might be possible, but you actually really took it. As expected from Lily-chan.□

It seemed that Lily’s submitted work took first place.

After that, the work of Liliana who took the Rookie of the Year Award obtained explosive popularity and sold out like hot cakes.

Surely, her being a relative and also a prized pupil of that famous shoujo manga artist great Sumire-sensei was also one of the factors of her high newsworthiness.

By the way, the story of the manga was about the journey of a talentless young man who was summoned to another world, where he brushed aside adversity until he defeated an evil god, and in the process of that journey, the main character was connecting his heart with the princess of the kingdom. It was a really common love fantasy genre.

In the middle of the journey, the vampire princess, rabbit-eared girl, dragon onee-san, a widow and her daughter, the teacher, and girl classmates who were summoned together with the young man made their appearance and had a nice atmosphere with the young man, but the young man's heart was leaning toward the princess of the kingdom. Like that, there was also the desire of a certain someone laid bare in the content of the story.

It went without saying that Liliana was given a coo~~~ld chilly gaze from the wives who were reading the manga.

Even though the story was something common, the emotion of the characters, the story's development, and the scene depiction were something overflowing with realness as though the creator had seen it with her own eyes. It seemed that caused it to be received well by the readers.

Now then, Liliana, who had discovered something for her to live for, became Sumire's second gen, and took a seat in the manga world; inside such a person there was a trait that couldn't be ignored by the people related with the business world.

That was her elegance as royalty that she had recovered from discovering something to live for. And then, her personality and beauty that once in the past charmed millions of people. In addition, was the refined sex appeal that she was clad with recently.

In short, she had the appearance and personality that was extremely appealing to the media.

Because of that, once she showed up in things like autograph sessions or interviews, her popularity exploded greatly separated from the manga.

After all, because she was a former princess she was used with going out in front of a lot of people, she also had the full knowledge of what kind of expression, along with the impression, she needed to give to others. Compared to probing the gut of each other against foreign negotiators or nobles, just making herself to be received favorably by the masses was just too easy.

Because she was recognized as the prized pupil of the great Sumire-sensei by society, there was no way she could smear mud on the face of her treasured mother-in-law. She also wanted to respond to the feelings of her fans who said to her that they liked her manga.

Liliana, who was thinking like that, displayed her princess skills in full without holding anything back.

As a result, a year after Liliana started her activity as a shoujo manga artist, at the time when her manga was decided to be turned into an anime at an unprecedented speed, Liliana was,

□Everyy~~one! Thank you very much for coming today! Anime decision☆ Congratulations! This is Lily who will sing the theme song as the work’s creator dee~~su! I’ll sing with my all, so please enjoy it okay!□

——WAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!!!

While a thousand fans raised their loud cheers (because the tickets were limited, only a thousand people could enter), Liliana stood on a stage wearing a cute outfit like an idol, and then she sent a wink *pachin-*.

The former princess, former part-time leader, former shut-in NEET, and the popular shoujo manga artist, was now turning into an existence that was laying her hand on the seat of the top idol.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I'm sorry that the Lily arc turned out to be so long.

I'll end it in the next chapter, and after that, I'll write a bit about the wives who didn't get a spotlight. I'm also thinking of trying to write about the Getting Kidnapped Too Much Case.

Incidentally, in the main story, is there any section that feels like「This part is written vaguely, more detail please」? Sometimes in the middle of writing, I often think 'I want to try writing it in more detail someday', but the 'After' and 'extra story' are too fun, and those things are becoming a distant memory.

If you have a request, then please don't hold back and tell me whether through a review or message.

The next update is planned to be for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 228

Arifureta After II I Become the Deity of the New World? Second Part

---

AN: This chapter is a bit late, I’m sorry!

Part 1

☆Top Idol Lily

In the center of a dressing room that was quite large, Liliana, who was buried in bouquets, presents, and letters from fans, was moving her pen with a terrific momentum *scratch scratch scratch scratch scratch* while still dressed in a cute stage dress.

Without even feeling bothered that her fingertips were dirtied with ink, she kept moving her pen with a momentum that felt like it would even produce afterimage. The reason for this was of course in order to draw her manga.

There weren't even thirty minutes until her next show. And then once she stood on the stage, she wouldn't be able to make it to the deadline. Therefore, she had to finish her manuscript in less than thirty minutes!

whoosh Liliana's left hand reached out. What that hand grasped was a Calory ○te. It was a really excellent ration if you ignored how it would turn lumpy inside the mouth. She'd had no time to eat since the morning, so she replenished her nourishment with this. (TN: I never ate Calorie Mate before, and the author here is using a word □□□□□(passa pasa) that I cannot find the meaning, to describe the sensation. I just put the word lumpy as a placeholder. Anyone know how to describe the sensation of eating Calorie Mate?)

And, at that timing, regardless of how Liliana had asked the staff so that no one entered the room until the decided time, the door of the dressing room was knocked upon.

Liliana, whose princess skill was lively even at this kind of time, was replying brightly with a voice that would make anyone who heard it feel happy despite how Liliana’s eyes didn’t even look away from her manuscript, and how her hand also didn’t stop moving.

「Ye~~s. The door is not locked~.」

「Eerr, excuse us.」

「E, excuse us for the intrusion.」

After seeing the people who entered, then indeed, they were people who weren’t a problem even if the staff let them enter.

「Ah, Kaori! Also even Shizuku! You two really came for me!」

Just as Liliana said, the people who timidly entered the dressing room were Kaori and Shizuku. The two of them were making a really speechless expression toward Liliana who was surrounded by bouquets and many other things, wearing a showy dress, and yet her fingertips were dirtied by ink while diligently drawing pictures.

「Somehow, you really feel like an entertainer here……. Eer, so, Lily. You suddenly sent that kind of mail, 「Emergency! Emergency! Hee~lp-. Especially Kaori!」, just what in the world was with that?」

Just as Kaori said, Liliana sent a reinforcement request to the wives.

It seemed that she especially needed Kaori’s reinforcement, the reason for that was,

「Yes, I’m glad that it’s Kaori who arrived first. I’m sorry for the hurry, but please use the magic to prolong time. Also, it has to be finished in about twenty minutes……for now, please expand the time difference to ten times. Ah, Shizuku, sit over there, and please help with the inking.」

「「Eee~~~」」

It seemed that this former princess, at last, found herself lacking time, and she now attempted to solve the problem using magic. Asking to use magic that even interfered with the principle of the world in order to finish a manuscript——it was a special bargain sale of an age of god magic. In a sense, it could be said that this was really fitting for a wife of the demon king.

Kaori and Shizuku couldn’t hide their complicated faces after hearing the reason they were called here.

「I understand that you are really in trouble but……somehow, I don’t really feel it at all.」

When Kaori unconsciously muttered that, Liliana lifted her face and showed a crisp expression.

And then,

「Kaori.」

「Eh, wha, what is it, Lily?」

「I am Liliana. A woman who will do anything if it’s to protect the deadline.」

「Aa~, yep, that’s right.」

Kaori went「Well, isn’t it fine」and sent a half-smile at the crisp Liliana while releasing her age of god magic. With this, a ten-fold time difference was created between the inside of this room and the outside.

For a while, the sound of *scratch scratch scratch scratch scratch scratch* and the sound of *splat splat, plop plop* resounded inside the room. Putting aside the content of the manga, both Kaori and Shizuku knew very well that Liliana was working hard, so they seriously endeavored to help her.

After around an hour, some more reinforcements arrived. It was Hajime, Yue, and Shia. Even while they too showed an exasperated face at the reason they were called here, their thoughts toward Liliana was already like「Good grief, just go until as far as you can go」, and so they began to participate in helping her.

「Hey, Lily. When we passed by the stage just now……」

「Yes? What is it?」

While Yue and Shia were obediently helping, Hajime suddenly started talking.

「Somehow, two people who I recognize really well were wearing black suits and sunglasses while doing otagei with really smooth moves. That wasn’t just my hallucination, right?」(TN: Otagei=Fans who were yelling and dancing at pop concerts)

「Aah, about Shinji-san and Yoshiki-san.」

「……As I thought, it’s those two huh.」

「Yes. You don’t know Hajime-san? Those two right now are starting up a security firm and working as bodyguards that specialize in protecting celebrities. This time, they are accepting to guard my concert also because they are acquaintances.」

Liliana was tilting her head while saying incomprehensible things like「Since they became a hot topic due to “the otagei of the black-suited bodyguards is godly”, it seems they are also undertaking the role of the captain of the groupies」.

Nakano Shinji and Saitou Yoshiki.

Those two who were the bunch who once were engaging in spiteful harassment toward Hajime, after the death of Hiyama Daisuke and Kondo Reiichi who they often hanged out with, they began to change little by little. They displayed a desperately earnest fight in the legendary decisive battle even when facing the apostles and right now they didn’t hold any antagonism even against Hajime.

Such Shinji and Yoshiki, after graduating from high school, they were living aimlessly without doing anything in particular; but just recently, they started up a security firm that specialized in guarding celebrities.

They were wearing uniforms consisting of a black suit and sunglasses, which would make anyone want to give them a straight-man retort that they watched too many movies, but their skill as bodyguards was super first class. Their experience in facing monsters and god’s apostles in another world was something that couldn’t possibly be surpassed by the likes of suspicious people, so it could be said that this was only natural. They had already piled up many achievements and received deep trust from the world of show business.

And those two, from piling up many days of being the security of idol concerts, saw the groupies who were doing an otagei activity, and it seemed that, for some reason, they got triggered. While those two were standing at both sides of the stage to keep a watchful eye for anyone suspicious, they generously displayed the physical ability their body was blessed with and completely and thoroughly copied the otagei moves.

Since a video of two bodyguards wearing black suits and sunglasses doing otagei with really smooth moves was uploaded on a certain video site, they were treated as gods of the otagei world and won a popularity that wasn’t inferior even against the idols at present from a part of the community.

Rather, their fame was so much that there were even people who came to the concert just to witness the “dancing black-suited bodyguards”.

「Nn, their dance was really amazing.」

Yue said that while lifting her hand midair. She connected spaces using space magic and tried to secretly have a look.

Like that, a hole manifested in midair, and the spectacle on the other side of that hole was――

「Lily-, Lily-! Fuuh, fuuh, fuuh, fuuh!!」

「You guys-, put more of your soul into it! Heat up the concert with your whole body and spirit! Here are the audience seats. But this place is also another stage-」

Shinji was waving around a light stick with really smooth moves while inciting up more shouts of support for Lily. Yoshiki was showing a movement that was completely

synchronized with his partner while passionately leading the groupies.

「Ca, captain. The movement is just too intense; my stamina is already……」

「These dancing bodyguards……they are monster.」

One person, then one more person, the group of otakus was collapsing before the concert was starting. By the way, the captain referred to Shinji, while Yoshiki was called as the demonic vice-captain.

Shinji, who was single-mindedly dancing while dressed in a smart black suit, shouted at the collapsed otakus.

「Is this fine with you? Ending it here like this.」

「Eh?」

「Are you fine with this, giving up on everything.」

「Cap, tain?」

The group of otakus who was heaving and drenched in sweat, turned their eyes toward Shinji who was smoothly dancing.

「We are, the people who protect the idols. We protect their body, their heart, we are the people who offer them our lives so that they can shine!」

The smoothness of Shinji’s dance was gradually increasing. It was truly a master-class otagei that was filled with soul and spirit!

「Stand up you guys! Never Give Up! If someone doesn’t give up, then they will surely be able to reach the summit of

their dreams! A man taught that to me!」

The gazes of Yue and the others turned toward Hajime. Surely, if they were talking about a man who exerted a strong influence on Shinji and others, then it could only mean Hajime.

Shinji's words that were overflowing with spirit caused one of the collapsed otaku to ask in amazement. Even during that time, Shinji was drawing a beautiful trajectory with the light stick in the air while demonstrating an artistic dance.

「Captain. Just what is your dream? Just what is it, that makes you go this far!?」

It was a heated question that came from an otaku who was somehow swallowed by the place's atmosphere. Right now, the people who collapsed, and also the people who didn't, everyone was drenched in sweat while directing a serious gaze at Shinji.

「What is this for, you ask? That's obvious.」

Shinji looked at them, and then he looked at his pal, then he declared powerfully!

「It's to-, HAVE A SHOTGUN WEDDING WITH AN IDOL-!!!」

DOLL DOLL DOLL~~, the proclamation of Shinji was echoing inside the concert venue that was in the middle of preparation. It echoed really clearly.

……It seemed that was the main reason why they founded a security firm that specialized in celebrities. Yoshiki beside Shinji was looking up to the sky while his lips formed a thin line as though he was biting his lip against something.

「Wha, what are you saying!? Something like that is obviously impossible! It just cannot happen!」

The otaku who asked just now argued. But, such words didn't reach Shinji. The reason was because Shinji had seen it. In a world where he was walking right alongside death, he had witnessed the indomitable spirit of that man!

「No, it's not impossible! Because I know! I know a man who even though he was dropped into the bottom of hell, even though he faced nothing but despair-, he continued to struggle without giving up and created a harem-. A man who day after day, is always having a debauchery party with transcendentally beautiful girls-. The man who reached the summit-」

gachari A sound rang. When Yue and the others came back to their senses with a 'hah' and turned their gazes toward the sound, over there, they saw the figure of Hajime drawing out Donner. It seemed he was planning to snipe at Shinji through the connected spaces. In a panic, Shia moved to stop him using Cobra Twist.

「Even we, if we don't give up we should be able to achieve a shotgun wedding with an idol! We should be able to do it! Or rather, about this matter, even if we put aside Nagumo, I just cannot grasp how the hell that Endo can create harem-. Why, why Endo? Why am I no good, huh? Forget harem; there ain't even any sign I'll be able to get a girlfriend y'know. Or rather, there ain't even an encounter. There ain't even a tiny bit of it! I ain't popular on the 'am I actually cursed as retaliation for harassing the demon king in the past?' level already here! GODDAMN IT ALLLLLLLL-」

Right now, the light stick was leaving behind afterimages while Shinji's otagei was showing a movement that was

unthinkable to be at the level of humans. That was, the dance of someone who had stepped their foot into the territory of god! The manifestation of the overflowing yell of the soul!

「Captain……a person like you is……」

「Are you trying, to challenge the impossible……」

「Heh. What an idiot. But, I don’t hate it yeah, a passionate idiot like you.」

The otaku group was starting to stand back up! Perhaps they felt sympathy at that yell of the soul that laid everything bare. A fearless grin was emerging on every single one of their――

Yue closed the space.

「……Nn. Lily. Is this okay?」

「Ah, yes. Yue-san. Your precise work really helps.」

「Yes, Lily. I also finished here. What’s next?」

「As expected from Shizuku. That’s an excellent piece of work. Please do this next.」

They resumed their work as though nothing had happened. It seemed they decided that they didn’t see anything. Even Hajime, who ate a smooth transition from Cobra Twist to Triangle Choke by Shia, also obediently went back to his seat.

「Come to think of it, Lily. Is there anything particular in your surroundings?」

「Anything, particular?」

Hajime asked while he was rubbing his neck. Liliana sent Hajime a glance while tilting her head without dropping the speed of her pen at all.

Hajime was putting a tone on his manuscript page while nodding「Yeah」.

「Look, recently my existence became known, right? Especially because Kaa-san dropped the bomb.」

「Yes. Well, even if Hajime-san called it dropping the bomb, but I too am calling Sumire-okaasama as “okaa-sama” normally, so it became known with a natural flow.」

「No, not just about your relationship with me, but also about this and that in private.」

Those words caused Liliana’s face to turn red spontaneously.

Just some time ago, when Liliana received an interview on the television, Sumire also participated as a special guest. At that time, Sumire jokingly said「Liliana is the wife of my son you know, so don’t make a move on her okay~」.

If that was all, then it would be nothing big because it was something already known, but Sumire, who got carried away, then dropped the bomb by frankly exposing a part of the married private life between Liliana and her son. That was already a talk that could smash apart the dream of the male fans into pieces.

Furthermore, Sumire also casually said「It’s not just Lily-chan you know~」while giving hints that Liliana’s partner actually also had other women, and he had an indulging relationship with those women too.

Naturally, there was no way the media wouldn’t bite at the impure private life of Liliana-sensei who was a beautiful manga artist and also an idol who was at the peak of her popularity; though Hajime crushed the commotion before it could create a stir.

Thanks to that, *for some reason*, the topic wasn’t being excessively discussed in TV shows and the like, but even so, it didn’t mean that there wasn’t any effect at all.

One of the effects was the rash actions of a part of the wildly fanatic fans.

「Before this too, you almost got attacked by a reckless fan, right? Who knows what can happen.」

「Perhaps that is so, but currently, there is no sign of that. Besides, I’m not so weak that a civilian can take me by surprise. I have also trained much in “Hauria-style close-quarter hand-to-hand combat art ~This is the bunnies’ way y’know~” from Shia-san’s direct teaching.」

「……」

Hajime’s gaze turned toward Shia. Shia looked aside. When Hajime muttered「It’s really fresh how the style name is accompanied with a subtitle there」, Shia’s cheeks blushed with a puff. There was no doubt that her currently invisible rabbit ears were surely flopped down from shame.

「Rather than that, everyone. Can you all come listen to my concert today?」

Liliana changed the topic to wave off Hajime’s worry and also to imply that she was fine. Hearing that question, Hajime and the others looked at each other’s faces.

This was the stage where their important family was standing on. Although they had attended her concert several times before this, it was impossible for them to go home after coming this far. Their answer could only be one. With a unanimous decision, they would cheer on the idol wife and idol fellow wife.

After that, Liliana, who somehow managed to finish the manuscript before the deadline, handed it over to her editor with a really nice smile. The editor gave a thumb up with a posed look before she straddled her beloved motorcycle, Kawasaki's Ninja ZX10-R, and vanished into the city.
——Though she was a woman who finally welcomed her 60th birthday this year……

Like that, the last concert for today began. Liliana, in her fluttery and frilly dress, lavishly sent winks and *twinkle-☆* and heated up the venue.

Below that stage, even the two black-suited and sunglasses bodyguards were taking up positions as security while demonstrating smooth otagei like they were possessed as they were greatly heating up the venue by becoming one with the otaku group whose gazes seemed to conceal some kind of determination.

After the concert closed the curtain with enthusiasm, excitement, and fulfillment, surprisingly there was still work for Liliana to attend to, an autograph and handshake session. Even while Hajime and the others were getting exasperated with just how much work she was doing, they still stood a slight distance away and watched over Liliana

who was currently mass producing fans with her ‘former princess & real idol smile-!’

Fan number 1——a silver-haired young man with mismatched eyes and an atmosphere like a stepping stool reincarnator. (TN: Fumidai tenseisha(stepping stool reincarnator)= a term for characters who are used as fodder to make other characters look good, or characters that tried to carry out wicked schemes only to meet an unfortunate end themselves. Like Kouki or Hiyama, I guess. I just looked up this term in a hurry, so please correct me if my understanding is wrong.)

「Lily-sensei. I’m a great fan! It’s a lie that you have a husband, right!?」

「Thank you very much. Can I trouble you to teach me your name?」

「Eh, ah, I’m Satoshi.」

「……To Satoshi-san, here. Thank you very much for always coming to my concert. Please come again next time, okay?」

「Yo, you remember me……yes-. I’ll absolutely come! I will cheer for you!」

Fan number 2——a girl with her front hair styled like Sada○.

「Sensei. What do you think about love between the same gender?」

「Can you please tell me your name?」

「u……○ko, desu.」

「Aah, you are the person who was always cramming your fan letter with the words “I love you” aren’t you? Thank you very much. I’m happy that a cute girl like you is supporting me.」

「a, u」

「Please support me from here on too.」

「yes」

Fan number 3——A male hero wearing a high-class suit that had the embroidery of a super-deformed Lily.

「Lily-sensei. I come here today bringing a marriage registration. Please, place your signature here.」

「That’s a splendid embroidery no matter how many times I see it. What’s more, it always has a different pattern each time. If I remember correctly, you sewed it yourself, right? I feel embarrassed somehow, thank you very much. So it’s fine if I sign here then. Fufu, what a humorous person.」

「Say, Lily-sensei. I cannot read this though……are these letters from a country somewhere?」

「They are Hairihi Kingdom letters. ……Is it, no good?」

「-. Don’t be absurd. Though I will be happy if next time I can have you write it in Japanese.」

「My. Ufufu. Then, please come again to the next concert, okay?」

「Of course.」

Fans number 4——A pair of onee-samas who were strangely muscular.

「Lily-chaaan! The concert today is also reeaally great!!」

「Dear me, I'm totally moved」

「Fufu, thank you very much for every time. It's because all of you onee-sama are always cheering me on with loud voices(deep voices) that I immediately notice when onee-sama's group is coming.」

「Oh noes, how embarrassing. When we are excited, our voices unconsciously turn ju~st a little bit burly you knooww.」

「Oi, just now, someone said「It's not the level of burly anymore. That voice was completely like the voice of a beast」, who's the guy saying that, aaa!? I'm gonna butche——cough-. I'll give him punishment mon.」

「Now now, Kenji——cough-. Reika-san. If you make that kind of gallant face(berserker face), then everyone will be charmed(traumatized) you know? Rather than that, please come next time too without fail. I also want to meet all the other onee-samas.」

「Ah geez, Lily-chan, you always know what to say to make us happy. Yes, of course, we will come to cheer for you again. After all, we, the members of "Manly Woman Path", all love Lily-chan so much!」

Even while conversing intimately with the fans, Liliana was still handling the long queue so swiftly it was a mystery.

Seeing her like that, Hajime commented briefly.

□So deep.□

It seemed he commented about the fans.

By the way, all those fans would participate in the event where Liliana appeared every time without fail, so Hajime and the others also knew their faces. And then, Hajime became really uneasy with their speech and conduct, so he investigated their backgrounds from feeling worried.

What he understood from the result was, for example, fan number 1, the young man, his appearance was completely like a stepping stool reincarnator, but actually, he was a splendid monk with priesthood. He disguised(?) himself using a wig and colored contacts and attended Lily’s events secretly.

Furthermore, fan number 2, the girl, was actually the young daughter of Japan’s preeminent great conglomerate that managed some long-standing department stores. Fan number 3, the male hero, was the oldest son of a lawyer family that had continued for generations, a son of the current chairman of JF○A. Fans number 4 were Japan’s version of Chrystal——the leadership of an organization that took control of the underworld pleasure district of the whole Japan. (TN: Japan Federation of Bar Associations. Btw, will I get any problem by brazenly putting the censored names like this? Should I put some censoring?)

Other than them, there was a frog-faced virtuoso doctor that was said to possess god’s hand, a detective that often said ‘in the name of my grandfather’, a super high school student

level female high school student, an unfortunate looking young man that called a fat kitty cat「sensei」, a foreigner whispering「The human of this star is――」while holding a canned coffee in one hand……etc (TN: See the reader comments below if you want to know the reference.)

Certainly, they were really deep. Those fans came from a deep fan stratum. There was no doubt that inside Liliana there was an ability to attract people. And then, she conversed intimately with those men and women of dee~p character, sometimes she ignored them, sometimes she led them on, and she then ended the conversation in a pleasant note and sent them back. Seeing her figure like that reminded Hajime and the others of the princess who once fiercely fought against the nobles and empire diplomats using a smiling face and dignity and words (thorns and indirect implications are optional).

「It's true they have deep personality but……how should I say it, Lily's personality, it's different from a normal idol, it's……」

Kaori spoke in hesitation while her cheeks were twitching. Yue and the others supplemented on her statement with an expression that seemed to say that they really understood what she meant.

「……They are clingy.」

「I can feel obsession from them desuu」

「Perhaps this is saying too much but……recently, I also feel something like worship from them.」

Exactly as they said, a really small proportion――in places like BBS on the internet and so on, a topic that talked about

‘there are a lot of fellows with screws loose among Lily-sensei’s fans’ was spreading.

「Is this really fine?」

Kaori was staring at Liliana worriedly. Following her, Hajime and the others were also staring at the figure of the idol princess who was showing a natural and perfect smile that was overflowing with so much elegance and intimacy.

For Liliana who had been competing against veteran nobles and foreign diplomats since her childhood, it was a trifling matter to pound a degree of information of her fans into her head. If she could exchange words with them for just once, she would never forget their face; and if she conversed with them just for a bit, then even from just that she would see through what kind of gesture and way of talking they would like and deal with them using that.

Against someone like that, there was no way an idol’s fans wouldn’t have their hearts captured, which continuously increased the production of fanatic fans even now.

Like that, by the time the line was handled, and only a half remained, the worry of Hajime and co became a reality.

「Sorry, but you can stop right there.」

Before Hajime and the others moved, Shinji, who was standing by near Liliana, quietly walked forward and called out to one of the fans to stop moving. At the same time, Yoshiki moved casually beside Liliana.

「Eh, eh? Wha, what is it?」

「……I won’t say anything bad. Just go home for now. I don’t want to create a disturbing topic in this kind of place.」

It was a man who looked like a fan who was told right to the face「Please leave」by a black-suited bodyguard. The fan looked like he was cowering without any composure, but behind his hanging down long hair could a glaring gaze be seen.

The young man argued vehemently with a small stifled voice as to why it was only him that got stopped like this. Shinji's gesture and gaze expressed that he would never let the man pass. The overwhelming pressure from Shinji that was different from a civilian greatly scared the young man while also making him lose a bit of temper.

The bright atmosphere until now completely changed and the fans and staff all around felt a strained tension in the air. While they were starring uneasily between the young man and Shinji, Liliana, who guessed the situation, stood up.

「Shinji-san. I'll be fine, so please let that person through.」

「No, but still. This is also pretty much my work……」

Liliana called out to Shinji. Shinji frowned with a troubled look while looking over his shoulder.

But, at that time, the atmosphere of the young man who was shrinking away from Shinji suddenly changed entirely. His fingertips that were restlessly moving stopped still.

「Shinji? Right now, you called that man by name? That man who should be a mere security guard?」

That voice was small and sounded a bit stuttering like before. However, a hint of dangerousness that came from a great boiling emotion could be felt from it.

Perhaps the people surrounding them also felt that hint of danger because they were starting to take some distance like a tide drawing back.

In the middle of that, it was only Liliana who kept staring straight at the young man, and she nodded.

「Yes. I called him by name just now. Because he is my friend.」

「You act as you please again in a place where I don’t know. What a bad child. You always always, with another man in a place where I don’t know. Even though I have been this patient like this. Even though I was thinking of forgiving you about that self-proclaimed husband too.」

「Forgiving? Why do I need your forgiveness? What is that forgiveness for?」

「Shut up-. I won’t forgive you anymore-. Unforgivable-」

The young man was talking incoherently; however, seeing Liliana who was staring straight at him without faltering and asked him back, the young man faltered in return, and he shouted.

Like that, he entered his hand into his breast pocket and took out a kitchen knife. Before this, the security had carried out an inspection when the audience began entering, so it was unclear how this young man could bring in something like that. Shinji and Yoshiki grimaced at the hole in the security.

The surrounding people screamed and backed further away. They were forming a circle around Liliana and the others as if there was nobody else other than them.

Hajime looked like he was going to move from the corner of her eyes, but Liliana stopped him with her gaze. In response, Hajime scratched his cheek before he leaned his back on the wall to show that he was watching carefully. That gesture showed his trust toward her, and at the same time, it also expressed Hajime’s intent that no matter how the situation ended he would help her in dealing with it. Liliana’s cheeks loosened slightly seeing that.

Although, for the young man, it seemed that he saw that smile as something that was mocking him. He shouted「So you are also laughing at me-」while charging forward with the kitchen knife raised high.

Shinji sighed while clenching his fist to subdue the young man. But beside him, a silhouette stepped forth smoothly.

Of course, it was Liliana. Behind him, Yoshiki leaked out a stupid voice「Ah」.

「You-, you forever, belong to meee-」

「First, you should hear what other people say.」

The kitchen knife was swung down. The surrounding people held their breath. They screamed and averted their eyes from the tragedy that would happen in the next moment.

In an instant.

The ups and down of the young man were reversed.

「Ah, eh?」

The young man leaked out a confused voice at himself, who before he knew it, was rolling on the floor with just a light impact.

“I don’t know what kind of life you have experienced until now, but I’ll feel troubled if you are demanding from me the responsibility for that feeling where things cannot go as you wished it.”

The young man came back to his senses from those words of Liliana. He forcefully stood up once more and rushed while shouting again. He thought that surely just now only slipped.

But, the result was the same.

Just before he could touch Liliana, his field of vision was overturned in a circle, and he then faced up to the sky along with a light impact.

This time he understood. That he was thrown down by Liliana.

The humiliation and reality that his body wouldn’t move like how he wanted caused the young man to spew out words that were already hard to comprehend while he charged forward trying to stab with his knife.

But, perhaps it should be said to be as expected. The arm that he thrust out was softly grasped, and right after that, the young man’s body revolved around Liliana once like a satellite, contrary to his wish. He was swung around back onto the path he just came from, and then he was pushed away by one of Liliana’s hand.

“I’m very good at remembering people’s faces. However, I don’t remember you.”

The screaming young man charged. Liliana’s arm rolled up his arm, and then she twirled beside him as though she was

dancing on the stage and flung away the young man with a really natural flow.

「You-」

「In other words, you have never come to an event where I participated even once. Isn't that correct?」

The young man was only thrown without any pain. The young man, whose face was dyed bright red from shame and rage, was rapidly approaching while swinging around his kitchen knife senselessly, but……the arms of Liliana, who smoothly stepped close to the young man, gripped his collar; at the same time, the young man was thrown down and made to look up to the sky without being able to offer any resistance.

「Most likely, you had watched me through television at home. And then, it caused you to hold an emotion that lead you until you were causing something like this. But, is that really something that you wished for?」

Irimi Nage(Stepping-in Throw)

Kote Gaeshi(Wrist Reversal)

Shihou Nage(Four Directions Throw)

Tenchi Nage(Heaven and Earth Throw)

Kokyuu Nage(Respiration Throw)

Kaiten Nage(Rotation Throw)

Liliana was talking about the situation while continuing to knock down the young man unharmed with her techniques at the center of the empty circle.

「Oi, Shia. Is that the “This is the bunnies’ way y’know” you taught Lily?」

「Please don’t mention the subtitle…… I didn’t really teach her anything. I taught her the basics of hand-to-hand fighting, and also the basics of Aikido more or less, but in the first place, I’m not someone who uses that kind of flowing Aikido.」

「But, isn’t that guy practically being handled by bunnies there?」

「That’s why please stop it with the bunnies, Hajime-san. That’s something that Lily-san learned by herself. It seems she watched the technique on an internet video and copied from that.」

「What’s with that learning aikido through correspondence? Is that girl actually a hidden buggy character, huh?」

「Isn’t that right desu. She is already at the level where it might be dangerous for me if I don’t use physical reinforcement in our bout. I tasted the terror of Aikido before this. Well, even so, I don’t really have the motivation to learn it though. As I thought, for a rabbit it has to be an impactful battle that makes your blood boil and your flesh dance.」

「Just what kind of rabbit are you, huh? Ah, you are a rabbit from another world.」

While Hajime and Shia were conversing about Liliana’s hidden talent, a sobbing sound was starting to echo in the venue before anyone knew it.

When they looked toward the sound, the aforementioned young man was crouching while raising a sad weeping voice.

As for Liliana, there wasn’t even a single crease on her frilly idol dress, and her breathing wasn’t disordered at all either.

The audience was still petrified from admiration and shock. Shinji and Yoshiki were taking out Uma○bou from somewhere and turned completely into spectators. What happened with being a bodyguard?

Liliana approached the young man who was continuing to do nothing but crying in a posture that looked like a half-prostration. And then, she began to brush the young man’s head gently.

「It’s painful, isn’t it? It’s so tiring, so much so that you cannot stand up anymore, isn’t it?」

It appeared that while Hajime and Shia were conversing, Liliana had gotten out the circumstance of the young man from him. And it seemed that Hajime and co had an interest in the young man’s circumstance and emotional state as much as they had an interest with the darkened skid mark on the road that they completely failed to hear the story.

Feeling the sensation of the gentle brushing on his head, the young man raised his head in astonishment while crying. Liliana smiled gently at him. And then, she whispered something into his ear.

When the young man received those words, his face that got soppy from tears and snot became even more disheveled, and he broke out crying loudly once more.

Liliana gently brushed the young man’s head once more. She looked like a mother consoling her child.

It appeared that she succeeded in persuading the madly rampaging young man. A completely speechless air was

flowing around inside the astonished concert venue.

Hajime ran his gaze through the venue before he suddenly started clapping. Of course, it was in order to prompt the praising toward Liliana who despite being attacked, instead admonished the attacker. He did this because he didn’t do anything, so in exchange, he would at least give cover fire.

The Hajime’s scheme, who took the role of being a hired applauder, splendidly struck home. At first, there was only sparse applause, but gradually it was getting louder before, at last, a grand applause reverberated like thunder along with cheers.

Even though there wasn’t an encore or anything, the venue was filled with the repeated calls of「LILY-! LILY-!」.

In the middle of that, Liliana, who seemed to guess Hajime’s intention, sent a glance that expressed her thanks to him with her gaze. Right after that,

「……Oi, did you see?」

「……Nn. Her lips, for an instant, really it was only just for an instant but――it grinned.」

「It felt like she said「Just as planned」……don’t tell me, this assault situation was planned? ……How terrifying.」

「No, Shia. There is no way; surely it’s impossible to plan for that young man to be here. Everything from the persuasion and then Hajime’s applauding act to the reaction of the fans, it isn’t anything like ‘just as planned’.」

「Shizuku-chan. As for me, rather than saying it’s「just as planned」, I think it’s more like「Ku-ku-, seizing the mentality of the masses is no trouble at all」. Remember, even at that

time during the decisive battle; she also said something like 「Manipulating the masses is just too simple」.」

When Hajime and the others returned their gaze to the scene while feeling a slight shudder in their back, over there, they saw the figure of Liliana responding to the applause of the fans while smiling gently like a holy mother and helping the young man to stand up.

What was truly terrifying was this most excellent queen who properly possessed both purity and impurity.

The beautiful girl that was a famous shoujo mangaka, while also being an idol, had suppressed an assailant right from the front using martial arts, and she didn’t stop there. Due to the dramatic development where she reformed the assailant, the fans in this place became delirious with passion and went wild with enthusiasm.

Surely, this unexpected occurrence would become news at night today that would be broadcasted to the whole country. Like that, Liliana’s fame would be going to a new height without knowing any place to stop.

After that, just as expected, Liliana’s fame was climbing higher with a momentum that pierced the sky. Even people who held no interest in manga and anime read and watched the dramatic and touching news and began to hold an interest in Liliana’s existence itself.

And then, Liliana freely used her inherent princess skill and responded to the people’s wild enthusiasm in entirety.

And not just that.

The young man who was reformed from Liliana's words talked about how Liliana was a being that was overflowing with kindness, that he was saved by her, that she was exactly the goddess of kindness and salvation who descended to the present world, and with a response to a television's news coverage as the impetus, sometimes there were fan letters or blog posts with content that talked frankly about the sender's troubles reaching Liliana.

Naturally, Liliana wasn't able to personally go to resolve those troubles, and she also didn't have any intention to do such a thing.

But, even though Liliana herself was unable, Liliana knew a lot of acquaintances who were able.

There was the chunibyou monk, or the yandere young daughter of a great conglomerate group, or the lawyer wearing a painful-to-look suit, or the group of onee-samas who were running in full speed through the path of manly women, or a doctor, or a detective, or an apparition, or an alien……

Of course, she also had a lot of connections that she obtained from her days of working part-time.

And then, Liliana was a former princess. She *excelled in using people* more than anyone else.

After that, it went without saying.

With pure virtue and correct calculations, Liliana used her fans to help her troubled fans.

If you ask, then you will be helped.

When such a story spread, the quality and quantity of people asking for help increased.

When six months passed, the number and content of the requests for help became something that Liliana couldn’t possibly deal with by herself. However, if she said I’m stopping already here, a riot would occur with certainty. After that, Liliana devised a plan while feeling that she became unable to pull out.

That plan was,

——Liliana Aid Network

In a manner of speaking, such a thing was the starting up of a “jack-of-all-trades”.

The difference with the normal jack-of-all-trades was how it didn’t have any employees who would bind the contract or act on the scene other than employees that dealt with the paperwork.

Liliana categorized the gathered troubles on the dedicated site, aggregate them, and scrutinize their degree of priority and the content before making her judgment. And then, she would choose from among the registered members of her fan club the person capable of resolving that problem.

There wouldn’t be any reward. If there was a reward, then it would be the direct call from Liliana that asked “please” and preferential right for her event. And then, the words of “thank you” that they received directly from Liliana at the dawn of when the trouble was resolved.

But, this system was surprisingly functional.

The Liliana fan club members with de~ep personalities, and who were ridiculed by a part of the community as bunches with dozens of screws loose in their heads, would move with the readiness to work as a slave for the sake of a “please” and “thank you” from Liliana.

That was already a kind of great wave. The great wave that was sometimes generated at the turning point of the era, which could also be called as the flow of the world.

The saved people became fan club members, and then those members would then save other people, and in turn, those people who were saved would then become fellow fan club members.

That cycle continued without end, and before long, it spread outside of Japan and reached places overseas. “Liliana Aid Network” became a foundation before she knew it and even began to reach out its hand toward world scale relief activity.

One time it stopped a regional dispute; one time it established infrastructure in a developing country; granted education and goods to unfortunate children; planted greenery on a completely withered land……

And then when she realized……

□□□□□Your Holiness-! Your Holiness-! Your Holiness-! Your Holiness-!□□□□□

□□□□Holy Mother of Kindness! Holy Mother of Kindness! Holy Mother of Kindness!□□□□

Hairihi Volunteer Association became Hairihi Religion.

□How did it turn out like this……□

In the event that commemorated the production of her manga’s live-action movie, Liliana, who was standing on the stage in order to sing the theme song, was muttering with twitching cheeks.

Part 2

☆Living God Lily

「Uu, really, just how did it turn out like this……」

Liliana, who was doing the final check of the paperwork while doing a ten-second charge inside the office in preparation for her conference with the secretary general, returned to reality from the long reminiscence that she did before she knew it. It was actually really like Liliana to simultaneously verify her paperwork and eat even while reminiscing. (TN: Ten-second charge seems to be the slogan of a jelly drink in Japan.)

Liliana was unconsciously letting out her complaint while thinking that recently she wasn’t able to meet Hajime and the others again. But suddenly, a reply came back in response to her complaint.

「Obviously that’s because you are a princess.」

「Howah!?」

There should be no one other than her in this office. Naturally, Liliana, who let her guard down because there should be strict security in this place, raised a strange voice.

When she turned her gaze, she saw a rift in space and the figure of Hajime who came out from there.

「Hajime-san! Geez, please don’t startle me.」

「That can’t be helped. Even though I’m your family, in this place with a really strict security where the secretary general of the UN is also in attendance, how I can say something like ‘I came because I just wanted to talk a bit though, I’m also family so please let me in’. There is a limit even in being unable to read the atmosphere.」

「……Hajime-san. Before I realized it, you have become someone who is trying to read the atmosphere. You have really become an adult. Just as I thought, a person will mellow when he has as many as seven children.」

And then, ‘I’m always getting a late start……’ saying that, Liliana’s shoulders dropped in dejection.

「Just what are you saying? Even though you cannot even go home enough due to being so busy with work as the founder of a new religion.」

「Uguu. It’s harsh getting told that.」

Liliana pressed on her chest as though she was getting stabbed, but she immediately pulled herself together and made a fearless smile.

「But that too will be over soon. If I can have this association recognized as an official volunteer organization from this conference, I too will be able to beg to be off from all duty. In the content of the agreement with the UN, there are requirements to establish an inspection division that is configured with only UN personnel as a monitoring mechanism, and also a decision-making body that has to accept at least one person from every country where they will vote to make a decision. This association will stop being an organization where anything is decided by the will of just me alone. It will be a democracy you know Hajime-san,

democracy! Like that, my authority will be shaved, and I will fade out naturally from here!

……Is that kind of plan going to be okay?

It’s fine, there is no problem. ……Fufu, if the conference can go well this time, then I will retire. And then, I too will make a child with Hajime-san and devote myself to parenting!

Somehow, it feels like you are raising a flag there.

Hajime’s was at a loss of words seeing the holy woman going ‘ehehe’ in a trip of delusion about her calm and happy future.

Oops, come to think of it, Hajime-san, you wanted to talk? You coming expressly at this timing, does that mean there is something important?

Liliana noticed Hajime’s expression and went ‘hah’ and returned to her senses. She tilted her head and threw a question at Hajime to varnish over her actions just now.

Still, with a complicated expression on his face, Hajime said Aah, there is nothing really important while shrugging.

Well, how should I say it……what I want to say is, I also quite like Lily who is working busily.

……That’s a surprise attack. What’s more, I feel really complicated whether I should be happy or not.

Even while she was saying that Liliana’s cheeks were blushing red.

Wh, why so suddenly? Saying that kind of thing in this kind of timing, isn’t that exactly something like a flag?

「I guess. But, I want to say it ahead of time just in case. Remember, quite some time has passed already since your workaholic behavior was identified, but in the end, you are undertaking a completely staggering job like this. You aren't addicted to work anymore, but in the end, Liliana S. B. Hairihi is unable to change her way of life, isn't that how it is?」

「That's……」

She retired from being a princess and wished to grasp the happiness of a normal girl——like that, the kingdom's people saw her off, and she came to this world. Even though it should be like that, right now Liliana was going to tackle a conference with the top of the world where her fate was at stake.

Even though she tried doing part-time work, even though she tried to become a shut-in NEET, even though she tried to become a manga artist, even though she tried to become an idol, in the end, perhaps the path that the human called Liliana was walking would always end up converging onto a path where she took the responsibility of many people and stood in the lead to guide them.

It was because she was a princess. It was because she couldn't stop being a princess.

Was it just as expected, that she was unable to live the way she aspired for? In the end, was a person like her an existence who would put her beloved as secondary?

Liliana's shoulders dropped, and she answered her own question.

Hajime, who was watching Liliana with a wry smile, slowly approached her side. And then, he gently pinched Liliana's

cheek, who was showing a depressed expression.

「I came here not to make you wear that kind of face. Didn't I say it? I also like a Lily who is shutting herself inside the office like this while getting chased by work.」

「Hajime-san……」

「Isn't it just fine even if your aspiration stays as an aspiration? Isn't it just fine even if you put your husband as secondary? It is also not bad in its own way even if there is at least one wife treating me roughly. You see, it's Liliana's individuality that the other wives don't have.」

「I don't want that kind of individuality at allll!」

Despite saying that Liliana was fawning on Hajime by rubbing her cheek on Hajime's cheek.

「Well, that's how it is. Just go without getting too worked up. Because no matter where Lily is going, I'll properly run after you everywhere.」

「Fufu, thank you very much Hajime-san. But, as I thought, I will do my best here. Because I am Liliana. A woman who won't let my aspiration stay as just an aspiration. Or rather, I want a child.」

「That's what you're stressing on?」

They smiled at each other, and their lips overlapped naturally.

But, at that time, a reserved knocking sound that sounded like it was being considerate to the two's tryst was resounding.

「Looks like it’s time already.」

「Ou, go do your best, your holiness.」

「Geez, please stop saying, your holiness. I am the chairman.」

After joking, they smiled once more at each other and Liliana left the room behind. She didn’t look back at Hajime who was left behind and straightened her back with dignity.

And as for the results of the conference.

Before the mass media, the UN secretary general declared with blushing cheeks.

「She is truly-, the goddess who descended into this world! She is a living god! Hairihi religion will bring about salvation to the world!」

The populace gathering outside the conference building while watching the broadcast in real time, and the people watching television, all raised cheers simultaneously.

「How did it turn out like this!?」

The scream Liliana raised was lost amongst the cheers that were raised, even by the press people, and vanished in vain.

Before, in another world, an existence that introduced himself as a god talked about his ambition that he would also become a god on Earth. He proclaimed that he would become the god in the new world for sure.

But, the result was that the mad god was defeated by the demon king.

And right now, in place of the mad god, a wife of the demon king——

Became the god (?) of the new world.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

By the middle, I didn't know what I was writing anymore……

Thank you very much for the many requests.

I took notes of them, so I'm thinking that I want to try writing them someday.

For now, I'm thinking that I want to write about the other wives a bit in the next chapter.

Something like Tio and Hajime getting spirited away, or Shia going bunnies in the world of martial arts, or Yue and Hajime tackling an underground world……or Remia……she is difficult~

After that, I'm thinking that I also want to try writing a bit of a long extra story.

The next posting is planned to be for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 229

Arifureta After II Spirited Away

AN: I’m sorry it’s late.

This is Tio’s arc.

Part 1

「Come to think of it, Goshujin-sama. I saw something strange midway coming back here.」

Tio was throwing those words around from the garden with a tranquil rural landscape.

Hajime was relaxing by lying down on the edge of the house's eaves like a sleeping Buddha statue while feeling the gentle blowing breeze, the chirping of small insects, and then, the breathing of a beautiful woman wrapped in a bamboo mat while being hung from the tree in the garden. He then directed his consciousness, along with a suspicious gaze, to the woman.

「Did you perhaps see a mirror?」

「Kufuu!? What an excellent comeback. It's tough to be loved so much by Goshujin-sama……」

Tio was being hung up like a criminal while her cheeks were reddening, and her body was meandering and wriggling.

「Haah. It's fine even if you normally reflect on yourself sometimes you know? Even though we finally came to visit the house of Jii-chan and Baa-chan, you suddenly made an introduction that was lacking in common sense. And then you created an urban legend at the shopping district……」

「Goshujin-sama, thou said that but exactly because they art family that it's only natural to convey the truth without any

falsehood in it, art not that correct? I don’t wish to speak deceiving words toward those two.」

「It’s only your words that are wonderful. But, don’t you forget that it was that unvarnished truth that almost sent Jii-chan and Baa-chan to heaven.」

Just as Hajime said, Tio had finished her meeting with Hajime’s grandparents. Of course, it was done together with Yue and the others.

Currently, the Nagumo family was in the middle of a homecoming at the home of Shuu’s father.

Because Shuu was a son who was born late, his parents were already at a really late age. They were at the age that would enter ninety soon. Therefore, it was hard for them to rush and personally visit Hajime who had returned from the disappearance incident like the parents of Sumire.

In the end, with the persuasion of Shuu and Sumire, and also Hajime himself, Hajime’s grandparents were waiting for this day where their son’s family would go to their home.

The two of them were really happy that their cute grandson came to meet them safely without harm.

Although the moment they saw the many beautiful girls and women behind that grandson and they all introduced themselves as「I’m his wife」, their teary smiling faces petrified completely. Their faces stiffened so much it felt like you could hear a *crack* sound.

What’s more, when Myuu politely gave her greeting before energetically explaining her position as「I’m papa’s daughter!」, both of them harmoniously staggered.

After all, no matter how they looked, Myuu’s appearance was around five years old. In other words, their grandson impregnated the daughter of other people when he entered middle school, or perhaps it was even when he was still in elementary school……

The psychological impact on Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan was unfathomable!

But there, an even more pursuing blow came from Myuu! The princess of the Nagumo family was merciless even against the elderly!

「But, Myuu is also a bride! Myuu is planning to push down papa someday and make a fait accompli nano!」

‘noo~noo~noo~’ The end of Myuu’s sentence echoed.

Obaa-chan collapsed. Ojii-chan supported Obaa-chan with shockingly agile movement. However, his severely trembling legs and waist didn’t come just from his old age but a display of the deep damage that was dealt to him!

Incidentally, an incomprehensible voice「Ubooa」leaked out from Hajime’s mouth. Surely, he was feeling joy(shudder) from his daughter’s growth. He thought「This girl; she is closing the paths of escape!」.

It was at that timing, 「If I don’t assert mine assistance here, then it will be mine shame as a dragon race!」Tio, for some reason, was showing her determination.

Toward Obaa-chan, who somehow managed to hold on to her consciousness, and Ojii-chan, who was desperately supporting such Obaa-chan, Tio launched words of self-introduction「I’m Goshujin-sama’s sex(love) slave」that were lacking in common sense with a self-triumphant expression.

Obaa-chan’s eyes turned white. Ojii-chan’s soul was slipping out from his mouth. ……Even so, Ojii-chan’s hands that were supporting Obaa-chan didn’t let go.

Hajime, who had snapped by this point, first wrapped Tio in a bamboo mat, and then he tied her on a missile and launched her flying to the other side of the mountain.

The draconic woman that was flying in a beautiful arc with a red flare trailing behind was surely witnessed by a lot of the local people while they were listening to a joyful shout of 「I’LLLL, BEEE, BAA~~~~CKK!」

Incidentally, punishments of butt spanking and seiza + weight on lap were waiting for Myuu and the criminal instigator Remia respectively. Of course, for Remia there an was additional punishment of leg poking after she reached the limit.

Both of them seemed to be reflecting properly on their fault as far as it goes. On the surface.

Although, when Remia’s numb legs got poked repeatedly, she screamed things like「Dearrr, please forgive me alreadyyy. Aaahn」a little seductively, so Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan who somehow managed to revive then crumbled down once more.

In addition,「We heard that Hajime boy has returned?」the old people of the neighborhood also came bringing some gifts and also to make their greeting but……

They witnessed it. The figures of a foreign beauty on all fours while raising a coquettish voice (?), and “Hajime boy” torturing that woman.

Needless to say, they wordlessly turned on their heels. It was curious how the neighbors who knew Hajime from the past would deal with Hajime from here on.

After that, the Nagumo family somehow explained the existence of Yue and the others, and for the time being, they acquired the understanding……abandonment of thinking, or possibly escapism, from Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan.

In the middle of the conversation, there was a phone call from Kaori’s father and the return of Tio, who was still wrapped in the bamboo mat like a caterpillar, while she was dragging the missile behind her. Ojii-chan, who witnessed that from the darkness, had his soul slip out from his body, but he survived without a problem thanks to Yue’s soul magic.

The total change of their grandson and the behavior of the wives that were lacking in common sense caused the cheeks of Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan to keep twitching from start to end. But even then, by the time they had dinner, the two of them became able to calmly converse, mostly.

Like that, through the flow of the conversation, the two grandparents became curious about how their grandson encountered the girls who later would become his wives. Yue, Shia, and Myuu then talked passionately to the two of them how much they were saved.

It was a story that struck them dumb, but even so, they understood that their cute grandson had helped others, and as a result, those people who were helped wanted to be together with him. Then he brought those people like this to meet the two of them. Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan smiled happily for real this time.

Of course, after they heard the story that far, they became curious about the last person, about the beginning of love with Tio. Obaa-chan asked that with a gentle expression.

Hajime was flustered. Shia got a faraway look. And then, Yue shrugged her shoulders with a wry smile. Hajime, who was opening his mouth to change the topic, was obstructed by Sumire with a whip of an udon noodle.

Using that opening, Tio spoke with a proud expression, as though to say that there was nothing to be ashamed of at all.

「Truly. How wonderful for thee to asketh, Obaba-dono. When I first met Goshujin-sama was the moment when mine life and sense of value changed for good. After all, that was the first time for me to be beaten up so viciously like that!」

「Eh……」

「Yes, yes. I can remember it so clearly even now. That blazing gaze which was sparkling so brutally. The impact that resounded until mine deepest core. I was vomiting blood and raised a pitiful cry; however, Goshujin-sama only continued on hitting and kicking me violently without a shred of mercy even then!」

The hopeless dragon hugged herself and talked about her important memory while wriggling her body around with a bright red face.

Ojii-chan got a coughing fit, and udon spurted out from his nose. Chopsticks fell from Obaa-chan’s hand and fell with a clang.

Hajime repelled the approaching udon whip with finger bullets using crunchy bits of tempura and returned the udon

to the bowl while he opened his mouth to stop Tio. But there, fried tofu from the father launched a direct attack!

The large fried tofu clung onto Hajime’s mouth like a mask. Like a baddie in a drama trying to make the victim faint using a handkerchief that was soaked in chloroform, the father pinioned his son from behind while blocking his mouth!

Hajime, who had a vein twitching on his forehead, raised a protesting voice「Mogah」and tried to tear Shuu off of himself, but there the mother joined in. She took out from who knew where something that looked like a chakram. It was an artifact named “Anywhere Clothes Drying Frame Without Care of the Place☆”. It produced a string for hanging clothes on it to let them dry, where the string would be fixed in space. The mother then restrained her son along with her husband!

Although it was only temporary, Hajime, who got restrained by a string for hanging clothes that could seal even a god’s apostle, became unable to stop his wife’s outrage!

「And then there was that, the attack that bestowed to me a deep emotion that I wouldst be unforgettable for mine whole life……」

Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan looked at each other’s face. They harmoniously put down their chopsticks and watched Tio with a smile. That expression was the expression of someone who had prepared themselves for the worst before the end of the world……

「Yes, Goshujin-sama, toward the buttocks of I who was wounded all over mine body by that point, stabbed a hard and thick metallic stake into there!」

□□Ubooa□□

Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan were invited to heaven——Yue’s soul magic! It brought back Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan who were rising to heaven with content smiles! As expected from the legal wife. It was a really fine play.

Of course, Hajime snapped. Just how many times did his Jii-chan and Baa-chan need to get invited to heaven before they were satisfied?

Tio’s bed was decided at that time. It would be in the garden’s tree. She wasn’t allowed to sit or lean. But there was no problem. She would only become a bagworm just as usual.

By the way, the current time was after a night had already passed. It was currently just before noon, and the other family members were going out to the town. It was to mitigate the urban legend created by Tio while grabbing lunch in the restaurant that was recommended by the grandparents.

Yue’s soul magic had been playing a very active role. Naturally, Tio was house-sitting so that there wouldn’t be any more pandemonium. Just in case, Hajime, who made the origin of the problem, was also house-sitting doubled with monitoring Tio so that she wouldn’t crawl down and chase after them.

About this time, Yue was surely piling up communication with the grandparents and deepening their mutual understanding while healing their mind. Incidentally, there was also no doubt that she was restoring the honor of her husband and fellow wives. As expected from the legal wife. As expected of the legal wife-.

「And, soon it will be noon, how do you feel after getting hung up for the whole night?」

「The love of Goshujin-sama who even though art saying this or that while acting like that, yet watching over me from a position where I can see. My underwear art crying that it wouldst be the limit soon.」

「……No good huh. Recently you are soundly sleeping even when you are hung up……perhaps, I should consult with Adol-san for once.」

With a whisper, Hajime hung his head down dejectedly toward the pervert who recently was increasingly losing her restraint while he called to mind the grandfather of that pervert. Even among Hajime's acquaintances that were filled with a lot of unrestrained people, he was a respectable "adult" who was few in number.

Without showing any sign of noticing that whisper of Hajime, Tio started the course correction of the talk topic that had diverted by a lot.

「Rather than that, I was talking about that strange thing just now, Goshujin-sama.」

「Hm? I think that there is nothing stranger than you in this world though……and? What was it that you saw?」

The casual abuse caused the toes of Tio's dangling feet to go really taut. A strange voice「Nfu」also leaked out from her mouth.

「Ri, right. When I was launched away by Goshujin-sama and impacted the mountainside, the first thing I did was to roll down the slope in order to get out of the woodland path.」

「That’s a really daring idea. As expected from the black dragon whose selling point is her toughness.」

By the way, if at that time there was someone who witnessed that figure which was earnestly spinning in full speed like a somersault, or spinning top sometimes, even while rolling down the slope, surely that witness would yell 「Ah, a real Roll○ Girl!」without a doubt. While it was a ghastly way of falling, it was also a fall that vaguely gave off an artistic impression.

「And then. Midway I made an error in the balancing, and mine face struck a thick tree, and I stopped in place.」

「Normally, anyone would die from that.」

「What, something like that? The attacks from Goshujin-sama art far more luscious. There art no need to worry.」

「Who is worrying huh. Don’t speak like I’m feeling jealous to a tree.」

Ignoring Hajime’s straight-man act, Tio continued to talk while throwing her gaze to empty air in remembrance. The wind was blowing and the bagworm Tio was swaying back and forth.

「Now then, I was about to roll down once more, but at that time, I suddenly felt a pressure. It was as though mine body was wrapped wholly with silk floss while getting pulled in. It felt like that.」

「? You felt it? You didn’t see anything?」

「No, it was after that. I felt curious and went a bit toward the direction where I was pulled in. It was hidden by the slope and the trees really well, but there was a small cave there.

That cave, it wouldst not be found easily unless they art diving down the slope like me.」

「Hee. Well, after all, around this area is a countryside that still has a lot of nature. It's not strange even if there is a lot of those kind of places……but it doesn't stop there, right?」

Tio nodded「Truly」.

From the other side of the stone wall, suddenly a child's face jumped out. It must be a child from the neighborhood. Perhaps he heard their conversation and peeked in curiously. Naturally, what he saw was a beautiful woman hung up in a tree and a man that was gazing at the woman while lying down on the veranda.

The child silently withdrew his face. He had seen something that he shouldn't have seen. It was the most mysterious experience of his childhood.

「I guessed that it was a mist. Something like a white mist was coming out slowly from the cave; however, it then drew back as though the cave was breathing. Perhaps it was caused by the flow of wind, but even so, it was also strangeth how a mist was occurring locally like that. Added with the strange pressure, it is a mysterious story, isn't it?」

「Certainly. I have never heard of any phenomenon like that. A white mist coming out from a cave……it's curious.」

「Right?」

「Then, in the end, you didn't ascertain the true shape of that?」

Tio answered Hajime's question with a triumphant face.

「Right after I was going to ascertain it, mine foot slipped and I rolled down!」

「Aa, hm, I see.」

It seemed after that she became a Ro○ng Girl once more.

Tio’s eyes were shining in expectation.

「How is it, Goshujin-sama? Everyone won’t be coming back for a while. Won’t thee, go on an adventure for a bit with me?」

「Adventure huh……」

Her smile wasn’t from a perverted ecstasy as per usual. Tio was sending him a bright smile that was obviously from a pure feeling of wanting to go on a mysterious little trip with Hajime. Hajime was looking at such Tio while showing a thinking posture for a bit.

「I guess. Being like a Buddha statue like this is also boring. I’m also tired of looking at you hung up like that. Let’s go amuse ourselves on a small adventure for a bit.」

「Ri, right! ……E, even though Goshujin-sama was the one hanging me……to get tired looking……this damned Goshujin-sama-. Haa-haa」

Tio was whispering something while breathing roughly, but Hajime normally ignored her. And then, he moved from his Buddha statue posture using one arm to spin four times in a display of a pointless technique that was pointlessly refined while landing on the garden. While he was in midair before the landing, Hajime had properly worn his shoes and even put on his jacket.

Hajime approached Tio and untied the rope binding her body. He then locked the door of the house and turned around.

There Tio’s voice called at him.

「Goshujin-sama. Can thou bring mine footwear for me?」

Hajime looked back and saw Tio’s feet. Her white and smooth bare feet were fidgeting around. Come to think of it, she was bounded inside the room and then hung up from there――Hajime who recalled that grinned while replying.

「You need it?」

「!?」

Tio-san was twitching in shudders.

Even though they were going on an adventure in the middle of the mountain after this, she was asked「Something like shoes is too good for the likes of you, do you need it?」. It was a critical hit for the perverted dragon.

……Although, surely the true critical hit was how even after saying something like that, Hajime brought her shoes before personally putting them on her feet.

Hajime reverently slipped on her shoes, as though he was treating a fragile thing――Tio who was treated like that retracted her usual perverted smile and went bashful like a really normal girl.

Part 2

「Above here?」

「Right. Look over there. There are the tracks where I was slipping down correct? There art no mistake.」

As Hajime glanced at the spot where Tio was pointing at, he saw a track where there was a straight concave. It was as though something landed there face first before sliding down without getting peeled off.

Hajime returned his gaze as though there was nothing there. Ahead he saw trees and grass growing densely along with a really steep slope expanding in his view. Depending on the place, there was a slope that wouldn’t be an exaggeration to be called a cliff.

「There won’t be anyone looking in this kind of place. Tio, lead the way.」

「Acknowledged. Let’s go right away Goshujin-sama. I wouldst determine with these dragon eyes of mine, whether thy hath grown dull or not.」

「Bring it on. You yourself, don’t show anything unsightly like slipping and then falling down.」

They made frivolous talk. Tio grinned fearlessly and then instantly waved the edge of her clothes and dashed away suddenly.

ton- With a really light sound, in the next moment she was far above.

A beat later, Hajime also jumped out.

to-to-to-to- Leaving only those light sounds, the two of them were jumping up like acrobats using tree roots, slightly sticking out rocks, or from branch to branch.

Tio sent a glance at Hajime who was following her. She leaked out a joyful chuckle「Fufuh」and increased her speed further. Hajime made a bit troubled smile at that and also followed her by increasing his speed.

Seen from the side, they only looked like shadows climbing up the mountain with fierce speed. If by any chance there was a witness here, then undoubtedly there would be a new urban legend created that Tengu were living on this mountain.

Turning into modern era Tengu, the two of them sometimes shifted their course a bit, sometimes they meaninglessly climbed a tree, or sprinted down a slope playfully. After a while,

「Muu? This is strange.」

「What is?」

Tio landed from a big jump and came to a stop before she tilted her head.

When Hajime copied her by tilting his head, Tio stayed silent while pulling on Hajime to get closer. Their standing position changed by just a bit from doing that.

Hajime looked suspicious. But he saw the place Tio was pointing at and reflexively leaked out his voice「Oo」.

「This is, it’s like a natural camouflage……no if I have to say which, then perhaps this is more like an art of trickery?」

「Isn’t it splendid? Just by changing our standing position a bit, there art nothing that could be seen except a slope. It is exactly because we art in this angle and position that we art able to notice this cave.」

Just as Tio said, before when Hajime was right beside Tio, he was attentively observing the surrounding looking for a cave, but he didn’t notice the cave over there at all until Tio led him to the spot he was currently standing on.

The cause of that really should be called an art of trickery. If they weren’t standing on a particular spot, the surrounding landscape and the miraculous bulge of the slope would cause the cave to be unseen.

Hajime was feeling admiration while asking Tio once more.

「And, what is strange about it?」

「No, Goshujin-sama. In the first place, what was the reason that I who was rolling down the slope noticed this place?」

「Aah. A strange pressure and absorbing force, was it? ……I don’t really feel anything here. There also doesn’t seem to be any mist.」

「Correct. I too don’t feel anything right now. Let’s see, was it perhaps mine mistake……」

Tio cocked her neck while groaning ‘uumu’. Hajime approached the cave and peeked inside. It seemed that the

cave continued quite deeply.

Hajime turned around after confirming that.

「There is no way we can dismiss the senses of the dragon race as a misunderstanding that easily. Besides, we came this far for an adventure. Then we cannot just go home without even stepping in or checking it, right?」

Those words of Hajime's that were inviting an adventure were responded to by Tio「Indeed」with a nod while her shoulders shook happily.

「Even though this art a world without great labyrinths or monsters, for some reason, I am getting thrilled.」

「What is called an adventure is not looking for danger. It's looking for the unknown. In that meaning, the conquest of a great labyrinth cannot be said to be as an adventure then. In a sense, this might be our first adventure you know?」

「The first adventure, with Goshujin-sama and me? Fufuh, perhaps Yue and the others would be jealous of this.」

Tio raised a delighted chuckle for sure this time. Hajime also joined her with a cheerful grin.

「Then let's go. Dragon race of another world.」

「Right, let's go. Godslaying demon king-dono.」

Both of them thrust their bodies into the cave jokingly and also in high spirits.

……

……

「……Goshujin-sama. Mine butt got stuck completely. Please pulled me from inside.」

「Slo, sloppy.」

Even though they had put up a front and stepped inside, now the voluptuous butt of the dragon-san was splendidly getting stuck.

Tio faced back and twisted in her body as though she was going down a ladder, but her plump butt only changed its shape *mugyuuuu* and couldn't get in.

Feeling that it couldn't be helped, Hajime was sighing while he grasped Tio's legs and pulled in with a jerk. The butt was going *mugyuuuu-*. It still couldn't enter.

「Hrrgh-」

「Aah. My butt, if it's treated that violently-」

A scream that sounded a bit happy echoed. Hajime put even more strength into it. The charming butt shook *furu furu* as though in resistance. It still hadn't shown any sign of getting in.

Hajime took a breather「fuu」, and then he proposed to Tio who was kicking around her legs as though to say「Come ooon haul it in」.

「……Tio. It doesn't look like it will go in at all. There is no other way, so how about I tear off your lower body so that I can pull in your upper body?」

「Suddenly I'll turn splat!? There art no way I'll agree! Such a thing art beyond the limit even for I who love pain!」

Tio couldn’t hide her shudder from Hajime who made a brutal suggestion like a demon king. Hajime said「It’s a joke」while putting his hand on Tio’s thigh.

「Anyway, it doesn’t look like you can enter like this, so…… I’ll take it off, okay?」

「What? How……aa, by storing it inside the Treasure Warehouse. Yosh, then cometh, bring it on!」

Today, Tio’s fashion was a pants-look. And so, if her pants were transferred away into the “Treasure Warehouse II”, then space would be liberated.

The “Treasure Warehouse II” fitted on Hajime’s finger shined crimson for an instant. By doing that, in the next moment, Tio was reduced into a female pervert with her panties fully exposed.

「I, it’s really breezy down there……」

Tio kicked her legs up and down looking a bit embarrassed. Hajime held the voluptuous thighs in front of him using his arms and pulled in once more.

However, Tio’s large butt was unexpectedly obstinate.

「Ada-, adadada-. Go, Goshujin-sama! My butt’s skin art getting bruised!」

「Good grief, it’s a really stubborn butt.」

Hajime cursed. Because he was pulling Tio forcefully, her panties dug into her crotch, and now it looked like she was wearing T-back panties. Hajime glared at the shaking butt.

And then, seeing no other choice, he also transferred the panties into the Treasure Warehouse.

「……Goshujin-sama. By any chance, I hath also lost my last fortress now?」

「It can’t be helped. It’s in the way.」

From the entrance of the cave, there was the lower body of a woman being suspended without even a shred of cloth. If the people of the dragon race village who idolized her like a princess saw her like this, surely they would have out-of-body experiences without a doubt.

Hajime took something out from his “Treasure Warehouse II” that looked like a thin stick and inserted it between Tio’s shivering butt, which was looking pitiful somehow, and the rock where it got stuck.

「Muu? Something cold art on mine butt……」

「I’m pouring oil for lubricating a machine. With this, it will be smoother to pull you out.」

This was the same idea as using soap to take off a ring that couldn’t come off. The overflowing oil trickled from the gap between the butt and rock and flowed down Tio’s thighs. Each time Tio twitched and shivered she leaked out trembling voices.

After pouring in a lot of oil, Hajime readied himself and pulled on Tio’s legs.

「Oo!? It’s slipping in! It’s working, Goshujin-sama!」

「Yosh, just a bit more. Do your best, butt-naked dragon!」

「Haua!? Not forgetting to insult me even at this kind of time……this damn beloved Goshujin-sama!」

The two was strangely getting roused up, for some reason.

Right after that, *nupon-* a strange sound rang, and Tio’s bombastic butt slipped out from between the rock.

And then,

「……Goshujin-sama. It’s a bit hard to say this but」

「Don’t finish it. I know already.」

Tio-san, also had a bombastic breast.

Her shirt was rolled up, and her back was fully exposed; however, this time it was her gigantic twin hills that got stuck. For the time being, Hajime embraced Tio from behind to try pulling her in but……

「It’s happiness to be embraced tightly by Goshujin-sama, but mi, mine breast feel like they wouldst get torn off……」

「Haa. Let’s just go with the same method.」

「Please be gentle.」

Like that, Tio――became stark naked.

She limply sat on the floor of the cave with her cheeks blushing faintly. Her butt and breast were glistening because of the oil.

「At the start of the adventure, the proud princess of the dragon race got stripped naked and became all slimy…… Goshujin-sama, honestly speaking, what doth thy think?」

「I’m thinking it’s pitiful.」

Tio didn’t look happy like usual; she was wafting off a sorrowful aura and agreed「That’s right」with a faint smile.

Hajime wordlessly handed her a towel.

Tio wiped her body using that while taking out the traditional garment of the dragon race――the kimono that was a blending of Japanese and Western styles from her own “Treasure Warehouse” and quickly put it on.

「……Say, Goshujin-sama. Thinking really really carefully, I was stuck because of the rock correct?」

「Hm? Yeah.」

「Then, wouldst not it be better to use transmutation?」

「……」

Hajime halted. Tio also halted. Inside the gloomy cave, Hajime and Tio looked at each other.

「Now, Tio. The unknown is waiting ahead from here! Our adventure will begin from here-」

「O, ou! That’s right! It’s from here on!」

It seemed that for now, they would get over it with mood.

Both of them started walking deeper into the cave with a strange tension.

After walking for a while, the inside of the cave was unexpectedly starting to show aspects of a cavern. The deeper they went, the wider the cave turned.

「Somehow, this is nostalgic.」

「Might it be about Orcus?」

Hajime muttered in a small voice. Tio guessed what he was thinking and asked.

「Yeah. There is no light of green light stones here, but as expected, speaking about a cave for me just means Orcus.」

「I can imagine that. It was the starting place for the current Goshujin-sama, and then――it was also a place of a precious encounter.」

Tio sympathized with Hajime with her voice vaguely containing gentleness. Hajime walked while illuminating the surrounding with light while glancing at Tio beside him.

「That encounter tied Goshujin-sama, spun a bond with Shia, and connected toward me. Most likely, if there art just one of those lacking, then I wouldst not be here like this.」

「Don’t make a solemn talk like that so suddenly. It’s rare for you to talk about what-if. That’s a meaningless supposition, right?」

「That’s right. Indeed, it’s meaningless. But, I feel happy with our time right now that art like a miracle, so much so that I’m looking back like that. Being solemn sometimes art also not bad.」

Tio made a really hard to describe smile, but even so, there wasn’t any shadow in it by any means. Even though it was just for a moment, Hajime’s eyes were definitely stolen by that smile of Tio’s.

「Oh? What's this, Goshujin-sama? Art thou falling in love with me all over again? By any chance, the possibility of surpassing Yue art……」

「It's completely none.」

Hajime's immediate answer dealt a critical hit. A sweet voice leaked out from the hopeless dragon-san. 「If only she kept smiling like just now, no matter from where you look she is a wonderful princess of the dragon race, yet」Hajime was staring at Tio with disappointment filling his eyes.

「Or rather, you, you are aiming to surpass Yue?」

「That art really a late question. There art not a single woman that art not aiming for that. Of course, it wouldst not be something that art done bloodthirstily, but a chase to overtake that art done enjoyably. It's something like a serious playfulness between fellow wives.」

「……I thought that it's just Kaori who is like that.」

「Fufu, you still hath some way to go Goshujin-sama. Everyone likes everyone else to the greatest degree, but that art that. This art this. Because we art woman, then as expected we want to be told as "number one", we desire to be "the only one" for the man we love. Even Yue often said it, art not she? 「I'll accept any challenge anytime, anywhere, no matter how many times」.」

「I see.」

A wry smile emerged on Hajime's lips thinking that he still "had some way to go" while he scratched his cheek. Even though normally Tio was just a pervert, sometimes she would give Hajime "understanding" with significant words

smoothly said like this. She was by nature really thoughtful, and that was also one of her charms.

Hajime wanted to say something to the smiling Tio and opened his mouth.

But, before he could speak,

「Ah?」

「Mu?」

Hajime and Tio simultaneously ran their gaze over the surrounding. Sharpened wariness resided in their eyes.

Before they realized it, and it was truly before they realized, the mist was manifesting around Hajime and Tio. It was an extremely thin mist. However, seeing this, it was clearly unnatural for the mist to be appearing so suddenly inside a cave like this.

And above all, what they were feeling right now proved that the mist was abnormal.

「I see. Indeed, this is a strange pressure, and I also feel a pulling force deeper inside the cave.」

「It appeared that it wasn’t just mine misunderstanding. Now then, what about Goshujin-sama’s magic eye stone? This art definitely not magic, but perhaps it’s one of the mystics of this world?」

「My magic eye stone isn’t reacting at all. But, it’s unthinkable that this is a natural phenomenon. It seems that a rare phenomenon is really occurring for real right now.」

Even while they were conversing like that, the pressure and pulling force were growing stronger. The restraining force was strengthening as though it wouldn’t let the two of them go away while trying to drag them in.

Hajime took out a reconnaissance plane from his “Treasure Warehouse” onto his palm and made it fly deeper into the cave.

The plane was advancing deeper unhindered, and its view was shared with Hajime so he could look at the situation inside.

After it advanced a little ahead,

「-. Oi oi, seriously?」

「Goshujin-sama, what’s the matter?」

Hajime made a bit of a dry chuckle. It seemed there was an unexpected situation that made Hajime unable to hide his surprise.

Hajime kept his eyes fixed deeper into the cave while answering Tio’s question.

「The reconnaissance plane was swallowed.」

「Swallowed? What doth that mean?」

「Exactly like that. The mist is getting thicker the deeper you go ahead. The shared view turned pure white, and nothing can be seen in the surroundings. And right after that, my link with it got cut.」

「That’s……」

Tio gulped. She understood well how powerful Hajime’s artifact was. Even though it was just a reconnaissance plane, it was impossible for its link with its master to be severed that easily.

Hajime gave even more shocking words to the surprised Tio.

「That’s not all. Just before I lost the plane, it was just for an instant, but……I could see a sea of clouds.」

「Sea, of clouds? Wait a second Goshujin-sama. It wasn’t the sky, but thou couldst see a “sea of clouds”? In other words――」

「Yeah, the scene I saw wasn’t something I could see from a cave even if the ceiling here is transparent. Hahah, we are really inside a cave, right?」

Hajime and Tio looked at each other’s face.

And, at that time,

「Nno!?」

「This is!?」

The mist moved. No, the mist around Hajime and Tio increased in thickness so suddenly they mistakenly thought that, and at the same time, the pressure and the pulling force also increased.

「Aa, this is bad Tio. Just maybe, this cave is a “natural gate”. At this rate, perhaps we might get thrown out to another world somewhere.」

「I see. The true identity of “spirited away”, by any chance it might be this kind of place or phenomenon.」

Even while Hajime and Tio were speaking out their hypothesis, they were trying to turn around toward the entrance.

But, it seemed the phenomenon of spirited away was something that couldn’t be escaped from that easily.

「Ah, this is no good.」

「Truly, I understand this sensation. ——We art caught.」

With those words as their last, Hajime and Tio’s figure was enveloped by the abnormally white mist.

And then, a few minutes later, the mist finally cleared up, and the figures of the two weren’t there anymore.

Right after the mist coiling around them cleared up, Hajime and Tio were,

「Oo, it’s really the blue sky.」

「Entering into a cave and falling from the sky, this art truly something.」

They were free falling in the great sky of an unknown world while they were folding their arms in an unmoving thinking posture. (TN: In the raw, the author is using the kanji 賛嘆 (zessan/great praise) related to the free falling. When I google’d it, it’s related to the free-falling stock market price, but to my shame, I still really don’t get what the connection between great praise and free falling is. Help please.)

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

This is Tio’s arc.

About how far it will continue, what kind of end it will have, there is no plot, so even Shirakome doesn’t know.

But as expected, I don’t think that it will run wild like Lily’s arc……

The posting of the next chapter is planned to be for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 230

Arifureta After II in a World of Sky

The wind howled. Wind pressure was striking everything. If one looked up, they would see the vibrant azure sky. The light of the sun was brilliantly showering down. The sea of clouds was shining silver due to the reflection of the sunlight.

Surrounded by all those, there were two silhouettes freefalling with their arms folded.

「I wonder if it’s my fate to enter a cave, then freefall in the sky?」

「Who knows. But, at the very least, this art a refreshing fall compared to before, isn’t that right?」

「This is really pleasant weather~」

Just to make sure, let’s specify it one more time. The two were in the middle of freefalling without a parachute or lifeline.

「For now, should we try going under the sea of clouds?」

「Right. It looks like the weather art bad, but perhaps there wouldth be something that couldst make us understand what kind of world this place art. After all, there art nothing above the sky.」

Hajime and Tio plunged into the sea of clouds even while they were talking like that.

At that instant, they received a baptism of terrific air turbulence and random lightning. It seemed that this sea of clouds wasn’t merely thick clouds or rain clouds, but something that resembled a super vast cumulonimbus cloud. Seeing as how there wasn’t any sign of a vortex, it wasn’t any kind of typhoon. It was just a storm cloud with an abnormal range that silently covered the world as far as the eye could see.

The lightning is flying wildly about, along with thunderous sounds, attacked Hajime and Tio as though to remove the intruder.

Hajime’s body instantly emitted red sparks. The lightning that should strike Hajime’s body was directly streamed away as though it was sliding off the body. It then flew away in the direction of the beyond.

As for Tio, she seemed to be casually enduring the lightning by using dragon scale hardening. She also used regeneration magic to repair the holes that opened on her clothes with an unruffled air.

Only a few seconds past.

bobat Both of them came out at the bottom of the sea of clouds with some cloud parts trailing behind them.

Without delay, fierce wind and rain attacked the two mercilessly.

「Uwaa, this is just terrible.」

「What to say……art this world, ended already?」

Gravity control type multipurpose assault unit——Cross Velt. Hajime summoned eight of them to put up a cube-shaped barrier around him and Tio. They looked on from inside the cube at the rainwater trickling along the barrier's surface and unconsciously leaked out their voices.

Their reaction was understandable. No matter how they looked at it, the heavy rain pouring down toward the world like a waterfall looked like muddy water. The rainwater that hit their skin dyed the spot pitch black.

Tio used wind magic to shake off the black rain, and while she was at it, she combined it with fire magic to warm her and Hajime's wet body while drying out their clothes at high speed. She was doing that while expressing her impression toward this other world with a really astonished voice.

Her gaze was looking at her own arm that was wet with the black rain just now. Countless red specks were coming out from there. It seemed that the places that got touched by the black rain were getting inflammation.

It was a world with obviously harmful black rain pouring down.

Of course, perhaps this was a characteristic phenomenon of this region, but at the very least, it was obvious that the dark color of the ocean spreading below wasn't caused just because the sunlight didn't reach. This black rain was pouring down so much that it colored the sea black.

And then, if the sea, which was polluted to this degree, followed the sea current and flowed through the world…… they naturally could imagine the hopelessness of this world.

Hajime took out his smartphone and made a drop of black rain to fall on the display. Right away, a ripple spread on the

display. A loading screen appeared for a few seconds.

「Unknown composition, just as expected. It doesn't match anything from the data of Tortus or Earth. Its effect on the human body is……oou, looks like Tio's impression is seriously spot on. Look here. This rain has the effect to cause necrosis in the cell.」

「……Oh dear. However, no matter what kind of environment, what art called as living things wouldst find a way to adapt in the end and survive. There art still a possibility of organisms that managed to adapt in this place. Besides, perhaps even this black rain art limited to this area.」

「Well, you're right. Anyway, for now, let's return above. This rain doesn't have much effect on us, and we can heal the effect right away, but even so, this kind of muddy, black world is depressing.」

「No doubt about that.」

Hajime and Tio took one last look at the raging black world before charging into the sea of clouds once more with the barrier still activated.

They went through the sea of clouds and returned once more to the clear azure sky.

「If someone met that spirited away phenomenon, then they will get thrown off into a world that is really hard to survive huh.」

「It looks like it. What wouldst we do Goshujin-sama? Art we going home?」

Tio asked without any doubt that they would be unable to return to Earth. With the "Compass of Guidance Crossing"

and “Crystal Key”, it was possible to return home to Earth no matter what kind of world they were in. That was the reason that the two weren’t flustered at all even when they were going to be swallowed by the white mist inside the cave.

Hajime turned his gaze at Tio’s question. He showed a thinking gesture『Hm~』and asked back in return.

『What do you want to do Tio?』

『……We should return. This adventure is not on the level of going to the mountain for a bit anymore. I wouldst consider looking around for a bit if this was a good world though……. Also thinking about the time until Yue and the others return home, even if we art going on an adventure, we should return once to take Yue and the others together too.』

Tio made a wry smile just for a moment before she advocated a cautious theory. Indeed, although they could return at any time, the scale of this situation was too big to be a little fun that was done while their family wasn’t at home. The state of this world was too turbulent.

It was really an opinion with the prudence that was just like Tio.

Hajime narrowed his eyes at Tio before he showed a bit of a thinking gesture once more. And then, perhaps he had finished scrutinizing Tio’s opinion because he smiled wryly while agreeing『I guess』, and then he activated his “Treasure Warehouse II” to take out the “Compass of Guidance Crossing”.

Right after that,

『Hm? Hmm? ……Damn it. Now I’ve really done it, Tio.』

「Mu? What art the matter, Goshujin-sama.」

Hajime was scratching his head awkwardly which caused Tio to tilt her head in puzzlement. Her expression froze with a snap at Hajime's next sentence.

「The compass, I forgot to bring it with me.」

Hajime was jovially saying「I'm beaten, I'm beaten」while laughing 'tahahahaha', with Tio staring open-mouthed in a daze and amazement at Hajime.

A beat, two beats. Finally, the meaning of Hajime's words seemed to soak into Tio as her complexion changed, and she began to press questions in a fluster.

「Wha, wha wha, what do thy mean with forget!? It was inside the Treasure Warehouse wasn't it!?」

「Haha~. I just recalled it only now, but just before this I lent it to Yue, but she hadn't returned it to me. That's really careless of me.」

「Tomfooleryy――!! Such an important thing art not something to be forgotten!」

「Oo, I got scolded by Tio……this is a really fresh experience.」

「Art this the time to say thattt――――!! What to do……, we couldst not go home.」

Hajime's attitude that was too overflowing with irresponsibility caused Tio's shoulders to drop dejectedly. She was in a state that she didn't even realize that for the first time she had yelled angrily at Hajime.

「Well, don’t be that upset.」

「What? Goshujin-sama, thou art really composed. Art there any prospect of us going home?」

「We have no prospect to go home, but looking at it from the opposite side means that Yue is carrying the compass, so we don’t particularly need to get flustered, right? I am carrying the Crystal Key, but if she finds me using the compass, then it’s possible to search in reverse.」

「……I see. Now that thy said that, indeed there art no reason to lose composure. If Yue uses the compass to find us who didn’t return home, then we wouldst be able to return home at that point in time. Fumu, mine apologies Goshujin-sama. I was showing something unsightly.」

Being able to understand that their situation wasn’t particularly serious after getting told so, Tio cast down her eyes from the shame of her disordered state.

Tio, who averted her eyes, didn’t notice, but Hajime’s expression, who was looking at her embarrassed gesture, was extremely gentle. Different from the normal Hajime who was usually dealing with Tio in full S mode, his warm expression now was emitting a definite affection.

Everything was because he understood the reason why Tio unusually lost her composure like just now.

Tio wasn’t feeling uneasy at the possibility that they couldn’t return home itself. In front of her, there was a man who had obtained the means to cross over worlds with only his determination when at the start he didn’t have anything at all. Doubting that they couldn’t return home was instead nothing more than an insult to Hajime.

Therefore, the reason why Tio was flustered was something else. That reason was in the fact that she separated Hajime from Yue and the others through something that was caused by them doing something that she suggested. She had no doubt that they would be able to go home. But, the problem was the time. At how long Hajime would be separated from Yue and the others.

In short, her loss of composure at their inability to go home was the manifestation of her consideration toward Yue and co. Although her sturdiness was her strong point, she was someone who wouldn’t hesitate to turn her own body into a shield for her comrade’s sake. Her way of losing composure was really like herself.

「Well, under the cloud feels like the end of the century, but the sky is really not bad. Until it’s time, let’s go adventuring to see if this sea of clouds will end somewhere and if there is, we will look for land, Tio.」

「Right. Yes, yes-. Let’s do just that!」

The embarrassed Tio lively raised a happy voice after receiving that order to resume their adventure. There wasn’t even any need to mention her expression. It was truly a smile that would charm anyone, and that would make anyone who knew her to be amazed thinking『If she can always be like that, then there wouldn’t be anyone doubting her if she really is the princess of the dragon race or not』.

A while after they began their sky journey, currently, Tio had transformed into a black dragon, and Hajime was riding on her.

At first, Hajime was using his skyboard while Tio was also only using her wings from partial dragonification and used wind magic to fly in human form, but Hajime requested to her that he wanted to mount her.

Riding on a dragon’s back to fly in the sky far away——that yearning of every man had often been realized by Hajime, but he never got tired of it, and if there was a chance, then he would ask to ride Tio like this.

「It also hast been a while since I’ve flown with Goshujin-sama on mine back. There wasn’t that much chance since we returned to Earth.」

「Yeah. What’s more, we were flying mainly at night whether on Tortus or Earth. It’s really has been a long time since we last flew in a sky this clear.」

「If thy wish it then we couldst fly anytime, correct? The sky of Earth art constrained, but if it’s now, then we couldst do anything using Goshuujin-sama’s artifacts, isn’t that right?」

「Yeah. I can just make an artifact for jamming and camouflage. Just spare me from having a dogfight with the ASDF.」(TN: Air Self-Defense Force)

Tio caught the wind and flew among the cloud chasms with a movement that was drawing an elegant curve. The milky road that was like flowing cotton candy was an amazingly superb view.

The sea of clouds wasn’t only shaped flatly. At some places, the clouds would make a gigantic mountain shape or chasm shape like where they were at right now. There were also clouds that were arch-shaped and also clouds that were shaped like surging tidal waves. It was a magnificent view

that could be described as a continent that was made in the sky.

Hajime was sticking to Tio’s back using gravity control, so there wasn’t any concern that he would fall. The wind pressure and air were also controlled within one meter of his body using a dedicated earring artifact. And so, Tio was flying to her heart’s content without needing to give any consideration or restraint.

She broke out from the chasm with a steep climb and slipped through the gap between clouds lazily floating about while barrel rolling.

She passed under arching clouds and swiveled around a mountain of clouds as though she was dancing. She then went on a steep climb before letting her body swoop down in a free fall. And then, she unfolded her wings with a force that blew away the clouds in the surrounding and flew inside the tidal wave cloud like a surfer.

「Having fun?」

「Yes, this art really fun!」

In contrast with the fierce maneuvers, Hajime was asking questions in a calm voice. And the responding voice was an excited voice just as expected. And then, a single roar as though she was giving a service. While it was a powerful roar, the reverberation felt pleasant somehow. Hajime also raised a cheerful laugh at that.

But, it was at that time, as though in response to Tio’s howl, there was a faint sound reaching the two.

「O? Tio, just now……」

「It seemed, we hath discovered the first villager――no, the first living thing here. It's truly auspicious that not every living thing here art exterminated.」

Even in this world where black rain that caused necrosis on living cells was pouring down, it seemed there was still living things here as expected. Right now, the sound vibrating in their eardrum that was getting louder and louder was obviously coming from a living thing――in addition, it seemed to be a howl that came from a large type organism.

Hajime tapped on the black-scaled back, and Tio took a steep turn in complete agreement.

They passed through several cloud mountains and in the end, they circled around a conspicuously large spiraling cloud. Then, there they were able to catch sight of black spots in the sky that looked like dribbling ink.

「Hou……so there art mine fellow race even in this world.」

「As expected this is a fantasy world huh. Well, we don't know yet whether they are like your race that can turn into "human" or "dragon", or if they are just a variety of monster.」

The specks reflected on the azure sky were gradually growing bigger. The two who possessed eyesight that was incomparable with average people could clearly see the true form of those specks.

They were dragons. Not the snake type dragon of the east, but the western dragon. Their number was around ten. Their body was grey colored, and their body length was around two to three meters. Their bodies' build looked bad. Compared to Tio's build, they looked really frail. Their howl

that they sometimes raised to call Tio sounded like a crying voice instead after the two saw their figures.

First things first, Tio tried talking to the small dragons that approached nearby in the blink of an eye in order to investigate their intelligence level.

「All of thee, art thee able to understand mine words? Couldst thee communicate using the mind?」

The response that came back was only *gyau gyau gyao gyao*, a crying voice of a beast. They were flying in circles around Tio who was hovering in midair as though they were fawning over her――

「「「「「……」」」」」

They took a second look at Hajime who was sitting on Tio's back. They were definitely taking a second look.

Seeing that the grey dragons stopped crying and instead were fixedly staring at him, Hajime gazed back「Aa?」in suspicion.

Right after that,

「「「「「Gyuwa!?」」」」」

The grey dragons showed a reaction that looked like「We have seen something that mustn't be seen!」before running away at full speed. There was even a dragon among them that was too panicked it lost speed and almost fell.

Their state was exactly like an unfortunate victim encountering a monster, or perhaps like a villager A who suddenly bumped into the demon king out of nowhere.

Like before, they only cried out like a beast without showing any state of using language, or even advanced intelligence. But seeing how they were running away with terrible desperation while looking behind them several times,

——Ruunnn, quickly runnn

——Someone-, someone helpppp!!

——Oh god! Oo, god in heaven, please grant us your salvation-

——There is no way, I’m going to die in this kind of placeeee-

It felt like those kinds of screams of the heart could be heard.

「……Tio」

「Wha, what is it, Goshujin-sama.」

Tio replied back to that quiet voice in a slight fluster. When she turned her head around and looked behind, she saw the figure of Hajime looking far away. A vague sorrow was drifting from his side profile.

「Am I, really that terrifying?」

「N, nooo, I think that art not really not the case……」

「But, no matter how I look at their reaction, it’s like they are a victim that encountered the devilish homicide in a horror movie. Even though I’m not emitting pressure or anything. Even though, I’m not doing anything.」

「Ma, mayhaps, they art not used to human? When they approached me because they thought of me as their fellow,

they saw a creature that they hath not seen before and got surprised. Surely that art the case here.

Are they running away that desperately in terror because they are surprised? ……Recently, I’ve been told that I was mellowing out, and I thought that I had adapted a bit to live on Earth but……

Goshujin-sama, mine motherly instinct art really tickled seeing thy rare disheartened figure, but for now, how about we try chasing after them? After all, they art the only living things in this world that we finally discovered.

……You are right. Let’s do that.

Tio was writhing lightly seeing Hajime who was somewhat dispirited.

If it was him when he was at Tortus, then something like this would cause a vein to twitch on his forehead before he shot them down *dopan-*, so him being disheartened like this showed that he was in the process of acclimating to life on Earth. That was what Tio thought, but this was really a rare sight, so she didn’t say anything instead.

In exchange, she urged Hajime to chase after the change in this world that they finally encountered so that it wouldn’t get away.

She flapped her wings once. Tio began to fly like she was gliding. The grey dragons that glanced back as though saying They aren’t following us? Are we safe already? saw the following Tio——or more accurately Hajime who was riding on her back, and their body twiiiitched and trembled.

Naturally, they began to escape with even more desperation than before.

「……」

「Aa~, Goshujin-sama? This art surely that. They don’t look like they hath intelligence on the level of humans, they art genuinely a beast. That’s why they art instinctually sensing Goshujin-sama’s strength――」

Tio followed up with a touching gesture. However, it was unclear whether her words reached or not. Hajime didn’t react at all while his somewhat dispirited expression was starting to change bit by bit.

The disheartened face turned into a fixed stare, and next, it changed into a small irritation. And then――

「Fine then. If they are asking for that kind of character from me, then, aah, that’s fine. I should answer their expectation. Ku-ku-ku-ku-」

「Go, Goshujin-sama, art making a sadist face like when he was dealing with me!? Run away! All of thee, quickly run awayyyyy-」

The demon king-sama stood up imposingly above Tio and widely spread his arms in a dramatic pose as though welcoming in the enemy. His lips split apart like a crescent moon while his eyes were blazing fiercely like a hunter cornering his prey!

Tio howled and urged the grey dragons to escape. The grey dragons that looked back simultaneously at that voice――saw it right away.

「Now, run, run, run! I’ll leisurely hunt you down and devour youuuuu-」

They saw the demon king who was bursting with crimson magic power while loudly yelling something like that which reverberated to the whole azure sky.

Of course, it went without saying that the body of the grey dragons twitcheeeeeeeeeed. It also went without saying that they were starting to run away with even more desperation than before. From behind them 「HAAH――――HAHHAHHAHHAH!!」a loud laughter resounded. Something shining could be seen glittering around their eyes even though they were dragons――surely that was just an imagination.

Around thirty minutes after Hajime turned demon king. Hajime, who had just created one more piece of black history, was sitting on Tio's back while grasping his knees. Tio, who was taking the stance of "Let's just leave him alone for now", finally called out to Hajime.

「Goshujin-sama. Stop being down and look ahead.」

「Just leave me alone Tio. I'm disgusted with my own foolish act and lack of growth. ……If I don't reflect back on myself a bit, then I'll turn completely into Endo.」

「If he heard that, then he wouldst get upset and indignated……no, mayhaps, he wouldst be happy because of his comrade increase? Well, rather than talking about that, come now, stop acting like that and raise thy head. It was worth it to chase after those dragons with some distance in between. I believe this art a sight that wouldst make thy heart greatly throb though?」

「Dismissing my concern like that……well, certainly the matter of Endo doesn't matter but……. And, what are you saying about the sight――」

Hajime stopped hugging his knees while casually saying something cruel about a certain friend with a thin presence and lifted his gaze. And then, he lost his words while unconsciously rising a voice of admiration「Ooo」.

In the middle of the chase, the two felt that it was futile chasing after the grey dragons and took some distance from them while following behind without the dragons noticing. And now, it seemed that they had reached the place where the dragons were dwelling.

「Is this a real Lap○ta huh?」

「Aah, that masterpiece……indeed, this resembles that. Though, as for me, this reminds me of the Holy Precincts.」

The sea of clouds continued without end since the place they appeared at in the beginning up till now. There was only the sea of clouds as far as their eye could see. It was possible that perhaps this sea of clouds was covering the whole world. In that case, because the surface was ravaged by the black rain that was bringing fatality to living things, then where would the dragons rest their wings――the answer to that question was this.

――An island floating in the sky.

Yes, it was a piece of land that was floating above the sea of clouds without anything supporting it from below. It was as though a piece of land had been reeled up as it was. Below it was the exposed earth and stones, above there was the verdant green ground, and there was even a forest covering

the center of the floating island with tall trees. Its size was around five or six Tokyo Domes.

「I thought that this was a fantasy world by the time there were dragons, but with this, it feels even more like it.」

「Before, there was no time to observe the floating island of the Holy Precincts thoroughly. I am feeling a bit thrilled. Goshujin-sama, the dragons before art likely to be here too, so it's better to land on the edge as to not surprise them, correct?」

「Yeah, do that. I'll use "Presence Isolation" in advance.」

The more Tio approached, the more a commotion happened in the forest at the center. The trees were unnaturally shaking slightly; however, right after that, the forest was filled with peacefulness. Surely the dragons were hiding there.

Tio landed on the edge of the floating island while feeling their presence. She landed gently with a softness that didn't fit her large body. Hajime jumped down from Tio's back and stepped on the lush ground with his own feet.

Right after that, Tio dispelled her dragon transformation and stood beside Hajime. *rustle*, a sign of agitation was spreading from the forest.

「It looks like normal weeds from the appearance. The composition of the soil……it seems similar with Earth and Tortus but……hm?」

Hajime crouched and took a grass within his hand, and he then analyzed the soil composition with "Mineral Appraisal". And then, 「Oh?」 he blinked as though he noticed something.

「What art the matter? Art there some kind of mysterious composition mixed in it?」

「Rather than calling it a mysterious composition…… something that is really similar with a composition I'm really familiar with is mixed in. What's more, it's scattered all over in a wide scope like a fertilizer.」

「Familiar composition? From thy speech, is it something from Tortus?」

「Yeah. They are small granulated minerals that are even smaller than sand. ——「Converging Transmutation」」

Thinking that it was faster to see directly, he made his palm face up. Right after that, Hajime was activating a transmutation master's secret art of transmuting without the hand directly touching the material to converge the mineral in the surrounding.

Sparkling sands were bursting out from Hajime's surrounding. They were like large flowing rivers of the cosmos, swirling like sparkling stars with Hajime as the center where they were gradually converging above his palm.

With an emission of crimson sparks, the item that was finally created by the compression transmutation was a fragment of shining azure mineral.

「This art……it looks like god crystal.」

「Yeah. Though it's different in the finer aspects. It seems that the aspect where it takes in magic power and condenses it to manifest liquid is the same though.」

To be more specific, it couldn’t retain magic power as much as a god crystal, and on top of that, it also didn’t have the power to create god water that possessed the recovery effect, which wouldn’t be an exaggeration to be called as regeneration. However, its ability to take in magic power into itself and then create a liquid with abundant nourishment, and then its circulation rate of going through those sequences were far faster and more efficient to the degree that couldn’t be compared to the god crystal’s production of god water.

Hajime acquired that knowledge from the analysis of his smartphone that was equipped with the advanced function of analyzing using “Mineral Appraisal”, Creation Magic, and Metamorphosis Magic. Tio, who received Hajime’s explanation, said「I see」in understanding and then looked around.

「So that’s how a land floating in the sky couldst be this verdant. The reason art because it hath that god crystal look alike.」

「Looks like it. Although, that’s not the reason why this land is floating though……」

Hajime stood up and turned his gaze to the center of the floating island. He intended to go investigate there. Tio also nodded and was about to walk, but it was at that time,

「Mu? So they art coming out by their own initiative.」

One dragon suddenly showed its face from behind a tree. *jii~* It was staring at Tio.

Hajime and Tio looked at each other. For now, they would try watching in silence. Hajime was using “Presence Isolation” at full power while also forming a simple barrier using a pencil-

sized Cross Velt. It wasn’t an artifact for defense, but a barrier artifact that used space magic to bend the light for optical camouflage. It wasn’t that powerful, but it more or less also possessed space isolation effect, so it blocked the body odor from detection.

The small grey dragon was looking *jii~* at Tio for a while, but seeing that Tio wasn’t moving while looking back at it with a calm expression, it seemed the dragon let its guard down just a little because it came out with unsure steps from the forest.

Behind that dragon, 「Oi, is it really okay?」「Stop I told you! You are going to die!」the other dragons timidly showed their face from behind the trees as though to say that.

「It looks like they art calming down a bit there~」

The figure of those dragons that could be said to be charming in a sense caused Tio to loosen up her face. Perhaps Tio’s atmosphere that was softening further encouraged it, and the dragon in the lead was advancing a bit and stopped, then it advanced a bit and stopped again. It was repeating that action while approaching Tio bit by bit.

Before long, the dragon that had arrived near Tio brought its snout closer to Tio, and it sniffed her smell *sniff sniff*. And then, it nervously retracted back its neck and tilted its head before it brought its nose closer again and sniffed her scent *sniff sniff* again.

「Hmm. It appears they art confused, whether I am a dragon or a human. In that case……it’s great isn’t it, Goshujin-sama. It appears Goshujin-sama art not especially hated; these children seem to fear “human” itself.」

「I see. In other words, that means humans, or at the very least “humanoid” beings, are existing in this world.」

Hajime replied using “Telepathy” just in case so the dragon wouldn’t get spooked. While the two were doing that, the other dragons also seemed to lose to their curiosity toward this mysterious existence who smelled like their race even though she was human. They were coming out of the forest even while looking timid with unsure steps.

Tio was surrounded by dragons in the blink of an eye. She slowly reached out her hand toward one of the dragons that was bringing its snout closer. The dragon twitched and drew back, but when it saw Tio waiting silently with her hand still reached out, it approached back slowly.

Finally, Tio’s hand touched the dragon’s snout. And then, when Tio caressed it, the dragon blinked in surprise before it started to narrow its eyes pleasantly. Its shrill but low purr *kururururu-* seemed to show its fawning act.

Behind Tio, another dragon was pressing its snout as though to appeal ‘me too’. Just when she thought that was it, the other dragons also pushed their snouts forward from the left and right too.

「Oi oi, all of thee. For the dragon race of all things to be spoiled children like this, every single one of thou? What troubling children.」

Tio chuckled while saying that. Although, even though she was saying that, the emotion dwelling in her eyes was an unconcealed kindness. She gently caressed them in turn with smiling eyes and loosened cheeks, looking truly like a mother.

Hajime also looked fondly at the figure of Tio surrounded by dragons while gently spoiling them. Even though normally she was very much a pervert, her true nature was a noble person that was overflowing with prudence, kindness, and pride. That was exactly the charm of this woman, Tio Claus.

「Mu? I vaguely feel a passionate gaze……now-now, Goshujin-sama. Art thou envious that I am paying attention only to these children?」

While smiling mischievously, Tio accurately threw her gaze at Hajime who was hiding behind the barrier of optical camouflage.

It was a fact that Hajime was captivated, so he smiled wryly while replying「Perhaps」. After getting that unexpectedly positive reply, Tio's cheeks blushed faintly. It seemed she was a bit happy.

To divert the attention from her shyness, she opened her mouth with a bit of rapid talk.

「Goshujin-sama. If it's now, these children's wariness art lessened considerably, how about giving a try to pat them?」

「I guess. There won't be many chances of something like this.」

Hajime manipulated the pencil Cross Velt and deployed the optical camouflage as close as possible on his body. He was also in the middle of activating Presence Isolation in full force, so he should be able to pat the dragon if he reached his hand from a blind spot.

Hajime slowly approached a dragon. It was half closing its eyes from Tio's caressing, so it shouldn't notice anything even if he touched it a bit.

But, it seemed that wild instinct wasn’t that naïve.

□!?□

The dragon that Hajime approached suddenly leapt back from that spot. Furthermore, that jump happened so deftly and vigorously that for a moment there it felt like there would be a sound *hyuba-*.

‘Am I noticed?’ Hajime stared fixedly, but the dragon tilted its head□kuruu?□while looking around. It seemed it didn’t notice Hajime, but it only acted instinctually.

Hajime tried taking a step forward. The dragon took a step back. Hajime tried taking two steps forward. The dragon took two steps back. Hajime tried to circle behind it. The dragon circled with a fixed distance preserved in between. It was as though there was an unseen wall between Hajime and the dragon as the two sides were turning in circles without any change of distance between them.

It seemed that the dragon didn’t understand why it was acting like this. It frequently tilted its head.

□Ma, mayhaps it understands instinctually that there art something it hates there?□

Tio muttered such a thing, perhaps from sensing how Hajime’s eyes were gradually turning scornful.

Hajime tried approaching the other dragons. The other dragons also took a distance with natural movement. No matter where Hajime tried to go, the dragons would distance themselves from Hajime as though they were magnets of opposite poles. There was no doubt that they didn’t notice Hajime’s existence. In other words, they were avoiding him on a subconscious level.

Hajime was hurt for a tiny bit. He was looking at the day after tomorrow with a faraway look.

But, at that time, perhaps it was just a coincidence, but one dragon clawed on the ground with its hind leg. The soil that was hurled from that went splat on Hajime.

That action was as though like what a cat or a dog would do to filth……

「……Go, Goshujin-sama?」

「……」

Hajime didn’t reply. He merely grinned.

Crimson magic power suddenly sparked. The dragons were still busy fawning on Tio. They didn’t notice how they had stepped on a landmine.

Hajime slowly walked while still having the barrier and Presence Isolation activated and took a position at the center of the dragons by skillfully manipulating the distance.

There, the dragons finally noticed the strange air and they looked around restlessly.

And then, they turned their gazes’ at the area centered around them, which, for some reason, was empty without anyone being there.

——Stand B~y! Stand B~~y!!

——Now, everyone, are you all finished with your preparations?

——It’s starting you know?

——Pe~~ek, aa~~~~~~~~~~.....demon king!

The barrier vanished, and the Presence Isolation was dispelled.

What appeared was a bursting crimson magic power with the demon king-sama grinning wideeeeely at the center.

The result went without saying.

□□□□□PIGYAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!!□□□□□

The dragons' screams that were filled with fright resounded through the clear blue sky.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The next update is planned to be for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 231

Arifureta After II Mistaken World View

At a corner of an island floating in the sky was a demon king sitting on the ground while grasping his knees.

It was Hajime.

「Even though thou understood this is how it wouldst end up……」

A weeping back, eyes that looked like dead fish’s, and a beautiful huddling posture could be seen. Hajime, who was currently the personification of a picture perfect “depressed person”, was told such by Tio with an exasperated expression.

「Guu」

He could barely let out a ‘guu’ sound. Seeing such a Hajime, Tio snickered once more through her exasperation. The situation that was the exact opposite of their normal actions would surely make anyone who knew these two to doubt their eyes if they saw this. (TN: In Japan, there is a saying of “he cannot even make a ‘guu’ sound” to show how speechless or cornered the person is.)

「Come on, Goshujin-sama. Come back to thyself quickly. Thou art going to investigate the cause of this island’s

floating state, correct?

Tio snugly squatted beside Hajime. She peered at Hajime's face with a consoling smile. Hajime glanced at Tio, and then he glanced across his shoulder to look behind him.

Over there were several fainted dragons with the white of their eyes completely exposed. Several of their fellow dragons poked at them to ascertain their well-being while several others were staring fearfully at Hajime and Tio. It went without saying that the fainted group was the victim of one of the Demon King-Style 108 Harassment Skills, "Peek-a-Demon King!".

Just leave me alone and take care of those guys. You see, I'm disgusted from the bottom of my heart by a foolish existence like me.

Well, certainly, it was really immature.

Gufuh. Getting told that by the likes of a hopeless dragon……depressing. I want to……not die; I want to be a shut-in.

Even though Goshujin-sama's mind art damaged that much, this natural abuse, nnn-

Tio's cheeks reddened while her body fidgeted.

A dragon that was poking its comrade behind them tilted its head Oh? before a beat later it made a commotion *gyau gyau*. The other dragons got startled and turned around. They then started to make similar noises. A fainted dragon had its tongue spilled out limply from its mouth. ……It seemed that it was just a step short of death's door.

「However, for Goshujin-sama to make merry until this far, how rare this is.」

「Well, I cannot deny that my mood is uplifted more than usual. After all, an *adventure* where there is no clear objective, no powerful enemy, and no companion's life at stake like this is a first.」

「Boy.」

「You say that, but you too are high spirited, aren't you?」

「Yes. I couldst not deny that.」

One more dragon had its tongue spilled out limply. And then one more dragon, although it opened its eyes just for a moment, then stretched its forelegs to the sky――before losing strength and flopping on the ground.

This scene was obvious to the trained eye. Right now, something that looked like a white vapor was rising out from the limply unmoving dragons toward the heavens with a swaying motion! They were dying from the shock of "Peek-a-Demon King"!

「Well, for now, I'll depend on you to keep my disgrace a secret, okay? As expected, if this is known by Yue and the others, then I'll turn into a real shut-in from shame and self-disgust.」

Hajime stood up while making Tio promise to keep this a secret. He then turned on his heels and walked away briskly. He was heading toward the dragons making *gyau gyau* noises at their comrades' death.

The surviving dragons were startled by Hajime's approach, and their bodies froze before they escaped in panic.

「Fufufuh, a secret just between the two of us, that really art not bad. Very well. The childish figure of Goshujin-sama will be locked inside mine heart.」

「Please, okay? Now then, you guys, don't go to the other side as you please.」

Hajime was talking with Tio while fitting his hand into a black glove that was overflowing with romance. He then suddenly reached out with his hand to the empty air and grasped something violently and then drove it into the dragon below him.

The dragon with its tongue lolling out twitched and convulsed. The other dragons raised their cries while evacuating to the sky, as though to say「He is beating up a corpse!?」

Not paying any attention to that, Hajime did the same thing to the other dragons. He caught something midair and then drove that something, with a palm strike, into the dragons' bodies.

「Still, looking at them from nearby like this I can really see it……these dragons, their bodies are really frail.」

「Yes. They art scared of humans, and then with the polluted land there art no doubt that this world is a harsh place without sufficient food for these children to live.」

While conversing like that, Hajime made red sparks run through the black glove. *bachi bachi* With that sound, the hand became clad in moderate electricity before Hajime's hand casually struck at the place where the heart of the dragon with the lolling tongue seemed to be located at while still talking normally with Tio.

The dragon with the lolling tongue twitched and trembled. Then in the next moment, its eyes opened with a snap, and it accomplished its revival!

The “Lightning Clad” seemed to be overflowing with casualness, but actually, it had been superbly adjusted. Hajime also used electric shock into the dragons that were ascending to heaven.

By the way, Hajime reaching out his hand into the empty air was a direct blow to the soul——by using the black glove that was a protection artifact, Hajime grasped the souls of the dragons that were ascending to heaven and returned them to their bodies.

The dragons that received the relatively rough direct resurrection treatment were shivering in terror, as expected when they saw Hajime. Hajime muttered「Well, can’t be helped. I reap what I sow」. For the time being, he took out food——meat that was preserved inside “Treasure Warehouse II” ——for the bean sprout dragons.

Hajime threw it carelessly at the dragons’ feet. The dragons jumped in place because they couldn’t escape even if they wanted to with their distance being so close to Hajime, but even so, their nose was twitching from the wafting smell from below.

They were bothered by Hajime. Or rather, they were scared. Perhaps they would be killed instantly the moment they took their eyes off of him……

Even while thinking that, drool was already flowing like a river from their mouths. In less than ten seconds their eyes were already glancing repeatedly at their feet.

They looked like a doggy that was told to “wait” .

Hajime smiled wryly.

「That's an apology for surprising you guys. You guys looking like bean sprouts even though you are of the dragon race is also pitiful. Eat as much as you want.」

Hajime also carelessly left behind more raw meat in order to include the share of the dragons that were circling above while observing the situation. And then he drew back.

The dragons looked at each other. 'He is not attacking? What is this thing with a good smell? Is it okay to eat?' It felt like those voices of the heart could be heard from them.

The flying dragons hesitantly landed down. Their eyes were turning bloodshot from seeing the lumps of meat while drool was flowing from their mouth like a waterfall. The dragons looked at each other, and then they glanced at Hajime.

Hajime was standing silently beside Tio. Beside the mysteriously kind and great existence who was clad in the same presence as them.

Before long, one dragon became unable to endure anymore and bit at the edge of the meat. While the other dragons were watching over him「O, oi. Are you okay?」, for a moment, the dragon stiffened before its eyes suddenly snapped open and it charged the lump of meat.

「GYUUOOOOWAAAAA!」

Anyone could understand its meaning despite it not using words. That was truly a roar of joy! 'How can something this delicious exist in this world! This is like a treasure among food~~-!!' Such a voice from the heart was resounding.

Naturally, the other dragons also snapped at the meat. And then they raised similar roars of joy.

One dragon exposed the white of its eyes, and its tongue lolled out from the excessive deliciousness and excitement. Its soul that looked like a white vapor was ascending to heaven. Hajime quickly grasped it, drove it *zudon-* into the body, and revived it with *bachi bachi*. The dragon then snapped into the meat once more.

「These guys, they are dying too easily. Just how frail are they?」

「Truly, this art too pitiful for a dragon race……was what I wanted to say, but it looks like this art even the first time eating meat for these children. Most likely, they art surviving by living on this island and eating fruits or something else. By the way, why did Goshujin-sama bring meat like that?」

「Aa. Remember, we had a barbecue before, right? A lot of people came, and so I bought a lot of meat in preparation for high spirits. These are the remains of that time.」

「Mu. Wait a second, Goshujin-sama. If I remember correctly, the meat at that time was really good meat correct? I remember that it was the brand product from somewhere.」

「Yeah. These are grade A5 meats.」

「……The meat they art eating for the first time, art the top quality product. Perhaps it couldst not be helped if they ascend to heaven from that.」

Rather, this was an act that would make the meat producer fly into a rage saying ‘don’t use this meat for animal food!’. If Hajime was going to make an excuse, then it was because

other than this meat he only had preserved food. Even Hajime felt a bit regretful doing this.

But, this act, that was an extravagance in a sense, brought an unexpected result about.

「Hm? ……Their wariness is lessening slightly?」

Yes, the dragons that were giving off satisfied auras as though to say「I'm full!」were sending glances at Hajime. From those gazes, it certainly looked like the color of terror from before was lessening. Right now, he had to say they were more bewildered than scared.

「……Are we mistaken perhaps? Who would have thought that these guys who were that scared of humans would change their hearts like this just from a single helping of food.」

「Muu. These children art too simple that it's worrisome. They are like children who wouldst follow a stranger just because they are promised candy.」

It was unthinkable for a wild beast to so easily let go of the wariness they had harbored once. That was why Hajime gave them meat in the name of apologizing, but……at this rate, perhaps these dragons would react warmly towards humans who they actually ought to be wary against when compared to from before.

The result of doing that would be the same as shortening the life of these dragons. Therefore, Hajime's expression turned a bit bitter.

「But if you look at it from another angle, then perhaps they are so cornered to the degree that their wariness will lessen just from a single helping of food……」

Hajime sighed. And then, he exposed a really speechless expression before he suddenly changed his presence.

「Sorry. I didn’t intend to toy with you guys, but……I did something bad. Be scared of humans properly.」

Saying that, Hajime was about to emit “Pressure”――but it was at that time,

「「「「「Gyauh!?」」」」」

The dragons suddenly turned around in a panic and rushed at full speed into the forest.

「Goshujin-sama?」

「No, that’s not me. I haven’t emitted “Pressure”. Just what in the――」

Tio showed a face that was questioning Hajime, but naturally, Hajime responded with words of denial. Hajime himself was tilting his head in puzzlement as to why the dragons suddenly ran away.

But, in the next moment, he noticed the cause and stopped his words. If it was the hell rabbit-eared Shia, then it would’ve been possible that she would’ve noticed at the same time as, or possibly faster than, the dragons.

「What? Something is approaching? A living thing……but this voice…」

「Mu? I couldst not hear anything……no, now I couldst. …… This is…..it sounds like a motor?」

「Ye, yeah. I can also hear something like that……」

From far away the sound of *kiiiiiiiii-* was faintly resounding. Certainly, it was just as Tio said; the sound resembled that of a motor. Yes, it was a voice that was raised by a machine. Therefore, Hajime couldn’t hide his bewilderment.

A black rain that polluted the world, dragons, and a floating island in the sky. In this undoubtedly fantasy world, something that was making a sound that resembled a motor was approaching rapidly. It couldn’t be helped that his image of this world was crumbling.

「Nevertheless, this thing is……」

「Fast!」

The moment Tio finished Hajime’s sentence, that thing showed its appearance, along with a high-pitched sound.

A hard-looking frame, in a delta shape, that had a trace of roundness with a sky blue color that could conceal itself within the azure sky appeared. Several long and narrow tubes were attached to its bottom part. There were five of them rushing straight toward the floating island in a beautiful triangular formation.

Seeing those things flying away instantly above Hajime and Tio, Hajime said,

「Why fighter planes!?」

He grandly acted the straight-man.

Yes, those things were obviously fighter planes. If compared to the existing aircraft on Earth, then these planes looked like space fighter aircraft that appeared in a movie based on the near future, but Hajime’s excellent eyes certainly caught sight of a few things. A human was riding inside the cockpit

installed at the front part of the airframe, and that the tube things installed below the aircraft resembled the missiles on Earth.

「……Goshujin-sama. It seems our worldview art mistaken. If we hath to say what kind of world this is――it's SF.」

「What's with this chaos.」

A black rain that polluted the world, dragons, and a floating island in the sky, along with futuristic fighter planes flying through the sky.

Certainly, it was a chaotic world.

KIIII A hard sound resounded from the aircraft that drew a beautiful arc in the sky. The formation of five planes was circling above as though to observe the floating island, and then they took a distance for the moment.

「The other side should be able to see us too. It will be fine if they can communicate with us somehow.」

「For now, how about trying to talk with them using telepathy Goshujin-sama?」

Hajime and Tio talked with each other carefreely. Ahead of their gaze, one of the circling aircraft suddenly began to be clad with a strange light. The aircraft that was giving off a presence that felt increasingly like SF――or rather like a UFO―― released something akin to a ripple of light the moment it passed over the forest.

There wasn’t any thunderous sounds reverberating, or the forest getting blown up. But, there was certainly a result from that.

KIIIIII-

A hard sound that was different from the motor suddenly struck the ear.

□-, this is□

□A sound wave?□

Hajime and Tio scrunched up their faces reflexively. Tio immediately blocked the sound wave using a wind barrier, but even so, that sound attack caused her a headache.

Naturally, for the dragons whose hearing was better than Hajime and Tio and didn’t possess any barriers, this was an attack that would make them feel outrageous agony.

□□□□KUWAAAAAAAAH□□□□

The dragons raised a cry that sounded like a scream and flew out of the forest.

It seemed they fell into a panic. They frantically tried to distance themselves from the forest as much as they could. But then another plane fired its missile.

The missile that was approaching at high speed burst before it could impact the dragons, and from there a net was ejected.

The net spread widely and enveloped the dragons without even giving them time to twist their bodies. On top of that, the net wasn’t falling down but stayed fixed in midair and

restrained the dragons. It was as though the dragons were locked inside a cage that was created in midair.

「A hunt, huh.」

「……I see. We art not helping?」

Tio didn’t sound angry. She merely asked as a question. Hajime made a wry smile.

「If there is someone being a nuisance to a fisherman saying 「What are you doing catching the fish huh!」, then that person is simply an idiot. No, rather he is a scoundrel that is hindering the fisherman’s work.」

「Certainly. It’s not something good if we who doth not know anything about this world interfere as we pleased.」

It was completely sound reasoning. They only had a bit of an interaction with the dragons, but it would be a lie if they said that they didn’t feel any attachment at all to the dragons whose reactions were like a stray dog. However, if they were asked whether they were so attached to the dragons to the degree that they would hinder the aircraft pilots who were possibly hunting the dragons to feed their families, or for some kind of important work, then the answer was a big NO.

「But, I’m curious to the working of that net that is fixed in midair and the sound wave attack and flashing phenomenon of the aircraft. No matter how I look at it, their driving force seems different compared to Earth’s aircraft……Perhaps, it might have the same principle with how this island is floating.」

「Either way, they art a party that we might be able to exchange words with. Letting this chance get away art not

an option. The problem now art how to communicate with them, but……art we going to try sending them telepathy?

It will be great if my “Language Comprehension” and interpreter artifact can demonstrate their effect.

Even while the two were conversing, most of the dragons that were flying out of the forest were captured. Hajime was observing to see how the dragons would be transported, but during that time, one of the aircraft circled around and was facing its nose toward Hajime and Tio.

Oh, as expected, it looks like they noticed us. It seems the other side is the one coming to contact us?

Ri, right. It appears so but……for some reason, I hath a bad premonition though.

Tio’s premonition was correct.

The moment *voo-* an instantaneous sound split the air and a sudden flash scattered from the lower part of the aircraft’s nose——wind of killing intent assaulted the two.

What was fired without any warning was a machine gun. The storm of bullets that were concealing terrible destructive power mercilessly rushed at Hajime and Tio. The surrounding ground was rupturing as though getting blown away. The thrown up cloud of dust hid the two from view.

The aircraft passed overhead Hajime and Tio as though nothing had happened and rejoined its comrades. It didn’t even give a glance at Hajime and Tio anymore. It was clear that the pilot thought the two weren’t an existence that was worth anything. It was only mowing grass in the corner of the garden that was an eyesore——that was how it felt like.

「……Calm down me. This is another world. Don’t judge things with our own common sense.」

「……Those guys……ignorance art truly terrifying isn’t it.」

The cloud of dust was carried away by the wind. What appeared from there was naturally the unharmed Hajime and Tio. A cube-shaped barrier was deployed around them using the Cross Velts. The strafing that had a might which resembled a 30mm Vulcan cannon was blocked without even a single crack on the barrier.

However, it was doubtful whether the heart of the person inside could block that kind of uncompromising tyranny.

Hajime was folding his arms with a vein pulsing on his forehead, but even so, he was trying to suppress his anger and persuade himself. Tio was directing a gaze that was shuddering in terror at the aircraft pilots. Of course, that shudder wasn’t directed toward their strength, but at their attitude that was picking a fight against a godslayer right from the front.

「This is a world with polluted land. Then, a ground that is floating in the sky must be really important for humans to live. Naturally, they should be managing and protecting it strictly. And now there are unknown people rudely stepping on it. I cannot complain even if I got shot without any warning whatsoever. Isn’t that right, me? That’s right, me.」

「Go, Goshujin-sama. I understand that thy art angry, so please stop that soliloquizing. Somehow it’s terrifying in a different meaning.」

The way to suppress anger Hajime-style――soliloquizing. When seen from the side, it was a skill that was wholly judged to be more terrifying than being angry normally.

Because on Earth there was no way he could uncompromisingly go “instant death for everyone♡” like when he was on Tortus. This was a patience skill that Hajime newly learned.

From afar, seeing how Hajime and Tio were unharmed, the pilot seemed to be taken aback and directed its aircraft’s nose toward the two once more.

Hajime cleared his throat once and called for a ceasefire while activating “Telepathy”.

「Aa~, pilot-san, pilot-san. Can you hear? We don’t have any ill intention. If we are trespassing illegally, then we will apologize and get out right away. That’s why first let’s have a tal――」

Missile inbound!! Without warning, it went whoo~~~sh-!!

Of course, Hajime and Tio were unharmed.

「……」

「Sto, stop it! All of theee, doth thee hath a death wish!? Let’s hath a talk right now!」

Hajime was muttering to himself inaudibly.「Perhaps the telepathy didn’t go through. No, perhaps they didn’t understand the language. Perseverance is important in communication. Isn’t that’s right, me? That’s right, me」He was soliloquizing again. His eyes were completely not moving though.

「Please, listen to us. We――」

Missile comi~~~ng-!! Yes, whoo~~~~sh-!!

Perhaps the missile this time was of a different variety because it didn’t just explode it had an extra flame blast with viscosity. The surrounding was dyed crimson. However, inside the rumbling flame that was blazing, the two were standing still unharmed as expected.

Tio was getting flustered ‘awawawa’ while glancing at Hajime, but when she saw Hajime’s expression had gone past rage and he was starting to smile instead, she covered her face with both hands as though to say「I cannot bear to see this anymore!」

But, it would be troubling if the current Hajime was looked down on. In order for him to live normally in Japan on Earth, his homeland that believed in law and order, every day he was working hard not to use violence, but instead, he was learning a different type of strength that was patience and perseverance, negotiation power and financial strength.

He wouldn’t snap just from a small amount of machine gun strafing and missiles!

……It felt like the dragons would want to retort「Then why did you snap before this!?」if they knew it.

「Pilot-san, we――」

Hajime tried to call out once more with a voice that had lost any intonation. This time, finally there was a reaction. Although, the reaction wasn’t something that “came back” to Hajime, but a complete ignoring of Hajime.

「Chih, what the hell is this. Don’t tell me they are carrying a shielding device on the same level as a warship?」

「Vans-san, surely that’s impossible. Do you see anywhere any device with the size necessary for a shield of the

warship level?

Are they an OOPArt owner? ……I want that.(TN: Out of Place Artifact)

No way. You think there are any explorers in this era huh. Rather than that, look there. That woman. Her outfit is strange, but she is an extremely fine jewel, yeah? Hey, Vans-san? Looks like that guy is calling at us, so let’s land down and kill just the man, then give me that woman. The woman from before is not usable anymore. I want to make her my new pet.

It appeared these guys weren’t really guys with class. At the same time, it seemed that they were thinking that the conversation on their side wasn’t leaking out. Most likely, they were under the impression that the communication method Hajime and Tio was using was something like their own method. It seemed they thought that they couldn’t be heard because they were on a different frequency (?).

Hajime was silent. However, all the color was gradually leaving his smiling face.

In the middle of that, the man who seemed to be the leader called Vans-san said this to the man who made a remark of wanting to kill Hajime and taking only Tio as a pet.

Hmph? Certainly, I’m curious about that abnormally strong shield. ……Fine then. We will land down and pull the information out from them. After that, kill the man——and I’ll take the woman.

Eeh!? That’s unfair!

Don’t make a ruckus. I’ll lend her to you when I’m not using her.

「A~a, can’t be helped then~」

Their screwed up conversation was continuing. The five fighter planes——if following what they were saying, it seemed that the plane was called sky battlecraft——that were circling with their noses directed at Hajime and Tio were lowering their speed and altitude. Currently, in the conversation that was clearly being leaked out, the hot topics were about how they would kill Hajime or how they would rape Tio later.

「……Haa, the fools. They art waking up a monster that is not necessary to wake up. They art getting their just dessert.」

Tio’s words were muttered to herself.

The sky battlecrafts were approaching. The dragons were peeking at their direction from inside the net.

Hajime’s figure vanished instantly.

And then, the pilots of the sky battlecrafts, especially Vans who was flying in the lead as the first plane, began doubting their eyes.

「There is no need to get down. I’ll send you all down to hell myself.」

A flat voice was resounding inside their heads. At the same time, an impossible sight appeared in front of them.

With a giant weapon loaded with a giant stake carried in one hand, a human silhouette jumped onto the front of the flying sky battlecraft’s cockpit while scattering crimson sparks.

「Eh? Ah? What——」

That became the last sentence of the man named Vans.

【What……the hell, is that!?】

【Just now, what happened!?】

【What is going on!?】

【Shit-, is that seriously some kind of OOPArt!?】

Panicked voices resounded.

The sight that they witnessed frightened them.

It was of a man jumping up a few hundred meters with a flesh and blood body, carrying a weapon that was unthinkable for any human to lift in one hand, literally pulverizing the first plane.

The wreckage of the first plane that was scattered into little pieces and shower of flesh and blood were raining down to the ground. A single black giant stake pierced the floating island like a gravestone.

The pilots that were cursing while rapidly turning their planes were treated with another absurd sight.

It was the sight of a barrage of giant stakes flying wildly everywhere.

【Sca, scatterrr!】

The plane that seemed to be the second in command immediately gave an order, but he was already too late. One plane received a direct hit and turned into scraps midair.

【Holy shit-, you bastard, I’ll absolutely murder――】

The one speaking turned speechless. His eyes were opened wide. That was natural. After all, the target was calmly standing in midair while causing crimson ripples to spread out; furthermore, in the hand opposite of the one carrying the weapon that was shooting out giant stakes——the gatling pile bunker——another giant weapon materialized.

The name of that weapon, which was put on the shoulder, was Agni – Orkan. It was a weapon that displayed the most power in surface-to-air combat.

Instantly, a great number of missiles were launched.

The man that was about to spit out a curse soundlessly screamed while steering his plane, but how could he possibly evade more than fifty missiles that were assaulting him from every direction. Naturally, his fate was decided.

One more flower of flame bloomed in the sky.

「Withdraw! We’re withdrawing!」

「Mo, monster-」

The two remaining sky battlecrafts circled with a maneuver that was possibly even more outstanding than aircraft made on Earth. They tried to retreat from the battlefield right away with their highest speed.

Their speed was also amazing, as expected, as they had turned into the size of a bean in one breath.

Hajime silently stowed away the gatling pile bunker and Agni – Orkan and took out the replacement weapon.

——Anti-Material Sniping Cannon Schlagen AA (Acht Acht)

Across the scope, a sky battlecraft escaping to the sky far away was reflected.

「That was a good lesson, right? Use it as a reference in hell.」

The trigger was pulled after that whisper. No matter how excellent the speed of the sky battlecraft was, there was no way they could match the speed of a bullet that was accelerated electromagnetically. One plane was pierced from its back part all the way up to its front part, and then its figure vanished into the sea of clouds appearing as though it had been skewered.

Hajime who was shouldering Schlagen AA called out to Tio.

「Tio. We are pursuing. We are annihilating――not, it appears that the plane is returning back toward its comrade's location. Let's thoroughly have them tell us about this world.」

「Aa, yes. That's right.」

Tio was watching Hajime tear apart the nets capturing the dragons using a chakram with a wry smile while transforming into a dragon.

And then, Hajime rode on her back, and she started flying in the sky with terrific speed.

「Goshujin-sama, thank you.」

「……For what?」

Tio didn't answer. Hajime also understood what it was about. She was happy that he exposed his wrath when the men said they would make her a pet.

Instead of answering, Tio’s acceleration that was far smoother than usual told the answer more eloquently than anything.

「Now then. Was that the standard of this world’s humans, or is it different? I’ll have them show me.」

「Thy art really on fire……」

Even while feeling a bit excited at the fierce gleam in the eyes of Hajime, who was facing an enemy, which she was seeing for the first time in a while, Tio was also feeling just a little pity at the vulgar residence of this world who angered the demon king right from the start.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Recently, I’m unable to make it in time……I’m sorry.

Now then, just when you thought that it’s fantasy, it’s actually half SF! That kind of story.

Tio arc, just where in the world is it going to lead? Even Shirakome doesn’t know.

But, I’m writing while picturing an enjoyable development. Just like usual!

The next update is planned to be for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 232

Arifureta After II Cannot Stay as Onlooker

The near future type aircraft made in another world was racing through the sky at a speed that left the territory of sound with a lurch.

It detoured a large cloud mountain with an amazing turn in an attempt to shake something off. It then accelerated in one go from its slight reduction in speed. The nozzle at the plane’s rear was ejecting sparkling silver particles——the ejected amount increasing explosively.

The sky battlecraft intruded into the world of the speed of sound once more with an impact sound. The surrounding clouds were blown away due to the shockwave. Its acceleration knew no end and had easily surpassed Mach 2 already.

「NUOOOOOH-. THAT’S REALLY FAST-. AS EXPECTED FROM A FIGHTER PLANE! IT’S GETTING AWAYYYYY-」

A beat later, a black dragon with a desperate look appeared through the cloud mountain. A whirling black wind was enveloping Tio. Seen from the side, it looked like there was a jet black typhoon flying horizontally.

It was Tio’s flying skill that realized flying at super speed by reducing the air resistance to the extreme, and furthermore,

she caused a spiral-shaped wind around herself to convert it into propulsive power. Even if one looked at the long history of the dragon race, there didn’t exist anyone that entered the realm of the speed of sound.

Therefore, something like storming into an unknown territory of speed was truly something out of the realm of common sense, and what’s more, it didn’t just stop there, she was actually flying while maintaining a speed that was twice the speed of sound. A miraculous feat that couldn’t be possibly realized without the age of god magic called “Sublimation magic” and the assistance of an artifact. Of course, there was also the delicate yet powerful skill that should be referred to as Tio’s own special talent.

Tio was unmistakably the history’s fastest living thing on Tortus. However, it was a fact that against this aircraft that was continuously accelerating she was gradually getting left behind. She somehow managed to stay hot on its tail despite the aircraft sometimes taking evasive maneuvers against the threat of Hajime’s sniping but……

「Hmm~, looks like it will reach the limit soon even with the threatening. It seems he is starting to realize that we have no intention of hitting him.」

「Nuu. I know that I couldst not win against a fighter plane in a match of pure speed, but……when it comes down to it, it’s vexing to be left behind like this.」

「No, by the time there is a biological creature that can freely fly in the sky at speed twice the speed of sound, complete with heavy armor and high firepower, that’s already a nightmare. You too have deviated far from the scope of a living thing you know?」

「I’m happy to be praised, but it’s only this that I couldst not accept even with logic.」

Tio was looking at the far away sky battlecraft that was already nothing but a speck in the sky while moaning「Muu」in dissatisfaction.

Seeing Tio as such, for a beat, Hajime tilted his head as though he was thinking of something, and right after that he grinned——and took out something.

It looked black, thin, long, and elastic——

「Here we go, Tio. Let’s show off our combination move.」

「Mu? What in the world——-, tha, that’s!?」

Tio glanced back after hearing Hajime’s words and opened her eyes wide in astonishment. Her voice was raised half in shock and half in joy.

That thing which captured her gaze. That thing which was going to be swung right now.

——Black Whip ver 2.1 “This is not a weapon. It’s for personal use desu.”

It could be easily guessed for what kind of personal use it was used for.

「GO-, TIO! UNTIL THE OTHER SIDE OF THE SKY!」

The black whip was swung down. *hyun-* It split the air and dexterously flew right behind while making a really crisp sound *bechin-*.

「AA———!! HOW COULDDDDDD-. Thi, this sensation that hath been a while-」

「What's the matter Tio! Your strength shouldn't be just this much!」

Once more, *bechikon-!* The greatly twirling whip's tip was *donpisha-* striking Tio's butt.

「IT CAME IT CAME IT CAME-! MINE POWER IS OVERFLOWING OUT! MORE! HIT MY BUTT MOREEE! WITH THAT, I FEEL LIKE I COULDST GO FURTHER!」

「You said it! You matchless pervert dragon! I'll give you more!」

「BRING IT O———N-!!」

Tio's eyes were getting moist. Her mouth was leaking out heated breaths 'haa haa'. Her body was shivering in joy, and the jet black tornado enveloping her was fiercely increasing its acceleration! By using her special skill "Pain Conversion", the reward that was granted to her by her master was giving her strength! Her speed was endlessly increasing!

The sky battlecraft that had turned into a speck was getting larger and was now comparable to the size of a thumb!

「PLEASE HIT ME! MINE BUTT! PLEASE TORMENT IT MORE!」

hyun hyun-hyuun- Accompanying the sound of slicing wind was the sound of a whip cracking *bishi-, bashi-, bechikon-* as though in response to that entreaty. By using the personal use artifact that was bypassing the black scales and granting direct and superb pain only to the sensitive skin, the hopeless dragon-san was reaching her perfect form!

The sky battlecraft in front of them was reeling for an instant.

Just when he thought that he had barely escaped with his life from the incomprehensible monster that destroyed sky battlecraft using a flesh and blood body, a majestic black dragon that he had never seen before was chasing after him clad in a jet black typhoon. In addition to that, the dragon was moving at the speed of sound while also being equipped with something like a laser cannon.

He lost count of how many times he had made a mistake with his piloting and reduced his speed from shock……

On top of all that, came a perverted roar that was mixed with excitement「HIT MINE BUTTTTT-」that reached his ear as though that solemn voice was coming from the sky.

The pilot was in chaos! Then he became teary-eyed! He couldn’t understand what reality was anymore!

「Glowser 4-. I believe in you! Get me out of this nightmare!」

The pilot called out to his beloved plane——Glowser 4——in a pleading voice. The mindless plane was naturally keeping silent, but due to the hard pressing of the slot pedal, it was displaying its ability up to the very limit of its performance.

Based on the specifications it was a super-fast sky battlecraft that could reach the maximum speed of Mach 4.4 in a purely straight line. It left behind an explosive sound that was similar to the air rupturing and dashed through the sky like the streak of a meteor.

Behind it, the hopeless dragon-san managed to stay on its tail! The owner-san riding on her back was swinging around a “personal not weapon” without pause in high spirits! Howls of joy were resounding through the vast sky! Tio Claus was outdoing a modern aircraft!

「ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA-, you got slightly left behind! Put your strength into your ass! This damned hopeless dragon-」

「AHIIIIIIIH! I CAME! I'M COMING TO BEYOND THE SKYYYYYYYY-」

「Just what the hell-. Please no more-. Someone HELP MEEEEEEEEE-」

The sky was blue. The wind was refreshing, and the sea of clouds was beautiful.

Amidst such magnificent nature, three different roars from three different people were……

It was truly chaotic.

A while after the chaos had spread throughout the azure sky.

「Hics……」

「Don't cry, Tio. You set a new record you know? You are without a doubt the fastest living thing in history. You are amazing. In various meanings.」

There was the figure of Tio who was flying at a normal speed while sobbing and Hajime who was consoling her.

It stood to reason that Tio who reached the realm of four times the speed of sound, even though it was just for a moment, was unmistakably an existence that had deviated from the scope of living beings and could be said to have entered the realm of god. But, even so, she was unable to match the endurance of the near future type aircraft of

another world that could maintain such a speed continuously. In the end, she was left behind like this and had her pride hurt.

「It’s vexing, how vexing」

「Come on, stop crying already. You are amazing okay.」

Hajime exposed a gentle expression that was unthinkable to be coming from the person who just now was exhibiting storm-like whipping while laughing loudly. He was patting *pon pon* and caressing Tio’s black scales.

To be given the carrot after the whip, Tio drew in her tears of vexation and continued「But……」while being enveloped in an aura of happiness.

「We let go of a source that we couldst finally communicate with. What wouldst we do from here, Goshujin-sama?」

「H~m, let’s see. We can return to the floating island and investigate the cause of the island’s ability to float, but we have flown quite a distance away from there. Let’s try and go for a bit in the direction that guy was flying.」

「Well, in this first place, this art an aimless adventure, so I don’t mind that.」

While saying such a thing, the two continued to carefreely fly in pursuit of someone who they had no idea of how far he had escaped.

Sometimes Hajime would change their route randomly by saying things like「Let’s try going over there」or「Let’s try going toward that cloud」. Tio would tilt her head thinking 「He is not in the mood for chasing anymore?」, but even so,

there wasn’t any particular reason for her to object so she would continue flying following his instructions.

Like that, they must have flown continuously for half a day.

Midway through they discovered several floating islands while advancing past the scenery that wasn’t really changing. The time was finally starting to enter a period in which the sun was starting to sink below the other side of the sea of clouds.

Inside the world that was painfully beautiful and dyed in a madder red color, it appeared.

「Hee. This thing is also really big. Is this a mothership I wonder?」

「……It’s not clear if this is the place where that guy escaped to. Well, though it doth not feel like we art mistaken based on the direction and distance.」

「Ou. We aren’t mistaken.」

For a moment, Tio directed a really speechless expression at Hajime, but then she immediately pulled herself together and asked「What wouldst we do?」

Hajime displayed a thinking gesture while staring at the thing ahead of his gaze.

It was a large flying warship vacantly shining dull grey from the illumination of the sun’s orange light. Its shape was similar to a blimp in Earth’s terms. It had a small but wide shape like a rugby ball. When thinking about how it was made from metal and its shape, it was common to come to the conclusion that it was unsuited for flying; however, it was giving off a definite sense of stability even when seen

from afar. It was ejecting sparkling silver particles from the back while flying with considerable speed.

Its size was about as big as two aircraft carriers on Earth. After looking closely at it, there were countless cylindrical protrusions on its exterior. There was no need to guess that those were weapons on board the ship. Countless small square hatches were lined up. There was no doubt that those were for the loaded weapons like missiles or the like.

‘This is becoming even more like SF’ ——Hajime was thinking of such a thing while speaking out their plan.

□Yosh, the situation changed from pure fantasy to semi-SF. We too will job change from adventurer to spy.□

□H, hmm? In other words, we art going to infiltrate?□

□Yeah, somehow I’m getting thrilled. Tio, dispel your transformation. We are sneaking into that mothership overflowing with romance——Golia○ with a camouflaging artifact fully deployed.□(TN: Goliath is a destroyer ship in Laputa)

□It feels like that temporary name art telling the fate that ship wouldst meet though……the flag of its sinking art as likely as a certain Titani○-san□

Tio responded while emitting a bright flash from her transformation cancellation. She was hovering with her wings that were still showing due to her using partial transformation. Hajime also took out a skyboard from “Treasure Warehouse II” that he rode on. He activated a pencil Cross Velt and deployed a barrier for camouflage.

□Do those guys have the technology that can break our camouflage……we won’t know until we try it.□

「What wouldst we do if we art discovered?」

「Of course, we will have a peaceful dialogue. After all, I am a virtuous and exemplary Japanese citizen. If I tell them that I'll at least spare their lives if they hand over the guy that was screwing around before this, then surely both sides will be able to build a friendly relationship.」

「Goshujin-sama, that's a joke correct? Thy face art serious and thy voice art flat, but that's a joke correct? Isn't that right?」

Hajime didn't answer. Since ancient times, a good Japanese boy was a taciturn person!

In a state that was without sound, without shape if seen from outside, and furthermore, without heat that could be detected, the two of them approached sii~~lently from behind the mothership. They could feel how big it was the closer they got.

The two who arrived above the mothership removed their skyboard and wings before landing on the edge of a giant deck.

「……This is some unknown metal, but it doesn't have any particular effects. I guess it's just some normal metal.」

「So this thing art floating not because of the metal.」

Hajime whispered while kneeling on the deck with his hand crawling on the smooth floor. Tio was paying attention to the surroundings, but there weren't any signs of humans being on the deck. In the central part, there was an out of place room that seemed to be the control room of the mothership. They could see glimpses of human silhouettes across the

windbreak. They couldn’t decide whether that place was really the control room or just a watchtower, however.

「Goshujin-sama. Although we hath an invisibility barrier, I just couldst not calm down no matter what by staying for long in a place this open. I couldst see something like an entrance over there; how about we hath a look for now?」

「I guess. I’m curious about the material and some other things but……well, I can just take some samples with me.」

Hajime said such a thing as he casually tore off a railing and stored it into the “Treasure Warehouse II”. The area around ten meters away from the door that seemed to be the entrance became uneven as though it had been gnawed at by worms.

What a natural vandalism & larceny. Police officer, catch this demon king, please.

Whether he actually noticed the amazed expression of Tio behind him, Hajime, whose mood to be stealthy was nonexistent despite being in the middle of an infiltration, was advancing across the deck briskly until they were in front of the door that connected to the inside. He covered the whole door with a barrier so as to not ring any alarms from the difference in air pressure and the like, and he put his hand on the door to investigate if there were any traps.

He then used transmutation and changed the door into a mere hole and stepped inside with a casual attitude. Tio followed in, and the door was returned to its former shape again with transmutation. Lock or anything was meaningless in front of a transmutation master.

「For now, infiltration successful.」

「How strange. This art different from the type of infiltration that I know though.」

Hajime nodded in satisfaction that there weren't any alarms that triggered. Tio's expression was really complicated.

Both of them paid attention to any presence in their surroundings while advancing forward. They steadily progressed through the passage of smooth metal. Several places were gouged out by Hajime-san's hand. He was like someone who was using a coin to scratch cars on the roadside while casually strolling. It was truly a nasty prank (?).

「The driving mechanism is likely to be at the rear of the hull. Also, that area located at the highest position must be the watchtower or the control room.」

「Those sparkling particles must be one of the reasons why the island art floating. Then, should we search the rear hull first?」

Hajime thought for a bit before nodding at Tio's suggestion.

「Yeah, I want to quickly carve the meaning of regret into that guy who got away, but well, we know he is inside this ship anyway so we can leave him for later.」

「……Right.」

Both of them vaguely headed toward the rear hull. In contrast with how big the ship was, the corridors inside were unexpectedly narrow. Three people walking side by side would feel cramped.

Naturally, on the way, they encountered a lot of the ship's crew.

Hajime and Tio were able to detect the other party’s position using “Presence Detection” before they bumped into each other, so they were to keep advancing forward without being discovered.

Even in the case in which they encountered a small group inside the small corridor, they would just jump to the ceiling and pierce the ceiling with fingers thrust in order to cling there until the group passed by, or by creating an appropriate gap in the wall using transmutation and push their bodies into there until the group passed.

The mood was really like a certain spy movie somewhere. Hajime’s expression was expressing enjoyment as though his childlike innocence had returned to him.

By the way, when they were clinging onto the ceiling, Hajime would turn into something like human hammock to take ahold of Tio, and when they slipped into the gap created in the wall, Hajime would embrace Tio tightly, so Tio herself was also having a lot of fun with it while feeling embarrassed and happy.

It seems there art a proper country existing. They look like military personnel. Their ethics art low, but they hath obedience for the chain of command.

Yeah. They are a proper military with a pecking order divided into ranks. The fact that the military can deploy an expedition of this scale means that their country also has quite the scale to it.

The two made their conjecture based on the figures of the crew who were wearing unified uniforms with different color schemes, the conversation the two overheard, and in addition, how the weapons the crew were armed with were obviously guns that were also uniformly made.

Even while conversing like that, the two were enjoying their game of spy make-believe to their heart’s content as they slipped through several doors, passed through several spacious rooms, and descended several stairs before they came out into a particularly large corridor on the lowest floor. Wherein they suddenly smelled an unpleasant smell.

Hajime and Tio looked at each other’s face with a grimace at the familiar offensive smell and followed the smell as though they had been invited.

They could hear voices from the other side of the corridor’s corner. Both of them peeked out from the corner.

「Oi, did you hear? Those guys from Glowser squad, they were all annihilated except for Higgs.」

「Is that, true? Just what in the world happened huh. Was it those Avenst bunches?」

「Might be. But among the Glowser squad that *went out for supplies*, it’s only the messed up Higgs who came back in terror. That one seems true. Is it that scary just being attacked by that bunch?」

「That’s……perhaps, they used a new weapon?」

「You think that bunch has that kind of power huh. They are just air pirates that keep spewing out delusional words like tradition or pride or whatever you know?」

「Then, why do you think Higgs got that scared going against the like of that bunch?」

「Ain’t no way I know that even if you ask me.」

The two men were leaning on the corridor’s wall while speaking about several concerning topics. The source of the smell certainly came from those two. However, it was obvious from a glance. The reason was that their work clothes that looked like overalls were drenched in blood.

There was a large door in front of them. They must be doing some kind of work there that drenched them in blood. The two didn’t really want to imagine what was being done inside there. Most likely, the men were in the middle of their break right now.

「Well, anyway, it’s a fact that we lost four sky battlecraft. After all, we are ordered to extract spare fuel for aircraft like this.」

「You’re right.」

The two workers sighed at their comrades’ misfortune. It wasn’t clear how strong their feelings of fellowship were for their comrades from their conversation. However, it seemed certain that the work which drenched them with blood was necessary to replenish the sky battlecraft that Hajime shot down.

The two workers took a puff of something that seemed similar to a cigar before returning to the room while feeling that it was bothersome. When they entered, an intense smell——the smell of blood——was flowing from behind the opened door.

「Goshujin-sama.」

「Yeah, let’s go.」

The two’s personality weren’t so cute that they would falter just from the smell of blood after this far. In order to

ascertain the true identity of the “fuel” that was the source to make the sky battlecraft, and perhaps also this mothership and the floating island to float, Hajime and Tio approached the room.

The door was a sliding type, most likely it would automatically close after a certain amount of time. Hajime and Tio slipped inside the room before the sliding door closed.

And then, they witnessed it. The cause of why those pilots were trying to capture the dragons alive. And also the true form of the “fuel”.

Inside, the room was spacious. It had the height of two floors with a length and width that could reach a hundred meters. Three sides of the room were made from cages without any gaps in between. There was some kind of work stand in the middle of the room. Several things that looked like cranes and arms were protruding from the ceiling and floor.

The cages were filled with dragons and nothing else. The dragons’ sizes, colors, and shapes were varied, but they were living things that were obviously dragons from a glance. There were also grey dragons like the dragons they were playing with at the previous island. Even the biggest of the dragons here didn’t surpass three meters, and most were only small dragons with a size around one or two meters. There were also dragons with a size of around thirty centimeters among them.

The center of the room was truly in akin to a sea of blood. There was a large work stand with a dragon was lying down on it being pinned in place by several arms. The dragon didn’t have any light in its eyes, and blood was still flowing from its ripped open chest onto the floor.

There were around ten workers when including the previous two. One of them was carefully washing a small silver stone that had just been taken out of the dragon.

The stone was then placed into a machine nearby, and after the worker confirmed something that was displayed by the machine, he handed the stone over to another worker. The worker who received the small silver stone inserted it into another machine and controlled the machine while confirming something several times.

The small stone, which had an uneven shape before this, was then processed into a clean square chip.

The silver stone that was processed into a square chip was then handed off to another worker. That worker inserted the chip into the bottom of a cylindrical machine that looked like a thermos with a cord connected to it. And then, after he pressed several buttons, the meter display on the side of the cylindrical machine was starting to shine silver from below sequentially.

After witnessing up to that point, Hajime muttered with a small sound and expressionless face.

「……I see. So the dragons of this world also have something like a magic stone.」

「And by processing that, they couldst obtain this “fuel”.」

Tio who nodded beside Hajime was similarly expressionless like Hajime in contrast with her comprehending words. Her voice had no intonation at all.

「Surely the floating island also has similar ore like that. …… Geez, it would be a fantasy world banzai if this ended just with that. This really left a bad taste.」

「But, just because of that, we couldst not stop them or resent them. For them who are living in the sky because of the polluted land, dragon hunting art truly a matter of life and death. Perhaps obstructing them from doing that art the same as saying ‘die’ to them after all.」

「Yeah.」

To say further, because Tio was a person of the dragon race, she had just a little emotional attachment toward dragon species, but even so, if it was said that these dragons were monsters unrelated to her, then that’s that. Even on Tortus, she wouldn’t hesitate to exterminate a monster of the dragon species.

But, as expected, the likable dragons she first met in this world flashed in the corner of her mind. Therefore, there was no way she could think nothing about this work of making dragons into battery replacements.

It was just as Hajime said, even though they could understand what they were doing, it left a “bad taste” inside.

「Let’s go Tio. It’s enough already.」

「Right.」

They had seen and known something disgusting――Hajime and Tio left the room with such a feeling. The weak cry of the dragons that sometimes reached their ears sounded like a cry for help to the two of them. Even though they knew that it was just their imagination, they couldn’t help but sigh deeply.

Like that, Hajime and Tio were about to step out of the room. It was at that time,

gouuun-

A sound resounded to the bottom of their stomachs, along with the G-force that assaulted their bodies as though the ship was accelerating all at once.

The sudden change was nothing for Hajime and Tio, but several of the workers were stumbling or fell on their butt.

「Announcement from the control room. Sighting of Avenst is confirmed. This ship will enter battle mode from here on. All crew, go to your post right away. Repeat, this ship will enter battle mode from here on. All crew, go to your post right away.」

At the same time as the shrilly alert sounded inside the ship, a broadcast to the whole ship resounded. The announcement from the control room commanded the sortie of the sky battlecraft squad; in addition, an order that commanded the workers in this room to hurry with the resupply was given.

The situation inside the ship suddenly turned chaotic. The workers put around ten of the cylindrical machines into a case and put the case on a trolley before going out of the room with fast steps.

Following them, Hajime exited from the room while opening his mouth with a pensive look.

「Avenst, is that the air pirates those guys talked about just now?」

「Perhaps so. It’s unknown whether this is a coincidence or inevitability, but it appears this wouldst be a battle.」

The two didn’t know the battle strength of the other party, but it was unthinkable for a regular army that belonged to a country could be done in by a “pirate” group at best.

However, even so, an army in possession of unknown battle strength would battle an enemy with similarly unknown strength. They would like to be spared from harmoniously staying inside this ship in the unlikely chance that this mothership was shot down.

「Let’s get out quickly. We grasped the cause of the floating phenomenon already, and I smell a bit of danger from the energy that might result from the destruction of the power reactor that grants the absurd propulsive force to this mothership. Let’s take some distance and watch the situation.」

「Right. That art the wise choice.」

Hajime was thoroughly ignoring the flurry of activity inside the ship while taking a shortcut outside by irresponsibly opening stair-shaped holes in the floor using transmutation before he opened his mouth as though he recalled something.

「Come to think of it, that survivor……if I remember correctly, his name is “Sniff” is it?」

「Indeed, I think that person kept sobbing without end since he encountered us, but his name art not Sniff, but “Higgs”. Goshujin-sama, you only got the “i” correctly.」

「Well, it doesn’t matter if he is Hics or Huggs. Sorry, looks like we don’t get the time to beat him up.」

「Such a thing……I’m not really concerned about that. Just knowing that Goshujin-sama got angry for mine sake

already made me need replacement panties.

No need to worry. I thought that might be the case, so I stocked panties for your use inside the Treasure Warehouse.

What, the? Thi, this art the first time I heard that.

Yue made me bring them. Some time ago there was a chance when I went out with just you, right? At that time, she said something like Did you bring your handkerchief? Your wallet? Tio's panties? Geez, it's no good to be forgetful. Nn-.

What legal wife power……

The two of them were having that kind of stupid conversation as though to wash off the unpleasant feelings from just a moment ago while Hajime used the hole that he arbitrarily opened in the hull to jump out from the mothership that was cruising at high speed to the outside where the winds were buzzing thunderously. Tio also jumped out after Hajime.

Hajime wasted no time riding his skyboard while Tio also revealed her dragon wings. They began to fly parallel with the mothership after they had gained some distance from it.

Hajime laid out a camouflage barrier that wholly covered both him and Tio then turned his gaze to what the mothership was pursuing.

The flying ship of the air pirates called Avenst had a similar shape to the mothership, but its size was only a third of the mothership. What was different from the mothership was that its rear hull wasn't emitting silver particles but white light that even looked colorless.

The speed difference between the two sides was evident. The sky battlecraft that flew out from the mothership quickly caught up and began their offensive.

The airship of the air pirates endured the attack with skillful maneuvers while intercepting them using the weapons on board so that the sky battlecraft couldn’t get near. In addition, sky battlecraft were also launching from the airship of the air pirates, and they were also displaying splendid dogfighting techniques while protecting their ship from the assaulting enemy.

It seems the air pirates are inferior when it comes to equipment and numbers, but their skills are better.

The speed difference art obvious, and their turning ability and weapons art also inferior at a glance, yet they art splendidly enduring. But……

Yeah, the difference in strength is hopeless.

Yes, no matter how skilled the air pirates were, their battle strength was overwhelmingly insufficient. Even from a quick count, the difference in the number of sky battlecraft was three times. The power of their Vulcan and their missile weapon’s maneuverability were so weak that a spectator would want to avert their eyes from looking.

Most likely, the air pirates’ side would get shot down if they got hit by a single missile or several bullets from the Vulcan. In contrast, the sky battlecraft on the army side, putting aside the missiles, seemed like their battle capability wouldn’t be affected even if they got hit dozens of times just by the Vulcan of the air pirates’ sky battlecraft.

The air pirates were facing an enemy with several times their number. They couldn’t hope to shoot down the enemy

without landing hits several times as many, and they also couldn’t shake off the enemy using speed. The preeminent skill of the pilots was displaying a miraculous defense that would make any spectator to sigh in admiration spontaneously, but it was obvious that too was only a matter of time.

「No matter how you look at it, it’s not that the air pirates came attacking, but they, unfortunately, got discovered by the army……something like that.」

「O, Goshujin-sama. It looks like the mothership of the air pirates art changing course. Hou, it seems they art planning to plunge into those clouds that look like a mountain range see?」

They could see a giant waterfall of clouds on the left side. The river of clouds was flowing down like the vapor of dry ice falling to the ground from the towering mountain range of clouds that looked like it continued until the end of the world. It was merely a place with a height difference among the sea of clouds, but when seen from the side, it indeed looked like a mountain range of clouds.

Inside the sea of clouds was a place where black rain that caused necrosis on the cells and fierce lightning were raging. Was the airship and sky battlecraft of the air pirates that seemed to have low specs able to endure that environment……?

No matter how they thought about it, this was obviously a sink-or-swim gamble. But, either way, it was only a matter of time until the air pirates were shot down at this rate. There was no doubt that the air pirates also believed they had no other choice than to make this gamble.

The airship of the air pirates was starting to swivel left as though drawing a large arc. It was already partly damaged from being shot several times by the army’s sky battlecraft. Even so, it was evading the powerful cannon and missiles from the mothership, so it was still an amazing skill that they were displaying.

Although, if it was asked whether they could escape like that,

「……It will be harsh.」

「Yes.」

The mothership was approaching until it arrived nearby. The nearer it got, the more accurate their bombing became. No matter how divine the skill of the pilot was, there would be nothing they could do if the distance was closed further than this.

It was really unthinkable that the air pirates would be able to reach the cloud mountain range.

Hajime and Tio were watching that sight. Of course, the two wouldn’t head out to give reinforcements. These people were the “pirates” of this world — the outlaws that ignored the rules which protected many. This wasn’t a good problem to be mucked up irresponsibly by people of another world who came just to fulfill their curiosity of wanting a bit of an adventure.

No matter the problematic moral of the army’s pilots, no matter how the “fuel” production left them with a bad taste, it was completely unthinkable for them to be the air pirates’ ally only because of that.

As expected, the environment and the way of living of the people in this world were a bit too severe for the two of them to purely have fun here——Hajime and Tio smiled bitterly. They didn’t have the disgusting hobby of purposely enjoying the death of many people, so they averted their gaze thinking to withdraw from this airspace.

But, the destiny or something following Hajime and co around wasn’t that good of a guy that would let them get away that simply. All the events that happened in the other world Tortus, tumbling into another world like this when they came out just for a little stroll, then how that world had ended already, furthermore, having the scene of a battle between two factions unfolding in front of their eyes like this……

——Piiiiiiiiiih

「Aa?」

「Mu?」

In the battlefield that was decorated with explosion roars, howling wind, and orange flame blasts, suddenly a high-pitched sound reverberated. It sounded like a blown whistle; however, there was a compelling desperation filled into that——crying voice.

Hajime and Tio reflexively returned their gaze to the battlefield and caught a presence of something small rapidly approaching them.

A small shining silver creature was flying and weaving its way through the orange gaps of the explosions and the light of the setting sun that illuminated from the interval of the sea of clouds and sky. It was a small but magnificent dragon.

「Piih. Piiiiiiih」

The small silver dragon was desperately flapping its wings while raising a cry that sounded like it would tear up its throat.

‘A lost dragon?’ Hajime and Tio thought doubtfully, but they immediately noticed something else. That small existence was staring straight at the two of them, no, more accurately it was staring straight at Tio.

Hajime looked at the pencil Cross Velts floating around them. They were functioning normally. The camouflage barrier was going strong. Their form, smell, and heat shouldn’t be possible to be detected. But, the small dragon heading in their direction was going straight toward Tio no matter how he looked.

Hajime suddenly brought his face closer to Tio and sniffed repeatedly.

「Wha, what is it, Goshujin-sama? As expected it’s embarrassing to have mine body suddenly sniffed at.」

「No, I’m wondering if you have a unique smell that even my artifact cannot hide.」

「……Right now, it shouldst not be wrong of me for thinking of wanting to hit Goshujin-sama.」

Tio who was unusually angry was pushing on Hajime’s face with her hand to create some distance while her cheeks were blushing slightly.

Even while they were doing that, the small dragon arrived at their position, 「Pii! Piih!」it was crying out while circling

around the two. It appeared that it was really detecting their presence without any doubt whatsoever.

「Oi oi, what's with it? It's looking really desperate somehow.」

「……Don't tell me, is it looking for help?」

Tio stared at the tiny dragon with an expression that was lost for words. She was wondering why a dragon that should be fearful of humans was trying to get involved with a human conflict. Hajime was also cocking his head in puzzlement.

But, the strange matter was continuing further.

Of all things, the air pirates that should be heading desperately into the cloud mountain range was greatly swiveling while bending their path. The direction the ship's nose was pointing at——was in the direction of Hajime and Tio.

「What's going on? Don't tell me the camouflage barrier is really broken?」

「No Goshujin-sama. I'm only guessing, but this child might be the cause?」

「They are turning midair to chase after a small dragon when they are in the brink of being shot down at any moment? I seriously don't understand what the meaning of this is.」

Perhaps the army also noticed the small dragon's existence seeing how the air pirates changed course, as several sky battlecraft broke away from the frontlines and approached here. Even though they should be pressuring the greatly skilled air pirates' sky battlecraft, they still approached the

small dragon even if they left behind a hole in their side’s battle force.

At the same time, the sky battlecraft of the air pirates also ignored the defense of their own mothership and flew out toward the small dragon.

「……Just who in the world art thou?」

Tio unconsciously asked at the small dragon that was desperately pleading something. The air pirates that pursued the small dragon even if they had to throw away their life. The pursuing army that left behind the air pirates even though it was just a bit more before they could finish them off.

It was already obvious that this small silver dragon wasn’t just a mere stray dragon.

「Chih. I don’t know what’s going on, but at this rate, we will get dragged in. Tio, we are finished being a spectator. We are withdrawing from this airspace right away.」

「Mu, acknowledged.」

The two were curious about the small dragon’s existence, but it was out of the question for them to get saddled with an existence that was unanimously pursued by the army and air pirates. Hajime and Tio nodded at each other and tried to leave that place.

That moment, as though guessing the intention of the two, the small dragon blocked their route. And then, it began to emit silver right immediately after.

Tio and Hajime unconsciously stopped moving seeing the dazzlingly shining small dragon that looked solemn

somehow. Inside their head, a pleading resounded. It sounded vaguely childish, yet filled with a greatly earnest feeling.

「Help-, help! King, please! Everyone, my friends, help them-」

They didn’t hear any clear words. But, that feeling was certainly conveyed to them.

Hajime and Tio couldn’t hide their bewilderment. They looked at each other while standing still.

Instantly, a sound wave impact assaulted the area.

「Piih!?」

「Uoh」

「Nuwah. This art from that time!」

It was the same sound wave attack that the sky battlecraft emitted at the floating island. Furthermore, this one had more power than that time. It even generated physical shockwaves that mercilessly attacked Hajime and others.

Naturally, Hajime and Tio weren’t damaged, but the small dragon wasn’t unharmed. The small dragon that was emitting a mysterious silver light got blown away by the impact and began falling limply as though its consciousness was cut off.

「Ah, hey, get a hold of thyself!」

Tio spontaneously leapt out and held the small dragon with both hands.

「Tio! Don’t daydream!」

「Nu?」

The sky battlecraft of the army passed through instantly. When Hajime gave her a warning, it was after the second plane following behind it had launched the missile that deployed the net like the time at the floating island.

The special net burst in front of her eyes and spread widely to envelop its target.

Hajime cut in between just before it could envelop Tio and the fainted little dragon.

「HAAH!!」

A yell containing fighting spirit. The magic power that was gushed out directionally was converted into physical impact due to the skill “Magic Shockwave”. The crimson wave that possessed immense power blew away the cage net far away without any trouble.

After the second plane passed through, the third plane that was further approaching was decelerating while deploying something that looked like a hook from its lower part. Most likely it would use that hook to catch the cage net and carry it to the mothership.

The pilot of the approaching third plane opened his eyes wide in shock.

After all, just when they were about to capture the small dragon with beautiful coordination, suddenly a beautiful winged woman appeared midair and caught the small dragon in her embrace. Furthermore, the cage net was blown away by a crimson wave, and in the end, a man riding a flying board also appeared. That was why it was impossible for him not to be shocked.

Yes, Tio got out of the camouflage range when she leapt out, and Hajime also exposed himself because he fired the magic shockwave.

The tough-looking hook flying out from the rapidly approaching third plane’s lower part was about to hit Hajime, Tio, and the small dragon behind him.

The fingers of Hajime’s right hand bent like claws. He instantly swung his right hand toward the hook that almost hit him.

By doing that, what was left behind was the figure of Hajime that was reduced into a pile of meat and got sent flying——was naturally not what happened. There was only the sight of the torn apart wreckage disappearing into the sea of clouds.

The sky battlecraft that pursued after the army’s sky battlecraft swiveled greatly to avoid Hajime and Tio.

When Hajime sent a glance, as expected, the air pirates’ pilot was also showing a shocked expression as though his eyeballs were going to fly out. He looked really like「WHAT THE HELLLLLLLLLLLL-」

「Tio, how is the dragon?」

「Hmm, looks like it just lost consciousness without any serious wound. ……Forgive me, Goshujin-sama. Because I unconsciously jumped out, we art dragged into something troublesome.」

Tio showed an apologetic face while approaching Hajime’s side. Hajime shrugged while smiling wryly to that.

「If your body moved by itself, then that must be the action that Tio wanted to do from her heart. Then I don't really mind that. First of all, it's too late already to say that we were dragged into some troublesome matter by this time. This kind of thing can also happen from putting on air as an onlooker.」

「Ye, yes. I see. Thank you Goshujin-sama.」

Tio's lips loosened up greatly hearing Hajime's indifferent speech. And then, for some reason, Tio seemed to be nestling even closer than before to Hajime.

Ahead of Hajime's gaze, the scene of the air pirates' airship approaching and the army's mothership circling around the two of them was unfolding. The sky battlecraft were circling around Hajime and Tio in circles with wariness and bewilderment.

Seeing that kind of sight, Hajime's wry smile deepened, and he muttered.

「Now then, first how about we try starting with some peaceful "talk".」

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Just a little notice, the comic version that is in the middle of serialization in Overlap-sama's homepage was updated.

Damn, seriously damn. The impact of the fight against the claw bear among other things is just damn.

It really has an impact, and I can enjoy Hajime in his early days in the abyss with another fresh feeling.

If you are interested, please take a look by all means!

The next update is planned to be for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 233

Arifureta After II The Legendary Dragon Knight

Ee, everyone. This is sudden, but we are not anyone suspicious by any means. In this situation, we should strive to reach a mutual understanding peacefully, by means of communication like a cultured human shouldn’t wee-

The voice of Hajime that was amply filled with sincerity was resounding throughout the whole airspace. He was appealing by using telepathy, so his voice should undoubtedly reach both the army and the air pirates.

While the air pirates’ airship and the army’s mothership, which was located diagonally right behind it, were approaching, Hajime was hovering in midair while showing a friendly smile. The first impression was truly the most important thing in forming a personal relationship.

Tio, who was nestling close beside him, was nursing the small dragon in her arms while acting the straight-manNo matter how they look, thou only look like someone suspicious though, but it didn’t even give a single scratch to Hajime’s ignoring skill.

Hajime lifted up both his hands to appeal that he had no hostility while he continued his words like a cultured modern-day person.

「We don’t have any hostile intentions. No, honestly! I’m not lying at all! It will be a cold day in hell before I lie. A person like me is saying that, that’s why there can be no doubt about it. We don’t have any hostile intentions!」

「It sounds extremely fishy……」

Tio was saying something again, but his ignoring skill level had reached the max value, so there was no problem.

「Everyone, it appears that all of you are pursuing after this rug rat dragon, but the two of us don’t need it! Rather, we are even seriously wondering whether we should just toss this thing away over there.」

‘We don’t have any intention of snatching your prey okaaay!’ Hajime appealed so, but for some reason, hostility was overflowing from the pilots of both factions circling in the surrounding. Especially all the pilots of the air pirates, their rage was fierce. They were laying out their protest by punching *bang bang* at their cockpit’s windbreaker.

「……It was a joke. Just now was a joke filled with wit. That was my consideration to everyone trying to calm down this place. Anyway, we don’t have any intention of snatching this thing, so we will hand over this rug rat. Owner-san, please come out to the fro~~nt.」

For some reason, when Hajime said “rug rat” or “owner”, the killing intent of the air pirates pilots doubled. Somehow, he got the feeling that the more he talked, the more their hostility fanned up.

Even while Hajime was making a speech like that, the airship of the air pirates had approached nearby.

There, perhaps their mental petrification against the really strange duo was finally dispelled because the sky battle force of the army was starting to make a move.

It seemed that it was a fact that they tried to capture the small dragon alive, so instead of attacking Hajime and Tio, they resumed their attack on the airship.

Perhaps it should be called as an abnormal obsession because the airship was recklessly charging forward without even taking any evasive maneuvers. It was being bombed directly and was damaged all over.

The pilots of the air pirates returned fire. However, because their numbers were reduced by the army’s overwhelming attack, and how the airship wasn’t taking sufficient evasive maneuvers, and because there were Hajime and Tio——or more accurately, the small dragon nearby, their movement was restrained, and they were unable to deploy in a defensive battle like before.

「Ee, everyone, let’s calm down for now. I will hand over this rug ra——this young dragon, so both sides, please stop your ships. Let’s talk it out with each other about the handing over——」

「Please match your speed with usss-. And then, give Kuwaibel to me! Please-」

The amplified voice of a woman——no, a girl, reached Hajime, cutting off his speech.

When Hajime turned his gaze there, he could see on the front deck of the airship that was charging here, a girl carrying something that looked like a megaphone was leaning her body forward on the handrail that caused her to look like she could fall off at any moment. Behind the girl

were a tall blonde-haired young woman and a young man with the same blonde hair standing by. They were desperately holding the girl who looked like she could fall off.

The girl’s silver semi-long hair was wild from the strong wind. But, the girl’s expression was even wilder than that. Looking closer, she was a beauty. However, her eyes that were greatly slanting upward and her desperate look that resembled an ogre were honestly at a creepy level.

But, her figure that was reaching out her hand earnestly and sincerely even when she knew that she wouldn’t reach conveyed the seriousness of the girl.

The ship wasn’t decelerating. It would get shot down if it stopped. It was something definite. That was why the girl yelled for Hajime to match their speed pleadingly.

The airship was passing by so close that it almost grazed Hajime and Tio. The girl was still reaching out her hand with a despairing and grieving expression.

Hajime and Tio looked at each other’s face.

「Aa~. It looks like they also know the name of this rug rat, and based on the situation, perhaps what this thing meant by friend referred to the air pirates――let’s toss this thing to that girl and get away from here.」

「This hath really become troublesome in various aspects, I understand.」

They nodded once. Hajime and Tio started sliding backward with sudden speed.

The movement that wholly ignored things like propulsive force, or dynamics, caused several pilots who were looking for a chance to open their eyes wide in shock.

Hajime and Tio instantly approached the airship's deck.

The girl's expression greatly brightened up. The blonde-haired duo behind her looked wary.

Perhaps thinking that the small dragon was going to be handed over, the mothership behind the airship launched an innumerable number of missiles. It seemed that it took into consideration that the small dragon was nearby, so its main cannon, the majestic 3-gun turret, stayed silent, but in front of nearly fifty missiles, it was hard to say that it was "fortunate".

The Vulcan cannon loaded aboard the airship spouted fire, shooting down the missile swarm, but in the first place, it couldn't take evasive maneuvers. The sky battlecraft pilots also joined in the interception, but naturally, by doing that, the response toward the army's sky battlecraft thinned down.

One plane slipped through the defensive line of the air pirates and launched its missile.

Most likely its aim was the bridge. Human silhouettes could be seen across the windbreaker of a place that was jutting out in the central position of the airship.

The girl and the blonde-haired duo opened their eyes wide. They were staring dumbfounded at their last moment——

Ahead of their gaze, one smoking sky battlecraft barged in. It slipped in between the bridge and the flying missile without any hesitation.

It was a shield with one’s life on the line. For a “pirate”, that skill, that spirit, that everything, was noble.

A flame blast illuminated the bridge, the girl and others on the deck, and Hajime and Tio who were flying parallel to the airship.

The plane’s rear part was pulverized, and the front nose was torn to pieces. It was merely luck that the cockpit wasn’t blasted off.

But, there wasn’t any concept of bailout or anything for the pilots of this world. The reason was that there was nothing but the sea of clouds below when they ejected out. Inside that was a hell that rejected human survival.

「Bovid-!!」

The girl’s pained voice resounded at the interstice of the wind’s howl. Even though she wasn’t using a megaphone, the fact that her voice resounded excessively clearly was surely because the pilot was an important person for her.

「……Good grief. Well, I’m Japanese after all aren’t I?」

For some reason, Hajime was making a strange excuse while taking out something from the “Treasure Warehouse II” that he threw away. That thing, which was flying at a high speed that was unthinkable to be able to reach the battlecraft just from a snap of the wrist slid right under the cockpit part that was about to vanish into the sea of clouds.

And then, that thing that spread out with a *kashun-* sound——variable type chakram “Orestes” —— swallowed the cockpit along with the pilot through its center.

The girl and others leaked out「Eh?」while at the same time, another “Orestes” that was also thrown on the deck unfolded, and the cockpit appeared from there. The deck was dented along with a loud impact sound. The pilot who returned safely (?) looked dazed from being unable to comprehend what happened.

Hajime caught the returning “Orestes” while calling out to the girl and others who were dumbfounded by the unbelievable sight.

「O~i, you over there! You are this guy’s owner――not that; you’re his friend? You are, aren’t you?」

「Eh? A, e, u, tha, that’s righttt!」

Hajime asked while poking at the small dragon Tio was carrying. The girl was in a state of ‘presently in chaos!’; however, she somehow returned a word of affirmative.

Hajime nodded「Yosh」.

「Then, I’ll return him, so catch him properly okaaay!」

「Eh? Catch? Eh?」

Hajime directed a really nice smile at the girl who was all flustered and shook up. He ignored Tio who was speaking hesitantly「No, Goshujin-sama. Although the situation is as it is, that art a bit……」, and he strongly grasped the small dragon in an eagle grip.

And then, he tossed it away「Hoi-」with a really casual feeling.

「WAITTTTTTTTT-, WHAT ARE YOU DOINGGGGG-」

The girl screamed; however, she did that while running on the deck with surprising swiftness and performed a diving catch for the small falling dragon. At that occasion, she also seemed to perform a face slide, but she seemed to be unexpectedly tough because right after she lifted the small dragon to show the panicked blonde-haired duo.

That figure looked like an outfielder baseball player showing his fine play, or it closely resembled a person of a certain unpopulated island going「I CAUGHT ITT――――!!」. The blonde-haired duo was rushing to the girl while applauding. (TN: Click here if you want to see the pose. I don't really know what this refers too. Perhaps some kind of TV show in Japan?)

Seeing their figures like that, Hajime showed a really satisfied smile that seemed to say「Today too, I'm accumulating good deeds yeah」before he used telepathy once more.

「Everyone, with this we are not involved anymore. From the start, we were just a virtuous duo passing by, and so, we will quickly vanish so that we won't be a bother to everyone. Well then-」

Hajime prompted Tio and rotated his skyboard. The skyboard turned 90 degrees and left from the course of the air pirates. That was a course that went away from the cloud mountain range. Hajime predicted that the air pirates, who had recovered the small dragon, would head toward the cloud mountain range in order to escape the army, so he chose a course that was the exact opposite from that route.

But, destiny-san wouldn't let such a shallow demon king-san to get away! It was impossible to escape from destiny-san!

「Piih!? Pii~~? Pipiih!? Pii――――!!」

□Ah――, Ku-chan! DON’T GOOO-. COME BACK HEREEEEE-□

Such a cry and scream could be heard from behind.

When Hajime and Tio looked behind them in surprise, the awakened small dragon was chasing after them once more. Perhaps the girl had jumped out overenthusiastically because she dove past the handrail, but the blonde-haired duo caught her legs before it was too late.

The screams (?) of the blonde-haired duo□Pr, princessss-. Do you want to dieee-□or □Aa, this is bad-. Roze-sama’s clothes are slipping offffff-□who were looking desperate could be heard. The pilot, who went through that emergency landing on the deck, jumped out from the cockpit in a panic and joined in the rescue of the girl whose buttocks was getting exposed.

□Wai-, why are you chasing us!? Just as I thought Tio, a strange smell really is coming from you!?□

□That’s a cruel remark don’t thou know!? Even if it’s me, I couldst still feel hurt here!?□

Hajime and Tio accelerated rapidly.

However, surprisingly, the small dragon made its body to be clad in a silver color and chased them steadily. In contrast to the tininess of its body and its pitiful ‘pii pii’ cry, it was unexpectedly a speedy fighter.

□Uwaa, somehow everyone is following after us……what’s with this game of tag?□

□This art chaos.□

In the world of twilight, Hajime and Tio were in the lead with a small dragon, the air pirates' sky battlecraft, the army's sky battlecraft, airship, and mothership pursuing them in a straight line, which created a bizarre sight. Hajime was looking weary while Tio's face was twitching.

Even when they attempted to camouflage themselves using the pencil Cross Velts, as long as the small dragon was chasing after Tio by somehow grasping her position accurately, there was no other way to get away other than using speed.

Hajime withdrew Donner from his holster and loaded it with a special bullet, "Excise Bullet". It was a special bullet that could change places, along with the space around it, to another spatial coordinate. By firing the bullet with electromagnetic acceleration, and then exchanging places with it when it was at its farthest distance away, it enabled the user himself to move in the pseudo realm of electromagnetic acceleration.

「Tio, grab on to me. We are teleporting.」

「……Right. That's fine but……why didn't Goshujin-sama use it when chasing after that Higgs fellow?」

Hajime's gaze wandered around a bit while,「You, it's that you know, that. Yes, interfering in the battle between you and that guy is just inelegant, right?」, he was making a strangely lame excuse while his finger was about to pull the trigger.

But, just before he could,

「Whoops」

Hajime controlled the skyboard and made a sharp turn. The place where they were just at the moment before was pelted by innumerable bullets.

Furthermore, the sky battlecraft squad that cut in on the path Hajime was turning to was carrying out a strafing run with the Vulcan to reduce Hajime and Tio into meat scraps without even a shred of mercy.

Hajime further barrel rolled to avoid that, but,

「Oi oi, they are really feverish with murderous impulse huh.」

「Looks like they art losing their temper with this game of tag.」

Ahead of their gaze after turning around was the form of the mothership that had unnoticeably taken a steep climb and aimed its gun turret from its lower part from the far height. It seemed the turret was a type that could be stowed in since that turret that was protruding out from the ship's bottom was opening its large nozzle that had a diameter of around two meters.

It was a caliber that was too big to shoot cannonballs, but it seemed what it would shoot wasn't something like cannon balls or missiles.

It had a silver light converging in it. The energy was so immense their skin could feel it. No matter how they looked at it, it was in the preparation stage to fire a beam cannon like a space battleship that you often saw in SF.

Going with firing the main cannon of a mothership that was boasting its hugeness just to kill two people, these guys were really a bunch with a screw loose in the head.

Naturally, Hajime was trying to take evasive maneuvers, but the aim of that cannon turret was detailed in contrast to its size. Furthermore, the army’s sky battlecraft were joining in on the attack from all directions to seal their movement so that they couldn’t escape from the firing line.

Indeed, although this was for the sake of breaking the deadlock of the situation, it was unthinkable that the height of this killing intent was coming from the bunch who were refraining themselves from large-scale attacks in consideration of the small dragon’s existence.

「Oi, we told you already before, we don’t have any hostile intentions. We also don’t want anything to do with that small dragon! We also don’t want to get involved with you guys! We are going to disappear right away, so pull ba――」

Hajime’s persuading words resounded to the whole airspace using telepathy. But, before he could finish his sentence――the atmosphere burst.

GOU- The silver bombardment was fired from diagonally above and exploded the air. Due to the sky battlecraft attacking in waves, a wall of bullets was created between the two and the pursuing small dragon, distancing the two sides.

Therefore, that merciless attack dyed the world in a madder red color as though it was midday. Pouring down on Hajime and Tio like an iron hammer from the sky.

「Piih! PIIIIIH」

「Ku-chan-, Kuwaibel-! Come back quickly! Just what are you thinking of about those two!?」

The girl on the pursuing airship was desperately raising her voice using a megaphone at the small dragon that was forced to evade due to the shockwave that shook the atmosphere. Even the sky battlecraft pilots of the air pirates, which had been reduced in number, were making a shuddering expression at the bombardment of the mothership while circling around to the small dragon’s side.

The game of tag was over. The air pirates were now too far away from the area of the cloud mountain range that was their only chance of escaping. Actually, the inside of that mountain range area was relatively calmer compared to the sea of clouds, so it was the optimum place to conceal themselves, but it was impossible for them to return there now. The only way that remained for them now was only to dive into the sea of clouds even though they would crash nine times out of ten by doing that.

And to do that, they had to take the small dragon back into the airship even a second faster.

But, the small dragon in question was only raising its cry at the silver pillar of light as though it was searching for something.

It was as though it was convinced of the survival of those two who had disappeared inside the pillar without even a one in ten thousandth chance to stay alive……

「Li, es……impossible……」

Those words were surely representing the feelings of all the people on this battlefield.

The silver bombardment from the warship was vanishing as though it was melting into the air.

That attack should’ve annihilated everything without leaving even dust behind. However, while the brightness that was like midday was vanishing and the color of twilight was returning to the world, the future that should’ve been absolute was overturned.

What appeared was a sphere.

That solid metallic sphere, which was shining gently from the reflection of the evening sun, was further surrounded by jet black and crimson colored crosses around it.

「……It was an unknown attack, so just in case I jointly used the eight-point barrier and Aidion at the same time, but it seems that attack doesn’t have the power to break through the space isolation.」

「Well, this defense couldst even completely block the disintegration bombardment of the god’s apostles. As long as it’s not even a penetrating attack that ignores defense, it’s next to impossible to slip through Goshujin-sama’s defensive wall.」

kashun-kashun-kashun- With such a sound, the metallic sphere——variable style large shield “Aidion” ——was undoing its omnidirectional defense. It was several layers of shields sliding and contracting continuously smaller into its neighbor. Before long, the sphere was switching to its normal mode of a coffin form. At the same time, the eight-point barrier also vanished.

The battlefield was silent. No, more accurately the sound of the wind and the planes’ thrusters were reverberating, but the people on this battlefield were so speechless to the degree that it felt like that.

They were rightly amazed and dumbfounded. An individual was pulling through after a direct hit by the main cannon of a mothership class battleship unharmed. Everyone’s reaction was understandable.

On the battlefield that became still as death, Hajime started to monitor the conversations on the bridge of the mothership using the application of telepathy even while feeling his blood rushing to his head.

While they were all in a straight line pursuit, because the small dragon was in the line of fire the mothership couldn’t attack satisfactorily and left the attacking to its sky battlecraft. Yet why did they suddenly act decisively by attacking like that……

Inside the bridge of the mothership that Hajime was skillfully monitoring……

「Shit-, even that was defended-. Those guys, as expected they are monsters-」

「Impossible……we had confirmed it from the recording of Glowser 4, but……even though it was just sixty percent, that was the main cannon. Just what in the world are those two……」

「Captain-. Quick, quickly prepare the next attack-. The one with full power! If not, everyone will be slaughtered again!」

「Shut up, Higgs! We, the soldiers of the divine country are the chosen people that rule the sky. There is no way we will lose against just two pirates!」

「But-, those two aren’t human! You saw it right-? The male destroyed a sky battlecraft personally, and the female

transformed into a dragon and pursued me hot on my tail even when I used maximum speed!

Chih. Oi, someone take Higgs away! He is an eyesore!

It seemed that surviving sky battlecraft had a system for video recording loaded in it. With that, they knew the incomprehensible strength of Hajime and Tio; and using the chance when they were some distance from the small dragon, they launched an attack that could be said to be excessive. That seemed to be the case.

The person who seemed to be the ship captain gave an order with an angry voice at his subordinates inside the bridge who were making noise from feeling shaken.

Launch the air battle squads that are in the middle of standby! Don’t let those two get near the air pirates and the monarch dragon! Helmsman, circle to the left side of the target with velocity 3! Replenish the main cannon, maximum power! Fix pod number 1 to 20 to the target. Bullet type Grog! Keep firing without pause! There is no way a shield that can block an attack like that can hold out for long! Crush them with quantity!

It seemed they were seriously planning to shoot down Hajime and Tio.

The mothership was starting to circle to the left side while spouting out silver light. The Vulcan barrels and cannon barrels that could bombard using medium size bullet types were directed at Hajime and Tio.

Hajime’s eyes narrowed quietly. He broadcasted a voice that was losing its intonation using telepathy.

「You can hear me, right? Listen well; I'll say it one more time, okay? We don't have the intention of getting involved with the dispute between you guys. We have the awareness that it's us who are trespassing in your territory. We, the nuisances, will disappear. That's why, so don't direct your killing intent at us more than this.」

It was silent for a while. The army side was bewildered with the voice that was resounding in their head; however, the captain spoke his answer from his spot even while half in doubt whether his voice would be transmitted.

「Sleep talk after you go to sleep. There is no way we can just leave alone anyone with that kind of bizarre power and also being obsessed so much by that monarch dragon. Originally, we would want to catch you two for human experimentation to search for the secret of that power, but you two are just too dangerous. That's to say nothing of how you two had laid your hands on the pilots of our army who are the people of god. We will kill you two right here, right now, for sure.」

The main cannon of the mothership was gathering an immense amount of energy. Innumerable sky battlecraft flew out from it. Their number was already surpassing fifty planes when combined with the planes that had already come out from the battle before this.

The small dragon was trying to approach Hajime and Tio, but the army's sky battlecraft were obstructing it with a wall of sound waves. They also attacked the air pirates. The air pirates' sky battlecraft already amounted to less than ten.

「Piih. PIIIIH」

Just what was making it trying that hard? The small dragon was desperately calling out to Hajime and Tio. It didn't want to get separated from them, or perhaps, it was asking them

to escape together……it also looked like it was saying that kind of thing.

Hajime loosened up his expressionless face a bit and pulled the trigger of Donner. Two streaks of light flew out. One went toward the small dragon, and the other one went toward the girl on the airship. Just before it shot them through in a flash, the special bullets “Excise Bullet” stopped still in place, and using its effect, the small dragon was instantly transferred to the girl’s location.

「Just stay quiet at your friend’s side. Okay?」

「Pii……pih」

「Ku, Kuwaibel, is listening to what he is told?」

Those words that were said with an unexpectedly gentle voice in contrast with the dangerous atmosphere the speaker was clad in made the small dragon look alternately between Hajime and Tio restlessly, but after a slight hesitation, it replied back energetically. The girl who embraced the small dragon so that it wouldn’t run away for a second time showed a surprised expression at its behavior.

In addition, before they realized it, several Cross Velts were floating around the airship, forming a protective barrier.

The focused silver light was already at a critical point. The attack of the army’s sky battlecraft that became unreserved due to the small dragon’s distance was increasing in fierceness. Several thousand Vulcan bullets, several hundred missiles, and sound waves that were even accompanied with shockwaves came in such an absurd number that it was presumptuous even to call it overkill. And all those were concentrated toward just two people.

A flame blast enveloped the barrier, and the figures of the two disappeared inside as though a small sun was coming into existence there.

They were receiving that many concentrated attacks; however, Hajime, who continued to defend using only a barrier of space isolation, turned his gaze at Tio beside him. Tio shrugged and answered back at the wordless question.

「Goshujin-sama who art still trying to persuade them somehow even when having that much killing intent directed at thee art also not bad but……as expected, acting absurdly unreasonable with no question asked, that art what truly worthy for mine master. Goshujin-sama, holding back this late art unnecessary. Mine will art always together with Goshujin-sama.」

Hajime displayed a fearless grin and embraced Tio. If the figures of a man embracing the waist of a beautiful girl on the skyboard weren’t hard to see because of the flame blast from the missiles enveloping them, then surely the expression of the enemies would convulse grandly.

A calm voice resounded across the battlefield that was decorated with explosive sounds and impact sounds.

「……This is your last warning. Get lost, right now.」

Not just the captain of the mothership, but all the people who heard that voice felt a shiver down their spine from terror. But, unfortunately, it seemed they converted that terror into rage using their elitism and pride that was oozing from their every single word.

「Don’t falter! Fix them in place! They cannot move-. Their shield too shouldn’t be able to hold out for long anymore-.

Show our power as the soldiers of the divine country! Main cannon, status!?

Five percent left until the full charge, four percent, three percent……full charge! We can fire anytime-

Fire at the count of five! Air battle squads, pull back!

The red sky that was turning dark was dyed by the silver of midday once more.

It was incomparable with the previous one, and it wasn’t just the turret below the mothership, even the 3-gun turrets installed on the front deck also fired bombardments at exactly the same scale. The total of four silver bombardments tore through the sky with a might that ripped apart the atmosphere. The diameter of its hit range could reach ten meters. If the after-shock was included, then the area of another further ten meters was fatal territory.

Hajime and Tio’s figure vanished along with a flame blast that bloomed in the sky.

The world rumbled. The sea of clouds directly below was undulating and splitting from the impact. The cloud mountain range located far away had a large hole opened in its side and scattered away wholly.

Inside the light that should be called an aurora, the people from both camps were fixing their eyes upon that scene while holding their arm over their eyes or through a visor——

They witnessed it right after that.

GOU- The jet black spiral that blew upward and pierced the sky.

In defiance of the silver light, that pure black looked as though it was wordlessly asserting that it wouldn’t be dyed by any other existence no matter what.

“What’s, that……”Someone whispered.

At that moment, the jet black whisper converged tighter. It rushed out from the silver torrent and became a whirling sphere in the sky.

And then, it ruptured. As though the seal was broken. As though, born from a jet black cocoon——a figure appeared.

A single roar. A single flap of wings.

That form was magnificently, majestically, and gallantly conveying without a scruple of dignity as the supreme ruler of the sky that didn’t fear or hesitate against anything.

The large build that drew a line against the emaciated dragons of this world, and the overflowing dominating aura. Its existence’s mightiness that the skin, or perhaps the instincts, could feel.

“I’m concluding you guys, as my “enemy”. I don’t care whether you are from a divine country, or if you are a chosen race, or whatever. But you can learn it with your own body. That my wife is the one and only supreme ruler of the sky.”

Those words echoed through the whole airspace.

The people who suddenly regained their senses with a ‘hah’ noticed something despite this late hour.

Of the existence on the back of the hovering black dragon, with its wings spread and the blazing sun behind it. There, a man was standing imposingly, glaring down at everything.

Everyone couldn’t help but to feel awed by that figure mounting the back of the dragon that they had never even seen before.

Everyone held their breath and lost their words.

In the middle of that, the girl who was holding the small dragon murmured in astonishment.

She recalled a fairy tale that she knew since she was little. Yes, that was the legendary……

「……Dragon Knight, sama?」

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The next update is planned to be for 6 P.M Saturday too.

Arifureta Chapter 234

Arifureta After II　I am, Maou-san. Right Now I’m Right Behind You, You Know

(TN: Maou=demon king)

The first move of the battle’s opening was a roar that shook the atmosphere and a jet black flash that tore apart event the world.

「Bre, break up-. Brea――」

「I won’t make it in――」

The army’s sky battlecrafts flying about in the twilight sky. The evasion order that pilot yelled vanished in vain due the jet black flash that was mowing down immediately after.

It was like a swing of a large sword that was wielded by a giant in myth. Tio’s breath attack that finished charging in less than a few seconds annihilated three squads of five planes squad altogether with just one attack.

They couldn’t resist or anything and didn’t leave even wreckage behind. They were literally “annihilated”. Just like

swatting irritating flies, the veteran sky battlecraft pilots vanished like a joke.

If anyone looked further, they would see the sea of clouds split into two. It was the scar from Tio’s breath attack. An ocean trench was created in the sea of clouds.

-, don’t falter-. Crush them with quantity!

A command that was filled with reprimand was given. The sky battlecrafts were commencing hit & run without pause at Tio and Hajime who was riding on her back. Their Vulcan cannons were spouting fire and countless missiles were rapidly approaching the two.

Tio, let’s go. Beat into them just what kind of being the supreme ruler of the sky is.

Very well. Then, thoroughly witness mine flying technique that I fostered and evolved in earth. Don’t fall off no matter what, Goshujin-sama!

gagagaga- Without even caring one whit at the bullets of Vulcan cannon that hit her body, Tio roared.

It seemed that the dragon scale of black dragon that was the most superior in endurance among the whole dragon people race couldn’t even be scratched by the like of Vulcan cannon. After all it was something that only ended getting whittled on the surface even when it got hit by Hajime’s railgun, so this could be said to be only natural.

The approaching missiles were drawing near from all directions like a cage, giving no place to escape.

But, Tio’s figure vanished before those missiles could arrive and hit.

「——「Fang of Flame」」

Immediately after, it that was whispered along with a solemn voice manifested and accomplished its meaning. Around Tio who was flying with a motion that should even be called as rhythmless, four brilliantly blazing flame clusters appeared.

When all those were launched simultaneously, they accurately swallowed the missiles approaching from the front without leaving any and demolished them. While flower of flame blast was blooming in the sky, Tio who was flying while producing shockwave instantly took a sharp right turn.

She caught the back of a sky battlecraft that was trying to fly past.

The sky battlecraft pilot took a steep turn in panic to shake Tio off, but she followed closely behind as though mocking that wonderfully sharp turn. She launched a breath attack once more and blown up the sky battlecraft.

「Shit-, this bastard-. Eat this-」

Perhaps this one was a squad mate of the one just now. The sky battlecraft circled at Tio’s back in order to save his comrade that was followed by Tio, however, unable to save his comrade he got driven by rage while firing his missile.

But, that missile that looked like it would hit based on the timing and position was evaded right after that along with an unbelievable scene.

「Thy movement art monotone.」

「Somer, saultiiing——」

Yes, it was a somersault. Of all thing, the large black dragon before his eyes were somersaulting midair while flying with a speed that was nearly the speed of sound. Naturally Tio was losing speed, but the missile was unable to react to the impossible maneuver and passed through below her in vain.

And then, in a stroke of misfortune the pursuing sky battlecraft was tore apart by the black dragon’s claw when they crossed each other, and ended up as a scrap.

Tio used the momentum of the somersault and descended below while recovering her speed. While falling, she rolled her body 180 degree and reversed her movement direction. By doing that, the sky battlecraft formation that was about to pass in front of her right at that timing……

Naturally, breath attack and compressed exploding flame bullets hit the formation as though the attacks were absorbed toward them. Five flame blasts decorated the sea of clouds simultaneously.

「Thi, this is hopeless-. I cannot shake it off-. Someone help――」

Tio rolled her body 180 degree from climbing steeply into the opposite direction. She once more took the back of another plane with the opposite of the previous maneuver and blown up the sky battlecraft that was desperately escaping.

「The aiming won’t get fixed-. I cannot get a lock on-」

Even though this pilot had taken her back by sacrificing his comrade, he couldn’t lock on Tio who was flickering left and right with terrific speed like an outstanding aircraft.

And then, Tio spread open her wings and raised up her body. She instantly decelerated by receiving the wind pressure to her heart’s content. When the pilot noticed his plane already passed over Tio. And as expected he got annihilated with one attack from behind.

「To, too fast-. What the hell is this monster-. Is this really dragon!?」

There was an impact sound as though the air ruptured. Next white wall of air was generated. Tio who was easily rushing into the world of the speed of sound while making a steep climb rolled over midair.

「Use the Synthesizer-. Match my timing!」

Three squads were approaching Tio from below as though they were going toward the summit of a pyramid. Their plane’s frame was starting to get enveloped with silver color. From that, this “Synthesizer” was most likely referring to that sound wave attack.

Although, Tio didn’t even look concerned seeing that indication of the sound wave attack that could grant fatal action obstruction effect to the dragon species. Instead she began to swoop down.

The sound wave attack was fired. The air was undulating. Tio charged into that raging sound wave without any hesitation. Something like a free fall was lukewarm. She spread her wings while falling and with an elegant movement she rolled. Right away, a jet black typhoon was generated from that movement.

「Insolent. Fall altogether all of thee.」

It was like a divine spear that broke through a great wall. The black dragon moving in the world of speed of sound clad with black typhoon easily blew off the wall of sound wave and merely passed straight through the center of the formation.

A beat.

The sonic boom that arrived late instantly pulverized their plane’s fuselage and drowned them into the sea of clouds.

Without stopping Tio opened up a great distance from the approaching missile using pure speed and maneuverability, she then blasted away one more squad with a mowing down breath attack.

And, it was at that time a large scale attack was fired at Tio from the mother ship. It seemed they couldn’t get a lock-on because of Tio’s overwhelming mobility, but 80% of their ally’s sky battlecrafts had fallen anyway. Surely they were thinking that in that case they would just bombard the very airspace itself in a limited area.

It wasn’t a high firepower that pierced through a point like the main cannon. What was approaching was a swarm of missiles that might reach a thousand in number. That swarm which was a bit too brutal to be called as a squall prided a size that couldn’t be compared with the missiles launched by the sky battlecrafts. It was clear that it had an uncommon power without compare.

In front of the display of power of blowing up an airspace, Tio flapped her wings once and hovered in place.

And then, she bent her body greatly backward while sucking in air. *hyugoo-* She was making that kind of impossible

sound while sucking in air, which caused Tio’s chest to swell up rapidly.

The missiles that were approaching in a number that even hid the mother ship itself behind them were……

——GURYAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!!

The wind died. The air ruptured. The sea of clouds was blown away in radial shape, the atmosphere shook.

It was just a roar. And yet, it was a roar of the dragon king that granted terror to anyone who heard it without question. Therefore, the mere roar became a violent shockwave that spread through the whole airspace. The approaching swarm of missiles was pulverized by the wall of shockwave.

It was as though there was an invisible wall there, the missiles swarm exploded one after another in the middle point between Tio and the mother ship.

The sky where the curtain of night was already descending was illuminated dazzlingly by orange flame blasts.

「Oi oi, I don’t get any turn at all from the start here?」

「It was Goshujin-sama who ordered me to show the status of the sky’s supreme ruler correct? For now, I tried doing it with only using pure dogfight technique, breath attack, and a bit of magic but……was it satisfactory for thee?」

Turning back, Tio was directing a gaze that looked vaguely mischievous toward Hajime who was calmly standing on her back regardless of the heavy action.

Hajime was showing a half-amazed expression while,

「Those were midair battle maneuver things right? Kulbit and Split S, then Immelmann Turn and Cobra Turn? You also did various other maneuvers but, since when did you learn them huh? Well, it was splendid.」

「The fighter aircrafts in earth art wonderful. However, the sky art mine territory. Putting aside pure speed, mine pride wouldst not forgive myself if I lose in dogfight technique. I fished up various materials, played game, went to aerial show and learned. The most important thing art that it seemed that it satisfied Goshujin-sama.」

‘gururu♪’ Tio-san sounded her throat joyfully.

Because Tio could freely flew in the sky without anything like flying technique just by directly manipulating the wind, it was really bone-breaking for her to make the way of thinking like kinetic energy or potential energy to sink into her mind but……there was no doubt that her flying skill had rapidly risen up from earth’s aeromechanics, so she was really happy to be praised by her master when she unveiled the result like this.

With scales that deflected Vulcan cannon, excelling in speed and maneuverability that were even better than missile, possessing unrivaled powerful attack method, pulverizing the opponent just from the sonic boom, and on top of that she even had super first class flying skill that didn’t rely on her spec……

If the pilots of earth knew that their skill was stolen by a flying tank, there was no doubt that they would get teary eyed.

The flame blasts were gradually getting cleared by the wind flow.

At the other side, they could see the mother ship was charging its main cannon. The two didn’t know how the enemy was planning to make the attack hit, but there was no other way of calling them other than foolish that they still hadn’t escaped. The were overestimating their own existences too much.

The chosen people, the people that ruled the sky. The country of god.

Seeing words that dangerous lined up like that, it was clear that their pride was even higher than Everest, even so they couldn’t avoid getting evaluated as being a bit too thoughtless. Or else, perhaps they still had some kind of different trump card…….

「Well, just because of that doesn’t mean that we will just expressly wait for them though.」

Hajime was looking at even more air battle squad launching from the mother ship while the corner of his mouth rose up in a grin. Tio’s body that didn’t even twitch against Vulcan now twitched.

「I wonder, how does it feel to have your flank gouged out?」

The moment Hajime whispered that, the mother ship that was going to fire its main cannon anytime――wholly lost a part of its rear bottom.

It wasn’t a destruction, it was a loss. Like joined together blocks had a part taken off from it, a part of the ship’s bottom at the rear was coming off. While scattering crimson sparks.

The mother ship tilted violently. Furthermore there were a lot of people falling from that loss part. They couldn’t hear

anything due to the distance, but they understood clearly that those people were screaming with expression of despair.

「Go, Goshujin-sama. Just what hath thee done?」

「You see, while you are fighting, it was boring doing nothing so I fired a single shell at them. Inside it was packed full with spider type living golem.」

――Special shell　“Squirm Shell”

The shell that was fired didn’t even explode, but the shell that invaded into inside the mother ship was so to speak a cocoon. Inside it had a lot of super small spider type golem packed in, and they would be born inside the body of the enemy.

This time it was against a gigantic battleship so it was still better, but if this was against a large living thing…….

By the way, the shell could be filled with various things other than spider. Your favorite insect-san right to your position☆

「Ho, how terrifying……or rather, thy hath created something nasty there-. I’m getting goosebumps!」

「No, right now you got no skin right? You have dragon scale all over. Well, anyway, I transmuted a whole lot inside the ship through the arachne bunches and forcefully purge only that spot, that’s all.」

「Avoiding the topic so smoothly……cough-. Ri, right, that place over there art……fufu, I see. As expected from Goshujin-sama. Normally thou art a heinously cruel savage and sadist bastard without compare, but the kindness thy

show in this kind of time art just unbearable. I’m falling in love all over again!

Thank you. I don’t feel like I’m praised, so after this I’ll give you your savage punishment.

While his forehead was twitching at Tio’s words, Hajime used pencil Cross Velts to cover the entire purged part——the place where the dragons were captured and treated as fuel——with barrier.

While the mother ship was recovering its posture somehow, perhaps with the intention to protect the mother ship, about forty sky battlecrafts were charging recklessly toward Hajime and Tio as reinforcement.

Tio flapped her wings once to begin the dogfight once more, but Hajime stopped her.

Any time now they are going to struggle while holding delusion(hope) like “there is no way we can lose” or “we will surely win if we use this”. It will be too unsightly to watch, so we are going to crush them all in one go. Along with their heart.

Fumu, certainly. Shouldst I mow them altogether with a breath attack of maximum power?

I’ll work out a bit too. At this rate, I’ll be seen as a strange guy that is only riding on your back.

Tio chuckled at that really childish line. The sky battlecraft squads were approaching closer even while they were doing that. Even seen from afar, their expression looked damned desperate. But, a hope that they would manage it somehow if they could pull through here also could be seen dwelling somewhere in them.

「I’m telling you that it’s merely a delusion. Engrave into your soul, just who is it that you have turned into enemy.」

Right after that, what appeared was a swarm of black crosses decorated with crimson pattern. There were about two hundred of them lining up orderly midair behind Hajime. The scene of the swarm floating while clad in faint crimson light instigated a pure and bizarre terror. Despite the location being in the sky, the sight caused a vision as though they were lost in a graveyard.

Hajime’s eyes could see the figure of the pilots whose eyes were opened wide. Without taking his eyes off from them, Hajime’s hand elegantly waved like a conductor baton, pointing straight forward. The fingertips of that hand mimicked the shape of gun.

At that moment, the two hundred crosses rotated, the tip of their longer side faced forward.

「This is how to crush the enemy with quantity.」

A beat later. A thunderous roar.

The electromagnetically accelerated Burst Bullets fired from two hundreds Cross Velts were mercilessly launched in a rate of 1500 shot per minute. That was already like a wall of bullet that appeared in the sky. The battle of resource amount that was done by the army side before this was now returned back to them exactly as it was.

If they knew that if Hajime actually got serious, he could summon Cross Velts in the number of more than three times of now and several hundred Grim Reapers, just what would they think then?

The sky battlecrafts that got hit by the first attack fell into the sea of clouds in pieces. Even the planes that fortunately could dodge direct hit got their wings plucked by the Burst Bullets that were spreading lethal shockwave of crimson ripple midair and they fell.

It was just a round of offense and defense. Just from that, the sky battlecraft got their battle strength reduced until thirty percent.

「Something like this, is not battle anymore-. This is just massacre-」

「Just what the hell is that-. Where did he take it out from-」

「Is it still not yet-? The Negrade cannon, it's still cannot fire yet-?」

The pilots were in a state that could be called as pandemonium. But, that kind of *composure* immediately vanished. Because the bringer of death the two hundred crosses flew out all at once. With sharp angling and irregular movement that ignored aerodynamics, and sometimes while even generating something like afterimages, they were shooting down the sky battlecrafts one after another.

Indeed, it wasn't a battle anymore.

Amidst that situatin, the mother ship that succeeded in controlling its posture finally aimed its main cannon's turret at Hajime and Tio. It was focusing silver light, however, it seemed to be slightly different from its attack before. Inside the silver convergence, a muddy black was mixing like coffee dripping into milk. Looking really closely, the silver part also seemed closer to being white.

In a amoment, the white light mixed with black was fired along with a thunderous roar. Its power instead looked lower than the attack before, but Hajime’s instinct that was backed by experience told him that it was something more repulsive.

In front of that unknown that was likely their trump card, Hajime wordlessly made his “Treasure Warehouse II” shined.

The sun had mostly set, while the blackness of night was covering the world, it appeared beside Hajime who was illuminated by the white light.

「I’ll stamp it out from the front.」

Like that what was fired was the greatest light. The color of light shining brilliantly as though it was denying the night that it was still too fast for it to arrive, it was truly the color of sun that illuminated this world.

――Sun convergence laser “Burst Hyperion”

The horizontal firing of Burst Hyperion that finished charging. That was the true identity of the light. The sunlight energy that was converged and compressed to the very limit expulsed the world of night in the blink of eye.

The white light of the mother ship’s main cannon collided with the thick light of Burst Hyperion right from the front.

The power of the two lights rivaled each other, a fantastic phenomenon of lights blooming wildly that seemed unthinkable to be something of this world was occurring at the point of collusion.

「……How can an individual, rivaled the main cannon of a warship……」

The amazed whisper that leaked out from telepathy surely came from the ship captain. Hajime scoffed at that and replied back daringly.

「Rivaled? How long you are going to hold your delusion? Just this much ain’t enough at all.」

Hajime spoke the release keyword.

「——”Second Compression Furnace” release.」

Burst Hyperion was loaded with exclusive “Treasure Warehouse” that converged and compressed sunlight inside, but no one said that there was only one of it inside. It wasn’t strange at all even if multiple “Exclusive Treasure Warehouse” ——”Compression Furnace” were loaded inside.

What would happen if that second energy was liberated?

The answer was simple.

Something like a state of rivalry could be broken easily.

The attack of the mother ship’s main cannon was swallowed, terminated, and got pushed back gradually.

「-. Attack-. Attack that man! Use bullet that focused in speed! The surviving sky battlecraft squad too, attack that guy from behi——」

He was unable to finish saying that command until the end.

「——”Third Compression Furnace” release.」

This must be how the death sentence of the death god sounded like.

Like being swallowed by a raging stream, the main cannon of the mother ship was swallowed by the extreme thickening of the sunlight laser without being able to show anything that resembled a resistance. The advancing light of Hyperion kept pushing and swallowed a third of the front deck along with the 3-gun turrets, and pushed on until the sky at faraway in the distance.

Perhaps it was an instantaneous judgment, or perhaps a coincidence, it was unknown which was it, but just before the mother ship got hit it suddenly descended that it avoided the fate of being the Titanic of the sky.

However, it didn’t change that it was greatly damaged. It wholly lost its front and rear part as though something had taken bites from it. Seeing it tilting, with fires and black smokes, and also small secondary explosions rising from it, it was obviously in a tragic state, even so it was in a condition where it was barely hanging in the sky.

The mother ship was starting to turn around while spouting out silver light even with its altitude that kept descending.

So they finally felt like run away.

I don’t know what kind of effect that last attack hath, but that was surely their genuine trump card. And that trump card was defeated crushingly from the front and in addition they art almost shot down. If they don’t run away even after that, then that art the realm of lunatic.

The sky battlecraft pilots who were desperately running away even while getting chased by Cross Velts were also following the mother ship in panic.

The battle was over. The army’s gigantic mother ship that boasted great fighting strength was chased away just by two

people.

While holding back the emotion that was overflowing from that fact, the air pirate’s girl and small dragon were approaching along with their airship.

「Piih. PIIIIH」

「E, excuse me-. Kn, knight-sama-. True dragon-sama-. In this chance, we are saved from danger――」

When they were trying to call out like that,

「――”Fourth Compression Furnace” release.」

「Eh?」

「Pi?」

The extremely thick light blown off the rear of the mother ship that was running away in all broken up state. Along with the girl’s words.

In addition,

「The flies are……around ten. Then I guess it’s enough with this.」

Saying that, what Hajime taken out was anti-material sniper cannon Schlagen AA. Hajime who captured the desperately escaping sky battlecrafts through his scope pulled the trigger at the interval of his breathing. The shells that drew a beautiful crimson line in the night sky were shooting down the sky battlecrafts that were performing random evasion without even a single miss.

「……hiu」

「……pii」

The side profile of Hajime who was dispassionately performing blood festival using the escaping pilots without looking particularly emotional caused the girl and the small dragon to tremble in their boots while hugging each other. With a plop, the girl fell to sit on the floor. The attendants blonde hair duo were also staring at their falling enemies with pale expression. It was only the surviving pilot who was whistling「hyuu~」in admiration.

「Goshujin-sama. That aircraft carrier art unexpectedly tough. It's still flying. Shouldst we pursue?」

「No, there is no need of that. I'll shoot it down after harassing them a bit.」

Hajime who finished shooting down all the sky battlecrafts put Schalgen on his shoulder while grinning broadly. Voices that said things like「Dragon knight-sama……not?」, or「De, demon……」, or「Ru, run away quicklyy」could be heard, but for Hajime who was making that wicked smile, all those were trivial things.

Seeing such Hajime, Tio said a sentence.

「Fumu. That is to say, they couldst not escape from demon king-sama is it?」

It went without saying that the words demon king caused the girl and others to tremble even more.

On the other hand, around that time in the mother ship……

"Those two!? Are those two chasing after us!?"

"N, no! The targets aren't moving! They are letting us get away!"

"Be careful of what you are saying-. They aren't letting us get away! It's our strategic retreat that succeeded-. The next time you said something like that, I'll consider that as betrayal!"

"M, my deepest apology."

The atmosphere was completely rough. Everyone was gulping their saliva as though their throat was parched while their face was tensing from the terror of wondering if they would be shot down anytime now.

The captain was also in the same state, he was saying thing like"strategic retreat success"from his mouth, but his face was twitching uncontrollably as though he caught a bad sickness.

"We have to, we have to inform our country quickly. If we challenge them using a fleet, then next time for sure……. Oi, how long until we enter the range where we can contact the country?"

"The range is about 1500. But, our propulsion is lowering, and in our current situation where we cannot resupply, it will perhaps take two days."

"Chih. Those two, just how did they scoop out the whole supply room……no, in the first place how did they know the location accurately? ……is there, a traitor?"

Excessive paranoia was gnawing at his mind in this extreme situation.

But, at that time, a communication entered the bridge.

「This is the launching and landing station! Higgs is trying to launch in his sky battlecraft! He is armed and caused many casualties among the mechanics who tried to stop him! Someone, please send reinforcement! That guy, he isn’t sane!」

The bridge turned into uproar from the sudden notification. The ship captain snatched a mike and pressed the communication button toward the sky battlecraft’s landing and launching station.

「What is happening!? What’s Higgs’s objective!? Why is he trying to launch in sky battlecraft in this situation!?」

「We don’t know-. He is talking incoherently……we really don’t get it! He is babbling ‘that guy is coming, if I don’t run away quickly, the “demon king” will come. That guy is here already!’. He won’t even listen to our words!」

「How ridiculous. Shit-, we have no time to be concerned with a crazy idiot in this kind of time. I give permission to shoot. If he is not going to listen, then I don’t care just kil――」

The captain was going to give instruction even while he was feeling some kind of intense bad premonition. It was at that timing.

He heard it.

――I’m, Maou-san. Right now, I’m on the deck you know?

「!?」

The captain suddenly sensed a presence and he turned around swiftly. However, he saw nothing there but the door that connected to the corridor, there was no one there. He returned his gaze to the front thinking if he was hallucinating, but right after that, he gulped his saliva unconsciously.

「Ca, captain. Ju, just now……」

A helmsman was looking back with a pale expression. No, not just him. All his subordinates inside the bridge were looking back just like him.

「Wha, what are you looking at! Carry out your own duty! Right now we need to hurry even for――」

It was a hallucination. It was just a coincidence that all his subordinates were looking back. The captain was persuading himself like that while erasing the sensation of a bug crawling on his back by yelling angrily. He was trying, to erase it.

――I’m, Maou-san. Right now, I’m in the central passage you know?

「Wh, who-」

「Ca, captaiiiin-」

He couldn’t trick himself anymore. The resounding voice, the presence he felt behind him, they caused the captain to look behind him, but as expected, there wasn’t anyone there.When he returned his gaze with a stiff motion, as expected he found the pale figures of his subordinates.

――I’m, Maou-san. Right now, I’m in front of the elevator you know?

「He, he is, approaching here?」

「Captain-. The, the elevator number 1-. It's moving!」

「Who is using it!? The image!?」

「No one is inside it! There is nobody! Just why is it moving-」

The subordinate that was in charge of remote controlling the facilities nearby the bridge was staring at his monitor looking like he was going to cry. His monitor was projecting the image inside the elevator that connected toward this bridge. But, inside the elevator that was indeed moving and climbing up, there was no one there at all.

The elevator stopped and the door opened. The camera in the passage that continued toward this bridge didn't catch the figure of anyone. However, the elevator was moving by itself, then stopped in this floor, the door opened, and then at the timing when it seemed one person had gotten off the elevator, its door closed once more.

――I'm, Maou-san. Right now, I'm in front of the first room you know?

The first room――Defense room number 1. In case the mother ship was boarded by enemy, at the area from the elevator and the stair until the bridge, there were three rooms prepared for the sake of holding back any attack toward the bridge. Those rooms were toughly made with a lot of cover so it would be easier to intercept the intruder.

「Defense room number 1-. An intruder in front of the door-. You are permitted to open fire!」

The captain used the radio to give instruction to the soldier standing by in the defense room number 1.

But, there wasn’t any reply coming back.

——I’m, Maou-san. Right now, I’m in front of the second room you know?

A shudder of fear ran on their spine. The captain’s gaze question his subordinate who was monitoring the place, but he didn’t say anything and only shook his head with unfocused eyes as though he was losing sanity.

——I’m, Maou-san. Right now, I’m in front of the third room you know?

Even the defense room number 2 was easily penetrated. No, it was unclear whether it was fine to call it penetrating or anything. It was as though the door of those rooms didn’t even exist, as though there weren’t any guards inside those rooms from the start, “something” was smoothly infiltrating without any difficulty.

——I’m, Maou-san. Right now, I’m in front of the bridge you know?

Silence returned inside the bridge. Before they knew it, the damage reports and communications that asked for instruction toward the bridge that were coming like a storm from every posts in the mother ship had gone silent as though they were holding their breath. The only sound that they could hear, was the faint breathing sound, and the humming of the power reactor working earnestly to keep this gigantic ship floating.

The captain slowly pulled out his handgun from the holster on his waist. Inside the silence where even the sound of rustling clothes felt nerve-wracking, he gritted his teeth that felt like they were going to clatter, and slowly aimed his gun barrel toward the door.

「I, if you want to come then come. The moment you open the door, I'll shoot you to de――」

「I'm, Maou-san. Right now, I'm right behind you, you know?」

It wasn't a voice that came from far away. It was a raw voice of someone. That voice could be heard right beside his ear, as though it was said from a distance where the speaker was clinging on him.

Something like sanity couldn't be retained anymore. *「aaAAAAAAH」*In the end, no one knew just whose scream that was. When *pan* that dry sound rang out, the one who collapsed first was the helmsman.

What shot through his chest was the captain's handgun. The captain whose reasoning was blown away and fell into a panicked state shot the moment he turned around. After that, it was like a stone rolling down a slope. Everyone without exception heard the voice whispered right beside their ear. In a panicked state, they fired or hit each other unarmed. The bridge fell into a scene of carnage.

Such situation was also occurring in every section of the mother ship. Everyone had their mind's equilibrium crumbled against the approaching something. Their heart was broken from terror, those who ran and hid survived. But, those people were constantly feeling it. No matter where they were, no matter what they were doing, they still felt the faint presence of someone behind them.

People who didn't turn mad were less than twenty percent of the whole.

「That’s the situation there right now.」

「For now, explanation pleeease」

After hearing the current situation of the mother ship that had escaped to far away from Hajime, Tio whose expression was skillfully convulsing even when she was still in black dragon form was asking for explanation with voice tone as cheerful as possible. If she didn’t hear the explanation, then it felt like she would see nightmare from hearing just the end result.

「Look, there are the arachne bunches that infiltrated before this remember? Using them, I carried out one of me-style Harassment 108.」

――Demon King-style (Third Person) Harassment 108 “I’m, Maou-san. Right now, I’m right behind you, you know?”

This was demon king-sama’s version of a certain urban legend “Ma○y-san’s Phone Call” using super small living golem. While using telepathy to forcefully make the listener experienced of something “gradually approaching”, their sense of fear was also amplified using soul magic. Furthermore, while making a show that something was getting closer, but actually from the start the golem that was lurking on the target’s collar was using “Presence Manipulation” to produce “a presence of someone that was constantly behind them”. And then the finishing touch was naturally the recording of Hajime’s natural voice that said “I’m right behind you, you know?”.

It was one of the wonderful harassment skills that would beautifully made anyone insane with certainty. If “Peek-a-

Demon King!” was a sudden harassment, then this one was a harassment that was showing its effect gradually!

「……The idea art just too terrifying. Or rather, I think that the horror or urban legend of Japan art foul play. Before this Myuu searched the internet out of curiosity and then she didn’t come out from her futon for one whole day.」

「About Japan’s horror, it’s persistent like this, or perhaps I should say it has damp atmosphere……it has a characteristic atmosphere that doesn’t exist overseas after all. Well, for now, leaving that aside, let’s just use this to ‘kaclick’.」

Hajime who smiled wryly while shrugging suddenly took out something that looked like a switch, and then without hesitation he pushed that switch.

「……Just in case, I’ll ask but, just now, what did thou do?」

「Hm? That’s, it’ll be troubling if my arachne got carried away, so I spread them to the important places inside the ship——and blew them up.」

By the way, the arachne-chan(living golem) just now that was the size of a pinky could become a force that was about as much as 10 kg of C4 explosive. And then their number aboard the ship was around two hundred.

Not to mention the power reactor, the arachne also aimed at other places focusing at the bridge and other important facilities. And then they went *BANG* not from the surface but by using transmutation to infiltrate inside the machineries first.

Surely the crews who were beautifully in great chaos from the “I’m, Maou-san. Right now, I’m right behind you, you know?” were unable to deal with this.

The power was lost, the bridge was lost, resupplying was also impossible, and most of the crews were in the middle of madness☆. There was no doubt that the ship was falling right now.

If after this they were still able to return to their country without crashing, then that would be worthy of praise.

Seeing Hajime who was saying「An explosion at the end――that is romance」while making a really refreshed expression, not just Tio, the girl and little dragon who were still trembling, the blonde hair attendant duo, and then the pilot-san whose expression was twitching as expected,

「「「「「You demon-」」」」」

「Piih」

They gave a splendid straight-man retort with their voice as one.

If there were the classmates in this place, surely they would reply like this.

――He is the demon king you know?

Like that.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Actually, I just wanted to write simple dogfight.

If a dragon used air battle maneuver in a dogfight……won’t it be super romantic?

By the way, Shirakome isn’t that knowledgeable regarding fighter aircraft.

Because all my reference source come from Blue Knight. No, it was really interesting that I got totally engrossed. I especially super like chapter 22.

Now then, a report for a moment.

Looks like the sale for the fifth volume will be at 25 December.

You can also see the cover illustration if you go to Overlap-sama’s homepage you know!

Please go take a look if you can.

Please take care of Arifureta from here on too.

Arifureta Chapter 235

AN:

□The data……vanished?□

Just like that person whose spirit pressure really vanish, the data didn’t revive.

I’m sorry, right now I’m in the middle of rewriting. I should be able to update tomorrow afternoon!

Although, the chapter this time is something like the exposition turn, so the story is not really interesting.

Anyway, as an apology that the update will be late, I uploaded the artifact catalog.

Arifureta After Story II

Artifact Catalogue

This is a catalogue of Hajime’s artifact.

Please read it to kill time.

Shirakome himself doesn’t grasp the whole thing, so perhaps there is still other.

For the artifact of other members, I’ll eventually add them in the list.

(TN: I made up all the German word here because I’m too lazy. Leave a comment if you know the correct word, and I’ll edit it later.)

Donner & Schlag

Total length 35 cm. Rotating style magazine with 6 shots. Made from composite ore of Tauru ore, Shutaru ore, and Athantium ore.

The origin of the naming was from German language □thunderbolt□or□lightning□, something like that.

Schlagen

Total length around three meters, single shot, electromagnetically accelerated anti-material rifle with zero caliber.

The naming origin was from German language 「Zerschlagen(Pulverizing)」……I think.

Schlagen AA

The successor of Schlagen. Its power and range were greatly improved. It surpassed the framework of a sniper rifle and reached the level of sniper cannon.

AA was the abbreviation of「Acht Acht」. I don’t know the detail of the spec, but language nuance was wonderful. It seemed that the power was also amazing. Therefore I adopted it.

Metzelei

Gatling railgun. Six rotating gun barrels, 30 mm caliber, it could shot about 12000 shots per minute. The cooling of early day version couldn’t follow along, and it could only keep shooting for around five minutes.

Metzelei Disaster

A six barreled gatling gun where each barrel was originally one Metzelei. The power was simply increased six times.

Orkan

Missile & rocket launcher.

Agni Orkan

A winged cross with a total length of 3 meters. It could simultaneously fire 300 pencil missiles.

Pile Bunker

Romance

Gatling Pile Bunker

Super Romance

Cross Bit

Flying cross. It could become a shield, or it could also fire exploding bullet. It could also form a barrier by connecting to each other with wire.

Cross Velt

The successor of Cross Bit. It had black color with red pattern — the culmination of chuuni.

Pencil Cross Velt

Alias “Don’t touch, you pervert!”

Hyperion

Sunlight convergence laser. It went *chudon* from the sky.

Burst Hyperion

The successor of *chudon* from the sky.

Mirror Bit

The machines on board the sky *chudon*. It could explode sunlight energy using Treasure Warehouse.

Chakram

Chakram. Its central part turns into a gate.

Variable style chakram Orestes

Wire was installed inside the chakram. It could deploy an extra-large gate by splitting into three parts.

Grim Reaper

Mechanized monster. It is fully loaded with ordnances inside.

Meteor Impact

A mere rock. The opponent dies.

Magic power cannon Grenzen

It’s non-lethal, so it’s fine!

Treasure Warehouse

Anything could enter

Magic power 4-Wheel Drive Brieze

A car that looks similar to a Hummer. Fully loaded with gimmicks like blades, caltrops, hand grenades, a sniper rifle, etc.

Magic power 2-Wheel Drive Schutaif

A bike that looks American. Currently, it was demonically remodeled into Shia’s wheels. It seemed it could also fly in the sky.

Bola

For binding. Recently it was used exclusively for Tio, or for Hajime mommy to dry clothes.

Artificial Arm

Kuh, be calm my left hand-

Ornis

Bird-shaped reconnaissance plane. There were also various other shapes.

Large Shield

Coffin shaped. It could let out a stake from below to fix it into the ground. Made from the composite of three kinds of ores.

Variable style large shield Aidion

It could turn into sphere shape that defended from all directions.

Hour Crystal

Slowing down the flow of time of a certain range.

Skyboard

Eu○ka (TN: Refer to Eureka Seven I think)

Ferner

Manta shaped airship. It used gravity control so it could make abnormal maneuvers.

Submarine

It could endure even magma.

Hand Grenade *chudon*

Flashbang Grenade *kats*

Burning Grenade *goo*

Paralysis Grenade *abah*

Tear-Gas Grenade *nngih*

Frag Grenades ……

Telepathy Stone Another world version mobile phone

Specific Stone Another world version GPS

Distant Viewing Stone Another world version telescope

Reaction Stone Another world version remote control device

Magic Eye Stone Chuuni

Sealing Stone It dispersed magic power. The block that sealed Yue

Crystal Key

The key that opened even the door that crossed worlds

Compass of Guidance Crossing

It could find anything

Magic crystal series

It could stock up magic power. There were various shapes like a ring, earring, bracelet, etc.

Cheatmate

Basic ability increase. It could strengthen the body to endure Limit Break. Cheat is your friend!

Novum Idola

It can make an illusion.

Delischanors

Something that bestowed a duplicate soul. It obstructed the soul interference from the opponent. By using it in conjunction with a living golem, a pseudo-clone could be created.

Lob Regenschirm

Three stages assault lance that rotated in high speed. With the sealing stone, unique unevenness, and high-speed rotation, it would dig through and disperse the magic itself.

Special bullet Living Bullet A living bullet. It would listen to a simple order of the user and crush the target.

Special bullet Burst Bullet A bullet that was accompanied by a shockwave.

Special bullet Excise Bullet It could switch the coordinate along with the space between bullet and bullet, or bullet and the user

Special bullet Vision Bullet By using it in conjunction with Novum Idola, it could launch illusion.

☆Addition.

Living Golem Arachne

Spider-type golem. It could launch things like sleeping drug, paralysis drug, weakening drug, and so on. Even transmutation is OK. It’s relatively all-purpose

Satellite type Bel Agharta

It poured down the light of regeneration magic.

Special bullet Squirm Shell

A shell that could be packed with various things and fired. Large creatures would unavoidably get teary eyed.

Torpedo

It could dye an oasis red. It could also kill an ancient monster quite a bit.

Tent and Kotatsu

The height of civilization that Hajime created

Camping Kit

Right now it was 3LDK with system kitchen attached by using space expansion

Dryer

It increases the glossiness

Impact Grenade

hidebuh

Mask series

Mask pink is retired uniform. Greatly increased battle ability

Gate Key & Gate Hall

Anywhe○ Door without door (Limited to a place with Gate Hall)

Gran Farensen

It increased gravity by several times over.

Last Zell

Limit Break for everyone

Drucken

Shia’s war hammer. It was changeable to become bombing mode.

Wirr Drucken

Drucken’s successor. It could become 100 Ton Hammeeerr

Black Slavery Whip

Tio’s whip. It could mass produce a black dragon. There were also times where Hajime used it on Tio.

Demon Sword of Circle Calamity Anima Ernte

Kaori’s twin large sword. Drain type demon sword.

Holy Sword of Gospel Bel Rexion

Kaori’s twin large sword. Healing type holy sword.

Schutzengel

Installation type. It deployed Kaori’s barrier magic in large scale.

Black katana

Shizuku’s beloved katana. The first present from Hajime. At night, she gives it maintenance while grinning broadly. Lightning Clad – Wind Claw – Gravity Cut, etc.

Will demonstrating katana swarm

Anyway, it’s a swarm of black katana that moved by themselves. I’m lacking in chuuni power. Naming under review.

Twin Iron Fan

The user is Suzu. A tiny kid will look slightly elegant with this.

Air Force Boots

You can soar in the sky

Living golem Demon Rangeeerr

Myuu’s golem squadron. They had an ego before anyone knew it. Myuu christened them “Belfegoor” “Satan” “Asmodeusu” “Lusife~r” “Mamon” “Leviatan” “Baalsebuf”

Recently, the small golems that she received by begging at papa were christened with names like “Agaresu” “Sitrii” or “Marubas” and so on……

Donneer – Schlaag

The small version of Donner & Schlag exclusive for Myuu. It could also perform electromagnetic acceleration using magic power battery

Kotetsuu – Muuramasa

Short swords exclusive for Myuu. Recently it felt like they were starting to have awareness……

This is Weapon Desu

Myuu’s exclusive black whip. It could exterminate terrorist’s “son”.

Don’t Touch, You Pervert

Myuu’s exclusive pencil Cross Velt

Pikko Piko Hammeer

Myuu’s exclusive piko piko hammer. Its tip had rabbit character.

Yue-oneechan’s Love

Myuu’s exclusive jewel magecra○.

Artifacts enchanted with concept magic are excluded. Because it only used that one time.

‘Other than that there is also something like this right?’ If you remember something like that, then I’ll add it if I can bother you to write it on the review.

Pardon me if the artifact explanation is atrocious……

Arifureta Chapter 236

AN: I made it yeah…….

Well, it’s just an exposition chapter, so it’s not even content with considerable appeal though (bitter smile).

Thank you very much for the artifact’s supplement.

‘Come to think of it; there is also something like that huh.’ I got that thought a lot of time.

I’ll add on it as occasion calls.

Arifureta After II The History of the Sky World

A sound like the creaking of metal resounded, the airship’s altitude lowered with a jerk.

「Kyah」

「Piih」

The silver-haired girl and little dragon who were hugging each other while trembling raised a scream at Hajime who was showing a really nice smile in a savage manner. The blonde-haired female made contact using something like a radio toward the place that seemed to be the bridge and asked what was happening.

「Roze-sama-. The damage to the ship is horrible; we cannot maintain our floating power-」

The magnified voice resounded to the whole ship. The silver-haired girl who was called Roze quickly returned to her senses, and then she turned her gaze at the little dragon——Kuwaibel. Kuwaibel turned its gaze at Roze and nodded once.

「Piiii~~~」

It raised a high-pitched cry. Silver light overflowed from its small body which gently enveloped the airship.

「Floating power increasing, 50 percent. Please just a bit more, Kuwaibel-sama.」

「Pii, pipih」

Kuwaibel puffed up his chest with a face that looked a bit triumphant, as though to say「Just leave it to me!」. It seemed that the declining ship was recovering its floating power with the help of that special silver power.

Roze let out a relieved sigh, and she tightly hugged her beloved friend and partner Kuwaibel again. She then returned her gaze at Hajime and Tio who were looking at them with a very interested gaze.

She stood up, put down Kuwaibel beside her, and then she showed an elegant bow that resembled a courtesy. Her hair was ruffled from the wind, her clothes were also a modest thing that looked like an overall, yet her appearance had a gracefulness that would make people who saw her get taken aback.

「It’s a great honor to be able to meet you for the first time, dragon knight-sama, true dragon-sama. I am Avenst Kingdom’s queen Roze Phiris Avenst. As the representative of the dragon kingdom, my greatest thanks for your assistance in this chance. ……Unfortunately, we are in this kind of condition, so we cannot even show you our gratitude satisfactorily, but please, you can rest your wings in our ship Rozeria by all means.」

The two comprehended, indeed this girl’s attire looked shabby, but now they could understand the reason for the

refinement this girl was clad with. It seemed that Hajime’s prediction that she wasn’t just a mere pirate was correct.

Roze’s words caused the gaze of the blonde-haired male and female at both her sides to wander around. It was a fact that they were saved, but the two people in front of them were too much of an unknown. As people whose mission was to protect the queen’s safety, Tio’s existence added with Hajime’s deed and great power were making them hesitate if it was okay to approach these two simply.

「Piih. Pipii!」

「Ah, hey-, Ku-chan! That’s impolite!」

They couldn’t possibly defy these two, but they also couldn’t abandon their wariness……the blonde-haired duo were unconsciously putting themselves on guard, but Kuwaibel only gave a glance at the duo who were like that before he quickly flew out and began to fly around Hajime and Tio happily.

Roze was yelling「Come back hereee~e!」with an angry face, but Kuwaibel looked really curious about Tio in her dragon’s form, so he was flying in front of Tio’s nose tip while sending a deeply interested gaze.

「Tio.」

「Acknowledged.」

With Hajime’s call, Tio enveloped her body with a cocoon of black magic power light. The cocoon was shrinking whizzingly. Right after that, the magic power scattered like a bursting bubble and from inside Tio appeared in her usual appearance.

「……Holy cow. She really can turn into a human. It’s just like in legend.」

「Even when I see it with these eyes, I still cannot believe it.」

「Nee-san. Can you punch me a bit? I think I’m hallucinating.」

The pilot who was saved by Hajime――Bovid was putting his hand on his forehead while muttering, while the blonde-haired duo were also opening their eyes wide in disbelief.

Hajime and Tio ignored their shock and landed on the deck. When they did that, Tio was floating with the dragon wings she let out, but Hajime was normally *stepping on the air* and walked down, so everyone including Roze stared with their eyes almost jumping out from the socket.

Under Hajime’s feet that were walking normally as though he was going down a stair were crimson ripples spreading with each step. Everyone was staring at that wordlessly. Even after Hajime had stood on the deck, the gaze of everyone was still glued on Hajime’s feet.

「Oi, come back to your senses. We also have various things that we want to ask. The time is limited y’know.」

Hajime tapped his foot while saying that. Hearing that, Roze and others returned to their senses with ‘hah’ and their gaze met Hajime. Though their gaze still kept glancing at Hajime’s feet.

「Tha, that’s rude of us. E, excuse me dragon knight-sama. For you to come down here, can I take that to mean that you are going to give us the honor by resting your wings on our ship?」

「I’m not a dragon knight, and depending on the situation I’ll leave right away but……well, it’s true that for the time being I’m thinking of talking with you guys.」

The blonde hair duo frowned at Hajime’s wording. They reflexively were about to say something, but then Bovid elbowed them saying「Don’t get in her majesty’s way」.

「Is that so……I’m glad. Welcome, dragon knight-sama, true dragon-sama. If it won’t displease you, can I please ask for your name?」

「That’s why I told you I’m not a dragon knight. ……I am Hajime, and this is Tio.」

「Nice to meet thou, queen-sama with circumstance.」

「Yes, it’s an honor to meet the two of you, Hajime-sama, Tio-sama.」

Roze smiled widely while adding ‘sama’ when calling the two of them. While she introduced herself as a queen of a country, it seemed she completely saw Hajime and Tio as above her. Surely the reason for her attitude like this was related to the unfamiliar terms she was using before this.

Anyway, they were able to create a friendly atmosphere unlike with the army faction, so Hajime turned his gaze to another direction. Lured by that, the gaze of Roze and others followed Hajime’s, and there they caught sight of the thing that Hajime was looking at. It was a giant mass of metal — the part of the mothership that was forcefully purged.

「Excuse me, that’s……」

Roze raised a questioning voice. Hajime manipulated his Cross Velt in exchange for replying to her. The metal mass

that was surrounded by barrier was approaching following the Cross Velts' movement.

"Well, it's nothing. These guys are innocent after all, so as expected making them fall together is just too much."

"E, err……"

Giving only a glance at the bewildered Roze, Hajime used convergence transmutation to dissolve the metal mass in front of his eyes into particle state. The sight of the gigantic mass of metal surrounded by crimson sparks and rustlingly vanished into sand shape made everyone speechless.

Although, the true surprise came after that. The state inside was exposed when the outer wall was vanishing. Inside there was,

"Wha-. Dragons are, that many inside there……"

"Chih, so it's something like this. So inside there is the fuel store of those guys' ship."

Roze pressed her hands on her mouth and leaked out a whisper, and Bovid was clicking his tongue while saying the correct answer.

The room where nearly a hundred dragon species were locked in dissolved in the blink of an eye. Several fist-sized metal lumps were created above Hajime's hand, and they were then stored into "Treasure Warehouse II".

Perhaps because the dragons hadn't flown for long, when the cage locking them in was gone, they were falling without even able to fly. They fell with a flop on the barrier floor that Hajime spread and then they looked around in astonishment while sitting.

「This is troubling. It would be great if they can just fly away quickly but……they don’t even have the strength to fly huh.」

「Uumu. It wouldst take some effort to care for this number. What to do, Goshujin-sama? There art also an option to use cheatmate and mine metamorphosis magic to remodel their body forcefully.」

Tio suggested using the magic that once transformed the enemy monsters in the holy precincts into black dragons. Hajime carefully pondered that suggestion, but the problem was resolved before he could give the answer.

「Piih, PiiIIlhpipih」

Kuwaibel flew up in front of the dragons that weren’t trying to fly away and then his body shined silver. The overflowing light was scattering like rain while showering the dragons. After a while, the dragons were starting to move their wings in bewilderment.

At first, it was slow. As though to ascertain the feeling. As though to recall the past.

One dragon, and then one more dragon was floating, and the dragons began to dance in the sky.

「Monarch dragon……was it? That was how those guys called this rug rat dragon.」

「Yes. A dragon that grants power to the dragon species. He is truly ought to be called the king of dragons.」

Dragons in various size were flying around the small dragon clad in silver in adoration, as though they were offering their

respect. Hajime and Tio’s expression turned admiring while watching that sight.

Before long, the dragons flapped their wings powerfully and became a single flock that flew away. Most likely there was also a floating island in that direction. Kuwaibel was clearly giving out instruction to them to fly over there. It was certain that they would be able to rest their wings there.

「Thank you very much Hajime-sama, Tio-sama. To think that the two of you were able to save those children in the middle of that battle……how very admirable. As the representative of the dragon kingdom that loves dragons and wishes to be together with dragons, I offer the two of you my gratitude.」

Roze who stepped forward gracefully bowed her head deeply.

It appeared that Roze and her group were harboring a feeling of affection to the dragon species, different from the army faction. Seeing that their side also had sky battlecraft and airship, Hajime thought that they were using the energy body that seemed to come from the dragon’s heart, but based on what he saw from Roze’s behavior then perhaps there was another method than that. No matter what he couldn’t imagine this group killing dragons and taking out their cores.

While Hajime and Tio’s interest was stimulated inside their heart thinking that there were more and more things he wanted to ask with this, they were guided by Roze to go to the reception room. That was how it went but……

The terrible condition inside the ship that was littered with holes, the crews running around for repair, and then the strange noise that sometimes resounded and the condition

that made it seemed like the airship would fall anytime, those factors caused Hajime to ask「……Is this airship okay?」. In response to that, Roze's reply was「I, it's fine you know?」with question mark inside her sentence and her gaze swimming around everywhere. In the end, Hajime rushed around to repair the ship.

He wanted to be spared of the ship crashing while they were talking, so he made them guide him to the broken area and performed repair one after another using transmutation. If there was a lack of material, Hajime used a part of the material that he snatched in a great amount from the mothership.

Right after crimson spark surged, the damaged place became just like new in the blink of an eye. The absurd spectacle caused all the crews including Roze to goggle.

Even when they were in the middle of moving to the next place, their gaze was nailed at Hajime's hand. When the hand moved to the right, their gaze would also go to the right, when it moved to left their gaze would also go left. When Hajime tried rotating his arm in a cir~cle, their gaze would also rotate in a cir~cle.

……To the right a bit faster-. The gazes went to the right swiftly-. Left-, but it was a feint, it was up! Refusing to get tricked the gaze went up! Left up down right left right up-! What the-left up right left right left-, ah, mistaken!?

「Just what art thou doing, Goshujin-sama and also queen-sama too.」

「Ah, no, sorry. Because these guys are moving too obediently, that I unintentionally……」

「My, my apologize. It feels like it would be a defeat if our gaze get left behind, that I unintentionally……」

The people around the blushing Roze were also making an expression like「Damn it, we unintentionally……」in harmony. Perhaps they were unexpectedly a group that could easily get into a certain mood.

With various happenings like that, Hajime and Tio who were invited into the reception room finally sat down on a stiff sofa. A steamy beverage was put in front of them. Most likely it was something similar like tea. A slightly sweet fragrance tickled their nose.

In front of the two was Roze. The blonde-haired duo were standing in attention behind her. Midway to this room Hajime and Tio learned that both of them were siblings, the older sister was Olga Crow, and the little brother was Jean Crow. They seemed to be Roze's imperial guards. The elder sister was the captain of the imperial guards, and the little brother was the vice-captain. They could also pilot sky battlecraft, but they were an expert in close quarter combat. It seemed that usually, they were also aiding Roze's daily life.

「Hajime-sama, Tio-sama. Forgive me for being too straight, but can I be allowed to ask what kind of objective the two of you have? We……we have a goal, a mission. I think that if it's the legendary true dragon-sama, then your understanding must have grasped it already but……like this, for the two of you to rush to our side in our time of danger, is it allowed for me to hold a hope that the two of you can give us your cooperation?」

「Wait, wait a bit. Calm down for now.」

From the middle of her talk, Roze's body was leaning forward, and she kept talking on and on. Hajime pushed forward both his hands to stop her. Roze pulled back her body in panic, and she corrected her posture in shame.

「I'll say this first, but I'm not the dragon knight you queen-san talked about, I also don't understand what you mean by a true dragon. The reason is that we aren't a dweller of this world.」

「……Not a dweller of this world? Forgive me; I don't really understand what do you mean by that.」

「I meant that literally, we are humans from a different world. A world where there isn't black rain like here, where the civilization isn't collapsing. There are multiple countries in existence there, and they more or less believe in order and law.」

Roze's expression was getting more and more bewildered.

Hajime smiled wryly understandingly, and he talked the summary of their experience of coming to this world. Whether they would believe it or not in the end, Hajime would leave it to their own decision. For the time being, he conveyed to Roze that with the premise that they were from another world, he wished for her to teach him about this world, the situation, and about the unfamiliar terms that sometimes came out in their conversation.

「It's a story that I cannot believe so suddenly but……for now, I understand that this talk itself won't progress without me explaining the situation. Having said that, I don't know from where do I have to start explaining……」

「Right……then, first, what is that black rain? Teach us starting from there. What happened that now the land is

polluted by that rain?

So from there. So it’s really true, that the two of you doesn’t know about this world……

Roze took a gulp of the drink with her mind still shaken by bewilderment, and for now, she reset herself. She pondered for a bit thinking how should she explain, and then she began to talk.

The black rain, it is said to be the proof of the fallen monarch dragon——Helmut’s grief and rage.

In the past, at the time where the black rain still didn’t exist, in the center of dragon kingdom Avenst where Roze’s ancestor was acting as the king, there was an era of peace where dragon and human coexisted.

In that era, when dragon and human reached a certain age, it was the custom for them to choose a partner to exchange friendship of a lifetime. One of the monarch dragons who were the partner of the dragon kingdom royalty in such era was the evil dragon Helmut.

Monarch dragon, what does that mean?

Monarch dragon, they are a dragon that possesses special power even among the dragon species. They possess silver scales, bestow strength to the dragon species and the land, and they are able to exchange words with humans. They are the ruling kind among the dragons that will only exchange friendship with the royalty of the dragon kingdom.

The oldest and strongest country——Dragon Kingdom Avenst. A part of the reason for that status was because, in a world where a dragon was human’s greatest friend, the

kingdom royalty was the only one that could exchange friendship with the dragon’s ruling kind.

「I see. That country surely was a country with influence huh.」

「Yes. The center of the world was without a doubt located in the dragon kingdom. However, even that era was approached by the end. ——It was the development of technology.」

Except for the existence of dragons and ores and the like that possessed special energy, there wasn’t any mysterious power like magic or anything in this world. It was inevitable for technology to develop here just like in earth. The difference was at the point that in place of electricity and gas, this world was using energy that was called sky core.

「Sky core, is that the sky blue ore that is even smaller than grains of sand?」

「So you know about that……. Yes, exactly. It is a special ore with traits where it can be changed into various kinetic energy, stimulate the growth of crops, or even neutralize gravity. It’s an ore that is really hard to be collected, but it can even allow an airship this big and sky battlecrafts to fly like this, and it can also produce light, heat, cold for our daily life.」

「……This ship, it’s not using that thing that is like the dragon’s heart?」

「-. Obviously-. Please don’t lump us together like those Qwailent bunches-」

「……Calm down. I’m completely ignorant what is common sense and what is not in this world. I’ll properly listen to

queen-san’s story, so please explain.」

「ah, my, my apologize.」

Roze whose boiling temper got cooled by Hajime’s calm words cleared her throat. According to the explanation that she resumed, the thing that seemed like the dragon’s heart――that was something that was called dragon core, it seemed that even just a cubic centimeter of it possessed the same amount of energy of a fist-sized sky core.

Naturally, processing dragon core was very much better in labor and efficiency, but it seemed that Roze and others who were the descendant of dragon kingdom who didn’t discard their country’s idea of coexisting with dragon even now when their country had perished, they were only using sky core. Because of that, their airship’s spec was several level lower compared to the airship of their enemy――Sky Divine Country Qwailent. They also had difficulty in resupply, so they were always struggling with lacks of materials.

Somehow, it made it hard to drink the richly fragrant tea in front of them……

「Nkuh. This is delicious. Second please.」

「Ah, yes.」

Hajime-san mercilessly asked for a second. Right after that, Roze was explaining with a bitter smile about their destitute living situation. The expression of the Crow siblings shuddered. ‘Is this man’s nerve made from special alloy wire!?’ They wondered.

「And? The continuation?」

「Ah, yes. Eerr……that’s right. While the technology development is continuing, a certain researcher discovered it. That the dragon core is far more efficient than sky core. The dragons who were the great companion of mankind had their remains buried courteously even after death. The dragon core that should be called as that dragon’s soul was buried along with the dragon’s remain, returning back to the land. That was the norm at that time.」

「So curiosity, stepped across that common sense?」

「I don’t understand the feeling of that researcher. In the record, it was said that at the end of his research he created the fastest aircraft at that time using the dragon core of his partner who died from an unforeseen accident. And then, he didn’t create anything other than that. ……It’s possible, that man might only wish to fly together in the sky one more time using an aircraft that is inserted with the soul of his departed friend.」

The truth of the matter was unknown. However, the fact was that at the same time as that man’s discovery, the countries all over the world also noticed it — the value of dragon core.

And then, it began — the cruel and terrifying act of dragon hunting.

Technology that made use of sky core required extremely much effort starting from the collection of the sky core. Sky core at the very least need to be fist-sized to be useful, but the sky core that could be collected was only small things that were like sand. Just collecting it and compressing it into usable size consumed so much time and cost. Major effort was necessary just to research it.

Those necessities were removed by using dragon core. The research advanced rapidly, and technology was developed

with striking momentum.

「It was said that the countries all over the world unanimously gathered dragon core and the technology race intensified. In the middle of that, it was only the dragon kingdom that was trying to stop the tide of the world that is making dragon hunting as right. The kingdom used all kind of method. Economic sanction, preferential treatment from the dragon kingdom, the export of sky core……sometimes they even used military force along with the monarch dragons.」

「……How long they could do that?」

Roze made a troubled smile at Hajime's words.

While the countries around them were continuing to develop technology, they rejected dragon hunting as wrong――that had the same meaning as being left behind by the world. Even if they were an influential country, but if their technology level was overwhelmingly left behind, it wasn't hard to imagine what kind of evaluation other countries would have against them.

Even so, the dragon kingdom continued to reject dragon hunting was because the dragon species shouldered the role as a balancer of the world. It wasn't something that was proven scientifically. It was something like a superstitious belief. But, it was believed that dragons had a role of taking in the toxic substance of the world into their body, and then they purified it to return it back to the world.

That was the belief in the dragon kingdom.

In a world where technology development advanced, a fact without proof wasn't worthy to be believed in. Even when the dragon kingdom persuaded that if the dragon hunting

continued at this rate, a calamity would occur, no one bothered to listen.

Like that the authority of dragon kingdom wavered, their influence lowered, and shadow was looming on their power.

「The one who showed unease at such situation was the first prince of the dragon kingdom at that time. He became unable to endure the declining of his homeland. He cast away the belief as superstition and strongly appealed for technology development using dragon core.」

「Naturally, it didn’t end well wasn’t it?」

「Yes. In the record, harsh writings about him……like he was the shame of dragon kingdom or a traitor were written. However, even when he was showered with criticism from all the people of his homeland, he didn’t stop. ……No, exactly because he loved his homeland from the bottom of his heart, that he couldn’t stop anymore.」

「……I can picture it somehow. So he did it?」

Hajime looked up to the ceiling with an air that seemed to say ‘dear god’. Tio too seemed to be able to imagine what happened. She sighed as though to say that it was depressing just hearing it.

Even while smiling bitterly at the two, Roze talked with sadness at the forefront of her eyes.

How the prince, laid his hand on the monarch dragon who was his greatest friend.

Research of dragon core technology was advanced behind closed doors. As the last finishing touch, he murdered his partner, and with that dragon core――he constructed a

gigantic flying warship that used the dragon core of monarch dragon for the first time in the world.

That ship’s majesty was tremendous, to the degree that the military balance at that time was tilted slightly just by that one warship.

Surely that prince felt relieved with that. With that, his homeland was saved. There would be peace. The other countries wouldn’t make light of them any more than this; they wouldn’t be invaded so easily.

“Thus, the dragon kingdom recovered its authority, but in exchange, they lost their pride and persuasiveness huh.”

“Must be. Even if they called for the cessation of dragon hunting, no one wouldst listen to them. After all, they hath murdered a king of the dragons to create a warship. Even putting aside other countries, the kingdom’s own people wouldst be the one that gave up on the country most of all.”

“Exactly as you said. A storm visited the dragon country, and they even met a crisis of internal disunity. But then, an occurrence so terrifying as though to say something like the risk of civil war is just a trivial thing was starting to happen.”

Black rain was starting to fall.

“Coming this far, the world finally noticed that they were mistaken. The true identity of the black rain is the end of the road of the energy that is released from sky core and dragon core. This thing that is dispersed into the air and changed in nature possesses a property that doesn’t grant vitality but instead steals it.”

“I see. Let’s put aside the detail about the underlying theory; it’s true then that the dragon race, and perhaps the

sky core, are really the balancers of this world.

Fumu. The world art holding true above a balance. Noon and night, man and woman, positive and negative……it's natural for negative energy also to exist if positive energy exists. The dragon species and sky core take in negative energy, they then turn that energy into positive energy that they release back, when the released energy accomplished their role they wouldst turn into negative energy, then that energy wouldst be taken in by dragon species and sky core once more…….the world art in circulation.

The role of the dragon species was proved for the first time with the manifestation of a calamity.

However, mankind who noticed that fact then charged headlong to the unforeseen direction.

The dignity of the dragon species was trampled down. The choice that mankind took wasn't the abolishment of dragon hunting or the safeguard of dragon race——it was cultivation.

Oou. I knew it already but……even in the different world, human's karma is really deep anywhere huh.

Several countries publicized their breeding farms that were made in secret. Mankind had already soaked their hand with sin that couldn't be taken back since before the danger of the world. They made those breeding farms not because they thought that this would happen in advance, they surely didn't even imagine that it would turn out like this. Their conduct of selling over the know-how of the cultivation brazenly to the world, just how foolish was that.

Who would be angry at the deed of mankind?

That was obvious — the royalty of dragons.

They believed. The royalty and people of the dragon kingdom loved them the dragon species from the heart, even when the country was on the verge of danger the people didn’t give up to coexist with the dragon species. Because of that, they believed, that surely humans and dragons could walk together once more.

They endured. Even when dragon species was losing life one after another from dragon hunting, even when their relative monarch dragon was killed by the prince, because if they rampaged following their emotion, then the dragon kingdom they loved would be crushed by the countries all over the world.

The king made a decision. He told the father of monarch dragons who is his partner——Sutherland, that human and dragon should part with each other for once. The king said to take away all the dragon species and escape to the end of the world. If there are people that survived from the black rain, at that time the king asked for the dragon to grant a chance for the two sides start over one more time. Sutherland accepted and decided to part from mankind. However, that decision was a bit too late.

……So Sutherland’s child, couldn’t put up with it?

Sutherland’s child, the twin elder brother of the murdered monarch dragon——Helmut, attacked a cultivation place and the country it resided in before his father’s decision.

At the same time with that, it was an incident that was enough to erase the light of the coexistence faction that still hadn’t vanished yet. Every country that obtained a just cause carried out the capture and subjugation of the dragon kingdom using their fleets.

「It was an alliance of many countries, yet regardless of that, their pace was orderly, and their subjugation strategy was swift and precise. Even Sutherland who boasted of an unequaled strength, the best that he could do was to let some number of dragons to escape.」

「That was their aim huh. Perhaps the breeding farms were also a provocation. It was to eliminate the remaining coexistence faction and to completely take down monarch dragons that were still a threat.」

「That, must be it. The dragon species that were massing to depart to the end of the world were pushed back by the quantity of the allied army, and they were falling to the ground. Sutherland's children were killed one after another, or else their wings plucked and captured……it was truly a hellish picture. At the very least, it was enough to transform Helmut into an evil dragon.」

His siblings murdered, their dignity crushed underfoot, the black emotion that had been piling mountain high, when he saw his siblings trampled before his eyes once more——it snapped. Helmut's mind crumbled, and something awoke inside him.

It was said that the moment Helmut raised a howl that planted fear inside everyone that listened, the sky that should be clear was covered with dark clouds in the blink of an eye, and then black rain was starting to rain in impeccable timing.

「Fumu. Based on what I heard here……the power of circulation that dragon race possessed, was it reversed in this case? However, if this monarch dragon possessed power to the degree that couldst manipulate the weather, I don't

think that they wouldst lose against mankind in the first place though……

How common. Wasn’t it the rage and hatred that surpassed the limit that pushed up the rank of this Helmut? Aa, could it be, he evolved into this true dragon that queen-san mentioned before?

Roze smiled wryly at the quick understanding of the two while giving affirmation.

The true dragon was said to be the ancestor of the dragon kingdom’s royalty and the monarch dragons. Its power was immense, and it was told that it could manipulate heaven and earth and could also transform into a human, and so on. There was nothing left of its existence except in legend, a fairy-tale existence.

There wasn’t any record of Helmut transforming into a human, but it seemed that he was called as a true historical dragon that evolved from monarch dragon due to the aspect of manipulating weather. However, it was also an ability that was limited to covering the world with cloudy weather that made black rain fell.

Tio-sama is able to transform into a human, and that overwhelming ability……you manipulated wind and flame before this. That, as expected you are a true dragon……

No no, I’m not a true dragon. It’s the reverse. I’m not a dragon that turns into a human. The correct recognition art I am a human that turns into a dragon.

Human, becoming a dragon?

In our world……no, more accurately in Tio’s world, there is that kind of race. Her family is all able to transform into

dragons. If they are really true dragons, then that will be a bargain sale of fairy-tale existence.」

Hajime cackled saying「Well, even though she isn't a true dragon, but she is a god dragon though」while sending Tio a teasing gaze. Tio looked aside saying「I didn't say any lie」. (TN: True dragon's kanji is read as shinryuu, while accidentally god dragon's kanji is also read as shinryuu. Also, the kanji for the dragon of the god dragon here is for the eastern dragon.)

Seeing the relaxed relationship of the two, Roze asked timidly.

「That, then, as expected about the two of you being dragon knight-sama and true dragon-sama……」

「From what I can guess, this dragon knight is also an existence from a fairy-tale, and he was the true dragon's partner, isn't that right? But it's completely different. Tio can become dragon but she is a fully fledged human, and even if you say partner but she isn't my friend, but my wife.」

「Wi, wife……」

「Mu, mumu-. Wi, wife……that's the first time someone called me that. What's this, this itchy feeling in mine chest. Goshujin-sama, this child, she is really a good child!」

Tio got all bashful and fidgety from getting called as a wife for the first time. The eyes she were looking at Roze with were suddenly filled with the color of affection. Really, what a simple dragon.

Ignoring the writhing Tio, Hajime prompted Roze to continue talking. The simple dragon「Nou nou, Goshujin-sama. I'm thy wife」leaning on him was annoying, so, for the time being, he

made her quiet with a slap. Seeing the hopeless dragon raising a coquettish voice「Ahanh」while collapsing on the sofa in ecstasy, the gaze of Roze and others became nailed on Tio.

Hajime’s cough made them returned to reality.

「Ah, e, errrr……that’s right. Helmut who became a true dragon and began covering the world with black rain was said to have lost his former heart. Without discriminating human or dragon, he raised a loud laugh as though enjoying the destruction while trampling over everything.」

「So that guy degenerated completely. The birth of the evil dragon is it.」

「Yes. It was said that Sutherland began a deathly battle in order to stop his fallen son. At the same time, his spouse Detmers led their surviving children back to the dragon kingdom.」

There was one reason for that. In order to save their friend.

It was unknown whether Sutherland was able to stop Helmut. Even if for example he could, mankind would perish under the black rain that was rapidly covering the whole world. Their beloved dragon kingdom would die out.

Sutherland possessed an exceptional strength even among the monarch dragons. And if he fought seriously, then others would only become a hindrance to him. Understanding that, amidst the falling black rain, Detmers and others dashed in order to save the humans that had cornered them.

「The essence of monarch dragon’s power is invigoration. And then, sky core has the property to neutralize gravity.」

「So that’s, the reason of the floating islands.」

「Yes. But, as expected although they are monarch dragon, they couldn’t do something like making the whole land float. What they could do was only making land with particularly abundant sky core to float. Even so, there is no mistake that we can live like this is thanks to the act of Detmers-sama and others that they carried out by staking their life.」

Kuwaibel who was snuggling up beside Roze raised a sad cry. Surely he understood the content of their talk. Roze gently caressed such Kuwaibel.

「This child is a memento from Detmers-sama. At that time it still wasn’t time to give birth, but Detmers-sama who was in the verge of death because of the black rain and using up enormous power cut up her own body and left behind an egg. She said, this child who will be born someday, will be the hope as the last monarch dragon.」

It seemed that Helmut didn’t come chasing after the floating land. According to the record, it seemed he watched the floating island while laughing. It was as though he was looking forward to the crisis that mankind would taste from there on.

Roze who took a breath after finishing the long story moistened her parched throat. And then, she faced Hajime with a gaze that was filled with determination unlike before this.

「After twenty years passed since that day of tragedy, the dragon kingdom that continued to exist in the sky received an invasion from sky pirate. Our country was stolen. At that time I was still a baby, I was able to survive thanks to my parents’ close aides taking me away along with Kuwaibel’s egg.」

Even without her saying anything, it could be guessed that the king and queen had died from Roze’s expression.

The dragon kingdom perished, and Sky Divine Country Qwailent came into being. The king was the air pirate’s leader. He monopolized the limited resource. Roze and others who were chased out were reduced to air pirates, the slipped through the divine country’s eyes and stole resource, and protected the people of the dragon kingdom who escaped together with them until now.

Like that, when Roze became ten years old, Kuwaibel was finally born. The people of the former dragon kingdom were boiled up by the birth of hope, at the same time, they kept hiding Kuwaibel’s existence who was still weak so that the divine country wouldn’t realize it no matter what.

「Even that end with today. My stomach froze when Kuwaibel came out to the battlefield but……from there, to think we were able to encounter Hajime-sama and Tio-sama……」

「Fuuh? And?」

Although Roze faltered for a moment at Hajime’s penetrating gaze, she immediately returned back a blazing gaze.

「I beg you. Please lend us your strength. The strength to take back the land of dragon kingdom Avenst.」

It seemed that in the deepest part of dragon kingdom Avenst, there was a spring that could grant power to monarch dragon. If they could go there, even Kuwaibel who was still only a few years old would become able to use a power that equaled a grown dragon even if just temporarily.

There if Hajime and TIo’s strength was combined with Avenst’s mothership and other airships, then it would also be possible to defeat the evil dragon Helmut, explained Roze earnestly.

Hajime glanced at Tio beside him. Tio’s expression was pondering something, but she noticed Hajime’s gaze and shrugged, leaving him to make the decision.

Hajime scratched on his cheek, and he lowered his eyebrows a bit while,

「For now, let’s put it on hold.」

He answered. Roze went「Eeh, isn’t this the scene where you gladly accept!?」in fluster because her expectation was betrayed. Hajime said「Something like that is the domain of a hero somewhere, or the abyss-san」and deflected easily.

Tio was staring at such Hajime with an expression that didn’t expect it. As expected, if Hajime was told something that easily went outside the category of adventure like ‘please go to war with a country, and then please defeat the evil dragon and save the world’, Tio thought that he would refuse promptly.

For Hajime whose basis was a swift decision, it was a really half-baked answer.

「Well, what. Even us, after hearing the story just now we ain’t just going to say “Oh is that so, yes, we will do anything”. Various things happened today, and we are tired. For now, we are going to rest, think it carefully, and then we will give our decision tomorrow. You don’t mind right?」

「Tha, that’s right. Indeed I’m too impatient just now. Even though Hajime-sama and Tio-sama have just finished with a

battle of that degree, my deepest apologies for my inattentiveness. We have prepared a room. It is a modest thing, but later on, we will bring you your dinner, so please rest at ease tonight.」

「Ou. Much obliged, I won't hold back then. Okay Tio, let's go.」

「Ri, right.」

Hajime emptied his tea and stood up abruptly. He led Tio and got out of the room. A crew that would guide them, immediately appeared and took them to their room. Roze was staring fixedly at the back of such Hajime and Tio with an expression that was a mix of hope and unease.

The airship Rozeria was gliding through the night sky where a multitude of stars were shining.

At a corner of the ship's rear deck, there were the figures of Hajime and Tio. Both of them were sitting at the edge of the deck. Their legs were thrown out to the empty air. The sea of clouds that were shining from the reflection of the stars let the eyes of the two of them to enjoy the sight to their heart's content.

「And, why didst thou put the decision on hold, Goshujin-sama?」

Tio asked Hajime while watching him with a sidelong glance. Hajime was also similarly watching Tio with a sidelong glance while he opened his mouth.

「I’m thinking of deciding after hearing of what you want to do.」

「What I want to do?」

Tio tilted her head. Hajime nodded.

「Yeah. What do you want to do Tio? The restoration of the dragon kingdom doesn’t matter, but you have a tii~ny bit on your mind about this evil dragon aren’t you?」

「……So thou noticed Goshujin-sama.」

Getting seen through like this even though she shouldn’t have taken any conspicuous attitude caused Tio’s cheeks to redden from feeling too embarrassed. She thought that he really looked at her closely.

Tio slowly opened her mouth as though she was choosing her words.

「I thought that it was similar, just a bit. Of their way of living, and their last days.」

「Is it about, the dragon race’s country in the past?」

「Yes. I understand Helmut’s feeling, just a little. At that time, when I saw Haha-ue and mine comrades crucified, a black flame was certainly born inside me. A flame of hatred that only wished to burn others, even myself.」(TN: Haha-ue=mother, used in samurai families)

Hajime returned a silence at Tio who was talking bit by bit. He kept quiet while looking forward, lending his ear at Tio’s story.

「I was able to stop because of Chichi-ue's words. I was able to change the black flame into power to protect. Helmut art surely the me of that time that couldst not stop.」(TN: Chichi-ue=father)

That was why she couldn't just be indifferent to this. When she thought that the fallen king of dragons would continue to ravage this world with black rain even from here on forever, for some reason, the feeling that this was intolerable was welling up inside.

「This is just a retelling from Yue……"The track that Tio had walked through until now. That is Tio's everything" isn't that right? That's just a meaningless supposition. Helmut was unable to win against himself. Tio Claus won against herself. That's all there is to it right?」

「Fufu, thou art right.」

Tio smiled fondly and nodded at the words of Hajime that sounded a bit displeased, as though to say 'don't lump together the stupid idiot that ruin the world with my Tio'.

A quiet time was flowing for a while.

Hajime glanced once more at Tio before he scratched a bit roughly on his head.

「Aah, geez. Stop being indecisive and say your answer already. I'm asking you here, what do you want to do huh? You are too considerate to other people other than yourself at various things. I'm telling you, show some selfishness sometimes other than with your perverted attitude.」

「Goshujin-sama……」

Tio blinked. And then, she reflexively closed her eyes and hid her expression toward Hajime who was staring at her fixedly. She then whispered.

「I want to end this. This art completely unrelated to us. The scale art too big to call it an adventure. The opponent's strength art unknown. This is just mine ego talking. I understand all that. However――I wish to end this.」

That was Tio's true feeling. It was Tio's selfishness that came from her sentimentality, based on her ego, for the sake to cheer up herself.

Hajime who heard that,

「Roger. Let's end this. We are going to end the evil dragon Helmut's everything, just for our own convenience.」

He easily consented to it.

When Tio turned her face, she found Hajime's face that looked somewhat happy there. An expression of happiness from listening to Tio's selfishness.

'Aah, no more-' Tio yelled out her indescribable feeling in her heart while leaping at her beloved master.

The light of stars shining in the night sky enveloped the two with faint gentle light.

Roze's group at that time.

「Awa, awawawah. The two of them, doing that in this kind of place-. Aa, amazing-」

「Ro, Roze-sama-. You mustn’t look-. Co, come on, we understood already that they didn’t disappear, let’s go back inside quickly!」

「Pii, piiii」

「Kuwaibel-sama……. It looks like you are hiding your face with your wings, but it’s obvious you are completely looking from the gaps there.」

「Ou ou. As expected from the legendary dragon knight-sama yeah. Doing that on the deck so brazenly. How envious.」

「Bovid-. What are you doing looking so unashamedly like that! Quickly take Roze-sama inside the ship! Roze-sama too, please release your hands from the railing! Come on, quickly-. Hey, your strength increases-. Just how interested are you-」

Roze-sama was grasping the railing tightly and wouldn’t let go with her nose breathing roughly. Olga was desperately trying to take her back inside the ship, but her hold was so tight it made her shudder to wonder just where did she hide this much strength!

Kuwaibel in his own way was hiding his face with his wings while also thoroughly peeking from the gaps. Jean acted the straight-man, but Kuwaibel’s gaze completely stuck!

Seeing such covert pervert duo of monarch dragon and queen, it was only Bovid who was cackling while nonchalantly making his swift retreat.

Because he noticed that Hajime’s gaze was seizing their figures from across the shoulder of Tio, who he embraced closely.

A few seconds after Bovid vanished, crimson sparks surged in the night sky.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The next chapter update is planned to be for 6 P.M Saturday.

Arifureta Chapter 237

Arifureta After II Nation on Ship Avenst

AN: I’m sorry, it’s late again. Furthermore, the story doesn’t advance.

This is bad; I’m genuinely becoming unable to make it in time for 6 P.M Saturday……

I wonder if I should change it to Sunday……

Early morning, when the eastern sky was starting to be tinged white. Perhaps also because of the high altitude, the air was piercingly cold. The blowing wind made the receiver to feel slight pain.

It depended on the person whether to feel it as refreshing or torture. Although, even if it was someone who felt it refreshing, they still shouldn’t wish to stay inside such coldness for long.

In such an environment, there were two silhouettes leisurely staying there for thirty minutes already.

On the deck of the airship Rozeria, there were Tio and Hajime relaxing with a steamy cup beside them.

The minerals that Hajime obtained in this world were lined up in front of him. He took them into his hand and stared at

them passionately, toyed with them……it seemed that he was displaying his transmutation master nature without reservation. Beside him was Tio, she was exposing a gentle expression as though her usual perversion was just a lie while staring at Hajime’s hand and face.

「E, excuse me~. Is it, a good time?」

A timid voice called at them. When Hajime and Tio turned their gaze, there they saw a beautiful girl with semi-long silver hair——Roze. Kuwaibel was firmly held inside her arms.

「Aa, what’s the matter, queen-san. The queer queen-san who was loitering around there since around ten minutes ago.」

「Please at least greet if you actually noticed already!」

The truth was Roze-chan had arrived on the deck since around ten minutes ago. She witnessed a gentle atmosphere around the two that was hard to interrupt as a third person. And then, what crossed in the back of her mind was this and that from last night. As a result, she didn’t know how should she call out at them and so she made an appeal「I’m nearby just by chance. Come on, notice me already! Greet out to me from your side!」.

「Roze-dono’s blatant “notice me appeal” art cute, that we acted mean against our better judgment. Forgive us?」

「Uh. That, no, I was in the wrong because I didn’t immediately call out……」

Roze who felt like running away even more from getting apologized honestly like that had her face blushed slightly

in shyness from hearing Tio’s remark that she was “cute”, her mouth moved in mumbles.

「And, what do you want? Queen-san whose act is painful to look at.」

「That thing last night was Hajime-sama’s fault! Does Hajime-sama hate me!?」

Last night, the punishment from demon king-sama was waiting for Roze-chan’s party who was peeking at the scene where Hajime and Tio were exchanging love.

――Demon King-style Harassment 108 “From Today You Too Are Hauria”

A harassment by using an artifact that reproduced a pseudo “Divine Statement” by applying and enchanting soul magic. The result was “the target’s act became chuuni for a period of time”.

It went without saying that when they saw the act of Roze and Crow siblings that suddenly turned painful to look at, the eyes of the other crews turned into a dot. They even called the ship doctor thinking that the everyday hardships might finally turn them strange. Even after the effect ran out, they didn’t even have the willpower to complain to Hajime, and the three harmoniously sat on the corner of the room while grasping their knees to endure their black history.

Bovid who sensed demon king-sama’s anger a touch faster and escaped alone watched such trio and loudly laughed while rolling on the floor. Him acting like that made it felt like there was a retort ‘is it fine to roll around laughing at your lord’s foolishness like that, captain of the air battle squad’s first squad’ that could be heard.

「Good grief, we cannot progress like this right? Stop making merry and say your business.」

「-. Ho, hold it down me. I am the queen of the proud dragon kingdom. It's fine. Take a deep breath. Suu, haa……」

With blood vein pulsing on her forehead, including the wretchedness of the punishment last night, Roze renewed her determination 'I won't mistake someone like this as the legendary dragon knight-sama for the second time!' and then she told the two that the breakfast preparation had finished.

「Queen-san herself expressly come here just to tell us that? Even though you can just leave that to your subordinate.」

「No, that's because when I heard that the two of you were on the deck even since when the sun hadn't risen that I'm curious about what are you doing.」

It seemed that it was something like that. Hajime shrugged, and his hand beckoned at Roze whose body shrunk from cold. Roze whose gaze wandered around feeling a bit perplexed approached Hajime's side excitedly.

「Ah. The wind is……」

「Tio is covering the surrounding with a wind barrier. A wind that contains heat. Feels really pleasant right?」

「Ye, yes. ……Whether it's Hajime-sama's tool or Tio-sama's magic, they are really something that is outside of our common sense. About the talk of another world, I think it finally feels real for me after a night passed.」

「Well, even if I told you of another world it's not something that can be accepted right away.」

Roze glanced at Hajime who kept making crimson sparks at the ore in his hand even while they were talking. It was a vibrant crimson light. The ore changed shape right away. It was completely a mysterious power that human of this world didn’t have. The supernatural weapon created by that hand easily routed a gigantic battleship.

But, Roze knew that Hajime’s power wasn’t just making a supernatural weapon. She didn’t hear about the detailed story, she also didn’t think of forcefully asking, but she saw that right after Hajime showed his appearance, he tore to pieces the hook of an approaching sky battlecraft unarmed. That was something different with the power to create a thing that she was looking at right now.

Honestly, she couldn’t see his bottom. She thought it was terrifying. And now when she knew that this person wasn’t the noble dragon knight from fairy-tale who was the personification of justice, she felt it even more.

However, for them, the descendants of dragon kingdom who were heading toward a slow ruin, the existence of Hajime and Tio was like a gift from heaven.

Also, this timing when the last monarch dragon Kuwaibel had been born, she couldn’t help but feel that there was destiny at work.

「Oh, finally.」

「We hath waited long. I hath great anticipation because of that.」

「? Excuse me, both of you, what are……」

Hajime threw his gaze to the eastern sky while one of his hands was carrying an ore. Tio also focused her gaze while

leaning close to Hajime. Roze who didn’t understand what the two of them were doing tilted her head with a question mark floating above her head.

「What you ask, it’s that. We are here because we want to see that.」

Hajime said that and pointed, at the thing that was showing out its face right now——the sun.

The sunlight swept away the blackness of night and dyed the world silver. The shadow of the sea of clouds darkened, and the illuminated place started to shine in sparkles like a jewel.

The sunrise seen from the deck of an airship that was continuously flying above the sea of clouds.

That was exactly the reason why Hajime and Tio got out on the deck since early morning. For the sake of settling it firmly inside their memory, the superb view of another world they went astray into through a strange phenomenon.

「……It’s not bad. Yeah, it looks really great.」

「This art a harsh world, but the strength of the light that wipe out the black of night art the same no matter what the world. Yes, it’s wonderful. It’s a beautiful world.」

「……」

Roze was dumbfounded.

The words “beautiful world” that came out from Tio’s mouth echoed many times inside her head. When she thought about it, when was the last time she watched the sunlight

like this? She thought that this sight entered her sight every day.

However, she didn’t think anything about that view. She was merely desperate to survive and to accomplish her duty; she didn’t even look at the sky despite living in the sky. She noticed that although at this late hour.

The world was getting brighter moment by moment.

「……Yes, it’s beautiful. Really beautiful.」

Words of agreement. However, in contrast with those words, Roze’s expression was vaguely dark.

「The food is delicious even with how simple it is. Ah, give me another of this.」

「You, you are really not holding back huh.」

On the breakfast table, there were Hajime and Tio, and then Roze, Kuwaibel, Crow siblings, Bovid, and then a male crew that seemed to shoulder the role as a waiter. Usually, they didn’t have anything like a waiter, even the queen Roze and also the imperial guards’ leaders Crow siblings would do everything by themselves.

This time it was a special situation where they were welcoming guest that were Hajime and Tio.

Hajime’s remark of “another” despite saying that the food was simple while also understanding the reason why the food was simple caused the waiter’s cheeks to twitch a bit,

even so, he obediently obeyed. Bovid retorted with an amazed expression. His attitude to the two of them was the most casual among the crews of this ship.

「Yeah. I'll stop if I'm told to stop, but as long as no one say that, it's my principle to receive the hospitality I'm given with my all.」

「Hahah, I get that. I was also taught by my father to receive the goodwill I'm given without reservation. You had even saved our life, so eat as much as you want. Though even after I say that, the one who create and prepare the food is actually not me! Ahahahah」

'Really, don't say anything you……' The gaze of the Crow siblings that was wordlessly appealing so was piercing Bovid. However, Bovid didn't pay that any attention. Right now, rather than the serious Crow siblings, it was more important to make Hajime and Tio felt welcome. He had finished saying thanks last night from getting his life saved, but as expected it was best to show the thanks with action. That was Bovid's cherished opinion.

It seemed that they were used to Bovid's unserious attitude, so Olga sighed while turning her gaze at her master. Olga couldn't stop frowning at Roze's state that was clad in a vaguely dark atmosphere since she went to call Hajime and Tio on the deck.

「……Roze-sama. Did something happen?」

Leaving a glance at Bovid who was talking cheerfully with Hajime, Olga talked at Roze with a quiet whisper.

Roze who looked taken aback and returned to her senses then shook her head and showed a smile to avoid the question.

「We still, haven’t heard the decision of Hajime-sama and Tio-sama……so it looks like my unease came out in my face.」

「Is that, so.」

Orga looked like she couldn’t accept the explanation and she sent a glance of doubt, thinking that as expected the two of them had done something to her master……her body twitched.

Because Tio’s hand stopped moving at the meal and she was staring fixedly at Roze and Olga.

When Tio’s eyes met Olga’s, she showed a smile that looked trouble, but also looked somehow gentle. Olga twitched even more from that expression.

Hajime and Tio who finally finished their meal after asking another helping twice then enjoyed the after meal black tea made in another world. Choosing the timing, Roze then asked with determination.

「……Hajime-sama. Regarding the answer to my wish last night, can I ask you to please tell us your answer?」

Defeat the divine country together and revive the dragon kingdom Avenst. And then, after putting in order a complete force, subjugate the evil dragon Helmut.

That was their cooperation request. Thinking from the aspect of their battle strength, they wished for Hajime and Tio to become the leading part in the battlefield. Especially the part to defeat the divine country where Kuwaibel was still powerless, almost all of that part would rely completely on Hajime like that.

Last night, when Hajime and Tio got out on the deck, they thought that perhaps the two of them would then disappear without telling anyone and so they spontaneously ran after them.

But, seeing the two of them were still staying here like this, then surely the two would grant their wish……

Although they were thinking so, they couldn’t help but gulp their saliva from nervousness.

Inside the room where complete silence had descended, Hajime slowly put the cup of tea he drank on the table,

「We are going to slaughter Helmut, but we don’t give a damn about that divine country something. You guys work hard yourself about that.」

「Wait, I don’t understand what you are saying.」

They almost trembled in happiness when they heard that the two would kill the evil dragon, but they suddenly went cold hearing the sentence’s latter half. Roze asked back with a half smile looking as though she was running from reality.

「I told you, I cannot be bothered about your country’s revival, but as for Helmut, we think perhaps we will go kill that guy a bit, purely for our own convenience.」

「……Wait, I don’t understand what you are sa――」

「Aa?」

「Understand. Evil dragon subjugation banzai. Sayonara the future of dragon kingdom’s revival. That’s what you are saying right. I understand.」

Roze who tried to do her best added with escaping reality, but she returned to reality due to Hajime’s voice and expression that looked like yakuza. She couldn’t stop her eyes from getting teary. Replacing Roze who fell silent, the Crow siblings stood up so fast their chair fell down while raising a voice of protest and persuasion.

「Why!? If you two have that much power, then it shouldn’t be that difficult to defeat the divine country! This is our dearest wish-. Please, I beg you two to rethink it-. Please-」

「Right now, even in this time the people of the dragon kingdom are suffering in hardship! The dragons are also in the same situation! Didn’t the two of you repel the mother ship of the divine country yesterday and saved the dragons-? Here please show your righteousness one more time!」

Olga and Jean’s words resounded loudly. However, the expression of Hajime who received those words showed not a single ripple.

「This is not really something you need to raise your voice that much right? If Helmut is defeated, the world will clear up. When that happens, then you can build your country anywhere on the vast land down there. Something like the land that might be polluted, or the battle against the divine country of that, those things are matters that are not related at all to us resident of another world. We don’t happen to have any duty or responsibility to become your substitute in war.」

The sound argument that was returned to them caused the Crow siblings to be at a loss for words. However, the power that Hajime and Tio showed wasn’t something that worthless that they could give up that easily. The two weren’t that

farsighted that they could just say「Oh, is that so」in acceptance, even though there was the possibility to defeat the hateful divine country right in front of their eyes like this.

That was why they raised their voices asking how the two of them could abandon the suffering humans and dragons even after they knew the situation and also getting begged on like this.

「Hajime-sama. Please, we beg you to lend us your strength. At the very least, even if it's just cooperation to make it so Kuwaibel can reach the underground of the palace, can you please help us with that?」

Roze's pleaded fervently. Hajime retorted back without any particular change in his expression.

「What kind of compensation you can give me?」

「Eh? Co, compensation?」

The Crow siblings were going to make a ruckus once more, 'even though this concern the future of the dragon kingdom's people' like that, but Roze stopped them with her gaze. And then, she thought of what she could present, and the result, with determination she――

「I, I'll offer myse――」

「No need.」

「Hauh!?」

She was unable to say it until the end. Even though she was going to offer herself with a determination of the lifetime, yet it was cut down and discarded instantly. Roze whispered

a line「E, even though, I am a queen」that might make a certain princess-sama somewhere to go「Comrade♪ Comrade♪」while jumping for joy.

「Or rather, you are really going to say that in front of Tio huh. The nerve you have there is really quite something.」

「Eh, ah. My, my apology, Tio-sama! I do not intend to insult Tio-sama by any means……」

「It’s fine, it’s fine, I understand.」

If she knew that actually Hajime also had multiple wives other than her, just what would this queen-sama of another world think? Tio averted her gaze with a vague expression.

Roze sank into silence with a difficult expression, and her gaze wandered around furiously while her head was working desperately.

Hajime opened his mouth with a sigh to finish the talk soon.

「Certainly, I have great power, and I can brag that just destroying a country won’t take much effort. But, it’s because of that that I won’t use my power because of other people’s will. My power is only mine, and it has to be wielded constantly by my will. Save me, help me, those wishes aren’t something exclusive that only you have. The world is overflowing with that kind of wishes, as many as the stars in the sky. I don’t have even the littlest bit of intention to spend my life and my important people’s life until it runs dry from responding and rush about everywhere to that kind of wishes just “because I can”.」

That was why, even if it was everything for the people in question, Roze’s wish that was nothing but a common wish for Hajime wasn’t something that he would undertake that

simply as long as it didn’t even have any merit for him that could make him overturned his decision.

「And, you guys who are wishing for me to slaughter several thousand people and overthrow a country in your place, what kind of compensation you can pay me that can make me overturn my will that is flatly refusing to do that kind of thing and make me decide to wield my power?」

「……」

Roze couldn’t say anything at all this time for sure. Olga, Jean, and Bovid were also the same.

Hajime stood up from his seat. Roze twitched and trembled.

「As expected I’m not that shameless that I can keep remaining here after refusing your dearest wish like that. Tio and I will go to visit Helmut after this. I’ll only promise that I will clear up the dark cloud from this world. I don’t know how you queen-san, and others will live in the new world where the black rain vanish, and the sunlight shines on the land but……at the very least, I’ll pray for your success. It’ll be great if your dearest wish can come true.」

「ah, wa, wait-. Please wait-」

Hajime said that and prompted Tio with his gaze to walk out from the door. Roze threw herself at such Hajime. Of course, she wasn’t attacking him but stopping him from leaving. She clung on Hajime’s arm and desperately formed her words.

「Sa, say, err, tha, that’s right! Even though you say you will subjugate Helmut, but you don’t know where his location is right? We will show you the way! That’s why, please don’t leave-. Putting aside the matter of the divine country’s

subjugation, we still haven’t been able to return our debt of you saving us!

If it’s Helmut’s location, then we can do something about it ourselves. About the debt, the delicious meal and empty bed are enough for that.

Hajime quickly shook off Roze’s clinging arms, but Roze circled around him and took position in front of the door with both her hands spread out. Hajime’s eyes narrowed quietly, but even while sweating coldly, Roze didn’t show any sign of moving at all.

Pl, please, come to Avenst by any means!

You are trying to take us away?

That’s not it! I do not think that such a thing is possible! ……If it’s in Avenst, then we will be able to show our gratitude a bit more properly. Even the cooking there is incomparable with the food in Rozeria. Also in Avenst’s airspace, there is an island with a lake and an island that grows rare fruit! After that, there are also a lot of dragons living there-. It’s only a few, but we are living in coexistence. Among us there are also people that can ride a dragon, the sight of human and dragon flying together is really beautiful……after that……the people of Avenst are all good-natured, ah, there is also craftsman that specialized in handling ore! Surely you will be interested. Besides, err, that……

She was already desperate. Even while getting incoherent, Roze was trying to make her invitation to mother ship Avenst into reality by speaking out things that might attract Hajime’s interest one after another. It was also just a bit painful seeing her like that.

Roze spread out her hands with all her might to not let anyone pass while narrating the charm of her country that didn’t even have any territory with teary eyes. It seemed that she was thinking that if she invited Hajime to Avenst, then there would still some possibility left they could move his emotion and receive his cooperation.

There, Crow siblings and Bovid also joined. They kept speaking on and on so that they wouldn’t lose their connection with Hajime somehow. Kuwaibel was raising a small cry while approaching Tio’s leg.

Staring at those brave figures of the queen and her group desperately clinging to their hope, Hajime’s expression suddenly turned gentle. Roze and others got taken aback, and then their eyes shined with hope thinking that perhaps Hajime would hear to what they were saying.

Hajime was making an expression that seemed to say ‘can’t be helped huuh’, yet it also looked really gentle, while――his hand was reaching toward Donner.

(Wait wait wait wait-, wait a second, Goshujin-sama! As expected, there art no way thou wouldst shoot them to death here correct?)

(Tio. You, what do you think I am. Of course, I won’t open up any hole in them. I have properly changed the bullet with a non-lethal rubber bullet. I’m just going to give them a bit painful forehead poke.)

(……I, is that so? No, even so, I think that art still too much though.)

Roze and others were puzzled seeing Tio who suddenly held down Hajime’s right hand and began to whisper from point blank range. Surely they didn’t imagine even in their dream

that if Tio was late just by a step, they would get *dopan-*-ed.

Tio glanced at them who were actually in a pinch and whispered to Hajime with her body glued on him.

(Goshujin-sama, this art a rare chance, how about accepting the invitation?)

(What, you are interested?)

(Yes, I'm interested in the point where human and dragon art coexisting. Besides……)

(Besides?)

Tio looked down shyly. Hajime's eyes blinked at the unexpected gesture.

(Helmut's subjugation wouldst not take that much time correct? As expected, after closing the books of one history of this world, we wouldst not be in the mood of continuing to adventure aimlessly again. Helmut's subjugation wouldst be the end of this adventure.)

(Well, I guess.)

(Yes. After subjugating Helmut, we wouldst *return to earth.* That's why……)

(You are saying, you want to continue this adventure of just the two of us a bit more? Well, certainly an adventure of just two days and a night sound questionable.)

(Ye, yes. So just a bit more……is it no good?)

This was Tio whose vocation was a protector, so honestly, Hajime didn't know if that was all of her true feelings.

Perhaps she more or less had sympathy toward the dragon species of this world and Roze and others.

But, Tio’s selfishness where he usually needed to ask her before she finally said it out, now she said it by her own initiative. Hajime’s answer was decided already.

「Aa, then, perhaps I should take a look, just for a bit, at this country of queen-san and others.」

「Ah, that means……」

「Yeah. I’ll accept your invitation. However, that’s all there is to it until the end. Understand that this doesn’t mean I’ll agree to cooperate with you.」

「I, I understand!」

They somehow held on to the hope. Of course, they also understood that at this rate it would be only an empty hope. Even so, they couldn’t help but felt relief and happiness.

Seeing Roze and others, the four of them rejoicing with each other, and Tio who was linking her arms with his in a good mood, Hajime smiled wryly.

Approximately a day after that.

Deep inside cloud mountain range area where giant cloud mountains were stretching out, the nation on board a ship Avenst finally showed up.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I plan to end Tio arc in about two more chapters.

The next update will be for 6 P.M Saturday if possible.

Arifureta Chapter 238

Arifureta After II The Determination of the Queen

Part 1

Inside the corridor of a magnificent palace before the dawn, hurried footsteps echoed.

The servants who were already starting to work turned their gaze in wonder about the loudly stamping footsteps, there their expression turned startled because they recognized the figure of the high official with a grim expression. That was because the high official of the divine country wasn’t a commendable character with the habit of waking up before the dawn.

The male high official turned through several passages, and before long he arrived in front of a room that was guarded by soldiers armed with firearms. Even though the guards recognized the high official’s face, but they instinctively put themselves on guard seeing his unusual state.

「You guys, announce my arrival to his majesty quickly! This is an emergency business-」

「Silas-sama. However, his majesty is still in the middle of his rest……」

The male high official who raised an angry voice――Silas was answered by one of the guards, but Silas cut him off with angrier voice.

「I don’t care-, wake him up! Quickly! I told you this is an emergency-」

□Ro, Roger!□

One of the guards called out to inside the room. After a while, who came out was a woman wearing thin clothes with a displeased expression. When the guard explained the situation, the woman’s expression was becoming even more displeased even while she drew back into the room.

Silas was tapping his foot in irritation while waiting. The guards were stirring awkwardly seeing that.

After a while, the displeased woman just now showed out her face with her clothes in order this time. And then she prompted Silas to enter.

Silas entered the room by pushing aside the woman, and he ignored the small curse of the woman that came from behind while heading toward the door inside the room. The room he was currently in was the room before the bedroom. It was a place for reception.

He knocked on the door a bit roughly, then he obeyed the voice□Enter□coming from inside that was said with a voice that sounded deliberately bad-tempered, and he opened the door.

□Silas. Do you really have a reason to rouse me out from bed?□

It was a man who was past his middle age. He was gulping amber colored alcohol that was poured into a glass while asking that. Although his appearance was only wearing a gown, his eyes’ sharp glint and grim expression had the pressure that naturally overpowered anyone who saw.

This man was the king of Sky Divine Country Qwailent——the usurper Gregor Cluzet Qwailent.

This king who had lived until now by stealing from other people since the time he had an awareness of his surrounding would easily turn his back on other even if it was his trusted confidant. Silas knew that. This man's overwhelming violence, and his craftiness that fully made use of that violence, and then his atrocity that was deeply dyed by his pillaging nature, his aura that came from all those wasn't just papier mache.

Such an atmosphere would usually make Silas shrank into himself, however, this time Silas only gulped his saliva and opened his mouth.

「The mother ship Ostinato fell. ――It was shot down.」

「……What did you say?」

A mother ship getting shot down had never happened since the founding of the country. Gregor's eyes slightly opened wide from hearing that report. His pressure was increasing further than before while he urged Silas「What happened?」 to continue.

「Last night, a sky battlecraft that belonged to Ostinato returned back alone. The pilot was a man named Higgs from Glowser squad. His sanity was mostly lost, so it was difficult to question him about the circumstance, but according to him, they were attacked by two monsters in the middle of a battle against Avenst, and then Ostinato got shot down.」

「Monster? Is it about Bovid's squad? Indeed, their skill is like a monster but――」

「No, that's……he said that they were done in by a man who fired a bombardment in the level of a mother ship's main cannon by his lone self, and a black dragon that flew in the speed of sound while manipulating flame and wind at will.」

「……Redo the questioning. No matter how you think, he must be crazy. Don’t tell me; you aren’t waking me up because you swallowed that kind of nonsense right?」

Gregor whose displeasure was drastically increasing had his finger gliding toward the gun placed on the desk. He must be thinking that if Silas was that kind of incompetent, then he didn’t need him anymore.

Silas continued his report even while he was trickling cold sweats.

「Of course, I’m reporting this after confirming that it’s not nonsense. After the questioning, we sent a call at Ostinato using wide area communication. But, there was no result. And then when we sent an investigation unit at the place where Ostinato fell……」

「It was true?」

「Yes.」

The investigation unit here referred to a unit that mainly investigated the land. They were mostly unarmed, in exchange, their airship was fast and thickly armored, the unit members were also wearing special protective clothing that could defend against the black rain’s encroachment for a little while.

The component of black rain that had been raining down for many years on the land was also included by a lot into the moisture in the air, so even if someone didn’t get touched directly, their body would get eroded just by breathing the air. To investigate the land, what was needed wasn’t a respiratory device that purified the air, but fully sealed protective clothes with an oxygen tank.

Therefore, even if they were called an investigative unit, but their activity on the land was limited timewise……

「It was an investigation unit that was sent urgently, so they didn’t look around for much detail but――」

Silas was at a loss for words. His lips distorted as though he was hesitating and choosing his words carefully. Gregor urged him「Doesn’t matter, just report it as it is」in irritation.

「It seems that the exterior of Ostinato, its 3-gun turrets as well as the ship’s rear bottom are gouged out wholly. The sky battlecrafts onboard are mostly gone, most of the important spots were blown off as though they were exploded from inside. And then……about the crews……」

「Hmph. They are annihilated anyway right?」

「Yes. But, it seems that the cause wasn’t just the black rain.」

Saying that Silas took out a data storage of recording video inside the mother ship that was brought back by the investigation team. Silas’s expression was pale for some reason. Gregor received the data storage while looking suspicious and inserted it into his personal console.

What was projected in the display was……

「That guy-, that guy is coming-. Run away quickly-」

「Stop-, it’s me! Don’t shoot-」

「Noooo-, no moreeee-. The voice won’t go away-. Someone-, hel――」

「Aa, aAAAAAAAAAA-」

□Die-, DIEEEEEEE-□

It was a scene of chaos and madness that would make one covered their eyes. The recording was only showing the crews of Ostinato. However, everyone was fighting, bawling, or desperately running away as though they were being chased by something unseen.

And then, the people who lost their sanity early attacked the people nearby, and then the stray bullet from the attempt to counterattack that would attack other people……after that it was just like a stone that rolled down a slope. It was a crucible of madness that created unseen terror and excessive paranoia against the comrade before them.

□What, is this……□

□……□

Silas couldn’t answer at the mutter that unconsciously came out from Gregor’s mouth.

Before long, when the madness reached its peak, everywhere inside the ship exploded unnaturally, and Ostinato ultimately crashed to the ground. The lightning strike inside the sea of clouds further destroyed the inside of the ship, but someone must be displaying their last obstinacy because the ship recovered its floating power for a moment just before it crashed on the ground and it somehow avoided complete destruction. Even so, the ship still exposed a figure that looked atrocious even just from looking.

□Silas, what happened with Ostinato?□

□I don’t know. We cannot confirm the existence of intruder from the ship’s recording. Just what is “it” the crews were

frightened at……or perhaps, it might be the “monster” that Higgs was talking about.

Inside the room became deathly silent. It was an eerie silence that would make one wanted to express it by saying it was like even the insect was holding breath.

.……What about the battle record against Avenst? You will know what was “it” Ostinato was fighting from there right?

That’s, because of the explosions from an unknown cause, all the record inside the ship except this one was destroyed and couldn’t be recovered.

Perhaps, that too was the work of the “monster”……even without putting it into words, the two of them thought of the same thing.

Silence ruled the place for a while. Gregor was looking across the window at the sky that was nearing dawn while he suddenly gulped down his alcohol. He drank directly straight from the bottle. Its alcohol content was high, and quite some amount was remaining in it, but he drained it dry without feeling bothered by that.

And then, he threw the bottle to the floor that it broke into pieces. He wiped his mouth roughly and looked at Silas with a fiercely blazing gaze.

Silas’s body jumped while he fell into hallucination as though he was being glared by a wild beast. Gregor made a grin that displayed his brutal nature and gave his order.

Summon the ship captains. Every one of them except the defense fleet.

"Wha-, that's……. Your majesty, you will finally take care of those guys?"

"Yeah. The struggle of those Avenst bunches was a suitable amusement. I don't know what they are starting to raise, but this time they overdid it. I'll have them disappears now."

By no mean Avenst had succeeded in applying guerilla tactics against the divine country. In the first place, there was an overwhelming difference in resource and technology between the two sides. If Gregor felt like it, it was a trivial matter to annihilate them.

They were solely surviving because battle that happened unpredictably became Gregor's amusement. That was all.

But, as expected the prided mother ship of the divine country getting shot down was a situation that he couldn't turn a blind eye on. Because they introduced themselves as a country of god that ruled the sky, they couldn't have themselves got even a single scratch from the like of pirate. This concerned the dignity of the nation.

Therefore, he would overwhelm them with all his forces excepting the fleet that was left behind for the country's defense. He would exterminate them from this world, not leaving a single speck of dust behind.

Silas lowered his head wordlessly and turned on his heel in order to accomplish his task.

"Come to think of it, that princess too should be in a suitable age about this time……kukuh, maybe it's also not bad to take in the royal blood. Or perhaps, I should even show how the last royalty fall in front of the survivors."

A delighted laugh echoed.

Gregor Cluzet Kwailent——he was without a doubt a usurper.

Part 2

The gigantic mother ship Avenst was moored in the valley of a cloud mountain..

The mother ship of divine country Ostinato that Hajime sank was also gigantic, but Avenst was two sizes larger than it.

Although, if it was asked whether its majesty surpassed Ostinato because it was superior in size, then the answer could be no other than “No”.

After all,

「……The gun turret has a lot of laundries aired there.」

「……The deck, hath plantation spreading through the whole thing there.」

Hajime and Tio who were observing the gradually nearing Avenst using binoculars muttered so spontaneously.

Yes, the mother ship Avenst was horribly peaceful from the outside. The gun barrels and turrets on the exterior were linked with each other by wire and laundries were hanged in a row there. A panty of some madam was hanging on the tip of the main cannon. Honestly, the two of them couldn’t help but felt their strength drained from them seeing that.

In addition, there was a splendid plantation on the deck. There were a lot of people taking care of it diligently even now. And then, on top of such deck children were running

around energetically. There was even a daredevil that slid down something that looked like a slide that stretched to the outside from the deck until the bottom of the ship in one go.

「I, it’s more or less treated as the “royal capital”, so it’s attaching importance to the livelihood or something……in the first place, Helmut had collected the dragon core of the monarch dragon that became its driving force, so even though it has weapons, but they won’t work satisfactorily. And so, if that’s the case, then it’s better to use it for valid practical use……」

Roze made that kind of justification with her cheeks reddening slightly in shame.

Actually this mother ship Avenst was the battleship that the prince once created using the dragon core of his partner. Although, its dragon core was taken out by Helmut, so right now it was moving using only sky core, and the most it could do was only flying just barely.

Knowing that Hajime threw a questioning gaze of what they would do if they were discovered by the enemy, to which Roze puffed up her chest and pointed with her finger.

「It’s fine. Its weapons are mostly not functioning, but the thickness of its armor is top class even among the existing airships in the present time. Even if it got hit by the main cannon of a mother ship, it is able to endure several shots with room to spare. What’s more, airships protecting Avenst are always at its side.」

Looking closer, there was an airship moored beside the mother ship Avenst.

Airship Averia――it was the sister ship of Roze’s battleship Rozeria. If it had to be said, then Rozeria put importance on

speed and maneuverability, in contrast, Averia was a battleship that put importance on firepower.

These two ships had protected the descendants of dragon kingdom Avenst until now, said Roze proudly.

Hajime was glancing at such girl while cocking his head in puzzlement inside his heart.

(Just two ships, what's more, their mother ship is not even in destroyer level……they are really pulling through continuously until now while burdened with protecting baggage? Is there just how much the difference in skill between the two sides? No, even so……)

Hajime turned his gaze to Tio. Coincidentally Tio also turned her gaze to Hajime at that time, so their gaze met and their expression was at a loss for words. Roze herself said that they had protected all these continuously until now, but perhaps, that was……like that the two of them reached the same conclusion.

While they were doing that, the mother ship Avenst was gradually getting closer and closer.

Naturally, the existence of the airship Rozeria was also noticed by the other side, so the people who were tending to the plantation, and also the children were gathering toward a spot on the deck bustlingly. That spot must be the spot where Rozeria would come alongside.

Roze waved her hands energetically. A loud cheer was raised just from that. It seemed that her popularity was becoming of a queen.

The Crow siblings and Bovid and others of sky battlecraft squad also came out to the deck and started the preparation

to transfer to Avenst.

When the airship came alongside the mother ship Avenst, the deck of Avenst was jammed with people. Although Hajime had fixed it to a certain degree, Rozeria was really in a terrible state. It seemed that it was enough to make the expression of the people welcoming the queen to turn pale.

「Everyone, there is no need to worry. We were attacked by Qwailent, but it’s as you see! I and also Kuwaibel are safe!」

「Piih!!」

When Roze lifted up Kuwaibel high with both her hands, joyful cheers occurred once more. Roze hugged Kuwaibel back on her chest and lifted one hand to calm down the cheers, and this time she raised her voice with a meek expression.

「But, a lot of pilots offered their precious life in order to let us survive. Please direct your feeling toward the brave warriors who are unable to go back home. And then, please give them praise. We are protected by them.」

The sky battlecraft pilots were lining up on the deck. A sobbing voice resounded from here and there from the people who didn’t see the figure of their important people that they should have seen off at the departure. Bovid and others put their fist on their chest and looked up to the sky. That was the salute in the dragon kingdom. They offered a silent prayer at their comrades who had gone ahead of them.

The people on the deck naturally also offered a silent prayer.

Silent prayer was spreading in the sky where a gentle breeze was blowing.

After the silent prayer continued for a while, an aging man stepped forward in front of the crowd.

「Roze-sama, welcome home.」

The white-haired man with splendid mustache bowed his head deeply with his back kept stretching straight.

「Gramps. I’m back. Was there any problem?」

「None, there wasn’t any such thing. This Sabastian Orto is entrusted with looking after this place during Roze-sama’s absence. No problem would occur that easily as long as I’m here.」

This man who answered calmly yet with a definite confidence seemed to be Roze’s trusted retainer. His appearance, his way of speaking, and his atmosphere were absolutely that of a butler despite the normal work clothes he was wearing. Hajime and Tio started thinking in regard to this man.

That thought was,

「「Almost」」

Hajime and Tio spontaneously retorted. ‘If only his name wasn’t “Sa” but “Se”, they would be able to prove the existence of the implicit rule shared through a parallel universe that speaking of butler meant “Sebastian”, and yet!’ was what they thought.

When the alternate world duo who didn’t read the place’s atmosphere made a complicated expression, Roze mistook that expression thinking that the two of them were getting bored, and so she started to get down the ramp in panic.

She did that while calling Hajime and Tio’s name by attaching ‘-sama’.

Naturally, there was no way the people didn’t get suspicious when they heard their queen calling others using ‘-sama’, and as their representative, Sabastian raised a question.

「Roze-sama, can I ask who are these two people?」

「They are guests. This gentleman is Nagumo Hajime-sama, and this lady is Tio Claus-sama. They will be staying in Avenst for a while. ……They are important, really really important people, so please take care of them absolutely politely.」

「……Roze-sama’s, important, person?」

Gramps’s gaze seized Hajime. Knowing the meaning of that gaze, Hajime averted his gaze. ‘This is because you said important “people”’, Hajime retorted inside his heart.

「I’m sorry to be rude, but Roze-sama, more specifically what kind of acquaintance they are for you? By any chance, are they from Qwailent?」

「No, Gramps. They aren’t related to Qwailent. That, about their background, saying it here is a bit……. Anyway, I request this to Gramps no matter what! Please give them our greatest hospitality! ……No matter what, we have to please Hajime-sama.」

The last sentence was said at a small volume that couldn’t be heard by the people at the surrounding, but Sabas who possessed the ears of an excellent butler caught it perfectly. Sabas who had taken care of Roze since she was born loved Roze like she was his own daughter.

And that master of his that should even be called as his beloved daughter was now desperately trying to please a man that he didn’t know……

‘Okay. I don’t really get it. In other words, he is enemy isn’t he?’ He concluded.

Of course, Roze whispered that in the meaning that she wished for Hajime to be pleased with Avenst. She understood that if Hajime felt like it, then it didn’t matter what Tio wanted, and so Roze made that utterance because of that, but the eyes of gramps Sabas who didn’t know one bit about that instantly turned into the eye of a killer. While smiling friendlily and gently.

「So that’s how it is. Well then, I will immediately prepare the room and meal. Nagumo-sama, Claus-sama, if any of you need something, then please order anything from this Sabas without any reservation.」

As expected from the steward that directly served the royalty. He showed truly elegant manners while smiling friendlily, and gently with the eyes of a killer.

Thinking that for now he should clear up the misunderstanding before this gramps gave them trouble, Hajime opened his mouth.

「Aa, Sabas-san? I’ll say this because it seems you are having a misunderstanding, what queen-san there is saying doesn’t mean like that okay? Or rather, I’m a married man. See, this woman here is my wife.」

Saying that Hajime grasped Tio’s arm and jerked her to the front. For some reason, Tio bowed her head gracefully while saying「Nice to meet you, thank you for always taking care of my husband」, she was making a greeting as though she

was meeting the superior of the company where her husband was working for some reason.

It seemed that it was something she wanted to try saying at least once after seeing an afternoon drama. Tio was giving glances at Hajime saying「How's that? How is that? Didst I look like a wife just now?」.

Hajime smiled wryly thinking that this wasn't that kind of situation, even so, he brushed Tio's hair unreservedly. Tio's cheeks were dyed red from a sweet pleasure that was different from when she got slapped.

Even seen from the side, it was obvious in a glance that the relationship of the two wasn't something shallow.

When Hajime tried to look at Sabas thinking that the misunderstanding must be solved with this……indeed, it seemed that the misunderstanding that he was a scoundrel aiming at their important master was solved, but in exchange, a new misunderstanding seemed to be created.

The eyes of Sabas whose body was trembling all over were moistening with sadness and,

「Roze-sama……gramps feels really sad-」

「Eh? Eeh? Wha, what's wrong gramps!? Why are you suddenly looking like wanting to cry!?」

Roze-chan got flustered. Gramps's hands gently grasped Roze's shoulders, and he opened his mouth in admonishment.

「Roze-sama――you must not commit adultery.」

「Gramps, is your head okay?」

Roze tilted her head wondering, ‘has he finally starting going senile?’. Behind her, the Crow siblings were making an amazed expression, while Bovid was desperately enduring his laughter.

「Indeed, Gramps was looking after Roze-sama strictly. I am keeping a watchful eye at Roze-sama even in regard to the matter of love. Even though currently there is hardly anyone with a lineage that is a good match for Roze-sama, there is no way I can just leave Roze-sama to any man. Therefore, the love letter for Roze-sama from those people who don’t know their standing, I tore up and discarded all of them after I inspected them but……」

「Eh!? Please wait a second. That’s the first time I heard that though? There is someone who gave me a love letter? In this Avenst? Or rather, what do you mean by inspecting them and then tearing them up!?」

Roze’s popularity in Avenst was high. And then, she was living with the people on the same ship, and she was always talking with them normally, on top of that she was treating everyone amiably. She was boasting tremendous popularity among the young men.

Of course, Roze was idolized as a queen, and those men didn’t believe that they would be able to build a really good relationship with Roze, the most that they did was only writing up their heart’s feeling and sent them to her. And it was done by a considerable number of people.

However, Roze had never received something like a love letter even once. She had also never getting confessed at. She was at that age, so it wasn’t like she didn’t have interest for that, but she thought that no one was thinking of her like that because her social position was in the way.

But, she never thought, that it was like that because……

Roze-chan morosely pressed her question to the gramps, but it didn’t reach the ear of the brooding gramps.

「Roze-sama, please give up your idea! To aim at a man who is married……even before thinking about the morals as royalty, it’s already mistaken as a human! Please, think again and stop from something like a looting love!」

「Really, what are you saying gramps!? I’m going to stuff you into Rozeria’s main cannon and blast you off you know!?」

The people of Avenst stirred.「Her majesty is, looting love…… holy cow」,or「She abducted a man she is pleased with, altogether with his wife……as expected from our queen」, or 「My, love letter……」, or「Or rather, just who is that man who shot through Roze-sama’s heart?」, or「That breast. That beautiful black haired woman is his wife……how envious, I’m jealous」, or「You, you like that kind of woman more than me? Then, I look forward to an encounter at the next world okay」, or「Wai-, that’s a joke. I only have feelings for you-. Ah, wait, don’t push! I’ll fall, I’m going to fall-, sto-, aa~~~~-」, those voices could be heard.

Roze desperately raised her voice in denial. However, putting aside the male camp, the female camp’s misunderstanding was also unexpectedly not really clearing up. It seemed that the female camp of Avenst knew quiet welt that their queen who was at that age was a hidden pervert.

Roze who got lukewarm gazes directed at her no matter what she said yelled「This is a misunderstanding~~~~~-!!」 resoundingly through the blue skies.

Two whole days passed since Hajime and Tio arrived in mother ship Avenst.

During that time, Hajime and Tio received the greatest hospitality possible from Roze and others.

At the first day, Roze gathered the top brasses and shared the information regarding the circumstance and background of Hajime and Tio, so the top brasses with Sabas whose misunderstanding was solved at the forefront were giving their hospitality by their own initiative, to the degree that was desperate. Hajime and Tio tasted a treatment a bit like VIP.

They had their fill of various cooking that was using the mysterious ingredients of this world. The foods fundamentally were grain, fruit, and vegetable, but those products had extremely good flavor from the grace of the sky core's effect, coupled with the skill of the cook, it was enough to satisfy both of them.

They were also guided to a floating island that possessed a large lake. The water that was flowing out from the floating island dispersed midair and turned into white mist which was covering the whole island, that sight truly should even be called as a secret region that was covered by a mystical veil, to the degree that just by being able to look at that made the two thought that it was worth it to come to this world.

Also, the sky cores that were dotting the lake's surrounding seemed to possess the property to take in the humidity in the air and turned it into spring water. The fact that its nature was subtly changed due to that area and the

environment caused Hajime’s blood as a transmutation master to boil up.

Hajime also exchanged a piece of god crystal with the craftsmen of Avenst who were handling the sky core, and they had a discussion. They got along great with each other. The expression of Hajime who comprehended the various natures of the sky core looked pleased with himself.

There was also the matter of the misunderstanding about Roze’s illicit love with the married couple spreading, but the people of Avenst also came into contact with Hajime and Tio with immense curiosity. Someone would surely call out to them kindly when they walked inside the ship.

And the best thing in the two’s opinion was that they were able to see this coexisting livelihood of dragon and human.

Human and dragon flew around to patrol and repair the ship’s exterior, to harvest on the floating island and deliver luggage, and sometimes just to dry the laundry. The human and dragon that became partner numbered very few if seen from the whole, even so, the good old way of living of this world could be found there. It was something that Tio admired very much.

In general, the country aboard the ship called Avenst really matched Hajime and Tio’s preference whether in the people’s trait, their senses of value, and also their way of coexistence. It was a comfortable country. At the very least, it was far better than the trait of the country that tried to kill them without question and spewed out an outrageous remark to Tio the very first time they met.

And then, when Tio and Hajime welcomed the morning of the third day they were enjoying enough this country called Avenst and this world.

The two were waiting for the appearance of the sun for who knew how many times at the front deck of the mother ship Avenst.

There, a voice that was filled with faint nervousness and resolve called out at them.

「……Hajime-sama, Tio-sama. What do you two think about our country?」

When the two looked back across their shoulder, over there was Roze who was holding Kuwaibel in her arms like usual. No, it wasn't just her, the Crow siblings and Bovid, Sabastian, and then the top brasses of Avenst starting with the captain of airship Azeria were arrayed there. Everyone was making a complicated expression like a traveler that was made to stand in the fork road.

「I think it's a good country. I can even think of it as normally comfortable even without the hospitality.」

「Is, that so. I'm, glad to hear that.」

Roze's expression who heard that showed a wry smile. She must have guessed it. That the thinking if they could move the emotion of the two, then perhaps Hajime would change his mind and gave them their help, such thinking didn't work.

「As expected, something like the status of being our hero, it's not enough as compensation isn't it?」

「You already knew that right from the start right? A man who will change his mind easily after receiving that much hospitality, do you think that kind of man can be expected to become anything like a hero that saved a country?

Something like that just isn’t in my nature, and it doesn’t even suit me.

Fufu. Indeed, when I think back about your deed when cornering the mother ship of Avenst, the title of hero really don’t suit you Hajime-sama at all.

Now you have said it queen-sama. ……Conversely, it feels like it’s you who become a bit unbound from something instead.

While the expression of the top brasses looked frustrated and pained, it was only Roze whose eyes were containing resignation along with a vague resolve.

Roze took a deep breath at Hajime’s pointing out so.

Perhaps. During these two days, I have been looking at the two of you all the time. Even when you two were having fun, I saw that your heart is unwavering. Why? Even though all these nice people might die, how can you still abandon them? What a terrible person. I also had that kind of thinking.

Hmph? You think differently now?

I will lie if I say that I’m thinking completely differently. Because no matter what, I am an absolute ally of Avenst. But, somehow, the two of you, aren’t inhuman people who don’t show interest to us……let’s see, if I have to say, I come to think of the two of you like a “large tree”.

Hajime titled his head not understanding what Roze meant. In response to that, Roze talked while choosing her words. The top brasses which were making complicated expression were also lending their ears to Roze’s speech.

「An unshakeable existence that is just existing there. Sometimes it protected us from the cold rain or softening the illuminating sunlight. But, it would never hold out its branches because it is asked, that kind of existence.」

「……That's a strangely fitting phrase.」

Roze chuckled while saying「I'm honored with your praise」 seeing she was able to make Hajime blink.

The eastern sky was starting to grow light bit by bit. The dawn was near. Roze turned her gaze at the eastern sky that was starting to brighten while adding on her words. The top brasses were also lending her their ears silently.

「At that time, when the sun came out, the two of you said to me that "this world is beautiful". I had forgotten that all this time, but certainly, even when it has ended up in this state, this world is beautiful. Even though it's this beautiful, even though it has been broken like this, but mankind is still not repenting. ……I thought, just for a little. Taking back our country, defeating Helmut, and then taking back the world before this——is there any meaning in those?」

The top brasses were suddenly starting to get noisy. That was only natural. After all, their king was blurting out something that sounded like she denied mankind's continuation.

「A destructive thinking huh? But I think that you were persuading us really desperately considering all that though?」

「Of course. Because it was something that I only thought for a bit, I'm not throwing away our dearest wish or anything.」

Relieved sighs were leaked out. The top brasses were stroking down their chest.

Amidst them, Roze talked to Hajime who was tilting his head wondering just what was it she wanted to say.

「Surely, there is no meaning in it.」

「In your dearest wish?」

「No. In being saved.」

Kuwaibel cried out sounding vaguely troubled. It was Kuwaibel who sought help the first time at Hajime and Tio. However, he didn't seek help to break the deadlock in the dangerous situation of that time. He was seeking for the salvation of the dragon kingdom itself from Tio's overwhelming presence that his senses as a monarch dragon detected.

Guessing what Roze wished to say, the expression of the top brasses looked taken aback and turned into a vaguely troubled look.

「We surely have to save ourselves by our own effort. If not, in the world, after it is saved, we will surely walk on the path that destroys the world once more……that's what I think.」

「I think it will be fine if it's the people of dragon kingdom though?」

「No. As long as we don't even massacre all the people at the fight against Qwailent, the one living in this world won't just be the people of dragon kingdom. Even if we tell them to live in repentance after having everything ended by a supernatural existence, just what kind of persuasiveness that can be found from that kind of words?」

After having their country destroyed by an incomprehensible existence that suddenly appeared, there was no way the people would then lend their ears toward the preaching of the people of a dead country who didn’t even really fight.

The overwhelming power that Hajime and Tio displayed was a lethal poison in a sense. If such power could be wielded, then the wielder would undoubtedly be able to force their will to happen. Seen from the viewpoint of people who were lamenting powerlessly, the people who were reaching out their hand toward their dearest wish, it wasn’t an exaggeration even if such power was called as a magic with unequaled charm.

Therefore, Roze who was charmed and became captive of that power where she then asked for help, after she saw the figure of Hajime and Tio living a really normal daily life, showing admiration and wonder at everything in the trifling ordinary day, it seemed that her boiling mind recovered its calmness.

「Originally, we should also say “Don’t get involved, this is our problem” about Helmut’s subjugation too, but……」

「You are awfully different from two days ago huh. Well, those are admirable words but……my wife said, ‘I want to beat up Helmut-kun viciously until you cannot even recognize how he looks like!’, so just give up on that.」

「N, no, Goshujin-sama? I, didst not really speak that far……」

Actually, Hajime-san also thought that he wanted to go and took a look at an “evil” dragon. This wasn’t just a mere dragon they were talking about. It was an “evil” dragon. ‘Isn’t that tickling the soul!’ Though currently, it was a

serious scene, so he read the mood and kept such thinking only in his heart.

「I see. Then, we will fight in the world that stops raining. We will pray for your success in Helmut's subjugation. And then, if possible, it will make us happy if you will remember us, the dragon country Avenst, oh horrible dragon knight-sama from another world.」

「I told you already right; I'll pray, so that the dearest wish of you all queen-san and others can come true. Or rather, what's with that horrible dragon knight-sama huh. As I thought, you are holding a bit of grudge aren't you?」

「Who knows, what are you talking about?」

Roze said that while chuckling.

It seemed that she really wasn't planning to request the two of them to become their proxy in war anymore.

There were two kinds of victory. A meaningful victory, and a meaningless victory. Surely the path Roze and others were walking on was filled with hardships, but if they were looking for the former, then they had to fight on their own. Her smile was a bright one must be because she had clearly realized that and resolved herself.

The top brasses were making a troubled expression at their queen's decision, but when Roze looked back, and asked「Is there any objection?」with her gaze, they bowed their head unanimously. And then, when they lifted their head back, the same resolve and determination like Roze were dwelling in those eyes.

「Hajime-sama, Tio-sama. I'm glad I can meet the two of you. Please, stay healthy.」

「Ou, you guys too. I won’t forget about the people of the sky who are living together with the dragons.」

「Roze-dono. I’m praying for limitless happiness for thee, and for thy important people.」

The morning sun showed its face. Warm light filled the world from beyond the sea of clouds.

Hajime and Tio shook hand with Roze, and like that, they were about to part――

「-, Cross Bit!!」

Suddenly Hajime yelled. Right after that, the huge flash that was launched from the sun assaulted the flank of mother ship Avenst.

Hajime defended against that attack using a barrier that was formed by the Cross Bits he secretly deployed two days ago when they arrived at this ship.

Thunderous sound and impact shook the world. Roze screamed, and she was about to tumble down, but Tio helped her to stand still.

Because the barrier didn’t cover the whole ship, the extremely violent flash was making mother ship Avenst to tilt with its after wave. The top brasses on the deck were falling to their knees altogether.

Was it ten second, or one minute?

The flash fired from the sun was vanishing as though it was melting into the empty air.

「Hiding in the sunrise, they are acting witty.」

When Tio and Roze turned their gaze toward the sunlight at Hajime’s mutter――

There were countless black dots there.

It wasn’t just one or two. A great number of black dots could be seen inside the sunlight that was illuminating the world with blazing light.

No, those were, what appeared with the sun on their back using that light to hide their figure was――

「Qwailent’s fleet……no way, why are they here!?」

Roze’s words that sounded like a scream resounded.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Just, one more chapter……you know?

Next time the update plan is for 6 P.M Saturday too. That’s the plan.

Arifureta Chapter 239

Arifureta After II Black God Dragon Manifestation

AN: I don’t get it.

Whether it’s about the harmony that the people of Narou sometimes showed or the trust toward Shirakome that is non-existent.

Even though I said that there is only one more chapter left, no one trusts me!

Right, fine then. Then Shirakome also has my own thinking.

Yes, I’ll answer to that trust. I’ll continue for two or three more chapters okay!

It’s not ending at all! Even though I had written twelve thousand characters, but even the fight didn’t start yet!

I’m sorry for lying!

……It will really help if you all can laugh it off ‘just like usual, what a hopeless Shirakome huuuh’, like that.

Tio arc, please accompany it for a little bit more.

A fleet that was formed from easily more than a hundred ships appeared from inside the dawn. The number of the

airships was countless, and there were 30 ships at the same level with the mother ship Ostinato that was sunk before this, and then there were ten mother ships of Avenst's level that surpassed Ostinato's level, the number of sky battlecrafts was very much like the stars in the sky, and then there was one super gigantic battleship that seemed to be the flagship, advancing forward leisurely.

Their majestic appearance showed with certainty that it wasn't an overestimation to call them as the country that ruled the sky.

「……Why, how, are they here?」

They thought that their location wasn't known. Because if that was the case, then they would have been annihilated already since a long time ago. The fact that they were fighting even if it was with guerilla method was the proof that the nation on ship Avenst wasn't discovered, that was what they thought.

That was why Roze could only stand dumbfounded in front of the embodiment of death that suddenly showed their figure. She could only let out meaningless question of「Why」「How」.

Crow siblings and the other top brasses were also in a similar state. The combatant Bovid and then Sabas were showing a resolved face that said「Aah, so they finally come」. These two might be the only one who vaguely noticed this possibility. But, even though they noticed there was still nothing that they could do.

Silver color flashed.

「Chih. Oi, queen-san! How long you are going to stay dazed like that-. If you don't have any motivation, then I won't

defend the next one anymore!

-

Right after Hajime’s yell shook the air, the second wave of attack from the fleet assaulted mother ship Avenst. It was an attack like previously, a silver bombardment that thrust toward the flank. Twelve came in one wave.

In response, several variable chakrams “Orestes” were floating around before anyone knew it.

The Orestes instantly cut into the line of fire, and they unfolded with *kashun* sound. They opened a gate that crossed space in their inner area.

Each of the silver bombardment that was approaching while making the air screamed got seized into the internal of Orestes, and instantly they were returned back toward the fleet by another Orestes that were floating above Avenst.

The fleet got the main cannon attack they launched themselves returned back as it was toward them; however, they didn’t show unsightly appearance like getting sank from a direct hit of that. Several airship class ships that were deployed at the front shined silver, at the same time a barrier was deployed at their front line.

The barrier that was shining silver completely blocked the returned main cannon bombardment. And it didn’t stop there, the bombardment’s might was shaved off as though it was getting sucked and then the attack was erased in just a few seconds.

Hee. As expected, they are also making countermeasure against their own weapon.

「Something of this scale, it seems that the country itself art moving out. It's unknown whether this art only a part of their whole force though……. Goshujin-sama, it seemed that there was survivor wasn't it?」

Tio guessed that there was a survivor from the mother ship Ostinato who reported back to their country and she hummed in admiration. To think that there was a survivor from that attack of Hajime that should even be called as a savage deed, and that survivor even managed to struggle until he reached back home……surely that survivor was a possessor of a powerful fortune, she thought.

In reality, that possessor of powerful fortune was returning home in half crazy state, and after that, as the result of receiving an inquiry that was like a pseudo torture, his personality then became calm as though his nature was reversed or perhaps he had even reached enlightenment, and now he had become a character that was like a saint who loved dragon and nature and the sun above all else……

「Whoops, so it's a physical attack this time. For now, it looks like they are evading us.」

Several hundred missiles flew out from the fleet. All of them looked as though they were avoiding the vicinity of the front deck at the warship's bow where Hajime and others were at. They were flying toward the rear half of mother ship Avenst and the two airships at the side.

It seemed that they had noticed the existence of Hajime and Tio. On top of that, surely they weren't aiming at direct hit course toward the two of them because they were thinking to capture the two of them if possible.

「Well, it's easier to deal with when they art bunched up. Goshujin-sama, please take care of the straggler.」

「Okay.」

Tio thrust both her hands forward. The stance looked like she was going to hold something from left and right. And then a focused jet black magic power instantly came into being. It was sparking and compressed――and it was fired.

GOU, a bombardment on a scale that didn’t lose to the enemy ship’s main cannon before this surged forth.

Tio was launching the prided breath attack of the dragon race. It easily erased a part of the approaching missile swarm. In addition, when Tio swung her arm, like a giant laser blade that was made from the jet black light, the missile swarm was mowed down horizontally.

Several dozen missiles that got away were shot down by Hajime’s sniping.

At the same time,

「Now then, to conform to manners, we have to return the favor properly.」

What Hajime took out while saying that was, of course, the sky *chu……the sunlight convergence laser “Burst Hyperion”.

「First Compression Reactor――”Release”」

The sunlight energy that was already focused was launched directionally. The fiercely extreme light burned the retina as though it was further overwriting the sky’s morning glow.

Naturally, the barrier fleet formed the silver barrier. The light of Burst Hyperion mercilessly pierced through that barrier.

The impact sound that made the air screamed resounded, a part of the barrier fleet was pushed back by the might.

「Second Compression Reactor――”Release”」

The laser bombardment mercilessly increased its might. Different from the silver bombardment, the barrier was making unpleasant sound “bikiri-, paki paki-* without even being able to absorb the attack. The battle line was disarrayed and the silver light that was enveloping the barrier ship that was nearby the place where the laser impacted was flickering weakly.

「Third Compression Reactor――”Release”」

Of course, Hajime-san further pushed hard. The maximized sunlight laser was finally going to pierce through the fleet’s barrier.

But, perhaps it should be said as expected from the fleet of a country. It didn’t look like it would go that easily.

The warship with the biggest size shined brilliantly. That ship which seemed to be the flagship was enveloped by similar silver light like the barrier ship, and then it radiated the light toward the barrier ship.

「Hmph? It looks like monarch dragon granting power to another dragon huh.」

Hajime whispered while releasing the fourth compressed reactor. Just like how monarch dragon granted power to other dragons, it seemed the flagship was also able to grant power to other airship.

「……That’s the ability of the exclusive ship of Qwailent’s king――Durgrant. As long as that flagship exist, there won’t

be any way to defend against the fleet’s bombardment, and there won’t be any hope to slip through the barrier.

The one who answered Hajime’s whisper was Roze’s spiritless words. Shadow of despair peeked through her eyes. She must know it really well. The reason they couldn’t win even if they fought from the front. Until now they must have been brought to grief many times by this enemy.

As though to make doubly sure, there were also another fleets separated from the fleet in front, floating from three directions with the mother ship Avenst at the center. It seemed they were advancing while hiding on the outer layer of the sea of clouds and finished the encirclement.

I see. That’s certainly a tough barrier. ……Though it seems it’s taking considerable compensation for it.

A scream suddenly resounded. It was the yell of death agony that came from a beast. A clear ill will could be felt from their action that was purposefully broadcasting that voice using the speaker to the outside.

……The fleet is all linked up with equipment that magnified the dragon core energy. Naturally, that means that their driving force is using dragon core. They are using the land of Avenst for breeding dragons, so they are literally consuming dragon core as a disposable item.

In order to shed more detail, a dragon core would become bigger along with the dragon’s growth. A dragon that grew up through the years would possess fine quality dragon core inside their body. Because of that, with the objective of harvesting usable dragon core immediately after birth, they were also using drugs to quicken the dragons’ growth.

The scream of the dragons who were continuously killed having their source of life exploited one after another even right now at this moment caused Roze and others to make a pained expression as though it was themselves who were being cut apart.

Hajime saw them looking like that and let out a sigh, and then he stopped the firing of Burst Hyperion.

Actually, he was thinking to take out all his Burst Hyperion and launched his maximum bombardment that was concentrated in one spot + sublimation magic but……he saw Tio beside him who was obviously boiling with the emotions of rage and grief despite her expressionless face, so he refrained from doing that.

The attack of Burst Hyperion ended, and the unharmed fleet was resuming its march leisurely. It seemed that the fleet was vaguely enveloped with the atmosphere that was convinced they had endured through Hajime’s attack.

But, at that time, a man’s voice resounded in the airspace that was rampant with despair and scream. It was a voice that was heavily coated with ridicule, ill will, and atrocity.

So the bombardment just now is your doing, the black hair there.

There wasn’t any self-introduction. There wasn’t even any preface. If he asked, then the one asked would surely answer. They could do nothing else but answering; they wouldn’t even be allowed to stay silent. It was a question that couldn’t even hide such haughtiness.

And so, for the time being, Hajime shot Acht Acht.

A life-sized gun barrel. Zero time is sniping without even focusing on aiming.

Surely it looked like a peashooter after seeing the extremely big bombardment of Burst Hyperion.

But, that was a mistake. After all, that sniper cannon was specialized in penetration. The speed that was beyond the pale of the knowledge of electromagnetic acceleration was equal with destructive force. Under the condition of one point penetration, it was far above Burst Hyperion that was a weapon of extermination.

「Well, the main unit is also considerably tough huh. It would be quick if the boss is blown away by just now.」

「That place looks like the bridge, but it didst not meant that place art really one. Look, somehow his anger art transmitted to here. I didst not know who art this person, but it looks like he is still alive.」

A dangerous atmosphere was conveyed through the speaker of the flagship Durgrant. That was only natural. Because his question was replied by a shelling, what's more, that shelling easily pierced through the barrier and then blew up a part of the place that seemed to be the bridge of the flagship Durgrant.

Seen from the whole, it was really just damaging a minor part but……

It was really easy to see how shaken the fleet was. And it was even easier to understand the anger of the man who asked the question just now.

And then, that feeling of shaken also came from Roze and others behind. Lines like「Lies, Durgrant that had never even

been scratched until now is……, or「The legend, is easily broken like this……」, or「That mercilessness that is just like usual……I’m going numb here y’know, Hajime-san」could be heard from them.

The radiance that was enveloping Durgrant increased. At the same time, the screams of the dragons were also reverberating once more.

「You black hair, can you hear this? I’m not taking out fuel from them or anything you know? I’m only simply torturing them. They are crying with a nice voice, right? This crying voice of these animals you bastards are treasuring. ――If you want me to let you all die painlessly, then don’t you dare to make light of me aga――」

「What the hell you are talking about since some time ago? Speaking sluggishly like this after I’ve been waiting patiently like this. What a slow guy. Stop wasting time and speak your business. I’ll listen, so talk quickly.」

Against the haughtiness, even more haughtiness attacked back. Hajime answered using telepathy while still acting arrogantly with his arms folded. That attitude looked like he felt all of these were troublesome, it was unthinkable that he was doing bombardment contest like a space battle that would come out in an SF just now. He didn’t even ask the identity of the one talking to him.

Hajime had no interest in the identity of the one talking to him from the bottom of his heart. This was an opponent of little importance.

That implicit thinking was conveyed vividly to all the people in that airspace.

「……You don’t even know who I am? It looks like the collaborator of Avenst is a dumb guy huh.」

「There is no way I’ll know that when you don’t even introduce yourselves. Well, from your way of talking there is not even a fragment of refinement in it, are you an upstart punk or something? It’s better to not trying too hard to make yourself look threatening y’know. You might feel like a big shot after bringing a lot of your friends along like this but……the smell of a barking dog is intense even from here.」

Bursting out sound from Roze and others who knew about the true identity of the voice’s owner could be heard from behind.「Bufuh」It seemed that they reflexively leaked out a laugh.

Or rather, there was now Hajime didn’t understand just who was it riding the flagship in this situation. In other words, everything except when he said he didn’t know the speaker’s identity was merely his true feelings.

「What a cheap provocation. You said that, but you are desperately thinking about a plan to breakthrough this even now aren’t you? That’s a laugh. In deference of your comical figure, I’ll introduce myself. ――Gregor Cluzet Kwailent. The king of sky divine country Qwailent. Now you understand? The one in front of you is the god-king of this world.」

In a sense, that claim wasn’t a mistake. He possessed the greatest military force and also monopolized most of the limited resource in this world. Whether to give or steal, to let live or kill, it all depended on him. There wasn’t anyone who could object even if he introduced himself as a god.

But, Hajime who heard that claim was,

「I see. Well, say, that. Do your best okay, God-sama. I think you must have it hard in various things though.」

For some reason, Hajime gave him words of encouragement with a very gentle expression.

What crossed at the back of Hajime's mind was a god of a certain another world. The existence who when he was insisting「Because I'm a god. I don't have a friend, my country was also ruined, and I'm an attention seeker who liked to create a doll, but I'm seriously a god! That's why, everyone, listen to what I'm saying okay!」instead got a wind hole opened on his body and went *pop*.

Thinking back, that guy was someone really pitiful. Good grief, just who it was, who was the guy that beat up that kind of unfortunate and pitifully hopeless god to death leaving not even a dust behind. What a terrible guy.

「Goshujin-sama. Art you waiting for a retort for that? I wouldst say this, just in case, it was Goshujin-sama who obliterated that self-proclaimed god in rage. Also, I wouldst say this because it seems thou hath forgotten but, it was also Goshujin-sama who shaved the retainer god to death. That deed of chopping off his four limbs to instigate his pain and fear, and then shaving him to death slowly from the edge of his body, it was something that was really hard to forget.」

It seemed from the middle the event of Ehito going *pop* was leaked through the telepathy. An exasperated straight-man retort came in from Tio.

Roze and others were taking a step back with a creeped out expression. It was really not a method of killing that human

could do! They were taking distance with their shudders laid bare. The top brasses could be heard whispering things like 「I vaguely thought it but……as expected he is a demon」, or 「A brute, there is a brute hereee」, or「What lack of mercy……I admire that yeah」and so on.

Naturally, it was telepathy that was broadcasted externally, so the words of *self-proclaimed* god and the words of unfortunate and pitifully hopeless god were also overheard by all the people in the area. And the king of the divine country who was talked to be at the same rank with that kind of god and in the end even got a gentle expression directed to him was,

「Roze. Choose. Will you all fall into ruin altogether, or will you come under me along with the monarch dragon and abandon your country?」

He changed his target. It wasn’t like he was feeling awkward or anything. His emotionless voice was displaying really clearly the rage that was boiling like magma inside him.

Those were the words of the sworn enemy who usurped the throne and took over the country. However, Roze was unable to answer immediately. Gregor’s objective was clear. He was aiming for the power of monarch dragon from Kuwaible, the blood of royalty from Roze, and the enjoyment of seeing Avenst struggle after it lost these two.

In such a case, then the people of Avenst would surely go through annihilation exactly as though they were shaved to death. And then, Kuwaibel would be forced to go through experiment and mating to mass produce monarch dragon, while Roze would also become a plaything.

But, if they didn’t obey, then Avenst would perish immediately. The only difference between the two choices

was whether it would be a slow or fast death.

Originally even if they were going to challenge Qwailent in the cleared up world, but they wanted to leave behind those who couldn’t fight in a safe place. But it seemed even that choice was already gone.

After closing her eyes for a bit, Roze made her decision.

「Hajime-sama, Tio-sama. Please head toward Helmut’s subjugation without reserve. Surely it will be easy for you two to break through the encirclement with your strength.」

Hajime turned only his gaze toward her across his shoulder.

「You are going to have a decisive battle here?」

「No. Only I and Kuwaibel will go under Gregor.」

Screams were suddenly raised. The Crow siblings, Sabas, Bovid and the others combatant, and all the other top brasses unanimously called at her to stop. They didn’t wish to have a long life so much that they would sacrifice the queen and the monarch dragon. They insisted that such a way of living that knew no shame wouldn’t save anyone!

「I’m not giving up. Even if it’s only a faint hope, even if it’s a thorny path, as long as we are still alive then there is still hope. Furthermore, if Hajime-sama and Tio-sama are going to kindly subjugate Helmut for us, there might be a chance for us to make a comeback by making use of the resulting chaos. Right now, right now we have to live!」

Roze dignifiedly ordered to the top brasses, and also toward the people of Avenst who were starting to show up on the deck because they were awoken by the first cannon attack. Seeing the piercing light in those eyes even in this edge of

despair made them comprehended, that indeed, there was definitely no color of resignation there. What was there was merely an earnestly firm resolve and nothing else.

This time everyone but Roze was at a loss for words. They instinctively knew that the decision of the queen couldn’t be overturned just by their words. Her command to them to live for now pierced their chest.

The lips of Hajime who was watching at them like that across his shoulder, it warped slightly. That was the form of a small smile.

When he looked beside him, Tio was making a really gentle expression that was filled with affection. That figure who wouldn’t give up until the last moment even when she understood that it was a hellish path――was really beautiful.

Hajime shrugged his shoulders. And then, he asked about something that he had already understood since the time the fleet appeared from inside the dawn.

「Oi, Grugor. To tell the truth, I’m actually unrelated with this woman and Avenst. Do you feel like overlooking us two?」

「……」

It seemed that he didn’t have any intention to answer. He must have washed his hands already from Hajime. He didn’t care what would happen to Hajime after this even if Hajime ended up all but dead, as long as he was still alive in the end and he could be experimented on through something like torture to search for the secret of his strength. His intention against Tio should also be the same.

……Surely, he wasn’t sulking or anything because his name was mistaken so naturally just now, yes, there was no way it

was so.

Hajime who took the silence to meant no felt Tio making an expression that looked itchy as though she was holding down the emotion welling up inside her while he took a deep breath――

「Cough-. Aa~, informing the criminals who are abducting and confining the innocent dragon hostage~. Release all of them right no~~~~w! Your mother in the countryside is crying you knowww!」

At once Hajime felt gazes piercing him from behind that were asking「This guy, just what is he saying?」. At the same time, that kind of atmosphere was also transmitted toward him from the fleet somehow.

But, Hajime-san didn’t pay any attention to everyone’s bewilderment and began to dash leaving everyone behind. Because that was Hajime Quality after all!

「All of you, don’t have the right to request a lawyer! You also don’t have any ground to plead for any extenuating circumstance! But, I’ll allow your right to keep silent! If you let go of the dragon hostage, and then stay sil~lent and return home, I’ll be merciful and won’t shoot from behind! Now, this is a chance of a lifetime for you to avoid the death penalty you know! Who cares about Beroder! Kidnapper gentlemen! Just scurry back home with all your strength without fea~~r!」

What he was saying was already absurd. Also, even the name of the king-sama that he said was absurdly mangled.

「Are you listening, this is a warning! If you don’t release the dragons right now, I’m telling you it will be re~~ally terrible for you all okay! Just ignore what Hageter is telling you to

do! I’m not lying y’know? It will be a cold day in hell before I’m lyi――

A bombardment from the flagship Durgrant! Surely it was the payback for the name calling that was totally wrong already except the letter「r」.

Roze called in a panic at Hajime who blocked that with his barrier.

「Hajime-sama!? Just what in the world are you planning!? Why are you provoking them like that-」

「Either way, it was already too late by the time we hadn’t departed from here when that fleet arrived. Surely they won’t overlook us anymore now. Of course, it’s possible for us to escape right away but……」

It was impossible for Hajime to show his back toward people who were attacking him hostilely. Of course, it didn’t change even now that should be Roze and others should be the one fighting. That was why at present Hajime had no intention to make a move directly.

Then, why……Roze who was asking that was replied by Hajime with a grin.

「In this world, there are fellows who should also fight other than queen-san and co right? The fellows who ought to burn their soul betting their survival and dignity on the line.」

「Eh?」

Hajime averted his gaze from the bewildered Roze and gazed at Tio.

「Tio. Won’t you show to your junior this rug rat dragon, the real king of dragons?」

「Kufufuh. Actually, the screams of the dragons hath been clinging into mine ear, and it wouldst not go away since some time ago. Even if Goshujin-sama decides to leave this place, I’m planning to do it. But, I believe with mine all that Goshujin-sama wouldst surely meet mine expectation in this kind of time.」

Tio’s lips warped happily yet ferociously. Her pupils split vertically, and they had already turned into dragon eyes. It seemed the meaningless torture to the dragons made her stomach boiled up much.

Hajime showed a similarly ferocious smile, and then he sent telepathy to Gregor with a tone that sounded a bit serious.

「Mensor. You know that we possess unknown power, you know that we already sink a mother ship of your country without it being able to do anything, and yet even knowing all that, you don’t feel like stopping huh?」

「……Indeed, the power of you bastard is of an unknown quantity. But, exactly because of that there is worth in stealing it. I’m someone who steals. There is a first-rate treasure before my eyes while I’m able to wield my maximum strength, no way I’m gonna stop don’t you think? As long as there is even a percent chance of victory, I’ll always go to steal what I want. This time is the same.」

「I see. So you also have something unshakeable inside you in your own way. ……But, hey self-proclaimed god, you are mistaking one thing yeah.」

「What?」

The bombardment from the flagship Durgrant ceased. Right after that, Hajime and Tio leaped up from the deck.

Hajime and Tio who jumped to the sky nestled close to each other mid-air and hovered still.

And then, both of them stared at each other from really close range it looked like they would kiss anytime, and like that……

bachikon-

「Ahahn」

Hajime’s spanking burst on Tio’s butt. Seeing how there was a crimson ripple spreading from that, it seemed that the spanking was accompanied with “Magic Shockwave”. Even though there was almost no damage from that, the masterful slap that sent numbing pleasure(pain) running through the whole body until the deepest core caused hopeless dragon-san to reflexively got on all fours. Even though she was midair but it was done skillfully.

「Come on, do your best, hopeless dragon. Even though you are the princess of the dragon race, but you pervert is gasping in front of this large army.」

「I, I’m gasping, because of Goshujin-sama’s fault……」

bachikon-

「Ahiih. Just now, it reached amazing place-」

「Even though you are the pervert, what are you doing blaming other huh?」

After saying that came one more spanking. Tio’s large butt undulated from the impact. It was accompanied by a bewitching voice that resounded once more, through the whole airspace.

Of course, every one of Avenst, and every one of the divine country’s large fleet, and also that Gregor-san, every one of them without exception was shocked「Just what the hell these people are starting so suddenlyyy!?」so much their eyes almost popped out from their socket.

Hajime was building a world of only the two of them that was different from the one with Yue while he mercilessly kept spanking Tio’s butt. And then he took out a test tube vial from his pocket and took off the cap using his mouth. Next, he plunged it into Tio’s mouth that was opened gaspingly.

「Nnguu!?」

Tio who suddenly got something plunged into her mouth, and furthermore, a liquid was flowing in from that, coupled with the butt spanking it caused her expression to change into a terribly joyous one! What a pervert! As expected from the hopeless dragon!

Gregor who finally returned to reality around that point gave out his order. He didn’t understand what was going on, but for the time being, he was going to shower them with bombardment. The main cannon of several mother ships were aimed toward Hajime and Tio.

「Nnmuu!? It came-! It came, Goshujin-samaaa-! As expected, the conversion rate from the personal reward of Goshujin-sama art at a different level! Just like Yue’s blood pledge contract, this art truly the master and servant contract that art build on love!」

「No way. If this thing is going to get a skill name, then it will absolutely be something like pervert contract, or SM contract, something like that.」

Tio who was breathing ‘haa haa’ roughly on all fours with an expression of ecstasy yelled with a voice that was oozing with excitement. And then, she was standing up unsteadily while fidgeting before she received a necklace with a red jewel attached from Hajime.

「Is it okay without transforming into a dragon?」

「Fufun, haa haa, don’t look down on me. Haa haa, nnnh. This art different from the battle in Holy Precincts where I hath to do it without any rehearsal. Afuuu……I hath trained diligently, and mine skill was further polished than before. *Haa haa*……to say nothing, of how I hath received reward personally from Goshujin-sama now. For the current me, nothing art impossible!」

「Hm, is that so.」

Hajime’s indifferent reply caused Tio to tremble from feeling shivers.

And then, now, just when the main cannons were in the verge of firing, she bent greatly backward while taking a deep breath……

GURYAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA-

She let out a dragon howl with the human body. Still with an extremely disgusting smile as though she was going to throw out all the pleasure in one go.

The howl radiated, however, it wasn’t a mere yell. The howl turned into black colored ripples with Tio as the center, and

it rushed through the airspace. The black ripples that repeatedly undulated, over and over again, they ignored the barrier and passed through the fleet.

Was it an unknown attack……. But look there, that woman’s smile. It wasn’t normal!

The fleet’s main cannons cautiously stopped in the stage of firing preparation completed.

Right after that, pulsation resounded in the world.

Thump-

Thump-

Thump-

It wasn’t just one or two. There were innumerable pulses that couldn’t be counted. It was as though the world itself was going to wake up, and then there was a bizarre yet overwhelming presence, presence, presence-!!

——Now, awaken. O mine brethren. O proud, powerful existences.

A voice that resembled telepathy, and yet was vaguely different somehow was coming down.

——The eyes of the dragon, art not something for the sake of expressing grief. They art there for the flame of conviction to dwell inside

「Your majesty-. The full, no, the dragons-」

「This is, the second mother ship Ambition! Strangeness is occurring in the fuel bunker! Those guys, just what in the world is going on!?」

A solemn and dignified voice resounded in Gregor’s ears, at the same time there were also screamed reports coming one after another. Every one of those reports were conveying about the strangeness of the fuel in each ship.

――The claws of a dragon, art not something for hugging tight the trembling self. They art there in order to tear apart malice, and protect what ought to be protected.

「Eighth mother ship Granada! The dragons, they are getting dyed! Something is happening!?」

「This is the tenth mother ship Fudelta-. The dragons are enlarging here! At this rate, the cages will be broken! Your majesty, your order please-」

「Reporting-. The dragons that are dyed black are spewing out heat energy from their mouth! Shit-, the fuel bunker is destroyed-」

The report didn’t come only from the fleet. A screaming report and panicked yell asking for instruction were also coming from the fuel bunker of flagship Durgrant. Furthermore, there was a thunderous sound booming, and the tremor from that was transmitted until the flagship where Gregor was at.

「What is happening!?」

「-. The restraint for the dragon when it gets let out of the cage for torture is destroyed! It’s rampaging and killing the crews!」

「Impossible. That restriction is for anti-dragon use that is equipped with Synthesizer! Why didn’t it activate!?」

「It’s activating! Other than the one in the restriction tool, the crews are also activating theirs! But it’s not working against the black dragon!」

「What the hell happened-. Aargh, broadcast this to all ships too! Kill all the dragons that are turning strange. Kill them right away!」

The moment the order was given, the killing weapon was aimed toward the dragons who were continuously pulsating inside the fuel bunkers. The dragons who were still bewildered at the change that was happening to them saw those gun muzzles and the menacing crews. They were shrinking back in fear.

——The fangs of the dragon, art not something to be gritted in front of death. They art there in order to crunch thy own weakness into pieces, and display the soul of struggle tempered with reasoning.

The dragons who were going to huddle into themselves suddenly stopped still. That change caused the crews who were readying their weapon to stop moving for a moment in suspicion. They stopped completely.

「Gururururuh」

Countless low growls were echoing. The dragons who were dyed jet black and grew up to adulthood regardless of their former size slowly raised their head that was lowered as though begging for forgiveness before this.

「Hih」

「U, a」

Several crews raised a short scream. Those were undoubtedly voices of terror. Their eyes met. With the dragons who raised their faces. They were pierced by those dragon eyes that were filled with fighting spirit and soul of conviction.

――Raise the howl! The dragon’s howl! Demonstrate to the world, of thy existence! Lift up highly, thy proud soul! All of thee――art the dragons!

Instantly, countless howls shook the world and spread through the sky.

It caused a hallucination that perhaps the whole fleet might rupture from the inside, from these furiously grand dragon howls!

Just from that, the eardrums of the nearby crews were damaged, and among them, there were even people who lost consciousness with the white of their eyes exposed.

――Soul – Metamorphosis – Sublimation Composite magic 【Black God Dragon’s Authority】

Once in the Holy Precincts Tio used【Dragon King’s Authority】. It was an age of god magic that transformed other creature into a black dragon. Before, she could only change the target one by one by using the black slavery whip in conjunction.

But right now, although there were the requirements that she needed to be in a state that had stocked up power from using Pain Conversion, and also the targets needed to be a creature that was close to dragon, but she was able to transform all the dragons within range into black dragons that possessed tough black scale with one roar. Furthermore, by using an arrangement of【Divine Statement】――【God

Dragon’s Word Soul, it could also awaken the dragon instinct.

Yes, by Tio’s power, all the dragons who were confined by the fleet in great amount as fuel——were transformed into gallant black dragons!

As a result,

DOGOOOOOOOOO

Countless explosive sounds reverberated. The cause was one. The “breath attack” that became usable after the black dragon transformation exploded inside all the airships.

「It’s no good-. We cannot hold them ba-gyaah」

「Shit-. What’s with that scale!? The bullet cannot go throuugh-」

The reports were gradually turning into mere screams. And then, the fired breaths smashed the internal walls, the black dragons that were surging out from the cage were trampling down the ship’s inside, and they finally flew outside.

Like ashes that were whirling up from the stirring winds, the dragons went home to the sky one after another from the external walls that were melted by the flashes of the breath attack.

Even just a single mother ship would confine dragons in number that easily surpassed a hundred. The number of black dragons that were flying out was uncommon.

「Fire-! It’s convenient if they are going out by themselves! They are coming out, so shoot them down!」

Gregor’s instruction was transmitted. The heavy weapons on board the ships immediately spewed fire.

The bullets were approaching like falling stars toward the crowd of black dragons that flew out to the sky. But, another dragon that flew out first cut into that firing line. It spread out its wings and used its body as a shield to cover its comrades!

The black scales it inherited from its parent weren’t something that could easily get pierced by the heavy weapon. But, even so, if it was asked whether it could come out unscathed, then the answer was no. Its black scales were smashed and scattered each time bullets hit it, and finally, the bullets gouged its body and blood and flesh were scattered.

But, the black dragon who turned its body into a shield for its comrades’ sake didn’t waver even with death before its eyes. Its merely, with the will of fighting till the end, the will to protect its comrades, it even fired its last breath attack just from those wills.

It was a small breath that was already powerless; however, it splendidly destroyed one of the ship’s weapons. At the same time, the hole-riddled black dragon vomited blood while losing strength.

But, thanks to that sacrifice, several dozen black dragons were able to fly out to the sky from the hole without getting sniped.

——Flap thy wings, o noble child. Blessing to that soul

A grand howl reverberated. The ripples that were spreading once more in the sky enveloped the black dragons that were falling powerlessly.

At the next moment, the black dragons that were definitely wounded all over their body flapped their dragon wings strongly. They rearranged their posture midair and then looked down at their own body with puzzled feeling. There they witnessed the sight of their wound gone already with their black scales regenerating swiftly.

The cause of that? That was obvious. It was their mother that awakened them as “dragon”.

The gaze of the black dragons caught sight of the great existence that was standing in the air with a human form. That figure was going ‘haa haa’ somehow though.

【KUWAAAAAAAH】

【GAAAAAAAAAAH】

【GURYAAAAAAH】

There was only one meaning of the howls echoing through the sky.

——Gather. Toward the great dragon who was going ‘haa haa’.

The black dragons simultaneously started flying toward the center of the battlefield. Naturally, bullets and missiles were coming at them from behind, but several black dragons were constantly covering their comrades at the rear, in that chance, they would roll and fired their breath to intercept. And then, the wounded black dragons would have their body healed when a soul-stirring howl echoed, and they would return to battle.

【What……sight……】

That was Roze’s whisper. Kuwaibel who was within her embrace was unmoving with his gaze fixed forward unblinking as though to burn everything into his eyes. And then, the people of Avenst were also looking still at the sky in a daze without moving. But, just from looking at their expression it could be understood that their emotions were completely the same as Roze.

——A tornado made from a great number of black dragons.

With Tio at the center, the black dragons circling around her were creating a sight that had never been seen before in this world.

The light of the sun that was completely showing out its face was reflected glitteringly on the scales of the black dragons. It was as though black diamonds that were perfectly cut by artisan’s hand were dancing while reflecting the light at random.

What a truly grandeur, sublime, and beautiful sight.

Amidst the rising up emotions that jolted the soul of the humans of the fleet, Tio’s words were directed toward the king of pillage.

「Thou the so-called god-king that rule the sky. No more tedious talk art necessary. ——Open wide thy eyes. Witness, what kind of existence dragon art. The true meaning of ruling the sky!」

「-. Who cares-. Fire-. Don’t get absent-minded! I permit a lethal attack! Aim all weapons at them! Flagship, turn around-. The whole fleet, cover for Durgrant’s retreat! I’ll kill the whole family of anyone who disobeys!」

A command to kill resounded. There was also a resolute retreat command at the same time. However, it was only for himself who was the king. The long rule of terror didn’t allow anyone to disobey his words even when they understood that they were obviously in an ugly situation.

The flagship Durgrant turned around, at the same time the whole fleet launched a simultaneous attack. There were silver bombardments and also missiles attack. All those that were fired from all direction were like a cage that was made from firing lines.

「Thinking again, this is the first time I’m going to see it live huh. I’m looking forward to it.」

「Fufu, I’ll answer that expectation. ――”Limit Break”」

The necklace that was handed to her before this――”Last Zell”.

With the combined effects of the artifact that brought about Limit Break and the Cheatmate II (Uma○bo walleye pollock roe flavor, drink version) she drank just now, the finishing move of Tio Claus that originally couldn’t be activated without getting damages all over her body was now activated!

GOU- The wind roared. Storm of magic power where crimson and jet black mixed. It spiraled up and pierced the sky, with size so big that it enveloped the tornado of the black dragons from further outside. The sea of clouds twisted and whirled like a typhoon.

The flooding silver bombardments and also the swarm of missiles got rolled up and jumbled together where not even a single one went through the storm. The overwhelming torrent of power turned anything and everything powerless!

The light of the sun was vanishing.

The sky above the sea of clouds was getting covered further.

「Aa, as I thought, your great self is……」

A true dragon manipulated even heaven and earth. It was the legend that was taught to her. And now, it was occurring right before her eyes. Roze was trickling tears naturally. Was she deeply moved? Was she scared? Roze, and also the people of Avenst who were similarly shedding tears didn’t really understand. However, there was something pressing on their chest.

Thunderbolts and bursting sounds overran the world.

What was generated at the sky further above the sea of clouds, was a sea of lightning and flame. Lightning was flickering like prominence in the flame sea of the sky that was spreading as though to burn the world to ash.

The tornado of crimson and jet black dispersed. The black dragons that were left behind were merely looking up to the sky. It was as though they were worshipping the existence there.

slither Something was protruding out from the sea of lightning and flame. It was a part of a long torso. Jet black scales that seemed to suck in the light could be seen. It was undulating, emerging out from the sea of lightning flame with top and bottom reversed, it vanished, and then emerged out once more.

On the whole, it wasn’t a body of a dragon, whether in size or shape. But, all existences in this airspace understood.

——That thing which was beyond human understanding was……a dragon

zuzuzu-, It made a sound that was like a rumble in the ground, and the existence that was swimming in the sea of lightning flame showed its appearance.

It appeared with the skin of flame while clad in tremendous sparks. The golden dragon eyes that were split vertically in the middle were glaring at everything in the lower world.

The giant body that easily surpassed three hundred meters long was coiling, and the surrounding was colored by flashes of lightning and prominences.

A beat.

——GOAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!!

For a moment, everyone hallucinated whether the world was burst open. Because of the howl that was like an explosive sound……wasn’t the cause.

□The god……that control……the sky……□

Yes, it was truly the heaven’s might. Just a single howl caused everyone to feel the will of judgment that seemed to break the world.

Without any distinction of ally or enemy, this was an existence that would make all existence to feel awe.

——Black god dragon Tio Claus

Manifested here.

Something like the chance of victory for the fleet, there was no way they even had a percent of it.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

※Dragon + Hostage = Dragon hostage (coined words) (TN: In Japan, hostage is read ‘hitojichi’. Hito=person, jichi=collateral. In this chapter the author used made up words of ‘ryuujichi’ or dragon hostage.)

A lot of people pointed that out, so I wrote it just in case. I’m sorry that it was hard to understand.

I was late this time too. Really forgive me.

And so, the plan for the next chapter, if possible it will be at 6 P.M. Saturday, or perhaps 0 A.M Sunday, if I cannot make it even then, then it will be at 6 P.M Sunday. Please treat me well.

Arifureta Chapter 240

Arifureta After II King’s Understanding First Part

AN: Sorry it’s late.

Sea of lightning flame in the sky. Sea of clouds of death whirling below.

It could be seen as the sight of the end of the world, or perhaps as the sight of the creation of the world. Surely the impression would differ depending on the person.

But, in any case, there wasn’t anyone who doubted that this was a scene of legend that would be engraved into the history of this world.

——Where art thou going?

The solemn soul of language came from the sky. All the people who heard it would be made to hold awe whether they wanted it or not by that voice.

That voice was directed toward the flagship that was trying to escape first by making the whole fleet into a sacrificial pawn. No, more accurately, it was toward the master of flagship Durgrant that gave the order——the god-king of pillage Gregor.

Even that person himself must understand that the question was directed to him. Inside the bridge of flagship Durgrant that was already turning around and moved to escape, Gregor who was watching dumbfounded at the absurd sight behind the ship through the display twitched and trembled.

「Don’t listen-. Full speed――」

Gregor yelled in panic toward the helmsman with shaken eyes. However, he was unable to speak his order until the end.

――O false king, know shame

「Yo, your majesty-」

「-, dodge!」

A scream came from the helmsman. Because suddenly a giant tornado descended from the sea of lightning flame. The tornado of scorching heat that burns the air with hellfire and heat wave spiraled and dyed the inside of the bridge with brilliant light.

The helmsman reflexively tilted the ship faster than Gregor’s command to dodge. The flagship Durgrant veered right away to the right with a motion that didn’t suit that giant frame.

――Thou couldst not escape

Along with those words, the second blazing tornado descended. It didn’t stop there, as though to invite despair toward the flagship Durgrant that was trying to slip through somehow, the third, fourth, fifth tornado descended.

「-, impossible to dodge! It’s coming!」

□Barrier full strength! Breakthrough-□

The loud yells of the helmsman and Gregor echoed.

Flagship Durgrant tried to slip through the countless flame pillars that were connecting heaven and earth, but it finally couldn’t evade and came into contact.

Instantly, the giant body of flagship Durgrant was attacked by fierce vibration. The posture control system didn’t work, and the ship’s bow was lifted up as though it got hoisted, the ship was rotating uncontrollably. In addition, there were even consecutive impacts that followed. The thunderbolts that were generated inside the tornado were assaulting the ship.

The crew who was in charge of the silver barrier control saw how the ship’s energy was consumed with frightening speed, and he raised his voice with pale expression.

□The barrier output-, it decreased by fifty percent! Your majesty-, at this rate-□

□Chih, start replenish……shit-□

Gregor unconsciously cursed when he was about to give instruction. In order to maintain the barrier’s output, they needed to exchange the pod of dragon core fuel, but he remembered that there were no more dragons for that.

□Turn around……turn the ship around! At the same time, fire at full power toward that black dragon!□

They couldn’t retreat.

Gregor who made that judgment then ordered to turn the ship around while feeling indescribable rage and unease.

At the same time, the weapons loaded on board the flagship Durgrant fired simultaneously. Missiles in the amount that was absurd to be counted, a storm of bullets that should be called as a wall already, and naturally the silver bombardment too.

Of course――all those were shot down. Anything and everything, without a single exception. By several hundred, several thousand lightning showering from the sky.

While flagship Durgrant was retreating, the other fleets were naturally joining in offense using their full power to push back Tio. Yet regardless of that, Gregor was unable to even retreat.

The reason for that was this.

From all directions. In the range diameter of several dozen kilometers. Sniping of roaring lightning was shooting out every target under heaven simultaneously and swiftly.

The world that was covered with the sea of lightning flame was literally the absolute territory of the black god dragon.

「Charge the Henkhaborg-. All fleets, buy us time!」

The fact that their attack didn’t reach caused Gregor’s voice to turn increasingly disarrayed. Even so, all the fleets reflexively obeyed the words of the king who symbolized terror and violence.

The barrier fleet formed a multi-layered formation to protect the flagship Durgrant; while the other fleets aimed their maximum firepower without pause from all directions, sky battlecraft squads were unleashing attacks suicidally.

At the same time, flagship Durgrant’s multi-column 3-turret cannon was focusing silver light with terrific momentum. However, that light was something mixed with black color like what mother ship Ostinato showed in the end, so it was obviously different in aspect with the normal bombardment.

——Main cannon Henkhaborg

It was a silver bombardment that took in the property of the black rain to become an abominable energy wave. The bombardment that focused and mixed the impure energy that filled this world, when it hit the target, even if the ship’s frame itself was protected by the barrier, the energy that caused necrosis to the cells would encroach inside the ship and annihilated the crews.

Of course, after it was fired, highly polluted energy would get scattered at the surrounding area, so one’s own army also would not escape the effect. It was a forbidden weapon that was hard to use; it bared its fang not just to enemy and ally, but even to the world.

And now, it was fired.

A flash shined and filled up the burning world completely.

It didn’t matter even if it was against existence that had veered really far from the beaten track, as long as it was still a living thing, it should be possible for it to experience cell necrosis. And then, as long as they could just succeed in eroding its body, they would be able to kill it for sure!

A twitching smile emerged on Gregor’s lips.

——Fool

It was fired in no time.

The black god dragon’s——breath!

The flash that was fired from the jaw that was opened wide was pure black. It was an absolute color that wasn’t polluted by anyone, painting over everything.

The bombardment of silver and black that exemplified taboo was certainly mighty, it could pulverize even a mother ship in a single shot. But, the breath that was fired from the black god dragon far surpassed it. The difference in power was overwhelming, like a needle that was thrust to intercept a log.

GOU- When the atmosphere growled, this world’s strongest bombardment was easily swallowed by the black breath after a moment of resistance.

【Impossible-】

Gregor’s yell echoed.

But, the scene before his eyes was a definite fact. The strongest attack of flagship Durgrant was swallowed right from the front, and it didn’t stop there, it was getting annihilated along with the negative energy by the aberrantly scorching heat.

The first layer of the multi-layered barrier that was deployed by the barrier fleet was smashed open like a paper waste. The second layer was also breached like scattering glass after a moment of resistance. The third layer, the fourth layer……

【Dodge-】

【Ro, roger!】

At the same time with the barrier’s pulverization, several ships of the barrier fleet were hit by the breath, and they exploded everywhere. Gregor recovered his sanity seeing the figure of the defensive ships going up in flame and he gave his command, and then the helmsman who similarly managed to go back to reality steered the ship with miraculous reflex.

When flagship Durgrant rotated, the last barrier was broken through at the same time.

「All hands-, brace for impa――」

The yell that was raised by someone couldn’t be finished until the end.

Right after that, a terrific impact attacked flagship Durgrant. Thunderous sound and fierce alert sound rang.

The breath Tio released didn’t stop and opened up a large hole in the whirling sea of clouds and vanished toward the ground. No one had the leisure to observe where it landed, but if they could actually do that, surely they would experience the feeling of a block of ice thrown on their spine without a doubt.

After all, the place that was impacted by the breath that descended from the sky――a mountain with an elevation around two kilometers was hit directly, and it got blasted away spotlessly.

It was the breath of a god dragon that changed the geography.

Flagship Durgrant got hit by that; however, it still wasn’t sinking. Its mobility that didn’t suit its large built and the

great reaction of the helmsman saved them, and they got away with only its main cannon part wholly gouged out.

Although, the figure of the flagship tilting diagonally while on fire and smoking was giving a shock to the whole fleets as though it had been sunken down.

The captains of the fleet were staring dumbfounded without giving any order at the symbol of despair the flagship getting cornered, as though time had stopped. The attack of the fleet also stopped and naturally the sky battlecraft squadrons were also staring at the flagship with their eyes opened wide.

There was no way Tio would overlook that opening.

——O proud warriors. Flap thy wings. Raise thy howl. Drive into the heart of these invaders who acted as though they owned the sky, just whose territory this place art

Those who answered was naturally the black dragons who were protected from the all-directions fleet attack. The dragon howls that shook the soul resounded through the blazing sky.

It was too late even when the enemy returned to their senses in shock.

The pilots of sky battlecrafts that were staring at the flagship Durgrant while circling saw the opened large mouth and fangs of the dragon through their cockpit at the next moment——right after that, they were swallowed by scorching heat breath and vanished.

The other sky battlecraft squadrons also got their back taken instantly, and they exploded due to the black dragons’

breath, others got hit by the tackle of the falling black dragon, and they got crushed along with their cockpit.

The airships and mother ships resumed their attack.

However, the current black dragons didn’t let go of the opening of the paused barrage.

The last sight that a male captain who was sitting on the command seat inside the bridge saw was the scene of a black dragon swooping down while flapping its wings in a big way as its large mouth opened across the windbreak. Right after that, his consciousness was expulsed into the perpetual darkness along with the black flash that blanketed his field of vision.

Black dragons were clinging on a mother ship. They were outside the firing range because they were too close. The sky battlecrafts who originally should be playing an active role, so this kind of situation didn’t occur were unable to protect their ship due to other dragons attacking them with clever cooperation and suicidal resolve.

Like that, with deadly attack toward the bridge, the black dragons were sinking the fleets one after another.

Even in that battlefield that presented a chaotic situation, there were also tough ships that were defeating the black dragons using a skilled maneuver, but the black dragons that should be shot down already were revived as though nothing happened at the next moment and attacked again.

Of course, there were black dragons who got hit by main cannon class attack and they were exterminated without reviving back. There were also those that were falling in a tailspin and vanish into the sea of clouds without the revival making it in time.

But, however……

「These guys……don’t they have any fear?」

A captain of a certain mother ship whispered.

Immediately after that, a black dragon on the verge of death whose wings were turned into tatters and its dragons scales smashed, even so, its fighting spirit wasn’t dulled even by a fragment, it was howling as though to burn its life into ash and charged toward the bridge. And then, it destroyed the bridge with its breath!

They didn’t have anything like fear. If they had fear, then it would be fear toward death without even fighting, living with their soul rotting.

「Shit-. Why, are they not stopping-」

The captain of a certain airship screamed.

A black dragon received all attacks with its body while protecting a comrade behind it, even so, it advanced forward without stopping. Even when half its body was blown away from a missile’s direct hit, the strength dwelling inside those dragon eyes didn’t waver in the slightest.

It definitely, delivered its comrade toward the enemy’s location! Of course, the breath of the protected black dragon blew away the bridge.

They wouldn’t stand still anymore for the second time because this was the sky. This was their territory.

Therefore, they were outdoing their opposition.

They were outdoing their greatest enemy. And above all else——their past self!

「Aa……really, what a sight this is……」

The voice that was blurred with the overflowing feeling came from the descendant of the country that loved dragons and swore to live together with dragons——Roze Phiris Avenst's.

Their greatest friends who were oppressed, their dignity trampled down, even their right to live stolen, now they were reborn once more. She had no words. Roze didn't understand any way to express this emotion inside her.

However, the one thing that she understood was——

「Piih, piiiiiih」

And the last monarch dragon——Kuwaibel also felt the same like that. The heroic and grand battle of his brethren, with their existence staked on the line, caused a roar to leak out naturally. He dreamed it, longed for it. They floundered, to make it a reality. And then, the sight of the future that they ought to struggle to arrive at was right here right now.

He didn't know his father and also his mother. He also had no sibling. When he was born, there was only the human girl who was his partner before his eyes. He didn't think that he was lonely. However, actually, he wished from his heart from brethren that would fight together with him.

That was why their awakened figures made Kuwaibel's young soul trembled. He wondered what should he do to express that overflowing feeling……

But, there was only one thing that he understood……

「Do you want to fight?」

「-」

「Pih!?」

A question suddenly resounded.

Roze and Kuwaibel turned their face together at that voice's owner.

The silhouette standing above the coiling black god dragon. There was no need to ask; it was Hajime. There was a lot of distance between them, but they understood that Hajime was turning his face toward Roze and Kuwaibel.

The reply of the two was concise.

「Yes.」

「Pii.」

Yes, they wanted to fight.

With dignity, betting their right to live. In order to prove that the flag they hoisted up was indeed right.

They wanted to stand shoulder to shoulder with their brethren that were demonstrating a fierce battle. So that they could call themselves their "friend", their "king" with their head held high.

Roze and Kuwaibel looked behind. Over there, they saw the figure of Avenst's people clenching their fist staring hard at the battlefield. Everyone saw the figure of their fighting friend, their will to fight 'We cannot just remain a spectator in this kind of place!' seething inside.

Hajime who made a small smile toward such them was,

「Queen-san. I'll ask one thing, for fleets that big to depart for here, doesn't that mean that the battle strength in their country right now is relatively few?」

「Eh? That's, certainly……most likely, there is only a defense fleet that excelled in defensive battle remaining there I think.」

Even though the sudden question caused Roze to be taken aback, she answered like that after pondering for a bit. Hajime's expression distorted fearlessly.

「This battlefield is the battlefield of this world's dragons. Perhaps it's also fine for you to join the battle as a friend, and as a king but……in this battlefield, there is Tio, the black god dragon. And then, there are the "awakened" dragons who obtained the divine protection of the god dragon. Then, defeat is impossible even in one in a million chance.」

「But-, while that may be true, to remain a spectator in this battle that is our existence――」

「That's why, I'm saying to use this chance to overthrow the divine country.」

「I don't really understand what are you saying.」

Roze reflexively returned a reply that sounded joking to those words that sounded like a joke. Kuwaibel and other people were also making a bemused expression thinking 「Just what is this person saying?」toward the content of the telepathy that they hear.

Hajime’s expression suddenly turned serious toward them all.

「Roze Phiris Avenst. Right here is surely the turning point. Even after they lost their king and their battle strength plummet to rock bottom if the divine country hardened their defense when they grasped that information, will you be able to defeat them then? Just with those two airships and few sky battlecraft pilots?」

「That’s……」

「In a battlefield, to be separated from those important to you, to leave them to face formidable enemy……such things will be accompanied by terrible pain. But, did such brittle relationship that couldn’t do that exist between the human and dragon of the dragon kingdom of the past?」

Even if their body was separated, but their heart was always beside each other. Sometimes they were separated by heaven and earth and advanced for the sake of their purpose. That was the bond between human and dragon in the dragon kingdom of the past.

「Right now they have Tio’s divine protection, they are able to display the greatest strength as a black dragon. But, later after we leave, the infinite regeneration and also the enormous magic power will be gone. Even if the black dragons cooperate with you all to retake the kingdom, the obstacle you have to overcome will be great.」

「……」

Hajime asked the wordless Roze.

「Don’t you all, have your own battlefield?」

Once in the battle in Holy Precincts, Hajime left behind his comrades in the battlefield and advanced forward. It was done under a definite bond. That was why his words were now conveyed to Roze with a definite weight.

「……But, the distance from here until Qwailent――」

「If you wish, then I'll open the door. It's a little bit of present from the instigator. ――Now, what will you do, queen of a ruined country?」

In a sense, this battlefield was ideal. There were the awakened dragons, there was the supreme ruler of the sky, and there was the divine protection from such being. If they fought together, Roze and others would be able to clear up the pent-up resentment of the many years almost unharmed.

But, indeed it was just like Hajime said, even with only the black dragons there wouldn't be any problem here. What's more, there wasn't any reason for Roze and others that they had to join the fight no matter what. It was nothing but the problem of emotion.

They didn't understand how Hajime would send them until the divine country, but if he said that he could then surely he was really able to do it. Roze was convinced of that.

And then, a surprise attack toward the divine country was certainly also their biggest effective chance to retake the kingdom.

However, there was no doubt that the danger would be far above this battlefield. Most likely, many of the soldiers gathered in this place right now would lose their life.

Roze shut her eyes.

The enemy’s battle strength. This move to recover from their hopeless situation. The degree of damage. The chance of victory. The merit and demerit after they took a step forth. In case they didn’t depart for battle here, the state of things in a world with a cleared sky. The action prediction of the divine country that lost its main fleets……

「Your majesty.」

「Roze-sama.」

Roze came back to herself suddenly, and she looked back. There, she saw the figures of Bovid and Sabas staring at her with a strong gaze. No, it wasn’t just the two. The Crow siblings, the other top brasses, and then, all the people regardless of gender and age, they all were staring at Roze with a gaze that contained a flame that was even hotter than the sea of flame spreading in the sky.

(Aa, that’s right. If it’s resolved, then we already have it.)

Didn’t they decide to fight already? Didn’t they wish, that they want to fight?

Wasn’t the will of dragon kingdom Avenst, displayed already?

Roze made a bitter smile at herself who was flinching back now when the time came for that. And then, right after that she declared loudly with definite dignity and resolve as the king of a country.

「People of dragon country Avenst. My beloved people. It looks like the time has come.」

The explosive sound of the battlefield struck the eardrums. However, no matter how much noise resounded, their ears

didn’t fail to hear their queen’s words.

「If we leave all the fight to our awakened friend and run away because we treasure our own life――our heart will die. Even if we plunge into this battlefield following our emotion――there won’t be any significant meaning. To consider escape as a battle, that escape is fighting just like what we have done until now in the cleared up world――that’s something that our pride won’t allow any more. I’ll say it one more time. ――The time has come.」

Breaths were held. Everyone corrected their posture, and they stared straight at Roze.

「Resolve yourself. From here on, we will challenge a next to impossible battle.」

Let’s rescue the friends of the dragon kingdom that are born merely to be exploited and killed. Let’s liberate the people of the dragon kingdom that are captured and treated like a slave. And then……

「We will make over the world. As the first step of that――let’s take back our kingdom!」

The answer was naturally a soul-stirring war cry that wasn’t outdone by the dragon howls.

At the same time with that war cry that sounded like it would blow away the thunderbolts and explosions, the top brasses were giving instructions one after another. Everyone was starting to move swiftly. In the middle of that, Roze turned her gaze toward Hajime.

「Hajime-sama. Please guide us. To the land of our longstanding desire.」

「Welcome to the battlefield. Queen-sama.」

Hajime who made a wide and villainous grin made his fingertip shined and took out an artifact. It was a sparkling key colored with mystical blue. A key that opened even a door that crossed over worlds——the Crystal Key.

Hajime threw it with just a movement of his fingertip. The crystal key flew while leaving behind a trail of azure light and it pierced the space between Hajime and mother ship Avenst.

The crystal key that had been given improvement with gravity stone inserted in it rotated at the same time when Hajime twisted his wrist, as though it was unlocking something.

——*gakon-*

The sound of opened lock rang in the world.

Of course, it was an optional extra. The sound was meaningless, but Hajime was struck with the idea so it couldn’t be helped. This too was also Hajime Quality!

Incidentally, previously the opened gate looked like a shining membrane, but right now the gate looked like an impressive two-leaf door that appeared from thin air that was opening while making solemnly heavy sound *gogogo-*.

Of course, that was an optional extra! It was meaningless, but Hajime got carried up from excitement so it couldn’t be helped! This too was also Hajime Quality!

By the way, the door was merely a three-dimensional projection, so the size and also the design could be changed based on Hajime’s current mood! It was his prided item that

he made from a month of hard work combining the film technology of earth and magic of Tortus!

「……Hajime-sama. By any chance, are you someone that is affiliated with god?」

No, he was just an obsessive inventor desu. To the level that he would even forget eating and sleeping once he got absorbed into something, and he wouldn’t stop until he got drained dry by the legal wife, or eating the suplex of the rabbit-eared wife.

「Go. May the luck of war be with you.」

「-. Thank you very much. ——I’ll pray that someday, we will be able to meet once again in a world where the world, the people’s heart, and also the dragons’ soul are all cleared up.」

Roze bowed, and then she turned on her heel toward airship Rozeria in order to take command over the whole force.

「I feel a bit uneasy with only those children. ……Oho? Fumu, is that so. Very well, leave thy brethren to me.」

Tio who was staying still above the sky to watch over the battle of the black dragons sent a sidelong glance at Roze and others. And then, several black dragons came back from the battlefield and soared toward airship Rozeria while sending their gaze at Tio.

It seemed they were conveying to Tio that they would follow them, so they asked her to take care of their brethren.

「What an overprotective god dragon-sama.」

「What art thou saying? If Goshujin-sama say that, even thou were lending thy hand that thou open the gate.」

「Something like that doesn't count as a lending hand. I was only sending those guys to hell.」

「The act just now art something necessary for them to be able to live proudly holding their head high in the future ahead. The act of instigating also count as a lending hand. Fufu.」

While they were talking telepathically just between the two of them, airships Rozeria and Averia vanished inside the gate followed by the nation on ship Avenst.

……They passed through the impressive shining door that was created by the throwing tantrum Hajime「Just a bit more-. Just a bit more until it's finished-. That's why I'll eat properly when it's finished okay!」even while having his cheeks stretched *munii* widely by Yue and his body locked by Shia's Cobra Twist.

「You bastard-, where are they going-? Just what the hell are you two!?」

An angry yell rose from the battlefield that had reached the one-way intensification. Gregor's voice that was filled with unease and confusion didn't have even a speck of its former dignity anymore.

「This kind of incomprehensible power-, suddenly appearing out of nowhere-. Don't screw with me-. How can something like this is allowed! Damn it-, damn ittt-. I am, the king of the divine country you know!?」

Gregor's yell complained to Hajime and Tio――or rather, it was closer to a soliloquy. The number of ships had already

decreased until half. They were unable to even replenish their dragon core energy. The energy output of the fleets that was declining didn’t even have the spare energy to fire their main cannon anymore.

There was already no trace left from their majesty when they first appeared from the dawn.

That must be cornering Gregor’s mind even further. He was continuously yelling things like「This kind of reality, this kind of absurdity, how can this be allowed-」.

Toward such him, Hajime said……

「You are weaker. That’s all there is to it right?」

Gregor’s clamor that was like a child throwing tantrum stopped still.

――Gregor Cluzet Qwailent was weaker.

Certainly, that was all there was to it.

The foundation of the king of pillage was a conviction toward strength.

Whether it was violence or ingenuity, anything was fine. Anyone that could surpass their opponent would be able to make the other submit, trampled on them, or destroyed them. A person who could that was right, the words of the weak were nothing but nonsense.

The strong was right, the weak was wrong.

That was the thing that Gregor exactly believed in.

「……Is that so. So I’m the weaker one even after becoming the supreme ruler huh. Hahah, that’s really a harsh joke

yeah.

Gregor raised a dry laugh that sounded somewhat comprehending.

There was no more defensive ships nearby; flagship Durgrant was also raising white smoke everywhere while tilting. There was no energy replenishment, and the ship was in a state where maintaining its floating power was the best it could do. The great number of weapons the ship was equipped with were laying out barrage using a physical attack like bullet and missile, because of that it still wasn't sunk down yet but……

Yoo, tell me. Just what the hell you two are?

That was likely Gregor's last question of his life.

Hajime showed a thinking gesture for a bit before he answered with a grin.

Just a passing by monster.

A black dragon finally slipped through the barrage even with wounds all over its body and arrived in front of the bridge's windbreak. It opened its jaw widely. Light of death converged inside there. The crews screamed and ran away.

Amidst that, Gregor threw his body on the commander seat and sat down heavily. He then rested his chin on the one hand while, with a small voice,

So I pull the utter failure at the very end huh. Good grief, what a joke.

He whispered such a thing.

The bridge of flagship Durgrant was destroyed. The sight of it powerlessly falling down was enough to dishearten the surviving ships.

The black dragons raised their howl toward those who couldn’t even take satisfactory battle maneuvers and got reduced into a disordered mob.

And then, the dragons threw their body into the last decisive battle.

It didn’t take that much time until the whole of this world’s greatest battle strength became a squall of wreckage showering down on the ground below.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

It was late, but I posted it somehow.

Next month I should have more leeway and can post more……

Now then, it was raised up in the impression column, so I’ll explain it for a bit.

For Shirakome,□□□= the lizard-like one. □□□= the snake-like one.

When in god dragon mode Tio is snake-like, so the description letter is also□□□. But, there is no concept of□□□in this world, so I wrote□□□in the conversation of this world’s human. I’m sorry that it’s puzzling.

By the way, Tio become□□□shape when in god dragon mode is because——preference. Hajime’s.

PS

I also wrote it in the activity report, but the comic version’s latest chapter is in the middle of the display on Overlap-sama’s homepage.

Finally, it’s Yue-sama you know! Only at the end though! Please go there to take a look by all means.

Also, I’ll report this just in case.

This month, light novel volume 5 and comic volume 1 will be released.

The special content information is also displayed in Overlap-sama’s homepage, so if it’s fine, please go take a look there.

My best regards.

Arifureta Chapter 241

Arifureta After II King’s Understanding Middle Part

AN: Butler = The strongest warrior class. When I was writing this common sense, it became long again……

The sight that unfolded ahead after passing through the solemn door was a calm blue sky.

「This place……」

It was Roze who whispered that. Roze who returned on board the airship Rozeria passed through the sky door Hajime created along with airship Averia and mothership Avenst. They had made their resolve for their battlefield that was waiting ahead.

Even so, when she thought back of the battlefield in between the sea of lighting flame and the whirling sea of clouds that should be called as a scene of myth, she fell into a doubt whether they were dreaming now that she saw this calm sky.

「Roze-sama-. Be, below; it’s Qwailent! The distance is 1000!」

「Eh?」

The report from the person in charge of observation caused Roze to let out a dumbfounded voice. The sky that could be seen from the bridge was very transparent blue; the morning sun was rising slightly higher than the sea of clouds. Thinking what this person saying in the middle of this peaceful sight was, Roze turned her gaze toward the monitor that projected the image below the ship……

「I don’t really understand what are you saying.」

She unconsciously muttered such a thing while making twitching face & dripping with cold sweats that looked like a waterfall.

Of course, she would be like that. Because below where airships Rozeria and Averia, and mothership Avenst were floating, was the land of their birthplace that they couldn’t even approach until now——divine sky country Qwailent, no, dragon kingdom Avenst’s floating land was right there.

「Your majesty! Look sharp! Avenst is also coming here remember!」

「-」

A scolding came from Bovid who was boarding his sky battlecraft in the dock while standing by.

Roze who got taken aback and recovered herself from that gritted her teeth hard. At the same time inside her heart 「Hajime-sama, you idioo~~~~t. I’m the one who asked for guidance but-, to suddenly toss us out right above the target like this-, idiottt! Stupid-. You bruteee!」she was hurling abuse at Hajime grandly.

「Avenst, can you hear!? Evacuate right awa——」

Roze was about to command the commanding captain to evacuate mothership Avenst that not only was unable to fire its main cannon, but it also couldn’t even lay out barrier or perform a battle maneuver. But, before she finished,

A loud alarm sound rang in the early morning sky. The alarm that could even make people indulging in laziness to jump awake in one go caused Roze’s body to jump and trembled.

Inside her head, ‘what to do, what to do, Hajime-sama you idiottt, what to do!’ the same words and insult were repeating. Roze was about to fall into panic, but there, a scolding「Get a hold of yourself!」reached her from her partner.

Kuwaibel that was hugged tightly by Roze from an instinctive habit slapped his tail on Roze’s cheek *pechi-*. When Roze dropped her gaze toward the partner that she was hugging, there Kuwaibel who if it had to be said had a pampered child trait was staring fixedly at her.

The unshakeable dragon eyes that were surprisingly deep were staring straight at Roze.

――Aa, that’s right. If it’s resolved, then I finished it already together with everyone.

Roze let out a long exhale ‘fuu~~’, then at the next moment, she opened her eyes in a flash. And then, she firmly surveyed her comrades inside the bridge whose face was turning pale, and her comrades in Averia and Avenst through the monitors.

「Let’s fight.」

Those words were calm, yet they possessed definite dignity and strength.

"In order to stand equal with our old friends who are fighting even now in that sky."

Those were the words of the queen of the dragon kingdom.

"In order to save our imprisoned friends and brethren."

Those were the words of a person who even while her status fell into being air pirate and she lost her important comrades on countless occasions, by no meant she had abandoned the feeling of the halcyon days.

"In order to change the world."

There weren't just combatants here. There were also civilians. Rather, the civilians were a lot more than the combatants. Normally this wasn't a place they should be taken to. But, surely the old and young, the men and women in mothership Avenst wouldn't listen to that.

If Roze and others were lost, then they would have no future. Here was the turning point. A future where they would be welcoming a slow ruin while simply running away and getting toyed with, not a single descendant of the dragon kingdom wished that.

If not, then they wouldn't pass through that sky door.

That was why,

"Let's fight."

There was one reply to that call of the queen — only words of answer"By your will-"and resolute gazes.

A smile emerged on Roze's lips. That smile was the same fearless smile like that man who she thoroughly hurled

abuse at until just now.

"We will take back everything! The battle of revolution is right here! Let's bet our body and soul! Sky battlecraft force, all planes take off-. Deal damage as much as you can to the defense fleet before they can move completely! Averia concentrated fire at the defense fleet's flagship! Avenst, support fire using a physical weapon from above!"

Orders came like a storm.

Like a butterfly that came out of its cocoon flying out all at once, sky battlecrafts were flying out from all ships. Their main force received severe damage from the previous attack, and their number was decreased, but their number was a force that reached two hundred.

It was genuinely the greatest battle strength that the nation on ship Avenst possessed. There were also youngsters who hadn't finished their training among them; there were also old men who retired already. The planes used also didn't consist from just planes in good condition. There were also many planes with old armament.

But, the height of their fighting spirit was the real thing.

"All force, aim at the flagship of the defense fleet! Don't get left behind and fly into their bosom before they could lay out the defensive barrier! The barrier of the defense fleet is a tough one-. Consider yourself useless if you are outside the barrier once it's formed!"

The leader of the first squad of air battle force and the overall commander Bovid gave his instruction. It was an extremely dangerous tactic where if the pilot was inexperience they would die right away from crashing. But, the barrier of the defense fleet here was even more powerful

than the defense fleet before this. The barrier would be deployed about fifty meters from the ship. It wasn’t something that could be destroyed by sky battlecraft’s armament at all, and they wouldn’t even be able to approach them.

But conversely speaking, if they could approach within that fifty meters before the barrier was deployed, their attack would go through.

It was that kind of reckless tactic; however, there wasn’t a single plane that was faltering. Rather, they were approaching with a momentum that would make anyone thinking they would even launch a kamikaze attack without stopping toward the twenty ships of the defense fleet that were finally starting to form their anchored state.

「Roze-sama. Our preparation is finished.」

A voice came from Sabas who was standing by behind Roze. Roze nodded briskly. She showed a resolved fearless smile toward Sabas who could read her feeling. Sabas too also nodded with a gentle smile that was hiding beastly ferocity inside.

Roze surveyed inside the bridge.

「Everyone, I’ll leave Rozeria in your hand. Please endure somehow until Kuwaibel come back.」

「Piih.」

The man who took charge of Rozeria in Roze’s place——Carter Gilton nodded deeply accompanied by the strong nod of the other crews.

Behind Roze who turned on her heel, Sabas and the Crow siblings, and then ten of the most elite imperial guard members followed.

Their strategy was simple. The spring at the deepest part of the palace that could grant power to monarch dragon——「Spring of True Dragon's Tear」, they would take Kuwaibel there. And then with the strength of Kuwaibel who would temporarily awaken as a grown dragon, they would crush the defense fleet.

If they could just destroy the fleet, then there wouldn't be any existence in the divine country that could defeat Kuwaibel that could wield the power of a monarch dragon. This was a country that was built from the rule of fear and violence of the king named Gregor. They shouldn't be able to maintain their fighting spirit by the time the defense fleet fell.

The problem was how much time Avenst could buy with the defense fleet as the opponent. There wasn't any guarantee that Avenst wouldn't be annihilated during the time they infiltrated the palace with few elites until Kuwaibel returned to the battlefield.

Explosive sounds roared outside. Bovid and others, the air battle force was starting a super close range battle that should even be called as the dance of death. How much damage they could inflict on the defense fleet with this surprise attack would become the key of this battle.

Because Bovid understood that, surely he would be reckless. Just like how Bovid made himself into a shield to accept the enemy bullet in order to save Roze and others, there was no doubt he would put his life at stake here.

「Please, everyone……be safe.」

Roze whispered that while equipping herself with firearms in Rozeria’s bottom. Even though she was determined, even though she had resolve, but there was no way her heart wouldn’t be pained thinking that the people she loved might die. Roze’s lips that were strongly biting showed that pressure on her heart more eloquently than anything.

「Pii」

「Ku-chan……」

Kuwaibel’s strong eyes.

「Roze-sama.」

「Gramps.」

Sabas’s unshakable smile.

「Your majesty.」

「Roze-sama.」

Crow siblings’ fearless smile.

The accompanying imperial guards also smiled similarly.

Seeing that, surely everyone in Averia, and also everyone in Rozeria, and then also the people she loved in Avenst, they were undoubtedly making the same powerful and fearless smile. Roze was convinced of that.

There wasn’t even a single complain toward Roze who decided to head to this hell.

The hatch below the ship opened. Rozeria was evading the surface-to-air attacks that were sporadically starting while flying toward the palace. The scenery below that was flowing

through was the townscape of the birthplace that she was seeing for the first time.

‘Aa’, inside her heart Roze leaked out an admiring sigh. Roze who was taken away when she was a baby didn’t have any memory of the dragon kingdom, the feeling of “coming home’ overflowed inside.

And then, surely such feeling was much stronger for the senior people who knew about this country compared to herself who didn’t know of her birthplace.

Those people riding the sky battlecraft, those people who were looking down from the airships and mothership, what kind of feeling they were having?

Were they holding flood of emotions? Surely the scenery wasn’t exactly the same compared with in the past, so were they enraged seeing their changed motherland? Perhaps they would die in the next moment while still holding such feeling. In this battlefield where the chance of survival was remarkably low, their feeling would rain down along with the flame blast.

But, surely, not even a single one would stop flying until their last moment without a doubt.

For what sake? That was decided already.

——Aa

Like that, Roze let out her deep feeling one more time.

With an automatic rifle in one hand, she touched the barrel on her forehead, and she closed her eyes as though praying.

Right now, she understood. Just what a king was, what she was. What her existence ought to accomplish.

「Thinking of the future, in order to seize the day――I make my decision. I place my important things on the two sides of the scale.」

Gregor was a king of pillage that embodied the truth of power. Control to those who obey, death to those who defy. Surely that was also one way of living.

Even Roze might be similar.

She couldn’t choose everything. She had to make her choice. With her body that wasn’t a god, she couldn’t grasp at the ideal. Even if as the result of her choice someone would be cast away, in order to not lose everything, Roze had to make her choice.

Just like how she made herself and the soldiers, who had gone through joys and sorrows together with her, leap into hell for the sake of the future, and for the sake of the people who were living for the moment.

But, she didn’t think that it was mistaken. The reason was that that would be an insult toward the soldiers who answered at her will.

That was why she would change.

「I’ll change. Become a warring queen. The queen of the soldiers.」

‘Someone else after me could become the kind king. In order to connect our future toward that someone, I’ll become a warring king.’ The powerful words of Roze that contained such feeling made Sabas’s expression turned a bit lonely,

the Crow siblings shut their eyes, and the imperial guards displayed a tensed expression.

Roze turned toward them and,

「Let’s go. To our battlefield.」

Saying that she leaped down without hesitation.

Sabas and others nodded at each other, and they similarly leaped down following the beloved person they decided as their master by themselves.

Roze and others who jumped outside to the air naturally obeyed the planet’s truth and began free falling. The roaring sound of wind entered their ears while they spread both their arms to balance themselves.

Their distance until the ground was gone instantly and the palace was below them.

「Ku-chan-. To that terrace-」

「Piih」

When Roze spoke with a volume that didn’t lose to the wind, Kuwaibel responded immediately. When Kuwaibel who was clad in silver light raised his cry, the same light immediately enveloped Roze and others too.

Lightly the body of Roze and others were liberated from the wedge of gravity. They rotated midair and took the landing stance. Kuwaibel adjusted their falling position and guided them toward the terrace near the highest floor of the palace.

But, at that time, dry bursting sounds resounded at the same time with the sharp sound that cut through the wind. Fortunately, the bullets didn’t hit them, and they rushed between the group toward the sky.

When they looked, there were several soldiers at the palace’s garden. They were pointing at Roze and co while aiming their rifle.

「Leave this to me.」

Right after that, silver glints rained down on those soldiers. Those things that were launched cutting through the air pierced the face of the soldiers peremptorily, and then they went limp like a marionette with its strings severed.

When Roze turned her eyes at the perpetrator, he——Sabas was running his gaze vigilantly at the garden while between his fingers there were three——knife for eating held in between.

It seems that this pseudo butler was dealing with multiple targets on the ground a hundred meters away using tableware.

But even while that was going on, soldiers who heard the gunshot showed up from the terrace and the garden ahead——but,

「Shi-」

Tableware was flying. Polished silver knives that were usually stored in the kitchen of mothership Avenst!

suta- Roze and co got down safely on the terrace. And then, with an unknown principle, *shakon-* Sabas stowed away the tableware knives into the cuff while making such

small sound. Roze asked him as the representative of the imperial guards who was making an expression that was at a loss for words.

「Why, tableware?」

「Because I’m a butler.」

The history of Sabas who was the former captain of the imperial guard, who then became Roze’s butler after picking out Crow siblings and turned his position to them was known by everyone there. They also knew his true strength. But, not one of them knew that he owned the inhuman skill that allowed him to snipe an enemy on the ground from a hundred meters above using tableware.

They more or less knew that in his active duty period he specialized in quick draw using revolver that should be reduced to a relic of the old era, but they never imagined that after he retired he would acquire a new ability——an outrageous ability of quick snipe using a knife for eating of all thing.

「What are you all doing getting absent-minded like that. Now, quickly mov——shi-」

Even while he was talking, the meal knife that manifested like a sleight of hand pierced the eyeball of a soldier that rushed out from the neighboring terrace.

Furthermore, Sabas unhesitatingly threw a meal knife at a completely wrong direction toward another soldier who drew back his face in panic. The meal knife rebounded from the ornament nearby the terrace’s ceiling before it flew into the entrance while rotating fast——

「Gueh」

A single groan could be heard. Next *thud* the sound of something heavy collapsing also resounded.

□□□□□……□□□□□

□What’s wrong Roze-sama? Quickly go inside.□

□A, yes.□

Roze-chan who decided to become the queen of the soldiers, after seeing the superhuman skill of a true (?) soldier (butler), her heart very quickly cracked.

Roze and others stepped inside the room while taking hold of their mind.

□Gramps, you are the vanguard. We should be able to go straight to the underground from the hidden passage of the royalty right?□

□Yes. That’s if the passage isn’t blocked though. It’s unthinkable that Gregor would seal his own escape route. I dare say there won’t be any problem.□

Sabas slightly opened the room’s door, and he quickly took stock of the corridor. And then, he nodded once and moved at the front like the person who thoroughly knew the inside of the royal palace.

After him was six imperial guards following with ordered movement without the slightest bit of disorder, behind them was Roze with the Crow siblings at both her sides, their back was secured by four imperial guards.

□Muh□

Suddenly Sabas let out an alert voice. Right at the next moment, he suddenly accelerated!

The soldier that leaped out from the corridor’s corner ahead was hit with a body blow that gave out *zudon-* impact voice as though he was hit with a large cannon. Without any voice or free time to writhe, the soldier collapsed with his eyeballs rolling, and the white of his eyes got exposed――

Yet he wasn’t allowed to fall, his collar was grasped, and he was made to stand.

And then, several gunshots rang at that time. The soldier who got hoisted up by Sabas danced like a badly made marionette. At the same time, Sabas’s palm heel struck at the abdomen of the soldier he turned as a shield as though he was beating up the dead.

Even though he and the corpse were in a posture where they were mostly glued to each other, the pitiful soldier A was sent flying like a cannonball.

「Uoh」

「Wha, what-」

The soldiers behind who were firing lost their cool seeing their comrade’s corpse suddenly flying horizontally at them and they dodged. Their firing stopped.

「Fuhn」

「Gahah」

The pseudo-cannon body blow once more burst at the soldier B. He was holding down his stomach while his body was leaning forward and he fell on his knees. His mouth

vomited out froth mixed with blood, and he convulsed in twitches.

「You bastard――」

「Hah」

「Goeh」

Soldier C aimed his rifle, but what was reflected in his sight was only the flapping end of the butler uniform. The elbow strike of Sabas who slipped into his bosom struck the center of his sternum, *bogyu* a wretched sound that had never been heard before rang.

Without even paying attention to soldier C who was limply collapsing behind, Sabas pulled out a handgun from the holster on the waist of soldier C who was falling.

……Surely, soldier D and E who were behind soldier C were witnessing an unrealistic scene of an old man in butler uniform appearing from the shadow of their slowly falling comrade, pointing a gun at their way.

tan-, tan-.

Two gunshots. The headshot was also two.

thud- Soldier D and E collapsed.

「Ah, over there-」

「Shit-, Fritz and others got done in! That butler uniformed man there-」

More soldiers who heard the gunshots appeared from the corridor’s corner bustlingly. The corridor was a straight line.

There was around ten meter until the corner where the soldiers were appearing.

「Gramps-, come ba――」

Roze was about to yell「come back」. But, before she could, Sabas had moved.

Forward.

With a low stance as though crawling on the ground, he sprinted like a fired bullet.

The flapping fringe of the butler uniform was beautiful.

Gun muzzles flashed grandly. Bullet storm was fired.

However, that didn’t even graze the old butler.

「How the hell!?」

One soldier reflexively acted the straight-man. The old butler who was moving with small sways to left and right without even slowing down for a bit and couldn’t be touched even by rifle bullet was already in horror territory.

The truth was he only calculated the firing line from the direction of the muzzle, and before he was shot he evaded to a place where bullets wouldn’t hit, but seen from the side, it was a really incomprehensible situation.

「Dammit all-」

Soldier F was unable to put up with it any longer, and he jumped out from the corridor’s corner, he held his rifle to shoot from the hip and unleashed it in full-auto.

So that it couldn’t be dodged, he must be intending to scatter bullets from left to right uniformly.

「Laughable!」

Butler-san said something.

Right after that, the rifle bullets that were mowing down in fan shape were passing down right below Sabas in vain. Yes, Sabas kicked on the corridor’s wall, and with a triangle jump, he took refuge midair.

At the same time, he was firing bullets at the soldiers hiding at the corner to stop them from moving while his fingers caught the ornamental part of the ceiling’s light, and like a pendulum, he increased his leaping range while accelerating further.

While showing a mid-air twist that would make even the famous move Shi○i of a certain gymnastic athlete who twisted too much to go pale, Sabas’s posture became upside down just right above soldier F. Like that, he threw the handgun that ran out of bullet to another soldier, grasped the chin of soldier F, and using the momentum of the twist the neck snapped. (TN: I don’t know which athlete and move it referred to here)

Sabas performed a beautiful landing at the shadow of soldier F that was spinning and spinning as though in a dance while his body was collapsing down when a bullet approached him.

kan-

Such light sound rang out.

「How is that possible!?」

「How can that be possible!?」

The straight-man act of soldier G and queen-sama overlapped. If it was said that it couldn’t be helped, then it couldn’t be helped. After all, Sabas-san had just deflected a rifle bullet.

――Using a polished shiny silver tray that he took out from somewhere.

「A butler has to be able to deflect something like a bullet using a tray at the very least-」

「No, that’s stran――gueh」

To be specific, the silver tray that Sabas took out was specially made to be tough enough to deflect a bullet, furthermore rather than calling it deflecting he was putting an angle on the tray when the bullet impacted so it was more correct to call it “averting” though……

In any case, normally nine out of ten the tray would get sent flying and the target would still get hit, so it didn’t change how uncommon what happened was.

Anyway, soldier G who acted the straight-man had his throat crushed by the silver tray that flew at him like a Frisbee, and he fell while raising a groaning voice that sounded like a frog’s croak.

The other soldiers returned to their senses and they re-aimed their rifle. Soldier H’s rifle muzzle locked on to the forehead of Sabas, who had approached in front of him.

But, when he was on the verge of pulling the trigger,

「He, he vani――」

「Too slow.」

Unable to follow the figure of Sabas that sank down deeply, it looked like he vanished and the soldier was shaken. And then, without even any time to shudder from hearing the voice from below, the butler kick that sprang up pulverized the jaw & snapped the neck and soldier H ascended.

「You-, monster-」

「Die, old maann-」

「You bastarddd, I'll kill――」

Soldier I, J, K surrounded Sabas. Three rifle muzzles were aimed from three directions at him in a really close range. Instantly the three of them each raised a short scream. It happened at the same time when Sabas made a rotation from riding the centrifugal force of the kick that drew an artistic circular orbit.

Looking closer, there was a sewing needle in soldier I's eye, a knife stabbed on J's arm, and blood is spurting out from soldier K's wrist.

The three who were flinching back from the pain exposed a fatal opening. Naturally, there was no way the old butler who was letting out sharp eye glint that could even be mistaken as dragon eyes would overlook that opening.

「Shi-」

Butler-sama performed a beautiful breakdance in a world with up and down reversed.

Let's say it, one more time. The flapping butler uniform was beautiful.

Sabas’s long legs were swung circularly. A sharp knife sprang out from the tip of the glossy butler shoes. It caressed the throat of the soldiers as though they were sucked into its orbit.

pisha- Matching Sabas’s legs orbit, a line of blood was drawn on the wall.

Sabas was on one knee when he recovered from the extremely dangerous break dance. He stood up and dusted off his hem before taking out a folding umbrella from out of nowhere as expected.

At the same time when he opened it with a smooth motion, *pusha——* rain of blood showered down. Of course, it didn’t touch Sabas who was under an umbrella.

Thud The soldiers whose carotid artery was torn open crumbled down.

「Fumu. I tried to create it to kill time, but unexpectedly it was a bit useful.」

Sabas-san muttered such thing while he twisted the folding umbrella. Its frame came off, and only its center pole remained, at the same time *shakin-* a sharp double-edged blade sprang out from its tip.

And then, he readied it, and like an athlete of javelin throw, he threw it deeper inside the corridor.

「U, UOOOOOOH」

In a superb timing, the last soldier who seemed to be in hiding leaped out. And then, in the right timing, his throat received the umbrella attack, and he blankly collapsed backward.

「Now, Roze-sama. For the time being, I have removed the danger ahead. It will be unfavorable if they approach in force. Let's hurry on ahead.」

「Ah, yes.」

Heaps of corpses all around. The faces of Roze, the Crow siblings, and the imperial guards were twitching at such a disastrous scene of the corridor while rushing toward Sabas's position.

「He, hey, gramps. Just now, when you were surrounded by the soldiers, what did you do?」

Roze must be referring to the time when soldier I, J, K suddenly received damage. She knew that Sabas had done something, but it was too fast that she didn't know what he actually did.

It seemed that it wasn't just Roze who had that question, the Crow siblings and the imperial guards were also the same, rather it was them who looked more curious, so Roze unconsciously questioned while understanding that this wasn't the time.

Sabas who was rushing through the corridor with sure footsteps even while putting his guard up sent a sharp gaze at the Crow siblings and the imperial guards「Even all of you couldn't see it?」. Seeing them twitched, Sabas shook his head as though lamenting their inadequacy very much while answering.

「It's nothing significant. I was shooting the sewing needle inside my mouth while hurling knife from the launcher inside my sleeve, at the same time I swung a bit sturdy thread that can also be used for sewing to cut the wrist. That's all.」

「Is, is that so? But, gramps. Why sewing tool?」

「Because I’m a butler.」

Hearing the words of their teacher Sabas, his personal pupils the Crow siblings thought,「This person, he became stronger since retiring and becoming a butler」. Sabas sent an even sharper gaze at such Crow siblings.

「Of course, even Olga and Jean can also do just this much. ……Isn’t that right, you two?」

「Ye, Yes-Sir――」

「I, it will be easy victoryy-」

Of course, they couldn’t. The two of them could also crush an enemy of the same number in the same situation as just now if they used a gun. But, something like facing multiple fully armed soldiers only at close-quarter combat without using a gun and taking care of all of them in less than a minute was……

The imperial guards were sending sympathizing gaze at their captain and vice-captain.

By any chance, the vocation butler was endowed with strongest as the default might be the same in any world.

「Perhaps, it will be fine with just gramps alone……」

Roze unconsciously muttered in a small volume. The imperial guards got faraway look hearing that.

Roze and others who were traveling for some time while the engagement against the enemy was dealt with Sabas who was fighting like a fierce god, they finally reached a private room of the royalty that was in the center of the palace.

「Roze-sama. This room is the private room of Roze-sama's mother――Averia-sama. Averia-sama was cuddling Roze-sama who was just born in this room.」

「This room, is Okaa-sama's……」

The interior of the room was simple. There was almost no furniture or implements, in exchange there was a lot of miscellaneous luggage put in there. It seemed it was used not as someone's private room, but as a storage room.

Even so, Roze could somehow imagine it. Her mother that she had only even seen in the photo was here, yes, surely she was near that window there, comforting her baby self inside her embrace.

「Roze-sama. Soldiers are coming.」

One imperial guard who stood watch in the corridor called with a small voice.

Roze put a lid on her overflowing feeling, and she looked at Sabas. Sabas nodded, and he stepped strongly on a spot of the floor. And then, he moved to left and right as though to confirm his step while stepping with the same strength at another five places.

The result, a part of the wall made a small mechanical sound *kiin*, and a lid the size of a palm slid. There, they saw a letter board of this world.

「——Roze-sama, it’s “the one who walks together proudly(Roze Phi Erute)”.」

「……Yes.」

That was the password to open the hidden passage. The nuance of those words resembled her first and second name. Holding the feeling that was inserted into her name inside her heart, Roze typed in the letters.

Mechanical operation sound was coming from inside the wall.

Instantly,

「Roze-sama-」

「-」

What resounded was Sabas’s voice and consecutive gunshots.

「Kuh-. A trap-」

Olga bit her lips while firing bullets at the automatic interception mechanical gun that looked like a sentry gun which sprang out from behind an implement.

「Gramps-!?」

「-, I let my guard down. So they put a trap that operated together with the authentication device……」

Perhaps Gregor had assumed that the driven out royalty would come back here. The people who knew about the procedure to open the hidden passage in this room even before the kingdom got usurped were only the royalty and Sabas who was the imperial guard captain.

And then, the royalty, Roze’s family would never leak out that information to the enemy, therefore, Sabas thought that the enemy couldn’t open the hidden passage here but……

If there were a few decades since that day of tragedy, then certainly it was possible to install a trick at the authentication device at least. Perhaps this was revenge for being able to reach until the authentication device, yet they weren’t able to advance further ahead than that.

Sabas spat out「I’m growing dull」at himself who didn’t notice that this place was noticed already and he stood up. The instant he did that, blood were dripping down. The flank of the butler uniform could be seen changing color despite the black color that made it not stand out.

「Gramps-, your wound!? Me, medical treatment quickly-」

Roze reached out her hand at Sabas’s flank, but that hand was stopped by Sabas himself. At the same time, gunshots rang out from the corridor. Their position became known from the gunshot just now, and the soldiers were rushing here.

The imperial guards guarding the entrance raised an angry voice「Their number is more than twenty! We won’t hold out for long! Hurry-」while returning fire.

Sabas nodded, and he turned a sharp gaze at Crow siblings.

「Olga, Jean. Fulfill the duty of the imperial guard. Roze-sama and Kuwaibel-sama, take them to the Spring of True Dragon’s Tear even at the cost of your life.」

「……Yes-. Without fail.」

「Yes, teacher-」

Seeing Sabas gave such order while emitting a dominating aura that was really unthinkable to come from an injured person, his personal pupils the Crow siblings held their breath. They felt Sabas’s resolve.

「Gramps, what are you saying――」

「Please go, Roze-sama. Gramps will hold back the enemy here.」

「Why!? We only need to enter the passage and then close the door!」

Sabas shook his head. And then, he fired toward the painting that decorated the room.

「I was careless. That’s a hidden camera. Most likely they know the password already. Through there is a small passage that continues until underground. We will be helpless if we are attacked from above. This is my failure. It’s my wish to be given a chance to redeem myself.」

「Such thing-. It’s fine already; everyone quickly enter the passage!」

Roze grasped Sabas’s arm, and she walked toward the passage. Right after that,「-, grenade! Get down-」A warning resounded. Sabas covered for Roze, at the same time a flame blast enveloped the area near the door, the four imperial guards who were returning fire were blown away.

It seemed he avoided fainting with his trained body, but after seeing the blood flowing from everywhere and also the bloody cough, there was no doubt that the internal organs were harmed. It was obviously a heavy injury.

Countless footsteps resounded. The rushing soldiers showed up their face from the door.

suton-

Like that, the knife pierced their eyeball or throat. Furthermore, the thrown black object――a hand grenade rolled into the corridor and exploded.

After the explosive sound that resounded once more, groaning voices leaked out from the corridor.

「Olga, Jean-. Take Roze-sama away from here!」

Sabas's voice resounded.

Sabas rushed toward the corridor, and he stole the rifles of two soldiers who were killed by a knife. He spread both his hands and fired to the left and right of the corridor. Anguished voices「Gyah」「Gaah」rose once more.

「Gramps, come back! This is an ord――」

「Haven't you resolved yourself-」

Roze who was about to order him to come back was pierced by Sabas's angry voice that she had never heard until now. Roze turned speechless against Sabas who was hiding with the door's cover while continuously pulling his rifles' trigger at the corridor. For Roze, Sabas was a good-natured old man. He had never raised his voice like this at her.

「Gra, gramps……」

「You decided to fight, aren't you! You swore to weigh your important things, aren't you! For the sake of the future, you will seize the day; you're determined to do that aren't you!」

Then,

「Show that you are going to choose! Or else, are you going to abandon the future for the sake of this old bone!?」

That’s right. The path that she determined was this kind of path. A king had to make a choice.

She had made her resolve. Even so, for Roze who didn’t know her parents, Sabas was, her real……

「……-. Olga-, Jean-. Choose the members who will stop the enemy along with Sabas! The rest is with me!」

「Ye, yes-」

「By your will-」

Roze who roughly rubbed her eyes that were almost spilling over adroitly turned her body toward the hidden passage.

The four imperial guards who were blown away were injured all over their body, yet they took up rifle by themselves and stood up to return fire along with Sabas. And then, Roze looked back across her soldier toward Sabas.

Sabas also turned her gaze at Roze while reloading.

「Sabas, defend this place, to the last.」

「Fuh. By your will. Roze-sama.」

She thought of him as her real grandfather. Or perhaps, even as a father. The unexpressed feeling was put into the order that was said brokenly.

That feeling, it certainly reached Sabas who had been at her side all this time since she was born.

Roze vanished deep inside the hidden passage. Olga and Jean, and other imperial guards, they nodded deeply at Sabas and their comrades before following behind. The door closed.

Sabas shot out the letter board after they passed through. With the technology of the divine country, even with the letter board destroyed there was still a high possibility of opening the path with the password known, but it could buy more time.

「Advance forward, my beloved child. I also thought of you as my real granddaughter.」

The remaining imperial guards showed a wry smile hearing Sabas's monologue, thinking that he should just say it directly. Sabas who noticed them cleared his throat looking a bit embarrassed.

「What's with those eyes, you guys. From here onward will be hell. Put your back into it.」

「Kukuh, you're right. We will accompany you until the end you know, Sabas-sama.」

「The demonic imperial guard captain is revived huh.」

「It has been an honor.」

「Let's show them the reserve strength of us, Avenst's imperial guard.」

While fully wounded all over the body, the imperial guards replied fearlessly. Sabas smiled「fuh」and nodded.

Something like a rocket warhead like before peeked out from ahead at the corridor. Sabas's rifle muzzle pierced the

warhead with pinpoint accuracy, and it exploded. The imperial guards sent in a storm of bullets toward the corridor that was enveloped in flame.

「You guys, hold down the left corridor. I'll return in three minutes.」

Saying that Sabas leaped out to the corridor. Bullets were flying from the right corridor, but they were avoided by kicking on the wall and ceiling using unrestricted movement, and he pounced at the corner where the enemies were hiding.

The soldiers didn't think that someone would break through amidst those rifle bullets even in their wildest imagination and they were taken aback,

「Now then, I received the command from her majesty the queen to defend to the last——to "defend by slaughtering all the enemy". Can I have every single one of you depart to the next world?」

shakin- Three meal knives each sprang out from both sleeves. Each knife was held between fingers, as though they were shining silver claws.

「Fi, Fireee-」

An angry yell resounded from a person who seemed to be the captain.

The next moment, there were also agonizing cries that resounded.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The next update will be at 6 P.M Saturday, tentatively, regards.

Arifureta Chapter 242

Arifureta After II King’s Understanding Last Part

AN: The story doesn’t advance……

Recently I say this every time but sorry it’s late okay.

Their steps were relying only on the emergency light shining faintly to descend the spiraling staircase that looked like it would continue until the bottom of the earth.

Other than the short exhalation and footsteps, there were only the faint vibrating sound and explosion sound that could be heard. The place was quiet. The atmosphere was heavy with no one speaking any word, further fostering that silence.

「Pii」

「I’m fine, Ku-chan.」

Kuwaibel who was flying beside Roze turned a slightly worried gaze toward her. When Roze answered inside the broken silence, Olga and Jean, followed by the imperial guards were also sending her expression of consideration.

「Right now, let’s concentrate on accomplishing our objective.」

Surely no matter what Roze said, the expression of the Crow siblings and the imperial guards wouldn’t clear. That was just how terrible the expression of Roze who was giving the order to defend to the death at her parent replacement. Because Roze was aware of how her face looked, her words toward them naturally became like that.

「It will be fine Roze-sama. This is Sabas-sama――teacher who we are talking about. After all, even among the imperial guards, there is an argument whether it’s really fine to classify that person as a human.」

「Roze-sama, it’s just as Nee-san said. It might be even the case that he is only able to perceive the command of defending to the death to mean『defend by slaughtering all the enemy』. Even just worrying about a teacher is only a waste of time.」

Olga and Jean’s consoling words were followed by the imperial guards too. Their mouths were saying『That isn’t human, but something else』, or『Actually he is a weapon of massacre that was created by the ancient civilization』, or 『Rather, he won’t get hit even when in the middle of crossing fire using machine gun』『I mean, if it’s slow bullet-like rocket or missile, he can normally catch it and then throw it back, seriously』, or『Every time he gave us hellish training while yelling ‘what are you doing unable to do something this easy!’, but we are just normal human here』, or『I want to hit the me ten years ago who thought that I absolutely would get payback when he turned senile』and so on……

Midway the complaints of the imperial guards were overflowing. The complaints were already coming out like a flood. The eyes of all of them were gradually losing vitality even though they were in the middle of the mission. The

imperial guards were getting killed by their memory with gramps!

「Kufuh, fufufuh. The, then, surely, he will be fine.」

A small giggle resounded. The imperial guards were taken aback and returned to reality. There they saw the figure of Roze with trembling shoulders. It seemed that her heart was cleared slightly from the lovely reminiscence of the imperial guards.

While they were doing that, Roze and others came to the bottom of the spiral stair. There was a slightly spacious landing there with a double-leaf door that opened by sliding. There was a console emitting bluish white light. Seeing the display, it seemed it would perform confirmation by putting a hand palm on it. Most likely it would analyze the royalty's bloodline.

Olga held back Roze who was standing in front of the console while she manipulated something like a tablet in her hand.

「Roze-sama. In the interior map that I received from Sabas-sama, the other side of this door is the floor that was a level above the lowest floor. If we go straight through the right and corridor, there will be a stair to the lowest floor.」

Roze nodded briskly and then she continued while turning her gaze to Kuwaibel.

「If I remember correctly, the lowest floor is partly like a labyrinth isn't it?」

At the lowest floor, so that even in the case of an intruder the deepest part couldn't be reached easily, there were several traps installed through the way from the surface.

Even the level where Roze and others were currently at was originally set up with traps that might make anyone without qualification to lose their life and also several locks that had to be unlocked.

If they had reached this far, then what was left was only to break through the labyrinth of the underground’s lowest floor that was created for the sake of buying time against an intruder, at this point, there wouldn’t be any problem if there was a monarch dragon. Perhaps it was related with the 「Spring of True Dragon’s Tear」, because it was only a monarch dragon that could advance without getting lost.

Kuwaibel was confidently crying「Piih」, perhaps because he had already grasped some kind of intuition.

「Yes. Just a bit more. ……But even though I said that it had been a few decades since the palace was snatched away. There is enough possibility that the underground’s state isn’t the same as the past. No matter what, don’t get separated from us.」

「We will leave it to the two of you. However, we have to hurry as much as possible. Because right now, even while we are doing this, everyone in the sky is in the brink of death.」

When Roze said that, Crow siblings and also the imperial guards nodded strongly. And then, they faced the door with their rifle at ready. Olga and Jean took a position at both sides of the door. And then, when Olga nodded quietly, Roze determinedly put her hand on the console.

pi- A small confirmation sound rang for a beat. After that came a small activation sound and the door slowly opened along with it.

Outside the door, they found a passage that continued straight and a passage that that stretched to the left and right. There wasn’t any sign of people.

「Let’s go.」

The Crow siblings and the imperial guards nodded at Roze’s words. They stepped out to the right passage with a smooth column movement.

After a while, they came to see a stair in front of them. Roze and others carefully and yet speedily rushed to the lowest floor.

They went down the long stair and jumped down on the last stair step——at that time,

kiin

Flash and sound exploded along with such small sound.

「-!?」

「Roze-sama!」

「Kuwaibel-sama!」

Olga immediately leaped at Roze, and like that, they retreated to the stair’s wall as though falling on it, Jean called at Kuwaibel while returning back to the stair. The surrounding was overran by terrific light and high-pitched sound that paralyzed the eardrum.

(Kuh, sight and hearing got done in! Is it a trap, or else-)

Olga cursed inside her heart, and an uneasy expression emerged on her face from being unable to grasp the

situation around her at all. Really sadly, Olga’s fear was proved to be right.

A beat later, Olga’s senses that got two of the five senses crushed by the light and sound that surpassed the permissible range recovered rapidly. What entered her sight that was painted white was a silver light enveloping her body and Roze who she was covering. It seemed that her senses that were temporarily paralyzed by something like a flashbang got recovered by Kuwaibel.

But, naturally, they didn’t have any leeway to feel relieved. It was clear that the situation was urgent from the pained familiar voices of her family that reached her ear.

「Jean-」

「-, Nee-san, an ambush-. This place is bad-」

Jean was kneeling in front of Roze and Olga while showing his back. Blood was flowing from his shoulder that was desperately supporting the collapsible small shield which looked like it was going to be blown away by the impact.

Originally this small shield was something to be carried into close-quarter combat in order to endure a few bullets. If it was unfolded to the maximum, then it would have the size that could cover the whole upper body, but its impact mitigation’s efficiency and endurance wouldn’t be that high.

Even so, the shield could defend against the fired bullets this long was because Kuwaibel responded to Jean’s call and he enveloped that small shield with silver light. And then it was also because of Jean’s vigor that wouldn’t let the existence behind him to get even a single scratch no matter the cost.

「Pike-, what about Serio!?」

「-, it’s no good.」

「Shit-」

The imperial guard called Pike answered at Jean’s call while enduring bullets using a similar small shield. There was a blood-soaked figure of an imperial guard beside him lying on the floor. From Pike’s expression, it was obvious that the body wasn’t breathing anymore. Jean reflexively cursed.

Olga and the imperial guards covered behind Pike read the lines of shots and returned fire. Right after that, multiple short voices of death agony rose from deeper into the passage.

The shooting stopped for a moment. Using that opening, the imperial guards gathered around Roze and then constructed a barrier using their small shield.

Olga fired even more bullets. However, this time she didn’t fix her aim, she adjusted her bullets so that they ricocheted into the visible passage and the passage in the blind spot. At the same time, she closed her eyes while focusing her ear.

「……Five people at the front passage. And then three people each at the left and right passage. Kuwaibel-sama, which is the right path?」

「Pii. Pipih」

She calculated the enemy number relying on the echoing sound of the bullet and the enemy presence that reacted to the bullet. The number of ambushing soldiers was confirmed by Olga’s signature skill. The questioned Kuwaibel cried

looking a bit stumped before his tail pointed at the front passage.

「Olga?」

Olga answered Roze's call along with a strong gaze.

「Roze-sama, there is no time. We are forcing our way through.」

「-」

Shaking off the gaze of Roze who was holding her breath, Olga ordered her important little brother as the captain of the imperial guard.

「Jean. Cut open the path.」

「Roger Nee-san, no, captain. Pike, Weber, suppress the enemy at the left and right. Raymond and Olson, you two charge forward with me. We are routing them!」

There was no hesitation. Jean and the imperial guards responded immediately. And then, when they were about to step forward,

「Fortunes of war with you-」

The corner of everyone's lips rose at that encouragement from the queen that they respected.

Jean and others rushed out all at once. Pike and Weber fired in full-auto into the left and right corridor without even fearing getting shot or running out of bullets. Although they were only raining bullets in order to hold back the enemy, their skill was certainly in the level that was worthy to be called the most elite of Avenst.

They splendidly shut out the shooting from the left and right temporarily.

Not letting go of that moment, Raymond and Olson held their small shield to the front while sprinting. Behind him was Jean, and further behind him was Olga and Roze following.

Bullets were flying from the front like a rainstorm. The small shields that were clad in silver were already cracked and on the verge of being pulverized.

「Guh」

Raymond raised a pained voice. A bullet grazed his leg. Although he had lowered his body as much as possible to enlarge the coverable range, it was impossible to defend everything using the small shield’s range.

But, Raymond didn’t stop. He put strength into the leg that although it wasn’t hit directly yet it was still spurting out blood, and took a step forward.

Right after that, his small shield broke.

「Gah, guh, oaAAAAAAAH」

A shout surged. While his body was getting hit with bullets, Raymond――didn’t stop even then. He covered his head with his arms while further stepping forward in the lead using his own body as shield replacement. It could be seen that for a moment, the enemies flinched at that intense drive and demonic visage.

The distance shrank even further.

The restarted shooting finally robbed the last strength from Raymond’s body.

“*Go-*”

“Ou-”

Olson who replaced Raymond to stand in the lead exchanged gaze with his war buddy for an instant. And then, he took over the baton along with loud yell of fighting spirit and broke further through the bullets barrage!

At the front passage, the figure of the enemies peeking out their face from the turn midway could be seen. Astonished expressions from seeing something that was hard to understand was plastered on their faces.

“Don’t look down-, on Avenst’s-, imperial guards’, on my resolve-”

Olson’s shield broke. His body shook from impact, but the momentum of Olson that was advancing as though he was burning his life to ash wasn’t stopping. While getting drilled by bullets, he threw away the remainder of his small shield and rapid fired his handgun. One shot splendidly bored into an enemy’s forehead.

And then, he reached it.

“I’ll-, leave the rest-. Vice-captain!”

“Yeah. You did well-”

Rushing past the falling Olson, the favorite pupil of the inhuman butler leaped out.

The bullets of the enemies lying in wait broke the lower half of Jean’s small shield and pierced his stomach. But, as though such a thing was just a fly’s bite, Jean shot without even a moment of pause. His aim was terrifyingly accurate, the fired bullet destroyed the enemy’s head and threw out his brain matter.

The other enemies were going to pull their trigger even now. Normally this would be the time to launch an evasive & counter attack. But, there was no way he could do that now. He couldn’t let even a single bullet of the enemies lurking in this corner to pass behind him.

He bet his pride as the vice-captain of the imperial guard. He bet the resolve of her majesty the queen. He bet the trust of his important sister-.

「OoOOOOOOOOH」

「Wha, what the hell, is with these guys-」

He tackled toward the three enemies huddling together while his body was receiving bullets. It was a shield bash using the half-broken small shield that was carried on by betting the everything of the imperial guard’s vice-captain of dragon kingdom Avenst.

It possessed enough might to altogether cut a swath through the three enemies who turned timid from that bloody drive.

In the middle of collapsing on the floor as though tripping over, Jean yelled.

「Take care of Roze-sama! Nee-san-」

「Yes-. Leave it to me!」

Olga and Roze, and then Kuwaibel were rushing through from behind. For a moment, Jean and Roze’s gaze tangled.

The thing dwelling inside Roze’s eyes, wasn’t any feeling of pity or apology for having others become sacrifices, was merely the color of praise and gratitude.

Beyond doubt, that was a reward for those who accomplished the duty given to them by betting their life.

(That’s truly what is worthy, for a warring queen. ……You have become strong.)

Jean’s lips unconsciously loosened at that color of heart shown by the queen that he respected.

That was a sight that was like a nightmare for the enemy side that was rallying over their posture. After all, there was a man there who kept smiling even while getting blood-soaked from receiving many bullets. It was only natural for them to feel so.

Toward them who couldn’t help but trickling cold sweats despite being the side in advantage, Jean stood up while saying.

「You guys, feel free to learn the dreadfulness of the person who you turned into an enemy. ——Avenst’s imperial guard, is a bit stubborn you know?」

A beat later, yells and gunshots echoed from the passage Roze and Olga had left behind.

Roze and Olga listened to the gunshots behind them while rushing through the passage following Kuwaibel’s guidance.

There wasn’t any word, the two of them were merely staring straight ahead.

A few minutes later after rushing through several turns.

「Roze-sama.」

「Yes, it seems we arrived.」

There was a large hall ahead of their gaze. Deeper inside the room there was a large double-leaf door around three meters tall, splendid stone statues of dragons were standing at the left and right. When they tried approaching the door, on the wall was a largish depression modeled like a hand. Roze wondered if it was a kind of authentication device, but there wasn’t anything like machine anywhere. It really looked like nothing more but a depression that was dug out on the wall.

「It cannot be passed by only a monarch dragon. It’s meaningless with just a royalty. With a pair as partner together, for the first time the『Spring of True Dragon’s Tear』will have meaning――I wonder, will the ancient selection recognize me as a king?」

She was a survivor of a usurped country. Sure enough, would she be recognized as a queen of the dragon kingdom……this wasn’t any machine, but a door and spring of unknown principle that was said to be created by a true dragon and dragon knight from far in the past.

While feeling slight anxiety, Roze put her hand on the wall’s depression.

Right after that, a silver light ran through the door. It was as though water was flowing into a ditch, silver light traced the door surface and made a large dragon kingdom’s crest to the surface.

And then, the door——didn’t open.

No, more accurately there was a path opened. The double-leaf door didn’t open, in exchange something like a shining mirror, or perhaps a membrane was created.

「This is, the door toward the spring?」

Roze muttered to herself. Kuwaibel too, this was his first time seeing it, but he nodded「Pii」as though he understood that inside there was the place that was their objective.

Olga tried to touch the shining membrane. Her finger sunk smoothly. There wasn’t any particular sensation. As expected, it seemed they could go inside.

「Roze-sama, let’s hurry. Quickly, to save everyo——」

tan-

A sound of light plosive sound rang.「Eh?」It was unclear whether that voice leaked out from Olga, or perhaps Roze.

At the very least, the one who vomited out blood was Olga.

「Olga-」

Roze yelled at the same time with Olga jumping at Roze and carried her to retreat in the cover of a dragon statue. Instantly, bullet storm rained down on Roze and co. The dragon statue was solid, so although its surface got shaved, it satisfactorily accomplished a role as a defensive wall.

「Olga-, please get a hold of yourself!」

「Gohoh, kafuh」

She must be trying to reply back, but perhaps her trachea was filled with blood because she only coughed out blood instead of words. In exchange, she leaned on the dragon statue while pulling out her gun and returned fire toward the soldiers who were firing from the passage before the hall.

There were quite a lot of soldiers, a lot more than what Jean and the others were holding back. It was obvious that enemy reinforcement was following behind them using some kind of method.

Olga conveyed using her gaze to Roze so she would advance along with Kuwaibel. The shadow of death was looming on that face. Even just from the amount of bleeding it was undoubtedly a lethal wound. She must be planning to buy time in this nearly certain death.

Roze looked at that gaze, at the soldiers who looked like they would rush to here anytime now, and then at Kuwaibel who was crying out worriedly.

「Ku-chan-. No, Kuwaibel! Go ahead! I and Olga will hold them back here!」

「Pi!?」

Taking a rifle in hand, Roze leaned out half her body from the dragon statue’s cover and returned fire. The moment her face peeked out, in a stroke of bad luck a bullet grazed her cheek. Fresh blood dyed red that smooth face. However, Roze didn’t show any signs of faltering, and she continued to pull the trigger in order to buy time for Olga to reload.

「Even if we aren’t beside each other, our hearts are connected just like how humans and dragons once were, like heaven and earth. Now, Kuwaibel. From here on, go by yourself!」

「……Piih」

Kuwaibel softly crawled his tail on Roze’s cheek. And then, the moment Roze yelled「Now-」, he flew out from the dragon statue and flew into the light membrane by himself.

The light membrane didn’t vanish. Roze whispered「As I thought」with a glance at that. Thinking of the possibility that the spring would stay open until the monarch dragon was given power, there was no way they could enter together. The light membrane let Olga’s finger passed when it was opened.

In other words, the enemy soldiers could also enter into the spring.

If the soldiers rushed into the hall, they would become a target for Olga and Roze. This place was optimum for holding back the enemy.

That was why,

「Please show me your figure that becomes splendid, okay partner.」

Seeing Roze saying that while making a faint smile, Olga who was still continuing to fire with fortitude will even while leaking out wheezing breath also made a small smile.

Their ammo wasn’t that many. Thinking of the amount of shooting necessary to maintain the equilibrium, perhaps they could only continue for five minutes. But even before

that Olga wouldn’t last. If Olga’s precise shooting was gone, it would be even quicker for the equilibrium to crumble.

But, even so, Roze and Olga’s smile didn’t vanish.

「Uguh」

Roze’s shoulder was drilled by a bullet. Blood spurted out, painting the girl even more ghastly.

However, her smile didn’t vanish.

A lot of sacrifices were created, but they flawlessly let them reached this point.

The last monarch dragon magnificently laid hands on the trump card.

「This is, our victory!」

Roze’s words assaulted the soldiers like a bullet.

During the time Roze and others were in a deathly battle deep under the palace, at the surface a similar, no, an even fiercer battle was in progress.

「Sanchez squad was done in-. Somone-, can anyone reinforce!?」

「This is Cranks 1(Bovid). Los squad-. We will manage it somehow here! Head there for reinforcement!」

「This is Odet 2-. I’m the only one left! Sink or swim, I’ll launch a kamikaze attack at the bridge!」

「Cranks 1-, this is Shunt 1! Simon squad is annihilated-. We cannot protect Averia with just us!」

「Siegel 1 here! This is bad-. Rozeria is receiving concentrated fire-. Stan squad and Ester squad follow――」

「Shit-, Siegel 1 fell! Siegel 2 will take over the command! Protect Rozeria!」

Communications of mixed angry yell and scream flitted about in the airspace. The number of the dragon kingdom's sky battlecrafts had been reduced by one-third since Roze and others infiltrated the place until now.

To be able to sink seven ships of the defense fleet right after the start of battle could be said as amazing military gains even though it came from an impossible surprise attack. Even after that, further four more ships were felled from the main cannon of airship Rozeria and Averia, the enemy's battle strength was cut in half.

Perhaps, they would be able to annihilate the enemy at this rate……

There were also people who were thinking such thing, but as expected from the last fortress of the divine country, they weren't that generous. When the defense fleet finally formed their barrier, the attack from Avenst side couldn't pass through to a despairing degree.

Even when airship Rozeria and Averia fired their main cannon from the maximum short distance, it only pierced the barrier slightly and damaged a part of the ship's frame, far from sinking the enemy. The story would be different if they could hit the bridge, but there was no way the defense fleet that was fully operating would give them such opening.

Even the sky battlecrafts that penetrated inside the barrier had their hands full against the enemy sky battlecrafts that could freely enter inside the barrier, they didn’t have any leeway to attack the bridge at all, if they recklessly aimed there then that would be a good chance for the ship’s weapon or the sky battlecrafts to shoot them down.

And then, the more time passed, the more the enemy put in order their counter-attack readiness, and they cornered the airship Rozeria and Averia instead.

Furthermore,

「This is, Cline! Damage at Avenst’s power mechanism! We won’t be able to endure more attack than this!」

Mother ship Avenst that was attacking with manual armaments operated by civilians of all age and gender from above had smokes erupting from its rear hull while starting to tilt in a big way.

The one who was calling for reinforcement with uneasy voice was the captain of mother ship Avenst, Cline Sanders. He who was also the supreme commander was already at the limit and gave an order.

「All sky battlecraft squads focus on protecting Avenst! Rozeria cover for the sky battlecraft squads! Averia, hold position at Avenst’s left wing!」

In the first place, their role was to buy time. If their attacks couldn’t go through properly, then what was left was to focus on defense resolutely and bought time. Mother ship Avenst falling was something that had to be avoided no matter what.

Rozeria and Averia rushed through the airspace in reckless orbit with the resolve to get shot. Both airships were already damaged all over too, but it seemed they still barely possess fighting capability.

Bovid and others distanced themselves from the defense fleet. Barrages were sent like a tsunami from the defense fleet in order to not let them got away.

The veterans like Bovid and others evaded that with maneuver as though they were possessed while returning to the mother ship Avenst, but the pilots who still hadn’t left the immature stage were shot down one after another.

「All squads, report! How many of you are left!?」

The supreme commander of sky battlecraft squads Bovid was shooting down a pursuing enemy sky battlecraft with an abnormal maneuver of a midair spin while he raised his angry voice.

The returned report was callous information that a further three platoons were annihilated.

Bovid reflexively wanted to curse, but a death god approached from right beside him. A missile was fired from an enemy sky battlecraft that had circled around unnoticed.

The timing was impossible to evade, even so, Bovid was going to make a vain struggle, and he put strength into his hand that was holding the stick――

「GURYAAAA-」

Right after that, a black flash blew up the missile.

「Ha, hahah. That’s a narrow escape from death. Thanks, black dragon-chan.」

「Guruu」

The black dragon that made a small purr as though to say 「Don’t mind it」while flying in parallel then swiveled in order to support the other sky battlecrafts. Bovid cracked jokes 「That frail kid has grown big huh」, but his expression was grim.

Several black dragons were playing very active roles in many fields. Avenst, which was unable to maneuver satisfactorily, was still not falling solely based on their efforts.

But, even that was near the limit.

「Your majesty……」

He unconsciously whispered the queen that he respected. ‘How much time they have to buy? Is she safe? Will Kuwaibel-sama really able to awaken in the「Spring of True Dragon’s Tear」? And will that be enough to overturn this war situation?’

He believed. He believed in it, but Bovid who was a veteran soldier couldn’t avoid the black mist of unease to be created in his heart.

「You guys-, just a bit more! Go all out! If Avenst is gone when her majesty come back, then it will be our shame for eternity!」

Even so as a captain, he addressed all the squads that everything was absolutely fine. He maintained his subordinates’ morale with jokes and encouragement.

But, reality was heartless, and on top of that, it was always moving to unwanted direction every time.

-. Impossible-. Those guys, they are planning to fire their main cannon!? Averia-, Rozeria! Stop them no matter how-

Cline’s scream surged. When Bovid who was taken aback looked below, there was the figure of a ship aiming its main cannon at Avenst above.

It was only natural that Cline was flustered. Right now if Avenst was shot down in this kind of place, it would fall around the palace. The people living around the palace were unmistakably those with considerable post or pedigree even in the divine country.

Therefore, they estimated that the enemy wouldn’t use their main cannon in fear of sinking the ship with one shot but……

Damn it-. So those guys are also absolutely at their limit huh!

It seemed, there was some fellow there who was unable to suppress their fear, or perhaps their rage from seeing a lot of the defense fleet ships getting shot down.

Airship Rozeria and Averia were charging their main cannon and were going to fire, but they wouldn’t make it in time at all. It went without saying that the sky battlecrafts wouldn’t be able to do anything.

Bovid, and then everyone of Avenst, imagined the scene of their other hometown, the nation on the ship, getting annihilated.

——Charging complete.

It vaguely looked like the other defense fleet ships were also panicking. In the middle of that, the main cannon was finally going to fire at the mother ship Avenst――right before that

――*GOU-*

A silver flash pierced the sky.

「Hah, you’re late, your majesty, monarch dragon-sama.」

Saying that Bovid turned his gaze. Surely, it was undoubtedly a sight that was gazed in astonishment by everyone on this battlefield. In fact, even the defense fleet ship that was on the verge of firing also stopped moving.

What pierced the palace vertically, rising from far underground toward the sky was without mistake a pillar of light.

The pillar of light that was thinning down as though melting into the air and then vanished stopped still the time of the battlefield.

Before long, a silver shape flew out into the sky of the world that was filled with silence.

It flew up to the sky like a cannonball, rolled midair and spread its wings wide. The sunlight caused the dragon scales to sparkle, just how beautiful that figure was.

Dragon scales shining silver. Majestic huge body. Dragon eyes that made anyone filled with awe. That figure with its back toward the sun even made anyone felt its divine majesty.

――GAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA-!!

That was unmistakably a dragon’s howl. No, it was the howl of the dragon king filled with a dominating aura that was worthy for a king.

Silver aura spread out like a ripple. It remained in all the people of the dragon kingdom.

Right after that, the words of the person who everyone surely longed for reverberated.

「Everyone-. Well done in enduring this long! Your queen, your monarch dragon-, is right here!」

A silver monarch dragon. The one standing on that back was their queen whose beauty wasn’t lost even soaked in blood——Roze.

This was the moment, the strongest of the dragon kingdom, Avenst, was revived.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The next chapter, perhaps……I think I’ll be able to submit it for 6 P.M Sunday.

Arifureta Chapter 243

Arifureta After II Hope And Despair And

AN: Merry~ Christmas~

I'll end Tio's arc next week. This is not a lie. It's true. It's true, you know?

Surely the cause was the silver light that enveloped all the people of Avenst. The words of the queen that shouldn't reach resounded toward all the people in this airspace.

「-, Kuwaibel! That warship!」

「Gua!」

Seeing the smoking and tilting mother ship Avenst, and the warship that was in the verge of firing its main cannon toward that Avenst, Roze yelled while showing unease in her face.

The silver monarch dragon——Kuwaibel who was temporarily awakened as a grown-up dragon replied shorty to that yell and threw back his head.

And then,

——GAAAAAAH!!

He released a breath attack along with a howl. The terrific torrent of light shook the air. The silver breath should be called as a pillar of light already. Naturally, the heat amount it possessed was out of common sense.

The pillar of light cut through the sky in a straight line, and then it impacted the ship. The barrier that repulsed all the attacks of Avenst side was fiercely flickering while warping greatly. While the pillar of light was illuminating the world, the pivot of the divine country’s protection——after a slight resistance, it vanished as though getting blown away.

The defense battleship that lost its shield was helplessly hit by the light pillar, and a big tunnel was opened in its frame. And then the stocked energy of the main cannon exploded, illuminating the world with even more light of destruction.

The defense battleship that exploded everywhere along with explosive blast rained down to a part of the city. Naturally, there was no way the king of dragons would allow that; he raised a loud cry that was different from before. Thereupon, a membrane of extreme light that looked like an aura that covered a part of the city was manifested.

The light perfectly halted all the wreckages and explosion blast, but it didn’t stop there, it annihilated what it touched from the edge. It seemed it was an offensive barrier that possessed the power of the light pillar.

A silver aurora shined in the sky. Seeing the sight of the raining down presence of death being stopped, just what did the people of the city who were moving about in confusion at the sudden war situation would feel?

The monarch dragon’s howl resounded in the battlefield once more.

「……They return back.」

One man whispered that. It was a man with a shabby appearance wearing work clothes that looked like an old rag. In the eyes of he who was the people of the former dragon kingdom who was working in a harsh place like a slave since before the dawn, tears were faintly surfacing.

「Okaa-san……what's that?」

「……Don't call them that. They are our king. Our, queen and monarch dragon-sama……they came back for us.」

A skinny girl was looking up at the existence that she was told as a fairy-tale before she slept while pointing with her eyes opened wide. The mother who was embracing her daughter from the side was wiping the warm tears flowing down her dirty face many times while leaking out a sobbing voice.

The people of the former dragon kingdom were mostly lower class people whose human right wasn't guaranteed. They were kept alive only for supporting the extravagant livelihood of the divine country's high-class people or the privileged class people; they were that kind of existence.

Just how much they were dreaming for the day their king returned inside their long, pained life?

The people who were hiding inside the building so that they wouldn't get dragged into the war pushed out their face outside one after another as though led by the calling howl of the monarch dragon.

As they stood there, they witnessed it.

The figure of the monarch dragon flying majestically in the sky. And then, the spectacle of countless light sphere floating brilliantly at the monarch dragon’s surrounding. Those were stars of an aurora.

The enemy was also similarly just staring at the fantastical sight. While the defense fleet and the sky battlecrafts stopped moving, the monarch dragon Kuwaibel’s howl surged up. Falling stars phenomenon occurred.

A great number of extreme light bullets rained down toward the other side of the palace like a meteor shower——at the huge breeding farm located at the opposite side of the city. Yes, it was the breeding farm of the dragons that had supported the matchless sky fleet until now.

Countless explosive sounds resounded, the air teemed with a flash that made it as though the palace was tinged with a halo.

——GAAAAAAAAAH

The howl of the monarch dragon Kuwaibel. That was a call. It informed of the return of the king, and it called to wake up and rise up; it was a calming voice.

——Kuwaaaaa-

——Kyuiiiiiiii-

——ooooOON-

Even feebly, the howls of dragons that responded were definitely emitting delight.

Countless shadow flew up to the sky from behind the palace. The figures of the dragons were small and fleeting, yet their

wings were flapped powerfully to return to the sky. The people who knew of the former dragon kingdom, and even those who didn’t, they tightly grasped at their chest similarly, because of the overflowing emotion that couldn’t be described.

「……-. Don’t get absent-minded! Change target-, shot down that dragon-」

One ship of defense fleet returned to their senses. The ship began to charge its main cannon in a hurry while its normal cannon and large caliber anti-air weapon spouted fire.

The warship weapons rapidly approached with a force that looked as though it could blow up the atmosphere to buy time, however, in front of Kuwaibel all those were stopped by a barrier of light and couldn’t reach his main body. The barrier rippled, and a beat later the cannonballs and bullets were annihilated. The expression of the attacking battleship’s captain paled seeing the figure of Kuwaibel that was staying unmoving calmly.

And then, following his self-defense instinct, he was about to give out instruction for further fuel supply to reinforce the barrier to maximum strength at the same time with the main cannon’s charging……

――KUWAAAAAAN-

「-, captain! Dragon core energy’s output is declining-. The barrier’s strength is lowering!」

「Main cannon’s charging rate is reduced-. It will take two minutes until full charge-」

「This is fuel bunker! The dragons are enveloped with strange light! Blade or bullet doesn’t work-. Just what in the

world is happening!?

The loud howl of the monarch dragon and reports that made one wanted to run from reality struck the ears.

Monarch dragon Kuwaibel didn’t have transforming power like Tio. Therefore, he couldn’t make the feeble dragons to rebirth into gallant dragons.

But, he too, beyond doubt, was a king of dragons. That power similarly existed to protect. The silver light was the proof of divine protection bestowed by the monarch dragon. Under Kuwaibel’s sky, laying hand toward the people he decided to protect became a herculean task.

Also, a monarch dragon was able to grant power to other dragons was because they were able to interfere with dragon core. That was to say a monarch dragon was also able to interfere to a certain degree at things that were using the energy of dragon core.

Because all the battleship of the divine country was using dragon core energy, they were unable to escape from the power of a monarch dragon. Of course, a monarch dragon couldn’t completely nullify processed energy, even so, it was possible to dampen the output in considerable ratio. At the very least, now the conventional weapon of Avenst side could go through.

Everyone of the dragon kingdom. My name is Roze Phiris Avenst. The queen of dragon kingdom Avenst. He is monarch dragon Kuwaibel. ……You have done well enduring the harsh time for long. Right now, we will take back everything!

The proclamation resounded loudly in the battlefield.

The liberated dragons flew around in the sky, the light enveloping the defense fleet who boasted of being an impregnable fortress was obviously weakened in a glance.

And then, the howl of monarch dragon thundered.

A beat.

——WAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA-

Tremendous joyful cheers rose from everywhere in the city.

Roze made a little smile hearing the great cheer enveloping the city. She patted Kuwaibel’s back with a gentle hand, and then she changed completely. She made a war proclamation with an expression that possessed both dignity and dominating aura. (TN: A bit of trivia, this dominating aura I sometimes used, in the raw, it was written as ‘haki’, yeah like that one in One Piece)

「Informing the people of Qwailent. Your king’s life already scattered in the sky. The fleets, including flagship Durgrant, won’t return back.」

Roze was convinced. That there was no way for the king of usurpation to survive that battlefield where their friend, a legendary existence was fighting.

Therefore, the words that were announced clearly without mumble possessed the weight of truth, giving a severe blow to the defense fleet and the divine people on the surface whether they wanted it or not. ‘What kind of joke is that, saying that their unrivaled king and his strongest battle strength fell in the sky?’ Everyone turned into denial for the moment in their mind.

But, if their king was safe……then why were these Avenst's pirate bunches here? Why, even though they had slipped until this deep, there wasn't even a single ship from the main fleets that returned……

The reality before their eyes coldly struck their disbelieving heart.

「Surrender under the law of the dragon kingdom Avenst. If you put down your weapon now, then I'll be merciful and spare your life. What we really ought to fight is in the future. The strength of even just one person more is needed for the greatest battle of fixing this broken world. If there is even just a little bit of heart that is thinking of the future inside your heart, then surrender.」

Roze's proclamation was surely something that would be called naïve from here on. But, if they stole back because they were stolen from, clashing against hatred with hatred, and they wouldn't stop until the enemy was ruined, then it would be no different with the king of pillage.

She had decided to become the king of soldiers. She was determined to build a future.

That was why……

「……Don't believe her-. His Majesty being dead is just nonsense! It's impossible for the supreme ruler of the sky to fall! Activate Synthesizer maximum power! All ships, take the head of that pirate!」

A terrible sound wave assaulted Kuwaibel. The evil sound that disturbed dragon core energy and remarkably inhibited the strength of this world's dragon species——that was the reply of the defense fleet toward Roze's words.

「Kuwaaa-」

「-, Kuwaibel!」

For a moment, Kuwaibel looked like he lost his floating power and his altitude jerked down. Although he was a monarch dragon, it didn’t change that he was a dragon of this world, he was unable to avoid the fang of Synthesizer. This was the biggest reason why once the monarch dragons and dragons couldn’t win against the human fleet.

The faces of the dragon kingdom people turned pale seeing that. The captains of the defense fleet made a mocking smile.

「……It’s fine; it’s fine Ku-chan. You are strong. More than anyone in this world. Far more than even the monarch dragons in the past. I, everyone, believe so. ――」

Roze who was riding on the back of Kuwaibel who was desperately creating floating power even while writhing in pain brought her body close as though to embrace him and then took a deep breath.

And then, she played an old song that anyone of the dragon kingdom would know. It was the song of Kuwaibel’s bond with his partner that had been sung at his all the time since he was born as a lullaby.

Kuwaibel’s silver light that was weakening due to Synthesizer recovered its radiance a bit. Floating power was produced properly, and he hovered without wavering.

「……Thanks, partner.」

Kuwaibel’s words. Normally it was a power of mutual understanding that he seldom used.

There wasn’t any unique power in Roze’s song. The song was a normal song. Surely even the girl herself had no such intention. She only thought about if she could support her partner’s heart even just for a little with the familiar song. But, something came into effect. That gentle song was certainly protecting Kuwaibel from the attack of the atrocious sound wave.

Roze smiled. She couldn’t return any words because she was singing, but words were already unnecessary between the two of them.

Kuwaibel’s dragon eyes seized the defense battleship aiming its gun turrets at him, and they glinted sharply.

「Everyone. Let’s fight, together.」

Kuwaibel’s words spread like a ripple once more. Those words were certainly conveyed to all the soldiers of Avenst.

Kuwaibel flew out. He evaded the coming missiles to left and right or intercepted using countless light bullets. As long as Synthesizer was in effect, he couldn’t launch a breath that could sink down an enemy ship in one shot. But, it was a different story if it was from point-blank range.

Other defense battleships circled to both sides and aimed at Kuwaibel.

「I won’t let you-」

「This is the stage of Roze-sama and Kuwaibel-sama-. Begone nuisance!」

The captain of airship Rozeria, Cutter, and the captain of airship Averia, Oaks yelled altogether. They attached

themselves at Kuwaibel’s both flanks and exchanged shots in response to the defense battleships.

The enemy’s sky battlecraft squad attacked from above. Even if they couldn’t shot down Kuwaibel himself, the queen riding on his back was another story. If she was killed, then it could be imagined how Avenst side would crumble.

「I thought you guys would do that yeah. From Cranks 1 to all squads. Cranks squad will provide backup for Kuwaibel-sama! Shunt, Los, the two squads protect Avenst-. All the others hold back the remaining defense fleet!」

Bovid shot down two planes when he passed through them from above with only a few seconds of machine gun strafing, and then he further somersaulted with a maneuver that could only be called as abnormal and pointed his plane’s nose downward and really easily shot down two more planes.

As might be expected from the wingmen of the supreme commander, Cranks squad’s skill was at an inhuman level. Every single one of them was reliably bringing down enemy sky battlecraft with a reckless maneuver that was nothing short but abnormal. In addition, the black dragons were intercepting missiles and so on that were approaching Kuwaibel.

「Isn’t the Synthesizer working!? Shit-, main cannon status!?」

「Charging rate 70%!」

「Chih, so it won’t make it in time-. Then……change target-. To mother ship Avenst above!」

The captain of a defense battleship shuddered at the approaching Kuwaibel even through all the barrages. And then, the moment he knew that the main cannon’s charging wouldn’t make it, he changed the target at Avenst and fired the main cannon.

「Kuwa-」

‘I won’t let you-‘, As though to say that, Kuwaibel leaped at the line of fire.

At the same time, he fired a breath of light pillar.

The breath and the main cannon struggled against each other equally. The shockwave of the impact stirred the atmosphere and radiated intense heat wave. In that timing, the Synthesizer was cut off for a moment, and immediately after, it was fired in maximum strength. The sound wave attack with a rapid change of tempo causing Kuwaibel’s light pillar to weaken spontaneously.

「-!?」

The light pillar was overcome. The main cannon approached Kuwaibel. Normally he would dodge, but behind him was the mother ship Avenst. Therefore, Kuwaibel used his body as a shield. The fierce impact caused Kuwaibel to rise a soundless anguished voice from his mouth.

But, enduring that, he fired a breath once more.

The light pillar that ran on the sky was like a counter, it pierced the foundation of the main cannon and caused a great explosion.

「-, retreat in full speed while launch concentrated fire with all weapon!」

The angry voice of the defense fleet ship captain resounded, but faster than the order could be executed,

「Dam-――」

「GURYAAAAAAA-」

Kuwaibel’s blaze pierced the barrier and blew away the whole bridge.

――Defense fleet seven ships remained

Broken dragon scales were falling off from Kuwaibel’s chest. Blood was dripping down and while only slightly his flesh was carbonized.

But, without even paying attention to that, and also because time was too precious even for recovering, Kuwaibel decided his next target. He flapped his wings and drastically accelerated while confirming with a glance that the main cannon of airship Rozeria flying in parallel beside him was going to fire, and then he fired a light bullet at Rozeria.

The light bullet accurately hit Rozeria, but different of what would happen to an enemy, the bullet didn’t inflict damage, rather the radiance of the main cannon was strengthened by a level.

「That’s a present from Kuwaibel-sama-. If it misses, then there will be no forgiveness-」

Rozeria’s main cannon that was fired at the same time with Cutter’s scolding splendidly hit one defense battleship. Naturally, the defense barrier rippled and blocked the attack, but in the first place, the main cannon with amplified might directly hit the place with weakening output.

Without any way to completely defend, the barrier was smashed apart, and a large hole was opened in its flank while the ship tilted. There, light bullets attacked like gatling gun strafing to bring about destruction for sure this time. There was no way the defense battleship that was losing control had any way to endure, its bridge was pierced plenty, and the ship sank.

――Defense fleet six ships remained

The enemy was also desperate. Main cannon light from the defense fleet that turned into buckshot shape rushed Kuwaibel. The power dropped considerably, but it was suitable for a wide range of attack and holding back the target.

□KUWAaa-□

In order to protect the surrounding and the city behind, Kuwaibel created a huge barrier of aurora. It was in the middle of Synthesizer’s effect activation, so deploying a barrier of super large scale mercilessly shaved off Kuwaibel’s mental strength. Even the immense dragon core energy he stocked from the□Spring of True Dragon’s Tear□was decreasing at a phenomenal rate, like water gushing out from a leaky bucket.

There, a defense battleship that circled to the flank ignored the bombardment from Azeria and directed its main cannon at Kuwaibel. It looked like it was planning to shoot him down even if it had to go down together with him.

A slight unease emerged in Kuwaibel’s dragon eyes.

――♪

At that time, he heard a song.

It wasn’t the voice of Roze who was continuously singing in order to reduce the power of Synthesizer. It was the voice of a child who he had never heard before.

――♪

――♪

――♪

Singing voices were overlapping. There was the voice of an old age man, and there was also the voice of a young woman. Through the silver light, the singing voice of one person, and then one more person was rising――

「……Thank you.」

The words of thanks that Kuwaibel gave reached clearly. To the people of the dragon kingdom singing on the ground.

The song of the people that was dedicated to the king. Assemble, assemble, be added into the song of protection. It is not only able to protect, but when it was necessary their will to fight could be offered up. That was the pride that the people of the dragon kingdom Avenst held.

The main cannon of the defense battleship fired.

The light of death pushed on toward Kuwaibel who couldn’t move from maintaining the barrier.

But, Kuwaibel’s dragon eyes weren’t colored by unease anymore.

「It’s all right, partner.」

「I know, partner.」

Roze’s words, and Kuwaibel’s reply.

The flash of the main cannon directly hit Kuwaibel——right before that happened, it was swallowed inside the breath Kuwaible released. Like a river with the tide reversed, the light pillar swallowed the silver flash and went straight ahead, without stopping it pulverized the defense battleship.

——Defense fleet five ships remained

The main buckshot cannon ceased. When the barrier of light vanished as though melting into the air, there was the figure of Kuwaibel clad in meteor of extreme light.

-, barrier full pow——

The meteor drowned out the command of some captain. In the middle of the overflowing singing voice that resounded through the whole city, the extreme light of Kuwaibel who was displaying thorough strength smashed the barrier of defense fleet with just bullet strafing.

We are joining! Averia, target at two o’clock! Rozeria, target at nine o’clock! All sky battlecrafts, ram all the missiles you have at five o’clock target!

A directive came from Avenst’s captain Cline.

At the same time when Kuwaibel’s breath of pillar light shot at the defense battleship in front, airship Averia and Rozeria fired their main cannon at their respective target. In addition, the air battle squads of Bovid and co also fired all their last missiles from all planes.

……Impossible. We are, the chosen people——

Some captain of the defense fleet whispered. That was his last whisper in this world.

The light of the sun displayed a complete dawn. In the world that was filled with light, a gigantic flower bloomed. Decorated by flame blasts and thunderous roars, the flower of the blue sky displayed the curtain closing of a history.

On the ground, the people of dragon kingdom were staring dumbfounded at the flame blasts of five ships of defense fleet blossoming in full glory, a beat later a terrific cheer that sounded like it would shake the earth and split the sky was raised. And then, it was the people of the divine country who were watching dumbfounded at those people cheering and the defense fleet falling.

With one soldier dropping his weapon *clang* as the beginning, weapons were thrown down one after another. Even the people who weren’t soldiers realized the crumbling of their glory had strength leaving their waist and flopped down on the ground.

That was what displayed it clearly.

Yes, the sky divine country Qwailent that was created by the king of usurpation, right now, in this time, its history was put to an end.

At the sky above the city that was erupting with cheers, the airships and sky battlecrafts with mother ship Avenst in the lead were approaching Kuwaibel who was hovering calmly with Roze riding on his back.

「Your majesty, Kuwaibel-sama. That was a splendid fight. I can say that it was truly a victory that will remain in history.」

Bovid in a tattered sky battlecraft was using the plane's vertical takeoff function to somehow hover beside the two was giving them his honest praise.

Kuwaibel and Roze instantly opened their eyes and looked at each other's face……

「Puh. Bovid using honorific language……」

「It, it doesn't suit you……」

「Youu braats」

The two burst into laughter at the speech and gesture that didn't suit the sky battlecraft squads supreme commander who was normally accustomed with pirate manner. Sharp words like「You reap what you sow」, or「Indeed that really doesn't suit you」, or「Was the battle too extreme it finally got into your head?」came from the radio. Bovid had no ally.

Bovid's expression turned completely sulky, but there was a smile that couldn't be hidden on his lips. It seemed that sentiment was also shared by other people who were talking to Roze and Kuwaibel through the radio, even while frivolously talking there was a joy that was impossible to hide seeping into their voices.

「Everyone, really, you all really had fought well. Our dearest wish has come true. The path to the future is cut open. Thank you, really thank you. You all followed someone like me along until here. Really……」

Roze who was sitting still in a girl posture on Kuwaibel’s back with a distorted face looked like she was going to burst out crying anytime. There were even people who were already crying in sympathy.

That was just how long they had continued to fight the long, painful fight until now. Therefore, this moment today was more than enough to make an emotion that was beyond description to well up inside them.

Inside the world that shook from the joyful cheers, the people of Avenst closed their eyes as though to immerse in the overflowing emotion. That was to digest their happiness, and at the same time, it was also to remember their war buddies who had gone ahead of them.

「……Now, everyone. There is a mountain of things to do. You can slowly immerse in your sentiment later, let’s do what we ought to do right now. Also someone, please take out Olga from the hold in the palace that Kuwaibel opened. There is no danger to her life with Kuwaibel’s power, but she is wounded really seriously.」

「……Roger. Your majesty, what about the others outside Olga?」

「……. Jean and others……their life or death is unknown. Please make the squad send to suppress the palace to carry out search and rescue at the same time.」

「Acknowledged.」

Everyone in that place guessed it from Roze’s instruction and expression. There weren’t many words exchanged, with Cline’s instruction the ground suppression squad headed toward the palace using a small boat from mothership Avenst.

After seeing that off, Roze and others looked down to the ground. There were the figures of the people waving their hands while shedding tears.

「Your majesty. Your proclamation.」

Roze nodded strongly at Bovid’s words.

She urged Kuwaibel, and they calmly exposed their appearance while flying above the city. It was for the purpose of notifying the return of the king and declared the revival of dragon kingdom Avenst above the palace.

Behind them, the mother ship Avenst, airship Rozeria, Averia, and then the sky battlecraft squads followed in a march.

The people’s cheers were increasingly heightening at the miraculous sight, and the liberated dragons danced above the sky as though in blessing.

People were gathering in front of the palace without end. It seemed that the soldiers also didn’t have any will to fight already, so they were under the watch of the ground suppression squad with both their hands raised up.

Above there, Kuwaibel who was shining silver reflecting the light of the sun even with wounds all over his body was hovering still, on his back Roze was standing.

Even while soaked in blood and wound that displayed the fierce battle, her figure that held her head high was beautiful. For the people who knew about the old fairy-tale, her figure was truly that of the「legendary dragon knight」itself.

Comfortably, while pouring gaze of affection at the people who were directing bright eyes at her, Roze took a deep breath. So that her voice would reach clearly, the silver light from her partner the monarch dragon showered down.

「Everyone. The beloved people of the dragon kingdom Avenst. Once more, I'll introdu――」

Roze was going to introduce her name once again to make clear who she was――

At that time,

「The bloodline of the king……so it still survives……」

A voice encroached the world.

Right after that, the beautiful world that was illuminated brilliantly by the light of the sun was being covered by a muddy black cloud that was suddenly generated. Like a drop of ink splattered on a white paper, the dark clouds overwrote the world. Sandwiched between the sea of clouds that rained down black rain below and the dark clouds generated further above, Roze and others fell into a hallucination as though they were imprisoned at the interstice of the world.

「Wha, what?」

「Just now……」

Bovid and others yelled「Your majesty-」in vigilance while rushing toward her. During that time Roze looked up at the sky dumbfounded, and Kuwaibel looked at the surrounding with shaken eyes in disbelief.

A flash of lightning began to run through the sky. The thundering sounds gave the people fright whether they wanted it or not. In the gloomy world, horrifying words that sounded like boiled down essence of negative emotion resounded.

【Suffer――】

【Gasp, writhe――】

【Scream】

【Lament――】

【Lose everything――】

【Run screaming――】

【Fear】

Those were words of curse. Those words cursed the world, human, the brethren, all living things in this world. It echoed, overlapping in many layers, as though several hundred or thousand existences were reciting in a resounding voice.

【Die】

It was black and encroached slimily. The people’s hearts that were filled with hope were being dyed with terror and despair.

That fallen person only wished for one thing.

【――At the end of suffering】

The world shook.

□Be destroyed□

Squall mixed with thundering lightning and black mist blew violently. A huge tornado was generated from the dark clouds that locked the sky, from inside it, “that” showed its figure.

□……Evil dragon……Helmut□

□……□

Roze murmured with a trembling voice.

While everyone was ruled by despair and terror, there was only one dragon who was staring straight at that person. (TN: While I use person here, it still refers to Helmut)

Those eyes conceived inside them sadness, the happiness of finally being able to meet, and then an unshakeable resolve.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Today, or from a few days ago the published version of Arifureta volume 5 is in the middle of a sale.

At the same time, the comic version volume 1 is also on sale.

I uploaded the detail in my activity report, so if it please you please try to take a look.

For everyone the villager of a certain loner village, and also for everyone of a certain Casanova village, it will make me happy if this can be a good thing for killing time for the end-of-year.

Today, if possible, I’ll upload the Christmas special after story by 6 P.M if possible.

Perhaps, surely……

Also about the update next week……

Please rest assured. I won’t suffer the brats! I’ll upload an hour before the starting time!

After all, I need to prepare things like the meal or the drink or the snack, I got to prepare them all flawlessly.

Well then all of you Narou people, have a good year!

Arifureta Chapter 244

Christmas Special After Story The Small Santa-san of Nagumo Family

AN: This is not what you think.

I only planned for around 5000 characters.

But when I noticed it already passed 9 o'clock, when I noticed it already went 10000 characters.

This is holy night after all, it's not strange that a mysterious thing will happen.

……

Also warning.

I updated Tio arc today before this chapter.

For those who haven't read it, please read it too without fail.

At the time of year that was already beyond the middle of December where snow was sparsely falling from the cloudy sky. In order to resist the severe cold, while the kotatsu and heater were raising humming sound, the people of Nagumo family were eating with relish a warm specially made stew

(the ingredient was an UMA lurking at an unexplored region of earth).

「It will be Christmas soon huh……. Myuu, what kind of Chrstimas present you want this year?」

「Myu?」

The lovely beloved daughter asked Hajime with her cheeks stuffed with the meat that came from UMA but was terribly delicious, looking like a squirrel.

Myuu hurriedly swallowed the meat of something *mokyu mokyu* and then she showed a thinking gesture for a bit before answering with a wide smile.

「Pile bunker!」

「……」

Papa stiffened spontaneously still with a smiling face. Indeed, he gave her present of numerous artifact weapons at the amusement park last year, but as expected Hajime was troubled of how to answer when he was getting coaxed for a demolition weapon with this kind of pure smiling face without any cloudiness.

Myuu who seemed to treat Hajime’s speechlessness as refusal got dejected. And then, with an upturned gaze and reserved tone, she coaxed for another thing as though to observe at Hajime’s reaction.

「It’s fine, even if it’s just Hyperion.」

The destructive power was raised. Just what in the world was reserved from this kid…….

Sumire and Shuu were desperately enduring their laugh with trembling shoulders at the dialogue between Hajime and Myuu. Yue and Shia looked exasperated, and Tio looked admiring. Amidst that, Remia who was unable to just watch spoke justification in the place of her daughter.

"I'm sorry dear. Good grief this child, she is pleading for something outrageous again……. Regrettably, it looks like that she is influenced by the game she is recently playing."

"Game? A game that make you want pile bunker or sunlight convergence laser, just what kind of game that is?"

"It looks like a war game with the stage at the near future."

Hajime turned his gaze at Myuu with a question"Is that so?" in his eyes. Myuu made a gun shape with her fingers and then spoke words that seemed to be a signature phrase with a posed look.

"I'm gonna dye everything crimson yeah! Nano"

"I'm confiscating it right now. Tou-san, we are putting restricting in Myuu's PC! A strong one! Help me later!"

Surely the geography of somewhere would change the next day after a Hyperion was gifted. Hajime who was shuddering asked for cooperation in a hurry at Shuu.

But, Shuu in question was instigating"Hyuu-, Myuu-chan is so cool!"together with Sumire. And then, Myuu was also saying terrifying thing like"That's cruel papa! Myuu had finally obtained a nuclear nano! Even though I'm looking forward to use it in the next war!".

Hajime in his own way was responding"It's no good picking up something like that! Toss it away, far away!"for some

reason. Myuu puffed up her cheeks like balloon. It seemed she was dissatisfied.

Hajime felt that it appeared he was at disadvantage talking about Christmas present and for the time being he beat a tactical retreat. ……The demon king-sama who came to kill even a god right from the front was running away from an argument about present with his daughter.

‘Cough’ Hajime papa cleared his throat and diverted the topic.

「Aa~, come to think of it Myuu. What about the condition of Belfegoor and others? Are their transformation mechanism working normally?」

「Yep! It’s amazing nano! They went gashon-gashon, it’s totally cool nano! Also the other artifacts are just like Myuu want it nano! As expected from papa! Thank you nano!」

「I see. That’s great. But……there is nothing dangerous in there so I created them normally without particular care, in the end, what are you going to use them for?」

Hajime who breathed out in relieve at the successful topic change asked Myuu casually. It was about around a week ago, Myuu suddenly strongly begged him, she said she wanted the living golems to be installed with transformation mechanism and also several artifacts that felt like they could become necessary tool for a spy somewhere.

Recalling that, Hajime asked curiously after this late, but ahead of his gaze, his beloved daughter who he believed would surely answer him with a smile was……

「……My, Myuu will put them to use for a peaceful activity, nano.」

「……」

For some reason her gaze was swimming around and she returned a vague answer. The mouth of the little girl who was saying the desire to dye the world crimson just now, was speaking peaceful activity suspiciously. Hajime papa’s eyes naturally turned staring fixedly.

「……」

「……」

Hajime papa’s fixed eyes were staring fi~xedly. The gaze of the suspicious Myuu was swimming around even more.

Stare~. Fidget fidget. Stare~~. Twitch-, fidget fidget.

「……Well, I’m not going to forcefully ask though.」

「Nmyu」

After everything, Hajime had faith that Myuu wouldn’t use it for something stupid and he made a small wry smile before removing his pressing gaze. Myuu let out a relieved sigh while her cheeks loosened up limply at Hajime papa who gave her his trust. Hajime also smiled gently.

「……Really, what a similar parent and child.」

「Isn’t that right. Like their way to dodge the topic or the way they escape. Every year they are turning more similar.」

「Rather, doesn’t Goshujin-sama noticed? Before thinking about game, Myuu’s dangerous speech and action art mostly coming second hand from Goshujin-sama.」

「Ufufu. For Myuu, Hajime-san is also her idol after all.」

「Even so an elementary school student asking for pile bunker or laser cannon is still not normal though. As expected from my granddaughter!」

「That! My granddaughter is in different level compared to those other elementary school students.」

The whispering conversation of the wives and Nagumo spouses caused Hajime and Myuu to feel like running away and they concentrated at the stew pretending to not hear anything. That harmonious behavior of the parent and daughter made the dining table to be enveloped in laughter.

「……Putting aside the present, where is Myuu want to go at the Christmas day?」

Myuu began to be troubled「Uu~n」at Yue's question. Was it fine if they went to the same amusement park like last year? Or else, should they called her friends and papa's underlings(classmates) to party?

Myuu hummed 'un un' while wracking her head about what kind of Christmas should they have. Seeing her like that, Hajime suggested with a smile.

「Then, how about staying over somewhere at the Christmas Eve day? Like overseas, or another world.」

If Myuu wished it, then he would take her anywhere for sure. Hajime papa declared that full of vigor, but it seemed that today was a day where he would eat the counter of his daughter to the utmost.

「Ah, that's impossible nano.」

「? Impossible? It's not that you don't want it?」

「Nano. Myuu have a plan for the whole day in Christmas Eve.」

「You are going to go play with your friends ?」

Hajime asked while putting UMA meat into his mouth,

「It’s not playing nano.」

He stiffened. In the day of Christmas Eve, she wasn’t going to play with her friends, or spent time with family. However, she had a plan that wasn’t playing. What’s more it would take the whole day. *drip* A cold sweat trickled from Hajime papa’s forehead.

「Myuu. What’s your plan?」

Without even any leeway to feel doubt at Yue who was holding her laughter beside him for some reason, papa asked with a feeling of「Don’t tell me」, but

「……It, it’s a secret from papa nano.」

「What……the……」

clang Hajime dropped his spoon. His expression was in shock. Hajime papa couldn’t hide his shaken feeling at “the secret of his beloved daughter” that he had never met even once until now.

「Spe, speak honestly, Myuu. Surely in that plan of yours you are going to meet someone, and that someone is a girl right?」

「……Myuu will meet various people, so of course there is also man nano.」

It was a critical hit at Hajime’s mind. His beloved daughter said that she would meet a man at the Christmas Eve! What’s more, it wasn’t “boy” but “man”. Okay, finally it’s your turn after so long pile bunker. For the pervert lolicon bastard who dare to aim at the family’s daughter, a present of lovely scrap time!

Perhaps feeling the turbulent sign from Hajime who stood up wordlessly, Myuu gulped down her remaining stew and said 「Thanks for the food!」before she left the living room with fast pace *sutetete-*. The overly fast movement caused Hajime papa who was in the middle of feeling shaken unable to even call out at her.

But, just when he thought so, Myuu’s face popped out from the living room’s entrance. And then, she stared fi~~~xedly at Hajime and,

「Papa. If papa try to follow or investigate Myuu’s matter at the Christmas Eve……Myuu, won’t speak to papa anymore nano.」

「Gofuh!?」

Hajime’s knees collapsed. Without being able to even stop Myuu who rushed *sutetete-* once more to her room, he was crawling on all fours without even the slightest twitch. The damage was grave!

「A godslayer crushed with a sentence……fumu. Perhaps it’s only Myuu who art able to do something like this whether before or after.」

「Ahaha~. Hajime-san is weak against Myuu-chan even more than against Yue-san in a sense after all.」

Tio and Shia were giggling leisurely. Yue and others also nodded at them in agreement.

But, the next moment, Hajime stood up in a flash. And then, with an expression that gave uneasy and emaciated impression,

「Nagumo family meeting! The, the……the whatever many times of Nagumo family emergency family meeting will be hold! The topic is about the trashy scum bastard following about our daughter!」

Naturally, everyone was continuing their meal normally.

The day of Christmas Eve.

In the palace of another world Tortus, work was being done routinely without anything particular happening. The busy officials were running about or else they were dealing with paperwork bit by bit on their desk.

In a room of such palace――in the office of Hairihi kingdom’s king, a boyish king who still hadn’t really fit the atmosphere or the desk size yet was moving his pen with a fed up expression.

「Your majesty, will you take a rest soon?」

「Mu. No, I’ll do it a bit more. Elder sister is not here. If work is piling up during such time then it will be too shameful. Or rather, just how did elder sister finished this amount of work always in that kind of short time huh?」

「She was doing them normally you know? Only, it was done with astonishingly fast motion though.」

「……Since I was enthroned and also did my duty, now that I've recently get used with the work, I often think this but……elder sister is human right?」

「……Your majesty. You will be scolded by Liliana-sama you know?」

The warning voice from the troubled private secretary made Liliana's little brother, his majesty the current generation king of Hairihi kingdom――Randell to sigh deeply「Haa」, while thinking「Elder sister, won't he come back quickly I wonder」.

「If I remember correctly, she was invited for earth event called "Kurushimasu" right? She looked really merry when she was picked up directly by that guy.」(TN: Christmas in Japan is read Kurisumasu. Kurushimasu meant suffering.)

「Your majesty, it's "Christmas". Your pronunciation makes the supposedly joyful event to sound like a hell torture.」

Recalling his sister who was in high spirits since the morning thinking of that hateful son of a bitch, Randell let out a deep sigh. His first love was taken away by that person, but he didn't stop there, that man even bared his poisonous fang toward the sister that he respected. Randell swore「I'll punch you flying someday」. Inside his heart. He wouldn't say it out loud no matter what.

Randell's feeling became as though he had bitten something bitter, but suddenly, he recalled a certain character and he muttered to himself.

「……Is it no good, if I also go there?」

「It’s no good.」

He was cut down easily by the private secretary. Randell went「But you see」「However, still」acting fidgety and restless for some reason with an indecisive attitude. The private secretary who knew what was inside the heart of such boyish king held back from sighing while opening his mouth to say something in persuasion――

At that time,

「MERRY-!! CHRISTMAA――――SS!! NANO!!!」

「Hiih!? What’s going on!?」

Suddenly the office’s window was threw open loudly, from there a red shadow flew in like a bullet. Randell hugged himself with both hands like a girl while jumping to his feet. The private secretary also twitched from the sudden happening, yet he rushed forward to protect his majesty from the intruder.

「Wait, Myuu-sama!?」

「Whaaat!? Myuu you say!?」

Shocked voices were raised when they saw the true identity of the intruder. Randell who was shaking in his boots behind the desk also threw his gaze at Myuu who was quickly smoothing over her appearance.

「No, I’m not Myuu. I’m Santa Claus!」

Myuu who was wearing red and white clothes was indeed wearing the appearance of Santa. Her lower body was clad in mini skirt and short boots, it was a cute clothes that were arranged with frills and fluffy pompon all over. Her head was

wearing a droopy Santa hat and she was carrying a large bag on her shoulder. All those factors certainly made her a Santa-san.

Myuu twirled with a beautiful rotation as though to show off her exclusive Santa cosplay created by her family for her. She stood sideways and winked with peace sign over her eye. It was the signature pose like a certain idol somewhere! *Sparkle-☆* Such sound effect could be hallucinated from that!

「Cu, cute……」

The male Randell. It seemed he got one hit KO-ed from the *Sparkle-☆*. He was staring at Myuu in intoxication.

The private secretary who sensed somehow that the king seemed to be of no use was wondering 'Just what is the security of the palace doing……. No, this is the daughter of his majesty the demon king, anything is possible isn't it, haha.' He whispered so inside his heart while asking with a voice that was oozing out tiredness.

「Myuu-sama, just what are you doing? What about the plan of enjoying "Christmas" with Liliana-sama?」

「I'm not Myuu nano. I'm santa nano. Santa will distribute present in Christmas nano.」

「Present, is it?」

The secretary tilted his head. With a glance at Randell who was still in a daze, Myuu fished around inside her white bag. Like that what she took out was two beautifully wrapped bundles.

「Merry~ Christmas! These are presents from Santa to the two good children nano!」

「My, Myuu is giving me present? Uu, Myuu, someone like you is really……」

「Oh, for me too? Fufu, this is truly a happy surprise.」

The eyes of the secretary who received the present turned round while also accepting it happily. He guessed that it seemed Myuu was going around distributing present in accordance with this event called Christmas. It felt like his everyday tiredness was blown away, and he was making a really warm expression.

On the other hand, Randell was whispering things like「Myuu is giving me present. To purposefully go as far as crossing world for my sake……. Hah, don't tell me, Myuu is actually having feeling for me!?」.

「Well then you two, work hard nano! Santa will give present to other people too nano!」

「Yes, Myuu-sama. Thank you very much for the present.」

While the private secretary and Myuu were exchanging harmonious words of parting, Randell whose expression was feverishly delirious returned to his senses suddenly.

「Wa, wait a second, Myuu!」

「?」

「Tha, that's. It's. ……If you like, won't you spend today with me? I'll personally prepare a return gift for you!」

The secretary gave a straight-man retort through his gaze 「You, read the atmosphere. Rather, she just said that she is giving present to other people too」. The young king didn’t even pay attention to his private secretary’s expression and was desperate to stop Myuu from leaving.

Randell kept prattling on and on while glancing repeatedly at Santa Myuu with blushing cheeks.

Just from this, it could be guessed that Randell whose first love was scattered that much was now falling into a difficult love once more. During the few times of his contact with Myuu when she came to play in the palace when brought along by that guy, Myuu who interacted with him friendlily different from other people of the same age around him, and also seeing how their age was relatively close caused him to fall for her so easily.

Myuu who was tilting her head at such Randell didn’t know about what was inside his heart, but she could guess that Randell was trying to make her stay and with a cheerful smile she――

She declared to Randell whose expression turned bright seeing her smile.

「Randell’s eyes are always indecent so no way.」

「!?」

Randell turned into stone. Myuu dealt additional blow at him still with a smile!

「Papa told me nano. Myuu must not get near that kind of man. That’s why Randell, don’t get too close to me nano!」

「Kahah」

The male Randell. Even after becoming a king he fell on his knees. Seeing his majesty who was on all fours while holding his chest, the private secretary sent him a look of sympathy. Myuu said「Bye bye nano~」while jumping out from the window.

Later on at the palace, the voices of the servants and soldiers who were happy with the surprise present from the cute Santa could be heard mixed with the crying voice of the young king who screamed「That bastard(demon king), I'll murder him somedayyyyyy-」in an outburst of anger.

whoosh- The sound of a sharp slash resounded, and a fiendish monster was crumbling in two.

「Fuu. Is this the last of them?」

The one who whispered was a young man wiping the sweat on his forehead with his hand——Amanogawa Kouki. After many twists and turns, he who had saved several other worlds was even now working hard like this to remove the threat to people as an adventurer.

「Kouki-san, great work.」

「We are finished too over here, Kouki.」

From inside the deep forest, the two who appeared pushing through the grasses were Kouki's party members, the former goddess-sama and former queen-sama of another world. These two were also female hunter who were currently competing for Kouki also after many twists and turns.

「Aa, thanks for your hard work you two. You two aren't injured right?」

「Everything's fine. The strength of a goddess is not so small that monsters of this level can possibly do anything.」

「Former goddess you mean? Also, certainly what is small isn't your strength but your breast there.」

「Aa? I'll turn you into cinders you know? Queen (lol).」

「Oh? Just try it if you actually can, no good goddess.」

Just like usual, Kouki was starting to take distance bit by bit while staring with eyes that looked like dead fish toward the former goddess and former queen at both his sides who were glaring from really close as though seeing each other's parent's killer.

But, at that time Kouki's presence detection detected an unknown existence approaching them with terrific speed.

(-, fast!?)

Kouki opened his mouth to warn the two at the same time when that fell from the sky.

What landed with an impact that shook the ground was,

「Re, reindeer?」

Kouki was spontaneously dumbfounded.

Yes, it was a reindeer. With bright red nose. However, it was super big with length that was almost three meter long.

The red nosed reindeer-san stared slightly at the dumbfounded three people, and then its mouth suddenly

fell open. Inside it there was a fiendish object that looked really familiar for Kouki……

「Why is it hereee!?」

Kouki yelled such thing while he wasted no time to hold the other two and evaded from the line of fire. It was at that moment, *dopan-* a bursting sound and flash that were also familiar surged out, blasting away an enemy approaching from behind Kouki and others that Kouki had also detected.

Kouki put down beside him the former queen-sama and former goddess-sama who were still dumbfounded and he stared at the mechanical death god reindeer-san while his cheeks were twitching. Thereupon,

「MERRY~~, CHRISTMASSS!」

「Myuu-chan……. So it’s you.」

Kouki hung his head down crestfallenly. Santa Myuu’s face peeked out all of sudden from the reindeer’s back, and with a hop she flew and twisted midair with a triple turn before landing beautifully.

「Why are you in this kind of place? That outfit……aah, today is Christmas huh.」

「Correct nano. For hero-san who has been a good child through this one year, there is a present from Santa nano!」

「Hahah, I see. ……A Santa who make an entrance by riding a grim reaper……as expected from Nagumo’s daughter.」

Toward Kouki who was muttering with a subdued air, Myuu returned a package while saying「Yes! Merry Christmas!」.

Myuu also handed over present to the former goddess and former queen-sama who were still dumbfounded.

「Thank you Myuu-chan. Can I look inside?」

「It's fine, but Myuu is really busy getting around the world nano. That's why, I'm leaving already nano.」

Myuu jumped on the slaughter reindeer-san――actually the inside was Belfegoor――and then she said「Bye hero-san! I wish you a good another world summoning next year too!」 while flying away.

「Don't give me that kind of ominous prayer!」

Kouki's shout ended in vain, the figure of the demonic reindeer-san that reached the speed of sound instantly was already gone.

Kouki let out a long sigh while he tried opening the wrapping of the small present carefully. Even after everything he said, he opened the wrapping while his cheeks were loosening that he was also given a Christmas present.

「Hm? This is……ring?」

What came out from the box were pair rings. On the small paper that was included inside,「They are engagement rings! Please give it to someone that you love!」was written with round characters.

Kouki got drenched with sweats from a bad feeling.

「Kouki-san, thank you very much. For you to prepare this ring of eternal oath, I'm really happy.」

「Kouki? Naturally, you will give it to me right? Right?」

Over both his shoulders, the former queen-sama and former goddess-sama were peering in smilingly wrapped in muddy black aura. Kouki was about to activate Ground Shrinker reflexively to take distance, but the two tightly grasped his shoulders simultaneously.

「Kouki-san-」

「Kouki!」

creak Unpleasant sound rang from Kouki’s both shoulders.

Kouki’s eyes turned into dead fish eyes once more while at the bottom of his heart he yelled at the small Santa who presented him with pair rings despite preparing presents for three people.

「YOU-, DEMON KING”S DAUGHTEERRRRRRRRRRRRRRR-」

After that, it went without saying that the thunderous sounds of the struggle for the pair rings resounded deep inside the forest. And then, it also went without saying how later Kouki went around bowing his head at every related place for the reckless destruction of nature.

At Britain in the bureau chief office of the national security bureau,

「Haa~~~」

Such dee~~p sigh was let out. The one whose eyebrows twitched in reaction to that was the person who was wholly

famed as a walking and clothed cool-headedness, Chief Sharon Magdanese.

「Haa~~~~~~~」

「……」

A sigh even deeper than before caused an irritating air inside the chief office. Vein was starting to emerge on Chief Magdanese's forehead. There, even more sigh assaulted.

「Depressing.」

「Hih!?」

Chief Magdanese who snapped threw a paper knife. The owner of sigh who immediately shook his head while raising a pathetic scream unconsciously——Allen saw the paper knife passed through right beside his forehead, without stopping the knife stabbed *pasun* on the wall behind him.

「Wai-, what are you doing, chief!」

「I said it already, it's depressing. Just what's with you since some time ago?」

Chief Magdanese sent a gaze that was even colder than the open air of winter at Allen who was the cause of the irritating atmosphere in the chief office with his deep sigh.

Allen twitched from such gaze, even so he spoke his reason.

「No, because, this situation makes me want to sigh. Chief, today is Christmas you know! Through the world now lovers are having a date, they are preparing and flirting in preparation for tomorrow, they are having their fill for that kind of embarrassingly happy event, yet when it come to

me, I’m doing work work work in this kind of place from morning until night. Tomorrow will be work too! Just what is the meaning of this!

Even if you say that, there are a lot of other staffs other than you who are also doing work.

That’s true! But, Paradis-san, she is normally having holiday giggling and making merry! Aby-san and others too, they are having embarrassingly happy event! You know, yesterday she already wore Santa hat while working! Just seeing that atmosphere of her that said I’m really looking forward for tomorrow!, my heart is already at the limit……

Be relieved. I put Paradis’s Santa hat into cutting machine right in front of her eyes yesterday.

Cruel-. No, not that, even if there is something like that but the emptiness inside me isn’t mitigated at all.

You don’t have a lover anyway so it’s pointless whatever you say. Just keep with your wild dream.

Cruel-. Uu, isn’t there a woman somewhere who will be kind to me……

Allen grieved. There a voice resounded.

Thinking that is the case, I came! Merry Christmas!

OoOOU!?

-

Allen reflexively pulled out a gun and rushed toward Magdanese, and Magdanese who held her breath. When

both of them turned toward the ceiling from where the voice came――

「Merry Christmas! Granny Sharon! Also Allen!」

「Myuu……」

「Myuu-chan!?」

The pane of the ceiling was taken off and there was the upside-down face of Myuu suddenly peeking out from there. Let’s say this in advance, the ceiling of the chief office wasn’t constructed with detachable pane. It was protected with steel plate twenty millimeter thick.

Actually, Magdanese and others accomplished having a meeting with demon king family with Lord Abyssgate’s introduction. Naturally, they also became acquaintance with Myuu. However, for some reason Myuu seemed to be pleased with Magdanese and since then she called her “Granny Sharon” intimately.

Although it was a wide world, the one who called the national security bureau chief who even terrorist would beg at for their life while crying as “granny” was surely only Myuu. It went without saying that not just Allen, all the bureau staffs accompanying them including Vanessa opened their eyes wide hearing that. The shock was so great that Myuu was talked as a legendary super little girl within the bureau even now.

thud Myuu landed after somersaulting midair like a cat which caused Magdanese and Allen to make a really speechless expression.

After「Berserk Case」which was the first case they solved with Lord Abyssgate, they went through many more cases

where there was quite a lot of chance for them to meet Myuu. Therefore, they only knew too well that Myuu wasn’t just a mere little girl.

But, for the specially strictly guarded chief office of the security bureau that should be impossible to even be infiltrated by the average agent to be so easily penetrated……

「Granny Sharon! Merry Christmas! For granny who is working really hard this year too, there is a present from Santa nano!」

「This naughty angel.」

「Chief!?」

Magdanese turned into a mere Granny Sharon. Chief office’s security? Security bureau’s honor? In front of the angel’s smile those were trivial matters.

Allen’s eyes opened wide seeing the warmly smiling Magdanese. Even now he felt like fainting.

When Magdanese tried opening the present, there was a simple necklace inside.

「See, about that, just by wearing it will make blood circulation better, and it will take off fatigue. It’s so Granny Sharon can be healthy all the time!」

「The words just now already make me able to fight for a hundred years more. Thank you, Myuu.」

「No, chief. That’s already just a monster――」

sukon- A fountain pen stabbed Allen’s forehead. Allen screamed「Noo-OOOOH」while flopping around with his hands pressing on his bleeding forehead. The pen was pretty much stopped by Allen between his bare hands before it could go through, so only the tip pierced in, but something painful was painful.

Myuu approached such teary eyed Allen with trotting steps and her small hand caressed Allen’s head.

「Are you an angel?」

「I’m Santa.」

Toward Allen who became even more teary eyed from being treated kindly, Myuu offered a present「Here, Allen. Merry Chris!」.

By the point of time he was called without any honorific by an elementary school student, it could be seen just in what level Allen’s position inside Myuu, but the Christmas present from a girl although a young one caused Allen’s tear duct to finally burst.

「Uu, even though I’ll absolutely make you happy if only you were born ten years faster」

「Sleep-talking when you are asleep, nano.」

The ears of Allen who was in the middle of feeling moved beautifully ignored the stinging words.

Floods of tears were flowing from Allen while he opened the thin sealed envelope. It felt complicated to call the item a present when it was something that only looked like a letter, but for the current Allen it was something irrelevant.

And then, while he was reading the letter inside the envelope, tears were starting to flow out even more like a waterfall from Allen.

「Thi, this is, real? It’s not a prank, or a fake for surprise?」

「Yep. Myuu was only entrusted with the letter. What’s left depend on Allen nano.」

「Hi, hi, hi――」

「Hi?」

Magdanese directed a disgusted gaze at Allen who was suddenly starting to repeat「hi」as though he was convulsing, but the moment she quietly evacuated Myuu away, Allen yelled「Hyaho――――――――ii!!」while jumping up.

Without pausing he then got so high spirited it made anyone wonder if he was going to ascend to heaven soon while hopping around inside the office.

「Myuu. What is that letter?」

「It’s from an onee-chan that is papa’s former classmate. Before when they were together just for a bit at the case before this, she felt interested at Allen she said.」

「……That’s, really……what an owner of rare taste that girl must be.」

A present for Allen. That was a letter that had the writing of a contact number of a girl of a certain group that was summoned to another world. The girl who previously got a bit involved with a case that dragged in Lord Abyssgate had the opportunity to act together with Allen for a short while.

The middle aged agent who lamented his inability to get a lover despite actually being a brilliant agent was greatly joyful that the spring finally came for him too.

「Ah, right. There is one more present for Granny Sharon nano.」

「My, what is it I wonder?」

Magdanese tilted her head. Myuu smiled cheerfully at her and handed over a piece of memo paper. Magdanese accepted it and saw that there was only an address written there and his head tilted further.

「Myuu, this is?」

「You see, that’s the address of the building where a group of half dead terrorist-san is locked in nano!」

「Eh?」

「Yes?」

Magdanese’s eyes spontaneously turned into dot. And then, Allen also stopped his joyful dance.

Myuu shouldered his white bag and crossed over the room until right below the opened hole.

「See, these terrorists-san, looks like they planned to make a concert venue where famous people gathered for Christmas go boom nano. That’s why, Myuu destroyed them a bit nano. It will be terrible if granny cannot return home in Christmas day nano!」

「Ah, yes. Right, thank you?」

「……Myuu, chan」

Myuu said「Then, have a nice Christmas!」at Magdanese and Allen whose face was greatly convulsing, and then she leaped up to the ceiling. And then, at the next moment the opened hole in the ceiling became like before as though nothing had happened.

Inside the chief office where death silent had returned, Allen spoke something that was too late already.

「……Chief. I more or less read the mood and pretended to not notice but……」

「What?」

「Myuu-chan’s Santa clothes. Weren’t there strange spots on them? As though, there was red liquid that got splattered on them.」

「……Send personnel to this address. Quickly. Send ambulance too.」

「Yes ma’am. ……Since when the red of Santa became the color of blood spurt I wonder.」

「……Surely since the daughter of the demon king was born.」

There was slight smell of blood remaining. The Santa of Christmas was hungering for blood…….perhaps.

「Fuu. Somehow I delivered all the presents nano. Santa-san has it hard nano.」

Myuu who returned home using gate whispered so while stretching her body. The sun was already sinking, delicious smell was drifting from Nagumo house.

She had literally went around the world to deliver present for the people related to Nagumo family. Although it was possible to teleport using gate, it was a really hard work for Myuu who was still little.

But, this too was something necessary for her to do to not let the connection that her beloved papa and his underlings(friends) had formed to be severed. Because she didn't have great power like her family, because she was powerless that she had to be helped by someone else, what she could do was only to convey that she treasured, loved everyone.

And then, for the last, Myuu would do the greatest that she could do for her most important people.

Wanting to make it a surprise, she deceived her papa in various things but……. Yue-oneechan and others who knew about the circumstance surely had explained it to papa skillfully. Myuu believed in that and pulled herself together.

She opened the entrance's door. Right away, the sound of a demon king somewhere rushing near with loud footsteps as though in a rush entered her ear. 'Nyufu' A strange laugh leaked out. Myuu sucked in a deep breath following her overflowing emotion,

□I'm home & Merry Christmas! I'm bringing a lovely present yeah! Nano!□

It went without saying, a lovely present for Nagumo family was the large love of the small Santa.

AN: Wait a second, that person now is!? It turn into a feeling like that isn’t it.

I’m thinking that before long, I want to give more spotlight at that person.

Anyway, Merry~ Christmas.

It already passed nine o’clock, but I will be happy if I can make you readers enjoy it.

Also, thank you very much for those who reported ‘I bought the novel and comic you know’.

I’m really happy.

It became a good present for Christmas.

But, my drying machine was making a strange sound……

patapatapatapatapata, chuin- It sounded like that.

Super scary……

The next update will be in New Year’s Eve!

I’ll rest at 30th so surely it will be fine!

Arifureta Chapter 245

Arifureta After II Oh No, I Made a Child……

AN: I have no excuse.

You see, Shirakome prioritized Ame Talk. (TN: A variety show in Japan)

And then see, today I prioritized babying the brats.

Conclusion->I couldn’t write.

And so, it will continue for just one more chapter.

Evil dragon Helmut showed his appearance from the cloudy sky.

The length of his body easily surpassed a hundred meter, he had black scales that looked as though they absorbed the light and crimson vertical slit pupils with black corneas that looked like ink drop. He was surrounded by several tornados and despite the violently raging wind, black mist was welling up and coiling around him, making his silhouette unclear.

Just from him being there, anyone hallucinated as though the air had died. It was suffocating, the limbs were trembling and wouldn’t listen to what their owner was telling them,

and the consciousness was painted over as though a black in was flowing onto the canvas that was themselves.

(Aa, this is, hopeless……)

The clacking sound was ringing from her own teeth. Roze muttered inside her heart while being conscious of that in the corner of her mind.

Fallen——now she understood the meaning of that word.

That was certainly a “fallen existence”. Just from being there he harmed the living people, a person that chased away everything into destruction. This was an existence that had no other options except “annihilation”, beyond the concept of persuasion or fighting. It didn’t matter what kind of circumstance there was in the past.

That was truly “a foe that one couldn’t accept to live under the same sky”.

It wouldn’t be a battle where both sides put their own belief on the line. This foe merely had to be taken down no matter the cost, if one wished to stay alive in the future ahead of here.

But even with that understanding……

(There is no way……to win. Human’s karma…….it created such thing…….an existence……this huge……aa)

——They had no future

Roze’s heart was breaking. Even when she understood that this enemy had to be defeated, she couldn’t see the future. The existence before her eyes, the endlessly deep hatred,

despair, and then the powerful might she felt swallowed her……

「GURYAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA-!!!!!」

「-」

A howl thundered. A gallant war cry overflowing with dominating aura, as though to blow away the dark clouds. It was enough to blow away the terror eroding the people. At the same time, silver light was covering the city like an aurora.

There was hope right here. Nobody would forsake it.

The world that was almost dyed black recovered its light as though there was a torch illuminating it. People were liberated from the wedge of terror and they looked up to the sky. Even without words, the king’s roar conveyed that will.

「Kuwai, bel……」

「Partner, stand tall. We are, a king.」

The「Spring of True Dragon’s Tear」had no power to quicken mental growth. Even with his body grown up, his heart was still immature. But, Kuwaibel was a king. Even though he was young, but he was indeed a king that protected and guided the people.

Surely he was feeling the immense power of the enemy. Roze could feel his faint trembling. But, his gaze wasn’t averted even for an instant from the enemy that threatened the people.

Her partner’s words and that gallant figure made Roze recovered her senses in surprise.

「Kuwaibel. Can you defeat him?」

「I will. Without fail. Roze, you gather everyone. I cannot protect them in wide range.」

「……Got it. I'll evacuate even just one person more to the palace. If it's the palace then it will be able to form a powerful barrier too. You don't need to hold back.」

「I got it.」

With a gentle flap, the wind that was caused from the dragon wings caressed Roze's cheek. Roze too also gently caressed Kuwaibel's back. They had no need of more words than that.

Without hesitation Roze jumped down from Kuwaibel's back. Without delay a silver light wrapped Roze and lowered her down in front of the palace's front gate.

Roze and Kuwaibel turned their back at each other on the ground and in the sky. They quietly turned their gaze, the queen toward the people, and the monarch dragon toward the enemy.

「I will protect them-, partner!」

「I'll protect them-, partner!」

A beat of wings. A single roar. Monarch dragon Kuwaibel——moved out!

With his whole body clad in extreme light, he soared in a straight line into the black storm, toward the world's despair!

「Listen, the people of the kingdom! The people of Qwailent! Gather in the palace without any distinction of enemy or ally! Take each other's hand of the people beside you, gather under our protection!」

The people's consciousness was aroused by Roze's words. The aurora of extreme light covering the whole city was shaving much of Kuwaibel's strength. Roze could only protect the people while narrowing the range of the protection as much as possible so Kuwaibel could pour even just a bit more of his strength into fighting.

In the palace, naturally there was a barrier device that was installed. Even without Kuwaibel's power, it could protect the people from the black rain.

The people of the former dragon kingdom scolded their heart that flinched from terror and obeyed their queen's words. But, midway, they unintentionally stopped moving that there were words telling them to save their enemy the people of Qwailent inside Roze's words.

The apprehended people of Qwailent were also the same. They were looking at Roze with expression of disbelief.

Roze raised her voice once more to them who were like that.

「You understand right? For that existence, it doesn't care whether you are Avenst or Qwailent. Just by us being human, no, just by us being alive is enough to make that person bring destruction to us. This isn't the time for us fellow human to fight each other! We have to survive even by a single person more!」

A howl roared. Aurora flashed inside the world that was rampant with dark clouds. Striking light that painted out the sky like lightning.

Amidst the sound of fierce fighting resounding in the world, in the plaza in front of the place that felt like death silence had returned despite the sound, the words of Roze’s, dragon kingdom Avenst’s queen reverberated resolutely.

「For the future!」

zaa- Black rain poured on the aurora of extreme light. Under the light of protection protecting them……

「Your Majesty. The people working in the breeding farm——the people of Avenst, I don’t catch sight of them in the plaza. There is a large trailer in the eastern barrack. I’ll go pick them up if you permit me!」

The one who raised his voice saying that was a soldier of Qwailent. Because the dragons of the breeding farm received Kuwaibel’s protection, they could endure even being under the black rain. The weak and small people had also finished evacuating inside the aurora of extreme light.

Therefore, there was only a minimum barrier laid out at the breeding farm. The path toward the breeding farm was exposed to rain. Although the trailer was solidly made and could endure for a while even inside the black rain, naturally the mortal danger wasn’t small.

The expression of the Qwailent soldier was exactly the face of someone who was resolved for death. Agreeing with his words, one after another a part of Qwailent’s soldiers and people advised of the danger zone that was allocated to Avenst people and they asked for permission to rescue them.

Roze stared back at them and a beat later she strongly nodded.

「I’ll leave the detail to you. Take all life to here!」

-, Yes-

Receiving Roze’s gaze, the soldiers of Avenst released the binding of Qwailent soldiers even while making a slightly troubled smile. The soldiers who were staring dumbfounded at their hands that were released from binding gritted their teeth at the next moment and rushed away.

Cline, you are listening right? Please send out all the small ships you can possibly field and evacuate the people at the outer part vicinity without distinction of enemy or ally!

Understood. I have already throwing in the confiscated vehicles too for the rescue activity. What’s left is if we can activate the palace’s barrier……we can only wait for the report of the ground force we sent there……

……If only gramps is here

If Sabas was here, then surely he would be able to activate the palace’s barrier. The force entering inside the palace too might be seeking Qwailent soldiers’ cooperation right now. But……

People were gathering continuously toward the palace. People with weak limbs, injured and sick people too, they were supported by other people and desperately escaped here. But, as for the people who were in distanced place from the palace, in the end could they reached the place before the barrier Kuwaibel made vanished?

But, at that time, the aurora fiercely shook.

Kuwaibel-

There wasn’t any reply from Kuwaibel. Surely he didn’t even have the leeway for that anymore. The aurora was trembling

further and flickered.

Roze was feeling uneasy. And then, as though detecting that,

「-, the barrier is!?」

It wasn’t a yell because the barrier crumbled. It was the opposite. A silver barrier was deployed with the palace as the center as though to overlap the aurora. A report from Cline「This isn’t the suppression squad’s doing!」came to Roze. There was definitely someone in the palace who activated it, but it seemed it wasn’t the suppression squad.

Furthermore, several sky battlecrafts were flying up from the fleet’s mooring dock. Those planes were lining up from the outer part and they hovered in place. And then they circulated all their energy into barrier and formed an improvised rooftop. As expected they couldn’t cover the whole area, but they succeeded in creating a path until the palace.

That controlled action was obviously something that came from someone in Qwailent’s side giving out instruction.

「Just who in the world……」

「Fumu, it looks like the evacuation route at least made it in time.」

A voice reached the muttering Roze through the radio. It was a calm voice that possessed depth. The voice of an important person she was thoroughly familiar with. It was,

「Gramps!?」

「Yes, Roze-sama. This is gramps here.」

Yes, the one at the other side of the radio was Sabastian who should be left behind in a scene of nearly certain death!

「You are safe!?」

「Yes, somehow. The imperial guards who remained with me are also safe.」

The unbelievable story caused Roze to think ‘As expected, Gramps might be something other than human……’ and felt shudder more than happiness. As though guessing the emotional state of such Roze, Sabas replied back with voice that had wry smile mixed in.

「I’ll speak the detail later on slowly. Rather than that we have to hurry the evacuation now.」

「Tha, that’s right. Is the palace barrier and sky battlecrafts barrier gramps doing?」

「Yes. More accurately I captured a close aide of Qwailent’s king, so after talking a bit with him, he become a pawn――cough-, a cooperator that help us.」

「Lies-. This old man is a demon-. Doing such thing at me――za-~~~」

Right now, it felt like there was some kind of screaming voice from the other side……. Before Roze could ask back, the words of Sabas「Silas-kun, don’t make me do something that pained me so much」came and at the same time a short scream could be heard……

「Roze-sama. It was a splendid speech just now. It seems that Silas-kun is also inspired by your majesty’s words that he give us his full cooperation happily. Other than the barrier

control, I also obtained the weapon control just now. I’ll support Kuwaibel-sama right after this.」

「Ah, yes.」

Sabastian――he was just too excellent. Roze’s talk unconsciously became halting language.

But, at that time,

「GAAH!!!」

Terrible impact sound surged at the same time with a cry that was oozing with pain. Looking there, a tower that was a slight distance away from the palace was tilting greatly and cloud of dust was rising up from its foundation. The tilting of that tower became even more drastic and then it collapsed right away.

「Kuwaibel-」

Roze understood even without looking directly. That scream came from Kuwaibel. And then, it was also Kuwaibel who was blown away by an impact so great it could destroy a tower. There was also no voice that responded to Roze’s call.

「Something like hope, doesn’t exist.」

The answer that came instead was a voice that had no intonation as usual, yet it was boiling with negative emotion to the limit. When she turned her gaze there, behind the palace――right above the breeding farm was the figure of Helmut clad in black miasma.

Black miasma was spreading each time he beat his wings, coiling around like a vortex. The black dragon scales that

looked viscous didn’t reflect the slightest bit of light and swallowed all light without leaving any behind.

Helmut’s jaw was opened largely. The abnormal energy that was instantly focused in that mouth made Roze and others felt goosebumps on their back.

「There is no way I’ll let you!」

Cutting through the rising cloud of dust, a streak of extreme light stretched to the sky and pierced Helmut’s flank. The impact tilted Helmut’s body, and the next moment the fired Helmut’s breath attack grazed above the city’s upper part and passed through.

Right after that, it pierced the land at the city’s outer part that severely quaked along with a thunderous sound that sounded like scream. The vibration that rivaled a great earthquake caused the people who couldn’t keep standing to scream and tumbled down one after another. During that time Helmut’s breath wholly collapsed a part of the outer part that was directly hit.

Without even any time to shudder at that, Helmut turned his cloudy dragon eyes to below. Just with that, the miasma he was clad with crystallized as though it had substance——no, he was taking in the surrounding rain and crystallized it. It turned into twisted and warped spears and they became an excessively vicious squall that showered the ground.

In respond, Kuwaibel climbed to the sky and created a meteor shower. The swarm of light bullets met the spear of black rain that could be mistaken as black crystal and they neutralized each other, but the shooting that could even be thought as infinite was gradually making the interception not making it in time.

「Anti-air firearms control all free! Intercept them!」

Sabas's command caused the pillars and outer walls everywhere in the palace, and the garden and rooftop to let out anti-air weapons and they fired. The flare bombs that were included with the ration of one every dozens of shots colored the stormy sky. Those high caliber weapons splendidly destroyed the black rain spear that Kuwaibel didn't manage to deal with.

「All retainers-. Save our friends!」

Kuwaibel called out using the slight leeway that was created. The dragons who received the king's divine protection simultaneously scattered to the city. They were going to save their friends――the people who were late in evacuating.

「The resupply is finally finished. Sky battlecraft force, we are returning to the front line now!」

「Averia also can move!」

「Rozeria is all ok too-. We're reinforcing Kuwaibel-sama!」

Avenst's main force that had used up most of their ammo in the battle against the defense fleet now returned to the battlefield. The most elites among elites that Bovid personally picked up danced to the sky, Averia and Rozeria also had finished the minimum resupply and headed toward Helmut.

「This is Higgs squad. We are composed of planes loaded with Sythesizer. We are joining under the command of Avenst sky battlecraft force. Cooperation will be difficult, but give us instruction as you please!」

「This is battlecraft launching control room. The firearm control of the harbor is under control. Now reinforcing!」

The sky battlecraft force of Qwailent was flying toward the direction of Bovid and others. With the exception of the sky battlecraft squad that was deploying barrier, planes that could attack using sound wave were gathered up to form this improvised force. The person who seemed to be the leader was like a completely different person than a certain someone just a bit of time ago.

At the same time, the anti-air weapons that were installed at the military port area aimed their turret toward Helmut all at once.

――Without any distinction of enemy or ally, all people took each other's hand in order to live for tomorrow.

「……Insects.」

Helmut's voice rang for the first time. It was faint, but the voice was definitely filled with something like "displeasure".

「Perish.」

Helmut's breath was fired once more.

Kuwaibel flew up and cut in on the line of fire. He similarly fired his breath. Jet black and extreme light clashed above the palace, the barrier of the palace was fiercely rippling just from the after shock.

「Guh, uuguh」

Kuwaibel leaked out a pained voice. The extreme light was gradually getting pushed back. His strength was genuinely

that of a grown up dragon, but he wasn’t a match against Helmut.

「Synthesizer, activate!!」

「Averia, Rozeria, fire the main cannon at the same time!」

Qwailent’s sky battlecraft force evaded the black rain spear while emitting weakening sound wave at Helmut. At the same time, Averia and Rozeria fired their main cannon. Two streak of flashes joined Kuwaibel’s breath and assaulted Helmut like a trident.

But,

GOU-

Black miasma exploded. The whirling miasma bloated up so much it caused such vision, the sound wave and also the airship’s main cannon were blown away altogether. In addition, Helmut’s breath that drastically swelled up swallowed the extreme light.

「No way-, he is still holding back!?」

What Kuwaibel could do was immediately forming barrier with maximum power. The barrier of light formed in front of his body blocked the breath’s direct hit and it raised a scream. Kuwaibel couldn’t even hover and he was getting pushed toward the ground.

「Your back is wide open yeah-」

「Concentrated fire!」

Bovid and Sabas carried out attack like surging waves. Numerous missiles rushed Helmut.

But,

「Wha-. Goddamn it!」

「Controlling weather……it’s just like the legend.」

Countless tornados fell down from the sky. They spiraled and rolled up the flying missiles which were pulverized inside. Before the missiles could reach their target, all of them exploded inside the tornado and bloomed flowers of flame blast.

「Kuh. Ro, Roze-. Everyone-, get them away……from the palace-」

「Kuwaibel!?」

「The spring’s power-, is already-」

The monarch dragon power that he stocked up from the 「Spring of True Dragon’s Tear」ran out. The halting words of Kuwaibel conveyed his strength’s limit. The power he poured into the barrier surpassed the limit to defend Helmut’s breath. Kuwaibel’s strength was decreasing just like water flowing into a bucket that had a hole opened.

The aurora covering the city was already gone. He was genuinely just barely on his limit……

「Kuwaibel-sama! Please take this!」

The barrier would be smashed. Just when everyone thought that, the next moment a missile ran toward Kuwaibel. It was an unexpected attack from ally, however, Kuwaibel didn’t move. Rather, his eyes shined in happiness.

Roze was also feeling the same.

The reason was, because that voice,

「Jean-. You are safe!?」

「Yes, your majesty. The others are also safe. As expected, I thought I was dead but, that crimson light――no, let's put that aside for now. Rather than that, it's improvised, but we prepared missile warhead filled with the spring water. I estimated that the water will have effect just by splashing it on Kuwaibel-sama's body, am I mistaken!?」

Just what in the world happened……the wounds of Jean and others were obviously in the level that was beyond help, but they seemed to be alive. And not just that, they seemed to reach the spring that was still opened and created improvised missiles to transport the spring water.

It seemed the explosive of the missiles that were impacting one after another had been reduced, they broke before Kuwaibel's dragon scales and splashed him with the water inside. Kuwaibel gave his thanks「I'm fine, thank you!」.

As though to show that the water was definitely the real thing, the strength of the weakening Kuwaibel was restored. The barrier recovered its radiance and his body that was pushed back returned to a hovering state. And then, he fired a breath of extreme light with his restored strength. The breath blasted away several tornados and without stopping it hit Helmut.

Furthermore, Cranks squad led by Bovid slipped through the route where the tornados vanished using miraculous maneuver and they fired their missiles. All those hit the area around Helmut's face and scattered grand flame blast and shockwave.

「I don’t know anything about your despair. For me who was born after everything was over, I cannot even imagine it sufficiently. But, however-, because you are my sibling-. I only understand that I have to end you no matter what!」

Kuwaibel charged with his body clad in light.

The only monarch dragon in the world. He had a lot of people who were like family to him, but a sibling who was related to him by blood was only this fallen existence before his eyes. A howl that was like a scream surged that he was going to kill with his hand the older brother who he met for the first time since he was born.

Helmut’s muddy dragon eyes that looked like it wasn’t seeing anywhere caught Kuwaibel. There was no reply. Was his intelligence already unable to do that much? Or else had he abandoned it already as unnecessary?

Without caring of those questions, Kuwaibel performed a tackle of all his might toward his elder brother’s body using his body that was clad in extreme light.

The sound of impact between fellow dragons was played, the friction was fierce and sparks scattered.

Helmut’s body was distanced away from the palace. Without pause Kuwaibel tried to bite at Helmut’s neck.

――GAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!

A violent shockwave attacked Kuwaibel. It was just a howl. Yet despite so, the extreme light covering Kuwaibel’s body was blown away, Kuwaibel himself was also tasting an impact that paralyzed his whole body and he was blown away.

Kuwaibel formed countless light bullets and fired them while this time his claws lunged the moment their body passed each other.

「Gua!?」

The dragon claws didn’t even graze. The moment Kuwaibel swam in the air, Helmut’s tail scythed down on his face like a counter.

Even while rotating once midair, Kuwaibel fired light bullets randomly, but they were erased by black rain spears that Helmut fired in twice the number, several spears smashed up Kuwaibel’s dragon scales. The piercing black rain spears inflicted simple wound, and more than that they began to display the effect of causing necrosis to flesh.

Kuwaibel almost screamed spontaneously feeling the excessive pain, but he swallowed it and fired his breath. The radiance of extreme light was erased just with a shockwave from Helmut’s howl.

「Kuwaibel-sama-」

「Fire the main――」

The sky battlecraft force, airship Rozeria and Averia, the people handling the anti-air weapon on the ground, everyone of them tried to help Kuwaibel somehow but,

――GAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA-!!

The evil dragon howl surged once more. But, this time it had slightly different disposition. At the same time with the howl, the miasma Helmut was clad in became ripple that spread through the battlefield. The effect was dramatic.

□aa……□

□-□

What could be heard was such soundless screams. The sky battlecrafts were falling as though they were losing control. The movement of the airships was also turning simple and they showed no sign of firing their main cannon. The anti-air weapons on the ground also felt silent.

□Kuwa, ibel. The miasma is……enveloping, everyone-……□

Words from Roze barely reached Kuwaibel to inform him of what was happening.

Monarch dragon was an existence that bestowed divine protection to the people. Then, what would a fallen monarch dragon bestowed?

Despair. Terror. Nihility that robbed the will.

Silver light vanished, in exchange black miasma coiled around the people. Everyone fell on their knees powerlessly. As though they were begging forgiveness at evil dragon Helmut.

□Everyone-□

□Everything perish.□

Kuwaibel tried to grant them divine protection in hurry, but Helmut didn’t allow that. Countless black rain spears showered Kuwaibel’s body, his dragon scales were smashed and his flesh gouged.

What he could do was only somehow making the falling sky battlecraft force to have emergency landing. Naturally, his

divided concentration thinned down the defense of his own body and several spears jut out from his body.

Kuwaibel endured the scream that almost leaked out and he emitted extreme light from his whole body, erasing the spears.

Kuwaibel roared while charging forward. He swung his claws, but they were instantly dodged and he was struck down from overhead.

In that case, he pretended to tackle and just before they clashed he rolled, he then similarly unleashed a tail attack, but as expected it was easily dodged and his chest was tore apart with a diagonal claw slash.

He fired light bullets. The black rain spears doubled in number and attacked him.

He fired breath attack. It was returned back with double the might.

The attack from his claws and fangs, and also his tail, everything was overturned with counterattack.

His tackle with his body that was clad in extreme light wasn’t even dodged anymore as though to show the difference of their level.

□-……a……guru-……i□

His body was truly wounded all over.

Even though he had obtained the strength of grown up dragon, even if Helmut had lost his sanity, the full-fledged difference in experience was cornering Kuwaibel. There was no way a young dragon who was born a few years ago could

possibly match a veteran monarch dragon that had lived for a few hundred years.

It looked as though an adult was handling a child who was stubbornly charging ahead.

Helmut’s gaze was averted from Kuwaibel as though he lost interest. Ahead of his gaze was the palace. The people who were gathered there.

「Don’t-」

「Despair for the world. Serenity for the world without light.」

Helmut fired his breath.

Kuwaibel cut in on the line of fire with his torn up body.

「GAH, aAAAAAAAAAAAH!!」

A shriek that couldn’t be heard as scream or howl surged. The barrier was scattered away. Kuwaibel became the people’s shield using his body. He desperately resisted and somehow damped down the attack’s power, although he was unable to defend to the end and got blown away.

His back struck a corner of the palace and a part of the building collapsed. Buried under rubbles, the figure of Kuwaibel who was letting out repeated small breaths was atrocious even only seen from outside. There wasn’t anywhere unharmed on his chest, the spot was hideously burned so much that anyone would spontaneously want to avert their eyes. It was hard to search for a spot on his body that still had unharmed dragon scales.

「Kuwaibel-. Ku-chan!!」

Roze who rushed toward him even while enveloped in black miasma leaped toward Kuwaibel who was half-buried under the debris. She was desperately pulling down the debris.

Presence of death descended from the sky.

「Evil dragon, Helmut-」

Helmut opened his jaw as though something like Roze's yell wasn't even registered in his eyes. Light that would destroy everything was converging in the blink of eye.

gara- The sound of debris collapsing rang. At the same time extreme light surged out and formed many layers of barrier.

「Ku-chan!」

「I'm, fine, here. I'll, absolutely……protect」

The horrifying black that looked like compressed from miasma became a streak of light and surged. The barriers of extreme light that Kuwaibel deployed splendidly blocked that personification of death.

Blood spray burst so grandly it felt like *pshew* sound could be heard. Kuwaibel firmly stepped on the ground on all four and he desperately maintained his barrier. But the more he held on, the more the wounds all over his body were spurting out blood.

Roze was at a loss for words. She felt frustrated, she hated herself who was unable to do anything, she merely stayed close beside her partner.

「Pointless.」

Helmut’s cold voice could be heard.

「I, don’t think so-」

Several layers of barrier were blown away. Kuwaibel emitted extreme light from his whole body while roaring as though he was burning his soul.

「Despair.」

「A king, absolutely won’t despair-」

One more layer of barrier was smashed.

「Give up.」

「I won’t, break my promise-. I won’t, discard my mission-」

He had made a promise with his partner. He swore that he would become a king.

「Perish.」

「I’ll live. With my life on the line. We will――」

Finally the last barrier creaked. Cracks entered it with ominous sounds.

But, there was no color of resignation in Kuwaibel’s dragon eyes. He understood that at this rate he would die. There was also no other way left. However, his soul that he had already proclaimed out, that was the only thing that he couldn’t betray!

That was why, at the very least he would roar. Toward the world, toward the evil dragon that was created by human’s karma.

「I’ll surpass you, and advance to the future ahead of this-!!!!」

The barrier bro――

「That’s a wonderful howl. Blessing for that noble soul.」

He could hear a voice. A gentle voice that was warmth, that gave the impression of motherhood.

「Boy. Thou couldst not oppose an enemy of higher rank using strength. Look, avert it like this.」

「Eh? Aa……」

Kuwaibel was enveloped by jet black light. It wasn’t the black like Helmut’s muddiness. If it had to be said, it was a magnificent black that reminded one of the night sky. It didn’t hinder or paint over Kuwaibel’s silver light. In harmony it displayed a blessing with radiance of black silver.

Perhaps what happened next was its effect. Inside Kuwaibel’s brain, “the way to use strength” flowed in as image. Kuwaibel controlled his last barrier following the image, as though he was being guided.

Immediately, the barrier of light whirled fiercely, at the same time the barrier was angled. The whirling light scattered Helmut’s breath from the tip of the direct hit, and then it was further vigorously averted toward empty sky.

The breath paused. Helmut’s gaze ran toward unrelated direction as though he sensed the existence of an intruder.

「Come on, don’t be in a daze boy. This place art a battlefield. Breath attack!」

Fua!? Yes-

The figure couldn’t be seen, however that person’s words floated inside his brain. Kuwaibel who didn’t understand what was going on immediately obeyed. He released a breath of extreme light toward Helmut who was looking another way.

Now, fly up. Higher and higher, take Helmut’s above! Know that in an air battle, the one below art the one in disadvantage.

Kuwaibel flew up, Ignoring the pain all over his body. He only maintained his breath attack while flying up to far above.

Helmut dispelled the attack with a howl as though it was only an annoyance. And then, he fired a breath at Kuwaibel.

Be conscious of gravity. Grasp the wind caressing thy wings. If thou art a race that rule the sky, don’t fly with only thy power. The nature there art exactly our greatest ally.

Be conscious of gravity. Grasp the wind. The nature is exactly our ally.

Images were flowing in. He descended in a straight line toward the approaching breath while his wings moved slightly to grasp the wind and changed the flow. Just with that Kuwaibel’s body spiraled unbelievably and he dodged the breath as though it was skimming his back.

Kuwaibel descended beside the breath with fierce momentum as though his own body became a counter.

Read the future. How wouldst he react against thy speed, physique, and eye motion? Go toward that future.

「Read the future. My attack, where will it head to?」

What emerged on his brain was the replay of the happening from just now. An imagination of smooth evading motion overlapped with Helmut in the real world like an illusion. Kuwaibel matched his movement with the illusion Helmut that was starting to move, and he swung his claws ahead of that.

「-……」

The claws of Kuwaibel that passed through Helmut without decelerating were smeared with Helmut's broken scale and blood. When he changed his wings' angle just like his imagination, his direction changed drastically at the same time with an intense centrifugal force.

There, Helmut launched countless spears of black rain.

「Read the line of fire. It's also important to conduct oneself so there wouldst be no one to cover behind thy back. Accurately move with necessary amount, to the necessary place, at the necessary time. Charging forward, or taking role as shield in self-sacrifice, they art not something to be used recklessly.」

Kuwaibel took a sharp turn because he understood that Helmut would attack when he exposed an opening after dealing an attack. There was nothing behind Kuwaibel's back after he turned. If there wasn't any need to protect anything, he could easily endure things like the black rain spears with just several shots of light bullet.

The "way of fighting" was conveyed to him one after another. Completely different from his shoddy fighting before this when he would defend right from the front when he was attacked, or how he would go in a straight line when

attacking, his maneuver right now that was accompanied with “tactic” was increasing Helmut’s wound by one, and then one more.

In proportion with the number of wound, glimpses of irritation were starting to be faintly visible from Helmut.

Tornados were falling down as though to block Kuwaibel’s route, but he used even those whirling winds and nimbly danced in the sky. His flying skill that was gradually getting polished was finally turning into something that could even evade the black rain spears without him needing to use light bullet.

Helmut’s gaze went away from Kuwaibel and turned into the palace once more. That was because he knew that if he attacked there, then Kuwaibel would be forced to defend them.

「Boy, thou understand correct? Teach him what art the cost of taking off his eyes from the enemy in the battlefield.」

「Yes, yes-, Haha-ue!」

「o, Ou……oh no, this art the first time I’m called as mother……」

It seemed the voice was agitated, but Kuwaibel who reflexively called like that from his subconscious was already in concentrating state. He was focusing his light in his mouth, however, it was slightly different from before.

The breath of extreme light was fired *DOU-*. It shook the air. Helmut ignored the attack as though to say that it had been demonstrated that he wouldn’t be seriously damaged from that, he was about to release his breath toward the palace――

「——, ii!? Gaa!?」

The extreme light pierced Helmut’s chest. The breath was thin, it was compressed until the extreme limit, furthermore the breath was added with spiraling motion in order to increase its penetrating power. Without pause Kuwaibel moved his breath in a mowing motion.

Helmut avoided getting his body bisected because he immediately twisted his body, but the spot from his chest until his shoulder blade was wholly cut apart. One of his arms was dangling down limply, it was in a state where it was connected only by a bit of flesh and skin.

Helmut turned his gaze toward Kuwaibel with naked hatred,

「GURYAH!!」

「-」

He opened his eyes wide toward the jaw of Kuwaibel who had already approached until before his eyes. Kuwaibel was firing his piercing breath while approaching. Helmut whose stance was broken didn’t have the leisure to evade that, Kuwaibel’s jaw snapped at one of his wings.

Without pause Kuwaibel rolled midair and bit off the wing with a twist.

A shriek rang out from Helmut for sure this time. Kuwaibel used his rotating motion and launched a tail attack that was fully filled with centrifugal force. He struck down the shrieking Helmut to the ground.

「That attack art not bad. Now, boy. Hone thy mind keenly. The might of thy breath doesn’t rely only on energy. Possess

a strong heart. Unshakeable will, resolve, they art what make a dragon’s howl(breath) powerful!」

「Yes, Haha-ue. ……I’m finishing this, brother.」

Extreme light illuminated the world. He could imagine the way to knead power. Because he received the guidance from the warm existence.

The chest of Kuwaibel who was bending his body greatly backward was getting bigger, Helmut looked up to the sky from the ground. The dragon eyes that contained iron will crossed the dragon eyes of despair and hatred.

Right after that, a streak of etreme light pierced toward the ground, like the judgment of heaven. It fiercely shook the floating island and enveloped Helmut.

The world was illuminated by light of aurora.

The extreme light that pierced the floating island also opened a big hole in the sea of clouds and pierced toward the lower world.

And then……

The extreme light vanished into empty air. After that there was nothing remaining.

The body of Kuwaibel who was unsteadily flying powerlessly was gradually getting smaller while he returned toward Roze’s position.

「Ku-chan!」

「Rozeee」

By the time he returned at Roze’s position, Kuwaibel had completely returned to his former size. Roze hugged such Kuwaibel to her chest.

“You are amazing-. You are cool-. You are without a doubt, the greatest king! You are the pride of dragon kingdom.”

Roze rubbed her cheek on Kuwaibel while trickling tears. Kuwaibel also pressed his cheek fawningly. And then, they stared at each other while listening to the people who were rushing toward them while noisily raising joyful cheers. The grinned widely at each other.

“You did it, partner-”

“I did it, partner!”

Both of them were so wounded to the degree it was unthinkable that they were royalty. But, for the people who were rushing toward them, they were unmistakably king. The people of the dragon kingdom couldn’t help but shedding tears toward the one human and one dragon cuddling close at each other.

Roze and Kuwaibel turned toward the people together.

And then,

Flash surged.

It rushed toward the two, like the judgment from heaven.

“aa”

“Roze-”

Roze was dumbfounded. Kuwaibel could do nothing but calling her name. Death illuminated the two, the scythe of

the death god was swung down.

「To lose focus even though the dark cloud art not even clearing up……that’s a great reduction on thy point, boy.」

With extremely thick black flash overhead, when anyone realized, a beautiful woman wearing an outfit that was a blending of eastern and western――Tio Claus was there with one hand raised up.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

When I gave up making scene of quick peerlessness, for some reason Ku-chan came out to the front.

Shirakome’s plot generally isn’t breathing……

Now then, it has become the last day of this year.

Various thing happened through this year, but I think that it was mainly a fun year.

I believe that uploading in Narou, and then getting healed by the harmony that everyone of Narou people showed me are surely a big reason of that.

Really, thank you very much for this year.

Regarding the extra compilation of Arifureta, there are still characters that I want to write.

And so I’m thinking that next year too I want to continue and post Arifureta.

I’m thinking that next year too I’ll be able to have fun again with everyone of Narou people, so please take care of me.

My objective for next year is decidedly “to keep my words”.

Also, I’m thinking if only I can write some kind of new story…

I still don’t have any plot, but what I can say with certainty is, it will be a full throttle of Shirakome’s hobby similar like Arifureta, and above all it will surely be an opportunism story that Shirakome can enjoy.

If it please you, I’ll be happy if we can enjoy ourselves together again.

Well then all of you Narou people, have a good year.

I look forward to working with you again next year!

Tomorrow I will upload the last chapter of Tio arc. The subtitle will be “To the Morning of Falling Star”. I’m thinking that perhaps subtitle “The Day the Demon God was Born” will be fine too, but it felt like it will overlap with a certain Geass person so I altered it.

I won’t specify the time. Because I get the feeling it will be overlap of objective with early New Year.

But, even saying that, I’ll give advance notice of just this.

I’ll also upload the special New Year chapter. I haven’t think of anything yet though!

Arifureta Chapter 246

Arifureta After II In the Morning of Falling Star

AN: Happy new year.

There was a beautiful barrier of whirling jet black color on the hand that Tio lifted up. That barrier blocked the extremely thick flash falling from the sky.

Although the flash's power was scattered, but the attack that possessed the power that rivaled even Kuwaibel's breath just now was making cracks on the barrier right away, but the barrier shined instantly and it was restored as though nothing had happened to it. The barrier recovered using regeneration magic. In front of the foul play that was an age of god magic, the divine punishment attack couldn't pass.

「Tio-sama!」

「Haha-ue!」

「U, uumu. Boy, thou art calling me Haha-ue extremely naturally like that. A~u~, somehow it's really embarrassing~」

Tio-san fidgeted. For Kuwaibel who didn't know his mother, Tio's great existence and her gentle guidance was truly like

the mother inside his imagination. Therefore, he called her that from subconscious level, but Tio’s attitude caused him to realize how he was calling her after this late and he also began to fidget around similarly.

So far as it went, the flash of death that could easily scatter away the average existence was still pouring down even now but……it seemed that Serious-san was currently resting.

‘Oh Serious, come back!’ Even if such thing was said surely nothing would happen, but a change appeared at the same time when the flash vanished.

Miasma was gathering in the air where there was nothing.

The miasma that was gathering from every direction was gradually increasing in thickness and forming shape. Yes, it was forming dragon shape. The shape of Helmut!

「No way……」

「Does this mean……that Helmut is immortal?」

Roze and Kuwaibel were staring dumbfounded at Helmut who finished his revival inside the miasma.

「Uumu, as expected I don’t think that he is immortal. Most likely, that too art one of his technique created from his power’s true nature.」

Hearing Tio who was calmly analyzing the situation despite the despairing content of her talk caused the two to somehow recovered from their stupor.

And then, Kuwaibel tried to fly toward the「Spring of True Dragon’s Tear」impatiently. But, the cost of him forcing himself caused intense pain that attacked his whole body

and he almost fell from Roze’s arms. His wings convulsed and they were unable to move properly.

Tio smiled slightly seeing such Kuwaibel. Her hand reached out gently and she softly caressed Kuwaibel’s head.

「Thou hath do thy best with that young body. Just as Roze-done said, thou were indisputably cool. That’s why, rest already.」

「But……」

Kuwaibel’s gaze caught Helmut who was further taking in miasma from the surrounding. As a king, it was his duty to eradicate that, his gaze was appealing so.

「It’s not that I don’t understand thy feeling. But, at the very least this art too heavy of a burden for the current thou. Didst thou forget? In the first place it’s my wish to get rid of that.」

Indeed, there was such talk. To say the truth, after annihilating the main fleets, Tio and Hajime were watching the fight against Helmut. From really far away with their figure and presence hidden.

As fellow dragon, as someone who was placed in the same circumstances, Tio wished to perform the last rites for him who had fallen and was now called an evil dragon. But, that wasn’t something that Tio had to do by herself no matter what.

Just like how defeating the fleet was something that the black dragons ought to do, defeating Helmut as a king, or perhaps as a brother was originally something that Kuwaibel ought to do.

That was why, even after Hajime and Tio confirmed Helmut’s existence, the two of them only watched Kuwaibel who began to fight without interfering. The two of them didn’t even have grudge or hard feelings toward Helmut, they didn’t even feel hostile toward him. Originally they had no reason to fight.

But, that Kuwaibel had already passed his limit. It was too impossible for him to face Helmut who was already stepping one foot into the domain of concept. Because it was like challenging a natural disaster.

「We will, be given salvation?」

Roze asked.

「No. It’s not salvation. It’s just, that this world art make to go along with Goshujin-sama’s convenience.」

Tio answered like that.

Roze and Kuwaibel tilted their head. Behind the two of them, there were the figures of the people who although before this they were rushing while cheering, yet they witnessed the evil dragon’s revival and stiffened in fear.

The words of curses were resounding once more into their ears.

——Perish.

——Suffer, gasp, despair

——There is no worth in living

——To be born is evil

——Everything be destroyed

——Nothingness is the very best choice

——Renew the world

——Die for the sake of creation

「Die」The curse echoed directly inside the brain. It was repeated over and over, reverberating inside as though to imprint into the mind. People who fell on their knees while holding their head appeared one after another. The miasma that was spreading around Helmut who had completely recovered his form was enveloping the people.

Perhaps——could it be that Helmut was the incarnation of the judgment that this world itself handed down? The will of the world responded to the hatred and despair of Helmut to bring punishment to the humans who broke the harmony of the world.

「A lot of your species were killed.」

Roze and others were gasping in agony in front of Helmut that was like the very will of the world itself, amidst such situation, such words suddenly could be heard.

「Even though you believed that the past should be able to be regained, yet your species was reduced into livestock instead.」

It wasn't Helmut's voice. It was a human, a man's voice. Even though the voice's volume was like a whisper, somehow it entered into the ears smoothly without getting drowned out by other sounds.

「Your important siblings were murdered, your trust was trampled underfoot.」

The curse of death was resounding even now inside the head. The people’s agony didn’t lessen. But, the people’s gaze wandered around restlessly searching for that man’s voice. Even though those were only words, for some reason they ha a sense of presence that couldn’t be ignored.

「Leave behind everything and depart to the end of the world. Even though you decided that, what you witnessed was the sight of your violated species and family……」

‘Ah’, someone whispered. When they looked to the sky, there was a man standing in the air while spreading crimson ripples.

That figure clad in crimson aura, standing with composure while his hands were staying still inside his pockets, the people’s gaze was peeled off from Helmut and focused there. Helmut also turned his blank and muddy dragon eyes toward him——Hajime.

「There ain’t any salvation huh. It was just too much huh. If you saw that kind of sight, of course you won’t be able to stay sane. If it was me, I’m gonna curse the world for sure then.」

Hajime talked toward Helmut with a voice that conveyed emotion like sympathy and compassion, even gentleness could vaguely be felt from him.

Kuwaibel’s gaze was directed toward his fallen brother. Roze directed a pained and guilty expression toward Helmut. The people too, their expression distorted at the karma of mankind that was thrust before them.

The meaning of the words that Roze said, that they would fight the world for the sake of future, there was no doubt that in this time they strongly felt its meaning for real.

Even now Helmut was continuously taking in miasma, it was unclear whether he was listening or not at Hajime’s words. It was like a wordless accusation toward the whole world, that he absolutely wouldn’t forgive them.

Toward such Helmut, Hajime showed a gentle smile that even gave impression of kindness――

□Anyway, die.□

And fired the shell of Schlagen AA that he had secretly charged up!

The crimson flash blown up Helmut-san’s head with one shot!

Helmut-san, he worked hard regenerating his head!

There Agni Orkan dealt additional blow!

Total number of 1200 shots, heat of 3000 degree Celsius, pencil missiles where every single one possessed destructive power that equaled with anti-warship missile were rushing!

Helmut-san was in fully beaten up state with his regeneration only starting!

Flowers of crimson shockwaves and flame blasts were blooming profusely in the sky. All the people including Roze who were staring dumbfounded at that with their eyes half opened wide yelled with splendid synchronization.

□□□□□□Anyway, how did that turn into this-!?□□□□□□

The context of the beginning and end was fatally not meshing up. Or rather, what’s with the gentle expression? What did ‘anyway, die’ mean!?

All people acted the straight-man without distinction of ally or enemy.

Hajime beautifully ignored the retort of those people in the ground as though nothing happened, with narrowed eyes he thoroughly observed Helmut who was repeatedly regenerating and destroyed. He operated Agni Orkan with one hand, and while showering the will of the world with blows, his other hand was supporting his chin while whispering things like「Hmm hmm, I see. As I thought the energy's circulation is like that……」and so on.

――GAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!!

A fierce roar was released from Helmut. The roar became shockwave that blew away the missiles and attacked toward Hajime and others like a tsunami. The shockwave was far more powerful than what he showed when fighting Kuwaibel before this.

Anyway, Hajime defended using space isolation barrier of Cross Velts.

Helmut further attacked with his breath. The scale was truly immense. The power surpassed the attack that Kuwaibel did with all his might.

Anyway, it was defended by multiple layer of Cross Velts' space isolation barrier.

「……I, defended against that with my life on the line though」

「Ku, Ku-chan……」

Even though he was a dragon, but Ku-chan's eyes turned into dead fish eyes. Even though he was a dragon……

While everyone was leaking out strange voice「UBOoa」from their mouth seeing the barrier that easily blocked the attack that could easily destroy a country, the mouth of Hajime who was focused in observing Helmut was gradually distorting into a widee~~ grin.

It was as though a fun fun time would start soon. Like a kid that was given a toy right before his eyes.

「I can see it, the mechanism of this world's cycle. I grasp it already now, the true nature of dragon core energy. Now, I'll clear one of mankind's grand problem.」

The interest of Hajime who was whispering with small voice was already veered away from Helmut and moved toward another different something. Although, the one who sensed that was only Tio, so the other people who saw Hajime smiling like a demon in front of Helmut's breath were drawing back from him.

「Tio. Is it really okay that it's not you who do it?」

「Yes. I only wish that this pitiful existence art ended already. It's a bit hard for me because of the transformation into dragon god mode. I wouldst leave it to Goshujin-sama.」

Hajime who confirmed for the last time took out his gatling pile bunker. The electromagnetically accelerated super heavy giant stake couldn't hope to have its trajectory averted with just the like of a mere roar's shockwave.

Furthermore, the amount of stakes was like a barrage. Sure enough, just how much Helmut could dodge……

「As I thought, it's that kind of method huh. Evil dragon Helmut, I got it already you know? You aren't here right?」

In opposite with Hajime’s calm whisper, a commotion occurred on the ground. That was something that couldn’t be helped. After all, Helmut dispersed before he got hit by the attack.

That was exactly the true nature of Helmut’s power. It wasn’t a power to manipulate weather or to make black rain rained down.

It was the power to manipulate the negative energy itself with dragon core as the basis. That was exactly the true nature of power Helmut was awakened at the end of his despair and hatred. The negative energy running rampant in the broken world granted Helmut power that was almost nearly infinite. He could even condense negative energy and formed shape with it remotely from distant position.

「Just how that kind of existence can be defeated……」

Roze whispered in despair.

It was truly immortality. No matter what kind of attack it faced, it could easily recover by disintegrating the negative energy. No matter how much damage it received, the body here was just a temporary flesh.

It felt like Helmut was laughing.

Hajime-san laughed mo~~re.

「Yoo, do you have any time for smirking like that huh?」

Hajime raised one of his hands casually. He held out one finger and pointed to the sky.

Lured by that gesture, the people, and also Helmut looked up to the sky. What was there was naturally only the black

clouds created from condensed negative energy――

「……」

「Tha, that’s?」

Helmut stared intently at the dark clouds. Roze whispered in astonishment. The people were speechless with their eyes turned into dot.

A spot in the sky looked burning red. At first it was only faintly. But it was gradually getting bigger, dazzling……

GOU-

The dark cloud was blown away. The reason was one.

「You better remember this. If you are going to put on air giving a divine punishment, then do it like this.」

From the sky behind Hajime, that was falling diagonally with brilliant radiance. The thing that was freefalling from outside the stratosphere had only its trajectory corrected using gravity control……

――Meteor Impact

The evil dragon had the same definition like a natural disaster? Very well. Then, this side too would oppose using cataclysm.

The gigantic stone with a diameter that could reach fifty meter was blazing bright red and descended from the sky. It caused Helmut to stiffen for a moment.

Naturally, that moment was fatal. The meteor blasted away the whole energy body of Helmut and descended to the ground. It was fortunate that its flying trajectory that was

pulled by gravity was diagonal. It was totally unthinkable that the floating island would be safe if it got hit by that.

Without pause the meteorite’s shockwave blew away the sea of clouds in radial shape, and it dropped on the land at faraway.

The world quaked severely. Although the falling speed was adjusted to a certain degree which damped its strength, this was a fifty meter giant stone that fell from outside the stratosphere. That impact was impossible to measure, a giant cloud mushroom materialized. Because of that, the sea of clouds was getting further blown away in circle shape.

If there was anyone observing, surely they would witness the land turned inside up and undulated with many protrusions.

Helmut gathered miasma and revived.

No matter how out of mind the destructive power the attack possessed, as long as this world was filled with negative energy, he would be able to create energy body as many as he wanted. Yes, Helmut glared fiercely at Hajime as though declaring that but,

「I didn’t say that’s the end of it you know?」

The cloudy sky was lighting up with lights one after another. The brightly burning red specks were appearing everywhere in the cloudy sky!

Roze and others went pale. They were in a stupor at the phenomenon that was out of common sense, but in front of the calamity that would happen after this, blood left their face right away and they drew back.

——Demon King-style Harassment 108　“Wish Upon a Star”

Now everyone, let’s make a wish! Wish so that you can survive!

What was being done was simple. A random pounding of meteor impact. Meteors of various sizes at outside the stratosphere were thrown out, their trajectory and speed were adjusted using gravity control and they were turned into a suitable meteor shower. If a mistake was made then the planet would be totally broken with this lovely harassment!

The meteor shower that broke through the dark clouds blew away the dark clouds in the sky one after another with the shockwave they scattered in their wake.

The land below was plowed by incessant earthquakes and impacts, gigantic tsunami were generated on the seas.

Surely if this planet was seen from the space, sea of clouds that became riddled with holes and mushroom clouds rising up in succession could be seen at half the surface of the planet.

Helmut’s energy body was blown away and resurrected, then it was blown away again and resurrected again. There was no way it had any time to attack back or anything, even when it tried to call tornado from the dark clouds, those dark clouds were blown away and dispersed.

The negative energy was also blown away by the heat wave and shockwave, the miasma’s convergence was gradually turning unsteady.

「Is it soon?」

As though in respond to Hajime’s whisper, a faint howl was thundering. From very far distance, something that was

emitting a presence that would overshadow even Helmut’s energy body before this was approaching with absurd speed.

It was the appearance of the main body. The energy body couldn’t be formed, the sea of clouds and the dark clouds too were also blown away, and currently the planet itself was in the progress of being destroyed. Those facts caused the main body to finally come out. The pressure that could be felt even with the distance was so much it felt like it could possibly rival Tio’s black god dragon mode.

And so, Hajime responded with concentrated fire of meteor impact.

A part of the meteor shower that was diversely scattering toward all over the world tilted their route and flew toward the same direction.

——GURYAAAAAAAAA-!!

A roar thundered

——GAAAAAAAAA-!!

A howl resounded once more.

——GU, GURYAAAA-!!

A howl was radiating……

——aAAAAAAAA-!!

Was that, a howl?

Just how much distance he had advanced through with how much speed? Helmut’s real body that finally showed up clad in miasma——somehow it was really beaten up.

「Kill-, Kill-, Kill-」

「Ooh, aren’t you really emotional there」

Killing intent and hatred surged accompanied with physical pressure. A breath was fired from Helmut.

It was returned back by the variable chakram’s gate. A roar (?) ‘GYAAAAAAAAAH’ reverberated.

Perhaps the real body’s gathering rate was different with the energy body, because Helmut gathered negative energy directly from super wide range and healed his wounds. And then, attempting close range if his long range attack got returned, he tried to bite at Hajime with super acceleration from his hovering state.

And so, Hajime was,

「Oi oi, you sure? Isn’t there something important over there?」

After saying such thing, a part of the meteor shower changed direction again. Helmut didn’t care and approached to kill Hajime, but he instantly noticed that the flying giant rocks passed through overhead and they were flying toward the direction faraway behind him. He got taken aback suddenly and he changed his route rapidly.

Like that, when he fired his breath toward the giant rock, that giant rock was splendidly blasted into pieces midair. A killing intent incomparable with before was released.

Helmut who turned around focused on Hajime once more――and his eyes opened wide at the meteor shower that was changing route one after another.

「GAAAAAAAAAAAAAH」

An extra loud howl surged, Helmut concentrated on shooting down the meteor shower using his breath. Even so there was times when he didn’t make it in time. At that time he would perform tackle with his body to divert the meteor’s trajectory at any rate.

Seeing Helmut who seemed somewhat desperate,

「What’s the matter? Why aren’t you dodging? It’s like you are protecting something there. Right, for example, the place where your sibling’s dragon core is enshrined perhaps?」

Those words resounded extremely clearly. They smoothly entered into the people’s ears through the scream of the severely quaking world.

Like that, the people guessed. Why didn’t Helmut dodge the meteor shower? In the first place, even though the meteor shower was flying from far beyond, why did he get hit during the way until here until he got that beaten up?

There was one reason for that. Because behind Helmut――in the place where he was hiding, the dragon core of his sibling who was sacrificed to become the energy source of the mother ship Avenst before was enshrined there. Helmut wouldn’t allow the memento of his sibling to be lost because of the meteor impact.

In other words,

「……He is taking hostage, no, memento hostage?」

Yes, exactly. Hajime-san took hostage the important treasure of Helmut. ‘It’s fine even if you dodge the meteor impact you

know? But, the important thing behind you will return back into dust though?’ Like that.

Hearing Roze’s words, the people slo~~wly returned their gaze at Hajime.

Over there, fighting against the evil dragon who wished for mankind’s destruction, was a devil who was making a truly wicked smile while firing meteor shower one after another.

Evil dragon? No no, compared to him who was shooting down meteor shower while desperately trying to protect his important thing, that guy who was carrying out world scale destruction while viciously beating his opponent in a situation that couldn’t be escaped from was far more evil.

For this world, Helmut was an existence that should even be called as the representative of this world’s will. That was to say he was an existence that was equal with god. Then, that person who was trampling underfoot that god was……

Devil? Noo, he wasn’t in a level that still had lovable nature like that.

Demon king? He was similarly a king like the queen-sama and monarch dragon-sama who was risking their life to protect the people? Seriously stop that comparison.

The heart of the people was magnificently synchronized at that time.

That thing, clad in crimson, destroying the world, that thing which was trampling down evil with even more evil and irrationality was……

□□□□□□……A demon god.□□□□□□

That day, the legend of demon god was born in the world of sky.

「UNFORGIVABLE-. UNFORGIVABLE-!!」

Evil dragon Helmut-san who was already wounded all over struck at Hajime with intense killing intent and hatred but,

「I don’t need any forgiveness. Die.」

Something cast a shadow. What appeared from the sky was a super giant rock with diameter around 500 meters.

Helmut immediately became hidden in the shadow of the giant meteor and disappeared from view. What’s left then was only a scream of death agony, and a severe earthquake that reverberated through the world, and then……

「Something like this, is just too muchhh」

Only such words filled with grief from Ku~chan.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The first day of the year. Shirakome who is immediately guilty.

Sorry.

Just a bit more, I’m reflecting back on the pace.

Arifureta Chapter 247

New Year Special After Story The Scene of a Mundane New Year (Limited to Nagumo Family)

AN: I barely made it, to post the New Year chapter.

It’s short, but please enjoy it if you will.

【Flatten! Flatten! Become tas~ty! Flat! Desuu!】

【Flatten! Flatten! Become tas~ty! Flat! Nano!】

It was the early afternoon of the New Year’s Day where there was clear air and transparent sunlight showering down the world.

Such enthusiastic shouts were resounding in a corner of Nagumo family’s garden. The voices’ owners were Shia who was sporting a wide smile with her rabbit ears hopping up and down, and Myuu who was sporting the same wide smile while wearing rabbit ear hair band that was made to hop up and down.

Both of them were currently in the middle of pounding mochi.

By the way, Myuu's rabbit ear hair band was a high level item that wasn't inferior in texture or appearance compared to the real thing.

The raw materials were supplied by Yue. It was an item where Yue's skill shined from her putting all her heart into producing animal ear hair band because once Shia's rabbit ears stolen Hajime's attention. Myuu was looking enviously at Shia's rabbit ears, so Yue created it once more and gave it to Myuu.

That rabbit ears that was endlessly close to the real thing, just from where in the world Yue procured it from……

Yue who borrowed the compass and crystal key from Hajime and then returned after thirty minutes later were holding rabbit ears that weren't even bundled in her hand. Surely she had just gone to a place like a specialist shop for animal ear.

Even if for example right after the gate was opened and the scenery that could be seen at the other side resembled the abyss of「Orcus Great Labyrinth」, even if the grasped rabbit ears were sometimes twitching, even if there was a drop of red of something on Yue's cheek, there was no doubt that the item was purchased from a specialist shop.

Even if for example-, for a while Shia folded her rabbit ears flat on her head as though protecting it while she was directing a terrified gaze at Yue, or even if Inaba who they finally met after a long time was shocked when he saw the rabbit ear hair band equipped on Myuu's head, but if it was said that it was a purchased item then that was a purchased item, the end!

「He, hey, both of thee. It’s fine that thou art singing rhythmically, but coulds not thou relax the pace and strength? From a while ago, mine hands art sometimes flattened here.」

Tio were giving a warning toward Shia and Myuu who were pounding mochi harmoniously like a real sisters, while her voice sounded pained, but strangely excitement could also be felt from it.

Tio received the role to turn over the mochi inside the millstone, but it was just as she said, since before this her hands were flattened several times. Even now Shia and Myuu weren’t holding back in their mochi pounding. They were swinging down the weight of war hammer as it was.

「What are you doing, Tio-san. Please turn over the mochi quickly!」

「Nano! Mochi pounding is a fight against time nano! Tio-oneechan, do it properly!」

「E, a, yes.」

Tio put in her hands in hurry to turn over the mochi.

「Flatten-desuu!」

「Ah!? Shia! Thou, just now, thou purposefully――」

「Flatten-nano!」

「Higii!? Myuu!? Why didst thou swing down just now!?」

Flatten-flatten! *Ah!?* Flatten-flatten-! Ahiih!?

The mochi and hands were changing shape properly along with the rhythmically cute words. Tio’s interlude that

sometimes got in between produced a nice flavor.

「Oh man~, pounding mochi suited Shia-chan really well. As expected from a rabbit. Myuu-chan's appearance of mochi pounding rabbit-chan is also really cute.」

「Totally. If only there isn't a pervert who is putting both hands on ground while making expression of ecstasy between them, I'll want to preserve this scene in recording.」

In respond to the words of Shuu who was sipping tea on veranda, Hajime was also sipping tea while agreeing (?). Both of them couldn't put in boorish retort, whether toward the pervert who finally entered and took out both her hands, or about how what was used to pound mochi was a war hammer that had soaked in the blood of innumerable enemies, all those points were ignored in this New Year mood.

The two who averted their gaze from the rabbit ear duo and the pervert turned their eyes toward another corner of the spacious garden.

Over there was also a scenery that was really like New Year event.

「Aa!? Yue! Just now, you absolutely used gravity magic there! That's foul!」

「……A cruel false accusation. If you are talking about foul play, then it's Kaori's foul play by the time you use two racket style in this battledore.」(TN: Battledore=early form of badminton racket)

The two who faced each other with moderate distance in between were Kaori and Yue. The hand of the two was holding battledore racket. What they were doing since just

now while noisily quarreling with each other was Japanese badminton.

「This isn’t foul play! There is no rule forbidding using two rackets. But, using magic is obviously a foul play right?」

「……What is called a rule, is something decided by one’s own strength!」

「It’s useless even if you said it with that posed look!」

Kaori-san serve! *whoosh-* The shuttlecock that made an uncommon sound cut through the sky. An average human would be unable to react against that speed without doubt! Its angle was also the same!

But, the shuttlecock was rapidly decelerating in front of Yue, it was slowly advancing as though in slow motion.

「……This is my zone. Eat this, Heavy Shottt」

「That’s why, that’s just gravity magic! Uu, in that case I too……here I go, try stopping this! God Speed Shottt!」

When Yue fired a heavy smash using gravity magic, Kaori hit back while at the same time firing a smash of god speed that shortened the arrival time.

Kaori-san grinned complacently seeing the shuttlecock passing through beside Yue. However, Yue-sama wasn’t that naïve.

「……There is no such thing as blind spot for me!」

「Ah, using Divine Existence is seriously unfair!」

Using instantaneous space teleportation, Yue appeared in front of the shuttlecock that had passed through. She

ignored Kaori’s protest forthrightly and hit back the shuttlecock. The shuttlecock ascended high to the sky. Yue lifted the corner of her lips. It was obvious what she was thinking.

(You are planning to drop it from above with super gravity aren’t you!? I won’t let that!)

Kaori leaped up. Like a wild eagle! A down smash attacked Yue from above!

Yue’s racket sparked.

「……Lightning Dragon Shottt」

The shuttlecock howled! The shuttlecock was clad in lightning at the same time with the impact, it then flew while simultaneously turning into lightning dragon with the jaws opened wide!

「Naïve, how naïve, Yue!」

Kaori’s racket was tinged with silver light. With superb moderation of power, disintegration ability erased only the lightning dragon just before it could hit Kaori and hit back the shuttlecock!

Magic(shuttlecock) was flying wildly about, the players were moving around with god speed, or instant teleportation, secretly magic was simply fired! Between times, disparagement like「……Idiot Kaoriii」or「Bird-brain Yueee」also gushed out.

「The two of them are really getting along huh.」

「Well, I won’t deny that. Perhaps because of the automatic regeneration or miraculous recovery magic, year by year

their quarrel is turning more extreme, but the two of them also go shopping together normally though.

Chudon-! Dokan-! While listening to the harmonious Japanese badminton game that gave out such impact sounds, the father and son sipped their tea. Hajime nonchalantly released artifact for countermeasure against the neighborhood.

When Shuu and Hajime closed their eyes partly at the air of New Year and the comfortable shockwave, joyful voices ‘kyaa kyaa’ resounded from inside the room behind them.

「Ahahah, look look! My mercenary group succeeded in their surprise attack again! My funds get tripled as the success reward!」

「Wh, why is it only Sumire-okaasama who get into good square……as for me, I lost even my home already. Even though I’m a princess, even though, I’m a princess……」

「Li, Lily……how pitiful. To receive this treatment even in the world of board game. Compared to that, Remia-san who is steadily succeeding in starting business is terrifying. My position got overtaken before I realized it.」

「My my, what to do. I get a child again. This time it’s a twin. Everyone, please give me two million each for the celebratory gift. Ufufu」

Sumire, Liliana, Shizuku, and then Remia were amusing themselves with Game of Life Tortus version. It was a revised edition where Japanese language was used in every aspect of it, starting from the money’s denomination.

The manufactured was a mysterious character called South Cloud. It was a moderate sized board, but it was an artifact

class game that made use of status plate function, so the squares' content would be changed along with the players matching with the established vocation. Just like status plate, above the white board there were the squares and pawns floating up. (TN: Nagumo was formed from the kanji of 'south' and 'cloud')

Due to the fact that people could have simulated experience of a life possessing a vocation they dreamed of, this was an extremely popular game that was selling like crazy in Tortus through Yunker Company. (TN: Yunker is the name of an energy product in Japan. Also I tried looking back at the early chapters and found out about Motto Yunker, I totally forget about this character until now. I wonder if any of you still remember him? He is a leader of a merchant group Hajime met in Tortus. Aside from his name Yunker that is like energy drink, the name Motto also meant 'more' in Japanese. So this guy's name means 'more Yunker'. Remember this kids, this will come out in test)

An artifact class game was selling in great amount……

That fact caused the top brasses of every country and every organization to hold their head altogether in great perplexity.

Back to the topic.

Currently, Sumire became a leader of a mercenary group and devoted herself to the extreme of wickedness……she was managing her work favorably. Liliana became the princess of a ruined country and she wandered aimlessly to every place, Shizuku was achieving success as an adventurer within limitation, while Remia became a wealthy merchant that contended for the top spot even in Fuhren.

By the way, Remia already had eight children. And then, right now it seemed she made her ninth and tenth children. She was demanding celebratory gift with bright smiling face.

Sumire was saying「Congratulations! I'll wish you well for in reality too okay!」while handing over the celebratory money, Shizuku was handing over her due while smiling wryly from looking beside her, and Liliana was whispering「……I cannot pay, the celebratory money. Large money like two million, how would I……. Ahaha, getting loan isn't it. Even though I'm a princess, even though, I'm a princess……」.

It seemed Liliana finally became a princess in debt.

「How peaceful.」

「Really.」

When Shuu whispered in earnestness, Hajime then agreed in earnestness. They sipped their tea.

But, at that time, Sumire while being a leader of a mercenary group happily yelled「Oh my, dear me, I finally get married!」. Shuu's ears twitched in reaction.

It seemed that spring also came even for the strongest mercenary group leader.

Suddenly, or possibly with the feeling of escapism, the princess in debt asked Sumire.

「Come to think of it, how did Sumire-okaasama met with Shuu-otousama? As expected, was it developed through hobby?」

「My, how sudden. What's the matter Lily-chan?」

「Err, just a curiosity. Because of my status, I never have a common meeting, my meeting with Hajime-san was also unique, so I’m wondering what kind of meeting Okaa-sama and Otou-sama had.」

「I see. Indeed, the way of meeting of everyone other than Kaori-chan and Shizuku-chan wasn’t normal isn’t it.」

Sumire opened her mouth with the BGM of shockwaves and explosions, and then the shout of「Flatten!」and the coquettish voice「Ahh!?」. She squinted her eyes in nostalgia and talked while looking at faraway.

「Yes, it was at an intensely cold shrine in New Year. I and Shuu who at that time didn’t know each other——infiltrated the shrine while cosplaying as priest and shrine maiden.」

「A not normal meeting suddenly appeared!?」

Liliana’s first retort of the year exploded. Even the smiling goddess Remia, or Shizuku whose selling point was her cool and collected attitude were similarly making twitching face.

「That was really a surprise. I who was a high schooler at that time wanted to work as a shrine maiden even for just once at the shrine that was an anime’s holy ground. While the shrine was bustling with the New Year event, I nonchalantly cosplayed as a shrine maiden and worked diligently as a guide for the visitor. And then you see, I discovered a priest-san who was obviously a student leaning on a pillar with a posed look. He was then immediately got found out by the real priest-san where next he desperately made excuse.」

「I already don’t understand from where I should retort here.」

Lily-chan’s polite language was crumbling. She looked at Shizuku and Remia looking for help, but the two of them averted their gaze quickly.

Shuu’s ears were twitching.

「The shrine’s authorized people who noticed the uproar gathered, and then I who nonchalantly pretended to be shrine maiden also got exposed. Both of us prostrated ourselves right away. We thought of getting through this by making a prostration that would make the other side creeped out.」

「Trying to getting through uproar by prostrating……that’s a story that I had heard somewhere. Is that Nagumo family’s traditional skill I wonder?」

Hajime’s ears were twitching. Was it Hajime’s misunderstanding that he was feeling Shizuku’s gaze on the back of his head?

「However, there was one problem. It’s fine already so just go home――our cosplay’s level was too high to draw out those words!」

「What did you say~」

「Remia-chan! Nice interjection there!」

Remia-san had perfectly grasped how the mother-in-law’s rhythm was working.

From the story of the chipper Sumire, it seemed their costume was extremely close to the real thing and the people in authority mistaken them as the real thing. They were interrogating the two just from where they obtained the costume.

Like that, Shuu who at that time was gradually getting irritated finally said something like this.

――It ain’t priest clothing! It’s my plain clothes! It only looks similar accidentally, I’m wearing it as everyday clothes! You got a problem with my fashion sense!?

It seemed he forgot the fact that he was prostrating and he even tried to make the fact that he was infiltrating into nothing.

「The moment I heard that, I was laughing and rolling around with my hands holding my stomach while thinking this. Yosh-, I’ll marry this person! Like that!」

「「「Why did it become like that!?」」」

While the straight-man act of Liliana and others was exploding, at the veranda Shuu was covering his face with both hands and rolling around on the floor. It seemed he was overheating with shame that his black history was exposed to his daughters-in-law.

「Like that, we dated with my confession and then we married after that. How is it? Compared to Liliana-chan and others, it was a meeting without anything particular about it right?」

「「「「「「「「There is no such thing.」」」」」」」」

Including Yue and others too who seemed to listen to the story from some point unnoticed, the wive~s of Nagumo family and Myuu acted the straight man.

Hajime was clapping the shoulder of Shuu who was still writhing「Nuoooh, that’s embarrassinggg」to console him.

□Now then, Shia-chan and Myuu-chan has also returned, should we eat the freshly made mochi with the ozouni soup?□(TN: Ozouni is a New Year's dish that is a soup containing mochi and vegetables)

Sumire clapped her hand *pan-* and ended the story. The wive~s replied□Ye~s□and Myuu brought the mochi happily.

After that, they ate Sumire's specially made ozouni soup with relish and the New Year of Nagumo family passed on peacefully.

The craters created at the garden, also the destroyed millstone, also the awkward Shuu who was receiving lukewarm gaze from his daughters and granddaughter in law, also Kaori's papa who was storming in with a yell□So my angel is hereeee□, also Shizuku's papa and grandpa who appeared in a flash in the living room while greeting□Thank you for always taking care of our Shizuku□, those scenes were a really mundane (limited to Nagumo family) New Year scene.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I wish that this year of everyone in Narou will also be a fun and peaceful year like Nagumo family!

Arifureta Chapter 248

Arifureta After II See Ya, Pops!

(TN: It’s the line Lupin said when he escaped from Zenigata)

AN: Tio arc last chapter.

The sea of clouds and dark clouds scattered away. The light of sun was shining in everywhere, creating many sun rays.

Although, even those lights would surely vanish soon. That was just how deep the ravages of calamity that was caused by the random pounding of meteor impact. No need to mention the turned up land, the rolled up dusts would cover the whole sky soon.

The people looked up to that man, no, the demon god who accomplished that with feeling of awe. That figure surrounded by spreading crimson spark and standing calmly while releasing sparks was indeed emitting a dignity that was worthy to be titled as “demon god” from the unconscious whisper of the people.

「Whoops, I forget this.」

The people jumped at the first voice of the demon god-sama. They were unusually trembling with fears in comparison with the words that was said really lightly.

But, what happened right after that was an extraordinary strangeness that didn’t match such light words.

「Crimson light is……」

Roze opened her eyes wide toward the sky above. Crimson light was showering down far above the sky like how sunlight was interweaving sun rays. It showered down everywhere on the capital of the dragon kingdom.

‘Is this the whim of the demon god!? What he said just now, does it mean he was forgetting to destroy the city!?’ Shudders were rushing through the people.「Hiih」Screams were raised, and people who held their head and squatted down appeared continuously.

「There art no need to worry. Goshujin-sama in his good mood decide to perform a bit of service.」

「Eh? Tio-sama. Just what does that mean……」

Roze tilted her head and spoke her question at Tio who was smiling wryly. However, a report arrived faster than Tio was able to reply at that question.

「Roze-sama, this is Cline. This crimson light, it doesn’t seem to be a threat. ……The wounds of the injured people who received the exposure of the light is healing in the blink of eye.」

「This is Bovid. Reports from the crashing down guys about their survival are coming one after another. Even the guys who fell to the land below are reporting back. Geez, anything is really possible for that person.」

「Roze-sama. This is gramps. We were also saved by this crimson light. Although, in my case, I received the exposure

from a metallic spider that clung on me unnoticed.

From Jean, to Roze-sama. We too went through the same like Sabas-sama. A small spider had its back opened up, and then the ring that came out from there shot out this light. The moment we got hit, our wounds were gone. It seemed that we were receiving that person’s protection.

It appeared the reason Sabas and Jean, and then the imperial guards were surviving was because of this.

——Regeneration magic exposure satellite Bel Agharta

Using the satellite type artifact that was deployed outside the atmosphere, the range where the crimson light could reach became place that would promise abnormal recovery using regeneration magic. Even in the case where the target was underground or indoor, by using spider type golem——Arachne’s in-built gate to send in the light through it, the regeneration light could still reach with pinpoint accuracy.

Hajime secretly scattered Arachne swarm inside mother ship Avenst. At present, it’s unknown where they are lurking, from transmutation, suicide bombing, disabling drug injection, until sending light of regeneration, all the little spider-san can do anything. Ia! Ia! Masteeer! (TN: The ‘ia ia’ part seem to be a reference to Cthulhu, not really clear about what though)

Demon god-sa……cough-. Hajime-sama……so in the end, he was watching over us.

……Pe, perhaps that art so.

Roze’s eyes turned moist from feeling greatly moved. Kuwaibel also raised a small cry Pii from deep emotion. The

people who could hear the conversation of Tio and Roze relayed it to the people behind them, spreading the circle of the emotionally moved.

For some reason, it was only Tio who was making a strangely twitching expression.

In order to speak the words of thanks as the representation of the people, Roze was about to open her mouth toward Hajime who was continuously emitting crimson spark while hovering still in midair. She wished that he would turn toward them, got down, and then received their words of gratitude.

But, right before Roze spoke the words to call out at him,

「True core activation……complete. Outer wall endurance level……clear. Crystal agglutination rate……stable. Yosh-, come here-!! What’s left is only the absorption and circulation! Let’s goo!! Connect to Ornis! Gate Open-!!」

She was interrupted by words that were filled with tension that was rising high for some unknown reason. Even though until now he was only showing a relatively cool and wicked side, but the current Hajime was really like a child who was given a new toy. His eyes were sparkling bright, and his mouth was loosened up slovenly.

The sudden high tension caused Roze and others turned speechless with their mouth gaping open, while Hajime’s hand was lifting to the sky a crystal about the size of a palm with a color that was a mix of dark blue and faint bluish white.

At the same time, countless black birds——crows were flying out from his Treasure Warehouse II, there were also some that had already been released unnoticed beforehand, flying

from below the floating island and they all began to fly around as though forming spiral.

Looking closer, inside the world that was approached by dusts, black dots in a number that wouldn’t be an exaggeration to be said as many as the stars in the sky could be seen. The true identity of those black dots were all similarly the same jet black bird type artifact——Ornis.

Originally, Ornis was modeled after crow to be used for reconnaissance, but now they were flying around in the amount that should be expressed using the word innumerable.

「Wha, wha, wha, what is thissss!? Tio-sama!?」

「Aa~, well, that’s. Anyway, this wouldst not be something bad for Roze-dono and others, so calm down. Rather, I believe that nothing wouldst make thou happier than this.」

「E, eee? No matter how I look, this scene looks like the demise of the world part II though……」

Swarms of crows were flying around as though giving notification of ominous news while dust was covering the world densely. Indeed, it was a sight that was fitting for the demise of the world. Furthermore, the eyes of those crows emitted sharp crimson light as though in respond with Hajime’s call, in addition their whole body was starting to be enveloped with crimson spark and aura. No matter from where one looked, the crows only looked like the subordinates of an evil existence.

There was no factor anywhere that could make them calm down.

「Linkage – converge-, transmute!!」

Something like the commotion of the lower world didn’t worth any concern. The demon god-sama who was in his perfect form invoked the ultimate skill of a transmutation master with his tension still rising high.

Instantly, Hajime’s surrounding whirled and sparkling particles were getting absorbed into the jewel in his hand.

It wasn’t just that.

「Ah, the sea of clouds is……-, even the dust!?」

Someone yelled. Just as the voice said, even though the sea of clouds and dark clouds that were a gathering of negative energy were scattering away, but that didn’t mean that they were vanishing, and then even the dusts that were rolled up due to the meteor impact were also converging into Hajime’s hand like a joke.

Hajime’s converging transmutation was certainly a power of transmutation that gathered the mineral at the surrounding without directly touching them. His original range for the convergence was around a few hundred meter, but it was another story if there were age of god magic, artifact, and Hajime’s Limit Break here.

Ornis that was affixed with absorbing effect using gravity magic so to speak was a relay point for the convergence. Meteor impact was fired to scatter the prepared metal particles that had the function for conglutinating negative energy all over the world. At the same time, the polluted land was smashed so that they would be rolled up as much as possible as dust to be collected.

「What a beautiful……」

「Pii……」

The world was filled with jet black rivers of heaven.

The negative energy all over the world was flowing in toward Hajime accompanied by faint glimmers. There was no need to mention the sea of clouds and dark clouds. The dust of the land that was polluted by negative energy that was rolled up to the sky also became rivers that were flowing in the sky and gathered toward Hajime’s position.

What was flowing there was negative energy that was fatal for living thing. But, even so the people thought. That this sight was beautiful. Surely if there was an astronaut in this world looking down to the planet, there was no doubt that he would similarly get deeply moved at the sight of the sea of clouds and dust covering the world flowing into a point.

At the same time it was noticed.

The meaning of the jewel that was emitting crimson spark while swallowing the black sea of clouds and dusts without leaving any behind. The intention of Hajime that was lifting it up.

Yes, he was trying to purify the world!

Great number of people went down on their knees. They put their hands together in front of their chest while tears were flowing on their face.

It was as though they were worshipping a god!

One person, then one more person. The people who were dedicating prayer and gratitude toward the demon god who was purifying the world were increasing!

The pain in Tio-san’s chest was increasing in proportion of the number of the people! Somehow, she looked like she

was really unable to endure being there even for a second longer!

「Tsk, the limit value huh. Well, I guess this is the initial value of the dragon core and sky core that can be picked up. What's left will need time.」

The radiance of the jewel that was swallowing the negative energy along with the sea of clouds and dusts was settling down. The sky of the world was cleared up, everywhere the sea of clouds and dusts were dissipating.

Hajime who was taking a breather finally turned his gaze at the people below at that time. And then, 「oOO!?」he raised a shocked voice. After all, while he was getting a bit absorbed at another matter, for some reason the number of people staring at him with tears on their face while offering prayer was rapidly increasing. It made demon god-sama to be a bit shocked.

Hajime somehow guessed the circumstance and for a moment he showed a gesture as though he was thinking of something. The next moment shock and perplexity vanished from his face and a smile settled on his expression. His face changed into an expression that was already vibrantly smooth.

While crimson ripples were spreading in the air, like a god that was descending to the lower world, Hajime came down by calmly stepping step by step on the air. In order to return into Treasure Warehouse II, all Ornis gathered toward Hajime with a spiral trajectory which further gave him positive correction with his sublimity.

Beside Tio who for some reason was showing an exasperated face, the queen-sama was giving her welcome with moist eyes.

「……Hajime-sama. I, don’t know, just what I should say……. I don’t have any word to express this feeling of gratitude welling up inside me.」

Hajime shrugged toward Roze who was talking with a bit of feeling vexed.

「I don’t need any thanks. I’m only doing what I want to do by my own convenience.」

「You are really……」

Roze smiled looking troubled at those extremely light words regarding the salvation of the world. Behind her, Sabas and Crow siblings, Bovid and Cline and the other top brasses, and so many other people were gathering.

Words of gratitude were expressed from them one by one. Their voices were gradually turning into a chorus that began to shake the cleared up sky.

While the number of people in surrounding was increasing moment by moment, Roze said that she wished for the two of them to rest inside the palace by any means. The post war processing after this would be really difficult, but it seemed that she wanted to thank them no matter what as much as she could.

Hajime slowly shook his head toward such Roze.

「From here on it will be difficult for you all. If you have time to look after someone like me, you should prepare instead for the next battle to rebuild the world.」

「However, our feeling won’t be eased like that. Please――」

「Well, put aside that talk for now. Queen-san, can you come with me for a bit?」

「He?」

For a moment Roze's cheeks reddened thinking if「Is it for that kind of meaning!?」. Within an instant inside her brain the image of the approaching Hajime and herself saying denial……such wild delusion was rushing around. As expected from the hidden pervert queen.

However, the aforementioned Hajime turned away his gaze from her toward the mother ship Avenst that was landed behind the palace. Seeing that, her cheeks reddened because it was her misunderstanding this time. Beside her Sabas's forehead was forming a Mariana trench.

「I have something important to talk. It's fine for the top brasses to come along, so clear away all passenger from Avenst.」

「U, understood.」

Roze-chan's cheeks reddened once more at the part of something important to talk, but she tilted her head by the time Sabas and others also okayed the request.

Sabas and others were also tilting their head in wonder what this was about, even so this was a request from the hero that saved their country. They didn't even have the intention to refuse, and so the made people exited the mother ship Avenst and invited Hajime in.

kon kon Hajime and others were walking through a passage of mother ship Avenst that was silent from using up almost all the power of sky core it had. Hajime had finished grasping the ship’s internal construction after staying there for two days, so Hajime was walking forward rapidly in the lead.

「Err, Hajime-sama? Where are you going toward?」

The capital was in excitement from the victory, but the people should immediately feel insecure with the absence of the leading actors. Just in case the people who remained should be giving some kind of explanation to the people, but from the standpoint of Roze and others they wanted to quickly talk to the people.

Roze was nervous with Kuwaibel held on her chest. Accompanying them were Sabas, Crow siblings, and Bovid. And then the ship captains starting from Cline were also somewhat restless.

Hajime quietly opened his mouth toward them.

「I removed a considerable amount of the negative energy running rampant in this world. But, as expected it doesn’t mean that the balance of the world is completely restored. The balance of this world is still collapsed.」

「……That’s」

Indeed, the jewel in Hajime’s hand absorbed negative energy. The sea of clouds became scattered all over and the rolled up dust also thinned so it didn’t cut off the sunlight completely.

However, the amount of the positive energy was still few, the balance of the world couldn’t be recovered right away

with just the sky core of the natural world and the declined dragon species.

"Even so, now we are able to see the path to the future far clearer than before. Something like rebuilding the world from the start is something that cannot be done without being resolved for a long time of piling up effort for who know how many generations. Hajime-sama, you don't know how much help it is already just from us being able to step on the land with our own feet."

It seemed the destination ahead of the passage they were going through steadily was the power room. Hajime nodded "I see"at Roze's words and he continued his speech.

"But, the prospect for the future become better and having leeway……those facts are also enough for anyone to think about needless things. Even in a circumstance where there is no leeway and people has to be desperate to stay alive, people still cannot band together and they fought each other like that. The appearance of Helmut as a common enemy could be said as fortunate in a sense."

"……"

"Surely the people living in this world aren't just queen-san and others and the Qwailent bunches. There must be other people surviving, holding their breath in the scattered floating islands, Perhaps there are even people who discovered a way to survive somewhere in the surface. Like deep underground for example."

"……What is it, that you wish to say Hajime-sama?"

Roze looked dubious. No, she actually understood. There was no more enemy of the world that could become the cause for banding together. Sure enough, in the situation

where resource was limited, how would people who now had leeway in their survival would move…….

Hajime opened the door to the power room. In the center of the large room, an out of norm power reactor was sitting there. There was a spot in the center of the reactor where a fuel tank could be inserted.

The jewel that Hajime took out once more was settled silently in his hand. It looked like a yin yang sphere with its color mix of deep blue and faint bluish white. Hajime fiddled it around as though it was a marble ball while his gaze turned toward Roze.

□Do you want power? An even greater power that can overwhelm the world?□

□-□

It was a surprisingly deep and silent gaze. It was as though she was looking at a whirlpool that was created inside an ocean. She felt like if she lost focus, then her consciousness would be swallowed.

With a glance at Roze who unconsciously held her breath, Hajime carelessly threw the jewel into the reactor. The spot for inserting the fuel tank didn’t have a shape for precise insertion, there was a small box to put in the thing that would become the fuel, and after inserting the item into there the box only needed to be fixed in place using the fixing clasps.

Because of that, even without processing the jewel into the shape of a fuel tank, there was no problem if the jewel was inserted as it was. Yes, that was if that jewel had a function as fuel.

kiiiiiiiiiiiiiiii-

A sound like vapor whistle resounded, and then *goon goon* a sound that felt like it resounded until the bottom of stomach hit the earlobe. It gave an impression as though a heart to pour vitality into blood vessel and internal organ was now resuming to beat.

「Lies……Avenst is, completely……starting up?」

「-, ……Roze-sama. The energy replenishment rate, is 60 percent. It’s in the middle of rising even now. The weapon control system, is in the state of possible activation.」

The mother ship Avenst that should be unable to be activated completely except by the energy output of monarch dragon core was resuming breathing. When Sabas who ran to the console in respond to Roze’s whisper informed her about the ship’s state, the top brasses unanimously turned speechless.

Just floating was the best it could do with the power of sky core. Even if it used dragon core, using only average number of average dragon core would only make this ship able to use combat maneuver but using weapon would still be out of reach.

But now, this ship was activating.

「You see, this jewel, well, if I have to say it’s a pseudo monarch dragon core. The raw materials are sky cores, stockpiled dragon cores processed by the Qwailent bunches that I withdrawn from the fuel tank, and a bit of rare crystal from another world. It’s an imitation, but its output cannot be matched even by a monarch dragon core. After all, right now it had just absorbed energy that can purify the world to a certain degree.」

「Su, such thing is……」

It was possible. After all, this person here was a matchless transmutation master. Furthermore, although it was necessary for him to use artifact as intermediary, he was an existence who had even taken possession of technique that interfered with the truth of the world.

「If you have this, the strongest battleship that once shook the world will be revived. Perhaps you will be able to stave off the chaos that might happen from here on using this one ship.」

「Ha, Hajime-sama」

Roze was bewildered and took a step back, perhaps from feeling confusion at the unforeseen situation.

Toward such girl, Hajime mercilessly asked one more time as though thrusting the reality before her.

「Do you want power? If it’s you……If it’s the “rebirth” dragon kingdom Avenst’s queen Roze Phiris Avenst who rise to shoulder this world, then I will also be fine with lending this jewel.」

——What to do?

The question was calmly asked once more. If they had a deterrence ability this great, then indeed perhaps they would be able to prevent a needless spilling of blood from repressing the disturbance that would happen in the future.

It might possibly become the symbol of the queen of the rebirth dragon kingdom Avenst who decided to fight.

Roze was unable to sort out her confused mind, however, the moment her eyes met the eyes of Hajime who was staring straight at her, the conclusion came out with an easiness that surprised even herself. She found the conclusion the moment she saw that gaze that was vaguely holding expectation, as though testing her.

「No, I don’t need it.」

She was able to answer that clearly and strongly.

「……Hee. There really is no hesitation in that answer. Without this jewel, Avenst is a ship that is only big. Now that you have taken back your country’s territory, this kind of stupidly big ship will be reduced into a mere baggage you know?」

「Yes, perhaps that is so. But, didn’t Hajime-sama say it yourself? What is starting from here on is the “rebirth” dragon kingdom Avenst. Even if that isn’t a monarch dragon core, even if it’s a dragon core energy that is already processed, we will never make use of dragon core as weapon until the end of the world.」

Roze calmly replied to Hajime with a strong piercing glare. Looking carefully, the top brasses standing behind Roze were all staring with wordless declaration「Don’t make light of us!」inside their eyes.

「……You really, won’t use it until the end the world?」

「Yes. We won’t.」

「……This is a power that can rule the world. The strongest battleship. You really don’t need it?」

「Yes, we don’t need it.」

Seeing Hajime’s insistent questioning, Roze felt strangely mystified「Is he worried about us that much?」and a chuckle leaked out from her mouth. Her heart was tickled from the gap of this Hajime with the demon god’s mercilessness of before.

Roze spoke of her determination once more toward Hajime who was silently gazing at her searching her true feeling.

「Rebuilding the world is a battle against people’s heart. A weapon is just boorish for something like that. We have friends. We can walk toward the future just from the fact that we have taken back our friends. We have to walk forward. That’s why……」

「That’s why, you don’t need this thing anymore, is it?」

Hajime turned his gaze behind him with a wry smile. Ahead of his gaze there was the sparkling jewel and the heart of Avenst that was fully activated from receiving its power.

Hajime who returned his gaze at Roze was scratching his cheek looking a bit troubled.

「Aa~. Looks like, I’m only creating the spark of war for all of you.」

「I won’t speak that far……」

「But, just with this thing remaining here, it will only wither queen-san’s determination and also your persuasiveness to the external side. ……Can’t be helped. I’ll take responsibility as the creator and take this thing away to deal with it.」

「Fufu, thank you very much. At the very end……Hajime-sama is a really kind demon god-sama.」

□……Demon god? Since when I ranked up like that huh?□

Seeing Hajime who was scratching his cheek looking even more troubled, this time for sure Roze couldn’t hold it anymore and she let out a laugh. It was a lively smiling face that was full with the liberation from the heavy pressure of many years and charm that looked radiant with the hope and determination for the future.

Enticed by that laugh, the top brasses starting from Crow siblings also started to laugh.

For some reason, it was only Tio and Sabas whose expression looked horribly complicated though……

Hajime who faced away with an expression that really looked like□It’s really embarrassing to get laughed at□then said □Aaah, how long you guys are going to laugh!□while he made the “Treasure Warehouse II” in his hand to shine.

Right away, the whole Avenst was enveloped in crimson radiance, and the next moment it vanished completely. Although the reactor was located near the bottom of the ship, there was quiet some distance until the ground, so Roze and others who were suddenly thrown on the air reflexively screamed□Hyaaah!?□in that situation.

Although, they were wrapped in weightless feeling and the next moment Tio’s wind gently enveloped Roze and others and they were lowered slowly to the ground.

Roze looked around while feeling a bit of indignation of what suddenly happened, however, she noticed that the figure of Hajime and Tio was already gone and she felt slightly flustered.

「Now then, we are going now. This short time was really fun.」

「Ri, right. Well then Roze-dono. Kuwaibel. And then everyone of the kingdom. Stay in good health all of thee.」

When they looked up to the sky from where the words came, there was the figure of Tio who had transformed to dragon before anyone knew it and Hajime riding on her back.

The figure of the gallant and magnificent black dragon that could be seen to be different from Helmut in a glance caused the people to make commotion and raised joyful cheer of astonishment. In the middle of that uproar, Roze who guessed what was happening raised her voice in panic.

「Do, don't tell me, you two are planning to leave right now!? We still haven't expressed our thanks at all! Please, stay for a bit more here!」

「If it's thanks we have received enough. Your words queen-san are the greatest gift more than anything.」

「Ha, Hajime-sama. Such thing-, that isn't a token of appreciation at all-」

「That's right, both of you! Besides, I want to be together with Haha-ue more!」

Roze who desperately tried to make the two stay with moist eyes, and Kuwaibel who pleaded at Tio like a spoilt child. The people who noticed from that appearance that their heroes would leave also yelled words asking the two to stay one after another.

「It's the same like a weapon. It's not fitting for an existence like me to stay beside the people who will work hard walking

forward with their own legs from here on. Later!

……Boy. A king who guide the world wouldst not cry seeking his mother. Always gallantly let out the dragon’s roar. Remember that okay?

Saying that, the two turned around. They didn’t even loko back at the words asking them to stay and their figure turned small faraway just like fickle wind that drifted away.

Geez……to not even let us express our thanks sufficiently……they are really selfish, whimsy, hics-……and kind demon god-sama and true dragon-sama.

Haha-ue……I will, do my best. I’ll become a true dragon Haha-ue can be proud of.

Inside the world where the cheers of gratitude of the people were echoing, the whispers of the queen and monarch dragon resounded solemly, yet by no means they carried any unpleasant emotion inside.

The strongest butler who had been at her side since her childhood offered a handkerchief silently. And then, he asked with reservation as though giving consideration.

……Roze-sama. Is this okay?

‘Is it fine to not stop them from leaving?’ Roze who *thought* that she was asked that wiped her eyes that turned red from tears while she nodded with a bright smile even then.

No matter what reason we have, surely no one will be able to stop those people to stay here. Then, let us wait instead. We will do what we ought to do, make this world even more beautiful, so that when they come here once again riding on the wind we will be able to give them satisfaction.

‘A splendid determination. You have grown,’ Sabas wanted to say that.

However, he couldn’t say it. Because the meaning of his question was different.

「That, err, it’s not that……they are, taking away Avenst, is that okay?」

「Eh?」

Roze-chan stiffened with a snap, a smile still on her face. After her, Kuwaibel who was in her embrace and Bovid and others who were cheering behind them also stiffened in a snap.

Roze averted her gaze still with a smiling face thinking ‘Just what is gramps talking about I wonder?’. Her gaze moved toward the place where Avenst was parked.

Not there.

No matter how many times she looked, the nation on ship that had been together with them in joys and sorrows until now wasn’t there. Or rather, the goods and tools for living, the personal effects that should be placed in the resident district and production district, all of them were left into a huge mound at slight distance away before anyone noticed.

A wind blew pass the empty space. Ah, the adult underwear of a lady that was previously hanged on the tip of the main cannon to dry it was blown by the wind! It was lightly dancing in the sky!

Roze blinked.

As she thought, the figure of mother ship Avenst wasn’t there. If this was in anime, then surely there would be the ship’s silhouette blinking in the empty spot with sound effect *pikon pikon-*.

Sabas spoke with a really complicated expression toward Roze who was in the state of petrification still with a smiling face.

「If I may be so presumptuous to speak……」

「Wha, what is it, gramps?」

「……Perhaps, that person had taken our commitment?」

「Commitment?」

The conversation that showed Roze’s determination and resolve to Hajime was flowing inside Roze’s brain. The memory was filtered by the truth that was Sabas’s words.

Now, let’s try remembering it clearly!

「Yes, perhaps that is so. But, didn’t Hajime-sama say it yourself? What is starting from here on is the “rebirth” dragon kingdom Avenst. Even if that isn’t a monarch dragon core, even if it’s a dragon core energy that is already processed, we will never make use of dragon core as weapon until the end of the world.」

「Roze-chan’s true feeling

——We won’t use Avenst as weapon, so we don’t need the jewel for activating it.

「Hajime-san’s liberal translation

——We don’t need this kind of *battleship* anymore okay!

「……You really, won’t use it until the end the world?」

「Hajime-san’s liberal translation

――Eh, seriously? Seriously, not just the jewel, but you also don’t need Avenst?

「Yes. We won’t.」

「Roze-chan’s true feeling

――Yes, we don’t need the *jewel*

「Hajime-san’s liberal translation

――Totally seriously. I say that we seriously don’t need something like Avenst. Rather it’s just a baggage.

「……This is a power that can rule the world. The strongest battleship. You really don’t need it?」

「Hajime-san’s liberal translation

――Really? Even if later you say ‘as I thought we need it’ that won’t be my problem y’know? You rea~lly don’t need it then?

「Yes, we don’t need it.」

「Roze-chan’s true feeling

――For you to be that worried for us……. But, we really don’t need that jewel.

「Hajime-san’s liberal translation

――How persistent. We really don’t need this kind of battleship I told you. Rather, we are troubled of how to deal

with it!

「But, just with this thing remaining here, it will only wither queen-san's determination and also your persuasiveness to the external side. ……Can't be helped. I'll take responsibility as the creator and deal with this thing.」

「Hajime-san's liberal translation

――Got it then, if it's that much a bother for you, I'll take responsibility and accept Avenst.

「Fufu, thank you very much. At the very end……Hajime-sama is a really kind demon god-sama.」

「Roze-chan's true feeling

――Defeating Helmut, purifying the world, and on top of that you even worry about our war strength in the future, really how kind. But, even if for example it has no meaning as a battleship, it's fine for Avenst to be like that. Whether for the sake of the world, and also for our sake.

「Hajime-san's liberal translation

――Myy! Even though this is something troubling that ought to be recycled or collected as an oversized garbage, but you actually take it away for us! What kindness!

The above was the content of the chain of conversation.

What Hajime said in the end, 「Your words queen-san are the greatest gift more than anything」it also wasn't a lie. It was a gratitude that came from heart, something like thank you for letting me take your commitment.

Roze who carefully recalled her conversation’s content with Hajime and guessed Hajime’s true intention then began to tremble all over still with smiling face.

She certainly said that they didn’t need the jewel that could return the nation on ship Avenst back into a battleship.

However, she didn’t say a single word that they also didn’t need Avenst with it. No, it looked like she said it, but it should be understood right!? Like from the flow of conversation, or from the particulars until now!

「Thi, thi, thi……」

「「「「「Thi?」」」」」

While Bovid and others who seemed to similarly guess the situation were making twitching expression, Roze was shaking all over while muttering……

「Thi, THIE――――――――――――――F!!!」

Queen-sama, that guy had stolen something enormous.

Yes, it’s your nation on ship!

Roze’s scream that felt like it could reach until the end of the world reverberated.

「Nou, Goshujin-sama. Art this really fine?」

「It’s fine, after all the queen herself said it’s fine.」

That absolutely wasn’t her true intention. Or rather, it was this person who was leading on so it turned like that. Tio-san who saw the expression of Hajime who looked in terribly good mood couldn’t say that. She was flying in the sky casually while her neck twisted to send her gaze at Hajime on her back.

「Even though I said that I’m taking it, but actually it’s only borrowing for a bit long. I won’t break it so it will be fine.」

Tio’s completely wordless gaze as expected caused Hajime to be unable to endure and he spoke his rationalization. Tio shook her head as though to say ‘can’t be helped’.

「Nevertheless, thou looked really pleased Goshujin-sama. Was it that great to hath that jewel created? In mine opinion, I couldst not think that this artifact is that amazing for Goshujin-sama who art able to create god crystal.」

For now, let’s put aside the matter about taking——borrowing a battleship from the pure queen-sama, Tio threw a question at Hajime who since some time ago was toying around with the jewel in his hand while grinning widely.

Indeed, if it was Hajime who could create god crystal, something like a crystal that was filled with immense energy wasn’t something that rare. The point where it could stimulate the surrounding energy to supply heat made it seemed like it was more all-purpose than the god water that was created from god crystal, but Tio tilted her head feeling puzzled if it was something to feel that happy about.

Hajime’s eyes gazed in amazement at such Tio.

「Eh? Huh? I more or less explained it right, about the thing I was trying to create?」

「Hmm? Certainly that art so, but in the middle it was mostly Goshujin-sama talking to thyself and thou immediately started to be immersed in thy own thought, honestly speaking, I didst not really understand but I thought it was something like Goshujin-sama art wishing to make something similar with god crystal.」

Hajime comprehended about Tio's thin reaction at the thing he created after hearing what she said. And then Hajime showed an self-triumphant look that he rarely showed as though saying 'then I'll let you hear it'.

「Tio, the energy that is unique to this world, the sky core energy and dragon core energy――it's troublesome so I'll call it sky dragon energy, I talked a bit about its property to you right?」

「Right, the positive energy give invigoration, and the negative energy possess the nature of pacification to obstruction. All those circulate with the core as the center which maintain the world's balance.」

「That's right. But see, that's not the essence of sky dragon core. No, if you say that's its essence then it's true that's the essence, but what ought to be really paid attention to, the property that is worthy to feel astonishment toward is not that.」

「Hou? And that is?」

Hajime who was unusually putting on airs spoke about the core's property that he became convinced about from his two days interaction with the craftsmen of Avensts and from his analysis toward the flow of dragon core energy of Helmut and Kuwaibel.

「The terrific property of sky dragon core――is in the aspect of its circulation efficiency that is a hundred percent.」

「Hmm……hmm?」

Seeing Tio who didn’t really get it, Hajime began to talk gleefully.

「Tio, this is something amazing. Even in earth or Tortus, you can find any amount of circulation system, whether nature or artificial. However, you can say that a system with one hundred percent circulation rate doesn’t exist. Fundamentally there must be loss that occurred without exception.」

「Hm~m, I vaguely hath heard about that. Art this a talk about thermodynamics?」

「Yeah, that’s right. It’s a talk about a law of thermodynamics. ……Don’t you get it Tio? One of mankind’s grand problems that denied thermodynamics and is said to be impossible to be realized.」

「I’m not that detailed about it though……nn? Wait a second, Goshujin-sama. Loss wouldst occur without exception, because of that it’s impossible to realize? By any chance that is……」

Hajime smiled complacently at Tio who was amazingly good in making conjecture. Seeing his expression, Tio opened her eyes in shock for sure this time.

「That’s right. This is still a prototype, and it can only deal with sky dragon power but……I finally laid my hands on it. One of mankind’s grand problem――」

――The creation of perpetual motion.

The sky dragon power of this world, although the circulation rate was different based from the time difference and core's amount, but the energy itself would be converted from negative to positive with a hundred percent circulation rate once it got taken in into the core.

In other words, if this energy was made to circulate within a certain range, it would continue to circulate perpetually. Yes, just like how the sky dragon power was continuing to circulate within this planet.

The jewel Hajime created had sky core and processed dragon core stored inside Qwailent fleet's fuel bunker compressed until the very limit using transmutation, and the result was inserted at the center of the jewel. God crystal was then fused with it so that the problem of the small energy retention amount of the sky dragon core was cleared. And then the circulation performance was explosively increased by using sublimation magic and creation magic.

That center core——the true core had gravitational field generated by gravity magic so that the energy wouldn't escape to outside, furthermore the outer shell that was using god crystal used space magic to permit only the property of invigoration effect from the positive energy to exert influence to outside.

The positive energy that lost the invigoration power would be altered into negative energy, the true core would absorb it and converted it back into positive energy once more. The loss was zero percent so it would circulate for perpetuity.

Currently it can only be operated with sky dragon power that can be used only by this world's machine. But, I discovered the method to convert magic power into electricity, and electricity into magic power. If I can similarly

find the method to convert sky dragon power into magic power or something else……

Wa, wait a second Goshujin-sama.

‘I’ll be able to freely control infinite magic power, or perhaps infinite heat——the dream is spreading wide yeah’, Tio put a stop at Hajime who was talking passionately. As expected even Tio couldn’t suppress her shudder seeing her master who was smoothly talking about something really terrifying with an expression that looked like a boy.

To speak further, that jewel that possessed a core at the center and continuously circulate for perpetuity inside the sphere could be said to be something that imitate this very planet itself. That was to say……

Goshujin-sama, thou spoke it so easily but……art not that thing, couldst be called as a planet already?

Hm? ……Well, this is a really simplified one so it’s doubtful whether this can be called that unconditionally. But calling it that is also not mistaken. Hm~m, come to think of it this thing is also still not named……yosh-, let’s name this thing like this.

——Perpetual motion machine Grasp Gloria(Planet in hand that is rotating for perpetuity)

It seemed that demon god-sama finally created a planet that he took possession above his hand.

Tio. I’m going to show Avenst at Yue and others when we go home. It feels like it can even go to space if it’s modified. There is also no worry about the fuel if there is Grasp Gloria. Let’s even try a space travel of year 20XX!

Tio was in a state of being filled with astonishment until she was almost bursting, but when she was Hajime’s good mood it seemed that her heart was also gradually calming down.

Even if she lived for more than five hundred years, but as long as she was beside Hajime then she might not get tired of living. While vaguely thinking of such thing, she energetically replied「Right!」.

But, at that timing a voice resounded from a bit far away. 「Oh?」The two of them tilted their head at each other, and then when Hajime and Tio looked behind, there they saw the figure of Roze riding on the back of Kuwaibel who was flying even though a bit unsteadily in his grown-up form.

In addition there were even Bovid, Crow siblings, and Sabas riding sky battlecraft. Even behind them there were a lot of people riding sky battlecrafts and small airships with every single one filled in over capacity. The dragons were flying in parallel of all those while they were watching over the humans worriedly.

「The thief over thereee~~. Return Avenst backkk~~!」

「From the legendary dragon knight to demon king, and then ranked up to demon god, and yet at the end you call me a thief. Don’t you think that’s a cruel false accusation?」

「I toast to Goshujin-sama’s thick nerve that couldst declare what she said as a false accusation.」

Hajime and Tio cracked jokes at each other. Tio smiled wryly and she suggested at Hajime while directing a slightly gentle eyes at him.

「Now then, getting caught here wouldst be too uncool for the end of the adventure. Goshujin-sama, let’s return home

to earth soon.

Hm~? ……I guess. Yue and others will soon pick――

No, it’s fine already. Thou bring it correct, the compass?

Hajime smiled wryly As I thought, it got found out huh at Tio’s statement and he took out the compass from “Treasure Warehouse II”.

When did you notice? As I thought was it that time, when I sent Avenst to Qwailent?

No, I felt suspicious at that time we were chasing after the sky battlecraft that got away at first. I was convinced when we boarded the mother ship. At either time, Goshujin-sama didst not show any sign of getting lost. Thou held confidence of the location of the opponent we chased in this vast world where there is only sky.

So, so since that time……as expected from Tio. You are sharp despite being a pervert.

Nn-, stop it with the surprise reward. I’m going to fall. Cough-, in all possibility, that was a consideration so I couldst enjoy my time together with just Goshujin-sama without reservation correct?

It’s meaningless if it was exposed so quickly though.

Hajime scratched his cheek I’m too high spirited huh looking awkward. With a flash Tio released her dragon transformation, and then she gave a kiss on Hajime’s cheek really nonchalantly.

I hath enjoyed to mine heart content of Goshujin-sama who art full of consideration, and also Goshujin-sama who make

merry like a child. Thank you. Now, let’s go home to where everyone art.

……Good grief. Sometimes when I’m with you it feels like I’m really childish.

Hajime smiled wryly while he thrust forward the crystal key using the image of his homeland that he searched using the compass. The space undulated and a solemn door around two meter high appeared.

Aa~~~, wait! Please waii~~~t!

Piih! Piih!

With Roze in the lead, the people of Avenst also yelled loudly.

Hajime turned around toward them while he also raised his voice.

I’m borrowing Avenst a bit! I’m going to play again here eventually! At that time, I’ll show off the Avenst that became something like a luxurious ship from my demonic remodeling okay!

Not as a battleship, but as a extravagance ship that invited people’s dream and romance.

Those words caused the chests of Roze and the people of Avenst to feel tight. In the first place they didn’t come here with serious intention of taking back the ship. They wished to say this without any strange misunderstanding.

Aah, geez-! Please take a good care of it okay! Because that’s our second homeland! Please make it into an extraordinarily lovely ship! Because I’ll entrust it to you

forever and eveerr~~! Plee~~~aase, absolutely come here again to meet us! Riding that ship at that time!

Hahah. Fine! Flying in the sky of this world is the best. We are going to come again for an adventure! Later, for real this time!

Hajime and Tio smiled while waving their hand and they threw their body as though falling into the gate behind them. They could see the figure of Avenst's people waving their hands from the gap. Along with a very loud words of Thank you!.

hyuuoooooo- Such sound of wind pierced the ears.

Goshujin-sama, couldst I ask why we art like this?

Sorry, I made a little miss.

Hajime and Tio safely accomplished returning home. The place was at altitude eight thousand meter. They were in the middle of a grand free fall. It seemed that they were more or less right above the home of Nagumo grandparents. Because they were always above the sky at the other world, Hajime's sense was amiss and they came out in the sky despite trying to teleport in the garden.

Hajime averted his gaze looking a bit embarrassed at the really sloppy return.

While they were talking the ground was approaching, by the time the two thought about taking landing stance soon, soft golden light enveloped them. The two were immediately released from the wedge of gravity and their altitude slowly descended.

When they looked at the ground, there were the figures of the grandpa who was unable to stand up from shock, and the grandma who was looking up open mouthed at the sky with one hand holding laundry, and then, the figure of Yue smiling gently.

It was about three days since they departed. But, there was no sign of worry that could be seen in Yue’s expression. Myuu and Shia who came out to the garden with light footsteps and Remia also didn’t look worried at all. Rather the color of exasperation「Finally coming home huh~」could be seen strongly in their face.

While looking at Yue who quickly used soul magic to return to the present world the souls of Jii-chan and Baa-chan that slipped out because they were knocked out of their wits from seeing Hajime and Tio who landed on the garden,

「I’m home.」

「We hath returned.」

The two said their coming home words.

「Geez-. Hajime-san and Tio-san, where were you two loitering around with just the two of you desu!? We saw the letter that said you two are going adventuring, but I never heard about doing it for three days!」

Shia went angry with a huff. Her rabbit ears were pointed straight up as though to say「Hey hey, what’s the meaning

of this?□.

□Muu. Papa and also Tio-oneechan are unfair nano! Even though Myuu also want to go in a trip□

□Putting us aside, Ojii-sama and Obaa-sama were really worried you know?□

Myuu ran with a fast pace *sutetetete-* still wearing a sullenly bloated cheeks and she clung tightly on Hajime's leg. When the two turned their gaze from Remia's words, there they saw the Jii-chan and Baa-chan who fainted even though their soul had returned back. Sumire and Shii were looking after the two. Both of them said□Welcome home~□ with really light feeling.

□……And? Where were you two going until now?□

Yue tilted her head while asking. She understood that the two went out spontaneously from the letter left behind, but as expected it seemed she guessed that the two encountered some kind of unavoidable circumstance with how they were spending three nights away without notice.

Hajime looked at Tio. Tio also looked at Hajime. After looking at each other for some reason, Hajime made a small smile

□Secret□

And said such thing.

He decided that he would save his adventure that he started with just Tio inside his chest until the time came it was necessary. Tio's gaze was wandering around with an expression as though she had stuffed her mouth with sweet candies.

Seeing such two, Yue tilted her head a bit before she smiled gently.

「……I see. Tio, did you have fun?」

「Yes. Very.」

Enticed by Yue's gentle smile, Tio also made a smile that looked like a girl.

「……It's afternoon only just now but, want to eat?」

「Ou. My stomach is really empty here.」

「I guess. We hath just gone through various things.」

The moment Yue suggested that, Hajime and Tio's stomach growled harmoniously, Yue chuckled seeing that while she returned inside the house.

Hajime and Tio followed behind her while for some reason they looked up to the sky, and then they chuckled at each other for some reason seeing each other doing similar thing.

「Wai, what's with that atmosphere of mutual understanding! Even if Yue-san ignored it, I won't be like that! Hey hey, what happened desu? Please teach meee. This is the two of you, so something must be blown away, someone raised a scream, and it absolutely became a festival of pandemonium right? I'm really curiousss」

「Myuu too! Myuu is also curious nano!」

Getting coaxed by the rabbit ears and little girl, the two of them were increasingly smiling more in humor.

Like that Hajime and Tio secretly talked at each other while soothing down Shia and Myuu.

——Someday, let’s unveil the huge battleship and perpetual motion machine.

They said at each other.

While looking really amused.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Tio arc is finally over. It was long……

The passage of perpetual motion machine was done vaguely, so please spare me from any retort (sweat)

By the way, not using monarch dragon core was Hajime’s consideration after a fashion.

About what will the people of that world do with the monarch dragon cores of Helmut and his sibling, it will depend on that world’s people.

Well, surely Kuwaibel won’t let them do as they pleased.

……I’ll also say that it was simply because it was too much to write.

Now then, who should I write next I wonder

Arifureta Chapter 249

Arifureta After II　Dream and Love and Hope’sss——

AN: It will be idle stories until the next long arc after story.

I will put in unserious story one, or two more times.

By the way, this chapter’s chronological order is around one month after the return.

The occupation of a reportage writer is a work of finding an interesting topic, collected data on it, and then reported it as news.

I, Hamada Shouta (28 years old), am such a reportage writer. I mainly introduced hidden well-known store and specialty of a town. ……I have never missed a meal doing this job, but there were times when there was no story to sell, so I have also done running gossip occasionally.

What someone like me is observing lately is a western restaurant『Wisteria』. It’s a hidden well-know store in the city, a restaurant where you can enjoy food and coffee together without doubt.

Originally this will be where I get requested for formal news coverage and I will interview the owner for several of their prided menu, but currently I,

「Welcome. Have you decide what you will order?」

「Ah, yeah. This omelet rice, and jasmine tea. Also a blend coffee after the meal please.」

「Omelet rice and jasmine tea. And then a blend coffee after meal is it? Thank you for the order. Please wait for a bit.」

Like this, I'm coming as a normal guest. Of course, I don't tell the restaurant side that I'm a reporter or that I'm wishing for an interview.

I am staring at the back figure of the girl that is one of the reasons of that——the girl that just now was politely taking my order, the daughter of this restaurant's owner Sonobe Yuuka-chan.

Her style, I guess is fairly nice. Her chestnut hair that seems to be dyed is tied into one and her nice walking posture give a diligent impression that run counter with her appearance that is like a juvenile delinquent. How she is helping in the restaurant in holiday like this is also showing that. She is a high school student but she has a really calm atmosphere. That make her look adult.

Her long slits eyes and sharp gaze that even look glaring at other people also softened gently when she is talking with customer, that become a gap that deepen the favorable impression to her……

Hah!? The auntie at the opposite seating is glaring at me with a terrible look!? Tha, that's not it! By no means I'm staring with a feeling I need to feel guilty about! It's true I tell you! That's why, please don't look at me with those eyes as though I'm a pervert aiming at a high school girl!

The auntie averted her gaze with suspicion still remaining. From how she is calling at the girl using Yuuka-chan, most likely she is a regular customer. It seems there are a lot of elderly people in this restaurant who are thinking of Yuuka-chan like their real daughter or granddaughter.

It’s not just the auntie at the opposite seat, there are even an uncle who is sitting unnoticed at the neighboring seat sending a gaze toward here like a hard-boiled detective investigating a criminal, and an old man who is reading a newspaper at the inner seating of the restaurant, but actually there is an opened hole on that newspaper from where the old man is observing me like an investigator.

……Surely everyone is worried about the girl, thanks to the incident that happened to the girl some time ago and the commotion of this and that currently happening around the girl.

Of course, it’s not just because they are worried, it’s also because she is really that charming of a girl――

「Thank you for waiting. Here is your jasmine tea.」

「Ah, tha, thanks.」

Damn it. I completely stuttered. Yuuka-chan is tilting her head at my suspicious behavior. Her expression is also puzzled……

「Is something the matter?」

「N, no, there is nothing.」

This is really a disgraceful behavior for a pro reporter. What are you doing getting shaken against a girl more than a decade younger huh. I cleared my throat once. I change my

mindset to work mode. What is necessary is an observation ability that won’t overlook even anything trivial. And then, the concentration needed for that.

「By the way――」

I open my mouth to casually probe whether I can pull out some information even just for a bit, but before I can do that, the restaurant bell is ringing *cling cling* to notify of a customer’s arrival.

Naturally, Yuuka-chan’s gaze speedily moves away from me. The girl’s eyes narrowed just for a moment at the entering person before she turned at me once more, bow and left.

For some reason I become curious about Yuuka-chan’s gaze that turned sharp and so I turn my eyes toward the man who just entered the shop even while feeling the gaze of the auntie on me. The man is wearing a shabby jacket, carrying a large bag hanging on his shoulder, and a lot of stubble on his chin. My sense of smell as a pro smell that man’s true identity. In that case, as expected his objective is……

「――I told you many times already, I won’t accept that kind of interview. Please don’t come intruding until the restaurant.」

「Just calm down, please don’t be that cruel here. If you are that obstinate, then I too cannot help but think that there is really something suspicious. It’s fine even if it’s just five minutes. Of course I’ll wait until after the restaurant’s closing. Please let me ask just for a bit――regarding all of you the “returnees”.」

Bingo. As I though he is a person of the same business with that reason.

——Returnees

That is the cause that makes the situation that dragged in the girl to be complicated.

The whereabouts of Yuuka-chan along with her classmates became unknown more than a year ago. At the time it was a really big uproar about a case of spirited away that happened at a school in daytime. Similarly my interest was also pickled and I investigated various things about it.

But, regardless of the many specialists who investigated the case, in the end the cause of their disappearance and their whereabouts stayed unclear.

It was thought that perhaps this case will vanish from the people’s memory at this rate, but just a little bit of time ago, Yuuka-chan and others suddenly returned back. Along with most of the students.

Where did they go? Naturally, not just the police, every public institution and information media pressed for an answer, but the answer the returnees gave to all of them was——fighting an army led by an evil god in another world, they said.

Naturally they were suspected to have abnormality in their mind or perhaps they were brainwashed using drugs. It seemed that they had been examined many times, but in the end there are no abnormality discovered from them and many institutions concluded like this.

——These people who were spirited away are trying to hide the blank one year when they vanished.

Like that. The press got superheated, and it seemed the questioning from the government also became more

forceful. There were also students who don’t come back until now, so it can be said to be only natural.

However, a strange situation is occurring here. With one day as the turning point, the questioning toward them is settling down like a tide pulling back.

Even a free reporter like me got warned by my comrades and seniors in the industry, and by the publishers I’m close with, they said「It’s better to not get involved with this case」. Surely something, a great power that an individual like me cannot measure is in the work.

Even so, there are a lot of people who cannot stop because of their curiosity and ambition that is even bigger than that, and I’m one of such hopeless people, this man is also the same.

「Please quit it already. More than this is an obstruction of business already.」

「……Haa. I get it. Then I’ll ask again another day. It will be great if at that time you will talk about what’s inside your chest. Surely it’s also hard for you to keep close to the chest about the matter of your friends who won’t be able to come back forever right?」

「……」

Inside the restaurant become enveloped by an uneasy air. An aura that absolutely isn’t respectable is emitted from the gaze of an elderly! That man, is he looking for death here!?

As expected, the man who noticed the strange air inside the restaurant is starting to rapidly retreat with twitching expression. He take out a business card from his pocket and forcefully make Yuuka-chan to hold it.

「I hope you won't misunderstand, I actually want to become your strength. Surely it's tiresome for you who is still a student to carry this large burden right? If you are fine with me, I'll listen to your story anytime.」

The man said such thing while showing a smile that is obviously fishy for anyone with working eyes before he turned around, and then perhaps to look at how Yuuka-chan is taking the situation, the man turn around while his hand is reaching toward the entrance door.

Instantly.

「Aa~, right right. Your――」

――*supan-*

The man's speech stopped. No, it was stopped.

By his own business card that flew so close it almost grazed his eyes when he was turning back, and without pause it then stabbed on the door like a joke.

No, really, what kind of joke this is? Looking there, Yuuka-chan is standing with one hand on her waist, and her other hand is lifted with two fingers pointing toward the man. It's as though those fingers were just throwing the business card that was held between them.

……Before this, I once watched a television show where a vegetable was cut using a trump card. That's why, this situation really looks like a joke, but it's also not something impossible if one has a preeminent skill I guess.

Even if for example the business card is made from paper that is far thicker than a trump card, or even though the door is made from wood that is hard in nature. Or even if the

thrower isn’t a pro with such occupation, but a female high school student helping out her family in her holiday!

The man’s gaze is moving slowly toward the business card that is stabbed on the entrance door. The twitching on his cheeks is already at the level that cannot be hidden away.

Yuuka-chan speak with a dignified voice toward that man.

「Thank you for your concern. But, even though I look like this I’m a really strong woman, so I’ll shoulder by myself the baggage I have decided to shoulder by my own will until the end. Besides……」

Yuuka-chan smile gently. In that smile there is the utmost trust? Anyone who see that smile will understand that there is no gloominess or worry at all in there, it’s a smiling face that is packed with a charm that is hard to describe.

「I know someone who will do something about it when it really matters.」

‘That’s why, take away that business card and scram right away.’ Such wordless pressure is lurking inside that charming smile. Aa, certainly, if someone get ordered by that kind of smile and gaze, then that person won’t even feel like disobeying.

「I see. It will be great if you won’t regret that.」

Surely that parting threat is the best the man can do. The man roughly pull out the business card and get out without even hiding his irritation.

Yuuka-chan sighed ‘fuuh’ and then she lightly nod at her parents who have been watching over all this time from the

kitchen and counter. The parents also nodded back lightly and they return back to their work.

「Eerr, I’m really sorry for the disturbance. Please forgive the discomfort it has caused you customers.」

Yuuka-chan faced the customer seats and she quickly bowed her head. The regular customers are striving to be the first to say「Don’t mind it」「It’s fine you know~」「The next time he come, uncle will make my subordinate deal with him」and so on. Even the customers who aren’t regulars also doesn’t look like they mind it, perhaps they are affected by the dignified figure and smile of Yuuka-chan just now.

Rather, they are keep sending glances with deep interest. Those gazes feel like they are looking interested purely at Yuuka-chan herself rather than because she is a “returnee”.

Right, like this Yuuka-chan’s fans are increasing. Similarly I too feel toward Yuuka-chan just now――

glare- The auntie’s gaze is flying at me. That auntie is absolutely an esper.

By the way, who is this person who will do something somehow that she refers to?

Now then, around one week since the day I learned the shocking truth that Yuuka-chan is actually an expert at card throwing.

During that time I visited Wisteria four times and observed Yuuka-chan.

……No, I’m not a stalker. Until the end this is for work. A data gathering. I feel bad for Yuuka-chan, but I too am a pro, and so I won’t be merciful. I endure the abnormal stare of the regulars and also the bombing that is Yuuka-chan’s smile, and stand on guard waiting until the girl reveal her faults!

The result is that it end in vain, it’s completely a wasted effort. There is nothing suspicious about the girl, and there is also nothing suspicious about her classmates that come playing to the restaurant.

If I have to say what I have learned, it’s that the girl is a serious girl as expected, she is lovely, and not just card throwing, from pen until vegetable stick, she is a master at throwing whatever, those are all that I learned.

I only learned for the first time the fact that even a pen can pierce through a smartphone.

The male student who seems to be a classmate and got such thing done at his smartphone and Yuuka-chan herself are,

「Sonobeee!? What the hell have you done!? My smartphone is dying here! Don’t get carried away just because you are that guy’s mistress okay!?」

「Shut up, idiot Tamai-. I’m not a mistress! So it’s because you guys are saying such things that recently Yue-san and others are looking at me strangely isn’t it!?」

「Just because of that, this is still too much right!? Aa, now my smartphone looks like Tio-san whose ass is stabbed by Nagumo ain’t it. Even though my smartphone is skewered it’s still gasping and not dying yet. Shiitt, can I at least take

out the data? Oi, Sonobe, take responsibility and ask Nagumo for a new one. Even that guy if he is begged by his mistress――

Fuhn

Aa!? Carrot and radish and cucumber are stabbing my smartphone all over!?

They were quarreling with each other really like a student.

I only learned for the first time the fact that even vegetable stick can pierce through a smartphone.

They yelled several words that I'm curious about, but Yuuka-chan who is angry with that bright red face is somehow cute so I cannot remember.

Nevertheless, what is the meaning of "aijin" I wonder? Oh man, I don't really get the most recent vocabs that the youngsters are using. (TN: Aijin means mistress in Japan. The dialogue in Japan is heavily relying context because many Japanese words sound similar. When Yuuka and Tamai were talking, the word aijin was written using kanji so it can be quickly understood what they were talking about. But the reporter is parroting aijin using katakana, he is under the impression that it might be some new slang because it's unthinkable for a good kid to be called a mistress just from that conversation.)

I am recalling such trivial thing while today too my feet are heading toward Wisteria.

Even if there is no information I can get about the returnees, the cooking in that restaurant is really good. The atmosphere of the restaurant is also calming, so I can drink coffee at the end while relaxing. After soaking my body in

this harsh industry, taking a short time in this kind of restaurant is really healing me.

I can see Wisteria in front of me right now. A large stylish signboard can be seen on the quiet restaurant's appearance. The time is evening, so Wisteria that is illuminated by the madder red of evening even looks like the entrance to a different world.

【Just what am I thinking】

Is it because the girl had encountered spirited away phenomenon? I retort to myself after saying that kind of impossible imagination. I'm thinking for a little, perhaps it's better to just normally interview about the restaurant.

The restaurant's atmosphere and cooking, coffee, and then a beautiful high school student is the future second generation~

Yep, I feels like that can become a good enough article. Although, if I do that, then inevitably Yuuka-chan's background will get exposed and it will only shift back to the topic of "returnee".

When I'm about to arrive after a little bit more with a wry smile on my face, suddenly a familiar girl get out from the restaurant, it's Yuuka-chan.

【What? She looks strange……】

Yuuka-chan is holding a mobile phone in her hand and she is talking to somewhere while walking briskly through a path that is different from the path I'm coming from.

I become strangely concerned and in the end I don't enter the restaurant and follow behind Yuuka-chan instead.

Yuuka-chan ended her call midway and she started jogging.

……She, she is unexpectedly fast. I have confidence with my waist and legs from my work, but after ten minutes I’m starting to run out of breath. The cause is one. Yuuka-chan looks like she is jogging in a glance, but the fact is, amazingly with each step she is steadily accelerating. Inevitably I am sprinting almost with all my strength.

Yuuka-chan. You aren’t just a throwing master, you are also a jogging master aren’t you?

A man desperately following behind a high school girl while breathing roughly ‘zee~ zee~’. If someone is looking from the side then it’s definitely out. I’m praying so that no one will report me while sprinting for a while.

Yuuka-chan entered an empty building that is for sale.

「In this kind of day when the sun is already sinking, toward this kind of place, just what is her business?」

I’m feeling suspicious while gripping my phone tightly so that if something happened to Yuuka-chan I can report it anytime. At the same time, I’m also feeling the indication of a scoop and take out the camera I’m always carrying.

While confirming that there is no one around, I step into the building cautiously.

I guess originally this building was used for office. The first floor is spacious and wide, and there is the figure of Yuuka-chan at the center.

I’m hiding behind a pillar and watch over the situation.

And then before long, five men appear from deeper inside the building. All of them are wearing black suits. No matter how you look they aren’t respectable person.

「I came. And then where is the customer of my restaurant?」

I guess it right now. Yuuka-chan was called by those suspicious fellows! Her customer is taken hostage! Just who are these people?

Abduction and confinement, this is not a usual situation.

I clicked my camera shutter wordlessly.

「Don’t be so rushed. We aren’t kidnapping anyone or anything. They must be eating dinner normally around this time. It’s just that our colleagues are on the lookout near the,, that’s all.」

「Oh, really. And? What do you want me to do?」

Even though this is an outrageous situation, Yuuka-chan is still keeping her hands on her jacket’s pockets, while her mouth that is holding a chewing gum without me noticing is blowing out a balloon. Fear and unease are nonexistent in her expression, if I have to say the color of exasperation is stronger in her face.

In a glance, she is a delinquent girl looking down at an adult——she can be seen like that.

In fact the opponent might be feeling like that because their face frowned slightly.

「Just like what we said before, we only want you to cooperate with us. About the ability that all of you have, and then about the method to obtain it and the place.」

「Haa. And, why is it I’m the one who you called out using a method that is going as far as that?」

I understood that they are people aiming for information of the returnees based from the flow of their dialogue. However, Yuuka-chan isn’t the only returnee. Why is she the one targeted and not the other students?

The answer is spoken from the man’s mouth.

「It’s nothing big, you are that boy’s mistress right?」

「……」

That word came out again. The word “aijin”. Is that some kind of secret jargon? Hahah, I really don’t get it all~. Eh, why is Yuuka-chan turning that red? Just where does her cool figure just now gone to!?

The man glanced at the fiercely trembling Yuuka-chan and he continued.

「We are really well aware about that boy’s abnormality. It’s impossible to even approach him and his relative. Our colleagues were only “changing job” one after another. The other students look like they have weak influence. But, you are different. You are outside the framework of relative, but you have special relationship with that boy. If it’s your words, even that boy won’t be able to bluntly ignore it.」

Special re――eh? What did he say? I didn’t hear it really clearly just now.

「We want you to request him following our instruction. That’s all. If you do just that, all of your customers can go to your restaurant without knowing any――」

「First thing first, that thing about mi, mi, mistress. Where did you hear it from?」

Yuuka-chan questioned while still looking down with her body trembling. The man raised an eyebrow as though to say「Why are you concerned with that one?」, yet he still answered.

「Mainly from your classmates, then also from your parents. They were talking about it normally in the restaurant, and then even from the conversation when shopping, I got the report that your parents were talking worriedly that they wished you won’t be a mistress but marry normally.」

「……Everyone you better remember this. My vegetable sticks are hungering for smartphone.」

It seems that the smartphones of her classmates and parents will become the prey of the vegetable sticks, just like the smartphone of that boy some time ago.

The eyes of Yuuka-chan who lifted up her face are steady. As might be expected from the face of a beauty that possess long slits eyes, it has a remarkable intensity when it make such expression. The man in the front stirred for a moment as though he is faltering.

「A, anyway, will you follow along with our “cooperation request”?」

「If I don’t, my customers will randomly meet misfortune?」

「……」

The wordless reply is the proof of affirmation.

Seeing the situation that is becoming more and more outrageous, I decided to withdraw for the moment from here to report this. What is passing through my mind is the sudden calming down of the returnees commotion and the warning from the people in the same business. Furthermore, from the talk of those men in suits in addition with their experienced air, the possibility that they are government people is high.

Perhaps reporting this to police will be pointless. On the contrary, perhaps I will also be in danger with the reason that informer = witness.

However, there is no way I cannot leave this as it is. Yuuka-chan came here alone for the sake of her restaurant customers even knowing the danger. She is a girl who is more than a decade younger than me, but she came here after mustering her courage for the sake of others! Then, I too have to do what I can!

Because, even I am a customer that love Wisteria!

(Yuuka-chan. Please don’t provoke the opponent and do your best just a little bit――)

While gritting my teeth that I cannot leap out like a hero, I try to retreat until a place where my voice won’t be able to be heard when I report this.

But, that cannot come true.

「Uguh」

「……Good grief. Rat like your kind is always barging in from everywhere.」

I got caught. There was also these guys comrade behind me. My neck get choked by an arm and I get trouble breathing. My body get groped around with one hand and my camera and smartphone are taken. I get dragged along out from behind the pillar.

Noticing the commotion, Yuuka-chan and the men look to this direction. The men are making unpleasant face. Yuuka-chan's expression looks like she wants to say「What the hell」. No, it's strange for me to be the one to say it but Yuuka-chan, isn't it better if you show a bit different reaction than that……. What happen with your cool and unperturbed attitude?

「That person, is more or less my customer though?」

「A reporter, Hamada Shouta. Looks like he is investigating your surrounding.」

My background is exposed from the business card they took. What kind of expression Yuuka-chan will make now she know I'm tricking her I wonder. Her expression that enter my sight that is turning blurry from the distress is……ah, yep, it's just like usual. She isn't thinking anything of it. She is cool and lovely. Can I cry?

「It doesn't matter what is that person's background. And? What are you going to do with that person?」

「……It's something you don't need to know. Can I consider that our deal is struck? Then, you can go back to your restaurant. We will contact you again later. Our thanks for your cooperation.」

Whose mouth is saying that? After threatening a girl who is still a student!

An indescribable rage is surging inside me. What will happen to me after this? Of course I’m feeling scared about that. The inside of my head is already messed up. What to do? What to do!? There are only those words that keep flowing in and vanishing inside.

In this hopeless situation, a voice suddenly resounded. It’s Yuuka-chan’s voice.

「……Ah, yep. This side is all right though. Ah, I see, so it’s over. Okay.」

The men look suspicious. Me too. The reason is because Yuuka-chan is talking to empty space.

The sudden happening make me only able to be confused, but it appears the men are different. Their facial expression changes as though they recalled something and their hand moved toward their chest pocket.

「Chih. Some kind of ability!? Don’t mo――」

「Shut up.」

Yuuka-chan says sharp words. Right after that, the two men raised short scream and they crumble down. Almost at the same time, Yuuka-chan’s face turn at my direction, and at the next moment, ‘puih’ she spit out something.

That thing make the sound of slicing wind while passing through near my forehead, right after that, the pressure restricting my neck vanished.「Guah」That cry make me turn around reflexively, and there I see the figure of a man holding his eye looking pained.

The hand of me who fell on my backside felt a flabby sensation. When I look there, there is a chewing gum that

has been stretched long and narrow. This is the chewing gum Yuuka-chan was chewing. There is no need to guess, perhaps Yuuka-chan threw the gum she held in her mouth to hit the man’s eyes.

Groans and screams are overlapping even while I’m slightly befuddled.

When I turned my gaze, there are already five men collapsing. Their leg is stabbed by a knife that release electrical discharge *crackle crackle* and then men are convulsing.

「Shit-. Do you think this will end well for you after doing something like this?」

The man who received the chewing gum spit said such thing while tears are trickling from his one eye. At the same time, his hand secretly reach toward his breast pocket, and *ton-* that hand is stabbed lightly by a long and narrow knife like a joke.

「I’ll return those exact words back to you. Get punished a lot later by the demon king-sama.」

pachin- Yuuka-chan’s fingers snap resounded. The knife stabbed into the man’s hand immediately crackled. The man raises a small scream and fall powerlessly.

「Please don’t move from there.」

Faster than I can comprehend that those words are directed at me, Yuuka-chan look toward the entrance while she lifted her hand toward the collapsed men. Thereupon, of all things. The knives pulled out by itself and fly toward her hand.

I can only open my eyes wide at the strange happening before my eyes. I don’t even have the composure to scrap off Yuuka-chan’s chewing gum from my hand.

Yuuka-chan catch the five knives flying at her with one hand and she start juggling them using one hand like a street performer. Wha, what a dangerous act……is what I thought, but her gaze is fixed toward the entrance without change. From that I understand that this extremely dangerous skill is nothing more than a diversion for her.

The figure of the girl looking relaxed with one hand still put inside her pocket and the other hand juggling throwing knives is really picturesque that I get completely fascinated.

Even unconsciously I feel like I have to say something here, I try to let out words by desperately moving my mouth that doesn’t really want to hear what my brain is ordering it to do.

However, before I can, the reason why Yuuka-chan is staring at the entrance finally arrives.

What entered the building along with a low engine sound is two black cars. No matter how I think, they are obviously the comrade of the fainted guys here. Come to think of it, before I entered here, I believe I saw no car nearby. That means, were they already coming here to pick up these men, or else they had arranged to come if there is no contact in certain interval……

「How ill-prepared. As expected is it just like Nagumo said, they are underestimating us because we are children?」

Yuuka-chan whispered that. The cars’ headlight illuminated at Yuuka-chan. At her feet are naturally me who fell on my

ass and the collapsed men. The cars came to a sudden stop and they try to back away in hurry.

「My bad, but this is an order from the sca~ry demon king-sama. Well, he told me to only do it if possible though.」

Inside the building that is shined by the headlights, a new light source is created. It's from Yuuka-chan's knives. The juggled throwing knives are blazing up along with *gou-* sound.

Yuuka-chan throw three knives high in the air, she catch the remaining two blazing knives between her fingers, and right after that, 「shih」she throw them along with such spirited voice.

The two knives are flying while pulling trail of fire behind them. Each of them is like a streak of laser, stabbing on both cars' bonnet and explosive sound roared from there. The cars lost their momentum and also the control before they crashed on a pillar and wall.

……Unbelievably, it seemed that Yuuka-chan's blazing knives pierced the car engines.

Men rolled out from the driving seats of the cars. At that time Yuuka-chan caught the falling knives and throws them again. At the same time, even though she is throwing with one hand, the two knives splendidly follow two different tracks and stabbed the thigh of the men. They collapsed with a thud from the stun gun effect.

「Something like this I think. The rest, I'll leave the clean up at Nagumo just like he said……」

Yuuka-chan is playing around with her knives by twirling them around while her gaze is moving toward me.

……Just what is this extremely extraordinary situation?

Now I’m sharing a special circumstance with her. Will I become a secret cooperator that protects her secret after this? Will the two of us face against powerful organization? Will I give comfort to her when she is tired of fighting?

Like that someday the two people……

「E~rr, anyway, sorry to do this while you are in your own world but, hoih」

pushu- It feels like something stabbed me. When I look at the back of my hand, there is a knife that she was holding before this. Hm, can you wait a bit, Yuuka-chan? Right now my hand is sticky with the chewing gum that you were chewing, and now the back of my hand is stabbed like this, just what is this situation……

「Please come to the restaurant again as a normal customer.」

「Ah, wai-, ABABABABABABABABAABABABABABAHBAAH!?」

There my consciousness is swallowed into darkness.

Her last words. I see, until the end, you are going to fight without anyone else knowing huh. So that’s your resolve.

Loving the normal everyday, possessing mysterious power, you leap into the extraordinary days without hesitation for the sake of other people.

Aa, I know. Just what is such a girl is called. I never thought that it really exist in reality.

Yes, you are——

A few days later after the ill-prepared attack of a certain government agency. The western restaurant Wisteria that was loved by the local people. It was afternoon, when it was time where people’s visit was the slowest, inside the restaurant was sparse despite it was a holiday.

At such Wisteria the bell that informed of the customer’s arrival played its ring. When Yuuka who was wiping the table turned her gaze, there she found the boys trio Tamai and co, and also Miyasaki Nana and Sugawara Taeko.

While smiling wryly thinking that her friends came for jabbering again, Yuuka opened her mouth to welcome them,

「Yo-, magical girl!」

「Are business flourishing, magical girl!」

「Oh man, that’s really a great picture yeah, magical girl!」

She got called with strange nickname by the boys trio. After mistress now it was magical girl? Fine then. If that’s what you wish then it’s war. Do you have enough spare smartphone in stock?

With a fixed smiling face, Yuuka took out vegetable sticks from the kitchen.

「Wait wait, Yuuka-chi! It’s not like we are making fun of you. No, Tamai-kun and co are making fun of you though.」

「Ahaha, err, Yuuka. Here.」

Nana immediately hid her smartphone and pacified Yuuka, while Taeko was smiling wryly and took out a magazine from

her bag and handed it over to Yuuka. Beside her, 「Ple, please spare at least this childdd!」Tamai embraced his new smartphone on his stomach and crouched down.

「Geez, just what's with you guys.」

When Yuuka dropped her gaze at the magazine she was given while saying that, it appeared that it was s minor gossip magazine. It was something that published things like urban legend and so on. Its credibility was zero. It was that kind of magazine.

Yuuka found a page that was folded and she opened that page while gazing dubiously at Taeko,

「!?」

She stiffened.

It was only natural. Because there,

——A battle of dusk! Magical girl exist! What is the true identity of her who protects the citizens from a mysterious organization!?

Such headline was written with large font, and the picture of Yuuka who was emitting flame was printed there.

Of course, Yuuka's face wasn't shown, there was only the side profile of a girl who looked like she was emitting flame projected there. But, it was obvious in a glance for those who knew Yuuka. The knives that were faintly visible inside the flame and the sparking knives were also the proof.

Yuuka was opening wind holes using curving throwing vegetable sticks at the smartphones of Tamai and co who were cackling while saying things like「Magical girl(mahou

shoujo)? No, this is magical high school girl right?□□No, it’s magical mistress(mahout aijin) see□□That sound indecent somehow. Rather how about demon king mistress(maou aijin)?□, and then she made a phone call from her own smartphone.

□What’s up?□

□What do you mean what’s up, Nagumo! The concealment!? You were concealing the case weren’t you!?□

□Aa, about that article huh. You see……hm? Do you hear anyone screaming? Sounds like Tamai and co there.□

□Who cares about that, explain the reason why I become a magical girl!□

Yuuka questioned Hajime while ignoring Tamai and co who were grieving□This time it’s celery!? Damn it!□while embracing their smartphones that were returning blank eye(screen).

□No, I erased everything like the camera data and so on, I also manipulated their memory. But as expected from a pro journalist. It appeared he also took several picture using his smartphone and transferred the pictures into his PC at his home.□

□Guh. His gaze was always following me stickily every time he came to the restaurant, so I thought he was surely a no-hoper third class reporter.□

□……Well, putting aside your harsh evaluation. That reporter put out the article at a gossip publisher while I was pressed with dealing at the public safety side. Even though he should have no memory, he moved fast to make the article because the picture was just interesting.□

Yuuka was determined. The next time that reporter bastard came, it wouldn’t end well for him, she resolved.

It was impossible for anyone to judge that it was Yuuka from that picture except her friends and comrades, and above all the magazine was a local gossip publisher. The number of copies printed and also the number of buyer was few. Yuuka considered the reporter as a customer and against her better judgment she didn’t make him faint. She cursed her careless self and let out a sigh of resignation.

By the way, when she eventually made him fainted, for some reason around the end that reporter was staring at her stickily, on top of that he was excessively grinning in his own world, he looked simply revolting so Yuuka electrified him somewhat reflexively.

「Well, in the end it’s just gossip. It won’t become a big problem I believe. If it happens then it happens, I’ll crush it entirely at that time. So don’t worry about that.」

「It’s not like I’m particularly uneasy or anything. It’s Nagumo after all.」

Just what was it? Yuuka felt smirking gazes from outside her field of vision. It also felt like there was exasperated gazes 「They are do~ing it again~」.

A voice calling at Hajime could be heard from the other side of the phone. It seemed that he was still in the middle of dealing with a trouble.

「My bad suddenly calling you. I got already for now about the situation.」

「Aa. Then later――」

Yuuka told that she was ending the call seeing that Hajime was busy, Hajime too also replied——just before that, it was as though he got a mischievous idea and made a stifled laugh. And then,

「Later, magical girl Yuuka-chan」

「-, You-」

Before she could complain, *tuut tuut* lifeless electronic sound sounded. Yuuka was trembling all over with her eyes staring fixedly at the smartphone while her cheeks were gradually turning red. Then she whispered.

「……Don’t call me, Yuuka-chan.」

Naturally, it went without saying that she was given the wide grin of the two people at the kitchen and the counter, and her five friends.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I caught cold. The Word frequently deadlocked. When I changed using Ichitaro(TN: Japanese program), my data flew. Okay. I’m gonna post the chapter at any cost.

And so this chapter was late, but it’s Yuuka chapter that felt tedious.

I also want to write a long arc with Yuuka as the main, so this time it’s just an idle story.

The chronological order is around one month after the return.

Everyone too please be careful of catching cold.

Arifureta Chapter 250

Arifureta After II Mundane School Life ①

AN: Thank you for waiting.

It’s a trifling ordinary day arc.

I wrote ①, but I’m planning to interpose the student life arc with idle story, so it’s just for numbering.

I’m undecided whether next week I’ll also write student life arc’s continuation. It will depend on my mood.

Blue sky without a single cloud was spreading vast, in a corner of resident area that was filled with comfortable cool air that was characteristic of the morning time,

——*gashan-*

Such sound of crashing and,

——Gupeh!?

Such scream were resounding.

「……Hajime? Are you listening?」

「Hm? A, aah. I’m listening Yue.」

Yue who was walking beside Hajime while making footstep sounds regularly puffed up her cheeks in a bit of dissatisfaction.

With their height difference as one factor, Yue who was turning her gaze at Hajime as though she was peering from below was naturally looking like she was directing upturned gaze at him, and despite having seeing her gesture that was like that many times until now, Hajime couldn’t prevent his heartbeat from jumping up for a moment.

And so, the cause of the sound of crashing and scream just now――a passing by salary man riding a bicycle in his way to his workplace who was driving inattentively, and in the end he crashed onto a telephone pole and toppled over, such tragedy was smoothly slipping off from Hajime’s mind along with his moving away gaze.

Yue fastened her pace to move ahead of Hajime and then there she made a beautiful turn with a twirl. Her golden threads hair softly fluttered and glittered as though it was even blessed by the morning sunlight, while her skirt that was similarly fluttering softly greatly emphasized her whitely alluring absolute territory. (TN: Absolute territory = zettai ryouiki = exposed skin between top of knee-high socks and hemline of skirt)

――*zubo-*, dowah!?

A boy who seemed to be a high school student from another school walking at the edge of street put his foot into a ditch and he screamed, but Hajime whose heart was captured by Yue who was staring straight at him while walking backward didn’t even turn his gaze there.

「It’s dangerous walking backward like that you know?」

「……Nn. But, like this both of us are inside each other’s sight.」

Yue was staring still at him expressionlessly, but her default expression crumbled slightly. The gently softening expression——Yue’s smile stimulated Hajime’s déjà vu and he narrowed his eyes.

……A postman overtaking Hajime from the side seemed to get his brain stimulated. As the compensation of not looking straight while driving, he almost got into an accident and put on his emergency brake *kikii——!!*. He came to a stop with a really impressive drift.

「……Hajime?」

Yue tilted her head at Hajime’s state. Hajime realized the source of his déjà vu and he muttered『My dream became reality huh』. Hearing that mutter, Yue tilted her head even further to the opposite side to show her confusion.

That gesture was so lovely that Hajime loosened his face.

At the same time, a female high schooler walking from the roadside suddenly pressed on her nose and crouched down. Red liquid of joy was dripping from between her hand. This female high schooler who was whispering『I, I saw it again. It’s just too angelic just now』was also discharging out drips of red joy at the same place four, five days ago, so surely she was in a healthy state without any abnormality.

『You see, I had seen Yue’s figure wearing that uniform while walking backward like this before.」

「……Nn? I had done this before?」

「No, we have gone to school together many times, but something like this is the first time. It’s just, it’s embarrassing to confess this but……I saw it at Haltina’s great dungeon, yeah.」

「……ah. Fufuh. Did you dream it?」

「Don’t laugh.」

Hajime looked aside while scratching his cheek. For his delusion and desire to be known by his lover, even though it was at this late hour, no, exactly because it was at this late hour that it was a bit embarrassing.

The true identity of the déjà vu Hajime felt. The cause was one of the trial that he received at the capturing of great sea of trees Haltina. The capturing members were shown world of dream at the same time when they were teleported. There they experienced a world of supreme convenient wish they desired on top of having their inconvenient past written off.

What Hajime dreamed off inside that world was ordinary days on top of the erasure of his despair and hellish pain he experienced at the abyss. Inside that world there was Yue as his lover and he went to school with her like this. Both of them were carefree under the sunlight without any conflict, pain, and anxiety.

Yue was twirling like now and she steadily walked backward in front of Hajime, wearing the uniform of the school Hajime attended.

The figure of Yue wearing blazer and skirt, and then loafers, with the school bag held behind her, she was walking backward……. This spectacle of dream waiting ahead after he passed through all difficulties was truly the symbol of happiness for Hajime.

「Haa haa, my goddess――abeshih!?」

The finger bullet Hajime unconsciously fired splendidly hit the forehead of a man peeking out from between the curtain of the second floor room of a house the two happened to pass by. Of course, the glass window was beautifully pierced through.

The man who was blown away along with an impact that felt like it would tear off the head, without pause he was sent flying into the corridor with a force that could smash through a door. From inside the house,「Dear-, Takeshi is! Takeshi is coming out from his room!」「What!? Recently he is doing this every morning isn't he!? Finally Takeshi too is resolved to return to society……uuuh」such harmonious voices could be heard.

Surely the number of family conversation there was increasing in proportion of the number of hole in the window. It was something wonderful.

「You are used with the school already?」

「……Nn. It's fresh and novel. Especially the going to and from school alone with just Hajime.」

Yue's smile deepened at Hajime's attempt to change topic while she replied.

「Though I also feels like this isn't something we need to decide the rotation shift and even purposefully not using car though. Even going through shortcut, it's still faster by riding bicycle.」

「……Hajime don't get it. Going to and from school with just two people is our important time. This is the consensus of opinion so objection or refusal won't be allowed.」

「I, I see. But still……」

Just as Yue said, Yue, Shia, Kaori, and Shizuku enforced a rotation shift where each of them would go to school with just Hajime once a week. It was something that was decided by their consensus of opinion, and the time became an important time where they could be together with just Hajime who most of time was together with someone among his families.

Hajime more or less also guessed that. However, there was a relatively pressing problem in the case of all these four people, especially in regard to Yue, because of that Hajime's expression was a bit twitching.

「……You don't like, being alone with me?」

「There is no way that's true.」

Getting asked such thing with a sad looking gaze, Hajime had no other option than giving an immediate answer.

Even if he witnessed the tragic scenes of all the passerby in the range where Yue's expression was visible were crashing, tumbling over, or spraying out joy from their nose.

When he was going to and from school with just Yue, most of the time the path they traveled became like a disaster site in their passing. Also to say more, the smartphones of the smartphone users all over the place who suddenly became unmannered were invited to heaven and agonizing cries in that kind of meaning also echoed in the path that was turned into a road of tragedy……

Hajime fastened his brisk pace and caught up to Yue, he then took out a glasses with crimson frame from his pocket and gently put it on Yue. Glasses girl Yue blinked her eyes.

This glasses was actually an artifact that possessed recognition obstruction effect but,

——*Gashan! Kikii——, gosha! Chuin!*

——So, so cutebuberah!? Hidebuh. Abeshi!?

In front of the charm of *Yue wearing glasses,* the artifact bent its knees in defeat.

「……A charm that nullified an artifact that is enchanted with age of god magic, huh. You haven't actually obtained a concept magic of charm or something haven't you?」

「……?」

Hajime whispered to himself and took off the glasses that had opposite effect from Yue. The glasses artifact of recognition obstruction was quite effective at first, but recently it was becoming an item that increased Yue's charm instead.

Hajime could only cocked his head in puzzlement, but his mother Sumire who heard this story was staring blankly while answering「That's must be because she is with you」as though it was nothing. Recently their surrounding had calmed down compared to at the beginning and Yue became able to enjoy her time alone with Hajime to her heart's content. Surely Yue's euphoria was overflowing out at her time alone with her beloved, that seemed to be the case.

While thinking 'Don't tell me it's really that kind of reason?', Hajime turned his gaze from the glasses back to Yue,

howawan~

Small heart mark bubbles were gushing out from Yue’s body only from her gaze meeting Hajime’s……was how it looked like. Hajime scrubbed his eyes and when he looked at her one more time, there was only Yue there smiling normally. It seemed that he was hallucinating.

「We arrived, at the station.」

「Nn」

Deciding not thinking deeper about it, Hajime thought of preparing a more powerful artifact. When Hajime was thinking that, they arrived at the nearest station that was actually the a detour in their going to and from school.

Yue returned walking at Hajime’s side once more and with an extremely natural motion she linked her arm with Hajime’s. Her soft sensation and sweet fragrance tickled his nose and he received sharp gazes from the station workers and salary men. Even now their expression looked as though they were going to yell out「Showing off right from the morning」with spits flying out.

Yue-sama who was in cloud nine of happiness from the morning didn’t seem to bother at all with the surrounding, but for Hajime who was endeavoring to return to his former livelihood in the modern Japan, this situation was really serious. It was to the degree that he needed to hold back his hand that wanted to immediately move toward his thigh. Of course his partner railgun wasn’t there.

While the two were having idle chat like nothing at the station platform, a strange situation that was already the routine every morning was starting to occur.

No matter how one looked, people were congesting at the position of the train coach Hajime and Yue were lining up for.

There were many male, but there was also quite the number of female. Also, in a glance the females were looking like they were fixing their eyes on smartphone, newspaper, or book, but from Hajime’s viewpoint it was totally obvious that they kept glancing his and Yue’s way.

(Every single morning, they aren’t getting tired of it. This is already at the level of killing intent. ……Well, going to school with different woman every morning, if it’s asked whether this can’t be helped then it really can’t be helped I guess.)

Among these people that were forming lines, there weren’t only Yue’s fans, there must be Shia’s fans too there. Small voices like「Toying around with Shia-chan, this shitty braatt」could be heard sometimes. By the way, when he was going with Kaori or Shizuku, Hajime would go until their house to pick them up by riding train, but at that time there would be salary men that happened to catch sight of him without fail.

By the way, the closest station from Kaori and Shizuku’s house was at the opposite site with the school sandwiched in between of that station and the nearest station from Hajime’s house. There were eight stations until this station.

If this happened to a normal male high schooler, their mind would surely get disturbed from getting exposed to this storm of negative emotions like jealousy and so on that the mere expression of bed of nails wasn’t possibly enough to signify the significance.

Of course, the one here wasn’t a possessor of soft mind that would wither down from such thing.

Glancing at a salary man uncle lining up behind him who was subtly closing the distance, Hajime circled his hand

around Yue’s waist and he pressed her body tightly toward him.

The surrounding became noisy. Murderous gazes were doubling.

「……Hajime?」

「Hey, Yue. It’s fine even if we take detour, so how about we stop riding train? I don’t have any intention at all letting you get touched by anyone, and if there is that kind of guy trying that, I’ll tear off his nails even if it’s still in the stage of attempt, but there is also no need at all to mass produce people with their life ended right?」

Yue who tilted her head in puzzlement seemed to guess the meaning of his words a beat later. Or rather, it seemed she was really ignoring the surrounding’s situation as though it was only natural. As expected from a former royalty. It appeared that it was the default state to put the gazes of the rabble outside the mind. Or possibly, perhaps it was also that she wasn’t able to see anything but Hajime.

Yue showed a bit of thinking gesture「……Nn~~」and her index finger suddenly stood up straight.

「……」Everyone, bee~~come unconcerned with us」」

The words sounded slow and stupid, but they were whispered with a mysterious echo. Invisible power permeated the whole station as though it was spreading in ripples, and right after that, including the salary man who was gradually getting closer, the expression of the people who were focusing on Hajime and Yue went ‘hah’ as though they returned to their senses.

And then, they were making wondering expression about why were they making long lines in the entrance for this train coach like this while scattering toward other spots.

「What should I say, that’s a special bargain sale of「Divine Statement」huh. You want to go to school by train that much?」

「Nn-. To speak in Hajime’s wording, this is romance. Therefore I won’t give it up.」

「Yo, you are insisting it like that huh. I got it. Well, it’s also nothing really difficult, I’ll reinforce the recognition obstruction artifact quickly.」

「……Glasses?」

「Glasses.」

He wouldn’t give that up. Glasses girl Yue-sama was the key point for Hajime.

After that, during their walk until they reached the school, it went without saying that the words of god were literally firing in rapid succession toward the people who just arrived to ride the train and the crowd of people getting off the train. If it was for the sake of her desire, Yue-sama wouldn’t be stingy with using the words of god! It was Hajime>Unsurpassed wall>Everything else for her!

Hajime and Yue who arrived at school reached the shoe locker while respectively gathering attention.

There was one more template that was still continuing here.

――*rustle rustle rustle-*

Numerous letters surged like avalanche. It was a really retro method to put letter into shoe locker, but there was no other way for these people to convey their feeling so it couldn’t be helped. After all, the contact address of Yue and co weren’t known except by their classmates and a part of friends, and on top of that if they tried to talk to them directly there was always demon king level escort constantly beside them.

「Just like always.」

「……Nn. Being liked itself isn’t bad. But I cannot help to say that this is really a bother.」

Yue didn’t even hide her expression of feeling troublesome, her eyes narrowed for a moment to see through something and she put several letters into her pocket while she pushed in everything else into another locker. By the way, that locker was Kaori’s.

「Are those love letters from girls again?」

Hajime said that with a wry smile after guessing the sender of the letters that Yue pocketed. Just as he said, about 30 or 40 percent of the love letters Yue received came from female students.

「……Rather than calling them love letter, the letters are more like from fan or requesting to become friend, those kind of things. Idiots who are sending love letter even knowing I have Hajime doesn’t matter at all, but I cannot carelessly treat the letter from girls who want to be friend with me.」

「That kind of treatment is the reason you are popular.」

Seeing Yue who lowered her eyebrows looking a bit troubled, Hajime said that looking amused while opening his own locker. Several cute letters were piled up snugly inside. Yue-sama's gaze stabbed.

Helplessly Hajime took out the letters and put them inside another locker. By the way that locker had the name "Amanogawa Kouki" written on it.

Seeing such Hajime, Yue asked with a bit amused expression.

「.....Hajime. Is it fine not to read the letter right at the top?」

「The top one? What, is there something in it?」

The words of Yue who somehow understood the state of when the letter was created by using regeneration magic caused Hajime to make a dubious expression.

Yue took out the aforementioned letter from the locker and,

「.....Nn. This is from a cute fan of Hajime.....a girlish boy's――」

「Sooih!!!」

Hajime snatched the letter with godspeed, super compressed it with his grip strength and threw it with full power toward outside the school. The crumpled letter casually hit the speed of 166 kilometer per hour and the letter that was compressed until it was smaller than a pinball flew away like a laser beam.

It felt like a pained voice「Aah, my letteerr!!」could be heard from somewhere, but surely it was just an imagination.

「……As always, Hajime is popular among the cute boys.」

「Stop that. They don’t feel repulsive like when I was stared at by Chrystabel, even so those guys’ gazes are unbearable. Recently the fellows in class are shuddering「The demon king is finally feeling like turning his hand at that direction!?」while nonchalantly taking distance away from me. It’s just plainly weighing the mind.」

「……Even though, Chrystabel is a good person.」

「Your lover’s ass is being targeted here you know? Don’t just conclude that he is a good person.」

Yue chuckled at the dejected Hajime. Lured by that amused look of Yue, the students who were arriving at school were rapidly getting slower in their walk. A crowd trying to get even just a glimpse at the beautiful face of the girl who outwardly changed school was starting to form.

Hajime took Yue’s hand to quickly head toward the classroom.

The classroom of Hajime and others were at the highest floor and the farthest corner of the school building. They were at second year of high school, so normally they should be at the second floor, but their classroom was at that place where normally no one would come at was because Hajime and others were “returnees”.

With the uneasiness from the school side and a part of students’ family, and the criticism from the society about the decency if the students who returned back miraculously at great pains were to be driven out from school, the school

administration compromised by wishing to gather the returnees in one place and they set up a “special classroom” at a place that was isolated in the same school building.

Also, Hajime and others were in the middle of their first year when they were summoned to the other world Tortus. And so, originally they should be held back a grade, but although Hajime and others were put into a special classroom, but their school grade was properly in the second year.

This was the result of the conformance between the demand of Hajime and co “no way we will repeat the year”, and the opinion of the school side that wished for them to quickly graduate the school and left with the official stance that it was their sympathy and compassion at work.

As the result, a special short course period was prepared for the returnees and on top of that they were given examination, it was to confirm whether they were equipped with the scholarly ability of the first year curriculum of high school, if there was no problem with the test result then their grade advancement would be recognized. That was the special measure that the school taken.

Of course, it was also the result of a demon king somewhere and the wive~s working behind the scene.

And so, amidst the hectic situation of dealing with the government and mass media, all the classmates received special short course and in the end all of them struck high score without anything that could be complained about and their grade advancement was recognized.

At that time, after the special short course, the classmates held a study meeting by their own initiative and diligently

study hard. The school officials were really in admiration seeing that but……

Things like encouragement yell「Limit Break-」could sometimes be heard from the classroom.

Actually, they increased their concentration power and learning power by taking in a drug named Cheatmate while in addition they invoked Limit Break using Last Zell to study. It didn’t stop there, after the school was over they would also gather in Yuuka’s restaurant for a study meeting and used Hour Crystal to lengthen their time.

It was only getting held back a grade that everyone hated. To a very great extent.

Arriving at the topmost floor, the number of people decreased right away the moment Hajime and Yue stepped into a corridor where their classroom was located. It was natural because originally the classroom here wasn’t used and other than that there was only storage room.

But, this morning there was the silhouettes of another people other than the classmates.

「That’s, the vice principal and, Aiko, sensei who is completely hidden behind the silhouette?」

「……Nn. It looks like they are quarreling?」

Indeed, over there they saw the back of the vice principal who was famous with his hair that had overly splendid 7:3 ratio it was unnatural, and opposite him seemed to be Aiko seeing from the tiny legs that were barely visible from the two’s position. The voice of the vice principal sounded angry for some reason, so it seemed that Aiko was being scolded or preached at.

Hajime and Yue looked at each other and they slowly and smoothly sneaked behind the vice principal after cutting off their presence.

「Now listen, Hatayama-sensei. You are still employed as teacher in this school because of this school's kindliness. I hope you will be aware of that a little bit more!」

「Ye, yes. About that I'm really grateful……」

「In that case, why did you leak an extremely careless statement that show contempt to our school toward the likes of the press. I'm greatly troubled by this!」

「My, my deepest apologies. By no means I'm intending to show contempt……」

「Hou. The statement that the reason the special classroom is set up because the school is discriminating, you are saying that's not you showing contempt?」

「No! I didn't say anything like discrimination! It's just, I was only saying, if only the school side is also able to treat the students a bit more normally……」

The reason the vice principal was offended seemed to be the statement Aiko leaked out to the press. Aiko often came out in front of the press with her position as the representative of the returnees. So far as it went she took formal appointment for something like interview, and it was done after talking it thoroughly with the school side, but the persistent reporters were staking out in front of her house and rushed her with questions.

At that time Aiko fastened her pace while doing her utmost to not answer, but the statement of a reporter who spoke as though the students were dangerous individuals and

claimed that the special classroom was something that proved it to be true caused Aiko to object against her better judgment.

She said, that the students weren’t dangerous or anything. That originally they should be able to attend school normally.

The press that happily picked up on that made an uproar claiming that the school side was discriminating and whatever, and the vice principal who received the news got angry.

(This wig-wearing baldy vice principal. What is he doing venting at Aiko.)

(……Nn. It’s the fact that the school is treating us with isolation. This baldy wig-covered head is only protecting himself.)

Hajime and Yue were squinting their eyes toward the vice principal who were still nagging angrily at Aiko. Both of them sneaked even closer behind the vice principal with their presence still cut off.

There, Aiko finally noticed Hajime and Yue’s existence. Seeing the two who were slowly and stealthily approaching behind the vice principal, Aiko felt a violent bad premonition and she sent repeated glances at the vice principal and Hajime alternately.

Hajime smilingly conveyed「Morning」with his lip movement. Aiko too sent glances at the vice principal who was absorbed with his preaching while conveying「Good morning」with her lips movement.

Hajime nodded once and,

(For now, how about I attack this guy?)

He slowly took out Donner and aimed at the back of the vice principal’s head.

「No way-! Absolutely no way!」

「Muh. Exactly. It’s self-explanatory what does alma mater meant. It’s something that will be unforgettable for the whole life for the students, and you must not do anything that can harm this alma mater. In the first place――」

Aiko reflexively yelled and crossed both her arms to make a cross mark. She did that incidentally right after the vice principal was saying「Do you think it’s fine to put a stigma on the school?」, and so Aiko’s sudden eccentric behavior was also miraculously ignored.

Yue straightened up her index finger all of a sudden,

(……Don’t worry Aiko. Right now I’ll annihilate this barely remaining hair roots for you.)

Fire lit up above the finger. Yue’s gaze was directed toward the vice principal’s head.

「More than this is no good! It will be completely gone!」

「Exactly, Hatayama-sensei! The prestige of our school must not be harmed even more than this. If we lose our credence, it’s also possible for the alma mater of the students to be gone!」

Once more it was a relay of miraculous conversation.

Surely under the 7:3 ratio wig, the hair roots that were already in the verge of annihilation were squeezing out their

final willpower. As expected, perhaps feeling the danger instinctively, the vice principal inadvertently looked behind. Hajime and Yue smoothly moved to his blind spot with harmonized breathing.

Confirming that there wasn’t anyone behind him, the vice principal returned his gaze at Aiko. At the same time, Hajime and Yue also smoothly returned behind him.

The vice principal checked his watch and it seemed he would conclude his preaching. Surely this talk was something important to him that was grounded on his belief. But, Aiko was helplessly bothered by the two behind the vice principal that his words didn’t enter her head at all.

(The bell will ring soon! Please enter the classroom quickly! Or rather, eh? Why am I conversing with lip movement like this?)

Aiko responded with lip movement talk from being somehow carried away by the place’s atmosphere, she noticed the strangeness about that while urging Hajime and Yue with a scolding.

The two who even now were reaching out their hand together toward the wig of the vice principal as though to say ‘This is the first group work of us two desu!’ looked at each other’s face after seeing Aiko’s upset look and desperate lips movement. And then, they nodded as though something had passed between them, and right after that the two of them acted despondently which didn’t suit them.

(Even though I did this because I though Aiko is troubled……)

(……Even though I’m doing my best to help Aiko)

No matter how one thought of it what they were doing was nothing more than being mischievous, but Aiko who was in overwhelmed so much by the situation honestly felt guilt pressing on her chest.

Toward such Aiko, Hajime and Yue moistened their eyes with their mischievousness in full throttle while appealing.

(Aiko already hated me now huh.)

(……Aiko already hated me now?)

Getting told that by the man she was in love with and the top of the wive~s, there was no way Aiko who was already at her wits end could recover her calm,

「Such thing-, it's obvious that I love you very much!」

「Wha-. Ha, Hatayama-sensei, what are you suddenly……」

For some reason vice principal was greatly flustered. His wig head was blushing red until the tip of his ears and his expression was taken aback for a while. And then he cleared his throat once *cough-*.

「Ha, Hatayama-sensei. That's, it's, just what do you mean by that?」

The talk of the wig vice principal before this was「Anyway, there is no time, I'll stop with this much for now. I really wish that you can realize just how large the influence your carelessness in your speech has brought to our school. Although, it seem that you are hating me, perhaps my words are only entering your right ear before going out from the left ear right away」that was said with a lot of sarcasm in his tone.

It was at that timing that Aiko finally turned her focus at her talk with the vice principal. Of course, she wasn't listening to the vice principal's talk just now so she also didn't really understand what was said and asked at her. But, with the atmosphere and also with her social standing, here she absolutely cannot say anything like「Actually I'm not listening! I'm sorry!」.

(Wha, what to do? I don't know at all what is he talking about……. Wait, Aiko, remember it well. This wig, cough-, vice principal is talking about how to protect the school and about the necessity of protecting the school so……that's right! There is no doubt he is asking me whether I'm treasuring, loving the school or not!)

「Err, even if you ask me what I mean, the meaning is exactly just like I said……」

Ai-chan-sensei replied carefully while watching the situation. With how she was also turning upturned gaze to observe the situation, the wig vice principal was further bewildered.

「You, you really mean what you said……. Hatayama-sensei, you, in this kind of place you suddenly……please stop with you joke.」

The vice principal averted his gaze away with a huff. Hajime and Yue escaped to outside the field of vision with a splendid moving technique.

Aiko felt a heartburn seeing the wig-wearing middle-aged man blushing for some reason, so she gripped her chest tightly and racked her brain hard.

(What's this, this situation feel somewhat strange but……he is telling me to stop joking, that means he is thinking that I'm not thinking seriously about the school. As I thought

from the view point of vice principal who has worked in teaching profession for nearly thirty years until now, someone like me introducing myself as teacher is just presumptuous……but, it’s true that a school is a place to protect the students, and it’s a place of important memory that will remain through our life. Then, at the very least I have to convey that I’m serious!)

Still being unaware that the perception of both sides were mutually greatly deviating from each other, Aiko took a deep breath with resolve. The wig vice principal twitched seeing that straightforward gaze.

Aiko didn’t even pay attention to the wig vice principal twitching and she met his gaze frankly and,

「I’m not joking, I really feel fondness (for the school and students)! No, rather, it’s not an exaggeration even if I say that I feel love (for the school and students)!」

「Wha, what did you saayy――!?」

That powerful speech was delivered with a tightly clenched fist and a force that made one hallucinated the sea wave splashing behind her *splaa~~sh*. The serious feeling was conveyed clearly whether the recipient wanted it or not.

The wig vice principal took a step back as though he was overpowered and,

「I, I HAVE, A WIFE AND CHILDRENNNNNNNNNN~~~~」

He yelled such thing while running through the corridor. Of course, Hajime and Yue escaped to the blind spot with divine smoothness. At that time, a divine wind also blew and the vice principal’s wig was smoothly taken and fell on the floor.

Aiko watched with her mouth wide open at the vice principal who suddenly yelled out incomprehensible thing while running away.

「……Aiko, you are a miraculous human. This is the first time since I was born witnessing this kind of artistic misunderstanding.」

「Hee? Eh?」

「Aa~, Aiko. You see, perhaps vice principal is thinking that he was confessed by Aiko. After all you gave him those lines after he was sarcastically asking whether you hate actually him.」

「Yes?」

Aiko was astonished. However, a beat later she recalled her dialogue with the vice principal and then thinking of what Hajime said she guessed the situation, which caused her expression to lose color in a flash. And then, she picked up the wig on the floor using her fingertips and,

「Vi, VICE PRINCIPAALLLLLL-! IT'S A MISUNDERSTANDINGGG! THIS IS A MISUNDERSTANDING!!! ALSO YOUR WIGGG!!! PLEASE DON'T ENTER THE STAFF ROOM! THE TIME OF MORNING ASSEMBLY WILL BE HELL~~~!! YOUR WIG IS STILL HEREEEEEEE-」

She yelled that and dashed with amazing speed.

It felt like it would ended up the same with her yelling 'wig wig' like that but……

While staring at the back figure of the cute homeroom teacher who was energetically running in place today too, Yue shortly said.

「……Nn. As I thought, school is fun.」

「Yep, well, I think it’s relatively an extraordinary student life though.」

The bell rang at the same time with Hajime’s retort.

Today too the mundane school life was starting.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Arifureta Chapter 251

Arifureta After II　So Close That They Squabbled With Each Other?　First Part

There was a spacious underground room at the underground of Nagumo residence. Of course it was a room that originally didn’t exist, but after Hajime returned home from another world, he created it because it was necessary for various kind of his works.

In that personal underground workshop, the aforementioned Hajime was folding his arms while humming「Hm~~m」.

「The stage is created. The basic system is also okay. The fixing of consciousness and also the safety are cleared. What’s left is the concrete story and character setting that match with it but……no matter how the idea doesn’t really come to me.」

Hajime reconfirmed the situation by speaking to himself while he raised the humming sound of his worry once more. The gaze of such Hajime was fixed at the item that was put on the work stand, something like a mechanical eye mask that was embedded with bluish white crystal.

Its appearance was like an eye mask shaped electronic massager for the area around the eyes, or perhaps like a headset for virtual reality game……or rather, actually the item was exactly that, it was a game device that Hajime

created himself. However, the technology and materials used to create it came from the mixture of earth and another world, even age of god magic was applied to make this game of full body experience.

In earth it was still at the level where human finally laid their hand on the tip of the technology of virtual world production, but when it was by the hand of the world's strongest transmutation master this completed product was easily realized.

By the way, by applying soul magic only the user's consciousness would be send to the virtual world, but actually this thing was something that was mostly close to out-of-body experience, in addition the virtual world was formed from something like an illusion that was endlessly close to reality because of the application of regeneration magic, so not only the five senses, the user could even sense other things like magic power or presence.

This item was the painstaking piece of Hajime's work that especially paid close attention to the safety mechanism. Rather, it wasn't even an exaggerated to call it his greatest masterpiece. As a gamer, and then as the son of the president of a game maker company, he made absolutely no compromise in this effort!

Now then, about the impetus of this game device's creation though……

(……Even though I made it painstakingly, but it will be meaningless if Myuu cannot enjoy it. The concept is pretty much "fun training" so it's settled that the game must be RPG……what kind of RPG that a girl will like? For now, I had put in characters noncommittally for checking its operation but……hm~~~m)

Just as could be understood from Hajime’s worry, this device was created for Myuu’s training use.

With Myuu pleading that she wanted to be strong like Hajime and others as the impetus, Hajime and party (other than the wive~s, the classmates also joined in) educated Myuu about fighting skill.

About the actual training itself, it could be done anywhere if barrier of concealment was laid out beforehand using magic or artifact, so there was no proble. However, from Hajime’s thinking that a real combat, and furthermore a real combat against stronger enemy was far better than training, then as expected there would be no place for Myuu to test her strength except if they went to Tortus.

But, crossing worlds every time for training and then preparing opponent that was just at the right level were really troublesome. However, from Hajime’s stand point, in this current time when there wasn’t any emergency situation, he didn’t have the slightest intention to make his beloved daughter going through severe training where “the worst case” could possibly happen, like when he tempered himself in the bottom of abyss against the monstrous opponents there.

——He wanted Myuu to annihilate stronger enemy without rushing and with some elbowroom, so she could have healthy growth.

That was the genuine parental love of a father who had a daughter.

And so, fighting virtual enemy in a virtual world was actually a method that was just right for this.

Now then, like that the creation of the game device was roughly completed, but here Hajime bumped into a wall here. He had progressed with the creation until here based on the concept of “Fighting against stronger enemy. However, doing it while having a blast”, but he couldn’t think of the “story” that would become the fundamental of the essential part of “having a blast”.

After all, till the end this was a virtual practice for testing the result of Myuu’s training. And so, for example if a goblin was put as the opening enemy befitting the standard of RPG. However, naturally Myuu would fight by freely using weapon artifacts like Donnerr and so on, it was clear that the goblins would become□Gobuu!?□at the end of their encounter with Myuu.

He didn’t want to make Myuu go Ore TUEEEEE. Having said that, he didn’t wasn’t to see a goblin that could evade railgun by sight. A certain bugged rabbit somewhere was already enough for something like that. (TN: Ore TUEEEEE = an expression in Japan that kinda mean like I’m stronggg. Used when in a net game or fighting game when there is a player that is overwhelmingly strong compared to other players. Or to refer when in manga or LN the MC have transcendental strength)

In other words, the power level of the enemy following the scenario of the usual RPG and Myuu’s strength didn’t mesh with each other.

If he was going to create a content that could clear up this problem well, where Myuu could have fun advancing the story while she could constantly fight enemy whose strength was always a bit above hers……

「——No good. I cannot think of anything at all. Worst case, I can only set up goblin that can dodge railgun but……before that, perhaps I should try consulting Tou-san first.」

Hajime who frowned imagining a goblin that was leaving behind a line of afterimages behind when it move roughly scratched his head that had reached the limit, he then sighed while standing up from his chair.

He exited the underground workshop, climbed the stair and entered the living room. Today was a holiday, but there was no one in the room except Shia. Shuu and Sumire were working, but he didn't know about what the other members were doing.

「Eh? Shia, what about Yue and others?」

「Fuwaa. Ah, Hajime-san. Is your work over?」

It seemed Shia was napping on the living room's sofa while pleasantly getting showered by the shining in sunlight. She asked back with a slovenly absentminded expression. She looked a bit like she was half-awake.

Hajime prepared to go outside while answering Shia even when he was writhing slightly seeing the figure of "droopy Shia" with her rabbit ears laying down limply.

「No, I reached the limit already. So I'm going to Tou-san's place. I'll bring him some supply and also try to ask him between his works whether I can receive some kind of hint.」

「Howaa, is that sooo. Have a safe trip desuu. Ah, right right, about Yue-san and others, Kaori-san will come to play so Yue-san just now is waiting in ambus——cough-, is going to pick her uppp. Tio-san and Remia-san went out shipping for Myuu-chan's clothees」

「I see. And Shizuku?」

「It looks like a self proclaimed rival of Yaegashi family was coming with declaration of challenge, so she accompanied her family even though she was really reluctant to deal with the challenger desuu. And so, she said that today she cannot come desuu」

「……That girl is really a busybody huh.」

Imagining Shizuku who went along with her hustling family with a tired expression, Hajime looked at far away with a really speechless expression. She shouldn’t be so reserved anymore after everything so far, so he guessed that her situation wasn’t that serious if she didn’t contact them for reinforcement.

「Well, got it. Then, Shia. I’m going out for a bit, so tell Yue and others for me.」

「Yhee~~s, leave it to mee~~desuu~~」

Shia who was burying her face again into the soft cushion sleepily waved around her rabbit ears as reply while she switched over into “droopy Shia mode” once more. She seemed to be in a really dreamy state of mind.

“Droopy Shia” who was bathing in sunlight while her panty was in full view, her rabbit tail shaking *furin~furin~* was terribly adorable. Hajime was driven with an impulse to give her lap pillow and loved her with all his might, but with an effort he endured in order to fulfill his duty as a papa and he exited the house.

A while after that, while the sound of sleeper’s breathing *suya~* of a happy rabbit was resounding in the Nagumo

residence’s living room, there was the sound *clack* of the entrance door opening.

「Geez-, Yue you idiot! Pervert! You rascal!」

「……What abusive language against someone who went to pick you up. Stupid Kaori.」

「Something like that cannot be said as “picking up” you know? That’s called ambushing! Furthermore you even use illusion magic to the street, you are really idiot-」

「……Kaori screamed ‘Hyaaa~~~-‘. You screamed ‘Hyaaa~~~-’. Pufuh」

「Yueee~~~」

Such noisy quarrel could be heard.

It seemed Kaori was ambushed by Yue when she was in the middle of going to Nagumo residence. It seemed Yue even used illusion magic to shock Kaori. Recalling back Kaori’s reaction of that time caused Yue to make a smile that looked really joyful.

Whether in the past or in the future, surely there would be no one other than Kaori for whom Yue would purposefully go out of the house just to make her shocked.

In her own way, Kaori as someone in the position who received Yue’s mischievousness with her body was angry, even so she didn’t look like that she hated it at all. Even now her hands were reaching toward the hair of Yue who was taking off her shoes, she used a hair styling product that she took out from somewhere and fought strenuously to tailor Yue’s hair into Mohican style.

Yue walked toward the living room without even paying any mind that her fluffy and soft blonde hair was fumbled around and turned into a strange shape like the trees of the witch’s forest by Kaori. She then caught sight of Shia who was napping with a loose expression that looked extremely careless. She was in the same state like before Yue went out.

「Ah, Shia, she is in the middle of nap. Then, we have to be quiet.」

「……Nn」

It was as though their quarrel just now was nonexistent. The two stopped their dispute completely and went quiet. They approached slo~wly toward Shia and they stared gently at Shia who was mumbling ‘munya munya’.

「Munya munya……ehehe, more than this is impossible――I cannot beat you to death more than this you knoww~~」

「「……」」

「Nnyaa. ……Kufuu~~, then, just a bit moreee~~」

「「……」」

It was slightly off from the template.

This rabbit-san was making a happy expression, with a leisurely atmosphere, looking like she was feeling really pleasant, while going to beat up to death someone a bit more. Run awaaay! That someone inside the dream! Super run awaaay!

「……Let’s leave her quietly.」

「……Nn. That’s better.」

Yue and Kaori slo~wly slo~wly backed away. They also took distance of heart.

「Err, and, where is Hajime-kun? I heard that Myuu-chan and others aren't here, but Hajime-kun is here right?」

「……Nn. He is shutting himself inside the workshop since last night. It's troubling that he will forget the time right away when he got absorbed.」

「He would also forget his meal and sleep when he was like that. Then, let's go call him. Are we also going to make him rest while we are at it?」

「……He haven't taken lunch yet too, so it's just right.」

They nodded at each other and headed toward the underground workshop.

By the way, the main path to head toward the underground workshop was through the stair in the corridor, but actually the sofa in the living room could also be used to go there. The sofa would be overturned backward when someone was sitting on it, and then that person would be dropped into the underground corridor.

There was really no meaning to purposefully get dropped like that, so everyone used the stair to head there, but limited to the people of Yaegashi family who sometimes visited (excluding Shizuku) and Myuu, the instead had never used the stair even once until now. They liked getting flipped and dropped down.

「……Nn? Hajime, not here?」

「Eh? It's true.」

The two who entered the workshop tilted their head seeing that the place’s owner wasn’t there.

Did he leave the house? In that case did he not leave behind any notification memo? Thinking that the two walked deeper into the room.

It seemed there wasn’t any memo, but in exchange a headset that was obviously in the middle of manufacturing entered their sight.

「……That’s the artifact that Hajime is currently getting absorbed in developing.」

「Is that so. Somehow it looks similar with a headset used for seeing 3D movie isn’t it?」

「……Nn. That’s not necessarily wrong.」

Yue began to talk about the specific of its function in respond of Kaori’s question. Kaori was listening in admiration and she was staring at the headset shaped artifact game device for some reason.

Yue spoke a sentence toward such Kaori.

「……Kaori you silent lecher.」

「Why!?」

Kaori was startled at the sudden insult. Yue answered that retort which was mixed with question.

「……The reason you are staring hard like that is only one. I saw through that you were having delusion that you would be able to experience flirting with Hajime anytime in your home if you have that. Just what in the world you are

planning to do to Hajime in the virtual world? This silent lecher.」

「I'm not a silent lecher! I wasn't having any delusion like that! Or rather, it's Yue who is the silent lecher by the time you come to that conclusion!」

「……What stupid statement. Even without having delusion, I'm always flirting with Hajime!」

「Certainly!」

There was no room for argument there. But, Kaori wished that Yue would stop already with her attempt of planting the impression of "Kaori is a silent lecher" at every available opportunity.

Kaori was able to assert. That she was leading a wholesome life! Even if she had a bit of daydreaming habit, even if she was conscious toward any kind of things that had just gotten used by Hajime, but it was beyond doubt that she was a wholesome girl! There was no room for suspicion there! Should be!

And so, here she firmly objected at Yue.

But, Yue-sama tried to utterly destroy the objection of such Kaori head-on.

As the result, at the end it connected to the usual cat fight.

Nyaah――!! Nyaah――!! Mui-mui-! Mukiiiiih!!

Both of them pinched at each other's cheeks and rolled around on the floor of the workshop for a few minutes. The situation only looked like they were frolicking around with each other if seen from the side, however, the two who were

seriously quarrelling with each other became engrossed with it against their better judgment and they completely forgot to pay attention to the surrounding.

Yes, they were at the workshop of a transmutation master where Hajime’s hand-made artifacts, the artifacts created from Hajime’s interest working in full throttle where there were understandable things until incomprehensible things scattered out everywhere.

GON- A nice sound rang out, coming from Yue who was going to stand out banging the back of her head strongly at the desk above her.

Yue reflexively raised a strange scream「Nmii!?」while Kaori was childishly making merry「Ya~i, ya~i」at such Yue, but the next moment, the headset and other minerals fell from the desk and hit the crown of her head and Kaori raised a matching scream「Nmii!?」.

While the both of them were holding their head while trembling, suddenly an ominous sound *pachi pachi* struck their ears.

「……Ah, err, Yue? This, by any chance, is this actually bad?」

「……This is bad degozaru.」

Cold sweats trickled down. If there was only broken item, then the two could just harmoniously prostrate dogeza in front of Hajime and apologized. But, the headset in front of them that was fiercely sparking and further flickering with magic power light and overflowing with immense magic power that made their skin tingled only gave off ominous feeling.

Yue’s speech spontaneously became strange but her thinking was calm. No matter what happened, there was no way any phenomenon that happened here could leak outside from this workshop that boasted the strongest endurance in the world. Therefore, Yue would use the ultimate skill of instant teleportation “Divine Existence” and escaped together with Kaori.

Yue who decided that in an instant leaped toward Kaori, and then they escaped right――

Flash- Light exploded.

There was no sound or shockwave. There was only light that painted over the workshop for a beat.

Inside the workshop that recovered its former color, there were only Yue who was hanging over Kaori as though she had pushed her down, and Kaori who was tightly hugging such Yue left behind. It seemed that the two were unconscious.

-, Yue!? Are you okay!?

Kaori who was aware that her consciousness had flew away for a moment raised her body in a flash at the same time when her consciousness returned and she confirmed Yue’s safety. But, she didn’t hear that voice that was so pleasant to hear it was odious that usually would respond after a beat later.

She had confirmed that a moment before her consciousness was cut off, Yue was jumping toward her to cover her. That was why Kaori completely thought that Yue was on her bosom, but she didn’t feel her weight there, and even when she looked around restlessly she didn’t find her anywhere.

Or rather,

「Wha, what is thiss~~~~」

Kaori was in chaos!

The reason was even though before this she should be inside the workshop wearing her personal clothes, when she noticed she was inside a room that was surrounded with coarsely made wood and she was waking up above a bed. When she looked more carefully, the clothes she was wearing was also changed into something coarse that looked like it came from the period of Europe’s Middle Age. It was a one piece and loose, yes, if this was in a movie or drama then this would be the clothing of a villager girl.

Kaori was looking down on herself dumbfounded for a while, next she rushed out in hurry. She opened the thin wooden door so hard the door could come off from its hinge, ignored an aging male that was talking about something smilingly inside what seemed to be a living room, and without pause she forcefully opened the entrance door and leaped out.

「Ju, just where, is this?」

Blue sky stretched without end. Numerous houses that looked like hovel. Foreign people working busily wearing simple clothes. This place was obviously not Japan.

Still in chaos, Kaori called out to a young man who happened to pass by.

「E, excuse me. I have a bit of question……」

「Heey, this is the village of beginning “AAAAAAAA”.」

「The name is too noncommittal! Or rather I’m not asking that!」

Kaori was in chaos! The young man tilted his head「Oh?」at such Kaori.

「What’s this, just when I thought who is it because I was called so suddenly――」

「Eh, eh? What is it?」

Seeing the young man suddenly stopped his sentence was also surprising, but the transparent floating projection display that manifested in front of Kaori’s eyes right after that also made Kaori’s body trembled from feeling startled.

Above the display, there was a line “Please decide your name”, and below it there was a frame with blank space, and even further below was an unfamiliar keyboard.

「This is……could it be this place is……」

‘Could it be I’m inside that game device that is in the middle of development?’ Kaori reached that fact. The present condition where she suddenly arrived in an unfamiliar world, the young man that was spewing out stereotyped line, and also the display that appeared midair, they were all completely like an RPG world. Kaori’s appearance must be also the setting where she likely started as a villager girl in the beginning.

「So that’s how it is? Yue said that the artifact used soul magic, so the instant it was broken only my soul was sent flying inside the game, is that it? ……It doesn’t feel like I’m only soul at all though……h~m, let’s worry later. For now, I have to search Yue.」

Kaori who switched over her thinking looked forward at the young man who was smiling and waiting for her, she decided for now she would obey the rule of the game and at least decided her name before searching for Yue.

「Eerr, I'll use my name, Ka-o-ri.」

She typed in her name and clicked the enter key. A confirmation screen came out so she also pressed OK at it. And then the display vanished automatically.

「——but isn't this the regrettable daughter of the village chief Kaori.」

「Who are you calling regrettable!?」

She was suddenly insulted.

「And so what's the matter, village chief's regrettable daughter?」

「There is no meaning typing in my name isn't it!? Or rather this thing about regrettable is the default!?」

There was not even a fragment of ill will that could be seen from the young man who was still making an amiable smile without change. Kaori silently thought 'this is a game, this is a game' to suppress her welling up dissatisfaction and she asked once more.

「Do you know Yue? Ah, I wonder if you know what I mean by Yue. She is an extraordinarily beautiful girl with blond hair……」

「This is the village of beginning "AAAAAAAA".」

「Ah, yes. So you don't know.」

It seemed the person would return to its first line when he was asked something he didn’t know. Kaori held the conviction that this place was a virtual reality as expected and she wracked her brain of what to do now.

But, it was at that time that the young man talked at Kaori.

「Come to think of it, village chief’s regrettable daughter.」

「……What is it?」

Resignation was crucial in the society.

「You know, it seems this morning priest-san was picking up a sister with a screw loose.」

「That must be Yue!」

If the person in question was here, surely the curtain of great battle Yue VS Kaori of who knows how many times would be opened.

Talking to the villagers, gathered information, and then determined the destination——it was truly the classic flow. Kaori who became convinced of that faithfully expressed her gratitude before she sprinted away.

The church was the tallest building in the village. Because the houses in the village were all one-story house, the tall building with a cross affixed on its top could be seen from anywhere in the village.

「Uuh, my body is heavy……」

Although it was inside the game, in the first place the physical ability of Kaori who had obtained the flesh body of god apostle was in foul play level. Originally she was able to

easily display a running in the level that would smash the heart of an Olympic sprinter into pieces.

But, the current Kaori could only display a speed that was at the level of that Olympic sprinter. She was told that this was a game for training use, so perhaps it was possible that a limitation was set up for the initial configuration.

After all, the current her was a villager girl……Kaori was sprinting while conjecturing the reason why her body wouldn’t move like she wanted. She pretended as though she couldn’t hear the villagers saying things like「Ah, that’s the village chief’s regrettable daughter!」「Today too she is running like that……what a regrettable girl」while pointing their finger at her.

Like that, Kaori who was dealt with delicate mental damage finally arrived nearby the church’s front, it was at that time when she was about to enter inside the church.

DOGON- Such terrific explosive sound and fierce vibration shook the village. What’s more they happened consecutively.

「Wha wha wha wha, what!? Just what in the world is going on!?」

The bewildered Kaori put her emergency break and immediately took distance from the church.

Right after that, everywhere on the building’s walls was blown away one after another, the church that lost its supporting pillars tilted violently. Without pause the building helplessly creaked *gigigigi-* while tilting even more drastically, like that the building collapsed as though it was toppled sideways.

Dust clouds rose up grandly.

Ahead of the gaze of Kaori who was looking at the church’s destruction in astonishment, human silhouette swayed inside the dust cloud. The silhouette had small stature. And then, it gave a presence that Kaori was familiar with.

「Yue!」

「……Nn. Kaori, I’m glad you are fine.」

Yue who said that while showing her figure by using wind to sweep away the veil of cloud dust――was a sister-san.

She was wearing a black loose one-piece that reached until her ankle and a wimple covering her head. Different from a pretend sister, her hair was covered properly that it couldn’t be seen, so instead Yue’s beautiful face became emphasized, matched with her expressionless face, a solemn atmosphere could be felt from her.

She was truly looking like a pious servant of god……

If there was no destroyed church behind her.

Kaori wanted to ask various thing including confirming their present situation, but first thing first,

「Why is the church turned like this?」

「……I flew into rage when I was said that my brain has a screw loose. I have no regret. I can boast that I have done a good work.」

「I, I see.」

Behind Yue, a priest with gentle looking expression was standing in the middle of the wreckage and he spoke with

his sooty appearance.

□With heart of valor and kindness, now, go forth. Sister with a screw loose Yue.□

The wind of the sister with a screw loose burst. The priest-san flew to the sky. It was as though he was a leaf that was toyed by the wind.

□This is your home. I will wait for your return at all times.□

The home was gone already. Or rather, that place was a sky.

While the gentle voice of the priest-san that was flying in the sky was resounding, Kaori thought about Yue who was fully exposing her displeasure and about the matter from here on, and she let out a de~~ep sigh.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The beginning seems long, but this is a short story.

It’s a bit of scene of Yue and Kaori’s everyday.

When this is over, I’m thinking that perhaps I should write a long arc of After.

Arifureta Chapter 252

Arifureta After II　So Close That They Squabbled With Each Other?　Middle Part

AN: For Shirakome, three chapters are “short story”.

「Welcome! This is the church of “AAAAAAA” village. Will you carry out a confession? Or else will you carry out a confession? I also won’t mind if you want to carry out a confession you know?」

Yue finally calmed down, and while Kaori was talking with Yue in order to grasp their current situation, the priest-san was smilingly inviting a confession standing in the middle of the wreckage of the collapsed church. As expected perhaps he was holding a grudge.

Kaori was making confirmation to Yue while her cheeks were twitching at the priest-san who was earnestly throwing words confession, confession at them.

「As I thought, this place is really inside that game device isn’t it?」

「……Nn. Based on the situation there is no doubt. Furthermore, there is a big possibility that it’s broken

somewhere.

Broken?

……Nn. It’s indeed true that the first position we appeared at is set randomly, but the speech of the NPC shouldn’t be this strange. I was taught a bit about the content and the system so there is no doubt about that.

I, I see, indeed. There is no way Hajime-kun will make the default setting to be “regrettable” or “screw loose” even though this is a game created for Myuu-chan’s sake.(TN: Sorry, I changed the deplorable into regrettable)

Kaori nodded in comprehension. At the same time she let out a sigh that sounded a bit uneasy. She imagined something a little bit unpleasant, that perhaps by any chance Hajime was thinking that she was regrettable.

……Anyway, we should logout but……

……That function doesn’t broke right?

Kaori was feeling something ominous from Yue’s voice with her gaze turning toward Yue, while Yue called out the individual information screen using a game gesture just like what she was taught before. She was whispering Open while her hand was waved as though stroking the empty air in front of her.

As the result a blue shining window materialized in front of Yue’s eyes. A unique sound *von* resounded, and then window fragments gathered from up, down, right, and left as though it was a block game, and in the blink of eye a screen the size of a 24 inch television was completed. It was Hajime’s fixation that took all night to finish.

Anyway, Yue let out a sigh of relieve that the individual information screen was opened normally, next she clicked on the button “return to home” at the right bottom of the screen while feeling a bit nervous.

——Why are you giving up here! Do your best, do your best! You can do it, you can do it!

A voice of heaven descended. It seemed they couldn’t go home. It appeared that more passion and guts were necessary.

「……」

「……」

Yue clicked the button wordlessly once more.

——If you give up, that will be the end of your adventure! Now, dash toward that sunset!

As expected, it seemed the voice of heaven wouldn’t allow returning to home. And then, what should be rising right now was the morning sun, telling them to dash toward the sunset was just…

「I, I’ll give it a try.」

While Kaori’s cheeks were twitching seeing Yue throwing a dreadfully scornful gaze at empty air with her usual stare having advanced until the third stage, Kaori imitated Yue and called out her individual information screen, and she clicked the button “return to home”.

——You shitty maggot-. What are you doing trying to go home as you damn please-. The destination of you bastard is only to hell or to hell-. If you don’t want me to “pii—* you

then return to your squad! That’s your one and only home you bastard!

「Hiih!?」

Having suddenly poured with the angry yell of Hajime, Kaori spontaneously held her head with both hands and she became unable to stand up from surprise.

「……Come to think of it, it seems that the program for Hauria use was also included separately.」

「The, the training for mass producing those berserk rabbits? Hajime-kun, how far she is planning to evolve those people?」

Yue shrugged toward Kaori who was trembling all over.

In the end their bad premonition hit the bull’s eye and they couldn’t logout from the game. It was unclear why when it was Yue, Hajime’s voice had the tone of Matsuoka ○zo, while when it was Kaori, Hajime’s voice had a tone like Sergeant Hartma○, but surely this too was the adverse effect from the broken device. (TN: Matsuoka Shuzo is a retired tennis player who is currently hosting a TV show. He is known for his energetic and passionate character)

「What will we do, Yue. How are we going home……ah, that’s right! Yue, use soul magic!」

「Mu, there is that method.」

This game device was created by applying soul magic. The highly precise sensation where there was almost no difference with reality was because of that. In that case, it could be thought that for an expert of soul magic it should be possible to logout even without relying on the system.

Yue wasted no time trying to use soul magic.

――Insufficient level

「Mu? ……Mumuh」

「Yue?」

Each time Yue persisted with something while mumbling 「Mumuh」, the heavenly voice “insufficient level” descended down. At the end a hypocritically courteous words “let’s understand your standing” descended.

Kaori who somehow guessed the situation asked.

「It looks no good isn’t it?」

「Muu. Even though it absorbed us because it’s broken, but I cannot accept it at all that only this system is perfectly working.」

According to Yue, Yue herself was also participating at the creation of this bodily sensation system that applied soul magic. And then, the “binding” of the game system that was directly affecting the soul was operating effectively even at Yue herself who was a cooperator in the artifact’s creation.

If this effect was purely due to Yue’s own magic, then she would only need to break that restriction, but if Hajime’s artifact was involved there then it would be next to impossible for Yue to cancel it.

Yue who was unable to release her “binding” no matter how many times she tried dropped her shoulders dejectedly.

「……As expected from Hajime’s artifact. And then my magic. We have done a good work.」

「This is not the time for singing your own praise, Yue…… what to do. Is there no other way to logout?」

「……Nn. It’s not that there is none. If I remember correctly, there is a safe point at each village, we should be able to logout from there too. Myuu can go home anytime she want, but Hajime said that he won’t let Hauria to escape as they please, and he said that he picked base logout method for them.」

「Hajime-kun, he is merciless to the people of Hauria isn’t he……」

They couldn’t stop even if they wanted to stop. If they wanted to stop then they could only progress inside the game. And what’s more that too surely would be a game scenario with an extraordinarily lovely hard mode, no, hell mode in Hajime style.

Thinking about the people of Hauria who someday would be thrown in here, Kaori quietly prayed for their happiness in the next world.

「And Yue. If there is save point in each village, then what about this village? Let’s quickly try out that save point.」

「……There is none in this village.」

「Eh? Why? You said just now that each village has one.」

「……Be, because this is the village of beginning. So it’s not needed.」

「……Yue?」

Kaori quickly asked Yue about the save point of this village, but for some reason Yue was answering with her gaze subtly

looking away. It felt like her tone was also subtly strange.

Kaori turned a suspicious gaze at Yue, but Yue was muttering to herself「……Well then, we have to go to the next village now that we have decided」with a subtly strange tone as expected.

Kaori turned her gaze. Toward the direction of the priest-san who was still eloquently urging for confession in the middle of the wreckage.

「Excuse me Father. Can you please tell me where is the save point of this village?」

「……Kaori! You doubt me? That's crue――」

「Village chief's regrettable daughter-san. You are regrettable as usual. You know don't you? It's right here in this church!」

The church, was no more.

Kaori turned her face calmly toward Yue still with a smiling face. Yue calmly turned toward the direction of the far beyond.

A time of silence flowed for a while. The gaze was also flowing from Kaori=>Yue=>brilliantly shining sun.

A beat later.

「YUE YOU IDIOOOOOOOOT!!」

「……Ka, KAORI YOU STUPIID――mugyuh!?」

Kaori's yell resounded.

Yue talked back in reflex, but her words sounded unusually frailer. In addition, her cheeks were swiftly stretched out

mugyuuuu and her words were cut off.

「Idiot idiot idiot idiot-, Yue you idiot! Why was the first thing you do after the game started was destroying the save point!? This screw loose sister-saN-!!」

「Re, rerause――」

「Don’t say because!」

「Fho, fhovefer――」

「Don’t say however! Geez-, you are really-! The way of thinking of blowing away everything the first thing if there is something that you cannot stomach, I think that’s completely no good! I think, that’s really no good!」

Kaori preached while inflicting *mugyuuuuu* at Yue’s cheeks. Perhaps she was using a lot of strength, Yue’s soft cheeks were stretching and stretching and her eyes turned delicately teary.

As expected it seemed Yue recognized that she had been rash, at first she was obediently letting herself treated like that and listened meekly, but right after Yue heard「In the first place Yue is~」and she felt the atmosphere that the preaching would become long, first thing first she counterattacked. Her index fingers poked *dosu-* at both sides of Kaori’s stomach.

「Hehyah!?」

Kaori-san’s body bent stra――ight backward stiffly. Seeing such Kaori, Yue-san laughed「You said ‘hehyah’. It was ‘hehyah’. Puh, giggle giggle」.

The outcome was obvious.

——Nyah—nyaah! Mui muih, fushaa————!!

The gong of the usual cat fight rang. Both of them scuffled with each other while rolling around on the church that was transformed into a mountain of rubble and in front of the priest whose suggestion of sin confession was becoming forceful.

But, there several villagers were passing by.

「Okaa-san, those people……」

「Shih. You must not stare at the screw loose sister and village chief’s regrettable daughter!」

When a young child pointed his finger, his mother hurriedly covered her child’s eyes and they quickly left as though they had just witnessed something terrifying.

「Those two did that to the church……the hell with them.」

「I thought that someday they would actually do it. After all, they are the village chief’s regrettable daughter-san and the sister-san with a screw loose.」

A young man shouldering farming tool was looking at the destroyed church and said that pitifully, while the uncle beside him sighed while saying that.

「A really good person, has left us.」

「How sad this incident is.」

An uncle pushing a cart looked at the church with an anguished expression, and another uncle who was similarly carrying a baggage faced the church and offered words of

prayer. The priest was still alive despite the destruction of the church though……

The air of the surrounding villagers felt somewhat strange, or rather their atmosphere was dark. Yue and Kaori who were covered with dust from rolling around finally noticed. Both of them stood up feeling unable to stay there longer from being surrounded at a distance while being seen with a gaze as though they were dangerous character.

「……Err, Yue. For now there is nothing that can be done for what is broken, about what should we do from here on……」

「……Nn. I am Yue. A woman who won't look back to the past.」

「How about you look back? The next time you do another destructive activity irresponsibly, I'll seriously make you eat disintegration bombardment okay?」

Yue averted her gaze from Kaori whose blood vein was emerging on her forehead still with a smiling face, and she called out her individual information screen once more.

「……Cough-. Just like I said before, if it's save point, the next village also has it. And so, for now we should aim to go there.」

「I guess. Our body might be in the real world I think, and when Hajime-kun go home he will surely do something somehow, but if there is anything we can do then it's better to give it a try.」

「……Nn. But, look here.」

The two easily progressed their talk so smoothly to the degree that would make anyone wonder just what was with

the quarrel just now.

Yue pointed at her status screen, so Kaori got close to Yue’s shoulder and peered in with her body glued close on Yue. The content that was projected there was,

==========

Name : Yue-pon

Rank : 1 / 50 remaining until the next liberation

Job : Apprentice Sister

Title : Sister With a Screw Loose

Skill : No Chant Imagination Configuration

Magic : Flame Magic [Fireball]

Equipment : A set of apprentice sister outfit

Special mention : Has criminal record

Money : 1,000

==========

Other than those there were also items at hand and also playing time recorded, but there was no list for specs that were quantified into number like in Tortus’s status plate. It was made like this with the reason so the player wouldn’t misunderstand the number as their own strength in real battle and so that the player couldn’t overwhelm the enemy using the difference in status amount.

HP gauge that was common for RPG also didn’t exist with similar reasons. Conforming to reality, no matter how strong someone was they would get instant game over if their head was cut off, but in reverse no matter what kind of strong enemy could possibly be defeated depending on the method.

Kaori who saw Yue’s status nodded and said「I see」.

「As expected you have a criminal record.」

「……Oi, Kaori. What do you mean by as expected? I am always obeying law――」

「Nn」

Kaori replied just like Yue while her finger was pointing toward the destroyed church. A beat after Yue turned her gaze there.

「……I’m generally obeying law in the real world.」

「You nonchalantly ranked down “always” into “generally” even in the real world there.」

Yue-sama wouldn’t look back to the past! She also wouldn’t accept Kaori’s straight-man retort!

「……Rather than that, the problem is this “rank” and “money”.」

「Before that, let me ask a little bit more, Yue-pon. See here, about my individual information screen, Yue-pon. In my special mention the word ‘accomplice’ is written. Yue-pon, why is this I wonder? I didn’t really do anything but now I have criminal record, Yue-pon. Tell me Yue-pon. Heey, heey, Yue-pon. Yue-pon, sheesh Yue-pon-」

Very unusually Yue was covering her face with both hands and her ears were bright red for some reason while she crouched down on the spot. She whispered with a small voice「……uu, because of a passing fancy I unconsciously」 while trembling in shame.

The expression of Kaori who was crouching down beside such Yue was truly a really wide grin. She was showing her friendly smile that always charmed the surrounding while poking Yue's cheek with her index finger. Kaori was enjoying the squishy sensation that might became a habit while intently speaking piercing words.

「Well, it doesn't matter now, Yue-pon. I still cannot accept it but, we won't finish anything like this Yue-pon. And? What is this "rank" and "money" about, Yue-pon?」

「……Kaori, what nerve. This sister with a screw loose Yue-pon will turn the village girl into cinder for the peaceful life of the village.」

「Wawawah, calm down Yue! I'm sorry! I won't say it anymore!」

A ball of flame lit up on Yue's fingertip. Its appearance was shabby but the pressure that it gave off was a bad news. It seemed that even the most basic of elementary magic could be filled with high class power by the way one controlled the amount of magic power and the compression rate.

The sister with a screw loose Yue-pon pointed finger gun gesture at Kaori and mercilessly shot a lot of that. That magic that was shot wildly like the sweeping of a gatling gun was somehow evaded by Kaori even while her face was going pale.

In exchange, from behind Kaori countless explosions and screams were……

「Aah!? The shoemaker Rodriguez is blown away!」

「What!? What is happening!? My house is gone!?」

「Kuu! Everyone-, I'll hold them back here! Run while you all still can!」

「Village chief! That's reckless! Your opponent is that sister-san with a screw loose you know!? Even for you that's rash!」

「Hah, don't worry about me. Even like this when I was young I did quite much as an adventurer. I'll just take her on a bit and then I'll catch up to you later.」

「Chief, someone like you is……」

For some reason Kaori's father was becoming the hero of the village, but seeing that the daughter of that hero was involved with the turmoil, in a sense this was like a family scandal, or even like stirring up trouble to get credit from solving it.

After that, Yue who mercilessly turned the village chief into something like a ragged cloth and destroyed Rodriguez and the shoe shop mistaken the remaining amount of her magic power that was restrained more than she imagined by the system, and she collapsed face first from her magic power running dry. Similarly, Kaori whose physical ability was restrained and now not only she couldn't transform into apostle, she couldn't even use magic was also ran out of stamina and collapsed face first.

「Ju, just what are, we doing, in this time of emergency…… zee, zee」

「……Haa haa. Uu, certainly」

While feeling the intense gazes of the villagers who were surrounding the two from a distance, Yue and Kaori got up somehow and they sat down side by side.

「Le, let’s return to our talk. And, what is this “rank” and “money” about?」

「……Nn. About this “rank”, this is the restriction level that is put on us. I cannot use anything other than fireball, and Kaori’s physical ability is low with apostle transformation and magic unusable are also because of that. By leveling up, we will get closer to our ability in the real world.」

「Is that so. Even when in not perfect state, manage it somehow with what you can do……this concept is really like Hajime-kun.」

By the way, Kaori’s individual information screen was something like this.

==========

Name : Kaori

Rank : 1 / 50 remaining until the next liberation

Job : Villager Girl

Title : Village Chief’s Regrettable Daughter

Skill : Villager girl-style Twin Large Sword Art

Magic :

Equipment : A set of villager girl outfit

Special mention : Yue-pon’s accomplice

Money : 1,000

==========

□……Nn. Our ability is given limitation, but our individual technique is not given any limitation at all. It was because it’s me that kind of elementary level magic could show such power and rapid fire. A mere villager girl could dodge all those is also the same.□

□I see. Err, is there any problem with that?□

Kaori nodded in understanding at Yue’s explanation. It seemed that Kaori’s father was revived at the corner of their sight. The mournful villagers applauded their village chief.

□……Normally, we will raise our level at the surrounding area of the village of beginning while gathering money at the same time, we then will head to the next village after putting our equipment in order to a certain degree. The concrete scenario haven’t been established yet, but if the enemy characters that were inserted for their behavior checking are without change, then they should be really strong.□

□Aah, I see. In other words, there is a chance we won’t be able to reach the next village with our current level isn’t it? Also we don’t even have money to put our equipment in order.□

□……Nn. I think that it will be fine if it’s me and Kaori but…… in the case we received damage in this game that is in the verge of breaking, I don’t know what kind of effect it will have to us. Based on how there is the prospect of Hajime

definitely rescuing us, it’s also an option to not move from here.

Fufufu, you aren’t thinking of that at all aren’t you, Yue. There is no way we will choose avoiding risk and not doing anything.

Help would come sooner or later and so let’s not do anything. In a sense it was a solid method. However, the people who got close to Hajime wouldn’t choose that option.

……Exactly. Besides, we also don’t understand how long the current circumstance will continue. By any chance, perhaps before Hajime come home a fatal breakdown will occur and it will became a situation that cannot be recovered from.

You’re right. Like that we also cannot leisurely level up and gather money around the village then.

……Nn. We need to put our equipment in order as much as possible with the current money at our hand.

Yue understood their problems. They needed to reach the neighboring village by struggling through quite strong enemies using only the minimum equipment while trying to not get hit even once as much as possible.

Indeed, it was a very severe situation.

But,

Yep, I don’t see any problem. Yue is here after all.

……Nn. There is no problem. Kaori is here.

That was how it was.

Yue and Kaori stood up and dusted off the dirt attached on their respective fluttering sister and villager girl clothes. The gazes of the villagers were as usual as though they were looking at dangerous characters. It was the truth that they were guilty so they couldn’t bear at all to be there for longer. Even though it was a game world, wasn’t the speech and conduct of the mob characters too free?

Even though it was fine even if it wasn’t this realistic at this aspect……Yue and Kaori were modestly venting their anger at Hajime’s obsession while heading toward the equipment shop of the village.

Yue had magic job, so even in the worst case she wouldn’t mind buying just several items for recovering magic power, but Kaori who seemed to be a user of villager girl-style twin large swords art needed weapon. If possible, she also wanted pants and tunic that were easy to move in, not her current loose one piece clothes for villager girl.

Midway they were also exposed to intense violence of gazes.

Kaori thought, ‘This is, like that’. Yes, the stares were like the stares that were directed at a lion that escaped from its cage in a zoo. She saw it some time ago, the news of multiple wild beasts including lion escaping their cage and then moved freely inside the zoo.

At that time the gazes of the people that were running away filled with trepidation were truly the same like the gazes of the villagers toward them right now.

Am I a lion……?

Kaori was feeling complicated and she looked at Yue who was walking beside her.

Luxuriant golden hair. Flexible limbs. Unmistakably a carnivore (hidden meaning). And then, her status as the strongest.

(Yep, it fit. Here is Yue lion. Yep.

Kaori imagined Yue wearing a lion cosplay while roaring ‘gaoo~~’ on all fours and she strangely comprehended it.

By the way, the lion commotion of that time was the revenge of the zoo’s former worker who got fired where he was also going to steal the zoo’s proceeds at the same time, he released the animals was also for diversion, but the escaping lion and other animals were then taken care by a certain couple.

Actually, it had also become a hot topic how one of the couple, a small girl easily tamed the lion and then used that lion to catch the criminal. Then, it was also a hot topic how the boyfriend knocked down with his bare arm a bear that was escaping together and then returned it into its cage.

Kaori was imagining the news of that time and Yue lion half to escape the reality while chasing away the gazes of the villagers from inside her mind, and then her gaze caught sight of the equipment shop they were searching ahead.

「Both of us combined has 2,000 yen……can we buy anything?」

「……I don’t know the price so I cannot say anything. In the worst case, I want to at least secure Kaori’s sword.」

Kaori had inherited the combat skill of god’s apostle, so she had also learned martial art to a high level. However, as expected her greatest offense was the apostle’s characteristic ability and the twin large swords art. As

expected there would be a large difference in Kaori’s combat skill from whether she had sword or not.

Yue opened the shop’s door. And right away,

「Go home! Go back home! There ain’t anyone here that will sell to you two criminals! Go home right away!」

「「……」」

The equipment shop owner with thick moustache looking very obstinate suddenly gave the two a present of angry yell. Yue and Kaori reflexively stiffened.

The two understood what the owner was saying. Kaori timidly opened her mouth with twitching expression.

「E, excuse me, I, want to buy――」

「Shut up, this damned accomplice of Yue-pon! Just get out now!」

Kaori’s expression stiffened. This was the first time in her life she was treated like this by a person that she met for the first time. Kaori who was always polite and bright was often favored especially by the elders. Naturally, her endurance was low against something like this.

「Yu, Yuee~」

「……Nn. Leave it to me. Cough-. ――Owner-san, please listen to my story. We――」

「Shut your mouth, this great sinner, priest killer! How dare you did that to a kind person like that-」

「Ah, no, that, that person is still ali――」

「Good grief, even though you are a sister but to do something so terrifying! Listen here, this shop will only deal with honest customer! Someone criminal like you with a screw loose can just get out, now-」

A super condensed fireball materialized on the fingertip of Yue-sama. Its radiance, its heat, it was truly just like a sun!

「Don’t be hasty Yueee-! Calm down! This is you reaping what you sow!」

「……Kaori, don’t worry. Not even ash will be left behind. The owner of the equipment shop just disappeared. He only left behind a farewell letter that mentioned the property of the shop is handed over to the sister.」

「That’s murder! What’s more it’s robbery murder! Just where is this mind of obeying law you said before!?」

「……The sister with screw loose, doesn’t understa~~~nd.」

「A child!? Are you a child!? Geez-, it doesn’t matter so just toss away that fireball! Quickly toss it away!」

「……You wish to set fire here?」

「Aaah!? As I thought don’t toss it away! Extinguish it quickly! Come on, quickly!」

In deference to Kaori who was persuading with a desperate look, Yue erased the sun on her fingertip.

It seemed that a situation that often appeared in game, where they earned the hate of the villagers too much and now they got hit with the demerit had been generated.

Not only the destruction of the church, the destruction of the shoe store and the private houses surely also added to their crime. When they tried looking at the individual information screen, at Yue’s special mention part, the “has criminal record” had changed into “wanted criminal (Destroyer Yue-pon)”.

Kaori thought that if they were denied to use the shop by the game’s system, then it couldn’t be helped anymore, they should give up, and so she pulled at Yue’s clothes to get out of the shop, but Yue didn’t move and stood firmly in place.

「……Kaori. It’s too fast to give up.」

「Eh, but, this is the game’s system isn’t it? There is nothing more that we can…..」

「……You’re wrong. Just like I said before, this game’s characteristic is that you can overturn the difference in strength depending on your method. It’s too fast to conclude that it’s impossible because it’s the system. I’ll prove it to you. Watch.」

「Geez, I have nothing but bad premonition here.」

Ahead of Kaori’s disheartened gaze, Yue talked toward the shop owner. It seemed she was planning to find a path by negotiating……

「No matter what you are going to say, there is nothing that I will sell to――」

「……I beg you. Please choose, will your shop be burned, or will you hand over your goods quietly.」

It wasn’t a negotiation, but a threat. With a gesture that was like a sister, both her hands clasped in front of her chest,

and an expression like a pious lamb praying wholeheartedly to the god, she spoke something that would make even gang members to have cold sweat.

「……I have faith, that you will surely understand our plight! That our heart can communicate with each other if we just talk it out! Now, let's not be stubborn and be obedient.」

'He is not being stubborn but making the justified reaction though……'. That was what Kaori-san thought but she didn't butt in.

「……The god hath spoken. Child, choose equipment for the sister in front of your eyes within the range of 2,000 yen, he said. Rather, give her a discount, a lot of it! He said. If you do that, then your sin too shall be forgiven.」

Who would believe a god haggling? Or rather, the shop owner-san didn't commit any sin. Rather, the sinner here was Yue. Kaori-san just barely endured from saying those retorts.

The sun-like flame materialized once more in front of Yue.

「……Owner-san. I really don't want to see you receiving the judgment of god. I beg you, please obediently sell to us a gre~~~atly discounted merchandises!」

That wasn't god's judgment, but a punishment from Yue personally wasn't it? What's more it was exceedingly malicious. No matter how and where one looked at it, this person was really a splendid sister with a screw loose. Kaori couldn't endure and those straight-man retorts leaked out from her mouth. Yue-sama ignored it like nothing.

The shop owner's state was strange. His gaze was turning round and round, and his head was moving up and down.

Perhaps his program was bustlingly performing data processing because he encountered this unexpected situation.

Inside the shop that was wrapped in silence except the roar of the blazing flame, the shop owner's gaze finally settled down.

「Welcome to the equipment shop of "AAAAAAA" village! Today we are in a middle of a special promotion sale!」

It seemed the sister-san's sincere prayer reached the shop owner and the system.

「……nn. Kaori, which item do you want?」

「If possible, a cheap one that can suppress my guilt even just for a little I think.」

Seeing Yue who turned toward her with a triumphant look, Kaori resolved that when they returned to reality she would train her once more about the meaning of obeying the law.

In the end, they couldn't buy anything in the equipment shop except for a single "Iron Long Sword". In the first place, the starting price for equipment was around several tens of thousands yen, a few thousand yen could only buy things like wooden sword or stone sword. By the time "Iron Long Sword" that had a price of 70,000 yen reduced to 1,500 yen, it could be easily guessed just what had happened between the shop owner and Yue, must be.

With feeling of guilt gouging out inside the chest grindingly, after that the same thing was also done in the general store and several potions for Yue's magic power recovery were bought, and the two then headed toward the village's entrance.

But, not even ten seconds after they exited the shop…… *kon-*, a light impact assaulted Kaori’s shoulder. When Kaori turned her gaze in wonder of what happened, she saw among the villagers who were staring at them from a distance that had increased relatively much, there were two children sticking out a bit from the crowd preparing to throw small rock.

Kaori’s expression convulsed greatly.

「These criminals! Get out from the village!」

「Get out! Get out!」

The pure anger from the pure children smashed the pure (?) heart of Kaori-san. Kaori screamed「Hauh」and she pressed on her chest while falling on all fours!

Furthermore, the children of the village were gathering bustlingly and they were throwing rocks while hurling abuse with their lisping speech. And then perhaps that became the trigger, even the adults started to join in. They were yelling things like「Get out you sister with a screw loose!」or「I have thought from long ago that the village chief’s regrettable daughter will someday become criminal!」while a chorus of 「Get out from the village!」was arising.

「……They are looking for war. Very well, I’ll accept the challenge. I am Yue. A woman who will buy the fight sold to me until they run out of stock!」(TN: In Japan, selling a fight is how they said picking a fight)

「Stoopp! Just be obedient already, Yueee! If the village is obliterated with this, then I have the confidence I’ll be annihilated along with my soul from guilt!」

Seeing the sister-san with a screw loose lifting the corner of her lips like a demon king with the tips of her spread out hands materializing flame, Kaori pleaded at her to not act rashly while holding her down by pinioning her from behind.

No matter how one thought about it, this was the just dessert of the overbearing Yue. The hate that had been piling up and up had reached the critical point, they weren't just ostracized anymore, a campaign to exile them from the village had started.

Yue who even in this situation was far from reflecting, she even announced her intention really naturally to counter attack was truly the wife of the demon king. She was the avatar of being overbearing and unreasonable.

Regret? Restrain? Never heard about that! Come at me from anywhere you li~~ke!

Kaori caught the scruff of the neck of Yue who was getting spirited like that and without pause she ran toward the exit of the village while apologizing I'm sorry! I'm really sorry for our Yue! with one hand deflecting all the rocks flying at them using the long sword that she had unsheathed.

Seen from the side, the picture of the villager girl running around while swinging around a long sword with one hand, and the other hand dragging away a sister who was smiling fearlessly——it was truly the very picture of a village chief's regrettable daughter.

When the two got out of the village, the villagers' yell suddenly stopped completely. It seemed the commotion calmed down if they went out of the village. Kaori who was filled with trepidation that perhaps they would be kept getting chased even outside the village let out a sigh of relief and she sat down on the spot.

「……Kaori, are you okay?」

「My guilt is not okay at all, Yue you idiot.」

For Kaori who didn't have experience of being the target of the whole village's hostility and anger, it seemed she received substantial amount of mental damage. Her atmosphere felt somehow like she was sobbing.

「Geez, how can you be that calm? Even if this is a world of game, but I believe that normally anyone will get shocked if they got rock thrown at them by children that small……I never even dreamed that you would actually try to counter attack.」

Kaori turned an expression that looked like she was speechless, like she was blaming her, like she was in admiration at that mental of steel or rather that shameless mental, and like she was in exasperation toward Yue. Yue's expression suddenly turned gentle and she answered.

「……Because I had experienced it already.」

「? Experience? ……aa」

For a moment Kaori didn't understand what Yue was talking about, but she guessed it after thinking for a bit. And then, her expression turned very much like「Oh no!」and she attempted to change the topic in panic but……the time was already late.

「……Compared to getting beaten up to near death by my trusted vassals and my uncle who was like father, having rock thrown at me by children who I don't know, what's more by something that's nothing more than a program is really nothing at all.」

「Tha, that, Yue? It’s, I’m sorry.」

「…..What are you apologizing for, Kaori? I just want to say that compared to the experience of getting ganged up by people who were like family, this is only trivial. Fufu, that time really hurt. Inside that storm of magic until my automatic regeneration ran out. Fufufuh, my heart hurt that timee~~」

「Sorry Yue! I asked you something stupid! That’s why return backkk!」

Seeing and hearing the empty laugh of Yue who was staring at the faraway past with eyes that looked like dead fish, Kaori embraced her with teary eyes while apologizing. She should have become unbound by the past after knowing the true motive of her uncle Denreed, but no matter the fact it still didn’t change that it was an event that was hard to forget.

Yue gently patted Kaori who was clinging on her with teary eyes while she turned at her and spoke with eyes that had recovered their light.

「……I’m fine. I who had met Hajime, traveled, knew the truth about Oji-sama, and opened my eyes to the truth, has no more blind spot now.」

「Tru, truth?」

Yue nodded shortly and she puffed up her chest with an extremely triumphant look while replying full of confidence.

「Setting aside the reason, just slaughter everyone for the time being. If there is something that bothers you, then resurrect them again at opportune time.」

「……Everyone all liberators. Everyone’s magic is completed by perhaps the person who must not have it the most. I’m sorry.」

This is the first wife of the demon king! In front of her, life was just too light. No, surely, she was a bit more prudent in the real world, should be, Kaori was half praying while she lowered her head toward the protectors of the other world.

Kaori was crestfallen thinking that her strength had suddenly faded off even before departing to their journey, but right after that, they were visited by a situation that made them lost such composure.

flap-, such sound of flapping wings resounded once, twice……it resounded inside the two’s ears one after another.

When the two went ‘hah’ and they lifted up their face, over there were multiple beings descending down from the sky.

The beings were flapping beautiful white wings on their back, they were clad in impressive dress armor that looked beautiful, while their hand was each holding spear or sword or weapon that looked famous. The forms of the women who were emitting abnormal pressure were beautiful in contrast with that threatening atmosphere. Their beautiful look that ought to be said as god’s creation was completed with dreamy silver hair that looked flowing.

Kaori couldn’t even say anything. The existence and strength of these women were obviously boss class where in a game they would come out at the middle stage, no, at the latter stage.

‘Aah, I see, this is an event!’ Right after Kaori almost convinced herself like that, a ruthless voice of heaven

descended.

——Wild Valkyries appeared!!

The women who were greatly popular even among the Norse myth carelessly appeared as though they were goblin level enemy, *jakin-* their weapons were readied with such sound. They were brimming with hostility. They were fully motivated.

Kaori briefly said.

「This kind of world, is just mistakeenn……」

Kaori doubted her beloved person’s sanity just for a bit.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Things like the setting, the information screen, or the content, currently it is still a prototype and on top of that its behaving baggily, that’s the setting so please forgive the vagueness.

I plan to someday make it into the stage of a long After arc, so at that time I’ll think up the detailed content.

PS

The comic version of Arifureta is updated in the homepage of Overlap-sama.

As always the illustration has impact, Yue is also cute.

Please try to have a look if you like.

Arifureta Chapter 253

Arifureta After II So Close That They Squabbled With Each Other? Last Part

AN: Regarding the case where everyone of Narou people has better understanding of Shirakome then Shirakome himself.

……I have no more excuse.

The first attack was a swept of a splendorous sword. The speed of the eye focus couldn’t follow it. One Valkyrie charged with a speed that even produced afterimages, lunging toward Yue and Kaori who was still embracing Yue.

Perhaps it was trying to bisect the two simultaneously. The sword line that drew a trajectory that almost looked like a flash was rapidly approaching at Yue’s neck as though it was absorbed to there. If the target was an ordinary person, they wouldn’t even have time to scream, when they noticed there was no doubt that their death would be already a certainty.

□FUWAaAAA!?□

□Nngih□

Of course, the village chief’s regrettable daughter, regardless of being a villager girl she was a regrettable girl that boasted a physical ability that was far removed from

ordinary person. The sweeping attack that approached like the scythe of death god was evaded by falling backward while her arm wasted no time to circle on Yue’s neck and she pulled Yue with her.

Death was passing through along with a violent wind just a millimeter above Yue and Kaori’s face who were falling backward like in a limbo dance.

Although Kaori’s posture broke down with her falling backward, she somehow succeeded in evading. But a shadow appeared above her without even any time to sigh in relieve.

【WAAAA!?】

【Higyo!?】

Kaori put strength into the arm that she circled around Yue’s neck and without pause she rolled on the ground, taking Yue with her. That appearance could be seen as a brave figure desperately trying to protect a friend.

A hair’s breadth.

A spear that also looked splendorous raised a really unpleasant impact sound *zudon-* when it pierced the spot where the two collapsed at just now. A small crater was even created from the impact. It was a terrifying strength.

The Valkyries made their entrance like a common goblin, but as expected their strength wasn’t in a level that should appear around the village of the beginning.

From Yue’s individual information screen just now, “Automatic Regeneration” wasn’t listed there. It was unclear

how much the system that was an effect of soul magic was suppressing that skill which was a characteristic ability.

In such state, furthermore inside this buggy world, if they got hit with that attack that was unmistakably a one-hit kill, even if it was Yue but there was a high possibility that she wouldn’t come out of it safely.

And Kaori who was separated from her apostle body was also the same.

It wasn’t clear what kind of effect a damage they got in this game world would inflict at their soul, because of that they absolutely must not get hit.

Cold sweat trickled from Kaori’s forehead seeing the enemy’s strength and the merciless one-hit kill attacks launched toward them.

Kaori made use of her rolling momentum to somehow straighten herself while she obeyed the warning that her combat experience informed her and leaped back from that spot. Right away, the vertical slashes of the Valkyries that launched pincer attack passed through before her eyes.

□Nngigih, gi, give-. I give!□it felt like some kind of strange voice could be heard, but right now there was no leeway to be bothered with that.

Kaori had to grasp the limitation of her lowered physical ability while during that time she had to evade the countless death approaching them!

Even if, there was the sensation of repeated tapping that felt relatively desperate on her hand that was circled around Yue’s neck, but there wasn’t any time to worry about that!

「It’s fine! I swear I’ll absolutely protect you Yue!」

「Tha, that’s not-. My neeck! It’s completely――」

Countless flame bullets rushed from middle range! Kaori strengthened her grip so that her friend absolutely wouldn’t get separated from her while dancing the dance of death with determination!

Kaori stepped toward the swarm of flame bullets while still holding Yue. Rather than waiting for the bullets to converge at herself, she would move forward and slip through before the gaps were tightened.

Just like she planned, she slipped through the gaps in the barrage and passed through several shots, then with a rotation she evaded an attack that approached from the front. So that Yue’s body wouldn’t be separated from her because of the centrifugal force, she put even more strength to her arm that was holding Yue!

「Kafuu!? ……Ka, Kaori, I’ll, I’ll apologize, so, your arm, armmm~」

「*It’s fine*! Because I’ll absolutely protect you!」

「……You, you bastardd~, you’re planninggg――」

Yue tried to say something, but at the corner of the sight a Valkyrie archer could be seen nocking an arrow that was enveloped with some abnormal light. It caused Kaori’s heart to jump.

「Look ouu~~~tt-」

「Kyupeh!?」

Kaori immediately jumped forward to get down on the ground. Flame bullets passed through overhead, further behind the sounds of explosion resounded. The impact that came assaulting within an instant caused Kaori and Yue’s bodies to dance in the air like a leaf.

Kaori somehow kept her hold on Yue and she performed ukemi on the ground. There she noticed that the attacks stopped and she let out a faint exhale of relieve.

It seemed they managed to endure just barely the first wave of the attack.

The Valkyries were moving slowly. They were trying to surround Kaori and Yue. Kaori scowled at that while she talked to Yue.

「Yue. What should we do? Perhaps this is just as expected. These people are strong just as we thought. We have to break through this encirclement somehow……Yue?」

「……」

Just try to look. The white of her eyes is exposed and her mouth is half opened but, that’s a beautiful face right? She is fainting y’know?

Such words crossed Kaori’s mind. The friend in her arm, even now when the white of her eyes were exposed and her mouth was half opened, but she was still beautiful as usual.

「Who, who did something like this!? Yue! Get a hold of yourself! Just what in the world happened!?」

Kaori shook Yue’s body back and forth, but Yue was only staying limp like an octopus and she didn’t react even with how rough she was shaken. ‘Rather, perhaps this is because

of enemy’s sleep magic I wonder!?’ Thinking that Kaori glared at the enemies. While her mouth was twitching as though she was enduring something.

And then, while staying vigilant against the surrounding, she straddled Yue and lifted up her hand.

Yue had to be wakened up no matter what. Even if she had to use a heartless method, but in the battlefield it wasn’t the place to say naïve things!

——*PAN-, PAN-, PAN-, BISHII-!*

Such sounds resounded in the battlefield. Kaori-san’s double slap that was thinking about her friend burst on Yue’s cheeks!

Yue! Wake up! You are going to die if you sleep here! Quickly wake up! Come on quickly!

Kaori’s palm was swung with a display of accurate consecutive hits that drew artistic trajectory and hit spot. Yue’s cheeks were painted with beautiful slap sound while moving to left and to right. Kaori-san’s double slap also followed vaguely rhythmically.

Qu-ick-ly! Wake-up!

For some reason her voice sounded lively……

The Valkyries were looking at each other. They might be feeling bewildered.

One of the enemy they were assaulting fainted by herself when they noticed, and then the other enemy for some reason was dealing additional blows to that enemy…… perhaps that was how it looked like to them. Objectively

looking. In that case, it was also natural for them to be bewildered.

But, the next moment, the wrist of Kaori who was dealing out rhythmical slaps was caught *GRAB-!!* forcefully.

「……Good morning, Kaori. Sayonara, Kaori.」

「Eh?」

At Yue-sama's awakening *buppa*. A flame sphere the size of a pinball materialized in front of Kaori, and the next instant, it exploded grandly. It seemed that the "fireball" magic was super compressed before it was set free which produced directional shockwave.

'FUWAAAA' Kaori who was raising such scream while rolling around backward somehow stopped rolling in the posture of all fours. She then lifted up her face and began to let out a lot of cold sweats.

「……Even though even Hajime has never slapped me. Kaori, is your resolve okay?」

Yue-sama's anger was in the state of piercing the heaven. She was getting so angry that behind her back it felt like there was the illusion of sound effect letters *GOGOGOGO-*.

「I, I don't understand what are you saying here, Yue. Anyway, calm down? Surely we can understand each other if we talk about it.」

「……Hou. You are saying that you constricting my neck while wretchedly swinging me around, and in the end slapping my face on and on happily, aren't something that you did purposefully?」

「Such thing! That’s misunderstanding! I was only trying to protect Yue! And yet, how can you be so cruel saying such――」

「……If you speak honestly, Yue’s best selection. Ten sexy photo of Hajime, I’ll prese――」

「Being able to payback for the daily prank, it makes my feeling really refreshed. You even made noise ‘higyoh’, or ‘kyupeh’, pupuh」

A blood vein jutted out on Yue’s forehead with a snap.

And then,

「……Today is your death anniversary!」

「Wawah, don’t do that! If that flame bullet hit me, I’ll totally die!」

「……Don’t worry. I’ll absolutely kill you!」

Countless flame bullets were fired from Yue. Every single one was hiding a power that could make anyone comprehended how it could destroy a church.

Kaori who got a bit carried away and got surprised jumped away from that spot and tried to apologize in panic but,

「……Perish, you eternal stalker woman!」

「Who are you calling a stalker I wonder!? I wonder!?」

Kaori spontaneously talked back hearing the extremely disgracing statement. When she avoided the flame bullets while glaring at Yue, Yue snorted「Fuhn」.

「……Just notice it already. Of your own true nature. And then, of Hajime's self-sacrificing spirit!」

「Self-sacrificing? What are you say――」

「……Aa, Kaori who is a stalker, a yandere, and a hidden pervert is really troubling. But if I leave her alone I don't know what she might do, can't be helped, perhaps I should look after her a bit, notice already that true feeling of Hajime!」

「There is no way Hajime-kun is thinking anything like that! Yue is just saying irresponsible thing!」

「……If that's what you think, then that's must be it. Inside Kaori that is.」

「……Fufu, Yue. Those words are too much you know? If you apologize now, then I'll forgive you. Come now, apologize. Quickly apologize.」

「……Eh? Why should I, yandere hidden pervert stalker-san. It's a bit scary, so can you not get nearer than that?」

snap- A blood vein emerged on Kaori's forehead. Even though she was showing a wide smile, but an illusion of sound effect *GOGOGOGO-* could be seen behind her.

「Right, I won't get near you at all. Who want to get near a hopeless vampire who is eternally horny. Ninety percent of the inside of your head is crammed with perverted things right? I wonder if perhaps Hajime-kun will notice it sooner or later? That this vampire princess (lol), is just a pervert. Ah, can you not get nearer to me than that? The legal wife (lol) can infect me.」

Toward Kaori who affixed (lol) even until two times at Yue’s identity, Yue also smiled widely.

For some reason the Valkyries were flustered. ‘What to do, it’s a carnage, a carnage you know? Should we stop those two? Who will? You, go stop them already. Eh, no way, if you say that then you go there, you are a Valkyrie right? You are also a Valkyrie.’ ——Perhaps they were making conversation like that.

But, the next moment their movement stopped still.

Because an extremely cold blizzard was blowing violently.

Because a dark cloud that was scattering flashes of lightning materialized.

And then,

——SHAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!

——GOAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!

Because behind Kaori who was smiling while sporting pulsing blood vein, a hannya-san tapping a large war sword on her shoulder materialized!

Because behind Yue who was smiling while sporting pulsing blood vein, a coiling lightning dragon raising a thunderous roar materialized!

The unthinkable supernatural phenomenon that shouldn’t exist in this game system caused the Valkyries who were modeled after supernatural existence to tremble while backing away.

What reached the ears of those women was,

□……KAORI YOU STUPIIIIID-□

□……YUE YOU UIDIOTTTTT-□

In contrast with such delicate insult and intensity, they uncouthly grappled, clawed, and pulled at each other in a delicate scuffle——rather, it was their usual cat fight.

□Fushaah——!□When Yue Punch was unleashed, Kaori growled□Muiiiih□even while receiving it with her cheek and her hand pinched on Yue's cheek and pulled. When Yue pulled on Kaori's hair, Kaori would grind her finger on Yue's side, when Yue pulled Kaori's cheek in return, Kaori would throw away Yue's wimple and pulled her hair in return.

Kaori struck cat punches *poka poka* on Yue who was pushed down by the difference in body height. Yue tightly grasped on the butt of such Kaori and when she flinched from that, Yue used the opening to overturn their position and then she launched a double slap on Kaori's relatively large breast as though to say that it was payback for before.

The rolled round and round, grappled on each other, then rolled round and round again and hit each other *poka poka* repeatedly, even though the two were beautiful girl, but they were covered all over with dust with their hair all ruffled. Both Yue and Kaori were wearing one piece type of clothing, so they were in a state where their panty was fully exposed, but they didn't even bother with that.

Just how long they were planning to do that?

The Valkyries who were somewhat dumbfounded suddenly returned back to their senses. They readied their respective weapon, making metallic sound rang to pull themselves together and galred at the two who were still entangled

themselves in a quarrel. They glared……but, as expected the two were still going ‘nyaa—nyaa—’.

The Valkyries looked at each other. They had no expression, but somehow they vaguely looked like they were speaking ‘like this we don’t even need to surround them to fight isn’t it?’.

The women nodded at each other. One woman among them quietly walked forward. It was the Valkyrie carrying a divine spear. Perhaps she was being conscious of the blind spot of the rampaging Kaori and Yue, because sometimes she would circle around in her advance.

And then, she entered the range. The next moment, she stepped forward all of a sudden. She must be trying to skewer the two simultaneously. The sure-kill thrust was unleashed at Yue’s back with a terrific speed.

Kaori who was looking up because her chin was pushed from below by Yue’s hand couldn’t see behind Yue. Yue too, her nose was pinched by Kaori so she couldn’t look behind.

Killed.

If the Valkyrie could speak, then she undoubtedly would whisper that.

——*Bang-, roll roll-*

The two suddenly flopped to the side and without pause they insulted at each other while rolling over. They stood up again at slight distance away and then continued quarreling as though nothing happened. The spear that should be stabbed for certain kill was wandering vainly at the place where the two were at.

Her Valkyrie comrades were watching. The Valkyrie lancer showed a gesture as though she was clearing her throat, and then she pulled herself together before assaulting Yue and Kaori once more.

This time she wouldn’t cut corner, she would bring down one person with certainty! Her aim was Yue. She would pierce the temporal region of her head――

「The yandere, is you Yue!」

The slap that struck along with such words dealt a clean hit on Yue’s cheek. The lance attack passed through right beside Yue’s head that was forcefully snapped away.

The Valkyrie hurriedly pulled back her spear. She didn’t fail or anything. She was only testing the water a bit. That was just a practice swing. Now this is the sure thing attack! It stabbed toward Kaori’s side!

「……I’m not ill. It’s only my dere that is overflowing!」(TN: Dere = affectionate)

Kaori fell from neko damashi that was continued with a tripping up. The sure kill (lol) attack passed through above her head. (TN: Neko damashi = a sumo move, where you clap your hands in front of the opponent’s face to surprise them)

「That is what is called yandere! You don’t know? Sometimes Shia will subtly flinch away from Yue. Yaa~i, you yandere girl who is feared by your best friend.」

「……Shia doesn’t fear me. There is no way that’s true. Shia love me! Kaori yourself, you said that even though you were feared by Shizuku before this. Yaa~i, genuine yandere girl

who even make Shizuku whose fortitude is maxed out to get creeped out.

Shi, Shizuku-chan isn’t scared at me or anything! After all Shizuku-chan will accept any kind of me no matter what!

……Indeed, I won’t deny the depth of Shizuku’s broad-mindedness. Her figure is already like everyone’s mother!

That’s right! What’s more, if I have to say which then she is the type of a gutsy mother of a big family! She is everyone’s beloved and reliable mother!

Yaegashi Shizuku——an active female high school student. She was She was a busybody who was being dissed in a sense before they knew it. Surely if she was in this place, she would resolve herself to participate in the fight from getting hit by the unexpected stray bullet.

By the way, even while these two were making this conversation, spear was wielded against them many times. The Valkyrie changed the angle of the spear, used feint, she used sweeping attack and the butt of her spear, launching attacks from every position like a surging waves.

But everything was evaded.

What’s more, everything was evaded only with extremely natural movement from the scuffle.

Somehow it looked like the Valkyrie lancer was looking like she was going to burst crying anytime.

Perhaps thinking that was pitiful, her Valkyrie comrades surrounded the two and lunged. It was the beautiful friendship of Valkyries.

They wouldn’t let their might getting humiliated even further than this by method that looked like gag scene. They wouldn’t be ignored!

It was a perfect encirclement. There was no place to escape. It was impossible to dodge.

This time for sure, death in the shape of sword and lance assaulted from all directions toward the two who were in the middle of scuffling.

——*SHaaAAN-*

A clear sound resounded. It was a tone that was played by metals scraping each other. The scream of the targeted two people didn’t mix there.

Rather,

□-!!!□

□a, a——□

□!?□

The wordless scream, came from the Valkyries.

The Valkyries took distance all at once. However, there were three people who didn’t retreat from there, no, they couldn’t retreat. The Valkyrie lancer, and two Valkyrie saber who were carrying beautiful sword.

The reason was simple.

Because the Valkyrie lancer’s lance pierced the heart of a Valkyrie who should be her ally, and Kaori’s sword was digging into the neck of that Valkyrie lancer.

And then, the one other Valkyrie saber got her beautiful face——more accurately her right eye literally turned into a wind hole. It was a round wind hole that was carbonized black.

Looking closer, in the center of the Valkyries, there were the unmoving figure of Kaori with her iron long sword in an unsheathed state, and the figure of Yue laying down face up between the legs of such Kaori while her fingers were making gun shape could be seen.

The posture of the Valkyrie saber whose right eye was shot through turned limp and she was falling. Without hesitation Kaori smoothly took away that Valkyrie's sword and without pause she handled that sword casually, yet with an astonishingly elegant motion and mowed the neck of the Valkyrie lancer with that stolen sword.

Different from the iron long sword, Kaori's sword attack this time slipped through Valkyrie lancer's neck as though she was cutting butter. Blood didn't spurt out, in exchange red particles whirled while rising to the sky.

「Yep, this is a good sword as expected. Though I'd like it better if it's thicker and bigger……」

「……Kaori, lewd. That's why you are going to be called a hidden pervert eternally.」

「No one call me that! Or rather, I don't understand what do you mean by lewd!」

The two resumed their quarrel as though nothing happened. Yue stood up, and Kaori shrewdly stole the sword of the other Valkyrie saber and now she used two sword style. It was at that time the two defeated Valkyries also scattered red particles while disappearing.

The Valkyries were still spreading out as though they were hesitating to resume their attack.

Perhaps their battle program couldn’t judge how should they attack after witnessing the offense and defense the two displayed just now.

The two’s method to get through the attacks from all direction just now was simple.

Kaori who understood that she wouldn’t be unscathed if she honestly fight from the front seeing her physical strength and also sword quality merged her sword with the approaching enemy’s sword and twist its trajectory. As the result, the averted sword hit the sword beside it and averted that other sword’s trajectory too.

Furthermore, Kaori rotated her body and used her bare hand to avert the lance and caused a friendly fire, by doing that she even evaded the third sword too.

And then, regarding the fourth sword that Kaori couldn’t dealt with, it was dealt with by Yue that sniped at the weak point that was commonly shared by living thing using a super compressed flame bullet that was fired from Kaori’s blind spot.

The Valkyries combat thinking rejected close combat against the two who in a glance looked like they were full of opening from being absorbed in quarreling with each other. If the visible opening wasn’t actually opening, then they would make opening that coincided with their convenience.

The Valkyrie archer and Valkyrie mage launched a pincer attack!

Long range physical attack from arrows that were enveloped with light to increase its destructive power, and long range magic attack using invisible and swift wind blades became countless fangs that were like an intense rain, attacking Yue and Kaori.

Abruptly they rotated. Yue and Kaori were.

The two were facing each other and quarreling until now, but in an instant they executed their steps as though they were even dancing and stood back to back. With a matching elegant turn, golden and black hairs spread out softly like a dream.

Kaori’s swords instantly drew countless trajectories in the air instantly, cutting apart or averting all the flying arrows that were hiding terrifying power.

Countless flame bullets instantly materialized like stars that were floating in the vast night sky, they obeyed Yue’s slender finger and flew out like a meteor shower and blew away all the wind blades with the impact of destructive blast.

The two who were standing back to back didn’t look like they were concerned at all against any threat that might come from their back. Even without looking back, they believed without doubt that behind them was an absolutely safe area.

The attacks suddenly stopped. The arrows and magic attacks that were fired consecutively ran out.

Right after that, Yue and Kaori danced once more. The sleeves of their one piece clothing elegantly spread out at the same time with their rotation using steps that looked as though they had been arranged beforehand. The two who

were dancing as though mirroring each other swung one hand as though inviting the other party for a dance.

Although, it seemed the invitation was for a world of death.

What flew out like a bullet from the swung hands were a flame bullet the size of a pinball and a beautiful sword.

The flame bullet that was hiding a destructive power that rivaled a high class magic pierced the heart of the Valkyrie archer with unerring aim, and the beautiful sword also pierced the heart of the Valkyrie mage.

「Hm~m, what's this? Just as I thought even though they are all the same Valkyrie but there is difference in their defensive power depending on their class but……. Is it just because the sword is powerful I wonder?」

「……I think that's possible. But, no matter even if it's the enemy's weapon, I don't think that a sword thrown by the spec of a level 1 can easily pierce the armor of that close quarter combat type before. It should be seen that this one is weak against physical attack because of her mage class.」

「The flame bullet that I evaded before was deflected by the armor of the mage class wasn't it? But the flame bullet going through the archer means that even though their armors all look the same, but there is no doubt that this one's defensive power against magic is low.」

Yue and Kaori talked about their analysis result while still standing back to back. They were directing observing gaze toward the two Valkyries who were turning into particles and vanished.

The two remaining Valkyries were trying to take distance slowly.

snap-, Yue and Kaori’s face turned toward the surviving Valkyries in a flash. It was awfully scary. As the proof, the Valkyries’ body twitched seeing their gaze.

「……Kaori. You noticed?」

「About the level up? Yep, while fighting ‘pirurin!’ sound rang out several times. Also, announcing sound like ‘such and such is liberated!’. Though honestly, I’m wondering if there is option to erase the sound.」

「……Certainly it’s distracting. This will depend on the user’s preference, so I’ll suggest to Hajime if he can attach on/off function. But, for now――」

「Yep. For now――」

The Valkyries were slo~wly, slo~wly taking distance from Yue and Kaori who were conversing with each other. The moment the two’s conversation cut off, the Valkyries turned their body adroitly and flew to the sky.

If it was said in game style, this must be a situation of 「Valkyrie is running away!」.

A shadow loomed. On the Valkyries.

What the two Valkyries who quickly looked back saw, were the figures of the villager girl and apprentice sister who took their above with a leap that was higher than even themselves. The two readied overhead a sword that was gleaming from the sunlight and a flame bullet that was like the sun itself while looking down of the Valkyries.

「Let’s try it out.」

「……Trying out.」

They wouldn’t let go of the chance to test out their liberated ability.

Yes, if it was said in game style——this is the situation of 「Failed to escape from villager girl and apprentice sister!」.

There was no scream of death agony.

However, there were only beautiful red particles dancing toward the sky right outside the village of beginning.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Just since when I was deluded that the subtitle of Yue – Kaori arc is one?

Next chapter, 「Welcome, I am the village chief of demon king village desu」

Arifureta Chapter 254

Arifureta After II Welcome, I am the Village Chief of Demon King Village

It was a highway with wind blowing gently. The grasses as high as the waist were making rustling sounds. Dusts were gently rolled up to the air by the breeze.

Silhouettes of two people could be seen at the other side of that dust.

One person was a girl with the appearance of a villager girl, while the other one was a girl with the appearance of an apprentice sister. They looked unsteady somehow. Or rather, the apprentice sister was completely carried on the back of the villager girl. Her body was limply leaning on the villager girl’s back.

The villager girl too, she was carrying the apprentice sister while using a beautiful sword as replacement for cane. Her shoulders were moving much from her rough breathing□zee zee□, so much so that it sounded like it could be heard from far away. If this area wasn’t the highway that connected village to village, then she would be mistaken as a victim that was lost in the middle of mountain.

Her clothing also spurred on such impression. The two of them were tattered. Although the important parts were barely protected, the fringe part of the one piece had became a really original miniskirt state, the sleeves part was also in forced state of no sleeve that if it was seen from the side, the breast part felt a little bit dangerous.

The two’s white smooth skin was exposed much, and those exposed parts were dirtied by dust everywhere, the two’s hair also felt unkempt.

「……Uu. I’m really sorry for troubling you, Kaori-san.」(TN: Here Yue’s speech sounded like an old woman)

「Yue-san, you promised not to say that right?」

The carried apprentice sister——the previously sister with a screw loose Yue was running on joke material even while being dead tired. The one who was fixing her grip on the slipping off Yue with ‘yoisho-‘ while returning the joke material precisely was of course the village chief’s regrettable daughter Kaori.

Now then, why were these two so ragged until they were in this state?

That was caused by all the happening since they were victorious in the battle against the wild Valkyries nearby the village of beginning “AAAAAAA” until the present time. To speak frankly,

——A wild Odin appeared!

——A wild Zeus appeared!

——A wild Susanoo appeared!

——A wild Indra appeared!

——Wild Artemis appeared in great numbers!

——A wild Zoroaster myth appeared in its entirety!

——A wild Odin took along his children and Valkyries and challenged a revenge match!

——A wild Zeus who joined up with a wild Indra appeared!

——A wild Ia! Ia! Masteerr! Fhtag——

The gist could be guessed after seeing how the lineup above was the mob enemy for the surrounding area of the village of beginning. The random pounding of mythologies was coming so extremely without any integrity. Or rather, no matter how much the game was in the operation testing stage with undecided story, the enemy setting was just too noncommittal.

Of course, the enemies' strength was in the level that didn't put shame to their name, they were boasting strength to the degree that the Valkyries looked cute. They were also properly equipped with their characteristic equipments, Yue and Kaori would surely meet a swift end if they didn't cooperate in the same beat for real.

Regarding the difficult to describe something that came out in the end, both Yue and Kaori didn't really have the memory of their battle against it. When they tried to recall it, they would get a headache as though their instinct was trying to stop them and they couldn't recall it. However, there was only the feeling as though they destroyed it with a deathly desperation remaining inside them.

Just what in the world was that……

And because of that, after repeating mortal combat after mortal combat, they were now in the verge of exhausting all their energy and willpower——that was the current state of Yue and Kaori. Yue was in an extreme state of magic power drying up and all the recovery item was also used up, that now she was entrusting herself to Kaori.

After a bit more advancing through the highway with staggering footsteps toward the save point of the next village, while they were making frivolous talk running on joke material with each other to take their mind off from their exhaustion,

「……Nn? Kaori.」

「Right, something is coming. But, this is……」

Kaori's walk stopped when she sensed a presence approaching from behind. When she tried to look behind, she could see rising dust cloud from ahead of the highway they had passed through. For a moment Yue and Kaori thought「Another wild god!?」, but that thought was immediately proved to be a needless anxiety.

「That's, a house cart.」

「……Nn」

Just as Kaori said, what was running on the highway toward them was a cart that was pulled by two chestnut horses. The figure of a plump man sitting on the coachman stand holding the rein could be seen.

Just in case Yue got down from Kaori's back and both of them stepped back to the side of the highway to open a path.

Not long after that, the cart arrived at where Yue and Kaori were at. The man on the coachman stand noticed Yue and Kaori and his expression went「Oh?」. The man pulled his rein and decreased the speed, and the cart stopped beside the two.

「My goodness, young ladies, what are you two doing in this kind of place? Although this area is relatively safe, it's still too careless for two young girls to be here you know?」

No ill will could be felt from his voice and expression. The two heard his words which claimed that this area was safe which caused the two to doubt this man's sanity, but if that part was put aside, this man's feeling that was purely feeling strange and also worried that a villager girl and a sister were loitering alone in this highway was conveyed to the two.

Seeing that it didn't seem like a battle event, Yue and Kaori looked and nodded at each other.

「Eerr, I am "AAAAAAA" village's……village chief's daughter, going toward the next village.」

「Oo, is that so. So you are the "AAAAAAA" village's village chief's regrettable daughter. I am a peddler Sarani Yunker. If you are going to the next village, I am also going toward there right now. If you want, you can come along with me?」
(TN: The name Sarani here is written in katakana as though it's a foreign name. But in Japanese language 'sarani' could also mean 'even more'. This peddler's name can be read as even more Yunker)

The peddler whose surname was a name they had heard from somewhere was suggesting that kindly. Kaori was somehow feeling regrettable that even the peddler was calling her "regrettable", but honestly she was really happy that they could travel using house cart here.

「Yue, what to do?」

「……I think, this is perhaps a support event from the game. We can also use item to recover and change equipment by riding the back cart.」

「There is no problem then. Can we also purchase item while we are at it?」

As the result of the two's discussion, with their need to recover their stamina and mental strength and also with their lack of item, they decided to accept the suggestion of the peddler Sarani to help them. They were also taking advantage of the kind words of peddler Sarani who was smiling kindly while saying「Please, please. Get on the car behind. If there is anything that you want to buy then I'll sell it to you」.

Like that the horse cart departed. For a while the two purchased and used healing item and focused in recovering, and when their vitality returned the two sighed「Fuu~~~~」.

「I wonder if it really is over?」

「……Nn, I think so. Or rather, I hope that's so. If not, then Hajime is just too savage.」

「Ahaha……as expected, this cannot be helped isn't it? After all this game device is broken right? Right?」

「……Nn. Certainly.」

Both of them doubted the sanity of their beloved just for a bit, but they concluded they had reached a checkpoint and they relaxed. And then, Yue who finished purchasing recovery item rummaged around the cart and discovered clothing.

Among the items that were being sold, as expected the clothing that the two could equip was only the sister outfit and villager girl outfit, but it was still a league better compared to their clothing that was in half undressed state. They immediately purchased the clothes and quickly changed.

The two who finished changing clothes and also replenishing item calmed down and sat side by side at the back cart. They threw their legs to dangle outside. The small vibration of the cart that was transmitted to their body felt pleasant.

「……Come to think of it, Kaori. How far you have been liberated?」

「Ah, now that you say that we were leveling up with staggering momentum weren't we? My disintegration ability also came back, so I wonder if I have been liberated much? I didn't confirm because there was no leeway though.」

Saying that, Kaori summoned the individual information screen. Yue also summoned her own screen at the same time and they respectively confirmed their usable strength.

==========

Name : Yue-pon

Rank : 75 / 2880 remaining until the next liberation

Job : Sister

Title : Sister Whose Name Mustn't be Mentioned

Skill : No Chant　Imagination Configuration　All Element Aptitude　Combination Magic　High Speed Magic Power

Regeneration

Magic : Flame Magic　Wind Magic　Light Magic　Water Magic　Earth Magic　Ice Magic　Lightning Magic　Darkness Magic　Gravity Magic

※All magic name is omitted

Equipment : A set of apprentice sister outfit　R’lyeh Text

Special mention : A criminal on the wanted list

Money : 5,546,030

==========

==========

Name : Kaori

Rank : 72 / 1880 remaining until the next liberation

Job : Villager Girl

Title : What is the Meaning of Villager Girl Name?

Skill : Villager girl-style Twin Large Sword Art　Villager girl-style Close Quarter Combat Art

Magic : Villager girl-style Body Reinforcement Magic　Villager girl-style Disintegration Magic　Villager girl-style Wings　Villager girl-style Godspeed

Equipment : A set of villager girl outfit　Gram　Ama no Murakumo no Tsurugi

Special mention : Yue-pon’s accomplice

Money : 4,874,005

==========

□……□

□……□

There were certainly a lot of places that could be retorted at. Surely it was the fault of the bug. But, there was one point that the two couldn’t turn a blind eye at no matter what.

□Yu, Yue? Thi, this is……□

□……Wa, wait. Wait, a second-□

Yue who unusually was in her wits’ end patted all over her own body and performed a body check. There was nothing particular strange and she let out a faint sigh of relieve. Right after that, Yue’s ragged sister outfit that she put above the box beside her was slipping down unnaturally even though there wasn’t any particularly noticeable vibration. And then, the falling clothe didn’t make light rustling sound, but a thud sound instead.

□……□

□……□

Yue and Kaori twitched but they didn’t move further, they were staring at the ragged sister clothes. They couldn’t avert their gaze from the clothes that was strangely bulged up.

The house cart was going onward while making small vibrations *katakata*. The sister clothe was slowly, little by

little sliding off because of the vibration.

What was certain was that when Kaori was carrying Yue on her back, Yue wasn’t carrying anything except the clothes she was wearing. And they also didn’t steal anything except the legendary swords Kaori stole from the previous battles. And then, when Yue took off her clothes just now and put it on the box, there was not “thing” or anything that would make that kind of bulge.

slide, *slide* The sister clothes was sliding off matching with the vibration of the horse cart.

Like that, finally, from the gap between the clothes, something like a book spine with strange color was……

□SOOOOOII-!!□

Yue’s roar gushed! Before that thing that surely, perhaps must not be seen showed up its whole appearance, a kick with the body’s whole strength exploded. The beautiful kicking leg that was performed like a pro soccer athlete also beautifully slammed flying the sister clothes along with the something inside it.

When the two saw it falling into the grasses and they couldn’t see it anymore, they let out a long sigh and resumed their breathing that they were unconsciously holding.

And then, when Yue moved her hand impatiently and confirmed her individual information screen,

==========

Name : Yue-pon

Rank : 75 / 2880 remaining until the next liberation

Job : Sister

Title : Sister Whose Name Mustn’t be Mentioned

Skill : No Chant　Imagination Configuration　All Element Aptitude　Combination Magic　High Speed Magic Power Regeneration

Magic : Flame Magic　Wind Magic　Light Magic　Water Magic　Earth Magic　Ice Magic　Lightning Magic　Darkness Magic　Gravity Magic

※All magic name is omitted

Equipment : A set of apprentice sister outfit

Special mention : A criminal on the wanted list

Money : 5,546,030

==========

It became like that.

Yue and Kaori looked at each other’s face and nodded shortly to one another.

「……So, Kaori. You still cannot use healing magic, binding magic, and defensive magic?」

「Yeah. Even though my specialty should be in that field. But, just being able to use disintegration and godspeed is also enough. And the swords I stole are really sharp. Yue, you still only get gravity magic?」

「……Nn. I pray that next I'll obtain space magic. It's completely different whether I have it or not.」

It seemed they treated as though the "something" that was kicked flying had never existed. Surely it was for the sake of their mental health. They had to protect their SAN status as much as possible.

For a while the two were talking with each other about their respective ability as though trying to forget something and they spent time doing things like confirming their cooperation and so on.

It was unclear how long they were doing that before finally their feeling cleared up and the vibration of the horse cart was inviting sleepiness, when suddenly Yue felt magic power reaction and she reacted.

The reaction source was right nearby. Yes, from the coachman stand. The magic power wasn't directed toward them, but flowing toward somewhere else.

「……Peddler-san. Just now, what did you do?」

Yue's question caused peddler Sarani to twitch and his plumb body shaking for some reason. And then, he looked back with a smile that looked pasted on his face.

「No, it's really nothing important. Rather than that, it will still take time until the next village. It's better for the two of you to lie down and rest during this time.」

「……I see.」

Yue was relatively good at reading the heart of someone from their expression. It was because she was a former royalty and she had also met painful experience before. And

so, she also immediately understood that peddler Sarani’s words weren’t honest.

It was really suspicious. Was this not a support event for player……

Perhaps guessing that doubt of Yue, peddler Sarani’s forehead was starting to sweat.

Yue’s fixed gaze was piercing peddler Sarani. It was a dreadful fixed gaze. It was a splendid fixed gaze.

Peddler Sarani was starting to sweat like waterfall.

「It’s the truth you know? A merchant won’t spout lie.」

「……I see.」

「No, it will really take time. I’m not lying. Hell will freeze over before I’m telling lie.」

「……I see.」

「……How about you take a rest?」

「……I see.」

「……」

Right now the face of peddler Sarani looked terrible because it was drenched with sweat like a fountain.

As expected, seeing it was getting stranger, Kaori also put her hand on Gram and Ama no Murakumo no Tsurugi and strengthened her vigilance, it was at that time,

「……-!? Kaori!」

「He? ――Kyah!?」

At the same time when Yue let out that warning voice which was filled with unease, *gin-* hard sound resounded from Kaori’s neck. It was the impact voice of Yue’s defensive magic that made it in a hair’s breadth time to protect Kaori’s neck from the rapidly approaching assassin’s blade. The moment Kaori noticed that, she raised a scream while also using Villager girl-style Godspeed to leap out from the cart.

Right away, from the opposite side of the spot where Kaori was just at, a powerfully assaulting blade passed through there.

「Hmm, on top of noticing the invisibility of this me, even the following blow is dodged……. I see, it seems you two cannot be dealt with ordinary means.」

Yue landed lightly beside Kaori who jumped down. It seemed an attack was also launched at Yue simultaneously with the second attack against Kaori. Yue jumped down from the cart to dodge that.

Yue and Kaori were staring dumbfounded and open-mouthed in a da~ze seeing the black shadow who was looking down on them from above the cart. Whether it was the surprise attack that slipped through Kaori’s guard, or the flowing consecutive attack, this wasn’t the time for being dumbfounded……however, the character that appeared was just too unexpected.

「Tha, thank god! You finally arrived! It’s those two! Those two are the wanted criminal Yue-pon and Kaori! Please capture them quickly!」

「Merchant-dono. You did well using the magic item to contact me. Not only that, you even bring them until here to

not let them escape……my gratitude to your bravery. Leave the rest to me, go on ahead!

Yes, may luck be with you!

It seemed it was something like that. This merchant-sama noticed from the start that Yue-pon and Kaori were criminal, he pretended to not notice while guiding the two toward the boss character (perhaps the mid-boss). It seemed that he was a character for that.

What betrayal. But, thinking really really carefully, these two were wanted criminal so if this was said to be the proper treatment for them then no one could deny that. This was the karma that was following the two to the bitter end.

The two were able to purchase things like recovery item and so on, so to speak it was something like the recovery place and save point that was usually provided in front of the boss room. Of course, they couldn’t save though.

But, what was more important than such things was regarding the person in front of the two’s eyes.

Yes, for some reason this person in black clothes was making a cross with his two hands that were holding short swords while meaninglessly turning his body several times in a stance of half body. The two recognized this person very much. The person was wearing a sunglasses, but the two completely recognized him.

Listen well, criminal Yue-pon! Accomplice Kaori! Now that I’m here, this place is the last stop for you two. Lament your own misfortune while carving this name into your bone! My name is Abyssgate! One of the four heavenly kings of demon king village, and an apprentice doctor! I’m the man who will consign the two of you to oblivion!

Yes, it was Abyssgate-san desu.

Just what is the four heavenly kings of demon king village, how can an apprentice doctor saying things like “consigning to oblivion”, for the time being Kaori put aside those straight-man retort and she whispered into Yue’s ear.

「Yue, why is Endou-kun here? Seeing his act, he is in Abyss-san state isn’t he? Is this the real thing? Or program?」

「……Come to think of it, before this Endou was called by Hajime and visited the home, but after a while I remember he rushed out while crying.」

「Ah, I can guess.」

「……Nn. Endou who said「NAGUMO YOU STUPID IDIOOOOOOOOT」while exiting the home was then chased by Hajime who was making expression that couldn’t endure being there while saying「Sorry! As expected I went too far! Even I got damaged!」……」

By the way, Abyssgate was a boss like four heavenly kings for Hauria training mode. Of course, it was a program. Though he was constantly in Abyss Lord state.

「Fuh, you two finished your discussion? You can strain your wisdom to the utmost and wield all the strength that you have. If not, the abyss will swallow everything without even any time for you to blink you know?」

A turn. An upward push on the sunglasses. And arms crosse——d!

「……Endou. How far will he go.」

「I’m thinking once more. Emily-chan who is fighting hard alone is really not half-baked.」

Inside their heart, Yue and Kaori sent their salute with streaming tear toward Abyssgate’s lovable lover who surely even now was refining her Hauria correction plan.

Recently, her very act of trying to stop the chuuni with all her might itself became Hauria clan’s amusement. Their affection toward Emily was rapidly heightening but……the pure Emily-chan who was happily saying「Recently, it feels like they became slightly better!」didn’t notice it.

With faraway look, Yue and Kaori was recalling Emily who several times before this was coming to play to the home, coming to consult, coming to grumble, coming to consult, coming while crying, and coming to consult.

「Then, it’s time for judgment. Kousuke E Abyssgate――here I come!」

The two quickly returned to their senses when they heard those words along with feeling the presence vanishing like a mirage.

It was mostly something that was done in subconscious level. It must be because of Kaori’s deep battle experience. When she noticed, she had already turned the unsheathed Ama no Murakumo toward her back.

Instantly, a metallic sound resounded and a light impact ran on Kaori’s arm.

「Yaah」

What Kaori unleashed along with that short yell was the horizontal sweep using divine sword Gram that she let out

simultaneously with her defense. The attack with its travel time shortened using Godspeed that was let out immediately following the enemy attack normally would become the height of counterattack and bisected the opponent.

However, the attack Kaori unleashed ended up slashing empty air in vain. Not only that, what entered her sight was something black――no, it was Abyssgate’s kicking leg. His body leaped midair at the same instant when he attacked and he unleashed a midair spinning kick.

Even when taken aback by the tricky movement, Kaori wasted n time to lower her head and dodged. But, from below that lowered head, the opposite leg of Abyssgate approached.

「Abyss-style Assassination Martial Art – Hi’en Renkyaku(The bird of abyss resurrected three times)」(TN: Swallow Tempered Leg)

Midair he used the spring of upper body and twisted to unleashed three consecutive kicks.

Kaori’s eyes opened wide. It was impossible to dodge. But, perhaps the kick would just barely graze her chin. If that happened, in front of Abysgate who likely had prepared the next move she would be attacked in a state where her brain was shaken.

「――「Wave Cutter」!」

「Muh」

A super compressed water laser flew from the side of Kaori who was bending backward in her attempt to dodge the second kick of Abyssgate. That laser was flying in a straight

line toward Abyssgate who was midair, however, it only grazed his side and passed through because his body unnaturally slid to the side.

Looking closer, the steel string that stretched out from Abyssgate’s black glove was connecting his torso with a kunai that was stabbed on the ground unnoticed. It seemed, he pulled on the steel string for emergency evasion and moved his body midair.

Abyssgate performed ukemi while landing. Kaori approached such Abyssgate using godspeed and the divine sword Gram lunged in a vertical slash. *GOU-!* The sword that was swung down made the wind roared and mercilessly split Abyssgate into tw——

【Naive】

【Ah!?】

The moment when Kaori thought so, the Abyssgate who seemed to be split into two divided into two clones and rushed passing through Kaori from her left and right sides.

Yue tried to rapid-fired wind blades in order to snipe the two Abyssgate, but a thrown Kunai approached Yue faster than she could attack. Furthermore, another kunai that had also been thrown unnoticed behind Yue was also flying using its trait as artifact that would return to its owner’s position.

Yue who was aimed with a pincer attack from the front and back wasted no time to use gravity magic to fly and dodged the kunais. But, her offense magic was interrupted just like Abyssgate intended and his approach continued unmolested.

【I won’t let you!】

「That’s why, I told you that’s naïve.」

Kaori spread fired silver feathers to one Abyssgate while she tried to strike at the back of the other Abyssgate with her sword, but a clone that suddenly appeared *poof* used its body as shield to block the silver feathers.

And then, Kaori suddenly lost her balance because her ankle was suddenly grasped. Although she at least avoided tumbling down, but she let the two Abyssgate approaching Yue to get away.

When she looked at her foot,

「——Doton – Shin’en Ryuusha」(TN: Earth Escape – Abyss Quicksand)

The figure of Abyssgate who was speaking his technique name with a smug face was underground with only his face and hand protruding out. His hand was firmly grabbing Kaori’s ankle. It seemed that he had made a clone hiding underground unnoticed.

Kaori who for some reason was strangely irritated used Ama no Murakumo no Tsurugi to slice half the face and arm of Abyssgate like mowing down grass. Abyssgate-san vanished with *puff*. Seeing that was also somewhat aggravating.

The Abyssgate that approached Yue charged from the front into super gravity space where the gravity was multiplied that Yue laid out to stop the approach. Normally any person that entered the area would be crushed by the pressure and became a stain on the ground.

But, even Abyssgate was a user of gravity magic. His body was instantly clad in black mist and he plunged deeper as though there was nothing in his way.

「……But, Endou is unable to invoke multiple gravity magic.」

「Correct. That’s why I’ll do this.」

Abyssgate’s capability to neutralize attack of super gravity was something that Yue was aware of. Her aim was that by using gravity magic then Abyssgate would use his own gravity magic that was his most dangerous skill to neutralize her attack, thus sealing that repertoire of his. Yue estimated that she would be able to cope against any other magic and physical attack other than that no matter what he tried to pull.

But, that was only if it was really the case that Abyssgate had the intention to attack Yue directly.

「——Doton – Shin’en Dairyuusha」(TN: Earth Escape – Abyss Great Quicksand)

Abyssgate stabbed his short sword on the ground, at the same time the ground caved-in for about the diameter of ten meter. The ground that was turned into a quicksand was crushed down because of Yue’s super gravity space. Her balance crumbled and her legs only sunk down even when she tried to find her balance.

A slight opening was created. The main body of Abyssgate didn’t let go of that chance.

A sword flash approached smoothly from behind Yue. She didn’t feel any presence. Before she knew it her attention had left the Abyssgate that was attacked with spreading silver feathers. Even though she certainly recognized that there were two Abyssgate approaching her rapidly!

Yue’s eyes opened wide. Right now when her space magic was being restrained, she couldn’t use the instantaneous

space teleportation “Divine Existence”.

「This is the e――afuh!?」

「……Nnn!?」

‘Will I get hit with an attack in this kind of place……’ The moment Yue thought that, a flying Ama no Murakumo no Tsurugi cut Yue’s head skin just for a tiny bit while stabbing the Abyssgate behind her.

Abyssgate just barely avoided having his vitals pierced, it was his shoulder that got hit and he got blown away.

Kaori who flew toward Yue with her silver wings unfolded took Yue out from inside the quicksand.

「Are you okay Yue?」

「……I’m not okay. My head got cut a bit. It was cut by Kaori.」

「I, I’m sorry. The gravity magic is stronger than I thought and the sword shifted. Is your soul affected?」

「……u. Nothing particular.」

「I’m glaaad. For now I’ll pour restoration medicine okay?」

Yue’s eyes turned a bit teary while both her hands were pressing on her head. Come to think of it, she recalled that in the past when she met Hajime, when she was controlled by a monster Hajime fired without any hesitation and her head skin was also scratched a bit by the bullet.

‘Both Hajime and Kaori are merciless on my head’, Yue leaked out a complaint inside her heart. Although, it was the fact that she was saved so she couldn’t forget to say thanks.

「Nevertheless, this is the first time I fought him but…… Endou-kun, he is really troublesome.」

「……Nn. He is completely making the best use of his own special characteristic. It's not just for show that he dealt a wound fighting a serious Hajime.」

Yue and Kaori were watching Abyssgate who was pulling out Ama no Murakumo no Tsurugi from his shoulder while quietly talking about their impression of him at each other.

Both of them would have received lethal attack if they didn't cover for each other.

What was terrifying was his stealth. Even though they were clashing against him right from the front, before they knew it he had abnormally slipped off from their consciousness. It wasn't in the level of presence isolation and the like. It was a divine skill that should even be called as erasure of presence, no, existence. ……It was truly sad that this hereditary trait wasn't something that the person in question wished for.

Abyssgate once said. It was the best he could do to make a single wound on the demon king. That he wasn't even able to win against the wives.

That statement was certainly not mistaken. With the exception like Liliana or Aiko, if they fought seriously, Abyssgate wouldn't be able to win against Yue, or Kaori, or Shia, or Tio, and also against Shizuku even though it was just barely against her.

However, in that statement there was these additional notes.

In the case of Yue, she would win if she bulldozed through using her automatic regeneration.

In the case of Kaori, she would win if she used disintegration ability in apostle mode while ignoring any impact on the surrounding.

In the case of Shia, she would win if she used body hardening and blood manipulation to use the strategy of stabbing each other at the same time.

In the case of Tio, she would win if she used vast range annihilation in black god dragon mode.

In Shizuku’s case, she would win if she created a sword world of several hundred black katana in Limit Break state.

Yes, anyone, even the veteran cheat group couldn’t fight directly against Abyssgate’s stealth tactic and his greatest trump card——attacking in waves using a thousand clones. There was a high possibility that they would be defeated before displaying their power if they didn’t used something cheat-like like blowing away the whole surrounding area in one go or bulldozing through using specs difference.

Therefore, he was the right-hand man of the demon king. Therefore, he nonchalantly got categorized among mankind’s strongest class.

The expression of Yue and Kaori who got that fact thrust before them once more was bitter.

Abyssgate faced those two and sneered「Fuh」. He must be wanting to say that this was the beginning of the second round. Clones were materializing. The number was increasing than before. His strength and the painfulness of his speech and act were increasing following the depth of the abyss.

He was really a troublesome boss character.

And so, the two chose to annihilate the whole area.

「Mu? Where are you two going?」

Ahead of the gaze of Abyssgate who was looking up, there were the figures of the flying Kaori and Yue. Their hands were full with the MP recovery medicine that they had purchased by quite a lot.

What materialized at the next moment were five heavenly dragons and innumerably number of silver feathers. In addition, a silver sun and a sun of azure flame materialized overhead.

――He couldn’t be defeated without bulldozing through by force. Speaking in reverse, if they were in an environment where bulldozing through was possible, he could be easily defeated.

「……I’m glad this is a game.」

「You’re right.」

The silver feathers and flame bullets for air bombing kept increasing without end. The five heavenly dragons growled while the sun of silver and sun of azure flame were enlarging.

Abyssgate who saw that was,

「No, aren’t those a bit no good?」

The next moment, the scene of the end of the century manifested on the ground.

The earth that was plowed by the saturation attack could be mistaken as the scene of hell. The figure of the collapsed Abyssgate smoldering with rising smoke was lying there. He was dispersing into red particles just like an enemy character. It seemed that he was completely knocked out.

Yue and Kaori landed down beside such Abyssgate and they walked near his head to examine the situation.

「.....He is twitching.」

「It's amazing he still has complete limbs even after all that.」

'If this is in reality then he will be scattered all over the place', Kaori said such gang-like line with a cute face.

Abyssgate who was still barely conscious because of the game mechanism turned his gaze toward such two and he opened his mouth.

「Ku-ku-ku-, I'm the weakest one even among the four heavenly kings. I'm merely a disgrace of the demon king village……」

「Eh, you are saying such thing yourself?」

「……Hajime, brutal.」

Hajime-san who set this up was seriously savage, retorted Yue inside her heart. Surely this was the fault of the bug.

Abyssgate wrung out his last strength and pointed out with a trembling hand.

Yue and Kaori were on guard in case he was planning something at the end, but Abyssgate's fingertip was

pointing ahead of the highway.

「If you circle around that forest along the highway, you will be able to see the demon king village.」

It seemed he gave them the road direction.

The hand fell down limply. Abyssgate was vanishing into dust.

「Anyway, let’s go there for now.」

「……Nn」

Both of them started walking. They didn’t look back.

About five minutes since they walked following the highway, when they circled the forest, it was just as Abyssgate said, they could see a tranquil village that was surrounded by wooden fence.

It was a small scale village with a calm atmosphere. It had scenery that was fitting for the next village after the village of beginning.

If there wasn’t the figures of people in front of the entrance that looked like a lovely arch made from wood.

「……」

「……」

Yue and Kaori shared the feeling of ‘somehow, I really don’t want to go there huuh’. But those people over there were looking here. They were looking awfully intensely here.

Yes, the rabbit eared person leaning on the pillar of lovely wooden arch with arms crossed and face sporting a nihilistic

smile for some reason, and a masked pink, and a black dragon who was there for some reason despite the place being a village, and a man riding on the back of that dragon sporting a smile that looked like a demon king, they all were looking really intensely at Yue and Kaori.

For the time being, they tried to approach.

An intense pressure and *GOGOGOGO-* sound were emitted from the man. An atmosphere that gave the skin goosebumps was drifting in the area. The wind of battlefield was flowing viscously. A monstrous presence that wasn’t inferior even compared to the real thing. By the point of time one confronted this man, don’t mention defeat, that person would instead be given the premonition of death.

This was without a doubt, the last boss. The demon king.

Yue and Kaori who were made to understand that whether they wanted it or not finally arrived nearby, and the demon king opened his mouth with an expression that looked mocking toward the challengers.

「Welcome, I am the village chief of the demon king village.」

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I watched Sniper: Special Ops.

Seagal-sama……

Anyway, I got a better opinion of Under Siege and Under Siege 2.

Arifureta Chapter 255

Arifureta After II　It’s All Peachy If You Just Win-!!

The demon king village was a tranquil place that was surrounded with splendid wooden fence. The entrance that depicted a lovely arch could be seen as casually conveying the will 「We greatly welcome other people than villager too」 of the village chief.

As for its scale it was about twice as big as the village of beginning. There might be around three hundred people living there. There was a conspicuously large tower at the middle of the village, a cross was attached at its summit. Surely that was the church. That was Yue and Kaori’s destination.

But, they wouldn’t be able to reach there that easily. There was one reason for that.

Because the demon king village’s village chief-san and four heavenly king-san were standing in their way with a somewhat awesome atmosphere!

「I won’t let you two lay your hand on the village. Criminal Yue-pon and accomplice Kaori. You can choose, will you surrender obediently, or get punched flying.」

The village chief who was meaninglessly emitting pressure *GOGOGOGO-* on the back of the gallant black dragon was saying that. It seemed in order to protect the villagers, the chief village was planning to punish the two criminals scheming bad thing right here.

It seemed the village chief of demon king village was treasuring his village and villagers.

The black dragon cried 「Gu~ruru♪」 in agreement looking like she was somewhat having fun. The rabbit eared girl fluttered her rabbit ears *fuaasaa-*, and the pink ranger…… the pink ranger was standing still without even a twitch. It was as though she was saying 「I want to be a shellfish」.

All of them were in a really motivated state!

Yue stared at the fearlessly grinning village chief and for a moment she showed a gesture as though thinking of something, and a beat later, she rolled up her sleeves completely looking as though she wanted to say 「Just bring it on~」 while returning back a fearless smile.

Seeing Yue walking forward, Kaori stopped her in panic.

「Geez-, Yue. Why are you that belligerent since we came here! There is an option of surrendering here, and by any chance perhaps we will be able to go to the church without fighting isn't it?」

「……Fuh」

「Just now, why did you laugh? Heey, why did you laugh I wonder? I wonder?」

Kaori's Hannya-san almost came out looking at Yue scornful laugh that was making fun of her, but there she swallowed

back her anger with an effort and she cleared her throat while pulling herself together. And then, she faced the village chief and opened her mouth.

「Err, Haji――not, village chief-san. If we surrender can you let us go to the church? If possible, we don't to fight……」

For the moment, Kaori attempted to negotiate in accordance with the game's setting but,

「……Fuh」

「Just now, why did you laugh? Heey, Hajime-kun. Just now, why did you laugh I wonder!?」

She was laughed at scornfully and made fun of with an expression that was exactly like Yue. Kaori-san was enraged with her forehead sporting a blood vein.

「No negotiation against criminal. Death or Destroy-! That is the international common sense!」

「The village chief of a remote village talking about international common sense is……」

Kaori became despondent when she heard the unhesitating declaration of the village chief-san.

「……Kaori. Stop being so unsightly by trying to negotiate after this late. We are criminal! Blowing up anyone who stand in our way and devoting ourselves to plunder until exhaustion are our duty!」

「I don't think that I'm someone so nasty to the level of a defiant criminal. Or rather, can you stop casually saying "we" to include even me as a criminal I wonder!? After all it's Yue who is the culprit for all the charges isn't it!?」

Kaori’s straight-man act was well executed. However, Yue-sama paid it no mind. She took a step forward and held up one hand forward, then her fingertip bent and made a challenging gesture as though to say ‘come and get me’.

Ignoring Kaori who was holding her head, the members of demon king village also showed their motivation in respond to the provocation.

But, there, the rabbit eared girl came forward alone.

「Chief-sama. Chief-sama himself doesn’t need to be troubled only to keep company bunches of this level. I’ll take care of them. Together with pink ranger!」

「!?」

It was the common pattern. For some reason pink ranger turned her head to the rabbit eared girl in a flash with an air as though to say 「Eh, me too!?」 though.

「Hou, not a bad idea. Then I’ll leave it to the rabbit ear and pink ranger. Teach them that the nicknames 「Or rather, this girl cannot get hit with bullet though, seriously. This buggy rabbit」 and 「The most wicked urban legend of the empire」 aren’t just for show.」

「Roger desuu! ……Eh, just now, was I nonchalantly got dissed?」

「……」

The rabbit ear girl reflexively stopped moving and looked back, while pink ranger was covered with dark cloud absentmindedly as though she was remembering a black history. The village chief sent a brief glance at such two before the black dragon flew to the sky with him still riding

it. It seemed that he would treat himself with being a spectator from up high.

The rabbit ears and pink ranger pulled themselves back together and they each took out a huge war hammer and black katana and they took their stance.

From looking it seemed that pink ranger wasn’t motivated, but the strength of these two was the authentic article. From the point of view of Kaori who thoroughly knew that, it made her got cold sweat that they were fighting these two in this condition where they had no number advantage.

Naturally her expression stiffened while she pulled out Gram and Ama no Murakumo no Tsurugi.

「These are, powerful enemies.」

No reply came against Kaori’s words. In exchange what could be heard was 「Sooi」 a stupid voice of throwing something. What was flying was a super compressed flame bullet the size of a fist. The speed was as fast as a bullet in contrast with that throwing voice.

「How cheeky desuuu――uu?」

The rabbit eared girl must be trying to sent it flying with her war hammer attack. The rabbit eared girl faced the flame bullet and launched a horizontal full swing.

But, the flame bullet showed an unexpected movement there. It put on the emergency brakes and the next instant it flew high to the sky.

The rabbit eared girl unconsciously showed an astonished expression wondering ‘Just where could she be aiming at?’, but right after that, her expression became twitching.

「Eh, ah, wait, Yue!?」

Kaori's uneasy voice resounded, but leaving that aside, the flame bullet drastically angled down and changed its trajectory even further and it quickly hit the target.

Grand explosive sound reverberated, a terrific fire pillar rose up.

――From a corner of the village

It felt like the time of the world stopped. Both the rabbit eared girl and the pink ranger, and the even the black dragon and the village chief, they were looking at the flame blast behind them with widely opened mouth. Naturally, Kaori was also the same. Screams were resounding from the village.

「……Fumu. Although this is a game, but even in a boss fight the village isn't turned into immortal object or no entry zone.」

A voice that sounded profoundly understanding, and lovely, and in a certain sense terrifying was resounding in the area excessively clearly.

Kaori who returned to her senses with a 'hah' made a grand straight-man retort without even hiding her convulsing face.

「Wha wha wha wha, what are you doing Yue!? Are you stupid!? Do you want to die!? This sister-san with a screw loose!」

「……Calm down Kaori. I only blew up a corner of the village a bit.」

「That wasn’t a bit! You cannot throw away your ethics just because this is a game you know!? If you don’t stop this, I’ll get seriously angry here!」

Kaori raised an angry yell ‘Ugaa――’ that was unlike her, however, Yue shrugged her shoulders as though wanting to say 「good grief this little girl」. A pulsing blood vein emerged on Kaori’s forehead. Hannya-san was standing by~.

With a gentle expression, Yue started to explain kindly, carefully, and thoroughly as though she was talking with a dull-witted child.

「……Are you listening, Kaori? No matter what kind of time and situation it is, it’s no good unless you are thinking from the view point of your opponent.」

「At the very least, I understand really well the rage of the villagers who suddenly got bombed.」

Yue-san beautifully ignored Kaori’s retort. She pointed her index finger straight up and began lecturing. Kaori was directing a fixed glare that was at the same level of Yue. As for the village chief followed by the four heavenly kings, they were also listening carefully in interest.

「……Even if it’s a demon king that show up in a game, but why is he fighting? What is his objective?」

「Eh? That’s……if it’s normally then it’s to conquer the world, something like that? In order to become a ruler is the royal road isn’t it?」

「……Exactly. In order to obstruct that, the hero and his party will try to defeat the demon king. Sometimes they will do illegal entry into civilian’s home, they will rummage around as they please, steal, if there is anyone who stand in their

way they will murder them even if it’s against their fellow human, in a boss fight they will lynch the single opponent with numbers. Under the name of justice! Under the name of justice-! You are mistaken! I am in the right! Because this is justice!

That’s a terrible prejudice……but I cannot say anything seeing I cannot completely deny that.

Perhaps recalling of someone in the past, pink ranger looked up to the sky.

Eerr, I don’t dare to believe this but, if it’s for the sake of defeating the village chief of demon king village then doing anything is fine because you are justice——don’t tell me that’s what you want to say?

……Do you think I’m a hero? How impolite. Cough-. We are off topic, but in other words what I actually want to say is, fighting from the front is not the only way to exterminate the demon king.

Sorry, I completely don’t get what do you want to say.

‘You still don’t get it……’, Yue-sama lifted up both her hands like westerners in exasperation. Kaori was a child that had self-control. She unconsciously lifted up her Gram but she immediately lowered it back down.

……If you think from the viewpoint of the demon king, the demon king want the world and that’s why he will fight even the heinous hero squadron alone. Then, in order to win against the demon king without fighting, you just need to erase his reason for fighting.

……Yue. Right now, I’m feeling so much goosebumps here. My feeling is like someone who have discovered a madness

inside their friend here.

Kaori who was feeling astonished hugged herself with both hands as though wanting to say that she was looking at a scary person. The rabbit eared girl and pink ranger, and the black dragon were also having the same reaction from hearing this talk. Their expression was like someone who had seen the darkness deep inside the heart of their loved one. Even the village chief-sama was holding his head at his wits end.

Amidst that, Yue created countless explosive super compressed flame bullet while speaking her conclusion with a smug face.

.....The demon king said. I want the world. In that case, it's fine if the world is just destroyed beforehand.

See, there wouldn't be any reason to fight anymore after that right?

Yue puffed up her chest 'ahem' with a cute face, but her idea was extremely disturbing. I won't let you conquer the world! Before you can, I will destroy the world first without fail!

Indeed, the village chief of demon king village said it. 'I won't let you two lay your hand on the village'. He fought for that. That was why, if the village was destroyed then he would lose any reason to fight. This was truly a stylish demon king extermination. Crush not the body, but the very purpose itself!

Anyway, first thing first Kaori, rabbit eared girl, pink ranger, and the black dragon, they all simultaneously,

Yue you demon-!!

「Yue-san you psychopathhh!!」

「Rather, you are an evil god!」

「The husband is like this, and the wife too!?」

Hurled their straight-man retort.

Yue-sama wouldn’t listen to mere words of the rabble. She floated up with gravity magic, made countless exploding super compressed flame bullets floating around her, and she spread out her hands widely.

She was truly overflowing with majesty like a demon king, with a fearless smile on her lips, and clear sadistic glint in her eyes. Like that she said,

「It’s all peachy if you just win-!!」

Meteor shower rained down to destroy the world(village).

The rabbit eared girl and pink ranger screamed ‘WAAAAAAH’ while running around to intercept the flame bullets, and then the black dragon hurriedly participate in the battle. Seeing them like that, it seemed that it was really as expected that if the village which was a protection target was destroyed then it would be the defeat of the village chief’s side.

「…….Take this and thi~s, and this this and thi~s♪ The village will perish if you don’t try harder you know~. If any of you dodge or charge forward, then I’m sorry but I’ll happily use the opening to destroy the village! Fu-fufu~nofu~~♪」

「Yue-san you fieeend! You bruteee!」

「Aaahm geez-. That’s why I don’t want to do this~~~」

「Oooi, Goshujin-sama! Thy first wife art rampaging here! Do something about it!」

Flame bullets that were carrying terrific power densely approached like a voley of gatling gun, furthermore every single shot was flying randomly following complicated trajectory. If they dodged then the village would be blown up, if they charged forward and the defense line was broken then the village would instantly return to ash.

If Yue used one hit kill attack, the lightning dragon for example to send flying the rabbit eared girl, during that time pink ranger would rush to bring the battle into close quarter combat, but because Yue understood that she attacked with barrage of bullet.

She was merrily firing around like crazy, but the storm of magic she unleashed was delicate and possessed lethal destructive power. It was an artistic special move.

The village chief was going to join into the battle soon, it was at that time,

「Sto, stop screwiiing, AROUN~~~~D!」

「……Nmii!?」

The vertical slash of Gram (flat side) from Kaori-san who was flying in godspeed burst on the crown of Yue’s head. The magic dispersed and Yue fell while making a strange cry. Perhaps she bit her tongue because her hands were pressing on her mouth and her eyes became teary while she was rolling around on the ground.

「……Ka, Kaoriii. What are you doinggg!」

「That’s my line. This is too fiendish! Even though this is a game, but this is still too problematic for a human!」

The black dragon glanced at the village chief. Village chief averted his eyes.

Kaori huffed in anger, but even while in that state she carried Yue who was still teary eyed under her arm.

「Even without doing that, we can still go toward the church without fighting! We can enter the village with my godspeed!」

It seemed Kaori planned to breakthrough using super speed. She was determined to shake off the enemies and slipped into the church.

Yue opened her mouth to say something, but Kaori’s godspeed was invoked faster than that.

This skill that made it possible to shorten the very time to move from point A to point B itself so the user could move in super speed, if it was in a straight line it could surpass even the speed of railgun bullet.

Against this speed that was beyond the pale of the perception ability of living thing in general, it would be beyond anyone’s power to lay their hand on the user without using external aid like magic or artifact, or preparing a special plan beforehand.

Once, even the apostles of that god were unable to even perceive this speed. The cheat of this skill was already proved……

(Eh, no way-)

(……Even though I was going to say that it was impossible)

In this world of godspeed, putting aside Yue who was sticking close to Kaori, any outsider should be unable to perceive her.

With the exception of just one person.

Indeed, pink ranger didn’t even twitch, the focus of the black dragon’s eyes were also still fixed at the spot where Kaori was at before. Though the village chief was looking at far away melancholically, but anyway, he wasn’t following Kaori’s movement.

But, it was only the gaze of the rabbit eared girl——that was following Kaori.

A chill shuddered through Kaori’s body, in that moment the ground under the rabbit eared girl exploded. The rabbit eared girl rapidly approached as though in a frame-by-frame playback!

If this was a race in a straight line where the two started from the same starting point, there was no way for the rabbit eared girl to win against godspeed. But, if it was just cutting into the path of an opponent that was approaching from the opposite side, it wasn’t something impossible.

As though to proof that, when Kaori noticed there was a war hammer’s hitting surface approaching before her eyes.

□Fuwah!?□

Kaori unconsciously raised a strange scream while bending backward like a limbo dance to evade the war hammer. The war hammer passed above her head along with the sound as

though the air exploded. Kaori’s expression was twitching grandly.

But, she dodged. She immediately returned her posture from the limbo dance state and without paused she rushed……

A shadow loomed above. Obeying the warning her instinct was ringing at her, Kaori leaped to the side using godspeed. If she escaped forward, she judged that surely she would be hit by shockwave from behind and got blown away.

That was the correct move. It was unclear how, but after Kaori dodged using limbo dance she should have taken distance of several meter in an instant with her godspeed, yet the rabbit eared girl who seemed to have catch up swung down her war hammer from behind Kaori.

The impact smashed the ground and the shockwave surged forward like a tsunami.

It was a bad move for Kaori that her legs unconsciously stopped moving. *DOU-* When she could hear that sound of the ground exploding, the rabbit eared girl was approaching toward her front with a movement that was exactly like an instant teleportation.

(Godspeed――!?)

Kaori evaded while at the same time moving toward the village without pause. Certainly the rabbit eared girl was fast, but now they were side by side. If she could keep rushing forward toward the village like this, she would be able to shake off the rabbit eared girl. Kaori thought that, but the moment her leg stepped forward to advance, she caught sight of an iron ball approaching right from the side toward the position she would be going to and her legs reflexively stopped.

Just from where in the world it came from? Naturally the rabbit eared girl kicked it out almost at the same time when Kaori stepped forward. The iron ball that moved from the explosive leg strength was already the same like a cannon.

It was natural for Kaori to stop moving from the sense of danger, and then, as long as there was just that one moment it was enough for the rabbit eared girl.

(Ah, this is, no good――)

(……I think it’s pointless though.)

She got caught. Kaori who was convinced so resolved herself and she lifted her hand to use Gram as shield. There, Yue whose aura seemed resigned churned her magic power.

The next moment, Kaori and Yue’s figure vanished and then materialized a few meter ahead.

It was Yue’s instantaneous space teleportation magic “Divine Existence”. Actually the skill was liberated after they got the better of Abyssgate. Although, because the skill was only liberated just now, it was affixed with use limitation and the distance it could possibly travel was around 5~7 meter.

This time too they moved to a spot five meter away from the rabbit eared girl but……

「Eh, Shia is――」

「-, Divine Existence-」

The rabbit eared girl wasn’t at the previous spot, and instantly, a shadow loomed overhead. Yue instantly invoked Divine Existence and teleported further five meter to the side.

And then,

「Whyyy!?」

The rabbit eared girl-san was right before their eyes. The war hammer was raised up.

「Nnn-, Divine Existencee」

More teleport! However, they were circled by the rabbit eared girl.

Further teleport! But rabbit eared girl was beside them!

Desperate teleport! Failed to escape from rabbit eared girl-san!

Even though they should be teleporting completely randomly, it was as though the opponent understood where would they teleport to right from the start, the distance of five meter was instantly filled and they were circled around!

「Ah, I see, it’s Future Sight!?」

「No? I’m not using it you know?」

Kaori pointed out that the method of calculating their current position was using the rabbit eared girl-san’s characteristic magic, but the person herself simply denied that while swinging her war hammer. It was barely dodged using teleport. Although this time there was a slight distance between them, but it didn’t change that their path was blocked and they were circled around.

「Then, how do you know our position!?」

Kaori reflexively asked so, to which the rabbit eared girl-san smiled cheerfully,

「Instinct-!!」

And answered so.

Reacting against a speed that surpassed railgun bullet speed, and calculating the materializing position of instantaneous space teleportation using only instinct before circling around that position.

「……This is the bugged rabbit's way of doing thing with the bugged rabbit's characteristic after all.」

The eyes of Yue who was saying that tiredly was looking at far away as though she was escaping reality somewhat.

Kaori had never fought Shia directly. She sometimes saw her training, saw her easily dodging Hajime's bullet and had easygoing thought 'how amazing~', but now that she faced her for real she understood well her dangerousness.

Try to imagine this.

A heavily armored tank that possessed a destructive power that was literally a one hit certain death, able to trickily move around with a speed that could dodge even electromagnetically accelerated bullet. In addition, that tank was equipped with automatic repair function, could jump around until the sky, and able to accurately find enemy position whether they were trying to hide or teleport. To say more, a future prediction would automatically activate in respond to an attack that would directly connect to its death, so surprise attack wouldn't work at all.

It was a nightmare.

Even that demon king was made to lament like this, 「I don't want to earnestly fight only against that girl. There is no way

to defeat her other than using plan to checkmate her. Or rather, when I accompanied her training before this, Donner’s bullet got caught barehanded by her……now that she doesn’t even need to dodge, just what should I do huh.

By the way, after that training Hajime was improving his artifact’s specs bit by bit. A demon king that was desperately increasing his strength because he was cornered by his wife……it was really surreal.

.……It’s suicidal to do something like fighting Shia and others in this state where our ability is restricted. That’s why, I thought to checkmate her while the game’s setting is still in effect. And yet, Kaori you stupiiid

Uu. But, Yue was just too much of a fiend, that was why……

If it was Yue in full power going all out then she would still manage somehow against Shia. However, right now she was in a state where finally Divine Existence could be used with limit. It was also difficult to declare that the space magic itself was fully usable.

The point was, it was a situation of “level insufficient to clear the stage”.

However, there was no way the enemies would give anymore opening that would let them make an unavoidable attack by taking the village hostage. The enemies weren’t that naïve that the same method would work more than once.

‘Is this stalemate……’

When Kaori was thinking that, she heard a sigh that leaked out from Yue.

「……I don’t want to use this move though.」

「Eh, you still have some kind of plan?」

The reliable Yue-sama. Kaori’s eyes shined.

「Uh huh」Yue nodded half-heartedly, however, she was making a really lovely smile in contrast of that. It was a lovely smiling face that was sadistically bright.

「……Some time ago, Shizuku secretly tried on frilly gothic Lolita clothes.」

「!?」

The sudden words caused pink ranger to move her face in alert toward Yue as though to say 「How did you!?」. Everyone else were directing their gaze to pink ranger as though to say 「Eh, seriously?」.

「……When it was Shia’s turn for washing laundry, she would sniff Hajime’s laundry once without fail before putting it inside the washing machine.」

「!?」

The rabbit eared girl’s rabbit ears stood up straight as though saying 「How did you!?」. Everyone else were directing their gaze to her as though to say 「Eh, seriously?」.

「……Recently, Tio was starting to write poem.」

「!?」

The black dragon’s eyes opened wide as though to say「How did you?」. Everyone else were directing their gaze to her as though to say 「Eh, seriously?」.

Yue smirked broadly while declaring toward the girls who were like that.

「……I am Yue. The first wife who grasp everything of the wive~s.」

She was implicitly saying, 「If you don’t want the happily embarrassing this and that get exposed even further, you understand what should you do, don’t you?」.

In that place where dead silence had returned, it was pink ranger who made the first move.

She plucked off her own mask and then threw it away strongly toward the ground. And then, she collapsed all of a sudden.

「Pink ranger received critical hit. Pink ranger died.」

She even said such narration by herself.

The rabbit eared girl who saw that was trembling while raising her voice.

「Uu, Yue-san you cowaaard! Fight fairly and squarely desuu!」

The rabbit eared girl pointed sharply with her finger, in respond to that Yue-sama,

「It’s all peachy if you just win-!」

She answered so while puffing up her chest. The rabbit eared girl collapsed spread-eagled on the ground. 「I won’t forget this desuuu」Such curse could be heard from her.

Yue’s gaze caught the black dragon.

「Nu, nuguu……」

The black dragon moaned and hesitated of what to do. Toward such black dragon, Yue-sama averted her gaze a bit, and she spoke with her cheeks slightly reddening.

「……Tio, you was cute. You are really a maiden.」

「Thou read it!? Mine book!?」

「……Honestly, I’m sorry. But, before this you have the previous offense of reading my diary as you pleased, so we are even with this.」

「NuguoOOOOOH, it’s just so embarrassinggg」

The writhing black dragon then laid upside down and used both her front legs to cover both her eyes and then she stopped moving.

「Wha, what violence of words……this is terrible.」

Kaori turned a shuddering expression toward her partner. Rather, an uneasy thought ‘Does she know something embarrassing about me too?’ was descending on her mind.

Yue-sama glanced at Kaori. She smiled pleasantly. Kaori grabbed at Yue while saying「What’s the meaning of your smile!?」, but even when she shook Yue’s body back and forth, Yue was only smiling. Kaori’s unease was only swelling up instead seeing that smile.

「Aa~, somehow this development is completely different from what I imagined……but in a sense, perhaps I should say as expected of Yue?」

The village chief-san finally came out. His voice came from the sky sounding like he was exasperated, but also in admiration, with a really speechless expression filled with complicated feeling.

「……Nn. As expected I cannot fight everyone. It's only natural that I will aim for a victory without fighting. The leftover strength that I can preserve――can be used to fight Hajime to my heart's content.」

「Nn? You want to fight me? I completely thought that you will also target me with verbal attack that I'm really staying on guard here though.」

The village chief-san tilted his head in puzzlement, which in respond Yue grabbed Kaori's hand and she answered.

「……Nn. This is a rare chance, so a battle for the last. I think it's also fine to test how far can I go in a tag team with Kaori.」

「Eh, Yue?」

Kaori looked at Yue in surprise. Yue turned her gaze toward Kaori and asked 「What do you think?」.

「……Hmm, I guess. We *also don't need to worry about anything* already, let's go all out for the end!」

「……Nn!」

Yue and Kaori touched their fist at each other in a display of their motivation. Their words caused the village chief to notice that the two *had noticed* and he made a wry smile.

Seeing Yue and Kaori who looked like they were having fun as though they were going to participate in the event that

would be the last enjoyment of the day after this, the village chief started to manipulate the floating display near his hand.

Yue and Kaori were enveloped in gentle light. Next, two large swords materialized in front of Kaori, they stabbed smoothly into the ground. They were a black demon sword and a white holy sword. They were Kaori's exclusive artifacts——「Demon Sword of Circle Calamity　Anima Ernte」 and 「Holy Sword of Gospel　Bel Rexion」.

Yue herself felt her magic power overflowing from her body which became a golden undulation that whirled visibly outside. Her hairs that were fluttering gently and her shining eyes that looked like garnet wordlessly displayed that she was in her perfect state.

「Originally this is a space for training. There is no need for even a shred of reservation or mercy. Well then, let's play a bit grandly before the dinner.」

jakin What was taken out with such sound was Donner & Schlag. Their form that was emitting crackling sparks was truly ominous.

「Come, sister with a screw loose, and the village chief's regrettable daughter?」

The provoking words of the demon king village's chief caused the two to have blood vein pulsing on their forehead and,

「「Bring it on-!!」」

They replied with words that also sounded belligerent.

The stage was the sky.

The village chief who was flying around in the air with crimson ripples spreading from him was cornered by the splendid combination of the villager girl who was flying in godspeed with silver wings spread out, and the apprentice sister who had three layers of halo ring behind her and five heavenly dragons obeying her command.

Meteor shower of bullets streamed like a shower in the sky, giving rise to the profuse blooming of flowers of flame blast.

「Oo, Hajime-san is not just using Cross Velt, he even started using Grim Reapers.」

「Everyone is going at it seriously. Even though they understand that they won't die, isn't this a bit too extreme?」

「Sometimes going wild like that art also necessary. After all they couldst not really cut loose in earth.」

Shia and Shizuku and Tio had gathered before anyone knew it. They were watching the battle while sitting on the ground while grasping their knees. They were absentmindedly staring at the battle of the three.

Just as Shizuku said, they wouldn't die in this space, even so the extremely radical battle caused them the spectators to be in suspense with their heart pounding, but……

They understood from watching.

「……They look like they are having fun.」

「……Right.」

Both Yue and Kaori looked like they were really having fun. On top of that, the combination of the two was harmonizing further into godly level. It was as though they were

practicing dancing to the same beat for real, which made anyone who watched would want to shout 「Oooh」 in admiration, the two were exhibiting such artistic techniques and tactics one after another.

Actually, from some time ago Tio had been going 「Ooh, amazing! There! Go!」 completely as a spectator.

But, both Shia and Shizuku seemed to be in a slightly different state,

「……Muu, I will be able to match the rhythm more skillfully there. For Yue-san, doing it like this, like boring inside will be better.」

「……Yue is also too soft there. In that setting Kaori have the habit of going to the right. Even though if it’s me I will be able to do it in the way that makes it easier for Kaori.」

For some reason the two where pouting a bit with an expression that didn’t find the show enjoyable. Perhaps they were jealous toward someone. And from their words it could be easily guessed who was the target of their feeling.

Even while there was a fierce battle going on the sky, the voices of 「Kaori you stupiiid~」, or 「Yue you idiooot~」 insulting at each other could be heard from below. Each time they found something to be dissatisfied about from each other’s movement, they would quarrel with each other, but even that quarrel itself looked like they were having fun somehow.

And then, each time Shia and Shizuku saw that, they would pout 「Muu」 again.

「It’s really wonderful that they art getting along well.」

After glancing at Shia and Shizuku, Tio turned her gaze toward Yue and Kaori in the sky. Tio who were looking at both sides in order then whispered with a gentle tone.

A while after that, the showy extreme game continued until the magic power and bullet that were prepared by the setting ran out.

The hazy consciousness surfaced from the pleasant shaking and the voice of their beloved calling their name.

「……Nnu」

「au?」

Yue who opened her eyes slightly absentmindedly looked at the face of Kaori which was in front of her eyes. Kaori was also staring in a daze at the face of Yue who was in front of her.

「……I'm sorry, Kaori. I have no interest of that way.」

「That's a terrible misunderstanding. I also don't have an interest of that way. Yue you idiot.」

Perhaps they were slightly half-asleep, it seemed they were thinking that the other was crawling into their bed.

「Don't sleep talk, wake up.」

When their gaze followed the direction of where the voice came from, there was the figure of Hajime looking down at

Yue and Kaori there. The two blinked their eyes repeatedly and then when they looked around, they understood that they were in Hajime’s underground workshop. Not just Hajime, there were also Shia, Shizuku, and also Tio there.

Hajime laughed a bit while talking to the waking up duo.

「There should be no problem, but both of you, do you feel anything strange in your body?」

「……Nn. Nothing particular.」

「Yep, I’m also fine here. ……I see, we came back.」

They had returned from the world game back to reality. Kaori who took in that fact let out a sigh of relieve.

「Yeah, that’s right. I was surprised you know? When I came home, both of you were sleeping in this kind of place, you two wouldn’t wake up, and when I investigated the game was activated.」

「Uu, I’m sorry Hajime-kun. Looks like the game device broke because of our carelessness. When we noticed we were taken in already.」

「Looks like it.」

Hajime shrugged his shoulders to tell her to not mind it. Yue looked over the workshop and asked.

「……As I thought, only Endo was a program?」

Hajime answered positive to that question.

Actually, Hajime, Shia, Shizuku, and Tio who appeared at the end of the game were the same like Yue and Kaori. They were the real people who were diving into the game.

It seemed Yue and Kaori weren’t really conscious of the time, but the time was already evening right now, Hajime who was in the middle of going home accidentally met up with Shizuku who had taken care of her family business and was heading toward the Nagumo residence. The two of them then went home together. Right after that, Tio’s group also returned home.

They woken up the droopy Shia who was still sleeping like a log even when the sun had set, searched for Yue and Kaori who weren’t anywhere and when they tried looking at the underground workshop, they found the two collapsing on the floor.

When they investigated, it became clear that the game device was malfunctioning and taking in the two.

At that point, it was when the two had finished their series of random encounters and were walking on the highway. At that time Hajime was pretty much able to quickly make the two returned to reality if he wanted but,

「Why didn’t you do that then?」

「The two of you looked like you were having a lot of fun. Besides――」

Recently Yue’s use of magic (offense magic instead of handy magic) was remarkably few, perhaps it was because of that her trigger of offense magic inside the game became really light.

When Hajime investigated the game log, he saw that Yue destroyed the church right after she entered the game. Hajime thought that perhaps, was she stressed out from living inconspicuously in earth although it didn’t show up in her surface? Thinking that this was a chance that was hard

to come by, Hajime decided to continue the game so Yue could cut loose once in a while.

To say more,

「About this game device, I'm especially paying attention to its safety. That's why, originally it's impossible for it to absorb the surrounding people by its own just from it falling a bit. And yet, for it to malfunction and get bugged like this――Kaori, you are the cause.」

「Eh!? Me!?」

「Yes. This is just my guess, but when this device hit you, I think you unconsciously used your disintegration ability at that time. You used it for just an instant, and it was really only a slight activation, but a part of the safety mechanism along with the magic power in it were dispersed because of that.」

「Wa, was that true?」

「Yeah. Even for just an instant but it was still disintegration magic. Even though it was an incident, but you unconsciously activated that kind of atrocious thing, to put it another way your control was sloppy――Kaori, you are too much of a peace idiot.」

「Hauuua!?」

Hajime's exasperated pointing out caused Kaori to crouch in guilt and shame. Yue poked at her repeatedly while dealing additional blow 「……Kaori is too loose~, your stomach is also too loosee~」. 「My stomach isn't flabby-」 Kaori objected back in reflex.

And so, in order to disperse Yue’s possible stress, and admonished Kaori’s peace complacency, Hajime used Abyssgate program in order to buy time while he and the others finished their preparation and dived in inside the game.

「Well, though it seemed that Yue saw through that we weren’t program right away.」

「……Nn. Naturally. A program and the real Hajime, there is no way I’ll mistake between the two even just for an instant.」

「Uu, even I noticed it right away.」

By the way, Kaori noticed after she saw Hajime’s reaction against Yue’s violence. Kaori’s expression turned complicated. perhaps she felt vexed of losing against Yue.

Seeing such Kaori, Yue rubbed the salt on the wound once more, Kaori made her rebuttal against that, and then they started going into a fight like usual.

But, there an amused chuckle interrupted them. When the two who were glaring at each other turned their gaze over there, they found the figure of Hajime chuckling with a really pleasant expression looking at them.

「No, really. The two of you get along well huh.」

Even though they were going to start quarrelling for real just now, but why was his impression toward them was like that instead? Yue and Kaori tilted their head in puzzlement, to which Hajime pointed at the hand of the two while saying.

「When you two collapsed, the two of you were hugging each other so strongly as though you two absolutely wouldn’t let

go of each other. Look, even now you two are holding hand without any sign of letting go.」

「……Nn?」

「Eh?」

Hearing Hajime pointing out so, Yue and Kaori gazed at their own hand. Indeed, they were tightly grasping each other's hand. What's more it was what was commonly referred to as lover hand holding with how their fingers were interlocked with the other's fingers.

When push came to shove they covered for each other faster than they could think, and when it came into battle they displayed action that was dancing to the same beat, and even when they quarreled they snuggled close to each other naturally.

What could these two be called other than intimate friend? Seen from the view point of a certain demography of people, there were already lily flowers blooming profusely at their background.

'This is involuntary-!' As though to say that, the two let go of each other's hand hurriedly, but before the two could speak out any complaint or excuse, the two were pulled backward strongly. At the same time, their face got buried *mofu-* into a soft place.

「Kaori-san, I'll say this in advance, but Yue-san is my Yue-san. I am her number one best friend! Be aware of that, thank-you-ve-ry-muchh! Desuu!!」

「Yue. Don't meddle with my Kaori too much. After all I'm Kaori's number one best friend. Be aware of that, thank-you-ve-ry-muchh!」

Shia and Shizuku sullenly glared at the other with Yue and Kaori who were gasping for breaths from their face getting buried into the voluminous chest of the two were in between them. It seemed they were respectively feeling a bit jealous that their best friend was going to be taken away.

「Nou, Goshujin-sama. While this sight art something commonplace, I'm feeling really alienated here, what shouldst I do?」

「……Should I step on you?」

「!? This damned Goshujin-sama-. I love thee.」

The underground workshop was somewhat in chaos, but right after that, a new character descended down from the ceiling. A part of the ceiling toppled over suddenly, and a little girl came down smoothly from the upside-down sofa.

「Muuh, leaving out Myuu like this! How unfair nano! It's dinner nano! After eating Myuu will also play that nano!」

The princess of Nagumo family seemed to be helping Remia and Sumire while her papa and others were playing. What a well-behaved daughter.

Urged by Myuu who didn't forget to call them for dinner even while huffing in anger, the decisive battle for the seat of number one best friend ended for the moment. They all climbed up the stair while Yue and Kaori were pacifying Shia and Shizuku respectively.

「Nn? Myuu doesn't go?」

「I'll return by 'pyon-' nano.」

「……You really like that huh.」

Hajime chuckled while exiting the room.

By the way, what she meant by “pyon” was the shortcut to the living room. If the sofa toppling over was the shortcut to fall into the underground, the ‘pyon’ was a mechanism to leap to the living room from the underground. It was like that thing singer used to leap up to the stage in a concert and so on.

The princess of Nagumo family didn’t like normality!

Myuu moved to the floor tile where she could ‘pyon’, and that time she was about to activate the mechanism, *thud* a sound came from deeper inside the workshop.

‘Oh?’ When Myuu tilted her head and took a look, there she found a book with strange colored front cover.

Myuu took that book with her hand.

「Hm~m, Myuu cannot read this nano……. Well, doesn’t matter! Rather than that it’s dinner nano!」

Myuu wasn’t bothered and jumped into the living room using ‘pyon’.

With her hand still carrying the book.

The living room of Nagumo residence was overflowing with liveliness. Yue and Kaori was still quarreling with each other stingingly like always even in the dinner table, however Shia and Shizuku could only see that as the proof of them getting along well and they were blazing with strange rivalry, Shuu and Sumire yelled 「We are home—」, Tio was raising voice of ecstasy from getting stepped on, and the neighbors were startled.

The little adventure of the two love rival(friend) that happened from a little happening ended, and today the common day of Nagumo family ended peacefully and safely too.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Now then, in the middle it felt like I don’t understand anymore what I’m writing, but for now the small adventure of Yue & Kaori is over.

Sorry that in the end I put a strange groundwork.

I just put it in for the time being, thinking that someday I might be able to use it for the material of an extra story, something like that.

Come on, Myuu has the property of being liked by strange existence after all.

By the way, perhaps the material I dropped was a bit unfamiliar, so I’ll explain lightly.

- R’lyeh Text

A fictitious grimoire that appeared in Cthulhu Mythos. It might be able to summon something bad. Possibly the reader would be called by something bad.

Arifureta Chapter 256

Arifureta After II The Reunion of Monster Friends

AN: Short story. This isn’t an introduction for a long arc.

The word count is also few because I’m a bit busy. The story will finish in the next chapter.

As expected, it’s impossible to make a long arc with these guys w

---

zudon, an impact sound that resounded until the bottom of stomach shook the air.

A thunderous sound and vibration that even felt as though a demon king somewhere had launched a bombardment didn’t stop ringing at just once, the sound and impact were occurring in succession.

At the same time, in the rust colored world——in the great desert Guryuen, a large sand pillar rose up and the rolled up sand cloud obstructed the sunlight.

Although, what obstructed the sunlight the most wasn’t the sand cloud. If there was a *person* here, they would undoubtedly open their eyes wide and doubted their own

sanity, or escaped from reality by convincing themselves that this was a mirage characteristic of the desert.

An object that could cause any person to be like that was dancing in the sky, higher than the sand cloud and locally obstructed the sunlight.

Yes,

□□□GYUOOOOOOOOOO□□□

By the killers of the great desert that were screaming while getting launched up to the air——the sandworms.

Originally, they would lurk underground and detected their prey through sound and vibration, then suddenly leaped out from underground and swallowed their prey into their mouth that was like an excavator. That was sandworm’s trait. Their difficulty to be detected and their surprise attack were the greatest target of precaution for people who were going through desert, they were a symbol of terror.

Such killers who wouldn’t show their figure above ground except when preying on the prey, why would they now dancing not just above ground but even in the sky.

Of course this wasn’t because they had evolved and learned the ability to fly in the sky.

The cause of that was this.

□GO DIEEEEEEEEEE-□

Higher than the sandworms that were launched up, was an existence that was dashing to the sky. It spoke sharply like a yakuza while it descended with its *rabbit ears* fluttering.

The rear legs that were abnormally developed accelerated each time they kicked on the air, finally it broke the wall of air and transformed into a white cannon shot. It was the kick rabbit that originated from the bottom of abyss——Inaba.

His rush that was jointly using gravity’s acceleration, Air Force, and Explosive Ground Shrinker was just like a meteor. There was no way the launched up sandworm had any way to evade, it received Inaba’s heel drop kick and the middle of its body burst.

Faster than the rain of blood and flesh, Inaba kicked on the air and rapidly altered his path, without pause he performed forward somersault and pulverized the head of the sandworm that was further below.

When he rushed passed the sandworm midair his body twisted and launched midair roundhouse kick. The fluttering of his rabbit ears due to the breeze of wind was beautiful. But, the result that was brought about was the very definition of gruesome. A shockwave that flew out following the trajectory of the kick exterminated one sandworm that was beginning to fall.

In addition, when Inaba swung his leg upside down in reverse as though he was break dancing, a slash that should be called as foot sword flew out from there, cutting apart the last sandworm into two.

Inaba who landed on the ground lightly flicked his rabbit ears *fuasah* with his front leg. Right after that, flesh and blood and the corpses of sandworms rained down around him. Inaba was standing with composure in the middle of the squall of flesh and blood.

Do you think I don’t notice? Come out already yeah. If you still has in you the dignity as the lord here.

By the way, when Inaba-san talked normally, his talk would sound like 「Mokyu, mokyukyu? Ukyu. Mokyu~~kyumokyu」. It was lovely. He is a lovely bunny-chan who in the end of his evolution had his appearance turned into pure white with his round and cute crimson eyes looking moist.

He was able to talk with human language because of the function of one of the ear cuffs attached on his rabbit ear. The ear cuff possessed the skill of “Language Comprehension” and “Telepathy”, using the broadcasting function his words could be conveyed to his surrounding as though he was talking normally.

Of course, the creator was that guy.

The great desert Guryuen returned a silence like calm water at Inaba’s questioning. A beat, two beat……no change appeared even after waiting.

「……Well, it ain’t matter. I too don’t really want to bully the weak. I only bought the fight that was sold to me. If you say you gonna tuck your tail and run away, then I won’t follow. See ya.」(TN: Inaba’s speech is using thick Kansai dialect)

Inaba quickly turned around and began walking toward west.

Right after that, the ground exploded.

The opponent that Inaba called out. It was a deser monster that was emitting especially strong magic power. It was a giant sandworm——to the degree that the sandworms before this looked like children. It blew up the ground and assaulted Inaba from directly below.

Inaba’s figure wasn’t there.

There was only the giant body of the sandworm that pushed out until more than a hundred meter instantly, it looked like a tower that suddenly appeared right in the middle of desert.

Was Inaba whose body as a monster was comparatively small swallowed whole in a flash by this sandworm……

Right after it looked like that,

「Not just your movement, even your instinct is dull huh. This is the end yeah! Lament your own stupidity——pass to the next life ya!」

A black spot was created inside the blazing sun. The true identity of that was obviously, Inaba.

The moment the giant sandworm leaped out, Inaba kicked on its jaw at the same time and flew up high to the sky.

The powerful leg that was swung down along with a piercing yell cut across the pointed up jaw of the sandworm along with an impact, without pause the cut and impact ran until the ground like breaking piled up roof tiles with a punch.

The rabbit ears of Inaba who stepped on the ground went *fuasah* once more.

A beat later, the twitching giant sandworm was cleanly split into two and collapsed to left and right.

「If you want to pick a fight with me, at the very least wait until you can win against the monsters running rampant at the bottom of the abyss’s bottom……hey, you cannot hear me anymore huh.」

Inaba shrugged with his rabbit ears and turned around, this time for sure he aimed toward the western sea and rushed using Multi Ground Shrinker.

Even so, as I thought the monster on the surface ain’t satisfying to fight yeah. If it’s like this, perhaps I should go to the palace even I gotta wait for a bit, so I can fight that cheeky rabbit or Ou-sama again huh.(TN: Ou-sama = king)

Inaba was letting out her complaining of dissatisfaction while sprinting explosively in a speed where even the surrounding desert looked blurry.

Currently Inaba was separated from her employer and also friend Suzu.

In the first place she became Suzu’s subordinate monster was to become stronger. But his wish wouldn’t come true in the present-day Japan. Of course, if he actually accompanied Suzu to Japan, he would also be able to do mock battle against Shia or Hajime or others, but as expected there was no way he would be able to fight against them every day with how busy they were.

And so, Inaba was traveling from place to place that had enemy that seemed strong, like the deep part of the northern mountain range and the sea of forest, the interior of great canyon Raisen, the lowest level of abyss, and so on. But for the current Inaba, there was finally no more enemy that could give him a hard battle.

Training, and then growing from that itself was what Inaba was living for. Heightening his martial art and knowing his own limit was exactly his life work.

He wanted to prove that even a monster could reach the height of martial art in the end of hard work, that his kick was able to reach the top of the world.

For Inaba who was such a martial artist, his current situation where he found no battle that could make his blood boil and his flesh danced, where he had to cross through the verge of death, was honestly a really withering situation for him. It was to the degree that his rabbit ears were completely limp compared to usual.

「Boredom and stagnation are exactly the greatest enemy. Yosh, if I cannot find anything after searching for a bit, I'm gonna head to the palace and wait until Ou-sama open the gate. It also has been a long time since I met Suzu-han. If that Ryuu person made Suzu-han cry……I'm gonna split open his head.」

After about a few hours of dry desert sound that fluttered his rabbit ears.

Inaba who crossed the desert with astounding speed finally arrived at the western sea. There was the 「Sea City Erisen」 at the coast, but Inaba's destination wasn't there.

Inaba came here to meet someone. He was going to meet a friend that he suddenly remembered amidst his days where he was starting to feel boredom. 'Come to think of it, I haven't showed up my face to him for long already', he thought.

Inaba took a step forward from the coast. Inaba didn't fall to the sea. Dark red ripple was spreading under his feet,

making a firm foothold midair.

Like that Inaba rapidly left toward offshore by walking above the sea.

And then, when he reached a spot where soon it would be hard to even see the coast, Inaba took a really deep breath, and he called loudly at the one he came to meet.

「BO~~~~~~~~~SS, LE~~~~~~~~~E!!」

The loud telepathic yell spread out like a ripple. The call that was filled with magic power and magnified by artifact would reach the radius of 100 kilometer if it was done seriously.

Inaba focused his rabbit ears for a while to look for any reaction.

And then……

「DON’T SCREAM, SO LOUDLYYY~~~~!! Which idiot is doing this huhhh!!?」

An angry yell of harsh voice came back. The voice sounded pointlessly dandy, but it contained sullenness as though the voice’s owner had just gotten woken up from his sleep by someone screaming into his ear using a megaphone.

「Oo, it reached out just with a yell. My luck is really good yeah.」

A few minutes after waiting while saying such easygoing thing, *plop* what showed up its face out from the sea was a fish with a human face that looked like a middle-aged man——that person (?) Leeman. (TN: The katakana of Leeman can also mean salary man in Japan)

「What’s this, ain’t this Inaba. I thought it was an idiot from somewhere.」

「Really sorry, boss Lee. I picked the fastest way to find you boss. You were sleeping?」

The two congenially conversed.

Actually, these two were acquainted with each other. It was after the legendary decisive battle was over during the one month before the return to earth. Hajime went to show his face to Leeman and Inaba who accompanied him met Leeman at that time.

As fellow monster who had strong ties with human, especially with Hajime, the two hit it off and since then their relationship grew where they could call each other friend.

Inaba scratched his head while apologizing. In respond to that Leeman splashed around the sea surface while shaking his head.

「I didn’t sleep. Recently, the west from here is a bit noisy, so I patrolled and straighten up the idiots who got too rowdy. After all my wife and children cannot feel peaceful because of their noisiness.」

「Nothing beats your family in good health. ……But, acting stupid in the turf of a friend of the godslayer……those guys really don’t value their own life eh. Well, normal monster cannot think anything like that though.」

Inaba sat down on the midair foothold that he created within inches above the sea surface while saying that with his rabbit ears swinging in amusement.

Leeman who was lightly bobbing on the surface beside the foothold was also throwing his gaze in a relaxed gesture in order to enjoy himself in the idle talk with his friend that he finally was reunited with after a while.

「I’m not that much of a big shot. If it’s not for Ha-bou’s meddlesomeness, my strength is only to the degree where I can command the dweller of sea a bit. I’m just a trivial old man. It’s uncomfortable that a lot of people, including you are strangely paying me respect, so stop it.」(TN: Ha-bou, the bou is like calling the other person sonny.)

「That’s because boss Lee is Ou-sama’s lifesaver after all. It’s natural that you were paid respect about that much. As the proof of that, ain’t boss got gifted with a lot of artifacts? There was even some human who schemed or got loud tryin’ to get their hand on boss’s artifacts but got their just deserts in the end, ain’t that right?」

Just as Inaba said, the human faced fish Leeman’s name was actually relatively well-known among the humans.

After the legendary decisive battle, naturally the historians and poets were making a lot of tales and poems that extolled that godslayer demon king. Amidst all that tales and poems, they identified the true identity of Leeman who Hajime meet during the one month before his return home, the interviewed a certain rabbit eared girl, and then they circulated the conspicuous service of Leeman far and wide.

When Hajime’s party was about to get eaten by the monster lurking in the bottom of sea since the ancient time——the Evil Eater, he came running in their predicament, and by himself he bought time and gave them the chance to recover from the hopeless situation.

The historians said. If at that time Leeman didn’t come running, the world would lose the mean to oppose the mad god and perhaps the world would perish.

——A human faced fish monster that was also the close friend of the godslayer demon king Leeman

It was recognized as a legend that spread far and wide through the continent.

Leeman let out a deep sigh, however, he then glared sharply at Inaba.

「You are prattling about artifacts or being lifesaver, but you yourself is also outrageous.」

Leeman’s gaze turned toward the several ear cuffs fixed on Inaba’s rabbit ears. Every single one of those ear cuffs was national treasure class artifact that ought to be managed by the palace, they were Hajime’s quality product that currently were becoming super rare legendary artifact in Tortus.

And then above all else, was Inaba’s popularity that was surpassing Leeman. After all,

「The only monster that became an ally of the demon king party by his own will, someone who fought through the Holy Precincts——Kicking King Inaba. Whether it was the hundreds of corpse beast soldiers, or the mighty and unequaled monsters of Holy Precincts, they weren’t allowed to stand before his technique, right? Kukukuh」

「Sto, stop it already boss. I didn’t do anything big. I only helped a bit so Suzu-han could talk with her friend. I’m the one who really didn’t do anything much.」

Looking at Inaba whose rabbit ears folded down powerlessly with a troubled face, Leeman raised a pleasant laugh.

Both of them had the self-awareness that they were monster. Both of them ended up having deep relationship with the savior of mankind through a strange fate, but originally monster was the enemy of mankind. Both of them didn’t even have a shred of hostility toward human, but even so, having praise and respect from those humans directed to them made them felt really awkward.

「And, what’s your business here?」

Leeman asked to change the mood.

「No, I don’t really have any business here y’know. There is no more enemy here that can fight me satisfactorily, so at the next chance I got I’m thinking to go to Ou-sama’s place. At that time I won’t be able to meet boss for the next while, so I showed up before that.」

「What a diligent guy. Well, thanks. When you meet Ha-bou, tell him I said hi.」

「Got it ya.」

After that Leeman and Inaba talked about the recent happening.

Two monsters getting heated up with old man talk in the middle of nowhere on the ocean. One side was talking with excessively dandy voice, spinning wording that was excessively suggestive, while the other side was using Kansai dialect. Boke & tsukkomi were bursting flowingly in their talk.

In the middle, hearing Inaba who was dissing Shia, Leeman smiled wryly while remonstrating Inaba 「Don’t treat the missy like an enemy too much okay」 and so on, the time was flowing while they were getting heated up talking about Shia.

But a little while after that, Leeman-san suddenly muttered 「Nn?」 as though he noticed something and he turned his gaze toward faraway.

「Boss, what’s up?」

「……The sea, is crying.」

It wasn’t chuuni. Leeman wanted to say that the residents of sea that weren’t sea monster were moving about in fear it seemed.

Inaba’s eyes narrowed and he gazed at the sea at the west. Leeman also frowned while nodding.

「……Just now, I said that at the west it was noisy right? It seemed that it was flowing this way from really far away. I once went to investigate when the sun had set enough, but there wasn’t anything particularly strange. But, it was curious.」

「Curious? What is?」

「The monsters straying this way. All of them, they felt like they were scared.」

「Scared……. Is boss sayin’ that something is happening at really far away there? And that something made the scared monsters to wander this way, is that it?」

「It’s just my guess in the end though.」

It was really suspicious. But, at the same time Inaba’s heart leaped. If it was unknown then that was great. If it was a threat then that was even better. Boredom and stagnation was exactly Inaba’s greatest enemy.

「Good thing I’m here, boss. The wandering monsters are coming here again right? Bring me along too ya. It’s better the more helper there are right? Let’s protect the peace of the sea with high spirits yeah.」

「……Good grief, someone like you. You are talking about peace with that kind of cheerful face? That’s just your battle maniac in full force.」

「I ain’t a battle maniac. I’m a martial artist. Fighting strong enemy is just what I’m lookin’ for. Even if boss don’t bring me along, I’m still gonna follow you.」

Leeman who shook his fin as though wanting to say ‘good grief’ in exasperation turned a glare toward Inaba.

「Can you fight underwater huh? I’m not going to babysit you okay?」

「I cannot fight underwater. But, if they want to kill me, they have to jump out from the sea. I just need to provoke them ya. Besides, look, I look delicious right?」

「You are rabbit after all. Your appearance that is.」

Inaba was laughing ‘ha-ha-ha-ha’, to which Leeman was making an expression that seemed like he was enduring headache as though to say 「I won’t say any more」 while right after that, he let out a powerful telepathy.

That telepathy was to guide the living things in the sea. It was a measure so they wouldn’t be vainly killed by the

monsters pouring in from the far western sea, to protect the sea environment (Leeman’s sphere of daily life).

At the same time, an abnormal pressure of fighting spirit was emitted from Inaba. His fighting spirit that was perfectly controlled reached out toward the west.

Inaba grinded his rabbit legs for warm-up while he was making a fearless smile and made his rabbit ears went *fuasah*.

“Come on, let’s go yeah, friend of godslayer.”

“Good grief, can’t be helped. Let’s go already, kicking king of holy precincts.”

Saying that, the two rushed toward the chaotic west.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Recently, I’m thinking that middle-aged old man is nice huh.

Harsh old man, cool old man, absurdly strong old man.

Old man who is unperturbed no matter what happened, and can deal with it like adult.

I want to try to write story with that kind of old men as the main characters someday.

That’s all from Shirakome.

PS

The latest chapter of comic version Arifureta is updated.

Yue is cute. I can see various Yue.

If you are interested it can be seen at the homepage of Overlap-sama, so please try to have a look.

Arifureta Chapter 257

Arifureta After II The Monsters, Chasing the Unknown

AN: Even though I'm making good on my words, why do I feel like I'm betraying the expectation……

There were two silhouettes dashing to the western ocean.

Both had strange appearance. Rather they were a bizarre phenomenon.

One was a rabbit running on the sea. More accurately, the rabbit was using dark red ripple spreading midair forming an energy platform as its foothold but because the rabbit was extremely near the sea surface and it was moving with abnormal speed, its dash caused sea spray to rise in its wake as though the sea got split.

But, Inaba whose rabbit ears were going *fuasah fuasah* from the sea breeze was a monster that possessed that kind of characteristic magic, so putting aside the reason of why he was at sea, there was no doubt that this was still within range that could be comprehended.

The problem, was about his companion.

「……Boss. Isn’t that foul play?」

「Shut up. It’s convenient so it’s fine.」

Inaba glanced aside at his companion——the human faced fish Leeman. His straight-man soul that was welling up the moment Leeman took that out was finally breaking through and leaked out.

KIIIIIIIII- Such unique sound was resounding. Even though Inaba was holding back, but it still granted Leeman the speed to follow Inaba’s speed.

The thing’s appearance was closely resembling a delta shaped fighter jet. Its terrifyingly smooth body that was colored with sea camouflage brought the sea resistance to nearly zero. The ripple that was flowing backward was beautiful. The picture of a shark exposing its fangs painted on its prow showed the playfulness of the creator.

There was a spot that seemed to be the cockpit near the center of the ship frame. The inside of that cockpit was filled with water where Leeman was snugly settled there. A part that seemed like the propulsion device was installed at the stern, for a glance it could be seen like the propulsion method of water jet, but what was jetting out from there wasn’t water but silver particle. Without a doubt it wasn’t normal from that point.

——Small submarine with dual use for water and sky　Triana (v.2)

It was the strongest and fastest artifact for open sea that the demon king gifted for his lifesaver (?).

「You are already a sea monster through and through boss. You are flying. You are sparkling. A flying human faced fish,

that’s just too surreal ya.

I told you, shut up. This is more or less a submarine. It can also fly. I am a man of sea.

Perhaps feeling somewhat awkward, inside the cockpit that was filled with water Leeman-san averted his gaze toward faraway.

By the way, this Leeman’s exclusive submarine (?) was linked with Leeman’s telepathy, from its activation until its steering could be performed with only Leeman’s thought. In addition, a part of Leeman’s scales was transformed into living mineral using metamorphosis magic and regeneration magic, those scales themselves were artifact that possessed the function of “Treasure Warehouse”.

I never thought that boss’s own body would also get demonically remodeled……Ou-sama, how terrifying.

I already told him that I don’t need it. But Ha-bou said Lee-san is the type to get dragged into something troublesome, so just think of this as something for reducing my worry and accept it and requested on me. Even though it was me who was in the receiving side. Good grief, our position is all messed up. If Ha-bou requested me that far, uncle just cannot refuse it.

‘What else is there other than gratitude that I can show to him huh?’, Leeman shrugged his fins with that thinking looking somewhat troubled.

Inaba shrugged his rabbit ears Indeed in agreement. The ear cuffs that were attached on that fluttering rabbit ears were also not something that Inaba asked for, all of them were Hajime’s thoughtfulness for Inaba who was continuing his warrior journey to become strong.

The demon king-sama was comparatively harsh to human, but it seemed he was really kind to his monster comrades.

「By the way, what's that sparkling things? That ain't magic power right? Made in earth thing? Somehow I felt absurdly strong power from it though……」

「Nn? Aa, this thing. I also don't really get it. A few years ago you see, that chap Ha-bou got lost in different world that isn't this world or earth. It seemed to be a world of sky and dragon, and this energy seems to come from there. He improved it a lot, and then he said that for this kind of vehicle this thing's convenience is better than gravity control and improved it only recently.」

「Hohee~, a world of sky and dragon huh……as expected from Ou-sama. He will go anywhere yeah. As I thought being at Ou-sama's side will be the most interesting huuh.」

Inaba-san and Leeman-san didn't know. How the energy of that world was fundamentally limited. How Triana's energy strangely wasn't running out at all despite of that. How the cause of that was the "small planet" loaded inside the ship……

After several years of research, that demon king finally completely grasped one of mankind's great problems and made it possible to miniaturize and mass produce it!

By the way, the former battleship that was similarly demonically remodeled like Triana had been reborn as an extravagant passenger ship that could fly anywhere whether to the space or the dimension sea, and it had also been unveiled already in front of a certain queen and her group.

At that occasion, the grown up queen-sama was overcame with emotion from her reunion with the demon king-sama

and did this and that, then there was a dispute with the introduced wive~s but……

With the mediation of the workaholic princess-sama who for some reason seemed to be excessively getting along with the queen-sama, they all managed to avoid further problems.

And then the former classmates who were also boarding the ship and came along together said 「He didn’t stop with just having mistress, now he even have local wife!?」「How far the demon king is planning to go……」 with a shudder when they witnessed that.

Now then, Inaba and Leeman were absorbed in their carefree talk while there was something strange happening in the ocean, but the next moment, they withdrew from that place at the same time.

Inaba was making water pillar from the impact of his step. While Leeman took a sharp turn.

――OOOOOOOOOOO-

The place where Inaba and Leeman were at a moment ago was assaulted from inside the sea by a giant sea snake with its mouth greatly opened just like the sandworm before this.

The jaw closed with a snap in vain without catching any prey. The leaping out giant sea snake monster turned its fierce gaze toward the pre――

「CHESTOOO――!!」

「We got an energetic guy here. Here」

What came flying was a white cannon ball. Inaba’s flying kick that accelerated with a sound as though the air was bursting the flank of the sea snake until halfway, snapping that huge body into ‘<’ shape.

The sea snake was going to scream unconsciously, but before it could there was a projectile flying with fire line trailing behind——a small missile that hit its head directly which gave rise to the blooming of flame blast and flesh and blood.

「A hot blooded fellow huh——uoh!?」

「Chih. What are these guys?」

Inaba was about to land near the sea surface while making his rabbit ears went *fuasah* as usual, but the next moment, a monster that looked like a swordfish fiercely flew out to stab toward him.

Leeman struck using Triana’s machine gun and blew it away from the side, but then a lot of monsters of the same type assaulted Leeman.

Inaba’s shockwave and extending kick slash turned the monsters into minced meat one after another, Leeman was using telepathy to use the weapon loaded in his submarine——an ultrasonic wave impact and scattered the monsters.

But, Leeman frowned. It was just as his leaked out words said, the monsters’ action was obviously abnormal.

There wasn’t just swordfish type monster, all kind of monster were attacking toward Inaba and Leeman above the sea surface without balking at their disadvantage.

「Wait, boss! I felt horrible number of reactions with my senses though!? Is this how it always is!?」

「There is no way that's true! This kind of number is the first time! Geez, just what kind of troublesome thing is happening this time.」

Even while Leeman was spitting out his complain, monster types that was related with sea like shark, snake, squid, and so one were appearing in succession.

There would be no way Inaba would fall behind the sea monsters in an air battle. Thinking that it was safe to leave Inaba, Leeman left the front line for a moment and went underwater, there he let out an even bigger sigh.

Inside the sea, it was jumbled with a variety of monsters spiraling up like a fish swarm. Fellow monsters with different species were in a close formation without even killing each other, originally this should be an impossible sight.

In addition, monsters were marching in one after another from the west.

This was like a stampede by sea monsters. A tsunami of monster marching from the west.

「These guys are bad news. If this number pushed in all at once, even Erisen won't hold although they have Ha-bou's defense mechanism.」

「Monsters marching forward without figthin' each other——this is really, this is a nostalgic phenomenon huuh.」

Inaba was exterminating all monsters that he could possibly attack from above the sea without letting even one getting

away, as though to perform one kill per second. He answered at Leeman’s telepathy with a voice filled with complicated feeling.

Indeed, it was as though this was the monster army at the legendary decisive battle.

A bad premonition crossed at the back of Inaba and Leeman’s mind.

「I don’t know what is going on. But, at the very least it’s clear what we ought to do right now. Am I wrong?」

In respond to Leeman’s question, Inaba’s mouth split open into a fearless wide grin.

「I’m not thinking of protecting the human until that much. Yeah but, kuku-. This is a battlefield. This is my battlefield where enemies of all choices are crowding so much. I’ll kick them all flying. I’ll be the last one standing. If as the result the humans are saved, well, that’s fine ya.」

「……Haa. Got it, got it. I’ll just casually take care of the bunches that slip through, so do whatever you like, you damned battle maniac.」

Leeman launched a line of torpedo with an exasperated expression.

When Inaba heard Leeman’s words, he laughed in even more good mood.

「Hahha——!! As expected from boss! You get what I’m talkin’ about! Well then, sea monsters! Let’s decide a bit, just who is the strongest monster yeah! Now, COME AT ME FROM ANYWHERE ANYTIMEE~~~~~E!!」

The war cry of the battle rabbit echoed. It broadcasted to four directions and up and down accompanied with dark red ripple!

——Characteristic magic Dance Battle Frenzy

Originally one monster species should have one characteristic magic. The characteristic magic of Inaba who was a kick rabbit was “Sky Step”. It was a magic to create foothold midair, moved in high speed, or increased the kicking power, producing shockwave or extending kick slash and so on, it was a characteristic magic that was related with movement and kick attack.

But, under the strange fate, Inaba who achieved a unique evolution later on managed to master several characteristic magic.

One of those skills was “Dance Battle Frenzy”. So to speak it was something like “Provoke” in RPG game. It magnified the hostility of enemy and directed it to the user.

The ripple of provocation that reached until the bottom of sea invited the monsters aiming at the delicious looking rabbit into battle frenzy.

——oOOOOOOOOOOOOO

——GAaAAAAAAAAAAA

——GIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIIII-

Countless roars shook the ocean and burst the sea surface with pressure.

Aiming at Inaba who was intentionally standing near the sea surface, the swarm of monsters spiraled and assaulted all at

once.

The sea surface bloated up. It looked like it could be mistaken as a volcano eruption. Right after that, monsters were charging all at once from all directions.

「SHAORAAAAA!!」

Inaba performed a handstand but using his rabbit ears while rotating in high speed to perform roundhouse kick to all directions. The technique that looked like a break dance blew away the surrounding monsters in radial area. The monsters were sent flying like pinball.

A giant shark monster flew out from right below him.

「I'm gonna send you back downnn-」

The rabbit ears went *pyon!*, the recoil made Inaba's body reversed with a beautiful front midair somersault. A heel drop kick was launched from there.

The head of the leaping out shark split. Next even the sea was split open. The monsters that were within the impact range had their body's inside whipped up and blood vomits scattered around.

「ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA-!!」

Monster leaped out and got sent flying, monster leaped out and got sent flying. On the sea surface with Inaba at the center, monsters were flying like machine gun strafing to all direction. They all were turned into sea scraps while skipping on the sea surface *splash, splash* like rock skipping.

Countless tentacles surrounded Inaba from all direction and enveloped him. It was a genuine monster that should be called a Kraken with body length of thirty meter.

「Bring it on-」

From the encirclement of the tentacles, Inaba leaped out――not. He jumped up a bit and then reversed his body upside-down. He kicked on the energy foothold and aimed toward the sea!

Inaba who by his own decision flew into the sea where he would be disadvantaged made a foothold inside the sea and using the skill above “Ground Shrinker” and above “Explosive Ground Shrinker”――the “Ground Shrinker – Divine Piercing Leg”, he forcefully blew away the water resistance inside the sea and passed through beside the Kraken.

The Kraken was trying to turn around with a sluggish movement to chase after his prey but,

「This is my service ya. Your first sky travel since you were bornnn, enjoy it to your heart’s content yaah!!」

Inaba kicked. At the Kraken. Along with the sea.

The sea surface undulated. Right after that, *GOU* the sea flew to the sky along with an explosive sound. No, more accurately what was launched up was the kraken along with sea water clinging on it, which caused the hallucination of the sea flying up, but because it was launched up faster than the water could be shaken off, seen from the outset it looked like as though a part of the sea was wholly sent flying to the sky.

――KUEEEEEEEEE~~~~

The kraken’s scream was surely something it raised for the first time since it was born.

Aa, the sky is really blue!

「Did you enjoy it? Your life will be enough for the payment ya.」

Oh? Before it knew it at its side a rabbit-san was……

The kraken’s consciousness was blew away to beyond the sky.

「Ooi, Inaba. How long you are going to play there? A lot is also straying here you know? There are also bunches that are ignoring us and going toward Erisen. If you can only finish them off one by one, then I’m going to take care of it okay?」

「Mu? Even though I had especially picked a fight, but it didn’t really work? As I thought this is strange huuh. Well fine. In that case I’m going to pick a fight even more seriously yaa!」

From Inaba, a valiant war cry「MUKYUU~~~~~~~~~~~!!」 came!

――Characteristic magic　Dance Battle Frenzy　Derivative Skill　“Survival Frenzy Battle”

One of the ear cuffs. This derivative characteristic magic was limitedly generated from the ear cuff’s ability that brought strengthening effect from sublimation magic. Its effect was several times the Dance Battle Frenzy, it made the enemy seethed with fighting spirit that made them threw their body into a banquet of battle.

A part of the monsters heading toward Erisen while ignoring Inaba and Leeman who was holding back their invasion underwater changed their route and gathered toward the sea surface right below Inaba.

The monsters were clamoring like carps flooding under water surface demanding food.

「My trump card ya. Eat to your heart's content and then head to the next world.」

Dark red magic power surged. Inaba's pure white fur was starting to be colored with dark red line faintly pulsing.

Inaba kicked on the air and dashed even higher to the sky. Far above the sky he suddenly rolled around. With an upside down posture, he activated "Ground Shrinker – Divine Piercing Leg". Inaba instantly broke through the sound barrier and further rolled around midair. His leg was directed to below――

「Blaze bright red, and burst open」

Just as those words said, Inaba's both legs were being wrapped with hell fire!

――Characteristic magic　Myriad Clad Leg

It was the second characteristic magic that Inaba obtained later on. It enchanted Inaba's kick with elemental magic to reinforce his strength while also enchanting the element's characteristic effect.

From really high altitude, while falling down in the speed of sound, with the super heated kick attack Inaba――

「Bla☆st!!」

the enemy!

The sea warped. A moment later, a terrific shockwave blew up the air and sea in circle shape, a fierce heat wave instantly evaporated the sea water.

A temporary crater was created in the sea. It was truly the fall of a meteor.

All the monsters that were near the sea surface were blasted by the shockwave, even the monsters who were quite deep inside the sea had their internal organs crushed by the penetrating impact and they writhed in agony.

Even the monsters that were luckily quite far away and avoided deadly wound, a part of them lost consciousness, or else they lost their will to fight and desperately escaped to the north or west.

The crater of sea that was suddenly created was finally starting to recover its former appearance with the sea water at the surrounding flowing into it. The sea was fiercely undulating in a rampage. Dark red flesh and blood were coloring the whirling sea.

「Fumu. So so I guess.」

The rabbit ears went *fuasah*. Inaba-san whose whole body was dripping wet flew out from inside the sea and then he basked in self-esteem midair.

There,

「This stupid idiot-!!」

「Abeh!?」

The Triana that Leeman controlled rammed at the back of Inaba’s head hard. *gochin-* A painful sound rang out.

「Whether it’s Ha-bou or you bastard, I think it’s better if both of you will be a bit more considerate to this uncle’s safety. I thought I was going to die.」

「Ah……I, I’m ashamed, boss. Don’t tell me, was the submarine broken somewhere!?」

Inaba’s previous dignity vanished without a trace. He immediately became all shook up with trembling rabbit ears. Seeing that Leeman let out a deep sigh and went ‘good grief’ with his fins.

「Well, I’m fine though. This will make a tsunami like this. Ha-bou was also installing tsunami countermeasure in Erisen so just this much won’t be a problem but……I’m telling you there should be a bit better way of doing thing.」

「……Well, it’s not like that’s impossible. But, see, ain’t my soul a blazing one? Then the finishing move must be a flame one ain’t it?」

「Who cares.」

Leeman’s cold straight-man retort burst. Inaba’s rabbit ears withered.

「Well, let’s just say it’s all right in the end. Everything is mostly taken care of, the rests are also running away.」

「Hm~m, even so, just what in the world happened ya?」

A stamped of sea monsters. If Inaba and Leeman weren’t here, surely Erisen would be attacked. This was something that had never happened before.

「We lack information. But, the scale of this is different compared to the sporadic attack by the “straying monsters” until now. Perhaps we better inform the humans too about this for now.」

「Guess so. Especially Erisen, because that’s Myuu-dono and Remia-dono’s birthplace ya.」

‘Anyway, let’s go back for now.’Inaba and Leeman were of the same opinion like that with an exchange of their gaze, however, their monster instinct notified them of “something”. The two turned their gaze to the west at the same time.

「……What’s this?」

「……I wonder」

From the direction of the open sea far away, there was a small black spot that looked standing out. No matter how they looked, it looked like it was floating in the air.

Inaba and Leeman looked at each other’s face and then they advanced toward the black spot while heightening their vigilance.

Before long the thing became clearly visible. It was a mechanical object with the shape of a rectangular pyramid. There was nothing supporting it from below, it was floating still two meter above the sea surface.

「Somehow it look similar with Ou-sama’s item huuh.」

「Ha-bou’s artifact, is it? But, this is……」

If talking about a floating mysterious object, what came to mind was the artifact of a certain demon king. But, both

Inaba and Leeman didn’t assert that. It was only a vague feeling, but their monster instinct sensed that “this thing is different”.

Just like how Inaba and Leeman was observing it, the quietly floating mysterious rectangular pyramid also felt like it was somehow observing Inaba and Leeman.

「Boss. What should we do with this? I’m only guessing, but this might be related with the monsters just now don’tcha think?」

「Must be. Something like this is best if we left it to Ha-bou. Anyway, how about we collect it for now?」

Right after Leeman said “collect”, a change appeared at the mysterious rectangular pyramid.

「――□□□□□□□□□□　――□□□□□□――□□□Ehito□□□□」

Right after it let out that gibberish language, Inaba rabbit ears stood straight from shock, and Leeman’s listless half-opened eyes――it was like that from the start though――looked somewhat surprised. Then the pyramid ignored them and started to move smoothly toward the west.

「Wha, what was that? It talked ya.」

「Chih. Troublesome. It’s making me letting go a bit more of the service time for my family like this.」

The mysterious rectangular pyramid moved away with really high speed.

Inaba’s eyes that were seeing that were gradually getting brighter. That shine was exactly the curiosity to the

unknown which exterminated his boredom. He was sensing the presence of strife at the destination where this rectangular pyramid object that was related with the monsters stamped was going.

「My bad boss. I'm――」

「I got it. You are going right? Can't be helped. I'll go with you.」

Not letting Inaba finished talking, Leeman consented of accompanying him with an atmosphere that if he was a human this would be where he took a smoke.

「No, it's better if boss stay behind yeah. This might be dangerous.」

「If it's really dangerous, then I have to bring back the information of what kind of danger it is. If I let you go alone and you don't come back, what am I going to do then? If I and you go together, even if we meet danger one of us can hold back the danger while the other escape isn't that right?」

「No, but still ya, what are you gonna do with your wife and child boss?」

Leeman sent a glance at Inaba who was scratching his head before turning his gaze to the east. Seeing how he was sending magic power to that direction, he must be activating telepathy.

After talking about something for two, three seconds, Leeman's body rocked and the white of his eyes was bared as though he got hit by a shockwave.

「Bo, boss!? What's the matter!? Are you okay!?」

「I, I’m okay. No problem. I only touched my wife’s sore spot a bit.」

「Sore spot……what did you say?」

「No, I told her I’m going out for a bit. I don’t know when I’ll go home so take care of the rest please. That’s all.」

「……That, even I who don’t have a mate think that way of telling her is too insensitive. And, what did boss’s wife said?」

「……Even if I go home, don’t think that your room will still be here. This useless husband, something like that.」

「……As I thought how about going home? Right now.」

Leeman’s mouth formed a small grieving smile before saying 「Now, let’s go. We are going to lose sight of it」 and chased after the rectangular pyramid.

It seemed the wife’s stock of patience had ran out against the husband’s wanderlust. In the end when Leeman went home, would he be welcomed back by his family……

By the way, Leeman’s home was built by hollowing out a rock at the reef area nearby Erisen. It was a splendid home. In a human sense it was unmistakably a stately mansion of a celebrity.

Seeing the back of Leeman who was going ahead, Inaba’s expression looked really complicated, but he then shrugged his rabbit ears and chased behind him.

The two monsters advanced forward through the ocean in order to ascertain the unknown object and the unknown something.

Their figures before long vanished at the other side of the horizon.

After that, Inaba and Leeman’s whereabouts became unknown for a few years.

Because the two by nature had wanderlust habit, no one were especially concerned but……

One day, due to a notice that suddenly arrived, a turmoil that started from the incident this time as the impetus dragged in the demon king family and it developed into a great tumult where hell broke loose.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The story this time is for the extra story that I’ll write someday.

For now, I’m thinking that it will be a story where Nagumo family second generation will also show up but……well, it’s still in the future.

The artifact presented to Lee-san……

This is Lee-san who was once taken out from aquarium by flying cross, so when thinking that now he became able to control that by himself, it’s normal isn’t it? It’s surreal though.

Inaba’s sure kill move.

Everyone, did you recall that person from One Piece?

But, Shirakome wrote by imagining that person from D-Gray. I like the scene of Falling Technique □Iron Shac○□.

Twin tail is also not different then rabbit ears. Both are justice.

Arifureta Chapter 258

Arifureta After Il You-, You Are Calling Yourself a Samurai Like That!?

Evening. The time after school when the light of the sun was starting to be dyed orange bit by bit.

In a place a slight distance away from the school building, there was the spirited yells of the students resounding.

That place was a building that was separately built from the gymnasium and was exclusively used for martial arts type club activity. The students were calling the building as dojo building. Clubs like kendo, judo, karate, aikido, jeet kune do, ninjutsu, naginata, kodachi two sword style, wrestling, boxing, and so on did their activity here, its spaciousness was more than the gymnasium with three floor in total, the completion of the building was really rare even for a private school.

People said, that it was the result of the hobby of the first generation board chairman surging out……

At the place in the first floor of that dojo building that was allocated for the kendo club, unique spirited yells that sounded a bit different from other club were resounding. Surely, most likely, the club members were yelling

□MEE—NN□, but even when the yell went well□eE—NN□, when it went bad □EAAAAAHNH□, and if things didn’t go well □ENDEEEEERR□. Like that it became an hour of mishearing. (TN: In kendo, the athlete would usually used ‘men’ in their yell)

Of course, that was the result of the gushing out fighting spirit.

Though about this kendo club, they were showered with a lot of attention from the karate club, judo club, and aikido club that were also allocated the first floor as the place for their club activity. It wasn’t something blatant, but there were quite a lot of glances flying toward the kendo club.

The cause of course wasn’t those yells, but a beautiful girl with a trademark of a black hair ponytail.

The excellent style that could be seen clearly even across the loose kendo uniform and the dignified atmosphere that also gave off kindness. She was someone who even before her disappearance was evaluated as a composed girl, but now she appeared like an adult woman from where a core far stronger than before could be felt from her.

□Haa~. Yaegashi-san, she is seriously amazing. I wonder if I should join kendo club even after this late.□

□What are you gonna do even if you join huh. Rather, if you try to do something, you are gonna get done in by her seriously scary boyfriend you know?□

□Right right. Taking glances from afar is just right toward that kind of person.□

The target of the glancing looks——Yeagashi Shizuku. When a boy of the judo club who was taking glances at her was

whispering ecstatically, his friends retorted with expression and voice that were filled with resignation.

If one looked around, it could be somehow understood that even the karate club and aikido club were also making that kind of conversation. The extraordinary mystery of her one year disappearance and her atmosphere that changed for some reason were raising her charm and degree of attention by a lot.

「Aah, sheesh. How irritating. Even though the match will be soon.」

「Really. If I remember correctly, the karate club will also have their match next month though……. They are lacking spirit.」

When one member of the female kendo club grumbled that with a frown, another member also showed her agreement while wiping her sweat.

It was at that timing Shizuku came with a drink in one hand and an apologetic expression on her face.

「What should I say……I'm sorry. As I thought, isn't it better if I don't come here so much? I'm also not a club member anyway.」

「Eh!? Wai-, that's not it! We weren't saying that with that kind of meaning!」

「Yep yep! The bad one are those guys who aren't concentrating at their training, it's not Shizuku-chan's fault!」

「Or rather, we are the one begging you to come here, so you don't need to be that considerate I'm telling you!」

□That’s right, Onee-sama! If Onee-sama like it, I’ll ambush those peeping bastards later today from the darkness!□

Shizuku had quit the kendo club after her return to school. That was because her physical ability and kendo skill had became cheat level from her experience in another world.

She was literally unbeatable by anyone if she didn’t hold back. Shizuku judged that if she faced students who were seriously putting their heart into kendo and participated passionately in a match, and won when she wasn’t serious while holding back, she would only bring harm to those students, and that was why she resigned from the club.

However, the club members who thought that Shizuku who returned to school would naturally also returned to the club wanted to somehow stopped Shizuku from leaving the club, however, their persuasion ended up in vain and Shizuku still wouldn’t return, that being the case, they consulted the club adviser and created a position of “manager that could also coached the members” to keep Shizuku in the club.

Long story short, ‘it’s fine even if you aren’t a member, if you have time then come playing here while also coaching!’ it was something like that.

Shizuku was tearfully pleaded at by her juniors, and clung at by her friends of the same age as though they were konaki jijii, and even the seniors who already retired from the club were wordlessly pressuring her everyday with their sad gaze.

Regardless of how the society and also the students’ parents were vaguely keeping distance from the “returnees”, Shizuku’s comrades from the kendo club who tried to maintain their connection with her as though to say □Who

gives a damn about something like that!」 made Shizuku felt bashful and tickled.

In the end it was Shizuku who yielded and like that she was coming to coach especially in the days before a competition.

Thinking that it would be terrible if such Shizuku stopped coming because she was considerate of her surrounding, the female club members simultaneously gathered toward Shizuku who was looking apologetic.

It was also because they were simply fond of Shizuku, but it was also because Shizuku's coaching was actually fruitful, the students who received her coaching were without a doubt growing in skill. At the following month the qualifier for the national kendo meet would start, so the kendo female students didn't want to let go of the greatest coach that was Shizuku for that reason too.

「Hm~m, I guess. It will be irresponsible for me to stop helping midway in this kind of period isn't it? That's why, stop it with the ambush when it's dark. Also, it will make me happy if you can also stop calling me Onee-sama.」

「No way-. Onee-sama is disqualifying me as your stepsister(soul sister)!?」

Kohai-chan staggered with an expression of despair. The kohai-chan's friends of the same grade supported her 「Get a hold of yourself!」「Hang in there!」. Furthermore, it seemed that all the juniors here were "soul sister". The soul sisters multiplied while Shizuku wasn't looking……. Consider there are thirty in the dark if you see one in the open! (TN: Japanese's saying that if you see one cockroach, you better consider there are thirty that you aren't seeing. And kohai mean junior.)

The soul sisters were looking at Shizuku. Their moist eyes were pleading, ‘please grant mercy to our comrade soul sister who is connected by the bond of soul-‘.

「……Geez, it’s fine if you call me Onee-sama, that’s why don’t look at me with those eyes……」

It was always the Onee-sama who gave in. The crumbling kohai-chan recovered her posture with a bizarre movement like a video being rewound. Perhaps these girls were already something beyond stepsister already.

When the practice that was fairly hard even with those things happening was over, all the female club members other than Shizuku were dead tired while changing clothes in the changing room. At that time a club member asked something that had been asked almost every time.

「Then Shizuku. When will you return back to club?」

「No, that’s why, I told you already I won’t.」

While ignoring with all her strength how the moment she undressed from her kendo uniform the bloodshot gazes of all the kouhai-chan were stabbing all over her body, Shizuku replied to the question of her friend of the same grade with a wry smile.

「But still, even though you are that strong. You were the champion all those years even when you were in middle school and also in the first year.」

「It’s really a waste.」

Because Shizuku showed up in practice to give them guidance, the club members were satisfied to a certain degree just from being able to be together with Shizuku.

However, purely as a kendo practitioner, knowing the skill of Shizuku (only to the extent of common sense), they felt it was really a “waste” no matter what that she didn’t participate in competition.

Shizuku’s wry smile deepened while she quickly wore her clothes to hide her body. All the kouhai-chan leaked out 「Chih」 from clicking their tongue.

「’m already satisfied enough with kendo. Besides, even though I stop doing kendo, I’m still continuing kenjutsu. Rather, right now I’m busy with that, about various things.」
(TN: Kenjutsu = sword art)

Shizuku couldn’t say that it was because she now knew the truth about her family.

However, getting suspicious about various things from hearing that “various things” part was how girl worked.

「Various things, is it? I see, it must be something like trying to have your boyfriend getting recognized by your family.」

「I won’t hand over my daughter as long as you cannot win against me! Something like that?」

「Ah, so it’s as I thought, Nagumo-kun is training in the dojo of Shizuku’s family then.」

It seemed such rumor was spreading. The eyes of the fellow club members in the same grade were shining bright with curiosity.

「And, recently, what’s going on with the boyfriend in the rumor?」

「Our classrooms are separated after all, so it's hard to get any information. Or rather, Shizuku, are you okay? You aren't two-timed? From what I heard other than Kaori-chan, he is also getting served by other amazing members right?」

Concern could be glanced at inside their curiosity. The woman relationship of the man who Shizuku got close to wasn't normal at all, and it was a well known fact in this school. Someone who was laying his hand on two extraordinarily beautiful transfer students, was even getting served by Kaori who should be Shizuku's best friend, and he was even knitting love relationship with their important friend Shizuku……the kendo club members weren't holding a good feeling about such thing.

「Thank you for worrying about me. But I'm fine. Kaori, and also Yue and Shia, they are important people for me, and we are staying at his side fully comprehending how it look like. Though it's certainly not something commonplace. But, it can't be helped.」

The thing about a person in love was the loser, and Shizuku's happy expression without even a shred of bitterness in it, and how she spoke fondly of her love as though showing it off, while all these also happened every time, the expression of the club members still turned speechless every time.

Incidentally, there were sounds of grinding teeth *grit grit grit grit-* ringing. Everyone tried to not bother about it, but of course the source of the sounds were from all the kouhai-chan. Dark conversations which would make one wanted to retort 'You guys, just what kind of secret society this is huh' like 「As expected, we have to ambush that man in the dark is……」, or 「However, several people already had the table turned on them……」, or 「We need to draw up something,

some kind of new strategy……, and so on were secretly spoken among them.

「Well, if Shizu said that it’s fine, then it’s not also our place to say anything……」

「Just what is so great from Nagumo?」

Almost all the club members had finished changing, but there was no sign of the girls talk ending even while they were putting their appearance in order. This was something usual.

The cheeks of the questioned Shizuku faintly blushed red. It was a cute expression that she had never showed even once before her disappearance. The club members’ expression turned even more complicated because whether they wanted it or not they were made to realize that was how serious her feeling toward Hajime was.

Several of the kohai-chan were starting to beat up their fist onto a doll they took out from somewhere. *zudon, zudon* The punches were making unpleasantly nice sound. Those were wonderful punches that would make anyone wondered if they were more talented in clenching their fist rather than swinging shinai. (TN: Shinai = bamboo sword used in kendo)

「Even if you ask that……there is a lot.」

「If you are forced to give one example?」

「uu……like, how he always protect me at all times, I guess.」

Shizuku’s answer that she spoke while acting bashful made her friends of the same grade said 「Aa~」 sounding like they understood but also didn’t understand.

When speaking about Yaegashi Shizuku, she was “onee-sama” for all the kouhai-chan. For other girls, she was a reliable knight-sama that would protect them. Even for the boys, they evaluated her as a gallant beauty that would somehow manage by herself no matter in what kind of situation.

It was difficult for the boys and girls at the same grade to hold impression toward Shizuku as a target to be protected. After all she was actually an owner of specs far superior then all of them.

But, people who were especially close to Shizuku knew that Shizuku liked cute things and her personality was really girly. The female club members of kendo club were included in those close people category.

Therefore, they understood what Shizuku said. Although they absolutely didn’t want to understand the disgusting man who wouldn’t see Shizuku as his only one.

「Really, just what in the world happened while you disappeared? From everything before this, I thought that Shizuku might go out with Amanogawa-kun.」

Several girls looked startled hearing that question and they turned their gaze toward the girl who said it.

Asking the “returnees” about what happened during the time they disappeared was considered as taboo right now based on their tacit understanding. At the beginning, everyone was really curious about that and kept asking, but even through the commotion in the society and abrupt quieting down, the answer of the “returnees” was always the same, and because that answer sounded preposterous, a recognition that the topic was “something that mustn’t be asked” was spreading.

Shizuku was firmly aware of the atmosphere that was containing slight nervousness while speaking an answer that was unchanging from before.

「I already said it before this right? We adventured in another world, and fought the underlings of an evil god.」

「「「「「……」」」」」

Sure enough, the schoolmates of the same grade were at loss for words in hesitation of what should they say. All the kouhai-chan were staring at Shizuku with worried gaze that looked vaguely pained.

‘It depends on you whether to believe it or not……’ Shizuku’s relationship with the kendo club members were a bit too close for her to say that. She didn’t want to deal with them the same like how she dealt with mass media, government officials, and outsiders who were only curious. Even if what she spoke was the unvarnished truth itself.

And so, Shizuku winked playfully and added her words.

「Also, I punched Kouki until he cried and apologized. Kouki who lost some teeth with his face swollen all over while sobbing ‘I’m sorry, I’m reflecting, I won’t do it anymore’ was really a sight you know?」

「Ooou……that’s really……」

「I, is that, true?」

「Just what happened there. I’m absurdly curious here!」

The small tension from before vanished somewhere. The female club members started going ‘kya-kya’. What kind of situation that would make that perfect superhuman number

one handsome boy in the school to apologize while crying? And then, what was the circumstance that would make the caring and gentle Shizuku to be that angry? Their girl’s indefatigable love delusion power was tickled to rise up high.

Shizuku was calming down her exited friends while,

「This is also about Kouki’s embarrassing past, so I cannot speak the detail but……at the very least, when I wished for help from the bottom of my heart, the one who responded to that wasn’t Kouki, it was always――Hajime at those times.」

Shizuku was saying such suggestive thing with intensely charming expression looking like a dreaming girl, or perhaps more like an adult woman who knew what was the meaning of love. Even her friends who were the same sex unconsciously felt their heart jumped seeing that expression.

This time, a different silence descended. The expression of the female club members was somewhat dazed, as though they were charmed by Shizuku. There was ‘buhah’ sound. It was the sound of the feeling that thought about Onee-sama spurting out from the nose of kouhai-chan.

Shizuku who noticed the situation around her looked down in embarrassment from her own words and she attempted to change the topic.

「Ra, rather than that, the preliminary next month. Do your best you all. Everyone has shockingly become strong, so I’m looking forward not just at the group match, but also the individual match. Our kendo club will dominate the top ranking of the individual competition.」

「That’s quite the pressure on us though.」

The figure of Shizuku who was plainly changing the topic while busily finishing her preparation for going home with bright red ears made the female club members to look at each other’s face and exchanged small smile. And then, following their friend who had became far cuter compare to before she disappeared, they finished their girls talk.

Next month.

Shizuku’s figure could be seen at the spectator seat at the second floor of the joint gymnasium of a large city at the neighboring town.

Below the kendo club of her school was competing ruthlessly against the kendo club of other school. The loud yells that were filled with fighting spirit, and the sound of shinai striking the opponent, and then the cheering voices were echoing inside the spacious gymnasium.

Our kendo club is strong huh. Especially the girls. Shizuku’s influence on them is tremendous.

Hajime who came together with Shizuku to watch whispered that with an admiring expression. Hajime personally wasn’t interested with kendo match, but today was Shizuku’s turn for the “holiday of just two people”, so Hajime accompanied Shizuku in the form like rooting date (?).

The competition had progressed almost to the end, the group competition left only the final, and the members of

the group competition were also mostly undefeated through all the matches until that stage.

Even in the individual competition, the third place had already clinched by a student of their school, Shizuku's schoolmate was also going out to the final match that would start after this. Even all the kouhai-chan won their first match without anyone losing, that was why this was actually something big.

「This is the fruit of their hard work.」

Shizuku said that not only from being humble but also because she really thought so. But, Hajime tilted his head and objected.

「Is that so? Sometimes my ears picked up words that sounded like 「Onee-sama is watching! With the title of soul sister in the line, I cannot show anything unsightly!」 though. It feels like it's only our kendo club whose morale is in different level.」

「……The, they are all cute kohai aren't they.」

「Cute, huh. After they looked at you Shizuku, they then looked at me and a lot of them were making yakuza face that seemed to say 「Sitting beside Onee-sama with a smug face like it's only natural-. You bastard-. I'MMA KILL YOUUUUUUUUU-」 though……. I think it's not a face a girl should make you know? Look there, that girl's opponent, she is trembling even before the match begin.」

「……」

Onee-sama averted her gaze.

But, her averted gaze suddenly met the eyes of another. The final of the individual competition would begin after this, but the opponent athlete was looking at Shizuku. The person was already wearing the protector mask, so it wasn’t like their eyes were exactly meeting, but it was clear that the person was focusing on Shizuku.

That was how strong the emotion that was filling that gaze. In addition, if pushed to say, it wasn’t a positive emotion like the respectful and affectionate gaze of the soul sisters, but the opposite——an emotion of denial.

(That build……also that school……)

The referee called out to the athletes and the opponent athlete’s strong gaze moved away from Shizuku. Shizuku tilted her head and pondered whether she had done something, but she couldn’t think of anything.

The match began while she was doing that.

At that moment,

□OOOOOOOOOOOH!!□

The gymnasium shook. It was a roar so loud that made one hallucinated so. The loud yell of fighting spirit surged and electrified the skin. The audience seat became deathly silent.

Right after that, a sharp sound *paan-* rang.

While everyone was dazed, the referee suddenly returned to his sense with a ‘hah’ and gave his verdict □Clean hit□. Yes, in just an instant, Shizuku’s friend who was unmistakably top class even within the school got one point taken from her. (TN: Here the referee said ‘Men ari’, which mean a clean

hit on the face I guess. Tell me if anyone know a better translation for it.)

Both sides immediately returned to their original position and then the match resumed. A loud yell of fighting spirit surged once more.

This time Shizuku’s friend barely blocked the vertical slash from above aiming at her mask protector. However, that one attack must possessed sharpness and weight that didn’t betray its appearance. The blocking shinai almost fell off from the hands holding it.

Without overlooking that opening, the opponent athlete began to hammer in with a flowing motion. Shizuku’s friend was also a top class as expected that she continued to defend only just barely, but the opening she showed at the beginning became a big shackle that made her unable to stop the consecutive attacks, she wasn’t able to return even a single counterstrike.

「Oi oi, that girl, is she really a girl?」

「He, hey. That’s just too rude.」

The opponent athlete that was cornering the athlete of their school with an intense pressure caused Hajime to reflexively say such thing, which was chided by Shizuku in respond even while her cheeks were twitching.

Indeed, the yelling voice sounded deep, and the volume could even shake the gymnasium, it was really unthinkable that such voice came from a girl.

In addition, the body build of the opponent athlete was also out of norm. Her height must be over 180 cm. Her big boned body that could be clearly seen even across the protector

was just like a heavy weight class judoka, muscle fibers were jutting out from both her hands that were holding shinai.

Looking objectively, that body build was something splendid that would make anyone couldn’t help but ask ‘that’s really a high school girl?’.

While Hajime was blinking in surprise and Shizuku was drawing out her memory regarding the opponent athlete, the match showed the end.

Finally the athlete of their school couldn’t endure the fierce attack, and the moment her shinai strayed away, *pashiiin* such clear striking sound rang along with the shinai striking the mask protector.

Shizuku was looking worriedly at her friend who was standing still looking dumbfounded. When the referee urged on the girl she seemed to return to her senses and bowed once before quietly returning to her own area. She took off her mask and clenched her fist tightly in frustration with her faced still looking down.

The kendo club members gathered around her one after another and talked to her.

「She got dealt with a bad match there. If the opponent was merely pushing on with brute force the would be able to still manage somehow but……」

「Yes. Indeed, the opponent……isn’t simply like that. But, why is she in the qualifier here……」

It seemed Shizuku knew something about the opponent athlete.

「Nn? Looks like they are quarreling there. Is it all right there?」

「Eh?」

Shizuku who was pondering something returned her attention to the match venue from Hajime's words, and there certainly the opponent athlete just now seemed to be in some kind of argument with the female club members of her school.

「……What, is she your acquaintance just as I thought? I'm hearing Shizuku's name mentioned from there.」

「As, as I thought it looks like she has some kind of business with me.」

Hajime's inhuman ear wasn't as amazing as the rabbit ear of the rabbit clan, but it had really high performance in its hearing ability. Using that, he could hear that it seemed the opponent player was questioning the female club members about why Shizuku didn't appear in the competition.

The female club members looked really nervous against the really dangerous atmosphere, but when they saw the opponent athlete who still hadn't taken off her face protector lowered her voice tone and asked if by any chance Shizuku was seriously injured, they calmed down a bit and managed to somehow answer.

But even though they now could answer back, there wasn't a lot that they could say. It seemed they told the opponent that Shizuku simply quit kendo club because of personal reason and not because of injury or anything.

Surely the female club members were thinking that this person was an acquaintance of Shizuku who was a regular at

the national meet, and she was worried why Shizuku didn’t participate in the competition. They said to her that Shizuku wasn’t injured so there was no need to worry, however, the opponent athlete then showed an unexpected reaction.

She suddenly took off her mask as though tearing it off, and then her gaze turned toward Shizuku with a glint as though saying that she would kill her. No matter how anyone looked, that expression was of anger, like a volcano in the verge of erupting. It was also an appearance with extreme intensity.

Hajime unconsciously got reminded of a certain guy haunting a certain clothes store in the other world to the degree he put himself on guard.

The square features, thick eyebrows and beastly eyes, large nose split chin, they were all impressive.

After the opponent athlete glared at Shizuku, she moved looking like she was going toward her. The female club members who guessed that tried to stop her, but she pushed them aside and moved to exit the venue.

Feeling the dangerous atmosphere, even the teammates of the opponent athlete came to stop her, but perhaps she already had lost all her cool that she couldn’t even hear their words. She was advancing while dragging her teammates clinging on her body with her.

「……Looks like she couldn’t get talked with unless I go there. I’ll head there for a bit.」

「Okay. Just in case, I’ll be nearby.」

Hajime also stood up following Shizuku who stood up from her seat.

No matter how abnormally big the body build that person had, it was impossible for a high school girl of the present day Japan to do anything at Shizuku.

However, what could hurt a person wasn’t just simply violence. Looking from the other party’s abnormal state, she might throw “words” that could hurt Shizuku.

Words were magic. Depending on the situation, it could be greatly powerful even compared to the highest level of magic from another world.

From the standpoint of a “returnee”, they already heard a lot of inconsiderate words until now, if they could finish this business without hearing anything from the other party then that would be the best.

Because Shizuku possessed a strong heart she could endure a lot more than most people, but because of that her heart was easy to be wounded. Therefore, depending on the situation, Hajime was prepared to release “Pressure’ that would make the other party fainted while foaming on their mouth without any hesitation.

The demon king-sama was increasingly getting indulgent toward his relatives since he returned back to earth.

「Err, I’ll really be fine you know? That’s why, don’t do anything too reckless okay?」

「……I’ll consider it optimistically.」

The extremely unreliable words of the overprotective Hajime tickled Shizuku and also troubled her.

Like that, when the two got down to the first floor and approached the entrance toward the venue, the

aforementioned opponent athlete appeared while dragging behind her teammates and Shizuku’s friends.

Even the tumult around her that was trying to stop was only trivial matter. With a look that caused a hallucination as though the Fudou Myouou had descended, the opponent athlete ran her gaze fiercely and caught the appearance of Shizuku. (TN: Fudou Myouou = Acala; Acalanatha Vidya-raja; The Immovable, a manifestation of Mahavairocana)

While somewhat desperate yells like 「Run awaayy! Shizukuu, super run awayyyyyy!」, or 「Onee-sama! Please leave this place to me and go on ahead!」could be heard from the female club members, the female opponent who was emitting an intensity that even resembled Ashura……

「Yaegashiii! You-, you are calling yourself a samurai like that!?」

Said such thing with unexpectedly cute voice that would make anyone wondered just what with the war cry at the middle of the match.

Anyway,

「I’m not a samurai.」

Toward the girl who surely was at the same grade with her, Shizuku returned back words of correction with a serious face and polite language.

Shizuku component was insufficient, so I wrote her just now.

When this is over, I’m thinking if I should write the ‘Kouki get summoned too muchh’.

When I saw the thought column or the messages, unexpectedly there are a lot who said they want to read it, Shirakome who when flattered will indulgently get on board, as expected, feel like doing it.

But seeee, this is Kouki after allll. Anxiety whether I’m going to have fun writing it is coming and going…

But when I write, there is also the feeling of wanting to write properly too……

If the writing of the ‘get summoned too muchhh’ arc feel like it become slovenly, surely I will be revived if I can receive yell ‘Shirakomeee get a hold of yourself!’ from you all.

Please take care of me.

Arifureta Chapter 259

Arifureta After II　Is This Grudge, Ought to be Left Uncleared Like This-

Dead silence filled the lobby. The cheering for other match and other voices came in from the match venue, but even with all those noises it felt like silence had visited this place, it must be the fault of the atmosphere that was brought about by the two high school girls staring at each other.

“You are calling yourself a samurai” “I’m not a samurai” It was only those words. It wasn’t a conversation that high school girls would generally make, but the atmosphere of the two was too serious to call it a joke.

The asking side even now was exhaling out wild breath that was accompanied with vapor from her mouth, with an atmosphere where it was as though her bloodshot eyes might even emitted mysterious beam, while the replying side wasn’t even making an astonished expression that said 「Just what is this girl saying?」, rather a desperation of「You think I’ll let anyone attach anymore strange attribute on me more than this! I’m not a samurai, believe it!」 could be peeked at from the gap of her expression.

「I’ll change how I said it. You, you are calling yourself a kendoka like that!?」

The kendo girl who boasted a huge body frame where people who seemed to be her kendo club teammates and Shizuku’s friends from kendo club were still sticking on her, was raising an angry yell with a cute anime voice just like before. The gap between the voice and the Fudou Myouou face was terrific.

The first thing Shizuku did was to let out a sigh of relieve while stroking her chest hearing she was entered into a category that wasn’t that strange for an active high school girl to be in while showing a perplexed expression at the indignation of the Fudou Myouou girl.

「I don’t understand what do you mean by “like that” but…… at the very least, right now I’m not even in kendo club, so I cannot say that I’m a kendoka.」

「-, then, it’s as I thought, you are saying that you resigned? You are not just taking absent?」

Her aura of anger was still unchanged, but the Fudou Myouu girl asked with an expression that somewhat feeling shocked.

「Yes, I have formally resigned, and I also don’t have plan of coming back.」

「……I know that you encountered a serious incident. Is that the cause? I heard that you aren’t injured, but do you have a circumstance that make you unable to return?」

grit There was such sound. It was the sound of Fudou Myouou girl clenching her fist tightly. The kouhai-chan that was clinging on that arm to stop the girl stared still at that fist while her expression was starting to go pale. Her tear gland looked like it would burst crying anytime.

「No. Both my mind and body are healthy. It’s not that I “cannot” return, but I “won’t” return. That’s what I decided.」

「-, Yaegashiii, you are-, -……wha, what is, your reason?」

Kouhai-chan’s arms were repelled away! By the inflating arm muscle! Kouhai-chan fell on her butt and she trembled all over! The friends of Shizuku, and also the teammates of the Fudou Myouou girl too, they were seeing the vision of the girl’s rage aura and shivered in fear!

The Fudou Myouou girl desperately repressed the something that was overflowing out from inside herself and tried her best to be calm. Hearing that question, Shizuku scratched on her cheek awkwardly while deliberating of how to answer.

If she said her reason honestly, it would be because in the world of kendo there was already no one that could become her opponent, because the specs she obtained in another world was a foul play, those were the reasons but……

By no meant she could say those things just like that. If she said such thing, perhaps Fudou Myouou would really descent to this world for real.

Now then, how to answer so that the matter could be settled peacefully……

Shizuku didn’t even need five second to ruminate.

But, it seemed that little time instead gave the other party a conclusion.

「……I see. I get it. I didn’t want to believe it, because I thought that there is no way that Yaegashi would, but——it’s because you got a man aren’t you.」

「Eh? Ah, no, it’s not like――」

Shizuku noticed that the gaze of the Fudou Myouou girl turned toward behind her and she tried to say something.

But, before she could the Fudou Myouou girl threw a gaze that glinted with murderous brutality!

Not only the kendo girls right nearby, even the kendo boys and officials who became curious onlookers from afar were trembling violently altogether!

「*Aaa*?」

「–!?」

Hajime-san’s glint reversal!!

What was overflowing out from those shrinking pupils was exactly madness! It caused everyone to feel shiver and their body locked up thinking「Those eyes, those are absolutely the eyes of a murderer aren’t they!?」. That thing over there was a demon wearing the skin of a high school boy!

The Fudou Myouou girl quietly returned her gaze to Shizuku.

That thing was no good. That was something that a human must not got involved with no matter what. The instinct of Fudou Myouou girl-chan that made that judgment wasn’t mistaken.

Now, let’s get a fresh start.

「It’s because you got a man aren’t you!」

「For now, wait a little bit okay. ……Hajime, stop with the glaring. She is getting teary eyed, and several people

collapsed already while foaming in the mouth. Look, like my kouhai over there.」

Hajime-san was looking.

When Shizuku looked back across her shoulder and asked Hajime to stop with a wry smile, Hajime obediently settled down his ghastly aura. He folded his arms once more and also closed his eyes. His atmosphere was turning back to a quiet one. The madness had left. Everyone's SAN value was protected!

Shizuku's friends let out whispers of gratitude「Shizuku is goddess」. Also, it seemed the legend of the school's two great goddess would increase. In a bit of different meaning than before.

「So, you are ignoring me. You are telling me that someone like me is not even worthy to be your opponent is it?」

「Err, you look like you are going to burst into tear anytime now you know? I won't ignore you or anything, so don't force yourself to progress the talk and wipe your……」

「Are you pitying me!?」

Looks like she was already in a state that couldn't withdraw back anymore. The rage that she harbored toward Shizuku for some reason and the glint reversal that a normal high school girl shouldn't get exposed at for their whole life seemed to cause her mind to be really at her wits end.

Shizuku was opening her mouth to calm down Fudou-chan who was picking a quarrel with that teary eyes while still emitting her great intensity, but the heated up Fudou-chan raised her voice angrily as though to drown out Shizuku's voice.

□I, in order to win against you! I’m giving it my all until now only for that! Whether it’s in the middle school, or at the first year of high school, I was undefeated! Except against you! You were the one who always became the champion at the tournament! Even though defeating that you is my only objective, and yet!□

Angry voice, was it really? Her intensity caused the people there to feel that it was like that, but for Shizuku, she was somehow getting the impression that the girl looked like she was clinging to something, or perhaps as though she was lamenting because she understood that what she wanted was forever out of her reach.

□When you disappeared, I despaired at that time! I even thought for a moment to stop with kendo-. I transferred here was also because I thought, that if I do kendo at the district where you were at, then perhaps my feeling will cleared up a bit! That’s why, when you came back, I was really happy, and yet……and yet, for you to abandon your sword just for a man!□

□Fudou-san, you……□

Surprisingly, the Fudou Myouou girl-chan’s surname seemed to be “Fudou”. What a match. Shizuku’s whisper was faint and it only reached Hajime, but that Hajime was obviously shocked while saying □What, did you say……don’t tell me, her name is Myouou?□.

By the way, the girl’s name was Fudou Akari. Hajime, consolation price for you. (TN: Fudou Myouou = □□□□, Fudou Akari = □□□)

Fudou-chan rapidly walked toward Shizuku, leaving behind her teammates and Shizuku’s friend who had let go of her due to her menacing aura.

And then, she pointed with a snap at Shizuku’s nose, and with a blazing straightforward gaze she,

「Fight me, Yaegashi Shizuku. If you forget about me because you think it’s something trivial, then I’ll make you remember. This kendo of mine that you don’t pay any attention to, I’ll beat it into your body to teach you how formidable it is!」

……。。

Yes, it was a war declaration.

Of course, Shizuku had no duty or responsibility to accept. The other party was considering her as rival, feeling furious, and tried to drag her into a fight were all by her own convenience. It was completely unrelated with Shizuku.

But,

(——It will be easier if I can just ignore this, huh)

That was exactly why Yaegashi Shizuku couldn’t ignore this. Her personality wasn’t one that would let her choose the easy path.

To say nothing of how the other party didn’t come at her with ill will, and seeing how the other party somehow gave her an impression as though she was struggling with her own heart, made her unable to refuse even more.

Therefore,

「I accept your challenge.」

「-」

She accepted that challenge gallantly. The sharp glint of the other party, was replied back with a deep gaze that looked like a tranquil forest.

That voice wasn’t raised to be louder or displayed intense pressure by any means. However, the heavy and deep “something” inside that voice definitely made Fudou to unconsciously hitched her voice.

Seeing that, Shizuku’s look loosened up slightly.

「However, is it fine with you if we do it at another day? Today, I’m coming to cheer for my friends. I cannot prioritize you here. Fudou-san yourself, you aren’t planning to come at me by neglecting your teammates correct?」

「That’s……」

Lured by Shizuku’s gaze, Fudou looked back behind her. Over there, there were her kendo club teammates staring worriedly at her. A small groan 「u」 leaked out from Fudou. It seemed she recovered her senses for a bit after seeing her teammates.

Her expression turned awkward and apologetic, and then she shook her head as though to shake off something.

Shizuku handed over a scrap of paper to such Fudou.

「This is, my contact address. Please contact me when you have made your preparation.」

「……I get it.」

Fudou received the paper and she directed a gaze that seemed to want to say something to Shizuku for a bit, but then she returned toward her teammates.

「Shizuku! Are you okay?」

「Onee-sama, are you safe!?」

Shizuku's friends gathered one after another and talked to her with worried voice. Event the kouhai-chan who had revived before anyone knew also rushed toward Shizuku after glaring angrily at the back of Fudou.

「I'm fine, I'm fine. That person also isn't someone that I didn't know at all.」

「But, something like a match at another day……. This is something personal right? It will be against that kind of person you know? Won't it be dangerous?」

「I thought she is a barbarian from somewhere. That was scaryyy. The saying of a face like a demon must refer to that kind of person. Shizuku, I'm telling you this for your own good, it's better to report this to the teacher or someone.」

「That's right, Onee-sama! There is no way that lump of muscles is a normal high school girl! That must be a monster wearing the skin of a high school girl! Onee-sama is going to get eaten by that!」

It appeared that everyone was scared against Fudou's pressure and threatening aura, and also her atrocious body build and face. At the same time, they also seemed to be feeling great unease with this personal match where the rule might be ignored without the supervision of any adult. It was clear that they were worrying for Shizuku from the bottom of their heart.

But, the one in question here, Shizuku was instead frowning slightly.

She was happy that they were worried for her. But, if they then deprecated Fudou's appearance and body build because of that, even if that was because of the consequence of the girl's own action, what they were saying still wasn't something that felt good to hear.

Not noticing the inside of Shizuku's heart, Shizuku's friends were getting heated up even further with their criticism toward Fudou because seen from the side, it looked like Shizuku was only getting completely dragged into this.

「……Everyone, I'm happy that you all are worried for me, but putting aside criticizing her action, saying those kind of words toward her appearance that she was born with is a bit too much.」

「Eh, ah, Shizuku……」

「So, sorry……」

The friends came back to their senses suddenly when they saw Shizuku's expression that was enduring distress. Shizuku's friends knew about the personality of the busybody Shizuku who would feel other people's pain as though it was her own pain. At the same time, Shizuku's expression also vaguely looked sad seeing them speaking maliciously behind someone's back.

「Hmmm. I'll say it one more time, thank you for getting worried for me. But she――Fudou-san, just like I said just now, she isn't someone that I didn't know. I almost never talked directly with her, but she is a regular in the national tournament, and I had faced against her several times. She is definitely not a bad person.」

Shizuku said that with a wry smile, and then 「Besides……」 she continued while glancing behind across her shoulder.

「Even in the unlikely chance that she took unfair method, I'll still be fine. After all a sca~ry person is watching over me.」

「Aa……」

「……」

It went without saying who was it that Shizuku referred to. Shizuku's friends looked at Hajime who was quietly standing behind Shizuku, and then they trembled when Hajime glanced back at them in respond. Kouhai-chan was hiding by using all the senpai as shield.

「Indeed, it will be fine if Nagumo is there, I think?」

「In a sense, it feels like the person just now is still better.」

「Onee-sama, that person, he absolutely had killed two or three people before. You should rethink about going out with——hiihn!?」

To tell the truth, Shizuku's friends were thinking 「Is it really okay going out with that kind of boyfriend」, but when they recalled the glint and aura from before that resembled a devilish homicide, they couldn't think that Hajime would be really unreliable. Rather, they imagined the end of the person who tried to lay their hand on Shizuku and even felt sympathy welling up toward such person.

On top of that, if they knew that kouhai-chan's words was actually an underestimation…….

For some reason kouhai-chan felt an intense chill in the middle of speaking and she screamed. When Shizuku's friends looked at Hajime all at once,

「What did you say, about Shizuku and me?」

「You two are really a match made in heavennn! I'm sorry, please forgive me! Don't kill me!」

Kouhai-chan was trembling like a baby deer that was only just born. Shizuku's friends were getting cold sweat seeing Hajime's faint smile.

「Hajime. Don't bully my kouhai like that.」

「I'm not bullying her. It's punishment. It's including the admonition toward her usual strange gathering and action.」

「Do it moderately please?」

「Ou」

Shizuku's friends thought. 'Nagumo is totally a bad news', and then 'Shizuku is a wild beast tamer'. By the way, for some reason there was a person who blushed slightly hearing Hajime saying 'punishment' with his S face though…….

For the sake of friendship, Shizuku pretended to not notice that.

After that, Shizuku's friends returned to the venue in order to participate in the remaining matches, while Shizuku and also Hajime returned to the audience seat. Shizuku's friends splendidly took the championship in the group competition.

At the closing party, Hajime read the mood and he didn't participate in it. For some reason they were all getting excited talking about Hajime which caused Shizuku to be blushing from start to end. After the closing party, Hajime expressly came to pick up Shizuku which caused Shizuku's

friends to get excited again and Shizuku’s face got even redder from their banter. Such things happened.

Shizuku whose hand was pulled by Hajime to go home right away then looked back to give her parting greeting to the others. Her expression while doing that caused kouhai-chan to lift the slogan「Onee-sama reign supreme, Nagumo Hajime ought to die」. That expression looked so happy, to the degree that it would make anyone else envious seeing it.

A few days later.

Slightly after school ended, at the period when the last of the students would go home, there was the figure of Shizuku wearing kendo uniform and protectors inside the kendo hall.

The students of the other clubs had mostly gone home, the people there were only kendo club members who had specially received permission and Hajime who came for being spectator.

「……so you came.」

Shizuku suddenly turned her gaze toward the entrance. The club members who were continuing their practice because it was a waste to not do anything were making a wondering expression while turning their gaze following Shizuku’s gaze.

About a few seconds later, a large shadow of a person slo~wly appeared at the entrance of the dojo building. Even

though the shadow appeared quietly, *Dede-de-deden! Dede-de-deden!* the BGM of Termi○tor was playing in everyone’s head.

Every single fingers grasping the door of the dojo building was thick, the legs that were stretching from the skirt were burly like rock. The upper arms caused the sailor uniform to look like it would burst open anytime, the uniform looked like it was a no-sleeved clothes like what the ‘hyahhaa’ group living at the end of century was wearing.

And then, her expression was also…….

He must be seething with fighting spirit. The deep groove carved between her forehead, her lips that were pressed on each other to form a straight line, sharp eyes that were gleaming brutally. The shinai bag and kendo protectors case she were shouldering looked like flail and metal rod.

This situation was truly ‘The fierce god’s descent!’.

Several female club members spontaneously screamed「Hih」and fell back on their butt, but it must be a bit too harsh to reprimand them that they were being impolite to the opponent.

Speaking objectively, it was something that couldn’t be helped, it was clear that for normal people, ten out of ten would say that she looked terrifying.

「Excuse me. I’m Fudou Akari. I came in order to have a match against Yaegashi Shizuku.」

With a lovely voice that like before had a terrific gap with her appearance, Akari-chan gave her greeting also following the decorum. For a moment she frowned seeing the girls

who fell on their butt and the male club members backing away, but her expression soon returned to before.

She focused toward one thing. Only toward Yaegashi Shizuku. She decided that everything else was but a trifle.

「Please come in, Fudou-san. Welcoming words――are unnecessary isn’t it?」

「Yes, I came here to fight after all. Your preparation?」

Fudou was approaching with a pressure that made it felt like the ground was shaking with each of her brisk step. Shizuku calmly stared back at her while nodding「There is no problem」.

Fudou was guided into the changing room and she changed her clothes there, and then she sat down across Shizuku and began to put on her protectors.

「Before the match, can I ask one thing?」

Shizuku asked while wrapping a towel on her head. Fudou nodded.

「You said, that your objective is to win against me. Is that really all there is to it?」

「……What do you mean?」

「No, it’s fine if this is just my misunderstanding but……. No matter how, it feels like this is not simply you purely wanting to raise your skill in kendo further above.」

「……」

Being unable to have a match against the athlete that was her objective. That athlete completely stopped doing kendo.

Would she display that much of a rage just because of that…….

An athlete that was considered as rival not participating in competition or retired from the club because of some kind of circumstance wasn't that rare of a story. Many people must had harbored dissatisfaction or tasted the feeling of being off their game regarding that.

But, Shizuku thought that the intensity of the emotion that Fudou showed was hard to be explained with just that. She felt from Fudou something more, as though her important thing was stolen away, a fervent something.

The expression of the questioned Fudou warped slightly. It was unclear whether it was directed toward Shizuku, or toward herself. But for Shizuku, if she was pressed to say, it looked like it was directed toward Fudou herself.

「……A person like you who have everything won't understand, the feeling of a person doesn't have. For me, I have nothing but kendo.」

After saying only that with a faint murmur, Fudou put on her mask protector as though to hide her expression.

Shizuku stared at such Fudou for a while, but urged by the gaze of Fudou that peeked out from behind the mask, Shizuku put on her own mask.

Both of them entered the match area while the kendo club members were watching attentively. They followed the etiquette with flowing movement and with the word「Begin!」from the club member who took the referee role as the signal, the match began.

Right away,

□oOOOOOOOOOOOOH!!!!□

A yell of fighting spirit that felt as though the air ruptured resounded. The club members simultaneously became paralyzed, while the window glasses were rattling for real, not just metaphor.

Fudou attempted to shake up Shizuku with fine sliding step that seemed to be flowing.

In respond Shizuku was only quietly standing still with her shinai readied in front of her. She didn’t look perturbed or paralyzed at all.

□-, oOOOO-!!□

Like a large tree. That was how Shizuku seemed to be like. As though to blow away the weakness that she felt for a moment inside herself, Fudou clashed her dominating aura many time over toward Shizuku. She moved the tip of her shinai with small movement, she made feint with her gaze and footwork, all in order to lure in the opponent.

Images were emerging in her mind.

She would strike the face protector.

——Her torso was hit.

From the face toward the torso.

——Her forearm was hit.

From forearm to face. Even if it was blocked she would push in……

(-, it would get, returned-)

No matter how she ran her imagination, she could only image herself getting struck back.

Didn’t she give up doing kendo? Didn’t she stop participating in match and everything until now? Or else, was it that even with her only doing kendo in her spare time, even with her blank period of not doing kendo, yet she was still unable to even reach toward her feet…….

(Such thing-, that’s absurd-)

An indescribable emotion welled up from inside. The image of defeat.

To crush down that feeling, Fudou tried to gush out a yell of fighting spirit that would be even louder than before――

□oOO――□

□yAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!□

She was crushed instead by the sudden war cry running through her.

shin, silence fell. It was as though even the insects outside the building were holding their breath, a quiet world. Just with a roar, it was as though the world was overwritten with Shizuku’s territory.

If it was just impact, then surely Fudou was above.

However, in “weight” that was hammered into the heart, Shizuku was overwhelming.

While everyone stiffened,

□-!!!?□

When Fudou noticed, in her field of vision, a shinai swinging down was……

She was able to move even faster than her mind could think must be the fruit of her everyday training.

PASHIiiiIIN, the sound of two shinai clashing resounded. There Fudou finally noticed that she was blocking against Shizuku’s attack toward her face.

Fighting spirit that surpassed hers. A terrific step in that she couldn’t even perceived. And then,

(It’s, heavy-!?)

Weight that was unthinkable to be coming from Shizuku’s slender body. Shizuku’s pressure that was maintaining the sword-locking contest without moving into consecutive attack caused Fudou who should be superior in body build to reflexively step back.

「E, eh. That’s, Shizuku right?」

「Should be, but……」

Bewildered whisper leaked out from the female club members. Shizuku’s style was a “sword of finesse” that made use of variegated technique with elegant footwork and speed to the maximum, it was a common knowledge. They had never seen Shizuku bringing in the fight into a sword-locking contest by her own initiative, in addition she didn’t unleashed her technique from there but instead pushing in with strength.

「Has your eyes opened I wonder?」

「-, Yaegashi-」

Hearing those words from Shizuku who was staring at her from point-blank range, Fudou noticed herself that almost got swallowed in. She clenched her teeth hard and pushed Shizuku back with a shout.

Shizuku didn’t resist and gently pulled back. And then, she once again took her previous stance.

Fudou clenched her teeth grindingly seeing Shizuku’s state.

「Not taking advantage from enemy but giving advice instead, you are really composed aren’t you」

Fudou unconsciously let out such curse. Shizuku still only observed calmly.

「What is this match for I wonder? Right now, is not the time to exchange words.」

「-, I know that!」

The calm reply caused Fudou’s face to flash red in shame and this time she fiercely assaulted.

Fudou was getting back to form her pointless exertion of strength and her mind that was shrinking back from her own image, she unleashed an unconstrained assault that was backed with weight that was unbecoming for a high school girl.

The strikes came consecutively and clear impact sounds that sounded like handclapping echoed inside the dojo building.

Against the blows that were like a storm, Shizuku sometimes dodged, sometimes, parried, sometimes blocked, and dodged more by even making use of that pressure. If Fudou’s footwork was like a flowing water, then Shizuku’s

footwork should be called as a floating leaf dancing lightly in the air from receiving the wind.

No telling blow could land on her.

Even though normally the opponent’s stamina and mental would be shaved due to the unceasing offense and overwhelming pressure, causing them to expose an opening, the one who was starting to breath roughly was Fudou instead. It was obvious even from across the mask protector. Shizuku was breathing without even the slightest disorder without even a drop of sweat.

Impatience caused Fudou’s attack into something indulgent.

Shizuku smoothly stepped in.

□aa……□

zupaan A sound that even felt pleasant to ear resounded. Without relaxing her alertness, Shizuku turned around toward Fudou’s back and took her stance.

Fudou didn’t move. That was because the hit just now was too beautiful. She could only opened her eyes wide in amazement.

It seemed that the all the other club members, the referee included were in the same state, everyone was paralyzed. They never even imagined that Shizuku who had never participated in a match even once since her return to school, far from not looking like she had no blank period, she even had become so strong to the degree that it was incomparable from before.

Strong, that word wasn’t enough to describe it. In everything, what was called as the extremity was something

that would make anyone felt beauty from it. This was exactly that. Shizuku's kendo already possessed "beauty" that would even made one felt moved.

「Referee.」

「Ah, err, me, men ari one point!」

Those words made Fudou to return to her sense too.

She still looked amazed, however right after that, seeing Shizuku taking her stance while calmly facing her, her expression greatly distorted. Her expression looked as though she was facing a reality that she didn't want to recognize, as though something that was hard to accept was thrust before herself.

「SEYAAAAAAH!!」

Fudou leaped forward. She began a fierce assault once more.

But, as expected her sword didn't reach, it was blocked, parried, and evaded with cruel calmness.

And then,

「MENN!!」

Once more, with a perfection that wouldn't allow even a single excuse, Shizuku's face strike landed. A clear impact sound echoed.

Fudou powerlessly fell on her knees. That wasn't because the strike caused a concussion or anything. It was because her heart broke. She crumbled down.

While the referee was troubled seeing Fudou who didn't look like she would carry out the etiquette for after the end of the

match, Shizuku put away her shinai, took off her mask protector, and opened her mouth.

「Fudou-san. You see, this is the reason I resign from kendo club.」

「……」

Fudou slightly looked back across her shoulder. Shizuku continued.

「While I was missing, I wasn't playing around at that time. I was desperately polishing my skill in a struggle to the death. Because there was no other choice than that. Even though I stop doing kendo, but I'm still continuing the kenjutsu of my family even now. That's why, for "kendo", for the people of kendo club, my sword has become nothing more than a poison.」

「……In other words, you are saying it's because you are too strong, because no one is a match for you anymore? That I am not even worthy to be your opponent?」

「-, that's not it. I'm saying that even though it's the same path of sword, but the direction we are going toward is different. Even if you make me as your objective, it will distort your sword instead――」

Shizuku tried to find the right words somehow.

Shizuku allowed her friends in the kendo club to be present in this match too was also to divulge this reason to them who were urging her to come back to the club one way or another, but Shizuku had the self-awareness that she was saying something that also could be taken as her being haughty.

And so, even while she was talking to Fudou, a shadow of unease loomed in her expression wondering whether she would be hated by her friends.

Seeing such Shizuku, the club members were divided between people who understood what Shizuku meant, people who showed a complicated expression that didn’t know of what to say, and people with eyes that got even brighter while saying 「As expected from Onee-sama!」. But, none of them showed a clear displeasure. Surely that was the result of Shizuku’s personality and the friendship that she had built until now.

But, it seemed Fudou couldn’t be like that.

「Why, just why-. There is only kendo for me! Even though I only have kendo! Even though I have devoted everything for it until now-. But why is it you who have everything that instead become this strong! You who easily abandon kendo-!」

「Fudou-san. What do you mean……」

Shizuku asked Fudou who was starting to leak out tears while she still hadn’t taken off her mask.

「I’m envying you!! You are beautiful, stylish, and adored by everyone! On top of that, even in kendo where I have devoted my everything, you easily surpassed me! Even though you have everything that I want! And yet, and yet-, you easily abandon my important kendo for a man! Even though you abandon it, you are still stronger than me…… such thing, it’s just too much」

「……」

Such envious heart was thrown at Shizuku right from the front.

The body build and appearance of Fudou Akari were to the degree that it was fine to say anyone who met her for the first time would feel fear. It had been like that since she was a child. No matter how much of a girl her heart was, her outward appearance wouldn’t let anyone see her as a girl.

Other people would make a complicated face, or in a terrible time they would laugh when she tried to be girly. Just by walking around, the people she passed in the way would send her a shocked expression. Even though she liked cute thing, she was ridiculed that it didn’t suit her.

She already lost count how much her heart had been broken by clear malice. Just how much she had been wounded by insensitive words and deeds. How many times her heart was gouged because a boy that she liked was actually speaking ill behind her back. The heart of Fudou Akari was unmistakably a girl’s heart. The world was too cruel toward such her.

What was the most painful for her, was when she saw her parents looking pained when they saw herself feeling pained. It wasn’t that they didn’t love her. Rather, it could even be said that they were doting on her. That was exactly why, seeing her parents getting troubled due to their troubled daughter fanned up her guilt.

Consequently, that must be why. Why she stepped into the path of kendo.

It was no use even if she kept getting troubled about her own look. In that case, she would try stepping into a world that would suit even someone like her. And then, so that she

would able to approve of herself, she would become number one in that path.

She decided so.

But, she encountered her. Inside the world she stepped into, there was that girl.

「Why are you that beautiful? Why are you that strong? Why are you that loved? Even though I’m like this-, isn’t this unfair!?」

It wasn’t like Shizuku knew about the detail of Fudou’s circumstance. But, Shizuku guessed it just from those words. The daily life that Fudou Akari had experienced until now. The bitter experiences.

Suddenly, the words that were always thrown at her in the past resurrected inside Shizuku’s mind.

――Are you a girl?

Her chest tightened. Shizuku saw her past self overlapping with Fudou who was shedding tears. She was about to open her mouth following her boiling emotion.

However, before her feeling could turn into words,

「……You can just feel hurt. You should just taste the same pain like me!」

After saying such thing, Fudou whose eyes were giving glimpses of flame of envy and hatred deep inside rushed out from the dojo building without even giving anyone time to call at her to stop.

「Fudou-san-, wait――」

Shizuku immediately tried to chase after her, but her hand was grasped by a powerful strength and she was pulled back. When she quickly turned around, the one she found there was Hajime who had been silently watching until now.

Shizuku showed impatience and told Hajime to let go of her hand, but Hajime spoke back with a serious gaze.

「Don’t worry, Shizuku.」

「Hajime……」

「I’ll finish her off later. I’m not gonna lose to anyone in how to break the heart skillfully.」

It seemed that Hajime-san was planning to go and finish off the girl who was running off while crying.

Anyway,

「Stop that-, this demon king-!」

zupaan A raging shinai was launched in a straight-man attack to the face of the demon king. 「Ouch-」 Demon king-sama pitched forward while saying that.

Even the kendo club members who were dumbfounded by the chain of events also crept away, or even shuddered from Hajime’s words.

Hajime stroked her own head while looking at Shizuku.

「You have calmed down a bit?」

「Eh?」

Hajime made a wry smile toward the astonished Shizuku and he continued.

「What is someone at her wits end going to do chasing after someone else who is also at her wits end? Calm down first for now.」

「Ah……」

「Besides, a beauty like you, no matter what you say toward someone who has complex about their own appearance, in most case it won't end well.」

If someone who didn't have confidence with their own appearance was then told 「It's fine, face doesn't matter!」 by someone who was recognized as attractive by everyone――it was guaranteed that the person would go 「You bastard, you are making fun of me huh!?」.

Strength left Shizuku's body. But, she also didn't look like she was accepting it.

「Then, are you telling me I should leave her alone because of that ? Such thing――」

「That's why, I'm telling you to calm down. What that girl is holding inside, is it something that light that words you thought up in the spot will be able to solve?」

「That's……」

Shizuku was at a loss for words. Hajime let go of her arm and in exchange his hand touched Shizuku's soft cheek and pinched there tenderly to calm her down.

「Isn't it better if you give her a bit of time? Like that, if that girl become shut in then you can visit her however many times you like, and if she try to do something then you can just stop her. Either way, doing it right now won't be anything good for both sides.」

The caution of Hajime who seemed to have seen through that Shizuku was shaken seeing her past self overlapping with Fudou, made Shizuku to hang her head down while nodding despondently.

「Don’t make that kind of face. I’ll also look out so that it won’t become something that cannot be undone. That’s why, you can think slowly, what kind of words you should say, and what kind of action you should take the next time you meet her. Come one, for now let’s go back home for today. Go change your clothes.」

「Yes……」

Perhaps she was feeling regretful that things didn’t go well, or perhaps she was worrying of what she should do. Shizuku was totteringly vanishing into the changing room looking somewhat dejected. Hajime saw her off while making a troubled expression. As for the kendo club members, they were writhing a bit seeing the figure of down-hearted Shizuku that normally she would never show to them.

「He, hey Nagumo. You won’t stop her? You are her boyfriend right?」

「Tha, that’s right. It’s absolutely dangerous to go meet that girl or trying to stop her when she comes to attack! That person’s state wasn’t normal!」

Shizuku’s friends were arguing vehemently at Hajime’s act that seemed to push the back of Shizuku who was trying to do something about this matter.

Fudou’s state at the end was certainly uncommon. Different from when she was pushing for a match, her strange atmosphere just now looked as though a stronger negative emotion was overflowing from her. No matter who one

thought about it, she looked like she was going to do something bad to Shizuku.

Normally this would be where one ought to stop from getting involved. No matter how strong Shizuku was, there was no need to allow her to purposefully head toward danger. And if Hajime was her boyfriend, he should not let her lover to get involved with this all the more, was what the girls argued about.

But, Hajime indifferently declared to them who were like that.

「Her meddlesomeness and worrying habit are hardcore one. It cannot be helped right?」

「Cannot be helped you say……isn't that too irresponsible even though you are her boyfriend?」

「It's fine. If that's what Shizuku want to do that is. If she is going to be meddlesome toward other people and she is burdened with trouble because of that, then I'll take care of her and shoulder the burden twice of that, I'll also spoil her while I'm at it. That's my role.」

「……」

The expression of the girls went *munyuu*. It was an expression as though they were forcefully fed with a terribly sweet pastry. As for the boys, their expression was half admiring, and half jealous seeming to say 'Anyway, won't Nagumo just die already' in their own way.

「Putting that aside, there is one little problem though……」

「Eh, wha, what?」

One girl asked back while stuttering a bit for some reason. Hajime scratched on his cheek awkwardly while,

「That Fudou girl, she was running out still in her kendo uniform, or rather she was still wearing all her protectors. What are we going to do with her uniform?」

「Ah……」

When they looked at the entrance, her shoes were also left behind. In this time when the sun had already set, a huge girl wearing full set kendo equipment except the mask protector was running away with tearful face while barefooted……. It felt like a new urban legend would be whispered in the neighborhood.

「As expected Fudou won't come back herself to take back her things. Even if we want to return her things to the kendo club member at her school, it will be a problem if a male like me go there carrying girl uniform.」

「If it's Shizuku it feels like she is going to say that she want to return it herself but……from the talk just now, it will be questionable if we let Shizuku go do that.」

「Yeah. And so, oi, you kohai over there.」

Hajime's gaze locked on to kouhai-chan. Kouhai-chan reflexively jumped on the spot while giving a strange reply 「Yhess!」.

「Tomorrow morning, go deliver the uniform to Fudou's school.」

「Eh? Tomorrow morning……err, I have class normally tomorrow though?」

「Aaa? Then, you can just come here to collect the uniform first thing in the morning, go to her school, and then return here before class start. Ah, you cannot bring the uniform home okay? Just in case, what if that girl comes back here to take her things herself.」

「E, err, senpai. That person's school, is really far from here though……」

「Looks like it. And?」

「E, err, my house is also, quite far from here so, looking from the total distance it will take a lot of time……」

「I see. And?」

「……Uu. At least make it after school, is that no good?」

「Oi oi, what are you going to do if by chance Fudou doesn't have spare uniform? If you deliver it first thing in the morning, in the worst case she can change after arriving in school. But if you deliver it after school……you are a cruel fellow huh.」

「Whi, which mouth is saying thaatt」

Kouhai-chan grinded her teeth *gugigigigigi*. It was a rebellious attitude. Really inexcusable. Added with her usual mischief that was crossing the line, her attitude really wasn't good.

Hajime made a wide grin while stepping forward as though taking advantage of the gap of her consciousness and approached near, dealing an iron claw on kouhai-chan. *creak* An unpleasant sound rang……. (AN: Iron claw = a wrestling move? where you grasp the face of the opponent with one hand hard)

「Ouch-, ouch ouch ouch ouch-. Se, senpai!? My head, my head is splitt――」

「Oi, kouhai. I'm saying that if you clear this mission, I'll forgive all your mischief until now. You get any complaint?」

「Hahih, none at all! I'll work hard and complete the missionnn!」

The pitiful kouhai-chan was released, and then she crumbled down on the floor with her legs glued close to each other, that posture was as though she was a pitiful girl that encountered a violent hoodlum. In front of the kouhai-chan who was whispering「Onee-sama, is this also a trial for me?」, was Hajime-senpai who was standing imposingly without even a shred of guilt while dealing additional blow「If you fail, or if you play hooky……you understand right?」 to the downed opponent.

The gap of this with his act against Shizuku before this that was indulgent in various meanings was terrific.

While the club members were shuddering once more,

「……What are you all doing? Or rather, why is everyone not changing already?」

There, Shizuku who had finished changing clothes arrived with a dubious expression.

「No, there is nothing. ……Right?」

Hajime looked over the kendo club members with a smile.

「「「Yes! There is nothing at all!」」」

The hearts of the kendo club members were as one. They couldn’t go against Yaegashi Shizuku’s boyfriend.

Shizuku seemed to guess what happened somehow and she sent an exasperated gaze at Hajime while also making apologetic expression at the club members at the same time, but before she could say anything, 「Now, we are going home」 her hand was pulled by Hajime and she was taken away.

At the entrance, Shizuku looked back and somehow said only「See you all tomorrow!」 before fading out.

Inside the dojo building that became silent,

「Uu, how dare you do that to a girl’s face. Is this grudge, ought to be left uncleared like this-」

There, the grudge of kouhai-chan who didn’t learn her lesson echoed.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Shizuku arc will continue for a little bit more.

By the way, the scene where Shizuku returned a yell of fighting spirit, I imagined the awesome scene of Tama-chan of Bamboo Blade for that. Atomi○ Fire Blade……Shirakome was trembling in various senses.

Arifureta Chapter 260

Arifureta After II Residential Area's V○der-sama

Author Note: I'll post one more chapter at 19:00.

The last of Shizuku arc.

The next day after the incident with Fudou Akari.

A short time before the morning homeroom started, Shizuku talked about the details of yesterday to Kaori, Yue, and Shia who had arrived.

「He, hee~. So there was something like that……. That must be terrible, Shizuku-chan.」

「Well, it's not that terrible though……. I'm thinking whether I should be able to handle that better. It's just a meaningless what-if though.」

Shizuku's shoulders dropped while saying such thing. Yue and Shia made a bit exasperated face while Kaori smiled wryly to such Shizuku.

Although, even though Kaori was smiling wryly, it seemed her attention was taken by something else, since some time

ago her gaze kept glancing at other direction even while she was listening to Shizuku’s story.

Yue and Shia didn’t look like they were really bothered about it, but even the classmates who had arrived already were paying attention to it with cringing face「Uwaa」 or admiring face「That girl, she is a hero huuh」.

「Ouch ouch ouch ouch-, my head-, my heaaad」

「You’re right. Your head is dumb huh.」

「It’s painful-, let go you bastardd!」

「Aa? Bastard? Your way of speaking is improper huh, kouhai.」

「Hiih, I’m sorry! I got too cocky-! Don’t grin on my foreheaad-, Onee-samaaa! Help meee!!」

A scream echoed inside the classroom.

「And then, I have a friend in Fudou-san’s school, so this morning I tried calling her to ask, is she going to school. But, normally she would come early for morning training, but my friend told me that she hasn’t come yet……」

「Tha, that’s really worrying isn’t it, Shizuku-chan. But, I wonder if perhaps it will be better for you to also feel worry about somewhere nearer to you for now?」

「Onee-samaaa! Help meee! Onee-sama!」

「There is also that thing that happened only yesterday, so I plan to wait and see for a while but……. I’m thinking of being the one to go meet her when the time is good.」

「Eeehh? Onee-sama? Onee-sama! Your soul sister is falling into a devil's hand right hereee!」

Shizuku-oneesama didn't turn around. Seeing such attitude from Shizuku and the deed that was being carried out behind Shizuku right now, Kaori couldn't help but let out cold sweat.

The kouhai-chan who was always hanging around Shizuku.

Right now she was receiving iron claw from Hajime first thing in the morning. Her face was being tightly held in an eagle grip while her forehead was nonchalantly getting grinded against with increasing strength, even watching from the side that looked painful.

Kouhai-chan was desperately tapping repeatedly on Hajime's arm while desperately seeking help from her beloved Onee-sama, but she was also casually insulting Hajime while doing that, so each time the grip's strength was increased and she was gradually losing momentum.

「Hey, Shizuku-chan. That girl is desperately calling at Shizuku-chan though……」

Shizuku's beautiful acting as though nothing happened which was unlike her made Kaori to finally ask while she raised her eyebrows with a troubled look.

「Aa~, Hajime? Won't you forgive her soon? I'll also speak with her later about it.」

「Well, fine then.」

Hajime casually tossed away *poi* Kouhai-chan. Kouhai-chan fell on her butt with「Ahih」. 「Uu, that huurtt. My head feels like they are splitting opeenn」 Kouhai-chan's face contorted

looking like she was going to cry, but only after a bit she glared at Hajime fiercely.

「That’s cruel, Nagumo-senpai! Just what I have done that made me deserved that!?」

「It’s because how you were trying to post those blasphemous edited photographs.」

By the way, it was about edited photographs where Hajime was in a dreadful situation in them. In the photographs he was co-starring with macho onii-chan. As expected it was a doing in the level that made even Shizuku plainly snapped seeing the appearance of her lover that crossed the line.

Having a gaze that had crossed being chilly and even looked nihilistic like a black hole directed at her, kouhai-chan trembled with a sudden chill. She was drenched with cold sweat, and inside her heart she whispered「As I thought, have I overdone it I wonder?」.

But, in front of the hateful son of a bitch, the pride of a soul sister wouldn’t allow her to apologize or anything.

In the first place,

「Uh, bu, but! This is because Nagumo-senpai’s own fault!」

「Aa? Why is that huh?」

Against Hajime in his current mood as an opponent, even though it was only at the level like a puppy yipping *yap yap*, but Kouhai-chan was still taking a defiant attitude against such Hajime. A commotion was running through the classmates.

「Hey, is there anyone who has a fresh status plate? I'm gonna ascertain that girl's vocation.」

「It's obvious already even without doing that.」

「Yeah. One who oppose the demon king is always――a hero.」

Such conversation were done between Atsushi, Akito, and Noboru. The other classmates seemed to also in strong agreement.

Not knowing that all her senpai was looking at her as though they were seeing a hero, or perhaps seeing a rare beast, Kouhai-chan shook her twin tail wildly while pointing sharply with her finger.

「Today, I woke up at five o'clock you know! I came at school at six o'clock without even eating breakfast, and from there it was also terrible!」

「Terrible? What is?」

「The school gate, it wasn't open!」

'Well of course', everyone nodded. As expected, even the teacher who came early for morning training and so on wouldn't come at six o'clock.

「You came too early.」

「But, if I want to participate in kendo club's morning training even just for a bit, I won't make it in time if I don't come at least that early. After all, the other school is really far.」

All the senpai were in admiration, thinking ‘she is unexpectedly diligent huuh’.

「And?」

「It couldn’t be helped so――I had no choice other than trespassing in.」

All the senpai tilted their head, thinking ‘she is diligent, right?’.

「But, our school, it was really a big deal for a period because of all of you senpai’s disappearance remember? Because of that the gate and fence were also reconstructed for a bit……」

「Aa. The countermeasure for unlawful intruder. Well, it was made so that it’s a bit harder to enter here, only to the degree like the school of the rich I guess.」

「Yes. And so, right from the morning I was copying wall climb sport. It was difficult to climb up the wall. There were few protrusions to use……」

「You must looked completely like a suspicious person.」

A high school girl doing wall climb on the school’s wall at six in the morning……. The gazes of all the senpai were once more turning into eyes that were looking at a hero in a different sense.

「But, I accomplished it. I collected that girl’s uniform and climbed the wall once more to escape, and then sped away with my bicycle.」

「No, use the train. Just how far do you think the distance is? If I remember correctly, it’s about three, four station. Using

bicycle to go there is……

Round trip cost 440 yen. You bourgeois senpai won’t understand the value of that amount.

……

Saving 440 yen by pedaling bicycle. Was it her lunch money for today? The eyes of all the senpai were really gentle. At the same time, there were also accusing stares piercing Hajime. Hajime-san whispered Perhaps I should at least pay extra for her expenses…….

And then, a hell was waiting for me……

Here is Japan isn’t it? But for some reason I’m smelling the smell of adventurer from her though……

Yes, it was a heart-breaking hill! The school of that girl, the school building is located on top of a hill! Can you believe it! My legs were already like jelly! What’s more, there was a bus stop at the hilltop, the people who were arriving for morning training or whatever were overtaking me using bus! In addition, they were staring at me across the window! It was like they were saying Eh, what’s with that person? Why is a student from another school is desperately pedaling a bicycle until she got drenched with sweat like that? She is a bit out of place though~! There were even people who pointed at me I told you!

……

Not losing against the hill, not even losing against the curious stares, kouhai-chan climbed to the peak.

By the way, looking at kouhai-chan who finally arrived wobblingly like a ghost while breathing roughly ‘zee—haa,

zee—haa’, a teacher that must be an adviser——a young female teacher welcoming the students at the front gate was screaming.

「I who safely accomplished my mission received a lot of water from a kind female teacher, after resting for a bit I left the school. Haha, that hill road, when coming it’s like hell, but the return home it’s really heavenly! The exhilaration was amazing! I rode the bicycle down while my hands let go of the steer handle you know! What a thrill!」

「You, are really enjoying life huuh~」

The classmates nodded 「Certainly」 at Hajime’s whisper.

By the way, regarding kouhai-chan who was going down the hill road with a fierce speed while happily yelling 「Hyahoo———」 with both her hands in banzai pose and her twin tails fluttering, currently it was becoming a hot topic at the school over there even now.

It was a terribly dangerous stunt, so good children absolutely must not copy it at home okay?

「After that, I sent a grandma who was tired from walking her puppy and became unable to move back to her home, and in the end I didn’t make it in time for the morning practice……」

「Your trouble attraction rate is unbelievable oi」

Lightly ignoring Hajime’s words, kouhai-chan suddenly opened her eyes widely in a flash.

「I have accomplished the mission that gave me enormous difficulty the first thing in the morning. And what did Nagumo-senpai say to such me after that!?」

□? Did I say something?□

□Yes, you said it! When senpai saw me drenched in sweat, □Unebelievable. It was like you are a comedian wearing wig that produced water. Are you gonna participate in R-1 after this?□that was what senpai said! Who did you call a comedian! I'm not training for that just so you know! That was the result of my hard work you know! Praise me properly, you bastard!□ (TN: R-1 seems to be a comedy show in Japan. Anyone know more detail about it?)

All the senpai thought. That was a splendid tsukkomi. If she could find an excellent partner that took the role of the funny man, wouldn't she be able to participate in even M-1? Such thought ran through their mind.

By the way, right after kouhai-chan got her sweaty state pointed out at her, she rushed toward the dojo building with a fierce speed and properly put her appearance in order using the necessities for female club member that were constantly prepared in there. After that, she went to take the aforementioned edited picture from □Soul sister's secret armory□, and when she tried to paste the photo on the door of Hajime's classroom she got the first iron claw of the morning.

□Now, praise me. While you are at it, apologize. Say □You have worked hard. It's really inexcusable for me to bully such capable kouhai. As my apology I'll part from Shizuku right now. I won't come near her anymore from here on until the doomsday□. Now, quickly! Quickly say——ah, stop-. Pelase stop senpai! Don't tie my hair into a reef knottt! Onee-sama, save meee!!□

Hajime-senpai's technique shined bright. Kouhai-chan's twin tail was tied into a reef knot in the blink of eye, furthermore

the tips were formed into heart shape. The hairstyle was then thoroughly fixed in place with rainbow colored wire with great detail.

The gazes of all the senpai who were looking at kouhai-chan struggling and squirming with teary eyes were lukewarm. Their gazes looked as though they were watching a frolicking small animal while they were saying 「She isn't learning huuh」 or 「She still haven't get enough huuh」. Kouhai-chan's petite body build also spurred that image further.

Shizuku smiled wryly while standing up to save kouhai-chan. The bell rang in a good timing.

「Come on, the bell has also rang, let her go already with that much.」

「Can't be helped.」

Kouhai-chan crumbled down on the ground with legs gluing close on each other as though she had just gotten assaulted by a hoodlum. Shizuku replaced Hajime and expressed her thanks to kouhai-chan regarding the matter of returning the uniform (Shizuku knew that kouhai-chan was ordered by Hajime to do that only this morning).

Kouhai-chan who were gifted with the words of thanks from the onee-sama that she loved and respected instantly made a loose expression that couldn't be showed in front of other people.

And then, after she stood up while trying to hug onee-sama which was casually dodged by Shizuku, she glared hatefully at Hajime.

「You better remember this!」

She said such thuggish line and ran away. The heart styled hair was bobbing up and down above her head. Was she planning to enter her own classroom while still like that? She was a kouhai whose soul of adventure was overflowing everyday nonchalantly.

「That photo is really too much but……so far as it goes she was doing it at the door of our classroom where no one other than the people of our class would see it, so forgive her already okay?」

Hajime shrugged at Shizuku's words.

Seeing such Hajime, Yue let out 「Nn~」 from her mouth while tilting her head.

「……Hajime. Actually, you are really pleased with that child?」

Those words toward the husband that came from someone who was acknowledged by everyone as the legal wife were basically recognized as correct by everyone in that place. If Yue saw it like that, then the possibility that it was actually like that was extremely high.

Not just Shizuku and others, but all the classmates also looked at Hajime feeling 「Eh?」. Hajime smiled wryly from getting seen through while he lifted both his hands in giving up posture.

「Well yeah. Somehow seeing her feels nostalgic.」

「Nostalgic? By any chance, did you know her from before?」

Shizuku asked. Hajime shook his head and denied it before his gaze moved toward Shia. Shia tilted her head because Hajime suddenly looked at her for some reason.

「That’s not it, perhaps I shoud say it’s that girl’s regrettableness, or how she won’t get discouraged, somehow those sides of her resembled Shia when I first met her.」

「……Heh? Resembled, me?」

It seemed everyone didn’t get what Hajime meant, but only Yue nodded 「Aa~」 in understanding.

「Yeah. The you when we first met could only be called as a regrettable rabbit. What you did and your attitude, rather it was your very existence itself that was regrettable. If there is a race of regrettable rabbit, then you will get a perfect score of 100 without any objection.」

「Hajime-san, are you picking a fight with me?」

Right now anyone could see the vision of her rabbit ears that were invisible because of the artifact hairband she wore going *usaa-!!* in indignation. (TN: Usa => Usagi => Rabbit)

「Your face was terrible with snot and tear and drool, your important place was in plain sight, even though you were the one asking for help but you were strangely impudent, your forcible attitude……」

「Nuh, guu, I, I cannot deny that desuu……」

「Even when I elbowed you, kicked you, electrified you, sent you flying, but you absolutely wouldn’t let go even while weeping.」

「When I recalled it now, Hajime-san was really a brute that time! Or rather, even when I asked for help when I almost

became a monster’s meal, you tried to desert me so nonchalantly!」

The classmates who had never heard of the story how Hajime met Shia made a shuddering expression at Hajime’s deed at that time. They couldn’t even imagine it looking at his current attitude toward Shia.

「But still, I think Yue also felt it but……you were that kind of regrettable rabbit, but even so you didn’t get discouraged, looking at you energetically hopping around running over there, hopping around running that way, just watching you like that was really fun, that even us felt like we were also energized.」

「……Nn. Just looking at Shia was somewhat fun.」

「Aa, u……is, is that so……」

Shia shyly played around with her rabbit ears that must be there. Even while looking at such Shia with a gentle gaze, Hajime also wafted off an atmosphere that felt vaguely lonely.

「You who needed to get looked after when something happened, is now in the remonstrating side instead right? Like when Yue and Kaori quarreled, or when Myuu was going to do something reckless, or when I wasn’t reading the mood.」

By the way, what Hajime meant by not reading the mood referred to the time when he was flirting with the wive~s (mainly Yue) without even caring of other people’s eyes.

「……Nn. Shia is a firm person. Her housework is also almighty.」

□That’s why, seeing that girl who even though is regrettable like that, yet still charging ahead without getting discouraged, it’s like I’m facing Shia in the past, it’s a bit nostalgic.□

□I see now. When we met Shia, it was when she was already transformed into the bugged rabbit.□

Shizuku and the classmates also nodded □I see□ in comprehension. And then, thinking that they also wanted to try witnessing the “regrettable rabbit Shia”, but seeing how such thing couldn’t be witnessed anymore, many of them whispered □how regrettable□.

Hajime also looked at Shia once more, and then he whispered □how regrettable□ while narrowing his eyes fondly.

Yue looked at Shia with nostalgia, and she whispered □..... regrettable□. Kaori and Shizuku too, they were thinking of the no good Shia and imagined that such thing might be cute in its own way, but seeing that they wouldn’t be able to see it already, they whispered □That’s regrettable□□It’s regrettable□.

□E, excuse me, I think that perhaps all of you are saying that in a good meaning, but still, getting called regrettable, regrettable on and on so many times, it’s a bit.....□

□□□□How regrettable□□□□

□Stooop! Please stop looking at someone’s face while calling that person regrettable earnestly like that desuu!! Auuu, my past self is resurrecting desuu~□

The rabbit who was still called as regrettable whether she was actually regrettable or not was trembling all over while

falling down powerlessly face down on her own table.

Hajime and others were staring at such Shia with a lukewarm gaze.

Sunday.

Kaori was walking alone through a residential area toward the station in that day off. The time was just past noon. Her appearance was casual, but seeing her it was clear that she put her appearance in order while being properly conscious of her outing.

(Hm~m, I wonder if the time is fine? Nevertheless, it was shocking that that person is coming here. It seemed that person came when Yue opened the gate but……she said that it’s a secret from Hajime.)

Kaori glanced at her arm watch while talking about such thing to herself. Today she had a plan to meet with a person who came from the other world secretly from Hajime. It appeared she was going to talk with that person a bit while also having tea but……

The point where it was a secret from Hajime gave off a really bad vibe. Although, it was just as Yue said, in this world there were things that weren’t ought to be known.

Kaori fastened her pace while making a really complicated expression——it was at that time,

□……Who is it? Do you have any business with me?□

Kaori stopped still and said such thing toward the street where there should be no one else other than her.

After a while, there was only dead silence filling the street, but before long, from the gap between the fences of two houses behind Kaori, a person came out while making rustling sound from the clothes that rubbed the wall of the cramped space.

SSSHHH, HOHHHHH

□……□

A strange breathing sound resounded in the street.

Kaori who turned around was speechless. She was speechless, however, inside her heart she was greatly shaken.

The reason was,

(Da, ○rth Vader is here-!?)

Yes, what came out from between the houses, was someone wearing pitch black clothes, pitch black mantel, and then wearing a unique full faced gas mask, Lord ○ader! Even now he was breathing ‘SSSHHH, HOHHHHH’!

If this was just a mere deviant, Kaori surely wouldn’t be this shaken. She would finish it by normally defeating the other party. But, the opponent here was Lord V○der. She didn’t understand how she should react!

As expected, should she praise ‘what a lovely collection you have there!’ like that here?

Even while Kaori was shaken and thinking of such thing,

「……If you're going to hate someone, then hate Yaegashi Shizuku for this.」

「Eh?」

Lord Va○er took out a shinai from his mantel. Seeing that what came out wasn't a light s○ber, Kaori went 'hah' and returned to her senses, however, her attention was diverted when she heard the name of her best friend spoken out.

Taking advantage of that opening, Lord V○der unleashed his shinai saber in a horizontal slash. The attack didn't aim at the head, but aiming at the shoulder blade. From that it seemed the attacker still had some rationality left, but even so there was no doubt that this was still a dangerous deed the attacker was doing.

If a delicate girl like Kaori got hit with that, it was possible her bone would break, even if that wasn't the case there was enough possibility she would get sent flying and got knocked somewhere on her body.

Well, that was if Kaori was just a delicate girl though.

「Eih」

「Eh?」

What was instantly taken out along with that cute voice, was a cleaving attack from a special security baton that stretched out from the centrifugal force when it was taken out.

Against that cleaving attack that was swung down like a guillotine, the horizontal slash of Lord ○ader was knocked

down――not, far from that the shinai saber was snapped into two in the middle.

Lord Va○er was dumbfounded. A lovely voice 「Ei!」 came toward such him once more.

What entered his field of vision, was slender fingers that were clenched tightly, it was a fist that could even be called small. Although, the power was so heavy to the degree it felt like a gorilla was behind that punch.

「Buhee!?」

The Vad○r mask was smashed apart, and the person behind the mask was blown away. The person inside the ○ader rolled around on the ground before they fainted spread-eagled.

「Eh? This person, could she be……」

Kaori whispered that while she moved to restrain the person for the time being, and then she took out her mobile phone after making a thinking gesture for a bit.

And then, she began to contact her best friend.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Why am I writing kouhai-chan that much, that’s because as the result of my self-analysis while writing, I felt nostalgic about the regrettable rabbit just like I wrote in this chapter.

The regrettable rabbit is no more……how regrettable.

Arifureta Chapter 261

Arifureta After II I'll Defeat You Bastard-. Today, Right Here!

AN: This is the posting of the second chapter for today.

The previous chapter had been posted, so for those who still hasn't read it, please visit there.

「Kaori!」

「Ah, Shizuku-chan.」

Shizuku rushed with a worried look into a small park a slight distance away from the residential area from before. It seemed that Hajime was also nearby, because he arrived together with Shizuku.

「So she ended up causing a scene. What's more, she did it by taking a really nasty method.」

Hajime said such thing with a cold voice when he saw the person sitting down beside Kaori. The voice without a shred of warmth in it and the straightforward words caused the person's big body to twitch.

Shizuku thanked Kaori once more for contacting her and then she moved her gaze toward that person——Fudou Akari.

「……Fudou-san.」

「……」

Fudou didn’t react and kept looking down. Her expression and eyes were dark. Not even the slightest bit of dominating aura could be felt from her large body. And above all else……the track of nosebleed Kaori-san’s face punch was terrible. The smashed mask put beside her indicated the gruesomeness of that punch.

「……Just quickly call the police or whatever.」

After some time of silence, Fudou whispered those words with faint volume. Self-abandonment could be felt from that voice. There were also resignation and weariness mixed in it. It was as though she was a tired old woman despite her youth.

Indeed, although it was only an attempt but what Fudou did was still a criminal act. She was completely a suspicious person. After all, she was Lord Vad○r in the middle of day. She had no way to make any excuse.

But, Shizuku really hesitated when Fudou mentioned about calling police.

As though sensing that hesitation of Shizuku, Kaori opened her mouth with an expression that looked worried for both Fudou and Shizuku.

「You see, Shizuku-chan. From the start it didn’t look like Fudou-san planned to actually hit me you know?」

「Kaori?」

「-……」

Fudou looked at Kaori with a taken aback expression, and Shizuku also faced Kaori with a questioning look that wondered what she meant.

「The shinai sabe――cough-. The shinai you see, it suddenly lost momentum just before it was going to hit. Perhaps, she might be intending to stop just barely before it hit. Even in the case that it hit me, I think it would only hurt me somewhat without any injury. She was also aiming at the shoulder just in case.」

Shizuku understood that Fudou still hadn't lost her rationality after hearing Kaori's words and let out a sight of relieve. On the other hand, Fudou was looking at Kaori with a shocked expression for some reason, but right after that, she made a ridiculed face as though exposing her whole sense of inferiority.

While that happened, Hajime was directing an admiring gaze toward Kaori.

「Even while understanding that it won't be a problem, you snapped the opponent's shinai, and in the end you even smashed her face……. Kaori-san, that's lovely yes.」

「Tha, that couldn't be helped! Because, it was Lord Vade○ right in the middle of town! Anyone would be shaken just like me! There was even the sound 'SSSHHH, HOHHHH'!」

「I think that sound is unrelated though……」

Kaori was speaking her justification with bright red face. In respond Hajime was looking at her with a gentle and

understanding expression while glancing at the pulverized mask and Fudou’s face that was dyed with nosebleed, and then he snapped a thumb up at her.

Kaori-san rushed forward. She let out her protesting punches *poka poka* at Hajime.

Seeing such Kaori at the corner of her sight, Fudou raised a low laughing voice that was unmistakably self-deprecating this time.

「Fudou-san?」

「Just laugh at me, Yaegashi. My sword is completely seen through by a normal girl who doesn’t even do kendo. Hahahah, I’m really laughable. Anything and everything I did is just pointless. In the end, the kid who have it will go above the kid who is have-not even without doing anything.」

Actually Shizuku really wanted to make denial at the part when Fudou said normal girl. Depending on the situation, Kaori was stronger than Shizuku. After all, her specs were that of a god’s apostle. It was fine to even call it a foul play.

After laughing for a while, Fudou looked exhausted as though her soul had slipped out from her body, then she said one more time 「Just call the police already」. It was clear even without any words. She was broken right now. She had given up her own life as worthless.

Seeing such Fudou, Shizuku closed her eyes once and then whispered with a faint voice.

「——You are a woman?」

「-」

Fudou twitched and trembled. She thought that Shizuku was making fun of her. She thought that this was the payback for her trying to hurt Shizuku’s friend.

But, Shizuku’s next words caused her heart that should have been closed to unconsciously react.

「You see, at the past when I was in elementary school, I was once told that.」

「……Yaegashi was?」

It couldn’t be helped that her gaze turned unconsciously suspicious. There was no way Yaegashi Shizuku who was praised as a beautiful girl by everyone would be gotten told that.

Shizuku made a wry smile and she then talked about her appearance when she was a child and the series of events related to that.

Fudou snorted at that.

「What? Do you want to say that by working hard you can become beautiful like now? That’s only the talk if the person has a good base from the beginning. That kind of talk――」

「That’s not what I meant. I’m not talking about look. I’m talking about whether you like yourself or not.」

「Liking, myself?」

Fudou’s gaze turned even more suspicious from not getting what Shizuku was talking about, to which Shizuku nodded silently.

「I, hated myself. I wasn’t aware of it myself, but I stifled myself, ran around busily for other people’s sake, took only the role of protecting others……. Even though I actually didn’t want to do something like kenjutsu, even though I want to be more girly, I want to lament and complaint, get protected like a princess…….. Even though it would be great if I could be like that, but everything was the polar opposite of that.」

「……」

The self she wanted to become, her ideal self, they all were the polar opposite of her current self——those words caused Fudou’s eyes to widen slightly. It was as though she was hearing about herself.

「Even my current self is fine, there is nothing wrong with it, that was how I persuaded myself and pretended that I was accepting it, but one day, the day when I needed to pay the price from continuing to deceive and hate myself came.」

「Price?」

「I almost died.」

Fudou gulped. She wanted to laugh Shizuku down from saying such absurd thing, but Shizuku’s expression and voice didn’t even have the slightest bit of humorous atmosphere in them.

「Really, I was beaten up so laughably pathetically. My whole body was chopped up, I was also humiliated with words, if he was late in coming to save me just by a hairbreadth, a blade would have already sticking into my head at that time.」

「No no no no no, just what the heck with that kind of situation huh!」

Shizuku let out a dry chuckle when she recalled that time, while Fudou spontaneously acted the straight-man. As expected, it was a situation that was unimaginable to happen to modern person of this ear. Fudou thought that it was a lie, but it was just too out there for a nonsense talk, and above all her instinct screamed at her that it wasn’t a lie.

「When I was at elementary school, I was saved by Kaori. During the time I disappeared, it was Hajime who saved me. Other than them, I was also always getting saved by someone. ……Fudou-san. You said that I’m someone like me is in the category of the have, but if I really have everything, then I wonder why is it that I’m always saved in the crucial time.」

「……Yaegashi.」

The perfect and dignified girl who was recognized by everyone. Shizuku who Fudou thought as such person was now making an expression that looked pitiful from the bottom of her heart. Fudou’s expression turned into disbelief.

「It’s the fact that everyone has difference due to things like their birth and upbringing. But, surely it depends on themselves whether they can make use of it or not. I who Fudou-san said to be someone in the have, was really no good that I almost died. I finally could affirm that after really almost dying and then getting saved again.」

Shizuku cut off her words for a moment there, and then she turned a nostalgic gaze at Fudou who was staring at her in astonishment.

「The national meet when I was just entered middle school. I faced a first year like me. An athlete that unusually fought

with upper stance. Her skill was obvious even when that was the first time I faced her. Even though her first move looked slow, when I noticed “the invisible face strike” was already swung down.」 (TN: Upper stance = a stance where the athlete held the shinai with both hands above their head.)

「Yaegashi, you, remember……」

Shizuku got a faraway look in her remembrance of that time, however she then shook her head.

「I don’t remember most of what happened in that match. My head became blank when I received the first face strike, I was simply losing myself in my thought. When, how did I get hit, how would I block it, how would I see through it! Those were all I could think. Your sword was really really scary……」

For Fudou, the first time she fought Shizuku, she could only see it as though Shizuku was perfectly handling her technique. It was a bolt from the blue for her to hear that unexpectedly, Shizuku at that time was fearing her.

「When the match was over, after I comprehended that I somehow won, when I looked back I couldn’t recall anything……. However, after my excitement passed, the strongest impression that remained inside me was only——what a beautiful sword that was.」

「Beau, tiful?」

Shizuku nodded. Her gaze returned toward Fudou. It was difficult to describe the emotion that peeked out from deep inside her eyes. It was like envy, or respect, or perhaps fear, it was an emotion with such a mysterious color.

「It wasn’t a cheap trick. An attack of certain defeat that doesn’t need the second attack. Simply, swinging down the

lifted up sword straightforwardly. It was direct, and resolute to the utmost. There were earnestness, sincerity, and resolve riding in it, it was a beautiful sword.

Shizuku had never even dreamed that there was a girl the same age like her who could swing such sword.

Because Shizuku had done kenjutsu since she was little, the skill she had piled up led her to victory in the match, but Shizuku wasn't able to be happy at all with her victory. She won the match, but lost the fight. That was how she felt.

After that, I became conscious of your figure each time I participated in the national meet. At our second match, as expected your sword was beautiful, but that time I fought without getting swallowed, executed the technique I trained to face you, and I was able to win……I couldn't do it in the match venue, so I secretly sneaked out ahead and made a guts pose outside.

Such, thing……

There was no conceit in those words. The athlete who was her objective was training hard the same like her in order to win. And she felt genuinely happy from being able to win against her.

Fudou's sight became blurry after knowing that fact.

Shizuku picked up the snapped shinai of Fudou and she suddenly took a stance with in on her waist. It wasn't a stance for kendo match, but a stance of sword drawing art. At the same time, a heavy aura burst out from her body. Fudou's body froze spontaneously. The cause was because that aura was of killing intent. Even though a kendoka and a swordsman both wielded sword, but there was a decisive difference between the two sides.

Shizuku suddenly relaxed her stance and talked with a wry smile.

「I'll leave it to you whether you will believe it or not, but I, during the time of my disappearance, had cut living things.」

「Eh? Cut?」

「Yes. I cut down a living thing with real sword. Even now I remembered it. The sensation of cutting flesh, the smell of spurting blood. Doing that was necessary to survive, so I don't regret it. But, I'm already unable to continue kendo. Whether in strength or the meaning of wielding sword, even though I'm a swordsman, but I'm not a kendoka.」

「Not a kendoka, but swordsman……」

She had heard the rumor about Shizuku and her classmates. It was a story that was so hard to believe so suddenly. It would be strange to believe the story of a war in another world.

But……

The gaze of Shizuku that was staring at her, in the end was it something dishonest that could be washed away by "common sense"? Fudou didn't think so.

「I won't return back to being a kendoka anymore but……I want to keep watching it. That beautiful sword of yours. Perhaps this sound like sarcasm to you, but I think that you who swung that sword was also really beautiful.」

「……is that so.」

Fudou looked back at Shizuku, and then she looked down.

She clenched her fist tightly as though enduring something, and her body was a bit shaking. Tears were falling drop by drop on top of that fist.

It was unclear how much time passed.

Before long Fudou lifted up her face. Her expression was a refreshed one that looked as though something that haunted her had vanished away somewhere.

Fudou sat with seiza posture on that spot, and then her gaze met Shizuku and then Kaori straightforwardly. And then, she lowered her head hard and pressed her forehead on the ground.

「I had done something dreadful and caused trouble for all of you, I'm sorry. I'm really, sorry」

The words of apology of Fudou resounded inside the small park.

Shizuku's gaze moved toward Kaori. Kaori immediately guessed Shizuku's question to her whether it was okay to forgive Fudou, and she smiled while nodding.

Hajime moved his leg up and down. He was meaning to urge Shizuku to step on Fudou's head to make her repented deeply. Shizuku immediately guessed his meaning and she smiled while ignoring him.

「Promise me, Fudou-san. Continue with your kendo. Polish your sword, without getting influenced by someone like me.」

「Yaegashi……. Yes, I promise. ……It will take time until I can like myself. I also cannot declare that my unjustified resentment will absolutely vanish. But, I won't discard what I

have piled up until now, that’s the only thing that I won’t do. I will work hard, so someday I can like myself.

Seeing the clear eyes on the face that Fudou lifted up, Shizuku smiled and nodded happily.

Fudou also smiled seeing that expression. Even though her look was severe just like Fudou Myouou, her refreshed smiling expression looked somehow charming.

Surely, in a future that wouldn’t be so far away, she would be able to grow to like herself for sure. That smile caused Shizuku to be convinced of that.

Fudou grasped the hand that Shizuku presented and she stood up. Kaori tried to wipe up Fudou’s blood with her handkerchief, but Fudou hurriedly backed away. Kaori was unmindful of that and insisted, making the atmosphere to turn harmonious.

‘Well, the case is closed with this’, Hajime thought so leisurely. It was at that time,

Uu~, what a nice story this iiis! Truly the springtime of youth! Onee-san is really moved!

That deep but strangely charming voice suddenly resounded.

Hajime’s spine instantly got goosebumps. His instinct rang the warning alarm loudly!

Ah, Chrystabel-san! I’m sorry, even though we have an appointment.

Don’t worry about it Kaori-chan. You had already contacted me beforehand after all, Onee-san doesn’t mind at all

yahn♡

He couldn’t understand the reality. Why was the monster haunting that clothes shop in Brook was here? Why was that guy talking to Kaori so naturally like that? Why was that guy wearing frilly one piece made in earth!?

The impact felt was as though a monster inside a picture book was encroaching into reality.

No, rather that was, an indescribable, blasphemous——

Hajime-kyu~~n? I wonder if right now, you are thinking about something impoliteee?

–!?

‘Be cool, be cool, me.’ Hajime desperately told himself.

Why, are you here? How did you creep out from that world?

Nnmaa, how rude! It was like I am something that always crept out smilingly!

The sudden invasion of monster——not, the appearance of the manager of clothes shop, Chrystabel, it caused Kaori to ignore Fudou who was flustered for the time being and she explained the situation with a wry smile.

It seemed Chrystabel was interested with the clothing and accessory of earth and he (TN: Or she? What should I use here?) consulted Liliana whether she could possibly learn about clothing and accessory in this side.

Liliana also took into account about the promotion of Tortus’s culture and gave her okay sign, however, thinking

whether Hajime who really disliked Chrystabel would easily let him passed through the gate, in the end Liliana then consulted Yue first.

Yue had close relationship not with just Chrystabel, but rather with the manly women group too. But although she readily agreed to invite Chrystabel to earth, but she didn’t wish to give Hajime any worry.

There, when Hajime was busy and Yue took his place to periodically open the gate, she secretly called Chrystabel. After that Chrystabel’s livelihood in earth was secured mainly by Remia who from the beginning had work related with clothing and accessory, and recently she even created an office for that in earth, and now Chrystabel was working hard in his study.

The first thing that Hajime who heard the circumstance did was――

「Okay, die」

Performing quick draw with Donner.

「Munh」

Shop manager Chrystabel repelled away the bullet with his chest!

By the way, the loaded bullet was a rubber bullet.

「How fervent nn♡ I’m feeling Hajime-kyun’s love yahn!」

「Stop it! Don’t look at me with those eyes! Or rather, weren’t you taught that when someone is talking you should look at their eyes! You bastard, your gaze is shifting below each time you are looking at me!」

The gun fired continuously! The fired out bullets was repelled by the arms that shop manager Chrystabel crossed in front of his body. The gaze of the shop manager that peeked out from the arms' gap was locked on at Hajime's lower body!

Hajime's SAN point was shaved down!

「I don't understand what are you talking about hereee――fumu, that's a nice tight……」

「SHAORAAAAAH!!」

Hajime-san's flying kick burst! The ground under shop manager Chrystabel who received that kick scattered around in radial shape from the impact.

「Ca, calm down, Hajime-kun! This is in the middle of residential area! A lot of families are right nearby! Aah, don't fire your gun! Tha, that's right, I have to lay out the barrier!」

Kaori was laying out the barrier for sound isolation and recognition obstruction in flusters while charging into the battle in the attempt to stop Hajime who lightly lost his senses from feeling the danger toward his ass.

「He, hey, Yae, Yaegashiii? Your boyfriend is holding gu――」

「That's just a toy.」

「Eh, but, it's making loud firing――」

「Just a toy.」

「The concrete is split――」

「Just a toy.」

「……」

The thing Shizuku's boyfriend was holding was a toy gun. The final answer.

Though incidentally, the ground was smashed from his step and it also looked like he was stepping on the air and leaping around.

「It's just magic trick and acrobatic there. My boyfriend, he want to be magician in a circus at the future.」

No matter what there was a limit in forcing that logic. Akari-chan thought so, but the face of Shizuku who was smiling while staring still at her with her forced explanation looked scary somehow, so she just nodded.

Surely, that was the correct choice.

Even if for example, that boyfriend-san was suppressed by Shizuku's friend using extendable baton in two swords style while moving in a speed where her figure vanished. That too surely must be magic trick and acrobat. Surely.

When Kaori who hugged Hajime tightly and covered him from the sticky gaze of shop manager Chrystabel said 「If you don't quit with it, I will get angry here」, as expected even shop manager Chrystabel also gave up on Hajime and turned around.

Hajime gasped with a weird voice 「Ubooa」 from his mouth due to insufficient sanity point while Kaori was embracing him with a face that didn't look that dissatisfied as one would have others believe with her hands patting Hajime to calm him down. Shop manager Chrystabel glanced at that from the corner of his eyes while walking toward Akari-chan who was being dumbfounded.

Extremely thick eyebrows, arms, chest, torso, legs. Every part of his body was huge added with his thi~~ck face. No matter how one looked at him, he was a man of giga muscle lump, but his body was clad in frilly one piece clothes. His braided hair was fixed with a pink ribbon!

The shop manager who like usual was fiendish in various senses was pouring his gaze at Akari-chan.

A beat. Shop manager Chrystabel nodded as though he had comprehended something and his sparkling eyes turned at Akari-chan.

「You, it's fine for you to temper the beauty of your sword, but tempering your female beauty is also fine isn't it?」

「Eh? Err?」

Akari-chan was bewildered!

「Seeking beauty is something natural for human yahn. If it's Onee-san here, I will be able to make you shine even more!!」

Arms and legs that looked like log. Thick chest. Muscles that were obvious even through the clothes……. But with frilly one piece and ribbon.

Just what in the world this person was saying? Fudou-san was even more confused.

But, shop manager Chrystabel didn't stop. From his wriggling movement that looked like tentacle……

「Yes!」

Fro~om~hi~is Front Double Biceps!~

「Just!」

Fro~om~hi~is Most Muscular!~

「Like me here!」

Side Chest-!!

Shop manager Chrystabel was shining radiantly!

「Ah, no, I’m good.」

Akari-chan quickly prepared to go home. She politely said 「Once more, I’m really sorry for all the trouble」 to Shizuku and walked away to exit the park. Her shoulder was gripped strongly.

「It’s fine, don’t be scared yahn.」

「No, you are scary.」

「It’s fine pyon☆ Leave everything to Onee-san! This Onee-san’s name is Chrystabel! The ally of every manly woman and maiden!」

「Ah, no, really, I’m already fine even if I stay like this so——wait, ah, don’t shoulder me! What’s with this person-, this dreadful strength!? Where are we going!? Helppp! Someoneee, Yaegashiii! Helpppp!!」

「Kaori-chaaan! Shizuku-chaaan! Please take care of the rest okaayy! Also Hajime-chaaan! Let’s meet again laterrr!」

When they came back to their senses, both Akari-chan and shop manager Chrystabel were nowhere in sight.

A week later at Sunday.

A contact came from Chrystabel who had been out of contact until now. He said that he would return Fudou Akari who he kidnapped.

"So, she is alive……" Hajime who was tense in this one week whispered so with an expression that was showing respect to Akari-chan's survival ability. Shizuku and Kaori glanced at such Hajime with their hands dragging him along because he was throwing tantrum "I don't wanna go" because he was also a concerned party while heading toward that small park.

By the way, Shizuku and Kaori dealt with Akari-chan's house and school. Their dealing method was by forceful suggestion using the demon king quality product artifact. The figure of Shizuku and Kaori nodding to each other with a desolate smile while saying "We are completely infected huh" might or might not happened.

And so they arrived at the public park like that. There wasn't any sign of people. Other than Hajime who was strangely nervous, there were only Shizuku and Kaori there.

"Fudou-san, is she fine I wonder."

"Well, honestly I have something to say with how he was suddenly taking Fudou-san away that even caused her to be absent from school but……this is Chrystabel-san we are talking about, so I think it won't be anything bad."

「I, guess. Chrystabel-san can be forceful sometimes but, he is a person with a good will.」

「Even though his gaze went toward my lower body each time we met?」

Hajime's words were treated like nothing. Hajime silently looked up to the sky. Who ever thought that the sky was this blue.

After ten minutes from the appointment time, the appearance of that huge body appeared. It was shop manager Chrystabel. As always he was really frilly. And then his arms and legs were all lethal weapon.

There was no one beside him. It seemed he was alone.

「My? Have I made you all wait I wonder?」

「No, we also came only just now……rather than that, Chrystabel-san. What about Fudou-san?」

Shizuku asked representing all of them.

「My my, don't be that impatient. Her remodel――cough-, beautifying was going really well yahn♡ It's the result of her heart's reformation! It's just as I thought, whether woman or man, if they work hard to become a figure that they thought to be beautiful, then it will come trueee! I too is feeling honored that I can be of help with that yahn!」

'Just now, did she say remodeling?' Before anyone could cut in even while thinking so, shop manager Chrystabel circled his hand at behind him. And then, he pulled out someone. It seemed that Fudou was only hiding behind the large body of shop manager Chrystabel.

Like that, the person that came out was――

□□□Who?□□□

□Uu, long time no see, although it might not be that long that I can say that. It looks like I have troubled all of you, like taking care of my family, or my school……that, thank you.□

Tall body, and extraordinary body style. Hair in princess cut that reached until the waist. A color of bashfulness could be seen vaguely on the person’s well-featured face.

Really, just how was this? No, actually they already knew who. However, they simply didn’t want to recognize the reality. Of this abnormal situation, this bizarre phenomenon!

The girl with hair in princess cut thrust the reality before the stiffened Shizuku and others!

□Err, I am, Fudou Akari you know?□

It seemed that was how it was.

Just what in the world happened that the girl who even resembled the Fudou Myouou could become a yamato nadeshiko like this……

Anyway, putting aside the dumbfounded Shizuku and Kaori, Hajime was――

□As I thought, you bastard cannot be let to live!□

Gun fire.

□Muhn□

Shop manager Chrystabel repelled everything with his chest!

「What the hell is that!? That ain’t a problem of beautifying or anything anymore! Ain’t her bone structure changed there! Just what in the world did you damned do! Metamorphosis magic!? Is that metamorphosis magic!?」

「That’s a trade secret pyon♡ If you dee~epened your relationship with me, then I’ll-teach-you♡」

Shop manager Chrystabel’s full power wink and kissy gesture were thrown!

A blood vein snapped to the surface of Hajime’s forehead. With a twirl the gun spin reload was carried on.

「I’m convinced right now. You cannot be left to do as you pleased in this world. If you are left as it is, this world will get infested with the bunches that received your demonic remodeling. This world, my birthplace, will be encroached!」

「My, speaking as though I am like a black bug in the kitchen! That’s rudeee. And? What will Hajime-kyun do I wonder?」

「That’s obvious.」

Hajime pressed Donner’s barrel on his forehead and yelled his oath.

「I’ll defeat you bastard-. Today, right here!」

「Fufu, fuhahahahah! Just try it if you can! My manly woman soul, is undying!」

The demon king-sama spoke something that sounded like what hero-sama would do, and then he charged toward the shop manager-san of clothing shop.

The result of the battle was……as could be easily guessed, Hajime received lap pillow from Shizuku in order to recover his scraped off SAN point. Anyway, Shizuku who was gently brushing Hajime who was making noise in his nightmare looked really happy.

By the way, about Fudou Akari-chan though, after that she made a name for herself in kendo world as a beautiful kendoka. Regarding the reaction of the surrounding about her transformation, so that the shop manager of the clothing store wouldn’t be demanded for by anyone who became interested with the before-after of the girl, Hajime might or might not ran around to follow up with that……

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Overcoming complex by mental growth, I planned for such a story, but when I realized it had became a story with solution of fantasy and physically remodeling the body.

The plot of Shirakome is always not breathing……

By the way, I also put this in the activity report but, the comic version of Arifureta is updated.

No matter from where you look, you will be wanting to enjoy the cute Yue without fail, if it’s fine with you please try to go take a look at Overlap-sama’s homepage(Comic Gardo).

Please treat me well.

Arifureta Chapter 262

Arifureta After II　Is That God, Really Alright?

KUEEEEEE, a high pitched shriek resounded.

Right after that, a squall that struck down from the sky rolled up cloud of dust and blocked the field of vision. Small pebbles of sand attacked the eyeball which would force anyone to narrow their eyes while covering their face with their arm.

As though waiting for that opening, rain poured down by mixing in among the squall.

However, it wasn’t a rain of water. It was a rain that was made from stone needles. The stone needles with total length of around 15 centimeter approached the ground looking really like a heavy rain.

——Coatrice’s stone needle

It was the characteristic magic that was fired by a huge black eagle monster, Coatrice. If someone got hit even by a single needle, they would be petrified in the blink of eye. And such needle was fired in a wide area by several hundred needles simultaneously, while the target’s sight was blocked by the squall and cloud of dust.

「——”Wind Wall”」

A magic trigger with the chanting abbreviated was whispered with a small voice. Wind that whirled with the caster as the center blew away the cloud of dust.

What appeared was a young man. He had silky brown hair and well-featured face. His body was lean and tight despite being slender and tall. Wearing simple protectors that only protected his body’s vital spots, his hands were holding a western sword that was shining faintly in a low stance.

That young man——Amanogawa Kouki didn’t even look nervous facing the squall of stone needles, he calmly lifted the holy sword above his head and began rotating the sword fast with only the motion of his wrist.

The holy sword that was starting to rotate like a pinwheel in an instant looked like a round shield in addition with the radiance it was clad with.

Right after that, stone needles showered down on the round shield of holy sword. But, it seemed the stone needles couldn’t slip through that shield because of its great momentum, the stone needles were easily repelled and scattered to the surrounding, piercing the ground around.

KUEEEEE, a shriek that was unpleasant to the ear resounded once more. It seemed the monster lost its temper from witnessing its characteristic magic gotten scattered.

The coatrice folded its wings that produced squall physically, and then its huge body rapidly swooped down.

tsk——”Light Explosion”!

Light exploded. Flash gushed out from the holy sword round shield like an explosion, and the shockwave blew away the remaining stone needles.

The stone needles stabbed the surrounding like thorns. If he moved recklessly to dodge the coatrice, he might get hit with petrification from below. Kouki picked this forceful option because of that.

Using “Ground Shrinker” skill, Kouki leaped out to the air in one go.

The coatrice put forward the sharp claws at its legs.

「——”Light Severance”-」

Just before both sides crossed each other, Kouki created a simple barrier in midair using light element elementary magic. Using that barrier as a foothold, he changed his trajectory midair. At the same time, he swung his holy sword in a circle arc.

Coatrice and Kouki crossed over each other midair.

The coatrice charged toward the ground without decelerating at all. Its neck plopped off and flew like a joke, and its flesh made a graphic sound with its impact from crashing on the ground.

Kouki twirled midair while rotating his body to fix his stance, and then he landed on the ground. Just in case, he confirmed that there was no stone needle on the ground, but the needles were already crumbling as though weathering from age, so there would be no problem even if he landed on a stone needle.

「……」

Kouki confirmed the crumbling of the stone needles and the death of the coatrice, and then he let out a small exhalation

to unravel his tension. At the same time, he held down something that was rising up inside.

His complexion didn't change at all. The change of his physical condition didn't show up outside. Even that condition that was becoming typical post-battle was already something he was used to.

(Not just getting used to it, I have to overcome it though……)

Kouki talked to himself inside his heart while using his spirit to push back the breakfast inside his stomach that was gradually rising up as though to say 「You calling?」. He unconsciously smiled bitterly at himself that was like that.

「What are you doing grinning like that, it's disgusting.」

「Nnguh!?」

The caustic words that stabbed at him like a throwing javelin caused the breakfast to rise up as though to say 「As I thought you are calling aren't you?」. Using spirit! He pushed it back!

The one who threw the javelin of words from the nearby rocky area was a female knight clad in Hairihi kingdom knight order's equipment. She looked good looking, and she could be seen like a noble's daughter if she shut up and wore a dress.

In fact, the girl was from the background of a noble family though……

Anyway, while Kouki was fighting the coatrice, the girl was hiding in the cover of rocky area and didn't come out at all. She didn't look like she was feeling bad at all about that, far

from that, when the battle was over she came out with a violence of verbally attacking her ally while approaching near with a brisk pace.

「Nn, nnh. Err, isn't it going too far calling me disgusting?」

「A man grinning while standing in front of a corpse with its head and body separated from each other, at a scene that is drenched with blood, how could I not call him disgusting? My apologize, I cannot really follow hero-sama's sensitivity.」

「Ah, yea, sorry.」

Seeing the female knight backing away like in a rewind toward the nearby rocky area while her whole body was radiating aura 「It's creepy」, it caused Kouki to consent inside his heart 「Well certainly!」 in desperation while his mouth was apologizing.

「So, hero-sama. We more or less finished exterminating the monster in the request…….are we going back to the town? Or else, will you continue hunting like usual?」

The female knight asked while looking up to the sky. The sun hadn't even reached the zenith yet. This was a time period that was just right if they were going to go back to town to take lunch and reported to the guild about the request's completion.

Normally anyone would do that, but from how the female knight was asking like that instead, it could be imagined that *usually* Kouki wouldn't return to town in this case.

「The eyewitness report about the coatrice and also the extermination request we received said that there is only one of it but……there was also other eyewitness report of other monster. The monsters of 「Divine Precincts」 are

troublesome. And this place is also nearby Raisen grand canyon, there are a lot of hiding places here. We have time, so I’m thinking of investigating further.」

「……So it’s like that.」

The female knight was turning a vaguely exasperated gaze at Kouki and she let out a small sigh.

Kouki and others had went back to earth and returned to school.

But, Kouki who was tormented by his sin persuaded his family and childhood friends and he dropped out of school by his own choice. He immediately crossed over to Tortus, and like this he moved around exterminating monsters as an adventurer to atone for his sin.

At the legendary decisive battle, the monster swarm that overflowed from 『Holy Precincts』 wasn’t completely annihilated. Quite a number of them succeeded in escaping. The monsters of 『Holy Precincts』 were powerful. Every last one of them possessed the strength of the monster at the deep part of Orcus great labyrinth.

For the adventurers of this world, these monsters were severe if they weren’t adventurer of “Gold” class.

It was for that reason that Kouki crossed over world without waiting to graduate from high school, and here he accepted monster extermination request especially against monsters from 『Holy Precincts』. He asked for cooperation from Liliana, he also appealed to all the branch heads of the adventurer guild, and like this time he was given the preference to receive information and request about such thing.

He was carrying on request with the highest degree of danger by his own wish. It was also wasn’t rare for him to have consecutive battle every day. Indeed, there was no doubt that there would be enormous damage is these monsters were left alone, and rapid disposal of them was necessary and also something to be thankful for.

However, Liliana and some others were worried that if Kouki kept being reckless like this then it might brought fatal danger to him someday, they advised him to care for himself a bit more but……

At present, there wasn’t any sign that Kouki’s action pace would drop. This time too, Kouki seemed to be planning to search for monsters outside of the request and fought them just like usual.

(I wish he will also be considerate about me who is being dispatched as his watcher and also supporter……)

Altough fighting side-by-side with Kouki wasn’t included in the range of the female knight’s duty, just watching a battle against the monsters of 「Holy Precincts」 was nerve wracking.

At the battle against coatrice just now, it would be the end for the female knight just by getting grazed by the stone needle. Kouki and others of the another world group was in different level when it came to resistance against magic. Most likely, she would be completely petrified in a matter of seconds if she got hit.

Before this too, she felt uneasy only hiding in the cover of a rocky area, so she was hiding herself by creating a trench with godspeed hole digging.

「Aaa, I want to meet Onee-sama……」

「Hm~m, the periodic gate opening is still quite far away I think……」

The female knight whispered to herself while following behind the walking Kouki. Kouki smiled wryly while recalling the onee-sama that this female knight greatly respected, or rather she greatly loved to the degree that might be a bit too extreme――Yaegashi Shizuku.

「I know that already. Aa, I hate my own powerlessness. I thought that trivial thing like the world can be crossed using spirit and guts if it's for onee-sama's sake, but, nugugu」

「If the world can be crossed like that, just what is the meaning of Nagumo's hardships then.」

Kouki's wry smile deepened.

This female knight. Originally she was a royal guard that was attached to Liliana, a direct subordinate of the formerly royal guard commander and the present kingdom's knight order leader, Kuzeri Rail. But, why then she was now accompanying Kouki? If such question was asked――the short answer was, she was demoted.

She was one of the stepsister group that greatly loved Shizuku, she caused troubles over and over again because of her overflowing onee-sama love, and she turned out from royal guard knight -> normal knight directly under the leader -> normal knight -> this girl is no good already.

At the legendary decisive battle, Kouki was at the enemy side. That fact was a common knowledge also because of Kouki's own declaration.

And so, no matter even if it was for hunting the monsters of 「Holy Precincts」, naturally there was also opinions that were

uneasy of leaving Kouki unregulated.

Although Liliana declared that such thing was unneeded but……Kuzeri consulted to Kouki with an exhausted expression 「That girl, I’m thinking of firing her」, that being the case in order to give peace to the heart of the people who was yelling their anxiety, let’s attach a knight as a watcher, let’s make it this girl! That was how it ended up.

「I wish that you won’t speak of the name of that son of a bitch.」

「You will meet another painful experience if you keep saying such thing you know?」

「You mean, like hero-sama who got Shizuku-oneesama taken from him so thoroughly?」

「Gahah!?」

Kouki pressed his hand on his chest and fell down. He got on all fours with his head hanging down. It was a terrific counter.

「Good grief, putting aside Kaori-sama, I wished that you would at least protect Shizuku-oneesama to the death. Even I will be able to snatch away onee-sama if it’s only from hero-sama……」

「Uguh」

「Rather than hero-sama, you are the loser-sama. You are chicken-sama!」

「Kafuh!?」

「Hey hey, how does it feel to be treated as “little brother” by a girl the same age with you? How does it feel? Hey hey」

「Uu, uuuuu」

The female knight poked repeatedly with the sheath of her knight sword at the crouching Kouki. She was venting her anger with her all, filled with the grief and lamentation toward the present situation where she couldn’t even scratch that son of a bitch demon king.

But, it was at that time that a strong presence was transmitted from the direction of 「Raisen Grand Canyon」.

「……Looks like, I have a good luck today.」

Kouki stood up so easily it was unthinkable that he was getting so grandly humiliated until just now.

And then, he immediately walked forward while urging the female knight to follow with his gaze.

The female knight followed in a hurry. Kouki suddenly turned his face toward such her.

「Aah, that’s right. I had asked this several times already but……can you stop with the “hero-sama”?」

「……」

Kouki said that with a small smile casually. The female knight spontaneously turned silent, and after thinking for a while,

「Then, I’ll call you chicken-sama.」

「Can’t you just call me Kouki normally!?」

Kouki spontaneously tsukkomi-ed. As expected it seemed he couldn’t turn a blind eye at that.

The female knight slightly backed away and made a shuddering expression while she hugged her breast.

「Asking me so we can call each other by name……please stop, I’ll get pregnant.」

「You won’t! What are you saying so suddenly!?」

「It’s Onee-sama’s warning. I received that warning when I went to report to her that I am appointed with this duty. First he would create familiarity by calling each other by name, after that he would nonchalantly increase the body touch rate, for some reason some incident would occur and he would resolve it, and in the end he would smile pleasantly with sparkling teeth. That is that guy’s modus operandi you know, be careful okay, onee-sama said to me.」

「SHIZUKUUUUUU-」

The tsukkomi of Kouki’s heart burst out. The roar of monsters echoed from afar as though hailing in concert with that.

「Well, it’s impossible for me to be infatuated to other person that is not onee-sama. Kouki-sama, I’m really sorry but, I hope you will give this up.」

「Why is it like I was confessing and then get rejected…… wait, this is bad! Isn’t this an aurora dragon!?」

Kouki felt exhausted, but right after that he saw the monster that showed up and he raised his voice in panic. The monster that flew out from 「Raisen Grand Canyon」was the dragon shaped monster that fired breath of extreme light that was once called as grey dragon. The white dragon had

disappeared and right now they were called as dragon of extreme light.

Their original specs were high already, but now they were the 「Holy Precincts」 version and their level had been increased. It was a formidable enemy that wasn’t really a laughing matter for adventurer.

Kouki gritted his teeth at the appearance of a monster that wasn’t in the report while he turned his gaze behind him in order to give instruction so the female knight would retreat.

「Quick, get awa――wait, fast!? No, that’s fine though!」

At that time the female knight had just leaped into the trench that she dug before this. It was a wonderful escape.

Kouki’s expression was complicated feeling somehow not satisfied, but the next moment he twitched due to the light shining above and he turned around. And then,

「Uu, UOOOOOOH」

He faced the extreme light that was released at the same time and raised a war cry in desperation.

The female knight who was only showing out her face a tiny bit from the trench to observe such Kouki was,

(……Hmm. Even though he actually didn’t mind even when he was ridiculed about his relationship with Shizuku-sama, but he cannot endure getting called “hero-sama”. What a difficult person.)

Kouki’s act before this. Despite his big reaction, but he easily returned to reality. From that it could be understood that he had already came to a clean decision about his relationship

with Shizuku. Rather, he was accepting with the relationship where the two of them were like family of older sister and younger brother and felt satisfied with it.

But, in regard of getting called “hero-sama”, Kouki smiled cheerfully and acted like it was nothing, but if one looked carefully they would clearly see that he had tense expression.

And then, the emotion that he was desperately hiding in front of the corpse of coatrice. That was……

(It was, fear. Now then, what in the world that fear is about……)

The female knight was watching Kouki who challenged the monster in midair battle with simple barrier as his foothold while pondering a bit.

The current Kouki wasn’t wearing the “holy armor” artifact that was given to him from the palace. That was because Kouki returned it himself. He also returned all the artifacts he received from Hajime like “Air Force Boots” and others.

That was because of his guilty conscience that said that those items weren’t something that could be possessed by him who wasn’t a hero, at the same time it was also a decision that came from his determination to train himself back from zero without relying on artifact.

He was only carrying the holy sword wasn’t because he wouldn’t let go, but because he couldn’t let go of it. For some reason, when Kouki left it behind, it would fly back to him when he moved a certain distance away from it. It was as though the sword was saying it had no user other than Kouki.

In any case, it didn’t change that Kouki’s defensive capability had declined remarkably, if he was hit by the breath of light then he clearly wouldn’t get away unscathed.

Then, in that case, was that linked to his fear then……

The female knight had a hunch that there was no way that was all there was to it.

However,

(Well, it’s something incosequential!)

The female knight easily abandoned that thought.

At the distance, it seemed Kouki had finally finished off the dragon. And then, right after that, three more aurora dragons appeared and he raised a shocked scream 「Whaat!?」.

(……Hmm. I guess I better make the trench a bit deeper.)

The female knight who actually was nonchalantly an expert in darkness element magic ignored Kouki who raised a war cry 「I, I WON’T LOSEEEEEEEE-」, and then she diligently worked hard in digging a hole.

「Uguu, I thought I was going to die……」

「How exaggerated. In the end other than getting knocked down by a tail, didn’t you normally win without even getting particular wounded?」

「……Kaa-san, thank you for birthing me with a tough body.」

Kouki got a distant look and offered his feelings of gratitude toward his mother that was in different world.

As expected, it would be severe for Kouki and the female knight who had just underwent a mortal combat to continue searching for monster, so right now they returned at their base recently――「Brook Town」.

If one walked at the bustling street, aroma that really stimulated one's appetite would waft from the street stalls. Kouki's stomach was already empty too from his intense exercise. His breakfast that rose up even when he didn't call now didn't show any sign of showing up.

Kouki's gaze was unconsciously absorbed toward the numerous street stalls, but――

「Oi, that's」

「Ah? ……Chih, he is still in this town huh.」

「Is this alright? What if he is scheming something……」

The men who looked like adventurer that happened to pass by were talking whisperingly to each other when they saw Kouki. Their voices entered his ear.

The area around Kouki's chest slowly turned chilly. He unconsciously moved to cover his head with the hood of his cloak, but he stopped his hand from moving and kept his appearance without change.

Their expression that he caught in a glance was clearly feeling disgusted, along with color of anxiety that oozed out. Even though they understood that right now the hero was

taking the initiative to hunt the monsters of 「Holy Precincts」, their disgust didn’t really vanish. No matter how they couldn’t wipe out their unease.

The traitor of mankind. The hero of betrayal. The envoy of evil god……

Would he bare his powerful fang toward mankind once more, could he be scheming something……

Trust that was lost once wouldn’t return easily.

It was something he understood. It was something he was prepared for. That was why Kouki didn’t hide his face. He looked forward, determined to accept it with resignation.

「Regaining trust is something really difficult.」

「Eh?」

The words that female knight suddenly let out caused Kouki’s eyes to open wide. The female knight was staring straight ahead while further adding more words.

「It cannot be done in a day. Losing it is easy, but obtaining it is hard.」

「You’re, right.」

「However, giving up is exactly what a “person that cannot be trusted” would do. Therefore, one must never give up.」

It felt like warmth was spreading slowly inside Kouki’s chest. He was getting looked coldly at like this was him reaping what he sowed. At the time when he was needed the most, he instead prioritized his own emotion and betrayed everything.

But, like this there was also a person who was concerned for himse――

「Someday I will bloom a second time for sure at central! And then, I will be at Onee-sama's side……guheheh」

「Ah, yea, that's what you mean huh.」

A fatigue suddenly assaulted him. But he thought positively 'Well, my heart is lightened I think!' and fastened his steps.

The inn that the two of them used as their base came into view. The large wooden signboard had "Inn of Masaka" written on it. It was an inn that was used by that demon king and actually was considerably famous, to the degree that it became a bit of sightseeing spot. (TN: In Japan, 'masaka' meant 'don't tell me…')

After all the inn was brazenly advertizing in a big way by hanging down a banner that was written with "Demon king-sama's appointed inn! Your journey started from here!". It seemed the inn was also selling things like demon king manjuu and so on. They had a really good business spirit.

Kouki was making a complicated expression while opening the inn's door and entered inside.

The landlady of the inn welcomed the two of them with 「My, welcome back」 and a gentle smile. It seemed the people of this inn also didn't really think of anything particular toward Kouki. They were always attending to him with an attitude that was the same with other customer.

It was a really calming inn, with the exception of one thing.

Kouki and the female knight took their seat in order to have late lunch. They took the menu to take a look of what they

would eat today. It was at that time,

「Today our recommendation is the teriyaki of Kururu bird you know?」

「Uoh!?」

「Nnnh」

The voice that suddenly resounded from nearby caused Kouki and the female knight to jump on the spot altogether.

The cause was one.

The inn’s poster girl who was bringing the two of them water with a cheerful and charming smile on her face――Sohna Masaka-chan. The approach of that Sohna-chan wasn’t noticed by the two until she called out at them. (TN: Sohna sounded like ‘sonna’ which could mean ‘such thing’, or ‘no way’. Sohna Masaka, sounded like ‘no way, don’t tell me…’)

Both Kouki and the female knight were people who served in battle. Kouki’s Presence Detection was especially excellent to the degree that it could be said in extraordinary level, even if the other party possessed the skill of “Presence Isolation”, as long as they weren’t the same another world group like him, he would be able to detect them. The exception to that was like the rabbit eared bunches lurking in a certain sea of trees.

But, such Kouki didn’t notice Sohna-chan when she approached him.

「So, Sohna-chan. Since when you were there……」

「Eh? I normally came out from the kitchen bringing water to you two just now though……」

She answered Kouki like that with a puzzled expression. Kouki cocked his head wondering whether it was just him feeling exhausted.

However, this kind of situation had happened several times, like when he walked in the corridor at midnight when he woke up to go to toilet, or when he came out from the bath's changing room, or when he was taking meal like this time, when he noticed she was already behind him. He really couldn't believe that it was just a coincidence.

「Sohna-chan, by any chance, do you have experience of receiving some kind of special training?」

The female knight unintentionally asked that.

Sohna-chan showed a puzzled expression toward that question, and the next moment she let out a chuckle. As though to say that she had heard a funny joke.

「Giggle, geez, what's with that question? What kind of special training that an inn girl would receive!?」

「Ah, no, it's just my feeling. My apologize, it seems that I was a bit confused.」

「You were working from the morning weren't you? Surely you are really tired now. Please eat a lot and get lively.」

Sohna-chan smiled sweetly. By no means that she was a beautiful girl that would make other people opened their eyes wide, but she possessed warm loveliness of a plain flower that resolutely bloomed fully.

Kouki and the female knight also forgot their shock just now and their expression turned warm. Surely, it was just as Sohna-chan said, they were only feeling a bit tired. Thinking

that, they ordered their meal before looking at each other’s face and exchanged a wry smile.

「Ah, that’s right. Sohna-chan. About the dinner tho――ugh」

Sohna-chan wasn’t there. It was after she took the two’s order, and Kouki and the female knight looked at each other’s face only for a moment. Yet despite so, when the two returned the gaze back, Sohna-chan wasn’t there anymore. They didn’t even feel any sign of her moving away.

「……」

「……」

Kouki and the female knight unintentionally fell silent.

「Did you call?」

Sohna-chan materialized.

「Ah, no. It’s nothing at all……」

「Is that so? Then, please wait a bit until the cooking is finished okay!」

Sohna-chan vanished energetically.

It was like her presence was slippery…….

Kouki and the female knight waited for their meal silently for some reason. When Sohna-chan brought them their order, as expected they also couldn’t grasp her presence.

Kouki and the female knight ate their meal silently.

When they finished their meal, Sohna-chan cleared up their empty plates.

But, at that time, Sohna-chan dropped something. A metal plate the size of a hand palm——a status plate.

「Ah, Sohna-chan, you drop——」

Kouki immediately picked it up and his gaze inadvertently moved toward the status plate. Originally, a status plate's content couldn't be seen as long as the owner didn't pour their magic power into it, but this status plate was shining faintly with its content visible, perhaps because Sohna-chan was displaying the content just now because of some kind reason.

Kouki stiffened when he saw the content. The female knight who unintentionally peeked at it also stiffened.

The status plate was quickly pulled away from Kouki's hand.

「Thank you very much, Kouki-san. But, seeing other person's status is a violation of manner you know?」

「Eh, ah, sorry.」

「No, no. It's me who is carelessly leaving it in its visible state after all. But, please be careful the next time okay.」

Sohna-chan smiled sweetly. The smile of a poster girl was dazzling.

The female knight whispered with a small voice while staring at the energetic back of Sohna-chan who was returning to her work.

「Just what is that girl?」

「No, even if you ask me that……」

A strange silence fell.

□We, well, it must be that. This is the appointed inn of the demon king after all!□

□Tha, that’s true!□

The two who forcefully convinced themselves excitedly headed out for their afternoon work.

By the way, the status of Sohna-chan that the two saw was,

==========

Sohna Masaka 16 years old Female Level 22

Vocation: None Occupation: □Brook Town□ Inn of Masaka Employee

Strength: 9

Stamina: 15

Endurance: 6

Agility: 5

Magic Power: 3

Magic Resistance: 3

Skill: Accounting – Love Smell Sensing – Sharp Ear – Night Vision – Rope Descent – Wall Climbing – Infiltration – Diving – Elusive Phantom

==========

It was a collection of skills that was really oriented toward spy except the first two skills. Or rather, as long as one wasn’t from another world group, normally a person would only have about one or two skill. Most likely those skills bloomed later on through arduous training……

There was a monster in the inn of 「Brook Town」, perhaps.

In addition, in the evening of that day, a letter from Liliana reached Kouki. The next morning Kouki and the female knight returned back to the palace.

As expected, at that time too, Sohna-chan was behind the two of them to see them off with her presence beyond grasp even from hero. Both Kouki and the female knight couldn’t hide their shudder.

Kouki and the female knight who arrived at the palace were welcomed by Liliana and knight order leader Kuzeri.

The moment she saw Kuzeri, the female knight scowled 「Gee!? Leader!?」. Her scruff was grasped by Kuzeri who had pulsing blood vein on her forehead and she was dragged away. It was a really natural flow of event without even any time to stop it, just like how water would flow from high place to low place.

「Eerr, for the time being, it’s great that you return safely, Kouki-san.」

「Yeah, thanks, Lily. You wrote in your letter that there is a troublesome monster appearing at the outskirts of the capital but……」

Seeing Kouki who hurriedly gave his return greeting before quickly asking about the monster sighting caused Liliana to smiled bitterly thinking ‘just like always huh’.

「About that. I think even the knight order can deal with this monster, but I called Kouki-san just in case. But even though I said that, there is only eyewitness report so far and the situation is nothing urgent. The knight order plan to depart tomorrow morning, so first please drink some tea and rest.」

「I see……. If that’s how it is then I get it.」

Kouki who noticed that Liliana was being considerate at him also smiled wryly while he complied with Liliana’s suggestion.

Like that, Liliana was about to ask about the problem Kouki was holding in his heart in a casual manner——it was at that time,

「I found you, hero-sama. Please I beg you, save my beloved world.」

From the sky, a gentle voice that gave off earnestness came down.

「Eh?」

「Eh?」

Both Kouki and Liliana stiffened in puzzlement. Right after that, a pattern of magic circle that looked like hieroglyph character they had never seen before stretched out on the

ground below Kouki. The magic circle increased in radiance and overflowed with a power that was falsely similar with magic power.

「Do, don’t tell me-」

「Ko, Kouki-san!?」

The face of Kouki who guessed what was happening was grandly twitching.

At the same time, the hieroglyph characters of the magic circle flashed fiercely. Liliana reached out her hand toward Kouki right away, but Kouki shook off that hand and pushed away Liliana instead.

「Lily-, tell everyon――」

「Kouki-san!」

Before Kouki could finish talking, the raging light settled down. And then, there was nobody there anymore.

「Thi, this is terrible! I have to tell Hajime-san!」

Liliana was dumbfounded for a while before she raised her voice 「It’s terrible! Terrible!」 while rushing away in a feverish haste.

After the light completely blanketed his field of vision, Kouki tasted a sensation as though the gravity was changing direction every few tenth of second. Kouki who could only let

his body getting carried away inside the darkness where he couldn’t see anything finally found a streak of light.

He desperately reached out his hand to that. The light was rapidly approaching.

Kouki said 「Eei, to hell with this!」 and leaped into the light――

「Gaboh!? Ugogoooh!?」

He became panicked from the large amount of water that entered his trachea.

(I, I can’t-, breath!? Wa, water!? Underwater!?)

Yes, the destination of the light he leaped into was underwater. At the corner of his sight, he could see the radiant sunlight and the beautifully swaying water surface.

But, he didn’t even have the slightest bit of composure to enjoy such sight. He was unable to breath sufficiently, on top of that he spewed out a lot of oxygen because he suddenly coughed. His consciousness was already in red alert state. It wouldn’t be funny if he died by drowning right after getting summoned.

He desperately struggled while trying to surface, but his sight was gradually locked into darkness. It felt like his consciousness was falling away.

While it was already getting hard to even think, the water surface suddenly shook.

His dazed mind was barely able to comprehend that a person leaped into the water.

The shining sunlight illuminated that person.

Long white hair. Chocolate colored skin. Sharp gaze that conveyed a strong will, jade colored eyes. Her approximate age might be a bit older than him. She had extraordinary figure that was wrapped with clothes with a lot of exposure, her body was painted with mysterious pattern.

(Beautiful……)

Kouki who was unable to even moved his limbs anymore could only think of such thing in amazement.

Right after that, that woman grasped Kouki and swam up to the surface with a staggering force. It took only a moment until they popped out of the water.

「Gahah, gehoh, –」

「Are you okay? Get a hold of yourself! Come on, spit the water out!」

Voluptuous breast pressed on Kouki while he was being carried. The woman who saved Kouki had a masculine way of talking in contrast with her appearance.

「Gefuh, tha, thank you. Yo, you saved me……」

「Don’t mind it. I never thought that you would appear at the bottom of the spring. I was a bit late. Sorry.」

The white haired and brown skinned woman’s sharp gaze softened a bit hearing Kouki who was thanking her even while coughing painfully.

From her words, it seemed that she grasped that Kouki would appear in this place, but it could be inferred that it

was outside her expectation for Kouki to appear underwater.

To speak further, the voice that spoke from the sky before he was summoned sounded completely different than this woman’s voice.

(There is no doubt that I’m summoned but……. It looks like this person isn’t the summoner.)

While Kouki who recovered her thinking ability was thinking of such thing, he could hear countless splashing sound of people entering the water.

When he looked there, there were multiple men and women raising their voices saying things like 「Your majesty, you are safe!」, or 「Please leave something like this to us!」, or 「Suddenly jumping in like that, what are you thinking!」.

「There wasn’t even a second to waste. It couldn’t be helped. Rather than that, let’s quickly pull him up.」

「Aah, geez-. It will be a scolding when we go home! Now, hero-sama. Please hold on to me.」

It appeared the woman who saved Kouki was called her majesty——in other words, it seemed she was a queen of a country somewhere. While feeling obliged that the queen personally jumped in to rescue him, a man past middle-aged with great physique and a look like a seasoned warrior grasped Kouki and lent him a hand.

When Kouki looked around, everyone’s skin was similarly brown colored. Although, it was only the queen who was white haired.

Kouki who was pulled up to the bank reflexively sat down. The queen who stood imposingly in front of such Kouki

opened her mouth with a powerful gaze directed at Kouki without looking bothered at all with the water dripping down her body.

「Now then, this had became an inconceivable first meeting, but for the time being, I'll introduce myself. I am Moana. Moana de Shelt Synclea. I am the one who is currently like the queen or whatever of Synclea kingdom.」

The people who seemed to be her subordinates made an expression that looked like they were feeling headache thinking 「What's with that 'like the queen or whatever'」.

Moana completely ignored them and her expression turned a bit hesitating.

「You might think that my way of talking is pompous, but this is what I'm used to due to my position. If it bother you, then I will try to talk as courteously as possible……」

「Ah, no, it's fine like that.」

Kouki immediately said that which caused tension to leave Moana's shoulders in relieve.

And then,

「I see. That saved me the trouble. Then once more, welcome to Synclea kingdom. O envoy of "the mother of all life" "the will of the great blessing" ——Foltina. We are imploring, so that your existence will become our salvation. Please treat us favorably.」

Saying that, she presented her hand slowly.

It was a feminine hand, but looking closer there were a lot of callus on her palm from the result of handling sword. Her

skin also had small scars here and there. She was someone who fought. Was it normal in this world for the queen to fight personally, or was her country placed in a situation where she was forced to do so……

Seeing how he was summoned, and these people were looking for help, surely the situation was a fairly troublesome one.

Well, putting that aside, for the time being he had to ask this one question no matter what.

「Is that god-like person, really alright?」

Surely that god wasn’t the last boss who enjoyed toying with human right? That was Kouki’s question,

「Nnnn??」

It was obvious but, that question only served to make the queen confused.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Kouki arc.

First thing first, thinking that perhaps there will be reader who thought ‘The queen’s way of talking is different from the queen who showed up for a bit before this!’, the

supplementary explanation is that this queen’s unadorned way of talking is like at the previous chapter after a fashion.

I’m not planning to continue Kouki arc for that long, but if it actually get long then sorry. I’ll apologize in advance.

Now then, now is Golden Week huh.

How will everyone of Narou people will spend it?

Shirakome whose heart is moving into a certain village for the lonely people will surely get pursued with dealing with the piling up game.

If possible, I also wanted to upload a short story for Golden Week..

If nothing else, I pray so that everyone of Narou people will be able to enjoy Golden Week.

PS

I revised a few words at [The Obstinate Princess Lily] of the third world -> of the second world.

Thank you very much for pointing that out.

Arifureta Chapter 263

Golden Week Special After Story Yue's Diary①

AN: It's short, but if is okay for you readers, please use it to kill time.

——Month ○ Day x. Clear weather.

Tomorrow will be the first day of Golden Week. Everyone will go camping. I hear we are also going to have BBQ.

From what I heard, it seems that it's an event of grilling and eating meat outdoor.

……Just what in the world is interesting about that, I don't really understand. Even though we had been doing that all the time in our journey.

But, everyone is looking forward just to go have an outing. Perhaps, there is also a way to enjoy it that I don't know.

Very well. Oh camp, oh BBQ. Bring it on. I'll determine your caliber!

By the way, the members for the BBQ event will be Nagumo family, in addition there are Kaori, Shizuku, and Aiko (Lily has work and cannot come no matter what), other than them Kaori and Shizuku's family will also join us it seems.

I see. They are telling me, show us the power of the first wife if you can.

Very well. Oh family, oh Kaori. Bring it on. I'll teach all of you, the caliber of the first wife!

Now then, it looks like tomorrow will be really busy. This is a rare chance, so let's write the diary in real time, I'm thinking of developing a magic for automatic recording mode, thoughtography style.

……

I did it. As expected, me. But, it's thoughtography type, so it will be mostly like a live coverage. I'm uneasy whether the paper space will be enough, so I'm thinking of going with a brand new diary for the camp. Also, while the magic is in operation, there is the risk of things that I'm not planning to write or things that I thought about strongly will also get written. This point required special attention. Hajime, I love you.

Putting that aside, the weather is really warm recently, so Hajime's is gradually dressing lightly, I love it.

I am Yue. A woman who won't steal glances at what I want to see, but stare fixedly at it without any shame!

Hajime, sniff sniff. Rub rub. Kufuu~~

——Month ○ Day x. Clear weather

……Oops. I noticed it when I reread back, but my emotion leaked out a bit. I have to be careful, if not it will be disastrous for Hajime inside the diary.

Now then, today the weather for camping is clear. The temperature is also warm, a day that is really pleasant to spend it outside. Although, even if it actually rained, the weather can be manipulated to be clear so there will be no problem.

Any rain cloud that dare to hinder Hajime's plan, will be obliterated without any trace……fufu

Nnn. Just now, it feels like something leaked out. Just in case, I made it a secret that I'm writing diary, so I won't take it out in the middle of this camping. If something strange get written, I'll have to erase it when we go home……

Letters that is written by thoughtographys, can it be erased so easily?

……Anyway, let's think about it later.

The campsite was inside a forest three hours away from home by using car. It is in the foot of a mountain range, and there is also a river flowing nearby. So to speak it is a little-known good place, it looks like that it's not equipped with facilities as a camp site. However there is a suitable open space for camping inside the forest, something like that.

I believe the place isn't developed strangely, but a good place where one can feel the nature.

Are those the locals? Several families, and group of young men and women can be seen here and there, regardless of the Golden Week, this place doesn't feel crowded. That too make it easier to spend time here.

Though it seems Hajime found this place using the compass……

Good job, Hajime. I love you.

A while after we arrived in the campsite. The family of Kaori and Shizuku also arrived. The plan is to gather on-site, so it was a bit of worry that perhaps they might get lost, but it looks like they arrived safely without any incident.

The car of Shizuku's family is a black colored wagon type.

……The car looks like what a secret service agency in a movie or book would use as on-site base.

The car of Kaori's family is a normal car, so it looks all the more bizarre.

Shizuku and Kaori got down from their car. Both of them have a nice smile.

……Let's prank Kaori later. I'm going to distort that smile for sure. Kaori who is in indignation is funny after——cough-cough-. It feels like something leak out…….

Nnn.

Kaori's papa-san is looking at Hajime with an expression brimming with dreadful animosity. It feels like the caption [FIGHT] is going to appear anytime.

Oh? Hajime suddenly waved his hand. Is it a gesture toward Kaori's papa-san?

Oh? A small metallic rod stab the ground near Hajime's feet. If I remember correctly, that thing is called rod shuriken.

When I follow Hajime’s gaze, Shizuku’s papa-san and Ojii-san (TN: Grandpa) were there. Right now, it’s only for a brief glance, but something is hidden inside their sleeve.

Ah, Shizuku’s papa-san and Ojii-san were hit by Shizuku.

Ah, Kaori’s papa get frightened by Kaori’s hannya and get into dogeza.

Ah, Otou-sama (TN: written as father-in-law) is burning with rivalry for some reason and try to hug Hajime.

Ah, he get joint locked.

Fumu. I think it’s really very well that the event started livelily.

Now then, this is not our first meeting, but for now, let’s go there to teach both families that the first power is 530,000. It will be the end if the world of the wive~s get underestimated. Teyandeiberaboumee! (TN: The last gibberish, it seems to be a line that sometimes is used by old man that were born and raised in Edo. It roughly means, ‘what the hell are you saying huh, this damned stupid bastard’)

Everyone carried the camping tool and secured a spot. The gazes of the youngster group that seems to be the local keep glancing this way, but this happen every time so it’s not worth worrying about. If they come for picking up girl then they only need to get washed into the river.

There is also a heated gaze coming from the family group. It’s a boy about the same age with Myuu. It seems he is immensely interested with Myuu.

Oo, Myuu turned a bright smile and waved her hand to him. The boy became bright red! The boy waved back! However, at that time Myuu’s gaze already moved toward Hajime papa! The boy fell on all four!

To toy with the opposite sex at this age……

Myuu, what a terrifying child-!

Putting that aside, Hajime papa’s hand is wandering around his thigh. Today Donner-san has day off you know. Also, take off your gaze from the boy……

While the boy’s mental state is in danger, the simple tents are set up, and the preparation for the meal is also being done.

The mama~s and papa~s are resting, also for thanks for their everyday work. It’s BBQ, so we only need to cut vegetable though……

Because of Hajime and Otou-sama’s insistence, it seems that it’s no good unless there is curry while camping.

And then, it seems I’m not allowed to join in with the cooking duty……

Why? I cannot understand it. Just what had I done to deserve this?

Eh? It’s no good because I’m trying to add originalityy~? Especially because what I’ll put into pot cooking when they take off their eyes from me?

……I wish to profess that it’s an extremely regrettable accusation.

Indeed, when we were in our journey I wasn’t really well-acquainted with cooking, and perhaps there were a really fe~~~w times that I ruined Shia’s cooking.

But, that is in the past. I am Yue. A woman that is always progressing. Right now, even cooking is something that I can normally――

Eh? Indeed there is no problem with my normal cooking? But, I’m not allowed to do pot cooking? Absolutely? Try to put my hand on my chest and think back of what I have done?

……Certainly, when I’m in front of a pot, there is itchiness in my soul. I can hear the voice of the ingredients appealing 「Now, throw me in!」 to me.

However! However still! That’s――

Ah, yes, I’m sorry. It’s nothing at all desu……

That’s why, Shia. Stop looking at me with that eyes where the light is turned off. Even though you are sweetly making a cute smile, please stop shrinking your eyeballs, I beg you!

……Fumu.

If I’m not allowed to participate in the cooking duty, what should I do then……

The mama~s has quickly entered drinking bout time, but joining in that group is……

As expected, it feels awkward to enter among the papa~s who are all consoling Kaori’s papa who is crying for some reason…….

When I focused my hearing, I can hear words 「My daughter you see, my daughter, recently, she is really cold to me……」 that sounded as though they are wringed out from his throat. Shizuku’s papa and Shizuku’s ojii-chan are nodding ‘un un’ in agreement. Otou-sama said 「Well, don’t put it into mind!」 while his hand is tapping Kaori’s papa shoulder, comforting him with absurdly light feeling――

Ah, Kaori’s papa threw himself at Otou-sama. Ah, Otou-sama dodged. Furthermore he nonchalantly makes Shizuku’s papa and ojii-chan into his shield. A game of tag that circled around those two is starting.

The look like children…….

Hm~m, as I thought, let’s stop trying to enter the circle of the parent~s.

I’m bored.

What to do.

Oh, digital camera is discovered inside the luggage.

……

Fumu. How about taking the photographer role? Should I print it and stick the picture in the diary, making a picture diary?

……

Not bad.

From today I am paparazzi Yue.

Speaking about that, before I knows the figure of Hajime and Shia and Myuu has vanished. Where are they going?

Their presence is……

Shia is in the nearby river. Hajime is in the mountain. Myuu is at the upper stream?

When I thought that they are together, it turns out all of them are all over the place. They really are free spirited.

Anyway, let’s follow Myuu for now. She is carrying the minimum equipment, so nothing should happen to her in the mountain and river around here, but as expected it’s worrying that she is alone.

……

……

……

Myuu discovered. But, for some reason she looks strange. She is heading to upper stream following along the river, but sometimes she will tilt her head, and focused her hearing.

What could she be doing? Curious. Let’s try following her a bit without calling at her.

……Nevertheless, the more we head to the upper stream, the more the ground became unstable, but the pace of Myuu who keep advancing is quite something.

Even though we are already in a place that can accurately be called as a mountain stream, Myuu is hopping ‘pyon pyon’ from rock to rock in a speed as though she is running on a flat ground.

It looks like she is activating the artifact for physical ability reinforcement but……

Even so, her body balance and choice of footsteps are quite something.

I have to praise her when she get back if it’s like this.

Anyway, a photo of Myuu’s lovely figure! One more time!

……

……

Nn~~. Perhaps I’ll have to take her back soon. We have come until really far at the upper stream, the surrounding is also filled with trees growing in abundance.

I think Myuu is advancing with clear destination in mind somehow but……. Really, why is she going upper stream until this far?

……Oh? Myuu’s legs stopped.

She is looking around restlessly. She crouched on the river bank, her head tilt……

……

Something came out!? From inside the river, something that looks like a child covered with scales all over its body came out!?

What is that!? UMA!?

Perhaps Myuu is in a pinch. Here I'll use Divine Existence and take Myuu――

Nn? It looks like they have amicable atmosphere. Ah, they handshake. The UMA waved and vanished into the river.

Myuu returned back in a good mood.

For some reason, it feels like I have seen something that must not be seen. Hajime once grumbled 「Even though Myuu is really strange but she is easy to get liked, so I've got to pay attention at her」, now I see, perhaps he referred to something like this.

Anyway, I hid and let Myuu walked past, and then I follow behind her. It seems she is already going back to the campsite.

I feel a bit relieved. If she is going deeper inside the mountain and try to deepen her relationship further with strange living thing, as expected, that's something I cannot just only observe from afar.

Nevertheless, just what in the world 「The Suiko Suu-chan」 means…… (TN: The kanji is 「」. Google it if you want to see the picture. It's some kind of youkai in Japan and China.)

When I return to the campsite, Shia is shooting fish at the nearby river. Not fishing. Shooting.

Myuu happily dashed toward there. It seems Shia is flicking a fishing hook that is at the bigger side using her fingers, shot through fish inside the river, and then she pulled at the string that is tied to the hook and catchs the fish. It's to top up the BBQ ingredient.

There is a lot of fishes with split open head entered into the bucket beside Shia. Blood is scattered at the surrounding.

A father and a boy are fishing at the lower stream, but for some reason they are trembling all over with pale face. It's as though they had witnessed a gruesome scene. Perhaps because they are at the lower stream, a lot of red liquid is flowing their way.

Myuu is receiving Shia's teaching while learning fishing hook shot too, so the scene is turning even more gruesome. It looks like the father and boy there didn't really catch anything.

……Later, let's share some of the catch with them.

For now, the picture of Shia and Myuu happily shooting at the red scene 'kaclick'!

Nn. The picture is terribly cute.

When I return to the tent, Otou-sama and Kaori's papa are wailing while hugging each other. Seeing that, Shizuku's papa also looked moved and shed out tears, Shizuku's ojii-chan is nodding deeply feeling greatly impressed.

Just what in the world happened…….

As for the mama~s……they are completely drunk. Kaori's mama is drinking straight from a 1.8 liter bottle of Japanese sake, Shizuku's mam is also drinking from what looks like a whisky bottle. There is a mountain of beer can in front of Okaa-sama (TN: Read as mother-in-law)……

Nevertheless, Okaa-sama……. She really is a person that suited to be a boss lady. Her figure sitting with one knee drawn up and a cigarette held at the corner of her mouth is

wild! Cool! Next time, let’s try copying that. (TN: I don’t really get the references in this paragraph, can someone check it and tell me later?)

Nn? Some kind of commotion is……

People who seem to be university students are looking here from afar while being noisy about something.

When I follow their gaze, I see……

Kaori is throwing vegetables. Shizuku is cutting them midair. And then, Remia catch them on a plate. By the way, one of Remia’s hands is stirring the curry pot slo~wly slo~wly while doing that.

Why are they doing that kind of circus act? I don’t get it but they are looking like they are having fun. That’s what is most important. Click.

Surely, most likely, seeing how the men who seemed to approach to call at them are shrinking back, I think this is the method those three thought up to prepare for BBQ while also checking those men in place.

Beside the tent, Tio and Aiko are making some kind of rustling sound.

I see, it looks like they are setting up hammock.

It’s a hammock type that is tied at trees, so Tio who is able to ascertain that it has been tied firmly is wiping her sweat with a really nice smile.

Oh, looks like she is quickly trying it out.

Aiko is holding the hammock in place while Tio is getting on it……

……The rope snapped because it cannot support the weight.

Tio is in daze while keep sitting on the ground. Click.

Aiko is getting all flustered while saying a follow up like ‘Perhaps the rope is too old!’ but…… At the corner of Tio’s eyes, tears are……. No matter how anyone look at her, the cause of those tears isn’t because of the pain from her butt hitting ground, looks like she received damage from the fact that the rope cannot endure her weight.

She sat on the floor hugging her knees and buried her face onto there.

Aiko is desperately consoling her while running her gaze restlessly around, then she dashed in a rush perhaps from finding something.

Looks like her aim is the vine twining around a tree. She take it into her hand, confirm at the surrounding with restless gaze and……ooh, the vine is lengthening slitheringly. It looks like she lengthen the vine with the power of farmer master and make it grow thicker.

With that she reinforced the hammock and tied it up on the tree again. Furthermore, she also apply her magic on the tree to fuse the vine on it and increase the toughness thoroughly.

Aiko help Tio who is still shutting herself inside her shell to stand up while talking at her gently. The dejected Tio nodded a bit.

She is gee~ntly, gee~ntly getting up on the hammock. For some reason, even my heart is also beating fast watching it.

Do, do your best-, Tio! You can get on it if it’s you! Surely you can get on the hammock!

Ah, Tio’s hand slipped! She got on the hammock face down!

The vine……

Ooh, it doesn’t snap! It’s perfectly supporting Tio! Aiko’s face is amazingly smug!

But……

Tio keep laying face down. She is in an amazing posture like a shrimp with her body arching backward and both her hands held up. She wriggle and squirm in the attempt to face up somehow, but it doesn’t go well……

Ah, she give up. She is unmoving on the hammock while still face down. She is really like a shrimp but, doesn’t that hurt?

Aiko’s smug face turned into a really complicated expression. When Aiko try to gently push, the backward shrimp Tio wavered *pura~n pura~n* like in a swing.

……Yep. Let’s quietly leave.

Nn? Hajime’s presence is nearing. I don’t know why he entered into the mountain, but it looks like he safely finished his objective.

But, what is this I wonder? There is one more presence beside Hajime.

When I stared fixedly at the direction where Hajime is going to come out from……

Yes, the campsite panicked when they saw Hajime appeared with “that”.

Beside Hajime, there is a one-eyed bear-san that looks really grim with the three straight scars on one of its eyes. It really look like the lord of the forest.

According to Hajime, he explained that 「I encountered the bear inside the forest. It impertinently attacked me so I finished him with a punch on the stomach and it got emotionally attached to me」.

I see, I completely don’t get it. It seems, Hajime’s reason is that even though there is no danger at the surrounding, just in case he checked inside the mountain but……

The daughter interacted with UMA, the father made a bear that looked really like the lord of the forest into his underling.

These parent and child are really similar.

The one-eyed bear-san laid down on the ground face up, exposing its stomach as though wanting to say ‘I’m not dangerous at all!’. Myuu who returned from the fish shooting makes sparkly eyes and dive on its stomach.

The common people other than us who see that are screaming even louder.

The papa~s are in admiration, while the mama~s are cackling.

While Myuu is riding on its stomach, for some reason sparks scattered between the one-eyed bear-san and Shia.

The eyes of Shizuku and Kaori brightened at the fluffiness, while Remia is stirring the curry ro~und and ro~und while going 「My my, ufufu」.

Aiko is getting all flustered, and Tio keep being a backward shrimp.

Hajime is saying 「Let's start the BBQ soon yeah」 while glancing at the bear-san for some reason.

Bear-san shook *Twitch-!!*.

……Chaos visited the campsite.

Fumu. I'll deal with the other people who come here for camping, but for now,

Click.

I get the feeling that the first memory of the Golden Week will become something really lovely.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Yue's diary. Actually I wrote one for the extra story of the fifth volume.

I'm thinking to match it with the school arc and try to insert it sometimes for idle story.

Or rather, Myuu is again with something strange……

Just what in the world Shirakome is planning to do with Myuu? Even I myself don’t know anymore.

The characters are moving as they pleased, that is really something that happen huh.

I wonder, should I just mix up legend, myth, urban legend into one big mess already to make something like「Behind Myuu, it become a swarm of Hyakki Yakkou nano!」.....

Arifureta Chapter 264

Arifureta After II　A World That is Relatively Finished

It was a place of large spring, surrounded by forest of trees. There was no sound that could be heard other than the rustling leaves.

It was Kouki’s question that brought the silence. In front of Kouki who was crawling on all fours at the edge of the spring while coughing, there was queen Moana making a bewildered expression.

Suddenly the sanity of the existence that they greatly respected and loved was being questioned. The question was an extremely impolite one that normally it wouldn’t be strange if they snapped toward the one who asked.

In fact, the atmosphere of the people standing around the queen——six men and women with warrior appearance, and two man and woman who didn’t seem like warrior but looked used with fighting. And one woman whose clothing was different with the others, her attire somehow gave the impression that she was a lady attendant——was turning into one that couldn’t be said to be pleasant.

Although, not even one of them tried to reproach Kouki’s impolite statement, they didn’t look like “fanatic”. Was that because of healthy religious faith, or else was it because

they were holding back because they were in front of the queen, the reason wasn’t clear.

Kouki felt the atmosphere of the surrounding and saw the bewildered expression of Moana whose hand was still presented at him, and realized that his question was crude before he apologized in panic.

「I, I’m sorry, saying that so suddenly. I am a bit traumatized with an existence that is like a god……」

「Tra, trauma of god? Or rather, you had met that kind of existence before?」

The words of Kouki who was once involved with a supernatural existence that was called god caused Moana and her people to make expression of being struck with admiration. Was the young man before their eyes an existence so great that was also chosen by another great existence different from Foltina, they wondered.

But, Kouki’s next words turned them speechless.

「……Yes. Though, it was when he was in a state of possessing an acquaintance. He thought nothing of human except as his pawn in a game, caused many wars, brainwashed people, and when he got bored he sent in his apostles to massacre mankind, that kind of god.」

「That’s, not god. That’s absolutely an evil something else right?」

A magnificent tsukkomi from the queen. Her way of talking changed. By any chance, that might be her unadorned way of talking.

Kouki smiled wryly while saying 「Perhaps」 and he took Moana's hand.

「Eerr. Let's see, Foltina, sama? I think you said that person was the one who summoned me but, I completely don't know anything……. But first thing first, I only wish to confirm ahead just one thing, can I return to my original place?」

From the hand of Kouki who returned a firm grip in his handshake, Moana felt the strength of someone who was similarly a fighter like her and she coughed once. She recovered her disordered mind and way of talking.

After that she lowered her eyebrows looking a bit troubled and,

「I'm sorry. But honestly, we too are currently also baffled. We have never heard the voice of Foltina-sama that clearly before, and someone like you who visit from a different world, it is like a fairy tale.」

「In other words……」

「Yes. It's just as you though, if the "original place" that you said us really in another world, then we don't have the method of how to return you back there. Or rather, you really came from another world huh?」

「Eerr, I think that's the case but……」

As a test, Kouki tried mentioning the name of the kingdom and empire but Moana and others gave no reaction. Perhaps this place was an unknown continent that was also in Tortus……such possibility couldn't be denied, but seeing that Moana and her people had no power of summoning, in the end he had no other method except making contact with

this Foltina-sama, or searching for a method to go home by his own strength.

(Or perhaps, will that guy come here to pick me up? It feels like he might show up all of sudden with troublesome face after Shizuku and others begged him.)

Thinking of “that guy” that floated at the back of his mind——Hajime, caused Kouki to smiled wryly. If it was him who possessed both the method to cross over worlds and the method to find Kouki, then it wasn’t something impossible.

Moana and her people made a worried expression seeing Kouki’s state, they wondered whether he was cornered from feeling shock into a condition where he could do nothing but laughing.

Seeing the good character of Moana and others that somehow could be seen through from them, Kouki felt a bit relieved while smiling to show that he was fine.

「I’m sorry. Come to think of it, I haven’t introduced myself. I am called Amanogawa Kouki. ——Just a mere swordsman.」

「Swordsman……」

Moana and her people made a bewildered expression once again, wondering why he didn’t introduce himself as the hero. But, before that bewilderment could turn into spoken out question, Kouki stood up and continued his words.

「If this is another world, a place that doesn’t know about my former world, and I cannot go home, then that can’t be helped. Can I ask you to please teach me about various things. Including the reason why I was called here, your majesty the queen?」

「Ye, yeah. That’s right. It looks like you were really suddenly tossed into the spring, we will give you explanation as much as we can. Also, you also don’t need to worry about any basic necessities. Even like this, I am a queen after all. There won’t be a problem with just providing for a single guest.」

Moana pulled herself together and said that while winking at him with playfulness. The atmosphere of that place softened slightly and the people who seemed to be her attendant also smiled slightly.

「And also, I don’t mind if you call me Moana. You are a guest that Foltina-sama entrusted to us. It should be fine if you think of your status as higher than me. That’s why, it’s fine to not humble yourself like that.」

「Aa~, perhaps so. But there is also the matter about me being outsider so……, please let me call you Moana-sama. As for my language……for the moment, please let me keep using polite language as it is.」

「Mu, I see……」

Moana’s shoulders dropped in a bit of disappointment. The expression of Moana’s followers looked like they had headache right after Moana said to him to not act humbly, but their expression turned grateful when they heard Kouki’s reply. Seeing that, Kouki felt relieved that his response wasn’t mistaken.

It appeared that this queen had a really unconventional character, as could be seen from how she was so used to battlefield to the degree that she had scars on her body.

「Then, I’ll have you let me call you Kouki. That will be fine I believe?」

□Yes, of course.□

□Right. Well then Kouki. There is a bit of problem with the safety of this area, if possible I want us to be on the move quickly. If we hurry we should be able to arrive at the capital before the sun set.□

Kouki nodded showing that he had no objection, to which Moana also nodded back □Great□. And then, she moved her gaze at the woman in attendant attire beside her.

□Anneal. We cannot keep being like a drowned rat like this all the time. Please.□

□Yes, your majesty. ……I pray. For the grace of the sun and the wind——”Wind of Embrace”□

The woman who was called Anneal looked to be in her middle twenty from her appearance, a woman with slightly calm atmosphere. Her eyes were droopy, and when she replied her voice was also soft, which spurred such impression even more.

Different from the other followers, she wasn’t carrying anything that looked like weapon, in exchange she was carrying a large satchel on her back and several bags that looked like shawl.

Whether it was Moana or her followers, they all were basically wearing pants and protectors above their clothes with white undertone. But it was only Anneal who was wearing something like an apron in the place of protector. That was the reason Kouki got the impression that she was like a lady attendant.

When that Anneal whispered in a faint voice, right away a part of the pattern on the back of her right hand shined

faintly.

「This is……」

Kouki looked down on his body with a slight surprise. His clothes was swaying from receiving gentle warm wind. From the sensation of wind his skin felt, it seemed a warm wind was whirling with his body as the center. The same thing also happened with Moana and the followers that entered the water just now.

「Fumu, it seems it will also be necessary to explain about blessing art too. She is praying, or perhaps offering her wish to the power that dwell in nature――the blessing power, to have that power shared with her.」

Power was dwelling in all living things and the whole nature. Moana and others called that power as blessing power, and the technique that made use of that power by praying or vowing was named as blessing art.

The painting on their body was something that represented their prayer and vow as letters which made it possible to shorten the invocation procedure.

As for Fortina, she was thought to be the aggregation of those powers of nature, an existence that possessed will. Sometimes, there appeared people who felt “the will of the great blessing” like in the fairy tale, or heard her words.

By no means that existence could be confirmed clearly, people vaguely thought that such existence existed.

In the teaching since the ancient time, the sense of values of living while feeling gratitude to not just Foltina, but to the whole nature was planted into the people.

Therefore, rather than calling the people’s feeling toward Foltina as religious faith, it should instead be called as ecological sense of values to treasure the nature.

Kouki listened to such story during the time of waiting until their clothes dried up.

(I see. Rather than faith, they are offering respect……or perhaps gratitude, something like that……)

Like that, his conviction that Moana and her people weren’t fanatic was getting stronger inside Kouki. Although, Kouki still hadn’t let go of his wariness toward Moana and others. His polite language and title of honor toward Moana displayed that.

When their clothes dried up completely, the explanation about blessing was also mostly over and Moana raised her voice.

「Now then, let’s depart. We will keep talking about what we should teach to Kouki in the way. Spenser, I’ll leave the vanguard post to you.」

「Understood, your majesty.」

The aging warrior that pulled up Kouki from the spring before this seemed to be called Spenser. He was the eldest among all the people here, his short black hair without any grey hair gave a youthful impression. Although, his body that was obviously trained even through his equipments and the glimpses of sharpness of a fighter deep in his eyes gave a weight that this person couldn’t be underestimated by any means.

When Kouki asked, perhaps it should be said that it was just as expected, it seemed that other than Anneal, all of the

people here should be called as the most elite warriors of Synclea kingdom, they were the royal guard of Moana. And Spenser was the leader of the royal guard force.

Following Spenser’s lead, they advanced through the thick forest. The temperature and humidity also didn’t feel unpleasant, the pillars of light created from the light through the gaps between leaves were beautiful. Kouki narrowed his eyes pleasantly thinking ‘What a verdant world’.

Kouki talked toward Moana while they were advancing with the soldiers surrounding Kouki and Moana at the center.

「The nature is really abundant here. The spring before this too, even though it was quite deep, but the water ws really clear until the bottom. This is also thanks to Foltina-sama, no, to the blessing power that filled this world, right.」

「……That’s correct.」

For some reason Moana’s expression turned complicated. Inside his heart Kouki felt uneasy thinking if he had said something wrong while his gaze was looking around. There, he saw everyone including Spenser and Anneal were also making a complicated expression.

Kouki wracked his mind even harder to spot what he had said wrong. Moana showed a wry smile to such Kouki.

「No, forgive me. Kouki hasn’t said anything wrong. It’s just, I was thinking to explain it after this but……place abundant with nature like this, only numbered a little.」

「Eh?」

Kouki was perplexed. Moana’s bitter smile deepened while she explained further.

"Outside this forest, there is a desert continuing as far as the eye can see. This place is special."

"De, desert?"

"Yes. the blessing power is being stolen from the world. Because of those <Dark Being>."

<Dark Being>——According to Moana, they were a grotesque race that emitted miasma, a power that neutralized the blessing power. They must be something like monster if a comparison was made with Tortus. It seemed they were called Dark Being because they were constantly enveloped in miasma that looked like black mist.

They consumed <Blessing Power> just by existing, stealing life force from all living things. They were truly the natural enemy of not just mankind, but also nature.

"We don't understand what are they, and from where they came. But, let's see, if we are asked 'what is your history?', then we ought to answer "fighting the Dark Being". That is just how long we have been fighting them since far in the past."

It felt like inside the eyes of Moana who was having a distant look, there was deep and heavy something that couldn't be described with words dwelling inside. Kouki only stayed silent without saying anything, merely listening to what she said.

"A lot of nature lost blessing power. Because those Dark Being are making blessing power their food, they are acting prudently from exploiting the nature compared to in the past. Because if blessing power disappear from the whole world, they too won't be able to keep living. However, they

have a method so that they have no problem even while refraining from exploiting nature.

They were raising human like livestock. The blessing power a single human possessed was in a different league compared to a single tree or a single animal. Therefore, the <Dark Being> liked to eat human.

Thanks to blessing power, the growth of plants and animals in this world was quick, and strong. But, even so the Dark Being's appetite was above that. Also, a lot of blessing power was consumed, or perhaps eaten in battle. If blessing power was lost to the degree that there was no prospect of recovery, nothing would remain in that place. The place would only become a world of sand.

The supply and demand weren't balanced, regulating their eating so that the blessing power wouldn't dry up meant that they would always be unable to obtain the feeling of full stomach.

That was why, so that it wouldn't be a problem even if the animal and plants were eaten until they ran out, the Dark Being raised human as livestock.

This is a battle where our survival and dignity are on the line. Our great ancestors created means to oppose the miasma, diligently studied the blessing art, and like that life continue until it come to our time. ……But, perhaps that too has reached the limit already.

Moana's vast gaze caught Kouki. The thing dwelling inside those eyes that reflected himself——Kouki gulped when he saw that.

This world, the great mother nature, Foltina-sama is——that's why, they summoned you correct?

Things like hope, didn’t exist there. There was also no expectation. What was inside those eyes, was mortification, and then disappointment toward herself.

The personification of blessing power that should even be called as the will of the world——Foltina had made her judgment. That it was impossible to resist with just the human of this world. That was how much this world had been cornered.

The fact was, there was no other country around Synclea kingdom. There were only feudal lords in each territory, where they all answered to the kingdom. Countries that once called themselves as empire, federation, holy country, and so on, all of them were perished. Across several mountains, or at the continent across the sea, there were other countries that were still resisting, but it was unclear how long they would be able to keep at it.

‘All of you is no good already’, it couldn’t be helped even if the world thought so about them……

Even though there wasn’t any shadow on Moana’s expression, but those eyes told of Moana’s feeling more eloquently than anything else. In Kouki’s eyes, it looked as though the queen before his eyes was smiling while crying.

——It’s fine. I swear I’ll save this world!

If, he said such thing without thinking of anything, surely Moana with her personality would laugh livelily while also saying 「That’s really reliable!」 to him. While the inside of her eyes was looking like she was going to cry just like now, while feeling disappointed at herself, while getting hurt.

Kouki was glad that he didn’t say anything like that. But, however, then, what should he say instead?

It’s still not over yet? There should be something that you can do?

Foltina-sama isn’t disappointed or anything at you?

It’s just a coincidence that I was summoned you know?

He didn’t understand.

Kouki didn’t understand, what was the correct thing to say.

Kouki couldn’t bear to look at Moana’s eyes by more than this and he averted his gaze. Moana too also moved her gaze to the front as though there was nothing and she was going to continue her story about the <Dark Being>.

But, at that moment Kouki lifted his face in surprise and he stopped walking.

「Hm? Kouki, what’s the matter? Is your condition――」

「……Err, there are a lot of presences that way. They are heading this way with really fast speed but, what is the possibility that they are your comrades?」

「-. Everyone, prepare to fight! At nine o’clock!」

Moana ignored Kouki’s question and immediately raised her voice. Everyone, without a single exception and without even a moment of delay rearranged their formation to face toward the indicated direction. There was no hesitation and also no one asking for confirmation.

That movement that was without the slightest disarray was just like the group behavior that birds showed. Moana’s instruction was also extremely fast, but even more than that,

the proficiency of the most elite royal guard unit was also enough of a show.

「Kouki! Do you know their number and distance?」

「-, Yes! Their number is……16. Their distance is 80 meter――ten seconds until the contact! I believe they are large four-legged animals!」

For a moment Kouki thought whether they would understand when he spoke about the distance using the unit of meter, and so he restated it as the time until the contact with enemy.

Moana’s eyes opened wide. Based from the information that Kouki brought to her, she had an idea of the existence that they could possibly encountered in this area.

But, what she was surprised about wasn’t because that existence was approaching. She was shocked at the width of Kouki’s detection range based that she deduced from that existence’s moving speed and the time until the contact with enemy that Kouki estimated.

Although, her surprise only lasted for an instant.

「You all hear that! Assume it’s the black wolf species! They will come to tear down our formation in their first attack! Neisan, Lilin, take the wind out of their sail!」

「「Understood」」

Spenser and others, the six soldiers unsheathed their sword. Their swords were single-edged sword with large curvature that looked like shamshir. The width of the sword was wide, and if seeing just from there then they could be categorized as large sword.

The man around his thirty who was called Neisan, and the woman her late teen who was called as Lilin, the two of them held their hands together in prayer behind the six soldiers. They must be art user that specialized as rear guard. Each time the prayer of the two was released to the world, a part of the patterns visible on their cheeks and nape was shining.

The monster of this unknown world finally came. Kouki was nervous and getting cold sweat while also drawing out the holy sword that was dangling from his waist. The holy sword that shined from reflecting the sunlight filtering through trees was so magnificent that everyone spontaneously wanted to let out a sigh of admiration.

Unconsciously Moana and Anneal took a second look.

It was right after that,

Violent killing intent and black miasma rapidly approached from inside the forest like a squall.

「――<Protruding Earth>」

「――<Smashing Raging Wind>」

Prayers of the casters reached the hearing at the same time. The pattern painted on Neisan’s cheek until his nape shined, and at the front the earth protruded out matching the activation of that hieroglyph-like pattern. It was just like a wall of stone. The wall of stone had thickness of thirty centimeter, with width and height of two meter.

zushin-, the sound of something crashing on the stone wall rang out in succession.

Instantly, the pattern stretching from Lilin’s shoulder until her neck also shined, and blowing down wind that should be

called as super localized downburst struck at the other side of the stone wall.

gusha- Graphic sound and small voices of death agony leaked out from the other side.

Neisan’s voice echoed even more.

「I pray. Seeking for the crumbling earth, smash apart——<Scattering Pellet>」

The stone wall was pulverized by itself and then its fragments shot out to the front like a directed explosive.

Black smoke was bursting in one after another——no, those were black wolves clad in that black smoke with body length of a meter, several of them were turning a somersault altogether.

Seeing that, two of the vanguard soldiers rushed out.

「「I pray! This body is a sword——<Soul of Strife>!」」

That was a blessing art that raised physical ability. It wasn’t just a prayer, but a vow taken toward themselves, by doing that they were strengthened by the blessing power inside their body.

The first step of the two soldiers dented the ground. With that force they slaughtered with one slash two black wolves that only just stood up again somehow from the impact of the pebbles.

Aiming at the two soldiers that stuck out from the formation, more black wolves approached them, but Lilin’s wind obstructed those wolves. When the black wolves regained

their balance, the two soldiers retreated to the formation with brilliant speed.

The black wolves growled in irritation. As though to display their annoyance, they spewed out black smoke——miasma with even more thickness.

Right away, the surrounding vegetations wilted as though they lost their vitality, they dried up completely.

「Don’t break formation. Keep up what are you doing.」

「We understand.」

The <Dark Being> that was called as black wolf species was a species that specialized in cooperation and melee, their attack power itself was relatively low except a part of the species. The soldiers firmly held the formation and accurately finished off the attacking wolves, while the rearguard’s blessing art sniped from behind. That was the theory.

The captain of the royal guard Spenser narrowed his eyes like a hawk and when he spoke to make confirmation just in case, everyone else nodded firmly without any agitation.

(……Their appearance is monster just as I thought. Is the difference between the two is that one emitted miasma and the other isn’t? These wolves resembled the four-eyed wolf but, I don’t feel as much pressure from these wolves. I can also follow their movement enough. What’s left, whether they have skill like characteristic magic or not.)

Kouki calmly analyzed the battle strength of the black wolf species. Seeing that calm attitude, Moana secretly sighed in relief.

From the sensation of Kouki’s hand, his sensing ability just now, and the minimum accurate information they shared before this, she assumed that Kouki possessed a lot of battle experience, but even so she was worried that he would panic when the time came that they faced the＜Dark Being＞.

But, at that time, a huge shadow appeared slowly behind the black wolves surrounding them.

「Hou, so it’s as I thought that the information that the queen went out of her country is true……」

It felt like the air shook slightly. Clad in a miasma with thickness that was clearly different from the surrounding black wolves, it was a black wolf with a body built that must be more than two meter. That wolf was talking with a voice that sounded like it directly resonated inside the head.

「Eh?」

Kouki leaked out an astonished voice. His eyes opened wide.

On the other hand, Moana and her people didn’t look surprised, they were glaring at the large black wolf with an expression as though they had bitten something sour. It seemed that it was something normal that the black wolf possessed intelligence and speech.

Wasn’t the＜Dark Being＞ beasts without any reasoning? Wasn’t they the same like monster, a disaster that was mankind’s natural enemy……?

While Kouki was confused, Moana raised the corner of her mouth and replied back with a fearless expression.

「We also scattered fake information so that we wouldn’t get found out, and we planned to move quickly with only the

minimum number though. It seems your side have an excellent observer. But, are you seriously thinking you will be able to kill us just with this number?」

「I'll take my chance. There is no way I'll hand over the achievement of taking the head of the queen to the other pack. I'll present your head to the king, and lift my name, Niebla!」

UOOOOOOOOON A howl that was even accompanied by physical shockwave burst. The black wolf that introduced itself as Niebla gushed out dreadful black miasma along with undulation of power that transmitted electrifying sensation to the skin.

The vegetations at the surrounding that were instantly enveloped by black miasma withered up one after another.

Naturally, that miasma also enveloped Kouki and others. Moana immediately snuggled close to Kouki that their skin touched. It wasn't because she was scared. It was to protect Kouki's body.

If the miasma came in contact with the blessing power of all living things——that was to say their life, Moana and others wouldn't come out unscathed. But, their state didn't look like they were enduring anything like that.

「Everyone, pay attention to the remaining capacity of the miasma stone! Lilin, scatter away the miasma while concentrate attacking Niebla!」

「Roger!」

Moana's instruction was given. Moana's hand reached out toward her chest seemingly unconsciously. There was a colorless and transparent cylinder shaped gem about five,

six centimeter long attached there. That gem――miasma stone was faintly muddy black.

「Kouki, sorry. I should have handed this to you first. Put this miasma stone on your body. It will protect us from the miasma.」

It seemed miasma stone was something like how there was magic stone inside monster, it was an organ inside the body of <Dark Being>. After extracting the miasma inside it for about ten days, it was processed and put on the body, that miasma stone would absorb miasma within its capacity range, and by wearing it one could do activity even inside miasma for a period of time without getting affected.

Moana wrapped a miasma stone pendant around Kouki's wrist. At the same time the black wolves led by Niebla attacked simultaneously.

Niebla too, he couldn't join the cooperation attack because of Lilin holding him back and could only run around outside the formation in the attempt to perturb the soldiers.

Using that chance, Neisan's blessing art was decreasing the number of the black wolves by one, and then one more, it was only little by little, but it was continuing steadily.

「Chih. You are doing well with these number. As expected from the elite unit of the queen-」

Niebla whispered with a voice filled with bitterness.

Right after that, Niebla resolved himself and howled, he charged forward without stopping even while the wind blades that Lilin released carved his body and caused blood to spray out.

「He is coming! Push him back and then kill him!」

「Don’t underestimate me-」

Spenser gave his instruction, at the same time Niebla’s howl surged out. Right after that, miasma gushed out explosively from the ground below two warriors who were facing Niebla.

「Guah」

「Whaatt!?」

「Dario-. Fedri!」

The soldiers——Dario and Febri raised scream of shock and got blown away. Because Dario was considerable young even among the elite guard, unlike the veteran Fedri, he was unable to defend right away and crashed on the ground some distance away without even being able to apply ukemi.

The hole that was opened from the absent of the two was immediately closed by Spenser. He blocked the brutal claws of Niebla using his sword and he held his ground trying to halt the rush’s momentum.

「Guh, you bastard-」

「You’re in the way-」

Miasma converged beside Niebla and took shape. It was the shape of three huge claws.

Lilin fired <Smashing Raging Wind>, but Niebla who blew up miasma upward and neutralized it didn’t pause and unleashed the three claws in a horizontal swept toward Spenser.

The other soldiers had their hand full facing the black wolves. They couldn’t move right away.

「I won’t let you」

It was queen Moana who cut in. She slipped into Niebla’s bosom from really close to the ground as though she was crawling there, and struck her sword at his torso with a stunning slash.

Because Niebla immediately pulled back, the trajectory of the three large claws also shifted slightly. Spenser also wasted no time backing away and he got off with only his protector’s surface torn.

「Chih. As expected, ordinary method won’t work huh.」

Niebla spat that line out and plunged in the miasma claws. Spenser blocked that while Moana stepped toward Niebla.

But, Niebla seemed to also have predicted that movement.

「Dam――」

「First, I’ll eat starting from that irritating caster!」

Niebla leaped over Moana’s head and used the miasma claws he created himself as a foothold and leaped further, his sprang toward his objective――Lilin who was accurately slowing him down.

Lilin who was making prayer in order to back up Moana late to react just for a moment against Niebla’s irregular movement. She wasted no time twisting her body while trying to pray for defense, but whatever the case it was impossible to completely dodge the attack.

It would be most satisfactory if she lost only an arm――she resolved herself for that but the next moment,

「――<Light Severance>-」

A light barrier that shined radiantly manifested in front of Lilin’s eyes. Niebla’s claws only raised unpleasant scraping sound *gigigi* and stopped before the light barrier.

「Wha, what!?」

「What’s this!?」

Lilin’s shocked voice and Niebla’s surprised exclaim overlapped.

Niebla adroitly turned his body midair in a somersault and his legs stopped in front of the unknown technique. And then, he looked for the person that was the source of this with his atrocious beast eyes running at the surrounding.

It took a moment to specify the culprit.

「You, what the hell was that just now?」

gururu Niebla raised a growl that was brimming with killing intent and wariness while asking that.

The person his gaze was directed to was naturally

「Kouki!」

Moana’s shout that was filled with shock and gratitude because he protected her comrade resounded.

But, her gaze, and then Niebla’s beast eyes that were emitting killing intent were immediately narrowed in dubiousness.

Short and ragged breathing leaked out repeatedly could be heard.

Without any doubt, it was Kouki’s breathing. It wasn’t that he was adjusting his breathing. It even sounded like he was hyperventilating.

It was obvious even from Kouki’s expression that he wasn’t in a normal state.

Yes, it was something that even caused both enemy and ally to feel dubious——

Kouki’s expression was pale, as though he was fearing something.

The tip of the holy sword his hand was holding was shaking a bit, while being pointed on the ground.

It wasn’t——being pointed to Niebla, to the enemy in front of his gaze.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Arifureta Chapter 265

Arifureta After II　Why, Are You a Hero?

AN: The story ain’t progressing even after I wrote twelve thousand words……

He didn’t understand.

Was he an enemy? Was there really no middle ground to talk with each other?

He didn’t understand.

Were Moana’s words the truth? Was justice really on her side?

He didn’t understand.

Was it the correct thing to do, to cut down an existence with its own will while he was still not really understanding anything like this?

He didn’t understand.

They were the enemy seeing how they came attacking. Enemy should be defeated. That decision should be correct. ……Was it really?

He didn’t understand.

He should believe Moana and her people. ……Should he really?

He didn’t understand.

Was his judgment really righteous? Was what he believed in correct? Was there something that he failed to notice? Was he averting his eyes from what he should see? Was there anything that he misread? Was he really not thinking conveniently?

He didn’t understand. He didn’t understand. He didn’t understand.

「Hah, just a coward-」

Those thoughts rushed inside Kouki head for a moment in circles. A sneering voice that seemed to see through that caused Kouki to return to his senses in surprise.

When he noticed, brutal claws were approaching before his eyes.

「-!」

「Nuh」

Even when he was taken by surprise, the piled up experience and the greatest specs moved his body by itself. The holy sword that sprang up with a terrific speed shifted Niebla’s claws upward.

Seeing his attack averted so easily caused Niebla to leak out a voice of shock. He could never imagine that a trembling young man with pale expression and ragged breathing from

fear would be able to show a reaction this agile even in his wildest dream.

Although, Niebla’s agitation only lasted a moment. The instant he passed Kouki by, he swung the miasma claws. He used his own body as camouflage to make the miasma claws attacked from Kouki’s blind spot.

But, what resounded wasn’t a scream of death agony or the graphic sound of flesh getting torn apart.

shaaan A single clear sound of scraping metals that didn’t suit the battlefield. It was the sound of the miasma claws that were launched from the blind spot getting parried by Kouki’s holy sword. He matched the motion of the miasma claws and averted only their trajectory.

「What-」

Niebla’s agitation was clear to see this time. An impact ran through his stomach at that time.

「Gofuh!?」

An impact that made him thought whether his internal organs were being stirred blew away his consciousness for an instant. He crashed on the ground without even any awareness of up and down. When Niebla recovered his consciousness, his gaze ran toward Kouki.

He saw Kouki’s figure raising one foot there and he finally understood that he got kicked flying.

It was a terrifying technique. While his reflex toward the first attack was also amazing, but even more than that was his sensing ability toward attack from a blind spot, technique

that beautifully parried every attack instead of blocking, and then the perfect counterattack.

But, however,

(What's with that!? That man, just what's in the world is the deal with him!?)

Niebla felt more confused then scared. While this young man he was staring at possessed amazing technique like a veteran warrior, but he was still directing scared gaze toward Niebla even now.

Just a single kick pierced through Niebla's defense as though tearing through paper scrap and reduced him to a state where he still couldn't stand up right away. Just what in the world a man who could that was feeling scared at?

Or perhaps, he was merely acting? Niebla guessed, but seeing Kouki's state that was desperately stifling something inside himself, it didn't look like that at all.

That was why he didn't understand. Here was a warrior that might even surpassed Spenser, the royal guard of his sworn enemy the queen, and yet his attitude was too mismatched for someone like that, which made him unable to understand.

(Kuh, my underlings also cannot hold on for longer. Then, what I should prioritize is-)

Rather than focusing on a newcomer that he couldn't understand, he should prioritize attacking the enemy that would definitely caused collapse in the enemy side if that enemy was defeated, or even if he just wounded that enemy the enemy side would still be shaken. In that case, he would also be able to escape.

Niebla’s eye glint moved away from Kouki and turned toward Moana.

「UOOOOOOOOOOOOON-!!」

It was a howl so loud that felt like the eardrum would get blown away from that. Right away, miasma with abnormal thickness and amount gushed out from Niebla’s body.

The intense ejection of miasma that looked as though they would paint over the space itself like black ink was also a dangerous act for Niebla himself. Because it was an act that was equivalent with ejecting out his own life force.

But, in this battlefield where irregularity existed, the best choice was to escape with certainty. As though to show that, Niebla’s ejected miasma transformed into several hundred tough claws.

「Your majesty-!」

「I pray-, this――」

「Kuh」

Anneal immediately leaped forward to protect Moana, Lilin was trying to use blessing art of protection while showing anxiety, and Moana resolved herself to intercept while sweating coldly, it was at that moment the miasma claws in the number that was absurd to even be counted attacked like a barrage.

「That’s the only thing I won’t let you do! ――<Heaven Severance>!」

Kouki cut in front of the tsunami of black and claws with a step-in that could be mistaken with a teleportation.

Moana called his name 「Kouki-」 with a voice that sounded concerned for him.

Were Moana words the truth? When he heard her voice, he couldn’t imagine that she was deceiving him. This person who was worried for him when he was in danger even though they only met just now and she still hadn’t ascertained his background, how could he think that she was using him or anything?

But,

(That’s not it, that’s not it at all. What I cannot believe is――)

His heart felt like it was being whipped and messed up inside a mixer. Even so, the feeling that he had to protect moved Kouki.

Among the skill that he could invoke swiftly, this light element defensive magic could protect at the widest range――<Heaven Severance>. This magic that could deploy several layers of shining defensive wall simultaneously blocked all the rapidly approaching miasma claws.

Inside the miasma so thick it gave hallucination that the darkness of night was descending, countless layer of radiance defensive wall flew around like the torch of hope. Such scene even looked fantastical.

The miasma was blocked with certainty, and then Kouki’s holy sword swept it aside.

That figure that perfectly handled Niebla’s fierce attack that caused veteran soldiers like Spenser and others to gulp caused them to comprehend it, indeed, this person was

certainly an existence that was invited by a great being. He was a magnificent warrior.

Everyone was thinking so during the dispersal of the miasma. Everyone other than Moana who was currently at Kouki’s side, seeing his face that was desperately defending against the attack with an expression that looked like he was going to collapse anytime now.

「You bastard-, how far you are going to be a hindrance-!! – Tsk, next time I’ll definitely bring you do――」

「There won’t be any next time.」

Niebla finally recovered from the impact of Kouki’s attack and he tried to slip into the miasma to retreat, but it was at that timing that Spenser broke through that miasma and rushed near.

Niebla wasted no time to swing his claws, but Spenser moved with flowing movement like water and his sword finally caught up to Niebla’s torso.

「Gugah!?」

「This is the end-」

Scream of fighting spirit surged out. Spenser’s sword was enveloped in wing that possessed faint green radiance.

While Niebla’s blood danced in the air, Spenser dodged the jaw attack that Niebla carried out in desperation and his beheading slash was sucked into Niebla’s neck.

zan- Spenser’s sword cut through. Niebla’s huge body fell down. And then, Niebla’s head rolled on the ground.

「The likes, of……livestock is-」

Niebla fighting spirit didn’ vanish even with his head removed, however, because of the limit of his body, he fell silent after spitting out words of resentment at the end. The miasma dispersed and light vanished from Niebla’s eyes.

Spenser huffed and he sheathed his sword, and then he raised a tense voice 「Situation report!」. Right away, the royal guards who in the end didn’t lose even a single person reported one after another that they were all safe, that Niebla’s underlings were annihilated, and that Dario wasn’t seriously injured although the bone of his arm broke.

It seemed there were many small wounds, but by using blessing art to heighten their self-recovery strength, wounds until simple broken bone could be healed within a few minutes.

「Hero-dono! Thank you very much for protecting her majesty. I say, that was really as expected from the chosen warrior of Foltina-sama. Truly, that was a splendid skill.」

Spenser was facing Kouki with an expression that was filled with praise and gratitude without even a speck of malice in it. The other soldiers were also the same. Lilin and Neisan were showing him respect even while gazing at him full of curiosity. It couldn’t be helped that they became curious with Kouki’s magic.

「Ah, no, it’s nothing really big……」

「Hahah, to be able to say that “it’s nothing big” after enduring the fierce attack of a <Dark Being> of that level when he was sacrificing his life force! How very reliable! Hero-dono, once more, please take care of us from here on too.」

Spenser looked for a handshake with a friendly smile. It seemed he was harboring impression of a likeable young man who was an outstanding warrior while also possessing humility toward Kouki.

But, even though Kouki was responding with the handshake request of such Spenser and also the soldiers who were gathering around him with similar expression like Spenser, his expression looked somewhat troubled throughout all that.

「Say, can I ask you all to call me by my name if possible? Don’t call me hero. I don’t mind if you call me Kouki.」

「Oo, what a happy thing to ask. Then I’ll call you Kouki-dono. Only if you call me Spenser in return.」

The gaze of Spenser who perceived Kouki’s words as another expression of friendliness was increasingly getting friendlier. The positivity level of the aging soldier was rising up steadily. And it seemed it was also the same with Lilin and others.

Kouki’s expression was getting increasingly looked as though he was stuffing his cheeks with bitter food. However his expression was turning into one where it looked like he was desperately holding it so it wouldn’t come out on his face.

「Kouki, let me also give you my words of thanks. That preeminent skill is really worthy of respect. I wish to express my gratitude with something but……in any case, we also cannot really be carefree after receiving the attack just now. I want to depart immediately though……」

「Ah, yes. I have no objection. It seems that the information of Moana-sama and others coming here was leaked out.

Indeed, it’s better for us to hurry.」

Moana entered between his conversation with Spenser and others looking somewhat as though she was putting a damper on things. Kouki let the tension bled out of his shoulders toward that interruption as though in relief.

They once more advanced quickly as a party toward the edge of the forest with Spenser in the lead.

Before long they could see the border of the forest. Kouki saw multiple large silhouettes taking position in front of the border and his hand reached out toward his sheathed holy sword.

「Kouki, it’s okay. Those are our mount animals.」

「……Your mount, is it? They look like large lizard though.」

「Right. They are called Arous. Their trait is their flat torso and long neck. Their running ability is high with little shaking. They are mainly eating fruit even though they look like that. They are really taking kindly to human you know?」

From the point of view of Kouki whose common sense when speaking about a transportation method using animal would think of horse, he felt a bit bewildered of mounting a lizard more than two meter long with atrocious face.

When he got nearer, he could see something like collar and U-shaped fetter and something like a stool to sit down attached on the animal’s back. He guessed that the rider could stay standing or sitting by lying heavily on the stomach on the saddle.

From a glance, their atmosphere felt like 「Hyahhaa—! There is human! The food! I’m gonna eat them alive yeah!」

looking as though they were going to attack, but seeing the equipment attached on them then indeed, they certainly looked like a transportation method of this world.

(I see, they are like the monster that the devil race used as mount huh……. But, hm~m……

For the moment Kouki accepted that they weren't dangerous existence, but this time he became bothered by something else.

There were ten Arous in total, but the Arous with the best physique and style among those ten had a large ribbon tied on top of its head. A pink ribbon. The ribbon was really pink.

Brutal looking face, eyes that shined with fierce glint, the leaked out growling voice *guruu*, the imposing air……but, on its head was a pink ribbon.

What surrealism. Was this the fashion sense of this world's people? Or else, was that an indispensable equipment? No, other than this one Arous that looked like leader, the other Arous weren't wearing ribbon or anything……

Kouki was confused.

Moana followed Kouki's gaze and she guessed what he was staring at. And then looking a bit boastful she approached the Arous with ribbon.

「Fufu, what do you think? It's cute right? This child is my personal mount. His name is Haumu. The~re there, Haumu~, your master has returned back here~. Were you lonely?」

Moana caressed Haumu's head *rub rub, pat pat*. 'I see' Kouki realized, it looked like this Arous wasn't just a mount.

Moana seemed to harbor a definite fondness to it. He guessed that this Arous was in a position of pet, or perhaps partner of Moana.

Both sides held trust at each other――

「Guryah」

「Ouch!?」

Haumu's headbutt was launched. Moana's head was thrown back hard. Kouki became flustered 「As I thought it's ferocious!?」, but whether Anneal or Spenser or the others, none of them paid that any attention and they kept preparing their own mount for their departure from here.

「Fufu, what, as I thought you were lonely alone? When we got home I'll give you a lot of care okay, so~――ouch!?」

'This cute cheeky guy!' When Moana tried to hug Haumu once more with that kind of feel, a jaw drop that was like a heel drop kick burst on the crown of Moana's head.

「……Excuse me, are you okay?」

「Ahaha, there is no problem at all here, Kouki. Haumu is a spoiled child since a long time ago you see. He would frolic at me right away when I approached him.」

「Guryuu」

「No, that, no matter how I look at it……」

When Moana turned her head toward Kouki, Haumu's mouth closed *snap* on her whole head. Moana was struggling and squirming. No matter how he looked at it, he could only think that she was being preyed on.

□Sto, stop it Haumu! Right now isn’t the time for playing around! That’s why, ah, it hurts! Haumu, it’s a bit, no, it’s really hurt here! Come on, you are a good child so let me――AA□

Moana tapped repeatedly *peshi peshi* at Haumu’s head to say give up. Haumu was chewing on Moana as though to appeal of something, or perhaps as though to clear up a grudge of many years.

Kouki who couldn’t bear to see that looked at Anneal asking for help. Anneal let out a sigh while pointing at Haumu’s head with her finger motion.

Kouki fearfully approached Haumu.

□Err, Haumu?□

□Guruu□

When Kouki turned his gaze at Haumu’s head, Haumu nodded as though to say □Please□. His teeth dug into Moana. Those were the teeth of a herbivore, so the teeth didn’t pierce through, but it must be still hurt. A small scream □Au!?□ came from Moana.

Kouki slowly reached out his hand and took the ribbon from Haumu’s hand.

Haumu conveyed his gratitude at Kouki with his gaze, and then he did □Peh□ at Moana as though he was spitting out his spit.

□Uu, ge, geez Haumu. You’re really a pampered child.□

Moana crumbled down on the ground as though she had been assaulted by hoodlum, and she wiped up her face that

was slathered with saliva. Her way of talking was changing must be because she was a little shaken. She was averting her face shyly from Kouki who was looking down at her with a really complicated expression.

「The, then Kouki. You can sit behind me――cough, I wonder if it's agreeable for you to ride behind me?」

「Ah, yes.」

Moana was still slathered with saliva, however, in order to recover the dignity of queen, Moana changed her way of talking back. Following her, Kouki climbed on Haumu's back. As expected, it seemed the standard was to ride by standing. When Moana climbed up, it felt like 「Chih」 sound could be heard from Haumu but……that must be an imagination, there was no way he could clicked his tongue.

「Hm? Eh? The ribbon is……」

It seemed Moana noticed when he got on Haumu's back. Moana was looking around restlessly in a state seemed to say 'Where has the ribbon gone?'. The ribbon was in Kouki's hand.

Haumu turned his long neck and stared at Kouki. An earnest feeling that could be seen just from a glance was residing in those eyes. That was a feeling of, 「Do something about this woman!」.

「……Looks like it flew off somewhere just now. Moana-sama, there is also the matter about the attack, isn't it better if we depart soon rather than later?」

「I, I guess. Right, I'm sorry Kouki. That ribbon was Haumu's favorite but……this is not the time for saying anything like that isn't it.」

It felt like killing intent was residing in Haumu’s gaze. Kouki understood. Haumu’s gaze was declaring 「Who are you saying is pleased with that thing huh, idiottt! I’m gonna let you die someday, just you wait!」.

Kouki who somehow guessed the relationship between the queen and her personal mount was――slowly entering the ribbon into his pocket. In the world, there was also things that was better to be treated as not existing.

Haumu’s eyes brightened. It seemed that his positivity level toward Kouki was steadily increasing. 「Guruu♪」 Perhaps it was just his imagination, but Haumu was raising a growl that sounded like he was in good mood.

「Fufu, are you happy being able to run together with me? This cute cheeky guy! But, we have guest today here. So run carefully out there okay.」

「Gurya!!」

Was that a simple reply, or was that a yell of denial 「Ain’t no way I’m happy about, that, you idiottt!」, in any case with the powerful roar of Haumu as the signal, the party left the forest.

Right after they left the forest, what leaped into Kouki’s sight was a sand colored world. There was the color of sand continuing until the horizon as far as his eyes could see. Moana’s words that the forest behind them was something rare was certainly a fact.

「Compared with Guryuen……this is different huh.」

That was the impression of Kouki who saw this vast desert.

A great desert existed in Tortus. It was a world of brown color. A world that was filled with the same heat and sand like this place.

But, Kouki understood. The great desert of Guryuen and this desert were decisively different. He was unable to find any words that could express what was the difference accurately but, if he had to say it――

「It’s dead.」

「……Right. It’s just as you say. This is a dead world.」

Moana affirmed Kouki’s words. Haumu was advancing through the sand with surprisingly little shaking and surprising speed. Above him, Moana who was holding on the U-shaped fetters while looking back across her shoulder at Kouki had eyes that were filled with grief.

「This is not just a desert. This is the result from blessing power, the power for the sake of living getting thoroughly stolen. Once, before the large scale war that occurred about a hundred years ago, it seemed that this area was also a verdant forest.」

「War……」

About a hundred years ago, a war, no, a decisive battle of the Nth time that occurred between mankind and the＜Dark Being＞.

The one who stood at the front as the leader was the king of Synclea kingdom at the time. At the end of the fierce battle,

while great damage resulted for both humans and also nature, even so that king succeeded in bringing down the king of the <Dark Being> of that time.

「The honorable ancestor drove away the army of <Dark Being>. The compensation for that was nature was lost from 80% of the kingdom but……even so nature is still left behind at the surrounding of the unaltered capital. I believe that was an amazing war result.」

「The capital wasn't relocated after that?」

He understood from seeing this desert that could only be expressed as "dying". This was a place that human couldn't possibly live at. Eighty percent of the country territory died. He believed it was a matter of course for the capital to be relocated for the country's revival attempt.

Moana looked at faraway while opened her mouth in respond to Kouki's question.

「The king of <Dark Being>——because he looked completely dark from the abnormal thickness of his miasma, we called him the <Dark King>, but it is said that guy lived for long as the strongest existence among the <Dark Being> who were saving strength.」

「Dark King……」

「Do you get it? We are not talking about lineage. He is not an existence that will end after being defeated once. The <Dark King> exist in every era. Although there is variety in his strength each time though.」

Moana's gaze that was staring at far away ran through the vast desert. Kouki guessed what Moana wanted to say and he whispered.

「This place is still a battlefield isn’t it? This is also the best place for it.」

「Yes. Because there is no blessing power that can be stolen from here. In this desert, those fellows can only use the miasma that they stored inside their body. The point where no blessing power cannot be obtained from the surrounding also apply to us, but even so, it’s ideal that those fellow won’t be able to get strengthened and destroy nature for more than now.」

That was why they didn’t relocate the capital. Because the ruined territory was exactly the best battlefield there was. The soldiers of Synclea were remaining in this barren land for the sake of continuing battle. No matter how many months and years passed, Synclea kingdom was the front line battlefield.

「Of course, we are moving our people to place that still have nature remaining. We entrust the feudal lord of every area with autonomy. We are leaving the production of the main food and everything else to them.」

「What is the prospect of the enemy circling around this desert and aim at every other territory?」

Moana shook her head to answer Kouki’s question.

According to her, the <Dark Being> were ruling the eastern land, the kingdom’s territory was at the west with this great desert sandwiched in between. A sea was spreading at the north, and similar like a desert, in the sea there was nothing to block the sight, so if any Dark Being tried to come from there, the surveillance unit stationed at each territory would notice.

At the south there was mountain range area spreading, at the other side of the mountain area there was a large country that still remained and constructed their battlefield like Synclea, so if something happened then a notice would immediately reach them.

Therefore, it was impossible for the <Dark Being> to invade the western territory without Synclea kingdom noticing.

The desert and Synclea’s capital were literally the last fortress and also the front line battlefield.

「……How admirable.」

「Thank you.」

Kouki put his hand on his chest and said that, toward all the soldiers, and then toward the young queen who led them. Moana smiled happily and nodded at such Kouki.

Silence continued for a while. Kouki pursed his lips into a straight line and turned his gaze downward, he was turning his thought toward the soldiers who he was told about.

Moana was glancing repeatedly across her shoulder to such Kouki. And then after she showed hesitation several times, she opened her mouth.

「Kouki. Can I ask you something?」

「? What is it?」

Kouki lifted his face. Moana’s gaze wandered around, looking like she was choosing her words.

「That, is…….why, are you, a hero?」

「Eh?」

It felt like something cold was entering slowly into Kouki’s chest. It felt like he was asked ‘isn’t it presumptuous for you to call yourself that?’. It felt like Kouki’s weakness that was exposed at the fight against Niebla was seen through.

Seeing Kouki who was shaken and his face complexion worsened, Moana added more of her words in hurry.

「Ah, no, that’s not what I meant. It’s not that I’m ridiculing you. I’m only wondering that it’s a curious way of calling you.」

「Curious, is it?」

Understanding that Moana’s intention was different from what he thought, Kouki let out the tension from his stiffened face and tilted his head.

「Yes. I thought it’s curious. When I heard from Foltina-sama that a hero is summoned, I don’t really understand what kind of person would appear. Because, don’t you think so too? Hero(yuusha)——if we take the literal meaning of that word, the meaning will be “a person with courage”.」 (TN: The word yuusha is made from two kanji, the kanji of courage and person. Yuusha can mean hero, the brave, or man of valor in Japan.)

Moana threw a questioning gaze at Kouki to confirm that they were in the same page. Kouki nodded.

「If that’s the case, then I can throw out my case and say with surety. That the soldiers of my country, are all “hero(yuusha)” without a single exception.」

「Ah……」

Kouki was taken aback and leaked out a small voice. Moana looked back and stared straight at Kouki.

「If by perchance, Kouki is a man who had accomplished some great exploits, and that was why you were chosen by Foltina-sama……then shouldn't such person be called as "hero(eiyuu)" instead?」 (TN: Eiyuu is made from kanji of 'Han' and man. In Japan it means hero, heroine, great person)

「That's……」

「Ah, no, it's not that I wish to trouble Kouki. I'm just wondering.」

Sensing Kouki's perplexity, Moana said 「Forgive me for asking something strange」 and she returned her gaze to the front.

But, Moana's words were clinging completely inside Kouki. Question was overflowing inside his mind.

Just what in the world a hero(yuusha) was.

(Thinking back now, just what is a hero? I called myself that because that's my vocation. But, still, hero――a person with courage……that's a person's nature, it cannot be called an "occupation" that showed a person's innate ability isn't it?)

He recalled. The vocation of his comrades.

Healer. Martial artist. Swordsman. Barrier user……

Yes, everyone had vocation that was connected to an actual occupation. It was only "hero(yuusha)" that was of a different disposition. Certainly, rather than a transcription of a work one had aptitude toward, it was a title that displayed

one’s character. So to speak, it was a transcription that wasn’t any different with vocation of “pessimist”, “optimist”, or “good person” or “bad person”.

If one wanted to describe a vocation that led the people and fought powerful enemy, then it should be better to call that vocation using “commander” or even “king” instead.

(Was it because in Tortus “hero(yuusha) is recognized as occupation? However, if it’s the case of “a person that accomplished great exploits” just like Moana-sama mentioned, then it should be fine to use “hero(eiyuu)” instead. Why am I “a person with courage”? Just what am I……)

Why did he obtain the vocation of something like hero(yuusha)?

When he looked back at the events at Tortus, even himself was harboring doubt whether he even have possessed such nature in himself.

How many times he was unable to move in the crucial times? How many times he failed without even choosing anything? How many times he acted as he pleased and dragged his comrades into trouble?

Why was someone like him a “hero”?

——Why, are you, a hero?

「……I don’t know. I really, don’t know.」

That voice sounded wrung out from his throat, it sounded like it would vanish anytime.

Moana who understood that it was an answer toward her question just now looked back once more. And then, she peeked at Kouki who was looking down with a fixed stare.

「I see. ……It will be great if you understand it someday. Yep, surely the time will come when you understand the reason.」

「……Why, do you think so?」

In respond to Moana whose manly way of talking broke down, Kouki unconsciously also asked back with his plain way of talking.

Moana smiled. Her expression looked affectionate.

「Because, aren’t you still struggling? Aren’t you doing your best to find the answer? The world isn’t so cold that it would trample down that kind of person.」

「……Is that so?」

「That’s so.」

The world would surely smile at those who kept struggling without giving up. The one who said those words with conviction was a queen who was continuing to fight wholeheartedly in a world that was heading to ruin. For Kouki, those were words that were really heavy and really beautiful that caused him to be taken aback.

The two stared at each other. The eyes of Anneal and Lilin who were keeping pace beside them looked curious like cat. And then, the eyes of Spenser that were looking back from the front with a cold gaze.

「Nnh」

「Cough, ahem」

Moana and Kouki did something that looked like coughing or perhaps not while quietly taking distance from each other.

The lips of Anneal and Lilin crooked with the feel of 「Mufuu~」. Their maiden sensor might be reacting to the scene just now.

「Ho, how long until we reach the capital.」

「Ri, right. I believe we will arrive at the evening with our current pace.」

Kouki asked an information that he already heard before this to varnish over the matter, and Moana also answered in the same attempt.

They continued to advance while inside that really delicate atmosphere for a while. Slightly elevated hills were starting to get visible here and there.

But, at that time, like a rehash of the event inside the forest, Kouki suddenly reacted to something and looked up.

「Kouki?」

Moana asked Kouki while she raised her fist and commanded the unit to stop moving.

Right after that,

「-, something is falling here! Evacuate!」

「Advance! Rush ahe――」

Moana wasted no time responding at Kouki’s warning, but multiple objects freefalling and crashing at their

surrounding arrived faster than that.

zudon-zudon- What were crashing on the ground with that roaring sound that shook the ground were living things that looked like lizard, clad in thick miasma. They were wearing equipment that looked like protector, and from their bone structure it could be seen that they were mainly walking with two legs. From their appearance, they were what they called as Lizardman in RPG.

□-, scaled dragon species!? Just what in the world!?□

Moana’s confused voice resounded. Her reaction was understandable. If this was an ambush, then she would just give instruction right away to form formation and prepare to intercept. In that case there wouldn’t be any hesitation whatsoever and the royal guard would finish carrying out that order in a moment just like when facing Niebla and his underlings.

But, the lizardmen called scaled dragon species that fell from the sky——six of them were already dying. Naturally the cause of them dying was the impact from their fall. If it wasn’t because of the thick protector they were wearing that wasn’t suited for battle and also the impact reduction from their miasma, they might have died instantly.

These enemies launched a surprise attack yet they almost get annihilated at the same time with their entrance. Moana and her people could only look at the situation like that.

They weren’t knowing that the objective of this surprise attack was exactly to take advantage of that confusion.

□□□GIIIIIAAAAAAAAAH□□□

□□□GUEEEEEEEEEEEH□□□

Shrieks burst out. Those weren’t screams from pain or suffering. They were the same scream like Niebla’s scream. They were emitting miasma by staking their life. The six lizardmen were gushing out miasma that rivaled what Niebla did before.

「Impossible-, are they planning to suicide!?」

「Your majesty, please escape! Lilin, your wind!」

Moana leaked out voice of shock while Spenser roared angrily.

The six lizardmen were obviously of lower status than Niebla. Yet regardless of that they were scattering miasma that rivaled Niebla was because they were literally exchanging their life for it.

It was truly a suicide attack. An ambush of suicide bombing from the sky was something outside expectation.

The miasma that exploded and dyed the surrounding area black instantly didn’t grant any time for escape, for Lilin to activate her wind, or even for Kouki to respond.

Everything was swallowed by blackness and vanished.

If it was seen from slight distance away, it looked like a tornado of black flame was generated. Moana and others were inside that tornado.

At that timing, a pterosaur descended down from the sky. At its back was a scaled dragon species that was conspicuously larger than normal. He was equipped with metallic protector and his hand was holding a large spear.

「Looks like it was worth it instigating Niebla. Although the miasma stone the queen is carrying is special, but it won't be able to endure that guy's miasma and the miasma of six underlings using up all their life.」

'Ge-ge-ge-' The scaled dragon species raised a weird laugh.

It seemed that the leaking out of the information that Moana and her people left the capital with few number and Niebla getting hold of that information were all the scheming of this scaled dragon species.

Everything was for the sake of reducing the capacity limit of the miasma stone that was the lifeline for Moana and her people. And then, he would deal the finishing blow easily when Moana and others became unable to move.

「With this my king's――」

The scaled dragon species was standing calmly while staring in pleasure at the miasma completely ruining Moana and her people, but the voice and phenomenon that suddenly occurred caused him to swallow back his own words.

「Turn this place into sanctuary, let none of god's enemy through――<Sacred Severance>!!」

GOU- Pure white light burst up. The storm of miasma that could be mistaken as black flame ruptured from inside, and a dazzling light swelled up in half-sphere state.

Not the slightest bit of miasma existed at the inside of that light, the miasma that was blown away along with the light melted into the air and dispersed.

「Wha, what?」

At the end of the gaze of the scaled dragon species who couldn’t hide his agitation, were the royal guards and Arous who collapsed at the other side of the shining barrier, and also the queen.

But, there was just one person, a man that looked unaffected at all even inside that much miasma was holding the limp Moana in his arms.

「You-, what the hell are you! How are you that calm even after getting bathed in that much miasma!?」

The scaled dragon species that somehow pulled himself back together from his confusion readied his large spear while yelling angrily.

Kouki softly put Moana to recline on Haumu and he whispered something while ignoring the scaled dragon species’s angry yell. And then, something that looked like light particles showered down on everybody including Moana and enveloped them in a gentle light.

Seeing that——Kouki unsheathed his holy sword while turning his gaze t the scaled dragon species.

Kouki showed the same reaction at the scaled dragon species just like with Niebla.

Face that turned pale. Shaking body. Ragged breathing.

But, there already wasn’t anyone else here that would finish the enemy while he was holding it in.

If he ran away, Moana and others would die.

Even if he prolonged it, as expected they would still die.

If he didn’t choose, they would die.

The time for choosing, had came.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I’m sorry that the gloomy story is continuing.

Next chapter the fundamental problem that Kouki is holding will become clear.

If possible, I hope I can make consecutive posting next week.

Even Shirakome also want to progress the story in one go until where the tale move in a big way. After that as expected it will be like musou game isn’t it. (TN: Like playing in Dynasty Warrior or Samurai Warrior game)

Although, there are important parts more than just Kouki’s growth, so I’ll endeavor to not cut corners.

There are opinions ‘Kouki arc is just, you know~’ here and there, so I thought that the number of people reading will decrease by a lot, but the number of the PV or the review after reading isn’t dropping. It feels like Shirakome will melt from the kindness of Narou people.

Thank you~

Arifureta Chapter 266

Arifureta After II A Fundamental Problem

AN: Serious-san has the principle of going home regularly.

My fingers moved by themselves……

The brilliant light enveloped the collapsed Moana and others in half-sphere state.

Their miasma stones that had the function of absorbing miasma that made it possible for human to act inside miasma for a period of time were dyed muddy black. The complexion of Moana and others went straight passed white and became ashen color.

Not just Moana and her people, Haumu and the other Arous., the mounted beasts also powerlessly splayed out their four limbs where they could only repeat breathing in short gasps.

They were only barely living. The blessing power inside the body of Moana and others were holding on to their life.

But, it was obvious that it wouldn’t be long before the scythe of death god would touch them. Their time limit was near.

Kouki made Moana leaned on Haumu’s body, and step by step he walked toward the lizardman who was the < Dark

Being> that caused this situation. (TN: I changed the Black People into Dark Being cause it seemed those words could cause misunderstanding.)

The tip of the holy sword that was pointed to the ground was slightly trembling, and his breathing was ragged. The feeling of wanting to run away without choosing anything was clamoring inside himself like a locked beast that was trying to escape from its cage.

Kouki came to a stop after he got out and took a step away from the boundary of the highest class light element defensive magic <Sacred Severance>. An angry yell was thrown to such Kouki once more.

「You-, I'm asking what the hell are you! What's that strange light! How the hell you are able to stand!?」

Sharp dragon eyes. Dragon scales that looked harder than even steel armor. His whole body was bulging with muscles, and his hands were readying a long and large spear.

It was clear just from confronting this Dark Being face to face like this. That he was a strong one that had achieved considerable military achievement.

Yes,

(He isn't a beast.)

This opponent was a warrior that possessed intelligence.

As though finding a ray of hope, Kouki thought of the six beings that didn't give any reaction to his <Presence Detection> and asked back instead.

「……Weren't they, your comrade?」

「What?」

The lizardman didn’t seem to understand what Kouki was asking him for a moment and he let out a voice of dubiousness. But, he immediately guessed that Kouki was speaking about his six compatriots that performed “suicide bombing” to scatter highly thick miasma by paying with their life as the compensation, and he answered with a snort.

「Obviously they were my underlings.」

「You, commanded them to die?」

「……Just what are you asking? What are you talking about since some time ago?」

The scaled dragon specious didn’t understand the intention of Kouki’s question and was getting more and more suspicious.

He must never even imagined that Kouki was getting desperate in trying to find even a bit more reason to make his “choice”.

Because this was a guy that abandoned his comrades, because this was a guy that made light of life without any reason.

That was why, it should be fine to kill him, just like what he did all this time when facing against monster, something like that.

Kouki’s expression distorted painfully while stringing his words together.

「If, this is only what if. What are you going to do if I say you can go to another world?」

□What?□

□If you can migrate together with flora and fauna too, to a new world that is filled with blessing power, and you can live there without fighting human……or it can also be the reverse, the human will be the one that move away. If you can live in a world without human, a world of only＜Dark Being＞――□

This was the last resort. Because this was a plan that completely relied on that man, it was a proposal without any positive proof. But, if there was that man’s compass and crystal key, then perhaps they would be able to find an inhabited world. In addition, securing enough of the necessary blessing power would also be possible.

‘That guy is different than me, surely there is nothing impossible for him, that’s why’, Kouki thought.

The long battle that passed between Moana and her people against the＜Dark Being＞.

Perhaps there wasn’t any more ground for them to coexist together.

Perhaps there wasn’t any more room to talk between them.

Then, was the only path left was where one of them conquered everything?

Was battle unavoidable, that one side had to be sunk into the abyss of despair?

Was there really no third path……

The suggestion of “separated living” by migrating to a new world.

That was an idea that was brought about from Kouki’s pondering. <Dark Being> that possessed will and would go hungry if they didn’t consume blessing power, and human that couldn’t endure the miasma and unable to live without blessing power everywhere around them. That idea came because Kouki couldn’t find a clearly correct “choice” like in a novel or drama where good was rewarded and evil was punished.

If it was about the compensation for that man, then he was determined to pay it in any kind of shape. That was the only thing that Kouki could decided promptly right now.

But, that desperate proposal of such Kouki was,

「Hah」

Kicked to the curb in rejection by a sneer and a violent “thrust”.

Kouki caught his breath, but his reaction was quick. He parried the tip of the long spear using his holy sword. *gigigi* The sound of metals scraping each other resounded along with scattered sparks.

The lizardman immediately pulled back his long spear and launched repeated thrust like surging waves. Those thrusts that were controlled with immense physical strength and flexible muscle were uncommon.

Kouki handled the attack while he raised his voice further.

「Wait, listen to me! I came from another world! The barrier behind me is the proof of that! Even without human and <Dark Being> fighting, perhaps there is a way for a future where both sides can live without annihilating the other! That’s why――」

The holy sword blocked a sweep of the spear. *gan* Impact sound resounded and a slight numbness ran through Kouki’s arm. It became a situation of sword locking contest. In that situation, the lizardman showed a scorn in his dragon eyes and said his piece.

「That’s shocking-. I never thought this kind of coward still exist! Aah, I’’ recognize it! You are really a human of another world. There is no way someone like you is a warrior of this country!」

gou Miasma spouted out from the lizardman. No, perhaps it should be said instead that he released the miasma. The miasma that was released to blow at Kouki became a physical impact that made Kouki’s feet left the ground. When that happened, naturally Kouki got blown away to the side due to the pressure from the sword locking contest.

Kouki bounced several times on the sand before he barely performed ukemi and rearranged his balance to stand on his knee. When he returned his gaze to the dragon scaled species, he saw the figure of the enemy ignoring him while rushing toward <Sacred Severance>.

The lizardman who was ignoring Kouki struck his long spear toward the barrier with a yell of fighting spirit.

「Chih! This hardness is really something!」

The lizardman spontaneously cursed seeing the shining barrier only giving off impact sound without even a scratch.

The barrier was of the highest class. It wouldn’t be broken that easily. But, the lizardman also didn’t have the time to keep attacking it as he pleased.

Kouki charged forward while cloud of dust was left behind from his momentum and this time he was the one who blew away the lizardman.

Even while getting blown away, the lizardman killed the momentum by crawling on all four.

「Why are you rejecting a path where both sides might be able to survive……, why-, won’t you choose the path of living!」

「Don’t make me laugh-」

The lizardman easily cut down Kouki’s pained appeal.

「You are telling me to recognize that the like of livestock, the like of food has the right to live freely? That’s just crazy!」

You are nuts for trying to look for something that doesn’t exist from us as though we are human.

Is that because you are a human of another world? That you have that kind of thinking?

The existence of other world, whether it really exist or not. Such thing doesn’t matter.

I’ll teach you. The truth of this world. Just what is the meaning of living!

The lizardman trampled forward hard *don* and stood up. He stepped firmly on the ground of sand like a large tree, and he threw out his chest without even an ounce of shame.

「Fight, steal, conquer, rule! Those are exactly the long-cherished desire of the living!」

Miasma was overflowing from the whole body of the lizardman. The thickness of the miasma was increasing in concert with his roar.

「We are turning human into livestock, to create a new world where the pain of hunger vanished! So that we, <The Being Clad in Scale Armor> can have an exceptional position! The head of the queen is indispensable!」

A pressure that was unseen by eye assaulted Kouki. That wasn't a distinctive power. It was a dominating aura, a mettle, the power of resolve that he dedicated for the future of the scaled dragon species he was looking at.

「Then, I'll reward my followers who staked their life! Listen-, you half-baked person who possessed strength beyond your position! My name is Ragal! The chief of <The Being Clad in Scale Armor>!」

'Aah', Kouki thought. His heart leaked out a sigh of admiration and also despair.

Did this person ordered his comrades to die? Perhaps, so, perhaps not. He didn't know the truth, but there was only one thing that he was certain about, those lizardmen who carried out the crazy surprise attack by freefalling from the sky and accomplished their objective with their life as the payment, they too also possessed a definite resolve. They didn't perish inside grief and despair that they couldn't oppose and defy by any means!

「I'll kill you, and take――the queen's head!」

Sand pillar blew up. That sand pillar that looked as though it was piercing the sky was the mark of Ragal's step. He wore his miasma like armor and appeared instantly before Kouki's eyes with his long spear that he also covered in miasma.

Kouki evaded the sharp thrust that pierced through the wind by moving half his body to behind. The long spear's thrust instantly transformed into a sweep that ignored the inertia.

The pressure from that attack was far greater than before. It could be clearly seen that the strength inside the attack was ascending further. Kouki immediately used his holy sword as shield, but by doing that it felt like the sword would be thrown away along with his arm.

Kouki desperately braced his legs, but suddenly the pressure vanished and he unintentionally stumbled. The next moment, his feet floated lightly. The miasma that seemed to seep into the ground unnoticed stirred up the sand below Kouki's feet.

The long spear was swung once more at Kouki who lost his balance. Kouki averted the spear by slamming his palm on the flat side of the spear tip, but then the peculiar attack of scaled dragon species assaulted him.

The rotating Ragal launched a spinning kick followed by his sweeping dragon tail.

The upper and middle area was blocked like that. Dodging was impossible.

The claws of the legs were approaching, followed by dragon tail that became like a blade with the miasma enveloping it. Terror was rushing through Kouki's whole body instinctually. He backstepped desperately and only barely managed to dodge.

But, it seemed that Ragal had read the flow of offense and defense until that far. He showed not a shred of turmoil that his attack was evaded, he smoothly formed a throwing spear

made from miasma. It was fired like a bullet from close range toward Kouki’s head.

Excluding some case that was out of norm, the dynamic vision and reflexes of Kouki who boasted specs at the pinnacle had saved his life until now. When he shifted his body faster than his awareness, the miasma throwing spear passed through with only a scratch on Kouki’s neck.

Kouki backstepped even further when his feet touched the ground and he widened the distance.

There was the sensation of warmth and something trickling on his neck.

Without averting his gaze from Ragal who readied his long spear once more, one of Kouki’s hands slowly caressed his neck. His fingertip felt something wet, something with raw sensation.

□–□

It wasn’t a fatal wound. It was only his skin that was cut. But, it was an attack toward his neck. A lump of ice slid down inside Kouki’s heart.

Just now, he almost died……

Scary……

Death was scary.

Nothing convenient would occur. Death was right before his eyes. He wondered, how was he able to say something like □Everything is absolutely going to be okay□ before. Anyone would die when it was the time to die.

Amanogawa Kouki, could die easily.

Scary……terrifying……

Ragal was gradually closing the distance. He wasn’t letting his guard down or getting self-conceited. He planned to kill Kouki carefully and then returned triumphantly with Moana’s head. There was no turmoil or hesitation inside him.

Scary……

Killing was scary.

Severing the life of a being that possessed will, it was something that was really terrifying.

Killing Ragal. Became the ally of Moana and her people and then killed all of the <Dark Being> to the last.

Surely doing that meant killing the hope of the <Dark Being>.

It meant crushing their dearest wish, severing their thread of life, and granting them despair.

Scary……

It felt scary to control the survival of someone.

Someone who might be able to live a proper life would get derailed by getting involved with him. Such thing was unbearably terrifying.

Something was moving at the corner of his sight. When he sent a glance that way while slowly taking distance away from Ragal, he saw the figure of the collapsed Moana there.

She was supposedly leaning on Haumu, but it seemed she stirred and fell on the ground. Or perhaps, she was getting weaker that she was unable to even maintain her leaning position.

Scary……

Death was scary.

Killing was scary.

Making mistake was scary.

But,

——Not being able to protect, was scarier. That was the only thing, that he couldn’t endure.

So,

It was only the failure of “cannot choosing”, that he absolutely couldn’t tolerate anymore, so,

That was why,

「I’ll kill you」

His face looked like it was going to cry, his voice was trembling, however, he spoke his “choice” clearly.

Kouki took a step forward.

Even saying that it took an instant was still lacking to describe it. It was as though the ground was shrunk closer, his speed was literally like that when he appeared before Ragal’s eyes.

「Nuh」

A diagonal slash from above that looked only like a silver flash caused Ragal to block it just barely with his long spear even while staring in astonishment. Instantly Ragal’s legs were buried into the sand along with a thunderous sound that felt like an earthquake. If they were standing on a hard ground then perhaps there would even be a crater formed.

Speed and destructive power that were incomparable from before. If Ragal let his guard down, the brutal attack might split him into two together with his spear.

In that attack, there was certainly “killing intent” that was nonexistent until now filled into it.

「Don’t underestimate mee-」

Ragal gushed out miasma that was accompanied with impact along with a loud scream of fighting spirit.

「——<Light Severance>-!」

Barrier of light manifested between Kouki and Ragal.

The barrier was instantly smashed from the impact it got showered with, but it accomplished enough of its objective to not let its creator got pushed back.

Toward Kouki who neutralized the miasma shockwave just as planned, Ragal used his everything, miasma of thrown spear, spear attack combo with gyration, hand claws, jaw, kick, and dragon tail to launch an offensive that was like a surging waves.

Kouki handled, dodge, repelled, and intercepted all of those.

「-, you are still-, going further up!? You bastard-, what in the world——」

The sword attack finally surpassed Ragal’s martial might. Ragal was forced to switch from offensive into defensive, and this time he raised a voice that was definitely shocked and agitated……

An upward slash. The long spear was thrown far away.

Thrown spear of miasma. It was evaded with a twirl.

The two passed each other,

「-aAAAAAAAAAAAH!!」

A sword flash drew an arc along with a war cry that sounded like a scream.

Briefly, cloud of dust danced in the air.

Kouki who stayed unmoving in a position of finishing the slash of the holy sword was silent with his back toward the back of Ragal who was in a stance of swinging up his long spear halfway.

「How, can……this be……」

That voice was filled with feeling of shock, despair, and then resentment. Those were the last words of Ragal.

Slowly, the lizard head shifted and fell to the ground. Miasma scattered in a burst and the large body crumbled down following the falling head.

Kouki wordlessly looked up to the sky and took a deep breath. And then, he slowly turned around. In order to see the result of what he had done.

A head that threw an empty gaze at empty air. A large body that lost its head and spurted out blood. Dark red blood that

dyed the ground of sand.

The definite proof of a life stolen.

「tsu, oguh, geeh」

The thing that welled up even when he only killed monster that didn’t possess will or intelligence overflowed this time without him being unable to hold it back. But, in the first place because he hadn’t eaten anything for long, what came out was only the stomach’s gastric juice.

Kouki supported his body with his holy sword while falling in one knee. In this moment he looked as though he had aged drastically. His rounded back looked as though something enormously heavy was weighing him down. His trembling back looked as though he was desperately enduring that weigh.

He desperately kept hold of his consciousness that was forcefully shutting down in order to protect his heart from the mental burden. Right now wasn’t the time to faint, it wasn’t the time to be absorbed with the repulsive sensation remaining in his hand, that was how he persuaded himself.

「-, guh, I have to go……」

Even though his stamina hadn’t been used up, but his body was heavy like lead. Kouki dragged himself and walked toward Moana and the others.

Looking at the condition of Spenser and the others, he could see they were still alive. Even Anneal who had the lowest battle strength was breathing faintly.

Kouki let out a sigh of relieve while also tensing his pale face right away in this situation that didn’t permit letting his

guard down.

He pulled Spenser and others and also their Arous to lay them down near Moana.

「Dissolve grief, clear away the dark clouds. That thing not stained is the light of all creation. The heaven light of salvation――<Vast Sky>」

Light element intermediate level recovery magic <Vast Sky>――a magic to recover from abnormal state.

Before this after he deployed <Sacred Severance>, Kouki applied this magic with shortened chant toward Moana and others who were ravaged by the miasma. The result was “no effect”.

Perhaps, the effect was decreased because he omitted the chanting. Thinking so, Kouki tried to invoke the magic once more but……

「-, it’s still not effective……」

<Vast Sky> couldn’t clear away the miasma invading their body.

Kouki gritted his teeth while trying out another chanting. Imagining that if Kaori was here then she would be able to display the maximum effect even without any chanting, he became a bit jealous.

「From the pure domain, the holy mother extend the hand of salvation. O those who seek, look to the sky. See the light at the end of the dark clouds. The holy mother didst not abandon thee. Descending with the halo of salvation on her back, inside the embrace of lookout arm, here the holy mother smile. ――<Holy Ceremony>」

Light element highest level recovery magic <Holy Ceremony>——it was a wide area recovery magic for army use. This time Kouki invoked it wing the arrangement of limited area for further increased effect.

Brilliant light became spreading ripple that wholly enveloped Moana and others leaving no spot uncovered.

「Guh……」

「Spenser-san!」

It seemed there was effect this time.

The one who recovered their consciousness first was as expected the one whose foundation ability was in different level. It was the captain of the royal guard Spenser.

「Kou, ki-dono? What in the world……-, what about her majesty!?」

「Please calm down. I cannot really say that Moana-sama is safe, but she is alive. There also no death among the others.」

「I, I see……I'm glad. The enemy?」

Even though he sounded pained, but his voice sounded a bit clear. Kouki told Spenser about Ragal's plan, how he was defeated, and then how the he was unable to purify the miasma, and how his recovery magic was effective to a degree.

「Recovery magic……something like that is……. Nevertheless the scaled dragon species Ragal……you have finished off another considerable big shot again.」

It seemed that Ragal was an enemy whose name was fairly well known. Spenser showed surprise at Kouki’s explanation before his expression suddenly relaxed and he conveyed his gratitude through his gaze.

「To be caught inside the enemy’s scheme completely……it’s pathetic. If Kouki-dono isn’t here just what will happen to us then. My deepest thanks.」

「……No. Rather than that, what is the prospect of your recovery? Is there a method to purify the miasma? Like, the miasma stone is it? ……Can we use it if we collect the stone from Ragal and his underlings?」

Kouki’s complexion became somewhat bad saying that but there was still no one else other than Spenser who could talk. If nothing was done about the miasma eroding the body, then the problem wouldn’t be fundamentally solved. It seemed Kouki’s recovery magic was nothing more than a temporary fix.

「No. Miasma stone cannot be used right away after it get collected. It will need to be purified for about three until seven days before it become usable. Since it’s come to this, Kouki-dono. Can you take her majesty and return to the capital?」

「……Spenser-san, you are telling me to leave you all behind?」

「Yes. But, please don’t misunderstand.」

Seeing Kouki’s expression warped, Spenser smiled gently while adding to his words.

「Thanks to Kouki-dono’s technique, it feels like my body can hold on for a while even after getting bathed in miasma. If

during that time, you can call for help together with her majesty, then there is still hope for us yet.

How long you feel that you will be able to endure?

For us the royal guards, about a day. I’m worried about Anneal, but that child too isn’t her majesty’s personal attendant just for show, so I believe she will be able to endure for half a day.

Half a day……

He heard that they would arrive at evening by riding Arous. From the current position of the sun, the distance could be reached if there was four hour.

Even if Kouki was carrying one person on his back, if he ran seriously he could put some serious speed even though it wouldn’t be as fast as Arous. He guessed he would be able to arrive by two hours more than if he was riding Arous.

Thinking about the preparation for the rescue too, when they came back here they would use Arous so it felt like he would make it in time.

Just in case. ……Celestial ladder illuminating the land unceasingly. That is the light of protection and healing——<Full Scope Heaven>

Oo, this is……

Light element intermediate level recovery magic <Full Scope Heaven>——the effect was low dependent on the amount of magic power laced into it, but it was a magic that periodically invoked recovery magic.

Kouki poured magic power into it so much it felt like something was taken away wholly from inside him and he was attacked by a sense of fatigue, but in exchange for that the effect should continue for a few hours.

「This is the magic that I used just now. It will automatically heal in interval but……does it feel like it can extend the time for all of you to hold out longer?」

「Yes. I had faint consciousness after I got bathed in miasma just now, at that time I felt the blessing power inside my body strangely revitalized. Thanks to that, I got away with only this much even after getting showered with miasma that thick……I see, so it was Kouki's technique. ……This warm light. It's like it's Kouki-dono himself.」

「……」

Kouki couldn't find any words to respond to Spenser's words and he kept his mouth shut. He coughed to divert his mind and asked once more how long Spenser felt they would be able to endure. His answer was that it felt like they would be able to hold out half a day longer.

「If possible, I want to move all of you away from this place where we were attacked……」

「That is like putting the cart before the horse, a waste of time. Among the＜Black Being＞, their rivalry with the different race is fierce. Therefore, you can consider that Ragal won't tell about the surprise attack to other race other than Niebla who he used as sacrificial pawn.」

「……Understood. I will call for help as fast as possible.」

「Yes. I'll leave her majesty in your hand.」

Kouki invoked <Sacred Severance> one more time to make it last for several hours, and then he stood up with Moana on his back.

And then, he dashed right away to the direction that Spenser told him.

He reinforced his body and ran on the desert as though he was gliding while putting recovery magic on Moana.

After about a hour of running, when Kouki thought to stop soon to hydrate himself, it was at that time,

「Uuh……Kou, ki」

「Moana-sama! You are awake.」

The voice of Moana on his back reached his ear. Kouki stopped running and laid down Moana while one of hi hand was supporting her. He took out a water bag from his luggage and put it on Moana's mouth.

Moana obediently drank the water. Her throat was gulping down the water.

「Nh, thank you, Kouki.」

「No. Rather than that how do you feel? I wish to tell you about our situation.」

「No, that's unnecessary. My condition can also hold out until we reach the capital thanks to Kouki's technique.」

Kouki's eyes widened from hearing Moana's words. He thought she was completely unconscious, but it seemed that wasn't the case.

「Forgive me, but I’m worried about Spenser and others. Can I have you hurry on ahead?」

「Yes, I understand.」

Kouki carried Moana on his back once more and started running. Moana leaned her head on Kouki’s shoulder limply while also adjusting her position so she could at least talk, she then revealed that actually she had been conscious all this time even if only faintly.

「Nevertheless, you aren’t affected by the miasma. This is a blessing in disguise.」

「I guess. It seems in this world blessing power = life force, so perhaps that is the reason? I felt a bit weary when the miasma showered me, but I don’t have blessing power so that might be why it doesn’t really affect me, I think.」

「Yes, perhaps that’s so.」

For Kouki, or perhaps more accurately for existence from another world that didn’t rely on blessing power, perhaps the miasma of this world could be said as something like highly concentrated exhaust fumes. The miasma didn’t have immediate effect to shave down his life, but it shared the point where it disturb his health and gave bad effect to his body. Perhaps he would be in danger if he was bathed in it for a long time.

After having that talk, Moana suddenly stirred her body. Her arms that were circled around Kouki’s neck tightened a bit and she strengthened her hug at him.

Wondering what was it about, Kouki was about to look back across his shoulder, but before he could, Moana opened her

mouth. Her manly way of talking broke down and she spoke with what must be her original way of talking.

「……Sorry, Kouki.」

「?」

Was she apologizing about getting carried on his back like this? Kouki tilted his head in puzzlement and then Moana said out words that made Kouki couldn’t help but felt shaken in respond.

「……That was your first time right?」

「-」

He didn’t ask what did she meant. It was something he completely understood. Moana had been conscious all this time.

Then, in that case, naturally that meant she saw it.

Kouki’s discord. Kouki’s disgraceful behavior.

Unconsciously his breath turned ragged and his legs almost got tangled.

「I’m sorry. Surely we have made you carry a heavy burden.」

「Such, thing……」

The words of denial that was spoken with hoarse voice melted into air and didn’t resound further. It even felt like his body became lead and his gliding footsteps became disarrayed and slow.

Even though he had hesitated when fighting her sworn enemy, Moana’s voice didn’t sound blaming in the least, far

from that, her voice sounded apologetic and sympathizing to him.

「I heard it. ――「why won't you choose the path of living」 You said.」

「……Sorry. Saying that to an enemy that Moana and others had fought all this time with your life in the line……. When it came to it, I still didn't understand. About the relationship between Moana's people and them. About their fundamental sense of value. That's why, I easily said such thing――」

「Kouki. I'm not blaming you. You came to this world only just now, you only heard our story and got told to kill enemy that you don't know anything about. Anyone would hesitate from that.」

Moana's put her hand clumsily on Kouki's head. And then, he softly brushed his head, as though to say that it's fine. And then,

「Kouki, is really kind huh.」

She said that. She said that toward Kouki, a person who was desperately searching for a path so that her hated enemy could survive. There was no ill will in her voice, instead there was kindness.

That was why,

「You're wrong-!!」

Kouki couldn't endure it. Such misunderstanding.

Because Kouki stopped running and his knees bent, Moana slipped down from his back and her waist lowered to sit on the ground in girl sitting posture.

Moana didn’t say any protest, she stared at Kouki fixedly. While feeling that gaze, Kouki yelled with a force as though he was going to vomit blood.

「Stop it! I’m not kind or anything! I’m not some kind guy or anything-」

Usually he could control his heart and he wouldn’t spit it out. But, the shock from killing a being with will for the first time was really big, and then the unforeseen kindness toward his greatly shaken heart was more than enough to break the dam of his heart.

「Even I’m being a hero is a mistake-. I’m not a hero at all! I have only ever made mistake-, I cannot see anything-, I keep hesitating――」

Kouki crumbled and meaninglessly grasped on sand tightly. *grit grit grit* The slight sound from sand rubbing each other sounded like the creaking sound of Kouki’s heart.

「When it was at the most important time, when I was needed the most, what I did to my comrade-. Even though she was always near me-, I didn’t even notice until she was that broken-. My best friend-, my childhood friends-, even though they should be important to me-, I pointed my sword at them-」

For Moana who didn’t know about Kouki’s past, she must be wondering what he was talking about. The discharged words only sounded incoherent to her, she wasn’t clear about their meaning.

But, there was also something she understood.

That Kouki, had made some kind of big mistake.

That he regretted it very much.

That he was blaming himself all this time.

And then,

「……Kouki. Why are you that scared? What is it that made you so scared?」

That Kouki was terribly terrified toward something.

Kouki lifted his face. His teeth were clenched, and a deep wrinkle was carved on his forehead. His eyes shook.

「……I, what I’m scared at is……I myself.」

He feared himself who approved of killing. Because he didn’t understand whether his killing intent was right or not.

He feared that he was fighting. Because he had no resolve of getting killed.

He feared making mistake. Because he knew of reality that couldn’t be undone.

He feared making choice.

The reason was,

「I, cannot trust myself……more than anyone in this world, more than any kind of existence.」

The fundamental problem that Kouki held.

Yes, it was a “lack of self-confidence” to an extreme degree.

The problem that preceded even the question of making the resolve to kill and getting killed. The lack of the most

important thing for the sake of making choice.

Even though he doubted, distrusted himself more than anyone, how would he be able to decide his “resolve” and “choice” that would only come from self-confidence.

How would he be able to accept the praise that he was a hero?

How would he be able to affirm that said he was “kind”?

「Even so Kouki, you made your choice. We were saved by you.」

Moana said her words toward Kouki who looked as though he was being shackled hand and foot.

「……Because I promised everyone who put their life in the line to save me. I will fight against myself. That’s why, only the failure of being unable to choose anything, that’s the only thing that I must not do anymore. That’s all, there is to it.」

He didn’t make the choice because he stepped forward courageously, or because he made his resolve, or because he was kind, such thing was even less true. He was only getting pressed by the time limit and then made his choice frantically because of that.

Kouki said that with an expression that was half-crying half-laughing for a beat of time. Before Moana could say anything, he slapped both his cheeks hard and stood up forcefully from feeling shame toward his messed up self.

And then, he presented his hand to Moana.

「Sorry. This isn’t the time for something like this. Let’s move ahead quickly.」

「……You’re right. No, you’re correct.」

Moana’s way of talking returned back to before. Kouki put her on his back once more and began to run on the desert wordlessly.

Moana also didn’t say anything. Just, her gaze was poured intensely on Kouki’s face from the side. Inside her eyes was mysteriously filled to the brim with clearness and tremor as though she was looking from inside water through water surface.

And, a while after Kouki started running, his <Presence Detection> reacted once more. Kouki and Moana got nervous 「Uwah, enemy!?」, but they felt dubious that the multiple presences that were coming with considerable speed were coming from the direction of the kingdom capital.

Kouki decided to look at the situation for the time being and he rushed to the top of a hill, there he caught the figures of a human group riding Arous dashing toward their way in the distant view.

「Thank god……. It looks like they aren’t <Dark Being>.」

「Yes. Far from that, we should welcome them instead. It seems the warrior chief who remained behind caught a whiff of the danger that befell us.」

According to Moana, it seemed the group of around a hundred people advancing their way with sand cloud rolled up behind them was a force of Synclea kingdom’s knight order. Seeing how they were really in a hurry, most likely

they noticed the attack plan toward the queen using some kind of method and so they traveled in a rush like that.

Moana sighed in relieve with tension leaving her shoulders. She then waved her hand in a big way, causing the soldier group to notice the two of them. The group shifted their path slightly and headed their way.

Kouki also slid down the hill in order to link up with the soldier group.

And then, when both groups finally approached each other until a distance where both sides could confirm each other's face by sight,

"ONEEEEEEEEEEE-CHAAAAAAAAAAANN!!"

Such young voice reverberated. Looking carefully, on the Arous running at the lead of the group, the two could see a young girl climbing up the shoulders of the rider of that Arous while waving her hand around.

Her age was perhaps around seven, eight years old? Her chocolate colored skin was wrapped in pure white clothing, her blond hair that reflected the sunlight glitteringly was tied in twin tail.

The shocked expression of the rider that got climbed really left an impression. The soldiers around the leading rider also looked like their eyes were flying out from their socket. From how they looked like, it could be seen that they were shocked that the young girl was climbing up like that, or rather that the young girl was actually here. It felt like the soldiers' voice of the heart "Why is she here!?" could be heard.

……It seemed, the young girl wasn’t carried to the battlefield by their own will.

And then, as though to represent the heart of those soldiers,

□Wwhaa-!? My, my cute “Koone-tan”, how could she be hereeeeee-!?□

A voice that sounded like a shriek resounded from Kouki’s back.

……It seemed this queen-sama, was a person who called her little sister by adding “-tan”.

During the time until the two joined up with the soldier group, in the middle of the desert,

——UoNeEEEE-CHYAaAAAAN-

Such yell and,

——KOoOOOONE-TAaAAAAAAN-

And such yell resounded repeatedly.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I’ll post chapters in succession until the point where depressing Kouki become determined Kouki!

Was how eager I was, yet I was unable to do that.

Reason: I bought complete works of Lovecraft->against my better judgment I read fkeia-, ia-, Cthulhu, fhta——

Sorry

Setting that aside, at May 25 (at the earliest it will be around 22) the sixth volume will be in the bookstore shelves.

I’ll put the detail in my activity report, so if it is good please check there.

Also, it seems the comic version is updated.

Finally it’s the endgame of abyss arc huh. I was heated up w

Please take a look at that too by all means (Comic Gardo)

Arifureta Chapter 267

Arifureta After II　Koone-Tan

AN: I’m sorry, this chapter is short, and on top of that the story doesn’t progress.

Recently, my head is not working……

「Bieeeeeeeeeeeh」

Such grand crying voice of a girl was echoing. It was a splendid sobbing, to the degree it made one wondered whether the dryness of the desert might be moistened because of it. The glamorous blonde hair twin tail of the girl was wilting limply as though to express the girl’s emotion.

「Your highness! It’s no good even if you are crying! In this dangerous time you are sneaking into a luggage of all things, just what are you thinking! This is not a problem that can be seen as merely a prank!」

The one who was saying that to scold her highness——Moana’s little sister whose name was princess Koone de Shelt Synclea, was the leader of Synclea Kingdom’s soldier force——Donar Sord.

He had a really serious and strict look with short grey hair on his head. His age was around the early half of his forty. In

front of his tall body that was nearly two meter and large frame that was like a bear, Koone whose height might be around 130 centimeter was like a mere speck.

The countless scars that could be seen on Donar’s face and arms were making the dominating aura and pressure enveloping him to become even more fiendish, so objectively looking at him addressing Koone who was sobbing in front of him, it only looked like a man-eating bear was going to prey at a pitiful girl.

But, perhaps it should be said as expected from a princess. Even while shedding tears like a waterfall, Koone spoke her own excuse at the man-eating bear——or rather, at the soldier chief Donar.

「Because-, because Onee-chan is-」

「That is no excuse! Every time, every time, I don’t know how you slip through our watch, but I wish your highness will think about the time and situation! In the first place your highness is——」

「Bieeeeeeeeeeeh. I’m sorryyyyyyy-」

「Nuuh, please don’t interrupt my remonstration! Every single time your highness is always deceiving people by crying like that! Your highness is not really reflecting on yourself!」

「Uwaaaaaaaaahn, I’m reflectinggggg-」

「Good grief! Please promise me that your highness won’t do anything like this anymore!」

「Ueeeeeeeeeeeeehn. I’ll consider it after careful ponderinggggg-」

□Your highness!? What’s with that doubtful reply!?□

Soldier chief Donar was heating up even more. The crying voice was also powering up even further.

At the surrounding there were the soldiers encircling them with hardened defense. Every single one of them were vigilantly watching the surrounding with a stern gaze, but sometimes they were sending glances at the exchange between their chief and the young princess as though wanting to say □This again□ or □Our vigilance is dampened here……□.

□Do, Donar? Isn’t it fine already with that much? Look, Koone-tan is also feeling really sorry already. Okay?□

Flustered. The one who was calling out in such state at soldier chief Donar who was continuing his preaching was Moana who somehow recovered by using new miasma stone that the soldier group was carrying.

Moana was acting timid without any dignity as queen that could be felt from her. Soldier chief Donar’s eye glint flew toward such Moana with a really piercing force.

Moana unconsciously screamed □Hii!?□ and trembled.

□Your majesty-. What do you mean by “okay?” just now! Is your highness really aware of the graveness of this matter!? In the first place, it’s because your majesty is always pampering her highness no matter how much time passes that this kind of situation even occur!□

□I, I’m not really pampering or anything……□

□In that case, please at least stop calling her highness with “Koone-tan”! Just how many times do I need to ask that until

your majesty can understand!」

「Uu……bu, but still. Donar. Koone-ta――Koone coming along without anyone knowing about it is also the blunder of all of you……」

Moana faced away and rebutted with pouted lips. Her way of talking was queenly, but it sounded sulky. Pulsing vein emerged on Donar's forehead in respond to that.

「……Indeed. No matter what kind of circumstance there was, it was my blunder to fail to notice her majesty's action. I will humbly accept any punishment no matter what it is.」

「Eh? Ah, no, something like punishment is too exaggerating――」

「Even so-! That is that, this is this! This matter is concerning the safety of her highness's safety! It's a common knowledge that her highness is a mischievous tomboy! She secretly turned my lunch to be extremely spicy, she whispered many untrue things to my wife, because of that my wife won't listen to me anymore, she willfully put cute decoration on my sword, if this is only something like those then I can just laugh it off! But, for her to secretly come along into a battlefield! This lack of sense of danger cannot be overlooked! Only my words are not enough, how about your majesty also reprimand her highness as her elder sister!」

「Ah, yes. I'm sorry……」

Before anyone knew it, the queen-sama sat on seiza posture beside the sobbing Koone while getting preached on.

What's this chaos……? Kouki did nothing except staring at the sight before his eyes dumbfounded.

「It’s always like this, so don’t let it bother you. The chief is an existence that is like a father already for both her majesty and her highness.」

「Eh?」

A calm voice addressed the astonished Kouki. When Kouki turned his gaze at the voice’s direction, he saw there a soldier with swept back hair of burnt brown color looking to be in his early thirty.

「I am the vice chief of the soldier force, Othar. Kouki-dono, that is your name correct?」

Among the many muscular soldiers, Othar who was relatively small statured was actually the number 2. Kouki was feeling a bit surprised of that while he nodded at Othar’s question.

Othar who was emitting “gentle” atmosphere peacefully from his whole body was smiling with even more calmness and peacefulness after receiving Kouki’s confirmation.

「The chief along with Spenser-sama has been watching over the two of them as though they were his own children since they were small. The king and queen of the previous generation……the father and mother of Moana-sama and Koone-sama has passed on to the great nature five years ago, which caused the chief to be even more so like that. He is also the sword instructor for Moana-sama, so the chief isn’t really holding back when treating the two of them.」

According to Othar, the parents of Moana and Koone seemed to die at the large scale battle against the＜Dark Being＞ that happened five years ago.

At that time, the one who led the <Dark Being> was the current <Dark King>, so their strength was tremendous, all the royal family with the exception of Koone had to fight. It was the best they could do to make the enemy retreated even after they all staked their life.

Although Moana, Spenser, and Donar were seriously wounded, but they barely survived. And since then, in order to support Moana and Koone, Spenser and Donar got close to the two royalty as substitute parent. From the start the two men also received deep trust from the previous generation king, and they were also close to the two princesses as bodyguard and instructor. For Moana and Koone, the two men were just like family.

「……So that's how it is. In that case, it cannot be helped even if Moana-sama is pampering her little sister.」

Her only remaining relative. It was only natural that Moana was pampering her little sister Koone then, Kouki thought with understanding look. Her attaching "-tan" too, yep, surely that also couldn't be helped, Kouki thought.

And then, it seemed Koone whose family passed on in the period of time when it was unclear whether she had awareness to her surrounding or not seemed to like acting mischievously, she also came along to the battlefield because she was worried for her big sister. Surely it was only natural for her to be like that if one saw it as her being lonely and feeling scared of losing her big sister.

「No, Moana-sama's "idiot big sister" act was already like that since Koone-sama was born.」

「Eh?」

「Koone-sama’s tomboyish manner too, she was like that since before the previous generation king passed on to the nature.」

「Eh?」

「Whether it’s in the palace or in the capital, since the two of them were little they were talked with numerous title and nickname like, 「Siscon princess」 「Elusive phantom princess」 「Dual personality queen」「The always grinningly crawling princess Koone-tan」 「Stop it, Haumu will snap you know queen」 「I beg you, please don’t be a nuisance to our work, princess」 「Or rather, please stop the princess, queen」 「Stop it, please stop decorating my weapon Koone-sama」 「GYAAAAAAHH, QUEEN!?」, and so on.」

「No, those aren’t title or nickname, those were just complaints aren’t they!? Or rather, the last one is just a scream isn’t it!?」

If it was said with indirect expression, then it seemed the royalty sisters were really close and intimate to their vassal and people. Absolutely no one was saying that they were problem children.

Othar gently smiled at Kouki’s tsukkomi. It also somehow felt like Othar was saying 「There is nothing else to do but laughing right?」. This gentleness of Othar that was like Buddha might be something polished for the sake of the queen & princess duo.

「Now then, I think it will be the time soon for the relief squad to link up with Spenser-sama and others.」

Othar looked up to the sky and confirmed the passage of time from the inclination of the sun. After the soldier group joined up with Moana and Kouki, a part of the soldier group

headed toward the rescue of Spenser and others without stopping.

If they were taking it slow too much and Spenser and others caught up to them, Spenser would shout at them 「What are you all doing so sluggishly! Bring her majesty to the capital right away!」, Othar explained with a wry smile.

Seeing from Moana's state, it seemed that the effect of the miasma on her had mostly gone already, she looked like she had recovered enough, so under the protection of the soldier group, they should return to the safety zone that was the capital quickly even if it was just Moana.

'And so because of that', with an atmosphere that seemed to be saying that, Othar was,

「Kouki-done, if it's not a bother for you, can I ask you to please call out to the chief?」

Asking Kouki to deal with it, while she was smiling peacefully.

Kouki realized. This person, from the start he was approaching him in order to entrust the mediation of this chaos situation to him. He was a person with calm personality, but he was also a type of person that would really forcefully push a matter to other if it was a matter that could be pushed away to other.

When Kouki glanced at the direction of Moana and co, the preaching was still continuing. Perhaps lured by the crying of Koone, even Moana was getting teary eyed. It seemed she was really enduring the preaching of the soldier chief who was like father to her.

Kouki sighed deeply while replying 「I'm going」, and then he timidly called out to the chief.

「Excuse me, it looks like Moana-sama has recovered already, how about we depart soon?」

「Hmm?」

A sharp glint flew toward Kouki. Kouki reflexively twitched. For some reason he was reminded of Shuuzou (Shizuku's grandfather) at the time when he was training at Yaegashi dojo.

'By any chance, a preaching would also come at him……?' Kouki prepared himself for such possibility.

「Ooh, isn't this hero-dono. How rude of me to not even greet you satisfactorily. Once again, I am the soldier chief Donar Sord. A thousand thanks for your help toward Moana-sama and my comrades in arms.」

Donar's right fist hit *don-* on his chest and directed a gaze of gratitude without any falsehood in it toward Kouki. Perhaps he was originally a gentle person if he wasn't getting heated up to the royalty sisters.

「I am Amanogawa Kouki. Please call me Kouki. If it's word of thanks then I have received enough, so please enough with that. Rather than that, how about we depart soon? Although she has recovered, but it's better if Moana-sama can quickly take a rest, and surely it's also better for the little sister to quickly return to the capital too.」

「Indeed. I had showed you something unsightly. It's my bad habit of getting too passionate when her majesty and her highness are concerned.」

Donar scratched his head awkwardly while saying that. His brief glance toward Moana and Koone was filled with deep affection. Certainly, rather than something that a vassal directed to his lord, that gaze was something like what a father would direct toward his daughter.

「Onee-chan, is that person the hero-sama? Amazing! To come stopping Donar in the middle of his preaching while meeting him for the first time, he is really a hero! Koone really think that he is a hero!」

The tears pulled back instantly and Koone-tan said her definition of hero with a wide smile. It seemed she was saying that a hero was a person who was able to stop the soldier chief's preaching. Or rather than that, what happened with the loud bawling just now……

At her side, Moana was saying 「As expected from Koone-tan. What your eyes are focusing at is different from other people. Onee-chan is really in admiration!」, praising with a tension like an idiot parent who swinging from joy to nervousness from watching the announcement of their child's result in a tournament.

Donar let loose a sharp glint, but perhaps judging that the preaching was over, Koone approached Kouki with light footsteps *tototon* while her twin tail was shaking due to the wind blowing from somewhere.

And then, she looked up with a fixed stare at Kouki with eyes that were jade colored just like her big sister and――smiled widely.

「Nice to meet you! I'm something like a princess, Koone de Shelt Synclavia! Thank you very much for saving Onee-chan and others!」

Saying that, Koone tapped her right hand on her right chest.

It seemed that it was a gesture like bowing one’s head or a salute.

Kouki was thinking that he had to ask about that gesture and other things related to that later on while for the time being her,

「What do you mean something like a princess!?」

Was both sisters were feeling some kind of reluctance in being a royalty? Kouki was thinking of such thing while spontaneously making a tsukkomi.

Midway, Kouki and others managed to link up with Spenser and others who were catching up with a momentum that was leaving behind the rescue squad while screaming 「YOUR MAJESTYYYYY-」.

The angry yell 「Why is her highness is here!?」 from Spenser and the crying voice 「Bieeeeeenn, my Onee-chan love was overflowing desuuuuuu!」 from Koone, the lukewarm gaze of Kouki toward the queen who couldn’t maintain her dignified way of talking in front of her little sister, the queen whose gaze was wandering around from receiving that gaze, and the wordless pleading 「Don’t shave off our tension here~」 from the soldiers, all those were entangled complicatedly and they all kept traveling in the middle of such chaos for a few hours.

Finally that came into view.

A chalk white palace was towering high right in the middle of a large oasis. Several spires were lining up symmetrically to left and right, and at the middle was a building in the shape of a quadrangular pyramid with a conspicuously large size.

Bridges made of stone were stretching to four directions from the chalk white palace that was glittering from the reflection of sunlight, and countless buildings with similar chalk white color were lining up at the outer part of the oasis.

And then, further at the outer edge of the city at that outer part was surrounded by a river around ten meter wide in donut shape. The river wasn’t flowing anywhere, it was like a cycle of a flowing pool.

It seemed inside the city there was also canals that looked like stitches across the city, regardless of the city’s location that was in the middle of desert, several small ships could be seen coming and going there.

——A city of water in the middle of desert.

That was the front line metropolis——Synclea’s kingdom’s royal capital.

「Amazing……it’s beautiful……」

Words of praise were unconsciously leaked out from the mouth of Kouki who was staring at the capital from above a slightly elevated sand hill. From the story of a front line capital that lost the nature, Kouki held the image that the capital would be like a fortress with a rugged and devastated air.

「Fufu, isn’t that right? ——Cough, don’t you think so?」

「Err, Moana-sama. I don’t mind even if you talk normally you know?」

「I don’t really understand what is Kouki talking about.」

Moana slowly averted her sight away from Kouki’s kind gaze. It seemed saying that ‘I’m completely accustomed with manly way of talking~’ was actually an overly optimistic evaluation toward her own readiness.

Moana was resuming walking in order to enter the capital while starting to talk a bit faster to varnish over the matter.

「Kouki. About that oasis you see, it’s not just beautiful, actually it also has a barrier to not let the <Dark Being> get near.」

「Barrier, is it?」

Moana made a smug face once more as though to say ‘How’s that, amazing right?’.

「Yes. Actually, Kouki. The royalty of Synclea kingdom has a special power. Different from the normal blessing power that can be used by anyone as long as they have the correct prayer or vow, there is a blessing art that can only be used by those with the bloodline of the royalty――the heaven’s blessing art. There is one heaven’s blessing art per person of the royal family. Each one is a characteristically special and powerful art.」

「Yes yes yes-! Koone is able to use nyoki nyoki art!」 (TN: Nyoki nyoki seem to mean ‘shooting up one after another’ in Japan……?)

Koone was making a smug face that was exactly like her big sister while twisting and wriggling her body around. The

heaven’s blessing art that was upwardly compatible from the normal blessing art——a nyoki nyoki art. In the end, that was……

「Koone-tan! That’s so cute, Koone-tan! The formal name is pretty much <Regeneration> but, from now on let’s change it to <Nyoki Nyoki Art>——」

「Your majesty?」

「Nothing at all——cough-, it’s nothing.」

According to Moana who returned to her senses after getting hit by Donar’s sharp eye glint, Koone’s heaven’s blessing art <Regeneration> seemed to be an art that could make a place that had lost blessing power to be filled with blessing power once more. The target that was hit by this <divine protection> would have their latent power invigorated temporarily and got strengthened.

「The heaven’s blessing art of an honorable ancestor of the long past is dwelling inside the oasis if Synclea kingdom in exchange of his life.」

「Is it something like, the <Dark Being> is unable to touch this water?」

「Yes. More accurately, they are unable to touch, but when they touch, even the miasma inside their body will be absorbed and dispersed. This place is right in the middle of a desert without any blessing power. Those bunches won’t be able to fight if even the miasma they are retaining is stolen. Therefore, this oasis is the greatest barrier.」

Kouki harbored awe toward the royalty of that time who discarded his life in order to leave behind an art that possessed such tremendous effect for the later generation.

Just how much resolve and wish that person filled into this he wondered.

Kouki was shivering slightly when he suddenly noticed something and asked.

「You said something about in exchange of life, the heaven's blessing art's effect will increase by doing that?」

「……Correct. Different from a blessing art, using heaven's blessing art is difficult. The user will be assailed by intense exhaustion after using it once. Their life will be lost if they overuse it. In everything, there is nothing that can be done "freely" you know.」

Moana said that jokingly, but Kouki could do nothing except returning a vague smile.

He caught sight of Koone who was staring fixedly at her big sister from below Moana. Both sisters possessed beautiful jade eyes and chocolate colored skin. Despite so, only the color of their hair was different. Moana's hair was pure white. Rather than saying that her hair was white colored from the beginning, it was like the hair originally had color that currently had faded away……

There was no one with white hair color even amidst the soldiers around them. It was obvious that hair color wasn't a characteristic of this country's people.

Different from Koone, he was told that Moana participated in the battle five years ago. It was a fierce battle where all members of royalty were lost with the exception of these sisters. It wasn't difficult to imagine how Moana must have risked her life.

Five years ago she should be in the middle of her teens. She lost her family at such young age, she herself fought by straining her life, and protected her country and little sister through――

An indescribable feeling grew violent inside Kouki.

「Hero-sama.」

The young voice calling at him surprised Kouki. His looking down face was naturally heading toward the direction of the voice's owner.

Koone who was staring fixedly at Kouki without him noticing was making a bright smile.

「Onee-chan is amazing right? Koone think she is amazing!」

It was a praise without even a shred of shadow in it. And then, it was respect and love toward her big sister. Koone puffed up her chest as though and showed a really smug face as though it was something about herself. Kouki smiled to such Koone.

「Yes, Moana-sama is amazing.」

「That's right, that's right. In addition she is a beauty right? Koone think she is a beauty!」

「E, err, yes. That's, I think she is a really beautiful person you know?」

Beside Koone who was puffing up her chest while going 'That's right, that's right', Moana was blushing. Rather than because Kouki was praising her, she was blushing because the litter sister who was praising her was irresistibly cute!

Like that. Her breathing was getting rougher and her gaze was focused still on Koone.

「Hero-sama!」

「Err, Koone-sama? Don’t call me hero, I hope you can call me Kouki……」

「I’m sorry. I cannot call hero-sama as brother-in-law-sama!」

「No one is saying anything about that though!?」

「If you want Koone to recognize you, then I have to ask you to show me your sincerity, desu, hero-sama!」

「That’s why, please stop talking with the premise that I am aiming at Moana-sama!」

「If you toy with Onee-chan, I intend to splash extremely spicy spice at your “pii-“! Koone has no mercy to Onee-sama’s enemy!」

「A girl must not say “pii-“! Or rather, what terrifying thing you are saying there!」

Kouki’s tsukkomi was in the peak condition. While he was at it, the eyes of Moana and the surrounding soldiers were opened wide. Donar and Spenser were looking around with angry gaze that said 「Who is the one who taught word like “pii-“ at her highness huh!?」.

Koone-tan——in public she was a princess who was given the recognition of 「the chaos bringer」「chaos in three seconds after appearance」「when found don’t get involved and contact the soldier force right away!」 as the common sense.

Even though the capital was already right before their sight, inside the atmosphere that was turned into chaos, Koone-tan who was directing an unshakable (?) gaze toward Kouki was,

「Flaky hero-sama. I won't forgive you if Onee-chan is hurt. Koone absolutely won't forgive you if that happen!」

She declared such thing with a bit of expectation and a large anxiety residing inside those eyes that were scattering smile everywhere.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

To everyone who reported 'I bought Arifureta vol 6 you know~', thank you very much.

My greatest gratitude to all of you who took the book into your hand.

By the way, that person who came out at the start of Kouki arc is the same person with the character who is the storyteller at the extra story w

Do you know if you answer the questionnaire at the new book information at Overlap-sama's homepage then you will be able to go the page of「afterword's afterword」?

Each time, I put things like inside story of Arifureta and the like there, but this time……

A writing that will make one want to tsukkomi「You are alive!?」 is posted.

If you like, please try to have a look for killing time.

Arifureta Chapter 268

Arifureta After II At Synclea's Capital First Part

「Fuu……」

Kouki naturally leaked out a deep sigh like that. Kouki was sitting down on the bed of a guest room inside the palace that was given to him while making a wry smile toward himself who was like that.

When he looked over the room, the quality of every furniture that was put in minimum there wasn't bad. At the very least, the bed he was sitting on was soft. However, it had so little decoration that it could be said to be simple, it looked inferior when compared to the guest room in Hairihi kingdom no matter how Kouki looked at it.

It showed the current pressing situation of the country, so Kouki fell backward and lied down with his expression staying complicated.

He instinctively leaked out a sigh 「Fuu……」 once more from his mouth. It seemed he was far more fatigued than he thought.

He hadn’t reached the limit of his stamina at all, but the core of his body and the inside of his head felt clingingly heavy. To speak in the meaning of mental fatigue, his current condition was truly in a state of total exhaustion.

Kouki lifted one of his hands to block the sunlight shining in from the window. When he was staring at his hand in a daze, the sensation of “that time” was revived vividly.

(tsu, ……I, killed, huh.)

The sensation of cutting apart flesh. Blank gaze. Spurting out blood……

「Uuh」

He unconsciously felt desire to vomit and he crouched on the bed.

(It should be, the correct choice. ……It was a race against time. ……In order to save Moana-sama and others. ……That’s why, it’s not a mistake, that’s how it should be……)

To persuade himself, to convince himself, he repeatedly, frantically muttered that the option he picked “should be the correct one” over and over.

—Even though I don’t understand what is correct?

—Despite I, not trusting myself more than anyone?

Each time Kouki yelled inside his heart that he should be correct, the cold voice of himself was echoing. That voice sounded as though it was the voice of his other self that he confronted once at the 「Cavern of Ice and Snow」, the figure of himself smiling coldly suddenly crossed over at the back

of his mind. Clad in black holy armor, white hair with black streaks coloring it, and then dark red eyes like monster……

「tsu」

Kouki sat up in a flash and he shook his head. It was his bad habit since the legendary decisive battle. When he noticed his thought was falling into an endless spiral. What’s more it was bad thought he was falling into.

In order to renew his feeling for the moment, Kouki recalled the events after he reached the palace.

「It was dreary but, the audience hall was really beautiful huh.」

The audience hall where Kouki was made to pass through in order to formally introduce him to the palace people was so impressive and beautiful to the degree he unconsciously leaked out such monologue.

It was a chalk white space without a single smudge. There were several pillars with beautiful and detailed engraving that would make anyone sigh in admiration. It seemed the hall was structured to make use of sunlight using mirror reflection to shine even the inner part, and because of that ventilation of light that wasn’t unlike air ventilation, crisscrossing pillars of light were showering inside the audience hall regardless of the place being deep indoor.

And then, Moana when she was sitting on a chair that was made from the same chalk white stone like the building was also positioned under the crisscrossing light pillars, making a beautiful sight that would cause anyone to hold their breath.

Due to everything in the surrounding was white, her chocolate colored skin was really standing out. Her pure white full dress that was beautiful while being simple was also fitting her perfectly that it made him comprehending 「I see, she is really a queen」. On top of that, the white hair which was possessed only by her alone also really gave out the impression of mysticism.

At her surrounding, aides, soldier force, royal guards, and so on were standing by in rows. Because Kouki only saw Moana in her traveling clothes all this time coupled with her warrior attitude, when he was led inside the audience hall as the last one among that line up, he spontaneously stopped walking when he saw her dressing up like that.

He immediately came back to his senses and walked until his designated position, but looking from how Moana's expression became slightly bashful, she must have noticed how Kouki became fascinated.

Feeling really embarrassed that the inside of his heart was seen through by an older girl, Kouki shook his head while moving the focus of his recollection toward another point.

「Nevertheless……as expected, everyone is having expectation huh. ―toward the hero.」

A gloomy feeling welled up inside him. The people inside the audience hall, regardless whether they were military or civil official, everyone were holding expectation toward the existence of "hero".

That could be said to be natural.

In the large scale battle five years ago, Synclea kingdom lost all members of the royal family with the exception of Moana

and Koone. Not only that, they naturally also lost a lot of soldiers.

The power of <Heaven's Blessing Art> the royal family possessed was tremendous. It could be said as the trump card of Synclea kingdom. They used that trump card, paid a great sacrifice, and with that the best they could do wasn't extermination but repelling back the enemy.

That was how powerful the <Dark King> of this generation was. Currently he seemed to be unable to move properly in order to heal the wound he received, but even then there wasn't any sign of the <Dark King> getting replaced, and on top of that even while being currently wounded, the Dark King had the strength that allowed him to keep reigning above the <Dark Being> still.

He was truly a monster. Most likely he was being at his most powerful ever. And then, nine out of ten cases, he the <Dark King> would surely come attacking once more with even more strength. Then, for the current Synclea kingdom that had lost many of their royal family, at that time of the rematch, would they be able to defeat that guy……

The prospect wasn't bright.

At such time, the existence of a hero of another world appeared together with the oracle of Faltina.

If those people were told from Moana's mouth that the hero used technique of another world, that the miasma didn't affect him, and then he defeated <Dark Beings> who were quiet famous unaided and saved Moana and her people, it was impossible to tell them to not expect much from Kouki.

But, even though he understood that……

「……It’s heavy.」

To the degree it felt like he was going to get crushed.

Once, when he was summoned to Tortus, he thought he could anything. He thought there was nothing he couldn’t do. He didn’t even notice the “weight” of the words save the world, rather his heart was feeling exaltation the more people were holding expectation toward him.

Right now……those expectations were simply, simply, nothing but terrifying.

The possibility of him betraying those expectations. The possibility of failure. And also, the possibility of him making mistake.

Aaa, he wanted to run away. But, he had promised, to fight himself, and to fight his heart that wanted to avert his eyes and ran away. Because at that time, he had made a promise, with the girl who was his childhood friend, and with his best friend who came risking his life and punched him.

There was no way, he could run away…….

Aa, agonizing.

「BAA――――NN!! Looking like a princess, but actually might not be a princess-!? iiit’s Kooneee!!」

「Hiih, what’s going on-!?」

Serious-san was blown away along with the room’s door.

Kouki who was immersed in his thought got caught by surprise and he reflexively jumped on his bed. Incidentally he was also screaming pathetically like he never before.

Koone didn’t even pay attention to such Kouki and stepped on the collapsed door while entering the room. She then pointed sharply at Kouki. She even winked *pachin-* while she was at it.

「Hero-sama! Koone thought that perhaps you are feeling fretful, so Koone come here for you!」

「Eh, fretful? Rather, the door……」

Kouki was wondering how did the door get blown away and his gaze glanced alternately at Koone and the door she was stepping on.

However, as expected Koone didn’t pay it any attention.

「Koone will give you a tour of the capital! Now, let’s go!」

「Do, don’t pull at me. Or rather, Koone-sama. Have you asked permission? If you go outside as you pleased, you will get scolded by Spenser-san or Donar-san again you know?」

「Koone think, that going out mean going out of the capital! In other words, inside the capital is the same like in the palace! Koone isn’t going out!」

「Tha, that’s too much of a broad interpretation isn’t it……」

Koone theory was surging out. Koone’s hand beckoned at the wryly smiling Kouki as though to say 「It’s fine so shut up already and follow Koone!」. She was really masculine.

Normally he would want to accompany her. However, currently he wasn’t feeling good at all.

Kouki didn’t know how much the people of the capital were aware about Kouki and the matter of hero, but he entered

the palace by going through the main street together with the soldier force and Moana. Naturally, a lot of people witnessed Kouki riding the same Arous with Moana and Koone.

If he went outside to the capital, perhaps he would be looked at with those eyes of expectation again. Above all else, his heart was awfully tired right now and he wanted to rest slowly.

And so, Kouki tried to speak 「No, I……」 with reservation but,

「Koone Body Attack!」

「Guheh!?」

Koone-tan was always abrupt at any time. Due to the unleashed flying body attack, Kouki was pushed down on the bed. Koone who was straddling Kouki was making a smug face. But, right after that, her expression quietly changed. Kouki held his breath toward that jade eyes that were staring at him fixedly.

「Hero-sama. No matter how much we pray at a place where there is nothing, nothing will happen you know? That’s why, first we should see, hear, and feel. Koone think that those has to be done.」

No good idea or anything would emerge even if he fidgeted hesitantly inside the room like this. Kouki spontaneously opened his eyes wide, feeling as though himself until just now was seen through.

In a complete change, Koone smiled brightly and,

「Koone also want to listen about the story of another world! Please teach me about the hero-sama’s world while also

learning about this world! Koone want to know!」

「Ah, yes……I guess. Then, let’s go.」

Kouki kept getting toyed by the quickly changing aura and expression of Koone, however, he nodded thinking that what Koone said also had truth to it, and he requested her to give him a tour of the capital for a change of mood.

But, at that time,

「Wha, what!? The doo is-. What happened!? Kouki, are you saf—」

Moana-sama who seemed to come to visit Kouki made her entrance.

And then, the queen-sama—or rather the severe siscon saw it. The figure of the little sister she doted straddling a man on the bed. Looking closely—Kouki’s excuse was that he reflexively caught in his arm Koone who jumped him so that she wouldn’t be hurt, that was really what happened—Kouki’s hands were holding the waist of her beloved little sister.

I see.

「Faltina-sama hath spoken. She said, kill Kouki.」

「That’s a lie-. I mean, this is not what it looks like! This is misunderstanding, Moana-sama!」

Kouki who instantly guessed how Moana mistook the situation was desperately attempting to resolve the misunderstanding. But, not reading the mood in this kind of time was Koone-tan Quality.

「Onee-chan! It’s amazing! Hero-sama, he is really hard!」

Kouki wished that she would attach more detail like “the abs is” or something without fail. He didn’t know whether Koone aimed for that or if she was just an airhead, but in any case, Kouki now acknowledged Koone as a troublemaker.

Although, he had no leeway at all for speaking out his complaint. Moana-sama whose expression had turned into one resembling a Hannya mask was reaching toward the sword on her waist that she seemed to always carry around,

「HEAVEN’S JUDGMENTTTTTT-」

「Hiiih, don’t use real sworddddddddd-」

She assaulted the scoundrel that “toyed” with her beloved little sister.

Even while screaming, Kouki wasted no time to hold Koone with one arm while moving out of the way. At the same time his other hand created a miniscule barrier on his palm and averted the sword attack. For the moment the sword was still sheathed, so he wouldn’t get cut, but Moana’s Hannya face made him thought of a naked blade, so Kouki was desperate.

Moana who was slashing down from a forced stance because of her agitation had her balance crumbled when her sword was parried. Like that she collapsed on top of Kouki.

Kouki erased the barrier and immediately caught Moana.

There,

「Moana-sama!? Just now, a loud voice was—」

The strongest royal guard captain who doted on the two sisters like father made his entrance.

The captain witnessed it. The scene on the bed, where the pair of sisters who he thought as his own daughters, were being embraced by a man with both his arms.

「HEAVEN’s PUNISHMENTTTTTTT-」

「Hiiih, this is a misunderstandingggggggg-」

The sorrowful scream of the hero-sama echoed once more in a corner of the palace.

By the way, Kouki caught Spenser’s attack using both his feet. In doing so, Spenser flopped down and his face dove on Kouki’s important part, while Kouki was fainting in agony, Kouki who was embracing Moana and Koone with both his arms while holding Spenser on his important place with his legs were seen by the people of the palace who were rushing into the room. It went without saying how screams were raised.

「Uu, that was a horrible experience……」

The disheartened voice of Kouki echoed in the bustling shopping district of the capital. Beside him, Moana and Koone were walking with their faces hidden by wearing hood. Moana looked apologetic while Koone was laughing cheerfully.

「Koone-tan! You troubled Kouki, so reflect a bit on your action!」

The two had more or less finished apologizing to Kouki, but it was doubtful whether Koone was reflecting from her outward appearance. Moana scolded Koone, something that she rarely did.

「The flustered hero-sama was interesting I'm sorry!」

「That's amazing, Koone-tan! You are able to apologize properly!」

「No, it's doubtful that she is apologizing, or rather it feels like I'm getting dissed……」

Kouki was staring fixedly at the elder sister who was completely pampering her little sister, and Koone who was understanding various things somehow and did what she did.

「Now now, hero-sama. Koone will let you to eat the capital's specialty food! With Onee-chan's money!」

「Leave it to me Koone-tan! Onee-chan has been saving a lot of my pocket money for this kind of time!」

An unexpected truth was shed on light. It seemed the money that queen could use for her personal use was given with pocket money system.

When Kouki was introduced in the audience hall, there was a tottering gramps that looked like he was going keel over anytime, but that gramps was actually civil official chief (a position like a prime minister), and he was introduced as the one who took charge of the financial affairs too.

The tottering gramps handing over pocket money toward Moana-sama who accepted it with a pleased face……

Kouki imagined such scene and for some reason he felt warm and fluffy.

But, for the time being, he guessed that he should say what ought to be said.

「Moana-sama. Aren't you too weak against Koone-sama's casual coaxing?」

'Isn't she too pampering toward her little sister who actually might be black hearted in truth?' Kouki tried saying that while smiling wryly.

But, the one who objected wasn't Moana, the objection came flying from a small gangster.

「? Hero-sama wishes for an eight year old girl to pay? Is that so? The penniless and jobless hero-sama!」

「Gofuh!?」

「Understood. The eight year old girl Koone will treat the penniless adult hero-sama! ……It's just a pocket money that Koone saved earnestly, but Koone will use it for hero-sama's sake!」

「It's fine! I get it already so please stoopp! The gaze of the surrounding is painful!」

Koone tilted her head with a wondering expression 'Is that so?'. Kouki thought. This little girl, she absolutely did what she did intentionally.

Little girl these days was terrifying. Kouki recalled the daughter of the demon king that crossed his mind, and then he also imagined the scene of that terrifying little girl who inherited her father’s disposition taking the hand of this little girl before his eyes who was actually black hearted, where the two of them were getting along well with each other. His body shivered. It was truly a terrifying imagination. Just like a nightmare.

Kouki casually made an oath. ‘Let’s not provoke the little girl to the best of his ability’, like so.

Then, at that timing Koone quietly ran off, perhaps she discovered something at the road ahead. While thinking ‘she really move around abruptly huh’, Kouki followed behind Moana who was chasing behind Koone in hurry.

「……That’s」

Ahead of his gaze, Koone was skillfully slipping through the crowd of people. Seeing that, Kouki unconsciously raised a voice of admiration.

It seemed no one noticed the small Koone rushing below them. Surprisingly, it seemed Koone sensed the awareness within the field of vision and gaze of people, so by avoiding that awareness she was able to take covert action that would make even an assassin to feel shocked.

「Koone has a good mind. No, perhaps I should say that she has good sense. She read the thought and feeling of people to a surprising degree. To the level that can make you think that perhaps she has a mind reading ability.」

「Sensing the thought……」

Moana spoke while watching Koone slipping smoothly through the crowd.

「That movement that cannot be noticed by other people, it seems that it’s also the application of that. Something like, by looking, hearing, and feeling carefully, she can understand what someone is focusing on.」

「Is that how she sneaked into the baggage of the soldier force before……」

「Yeah. Amazing right!? That’s my Koone-tan!」

「Tha, that’s right. In a sense, it’s really amazing……」

An elder sister boasting of her little sister with a triumphant look. Certainly what she mentioned was amazing but……

When Kouki saw Koone sneaking into the back of some fruit seller, he couldn’t help but spontaneously thought that it was really a waste of talent.

In the fruit store that seemed to be ran by a married couple, colorfully juicy fruits were lined up inside, the husband was livelily raising his voice to attract customer from behind the goods’ shelf.

Koone-tan was creeping up behind him. And then,

「BAA—NN!! This is the one who hallucinate to be a princess since who know when! Kooneee!!」

「GYAAAAAAH, what is this-!?」

The husband was toppled over. Suddenly behind him an explosion reverberated, which might be caused by blessing

art, and at the same time someone appeared while raising a loud voice. There was no way he wasn’t surprised.

The husband looked behind him while falling on his butt, there he found Koone who was smiling widely with both her hands going banzai and his shoulders slumped down. With a small voice 「Koone-sama again huh……」 his expression turned troubled.

「Uncle Geor, Koone came! Three kukuri please!」

「Thank you for your patronage. That’s what I want to say, but please spare me from the surprise each time you came, Koone-sama.」

It seemed that Koone was a regular customer of this store, and she was also a habitual criminal who surprised the owner while she was at it.

「Ahahahah, it doesn’t matter about my husband, but Koone-sama, if you don’t act in moderation then the soldier chief will scold you again.」

Neglecting his husband who was still falling on his butt, the madam with large built selected the fruit for Koone quickly. Moana who chased after Koone handed over money toward the woman who was really like an auntie of the shopping district.

「I’m sorry about Koone every time. She seem to be really pleased with the fruit of this store.」

「My, this is your majesty. Today both of you sisters are going out it seems. Well, please don’t worry about it. No matter what he say, but my husband too is looking forward to Koone-sama’s visit after all.」

「Thank you for saying that.」

Kouki watched over the exchange between Moana and the married couple from a step away.

It seemed that Koone's entrance also caused the surrounding people to notice that the royal sisters were here, but affection could be seen from their expression. It wasn't excessive respect, but something that could be thought as coming from exceedingly close relationship. But, by no means the people were looking lightly at the sisters, it was obvious even just from a glance that everyone held respect and affection.

It seemed that the distance between the royal family of Synclea kingdom and the people was extremely small.

But, what made Kouki curious wasn't that. If it was about a royal family who was openhearted and friendly, he was already acquainted with princess Liliana. For Kouki this wasn't something that was that unusual.

While Kouki was staring fixedly at that point he was curious about, the married couple noticed his gaze and called out to him.

「Oh, that person there……by any chance, is he the recently rumored hero-sama?」

「Eh? Ah, yes. I'm called like that more or less.」

「Oh my, in that case then this three kukuri is not enough, I have to give a bit of extra. Setting that aside, is something the matter with this? It seems you are keep staring at this since some time ago.」

Saying that, the madam clapped *pon-* on it, at the sword that she was wearing on her waist.

Yes, the married couple of the fruit store were carrying sword. When he looked really closely, not to mention the shop owner, even the shop employees at the neighboring shops who were calling at Koone, and also most of the people who were coming and going, everyone were carrying the minimum arms.

They were just a shop owner, just a person who seemed like a normal housewife, but everyone was carrying sword on their waist.

Kouki asked with a bit of bewilderment.

「Excuse me, both madam and sir are this shop's owner right? Not actually a member of the soldier force that is helping here in your off-day?」

「? Yes, yes. Both of us has been doing business here for a long time though……」

「Err, then, why are you carrying sword?」

From the look of the madam who didn't understand why Kouki asked her that, it seemed civilian carrying sword was something really normal in the capital, it didn't look like there was any particular circumstance.

「About that hero-sama. This place is the world's front line you know? Although the soldiers are the specialist of the battlefield, but there is also no reason that fruit seller cannot fight, the＜Dark Being＞ isn't the type of fellow that would let go of us just because we are a fruit seller right?」

「Ma, madam is fighting?」

「Yes, yes, I will fight you know. That is if this capital becomes a battlefield. Of course, I'm praying that it won't come to that. But, not doing anything, not able to do anything, and die simply, something like that, I'll have none of that. It's nothing big, I have been slapping my husband routinely everyday. One or two <Dark Being> is no concern at all.」

After saying so, the madam laughed heartily while slapping her husband who was making a pathetic expression beside her repeatedly.

Front line—Kouki felt it for real just how far the meaning those words had.

The people *remaining* in this capital, all of them had the resolve to fight when the time came. They were spending their days with the resolve for all the capital's people to be counted as war strength.

When Kouki looked at Moana beside him, her gaze dropped down with a silent expression. She was feeling down—but that wasn't really it. She was calmly, accepting their resolve, it was that kind of expression.

Koouki looked over his surrounding.

Without knowing whether it was tomorrow or some other day, the next moment they might be thrown into battle with their right to live on the line. The people were living with such resolve.

Drip, something spilled out inside his heart.

「Isn't it, scary?」

The madam's expression turned puzzled. And then, while laughing heartily she,

「That’s, obviously it’s scary! But see, look, the kukuri of our store, if it’s for the sake of making the customers able to enjoy this then, well, I’m going to work a bit harder. Right, dear?」

「Well yeah. If we don’t sell kukuri, who will then sell kukuri in the capital. As a fruit store owner, I’m not gonna allow the guys doing their best fighting to be unable to even eat a kukuri.」

The shop owner shrugged and lightly washed the kukuri his wife picked before handing it over. Kukuri was a fruit with an appearance like a yellow apple. Koone quickly nibbled at it. Her eating manner was so hearty it made him wanted to tsukkomi just in where she was a princess.

Even while chuckling, Moana also put the fruit into her mouth while urging Kouki with her gaze 「Try eating it」.

Kouki felt his heart whirling from the madam’s words while tried a bite of the fruit. Right away, thick sweet and sour taste spread inside his mouth, and a rich aroma tickled his nose. If he had to guess, then plum had the most similar taste with this fruit……but, it had a good flavor that he couldn’t just eat at a moment notice even in earth.

「Delicious……」

「Right, right!? This is Koone’s recommendation, so that’s natural. Koone think that it’s only natural!」

For some reason Koone made an awfully smug face more than the married couple fruit seller. While her mouth was smudged all over with fruit juice. The madam was laughing heartily once more while politely wiping Koone’s mouth. Moana went 「So, sorry to trouble you」, even though she was

the queen yet she was feeling obliged. The husband looked at such Moana and smiled.

Kouki who was staring at them took one more bite of kukuri. For this, for the sake of the people who wanted to eat this, the married couple fruit sellers would fight when the time came. He took a bite while chewing on their words.

Bright moon shined brightly at the peak of the night sky.

Kouki who was led around by Koone until the sun fell was now leaning on the railing at the guest room’s veranda while staring at the moon tiredly. The capital was different from the city in earth, the brightness had completely submerged and the city looked quiet.

Even coldly the mystical moon was reflected on the oasis, making a sight where it seemed there was twin moon. It was really a great view. The sparkling water surface was also wondrously beautiful.

Kouki’s gaze dropped at the moon wavering on the water surface without any particular reason while recalling Koone’s tomboyish act and the easy big sister who was merely doting. A small smile emerged on his lips.

He recalled the later matter after he ate kukuri at that fruit store.

The next place he was guided toward was the best weapon shop in the capital.

When Koone made her entrance with □BAA————NN!! This is the one who make anyone challenged to reexamine the definition of princess! Kooneee!!□ from the back entrance of the shop, a boy about the same age with Kouki went □GYAAAAAAAH, Koone-sama came out againnnn!?□and toppled over backward.

With the ferry rower to cross the oasis river that they visited next, she intentionally leaped out from underwater while saying □ZABAA————NN!! The one who won't be able to deny if asked whether she is a parasite in the palace!? Kooneee!!□ . □GYAAAAAAAH, why is it always from underwater every time!?□ the rower uncle yelled so while toppled backward and fell into the river……

But perhaps it was the usual thing, because the uncle returned to the ship normally with a smile while saying □Please spare me from that anymore□, and his clothes along with Koone were dried using blessing art……

Then she circled behind the royal guard led by Spenser and the soldier force led by Donar who were actually following Kouki and others while surrounding them in all directions, made her appearance □BAA————NN!! Don't think I'll be a princess till forever! Kooneee!!□, and smashed into pieces the confidence of the royal guards and soldiers □GYAAAAAAAAH, your highness!? Why is your highness over there!?□……

The nickname of chaos in three seconds after appearance really suited her.

But, for Kouki, Koone who was such unprecedented tomboy was not just a mere girl who loved prank anymore.

□See, hear, and feel, is it……□

Perhaps, the people who Kouki met and exchanged words directly with today were picked by Koone. People that possessed words that could possibly influenced Kouki the most.

If not, then there was no way that Kouki's heart could be currently shaken to this degree even though they were only exchanging brief words.

「Everyone……were really lively.」

The people he met, every single one of them possessed confidence of their way of living. They were proud of themselves.

What should he do so he could have confidence about himself like them? Could he be proud……could he believe?

「If I fight like I'm asked in this world……will I understand?」

But, like that, what would be different than the time when he was summoned to Tortus……

Kouki shook his head. He was about to fall into an endless spiral of thought again. He was summoned, experienced his first kill, heard the circumstance of this world and the story of the people living here……his heart was completely tired.

'Let's rest for today.' Deciding that, Kouki turned around.

「Good evening, this is Koone.」

「HIIIIIIIIIH!? Since when!?」

With a bright smile, Koone-tan was right behind him when he noticed. Kouki's scream echoed.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I’m resigned to accept the opinion of ‘the story is not progressing huh’.

However, in order for Kouki to change, I want him to have a lot more encounter and experience, but then this chapter of the capital move slowly and won’t progress faster like this……

In case I write the story at the mental side, it will become long no matter what I do won’t it……

And so, for the reader the development that is a bit tedious will continue, but this development will be limited to just Kouki arc so I wonder if I can wish for mercy from you readers.

Well, just as showed in「The Gathering of the Returnees」, after a week that person will make his entrance, so the time left for Kouki was also that one week……

However, Koone is standing out huhh……at first it should be like this though.

When I wrote for some reason inside my head Poison-○n of [This world is a game you said~] you see…… (TN: Seem to refer to Poison-tan from Kono Sekai ga Game dato Ore dake ga Shitteiru, not really sure though. Anyone can clear up about this reference?)

Shirakome’s plot always get instant death……

Arifureta Chapter 269

Arifureta After II　At Synclea’s Capital　Last Part

「Are you okay, hero-sama?」

「I’m not okay at all! Why are you here!? Or rather since when!?」

Kouki was cowering in fear while raising his voice, his hand tightly grasping from above his clothes his heart that was jumping around inside.

He even forgot to use polite language against the royal family and made tsukkomi with his usual way of talking.

That was how scary Koone-tan who sneaked behind him with a bright grin was. It was simply a horror. He wanted to yell 「Enough with this little girl already-」 with all his strength.

「Fu-fun! Koone’s “stealthy skill” that cannot be noticed even by hero-sama is amazing right!」

「It’s not in the level of amazing……even＜Presence Detection＞doesn’t work……」

「H~m. Koone doesn’t really understand what is this thing called＜Presence Detection＞about but……hero-sama’s

focus was completely directed somewhere else you know?

Koone tilted her head. According to her, with how he was completely distracted, what's more in his exhausted state, it was comparatively easy for her to sneak at him by using her special technique and her heaven's blessing art at the same time.

Using heaven's blessing art at the same time? If I remember correctly, Koone-sama's art is <Regeneration> isn't it……

Fufuhn. It's called <Regeneration> because it can bring back greenery to the desert but, its essence is direct interference art that focus, attach, or adjust blessing power.

Like that, by adjusting and harmonizing her own blessing power with the miniscule blessing power inside the air, her existence became harder to comprehend—to say it further she was able to "adapt".

It's Koone-style "Stealthy Art – Level 2".

What are you using the unique ability of the royal family in full for……

Kouki massaged his temple repeatedly as though he was getting headache.

Hero-sama, hero-sama. Won't you talk a bit with Koone?

……No, I'm going to rest—

Kouki whose respect toward royalty was blown away completely to somewhere easily tried to reject Koone's invitation.

But, his gaze suddenly met hers. He was suddenly at loss for words after seeing Koone’s gaze.

That gaze was really deep. To the degree that he held his breath in surprise. There was earnest and pressuring feeling inside that gaze. Different from the figure of the tomboy and wild and mischievous princess, those were the eyes of someone with unknown depth.

「Won’t you talk with Koone a bit?」

「……What is it?」

Kouki’s reply made Koone’s mouth burst open in a smile. With rapid steps she stood beside Kouki before she gazed at the direction of the oasis—the capital.

「How was it today? The capital is a good place right? Everyone was all good people right?」

「Yes, very much so. They are really good person. While knowing the current situation where the tomorrow is unknown, yet they don’t despair……everyone choose something, and they hold pride……that their choice is correct.」

Koone nodded. But, her expression for some reason didn’t look at all like the proud expression she showed him when she gave him the tour through the capital. Rather, it was an expressionless face that looked as though it lost emotion.

Kouki who had only seen her acting innocently until now held his breath again.

「Do you now want to help us?」

「…….So, that’s your aim just as I thought.」

Kouki sighed. As expected, Koone wasn’t just a naïve and innocent princess.

「Yes. *That too* is one of Koone’s aims. Because it seems that hero-sama has hesitation.」

It was likely that she had heard from Moana too. How Kouki felt hesitation about fighting. That he was trying to show a path where there would be no fighting to even the <Dark Being>.

Koone seemed friendly, but perhaps she actually didn’t believe him at all. Thinking that should be only natural, Kouki gazed at Koone while staying silent.

「Koone *more or less* is a royalty, so I want to save the people. Koone understand that Synclea kingdom, no, the human race is already at the limit. There will be no salvation without relying on hero-sama.」

「Koone-sama?」

‘But see’, Koone continued, to which Kouki directed at her his dubious expression. And then, he was speechless hearing her next words.

「Based on the circumstance, or perhaps based on hero-sama’s feeling, if you think that it’s impossible then—please escape.」

「What, are……」

While speaking of wanting help, while speaking of there was no future already, she told Kouki to escape by his own decision. ‘I don’t mind if you forsake us’, ‘It’s fine for you to not save us’, she said such unbelievable thing.

「However, at that time, please take away Onee-chan together without fail.」

After telling him to leave everything else, she asked him to allow just her big sister to survive. As expected, Kouki couldn’t reply to those words. It wasn’t because he was refusing the request. It was because he couldn’t understand Koone’s thinking.

Koone finally met her gaze with the confused Kouki.

「Hero-sama, you have a rough idea of how to return to your own world aren’t you?」

「Wha-, how do you……」

「I heard from Onee-chan. Hero-sama at first confirmed whether you can go home or not. In other words, from the beginning hero-sama’s condition is to go home. But, I heard that when hero-sama was told that it’s unknown, hero-sama didn’t even look upset.」

In other words, he had an idea of how to go home.

「But, most likely that method isn’t something that hero-sama can do by yourself. Perhaps the timing, or some kind of special phenomenon or item is necessary—possibly, someone will come to pick up hero-sama.」

「Why, do you think so?」

「Because hero-sama hate killing and fighting right? A world that ask such thing from hero-sama must be a despair. If someone in such situation is told that they cannot go home, normally they should be more despairing or upset. Hero-sama is still composed because hero-sama has the belief that you can go home.」

「……Haha, you got me there.」

He was seen through by a little girl who wasn't even ten years old. Furthermore, she also showed an attitude of conviction that her hypothesis wasn't mistaken from Kouki's reaction. It seemed he was also led around by the nose.

Kouki couldn't help but smile wryly.

He was still composed. That was a fact.

It was clear that there was no way Shizuku and others would abandon Kouki. The fact that he was summoned to another world would surely be told to them by Liliana, and not long from now the gate would be opened. He should be able to go home without doubt, and when the time came, he could even be like that demon king, abandoning this world because this problem was unrelated with him.

He was agonizing because of his own heart, not because he was cornered.

In a sense, that was exactly the reason he was able to concentrate only at his own emotion. Yes, even more than toward the crisis of this world.

While he understood that this world was in the depths of despair, in the end, he prioritized himself.

Kouki thought. 'Aa, I'm really a coward.'

「Hero-sama isn't a coward you know?」

「Eh?」

Those words sounded as though his heart was read. Kouki opened his eyes wide in surprise and looked at Koone.

Koone made a troubled smile.

「Hero-sama, don’t have any duty at all toward this world. There is no need at all for hero-sama who is a complete stranger to feel guilty. The reason is――」

――Even herself who was a royalty, was prioritizing her own feeling and told him that it was fine if he didn’t save them.

「That’s……」

「Certainly, Koone love everyone in the capital, Koone want to save them. That is my true feeling without any falsehood in it. But, for Koone the most important person is Onee-chan. If Onee-chan and all the people are weighed in scale, the scale will tilt toward Onee-chan. Rather than the many that Koone loved, Koone treasure my only dear family.」

Those words were surely unbecoming for a royalty.

「Onee-chan is at her limit already. She used heaven’s blessing art too much at the previous battle, now she has no power remaining anymore. She overused it to the degree it cannot recover anymore. If she has to fight that＜Dark King＞ one more time she will die with certainty.」

「That white hair……so it’s because of that just as I thought……」

「Yes. Koone’s father and mother, big brother and uncle, all the cousins, every~one died. Donar and Spenser are like family for Koone, but even so, for Koone my true family is, the one I loved the most, is only Onee-chan now. For Koone, only losing Onee-chan is――unbearable.」

She understood that it crossed the limit of being mischievous, even so she sneaked inside the baggage of the

soldier force using her all and rushed out of the capital. This was the reason.

Evil hand was drawing near her most beloved big sister who left the capital following the oracle. If she heard such thing, she wouldn’t be able to not rush off. She didn’t have any leeway to consider the duty of royalty or about being nuisance to other people.

Even while she understood that what she did was the worst conclusion toward everyone, that it was an outrageously horrible betrayal, but living in a world where her big sister died was something Koone couldn’t think about. If something happened to her big sister in the worst case, she was even prepared to suicide by the sword beside her corpse.

That was why, because she was such a person……

「See? After all someone like Koone, is just “someone that is like a princess”.」

It wasn’t a kind of joke. Koone herself was the one who didn’t recognize Koone de Shelt Synclea as a royalty the most.

Kouki stared at Koone. He wondered just how much emotion this small girl was hiding inside that small body.

——Rather than the many that were looking for salvation, a person who was important for herself was more

What crossed Kouki’s mind, was that guy’s figure who once said the same thing at him.

Was it selfish?

Was it irresponsible?

Was it an “evil” that ought to be scorned?

「If I run away」

「Yes?」

「If I choose to run away while taking away Moana-sama, Koone-sama will also come along right?」

For some reason Koone looked puzzled at Kouki’s question and,

「No?」

「……」

「For Koone, if Onee-chan is alive then it’s fine with that. If it can let Onee-chan to stay alive somewhere, then Koone will be able to do my best by that much. And so, Koone will take the baton pass as queen.」

‘Just as I thought’, Kouki thought.

If Koone was a person who could abandon everything other than her big sister, there was no way she would be liked by the capital’s people that much. There was no way she would run around with the pretext of pranking and showed out her face throughout the capital.

And then, surely this wise girl was convinced of their defeat in the future. Whether the future where many humans were caught and turned into livestock, and also the future where few humans would continue painful battle as guerilla fighter, and how she would be needed as the cornerstone to support the battle of such people, surely she had imagined it without doubt.

After all her heaven’s blessing art <Regeneration> would only really shine at such devastated world, in order to support the foundation of people’s living.

Kouki reflexively almost said the words「Then, all the human in this world, take them to another world somewhere」, however, he gritted his teeth and held his tongue.

When he suggested it at Ragal, his heart was messed up like a library that had all its bookshelves pushed down. It was just a desperate proposal.

Now that he was calm, he couldn’t speak it out so easily. The reason was that the one who could accomplish that wasn’t himself. He didn’t even know if he could pay the compensation. Even if he could pay, he didn’t know if his suggestion would be accepted.

He couldn’t say such uncertain hope.

Against Kouki whose expression distorted looking somewhat painful, Koone’s opened her mouth with an atmosphere that suddenly relaxed.

「Now then, that’s all Koone want to say. In conclusion, if possible Koone hope hero-sama can save the world okayyy~. Ah, but if it’s impossible then super run away taking just Onee-chan with you! Leave the rest to Koone then! Like that! Koone is cool. I’m super cool is what Koone think!」

‘Coool Kooone, coool Kooone!’ The usual innocent Koone twirled round and round while repeatedly yelling so. Kouki’s expression became speechless seeing such Koone.

When Koone stopped still her twirling coool Kooone dance, she then pointed sharply at Kouki and gave him a mischievous expression.

「Now then, let’s cross the last item in the list today! Hero-sama, hero-sama. There is a peerless beauty at the terrace located in the west of the palace you know? If you go there now, you will be able to meet a sexy beauty with alcohol provided! This might be a chance to deepen relationship?」

‘Get done in by Onee-chan’s charm, and like her so much you won’t be able to abandon her by any means!’ Such voice of heart was resounding loudly.

Kouki tried to ask Koone somehow.

「By the way……my right to refuse?」

Koone spoke with a bright smile.

「I’ll yell you know? 「Nooo——, hero-sama, what are you doinggg!? Dragging Koone into your room! Just what are you going to do with this “niice bodyy”~~~」 Koone will yell that loudly you know?」

「I’ll go right away! I really want to meet with pretty woman quickly-」

Kouki answered energetically. He didn’t even have the composure to make a tsukkomi how nasty she was.

Koone-tan was simply scary even without her sneaking at him. Especially her smiling face.

Kouki arrived at the place Koone taught him.

Midway, Spenser appeared from the shadow of a building and asked him threateningly「Where are you going at this time?」, but when Kouki answered with dead fish eyes 「It’s Koone-sama’s……guidance」, he conceded him the passage with similar dead fish eyes while saying 「……Is that so, I’m sorry」.

This royal guard captain gave off sorrowful aura that made him thought that various things had surely happened to him too in the past……

‘Now then, where could Moana-sama be’, Kouki wondered while running his gaze around.

Then,

「……Kouki?」

A voice came from above him. When he looked up, he found the figure of Moana looking down wonderingly at him from a terrace at the second floor.

With the moon that was half hidden because of the spire as the background, her appearance with her cheeks slightly red was indeed charming.

The moonlight also made her hair that was like snow to be tinged with phosphorescence, that charming figure which looked mystique made Kouki to gulp reflexively.

「What’s the matter, for you to be here?」

「It’s Koone-sama’s guidance.」

Perhaps because of his agitation, Kouki repeated that answer like a pious believer that worshipped the god Koone.

Moana looked puzzled before a beat later she couldn’t endure and start chuckling.

「I see, I see. It cannot be helped if it’s her guidance. Come on, get up here. Accompany me drinking for a bit.」

「Ah, yes, then……」

Kouki who was assaulted by a strange embarrassment entered the building and climbed the stair hastily. It seemed the place where Moana was at was adjacent with the corridor, the door was left open.

At the spacious chalk white terrace, Moana was leaning on the splendidly molded handrail with one of her hands swirling a glass. Her soft smile shaken Kouki once more.

「What’s the matter with you since just now? You are strangely stilted. Did something happen with Koone?」

「……We only had a little talk.」

Kouki took advantage to blame the cause of his agitation because of Koone. She had thoroughly shocked him, so it should be allowed for him to do this much. He pulled himself together while thinking that and stood up beside Moana.

「What kind of talk?」

Moana asked him that while presenting her glass at Kouki.

Kouki hesitated at what she meant with that gesture. When he looked there was bottle placed on the handrail, but there was only one glass which was the one Moana was holding. That was only natural seeing she was drinking alone. In other words, she told him to accompany her drinking was by sharing the use of her glass together……

In the end, was it fine to drink from the same glass with the queen……

Looking from the expression of Moana who was pushing the glass at him, he saw how she told him to not mind it.

Kouki persuaded himself 「Well, fine I guess」, and put the glass on his mouth. The amber colored alcohol looked like whisky in a glance, but the taste was fruit liquor. From the fragrance and taste that he had familiarity with, he guessed that most likely this was something that used kukuri. The alcohol content was also not high, the sensation in his mouth was nice with extremely delicious taste.

Moana who saw that Kouki was pleased with the drink smiled happily while intentionally pouring a second helping.

Kouki felt obliged while answering her question.

「We talked about how the people we met today are good people.」

「I see……and do you think so?」

「Yes.」

Kouki nodded. And then he hesitated a bit. Should he talk about Koone’s request to him that was unbecoming for a royalty? But, he immediately shook his head and shook off that thinking. In exchange, he spoke about another matter.

「Then…….we also talk, about how you are at your limit.」

「……」

Moana stiffened for a moment. And then, her expression became complicated and she took the glass from Kouki in a

flash, this time she drained up the glass empty. From the sigh ‘fuu’ that she breathed out, the fragrance of sweet fruit wafted out.

「It was……a horrible battle.」

「Is it about the battle five years ago?」

「Yes. He was really a monstrous fellow. He spouted out miasma to empty air, then all of it become countless number of weapon, or become beasts. That kind of＜Dark Being＞, I had never seen it before.」

Her way of talking returned to casual and her gaze flew to the past. She took off the mask of the queen and spoke her words as just Moana. Kouki stayed silent and lent her his ear.

「The army’s number was also dreadful, everyone without exception fought desperately. I too used my＜Divine Protection＞ power continuously. But, no matter how much we fought desperately, everyone died. No matter how much ＜Divine Protection＞ I used, I couldn’t protect them.」

With the light of blessing power from heaven’s blessing art ＜Divine Protection＞, the erosion of miasma could be blocked. That was to say, against attack type where weapon formed from the miasma used by＜Dark Being＞ was wielded, this art also became an immense barrier.

In that hellish battle, Moana had the role to protect the soldiers.

But, in reality, she couldn’t protect them to the end no matter how much power she wringed out. Just how much the sense of powerlessness felt by this girl who understood that her role was as a protector……

「I was determined to offer up my life. I planned to use up all my strength in that fight. Because, the one who should survive isn't me, it should be my big brother.」

「That's……」

Kouki reflexively almost interrupted, but Moana's vast eyes and the fierce regret whirling inside them stopped his words.

「Big brother's <Heaven Light> was a heaven's blessing art that excelled in killing ability. The one that used the opening father and the others created by throwing their life to deeply wound the <Dark King> was also big brother. At that time, even though if only I could just protect big brother from the last counterattack of the <Dark King>, there would still be hope for him.」

Moana's big brother──Nada de Shelt Synclea struck a sure attack at the <Dark King> with the life of his father the king and others as the price. But, the <Dark King> that bore a deep wound that was fatal unleashed an attack of all his might at the very end.

As the result, Nada who stiffened after using a big technique got taken by surprise and died, and the <Dark King> was also carried away by his subordinate and retreated. That was the conclusion.

In order to protect Nada, Moana used <Divine Protection> to the full extent of her ability, but it wasn't enough. Nada's death when Moana was just a step away from exhausting her life forcefully rescinded the <Divine Protection>.

Her regret was the thinking that perhaps if she used <Divine Protection> by pouring all her life the moment <Dark King> counterattacked, then she might be able to save her big brother.

At the time that was her full strength. That was why, it was useless to even think about it. But, she couldn’t help but think it.

「<Heaven Light> is more effective for bringing down the escaped <Dark King>. And Koone’s <Regeneration> is indispensable for returning the world to before after the <Dark King> is exterminated. What the world need, isn’t a used up wreck like me.」

「That’s speaking too far, Moana-sama.」

Moana drank one more glass of the fruit wine before speaking a self-torturing sentence. Kouki gently took away the glass from her.

Moana directed her gaze at Kouki. She stared fixedly at him while letting out a faint voice.

「Hey, Kouki. Did Koone, say to you that she wanted you to take me away and escape?」

「—tsu」

「Ahaha, sheesh that child, as I thought she asked you that huh.」

Just how was this pair of sisters could take him by surprise like this? Kouki grumbled inside his heart with the feeling of venting his anger.

「How does Moana-sama know that?」

「Of course, that’s because I’m her big sister.」

「You pair of sisters are just too sharp.」

「Fufuh.」

Moana chuckled just a bit cheerfully and warned him still with that light mood.

「I’m telling you I won’t run away okay? Just spare me from anything forceful.」

「……You will still fight, even in that completely worn-out condition? Even though you understand that next time you won’t be able to endure?」

「Yeah.」

She easily chose the path of death. Something inside Kouki was stirred awfully hearing those words.

「……Why, are you that strong? Why is everyone, can easily do what I can’t? You might die you know? You will have to kill someone by fighting you know? Don’t you feel scared?」

「Kouki……」

「Why? Why are you able to choose such choice without hesitation? What should I do so that I can live confidently without hesitation like that-」

Kouki’s voice was rough as though he was venting his anger, he stared at Moana glaringly.

「What should I do-, so that I can make a choice that I can believe as “correct”-」

Moana closed her eyes. And then she made a troubled smile and formed her words with voice that sounded frail.

「Do you think I have no hesitation? Do you think I have no regret? There is no such thing. I’m always hesitating, and I regret a lot. Kouki is making too much of me.」

In fact, didn’t she just speak one of her regrets just now. Told that, Kouki’s eyes opened wide in surprise.

That’s right. She couldn’t protect her big brother. At that time, wasn’t she able to do more? Wasn’t she able to use more strength? She had spoken such doubt that was even holding herself in contempt.

Kouki looked down in shame from how he lost himself just now.

「On the contrary, I’m really a hopeless human you know? Actually, I unbearably want to hurl abuse at Kouki so much that I need to endure it desperately.」

「Eh?」

「Why is it only “now”? If you are going to save us, then why didn’t you come five years ago at that day? I’m holding that kind of irrational feeling inside. I understand doing that will be just barking at the wrong tree, so I’m doing my best to not speak it loud.」

‘But in the I said it’, she scratched her cheek awkwardly as though to say that. Kouki was dumbfounded for a while, but then he responded with a wry smile 「I’m also venting my anger unjustly just now」.

Moana’s expression turned serious, and then she directed at Kouki a straightforward gaze.

「I understand Koone’s feeling. I also feel responsibility as royalty. When I think how my choice hold the fate of many people, I’m scared and want to run away, even I myself don’t know what is right. But see, there is also just one thing that I understand.」

「What is it?」

——Even if I escape now and stay alive, I won’t be saved.

In the end of her choice to run away, even if she survived then, it wouldn’t be a salvation.

「Kouki is also the same right?」

「I too?」

Kouki’s expression turned suspicious because Moana’s words were really unexpected for him. Perhaps Moana thought that such Kouki was amusing because she chuckled while slowly pointing her index finger.

A lot of small scar could be seen faintly, however, that finger even looked beautiful instead. It softly stroked Kouki’s forehead.

「You are always making a pained face from worrying, creating wrinkle at this spot, but you never stop thinking no matter what. Even though you were called here selfishly, but you don’t even complain, far from that you killed an opponent you didn’t want to kill while screaming, and saved us all.」

「That’s……」

「You try to accept everything, whether the feeling of the people you meet, and also Koone’s wish, and even my choice……your words “even in that completely worn-out condition”, I’ll return those words to you exactly the same.」

The fingertip that gently brushed his forehead slowly drifted to Kouki’s cheek. The sensation of that fingertip felt really

pleasant for some reason. Kouki unconsciously closed his eyes.

「But, you won’t run away as expected aren’t you? Throwing away everything and pretend to forget it, you cannot do anything like that right?」

「……Yeah. That’s the only thing that I cannot do.」

「Because, that’s not a salvation isn’t it?」

「Yeah……」

「See, aren’t we the same?」

「I guess.」

When he opened his eyes, Moana’s face was there surprisingly close. An aroma like sweet fruit tickled his nose and her sparkling jade eyes caught Kouki’s heart. He stared at Moana as though he was enthralled. For some reason, he couldn’t avert his gaze away from Moana.

Gentle night wind brushed his skin, and a pleasantly silent time flowed.

「……grit-」

「Spenser, shii~~! Right now they are in a good scene so you cannot be a nuisance! Being a nuisance is wrong, is what Koone is thinking!」

A whispering (?) voice was flowing smoo~thly.

Moana slowly and quietly took distance from Kouki. Kouki was persuading himself「Surely <Presence Detection> is taking holiday without permission……」.

And then, when they turned their gaze toward the door with twitching expression, there they saw the royal guard captain biting on a handkerchief with a demonic look behind the door, and a black hearted little girl making a smile that felt like ‘hihii~~~’.

「Moana-sama. Thank you very much for the delicious drink and the meaningful talk. I’m thinking of taking some rest soon.」

「Ye, yes, right. Not that. Cough-. You’re right. A lot happened today and you must be tired. You can take a good rest for now.」

Bowing at Moana who coughed and smoothed up her appearance, Kouki then headed toward the door with brisk steps. Koone who seemed to not even intend to hide anymore was giving a thumb up at Kouki for some reason. Spenser was whispering「Duty……」 or something. Anyway he ignored everything.

「Kouki!」

Just before he got out of the door, Moana called out to him. When Kouki turned around, Moana’s gaze was swimming around because of being a bit concerned about Koone and Spenser, even so right after that she then opened her mouth after fixing a straightforward gaze at Kouki.

「Kouki is, fixated with rightness……must be because you want to save someone correct? You fear making mistake…… because you are scared that you will hurt someone right? That’s, Kouki might not like it if I say this but, I think that’s Kouki’s “kindness”. That’s why, that is why. ―At the very least, that feeling of yours that think about other is “right”. I will assert that.」

「……Moana, sama.」

Kouki felt like crying very much for some reason. However, he gritted his teeth strongly to not show his unsightly side.

And then, he squeezed out some words,

「……Thank you very much.」

And replied so.

While expelling the sight of the little girl beside him making a black smile that said「Just as planned!」 outside of his field of vision.

Returning back in time for a bit, at the time when Kouki received the tour of the capital.

Past the front line desert area at the western land that was still lushly green, a certain feudal lord of a territory was raising a worried groan.

「What's the meaning of this? There is no mistake in this report right?」

「Yes. I also inspected it myself but, there is no mistake.」

In the office, the feudal lord was making a difficult face with the written report in one hand, before long he shook his head and made a determined expression.

「Report using a letter to her majesty. Tell the messenger to prepare. We have to ask Koone-sama to come urgently.」

「Acknowledged. Right away.」

The vassal hurriedly left the office. The feudal lord watched that while making a large sigh.

「I have a bad premonition……」

That whisper melted into empty air and vanished.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Koone-tan whose character spontaneously stood in Kouki arc

The demon king’s daughter went without saying

I suddenly thought.

Should I try revealing a little girl character at the second part of abyss lord too……like that.

What do you all think about little girl trio…

Arifureta Chapter 270

Arifureta After II　Heading to Unusual Phenomenon

At the north side of Synclea kingdom capital’s north side, there was a mysterious space formed from a branch that stretched from the donut shaped oasis surrounding the capital. The branch was drawing a great circle that joined into the main current once more, creating sandbank between it and the main current.

If it was seen from the sky, this sandbank between the branch and main stream that could be expressed as a “lump” created from a part of the circle had the size that was about the same like the sports ground of a school.

As a matter of fact, the expression of sports ground was to the point. That spot was the training ground of the soldiers adjacent to the capital.

Actually, even the next day after the unprecedented event of hero summoning and the emergency situation where the queen was ambushed and her life fell into danger, the soldiers were still working hard like usual at the training ground.

「Put your spirit into it! Are you guys making any effort huh! The formation change is too slow-. It should be possible to do it three seconds faster! Do it again!」

The one who motivated the soldiers doing formation change training with his angry yell that sounded like thunder was the soldier chief Donar.

Chief Donar’s voice resounded really clearly. It was the voice characteristic of a commander that could reach the ally clearly in the battlefield.

At a slight distance away from the formation change training, a fierce training of one against one, or possibly one against many was being carried out, but even though the people there weren’t the one being yelled at, the moment they heard the angry yell of the soldier chief, their expression became stricter and their spirit surged even further.

Also, at the place nearer to the river of the oasis, the art users were performing blessing art training with similar serious expression.

「Concentrate. But not at just one point. Concentrate toward the world. Earth, wind, heat, moisture……concentrate to everything that surround you. Your self is receiving blessing from the world, be aware of that strongly.」

Even though that voice had courteous demeanor and wasn’t loud by any mean, it smoothly entered the ears and coached the art users. It was the voice of art user group’s head art user—Rinden Stole.

He was a man at his forty with long rust colored hair that was tied behind. From a glance he looked like a really calm and gentlemanly attractive middle-aged man. But, perhaps it was just as expected from someone who was entrusted with a group same like Spenser and Donar. The zeal dwelling inside his eyes would make anyone instinctively gulped.

The truth was this Linden was the biological father of Lilin who was selected into the most elites of the royal guards that were led by Spenser. Both father and daughter were art user that overflowed with talent.

Ahead of Linden’s gaze, the art users were joining their hands together in front of their mouth while wholeheartedly offering prayer that showed so much concentration vein emerged on their forehead. At the same time, the patterns painted somewhere on their body also shined radiantly.

Countless spears made from hardened sand protruded out from the ground like wave, whirlwind that hoisted up sand launched blades of wind and sand, sphere of light that perhaps was made from converged sunlight danced wildly, or oasis’s water became whip that rampaged, all those were clearly the effects of their prayer.

Whether the soldiers or the art users, all of them possessed a definite passion.

While understanding that they couldn’t be optimistic or anything about their situation by any means, even so they wouldn’t draw back even by a step no matter what. Such definite passion that wouldn’t even lose against the scorching desert was shown from their attitude.

「……This is amazing.」

Kouki’s leaked out whisper slipped and vanish amidst the spirited roar of the soldiers.

In the eyes of Kouki who was observing from a spot where he wouldn’t be a hindrance, there was a color that could be taken as envy or pain emerging.

Suddenly the figure of the queen who said to him that she wouldn’t “run away” even when she was already at her limit crossed inside his mind. At the same time, the voice of a young but earnest princess who said “It’s fine even if you abandon everything, so at least just my big sister” also resounded in his mind.

If a coexistence with the <Dark Being> was unacceptable, then there was no other path to save Moana except by Kouki’s assistance.

Then, would he eradicate the <Dark Being> in that case?

Even though he didn’t even know if the rejection of coexistence was really the consensus of all of them or not? In the first place, was someone like him who was burdened with deep mental damage just by killing one being could possibly do such thing? He could save Moana and others, wasn’t such thinking itself was just his arrogance?

Then, should he escape while taking Moana with him just like Koone wished for?

Even though what gave hope of “perhaps” in this hopeless situation was his existence, yet he would abandon the people? Would he betray their hope, their expectation? Not to mention despite how such thing ran counter to Moana’s wish? Even though it was a choice that might sacrifice the young Koone instead?

Then, would he take away only Moana and Koone, and also the people who were especially close to them?

How far the scope of that would reach? Only Spenser and others? Or else the servants that supported Moana in the palace too? Or perhaps all the people of the capital? Who would decide the size of the scope of the people that would

be saved? How could someone like him could have the right to decide who would ride the Noah’s ark……

Then, should he treat everything as never happened instead?

Ignored everything where he saw nothing, heard nothing, and knew nothing, and departed in a journey to search for the way to go home? Could he ask Moana and others to just think of him as someone nonexistent right from the beginning?

He wondered just what was right. He wondered what should he do to reach the best conclusion.

Aa, again, it felt like he was drowning inside water……

Furthermore, the drowning feeling wasn’t like inside the forest spring where he was summoned, but like inside a swamp full of mud……

「Kouki-dono. What is your thought, abiut the training? If there is something that bothered you, then please give us a pointer without reservation.」

A voice suddenly called toward Kouki who was staring in a daze at the training while being stuck inside a crucible of dark thought like that.

When Kouki came back to his senses in surprise and moved his gaze, there was the figure of chief Donar right beside him without him noticing.

Kouki replied somewhat in fluster.

「N, no, the likes of me giving pointer is too……」

「You are being humble again. Kouki-dono is the hero-sama summoned by Foltina-sama. You don’t need to feel even an ounce of reservation. I dare say that your advice might someday save their life.」

Kouki somehow felt gazes on him. When he directed his awareness there, several soldiers and art users were indirectly paying attention to the conversation between Donar and Kouki.

Their gazes weren’t filled with anything like wariness of an outsider sticking their nose, but an expectation and curiosity toward the hero, hoping that perhaps they would be able to receive anything that could make them grow even just for a bit.

Yes, from them there was heavy feeling that was choking for the current Kouki.

While feeling conscious that he slightly leaked out strange breathing *hyuh*, Kouki took a breath, then replied with a wry smile.

「No, I really am unable to give any pointer or anything……. Rather, it’s me who is affected by everyone’s skill and zeal.」

「Oh, is that so! That is really something joyous to hear.」

Chief Donar smiled really happily hearing Kouki’s words. The soldiers who seemed to be listening attentively were also vaguely showing pride from receiving the praise of the hero.

But, there, the head art user Linden who must be listening to the talk of chief Donar and Kouki asked a question with calm voice.

「Does the same opinion apply to us too?」

「Yes, of course. Or rather, in the first place I still don’t really understand what blessing art is. Someone like me has no pointer or anything that I can say.」

Linden quietly narrowed his eyes toward Kouki whose wry smile deepened while answering that non-specialist like him was all the more unable to speak of anything about blessing art.

「I see, that’s logical. However, I heard from my daughter that Kouki-san actually manipulated practical art for combat really skillfully. I assume that you have abundant experience of fighting, although the principle of our arts differ, but is there really nothing that you can perhaps comment about from that standpoint?」

From the eyes of Linden who was saying that while stroking his chin with one hand, a curiosity could be vaguely seen there. Perhaps he was simply interested for Kouki’s advice, or rather at Kouki’s impression and magic themselves.

「The blessing art is……a magic that seem to be extremely practical for combat. The blessing art that I had seen for real was only the art that manipulated wind and earth used by two royal guards, but the cooperation with the vanguard, the deployment speed, and the choice of art to match the situation, all of them made me went wide-eyed in surprise.」

「Hou. As a father, it’s really make me happy that Lilin’s skill is highly assessed so much like that.」

「Ahaha……. It was really amazing. However……that’s right, if there is one thing that make me curious, it’s about whether there is a blessing art that is specialized for defense or not?」

「Specialized for, defense?」

Linden went ‘h~m’ while stroking his chin with one hand. Perhaps it was his habit when he was thinking. He then opened his mouth.

「I think, it will be something like the stone wall that Neisan created……. Other than that, there are wall of squall or heat, and if the location is in this capital then the water of the oasis itself will become barrier. But, the “defense specialization” that Kouki-san talked about isn’t something like that isn’t it?」

「Yes. Because in the end something like that is “something that can also be used as defense”. For example, there is something like that among the magic I used, I also had used it in front of Lilin-san before――<Light Severance>」

Kouki whispered his chanting and materialized a shining barrier midair. Right away, the training ground became noisy. Everyone temporarily stopped their training, or rather they were made to stop from focusing their stare at the shield of light.

Chief Donar and head art user Linden who saw the magic of another world for the first time opened their eyes wide altogether. But, the next instant they spoke 「Oo! This is!」 while scrambling to approach the barrier with great curiosity.

「Oo, it’s not hot or cold! Even though this should be only light yet it’s hard like this!」

「It’s similar with blessing art of sunlight but……that art literally carry heat. But this is really only light……. Donar, please try to cut it a little.」

「Leave it to me.」

The sword of chief Donar that was swung halfheartedly was repelled back while making *gakin* sound. Just from that cheers of 「Ooo!」 were raised from the outsiders too this time.

「How about this then!?」

The soldier chief became a bit worked up. The head art user was also watching attentively with really excited look.

Chief Donar let out a slash that was sharper and heavier than before. The sword shined and drew a beautiful trail of sword slash in the air that could make someone instinctually be charmed. This time a small crack entered the Light Severance with a snap.

「Hou! Although it was done without reinforcement, I put about seventy percent of my strength into it. It's only cracked with that! What a marvelous barrier!」

「Yes, yes! It's extremely interesting! Just what kind of principle is behind it? The very light itself is possessing weight? No, however……」

The two middle-aged men were seriously excited. Even while feeling slightly creeped out against the soldier chief and head art user who were continuously approaching forcefully, Kouki answered with a troubled face.

「About the principle's detail, even I don't……. But, this is an art principle that is called magic, various phenomenon can be caused by using magic power, magic circle, and then chanting. The energy's property is different with blessing art, and the point where the very energy itself is materialized as art is different from blessing art, but I think the two's operation procedures are really similar.」

「H~m, really interesting. The very blessing power itself is used as protective wall or attack……. H~m, can that be replicated? H~m──」

Linden was thinking with a difficult expression like a researcher wracking his head in front of a difficult problem. On the other hand, chief Donar's really serious appearance was now looking like a child, staring at Kouki with sparkling gaze.

For some reason, recently the positivity level of middle-aged man and animal toward Kouki was raising up excessively.

While feeling a bad premonition for some reason, Kouki asked with his gaze 「What's the matter?」. Chief Donar then suggested immediately as though to say that he had been waiting for Kouki to ask.

「Kouki-dono. Let's do a mock battle!」

「Eh? What did you say?」

His heart that had no enthusiasm unconsciously caused a line like a deaf main character to appear. However, the chief Donar who seemed to have his soldier's soul lit up didn't pay any mind about that at all.

The feeling of wanting to see magic that was actually used practically in battle, and the curiosity toward Kouki's skill as swordsman that he heard from the story were coming out in his face. At the same time, 'Most thing could be understood by exchanging sword, exchanging sword is the quickest way' such feeling also showed through.

「……Ryutaro type exist in any world huh.」

「Hm? Did you say something?」

Kouki unconsciously whispered while recalling his best friend who boasted ‘Anyway, I’ll surely manage somehow if we exchange blows!’. Chief Donar tilted his head.

Kouki who wasn’t motivated wracked his mind to somehow avoid doing mock battle. But, Linden who seemed to come back to reality from the sea of his thought before Kouki could think of anything then smilingly dealt an additional blow.

「Indeed, a mock battle will be the fastest way to have other people to know about Kouki-san better. Kouki-san, can I please ask you to do that?」

「Eh……yes……」

Even though he thought that this person was a researcher type, but unexpectedly head art user Linden was also in the active people faction. His words caused Kouki to unconsciously nod against his better judgment. The mini Kouki inside his heart yelled angrily 「You are swept by the flow, me!」, but it was already too late.

A spot was emptied right away while the audiences were clamoring.

His opponent of all thing was chief Donar and Linden at the same time.

「……Excuse me, the mock battle, is against the two of you?」

「Hahahah, don’t mind it!」

「Fufufuh, please don’t hold back!」

The opponents were the tops of each group that must be the strongest fighting force of Synclea kingdom. Furthermore,

they had nice balance of a vanguard and rearguard.

There was no more doubt that these two middle-aged men were hobby friends with similar personality, but it seemed that it was also an undoubtable fact that they were considering the existence of Kouki as an opponent was at the level that ought to be faced by top class warriors.

Kouki spontaneously put his hand on his stomach. It felt like he was feeling throbbing pain. The surrounding was overflowing with expectation and curiosity, if he exposed something unsightly here, how much grief and disappointment would be created then……

(……Heavy……)

In addition, it was a battle against people. Although it was a mock battle, for Kouki who had only experienced murder this was something that felt even harder. Hesitation and fear quickly assaulted him, it took a desperate effort for him to suppress his trembling and hyperventilation.

「? Kouki-dono? Are you not feeling well?」

It seemed even though he was hiding it, but a veteran warrior could somehow sensed Kouki's bad condition. Chief Donar asked him with a worried expression.

For a moment Kouki thought to answer 「Exactly!」, wondering if it wasn't still too late for him to excuse himself from this mock battle.

(But……if I cannot even do mock battle, then I……. Don't run, don't run me.)

He shook his head. He scolded his heart. Kouki made a small smile and answered 「There is no problem」.

Chief Donar looked slightly dubious, but he accepted it for the moment and pulled out his sword. Linden took several steps back.

「Then, I’m coming you know?」

「Anytime.」

A sudden gust blew instantly. No, more accurately it wasn’t wind. A pressure that felt like that attacked Kouki. It was without a doubt the pressure from Donar. It wasn’t pressure that was tilting at the negative side like killing intent. If he had to say then perhaps he should call it a pure fighting spirit.

It was too stern, it was too striking. Against that pressure of fighting intent that was heightened until the utmost limit, Kouki gulped unconsciously.

The disorder of his breathing might be seen through.

When he noticed, the soldier chief was right in front of him. At the same time a silver flash that approached to split him vertically into two was reflected in the corner of his sight.

It wasn’t a movement with speed like Ground Shrinker. The chief’s first movement was too natural that Kouki’s awareness couldn’t judge that he was being approached.

「-!?」

Even while feeling shaken against that terrifying technique, Kouki’s body reflexively moved. He pulled back his right foot and shifted half his body behind while activating Ground Shrinker without going against his center of gravity that was tilting slightly behind.

The sword passed before his eyes, and next he backstepped in high speed to evade the pursuing attack that leaped at him like a living thing.

But, there,

「—<Jaw of Earth>」

A prayer resounded. The ground below the retreating Kouki's left and right flowed and the sandy land opened a large mouth.

The earth was molded and a huge thing like a bear trap was materialized, it must be a blessing art for restraining the target. Even if for example Kouki could dodge it, it was created by moving the surrounding sand so the ground below crumbled and broke his balance.

It was a plain and small scale blessing art, but it was actually unpleasantly effective.

Perhaps having anticipated that, chief Donar charged forward. He understood Linden's intention perfectly. They were truly in harmony.

Although,

「—<Light Blade>」

「Muh」

There wasn't really any problem if he cut it apart all together. The Jaw of Earth that was closing on him from left and right was bisected right into two by light element mid-level magic <Light Blade> that had its cutting power increased explosively.

Chief Donar who saw Kouki’s holy sword that could even be said to be fantastically clad in light raised his voice spontaneously, but even then as expected from the soldier chief, he unleashed his attack without even the slightest pause or hesitation.

gakin A high pitched sound of clashing metals resounded. Kouki felt stunning impact spreading through his arm and the area around his eyes warped slightly.

It was a heavy attack. More than a mere physical strength.

The gaze of Kouki and chief Donar who was locking sword with each other met in very close range.

「……?」

Chief Donar knitted his eyebrows dubiously. But, that too was only for an instant.

「――＜Sword of Sandstorm＞」

What was produced right after that was twelve sand disks rotating in high seed. They were deployed to surround the taqrget and assaulted violently from every direction, at the same time chief Donar leaped back at the only path of escape that was behind him.

The encirclement of the sand disks was tight, it didn’t look like it could be broken out from. It was clear to see that the back of the target would be attacked using the opening when they dealt against one disk.

And so, Kouki escaped to above.

「――＜Heaven Severance＞」

Five layers of shining barrier materialized. One was used as foothold, and the others became floating shields around Kouki and blocked the attack of the sandstorm disks.

Considering that Kouki leaping up to the air was convenient, the other sandstorm disks attacked. It was clear that Kouki was thought to be unable to move midair.

Of course, Kouki used <Heaven Severance> to dodge that so there was no problem.

「Oo! Amazing!」

「He's flying!」

He wasn't "flying", until the end he was only "jumping", but the movement method using barrier to consecutively leaped midair might looked like flying if seen from the side. The soldiers and art users observing the battle raised their cheers.

「Midair movement using barrier as foothold, is it……. I see, the way of using it like that is……」

Linden also opened his eyes wide at that blindspot. However, he was still attacking fiercely with the sandstorm disks even then.

The sandstorm disks that Kouki should have evaded already returned like a Frisbee. From among the four approaching disks, Kouki blocked two using <Heaven Severance>, while cutting down the other two using his sword.

Kouki saw below him chief Donar was preparing some kind of "vow", and Linden starting to pray another blessing art further while manipulating the sandstorm disks and inside his heard he made tsukkomi 「That's just too merciless!」.

And then, before he could be attacked by Linden with even more number, he directed one hand at Linden from midair and,

「—< Air Hammer>」

He fired a shockwave magic. *dou* Such heavy and painful sound resounded, at the same time Linden’s front was blown away. Linden might got a bad premonition by the time Kouki directed his arm at him because he already entered into an evasive maneuver, so he only ended up getting blown away.

Using that opening, Kouki let flew wind blade and shot down the sandstorm disks while entrusting his body to acceleration by gravity and rapidly approached chief Donar.

「—< Soul of Strife>-」

Blessing power from vow strengthened the flesh of chief Donar.

Instantly, chief Donar whose body was faintly shining blocked the flying kick (the falling from the sky version) Kouki launched using the flat of his blade. He firmly withstood the kick even while sliding on the ground leaving behind foot track on the ground.

「Haah!!」

「-」

Along with a loud scream of fighting spirit, the sword was swung and Kouki was sent flying. Kouki adjusted his posture midair and landed. Chief Donar approached Kouki with a speed that was incomparable from before.

The sword flash that was unleashed looked blurry with many layers. That was how fast the sword was.

Kouki blocked, repelled, or parried the attacks, handling well the surging wave-like offense of the soldier chief.

(Kuh, what skill-. I can manage the speed and power somehow-. But, this skill……he is at the same level with Meld-san!)

The deceased knight order leader who once acted like the classmates' older brother and taught him the fundamental of battle against human. In the end, Kouki was unable to match his sword skill even when he was turned into puppet.

The cheers of the soldiers became even louder. Their chief was pushing back the hero who was summoned from another world. Pride and trust uplifted their heart as a soldier.

But, on the other hand,

(Kuh, he isn't thrown off balance even when I'm using body reinforcement. What solid defense-. No, the terrifying thing might actually be his reflex speed, and the specs of his body-)

Chief Donar was also astonished against Kouki who used pure reflex and body strength to react against him no matter what kind of technique he used.

Of course, because this was a mock battle, although Donar was serious, but he wasn't using his full strength. Chief Donar was also still leaving enough spare for his body reinforcement.

But, even so, looking at Kouki who in a glance wasn’t using any reinforcement, against him who was unable to land a single hit even with the reinforcement was something vexing as a warrior.

Furthermore,

「There-」

「What-」

A counterattack was unleashed toward chief Donar. The horizontal slash approaching his torso was blocked by chief Donar using his sword as shield. Donar had no intention at all of leaving opening, but it seemed that in this short time Kouki had obtained a slight “familiarity” against chief Donar’s swordplay.

A stir occurred. The soldiers opened their eyes wide seeing the offense of chief Donar was stopped.

Kouki’s counterattack was further—

That was how it supposed to be, but there the sword attack from the torso toward the neck became strangely dulled. Naturally, such sword attack wouldn’t work against chief Donar, instead it was Kouki who received a tackle.

Seeing the opponent was instead stepping forward when his attack was midway toward the opponent’s vital spot, Kouki’s eyes opened wide while he leaped backward and rearranged his posture.

「Can you deal against this? —<Earth of Fury>」

Earth and rocks became an avalanche that assaulted Kouki who was distanced from chief Donar. If Kouki was a bit

further away then the scale of the attack was about five meter in length and width, but when the attack was deployed at close range it was like a giant tidal wave that covered his whole field of vision.

「tsu, this place is to be a sanctuary, god's enemy won't pass――<Sacred Severance>!」

Kouki's chanting was over at the same time when the avalanche swallowed him.

Kouki's figure became not visible and the surrounding was covered by cloud of sand.

「……He, head art user. You overdid it.」

「Using that in mock battle is……」

The art users were flustered. It seemed it was a powerful blessing art that wasn't really used for mock battle at least. Naturally the blessing art's force was adjusted to a degree, but perhaps although this was the hero-sama, he might get at least an injury……the art users were sending anxious looks with such thought.

But, their concern was needless.

「Hou, even that kind of barrier! Splendid!」

Linden spontaneously spoke a praise.

Inside the cleared up cloud of sand, Kouki was standing unharmed inside a shining half-sphere barrier.

The <Sacred Severance> also vanished at the same time when the sand cloud cleared. Chief Donar tried to charge at that timing but,

「—Sky Soaring Flash!」

「Uoh」

A slash of light flew and blew up the ground below chief Donar. Chief Donar stumbled due to the impact and sand pebbles.

After staring still at the scar crated from the slash of light for a while, chief Donar showed a speechless expression. And then, he turned toward Linden who was doing the next prayer and told him to stop by making fist.

「……Kouki-dono. Let’s stop this here. I have seen enough of Kouki-dono’s magic and way of fighting. No, it’s truly splendid! I never thought that we won’t be able to land a hit even with the two of us!」

Chief Donar sheathed his sword while laughing cheerfully. Linded nodded deeply while stopping his prayer, and then cheers were raised simultaneously from all the soldiers and art users.

It seemed everyone was excited about the splendid mock battle where they were able to see unknown magic in that short but deep battle. They all were really excited that their leaders were unable to reproach them. Many mouths were saying out praise toward Kouki’s fight.

「Err……thank you very much, for the mock battle.」

Kouki smiled wryly while sheathing his holy sword. He was a little bit puzzled because it felt like it started suddenly and also ended suddenly.

Chief Donar was conforming with the soldiers’ feeling while giving order to them to train even more diligently so to not

lose with the hero-dono, and then he slowly walked toward Kouki.

And then, with an expression that looked somewhat lost, as though he was worrying of what words he should use,

「……Kouki-dono. Kouki-dono is――」

Donar was about to say something, but he then held his tongue and looked around briefly. And then, he approached even nearer to say something in small volume.

At that moment,

「BAA――――NN!! This is your good neightbour-, maybe! Kooneee!」

「Nuwah!? Your highness-!?」

「Hiih!? Koone-sama again!?」

The soldier chief and hero jumped up while hugging each other harmoniously.

When they dropped their gaze, below them there was a little girl standing still in banzai position with unchanging wide smile. Really, what elusiveness she had there.

Although, Koone’s smile was gradually changing into a wondering expression, and finally her expression turned complicated. While Kouki and chief Donar were tilting their head wondering what she was thinking, Koone was,

「……Koone don’t have any prejudice. None at all but…… Hero-sama and Donar are a bit……Koone feels like knowing something that cannot be known.」

Saying that, she stared alternately at Kouki and Donar with an upward gaze.

There the two noticed. The great shock caused Kouki and Donar to be still hugging each other. Both of them screamed 「GYAAAAAAAH」 together and jumped back. And then, they desperately appealed at Koone that she was making a terrible misunderstanding.

「……Koone understand. Yes, Koone really understand.」

Koone was showing the two an expression of kindness that they had never seen from her before. Chief Donar's face became demonic. Koone instantly changed the topic.

「Hero-sama, chief, as well as the head art user, please return to the palace right away.」

Koone's words that were spoken with a serious atmosphere made Kouki tilted his head while the expression of chief Donar and Linden turned grave.

They were immediately led to Moana's office right after they returned to palace.

Inside the office, other than Moana and Spenser, there was a grandpa who looked like he would croak anytime, the head civil official Bruitt Cube whose body was quaking continuously. His eyelids were mostly closed too, so it made one felt suspense that he might be falling anytime.

「Ojii-chan! I brought hero-sama and others here! Please praise Koone!」

After saying that, of all things to do Koone leaped on Bruitt's back.

Kouki raised his voice 「Ah」. 'What are you going to do if he got smashed up like glasswork with that', such thinking caused a hair-rising emotion to well up from inside.

But, Bruitt who seemed to detect Koone leaping at him waved his hand slowly, right at that moment Koone rotated once midair and her momentum was nullified, without pause she then landed on the ground lightly with her feet.

(I, I have seen that before this! That's the aikido technique Nagumo used when dodging Myuu-chan's tackle(hug)!)

This time Kouki shuddered from a different meaning. It was a movement that was exactly the same like the demon king-sama when he parried with one hand Myuu who was being playful with a force that was a bit unbecoming for a little girl.

It seemed the grandpa head civil official who looked like he would croak anytime was actually an aikido master.

Perhaps it was a usual sight because no one was paying any mind to it.

「Koone-sama. If gramps remember correctly, it should be a subordinate who I sent to call them here?」

Those were scolding words that implicitly called on her repeated willful sneakiness. From the gap of the eyelids that should be mostly closed with only thin opening, dangerous eyes were peeking out with a glare.

「The matter might be a race with time! Now, let's quickly move to the main topic! Let's do that!」

Koone changed the topic with all her might. And then, she turned the brunt of the matter to her big sister with all her might.

Moana was twitching from the stare of the eyes behind Bruitt's narrow eye slits while nodding at the correctness of Koone's words. She cleared her throat.

「The reason I asked all of you to gather here lies in the letter that arrived just now, carried by the messenger from Arquette territory.」

After saying that, she fluttered a letter with its seal opened to show them.

「Your majesty. Where is the messenger?」

Linden titled his head in puzzlement seeing that the essential messenger who brought the letter here was not in attendance. Bruitt was the one who answered.

「He entrusted the letter and then fainted after giving a simple explanation of the situation. It seemed he rushed here with almost no rest at all. I have him rest in another room. It seemed he was running the whole time until here through a distance of two and half days in just one day.」

「That's……」

Linden hummed in amazement hearing about that extremely reckless journey. At the same time the graveness in his expression increased.

「In other words, some kind of emergency situation is happening in Arquette?」

Chief Donar asked with a grave expression.

Arquette territory was in the west territory where the desert cut off, it was a territory that was located the nearest to Synclea kingdom's capital. It was an important base on top of being the territory that carried food and other materials to the capital that became a battlefield, also Arquette territory itself also possessed a vast grain-producing area. It was an important food supply center.

For a messenger to come from that Arquette territory in emergency brought nothing but bad premonition.

Moana read aloud the content of the letter.

「According to Rothko's report, a part of the grain-producing region seem to dry up.」

「tsu, that's, however……」

Chief Donar who almost spoke 'impossoble' against his better judgment held his tongue in hurry.

In this world, when one heard the phenomenon of "dried up", they would link connect the event to the existence of miasma no matter what.

However, there should be no way for the <Dark Being> to invade at the west territory that was abundant with nature. After all monitoring force was placed at the desert area and the capital, at the northern sea and southern mountain range area to prevent that.

Message method using wind from blessing art was swift, and there was no report of any strangeness that had reached Moana yet, based from that it was difficult to think that the <Dark Being> managed to infiltrate.

But, in reality a phenomenon of crops drying out had occurred, from that it was the height of folly to discard the possibility easily.

The letter from feudal lord Rothko who was entrusted with Arquette territory by Moana also reported that the existence of <Dark Being> wasn’t confirmed.

Seeing chief Donar holding his tongue, Moana continued speaking.

「The cause is unknown. But, it seems that from some time ago there was the inclination that the growth of crops was slow, I receive the report with that gist. Thinking that perhaps the fertility of the land is decreasing, I consulted Bruitt and thought to dispatch Koone at the time when the weather change but……」

It became an event that wasn’t at the level of fertility decreasing because of growing crops too much, that was how it was.

「We have to deal with this quickly and investigate the cause. Arquette’s grain-producing region becoming no good is also a problem that we cannot shut our eyes to, but more than that, if the cause made this case grow until where we lose Arquette itself, that will be unacceptable.」

In a manner of speaking, it was like the front line base losing its food warehouse. Of course, as an insurance there were also other multiple territories that shouldered the role as relay point of the food supply that supported the capital.

Even in the case that Arquette was crushed, the capital wouldn’t go down.

It wouldn’t, but. Even so the hard blow of the region that boasted the greatest efficiency getting crushed should at least shake the capital. That “shake” would become a certain opening.

And above all else, there wasn’t even a shred of reason to leave alone the people behind them that they should protect.

「Therefore, Koone.」

「Yes, Onee-chan. It will be fine if Koone go and regenerate the dried up land right? Koone will also search for the cause while I’m at it!」

「Yeah, I’ll count on you, Koone-ta—cough-, Koone. Save Arquette.」

Koone put her hands on her waist and threw out her chest with a puff as though to say to leave it to her. Moana who almost broke into a slovenly wide smile seeing that cleared her throat and maintained her queen mode. Her gaze then moved around through chief Donar and others.

「This matter require urgency. I wish to say that it’s impossible, but there is still the possibility of a few number of <Dark Being> infiltrating our rear.」

「We will share the information about Arquette to the monitoring force of every places and all the neighboring territories, other than that it’s best that we also send personnel to confirm directly.」

Chief Donar and Linden nodded together at the additional comment of Bruitt. In other words, they were told to select personnel that would be dispatched to every place from the soldier force and art user force.

「What about the guard for her highness? Will it be the royal guard?」

Commander Spenser nodded at the question of chief Donar.

「Yeah, I'll send the royal guard. From how the departure of her majesty to the spring was leaked, there is no way I can leave her majesty's side, but to replace me I'll organize an escort squad with the vice commander and Lilin to command it.」

The name of the royal guard's vice commander was Spike Haim. He was the personal pupil of commander Spenser, and also his adopted child. He was blessed with talent, and while he was still at the middle of his twenty, he was an able royal guard whose sword skill was said to be approaching Spenser.

And then, it went without saying about Lilin. She had the head of art user as her father, and she was a heroic woman who was chosen to be among the most elites of the royal guard in her age of sixteen. If an escort squad was organized from the elites of the royal guard's warrior with the command entrusted to these two who were top class as vanguard and rearguard, there would be a sense of security as suited the occasion.

Although, thinking about the case where Moana was attacked before this, there was still some uneasiness……

「In addition. Kouki. This is a personal request from me but……can I ask you to participate in the escort squad of Koone?」

「Eh? I, am?」

Kouki reflexively pointed at himself in shock. Moana nodded briskly at him.

「I dare say that this case is a disorder in the land's blessing power and not actually because＜Dark Being＞is penetrating in. Even if that is actually the case, they should be few in number. I believe that they could be dealt with just by the escort squad alone.」

「Then why……」

「In the case that few＜Dark Being＞possess ability beyond our anticipation or they are especially strong, Kouki's battle ability, other world magic, and then above all Kouki's special characteristic of "mostly unaffected by miasma" will be extremely reassuring. Of course, it will be dangerous compared to stay inside the protection of the capital, so I will prioritize Kouki's will in this……what will you do?」

This was a wish from a big sister that thought of her little sister. Some degree of danger would exist no matter where he was. As for Kouki, he found it really hard to refuse, and he also didn't especially have any reason to refuse. However, what made him hesitated was whether it was right or not for him who was seen as hero to leave the capital.

To speak further, even though there was no way the soldiers and people of capital wouldn't be affected if the hero who was especially summoned left outside, but even knowing that Moana made a judgment that prioritized her little sister. Kouki felt a delicate out of place feeling about that.

Which option was right……?

Kouki felt troubled, but chief Donar suddenly opened his mouth.

「Your majesty, while this is presumptuous of me, it seems that Kouki-dono is a bit hesitant so I wish to express something.」

「……I don’t mind.」

「Then. ……Is your majesty trying to have Kouki-dono leave this capital temporarily, for his sake?」

「……」

Hearing chief Donar pointing that out, Moana reflexively held her tongue. Kouki went「Eh?」 and stared at Moana in surprise.

「If I’m allowed to speak my opinion that I based from the mock battle that we did just now, then indeed, perhaps it’s better if Kouki-dono leave the capital temporarily.」

「Wha-. Do, Donar-san. Di, did I do something that displease you?」

「No, that’s not it at all, Kouki-dono. Rather, my apologize but it’s a reason of happenstance.」

Kouki titled his head in puzzlement of what Donar wanted to say. From the expression of Moana that he saw from the edge of his sight, he understood that somehow Moana seemed to have the same thinking with what chief Donar wanted to say.

Chief Donar told the bewildered Kouki.

「Kouki-dono is……having a strong rejection toward fighting. Am I wrong?」

「tsu, that's……」

Kouki was at lost for words that his innermost thought was guessed correctly.

「At first, I thought that Kouki-dono was unable to adjust your attack well because you tried to stop your strike just before it hit due to it being a mock battle, but I noticed in the middle. For Kouki-dono swinging weapon at the opponent……is something that you reject from the bottom of your heart.」

Chief Donar's words paused for a moment was likely because what he wanted to really say was different. That was to say he wasn't going to say "reject" but「scared」.

「But, the existence of hero is already known in the capital, especially among the soldiers it is well known. The expectation toward Kouki-dono will rise whether you want it or not. ……For Kouki-dono who know about the current condition of our country, surely that must feel heavy.」

「Such……thing is……」

He couldn't say that it wasn't true. In fact, he felt it so heavy that he wanted to run away without worrying about his reputation or appearance.

「It seem that her majesty also has noticed already. Therefore, I'm thinking how about Kouki-dono temporarily leave the capital where the expectation toward you is rising regardless of your wish, and using this chance where there is a reason of guarding her highness that everyone can understand, you can look around at the safe territory at the

rear. Perhaps, her majesty also has the same thinking like me?」

Kouki looked at Moana.

Moana also looked at Kouki and she lowered her eyebrows with a troubled look. Her expression told him more eloquently than anything of what she was thinking. That the words of chief Donar was correct.

「Ko, Koone object. Hero-sama is an important person, so we should have him safely stay in the capital with its solid protection.」

Koone who wished for Kouki to take her big sister and escaped when push came to shove hated it if Kouki left Moana's side. As though to say「This is a detestable flow of event!」, she tried to have Kouki stay in the capital with a plausible official reason.

Toward such Koone, Moana talked at her with a face not as a queen, but as a big sister.

「Koone. You understand right? Kouki don't have any duty or responsibility toward this world at all. And yet with him being at the capital, how will the voice that ask him for that will reach him? Last night, Koone talked with Kouki was in order to convey to him by yourself that there is no such thing, right?」

「Tha, that's right but……」

Koone was a blackly scheming little girl, but it seemed that she couldn't win against her big sister. Her gaze wandered around to search for words but finally she let out a sigh and said「Can't be helped」.

「Don’t worry, it’s only a distance of a day if you seriously dash to here. Don’t think of this that seriously, Kouki, you can just observe the really amazing territory that is abundant with nature in this world that you arrived at with great pain. Rather, this is a request from me rather than my consideration to you. Kouki, take a look at our country without fail. I will lose face as a queen if you only know about the desert and the capital of my country.」

After saying such thing, Moana showed a mischievous smile.

She said thing like request, but no matter how he saw it this was her being considerate. For Kouki too, staying behind in the capital while wracking his brain so much, thinking worriedly with irresolute mind about question without answer was also something he didn’t want to do.

And above all,

「Without even looking, hearing, and feeling it myself, I’m not going to find the answer huh…..」

Kouki recalled the words that Koone said to him yesterday before she gave him a tour of the capital, and he resolved himself.

「I understand. I will join the escort squad. ……I’m thinking of going to see more about other place and people of this world.」

「Yeah, please do that without fail. What kind of feeling Kouki have toward this world, and what kind of conclusion that you reach, I want you to tell me when the time come.」

「Yes, Moana-sama. ……I’m sorry, about various things. Also, to everyone too, thank you very much.」

Everyone inside the office gave a small smile at Kouki’s word of thanks.

Three hours later. Thanks to the preparation that progressed with tremendous speed, Koone and her escort squad, as well as Kouki departed straight toward Arquette territory where the strange phenomenon occurred.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Finally, from the next chapter the story will start to move.

Arifureta Chapter 271

Arifureta After II Darkness in the Move

The Arquette territory that was the nearest territory to the Synclea kingdom’s capital. (TN: Last chapter I wrongly used Arcnet. The correct one is Arquette.)

Due to the notification that was sent by Rothko, the feudal lord of that territory, Koone party that hurriedly arranged their preparation in the same day and departed rushed their Arous until the sun set and dashed straight toward Arquette territory.

Be that as it may, currently when the curtain of night had completely fallen, as expected they hesitated to advance through the dangerous night desert while escorting a royalty, and with the words of Spike who was charged to be the guard captain, the party camped for the night.

The night of desert had a face that was completely different from the afternoon.

In the camping ground where simple protective wall could be created using blessing art, four tents that looked simple but quite large were set up. Things like the framework and so on could be just formed from the ground using blessing art, so a tent could be created with only curtain that was excellent in heat retention despite its thinness. It was a

really comfortable space with spaciousness and moderate temperature.

At the center of those four tents was a bonfire blazing up to drive away the night darkness. The bonfire was also created using blessing art where a kettle was put on a simple cooking stove.

The dinner was also over, while a part of the guard squad was acting vigilance against the surrounding, the squad captain Spike and his vice captain Lilin, Koone and Anneal who was accompanying the group as Koone’s personal lady attendant, and then Kouki, they were surrounding the bonfire.

Kouki accepted a warm drink that seemed like black tea (?) personally prepared by Anneal for after meal. He blinked when he put the drink into his mouth.

「……This is delicious. It’s bitter, but it also has a faint sweetness. Also it smell nice.」

「Fufu, thank you for the compliment, Kouki-sama. It’s extracted from the leaf of a fruit called paruru. It’s nutritional value is high, and it also has the effect that warm the body, so it’s a necessary drink for travel that is expecting desert at night. Although Koone-sama dislike it.」

「Uu, because it’s bitter. It makes Koone forget the taste of the delicious dinner. This is a medicine. Koone won’t recognize paruru tea as tea. Koone declare, that Koone won’t recognize it!」

Spike smiled wryly at Koone’s bitter expression and insistent assertion, while Lilin was chuckling smilingly.

Koone sometimes acted mature, and actually she was really a schemer, but it seemed that her tongue was normally childish. Bitter taste and astringent taste were her natural enemy.

Drinking paruru tea was a must, so she still drank it without any rejection, but she was drinking it bit by bit while making a grimacing face. That figure of hers was indeed charming.

「……What are you laughing at, hero-sama?」

「N, no, nothing.」

Koone glanced at Kouki with a sulky face. To that Kouki averted his face that was almost bursting into laughter. She was someone that was hard to deal with and carried out various schemes, but he couldn’t hate her at all when he was showed her figure that was fitting of her age like this. Though, perhaps it was only Kouki being foolish.

Perhaps knowing that Kouki was holding his laughter, Koone was staring at him fixedly.

「Co, come to think of it, Spike-san is Spenser-san’s child isn’t it?」

Kouki had heard of it from Spenser already, but he didn’t receive introduction of name and job before the departure from the person himself, so Kouki tried to ask for changing the topic.

Spike smiled wryly sensing Kouki was escaping using him while answering.

「Yes, we aren’t related by blood though. It was a honor, or perhaps I should say a fortune, that when I was still a kid, it was discovered that I who lost my family to＜Dark Being＞

attack had talent for sword, and I was welcomed as an adopted son.」

「Ah, I’m sorry……」

「No no. There is no need to feel apprehension like that. Because it’s not something rare to lose relative or friend from the attack of <Dark Being>.」

Saying that, Spike smiled brightly as though telling him that he really wasn’t offended.

This young man possessed brown short hair and eyes. His age was 24 years old, but his trained body and the scars carved on his body, and then the atmosphere he was clad in told Kouki that this was a first class warrior.

His features didn’t resemble Spenser, but the sharpness as warrior that he could caught glances of within his eyes was exactly like his adopted father, so he could accept it if he was told that the two were parent and child.

Although Spike told him to not mind it, but Kouki’s expression turned awkward due to his careless topic change where he heard that this person was an adopted child.

「Hero-sama, you don’t have any delicacy! Koone think that hero-sama has no delicacy!」

「Uguuh」

「Even all of Koone’s family except Onee-chan had died, Anneal’s grandpa and Lilin’s mother also passed away at the previous battle. Aa, it hurts! Koone and also everyone are really hurt!」

「I, I’m sorry. I have been told often how I don’t have delicacy. I’m really sorry!」

「Koone is big hearted, so apology accepted. However, forgiving for “free” is just……」

While showing her tolerance by saying that, Koone slowly held out the cup that she had drank half.

The formidable enemy of children tongue──paruru tea.

……It seemed that her limit had came after defeating about half the content. Surely she was telling him to drink it in her place also for revenge how she was getting laughed at just now.

Guessing the intention of Koone who was holding out her cup smilingly at him, Kouki smiled wryly while accepting the cup but,

「Kouki-sama. Please don’t spoil Koone-sama too much. Also, the one who doesn’t has delicacy is Koone-sama.」

「Ouch ouch ouch ouch-. Annee─all, please stop stretching Koone’s cheeks! Koone is whrongg! Soryyyyy-」

Shockingly, Anneal was pinching Koone’s cheeks *mugyuu-* with a nice smile on her face. Koone was apologizing with teary eyes while taking back the cup she was holding out.

Kouki was feeling chilly wondering whether it was okay that she laid her hands on a royalty. Lilin who was watching Anneal and Koone smilingly opened her mouth toward him.

「Anneal-san is the attendant of Moana-sama and Koone-sama since they were children, so they are practically like sisters. Anneal-san’s grandpa was the art user head of the

previous generation, and he was a close aide that was heavily trusted by the previous king. My father was the direct pupil of Anneal-san’s grandfather you know?

Linden-san was……

Most likely, the granddaughter of a trusted confidant was the best choice for the playing partner of sisters who were the king’s daughters. The lack of reservation that Anneal sometimes showed, and the love that she directed toward Moana and Koone which was more than expected from a lady attendant must had came from that, Kouki thought.

But, there a doubt suddenly emerged. The daughter of the present art user head Linden, Lilin was as expected playing an active role as an art user. Then, why was Anneal who was the granddaughter of the previous generation art user head wasn’t an art user?

Perhaps, like the combat maids that a certain demon king was placing in the side of princess Liliana to protect her while he wasn’t at her side, keeping it a secret from the person herself, Anneal might be actually absurdly strong even while being a lady attendant?……thinking that, Kouki stared at Anneal with a shivering expression.

By the way, the ten maid-san who were selected after their loyalty and ability were ascertained received special training straight from the demon king, and after that they were also getting training camp at Hauria clan’s place, and their strength, inside, presence manipulation, etc. were demonically remodeled. In addition, they were armed with artifact class hidden weapons that were the demon king’s quality product, if compared with the active duty knight, even alone they were at the level that could crush even enemies at battalion scale……

Kouki who was made to realize the truth of the true state of affairs of that (or rather he was made to accompany them with training on occasion. He thought he was going to die……) was always desperately enduring the tsukkomi that wanted to get out of his mouth when he was talking with Liliana at place like her office and so on.

‘That person who is smiling gracefully behind you right now—her inside is a hyahha person, and throughout her body is loaded with awful hidden weapons all over you know’……such tsukkomi. ‘Their splendid conduct of diluting their presence so as to not be a distraction for their master—is actually directly taught to them by those dangerous head-reaping rabbits you know?’, he wanted to say.

Of course, if he actually said such thing then his head would go *flop*, so he absolutely wouldn’t say it.

Anneal who seemed to read Kouki’s question from his gaze made a wry smile while answering.

「I don’t have the talent in blessing art to the degree that I can enter the art user force.」

「I, is that so……」

「Fufu. Your expression turn awkward again, but please don’t mind it.」

Kouki tightened his expression thinking that he had done it again. Anneal directed a kind expression to such Kouki. And then, she formed words with a gaze that was looking at a little far away.

「At the past, I also dreamed to become an art user like grandfather. One that wouldn’t falter against any kind of

harmful enemy, using that strength to repel them, protecting the royal family, my comrade, and then the people……」

When Anneal's gaze returned to Kouki, she spoke with her cheeks reddening looking slightly embarrassed.

「For me my grandfather, was a hero.」 (TN: The word hero here in the raw doesn't use 'yuusha/the brave', but actually 'hero')

「Hero……」

Suddenly, at the back of Kouki's mind the figure of his grandfather──Amanogawa Kanji emerged.

Kouki who was a grandpa boy idolized that person so much, he was a hero for Kouki.

He had never directly watched the figure of Kanji doing his work, but each time he came playing to his grandpa's house he asked his grandpa to tell him numerous tales of Kanji's experience as a capable lawyer.

Kanji who was a main character that done good and punished evil in his tales that was overflowing with human drama was truly the aspiration for Kouki, the "ideal image" that he someday would aim for.

「I cannot become like my grandfather, when I understood that, I was a bit, no, honestly speaking I was really down.」

「……How, did you come to accept it in the end?」

Unable to become the self he wanted to become──he was able to imagine such shock, and the negative emotion that

welled up with it. That was exactly why he got curious. He wondered, how was she able to smile brightly right now?

「Because even though I cannot become my ideal self, life is continuing.」

Those words were calm, but nevertheless they felt powerful. In those words, there weren't resignation toward something that couldn't be helped residing in it, but an earnest will to be more positive.

Kouki was at a loss for words. For some reason he didn't know what he should say.

In the place of Kouki who had no words, Spike spoke with a gentle expression.

「I heard that Anneal-dono's ability as a lady attendant is the best. If she doesn't go outside to accompany her majesty and her highness, it's possible for her to become the head of maid even in this young age. Besides, although her blessing art's power and scale are insufficient, but it seems her detailed control is rivaling even head Linden. Her personality is also great, with a lot of people seeing Anneal-dono as the ideal woman. With you realizing your own ideal, it's very hard to catch up to you. Please, I wish that you will stop at your current charm.」

「……Spike-dono.」

Anneal's expression became very troubled.

As though to represent her feeling,

「Spike. That's a great guts you have there to hit on Koone's Anneal in the middle of a duty! Koone think, that it's a great

guts you have there. ……Koone will report it to Spenser when we get home.」

「Wha-, Koone-sama! I, I don’t have such intention!」

Spike who was starting to hastily make desperate excuse, and Koone who toyed with him half teasingly, and half seriously speaking 「Koone won’t hand over Anneal!」. And then, there was Anneal who was watching over that with an even more troubled look.

The occurrence of the small chaos caused the guards who were standing guard against the surrounding, preparing for tomorrow, or taking rest to watch the ruckus with half smile.

Beside Kouki who was watching while thinking ‘no matter where they are, getting involved with Koone will turn into chaos huh’, Lilin got closer to him and whispered into his ear in amusement.

「Vice captain Spike has a straightforward personality, perhaps because he is raised by captain Spenser. He is too straightforward that his words also came out straightforwardly, I too has thought several times before you know, is this person hitting on me? Like that.」

Kouki wondered why, he was feeling a déjà vu at this.

「He, hee……is that so. By any chance, is there a lot of women that he do that to?」

「Right right. Exactly. Once it became a bloodbath, and at that time it finally made him became self aware that he ought to re-examine his own speech and conduct, so recently he tried to choose his words carefully, but sometimes he did this out of nowhere. Because of that, it’s like the value of his needless words increased, or the vice

captain’s poisonous fang toward the female who received the out of nowhere words is……

That’s really……

At the back of Kouki’s mind, his ponytail childhood friend came out, pushing away his grandfather that was emerging to the surface until now. And then, that childhood friend was directing an exasperated gaze to himself.

Kouki’s feeling became unable to endure that gaze for even a second longer, and unconsciously inside his heard he yelled Right now is different! I’m properly paying attention to my action and speech! It’s true!, he repeated his justification like a little brother whose mischief got found out by the big sister. The same like Spike in front of his eyes.

By the way, his poisonous fang is sometimes toward the male too……

That way too!?

Kouki-sama. Please be careful okay?

To what!? No, I understand what you want to tell me though!

Currently he is still being a bit withdrawn because of his reservation toward Kouki-sama who is the hero, but vice captain’s act toward male is unreserved originally, so if by any chance he is coming on to you persistently, please speak to him clearly.

Speaking, about what……

Of course, speak your rejection. By the way as for me, if it’s now I understand that he isn’t actually hitting on me but, at

the time I was normally thinking 「This guy is seriously annoying huh」, and I spoke really harsh words to him. But vice captain only got a bit down before he immediately got back on his feet, so I wish that Kouki-sama won't mince your words, it's better if you will tell him things that you don't want to say. After all vice captain, he has a side that is a bit dull in human relationship.」

Kouki shuddered in fright.

Not toward Spike's weak point (lol). But toward Lilin's words 「This guy is seriously annoying huh」 that came from her heart.

Lilin Stole. She was selected as royal guard's art user at sixteen, a young talented woman to the degree that she was selected to have captain status at temporary sortie. Her long brown hair that looked similar with Kouki was tied into twintail (she said it was to make it easier to feel the wind or something), her physical feature also left a bit of immaturity, so she looked younger than her age.

Her brown eyes that were attached with long eyelashes were shining powerfully with self-confidence and resolve, while she was slender, her limbs that depicted feminine curve was charming.

Looking objectively, she was a high level beauty.

That beautiful girl was saying 「This guy is seriously annoying huh」 while smiling brightly in amusement……

Kouki tried to ask her with a feeling of seeing something scary.

「By the way, Lilin-san……what did you say to Spike-san?」

Lilin who was staring in puzzlement at Kouki, without any particular shyness or intention to hide anything,

「—「If you say revolting thing even more than that while we are in the middle of training, I'm going to chop up your balls you know?」 was what I said though?」

「……」

From the back of Kouki's mind, the first wife of the demon king appeared with his ponytail childhood friend getting chased out. Her hand was in the shape of finger gun. It was beyond obvious what she was going to shoot at. After all she was the smasher who mass-produced manly woman……

Why was it the females that Kouki were acquainted with were all totally peculiar like this he wondered.

Even his one other girl childhood friend who was supposed to be a soothing person, without noticing it when he realized she had hannya coming out on her back, and not just that when he noticed she now became able to attack at man's vital place without any hesitation.

An unknown helplessness shook Kouki in shivers.

Lilin who seemed to perceive that shaking of Kouki to be fear, or rather from feeling creeped up toward herself then made excuse a bit impatiently.

「No, see here. I too am not someone who is normally saying something like that you know? My motto is being combat ready at all times. My hobby is training. My dream for the future is to stand in the lead of extermination battle.」

Those words that were unsuitable to be coming from a girl of her age, were words that could easily be shut out by the

current Kouki who somehow remembered of the many teaching to select his words carefully that was beaten up to him by his childhood friend.

And then that seemed to be the correct action for him to take.

Lilin proudly puffed up her chest and continued her words.

「Because, I was born for the sake of fighting. Not for being protected and also not for love, but for the sake of fighting to protect all those.」

She was born as a fighter. She was convinced of that. That was why, she didn't need words that would make teenage girl happy. If someone was going to praise her, then she wanted to be praised for the skill she had acquired, not her look. She didn't want praise for her hair and style, or her clothing or personality, but praise to her achievement of protecting something.

It depended on each person of how to feel toward those words that came from a girl in the middle of her teens. If it was people of a peaceful world, perhaps they would pity her thinking that those were sad words.

As for Kouki……she looked dazzling to him. Of that figure that was convinced of her own existence and pushed forward undauntedly.

「Lilin-san, you are really cool.」

「Heh?」

Lilin was surprised at Kouki who gave words of praise toward herself who threatened his superior that she would chop up his balls when that superior was praising her.

Kouki praised after they were talking about Spike, so for a moment, Lilin wondered whether he was making fun of her, but looking at Kouki’s expression, she immediately changed her thinking. There was envy emerging on Kouki’s expression.

That was why, Lilin then,

「……Thank you very much.」

Those were words of praise that made her happy after so long outside of the words of praise about her skill mastery and battle result from her seniors and Linden. She thanked Kouki back a bit bashfully.

「……Hero-sama. That’s a great guts you have there to make a pass on Koone’s Lilin. As expected, here Koone need to report to Spenser and others that hero-sama messed around with Koone――」

「Koone-sama’s possession is a lot! Or rather, I’m not making a pass to her at all! Enough with this, can I please ask you to stop speaking those words without any basis and yet can possibly become fatal to me!?」

Koone was looking!

‘While I am dealing with Spike who is making excuse, this son of a bitch is making a pass at Lilin whose age is relatively close to me and is a good friend!’ That fixed stare seemed to be saying something like that!

Kouki moved his gaze at Lilin to ask for help, but Lilin was already taking a bit of distance from Kouki and she was staring at far away direction. Her secret talk to Kouki about Spike was also over, so now she hated to become a target for

that kind of talk and seemed to attempt to persist to not get dragged into it.

‘Really, there is just too many people with strong peculiarity among my female acquaintances!’ Kouki yelled that inside his heart.

But, he suddenly thought. Although Moana-sama was a siscon, a thickheaded person toward the emotion of the animal she was keeping, and some other various things, but he was able to spend warm time with her really normally…….such thought.

The positivity level inside Kouki toward Moana rose sharply.

At the same time he thought.

Toward Spike and other guards who were tilting their head saying 「Messing around like what?」, Koone suggestively said 「Yesterday, on the bed, with Onee-chan and Koone and Spenser at the same time, hero-sama was――」 , where hearing that Spike shudderingly said 「Not just the royal sisters, he even brought my adopted father to the bed with him!?」. Koone was watching that with complacent smile. Kouki’s thought from seeing such Koone was,

――’This small gangster. I’ve got to do something about her quick’

For the time being, in order to refill his paruru tea that was going to run out after a bit more, Kouki extended his hand toward the kettle hurriedly.

Next day. Just a bit before the sun reached its zenith at the sky, it came into view.

What could be seen from above a conspicuously large sand hill was a line of sand color and green color like a horizon being drawn. At the other side of the end of desert, there was a grass field spreading as far as the eye could see.

「This place is the end of desert……」

「It’s also the end of the battlefield. Fufu, hero-sama. Your eyes are opened really wide!」

World of desert——such impression was carved into Kouki’s head. For such Kouki, the vast grassland where weeds were growing thickly and the verdant mountains that could be seen at far away deep in the southwest side made him couldn’t help but felt moved emotionally. He was able to strongly feel it for real, that this was exactly what Moana and others were desperately protecting.

Seeing Kouki’s emotional face, not just Koone, but even the guards and Anneal were letting out amused chuckles. There was even pride vaguely emerging on their expression.

Kouki who became embarrassed scratched his cheek awkwardly and asked to divert attention from him.

「Arquette is located ahead of this grassland?」

「Yes, hero-sama. At this pace we should be able to see it around noon.」

Spike’s arous climbed down the sand hill in the lead.

Like that when they stepped into the grassland, Kouki felt right away as though the air changed. It was a mysterious

sensation, but it felt as though he moved from a quiet place right into the middle of a festival, a sensation of his heart boiling strongly.

Now he got it. So this was the difference between a “death land” and a “living land”……Kouki comprehended. The mysterious sensation that felt like extending through his skin surely must be the breath of life. This was surely what it meant by a place that was overflowing with blessing power.

All the arous were also advancing with somewhat pleasant steps. They advanced in such mood for a bit less than an hour.

Just like Koone said, by the time the sun reached the zenith, they came to see a splendid protective wall that was obvious even when seen from afar.

That’s Arcquette you know, hero-sama. The protective wall made us unable to see from here, but at the other side there is grain-producing region spreading. Right now is the time for the crop to ripen up, so Koone think that it will be really impressive to see!

They advanced for a while listening to Koone’s information guidance. Several silhouettes came out from Arcquette’s direction. They were heading here rapidly by riding arous. It seemed the Arcquette’s side also came out to confirm and greet Koone party.

The person advancing at the lead was a female with very short blonde hair, sharp blue eyes, and domineering air. She was wearing warrior equipment and five soldiers were following behind her.

Excuse our impoliteness in your presence. I am Arcquette’s vigilance corps captain, Ivana Borgia. We are here to

welcome your highness.

It seemed the one who introduced herself with really clear voice was the leader of the private army of Arcquette territory. It seemed that she was a person that Koone and others were well acquainted with because Koone replied with a broad smile.

Long time no see isn’t it, Ivana! Koone came to visit!

Yes, it has been a long time, Koone-sama. I never thought that your arrival will be beyond fast like this, I am slightly surprised.

Koone hopped down and greeted. Ivana also smiled gently seeing that. She gave a cold feel from her first impression, but the gaze she was looking at Koone with was very kind. She was a beauty who stole people’s eye in addition with that gap too.

There is no way we won’t rush here after getting told that there is abnormality in Arcquette’s land. After all Koone exist for that sake.

Thank you very much, Koone-sama. Now, our lord is waiting. Let’s go.

Kouki reflexively stared once more at Koone who was acting seriously. He averted his eyes when Koone looked back at him with a really nice smile while saying Is there something?. While feeling embarrassed from getting snickered at by Anneal and Lilin, he entered into the city of Arcquette led by the vigilance corps.

「I never dreamed that your arrival will be beyond fast like this. My greatest gratitude for this swift response, your highness.」

Koone and others were led to the reception room of the feudal lord. The people of the guard squad were standing by in another room, but only Spike, Anneal, and then Kouki were accompanying Koone.

Like that they were enjoying the tea that was served to them for a few minutes. And the first voice that came out from the mouth of the feudal lord who was rushing into the room was that.

Rothko looked like he was still at the middle of his thirty, however, he was a person that was endowed with the appearance as a feudal lord. His moderate length dark blue hair had swept back style and he was wearing a monocle. If one had to say he was slender, and from a glance one could see that he was a civil officer rather than a soldier.

Behind him there was a woman that looked lady-like, with her strong-willed eyes expression making her distinctive. Her long blonde hair was beautifully arranged, and including her bearing, elegance could be felt from her.

「Dear……」

Rothko’s arm was pulled by that woman as though to chide him. Rothko came to his sense suddenly that he was acting too impatient. He changed his expression and fell on his knee in order to perform his greeting against a royalty.

「It has been a long time isn’t it, Rothko. Also Syla. There is no need for any stiff greeting. Rather than that, please speak in detail regarding the content of your letter.」

For Kouki whose mind couldn’t let go no matter what the impression of Koone’s audacious behavior in the capital, as expected, he felt an intense discomfort seeing the speech and act of Koone that was really like a royalty. With a perceptiveness that was at the level of esper, Koone sent a glance at Kouki so he maintained his poker face.

Rothko smiled wryly saying 「I beg your pardon」 while standing up from his difficult posture. He then sat down on the sofa inside the room. Syla sat down following him.

「Hero-sama. This is Arcquette’s feudal lord—Rothko Arcquette, and his wife Syla Arcquette.」

「It’s an honor to meet the two of you, I am called Amanogawa Kouki.」

The gaze of Rothko and Syla turned toward the unfamiliar young man, so when Koone introduced him, the feudal lord couple both opened their eyes wide from hearing Koone’s way of calling Kouki.

「Some time ago, there was a notification coming about the oracle that Foltina-sama summoned an existence that was called a hero but……to think that it’s true. It’s an honor for me to catch sight of you, hero-dono.」

It seemed that they were notified beforehand only about the possibility of the summon of an existence called hero. Rothko nodded in understanding and introduced himself politely.

In panic Kouki appealed his wish to Rothko to not act so humble toward him, and so that he called him by name.

And then, Koone told them that Kouki was accompanying her also with the objective of widening his view about this

world, and after that the talk finally touched the topic of the letter.

"Then, Rothko. The letter mentioned about the crops drying up though……"

"Yes, your highness. We first confirmed it about a week ago when we received the report."

According to Rothko's explanation that started after he said that, it seemed that from some time ago the growth of the crops was obviously slow. The growth of this world's plants was very fast due to blessing power. Therefore, if the growth slowed it would quickly become obvious.

Be that as it may, it was something natural, and it wasn't like there wasn't precedent of the land's fertility decreasing temporarily before. They sent report to the capital, and if they saw no improvement they would ask Koone to come, it was a problem at the level where they were allowed to deal with it leisurely like that.

But, a matter occurred a week ago where they couldn't be leisurely like that.

In an area where a gold colored carpet was spreading due to the grain plants' tip ripening, there were withering plants making it like a gaping hole was opened in the carpet of plants……

There was no such natural phenomenon that had ever been observed until now.

It was also possible that in that place there might be <Dark Being> that was clad in miasma which caused that, but in that case there should be a track—track like a path of plants dried up without any vitality—of the perpetrator's intrusion

stretching until the center of the grain-producing region, however, such trace was nonexistent.

If it was possible, there was only the possibility of the perpetrator dropping from the sky, but in that case where was the falling <Dark Being> going to then?

Naturally, there was no trace of intrusion moving in toward the grain-producing region, so there was also no trace of the intruder going out.

Just in case, the vigilance corps searched the surrounding in full force, but they didn’t find even a speck of shadow of the <Dark Being>.

While they were doing that, the dried up land was increasing bit by bit.

Because of that, if the cause of that wasn’t <Dark Being>, they judged that this must be an abnormality in the blessing power, something that they weren’t able to manage by themselves anymore, and Rothko reported it to the royal family and asked for help.

「I see, Koone don’t get it at all!」

「Yo, your highnessss」

For some reason Koone decisively said such thing with a smug look. Rothko’s eyebrows hung down dejectedly at that. Syla’s expression also turned troubled.

Koone added on her speech as though to calm down the feudal lord spouses who were like that.

「There is no precedent of such phenomenon, so Koone doesn’t understand of the cause just from listening to it.

Going to the scene a hundred times! Investigating by foot! The matter about land can just be asked right from the land! And it’s not like the cause really have to be known, the research of the cause can be postponed for later and it’s fine if Koone just regenerate the land’s blessing power for now.」

「It will be great if the land can be regenerated but……」

‘The incident doesn’t occur inside this room, it’s occurring in the actual scene!’ saying that, Koone swiftly stood up and demanded for guide to the location. Seeing that shocking lightness of footwork, the feudal lord spouses, and even Anneal and others who should be used to Koone’s attitude were making a really speechless expression.

As for Kouki, in his own way he secretly made tsukkomi 「Are you a self-made detective huh!」 inside his heart. Recently, he felt like he had became a remarkable straight-man character but……

Kouki chose to not think deeply of that.

The grain-producing region spreading at the west of Arquette city was turned into a really splendid gold colored carpet. Perhaps it was wheat or a plant that was similar with that. The plentifully ripe plant tip was rustling from the wind, the scenery of the whole area swaying rustlingly gave anyone watching a feeling that couldn’t be described.

At place like 「Ur City」, it was also near 「Nort Mountain Range Area」, so Kouki often visited the place for monster

extermination. There was vast rice cultivation area nearby that city, so this was a scenery that he was familiar with but……

Rather, it was that point of familiarity that was giving permeating feeling into Kouki’s heart.

That was why, Kouki’s eyes were fixed excessively at what he saw.

At the existences of gaping wide hole of withering crops everywhere, as though there were insect swarm chewing at those spots, or perhaps like failed work of crop circles.

The figure of the crops that lost their golden shine, rotting on the ground with discoloration caused him a melancholy that was comparable with the deep emotion that he felt before.

Kouki and others arrived at a spot that was withering in consciously larger size. At the center of dried ground in circle shape with diameter about 5 meter.

「Your highness, how is it?」

Rothko asked with a grave expression. Koone didn’t answer right away, she was staring at the ground with an expression so serious that Kouki had never seen from her before. And then, she suddenly went down on her knees, and her hand softly caressed the ground as though in sympathy.

「……Certainly, blessing power is gone from this place. It’s in the verge of turning into desert. There is blessing power from the surrounding land, so even now the blessing power is flowing in bit by bit to recover the land.」

「That’s……then, it will go back to before someday even if we left it alone?」

「Yes. Koone think so.」

Rothko and Syla, and then Ivana and others, the vigilance corps members who were accompanying them sighed in relief and tension left their soldiers. Syla timidly asked.

「Does your highness understand the cause?」

Koone slowly shook her head to the side still with a difficult expression. It seemed she was saying that the cause was unknown. And then, as though choosing her words carefully, she opened her mouth.

「This way of drying up, the way the blessing power is lost. ……It’s really similar when miasma poured down, and <Dark Being> absorbed the blessing power. Koone think, that it’s similar.」

「However……your highness. If this is the doing of <Dark Being>……」

There was not a single trace of <Dark Being> being here except of the dried land phenomenon. It was as though the perpetrator suddenly appeared in that spot like a ghost before suddenly vanishing, but……

No one had ever seen or heard about such phenomenon.

Certainly, surveillance and security were carried out at night, but this was a vast grain producing region. It was impossible to illuminate everywhere with light, because of that even if for example <Dark Being>, or perhaps something else was materializing at that spot in midnight, there was high possibility that no one would notice.

But, in that case then why was that intruder appeared and then vanished without causing anything……

How did the intruder vanish……

As expected, it was natural to think of this as the land’s abnormality……

Koone also nodded again at Rothko’s thinking.

「For the time being, Koone will try <Regeneration>.」

If perhaps the cause that made blessing power was lost from here was alive, then the land would dry up again even after the regeneration, or perhaps Koone’s regeneration power would be neutralized.

In that case, there was also the possibility of understanding something by observing that process of event.

The ceremony of Koone’s heaven’s blessing art <Regeneration> started with such intention.

「Those who pour old blood, Koone de Shelt Synclea pray――」

With her small body, she slowly spread out both her hands as though trying to embrace the world. Her jade eyes that were half closed and peeked out slightly seemed to stare at one point, however, her eyes also looked like they weren’t looking at anywhere.

The pattern that was painted on Koone’s body was increasing in brightness each time she spoke the scripture that wished for good harvest.

「――Oh great will, oh our mother. Your child offer her life.」

Gently, Koone’s golden twin tail fluttered. Not because of wind, but an invisible power was whirling around her.

That power could be felt flowing into the land with Koone as the center.

「Abundant crop to the land, healing to the water, ripening to the wind, will to the fire――」

The land shined. Particles that could be mistaken as spark of golden fire rose up. The boisterously dancing particles looked as though the land was displaying its delight.

「Right now one more time, to the dead world――the power of living」

Koone’s wholehearted prayer and wish revived the dying land. From below the rotting crops, a new life was budding. It was not a crops but a mere grass, but without doubt nature was returning to a place that almost turned into desert.

「Amazing……」

Kouki reflexively whispered that. Different from simple magic or blessing art, it felt like there was something sacred from Koone’s art. The age of god magic his childhood friend specialized at must be able to the same thing too, but even so, the art of the small Koone who was praying wholeheartedly was something that really compelled on his heart for some reason.

「Fufuhn, isn’t that right, isn’t that right! Koone is amazing!」

Kouki who was in a trance came back to his senses with ‘hah’ when he heard that voice that sounded so smug it sounded odious.

As expected, he saw a little girl with tremendously smug face there. She was puffing up her chest so much he wondered whether she would fall behind.

The solemn and scared atmosphere was instantly dispersed.

Kouki answered with a really complicated expression.

「Haha……yes, it’s amazing. Koone-sama is really amazing.」

「Hnfufuh. It’s fine you know? It’s fine to praise Koone more you know? Rather Koone won’t mind even if you worship Koone! Koone won’t, mind it at all!」

The princess-sama was really getting on high horse.

Kouki was feeling somewhat wanting to hit her, but seeing Koone who seemed to concentrate of the regenerated land even while getting on her high horse, he decided to praise her more for now.

Koone looked terribly in a good mood, however, her expression immediately turned serious and,

「Rothko. It looks like the land has returned to before. There is no sign of blessing power vanishing. This place need observation for a little bit more but……」

「Is, that so……. Hmmm, just what in the world cause this……. How eerie. Although, we now understand that your highness’s power can recover it. For the investigation of the cause, we will examine the land around Arquette too, but for now we can have a peace of mind. Your highness, I’m really thankful for your help in this!」

「This is Koone’s role. But, there is no way we can leave alone a bizarre phenomenon of a part of land suddenly drying up,

so Koone is thinking of staying in Arquette for a while to investigate. Rothko, is there a problem with that?

Different from with Kouki, Koone interacted with Rothko seriously without any smugness.

It doesn’t matter, I’m just a mere swordsman anyway…… the other party is a feudal lord-sama after all, there is nothing wrong at all Kouki consoled himself inside his heart.

That’s the best I can ask for, your highness. By any means, please stay in my mansion.

Saying that, Rothko nodded happily.

After that, Kouki and others were treated with late lunch.

At the seat of the lunch, the son of the feudal lord spouses—Rondo Arquette (ten years old) was introduced. He was an intelligent boy with dark blue hair the same like his father, and a strong willed eyes he inherited from his mother. He had a serious personality for his age.

Although, he also had a side that was appropriate for his age. Spike and Lilin told him various heroic deeds like how Kouki was an existence that was called a hero, how using the magic of another world, in the first day he was summoned he crushed named <Dark Beings> by himself, how he fought the tag team of the soldier chief and art user head by himself and won, and so on. Hearing those stories, the eyes

that he directed toward Kouki were already sparkling, causing Kouki to plainly bear damage to his heart.

And then, perhaps seeing through the inside of Kouki’s heart that was like that, Koone blabbered about things that were true and things that were false, or rather most of what she blabbered was false, and in the end, she even told Rondo about the incident on the bed, and the incident of secret midnight meeting that were already nothing but scandal, so the feudal lord spouses’ expression convulsed, and Kouki desperately made excuse……

What was the most chaotic above all, was how Rondo lad was gradually starting to look enviously at the exchange between Kouki who was turned into tsukkomi machine and Koone who was fabricating incidents looking like she was absurdly enjoying it.

No, if it had to be said without any indirect expression, wasn’t that already jealousy despite his young age……

In the end, was that jealousy directed to the princess who was getting along well with the hero,

Or else, was it something directed to the hero who was getting along well with the princess,

Thinking if it was the case of the latter, Kouki yelled with all his strength inside his heart toward the Rondo lad.

‘For that kind of future, you gonna need resolve for it not just about status or position, but in various meaning y’know!’ Like that.

He must not be called a good for nothing for not speaking it out loud. It was Koone-tan that was scary……

The recovery of the land was finished for the moment, and in the preparation for the investigation that would be carried out seriously from tomorrow, Kouki and others rested their body in the feudal lord’s mansion.

The time was evening.

The blazing red sun was about to sink at the west’s ground. The shadow was greatly stretching to the east, the world was being dyed red.

The golden grain producing region was tinged with red color, producing superb contrast with the deepening shadow, the vibrant hue that was different from afternoon also created picturesque scenery.

There was watchtower built inside the protective wall of Arquette. Two young vigilance corps member that were charged to keep watch were looking fondly at the scenery that was always familiar, yet they never got bored to look at.

「Hey. Did you see hero-sama?」

「Ou, I saw I saw.」

「What do you think about him?」

To confirm once more that there wasn’t anything unusual, even while staring at the nature’s picturesque scene one of the guard devoted himself to run his gaze vigilantly around while asking that casually. The other guard showed a thinking posture for a bit before answering.

「I thought that he looked somewhat normal.」

「What an impolite guy. Should I report this to the captain……」

「You are the one asking me. But, you also thought so right?」

「Well, he is different from my image. I thought he would be something like, someone that is more majestic or like domineering, when someone see him they are going to get 「This person ain’t ordinary!」 right away, like that.」

「Right right, from what I heard he is really strong but…… somehow he doesn’t look like soldier huh.」

The two guards talked to each other about their impression that if Kouki heard them, he might reflexively shouted 「Cannot deny that-」 with his hand pressing on his chest and his body fell on all four.

But, at that time, one of the guards raised his hand to stop his partner who was opening his mouth to say some more thing, and his eyes narrowed.

「What’s wrong?」

「……Oi, over there. I cannot see well because of the shadow, but is there something there?」

「Ah? Where?」

Both of them focused their sight.

There.

Something was there. Something black, clad in mist, a figure's——

「tsu, this must be a joke! Why here-」

「Sound the warning bell-」

The true identity that the guards saw through was an existence that shouldn't be here. Yes, something like an existence that was clad in black mist, there was only one such existence in this world.

The guard who took into his hand the hammer to ring the bell set up in the watchtower thought that in any case, he had to sound the alarm. While staring fixedly at that existence——the <Dark Being>, his hand was swung……

「What, the……what the hell is going on!」

The impossible sight made him stopped his arm reflexively.

Perhaps that was something that couldn't be helped.

After all, ahead of his gaze, they were appearing one after another. Like black ink that was sprinkled on the grain-producing region, spheres of miasma were suddenly materializing from empty air.

bo-bo-bo-, Deep darkness color even deeper than the shadow created by the sunset was increasing with terrific momentum everywhere in the grain-producing region. Those spheres of darkness vanished a beat later like cocoon that was shattered from inside.

What was left behind was human shaped <Dark Being> clad in thick miasma.

It wasn’t just one or two. In the blink of eye, the number was increasing into a corps, no, an army scale.

「-, -!? Ring the bell quickly!!」

「tsu!!」

The guard who forgot himself recovered his senses from his partner’s yell. He immediately struck the warning bell strongly as though to shake off his fear.

Their colleague rushed toward the bottom of the watchtower to inquire what was going on. The two guards entrusted their colleague to immediately close the gate, and then to inform the feudal lord.

Even during that little bit of time, the grain producing region was invaded by beings clad in miasma……

「Aa, Foltina-sama-」

They spontaneously implored to a great existence. Their body was petrified as though they were being bound hand and foot.

That was how much their despair was.

The golden color that Arquette’s grain producing region boasted of, was currently painted over with darkness color by an army of <Dark Being>.

AN: Thank you very much for reading every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The story finally started to move.

Around the next chapter, I’m finally going to write combat scene.

Putting that aside, the comic version’s latest chapter is published.

Oh man, Hajime-san is seriously suffering when it’s turned into comic.

Who is it, who is the one that make Hajime-san suffer like that!?

Well, it’s Shirakome though……

This time the comic is also really impactful. Please read it by all means if you have interest,

Please go look at Comic Galdo in Overlap-sama’s homepage!

Arifureta Chapter 272

Arifureta After II The Human Called Amanogawa Kouki

Grieve and despair, and then unease were filling Arquette territory to the brim.

Inside the city that was surrounded by defensive wall, all the members of the vigilance corps were running around to evacuate the people as well as preparing the city defense.

The chaos was deepening with accelerated speed.

But that was only reasonable.

After all this was a situation that was without precedent even through the long history—the army of <Dark Being> passed through the front line of the desert area and appeared in penetration into the rear territory, such situation was visiting this place.

The trust toward the capital, the safety of the rear territory, and then even in the case that the front line was actually breached, at the very least there would be notification that gave time for evacuation at minimum. The terror of seeing those common senses overturned like this was immeasurable.

The distorted expression of terror from the mass that were running about in pandemonium told the emotion they felt more eloquently than anything.

And then, the feudal lord mansion was similarly amidst such chaos, no, because they were grasping the situation more accurately than the mass, their state of being was even more terrible.

「Shit-, just what the hell this happen-」

「Isn’t this some kind of illusion!? No matter what this is just strange!」

「How is the state of the defensive readiness progressing!? We won’t hold with just the protective wall! Is the reinforcement by the art users not done yet!?」

「Is it possible to retreat!? Even if it’s just her majesty we have to get her to escape……」

「Rather than that what is the capital is doing!? Don’t they notice that the enemy has circled to the rear!?」

「The enemy ain’t coming here by walking don’t you see」It’s too optimistic thinking that the capital noticed!」

It was a wild uproar. The excellent civil officers and vigilance corps members were raising angry yell to divert their mind from the negative emotions of despair and fear.

But, at that time,

「Don’t get flustered!」

An overwhelming angry yell that excelled theirs resounded.

They who returned to their senses while going ‘hah’ moved their gaze. Over there they found the figure of the feudal lord Rothko. Although his expression was grim, but his posture was calm.

As though that was the signal, the next moment, the door of the temporary countermeasure room was opened with a sound *BAM*. The ones who entered were Koone, Anneal, Kouki, and then several members of the guard squad.

「Rothko. Koone sent several people from Koone’s guards, especially Spike and Lilin to help with the defense preparation. The reinforcement of the defensive wall is being done by the blessing art users, you don’t mind aren’t you?」

「OF course. How is the understanding of the situation?」

「An army appeared and is surrounding us, that’s all.」

Rothko nodded.

「From the report just now, the total number of enemy is five thousand. Even now the number is still increasing. We are completely surrounded from four directions. The method of their appearance is unknown. It seems they are a mix of cow head species, scaled dragon species, eccentric species. Flying species and giant species aren’t sighted.」

「……Calling it a small mercy, is impossible huh.」

All the＜Dark Being＞ that Rothko reported were＜Dark Being＞ that didn’t cross two meter. The height of Arquette’s defensive wall was around ten meter, but it wouldn’t be able to prevent the invasion of＜Dark Being＞ that could fly of giant type＜Dark Being＞.

Therefore, they were able to avoid a situation where they would receive swift attack that penetrated to inside, however, the number of the enemy was too absurd to call it a small mercy.

Until the end Arquette was a material accumulation area in the rear. It more or less had protective wall and so on to be a temporary place for safe escape in the worst case that the capital was fallen.

But, in the first place the people of Synvlea wouldn’t have a future by the point of time the capital was fallen. Therefore, there was no way that the existence of soldier force would exist when there was not even a mechanism like the oasis that weakened the <Dark Being>. Until the end this place only had “vigilance corps” that consisted from the common people.

To the end their role was to deal with dispute inside the territory, dealt with wild animal, and so on. So to speak their role was like police, their number also didn’t reach a hundred.

Soldiers and art users who were really excellent went to the capital or the surrounding monitoring base that doubled as town, so it could be said to be only natural.

In other words, by the point of time they were surrounded by an army, there was no way to save Arquette.

Rothko spoke with a pained face.

「My deepest apology-, your highness. To invite you to this kind of mortal peril-」

「No one is able to predict this kind of situation. Rothko. Your decision from the beginning until the end is decisive and

accurate. There is no need for you to feel responsible toward Koone.」

「Your highness……」

Perhaps it should be said, as expected from a royalty. Even in this kind of despairing situation, Koone wasn’t shaken. The fortitude of this young girl who wasn’t even ten years old yet made the people inside the room who were reeling to get a hold of themselves. Their expression became resolved one after another.

「Koone wish that the people can escape somehow but……」

Koone’s grim expression conveyed how she was denying her own wish with her own prediction.

In respond to that Rothko’s reply was also really concise.

「It’s too late for that.」

Koone quietly nodded saying 「Isn’t that right」.

「Then, the biggest problem right now, is whether the capital is noticing this abnormal situation or not.」

「Right. The underground vault of Arquette is tough. Right now goods are carried out from there in hurry. As soon as that’s finished, we will evacuate the people inside. If we count the defensive wall, perhaps we will be able to hold out for about two days.」

「If the capital already know about this situation and they are already moving……at the fastest it will be one day. If that’s not the case and we send out messenger……it will be about two and a half day. It will be just barely.」

In any case, they had to send messenger. The information that the <Dark Being> might be able to ignore the front line and appeared anywhere couldn’t be let to stay “unknown” even in the worst case.

Even more important than calling for reinforcement, Moana absolutely had to be told about this fact.

While Koone and Rothko were discussing and deciding what they had to accomplish *at the end,* the inside of Kouki’s heart who was watching that was raging.

If it was himself from a bit of time ago, they he would surely go and slaughter the enemy in high spirits. He wouldn’t believe even the smallest possibility that he might die, that if it him then it was surely possible without doubt, any other circumstances was rubbish in front of the “rightness” that protected the people. Such blind belief.

(Am I, am I going to kill again? Even when with Ragar, I was like that……. This time it will be several hundred, several thousand lives? Even though they too are also just trying to live? That kind of thinking is “mistaken”. No, they are seeing human as livestock. ……Then, are they evil?)

He didn’t understand, the correct choice-.

Kouki looked at his own hand. His hand was trembling was because he got a hunch of his own death. Because death was terrifying.

There was no strong soldier force here. As expected, he didn’t have any confidence of surviving after taking on alone an army that surpassed five thousand strong. He didn’t have any convenient principle in him. He understood that he would die when it was his time to die.

At the same time, he recalled the sensation of that time.

That vivid sensation that was more than “cutting flesh”, the sensation of “cutting down life”. A single life, a path of living, that will, he destroyed it with his hand and ended it.

How terrifying. He got the flashback of those eyes of Ragar that looked empty, yet made him felt his resentment. He was assaulted by an intense urge to vomit.

(If there is an ideal method where both sides won’t die, where everyone is saved……shit-, this thinking is no good-. I’m not going to be able to choose again! The result of that, I should know it already!)

Before he realized it he gritted his teeth audibly *grit*.

「Kouki-sama, are you okay? Your complexion look bad……」

The soft voice addressing him made him came back to his senses and when he turned toward that voice, there was the figure of Anneal looking worriedly at him there. When he looked even more carefully, Lilin and others had returned without him noticing. They were reporting with exhausted expression that must came from working their blessing art really hard.

It seemed the appearance of the <Dark Being> finally stopped. In the end, the total number swelled up until around ten thousand. It was already at the point where it wouldn’t be strange if they started advancing anytime.

Right now everyone were discussing with each other about how to make the messenger to escape to the capital.

Koone was a royalty. What’s more if Moana who had lost most of her power was excluded, she was the last royalty of

Synclea kingdom who had power left. Also looking from how <Regeneration> was an art that displayed its true ability for the revival post war, she had to survive no matter what.

Therefore, Koone had to survive no matter what happened. The messenger had to be Koone and her guard squad—that was the claim of Rothko's side.

In contrast Koone was,

「No, Rothko. Koone will be nothing more than a burden when breaking through the encirclement net. If thinking about a method of breaking through with more certainty, then the conspicuous Koone will gather attention while hero-sama and several people as guards are breaking through is the most suitable way.」

Kouki was taken aback hearing those words. Indeed, Kouki had the strength to breakthrough, and above all else miasma didn't affect him. If Koone was among the messenger party, then the group couldn't only use all their strength to breakthrough the encirclement net, they also had to spare their strength to protect Koone.

Koone's suggestion was really rational. Except the point where she made light of the preciousness of herself a bit too much.

That was why, Kouki noticed. The meaning of the resolve dwelling at Koone's side face, in that young look.

She wanted him to take away her big sister and escape—she wanted him to grant that wish, that was what Koone was saying.

Most likely, the clever Koone understood. Seeing the <Dark Being> appearing through the distance of space, the

balanced situation between the <Dark Being> and human had crumbled.

A pinpoint attack at the rear territory.

With this the soldier force of the capital would be made to send reinforcement, and their battle strength would be divided by doing that, however like that they wouldn’t be able to protect what they ought to protect—like that Synclea kingdom would collapse.

Surely she was looking at such future.

Koone was currently giving up everything as hopeless, including her own life.

That was why, Koone didn’t say it. In this situation, she didn’t say to Kouki “fight for the sake of the people”.

That was why, Koone instead said this. She said to Kouki that she “wanted him to escape”. And then, if he was going to escape, please at least took her big sisters with him, so she said.

Looking at the little girl who was betting her own life to make the choice that he couldn’t possibly do, Kouki was trembling in fear, at the same time he was harboring respect, and also hopelessly envious feeling toward her.

(Aa, no good. It’s no good, if this girl doesn’t survive. It’s no good if she die in this kind of place-)

Therefore, he naturally thought like that. That was why,

「I can breakthrough the encirclement net while carrying Koone-sama.」

When he noticed, his mouth said that.

Rothko hung on that statement, Koone coldly rejected it, while the people at the surrounding directed surprised expression at Kouki altogether.

「If it’s with my maximum firepower, I can cut open a path that break the encirclement net. If Arous’s fastest running speed can break through the encirclement, we can breakthrough. If I also put up barrier continuously, at the very least I can protect Koone-sama while at the same time not needing to do battle to breakthrough the encirclement.」

「Oo, ooh, is that really true!?」

「He, hero-sama?」

Rothko looked delighted while Koone looked bewildered at Kouki’s assertion.

Vigilance corps captain Ivana asked with a slightly hopeful expression.

「Excuse me, hero-dono. Perhaps, if that power is used toward the army――」

「……Forgive me. To annihilate an army that is more than ten thousand, my magic power is……. The enemy will overcome me by number. Smashing the encirclement to let a few people escape is my limit.」

「Is, that so……」

Not just Ivana, other people who thought of that “what if” scenario also got dejected and hung down their head. However, even that only passed for a moment, they

immediately recovered their former resolved expression and began to accomplish their role.

「Then, Kouki-dono. Let’s quickly do the escape preparation. Your highness Koone, please take care.」

「If it’s the preparation, it’s already finished. We will surely report Arquette’s crisis to her majesty.」

Spike nodded deeply. It seemed that he already finished the escape preparation. Perhaps he was planning to take away Koone even if he had to ignore Koone’s will and brought her to escape even at the cost of his life.

「Pl, please wait! There is no way Koone can escape! If a royalty turn their back to the enemy and abandon the people, the “faith” of the whole Synclea will collapse! If that kind of precedence is created even if just one, the morale of the people won’t be able to be upheld!」

Seeing the flow of event where her escape look as though it was a done deal, Koone jumped up and down *pyon pyon* while making objection with her all.

Indeed, the people of Arquette might despair. The royalty abandoned them and escaped by themselves. In the current chaotic situation, there was no way they would be able to calmly understand that it was for the sake to call reinforcement, for the sake of the future.

And then, if the information that only Koone and her people escaped along with the fall of Arquette was spreading, then certainly there was a possibility that morale would be affected at the battle ahead from here on.

Rothko kneeled down on one knee, and he formed words to persuade Koone.

「Your highness. In this situation, your survival is exactly the hope of us human. Indeed, perhaps this would be thought as abandoning the people of Arquette. The people of other territory might also think like that. But, I'll dare to say this instead. ―That's a trivial matter.」

「……」

「If it's the clever your highness then you should understand. The trend is already tilting. It's impossible to protect everything. Your highness, has to survive together with her majesty under the new flame of war. Who will you protect, and who will you abandon. Even if it will be but a scant of number, for the sake of "the battle so that mankind won't extinct", your highness must survive!」

「tsu」

Koone's distorted expression told with certainty how she herself understood that.

Koone lost all words.

But, at that time, one vigilance corps member rushed in.

「Report-. Enemy army, is starting to advance!」

Right after that, tremendous thunderous sound reverberated. It didn't even need any confirmation, it was clear that it was the offensive toward the defensive wall. The resounding thunderous sound that continued in succession without pause reverberated from all directions, stirring up the fear of the people whether they wanted it or not.

After a brief time of closing her eyes, Koone gritted her teeth *grit* and lifted her face.

「Rothko. Koone is escaping. However, please choose Rondo and two more people.」

「Your majesty, that's……」

「If it's Koone's arous then three more people can ride it. If the protection target is children, then one or four won't change anything.」

When Koone gazed at Spike, Spike thought for a bit before nodding briskly to confirm Koone's words.

「Choose the hope of the next generation, Rothko.」

「-. Your highness is talking about something difficult. …… But, my thanks, for this kindness. I'll bring them right away, that's why, your highness please prepare.」

「Yes. ……Rothko, may the protection of Fortuna-sama be with you, and all your subordinates. Koone won't forget, the resolve and courage of all of you. Koone won't forget it, no matter what!」

「Haha, is that a farewell between us in this life? Your highness, we aren't going to get done it that easily you know?」

There was no path of survival for Arquette that didn't possess soldier force. The fastest reinforcement would come would be in two and a half day. If thinking that the reinforcement might be coming in three days, then the reinforcement wouldn't make in time without doubt as long as there was no miracle.

But, Rothko said that sentence. His subordinates were also making the same expression.

To their noble figure, Koone proudly nodded with clenched teeth.

Kouki’s heart—creaked.

Was he going to abandon these people……

Or would he murder several hundred, several thousand <Dark Being> instead?

Those questions crossed repeatedly inside him since some time ago. His thinking was going in circle and came to a standstill in the same place time and time again.

(Both human, and also the <Dark Being>, are only trying to live. Fighting, is the way of living of this world. For someone unrelated like me to interfere, surely that must be what is truly mistaken-. In the first place, against ten thousand enemy, there is no way I can win just by fighting seriously. My magic power won’t hold. Even I, don’t want to die. I’m not going to be able to meet with everyone like that, I absolutely don’t want something like that-)

In this cornered situation, his true feeling without falsehood raged inside his heart.

Because he didn’t want to kill any side, he wanted to escape without getting involved.

He didn’t want to die, so he wanted to escape.

His family, childhood friends, friends, comrades, and even “that guy” who he was still feeling lost on how he should thought about him—he wanted to meet them-. Dying in another world like this and became unable to meet them agains, he absolutely didn’t want that, he wanted to run-.

「Kouki-dono, Kouki-dono-」

「tsu, eh, ah, Spike-san?」

Kouki went ‘hah’ at Spike’s call and he came back to his senses.

When he noticed, he was in front of the barn where all the arous were kept. It seemed that he was unconsciously following Koone and others while getting trapped in his mind and arrived until the barn.

「Are you okay, Kouki-dono?」

「Ye, yes, I’m fine. And, how is it going?」

Kouki did his best to pretend composure and replied at Spike who was looking dubiously at him. He became expressionless from trying to do that instead and made Spike and others became even more worried, but the current Kouki had no leeway to guess that.

After all, right now for the first time Kouki was trying to do an act of “abandoning”.

The reason why he once reproached “that guy” by that much, and now, he himself was going to do it.

—*creak*, a creaking voice came from inside Kouki.

「……I wish to ask Kouki-dono about the detail of the attack of maximum firepower that Kouki-dono mentioned.」

「Ah, about that. ……If I have to say it, it’s a bombardment. It release a high powered bombardment in a straight line. If I seriously attack with full strength, I should be able to create a path that pierce the encirclement.」

Kouki was half-convinced from his battle against Niebla and Ragar. His conviction must be conveyed to others. Spike nodded.

「However, it need a bit of time to activate it. It will be ideal to fire it at the same time with the gate's opening, so it will help if the gate can be opened at the same time with my signal.」

「Understood. I will relay it to the gatekeeper. Kouki-dono, we will entrust our fate to you.」

「……Yes.」

Spike sent a messenger. In preparation of the worst case, Kouki carved the magic circle of on the saddle of all the arous so that 「Divine Severance」 could be activated continuously even if he didn't continue his control, and there he poured magic power and activated it.

He poured in tremendous amount of magic power so that it could hold until the capital as much as possible. Kouki took out three tubes from the pouch on his waist. That was the last magic power recovery medicine that he brought to this world.

He returned two of them back into the pouch, and drunk one after he finished pouring magic power into all the magic circles.

And then, all the arous were taken outside the barn at the same time when he finished. Kouki and others also got out.

Thunderous sounds resounded several times, the angry yells of the vigilance corps and the trembling voices of the fearful mass pierced their ears.

—*creak creak*, sounds rang from inside Kouki’s chest.

People came running. The son of the feudal lord—Rondo. Also two children he didn’t knew. A girl and a boy.

Rondo listened to Rothko’s words. With a serious gaze and a face that understood what was entrusted to him right now, he gritted his teeth and endured his tears from falling. Syla couldn’t hold it in and embraced her son tightly. She strongly, strongly embraced tightly.

The chosen boy and girl also did their farewell with their family similarly while clenching their teeth.

It could be easily imagined that if other people witnessed this, they would come pleading “please save our family too”. That was why, this farewell was carried out secretly in the cover of the barn. The crying voice of the girl echoed awfully inside Kouki’s ears.

—Kouki felt his chest rumbling. He wanted to scratch and pluck his heart.

They moved the arous to nearby the east gate that would connect to the capital. They did it secretly so the eyes of the people wouldn’t catch sight of them.

「……」

The princess(Koone) who should be naïve and full of energy didn’t say anything. Her expression stiffened as though she was paralyzed.

「Is the moving of the goods not over yet-」

「The vault only just got filled! Carrying all of them out takes time!」

「Move your hand if you've got anytime for talking! Get them in even if just one more people!」

Angry yells could be heard. It seemed the moving out of the goods from the underground vault was not finished yet. Naturally the people were also unable to be evacuated into the most solid place of the city.

There was also other tough buildings, and people also escaped to there too, but the street was jammed with people who were impatiently waiting for the underground vault to be emptied.

The tense atmosphere of the adult and the continuously ringing thunderous sounds, the children were screaming and crying.

—It hurt. His chest hurt. The creaking sound didn't stop.

All the arous were standing by at the cover of building. Koone and the children, and then Spike and others, the members of guard squad were also already riding on the arous's back and put their preparation in order. With Kouki's chanting, barriers of light were deployed and enveloped each arous.

Rothko and others backed away and vigilance corps members were standing by with tense expression.

A bombardment would be fired at the same time with the opening of the gate, and the <Dark Being> running rampant at the other side of the east gate would be blown away. Kouki would then jump at the running out arous and rode it, then broke through the encirclement net in one go.

The tactic's preparation was all done.

Kouki who was walking toward the front of the east gate was whispering in small voice when he realized.

‘There is no other way’, he said.

‘Even I don’t want to die’, he said.

‘I will scatter a lot of life after this, please forgive me’, he said.

‘I’m sorry for abandoning the people who are trembling in fear’, he said.

As though making excuses,

‘What I choose, is always mistaken every time.

Surely, I’m making a mistake again,

It will result in something that I cannot taken back, so……

I’m……

That’s why,

That’s why, even I……

Rather than “the many whose face I don’t even know”, it should be fine for me to choose “people who are important for me” instead.

That’s why,’

□Help-□

□-!?□

Electric jolt ran through his whole body. When Kouki noticed, he was in the middle of the street that was directly in a straight line toward the east gate. And then, his hand that was dangling down powerlessly, was pulled at repeatedly.

When Kouki’s gaze moved at that direction, there was a figure of a small boy about the age of three, four years old.

「Help otou-san-」

The boy was pulling on Kouki’s arm desperately. Sometimes the boy’s gaze moved toward the direction of the west gate. Looking there, large dust clouds were rising up from the west side. When he focused his eyes, he could see miasma and black silhouette on top of the defensive wall.

The dust clouds might come from someone using blessing art, or perhaps the reinforcement outer wall of the protective wall—an emergency reinforcement using blessing art to make earth protrusions that were stuck on the defensive wall—was pulverized.

And then, that dark shadow that a vigilance corps member was only barely pushing off must be a <Dark Being>. Perhaps it used its comrade as stepping stool, or perhaps it crawled up using its physical strength. Kouki didn’t understand, but it seemed that the defensive wall was almost climbed over.

Most likely, the father of this boy was a vigilance corps member that was assigned at the west gate. Looking at the rising up cloud dusts and <Dark Being>, the boy thought that his father was in a dire strait.

「Why, why are you asking me……」

It was awfully hard to breath. While thinking that, Kouki asked with a scratchy voice.

「Because, Onii-chan is “hero-sama” right!?」

「tsu, I, I’m……not a hero……」

「Otou-san told me! A great person is coming to this city he said! If that person is here, surely those <Dark Being> will be no threat! Please, hero-sama! Help otou-san-」

It was a selfish request.

A request that didn’t think of the feeling of the other person.

This boy didn’t know how just painful that expectation felt for him.

The inside of Kouki’s heart was overflowing with swearing that was him venting his anger.

A civil officer he remembered seeing before ran this way. Because this officer knew about Kouki’s role, he pulled and tore away the boy from Kouki with an impatient expression. Soon the boy’s mother also rushed toward the boy, she apologized at the civil officer while trying to take away the boy.

「Hero-sama! Help-」

The boy reached out his hand. He was asking for help from Kouki.

‘Aa, really……’

「Hey, Nagumo. Perhaps, I really cannot change just as expected. Even though I understand just how stupid this is, I just cannot be like you.」

He whispered such thing with a voice that sounded giving up……

「Reject all hostility and ill will-!! The absolute protection to the children of god! Here is the sanctuary, no enemy of god shall pass! ——「Divine Severance」–!!」

A scream-like incantation thundered.

That was an absolute protection. The brilliantly shining proof of safeguarding.

Gleaming dome of light spread with Kouki as the center. It was spreading in a scale that was never seen before!

It penetrated through building, penetrated through people, however, it pushed back only the＜Dark Beings>, a super large scale barrier was deployed that covered the whole city.

Suddenly, a dome of light that covered the sky materialized, people were looking up above their head dumbfounded. The crying voice of the children stopped still, and even the vigilance corps members stopped their hands and looked up to the sky.

The thunderous sounds attacking the defensive wall inevitably stopped. Even the great noises from the＜Dark Beings> that shouldn’t be damaged or anything also stopped. Perhaps that was also because of them being dumbfounded as expected.

「I’ll protect them.」

「Eh……」

It was unclear whose response was that. The boy, the boy’s mother, and then the male civil officer who came to stop the

boy returned their gaze to Kouki.

Kouki looked at the boy, and then he spoke one more time.

「I will, protect everyone. That's why, it will be fine.」

「Hero, sama……」

The boy couldn't say his words of thanks. Because the hero who said that he would protect everyone, was making an expression that looked smiling while crying.

Kouki returned his gaze to the east gate, and then he unsheathed his holy sword with *shan-* sound.

And then, he sent his words to Koone and others who looked befuddled at the unplanned deployment of the large scale barrier.

「Koone-sama. I'm sorry. I will stay here. I'll cut open the path, so please run through.」

「What are you saying, hero-sama!?」

Koone raised a voice that was pregnant with shock and unease. She reflexively almost jumped down from her arous although Anneal stopped her.

「Isn't it hero-sama yourself who said that you cannot defeat this many!? Are you planning to die!?」

「……Sorry. The truth is, I think that protecting you and delivering you until the capital safely is the "correct choice".」

「That's not what Koone is talking about-」

「Yes, but, as I thought I'm no good.」

「No good you say――」

In the middle, Kouki's way of talking became his usual casual way of talking. Noticing that, Koone's feeling was growing indescribable while she said everything she could to change Kouki's mind. But,

「As I thought, I cannot abandon people who ask me for help.」

It wasn't like he wanted to become a hero.

He didn't want, to die.

But it was impossible. Even if he was told to save the mankind, the feeling that it was real didn't really well up from inside him. When he weighed mankind and <Dark Being> on a scale, he didn't understand at all the correct side the scale should tilt toward.

However, even so……

When someone reached out their hand asking for help in front of his eyes, calling at him with a grieving voice, it finally became impossible for him.

「I won't take no for answer. You go, Koone. ……I'll be waiting for quick reinforcement okay.」

「Hero-sa――」

Kouki glanced back across his shoulder with an expression of crying and smiling. It was filled to the brim with fear and pain, even so he couldn't draw back, wouldn't draw back……

Before Koone could say anything,

「O god’s will-, please bring about the light that annihilate all evil!」

Kouki’s incantation resounded. The lifted up holy sword emitted fierce light, the people who were dumfounded from the 「Divine Severance」 moved their gaze toward Kouki.

「O breath of god-, drive away all dark clouds, please fill this world with holy purification!」

A spiral of light was generated with Kouki as the center. The shining torrent that rose up as though to stab the sky made the people closed their eyes.

「O god’s mercy-, with this one attack please forgive all crime!」

The light converged into the holy sword as though it was being sucked in. The noisy sounds of <Dark Beings> could be heard from the other side of the gate. They too might be perplexed from the abnormal situation.

Kouki moved his gaze toward Spike. Beside Anneal who was holding back Koone who tried to jump down even now, Spike returned a powerful gaze at Kouki and he nodded briskly.

And then, Kouki’s gaze moved toward the gatekeepers. The two gatekeepers opened the gate to left and right with determination.

Multitude black shadows squirmed at the other side.

To there,

「—「Heaven’s Might」–!!!」

The world was overwritten with pure white.

It was a striking torrent of light to the degree that gave such hallucination.

At the same time, the flash of light that left behind sound advanced passed through the barrier of 「Divine Severance」 and pierced the army of <Dark Beings>.

There was no time for them to put up defense or anything. No, even defense itself was meaningless.

The bombardment of 「Heaven;s Might」 that was truly ought to be called the manifestation of god's will easily gouged the encirclement net like a hot knife going through butter, piercing out until the far away distance.

Before long the world that was dyed white returned back to normal, sound was revived, and while white flash was melting into empty air and vanished, seeing the path that was opened by annihilating <Dark Beings>, Kouki who trembled with his throat choked from what he had done was,

「-, GO-!!」

He yelled.

With Spike in the lead, all the arous started running with fierce momentum.

Beside Kouki who slumped down on his knee from the great expenditure of magic power, Spike, Lilin, the members of guard squad, and Anneal rushed through while saluting with tense expression.

「Hero-sama! If you die, Koone will kill you! If you don't absolutely stay alive-, Koone will make you meet terrible experience-!! Koone is-, a woman who will do what she say she is going to doo!!」

Koone left behind those words with desperate voice even after passing through him. Kouki made a wry smile at such Koone.

When push came to shove, Kouki thought of sniping the <Dark Beings> that would try to chase after the escaping party from above the defensive wall, but it seemed that the stunned state of the enemies from witnessing the unfairness of「Divine Severance」 and 「Heaven's Might」 hadn't loosened up.

When Koone and others slipped through the last line of the encirclement net, dark being that tried to chase after them finally appeared, but at that time a distance had been opened until a range where they could shake off pursuer.

While feeling relieved that they were able to escape, Kouki took out the second magic power recovery medicine from the pouch on his waist.

One medicine remained.

This was the lifeline for Kouki, no, for Arquette during this two and a half days until three days ahead.

Kouki who stood up waved his hand to stop the gatekeepers who came back to their senses and moved to close the gate.

And then, step by step, he walked toward the other side of the gate.

「Kouki-dono! What in the world……why are you……」

It was Rothko who called out to him. The figures of Syla and Ivana were also beside him.

「Rothko-san. This barrier, the more it receive attack the more it will become exhausted and the deployment time become shorter. With an unceasing attack from an army that surpass ten thousand, as expected it won't hold out until the reinforcement come.」

「Ko, Kouki-dono?」

「I'm going outside in order to reduce their……no, the "enemy" as much as possible. Because even if they only concentrate their battle strength to me, the burden to the barrier will decrease. With the time I buy, please expand and strengthen the defensive wall and underground vault, and evacuate the people as much as possible even if just one person more. After that, tell Moana-sama and Koone-sama――」

「Kouki-dono!!」

It sounded like a last will. Rothko who thought so immediately cut in Kouki's talk.

「Don't, don't speak absurd. Are you planning to fight alone? Such thing is no different than suicide.」

「Certainly I'm heavily outnumbered. But, what if there is only one entrance into a city that is protected by a barrier? What if that entrance become a passage, where its width at best only allow two units that can enter and fight?」

After saying that Kouki thrust out his hand, and in front of the <Dark Beings> who began coming back to their senses, a part of the barrier in front of the east gate changed shape and became like a passage. Its width was around two meter, with length of seven, eight meter.

That unexpected action caused Rothko, no, all the people at that place gulped with shudder.

「I will be overrun right away in a fight of one versus ten thousand. But, what if it's one versus one for ten thousand times? ……I should be able to buy quite a lot of time with that.」

Kouki spoke to Rothko and others who was speechless.

「If the reinforcement come and I'm already hopeless at that time, please tell Moana-sama and Koone-sama this, 『Before long the demon king might arrive. There will be salvation if there is suitable compensation for him』.」

「Why, why are you going that far……」

Rothko noticed. That the hands of Kouki who said he was going to fight were trembling. Kouki's expression that was pretending calm appearance honestly conveyed to him that the trembling wasn't trembling from excitement or anything else.

That was why he asked that, but Kouki's answer to that was,

「……Because, I'm a great stupid idiot, I think.」

Saying that, he walked out while smiling wryly. Rothko and others had no word to stop him.

While walking, Kouki confirmed that ahead of his gaze the <Dark Beings> were resuming their offence trying to smash the barrier. The 『Heaven's Might』 just now annihilated several hundred <Dark Beings>, but if someone was looking from outside how the split sea was filled to the brim and returning back to normal, it felt only like a miniscule effort.

(……The key is how long the Divine Severance can hold out. Rather than annihilating power, stamina for long battle is more important. In that case, it’s best to refrain from using magic and only use sword skill. Even if I use magic, I should use recovery magic and not attack magic.)

He still had hesitation. Despite so, after this he was going to kill species that was trying to live. He felt disappointment from the bottom of his heart toward himself who could only choose that kind of path.

This would become a battle where he was greatly limited. If he used attack magic it was inevitable that he would run out of strength first, If he didn’t use attack magic, then painful battle would continue several hundred, several thousand times.

Perhaps, he would die. It was terrifying, terrifying, that his hands wouldn’t stop trembling. *clack clack* The ringing sound was the sound of terror that his teeth were playing.

But, his feet didn’t stop.

His mouth said “protect” naturally.

His body headed toward the battlefield, as though he was being controlled. Behind him were people with no strength to fight.

Even though the inside of his head was messed up, only the will of “have to protect” was resounding strongly inside him.

Going out into a battlefield without even any clear resolve, just how many times he had failed because of that? Just how many mistakes he had made because of that? Kouki’s calm part was yelling at him if he was going to repeat the same mistake again.

「……Surely, I’m going to regret this.」

The same like all the time until now.

「……But」

But, there was only one thing that was different from everything until now.

「……I’m risking my life. I’m not running away.」

Staring straight ahead, he crossed the gate. One step short from the 『Divine Severance』. Enemy already entered the passage. Kouki signaled the gatekeepers to close the gate. The gatekeepers saluted with face that almost burst into tear before they started closing the door.

「…….This is scary. I don’t wanna……」

But, he didn’t hesitate. He didn’t know if stealing the life of a lot of <Dark Beings> was the correct thing, but at the very least, the human called Amanogawa Kouki, wasn’t able to brush off the hand of a children asking for help, so……

That was the only thing that he was absolutely unable to do.

Kouki dispelled a part of the barrier that connected to the passage that was created from 『Divine Severance』. He instantly stepped in using “Ground Shrinker”, and without even letting it react, he diagonally slashed the <Dark Being> at the front.

A vivid sensation was conveyed to his hand, urge to vomit rose up, and the inside of his chest felt sharp pain.

He forcefully repressed all those, and toward the discomposed <Dark Beings>, Kouki was……

He took a deep breath, and with a voice that could reach all the enemy surrounding him—he howled.

「Your enemy is right here-!! If you want Arquette-, try to kill me-!!!」

In order to gather attention and raise the curtain, Kouki's last favorite technique that might be appearing for the first time in this battle—「Heaven Soaring Flash」's shining slash bisected the enemy inside the passage while piercing through until the rear.

Kouki who was walking until the middle of the corridor made his holy sword shined while readying it in front of his eyes.

A beat later.

The <Dark Beings> rushed all at once toward the person who was overreaching by trying to face an army alone.

AN: Thank you very much for reading every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Serious's turn is continuing.

I want to run away-, I want to make merry and forget my trouble-, I want to throw in outrageous scene one after another-

But, the serious will continue for a bit more.

Sorry 'kay!

Also recently, the chapter continuously is more than ten thousand characters.

I’m thinking to curb it to 6000~8000 as much as possible but it’s not really going well……

Everyone, please rest your eyes properly.

You see, Shirakome eye recently keep twitching *piku piku*……

Next chapter’s title, In the Point between Life and Death

Arifureta Chapter 273

Arifureta After II　In the Point Between Life and Death

Just how long he had been fighting already?

He had no sensation of time. The sun had sunk really deeply ahead. The radiance of 「Divine Severance」 was illuminating the surrounding of Arquette, but deep inside the grassland where light didn’t reach was completely dark.

rustle rustle Great number of presences could be felt from the surrounding. In addition, the consumption speed of 「Divine Severance」 was decreasing quite much. It seemed that it went as he expected, rather than attacking the barrier, the <Dark Beings> were more eager to remove the culprit that was deploying and maintaining that barrier.

While thinking about things like whether this raised the survival rate of Arquette even by a little, Kouki tried to recall the expression showed at the end by Koone and others who might be rushing toward the capital with their all even now——

「Just die alreadyyy-!!」

「tsu!?」

The angry yell that sounded like curse made Kouki returned to his senses right away. It seemed his concentration was cut off for a moment.

In front of his eyes was a bull headed <Dark Being> that boasted super large build of two meter. Above its head there were two horns that looked like could kill human using just them, the Dark Being's blood colored eyes were shining glaringly, while its hand was holding a large sword that looked like thick Chinese cleaver.

That weapon was swung down along with a violent wind.

The holy sword that was raised without delay produced *ZUGAN-* sound that was impossible to be produced from the sword attack between fellow normal humans.

Although Kouki let go of the impact through his arm and knee, he held his breath 「guh」 reflexively, however, at the next moment he sent a kick at the knee of the bull head species, snapping the knee into '<' shape and broke his balance.

The created opening was fatal.

When the bull head species resisted from screaming and tried to retake his balance, the holy sword was already drawing an arc and got sucked into his neck.

Without even minding the neck that flew away like a joke, skeleton soldiers that were of eccentric species—the so called Skeleton—leaped out from the left and right of the bull head species.

The Skeletons' weapon was their very body that was formed from bones. Both of their hands were abnormally long, and their fingers were sharp like claw. The bone starting from

their arm until their pinky grew thin and became a splendid sword hand when it was swung.

"You monster-"

"Perish!"

Kouki had never even imagined that a day would come when he got cursed at by Skeletons as a "monster".

Kouki pulled back his body slightly while knocking down altogether the sword hands that were thrust at him from both sides. The other hand of the Skeletons sprang up as though they had predicted that.

They unleashed simultaneous attack with matched breathing as though they were mirror reflection of each other, however, Kouki whose reflexes was superior smoothly dodged and unleashed two consecutive attacks as counter.

The heads of the Skeletons danced in the air.

"Got you-"

A strong spear was thrust through the gap between the bones of the collapsing skeleton. It came from a scaled dragon species behind the skeleton. The sharp thrust that although didn't match Ragar but it was by no means inferior, was stopped by the grip of Kouki's hand.

"Wha-"

Ignoring the voice of shock, when Kouki pulled the spear strongly toward himself, the scaled dragon species instinctively tried to hold his ground. However, Kouki's physical strength didn't allow that. The Dark Being was

unable to stand firm and stumbled forward, and the holy sword was thrust into his throat.

Along with a vivid sensation, a hard to describe groan 「Gube!?」 prickled Kouki's ears. At the same time, the overflowing blood splattered dirtily on Kouki's shoulder stickily.

Although, it was meaningless to pay attention to that. After all Kouki's whole body was already dirtied by blood spurt from enemies. His state looked tragic.

The number he had defeated wasn't just several hundred. The <Dark Beings> he had defeated might already reach a thousand. The defeated <Dark Beings> were thrown away to the back by the hands of other <Dark Beings> themselves as though to say that they were in the way.

It seemed that <Dark Beings> almost held no sympathy to other species except to their own underling, so there were also several scenes of falling out between Dark Beings because the other treated their underling's corpse rudely but……

Currently, it seemed that their head was filled to the brim of who would be the one to defeat the abnormal warrior that couldn't be defeated at all no matter how long the battle was continuing.

Both Ragal and Niebla put importance at achieving meritorious deed.

At the era after <Dark Being> ruled over the world, meritorious deed was necessary in order to make the status of their own faction a firm one. For them who were carrying out the principle of supremacy of strength and the survival of the fittest for real, the meritorious deed of defeating the

warrior with strength that could protect Arquette continuously by his lonesome must be exactly the same like “pillaging great treasure”.

Kouki thought. He thought that it was something he was thankful of. Because the more they focused on himself like this, the more the burden to the barrier decreased and as long as Kouki’s magic power was holding, then the protection toward Arquette was a sure thing, he thought.

Intense pain ran through his ankle sharply.

「I, caught you-」

One of the skeletons before this moved his hand even after losing his head and his claw was digging into Kouki’s ankle. Looking at the thick miasma flowing from his head and coiled around his body, most likely he was moving his body remotely even now when his head was sent flying.

Seeing how the red light was almost vanishing from the skeleton’s eye sockets, perhaps this was his very last act that he unleashed with all his strength.

Right after that, Kouki’s field of vision was blanketed by barrage of miasma swords.

He swung the holy sword and deflected, deflected deflected deflected deflected!

「tsu, kuh, aAAAAAAAAAH」

The tremendous amount caused Kouki to raise a roar when he noticed. He swung the holy sword with all his strength and slipped through the barrage of death. The last act of the Skeleton was certainly effective. His wound dulled his

footwork, and Kouki was forced to focus his undivided attention into defense using his sword skill by necessity.

The miasma sword that he couldn’t handle, or he purposefully neglected in order to avoid lethal wound created countless small wounds all over Kouki’s body. Small sharp pains stimulated Kouki’s consciousness from throughout his body, as though his body was giving alert messages.

The barrage that he thought might be continuing for eternity stopped still.

He shook off the claw that was still grasping his foot and then he tried to chant recovery magic, but <Dark Beings> pushed and shoved each other and charged toward him.

「He is wounded see-, now-」

「Kill-, Kill-, Kill-!!」

「tsu, shit-」

Even while swearing out, Kouki desperately slashed his holy sword and cut down the enemies.

What entered his ears were only words that wished for his death, or vilification, or voice of resentment that even resembled curse.

That was natural. Just how many <Dark Being> he had killed already. Right now he was a sworn enemy for them, a bitter enemy that had to be killed no matter what.

Even though he understood that, even though he understood that he had not the slightest qualification to think about such thing, but his heart was growing cold. It

felt like his heart was getting torn from his body as much as he killed, as much as he almost got killed.

The sensation of cutting flesh, the feedback of bone severed, the blood spurt showering him, the more he got used to them, it felt like he was getting farther from being human—becoming a “monster” just like what they screamed at him.

「ZEAAAAAAAH!!」

「Gaah!?」

A loud scream of fighting spirit burst. Right at the next moment after that, he felt heat on his flank.

Although he barely dodged instinctually, his side was lightly gouged. If he was late in evading just by a moment more, it would be a fatal wound. Cold sweat trickled while he pierced the enemy’s heart with a returning slash.

The sensation of the shadow of death steadily creeping near was invading Kouki’s heart.

From before this there was moment when his concentration cut off and his thought was diverted. It was the proof of exhaustion. Mental exhaustion was accelerating the physical exhaustion.

Honestly speaking, the time was already past late at night. It was enough to call his stamina as unworldly.

But, even so, the time limit was approaching him.

Kouki scolded himself, that it was too early. He wasn’t holding out for even half a day yet. If he spouted out big talk

like “protecting”, then it was still too early for him to collapse.

□—□Heav—□

□Become the offering of our species-!!□

He tried to chant recovery magic, however, he was obstructed by <Dark Beings> whose fighting spirit wasn’t withering even for a bit no matter how many hundreds he was defeating.

‘This is bad’, his unease grew violent. If he shed blood, then his stamina would decrease quickly by that much.

He recalled his experience of chasing after monsters of Holy Precincts by continuously wandering for three days at □Northern Mountain Range Area□ without taking rest or meal. With the body of hero, such recklessness was possible if he at least made water to drink using magic.

But, nothing could be done if he shed too much blood. Recovery magic couldn’t go as far as recovering the lost blood too, his thought would dull and his body would get exhausted easily the more blood he lost.

And, at that opening when he recalled his reckless adventure at Tortus like that, this time it was his shoulder that was lightly sliced.

Seeing his thought getting diverted again, Kouki gritted his teeth while continuing to kill one, and then one more enemy.

(Shit-, damn it-. What the hell me-, am I just this much-. You are a hero aren’t you! You should be able to still go on! Don’t think about unnecessary thing-. Just concentrate! You said that you are going to protect right!)

Slash. Slash. Slash. Slash. Slashed.

Slash. Slash. Slash. Slash. Gouged.

Slash. Slash. Slash. Slash. Punched.

With his wounds still unhealed, his wounds were gradually increasing.

Seeing such Kouki, the expression of the <Dark Beings> who were attacking while stepping on their compatriots was showing slight ecstasy that said「We will overcome him at this rate」……

「Kouki-dono-」

At the same time with such call, Kouki's body was enveloped in faint light.

When he looked back across his shoulder after sending flying one enemy in front of his eyes, Ivana and several vigilance corps members' figures were on the defensive wall of eastern gate looking like they were going to cry.

One of them was offering a prayer wholeheartedly. He must be using blessing art of healing.

Pain was receding gradually from his body. The little wounds other than his ankle, side, and shoulder were healing in visible progress even if slowly.

「Two third of the citizens had been sheltered-. In order to evacuate the rest, we are expanding the space right now-」

It seemed that more than half of the citizens could be evacuated into the underground space. If he could buy more

time like this, then perhaps all the citizens could be evacuated into the tough shelter.

Kouki made a small smile.

「Please retreat for the moment! With the exception of the vigilance corps members that are essential for the evacuation, we will hold that place with all our force! At this rate-, you will-」

Ivana pleaded at him to take a rest.

But, he couldn’t do what she said. Because the vigilance corps’ strength was insufficient to be entrusted with this battlefield. If such thing was possible, then from the beginning he would have told them the strategy of taking turn.

The vigilance corps members weren’t soldier. Even if they had the will for it, but their talent didn’t permit them to fight. Just like that Anneal. They themselves should understand that.

At present, this blessing art of healing too, if this was performed by the art user of the capital, then his ankle, side, and shoulder’s wound should have recovered completely already. The face of the vigilance corpse member who was using the art was distorted in frustration seeing how slow Kouki’s wound was healing.

And so, that being the case, they must be trying to buy time for Kouki to rest exactly with the resolve of being annihilated to the last man.

That was why, he couldn’t entrust it. He couldn’t entrust this battlefield to them.

「Here is my battlefield! I won’t entrust it to you all!」

「That’s……」

Ivana’s expression warped in grief.

While signing the enemies to oblivion, however, the feeling of Ivana and others who tried to be his strength somehow saved Kouki’s heart.

「Haah!!」

「Guah!?」

「This guy-, still!?」

An attack with all his strength blown away two enemies altogether.

Using that opening, Kouki filled his voice with dominating aura and sent out his words.

「I can still fight! That’s why──please back me up. Even if just healing me continuously help me a lot! When I give the signal, arrow or blessing art or anything is fine so attack the front line at that time!」

If he could make an opening even if just a little, he could heal large wound at that time. He could also create water ball using magic and replenish his rehydration. With the blessing art’s healing, he would be able to not get bothered from small wounds.

Although Ivana and others were stunned for a moment from Kouki’s words, they immediately made a determined expression. Even they had something they could do, they

could be useful for the protector who was standing alone in the battlefield. Those facts encouraged their heart.

"Leave it to us-"

The voice of the trembling Ivana resounded.

Kouki roared while staring at the endless attacks.

"I won't withdraw no matter what-"

He wondered how much time had passed since the vigilance corps were starting to back him up.

Kouki who was continuing to fight determinedly didn't notice that the backup had stopped abruptly before he knew it.

He already had no composure to look back, his consciousness was half hazy. Therefore, he couldn't even confirm that Ivana and others were already spending their strength from using art until their life was at risk.

Also, the matter when Rothko and others tried to make Kouki retreat to the shelter which he then refused was also already far beyond at the corner of his memory.

Rothko and others persuaded Kouki that if they bought time using the defensive wall and the underground warehouse, then Kouki would also be able to rest enough, but Kouki judged that doing that was impossible.

The defensive wall could be climbed over by the <Dark Beings> physical capabilities and by using each other as stepping stone as had been proved at the beginning. If someone was overcame by the creeping up <Dark Being> then they wouldn’t be able to buy enough time.

And above all else, if he went into rest right now……

Kouki had no confidence at all that he could stand back up again before the underground warehouse was destroyed. With his extreme exhaustion, once his tension and fighting spirit were loosened up, they wouldn’t come back to normal easily. He wasn’t able to deny the possibility that he wouldn’t be able to move satisfactorily or that his consciousness would keep sleeping.

He feared that above all else.

That was why, in order to not let them come toward him in order to take him back, he cut off his own path of retreat.

If they came until here, then even if Kouki created barrier behind him, the <Dark Beings> wouldn’t care.

They would only kill Kouki.

They would bring certain death to this sworn enemy that was a threat that couldn’t be finished off with an army even

now. Right now, rather than bringing down Arquette, removing this abnormality standing in their way was far more important.

Kouki mostly didn’t even reply, he was merely showing his will using his action. Rothko and others were shedding tears while continuing to pray earnestly while lamenting that it was the only thing that they could do.

One time the「Divine Severance」almost vanished and he drank his last magic power recovery medicine, but Kouki had no remembrance at all of doing that. He used the medicine from his subconscious sense of danger.

The backup stopped, he was already at a point where taking rest would lead to death, he had also used up his recovery method. He was merely swinging his sword toward the threat before his eyes.

Before he noticed, Kouki was inside a mysterious sensation.

The resenting voice and angry yell of the enemies became unclear and muffled as though time was slowing down, every single movement of them were also slow as though they were moving underwater.

However, that didn’t mean that Kouki was speeding up.

Kouki himself was also feeling heaviness coiling around his whole body as though he was underwater. Just like how the opponents were slow, he was also slow.

Inside the world where everything was slow, however, it was only his thought that was strangely getting clearer.

Everything that happened until now was passing through his mind naturally.

If there was a third person, they might say that it was a revolving lantern phenomenon, but Kouki didn’t realize that and he abandoned his thought into the emerging memories.

What emerged first, was the first person he encountered in this world.

—Kouki, is really kind huh

He yelled back angrily when he was told that. When he thought back now, it felt like he had vented his anger at that beautiful and strong queen a lot.

For some reason he easily exposed the deep part of his heart that he normally repressed to her. For some reason every single word of hers resounded in his heart and he became unable to keep up his façade.

—At the very least, that feeling of yours that think about other is “right”. I will assert that

Even though he only came in contact with her for a short time, she was always giving affirmation to Kouki. Even though he actually had waekness and complex, the words that she gave to Kouki at the end were always kind.

(The feeling of wanting to save, wanting to protect—is right. If you assert that, then is it okay for me to think that the fight I’m doing right now is “right”?)

He pierced the heart of the bull head species in front of him, then using the holy sword that he pulled out while turning around, he lopped off the head of the scaled dragon species beside him. While bathed in blood spurt, the next memory that emerged was the little sister princess with strong peculiarity.

—Rather than the many that Koone loved, Koone treasure my only dear family

Just like “that guy”, rather than the many people with unknown face, she would pick the person that was important to her. While condemning herself that she had no qualification to introduce herself as a royalty, even so she yelled that she wouldn’t yield.

Even though she was in a position that was far more significant than himself, but that way of living that spoke of such thought without hesitation, he harbored much envy toward it.

(Surely, as a royalty……that is “mistaken”. Picking a choice of not making use of me is a “mistake”.)

Then, was that girl “evil”?

Kouki didn’t think so. Because, that child, wasn’t she resolved to die?, he thought. In exchange of making her big sister as priority, wasn’t she resolved to receive everything by herself?, he thought.

Then, in the first place, just what was a “mistaken choice” then.

As though to pierce the emerging question, a conspicuously large Skeleton lunged with a sharp hand sword and lightly gouged Kouki’s cheek. Without even minding that, Kouki

grapsed tight the Skeleton’s head in an eagle grasp and smashed it into the ground, he then pulverized the head further with a step of his foot while diagonally slashing a second bull head species.

In the interval of blood splash, the people of the capital were floating like illusion.

—There were husband and wife who fought in order to let anyone ate kukuri.

—There was a young man of the weapon shop who spoke of his dream that the weapon he made would help the soldiers.

—There was a ferryman who would rush around the battlefield transporting soldier in emergency.

Everyone wasn’t thinking things like “no matter what we do, it’s already impossible anyway” in the slightest.

That wasn’t optimism, but a determination to accomplish the resolve of opposition. If the path that they picked rolled to a bad direction, wouldn’t that decision make their important people unhappy……such unease, it didn’t look like they were harboring such feeling in the slightest.

At the very least, they weren’t people who would stop walking because of that.

(When I asked if they feel scared, everyone said the same thing—that they are scared. And yet, everyone smiled when saying that. Because that’s something that they decide themselves they said.)

A huge spear made from miasma was flying near clad in wind of miasma like a tornado. When he tried to knock it down forcefully, Kouki’s foot slipped. He couldn’t raise his

blade, and even though he knocked down the spear, it caused pain on his wrist.

He became unable to stand his ground. The hand that swung his sword was starting to shake from a reason other than fear—exhaustion. He felt something that chilled his heart from death that was approaching him one step closer.

—Because, I was born for the sake of fighting

A younger girl who declared the meaning of her birth with pride in her heart.

Her way of living that believed there was no mistake in her path, he felt much envy toward that.

—For me my grandfather, was a hero

Becoming like the idolized hero, having things went ideally……was impossible, such fact was thrust before her, however, she said 「Even so life is continuing」 with a smile. She found what she could do, and built up herself to be more than top-notch.

(Aa, come to think of it, I thought of Jii-chan for the first time in a while huh)

Finally, the holy sword was deflected. Until now, Kouki’s attack that finished off most of the enemy in one swing finally defeated the enemy after two, three slashes.

Enemies that were observing Kouki’s movement at the rear must also be starting to get used to Kouki’s movement. But, more than that, his pure strength and speed were decreasing.

The dragon scaled species that he sent flying raised a warbled cry and stood back up. Beside it, this time the illusion of his grandfather—Amanogawa Kanji appeared.

—Kouki can become anything, you can do anything

That was Kanji's answer toward young Kouki who was asking him 'Can I perhaps become like Jii-chan?'.

'Really?' When Kouki asked that,

—Really, I told you. That's why you are named Kouki (TN: Kouki means brightness or splendor)

Name is the representation of body. That's why,

(The path that Kouki decide and advance through by yourself, will surely shine bright……. I have forgotten that all this time huh. Jii-chan's words) (TN: The word shine bright here use the exact same kanji like Kouki's name)

GON, graphic sound of bone breaking resounded from Kouki's body. The tail of a scaled dragon species sunk into his side. Without even being conscious of it, Kouki breathed out *kahah* while letting out a thrust at the nape of the scaled dragon species.

At last he received a damage that was hard to be overlooked. Even Kouki whose natural recovery rate was high couldn't immediately heal broken bone without magic.

Perhaps seeing the limit of strength of Kouki whose body was staggering, the <Dark Beings> showed expression of wild joy.

But, in contrast to the fierceness in the outside world, Kouki's inside was really calm. Quietly, but surely,

something was connecting inside Kouki.

The many encounters, his experiences until now, the many worries, all of them were connecting in the middle of this extreme situation.

The girl childhood friend who brought him back even by hitting him yelled at the back of his mind.

—It shouldn’t be like this? Something like that is obvious! There is no such thing like a life that will go as you want! Everyone, they gritted their teeth and endured, they held their head in worry, but they will say “even so” and then keep at it!

That’s right huh, exactly like that. Even the people of this world, everyone is the same.

—If your path is mistaken, then punching and stopping you is the role of best friend right?

Aah, that’s right. Just what is it I’m scared about? If I’m mistaken, you will punch and stop me, and yet

—Liar

Aa, Eri. It’s exactly like you said. I’m a liar.

At that day, at that time, at that place, I indeed told you “I’ll protect Eri”, and yet.

I believed that by making the choice of “protecting”, it was over just with that.

I believed that I had saved you just by stopping you from jumping down.

Even though there is no such thing like a life that will go as one wanted.

Even though life will continue even then.

Even though you were still going mad, and kept asking for help the whole time.

That’s right.

I was always, finishing with just “choosing”.

Even though what is truly important, is the “after choosing”.

That’s all there is to it.

Whether that choice is right, or mistaken, there is no way to understand because we cannot see the future.

I was frightened against such trivial thing, said thing like “I cannot believe myself”, and in the end, I hesitated in even choosing……

GOU The atmosphere roared.

Kouki went ‘hah’ and his consciousness returned from the mysterious world of thought back to reality, and he became aware of the huge bull approaching before his eyes. The combat bull created from muddy black miasma was so big it filled the whole path with its body.

If it was Kouki who still had spare strength, he would be able to thrust his holy sword and destroy it.

But, his flesh that already welcomed the limit had insufficient strength to meet that charge.

「Gahah!?」

Although he barely evaded just the combat bull’s horn, his torso got hit by the headbutt and he was sent flying. The impact that made his body felt like it would come apart shook his consciousness. Air was forcefully expelled from his lung and he couldn’t breath.

He wrung out his willpower, thrust down the holy sword and defeated the combat bull, but he couldn’t stop from falling on his knee.

Thinking that this time was the end for sure, the＜Dark Beings＞ rushed forward like a flood in order to raise distinguished service.

The eyes of Kouki who raised his face weren’t focused as though his mind was hazy. His blurry sight could see the approaching＜Dark Beings＞ raising war cry in slow motion.

(Is it the end……in this kind of place……)

Even though, I found the answer……

He finally understood.

In feeling, wish, prayer, there was no such thing like mistake.

If one was serious, then everything was the real deal, what was important was sincerity.

After choosing, one must not run away from that feeling. One must not avert their eyes from the wish. One must not give up praying. That was the true battle.

Even though he finally understood.

(Will it end, without me unable to protect?)

‘I’ll protect everyone’, he said. Toward the young boy, toward the feudal lord who thought about his people, toward everyone of the vigilance corps.

(Will I, lie again?)

Because, I have done my best? Because I risked my life? That’s why, it’s fine even if I give up already right?

(Don’t-, screw around-!!)

□aAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!□

□tsu!? You bastard-!?□

The large sword that was swung down by a bull head species was deflected back by the holy sword of Kouki who was screaming as though his throat was going to burst.

‘Just where in the hell such strength is coming from’, the expression of the bull head species was cramping with such meaning that could easily be understand despite his grotesque feature.

(Fight-, fight-, fight!! You want to protect even if you have to kill them aren’t you! You chose that right! Then fight-)

He scolded himself.

Something snapped inside Kouki. It was a feeling that he had tasted several times, however, Kouki had no leeway to pay that any mind.

But, if he could see his status plate, then he would surely notice that there was one addition of derivative skill there.

—Limit Break’s special derivation　War Demon

Originally, Limit Break raised up the whole specs by several times along with the increase of magic power, but this＜War Demon＞ didn’t have magic power increase. His specs also didn’t increase. However, no matter how broken up the body was, the magic power inside the body would be used to reinforce the body as though it was replacement for plaster cast, and the user would only continue to fight intently with this special derivative skill.

Because it was almost like a self-destructing technique, almost nobody was awakened to this skill.

This was the crystallization of feeling that bloomed exactly because Kouki’s heart shouted in this extreme situation.

That scream was,

—Fight! Fight! To the end of that choice, following your wish, fight until this body become trash!

oOOOOOOOOO-!!

Thi, this monster-

For the first time since the beginning until now, the <Dark Beings> were backing away. The loud pressuring scream and fighting spirit that could only be described as ghastly almost swallowed them up.

(My body, is moving-. I can still, fight-)

He didn’t understand why his body was moving.

But, such thing didn’t matter.

(Step in, more. Look at the whole. As long as they aren’t a beast, the movement of human body is mostly decided!)

More efficiently. To the necessary place, at the necessary time, using the necessary strength, accurately.

‘That was what you were taught right’, he told himself.

(……Aa, so I forgot even this kind of thing)

His memories of until now that flowed in like revolving lantern. The things that he forgot, that he lost sight of were resurrected.

He learned the sword style of knight because he was the hero of the kingdom. However, there was the sword that he learned side by side with his childhood friend farther in the past. Caught by his position as hero and his mistaken impression, or perhaps because of his guilt of betrayal, he buried it at the bottom of his heart all this time.

A bull head species swung down a large sword.

If it was the him so far until now, he would use his specs as hero and deflected back the attack. But, he already didn’t have the spare strength for that so……

The moment he received the opponent’s sword, he averted the sword attack using the shift of his wrist, and at the same time he changed the hand holding the sword to his other hand and cut up.

—Yaegashi-style sword art Otoha Nagashi (TN: Sound Blade Flow)

The name was because the moment the sword attack was averted, two swords scraping against each other produced a clear tone.

The bull head species didn’t feel any recoil from his sword, and when he noticed himself was already cut with his life ended, his eyes opened still.

A scaled dragon species unleashed a mowing down attack using a huge spear.

If it was before, he would knock down the attack or dodge.

Now he kept the point of his sword pointed straight while shifting his upper body, however, he didn’t retreat but stepped forward and thrust the sword.

—Yaegashi-style sword art Kasumiugachi (TN: Haze Pierce)

By shifting the distance perception using the upper body’s back and forth movement and shoulder’s motion, the huge spear’s horizontal mow ended up striking empty air. The scaled dragon species whose eyes were opened wide lost his life with his last sight being an attack that looked like three thrust unleashed at the same time.

A Skeleton came lunging using his sword hand.

If it was before Kouki would meet the attack using his holy sword.

He grasped the sword hand with one hand and made the skeleton floated in the air using a twisting throw and body movement.

—Yaegashi style martial art Kyourai (TN: Mirror Lightning)

This technique threw the opponent using Aikido move and then attacked while the opponent was midair. But, this time it was used to hold back a second Skeleton, and the moment the two Skeletons collided, he mowed down the two altogether using his holy sword.

The kingdom’s knight sword art wasn’t bad by any means. Rather, a transcendent ability and the knight sword art—especially the strong sword style of Meld Logins had good compatibility.

But, for his current self whose specs were degrading……the ancient martial arts of Yaegashi-style that he learned for a long time, a style for the sake of “the weak overthrowing the strong” was the most optimum.

Not relying on physical strength to the utmost of his ability, not burdening his body, while getting the better of the enemy using technique.

Because of the strange movement that was different from before, the <Dark Beings> could be seen clearly that they were perplexed.

(Although, it’s hard doing it with western sword. How long I can fight while being conscious? Can my consciousness last—)

Kouki was concerned with the feeling of discrepancy that came from using Yaegashi-style with a weapon that wasn’t katana, but……

At that moment, the holy sword was enveloped in faint light.

The <Dark Beings> were on guard wondering what Kouki was planning, but Kouki’s feeling of amazement was more than what they were feeling.

Kouki reflexively closed his eyes toward the holy sword that was enveloped in light despite him not doing anything. He couldn’t even see the sword blade because of the light.

If the time was counted it was only several seconds.

Before long the light settled down. And there,

「Ka, katana……」

Yes, the holy sword changed shape. Although there wasn’t wave pattern on the sword blade, but what was there was certainly a katana with single edge and curving shape. Looking closely, when he noticed even the sheath had changed shape.

「Ha, hahah」

A smile emerged on his mouth unconsciously. The figure that was bathed in blood spurt and yet looked smiling looked gruesome that even the <Dark Beings> looked backing away.

But, Kouki didn’t even pay attention to that.

(Come to think of it, no matter what happen you keep lending me your strength huh)

Even if he let go of it, it would come flying if he raised his hand. Even when he tried to return it, it flew to him by its own will. Even when he got carried away, even when he was a betrayer, even when he was lost, it never forsook him and continued to choose him as its wielder.

And then, now it even changed shape to respond to Kouki’s wish.

‘Aah’, he thought.

His consciousness was still hazy, and everywhere in his body was screaming, however……

「There is a holy sword(partner) in my hand. Then, there is no way, I’ll lose」

If he was defeated, his holy sword(partner) might fall into enemy’s hand. Only that he wouldn’t allow.

He found one more reason to fight.

He suddenly noticed. Without him knowing, there was a sun ray alighting down from the sky. From the gap of the cloudy sky, the sunlight looked like a stair that was continuing to heaven—it was likely that the morning sun was shining in.

The night, had ended.

Seeing that, Kouki’s smile deepened further and,

「If you choose the path of survival then I won’t pursue. But, if you choose to fight—」

Slowly he put the holy sword into the sheath, and he lowered his waist. His hand, was still touching the handle loosely.

□I won’t ask for forgiveness. I will……kill you all until I perish.□

A tranquil fighting spirit, and grand words of resolve, spread through the battlefield.

AN: Thank you very much for reading every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

This might be, a story where the heroine is the holy sword……

Next time, the reinforcement arrives. What they will see there is

PS

It seems that comic version of Arifureta entered the Top 30 of Nikoniko’s first half of the year ranking.

This too is thanks to everyone who read it! And then thanks to RoGa-sensei!

Really thank you very much. Please take care of me from now on too!

Nevertheless, this year too, half a year has passed huh…… haee

Arifureta Chapter 274

Arifureta After II Reinforcement Army Corps

“What’s the status with the sortie preparation-”

The harsh voice of Moana who was wrapped in battle outfit was reverberating in the palace’s corridor. She was walking fast with her footsteps making clapping sound as though to express her impatient feeling. Beside her, her close aides with Spenser, Donar, and Linden in the lead were accompanying her.

Spenser replied to Moana’s question with a stern expression.

“It’s possible for three thousand to sortie in our state. However, the number of arous is insufficient, we are also mobilizing soldiers from the neighboring monitoring base, but we will need at the very least one day to reach the expected number.”

“That’s no good. Too slow. Three thousand is fine. We are departing right away.”

“Don’t speak unreasonably.”

When Spenser said that chidingly, Moana stopped walking and turned her gaze.

「There is no other way than pushing through recklessly. Right now, even in this very moment Arquette is in the verge of being annihilated!」

That voice contained grief. It was something rare to come from Moana who always endeavored to be composed no matter the time. That was just how abnormal and dangerous the situation was, but for Spenser who had been at Moana's side since she was born, he could guess that wasn't all.

Koone and others who should have departed from the capital at noon the day before yesterday to head toward Arquette returned back at the forenoon today in a desperate state even while being exhausted. Thinking about the distance between the capital and Arquette, their return was too early even if they were taking day trip. Most likely they were rushing back through the night without resting.

Koone and others who returned back looked like they were going to collapse. When they asked Koone and others just what in the world was going on that caused their state to be abnormal like that, the answer they were given was about a situation that was hard to believe.

After making Koone and others rest, Moana naturally wasted no time to assemble her close aides in hurry and instructed them for sortie preparation to reinforce Arquette.

But, there were two problems regarding the sortie preparation.

First was the number of the enemy that was a large army of ten thousand.

The other problem was that they were fighting against time.

The battle strength that was permanently stationed in the capital was twenty thousand in total. The total battle strength from the citizens of the capital was less than thirty thousand. There were several cities set up at the boundary line between the desert and grassland and along the coastline. These cities doubled as surveillance base. If all the soldier force in those cities were mobilized, their number would barely reach a hundred thousand.

It looked enough for a battle force, but the matter wasn’t that simple.

After all, the situation this time was a completely abnormal situation. The <Dark Being> had obtained a method to attack the rear while ignoring the front line.

In that case, there was no way they could left the capital unguarded. In this situation where the early detection of enemy using the unobstructed view of the desert was rendered meaningless, enough battle force had to be left behind in the capital no matter what.

In addition, seeing how it would be meaningless unless they reinforced Arquette before the city fell, they had to mobilize using arous no matter what. Because they definitely wouldn’t make it in time if the soldier walked by foot to go there.

But, naturally the number of arous available was fewer than the number of soldier.

With arous that were trained to not fear battle, and including the arous that were collected from the capital’s citizens, and by also further preparing not to carry any luggage as much as possible, and even after using method where multiple people would ride one arous in place of the luggage, they

still couldn’t secure arous in the number that could transport ten thousand soldiers.

Even the number three thousand that Spenser said was already an amazing response to be able to prepare that many in this short time.

Nevertheless, challenging ten thousand enemies with three thousand was still too rash.

Spenser had to admonish that action as the royal guard captain.

“Your majesty. However, speaking realistically, we cannot challenge an army of ten thousand with three thousand.”

“Spenser. Certainly I think that’s reckless. But, I’m not merely saying that without making any calculation at all.”

Moana started walking again while speaking her thought.

“If Arquette’s defensive wall is functioning, it will be possible for us charge through the enemy and enter the city. After that we will hole up there while waiting for the infantry and soldiers from the surveillance bases to arrive, before launching pincer attack from outside and inside the city.”

It was a strategy that was riddled with problem.

Certainly, if they could enter Arquette and then holing up inside, it would be possible for them to endure until the soldier force that was the combination from every area arrived. If it was the art users of the capital, they could easily reinforce and repair the defensive wall, while it would be easy for the soldiers to defeat the <Dark Beings> that sporadically crossed the defensive wall.

The greatest bottleneck of being in the defensive side of a siege that was the food supply was also not a problem seeing that Arquette was a city where harvest was accumulated in there.

But,

"The gate must be closed right now. How are we going to go in?"

"We can use art to send notification for them to open the gate by matching our timing, or we can even use art to create a huge slope to cross the defensive wall. There are many ways that can be used."

"If we lagged even just for a bit, we will get surrounded and then annihilated. It's a gamble that is really bad for heart. Even if for example we managed that……the plan can only work assuming they are still outside the wall you know? What are we going to do in the case the city has fallen?"

"……If that's the case, we will retreat. We will wait until the infantry and soldiers from every area link up with us."

Spenser nodded while saying "Hmm". If she was able to choose the option of retreat there, then he guessed that she was still calm.

But, that too was undoubtedly also a gamble. It was doubtful whether they could really retreat after approaching the enemy until the range where they came into view. There wasn't any guarantee that the enemy wouldn't lying in ambush for their arrival after taking down Arquette.

Not to mention the <Dark Beings> should have realized that some people had escaped.

Honestly speaking, Spenser had judged that Arquette’s situation was “despairing”. It was a rear base with only defensive wall without even any decent soldier. It was impossible for the city to hold out for several days under the attack of a large army of ten thousand.

In that case, even if taking back the city was something they inevitable had to do, the royal guard captain, Spenser ought to think about the safety of the queen. A decision where they should refrain from departing until they could secure enough force had to be made.

However, he also understood Moana’s feeling really well. For Spenser, knowing that the people they had to protect was in a crisis made him unable to be calm. Rather, he felt his stomach getting churned up when thinking that even now Arquette was being trampled.

Perhaps perceiving that indecision of Spenser, Moana added her words with a heavy and compelling voice.

「We have to depart right now. Am I wrong, Spenser?」

「……It’s about Kouki-dono, isn’t it?」

「Yeah.」

‘As I thought’, Spenser thought while closing his eyes.

「I understand your worry. You are wondering whether I’m getting rash, or that I’m losing my calm because of Kouki, right?」

「……Yes.」

Moana nodded while smiling bitterly.

「Certainly, my personal feeling is wanting to go to help Kouki. He is weak even though he is that strong, he torment himself, causing him to be unable to make his decision, but even so he desperately wished to advance forward and keep struggling……I want to help him. I want to become his aid.」

That mysterious young man who was imprisoned by his own mysterious feeling. Even though she had known him only for a few days, but he strangely left impression in her memory, as a person with broken heart.

「Something must had happened in his past. I don't know much about him. Just what happened that he is tormenting himself so much like that? That he can be so disappointed with himself like that?」

Kouki sometimes spoke out his feeling as though he was venting his anger. She could make a guess from that, but Moana instead didn't think too deep about it. Because she wanted to hear it from his own mouth someday, when he wanted to talk to her about it.

「He avoided killing, he is scared of getting killed, he is unable to believe his own decision……however, even though he might not notice it himself, but in the end, he cannot help but saving the people beside him. Because, he is kind.」

Perhaps, that was exactly why he was called as hero. She thought like that.

「Hey, Spenser. When someone who surely ought to be the person who is the most unrelated to fighting said that he will remain behind in an extremely dangerous place, just what is that person actually thinking?」

「……I am a soldier. I don't know the answer. But……I understand the degree of his resolve. I think that he is an

owner of resolve that is worthy of respect.

Moana nodded in agreement.

That’s right. Then we have to meet his expectation.

Her personal feeling affected her decision. But, her feeling as queen also affected that decision to the same degree.

An unrelated man without any obligation or duty is risking his life for the sake of our people by himself alone. He is fighting while believing that we are rushing there as reinforcement.

Not only Spenser, the complexion of all the close aides who were thinking of remonstrating Moana changed.

This isn’t about logic. Am I wrong?

It was dangerous to go with small force. The safety of the queen had to be prioritized. Arquette’s situation was already hopeless. One ought to be rational in front of real problem.

Indeed, all those reasons could just eat shit.

Indeed. Anything other than that will rot our warrior’s soul.

Spenser smiled while nodding. He had said what he should said as a royal guard. But the queen that he loved and respected still gave her command even then. In that case, taking action by following his soul wasn’t something to be sad about. His smile naturally changed into a fearless smile.

We will depart with three thousand. We will force ourselves to push through. However, we won’t do anything

thoughtless. Entrust the warrior soul of all of you to me. Spenser, spread my command!」

「By your will-」

Spenser gave his greatest salute to Moana before dashing away.

「The title as soldier chief is a troubling thing in this kind of time. I'm envious toward Spenser.」

「It's just as you said.」

Soldier chief Donar and head art user Linden breathed out a sigh simultaneously. They would stay behind to guard the capital and organized the following force. But, they themselves also wanted to rush out right now without delay.

「Don't say that. It's because you two are staying behind that we can depart without any worry about the future. Besides, the new threat of the＜Dark Being＞……it's likely that in the battle from now on, base defense will become meaningless. I'll have all of you rush around to my heart's content too.」

「Hahah, we are looking forward to that. However……sudden appearance from empty air, is it……」

Soldier chief Donar groaned with a grim expression. That expression looked as though it was directed toward different matter rather than that threatening phenomenon itself.

Moana who sensed that nodded with a loathing expression.

「.….Only "that guy" can do such thing.」

Linden continued after her.

「It must be the <Dark King>. Making miasma materialize at far away distance. It also happened at the battle five years ago. But, he should be able to do it within only fifty meter at best. Also even though he was able to manipulate miasma, he shouldn't have the ability to teleport other <Dark Being>.」

「It looks like all this time he isn't just healing his wound.」

Moana's loathing expression changed into an even more bitter expression. But, she shook her head and showed a determined face,

「From here on a war even fiercer than five years ago will start. This time for sure, one side will win and gain the right of survival, whether it's mankind or the <Dark Being>. It will become a war to decide that. All of you, take care of Koone.」

「……Your will.」

「……As your majesty will it.」

Both Donar and Linden also closed their eyes after a brief silence. They reflected upon Moana's resolve and wish.

She commanded them to prioritize her little sister rather than herself who had lost most of her strength.

They silently accepted the resolve of her who had already like their own daughter, who at the same time had also splendidly grown to become a respectful king.

The outer edge part of the oasis river of Synclea royal capital. Three thousand soldiers were standing by there while mounting arous.

In order to stand in front of them, Moana also approached toward her personal mount Haumu who was made to stand by in front of the stable. The old man who was taking care of Haumu bowed his head reverently and handed over the rein.

Moana said her thanks to the old man and he gently stroked Haumu’s nose tip. Even Haumu who usually would frolic(bite) at her currently was only staring still at Moana without showing any reluctant behavior.

「Even Haumu somehow understand it huh……」

Moana whispered while narrowing her eyes with her way of speaking turning casual. She pressed her forehead on Haumu’s nose tip and closed her eyes.

「You are my mount. Most likely the time of your death will be the same like me. And then, that time is already nearing. No doubt about that.」

「Fuhn」

Haumu let out a huff, the glint of his eyes showering down Moana as though to say ‘so what’. He was the one and only mount of the king. He didn’t fear death or anything, such dominating aura was conveyed even without any spoken words.

Moana smiled widely toward such Haumu. And then, in order to bestow a worthy accessory for the mount of king, she took out a ribbon from her pocket——

「Onee-chan!」

「Koone?」

When she turned around, Koone was there. Not only Koone, Spike, Lilin, and others, the members who followed Koone to Arquette were all there.

Moana who somehow guessed what Koone was going to say opened her mouth before Koone could say anything.

「You must not, Koone. You stay here.」

「But――」

「There is no way it can be allowed that not a single royalty is staying at the capital in this situation. You understand right?」

She understood. Even Koone understood something like that. However, it was exactly because it was this kind of situation that her heart couldn't allow her big sister to go to a battlefield where she might die. Fierce unease and feeling of despair where it felt like the ground under her was crumbling attacked Koone.

And then, unexpectedly even for herself, she wanted to obtain the confirmation as quickly as possible with a feeling that was as strong as her concern toward her big sister. The confirmation of Kouki's safety.

「Onee-chan, Koone is――」

Koone tried to vehemently argue further, but as expected her words were interrupted, by the index finger of her big sister that touched her lips softly.

「Koone, be reasonable. Both I and Koone has duty as royalty. As your onee-chan, I am really happy with Koone's feeling.

But—I will accomplish what I ought to fulfill. Until that time when I used up this life.」

「tsu」

Moana's words weren't the usual kind and pampering words. She didn't say "It will be fine" or "Onee-chan won't leave Koone".

Fulfilling one's duty. She would do that. You too do that. Those were the words of queen. The time where she could just be the kind onee-chan for Koone was over.

「You understand right? After all Koone is the little sister I'm proud of.」

「tsu, tsu……under, stand. Koone, understand-」

Perhaps, this would be their last meeting in this life. Koone nodded while desperately holding back her tear duct from bursting.

Moana strongly hugged Koone whose expression distorted from holding back from crying as though she was hugging a treasure. Koone too also hugged back tightly, really tightly.

「I'll leave the capital in your hand, Koone.」

「Yes, Onee-cha—your majesty. May luck be with you.」

Hearing her beloved little sister changing how she was calling her, Moana was feeling like she was going to cry despite it was herself who was causing Koone to do that.

Moana made a smile so that Koone wouldn't notice that, but seeing Koone's faint smile and gaze, it seemed that she had

been seen through. “As expected from my Koone-tan”, she used that way of calling only inside her heart.

「Your majesty, we――」

Spike who was at a loss for word from seeing the exchange between Moana and Koone asked hesitantly.

「Of course, all of you stay behind. With how Spenser is accompanying me, the leader of the royal guard in the capital is now Spike. Protect Koone.」

「tsu, by your will.」

Actually, he wanted to turn around and returned to Arquette. Even while biting his lips, Spike returned a salute in order to accomplish his role.

It seemed that all the members of Koone’s escort party shared that feeling. Every single one of them was making the same expression.

Especially Lilin, the expression of the girl who was boasting 「I was born for the sake of fighting」 was filled to the brim with shame because of turning her back toward the enemy regardless of how she managed to accomplish her role of protecting Koone.

Even so she didn’t say anything the same like Spike. That was why, Koone opened her mouth in their place.

「Onee-cha――your majesty. Can you allow to let at least Lilin to accompany you?」

「Hm? Lilin?」

Not just Moana, even Lilin was gazing in wonderment at Koone’s suggestion.

“Yes. Lilin is Spenser’s direct subordinate in the first place. She joined Koone’s escort squad in case of unexpected situation. And most of all, Koone think that it’s better that someone who know about Arquette’s current situation to accompany your majesty just in case.”

It was a reasonable suggestion. And above all else, Koone’s feeling behind her words that wanted Moana to bring at least one person from her escort squad into the battle could be really felt.

Moana said “I see” and nodded, then

“How is your exhaustion? You will be going back to Arquette non-stop without even a wink of sleep. You also lent your strength for Arquette’s defense correct?”

“There is no problem. Your majesty, I beg you to take me into the battlefield. Please give me the chance to slaughter the enemy in the front line.”

The words of Lilin who were bowing her head made Moana smiled wryly reflexively. Spike and others also seemed to feel the same. They made wry smile toward vigorous fighting spirit of the youngest girl of the escort squad.

“Fine then. Lilin, return to your home unit for now. I’m looking forward to your performance in battle.”

“I thank your majesty. I will display my wind for your majesty to see, carving apart the enemies that got away from hero-sama no matter how many they are.”

Spike and others called at Lilin 「Kill a lot for our part too」. Beside them, Koone spoke to Moana.

「Can Koone ask your majesty to give message to hero-sa──to Kouki-sama?」

「……Yeah.」

「──Tell him, 「How dare you did as you please without even asking Koone for permission! You better prepare yourself!」」

「Fuh, fufufuh, go, got it. I will convey the message without fail.」

Kouki was surely alive. The message with a content that was based on such premise caused Moana to be unable to hold her laughter down while thinking that it would surely be hell for Kouki even if he was alive.

Like that, not even thirty minute after that, the soldier force led by Moana departed for Arquette.

Less than two days since the force departed from the capital.

Perhaps it should be said as expected, almost three days had passed since Koone and others escaped from Arquette.

The arous were running with everything they had, even so they are putting up with sprinting while carrying two or three adult men who were fully equipped, so they needed rest no matter what. In addition, as expected marching with three thousand troops even by riding arous lowered their speed compared to marching with only several dozen troops.

The time was several minutes passed the noon. It was about the afternoon of the sixth day since the day Kouki was summoned.

For an army with number of more than a thousand to be able to cross the distance that normally would take one day and a half in that time could be said to be fast enough already.

The army already entered the grassland area and all the arous became animated and increased their speed even further.

「Lilin. If I remember correctly, Kouki deployed a barrier of light that covered the whole Arquette right?」

Moana asked while repressing her impatient feeling.

「Yes, Moana-sama. ……It was a solemn and mystical barrier, not letting the whole army of ten thousand to pass. It was an amazing sight.」

Lilin answered while her eye glint glittered with fighting spirit toward the nearing battlefield. Spenser who was riding at Moana's side shook his head and opened his mouth.

「At that time when we were attacked by Ragar, we were also covered by shining half sphere barrier. It's likely to be the same technique. It had toughness that wouldn't twitch even with the full strength attack of Ragar but……for the same

technique to cover the whole city……it’s hard to even imagine, a truly miraculous work.

Spenser’s expression seemed to want to say What an unbelievable power.

Light of protection……then, we should be able to see it from afar before long. Spenser, what about the lookout at the surrounding?

There is no gap in our lokout. I have already sent out scouts to every directions. It should be about time for them to return temporarily……

Before Spenser could finish speaking, one arous showed itself crossing a small hill and joined up into the rank.

Spenser’s eyes were scrutinizing the scout’s conspicuous act of crossing the hill. The scout was a young soldier who had returned from confirming the situation of Arquette. He was approaching Spenser’s position.

Spenser was thinking whether he should scold the scout’s rash act, also for focusing everyone’s mind, but he stopped from speaking after seeing the scout’s eyes that were wavering in bewilderment.

Commander. Re, reporting

Muh, from your look, is there something ahead? Let’s hear it.

The scouts resolved himself and opened his mouth while Moana and others were also listening carefully.

Yes-. Regarding the barrier of light that we heard beforehand……I couldn’t confirm it’s existence.

hyuh The sound of breath caught in the throat rang out. It came from Moana. Her complexion turned pale. Beside her Lilin was gritting her teeth audibly and her expression warped in vexation.

There was no barrier of light. That was to say, it was the proof that the person who casted the barrier had ran out of strength.

Holding back Moana from reflexively trying to ask for reconfirmation, Spenser told the scout to continue his report. The most important information was the approximate amount of enemy's current number and whether Arquette had fallen or not—putting it another way, it was the evaluation standard to decide whether they should withdraw the army or kept advancing.

「……Is Arquette fallen?」

「That's……that……I don't know.」

「What?」

Spenser didn't understand what the scout meant. The scout should have seen Arquette's situation from afar. The scout should be able to see how many <Dark Being> was surrounding Arquette, and whether the gate was already destroyed or not. Spenser's eyes narrowed like a hawk that was fixed toward the scout, asking what he meant.

The scout gulped, and then he continued speaking a bit rapidly to convey the situation that he witnessed as it was.

「It looks like the gate was destroyed! However, around Arquette, there are only a great number of Dark Beings' corpses, I practically cannot catch sight of any moving thing! The number of the corpses, I didn't confirm it from

every directions, but at the very least in the east side there were—

What, say it clearly! Was it several hundred?

If that was the case, then the possibility was that the large army of <Dark Being> had already subdued Arquette and occupied the city and right now they were hiding inside, or they were advancing toward the neighboring territory, or perhaps they were standing by somewhere in order to launch ambush.

But, as though to blow away that doubt of Spenser, a shocking report with content that was indeed worthy to bewilder the scout was given.

Sir-, based from my observation, it was roughly—around six thousand, I think.

……Ha?

Spenser unconsciously leaked out a stupid sounding voice. But not just him, even Moana and others also showed an expression that wanted to ask just what this person was saying.

It, it’s true. There is really a great number of corpses lying around, even I myself don’t know just what is……

……Calm down. Were the corpses really the corpse of those guys? What about the possibility of some kind of fake body?

Still, I didn’t mistake fake corpses as the real thing. All those are certainly dead <Dark Beings>. Even corpses just from species that we knew like bull head species, scaled dragon species, eccentric species……all those are……

Spenser said 「Good work」 and told the scout to withdraw, and then he looked back at Moana.

「What do you think, your majesty?」

「……Do you think Kouki did that?」

「……I don’t know. It’s hard to believe that so suddenly. In Koone-sama’s report, Kouki-dono himself said that he would run out of strength first against such number. Currently there is no barrier and the gate is opened. Frankly, it’s impossible to decide with this unexpected situation. Perhaps we should think that this is some kind of trap by the enemy.」

Certainly it was just as Spenser said. Moana nodded at Spenser’s concern and she closed her eyes for a while.

And then she put her thought in order and opened her eyes.

「We are advancing. If there is no enemy and Arquette’s gate is opened, then it’s fortuitous. We have to make sure of the city’s situation.」

「……By your will. We will increase the lookout to the surrounding.」

Regardless of the enemy’s nonexistence, there was no way they could withdraw without ascertaining the safety of the citizens. Spenser also agreed with that decision.

The army fastened their pace while being on guard and hurried toward Arquette.

Before long Arquette’s state came into view. Moana and the others held their breath.

Just as the scout said, a great number of <Dark Beings> were lying down nearby the east gate. It was clear even from afar that they were dead with lack of body part or severed into two. The cause was undoubtedly from slash attack. It seemed that the cause of the <Dark Beings>' death wasn't from unforeseen circumstance.

「We are continuing ahead.」

The army rushed through the corpses on Moana's order. The corpses were lying on top of each other so much that there was no empty place to step on.

「The blood trace, the position of loss body part, the way they fell……your majesty. It seems these guys were thrown away after getting cut down around the gate.」

「……The north part and southern part looks clean.」

「From the scout's report, it looks like that the west part only have the grain farm area getting ruined but there is mostly no trace of fighting there.」

Moana and others approached quite near the gate before long.

There were also traces of fierce fighting around there too. Everywhere there were the expired bodies of <Dark Being>.

But, at that time, their ears suddenly caught sound of tumult.

「tsu, let's go-」

They passed through the gate. The sound of tumult was getting louder. While the army was spreading through the

city with Spenser’s instruction, the main force was running toward the tumult following Moana’s order.

Houses were destroyed into a tragic state that was clear even just from a glance. The street was messed up as though the ground had been plowed through. And then there were the countless expired <Dark Beings>.

But, they still hadn’t found even a single corpse of human.

「Moana-sama! The underground vault is ahead from here! It’s at the other side of that big warehouse!」

「I know!」

Moana nodded at Lilin’s report. The tumultuous sound was gradually getting louder. The number of expired <Dark Being> was also getting more numerous. The number might reach a thousand even just inside the city.

「The direction ahead! Enemy sighted! Vanguard, charge!」

The moment they turned around the corner from the street that stretched straight from the east gate, they caught sight of countless <Dark Beings>. Although, it appeared that they weren’t taking position in order to meet the advance of Moana and the others.

The <Dark Beings> were crowding the street, they were even spreading on the buildings’ rooftop. All of them were facing toward a single direction. They only finally noticed Moana and others at the same time when they came into view.

Moana and others felt question seeing that. Even so, there was no need to hesitate with enemy in front of their eyes.

They charged the <Dark Beings> from behind and routed the enemy. A squad climbed to the rooftops following Spenser’s instruction and they opened combat against the enemies on the rooftops.

It was hard to use large force inside a limited space. Moana’s main force divided further into small units, spreading into alleys and streets like water pervading into countless ditches.

The <Dark Beings> fought back, but the momentum of the soldiers who were driven by rage was tremendous and the enemies were routed one after another. The reinforcement army was advancing forward and forward.

The army didn’t hesitate in their path.

Because they could just charge forward toward the direction where the several thousand <Dark Beings> were crowding into.

Like that Moana and others advanced for a while.

Before long, Moana and others arrived at the center of the tumult, they came out at the other side of the large building—the large warehouse that still had its walls standing strong despite having its roof destroyed. There they saw it.

A place that became a mountain of rubble, where most of the surrounding buildings were collapsed.

At that place that was becoming like a large plaza, there were several hundred <Dark Beings> who were tightly forming a round besiegement, and about the same number of expired <Dark Beings> at the surrounding.

And then, at the center, was him.

Surrounded by enemy from all directions, assaulted continuously without any pause……

It was difficult to search any spot on his body that was safe. He had literally become wounded all over his body……

However, under his feet there was a solid looking door made from metal……

—Aa

That was a sigh that was leaked out by someone.

Determination.

That figure which was the embodiment of that word shook the soul of the warriors.

And then, the <Dark Beings> who were only concentrating at the enemy before their eyes finally noticed the existence of Moana and others.

They all stiffened for a moment.

The one who moved first was her majesty the queen whose soul was shaken.

「tsu, Roar-, oh warriors! Annihilate the enemy! Save him——Save Kouki!!」

——oOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOH!!!

The war cry of the warriors' soul shook Arquette.

AN: Thank you very much for reading every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Sorry that this chapter feel half-baked. It feels like I will receive scolding 'Isn't this only barely fulfilling the advance notice of previous chapter, or rather it hasn't reached even that', but I'm thinking of splitting the chapter because of the word number, I'm sorry (sweat)

Forgive Shirakome who is generally unable to follow the plan

Also, regarding the descend of that guy, I'm thinking of lengthening the number of day of Liliana's speech by two, three days.

It's inexcusable toward those who is looking forward to it, but as expected I want to make Kouki do it until the end here.

PS:

At Comic Galdo, a spinoff called 「Arifureta Nichijou de Sekai Saikyou」was starting serialization.

It can be seen at Overlap-sama’s homepage, so please have a look if it pleases you.

The view point is the serious Yue, but the key point was from Shirakome’s pov lol

Arifureta Chapter 275

Arifureta After II　The Fight is Over

Looking at the number, both sides were about equal. The battle strength between the kingdom army and the <Dark Being> army should be in balance against each other.

But, in reality it wasn’t like that at all.

It was just like a clump of weed getting swallowed by muddy stream.

That could only be said to be natural. After all in this place, everything in every senses were working in the kingdom army’s favor.

First, thanks to almost all the <Dark Beings> congregated at the surrounding of Arquette’s underground vault, it was possible to surround them despite the location being in the middle of city.

Second, the kingdom army had the geographical advantage that was urban warfare.

Third, there was already no more blessing power that could be eaten at the surrounding, although only for a bit but the <Dark Beings> looked exhausted.

Fourth, it was only within a part of the <Dark Beings>, but because they had been continuously losing fighting against only one person, fear against human was starting to grow in them.

And then, above all else, the bloodcurdling fighting spirit of the kingdom army soldiers were increasing without any end in sight, the pressure from that beaten down the moral of the enemies. Without doubt that was the greatest cause of the curbstomp.

The righteous indignation of Arquette getting attacked. The vindication of honor for five years ago. Hatred toward the very race of <Dark Being> itself.

Just one person—

Even though he bore no duty or responsibility whatsoever, he continued to fight for three whole days while getting worn out. The soldiers' feeling toward that person couldn't be expressed with words.

For a soldier, after witnessing such an exalted gallant figure, there was no way they couldn't be shaken. There was no way they could stop their soul from roaring.

Fierce.

A fighting spirit where there was no need for hesitation to use that word to represent it was exterminating the <Dark Beings> one after another.

「Re, Retreat-! Retreat-」

Someone unknown among the <Dark Being> yelled that.

If their opponent was only one person, their obstinacy could hold on. If they were against one man who looked like he would collapse anytime now, they could passionately rage and fought, thinking that the next attack for sure would finish the fight, that they would be the one who would bring down the enemy who caused this much damage toward them.

They were like gambler who felt that the jackpot would come out at the next one for sure and lost sight of when to quit.

「Rout them! Chase any that run away and kill them! Prioritize pulling them away from Kouki's nearby!」

Moana's command thundered. The soldiers chased and routed the enemies one after another.

Seeing that, perhaps deciding that the battle had been decided, the <Dark Beings> were running away from Kouki's surrounding altogether.

Among them, there were also <Dark Beings> who realized that they were already unable to escape and launched suicide attack at Kouki, but before Moana and others could even say 「Ah」, Kouki who were swaying in place cut them down with a single stroke of katana.

It was sword skill that would make anyone shudder seeing it. Heads were flying like a joke.

The veteran Spenser who was watching felt as though he couldn't recognize the moment when the katana was swung, and the process of cutting the head. When he noticed it was already over.

Kouki kept standing imposingly, his head looking down with both his hands dangling down. His expression couldn’t be seen, but even though Moana had been calling at him many times since a while ago, he showed no reaction in response.

His state was uncommon.

And yet despite so, with that state where he wasn’t even taking stance, he was swaying back and fro while slaughtering <Dark Beings> that leaped at him with sword attack that couldn’t be perceived.

「The sword’s……summit—sword saint」

Spenser whispered with a hoarse voice. It was a legend that his father told him when he was but a child.

An unseen and unavoidable sword strike. One of the summits that a swordsman ought to aim for.

In the far past, that technique was considered as the king’s sword, the character of the legend was extolled and people were calling him <Sword Saint>.

The current Kouki, he looked just like the second coming of the legend.

「Kouki!」

When Spenser went ‘hah’ and came back to his senses, there weren’t any more figure of <Dark Being> at the surrounding. The tumultuous sound of the soldiers fighting could be heard from the direction of the west gate.

And then, Moana took the healing art users with her and rushed toward Kouki.

She was rushing toward Kouki with great momentum, just like what the <Dark Beings> doing before this.

「Don’t-, your majesty! Back away-」

「Eh?」

Kouki who was still standing silently with both his hands dangling down and his face looking down was swaying.

Moana who heard Spenser’s voice and looked back—was already in Kouki’s range.

「-!!!」

「Gua!?」

A hair’s breadth. Lilin pulled Moana back. The two fell behind and rolled around. 「What are you doing」 Moana said while her voice was stifled from the impact of falling. In the field of vision of Moana who lifted her face, white strings were fluttering down in the air……

「Eh?」

「Are you safe, Moana-sama!?」

「Your majesty-, are you injured!?」

Lilin asked with a pale expression while Spenser called with an impatient expression, but the astonished Moana didn’t pay them any attention.

The fluttering down white strings.

Those were—her hair.

The tips of Moana’s white hair were slightly cut and fluttered in the air.

Who cut those hairs?

That was obvious.

「Kouki?」

There was no answer to her call.

Kouki were standing still on his original position—above the door of the underground vault.

Thanks to rolling down on the ground, Moana finally could see the face of Kouki that was looking down. At the same time, she noticed the abnormality.

「Kou, ki……」

There was no light in those half closed eyes. Those eyes were empty, they weren’t looking at anywhere.

「It looks like……he is alive. But, he is unconscious. What the……」

「Unbelievable……」

Both Spenser and Lilin lost their words. Moana too also the same.

That was understandable.

Just who in the world could possibly imagine *someone fighting while being unconscious*.

Looking at him once more, Kouki’s state was really atrocious.

There was all kind of sizes of wounds throughout his body. Few places were unharmed. He was blood drenched all over his body, his brown hair was dyed dark red by his own blood and enemy’s blood. His breathing was shallow and faint, it sounded like it would stop anytime now. His side that could be seen from the gap of his torn clothes was warped, perhaps it was because his ribcage was broken and changed shape……

The sword that changed shape was gripped in only one hand, because his other arm was broken all over from the shoulder until the fist.

Looking closer, the hand that was grasping the sword was wrapped in several layer of cloth scraps, so that even if the hand lost gripping strength, the sword wouldn’t slip down.

jijiji-, jijiji- The holy sword was flickering with light like a lamp that was almost cut off from electricity, as though expressing the light of Kouki’s life as it was.

Just how long he had been fighting continuously in this state?

His figure that was continuing to fight even when he was unconscious.

Moana sent his gaze toward the spot where Kouki was standing. The entrance of the underground vault.

She understood just from seeing that.

—I won’t let anyone touch even a single hair of them

An emotion that couldn’t possibly be expressed with words became tear and overflowed.

「You are, you are protecting them until you become like that……you are protecting them until the end aren't you, Kouki……」

Moana stood up. Spenser and Lilin tried to stop her, but Moana told them no need with a smile.

Spenser and Lilin tried to say that it was dangerous to get near the current Kouki who would remove anyone who approached. However, they became unable to say anything seeing that smile. Both of them were also unable to stop the trembling inside their chest from seeing Kouki's figure.

The two of them were watching attentively in silent. No, it wasn't just the two of them, before they realized they were surrounded by soldiers who were watching attentively with the same expression on their faces. Moana advanced under their gaze.

Two meter left until Kouki's sword boundary.

「Kouki. Kouki, it's me. It's Moana you see. I'm coming toward you now. I'm sorry that I'm late okay?」

One meter remaining.

「Everything is all right already. Because you have protected to the very end. There is no more enemy here.」

Thirty centimeter remaining.

Kouki reacted with swaying.

Spenser was about to move, but Lilin caught his arm and she shook her head. Her gaze was directed straight at Kouki. Trust at the utmost filled that gaze. Spenser also relaxed his body.

「That’s why, you can rest already. It’s okay to not fight…… that’s why-」

Remaining distance—zero.

The holy sword vanished. That was how the unseen sword strike looked like when it approached Moana’s neck—when it stopped still right above the skin.

Even if he was unconscious, but if someone called at him wholeheartedly, the kind him would surely respond without fail.

If “I’m right here” was conveyed to him, he absolutely wouldn’t harm someone who wished to protect.

Moana who was convinced of that gently embraced Kouki without even a shred of discomposure.

「Kouki……」

「……u……a?」

A faint groan. When Moana peered into Kouki’s face while supporting him, there was his eyes there that were reflecting Moana’s face. Those eyes were faintly like lamp with light returning in it.

「……Mo……a……」

「Yes, it’s me right here, Kouki.」

「…….I have……to……protect」

It was a hoarse voice that almost couldn’t be heard. Moana gently whispered with her tears overflowing once more.

「It’s all right. It’s over already. Everyone is safe. You protected them. That’s why, it’s all right already.」

「……I……pro, tected?」

Kouki’s eyes were slightly opened wide, it was like he wanted to say 「Unbelievable」 even though it was something that he did himself.

That was why, Moana stared straight into Kouki’s eyes with a strong gaze while telling him.

「Yes, you protected them. Thank yo「u, Kouki. Everyone, is saved by you.」

Kouki who received those words was……

「……I’m……glad」

Saying that, he smiled slightly and closed his eyes.

The body slumped and lost strength. The holy sword lose even its faint light as though to say that its role was over. Moana who was glued closely to Kouki understood, that something unseen but important was dispersing from Kouki’s body.

That figure that was quietly losing strength, was as though……

「Quick-, heal him! Hurry! This person absolutely must not be let to die!」

A command that sounded like scream was yelled. The art users who stiffened from Kouki’s heroic state assembled altogether and began applying their art.

The expression of the art users of the capital who excelled in healing grew worse with impatience. That told the reality of the precariousness of the current Kouki.

「Please, I beg you don’t die……Kouki……」

Moana’s prayer resounded among the sound of fighting that still reverberated from afar, and between the soldiers who were moving around in order to get the people of Arquette out from the underground vault.

He felt a sensation as though he was floating from the bottom of dark water.

It was as though something terribly heavy was coiling around him. His vision was pitch dark and couldn’t see anything. His voice too, his throat stung and couldn’t really make voice.

(What……the world after death is really simple huh……)

If place like hell or heaven really existed, he must be heading toward hell without doubt. If he waited here, before long even king Yama might come to judge him.

This time for sure, there would be no one that could chase after him like that time in the 「Holy Precincts」.

(Even though Shizuku and others had saved me after much trouble……even though I finally found my answer……even though it finally felt like I can live by facing forward……how unfortunate)

Loneliness, sadness, frustration.

When he thought that he wouldn’t be able to meet his family and friends anymore, those feelings welled up like flood.

At the same time, he thought of that girl who he felt like he was seeing at the very end like a miracle.

(Moana, sama. ……Was that an illusion? I don’t remember how long I was fighting but……I wonder if I was able to protect everyone?)

He protected them. That was how he felt. He had no basis for thinking so, but deep inside Kouki he was convinced of that. That he surely achieved that.

(Though, I killed as many as I protected)

It was impossible to save “both sides”. However, if he pursued for “one side” and didn’t fail in doing that……then as he thought, it must be one answer.

Thinking that he had scattered a great number of lives, then without doubt he would be going to hell. Was king Yama not here yet? Getting kept in suspense like this was……honestly felt scary, so he wished that he would quickly come.

While thinking of such uncontrollable imagination, what surfaced at the back of Kouki’s mind was about “that guy”.

(If it’s “that guy”, surely he will point his gun even to king Yama and asked 「Are you enemy, or ally」 instead. If the answer to that is enemy, he will surely pull the trigger.)

What a really simple evaluation standard.

As expected it was a way of living that he couldn’t possibly do.

Thinking that, for some reason Kouki found it extremely funny that he spontaneously almost laughed.

He almost laughed but,

(Nnn!? It hurts!? For some reason my whole body feel so painful it feels like I’m gonna dieeeeee!?)

‘Why is there still flesh pain even after death huh!’ When he directed such unreasonable outburst of anger to the king Yama in his heart, for some reason he felt a sensation as though his consciousness was surfacing.

Furthermore, inside the pitch black darkness was even starting to be shined with faint light.

(Eh? Don’t tell me, I’m……)

Thinking that it was impossible, Kouki opened his eyes—

The field of vision of Kouki who opened his eyes in reality was completely filled with the close-up face of a middle aged man. It was at a very close range where their nose almost touched each other.

「Hih, -a!? Ngih, it hurt-, scary-!? Scary hurt!?」

「Oo!? Kouki-dono! You woke up!」

A stern middle-aged man. The look of his eyes was that of a veteran warrior. The criminal of the close-up face at the waking up was Spenser.

In addition, when his body jerked from surprise, intense pain instantly assaulted his whole body.

This was the worst waking up.

Spenser said 「I will call her majesty here immediately! Please wait for a second!」 and dashed out of the room.

For the time being the “scary” thing left, so Kouki calmed down and looked at his surrounding with teary eyes from pain.

He had recollection of the room’s make up. It was really similar with the guest room in the feudal lord’s mansion that he was guided into when he first arrived at Arquette. Or rather, it was exactly that guest room. When he focused his hearing, he could hear the hustle and bustle of people outside the window.

「I’m, alive? I’m, still alive……」

Bit by bit, that fact seeped into him. Unconsciously his tear duct loosened and tears spilled out emotionally. He really thought that his life was lost as the compensation of his wish and the atonement of his crime.

He thought, that he wouldn’t be able to meet anyone else anymore.

It was scary. It was painful.

However, he was alive.

What he did, what he accomplished, and then how he was alive right now.

All of that pressed on his heart. Kouki simply cried.

zudadadadada- The terrific sound of footsteps resounded in the ears of such Kouki.

Recalling that just now Spenser said 「I will call her majesty」, Kouki guessed that it was Moana coming his way. He wiped his tears in hurry. Somehow, he didn’t want to show her his pathetic side even more than this.

Right after he finished wiping up his eyes, *BAA――――NN!!* the door was blown off and Moana arrived.

Why was it he wondered. Kouki felt an immense feeling of déjà vu. He wondered if these two sisters similarly held some kind of grudge toward door.

「Kouki.」

「Moana, sama……as I thought it wasn’t some kind of illusion then.」

Moana who was amazed seeing the awakened Kouki let out tears seeping out from hearing those words of Kouki, she then ran toward him with small steps and without pause she sat down snugly on the bed.

She sat down with her back facing Kouki, and with her long hair acting as veil he also couldn’t see her face from the side.

「Excuse me, Moana-sama? What about the people of Arquette? How long it has been since then?」

「……」

Kouki felt a bit anxious seeing the silent Moana. He wondered if something happened, something that wasn’t good.

But, before he could speak out his anxiety, Moana slowly tilted her body toward Kouki. Without pause she embraced

Kouki’s body as though she was covering him, gently so that it wouldn’t affect Kouki’s wounds.

「Mo, Mo Mo Mo, Moana-sama!?」

Sweet fragrance like kukuri fruit tickled Kouki’s nose. A sensation that was clearly soft even through the sheet covering his body caused him to feel agitated against his wish.

「……The people of Arquette are all safe. I told you right? You protected everyone.」

「Ah……yes.」

There was Moana’s face right beside his own face as though she was burying her face on his body. Her voice was slightly shaking from the various emotions filling it, reaching his ear along with her breath.

「It has only been a day since then. Really, just what kind of body you have to be able to wake up even though you almost died.」

「Ahaha……that’s because of the hero’s specs.」

Influenced by Moana who was talking in a casual way, Kouki also responded to her with a casual way of talking.

Moana lifted her face, and then she stared at Kouki with her nose tip kept close to him.

「But, you will die when it’s time to die.」

「……You’re right.」

「Even your healing, several times it looked hopeless in the middle of it.」

「……I too, thought that this is it many times.」

If it wasn’t Kouki then surely it would be beyond any help. The life force that was vitalized by blessing art, magic power that would recover when resting, and skill that elevated healing power as long as there was magic power. And then, the art users who continuously used healing art until they collapsed.

All those barely saved Kouki’s life.

「Just, why are you making that kind of eyes?」

There were a lot, really a lot of things she wanted to say. She wanted to say that she didn’t ask him for dedication to the degree he would throw away his life. She wanted to ask why he didn’t come back together with Koone. She wanted to ask him just what was he thought about his own life. There were a lot that she wanted to say as worried as she was.

However, seeing Kouki’s clear gaze, Moana became unable to say anything.

Kouki made a small smile and spoke.

「I found, my answer.」

Kouki who wavered about his way of living. He held distrust toward himself and was unable to choose anything. He was wandering, looking for what was right, which was right, “the right choice”.

He said that he found the answer, within the verge of death.

It was something that one ought to be happy about but…… Moana’s expression turned complicated.

「Then with that, you won’t hesitate anymore? You can live without feeling suffering?」

Kouki shook his head quietly.

「I will still waver from now on too, I think that it surely will be painful. Because the answer that I found, is something like that.」

He was unable to come to a clear decision like “that guy”.

Enemy and ally. Dividing the world into two such colors, that was something he couldn’t do. He couldn’t swing his sword while still not knowing anything.

Surely he would struggling and floundering dreaming for the ideal. If there wasn’t such path, he would surely be anguished when reality was thrust toward him.

But, so what.

He would struggle. He would worry in anguish. Bring it on.

At those times, he would just make his choice, believing that it would surely lead to the best result.

Surely, nine out of ten he would regret the result, but he absolutely wouldn’t give up the future that resulted after he made his choice no matter what.

If the ideal was impossible, the second best then. Even if that was also beyond him, he would continue to fight in order to haul in a future that was better even if for just a bit.

Yes, the world couldn’t be divided into two colors.

Right, or wrong.

From whose point of view it was decided?

There was no such thing as the right solution.

「I idolized my grandfather. Because Jii-chan is my hero, because hero has to be right……I, was imprisoned by the “right thing” unnoticed by myself.」

「Right now it’s different?」

「Yeah. I want to do the right thing, but I’m not imprisoned by that anymore. Because, whether it’s right or wrong, but in the end, I’m unable to slap away that hand.」

For the＜Dark Being＞, Kouki was unmistakably “evil”, he was in the wrong for killing them.

But, even so Kouki was unable to slap away that boy’s hand. He absolutely didn’t want to do that. No matter how much he wished for the path where both sides could live. No matter even if it became he cut down one side.

「I’ll keep worrying until the time limit. But, I will surely make my choice. Even if it won’t go as I want it at the end of my choice, I’ll continue to struggle. I cannot stop dreaming. Even if it won’t come true.」

‘In the end, I don’t really change huh’, Kouki made a wry smile.

Moana stared fixedly at Kouki’s eyes, and then she smiled gently.

「I see……if that’s Kouki’s answer, then I’ll root for you. If it’s needed, I’ll lend you my strength as much as you need. It’s not because you have saved Arquette. It’s because I want to be your strength.」

「Moana, sama……」

With her own nose tip, Moana poked at Kouki’s nose tip chidingly so that he corrected the way he was calling her.

That adding “-sama”, was unnecessary.

Kouki also smiled quietly while feeling as though he was pulled in by Moana’s eyes.

「Moana. Right now there are a lot of problem and there is also not really time but……someday, will you hear a story about my massive failure?」

「I want to hear no matter what kind of story. Let me listen, absolutely.」

Moana nodded happily hearing Kouki’s words telling her that he wanted her to know about him.

A silence that wasn’t awkward in the least filled the room.

With their gazes still intertwined with each other, they became closer bit by bit──

Kouki’s excellent hero ears finally caught the small, yet a lot of breathing sound that was countless.

He stiffened like rock, and then Kouki looked to the side *gigigi* like a machine that ran out of oil. Following that motion, Moana also moved her gaze──

At the entrance of the room that had its door blown away, she saw countless silhouette of people watching attentively while holding their breath.

With Spenser and Lilin at the forefront, a lot of soldiers, and furthermore the feudal lord Rothko and his wife Syla, the

vigilance corps captain Ivana and her subordinates, and then the civil officials……

They were pouring their gaze with all the space packed full with people.

「—!? Eeh-eeh-ehem-! Ko, Ko Ko, Kouki seems to be fine already! I'm relieved!」

Moana stood up in a flash with her stance like a soldier's "at ease" position to cover up the situation. Seeing that, Kouki made tsukkomi inside his heart 「There is no keeping up appearance anymore you know」 seeing such Moana. Moana's cheeks were bright red.

After that, Rothko and others came in with awkward expression that said 「We are being nuisance in her majesty's tryst」. They spoke their joy at Kouki's safety, and then they expressed their gratitude for saving the city.

Midway, the recovered healers arrived in order to continue their treatment toward Kouki, but because the room was cramped with everyone who came wanting to say their thanks even for just a bit and caused the room to be noisy, the healers finally ran out of patience and they raged 「We cannot concentrate here-」, and they kicked out everyone including Rothko. Such strange occurrence happened.

Rothko was literally kicked out despite being the feudal lord. The soldiers, including Rothko who received such treatment were all acting despondent. That sight could be said to be really surreal.

There was one more unusual occurrence, or rather an incident that caused all the soldiers who knew the girl to feel so shocked their eyeballs might leaped out from their eye sockets.

「Kouki-sama. Your figure that continued to fight even while unconscious—was mesmerizing. You are exactly a man among man, a warrior among warrior.」

Saying such thing, she—Lilin kissed Kouki's cheek.

As far as Moana, Spenser, and everyone else knew, that should be her "first" kiss.

The true feeling of the girl who then returned to her work as though nothing had happened was unknown. Or rather, everyone present wanted to leave it as something unknown for the time being.

The reason was, because her majesty's eyes were turning round and round after that.

In addition, it was only for a moment but a beastly gaze where in her heart "Right now while Kouki cannot move……" showed through transparently was directed toward Kouki.

Kouki who was dumbfounded from Lilin's kiss twitched went 「Hah, killing intent!?」 while springing up on the spot. Seeing such Kouki, Spenser and others reached a tacit agreement between each other to do watchful waiting in regard to this case.

It seemed that even the brawny soldiers were bad against the "war of woman" that might resulted by any chance. To the degree that they averted their gaze from the savior that saved the city while offering their prayer.

Throughout all those, with Kouki’s astounding recovery power and the healing of multiple excellent healers, Kouki was forced to a complete bed rest for a week at least but……

The situation was already moving.

—Reinforcement request from the neighboring territory of Arquette

—A news from the capital with gist that a large army led by <Dark King> was confirmed marching forward

The bad news brought by messengers rushing to Arquette.

However, those news didn’t enter the ear of Kouki who was sleeping once more.

No one tried to tell him.

Because if Kouki knew about it, he absolutely would move right now.

That was why, Kouki didn’t notice.

That Moana and others had departed toward the battlefield.

AN: Thank you very much for reading every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Next chapter, the demon king finally arrives…I think

Arifureta Chapter 276

Arifureta After II　The Finally Arriving Absurdity

「……Nn」

Letting out a small groan, the sleeping Kouki opened his eyes.

He stared absentmindedly at the ceiling, it was the unchanging guest room of Arquette feudal lord's mansion.

「……I'm glad.」

Kouki who was uneasy that perhaps that time he spent with Moana, the uproar with Rothko and others, all of those might be only a dream and he was actually dead as he thought, he leaked out that whisper and sighed in relief.

He looked around, but there was no one in the room. The door that was tragically blown away by Moana was also back just like before.

Kouki tried ascertaining his body's condition.

(-, I'm still far away from complete recovery……. My right arm and left side are in the worst condition. My bones aren't completely fixed too yet. But the small wounds are healed. As for my physical exhaustion……perhaps, it's about forty

percent recovered? My magic power……it’s used for healing so, it’s still barely at twenty percent.)

Kouki let out a large sigh in exasperation and his body sunk into the bed.

Looking at outside the window, the sun was slightly sinking. It would be evening in just a few more hours. He remembered that when he first woke up the sunlight was the same like this, so he must have been sleeping for a full day.

He stared at the sky from the window for a while.

It was really quiet.

Kouki’s heart was also at ease like the silence of the room.

(Since I came to this world, this is the eight days I think? Even though it’s only a week, I had spent a really deep time here. ……Nagumo too, did he feel like this when he was at the abyss? No, from what I saw at the image in the ice and snow cavern, it was worse for him. He also got his arm eaten right from the start. It’s already lucky that I still have all my limbs.)

That guy was someone who he held an extremely complicated feeling against, but since he dropped out from school and traveled across Tortus, Kouki frequently thought about Hajime.

That was also the case when he decided to stay behind at Arquette.

No matter what, he couldn’t help but be conscious of that man.

It wouldn’t be an exaggeration even if he called him someone who changed his everything.

He wondered how he should think about him, or perhaps just like how Hajime didn’t think anything—or feeling indifferent about Kouki if speaking frankly, perhaps he should also be like that and stopped worrying about it.

He had also found the answer about his feeling toward Hajime where he didn’t have any conclusion about it before. No, he was finally able to recognize his feeling where he had been averting his eyes all this time.

(That guy surely doesn’t give a damn at all about me but…… I absolutely will meet him one more time and talk to him.)

A small smile surfaced on his lips. It was a smile without any gloominess in it, it could even be called a fearless smile. It was a truly manly smile that Kouki had never made until now.

「At any rate……」

He was really hungry. No, honestly speaking he was feeling abnormally hungry.

There was a water pitcher nearby filled with fruit juice that was giving off good smell, so it was likely he could replenish his body fluid and nutrition from it, but as expected his stomach seemed to demand solid food.

The moment he became conscious of it, his stomach howled *guuo-*.

Kouki somehow lifted his body that was wrapped in pain and terrible fatigue and sat up on the bed. He pulled off the

blanket and Kouki’s body that became exposed was covered all over with bandage and gauze.

Kouki instantly felt dizziness right after he stood up, but he shook his head slightly and endured it with effort. He made a wry smile seeing his body was shaky more than he imagined before he wore the clothes that were put nearby.

His old clothes must have been disposed with how ragged they had become. It wasn’t anywhere nearby, but in their place was soldier clothing with white as the base. The size fit him snugly. The smooth texture felt pleasant on his skin.

Kouki put his clothes in order for the time being before he slowly headed toward the door.

He opened the door and came out into the corridor.

□Ah□

□Ah□

His eyes met another’s. Sitting on a chair placed at the corridor was—Lilin.

A memory surfaced in his mind The approaching face of the girl. And then, the soft sensation that his cheek felt. And then, an instant of beastly nature that Moana showed after that.

Kouki’s body shivered all over.

That look, that look was something he had seen before. Those eyes were……yes those eyes. Those were the same eyes with the eyes showed by the wive~s of the demon king when they were targeting their husband.

‘That’s absurd’, Kouki shook his head while thinking so.

「Kouki-sama, are you all right? It’s no good unless you rest peacefully. Now, please return to the room and lie down.」

Lilin seemed to think that Kouki’s condition was still not good seeing him shivering like that. She worriedly walked toward Kouki and gently supported his body.

「Ah, no, I’m fine already, Lilin-san. For some reason I’m feeling really hungry, so I’m wondering if I can ask for some kind of food.」

Kouki wished that she would move away a bit from him because he was really all right. Lilin was supporting Kouki with her hand naturally circling around Kouki’s waist to rest on his stomach, so her body was sticking close to him. She was a girl with slender body type, but her body had enough feminine softness in it.

However, Lilin’s sense of distance didn’t change.

「Understood. Then I will go to bring the food. That’s why, please take a rest Kouki-sama. The healers said that you absolutely must rest for a week.」

After saying that, Lilin urged him to go back into the room. Her tone was just like usual, but it somehow felt like it allowed no argument from him. Kouki obediently followed her.

「Err, Lilin-san is――」

「It’s fine to just call me Lilin. It’s also fine to not speak politely like that with me.」

「Eh? But――」

「Call me Lilin.」

「Wh, why are you suddenly――」

「Lilin」

「I, I understand. Lili――」

「Understand?」

「I, I got it already, Lilin.」

Lilin nodded in satisfaction! Kouki wilted down!

Wanting to change the atmosphere somehow, Kouki spoke the continuation of his interrupted question.

「Then Lilin, why were you in front of my room?」

「……It's Moana-sama's order. She told me to take care of Kouki-san.」

「? Then isn't it fine if you stay normally inside the roo……」

「I also thought the same. But Moana-sama told me 『It will be problematic if a mistake happen, so you must not enter the room when Kouki is unconscious. Breach of order will be punished strictly, keep that in mind』. So it can't be helped.」

「I, I see. Then it really can't be helped!」

Speaking about a mistake that might happen when Kouki was unconscious……

Kouki got the feeling that he must not pursue that line of thought deeper, and he expressed his agreement 『Can't be helped!』 strongly.

Kouki attempted to change the topic. For some reason Lilin let out a small snigger while looking at Kouki with a sidelong glance.

「And then, about that Moana, and also Rothko-san and others, what are they doing right now?」

「……Both of them, they are busy with various things like repairing Arquette, making contact with the capital, and so on. They are rushing around everywhere.」

「I see……about the＜Dark Being＞, do they appear again since then?」

「No, everything’s fine. Now, I’ll go ask for food, so Kouki-san please go to sleep right away. Right now the most important thing is for you to rest. After all you really almost died.」

Lilin pushed Kouki to the bed while saying that before walking quickly to exit the room.

There, Kouki suddenly noticed.

Yes, right now the citizens could also go outside and they should be running around to repair Arquette. In this feudal lord mansion there should be civil officers and vigilance corps rushing around busily.

And yet,

(……It’s too quiet?)

He focused his hearing. There wasn’t a single sound.

「……Lilin.」

「Yes?」

Lilin who was about to go out to the corridor turned around and replied at Kouki casually.

「What’s with the soundproofing?」

「—tsu」

Lilin stopped still with her gaze going stiff. Kouki didn’t overlook that.

「Bull’s eye huh. Is it the work of wind art?」

「……Yes, right. It’s my blessing art.」

「Why? Why are you applying soundproofing?」

「It’s so Kouki-san can rest peacefully.」

Certainly, that must be the truth. Currently Lilin showed no sign of agitation. However, if that was the case then she should be able answer without getting shaken when she was asked the reason of the soundproofing.

Kouki’s instinct was sounding the alarm bell that there was something, that something not good happened.

「If that’s so then dispel the art for me. I’m awake already, so it’s fine right? No, I also want to look at how everyone is doing, as I thought I’ll go myself to ask for the meal.」

「Ple, please wait, Kouki-san. I told you already that you still need a peaceful rest for now!」

Lilin rushed back toward him looking slightly panicked and pushed down Kouki who was trying to get up from the bed.

Kouki sent a straightforward gaze toward Lilin who was putting her hands on his shoulders to make him lie back

down.

「What's going on?」

「No, nothing――」

「Lilin, tell me. Right now, what is happening? What are you hiding from me?」

「……」

Kouki grasped Lilin's shoulders instead and pressed her with his question. Receiving the strong gaze that didn't let her to beg off the question, Lilin's eyebrows lowered down with a troubled look.

「If I tell you……will you promise to rest quietly?」

「……In other words, there is something going on that will make me unable to rest quietly and rush out instead?」

「Uu, please stop reading behind the line!」

Kouki's hands that were tightly grasping Lilin's shoulders became stronger. His will to not let her ran away could be seen clearly. The more time passed, the more Lilin's gaze swam around everywhere.

「If Lilin doesn't tell me, then I'll run out by myself and ask someone else.」

「Aah geez-. I'll tell you already-, so please promise to not act as you please!」

「Got it, tell me.」

Lilin's shoulders dropped in dejection, then a beat later, she began talking with a serious and grim expression.

「There was notification from the capital. Right after we sent reinforcement here, an army of <Dark Being> invaded the capital. The <Dark King> seemed to be confirmed among the army.」

「-, so he recovered……」

Lilin nodded.

「Not just that, two territories near Arquette were also assaulted at the same time. In order to dispatch the soldiers, messenger to tell the nearest surveillance base to dispatch their soldiers were sent out, but it can be said that the situation of the defense is as dangerous as this place before.」

It seemed that other than sending request for reinforcement from the capital, the feudal lords of the two territories also sent messenger to Arquette to notify this place about the danger.

「In order to prepare for the time when Arquette is attacked again, Rothko-sama is preparing to further strengthen of the defense wall and the underground vault. By Moana-sama's command, two thousand of the soldiers are to stay here.」

「Wait. "Of the soldiers"? You mean there are still others then? What's the rest doing? And Moana?」

Even while half guessing it already, Kouki still asked while feeling uneasiness to the degree that was uncanny even for himself. A bad premonition encroached inside his heart, like an ink that dripped on a white paper and seeped in.

「Moana-sama, she led the remaining soldiers accompanied by Spenser-sama. They already set out to return back.

Because there is no way the king can be absent when facing an army that is led by the <Dark King>, she said.

-. I, see……

There was the greatest protection that was the oasis at the capital. On top of that, there were also more than ten thousand soldiers led by chief Donar and head art user Linden. There was no way they would be defeated that easily.

Even so, his bad premonition was swelling up.

For some reason, he couldn’t help but had glimpses of Moana’s face in his mind.

Then, let’s catch up to them right away. They left from here yesterday right? If we departed quickly, we should be able to go to the capital without getting left behind too much.

There was soldier force staying behind at Arquette. He was also concerned with the other territories, but soldiers were already dispatched there, so right now it was the <Dark King> that was most concerning and had to be dealt with.

Thinking that, Kouki said that he would go at where Moana was even for a second faster, but Lilin shook her head toward him.

You must not. You were told that you absolutely still have to rest for one week! Just why do you think Moana-sama left me behind here for!

A person that could use blessing art of wind which had skill like soundproofing *for several days*, a powerful person with strength that could suppress Kouki while he was wounded,

and also a person that Kouki knew. Lilin satisfied all those conditions.

「I cannot sleep for one more week in this kind of time!」

「It’s only for four more days!」

「……Eh?」

Kouki showed a dumbfounded expression toward Lilin who seemed to say that unintentionally.

「Four more days? Wait a second. The time when I woke up once was yesterday right?」

「……No, you are mistaken. Three whole days had passed since then. Kouki-san was sleeping the whole time until now. That’s how much your body is demanding for rest. You were even staggering only just now.」

Kouki was dumbfounded without even listening at Lilin’s frank opinion. He whispered 「Three days……」.

In other words, Moana and others were already in the middle of war.

The bad premonition that he was feeling from some time ago swelled up explosively.

「I’ve got to go, to help them.」

「There is nothing you can do in that kind of state. It was because I thought that Kouki-san will force yourself that I even applied soundproofing so that your sleep wouldn’t be disturbed you know? Even if you are going to go help them, first please heal your body!」

It was a sound advice. What Lilin was saying was completely correct without any mistake.

But, if everything became too late because of that……

When he thought that, words and reasoning──couldn’t stop him.

「Lilin. Even you actually want to go right? Because, you are a fighter. The front line is exactly the place you are looking for. Isn’t that right? Bring me with you too.」

「-. Wha, what titillating words in this time……nnh」

It was a serious scene, but for some reason Lilin was writhing. Her long brown twintail was fluttering unrulily.

「I, I won’t be swayed by those sweet words, so please give up.」

Just where did she find any sweet factor from his words? Kouki thought that for an instant, but right wasn’t the time for that so Kouki ignored it.

「I see……then there is no other way. As I thought I’m going to act by myself.」

「Tha, that’s why I’m saying I won’t let──」

Using “Ground Shrinker” from the bed! Kouki instantly went around Lilin behind her. His body was screaming but he didn’t let his expression showed it at the slightest.

His hand chopped lightly *ton-* on Lilin’s shoulder and Kouki said to Lilin who was dumbfounded while saying 「Eh?」.

「Certainly I’m not fully recovered, but not so much that I can be overcome by a rearguard at this range. I cannot be held

back by Lilin just so you know.」

「Tha, that’s really amazing.」

Lilin broke out in a cold sweat. When she slowly looked behind, she found a strong gaze pressuring her there.

Actually from the time when she first met him, she somehow thought of him like 「What an irresolute person. Smile a bit more crisply」, but right now she couldn’t catch any sight of his smile that looked as though he was enduring pain or his insecure gaze.

「I’m going. If Lilin want how about you also go with me? I think that the place I’m going to is a place that you are looking for.」

「Ye, yes-. It’s Moana-sama’s command after all! There is no way I can let Kouki-san leave from my sight!」

Lilin writhed even more, perhaps because Kouki’s words touched her heart string. Kouki ignored her abnormal state with his all and nodded once before going out of the room.

The blessing art was dispelled and bustling sound entered his hearing. As he thought, it was a furor all over the place.

Before long he could see the figures of the civil officers. They all showed astonishment for an instant when they saw Kouki’s figure, but they then immediately gave their most respectful salute before moving aside to open a path for him.

If it was Kouki from before, then on the surface he would act awkward and modest, but inside he would bask in the pleasant feeling that he was the hero. But, right now his feeling was really calm.

The person that he passed would bow silently with a moved expression. But even seeing that, his heart didn’t ripple. Rather, only the feeling of solemnly accepting their respect and expectation was filling his chest.

Before long he reached the room that was used as the emergency countermeasure room. The door was left open. When he peeked inside, there were Rothko, Ivana, and others there as expected.

「Rothko-san.」

「Hm? Oo, Kouki-dono! ……Is it all right for you to stay up already?」

Rothko showed joy when he noticed Kouki, however, seeing Lilin who was close behind Kouki, he sent Kouki an inquisitive gaze.

It seemed that Rothko and others were also aware of the “Kouki’s absolutely peaceful rest operation”.

「I heard about the situation. Please don’t blame Lilin. I was the one asking her forcefully.」

「That’s……certainly there is no way she cannot not answer if pressed by Kouki-dono.」

Rothko sent a gaze filled with some kind significance toward Lilin who wilted and looked down before his expression turned serious and he asked Kouki.

「And, what are you planning to do?」

「Of course, I will head to the capital.」

「With your current condition?」

「There is no problem.」

It was a lie, which everyone there knew. Just from a glance it was clear that his complexion was still bad. The healer who examined Kouki this morning also said that Kouki's bones were still fractured, and above all else Kouki hadn't recovered from his weakened state.

He really wasn't in a state that could fight.

「It doesn't look like I can stop you……I'll prepare the fastest arous. Please, I beg you to take care of her majesty and the capital. Don't worry about Arquette.」

「Thank you very much. I will surely return here again.」

Rothko, Ivana, and everyone inside the room, they all partly closed their eyes as though looking at something really dazzling before they bowed reverently.

After that, the members of vigilance corps quickly prepared arous and necessary luggage. During that time Kouki stuffed his stomach to the bursting with simple meal before departing, accompanied by Lilin.

Rothko and his wife Syla, and also Ivana and others of the vigilance corps gathered to see them off. Seeing that, the people of Arquette also stopped working and gathered one after another.

Words of gratitude that was filled with feeling that they wanted to convey as much as possible showered Kouki.

From among the gathered people, one small silhouette rushed out.

「Hero-sama!」

「Ah, you are……」

That silhouette was the boy that at that time became the impetus that decided Kouki’s path. From behind that boy, his mother and a man in vigilance corps attire──his father run after him in panic.

「Thank you, hero-sama! You save father, and everyone! Thank you!」

「tsu──」

Kouki didn’t know what to call his current emotion. He didn’t understand.

He scattered a lot of lives. He couldn’t see it within his field of vision, but surely outside the defensive wall a lot of corpses were piled up. The weight of that was tremendous, pushing down on Kouki even now.

His creaking body and the weariness assaulting his whole body weren’t only because his wound and fatigue.

But, even so,

「I’m the one thanking you.」

「Eh?」

Not just the boy, the boy’s father and mother who ran after him and tried to pull him back also let out such stupid sounding voice.

Kouki kneeled down on one knee and spoke with a faint smile.

「At that time, if you didn’t ask me for help, my heart would surely die. I was, actually a pathetic guy. So pathetic I

cannot walk forward without someone pushing my back. That’s why……thank you, for saying “help me”.

……I don’t, really get it but……I, was useful for hero-sama?

Kouki answered Yeah toward the boy who was asking him in wonder.

The boy’s expression turned bright. The father and mother made a shocked expression at Kouki’s confession, but their expression quickly turned gentle and kind and they said their thanks once more.

Kouki watched the boy led away by his parents while he was waving his hand at Kouki.

Lilin who was standing beside Kouki asked him expression of delight or perhaps happiness.

You aren’t denying it even when you are called hero-sama aren’t you?

……He is still a small kid. I won’t expressly do something like that.

Kouki averted his face to dodge the question. Lilin raised a chuckle seeing that. Because if it was Kouki from before, he would still deny it no matter what.

Surely that three days of battle brought a change into something important inside Kouki. For Lilin, Kouki looked like he had really changed. She would be troubled if she was asked “where”, but she somehow felt that Kouki’s whole strength was different.

Reliable. Lilin thought so while prompting Kouki to mount the arous.

「See you later Rothko-san. Much obliged for everything.」

「That's my line. We the people of Arquette won't forget you until the next life. We will convey our unending gratitude to the next generation too.」

Kouki nodded 「Thank you」, then together with Lilin he ran past the gate.

Loud cheering resounded from behind.

Those cheers too also felt like a push on Kouki's back.

They advanced silently for a while. The borrowed arous seemed excellent with how swift it was. Kouki's feeling that was impatient from the loss of three days was also softened more or less.

「Kouki-san. How is your body? This child's running is also stable, it's fine even if you sit down in a way that is more relaxed.」

「Aah, look's like it. At the very least I need my bones to recover before we arrived in the capital.」

Lilin nodded even while thinking of how amazing Kouki's line that was saying of healing bone even while traveling in

a great hurry.

Kouki dried up his little remaining magic power and performed healing on the heavily wounded area by chanting basic recovery magic while paying meticulous attention so that he wouldn’t become unable to move because of getting even more exhausted than now.

Lilin was gritting her teeth in vexation of her inability of using healing blessing art while making a dangerous oath that at the very least if enemy appeared midway she would carve them up and not let them do anything to Kouki.

Like that they advanced forward and entered the desert area. A little while after that

「Hm? Lilin, something is coming from ahead! That’s……」

「Arous? It’s coming from the capital direction? That number is……」

They could confirm multiple arous running with speed that raised up dust cloud behind.

Looking at the gradually approaching arous, the two could see the arous breathing roughly with their long neck that was usually stretching up straight was now hanging down. Those were the proof of the arous’s fatigue.

Even so looking from how their speed didn’t relax down at all, it could be seen that it was something so urgent to the degree that the riders didn’t hesitate to use the arous until they expired.

It seemed the group also noticed Kouki and Lilin. One rider waved his hand while other riders were pointing at the

person at the center of their formation and reported something.

And then, a small silhouette that was unseen from being hidden at the shadow of the arous’s neck showed up their face abruptly.

The identity of that silhouette was clear just from that.

「!? Koone!?」

Kouki let out a hysteric voice.

Yes, it was Koone who was fiercely rushing their way. When the distance between both sides had decreased considerably into a range where they could differentiate the other party’s faces, Kouki and Lilin could see that the people around Koone were the members of escort squad that was led by Spike.

「Kouki-sama!」

「Koone!」

The way both of them called each other mutually changed. It seemed that Koone didn’t even bother with how Kouki called her without any honorific.

Both sides’ arous came to a stop with circle motion like drifting. The arous of Koone and others looked like they would faint anytime now because they had continued to dash in full speed from until just now.

「Koone, why are you here? Are you heading to Arquette?」

Koone heard about Kouki’s safety and Arquette’s situation from Moana, even so for a moment she held her breath

seeing Kouki’s expression that was completely different from before.

However, she immediately pulled herself together and nodded in response.

“Koone, Koone was, let escape once more-”

Looking at Koone who was talking with a face that could break into tears anytime, it seemed that the battle between the army that was led by <Dark King> against the kingdom army had started.

It seemed it was a strategy where Arquette and its neighboring territories that had the role as material accumulation place would be crushed first before opening battle against the capital that would become isolated after that.

That phenomenon where <Dark Beings> suddenly appeared also seemed to be the new ability of the <Dark King>, so to speak it seemed to be a teleportation ability. It seemed that the use became rough the farther the distance was, but the ability could teleport through considerable distance.

And then, currently the capital was in a state where they could somehow fight with the barrier of the oasis, but even there it became a predicament due to the <Dark King>’s new ability.

Of all thing, the characteristic of the oasis was being nullified by the <Dark King> even though it was only bit by bit. The oasis was encroached by miasma and turned into mere water.

It seemed with the oasis in between, the teleportation couldn’t work well, so that could be said as fortunate. The

ability must have been tested from quite some time ago. Different from the grain producing region of Arquette, the capital's surrounding was desert, so the attempt wasn't noticed at all because it didn't leave behind any trace.

A part of the oasis was already nullified and it seemed one group of soldier was shaken by that and they were annihilated after their opening got taken advantage of.

The total force of the enemy was seventy thousand. Even now, it seemed that even more branch force was teleported to the rear territory. It seemed that the Dark King received notice that Arquette was safe just before Koone escaped, by using messenger of <Dark Being> that was teleported, an army from the nearest territory that had been destroyed was commanded to head to Arquette. Timewise, the army was likely to arrive within today.

Currently, because of the effort of nullifying the oasis, the strength poured to dispatch branch force, and how the <Dark King> was refraining from fighting directly, the worst situation where the capital was fallen could barely be avoided but……

Because of the teleportation of <Dark Being>'s branch force, the dispatched soldiers couldn't return and the capital couldn't hope for reinforcement.

Far from that, by having <Dark Being> teleported to other place right before the soldiers' eyes, the fact that the people in the rear territory that they ought to protect was being attacked without them being unable to do anything about it was thrust to their face. The soldiers were starting to lose spirit from despair and anxiety……

「Like this if even the <Dark King> start moving……the capital won't-, onee-chan won't-」

Moana who gave up the capital as hopeless had Koone escaped even if she had to pay great sacrifice for it. She told Koone, to go at where Kouki was at.

Koone refused, but by Moana’s command, Spike made Koone faint and when she woke up she was already above arous.

Koone understood that she had to survive. However, she didn’t want to leave no matter what. One of her reasons was of course because she simply loved her big sister.

But, there was something more than that which made Koone fearful.

Onee-chan is planning to die-. She is planning to use her own life to end the war, and beg so the people’s life is spared!

Kouki was taken aback with realization.

He understood the true shape of the anxiety swelling up in his chest.

Koone was the same like him.

The battle was decided. Then what would Moana do in that case? That was obvious.

The <Dark Being> didn’t wish to annihilate mankind at any cost. Their final objective was to raise human as livestock.

In order to give human despair, in order to crush their defiance, the <Dark Being> wouldn’t hesitate to crush the capital including the nearby cities. But, if the opponent surrendered then there wasn’t any need to especially kill them.

If the people there wasn’t killed right now, then the chance for mankind to rise once more wouldn’t vanish.

If the seed of rebellion led by Koone made good of their escape, then the hope wouldn’t disappear no matter how small their number was.

Right now, in order to not let more life disappear, Moana would offer her own life as compensation.

It was the last thing she could use the life of herself who had mostly lost her strength.

Such scenario was possible enough. No, Kouki was convinced. Moana would choose that path.

「Uaa……」

A groan leaked out from Kouki.

Was it from anxiety? From the fear of losing Moana?

No.

「Kouki-sama! Save onee-chan! Please-. Koone will do anything-, please! Save onee-chan-」

It was the same like that time, a begging voice that was pleading for help.

That was why, he despaired.

The reason was, because Kouki couldn’t choose it.

「I……」

「Kouki, sama?」

If Moana sacrificed her life, then most of the people of the capital wouldn’t have their life taken away to turn them into livestock. After all, compared to the people of the rear territory, the people of the capital were there exactly because they possessed abundant blessing power that let them fought. From the viewpoint of the <Dark Being>, the capital citizen was without a doubt the sort they would want to breed and had a stable supply of.

Conversely speaking, the neighboring territories that were currently attacked, and Arquette that would be attacked once more today would be destroyed before the notification that the queen surrendered and the war was over could reach them.

Therefore, right now, the place that really needed help—wasn’t the capital but the rear territories.

In addition, just as he heard it was only the <Dark King> who could use teleport. If the situation at the teleport destination could only be reported back by messenger that returned by foot, then right now it should be possible to shave the <Dark Being>’s battle force by destroying their branch forces one by one. By doing that, the people of each territory could be gathered in one place as much as possible to make it easier to protect them……perhaps.

Therefore, who he should save wasn’t his “important person”, but “the many who he didn’t even know their face of”.

It was ideal if he could save both.

However, the reality was always shitty at any time.

If only one side could be saved, then the human called Amanogawa Kouki would—

「Sorry……I’m sorry-, Koone. Sorry-」

「……」

With that Koone understood. Koone too also knew, what kind of person the human called Kouki was.

In the end, he was the same like her big sister. Rather than their own life or their important people, they couldn’t help but choose the many, they were that kind of human.

Koone’s expression was dyed with despair.

She wondered, why her important person wouldn’t be more selfish?

She wondered, why the person she thought as important would be gone?

The color of emotion slipped off from the face of the young Koone. Even so, she tried to somehow swallow Kouki’s answer, she made a misshapen smile and tried to reply back, but she couldn’t form any word……

Seeing that Kouki heard the sound of a part deep inside him cracked. It was hard to breath. He felt dizzy. His chest felt like it would burst apart.

However, he couldn’t abandon people. If it was between just one person against the many, he couldn’t abandon the many.

He would dream. However, he wouldn’t stop still by getting caught up in that dream. He decided so.

Kouki would first protect Arquette, after that he would save the rear territories as many as possible even just by one

more—he conveyed his intention to Spike and Lilin with his gaze.

They closed their eyes for a bit, then the silently accepted that conclusion. Their teeth that was gritting hard was exposing their ashamed feeling.

But, at that time, a situation that felt as though mocking even the determination of such Kouki could be seen from afar, approaching their way while raising dust cloud.

「Do, Don’t screw with me-, don’t screw with me-! Why the hell!」

Kouki spontaneously spat out curses.

Ahead of his gaze, there was a crowd of <Dark Being> that was likely to be Koone’s pursuer. The number was roughly about a thousand.

It was enough number to crush the current Kouki and group.

「Are you-, are you unable to stomach me that much huh-. Even though-, I decide to save people even if I have to abandon Moana-, abandon that kind person-, you are going to deny even that-!! Don’t screw with meee-」

It was as though the world was baring it’s fang maliciously.

Kouki’s roar of rage was something that was directed exactly at the world, or perhaps at something that ought to be called as fate.

「That person’s beloved-, she is entrusted to me-. Don’t you dare thinking to take away this child!!」

「Kouki-sama……」

It was a rage that Kouki never showed even once until now.

Without even caring of Koone and others who were gazing at him in astonishment, without hesitation Kouki firmly moved forward and protected the other behind his back.

He wasn’t in a state that could fight. Anyway right now they should make a bet sink or swim to escape. Lilin’s mouth was opening to say that.

But, she was made to swallow her words.

She saw the torrent of light whirling around Kouki. That was, the proof of surpassing the limit.

「I won’t let only this child to be taken away.」

As it was his magic power was already little. However, if his magic power was strengthened temporarily, there was a possibility he could annihilate the enemy by activating a high powered magic. If there was only leftover enemy after that, then Lilin and others would be able to manage somehow.

Although he wouldn’t even be able to stand after the fight, but……

In front of the absurdity that was too much, Kouki couldn’t think about the aftermath to himself or anything else. If it was necessary, then he would fight again until he turned into trash! Only that fighting spirit was heightening.

Like that, Kouki was,

「Here I go──< Limit Bre-──」

In trying to crush absurdity with recklessness and impulsiveness, he was going to pull the trigger that might break his body……

hyuu~~~ With such stupid sounding sound, something rained down on the approaching army right after that. The next moment terrific flame blast and shockwave that looked like the end of the world blew up everything. Such absurd scene entered Kouki’s eyes.

「Eh?」

Kouki’s mouth opened wide in astonishment without closing, even his chanting of Limit Break was interrupted.

While behind him the mouth of Koone and others was also gaping open in astonishment, Kouki inadvertently looked up to the sky──

He saw meteor shower.

However, there was no meteor, but missile.

Missiles were flying with orange fire trail trailing behind them along with *pashuuuuu-* sound.

And then impact.

The＜Dark Beings> who were running about in chaos were quickly turning into mere meat scraps.

「Ha, hahahah. As I thought, you are just too absurd」

With great joy, relief, and then a bit of resentful complaint in his voice, Kouki’s called out the name of him.

「Right, Nagumo?」

The demon king-sama—Hajime who fell from the sky with *zun-* sound snorted「Hmph」in a bad mood with a huge weapon on his shoulder.

AN: Thank you very much for reading every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Ba, barely made it.

I'm intending to content myself to receive tsukkomi of 'Ain't that just a tiny bit there!'.

Next chapter is the conversation between the demon king and hero I think……

PS

The newest chapter of manga version and [Arifureta Nichijou] were updated at Gardo Comic!

With Nichijou exactly being comedy, Shia is shining bright (lol)

Most of all the drawn male camp of Hauria is…nasty

If you have interest, then by all means please go take a look at Overlap-sama's homepage!

Arifureta Chapter 277

Arifureta After II　Hero And Demon King

AN: Sorry, but it’s short.

Even though the chapter is a bit packed, but the end is good.

There is only dialogue. The battle will be from next week.

---

zudon-, the demon king-sama fell from the sky with speed and impact like a falling meteor.

The bizarreness of the Agni – Orkan his shoulder carried was excessively eye-catching.

Starting from Koone, Lilin, Spike, and also all the other escort squad members similarly had their mouth gaping open. Their gaze was busily moving from the explosion hypocenter where there was a mushroom shaped cloud generated, then to Kouki, and then to the incarnation of absurdity.

「Nagumo……」

Kouki murmured his name. Hajime stored back Agni – Orkan into his treasure warehouse while walking up toward Kouki,

and then he asked with a tone that sounded like it was only an afterthought.

「Anyway, they looked like they are going to be nuisance so I killed them but……they aren't your acquaintance right?」

That question was asked while glancing at Koone and co. It seemed that Hajime couldn't deny the possibility that perhaps the <Dark Being> was rushing toward Kouki and group in a scene like 「O~i, sorry we're late for the appointme~nt 」.

For now, Kouki thought this.

That question should be asked before moving to killing, was his thought.

「Ye, yeah. That was dangerous and we might get killed, so you saved us just now. You came, to pick me up right? Thanks, Nagumo.」

「Hmph?」

Hajime raised an eyebrow hearing the words "might get killed" and then he stared scrutinizingly at Kouki. Just from that it seemed he perceived Kouki's unfit state. And then, perhaps he guessed something because for a moment he made an expression of feeling unpleasant and then looked at Koone and co.

「……Well, doesn't matter. If it's thanks say it too Shizuku and others. If they didn't ask me I won't purposefully spent magic power like stupid to come here. This world is absurdly far just so you know.」

「Is that so……as expected it's Shizuku and others. Are they coming?」

「Just as you can see, it’s only me who came *here.*」

Kouki felt something out of place from that strange roundabout sentence, but right now wasn’t the time to pry so he shelved it away.

「I see……」

「Come on, we’re going back right away.」

Hajime turned around on his heel with an atmosphere of wanting to finish the troublesome matter right away.

Koone didn’t really understand about the matter of Hajime, even so she guessed that the “going home prospect” that Kouki once mentioned had finally arrived and she grasped Kouki’s sleeve with an expression that was going to cry.

Kouki smiled to such Koone to reassure her, and then he conveyed his will toward the back of Hajime who was taking out Crystal Key and about to point it to an empty space.

「Sorry, I cannot go back.」

「……What?」

Hajime looked back across his shoulder. And then, seeing Koone holding Kouki’s sleeve, he showed an exasperated face that said 「This guy’s hero sickness relapse back again」.

「This is troublesome. If it’s like this I’ll call someone here to lecture──」

「No matter who it is and what they are going to say to me, I have made my decision. Even if you for example tell me that this is my last chance to go back home, I won’t go back. I

believe I understand what will Shizuku and also my family feel about that but still……sorry.」

「You……」

The situation just now, and then the very young girl who while looking childish but also gave off dignity vaguely, and also the tough looking men who appeared to be the girl's guards. If all those factors were combined, it could be imagined how Kouki was poking his nose into a troublesome conflict.

If this was only like before, when Kouki got worked up saying 「I swear I'll save everything!」 in mere heroic aspiration, Hajime would just say 「I don't give a damn」 before punching Kouki and then dragging his unconscious body back, but……

Hajime couldn't make that prompt decision.

Because Kouki's eyes were determined.

It wasn't a gaze that was carried away, hesitating, or looking at a dream far away. Those were eyes that showed determination which was created while his feet was stepping firmly on reality, with resolve to accept the caused result. The eyes of a person who was struggling without giving up.

Hajime wondered just what had happened. He couldn't see the "lightness" from when they were summoned to Tortus or the "insecurity" after the decisive battle from Kouki.

「I had killed a lot. They also had their own will, it was necessary to survive, that was why I was fighting……but, I was unable to abandon the people of the city and I fought. I cut down several thousand lives.」

「……」

Hajime looked at Kouki once more. Kouki's weakened state, his body that was wounded all over told Hajime more eloquently than anything the carnage that Kouki had experienced to the extreme.

「Many times I thought I was going to die. While fighting, I also saw past images like revolving lantern. And then—I found my answer.」

「Answer?」

Kouki nodded while feeling surprise and happiness that Hajime was listening to his talk.

「I cannot stop dreaming. I want to save everything. But if I'm forced to choose no matter what—I will choose "the many" rather than "one important person". I'll choose, but even so I'll continue to dream and struggle without giving up.」

「……Idiot. Are you planning to suffer until you die? You might be masochist huh.」

「Haha, it's certainly idiotic. But I'll deny being a masochist.」

Hajime looked at Kouki with eyes as though he was looking at a genuine idiot after hearing Kouki deciding a way of living of hardship.

Then, at that timing, Koone who had been silently watching the conversation between Kouki and Hajime all this time raised her words by throwing away her usual audaciousness, and spoke as a mere young little girl.

「E, excuse me, Nagumo-sama? I beg you, please I ask you to save my one-chan! Please.」

「Aa? Onee-chan?」

Koone letting out a sigh of relieve seeing that she wasn't ignored, and then she explained to Hajime about the situation in general and about Kouki's choice.

「Kouki-sama is still not giving up. He is going to save the people at the rear, and after that he is planning to save onee-chan.」

She didn't notice it before. She only felt despair thinking that Kouki abandoned her big sister.

Indeed, speaking pragmatically Kouki wouldn't make it in time. Therefore, Koone's conclusion that he was abandoning Moana wasn't mistaken. However, when she recalled back how Kouki repeatedly said 「Sorry」 looking as though he was going to vomit blood while clenching his fist so hard, she understood that Kouki's heart was demanding him to go to where Moana was quickly for even a second faster.

However, right now light could be seen in that pragmatic problem. Kouki's connection brought about hope.

The curbstomp just now. A power that annihilated a thousand <Dark Beings> in the blink of eye. If there was such power in their side, then perhaps her big sister could still be saved.

Koone pleaded. In order to save her big sister, and Kouki who injured his own heart by swinging down blade of penance and resolve toward himself who was unable to choose Moana.

「Please lend your strength in order to grant the dream of Kouki-sama. Nagumo-sama is Kouki-sama's friend correct? Please――」

「Don't say such corny thing. There is no way I'm his friend.」

「Eh?」

Koone was astonished. She didn't know about the how, but this person came here by crossing world like this in order to pick Kouki and the first thing he did when he arrived was to remove the danger that was approaching Kouki. It seemed that they knew each other, and Kouki was expressing out his feeling toward him without hiding anything, Koone completely thought that the two of them had close relationship but……

Ignoring the shaken up Koone, Hajime moved his gaze toward Kouki. His eyes were cold without emotion in it. Kouki reflexively held his breath.

「You are close with this so called "big sister"?」

「……She is my benefactor. Since I came to this world, she was kind to me who only kept hesitating. Because of reasons I couldn't control myself and vented angrily at her several times, and yet she accepted the hesitating me. ……I made a promise with her, that I'll talk more to her someday.」

「And you abandoned her?」

「……Yeah, that's right-. Right now, even in this moment, she is trying to end the war by offering her own life. But at the same time, a lot of people is in the verge of dying right in this moment. That's why, I――」

「And so rather than “one important person”, you chose “the many that you don’t even know their face”.」

From Kouki’s fist that was clenched once more, and then from the lip that he was biting, blood was trickling down. From his eyes that looked like they would break down crying anytime, perhaps there would even be blood flowing from there.

Seeing such Kouki, Hajime calmly asked.

「You aren’t going to beg me?」

「Will you move if I beg you? Even though I don’t have anything to compensate you!? I’ll do anything if you save Moana! I’ll even be your slave! But, you aren’t going to move by something like that right!?」

「……」

Hajime stared still at Kouki. And then, his expression turned complicated, no, a bit of displeased feeling seeped out from his face, before he suddenly started talking to empty air.

「Can you hear me? The situation is somewhat unpleasant though……yeah, right, well, I already know you all are going to say that. In that case inevitably──what? You want me to decide? Why……don’t say disgusting thing. Even if you ask me how about the current Amanogawa……」

Koone and co were dumbfounded seeing Hajime suddenly started talking to empty air, but Kouki guessed that Hajime was talking with Shizuku and others and his eyes blinked.

If he remembered correctly, he had heard about the development of smartphone that could connect to even

another world, but he didn’t hear that such thing could be done just by using telepathy.

In that case, right, the strange roundabout way of talking before.

Most likely, Shizuku and others came to this world. And then, just in case that there was an existence like Ehito in this world, they must be hiding somewhere so as to not attract attention as much as possible. That was Kouki’s guess about the situation.

As a matter of fact, that guess was right on the spot. For caution’s sake, there were only Shizuku, Kaori, Yue, Shia, Tio, Ryutaro, and Suzu, the Holy Precincts members here, they already arrived in this world. Right now, while Hajime was going out to observe the situation, the others were hiding in concealed state in the middle of a mountain at the south.

Furthermore, about a certain abyss-san whose forte was in reconnaissance, it should rather be left unsaid that Hajime only recalled him after arriving in this world where he then whispered 『Ah…the scout role……』.

With a displeased expression where this time Hajime didn’t even bother to hide it, he faced Kouki and then asked after a bit of indecision.

『Amanogawa. There are a lots of things that I should confirm but, in this occasion, I’ll put them aside. That’s why, just answer me this—that choice of yours, is it “the right choice” for you?』

‘Aa’, Kouki thought. If it was called unexpected, then it was unexpected. If it was called not so unexpected, it was also not really unexpected. He had been conscious toward this person to that degree, and he had also obstinately picked a

quarrel with him to that degree. It wasn’t strange even if this person accurately grasped about his bottleneck.

However, if he was asked that here──he keenly felt that to the end, he really couldn’t help but be conscious of this unreasonable man.

Kouki answered along with feeling some amount of happiness.

「Something like that, doesn’t matter.」

「Hah」

Perhaps Kouki’s feeling was transmitted. Even Hajime let out a laugh that sounded happy from hearing that answer. It felt like he could hear a voice that sounded like「Fine」.

Hajime shook his head once, and then his hand took out a compass. And then, he ascertained something while turning his back on Kouki once more.

「Nagumo?」

「This is the first and the last. I’ll eradicate the worry about the future.」

「tsu, you……」

Kouki’s face warped when he guessed the meaning of that sentence.

The direction Hajime was facing was toward the rear territory. That was to say, that he was taking responsibility for the many territories that were being attacked. What he meant by the first and the last, was surely about Kouki being able to go saving his “one important person”.

Kouki silently turned his back toward Hajime. He faced toward the direction of the capital.

「A farewell gift. I'll kill you if you make a blunder even after I set up the table to this degree.」

「What unreasonableness.」

Around Kouki who was making a small smile, possessing upper body and wings of eagle, and torso of lion—Gryphon(Grim Reaper), ten of them appeared. Hajime must meant for them to be the ride until the capital.

For Hajime to expressly prepare even the share for Koone and others, Kouki thought that it seemed Hajime had really mellowed up. It appeared that while himself was spending days of brutality in Tortus, Nagumo was also doing his best to acclimate himself to peace. Laughter welled up inside Kouki even more.

Thinking that if it was now he could say it, Kouki called at Hajime with a bright expression.

「Hey, Nagumo. Actually while I was about to die, I was thinking that there is something that I'm absolutely going to say to you if I could survive.」

「Aa?」

Hajime who seemed to be confirming the battlefield using the compass raised his face and looked back across his shoulder.

Kouki slightly looked up to the sky with his back still facing Hajime,

「As I thought, I really hate you.」

This man was able to do what he was unable to do like it was nothing. He was able to push his way through his own path without hesitation.

Truly enviable. He helplessly admired that. The way of living that he couldn’t possibly imitate was so dazzling it burned his eyes.

Such emotion was included inside Kouki’s words.

Hajime who heard those words clicked his tongue. He returned his gaze forward and while staring at at the far rear direction,

「What a coincidence. Actually I also thought the same just a little while ago.」

Kouki’s eyes instantly opened wide.

And then,

「I, I see-. So you hate me! Ahahahahah」

The coldest reaction in relationship with people was “apathy”.

Kouki couldn’t hold it, he couldn’t endure it. He raised a laughter that was bright and clear like a cloudless sky.

Normally it was an exchange of words that would cause the atmosphere to turn stormy. And yet, for some reason he even felt his feeling was cool and clear.

Koone and others couldn’t do anything except looking alternately at Hajime and Kouki with totally no idea of what was going on.

Kouki climbed up on a mechanized gryphon while prompting Koone and others to follow. Koone and co were timidly climbing on the back of the bizarre mythical beasts that they had never seen before.

With Koone at his front and Lilin who for some reason was getting on gleefully behind him, Kouki corrected his sitting posture without looking back. At that time, Koone who was looking up at Kouki’s expression gulped seeing his solemn expression and atmosphere.

Kouki took a deep breath, and then with a heavy emotion in his voice,

“Take care of the rear—demon king.”

In response Hajime opened a gate while also without looking back,

“Just face to the front—hero.”

He said that with a voice that sounded a bit different with how he said that word until now—

The hero went to the sky, while the demon king vanished into a gate.

Hero and demon king.

The thinking of the two couldn’t complement each other, their path ran parallel from the other. Their back facing each other was only natural.

However, two paths running parallel to each other arriving at the same place, and also two backs kept facing each other while pushing aside innumerable obstacles without worrying about their back, might be something that could possibly happen.

AN: Thank you very much for reading every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

It seems there are a lot of voices asking about Hajime offing the dark king (sweat)

My apologize for not fulfilling that expectation, but this is Kouki’s tale so it’s the plan for Kouki to do the boss fight.

Also Shirakome is a fellow that will make it long when he start writing battle description, so I’m thinking to do the musou battle of Hajime and co in the shortened style like in Myuu’s chapters.

The plan is like that, but it will make me happy if you readers will be able to enjoy that.

Arifureta Chapter 278

Arifureta After II　Demon King Army Finally Arrived!

「……What's with you guys?」

What was waiting for Hajime who teleported after parting with Kouki into the middle of a mountain where Yue and others were waiting, were faces that were smiling happily or smirking.

「Nooo, it's nothing at all yeah? We ain't thinking anything like, that Nagumo and Kouki really hit it off, none at all yeah?」

Ryutaro who had the widest smirk among the members who arrived in this world approached Hajime and tried to place his arm around Hajime's shoulder over-familiarly.

DOPAN-

'It's non lethal so it's fine!' As though to say that, a godspeed quick draw without shred of hesitation in it splendidly impacted Ryutaro's forehead, causing him to accomplished an artistic backflip and fainting dogeza.

「Taniguchi, my bad. Your boyfriend passes away in another world at his first day of getting a lover.」

「Hiiih, Ryu-ku~~~nn! Hang in thereee!」

Suzu who came back to her senses moved to nurse Ryutaro while losing her composure in panic.

「I don’t have any intention to end up like Ryutaro……but, it’s honestly unexpected, I’m really happy.」

「You’re right, Shizuku-chan!」

Shizuku smiled happily just like she said. Kaori was also the same.

They were coming to pick up Kouki who was summoned into another world. Just from doing that they were forced with terrible burden as the cost.

When the compass was used to search the location, they found out that it was a very far distance. Honestly speaking, if they didn’t have the new technology—converting electricity into magic power—that was used to economize the cost of magic power for opening gate to Tortus from earth, they wouldn’t be able to come here right away.

On top of that, something like Kouki’s wish to interfere with this world’s strife wasn’t something that could be requested from Hajime at all. It didn’t matter how indulgent Hajime was with his relatives, even if for example that if Shizuku and others were unable to abandon the people here and joined the fight, it could be guessed that Hajime too would move and help out, but still.

Exactly because Hajime was someone like that, that Shizuku and others wouldn’t make request to him so easily.

For that reason, they thought that Hajime would surely make Kouki fainted and dragged him back forcefully. Hajime wouldn’t choose the option of abandoning Kouki because he wouldn’t make Shizuku and others to feel anxious. They

thought that if it was for the sake of the peace of mind of Shizuku and others, Hajime would discard something like Kouki’s wish as rubbish.

But, when the lid of the situation was opened it turned out like this.

Shizuku and Kaori looked like they wanted to know about the reason of his action. Hajime made a disgruntled face seeing that while answering half-heartedly.

「It’s just a whim.」

「……Nn. Hajime feel a bit curious where Kouki who obtain an answer that is exactly opposite from him will end up, that’s what he is saying.」

「Yue!?」

There was nothing impossible in front of the first wife power. Yue-sama splendidly saw through the inside of the heart of the husband.

「Also~, forsaking something because of apathy won’t make Hajime-san think twice, but forsaking something because of reluctance as the reason will make him feel like that his caliber as a person is too small, that’s seem to be another reason desuu. After all Hajime-san, he is really particular about the strangest things.」

「Shia……」

「Though for goshujin-sama it’s only obvious to ignoreth someone that he dislike. Well, this must be that. Doing that kind of conversation with that kind of character art chuuni-ish—」

DOPAN-

Tio accomplished an artistic backflip and fainted dogeza. Not a single person rushed to nurse her.

Hajime cleared his throat to change the atmosphere, then he approached Ryutaro with brisk footsteps and kicked him.

「Oi, what are you doing fainting like that. Wake up right now you muscle lump.」

「Wai-, he fainted because of Nagumo-kun's fault right!? No matter what that's just too unreasonable.」

Suzu deployed a barrier with healing effect inside in order to protect her boyfriend.

Ryutaro opened his eyes before long. At the same time, Tio woke up from the pleasure of two shots shooting her butt.

「Oh maaan, it's been too long since I got hit with that yeah.」

「If you aren't even able to evade stun bullet by sight, you won't be able to serve as vanguard you know?」

A severe notification came from Shia toward Ryutaro who stood up while feeling nostalgic.

Ryutaro thought.

'In the first place, you are the strange one for being able to evade bullet by sight', was his thought. 'Don't confuse me with a bugged rabbit that normally dodge even railgun', he thought.

「Now then, there isn't much time. I'm going to explain the situation okay?」

When Hajme changed his voice tone and said that, everyone tensed their expression and looked at Hajime.

Like that according to the explanation that Hajime started, there were six towns that were receiving attack even now, and there was also one more place that was going to get attacked before long.

「The information about the enemy is few. From what I glimpsed through the reconnaissance drone, they have the ability to think, regulation, and cooperation. They are clad with unknown black mist, and it seem they can use that as weapon to a certain degree. For their defensive power, there is no problem with using launcher class to deal with them.」

Everyone nodded while going 'I see'. Hajime also told them that it appeared that there was an army of five until seven thousand at the very least deployed in each of the six places that were being attacked currently. The seventh place—Arquette was being approached by a force that was deployed from city that had already perished, added with reinforcement midway that force grew to a number around fifteen thousand.

Hajime gave out instruction for Ryutaro and Suzu to form a tag team that was responsible for one city, while the rest would be responsible for one city for each of them.

「Why are the two of us grouped up? Well yeah, compared to Nagumo and others our fighting strength must be low though.」

Ryutaro asked looking a bit dissatisfied. Hajime told him that it was to make their number fit the number of the attacked places, and it was also better for the two of them to be together just in case of something unexpected. What's more,

「I’m not that savage that I’ll pull apart two people who just publicly become lovers in the battlefield.」

「Nagumooo」

「Ahaha. Thank you, Nagumo-kun.」

The two of them greatly wanted to deny the part of “not a savage”, but this was a kindness that was hard to come by from Hajime, so they thanked him honestly.

They also ignored Hajime’s whisper of 「Forgetting Endo is a blunder. If he is here, I would throw him right in the middle of the army at the capital just in case but……」.

After quickly explaining until that point, at the end Hajime spoke what had to be said.

「Now then, I think that you all had heard, but it appears that the opponent has their own will. I don’t know about the detail, but it seem that attacking human and eating them has meaning for those bunches.」

Everyone, especially Ryutaro, Suzu, Shizuku, and Kaori made a grave expression.

「Right now is the time if you want to back away. It’s not like we really have to split up, I can just do it alone. If you have hesitations then wait here.」

The ones that answered right away were Yue, Shia, and Tio. Shizuku and Kaori closed their eyes for a bit before showing a determined gaze.

Ryutaro opened his mouth while making a troubled expression.

「That Kouki see, he has resolved himself right? Then see, there ain’t no way I who am his best friend can cower. I too am also thinking about my path ahead from here on.」

「I too. That resolve……I have finished it before fighting Eri.」

Suzu was nestling close to Ryutaro, however she spoke that with a really mature expression.

Seeing the two, Hajime concluded that they would be fine and he immediately showed a fearless smile and opened gates one after another using crystal key.

「Okay then. Well even though I say that, it’s not like I’m telling you ‘don’t even show mercy’ or anything. As long as you aren’t half-assed about it, do whatever you like in regard about that. I’ll send along Ornis to each battlefield. If the battle end contact me──then, let’s go.」

Along with Hajime’s signal, everyone in that place leaped into the gate.

At that day. The people in a lot of the rear territories of Synclea kingdom became witness of the miracle that would be told to the future generation as legend.

──The southernmost territory　Rashvet

A certain soldier A’s monologue

「At that day, a part of the defensive wall finally crumbled and those monsters were rushing in. I thought that this is it. It was at that time, suddenly, cloud covered the sky. I was surprised that it suddenly became dark and when I looked up──that person, a goddess was there. She was, beautiful. To the degree that I couldn’t think of her as a being of this world. Even though there were enemies in front of my eyes, I kept looking up to the sky.」

A certain soldier B’s monologue

「That person, had three layers of shining halo on her back. That was already a divine sight……. But what was really surprising, it wasn’t that person’s beauty or her sublimity, it was how she summoned something that was like a snake of lightning from inside the thundercloud. ……It was an otherworldly sight.」

A certain soldier C’s monologue

「The raining down light and also the great snake of lightning slaughtered those monsters in the blink of eye. No, was that really killing? For me, for me it looked like suicide. Those monsters, they were throwing themselves in by their own wish, that was how it looked like to me. My comrades were all praising that person but, no, I’m also thankful but……actually, I’m still shaking even now from recalling that. Because I cannot think of that as fighting. I’m, sacred of that person.」

A certain soldier D’s astonishment

「Eh? Her true identity? There is no way I know──what? She is surely the angel sent by Foltina-sama to us? You, are you a genius!?」

A certain soldier E’s misunderstanding

「You ask me if I’ve heard the rumor? What rumor huh? Eh? The messiah of that time, is actually Foltina-sama herself you say!? ……I see, so that was how Foltina-sama looked like huh. Kuu, what a thankful story! Iii, am crying for some reason!」

The conclusion of certain bunch of soldiers

「It looks like Foltina-sama is sublimely beautiful woman with golden hair and crimson eyes, she fly freely in the sky, with three layers of halo on her back, control the weather, and served by giant snake of lightning.」

A certain painter’s work

「I have to leave behind the figure of Foltina-sama for future generation!」

A vampire princess in later time

「……I’m, not, Foltina」

A certain incarnation of nature-sama

「……The hurdle is high, desu」

—The center of trade　Vialattea

Excerpt from a part of information journal

Due to the attack of giant race, the defensive wall of Vialattea was destroyed in less than an hour.

Those giants, they didn’t invade right away as though to thrust despair right before our eyes. They were deliberately watching as we, the citizens of Vialattea were falling into panic or falling down in despair.

Looking at the result, that saved our life.

In order to grant us even more despair, the giant race took a step forward. At that moment, □SHAORAAAAAAAAAA-□ such war cry resounded, and right after that, the giant body of that giant race was blown away to the horizon.

While everyone were dumbfounded, a being landed on top of the defensive wall. It was a mystery of how that being should be looked as.

It was certain that being wasn’t human. The reason was the splendid rabbit ears attached on her head. There was also a tail just a bit above her bottom. It was clear to see that those weren’t artificial accessory seeing how they were moving about with irregular motion.

That fantastic looking person should be called as a <Dark Being> if thinking rationally.

However what this writer is writing here is not fantasy but the truth.

That woman with fantastic appearance was exactly the savior of this Vialattea. The huge iron hammer she swung around blew away several thousand of <Dark Being>. It didn’t matter whether they were giant race or anything else, they were all blown away the same.

Surely Vialattea would talk about her for the long time to come.

That girl with thin clothing, rabbit ears, and that wonderful body!

I’m digressing but, some company appears to be already setting out to make the product of rabbit ear attachment and rabbit tail attachment. While this is truly being presumptuous, this writer is earnestly wishing that this enterprise will succeed.

Walking through the city where the lovely girls of Vialattea are wearing rabbit ears and tail.

I believe that will be an amazing sight.

—Coastland territory　Pallagrello

The feudal lord’s reminiscence.

It was unbelievable.

Who would ever imagine that this rear territory would be surrounded by an army in the blink of eye and be struck by an invasion.

The deployment of the soldiers couldn’t possible make it in time. Far from that, it was even unclear whether the capital would notice about this Pallagrello’s annihilation.

I thought that this is the end.

After all, even the defensive wall was in the state that wasn’t really meaningful. Because among those <Dark Beings> there were also flying type species.

From how there wasn’t any excellent blessing art caster here, we were unable to even resist when we were aimed at from the sky.

It was unbelievable. How this beloved territory would be annihilated in my generation.

It was unbelievable. How when I gazed at the sea from my room’s window for the last time, a monster appeared.

It was unbelievable. How I peed myself in this age when I almost became an old man already.

It was unbelievable. How despite its appearance that was of a flying type <Dark Being>, however the black monster that were many times larger breathed out something like a light ray and blew away the an army.

It was unbelievable. How the monster was talking with a voice that sounded as though it was echoing inside my head, something like 「……Why didst goshujin-sama threw me into the sea……does he liketh Go○ira that much」.

It was unbelievable. How when inside my heart I retorted ‘This thing is absolutely stronger than the <Dark King>!’, a disgusting voice and rough breathing 「Ho, however, after having mine forehead and butt shot at, I was then thrown into the sea……haa haa. Mayhaps, in the dawn of mine hardwork, there wouldst be even more reward!? Nnnh」 entered into my ear!

……When this battle is over, I’ll retire……

—The second supply accumulation territory Rizgal

The testimony of a <Dark Being> that became prisoner

What? Is it finally the time for execution? Huh? That's not it? You're telling me to talk about that day?

Hmph, you humans also saw it right? Just as—

Chih. I got it. I just need to talk right? It……doesn't matter. I don't even feel like resisting. Who……who can win against that kind of monster-.

Tsu, fuu fuuh. Ye, yeah, I'm all right. Though when I'm recalling it, it feels like my head will turn strange.

That was, that was, right, it was something silver. The appearance looked like human female but……it wasn't human by any means. It was also not some kind of race of us. It was clad in silver light, swallowing everything in……

Tsu. There were also some guys that somehow slipped through and tried close quarter. But, it was impossible. It wasn't about being fast. It was more, something that is outside our common sense. When I came to myself, every single one was split into two without exception.

And yet, if I got to say what is the most terrifying, it was how that thing kept cutting, and annihilating without hesitation……and yet, it kept calling out for our surrender.

I somehow understood. That wasn’t a warrior. It was only coming out to battlefield, driven by necessity.

Hahah, do you get it human?

That thing devastated us because it was necessary. Something that wasn’t even a warrior fought while being considerate to that degree, and we ended up like this.

Also, I saw it.

Human, all of you also saw it right? The soldiers and other bunches that we should have killed already—they came back to live! I remember it! The soldier that I killed, the man who introduced himself as platoon captain! I should have blown up his head right from the front! And yet, and yet when that silver light spread like wave, it was like I have never done anything!

Aa, shit-. What the hell-, what was I fighting there!

What……what was it we had turned into enemy……

—Northwest relay territory Andreal

A retired old soldier’s memorandum

An invasion of more than five thousand <Dark Being>. Even in my long life, something like that didn’t happen that many times.

To say nothing about how they appeared in the rear territory without even any advance warning……

In the end, is the capital, is her majesty safe? Even while worrying like that, I felt it that this will be the place where I die, I shook off my surrounding that is holding me back and got out to the outside of the defensive wall.

My old equipment felt really heavy. But, my feeling was calm.

Now then, I’m going to bring as many enemy as possible to accompany me to hell. It happened right after I thought so.

She appeared.

Her black glamorous hair was tied into one bundle. She was a girl with an air like a stretched taut string. She was really young.

A question arose inside myself since when she was beside me, but for the time being, I thought that surely this girl had backbone and came out here with the same thinking like me, and so I told her to go back disregarding what I myself was doing.

However, the girl smiled sweetly and said a brief sentence, 「I’m glad I made it in time」 before she gracefully walked toward the army approaching from the front.

I was a bit astonished, but unable to leave her alone, I chased after her to take her back.

It was at that time. The girl calmly lowered her form, with a slender sword sheathed on her waist, she took a stance where her sword kept being unsheathed.

‘What’s with that? Doesn’t she even know how to unsheathe a sword? Was it as I thought, she discerned her death just like me and came out here with only strong spirit?’, I was half in admiration like that, and was also half ashamed with this situation that caused a young woman like her to make such determination. I hesitated in what I should do.

The enemy’s formation had approached quite near, it was impossible to even just throw her into the town after this late.

Good grief, she was too great of a companion for the journey to the next world, but at the same time it was too sad. Like that I was about to draw out my sword.

Yes, I stopped only at an attempt to draw out sword. More accurately, the situation became one where I didn’t need to continue that action.

But surely it couldn’t be helped correct? Because, it went *supan-* y’know. It went *supa~~~nn* in a horizontal straight line like this.

Several hundred <Dark Beings>, had their upper body and lower body parted from each other y’know.

I don’t comprehend. Perhaps by any chance, I’m still sleeping right now? Am I dreaming? I was rubbing my eyes many times thinking like that.

When I looked at the girl, she whispered something like 「……Like this I can be rushed huh. This is still in practice but, can’t be helped」.

But, I couldn’t ask or anything. Because, after blinking, behind me and her there were several hundred, no, I felt like she whispered that might sounded like 「Senjin –

Kokutou(Thousand Blades – Black Katana)□, so I believed it was a thousand, that was how many black swords were lining up there in orderly fashion.

It was a magnificent spectacle.

When I noticed, something came out from the thousand swords. With that something messed up those Dark Beings and cut them.

When I whispered ‘awesomeee~’, before I knew it there were only those bunches that expired pitifully, while the girl had vanished.

I went home normally then.

Somehow there was messenger from the feudal lord saying □Report what happened~□, but it wasn’t my business. I’m sleeping already.

—The largest territory for fruit growing Erlach

The written report of a certain vigilance corps captain before revision – excerpt from a part

The army of <Dark Being> that appeared from the west cultivation area destroyed a part of the defensive wall before the sun completely sank.

The vigilance corps members were fighting hard. Due to the many number of the dead and injured, their fighting strength was reduced by half at that point of time.

We collapsed the houses around the destroyed area to turn them into improvised barricade.

Many of the invading <Dark Being>—the carapace race had high defensive power, the best the vigilance corps members could do was stopping them in their track. The many legged race that also invaded at the same time had fast and complicated movement that gave difficulty for the defenders to deal with them.

The evacuation was still unfinished at this time.

Surpassing the ability of the vigilance corps members to deal with the situation, it seemed that the carapace race and many legged race would manage to circle at the rear of the defenders, but then a situation that was unexpected for both us and the <Dark Beings> averted us from that encirclement.

Suddenly, a shining bright half dome membrane spread from the center of the city. It pushed back the <Dark Beings> and ejected them to outside the defensive wall.

In order to grasp the situation, I went outside from the destroyed part of the wall to scout ahead.

There a tiny girl yelled 「Everyoneee! Do itttt—!」.

Right away, bugs that numbered in frightful amount and also huge sized came out in creepy crawly movement. I would be troubled even if you ask me from where they came from. Because, the bugs came out from around the girl y’know. I can only say it like that.

The bugs’ appearance wasn’t really different from the carapace race and many legged race, however, that was a

parade of monsters that were many time more brutal than the enemy! Hyahha! This is the end of the world yeah!

I served in the vigilance corpse for twenty years. I served as captain for ten years. I will be 47 this year, but I've never seen this kind of hell ever. It was gross you know, so gross that I've got no more words for it.

Somehow a part of the bugs, they secretly devoured those <Dark Being> bunches. That was the first time ever I saw <Dark Being> got preyed on. I was traumatized. I'm seeing it in my dream even now. Honestly speaking, I can only see both sides as the nemesis of humanity that has to be annihilated……

"He, hey! You must not eat them! Spit it out! Spit it!" That girl said that with pale face, so it must not be that girl's order. That was the only silver lining. Something like a girl who order predation with smiling face……that would make me unable to look straight at my daughter's face from now on if that happen.

In a sense, a situation where monster that isn't listening to their master's order doing a parade of predation, I'm trying to not think about it.

Putting that aside, the membrane of light was amazing. Nothing went through.

For example, when a young man with naked upper body suddenly turned into monster in the middle of the battlefield and tore those <Dark Being> bunches into shreds, punched them, threw them away, and those guys that didn't even retain their original form got splattered messily on the light membrane, the light membrane still did its job perfectly.

……Right in front of my eye one of those guys flew at me and went splat at the light membrane, his empty eyes that were opened wide as though to say ‘I saw something unbelievable!’, it was really traumatic but, I think that the membrane of light was doing a great job.

The small girl urged those guys to surrender but, honestly, I think those guys didn’t have any leeway to consider it.

At that time they must be thinking, of how to run away from the encounter with the unknown.

Despite myself, I completely understand how those guys were feeling. I absolutely won’t say it out loud but, inside my heart I was yelling 「Stop it alreadyyyy!」 while crying.

I never even imagined, that in my life a day will come where I’m going to pray for the sake of the <Dark Being> although it was only inside my heart……you will never know what is going to happen in life.

When it reached the endgame, the girl noticed me and our eyes met. I thought she had a cute face, but the gruesome battlefield entered the corner of my sight, so frankly, it was scary. It didn’t feel like I was alive.

Even so I’m the captain of the vigilance corps. I had to asked them, just who they are.

Feudal lord-sama, please praise me. Please praise a lot this me who wrung out my courage and was diligent in my duties! Also, please raise my wage!

Well, I know that’s a hopeless request. Because, I cannot write about their identity in this written report.

It cannot be helped. We are talking about the limit of human being here.

Because, surely anyone will jump in fright if monster leap in front of your eyes right?

That thing, it had greenish skin that seem impossible for most living thing to have, a giant body that was higher than two meter, its whole body was covered with savage muscles, with fangs in its mouth, and with crimson eyes that looked like beast, it was fiercely breathing out with *fushuu~* sound, while grinning so wiiiiiidely-.

Smiling face was one of the important things in social life. I also grinned back.

Though my memory cut off there. Can’t be helped, my heart was at its limit. That kind of scary face, although I was behind that membrane of light, I was still going to faint no matter what.

And so, I don’t really understand anything about them!

That’s all!

—The nearest supply accumulation territory to the capital Arquette

According to the situation at that time

「Rothko-sama! An army from the north!」

「……So it’s as expected.」

While it’s a shocking news that entered my ears, at the same time it is also something that I have anticipated. I can feel how my eyebrows are frowning.

Three days ago when her majesty received the notification of the dire situation, the northern territory that was called with alias “The Third Supply Accumulation Territory” ―Radice was already being attacked.

Radice wasn’t like Arquette that was blessed with the good fortune of “his” presence, they had no prospect of getting saved, in that case, it can be easily predicted where those <Dark Being> bunches would head toward after they finished with Radice.

I don’t know what happened with the soldiers that should be heading here as reinforcement from the capital.

But, if by any chance they clashed with the <Dark Beings>, then their battle strength should more or less get decreased. He had already departed, but if there are the two thousand soldiers I received from her majesty, then perhaps……

「Then, how many their number is?」

「According to the report from the scout that patrolled the outskirt……it’s more than ten thousand.」

「Tsu. I see……Orlage-kun. Can your troops drive them away?」

Toward my question, the regimental commander who is entrusted with the troop of two thousand―Still Orlage-kun made a grave expression.

「The reinforcement to the defensive wall is finished. If their army has the same composition with the previous attack, then I swear we will repel them back even if their number is five times more. However……」

I guessed it with a sour expression as though I am swallowing a bitter bug. When I confirmed it, just as expected, not just flying species, there is even giant race among the enemy.

The defensive wall has become tough. The underground vault is also flawless, now that it's the second time we should be able to do evacuation of the people smoothly too. But, we cannot expect for reinforcement at all. Because right now her majesty and he aren't here exactly due to the danger the capital is in.

「It appears, that fate wish for this land to perish no matter what……」

Fortunately it seems that Orlage-kun didn't hear the grumble that unconsciously came out from my mouth.

I quickly give the instruction for the people to evacuate. I make the preparation to give some brief words to brush away their anxiety even for just a little.

I exchange bitter smile with my wife Syla thinking, 'even though we were holding hope that perhaps we can meet our beloved child one more time, and yet…'. She who is able to smile like that even in this kind of situation is really an able wife in my opinion.

When I go outside, I can see the figures of people carrying their feet toward the underground vault in line. The previous fight caused the surrounding of the underground vault to become an empty lot, so the progress is really smooth.

Suddenly, my ears catch the voice of the children. Their voices even sound bright despite this kind of situation.

「I’m telling you it will be fine! After all we have hero-sama!」

「But, hero-sama has gone away somewhere you know?」

「There is that but……but, it’s absolutely going to be fine! Surely hero-sama will come to save us!」

It seems that even though he isn’t here, he is still bringing about hope.

Thinking of him who continued to keep fighting even while losing consciousness, driven only by the feeling of having to protect us no matter what, the corner of my eyes become warm, because of regret, because of mortification. I am unable to protect the people that he protected by putting his life at risk.

When he someday come back here, what will he think when he see this ruined land. Just from imagining that, it feels like my heart will get crushed.

「Rothko-sama, let’s hurry the evacuation of the people. The enemy’s movement is faster than our anticipation.」

「Hm, is that so. I got it.」

It seems that the enemy’s movement is faster than we imagined. Could it be that the matter of Arquette not falling was also conveyed to the＜Dark King＞?

While feeling the sensation as though the fighting spirit of those＜Dark Being＞ bunches are being transmitted to here from afar, we are doing what we ought to be doing.

We managed to finish the evacuation of the people. The placement of the soldiers is also finished. What ought to be done—is done.

Sound like ground rumbling, or perhaps like something exploding is resounding from afar. Hahah, it seems that the fighting spirit of those <Dark Being> bunches is the real thing.

At this time it won't be strange even if they appear into sight anytime.

……

……

……

They are unexpectedly slow huh……

Although explosion sounds are resounding……

……

……

……

They are really slow! Time spend waiting like this is unexpectedly also distressful!

Don't tell me, are they lost? If that's the case, when those lots finally arrived I'm going to grandly provoke them 「Yaa~ii you idiooots! You all are actually getting lost in this vast desert huh~」 before dying……

Don't tell me……the soldiers from the capital are holding them back? No, that's impossible. If that's the case they

should be coming to Arquette. Something like clashing against <Dark Being> at a flat plain without anything in it will only be suicide.

Or perhaps, the reinforcement has a number that can crush an army of more than ten thousand from the front? No, It’s clear that the capital is lacking arous. A soldier force of infantry in such number couldn’t possibly come to interrupt at this timing. Either way, it’s strange that no messenger come to Arquette if that’s actually the case.

……Hmm? The explosion sound stopped?

What is going on……, shit-, we are lacking information!

Then at that time, as though my irritated feeling goes through, I can see a scouting soldier desperately running over a hill at the north.

When I meet him right away, his expression looks like he had seen the end of this world. He gives me his report with inarticulate speech.

「A, a demon! A monster! Something like that isn’t human!」

Ri, right. It’s true that <Dark Being> isn’t human.

The scout soldier guessed that we aren’t getting what does he mean, so he calm down his breathing a bit before speaking out a shocking report.

Let’s see, someone with the appearance of a human young man is mowing down an army of ten thousand by himself? Streaks of crimson light is trampling the battlefield, and each time those <Dark Beings> got blown away? Countless huge animals suddenly appeared, and then right after a part of their body transformed and fired flash of light, or else

they looked like they were firing something that looked like a tube, and at the next moment, flame blast spread and turned the enemies into dust? Shower of blood and flesh?

……Orlage-kun. Did you make a mistake with the selection of personnel? Or perhaps, aren’t you overworking this man too much?

Eh? It’s not a lie? Please believe what you said?

That young man is trampling down the enemy while giving advice to surrender, and the enemy that ignored that and escaped was finished off with a shot of light even though there was distance of several kilometer? And then……he caught sight of you who were hiding at the shadow of the hill from quite far off distance and your eyes met each other?

What’s that, scary.

Ah, yep, you, come on, don’t cry. Just from listening I can understand how much fear you must have experienced.

Hm~m, however, that young man is opposing the＜Dark Being>, so he is our ally……I think.

Yosh, Orlage-kun. We are going there to confirm it!

Orlage-kun tried to stop me, but if it’s really the truth that young man has repelled the enemy army then as a feudal lord there is no way I cannot give him my thanks. Besides, for that young man to have such power……perhaps that young man is his ally.

If that’s the case, we have to treat him with the greatest respect.

I push away the protests and head toward the scene with Orlage-kun and the soldiers as guards.

Let’s say the conclusion. It was hell.

The earth is all turned up with countless craters on the surface. The corpses of <Dark Beings> that aren’t keeping their original form. The bits of flesh scattered all over. Here and there are flames that are dying the blazing world crimson. A sinister atmosphere is running rampant in the battlefield, wafting off from the great number of monsters with strange appearance.

And then, on top of the corpses of <Dark Beings> that were somehow piled up into a huge mound, a young man is standing while glaring down at everything. Crimson sparks are surging from all over his body while his shoulder is shouldering some kind of austere object.

Aa, certainly, I’ll recognize it. If hell really exist, then surely it will be this kind of sight without a doubt.

The young man turned his face toward us who are dumbfounded and cannot move.

The moment I saw his eyes, I guessed it.

—Before long the demon king might arrive. There will be salvation if there is suitable compensation for him

Aa, those words, so it refer to this! This person is truly the demon king! The king of hell! Crushing absuridty with even more absurdity, a being that surpassed human knowledge!

There I suddenly come to my senses. The demon king-sama became our salvation. In other words, it shows that we possess something that is suitable to compensate him.

Blood leaves from my face quickly. Who paid the compensation? It’s obvious. It’s him. Then how much is the compensation? A compensation at minimum has to balance the work being done. Then, this is about that person who risked his life for Arquette’s sake we are talking about here. Even if he cannot pay it right now, someday as the compnesation he will use his own——

「Demon king-sama!! It is truly our greatest honor and delight to be bestowed with your presence heree!! I am the feudal lord of Arquette, Rothko Arquette-!! First allow me to say our greatest gratitude for repelling the enemy army——!!」

It looks like the demon king-sama is perplexed while commenting 「O, ou?」 for some reason, but I’m desperate here. Anyway I’ll just say what I have to say! While rubbing my forehead on the ground at the same time!

「For the demon king-sama to be here, my foolish self here dare say that you received a compensation regarding this matter from him!」

It feels like demon king-sama is getting creeped out while saying 「Eh, what is this old man is saying? It’s a bit scary though」, but I’m desperate!

「I am truly being presumptuous here but-, I beg you-, I’ll offer you my life, so please be merciful to him! I beg you, I

beg you with everything that I ammmmmmm」

「No, I don’t need something like the life of an old man.」

I was dismissed so bluntly. He don’t need the life of an old man……hah, don’t tell me!

「O, only my wife! Please at least forgive only my wife!」

「Ha? Wai-, what are you sayi―」

「I beg you for your mercy-! Please forgive at least the life of my wifeeeeeeeee-」

The demon king-sama said 「Why, am I completely the villain? When I came to help because of getting asked, why did I then become a fiend that is trying to steal the feudal lord’s wife? I just don’t get it……」 while looking like he is holding his head but, I’m desperate here!

「Furthermore, he is even doing dogeza while yelling desperately, it’s déjà vu……. Like this, I don’t care anymore. Let’s go home……I really want to meet Yue.」

Hearing the voice with the dreadfulness in it thinning down for some reason, I slowly raise my head.

The figure of the demon king-sama isn’t there anymore.

When I asked Orlage-kun who is coldly sweating, the demon king-sama vanish at the other side of space with a sullen look.

At that time, although I couldn’t hear it, but according to Orlage-kun who has good hearing, just before the demon king-sama vanished, it seemed like he whispered 「Offering

his life for the sake of that guy……I see. This is that guy's……□ with his lips slackening just for a bit.

It's only a hunch but, it seems that the demon king-sama won't be taking the life of Kouki-dono.

Perhaps I have been doing something really rude.

Someday, I'll ask about him from Kouki-dono. And then, I'll ask to be allowed to express my thanks once more.

Of course, I'll also thank Kouki-dono too for sending him as reinforcement.

For the sake of that too, Kouki-dono. Please be safe. I'll believe that I'll be able to reunite again with you along with her majesty.

AN: Thank you very much for reading every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

It's the turn for the serious to rest for a bit.

The next chapter will be the last battle of Kouki arc.

Now then, this time I have various notice, so I uploaded an activity report.

If I have to convey the summary,

- Arifureta Nichijou is updated
- The sale announcement of comic volume 2
- Looks like an official portal site of Arifureta is created

- Things like spin-off or drama CD will come out

Something like that.

If you have interest, please check the activity report too by all mean.

Please treat me well.

Arifureta Chapter 279

Arifureta After II The Meaning of Hero

「PYAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!!」

Such weird shriek was echoing through the vast sky.

The voice's owner was Koone. Her blonde twintail was turned unruly from the wind.

Kouki was going to call at her, thinking that she was being scared.

However, before he could do that, it was proved to him that it was impossible for this princess with outrageously light footwork and had energetic spirit like it was a cloth she was wearing to walk around with to feel scared from this precious first experience in her life.

「Ko, Ko-Ko, Kouki-samaaa! We are flying in the skyyyy! Koone, has become a bird! Koone, feels like she is becoming a bird!!」

「So, so you are only getting high spirited huh……」

According to the explanation of Lilin who was hugging him from behind and brought her lips closer to his ear, it seemed that Koone going 'pyaa pyaa' was her habit when she was getting the most excited.

「Kouki-sama! Kouki-sama! Just what in the world this animal is!?」

Naturally there was no way Koone knew about a legendary mythical beast of earth. She asked Kouki while touching the soft feathers of the gallant griffon repeatedly. Koone wasn't turning her head around, she was looking at up at him from his chest. Kouki showed a small smile at such Koone while starting to explain.

But,

「You see――」

「……Kouki-sama, does your injury hurt?」

It seemed he put too much strength into his side when his body stirred a bit. Kouki's breathing was disordered just for an instant from pain. Seeing that, not just Koone, but Lilin behind him was also peering at Kouki with a worried expression.

Kouki was about to bluff by saying 「I'm fine」 .

But then, the griffon's moved its head and looked back as though it was seeing through Kouki's thinking.

「Kuee」

「!? ……Since when it can let out a cry like a real griffon like that?」

From the griffon's appearance, it couldn't be seen at all that it was a golem made from metal. Even so, the last time he saw this thing it shouldn't be able to produce an animal cry if he remembered correctly. Kouki's cheeks were twitching

looking at the death god that was evolving continuously day by day.

Right after that, *kashun!* there was such sound from how a part of its back that was located between Koone’s legs was splitting into two. More *kashun-* sound came from there and three test tubes that were supported by an arm flew out.

□—□

Koone stiffened still. Until now she was thinking that it was a living thing, but now she stiffened with her eyes opened wide seeing the fact that it wasn’t so thrust before her eyes.

□This is……I see. So even the grim reaper is always stocked with healing magic medicine just in case. As expected from Nagumo, he leaves nothing to chance.□

Kouki smiled wryly and took the test tubes, guessing that the “farewell gift” Hajime said also included this meaning. Koone was still staring fixedly at the strangeness coming out from between her legs.

With *kashun-* sound, the back returned to normal. Koone jumped on the spot with a twitch. The back’s appearance was already back to the fluffy feathers. Koone’s finger timidly reached out and poked.

kashun-. It opened for some reason!

□Hiih!?□

Koone screamed and backed away. Her face finally turned into a scared expression that said □This isn’t a living thing!□ from facing the reality.

While that was happening, the special recovery medicine “Dr Fix It V2” that had the effect of high level recovery magic due to Hajime’s work that turned it into the highest class of magic medicine healed Kouki’s body in the blink of eye.

「Tsu, this is intense. With this I can recover enough in less than an hour before we arrive.」

‘Aa, so this is why he provided transportation using grim reaper instead of gate’, Kouki made a wry smile once more at Hajime’s detailed consideration.

「Ko, Ko-ko-ko, Kouki-samaaa!? This animal, it’s not a living thing! Koone believes, that it’s not a living thinggg!!」

「Kouki-san. Just what are we riding right now? As expected, it’s a bit scary that my bottom feels itchy.」

Both Koone and Lilin asked Kouki with twitching face.

Spike and others who were also riding the same thing also felt the same nervousness. They were in a flying state where it was completely entrusted to the ride, if they were dropped off then at that point they would lose their life. And above all else, the griffons were flying with great speed so the best they could do were clinging tightly.

Thinking that it couldn’t be helped for them to act like that, Kouki felt a bit of sympathy for Koone and co while answering.

「Actually, these things have body of metal that is applied with disguise to look like a living thing—they are weapons of slaughter.」

「Slaugh, ter?」

「Wea, pon?」

Koone and Lilin tilted their head until their head flopped on Kouki's chest and shoulder respectively. The dangerous words caused their speech to become somewhat halting.

When Kouki was going to explain more, a shadow came into view at the sky ahead. It appeared that flying type＜Dark Beings＞ were heading their way. Perhaps they were the patrol around the capital's outskirt, or perhaps a squad that chased late after Koone and co.

Their number was roughly thirty.

At the other hand this side had ten griffons. The enemy's force was three times more but……

「Kouki-dono! Ahead there is――」

Spike who was riding the griffon that was flying parallel with Kouki let out a warning voice, at that instant,

「KUEEE!!」

The griffon's beak opened wide. Inside was a large caliber rifle barrel installed……

Instantly, a crimson flash cut through the sky. *zudon zudon-* A sound that sounded like bombardment shook the sky. That attack which destroyed the target of several kilometer ahead electromagnetically accelerated anti object sniper cannon.

Surely even the enemy would never even dream that it would be hit by an attack from such distance that reached them in less than a second. It didn't even have time to

perform emergency evasion. Various things scattered from its body and it was falling to the desert below.

While the speechless Koone and co were seeing that, there was a sound of something opening *kashun* from below the excessively thick and splendid wing. They turned their gaze at there. An arm holding six rods came out. Those rods—missiles made *bashuh* sound and flew away with orange fire trail left behind.

A total of sixty missiles became a wall of death that approached the enemies. The <Dark Beings> started evading in panic, but the missiles were following them by detecting heat source. Seeing the countless something following them by changing trajectory sharply……there was feeling of despair that could be felt somehow even from this far.

—Crimson flowers were blooming profusely in the sky

「Slaugh, ter」

「Wea, pon」

As expected from Koone and Lilin. They were completely in harmony. Their speech was still halting, and their body was trembling all over.

Kouki spoke while making a thousand-yard stare.

「They are, the mechanical servants of the demon king. An army that can even compete against the god’s apostles. They are called grim reaper.」

Kouki added more explanation toward Koone who was wordlessly asking him ‘And what is grim reaper?’ with an upward teary gaze.

「It means, the death god you know?」

「Koone, won’t go against that person. Koone swear, that Koone won’t go against him.」

「Lilin also swear. Lilin declare, that Lilin won’t go against that person.」

Putting aside Lilin who copied Koone’s way of speaking because of feeling shaken, Kouki made a wry smile while responding 「That’s the safe way」.

Before long, by the time Kouki was feeling that his body was getting mostly recovered from the bad condition, their eyes finally could see the capital and the battlefield.

「Aa……」

The one who leaked out that voice that even resembled a moan was Koone. Kouki could also feel from his back that Lilin had stiffened.

That was only natural. The capital of water in the middle of desert that once couldn’t be described enough even with the word magnificent had fallen into an atrocious state that was clear from a glance.

The river barrier that surrounded the capital had ended up muddy from getting mixed with miasma that invaded from most of the surrounding. There were even spots where the citizens of the capital were already fighting in an urban warfare.

The deepest place of the palace was half destroyed by some kind of attack.

Currently, the casters were going all out in manipulating the water current of the oasis around the palace that had barrier effect remaining. The oasis was barely working as “moving defensive wall” due to that.

The soldier force deployed at the four directions of the capital was constructing encampment, but it could be seen that it was only a matter of time until they were pushed back. The reinforcement from the moving water defensive wall was barely preventing the collapse of the battle line.

The corpses of the soldiers were scattered all over the place.

And the most tragic thing must be how the whole capital was being covered by darkness colored miasma, just like 「Haltina Sea of Trees」. It wasn’t so thick that it should be called as dense fog, but the miasma that gnawed at human life was covering the whole battlefield.

In the end, it was a matter of how many miasma stone the defender possessed. It could be thought that among the collapsed people, especially the people collapsed in the city at the rear there should be some who were done in by the miasma.

The capital was almost swallowed by a thick cloud of despair.

The situation was such that could only be seen like that.

「Where is Moana-」

「-, Onee-chan……」

Koone returned to her senses from Kouki’s words. Seeing the battle hadn’t ended meant that Moana hadn’t surrendered

yet. In that case, there was enough possibility that she was alive.

They gradually approached the battlefield while they looked over the battlefield with eyes opened wide.

When the number of people who were looking up to the sky and noticed the appearance of Kouki and co increased, Lilin yelled.

「Kouki-sama! Over there!」

Kouki looked at the direction where Lilin was pointing at.

「—tsu」

There. Moana was there.

Her neck was being grasped by a large <Dark Being> whose body was covered with full armor. She was wounded all over with her body being totally limp. Perhaps she didn’t even have any more strength to resist because she didn’t even look struggling.

「Onee-cha—」

Koone was going to yell. But, her voice that was about to call at her big sister stopped midway. There was a reason for that.

「—」

It was because she was pressured by Kouki.

The strength of the hand that was circled around her stomach. It was only through that hand that she noticed the slight change. It was a strange change.

—She didn’t, feel anything.

Yes, Kouki was only being quiet. He wasn’t showing anger or even agitation. The large presence she was feeling on her back was gradually turning tranquil. So tranquil to a scary degree.

Koone couldn’t bear it and looked behind. Then she saw it.

Kouki’s eyes.

Koone thought that they looked like the spring inside the forest.

Koone. Lilin. Don’t let go of the griffon. I’m going to save Moana.

His voice was also calm. No emotion could be read from that, no, it was so tranquil that it was even doubtful whether there was emotion in it.

The sound of gulping saliva could be heard. It was unknown who was the one that made the sound.

Kouki jumped down from the griffon lightly, as though he was only going for a walk.

After looking on dumbfounded, Koone immediately returned to her senses and gave instruction to the other guards while timidly asking the griffon to land down.

The pain throughout the whole body, the pressure on her neck.

She was enduring those, however, Moana’s heart was feeling pain that broke her heart at the scene ahead of her gaze that was hard to endure.

□Your-, majesty-. We are, coming-□

□Kuh, only this much-□

Spenser whose whole body was smeared with blood was swinging sword with a demonic look.

Linden who lost one arm while looking like he could fall anytime was using blessing art with a pale face.

Donar was already lying down without even a twitch with a hole opened in his stomach.

The royal guards, the elites of the soldier force and blessing art company, ahead of Moana’s gaze they were currently being tormented as though their body was shaved from the edge.

However, Moana couldn’t do anything.

Moana wondered why it turned out like this while gritting her teeth.

Was it because the soldiers, the people of the capital loved her more than she imagined?

Or else, was it because she was unable to predict the depth of the＜Dark King＞’s grudge toward the royal family?

Defeat was inevitable. When Moana understood that, Moana picked the choice of surrender. She would end the war by

offering her life.

This option was something she had considered since a long time ago. It was something she had conveyed to Spenser, Donar, Linden, and all the other top brass.

Naturally, such option was fiercely opposed at the time, but by her continuous persuasion that as a queen she had to think about the realistic option, it was an option that they also accepted.

There were also people who wished to accompany her, but that would depend on the <Dark King>. At the very least, she wouldn’t allow anyone to wish for death, that was the only thing that was out of question.

The reason for that?

That was obvious. Because there was her beloved little sister—Koone that was their hope.

By launching a diversion that was paid with a lot of sacrifice, Koone was brought to escape through a hidden path that was constructed underground with the bought time. It seemed there was also pursuer chasing after them, but the one in question here was the clever Koone, Moana believed that she surely would hide herself skillfully.

Like that they then negotiated with the coming <Dark King>.

But, the result was this.

The depth of the grudge of the <Dark King> against the royal family of Synclea, the resentment from the five years ago surpassed the prediction of Moana and others.

That was to say, all the people in the capital regardless whether they were soldier or citizen would be slaughtered.

The queen Moana would watch that scene while going through agony.

Spenser and others were enraged. The option of surrender or retreat was casted away from inside their mind. Even the people of the capital who knew about the situation decided that this place would be their grave. They couldn’t possibly turn their back toward their beloved queen no matter the cost.

Like that, the momentum of the invasion increased, and right now even Spenser and others were in the verge of death.

If it was her big brother who became king, or perhaps if it was someone else who wasn’t her, would the situation turn out to be better? Would it ended without the situation turning out like this?

Vexation finally emerged as tears while—Moana wrung out her strength and opened her hands. The last heaven’s blessing art that would cause her to die if it was used—<Divine Protection>

The blessing art <Wind Sword> came to her hand. Putting the last of her strength into it, she would at least strike back with an attack. It might be just a pointless struggle. No, nine out of ten, this would only end up futilely.

But, she would never despair here. She wouldn’t stay meek while grieving no matter what!

She was the warrior’s, Synclea’s queen! If her head had no worth for the enemy, then she would fight to the end and

died!

Perhaps noticing Moana’s pressure, the <Dark King>’s gaze turned toward Moana. The red ominous eyes were peering from behind the slit of the helmet. Those eyes narrowed as though in enjoyment of Moana’s struggle.

「Your majesty-, don’t-」

「Moana-sama-」

Spenser and Linden, and then the soldiers guessed that this would be Moana’s last struggle and they raised up sorrowful voice.

Perhaps for the <Dark King> even those voices were side attraction that he delighted from. A joyful stifled laughing voice echoed.

Inside her heart Moana spat out ‘I don’t give a damn’.

Something like regret……there was no way she didn’t have it. No, rather she had a lot of it. Death was scary, she didn’t know how many people would be spared, and thinking of how harsh the path that her people would surely continuously walk for long after this made her felt like her heart would burst.

Above all else, she had a thought that even she felt was improper as a queen. She understood that in actuality she should think of her soldiers and people until the end, even so, if Moana was asked what was her greatest regret currently, and if she answered it following her heart without any falsehood, then the answer would be—how she was unable to protect the promise.

Yes, the promise with him. When she heard his story, and when she talked about herself, she made that promise.

However, that promise wouldn’t be fulfilled anymore.

Moana thought. Would he get angry? Or else would he feel proud for the choice she made?

It was a mysterious feeling. For some reason he was in her mind since she first saw him, since they exchanged words. The frail him who despite having a phenomenal strength yet looked like he would crumble down anytime now.

She felt it, that the more she talked with him, his existence became bigger inside her.

He was kind but cowardly, strong but weak.

Aa, since when she was getting this taken to him she wondered.

She noticed her feeling was when she saw him continuing to fight even while losing consciousness.

It was a feeling as though the inside of her chest was constricted.

He would surely continue to fight from here on too. And she wished to become a person who would support him when he was tired and let go of his tension.

(Sorry, Kouki.)

The last <Divine Protection> was invoked. She felt it, the sensation of the last important thing that was like something beaten up slipping out from inside her body.

Moana smiled. She smiled fearlessly.

The <Dark King> stirred slightly. His laughing voice changed into a displeased groan.

「Your majesty-」

「Moana-sama-」

Even the sorrowful voice of the soldiers, she responded ‘sorry’ to them inside her heart.

Spenser and others discarded their defense and tried to rush toward Moana. The <Dark Beings> stood on their way, blocking their path as though telling them to watch quietly. During that time, Moana wrung out her life and put the last attack—

—*ton-*

A light, a very light footstep echoed excessively clearly.

The place, right, it was right in the middle of the <Dark Beings> who were blocking the path of Spenser and co, taking formation right in the middle between them and the <Dark King>.

It was a single human who suddenly fell down as though he too was also a member of the formation.

The <Dark Beings> stiffened.

「—<Light Blade>」

rin- sound rang. Instantly, a circle of light that penetrated the <Dark Beings> was drawn.

The human who suddenly fell from the sky—Kouki passed through the <Dark Beings> around him calmly, as though it was only something natural to do, and without pause he confronted the <Dark King>.

The <Dark Beings> who were supposed to be the elites still stiffened.

And then, the katana was sheathed back.

At the same time the upper body and the lower body of the <Dark Beings> were severed from each other and all the body parts fallen down simultaneously. The number easily surpassed a hundred.

With just one attack, the most elite enemies numbered in three digits were cut down.

Starting from Spenser, the soldiers stopped walking and opened their eyes wide in astonishment seeing that fact. The surrounding <Dark Beings> were also getting noisy.

「I'll have you release her.」

A calm voice was declaring so.

The <Dark King> comprehended it a bit late that the voice was directed toward him. He spat out 「The servant of Foltina that was in the report huh」 with a displeased voice and the next moment, he created several hundred lined up spears.

The spears surrounded Kouki from 360 degree direction without any gap.

「-, Kou, ki!!」

Moana's pained voice resounded.

Half-dome of death of spears. This was one of the <Dark King>'s ability. Place that was covered with miasma was all his territory. He could create weapon and beast anywhere and as many as he liked.

「A nuisance. Disappear.」

He shortly said only that, and then those words of the <Dark King> were said without any doubt that it would come to pass.

With an emotion as much as crushing a bug, the barrier of spears flew out to crush the person inside.

「Ah?」

A confused voice. It came from the <Dark King>.

Because his technique was endured——wasn't the reason.

It was because his right arm became light.

「I have certainly received her back.」

「You, bastard-」

Something moved at the corner of his view. It was his arm dancing in the air, and the figure of Kouki that was right in front of him without him noticing. The queen……was already within the arm of the opponent. The lines of spears…… several were cut down. Only the spears that were in the way and could hit Kouki were cut to forcefully create a path——

The <Dark King> could only follow until that far.

「Goah!?」

Right after that, a severe impact that was produced at his stomach area thoroughly blew away the＜Dark King＞ who had been continuously acted calm without pause since this war began.

The＜Dark Beings＞ behind the＜Dark King＞ were blown away like bowling pins. The＜Dark King＞ who was flying horizontally above the ground landed a few hundred meters ahead while raising up dust cloud.

「Healing far and wide to the children──＜Revolving Heaven＞!」

Kouki chanted multiple target recovery magic without being mindful toward the flying＜Dark King＞.

Starting from Spenser, the soldiers were healed from their wound with shocking speed, including Moana. Linden too, although his arm wasn’t regenerated but his bleeding stopped completely, the pain was also receding so his complexion became better.

「Kou, ki」

「Yes. It’s me, Moana.」

Moana slowly reached out her arm and touched Kouki’s cheek to ascertain the presence of the person who she recalled only just now.

「Why……」

It was a “why” that was filled with various meaning.

How did he come to this battlefield? Who Kouki should protect wasn’t her, shouldn’t it be the people at the rear

instead? It was a question that was asked exactly because she understood Kouki’s way of living.

Or, why did he come to this battlefield? The strength of the <Dark King> was abnormal. Even five years ago the kingdom met catastrophic hardship. And now the <Dark King> had become even stronger. She didn’t wish for Kouki who was supposed to still be unhealthy to fight such <Dark King>.

Was his body okay? What happened with Koone? What happened with Arquette, with the rear territories? Every kind of worry surfaced within her……

「It’s fine.」

「Ah――」

Her anxiety quietly vanished. The dam inside her heart that she desperately built so she wouldn’t cry burst. Even without any proof, she was convinced that it was all right already. Tears overflowed.

「Leave the rest to me.」

「Yes……please-」

She paid no mind to her appearance, her shame, or her pride. She only said words that entrusted everything to him. It was something that she had never done by any means since she was enthroned as queen.

As expected, the <Dark Beings> at the surrounding who returned to their senses began to move to steal back the queen. But, at that instant, the raining down pencil missiles blew them away.

「ONEE-CHAAAAAAAAAAN-」

「KOONE!?」

The princess descended from the sky riding a huge mythical beast. And then Lilin and Spike and the others, the guard squad members too.

Seeing the unexpected entrance of his son, Spenser raised a shocked voice 「Spike!? What are you doing!?」. Spike made a thousand-yard stare despite being in a battlefield and his answer 「Chichi-ue, even I don't understand it myself」 entered Spenser's ears.

Lilin held her breath for a moment after seeing her father's condition, and then for some reason she made a thumb up saying 「Otou-san! Nice guts!」. With a twitching face Linden retorted 「What in the world you are straddling there!?」.

While the griffons were holding the surrounding in check, or rather while a part of the griffons were shooting missiles like they were candy at the area where the <Dark King> was flying at to hold back (?) and dealt additional blow (?), Kouki was entrusting Moana to Koone. Even with the healing of her wound, she was still a step away from death most likely from using the heaven's blessing art, Moana was unable to even stand.

「Koone. Take care of Moana okay? I'm——going to end this.」

「……Yes, Kouki-sama. Koone will pray for your victory.」

Receiving Moana, Koone hugged her tightttttly while giving her words to Kouki with her expression filled with gentleness and kindness that Kouki had never seen before until now.

And then Moana was,

□Kouki□

Yes, she called Kouki’s name and pulled at Kouki’s collar. Kouki felt a soft sensation on his lips. It was a happening that happened only for a moment.

Kouki was taken aback. Moana narrowed her gaze lovingly at such Kouki and,

□I’ll wait, right here.□

Kouki smiled softly, then he made a small nod before standing up.

At the same time, the griffons stopped attacking. And then, they skillfully moved their wing and sharply pointed with □Kue!□ cry. It was as though they were giving him a thumb up while saying □We have bought you time yeah. Do whatever you want now!□.

Inside his heart Kouki was thinking □These guys are really just golem right? There is no strange soul entering inside them right?□ while shaking his head unable to say anything anymore.

□Can I ask you guys to guard them and back up the other places?□

He tried asking them that.

The griffons made a somewhat irritating gesture with skillful movement of their wings as though to say □Good grief this kid□ before they flew away with only three staying behind to guard Moana and others. Kouki thought that these guys were exactly just like their owner.

DON- Dust cloud spurted up, at the same time a spiral of dark miasma pierced to the sky. The thickness of the miasma covering the capital increased. The＜Dark King＞ seemed to be trying to strengthen his territory further.

The＜Dark King＞ scattered so much miasma with what seemed to be an inexhaustible supply. He made his right arm to be clad in miasma. And then, his arm that should have been cleaved away regenerated instantly.

In addition, a huge sword took shape at the end of that hand. It was an ominous large sword that looked as though it was the anger of the＜Dark King＞ taking shape.

The thickness of the miasma was increasing second by second, turning into thickness that ought to be called as thick fog. If it was inside this territory, if the＜Dark King＞ could make weapon anywhere he liked here just like before, that it seemed that the whole capital had been taken hostage.

To prove that, the＜Dark King＞ was going to create countless spear behind Kouki──at the place where Moana and others were at──

「I’m not going to hold back. I won’t let you touch them. Here I go──＜Limit Break – Supreme Destruction＞」

GOU- Pure white light pierced the sky. The pillar of light drew spiral trajectory that instantly blew away the surrounding miasma.

「What?」

An agitated voice leaked out for the first time from the＜Dark King＞. The pure white torrent that pierced the sky

instantly exterminated the miasma at the back, overwriting the territory of the <Dark King> into the territory of human.

「You bastard-. The like of Faltina's servant is powerful to this degree-」

Even more miasma spurted out from the <Dark King>.

Gigantic darkness approached to swallow everything.

The pure white light that increased further in radiance prevented that.

That scene was like the clash between two giant sandstorms of black and white. If it was seen from afar, it might even looked like the sky had been split.

It was the contest between darkness and light. Everyone forgot that this place was a battlefield from gazing at that sight that seemed to come from legend.

The fact that he was unable to take back the territory no matter how much miasma he scattered caused the <Dark King> to ask with an angry voice as though to reject the reality.

「You bastard-, just what the hell are you!?」

From the reports that he heard until now, he thought that the one who hindered him was a warrior that was bestowed with Faltina's divine protection. If that was the case, then even if that warrior was more or less strong, but in the end he would be nothing but a warrior that obtained the cooperation of the incarnation of the blessing power, such being wouldn't be his match who was able to erode blessing power.

And yet, the situation was like this.

What was this light?

It was a power he had never felt before, different from blessing power. A pure white light that was tremendous, vast, and was even somewhat divine. There was a pressure as though his existence was going to get crushed and overwritten just from looking at it.

Kouki who was being looked at as though he was someone that shouldn’t be existing ruminated the question of the <Dark King> inside his mind.

What was he?

The answer, was recorded on his status plate since a long time ago.

He thought of the question for the first time when he arrived in this world. What was the meaning of “that”, he wondered.

If it meant to be someone who possessed courage, then everyone in this world was like that. Even the people of Tortus, even his classmate comrades, everyone was like that.

He didn’t understand the truth.

But surely, yes surely……

“That” must be referring to someone that couldn’t choose the few.

It must be referring to a person who left behind their important person for the sake of the many.

Someone with a difficult personality, who kept taking detour, unable to discard the ideal, and yet when the time

came he would make the choice, and then grieved and writhed as they pleased……

It must be referring to such stupid idiot.

(This time where I’m saved by the demon king and can choose the few, is surely something like a miracle.)

Inside his heart Kouki was exasperated at himself thinking 『I got no face to introduce myself like that』, however, Kouki looked straight at the＜Dark King＞.

Toward the＜Dark King＞ who looked slightly faltering,

『You are asking me what I am――』

‘Fine then’, he thought.

Although, he actually didn’t understand what kind of person “that” referred to.

If by introducing himself as “that”, he would be able to support someone, he would be able to save someone’s heart.

‘Aa, that’s fine.

I’ll introduce myself like that.

After all if it’s resolve, I’ve already made it.

Now, listen.

I am――

『Amanogawa Kouki――――a hero.』

AN: Thank you very much for reading every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Next time, last chapter of Kouki arc.

Actually I also wanted to write the another world arc of Hajime and Kouki, but this story became long more than expected, no, in a sense it was just as expected, so I’m thinking that I’ll write it at another chance.

And so, for now, Kouki arc will be only until next week.

Also, terribly sorry for those who looked forward to it every week but…

After Kouki arc ended, I’m thinking of wanting to rest throughout the whole September, until around mid-October.

I’m busy with various things like revising for publication and so on, doesn’t feel like I have any leeway.

But, I still have tale that I want to write, so I promise I will start again.

It will make me happy if you can wait patiently.

Please take care of Arifureta from here on too.

Arifureta Chapter 280

Arifureta After II　Take Care of the Next World Too Pleaa~se!

「Amanogawa Kouki――――a hero.」

Hearing Kouki’s declaration, the＜Dark King＞ let out a dubious voice.

「A hero, you said?」

It was likely that he was demanding for a word that could substantiate Kouki’s strength more specifically.

‘I guess that’s too abstract huh’, Kouki smiled wryly inside his heart while asking back in return this time.

「＜Dark King＞. Human and＜Dark Being＞, won’t you help me looking for a way where both sides can coexist?」

「What?」

Bafflement――that wasn’t it. The emotion that was filling that voice was as expected……ridicule.

「In this end of the war, where I’m about to get my hand on my longstanding desire, and you are asking me to discard it? Hah」

Out of the question, was what he conveyed. But, Kouki continued his words without faltering.

「You're only about to get your hand on your desire, but you won't be able to obtain it for real.」

「……Hou. Why do you think so?」

「Because I'm here.」

This time it was wrath. A terrific wrath was emitted from the <Dark King>. He thought that Kouki was telling him that the <Dark King> couldn't win against the <hero>, that he was inferior than him.

「Are you mocking me?」

「No. It's my determination.」

The words that replied back concisely contained a clearness that couldn't be ignored.

The <Dark King> looked up to the sky. His miasma was completely blocked by the torrent of light. It was the proof that the being confronting him right now was a being that possessed extraordinary strength.

There was a still silence. The <Dark King>'s answer was—

「—!!」

A thunderous sound resounded.

That was the sound of clash played by the sheathed holy sword that Kouki lifted up with both hands clashing against the large sword that was swung down vertically. The attack was a powerful one that caused a hallucination as though the ground was split.

「Hou, that’s really something.」

The voice came from the *back.* At the same time a giant jaw assaulted from left and right!

Kouki immediately tried to jump forward to escape from the unknown, but he saw black beasts assaulted him from all directions simultaneously.

Kouki immediately created multiple barriers using <Heaven Severance> to block while continuing his question. It was the same question that he once asked Ragal.

「Why? Why won’t you take a path where everyone can survive!? If your race can survive by other way, then there should be no need for human to be livestock! It’s fine even if it’s only mutual non-interference with each other! Just what meaning there is in a world where both sides are merely continuing to kill each other!?」

「—」

The <Dark King> didn’t reply. But, it could be seen how the red eyes peeking out from behind his helm’s slit warped in mockery. He was really not seeing any worth from Kouki’s wish except as trash.

Kouki continued to argue vehemently even while gritting his teeth.

「There will be spark of hatred remaining for sure if you turn human into livestock. Discord will occur without fail if you rule through fear. If mankind rebel once more in the future, a lot of <Dark Beings> might die. A lot of lives will be scattered if a war occur! You are their king aren’t you!? Aren’t you thinking to look for a path where no sacrifice will

result for the sake of the future, for the sake of your compatriots!?

The <Dark King> seemed to be able to teleport in short range even when he wasn't in the territory of miasma. Surprise attacks came one after another. It was truly a storm of great sword. And then, every single attack possessed terrific might. If it was an average soldier then they would get cut down without even noticing it, or even if they could defend there was no doubt they would still get cut down along with their defense.

In fact, he was barely blocking the attacks by placing <Heaven Severance> at his blind spots, but small wounds from unavoidable attacks that cut through those <Heaven Severance> were increasing continuously.

In addition, the countless beasts that suddenly appeared from empty air became numerous murderous weapons. They used miasma to explode or became blades that constantly attacked from his blind spot.

There was no opening to perform defense to all directions using <Heaven Severance>.

Kouki used <Heaven Severance> and <Light Halo> to hold back the beasts, and used <Light Blade> and < Light Explosion> to forcefully take some distance. Only then he was barely able to evade or block everything.

The <Dark King> was responding with ridiculing laugh as expected toward Kouki's desperate words.

Not at all.

Kouki's expression distorted in grief.

「Why, how could……」

「War? The bigger the better. Strife itself is something like a delicious food. What meaning is there in a life where there isn’t even one entertainment?」

「Enter, tainment?」

Kouki’s expression changed slightly. His desperation thinned down and his expression was turning vaguely calm.

「Conflict, rule, the livestock’s rebellion, they are side show. All of those are indispensable “entertainment” for living don’t you think?」

Kouki understood. Completely. About the nature of the race called <Dark Being>. He understood for sure this time.

So to speak they were the same like a species of migratory fish that would die if they didn’t continue to swim. Conflict was exactly their motivation for living. They couldn’t help but fight. They couldn’t help but conquer. They would invade until the ends of earth if it was for the sake of that. They would scatter the spark of hatred themselves.

If was the way of living for survival, and at the same time it was also something to fill their heart.

Evil—it would be easy if <Dark Being> could just be labeled like that.

But it was if from the viewpoint of Kouki, no, from the view point of the great majority of human.

But, from the viewpoint of the <Dark Being>, perhaps it was Kouki’s insistence for coexistence that was exactly an evil that was trampling on their nature.

Their viewpoint was decisively too different.

「Are you finished with your questions? Then let's end this. You have allowed me to enjoy this somewhat, but even that torrent of light won't match the strength that I have continued to stock for this whole five years.」

The air shook greatly. Raging miasma converged behind the <Dark King> with fierce momentum.

「Power is everything in this world. The strong rule everything. I'll teach your body the meaning of kingship.」

The miasma formed shape. The darkness colored miasma was forming into a giant that was about fifty meter tall from the ground. Arms were formed, a head was formed, a great sword was formed, and then the whole body was covered with armor. It was truly the avatar of <Dark King>. The figure of the strongest king that wouldn't perish as long as miasma existed was there.

「How about you create your barrier of light? You almost died protecting a town of the livestock using that didn't you?」

In respond Kouki closed his eyes slightly. He wrapped his body in silence and the tranquility of a clear spring resided in his eyes.

Once more, he chose.

He imagined along with his resolve. Once, he escaped from reality, and at the end of it he was bestowed with that form of strength. Since that time, no matter how many times he attempted it he was always unable to do it anymore—if it was now he would be able to do it. With such conviction he declared.

「No, there is no need. I'll defeat you and end this――<Heaven's Might – Light Dragon>」

A calm voice resounded.

But, the occurring phenomenon right after it was something tremendous and grand.

A gigantic torrent of light converged behind Kouki. It formed a shape in the blink of eye――what appeared was the form of radiantly shining dragon with size that rivaled even the miasma giant.

「You, how far you are going to――」

「……Because you are a king, I had to ask. I wanted to hear, the words of the king of <Dark Beings>. I thought that perhaps, there still might be other different path. I didn't want to discard that possibility. However, I had heard your answer. The time had come. That's why――I won't let you do anything anymore. I won't let you.」

「Tsu, don't look down on me-」

The miasma giant swung down its great sword. The air screamed from its overwhelming pressure.

But,

「――<Breath>」

Instantly the world was dyed white.

The light dragon's breath blew away anything and everything. It wasn't at the level like the air was screaming anymore. It was a might that annihilated the air. That was

truly the manifestation of heaven’s might. The very light of ruination itself.

The giant’s great sword was instantly vaporized. The body’s upper half that was hit by the breath showed that it was enduring. But, that too was only for a moment. The body’s upper half was erased as though it was gouged up.

The breath that stabbed at the ground far away caused a localized earthquake. Just its after wave blew away the warriors of <Dark Being> without them being able to stand their ground.

But even amidst of that, just as expected, although one of his trump card was easily annihilated, the <Dark King> repressed his turmoil and teleported behind Kouki in order to take advantage of Kouki’s stiffening post using the technique.

A sound like the clear ring of a bell rang out.

「—tsu. You bastard!」

「……」

Even though he should have taken the enemy by surprise from a blind spot, when he noticed his hand that was holding the great sword was cut away and sent flying.

(When was it slashed? No, was it just a coincidence?)

The <Dark King> teleported again and took some distance while pondering about the attack just now. It was a method of defense that was different from the beginning of battle where Kouki was obviously defending using his instinct or deploying barrier at his blind spots beforehand. This time he was intercepted with pin point accuracy……

He made dark beasts attacked from Kouki’s blind spot also with the intention of observation.

—The head of the dark beasts were already lobbed off when he noticed.

He regenerated his arm and large sword while attacking with line of spears from all directions.

—Kouki deflected only a few spears and evaded everything by moving only a step.

He teleported to a blind spot. He swung his great sword horizontally.

—*shan* Such clear sound rang. At the same time the trajectory of his great sword was averted, and when he noticed his body was already slashed diagonally.

Different from before, these sword attacks were calm. He was unable to perceive the process for even once. He could see how dreadful the skill behind these attacks. And yet, he didn’t feel anything from the person himself. Whether it was killing intent, or fighting spirit, or hatred, nothing……

「You-, just what the hell are you doing!?」

The＜Dark King＞ finally couldn’t hide his turmoil and shouted.

At the same time, as though to say that if he was slashed if he approached, then he would just pulverize everything altogether, he reformed his miasma giant and ordered it to punch down.

—It was blown away by the giant light dragon.

Even when he attacked from the blind spot, everything was slashed off. While area attack was annihilated by the giant dragon standing by behind the enemy.

「Then I'll use number! I'll crush you with number!」

The <Dark King> created a hundred miasma warriors that resembled bull head species with height of three meter in one breath. He formed them in a way that surrounded Kouki and made them charge. If the opponent was the soldiers of the kingdom, they would be easily blown away even if they hardened their defense with twice the number. This was a charge of monsters that allowed gruesome trampling with their rush momentum and physical strength.

Kouki swayed relaxedly, and two heads flew.

The moment the <Dark King> perceived that, three more heads already danced in the air.

No matter how powerful the miasma warrior he created—they were cut.

Some rushed ahead using their comrade as shield. They were cut altogether.

Some was covered wholly with armor. They were cut together with their armor.

Some swung down their large sword. They were cut together with their large sword.

Cut. Cut. Cut. Cut. Cut. Cut. Cut. Cut. Cut. Cut. Cut. Cut. Cut. Cut. Cut. Cut. Cut. Cut. Cut. Cut. Cut. Cut. Cut. Cut.

There was no room for resistance, the miasma warriors who weren't supposed to even feel pain were cut away without

even feeling it at all. Everything was with one attack. There wasn’t even the sound of cutting wind when the sword was swung.

And then, the smoothly flowing movement was approaching to where the <Dark King> was little by little. The miasma warriors were cut away with easiness as though an afterthought while strolling casually.

「Tsu, what’s this? You bastard, what’s with your gaze!?」

No one would believe it. Within that <Dark King>’s voice, there was a definite “flinch” filling it.

What he was fearing wasn’t how everything he was doing was getting cut down. It also wasn’t how his trump card the miasma giant was being completely helpless from the breath and the storm of light bullets that were like meteor shower unleashed by the giant light dragon.

It was those eyes.

There was no hostility in them. No killing intent. No hatred. No desperation. No fighting spirit. No emotion. Most things that could be called will couldn’t be found there at all.

Those eyes were tranquil like a spring sleeping deep inside an untrodden and unexplored region.

It looked like he was looking somewhere, but it was also as if he wasn’t looking anywhere.

Within those slightly opened eyelids there was only tranquility.

At the end after stepping foot into his territory, there was only one result waiting after going through all the process.

That was──being cut.

The moment he drew out his katana couldn’t be seen. The trajectory of the sword couldn’t be seen. Everything was already over without anything that could be seen.

It was the furthest land of sword skill that Moana and others witnessed at that day.

──The last derivation of skill 『Sword Art』 『Serene Mind』

With feeling inside the heart, one swung the sword in the state of complete trance. Because it was in a state of nothingness, the process of the sword being swung was remarkably difficult to perceive.

If one didn’t have omnipresent consciousness that could notice the sway of the grass below even while crossing sword in a battlefield, this sword strike would be extremely difficult to be evaded with how very naturally it was done.

It was one of the summits of being a swordsman that Kouki obtained in the end of his continuous battle that was driven with only a single thought of “I have to protect” even while he wasn’t conscious.

Against this abnormal opponent that was responding against his attack while giving him no impression at all, the <Dark King> finally ordered the <Dark Beings> at the surrounding to attack.

『All of you-, don’t just stand there! Kill him!』

『──-, yes-』

For a moment, the <Dark Beings> made an expression that was filled with faint suspicion of ‘Is the king about to get

defeated?’ before they rushed Kouki.

But, the soldiers of the kingdom who were similarly continuing to watch the battle of the <Dark King> and the <Hero> wouldn’t allow that.

「Don’t let them interfere with Kouki-dono!」

「This is the critical moment! Fight with the intention of making this place your grave!」

The one that gave such order while rushing at the forefront was Spike and Lilin.

Spenser and Linden looked at each other for a moment seeing their children taking the initiative. They made an expression that seemed to want to say how the both of them had grown so old before heading out to reinforce Kouki while leading the surviving soldiers.

「E, errr. Death god-san! Please listen to Koone’s wish! I hope you can attack violently at the crowd over there!」

「Eh? Koone? Death god-san?」

Even while Moana was looking surprised, the griffons seemed to say 「Kue! (Order acknowledged yeah, missy!)」 at Koone’s request and they turned the enemies into meat scraps using missiles or small gatling gun that came out from under their belly.

Moana stared with her pupil turning into dot at the agonizing cries of the <Dark Beings>.

Then, at that time.

Silver light shined and rippled through all the other battlefields with the exception of the battlefield at the capital’s front where Kouki and others were at. If Kouki didn’t enter his trance state, then he would realize that it was the cheat healing that his one other childhood friend unleashed.

Wind of agitation ran through the battlefields. That was only natural. After all the people’s wounds were healed in the blink of eye without caring of how heavy the wounds were or even how miasma had eroded inside, in addition their comrade in arms who should be died already snapped their eyes open and stood up.

The chaotic battlefield made it went unnoticed, but the revival was limited to those whose time of death was within half a day more or less……even so what was happening around them was nothing but a “miracle”.

A miracle that was brought at the battlefield where the <Hero> was standing on.

The confusion immediately settled down and their fighting spirit rose with a terrific momentum. Their despair was swept away and a momentum to the degree that pushed back the <Dark Beings> at all battlefront was born.

□Again-, am I going to taste that humiliation again-□

The <Dark King> raised a voice of rage. Five years ago, he ate a painful retaliation just when it would only take a bit more to destroy his enemy. Because of that he was attacked many times by his compatriots who were thinking □Perhaps I can become king if it’s now?□.

Perhaps they could win.

That was the greatest humiliation for the <Dark King> that other could think so about him. He was the strongest, the king that possessed the ultimate strength. Those who doubted that and also those who caused such doubt couldn’t be allowed to live no matter what.

That was why, he endured the humiliation, crushed the attack of his compatriots, saved his strength determinedly, and he even created a new skill, biding his time before marching with his army, and yet…

「Even if I have to retreat this time, I’ll at least kill you betting my title as king!」

The miasma giant dispersed. Just when it looked like that, the miasma converged into the <Dark King>. It was just like when Kouki was going to unleash <Heaven’s Might>.

「I accept the challenge. I’ll end you who are unable to choose living with various race.」

The giant light dragon converged into the holy sword.

「You hope of the livestock. Perish!」

What was unleashed was a darkness colored bombardment.

Facing against that was naturally,

「This is my choice――<Heaven’s Might>!!」

A pure white bombardment. That attack that was unleashed with Limit Break state boasted a scale and might that was easily several times the one he unleashed in Arquette. It was pure destruction.

The dark and light bombardments that clashed in the middle blew away the surrounding thoroughly with terrific impact. A crater was created at the desert land.

The two bombardments looked like they were equal, but that too was only for a few seconds.

The holy sword shined even brighter.

And then—

The light of destruction swallowed the darkness and went straight ahead.

「Impossib—」

The air rumbled, the world was dyed pure white, the sound vanished. Kouki felt like he heard that word inside such world.

Before long, the light of Heaven’s Might thinned down and vanished as though it was melting into the air.

There was nothing left behind.

Silence visited the battlefield.

In a brief time, the <Dark Beings> whose number had been reduced considerably, and also the soldiers who were riddled with wounds, everyone was watching the spot where the <Dark King> was at.

Kouki’s shoulders were heaving with heavy breath. He wasn’t clad in light anymore. Actually he was forcefully activating <Limit Break – Supreme Break> continuously using <War Demon>, so his body was considerably

burdened. Honestly speaking, he was gravely exhausted that it felt like he was going to faint anytime now.

But, he didn’t allow his expression to show such thing. Kouki scolded himself—

He slowly lifted up the holy sword above his head.

Even without words, it was still the most eloquent victory declaration there was. It was the prove that the strongest <Dark Being> in history—the <Dark King> was defeated.

A beat later.

Intense cheers spread through the battlefield.

After that, the morale of the <Dark Beings> declined with the <Dark King>’s defeat, furthermore after witnessing the absurdity of the soldiers who should have died already coming back to life, even the <Dark Beings> who loved conflict and domination chose to retreat as expected.

And yet, the soldiers with Lilin in the lead went to pursue them with amazing vigor and morale, in the end just how

many of them could escape……

At any rate, it could be imagined that it would be less than several thousand, it was a catastrophic state if looking back how it was an army of seventy thousand at first. Surely they wouldn’t be able to make any move for a while.

Kouki who was desperately staying awake for the sake of his ally’s morale also secretly consumed a magic medicine from the Grim Reaper’s stock and now he was recovering bit by bit somehow.

Even so, it looked like it would take a while before he was recovered to the degree where he could immediately fight. The use of <Limit Break – Supreme Break> and <Limit Break – War Demon> in conjunction forced a harsh burden on him that it actually wouldn’t be strange even if he dropped dead right after.

Kouki slowly sheathed his sword and let out a long sigh.

And then, he scolded his staggering body while turning around.

At that moment,

「Kouki-sama!」

「Gofuh!?」

A flying brutal small headbutt exploded on his solar plexus. The body Kouki who was relatively at his limit doubled over and then he collapsed down as though he was pushed down.

Koone tilted her head going 「Eh?」. She thought that Kouki would catch her, but unexpectedly Kouki was easily brought down.

「O, oi! Koone! It’s obvious that Kouki is tired if you look carefully!」

「So, sorry, Kouki-sama!」

Moana who approached with Spenser’s support dropped down her fist *poka-* on Koone. Koone who came back to her senses from that fist hurriedly get down from straddling Kouki. She then moved to his side and looked at him worriedly.

Moana also sat down at Kouki’s side.

「Kouki……」

「Aa, Moana.」

Both of them stared still at each other. Moana was praising him with a unfathomable smile that looked as though she was going to cry, worried, loving, and happy. The tears gathering at the corners of her eyes were falling down drop by drop.

「You are, really okay aren’t you?」

「You didn’t believe in me?」

Kouki spoke jokingly while laying down still. Moana shook her head at such Kouki.

「I believed. But, I doubted a little whether inside the “okay” that you said you included yourself properly.」

「……It has no credence what’s with my previous offense huh.」

「Fufu. ……The rear territories are all right aren’t they?」

「Yeah. Because some guys who are so disgustingly reliable took over for me, those places are absolutely all right.」

Moana guessed it when she heard those words that Kouki said with wry smile.

「Your pick up……has arrived then?」

「……yeah.」

「You’re going home?」

「I, guess.」

Moana’s expression strained. However, she didn’t say anything to make him stay, she only slowly grasped Kouki’s hand tightly, as though enduring her gratitude and her feeling that were overflowing from inside.

Kouki also closed his mouth. The parting, felt really regrettable. To the degree that he couldn’t express it with word.

He wanted to watch over this world’s future for a bit more. If possible he wanted to lend his help until the problem with <Dark Being> was resolved. He also had such feeling, but right now he was only thinking that he didn’t want to let go of the hand of the slightly older woman before him.

However, the matter of going home completely depended on “that guy”. That guy came here to pick him up, and he even already gave him his cooperation, and the matter was more or less settled, however because he still wasn’t satisfied, so came again later to pick him up when he finished his business……there was no way Kouki could ask for such convenience. If he was going to stay behind longer than

this, then he would need a resolve to stay in this world for his whole life.

He had family, friends, comrades, and also things left undone in Tortus.

It was a really difficult choice. He couldn’t answer easily. That was why Kouki naturally closed his mouth. While grasping back at Moana’s hand.

The queen and the hero was staring at each other wholeheartedly from really close distance, their hand grasping each other’s hand.

……It was really picture perfect.

If the matter about the place being a battlefield welcoming its end was excluded.

□……Onee-chan, and also Kouki-sama, do the two of you forget that Koone and others are here?□

□□Hah!?□□

The two released each other’s hand in a flash and took a bit of distance. Koone’s eyes were staring still.

Spenser was watching over them with a really complicated expression. Linden who had arrived at their side unnoticed, Donar whose life seemed to retain his life from that healing light, and then the soldiers were making bright expression that was looking on smilingly and joyously.

Kouki’s gaze was wandering around from the rapidly increasing embarrassment he was feeling. Spenser and others conveyed their praise and gratitude from their mouth to him. Loud cheers resounded from throughout the capital.

There was a lot of words praising Kouki inside the far away voice too.

Kouki was feeling shaken at the interstice between his feeling that wanted to go home and his feeling that wanted to stay.

Seeing such Kouki, Moana was also feeling shaken between her loneliness and her wish of seeing off Kouki with a smile after thanking him representing the whole country.

In the end, the two of them kept stealing glances at each other with complicated feeling while at loss for words.

「Haa~~~~~」

Koone was sighing loudly amidst such atmosphere.

「Aa, geez. If Onee-chan loves Kouki-sama that much, then Onee-chan can just go together with him. Kouki-sama too, you have done enough already, so it's fine for you to take Onee-chan with you and go home. Seeing the two of you keep fidgeting and fidgeting and fidgeting make us feel embarrassed here. The two of you aren't some brat in puberty anyway!」

'Little girl shouldn't say that', no such retort came.

Moana's cheeks reddened and she objected in a hurry.

「Eh, ah, no, Koone-tan? Look here, Onee-chan is the queen, so――」

「The war is over. From here on it's Koone's era! Someone like her majesty who is just a step from dying is fired!」

The objection was suppressed decisively.

Certainly, skirmish between the two sides would still continue from here on, but large scale battle wouldn’t occur anymore. In the recovering world postwar, rather than Moana who not only used up her strength and unable to walk by her own strength, but even her life span was uncertain, it was obvious that it would be better for Koone to take the throne just as planned.

Above all else, Koone wanted Moana who was already that ragged to at least spent her remaining life for her own sake.

Moana who was told that she was fired was shocked 「Ko, Koone-tan is in rebellious age……」 and she hung her head down.

Kouki who was unable to watch quietly spoke out hesitatingly.

「Bu, but see, Koone. The method to cross over world, is only possible by asking that guy. That guy is fundamentally a fiendish and inhuman guy, that’s why perhaps after I crossed world with Moana, it will be your last meeting with Moana in this life――」

「Your repetitive prattling is noisy. Indeed, that person is truly a brutish and scary person, but Kouki-sama isn’t a person who will give up just because of “maybe” right? Koone won’t say something like come visit here frequently. It’s enough if we someday, we can meet again even if it’s only once. Until that time, Koone will surely return this world into its former state that is abundant with nature!」

From nearby 「Aa?」 such dangerous voice, and voices like 「Don’t! Hold back Hajime-kun here!」 or 「Hajime, please read the atmosphere!」 resounded faintly, but no one noticed.

Kouki’s eyes opened wide at Koone’s speech and her tremendous faith on him.

“What’s with that look? It’s vexing. Koone protest, that it’s vexing! ……Even like this, Koone dearly love you just as much as Koone love Onee-sama you know, Kouki-sama?”

For Koone who said that she was leaning toward her big sister when weighing her against the world, those words showed the best just how much fait she had to him.

……Kouki felt like she heard Moana whispering “Koone-tan? It feels like you’re making a woman’s face somehow…… that’s just Onee-chan’s imagination right?” with a slightly flustered expression, and voices like “……Kouki-kun, is lolicon?” or “Kouki. Am I gonna have to punch him again? With just Nagumo being lolicon—bubeh!?” accompanied with crashing sound from nearby, but Kouki ignored it.

Koone took the hand of Moana and Kouki that separated from each other and connected them again. She then corrected her sitting posture before she opened her mouth with a shockingly gentle expression.

“Your majesty Moana. I thank you from the bottom of my heart for staking your life to guide us since that day. This Koone de Shelt Synclea will take over for the future from here on. Please take care of your health with peace of mind.”

“Koone……”

Moana opened her eyes wide. Behind Koone, the soldiers including Spenser, Donar, and Linden were lining up. They respectfully kneeled in unison. Their stance was filled with their gratitude, and their wish for her to rest because it was enough already.

Moana’s let out tears falling through her cheeks once more. Her various feelings until now became an immense heat that overflowed out.

With a gaze that already emitted an atmosphere as queen, this time Koone turned at Kouki.

「Hero-sama. As the representative of mankind, I express you our deep thanks. The grand exploit that you accomplish, it will surely be carved deeply into the annal of history along with our respect and gratitude. The path to the future that you grant us, we swear that we will make it into something glorious. Please I beg you, move forward through the path you desire without worry.」

「……You keep on surprising me since from the beginning huh.」

The path to the future could be seen. The despair was cleared away. For the rest they would do their best by their own, so Kouki didn’t need to abandon his precious people for the sake of this world. Hearing those words of Koone that was telling him so, Kouki looked up to the sky with a giving up expression.

And then, he grasped Moana’s hand tightly. Moana twitched for a moment, but after she closed her eyes for a bit, she grasped back at Kouki’s hand still with a crying face.

「And? Looks like you guys finished talking already but, is it all right that you are taking along that woman too?」

「Uoh!?」

「Hoa!?」

「Hiih, he came out!?」

The presence and voice that suddenly appeared right beside Kouki and Moana caused the two to harmoniously hugged each other, and then Koone who turned into queen mode rolled backward while her twintail went wild.

「Na, Nagumo! Since when you are there!?」

「Around the time you ate that brat's headbutt and fell down I guess. By the way, everyone is here too.」

Hajime snapped his finger while saying that. Right away, the barrier of camouflage from Pencil Cross Velt was dispelled and Yue, Shia, Tio, Kaori, Shizuku, Ryutaro, and Suzu's figures showed up.

「We divided the rear between us and took care of it. Be really grateful until you die.」

「Ye, yeah. Thank you. I'm seriously grateful for that.」

Kouki lowered his head with a soft smile not to just Hajime, but to all the other members who also cooperated. Moana and others sent Kouki a question with their gaze.

「Kouki, these people……」

「Yes, I'll introduce them. They are the people coming to pick me up……my friends from my original world.」

There was a bit of pause because he was hesitating whether it was okay for him to call Hajime that. However, it would be too complicated in various things if he talked about their relation accurately, so he put Hajime in friend grouping while averting his gaze a bit.

Hajime grinned.

「Nice to meet you, I’m Nagumo Hajime, the one who is fundamentally fiendish and inhuman according to hero-kun’s introduction. If you like, you can also think of me as a brutish and scary person too.」

At the same time, the returning griffons were neighing while circling around above Hajime’s head. His appearance was awfully demon king-like.

Koone went「Hiih, forgive me!!」 while casually hiding at a position that turned Kouki into a shield.

Kouki let out a dry laugh to divert from the topic. Shizuku, Kaori, Ryutaro, and Suzu dashed toward such Kouki.

「Uwaa, Kouki-kun. Your inside is worn out you know? You over there, err, Moana-sama, that’s her name right? That person also feels a bit horrible, I’ll regenerate the two of you okay?」

Kaori who at first rushed toward the two used age of god magic <Regeneration> to heal Kouki and Moana instantly. While she was at it she also healed the warriors like Linden who were injured with loss of body part.

Linden whose arm was restored the moment he was wrapped in light as though going through a video playback opened his eyes wide. Kouki already knew about Kaori’s cheat-like effect of Kaori’s regeneration magic, so he wasn’t especially surprised. He could say「Thanks Kaori」 calmly, but Moana couldn’t be like him.

「Wha, wha wha, wha!?」

Seeing Moana’s shaken expression, the gaze of Spenser and others turned grave and caught Kaori with question ‘Is she doing no good thing to Moana’s body!?’.

But, before they could do anything, a change happened to Moana.

「Onee-chan……your hair……」

Yes, Moana's hair that lost its color was recovering its radiance that was really similar with Koone's hair. It seemed her hair coloring was a bit thinner than Koone, so perhaps it should be called as platinum blond.

Moana scooped up her own hair and stared at it while opening her mouth in a daze.

「……I feel, it. My strength returned……」

Saying that, she lifted Kouki's hand to her chest and offered a prayer. Right after that, Kouki was wrapped in faint platinum light. What Moana invoked without any difficulty or even any considerable burden was naturally the heaven's blessing art <Divine Protection>.

Putting aside the healing cheat who said「Something like this I think?」 with really light tone at the side, Shizuku and others started talking to Kouki.

「Kouki……」

「Shizuku……」

「Fufu. Looks like you had a nice encounter. I'm hardly recognizing you right now.」

「……Yeah. After all I won't have the face to look at my big sister if I keep being an unworthy little brother forever.」

Moana instantly recovered from her turmoil. And then she moved on to a new turmoil. 「Thi, this person is Kouki's big

sister!? In other words, sister-in-law!?

Looks like Shizuku got another younger stepsister in a different sense than the soul sisters.

Yo, Kouki. I was seriously shocked when I heard that you got summoned again yeah? Well, no matter where you got sent to, in the end it looks like you are completely yourself huh. ……However, spare me from having a lolicon best friend yeah?

Geez, Ryu-kun! There is no way such thing can happen with Kouki-kun, don’t say something like that!

Ryutaro, Suzu. ……Thank you for coming. But……”Ryu-kun”?

The distance between the two was strangely close. And then the changed way of calling. Kouki looked on dubiously, but before he could receive an explanation, Hajime who was heading to take back the Grim Reapers that were landing simultaneously slightly some way away asked Kouki.

So, what’re you going to do? Going home, or not?

……

Kouki stood up and he looked at Koone and others. Koone and also Spenser and co were saying At least stay here until we can express our gratitude somehow, they weren’t telling him not to go home.

He looked at Moana.

It appears that I’m just get dismissed from my duty. Following you back……might be fine I think?

「……Yes. It’s fine if Moana want it.」

Kouki smiled while nodding. He was doing his utmost to not pay attention at his childhood friends who were grinning at him and Yue and co who were unexpectedly watching with great interest while he headed toward Hajime.

Behind Hajime who had finished taking back the Grim Reapers into the Treasure Warehouse, Kouki was about to tell him about his intention of taking Moana back with him and also to ask something like 「If I ask you to open a gate to this world again, about how much it will cost me?」.

「Hey, Nagumo. Moana and――」

It was right at that moment.

Hajime noticed a strange presence and he turned around. At the same time, space whirled right above Kouki’s head. It was like a black hole that instantly tried to capture and suck in Kouki!

「Do, don’t tell me, this is……」

An intense power aimed at Kouki. Even though the sand below him wasn’t getting sucked at all, yet the space vortex was fiercely shining while pulling insistently at Kouki as though saying 「Take care of the next world too pleaa~se!」.

Kouki looked at Hajime.

As expected Hajime who seemed to be surprised also looked at Kouki.

Hajime made a thumb up. Seeing that, Kouki was convinced that Hajime had the same thinking like him.

That was to say, 「This must be summoning……」 he thought.

The moment Kouki's feet floated lightly from the ground, various emotion exploded inside Kouki and he……

「N, no-, NO MOREEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEE——!!!」

"Serene Mind" as well as "Limit Break" activated! With a step method that was remarkably difficult to perceive as though slipping between the gap of consciousness, he leaped at Hajime.

「Wai-, yo——」

The hero and demon king floated to the air. Without pause the two floated to the sky like dusts that were sucked by vacuum cleaner.

「You bastard-, this son of a bitch! Let go of meee-, THIS SHITTY HEROOOOOOOOOO-」

「I'm not gonna let go of you no matter what-, DEMON KINGGGGGGG-」

They were vanishing amiably into the other side of the sky.

The people who were left behind, including even Yue and Shizuku who were usually always calm were staring blankly with their mouth gaping wide. And then they all simultaneously,

「「「「「Eee~~~~~~?」」」」」

They were raising a voice that seemed really want to say 「Something like that, is just not done in this kind of timing~」.

After that, because the Crystal Key was held by Hajime, Yue and others were waiting patiently at Synclea. Hajime returned to them about one week later.

And then, when they talked about what happened, they heard from Hajime how Kouki was going to save the world for a bit together with the goddess, furthermore Hajime said that it seemed the goddess was pleased with Kouki. Hearing that, the light vanished from Moana’s eyes.

It went without saying that when Kouki returned, it became a bloodbath.

AN: Thank you very much for reading every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

With this Kouki’s arc is temporarily over.

I’m thinking of someday writing the tag battle of demon king and hero too.

Now then, just like I previously mentioned, I will take a bit of rest.

I’m thinking that I’ll restart writing again around the middle of October at the slowest, so please take care of [Arifureta] again at that time.

PS

Arifureta Nichijou’s newest chapter is updated at Comic Galdo.

This time is interesting too! And then the illustration of Mori Misaki-sensei is cute.

You can go there through Overlap-sama’s homepage, so please go take a look by all means.

PS 2

I pretty much was allowed to write one of Historia Garden (The side store of Garden series) but,

It’s also made available to the public. You can go there from Overlap-sama’s homepage.

Please read it if you’re interested as a mean to kill some time.

Arifureta Chapter 281

Character Introduction Part II

AN: It’s character introduction.

This is a rare chance, so I consolidate it a bit.

I don’t have time so it feels half-assed, pardon me.

< After I>

- Nagumo Sumire

Hajime’s mother. A famous shoujo mangaka who is a skillful user of numerous artifacts for housewife use. Her forte is party trick.

- Nagumo Shuu

Hajime’s father. He manages a game company. The originator who beaten up the otaku nature into Hajime.

- The trio junior boys

The male juniors who got the terror of Hajime-senpai carved into them. One of them revealed with a loud voice at a certain fastfood restaurant that his preference was for widow or female teacher, he was put into the blacklist.

- The wicked bunches

The people who were beaten up black and blue by Hajime. Every time something happened, they showed up their face at Hajime’s place to give report.

- Hide-chan

The delinquent who was turned into scrap rag by Hajime. He found employment in a detective agency with Hajime’s referral. He is doing work related with information broker. Idolized Hajime.

- Sonobe Yuuka

A girl high school student who is able to pierce smartphone with vegetable stick. Scheduled to be the second generation of the western restaurant 「Wisteria」. Hajime frequently came there for relaxing, so she is thought as a mistress by the surrounding. When she noticed she became magical girl.

- Sonobe Hiroyuki

Yuuka’s father. The current manager of 「Wisteria」. He is worrying about his daughter’s mistress trait while wishing

that she would marry normally.

- Sonobe Yuuri

Yuuka’s mother. A gentle person, but at the same time she is also a type of person who will drop a bomb of words unaware.

- Shirasaki Tomoichi

Kaori’s father. He is really doting to the degree that he calls Kaori angel. Even while harboring gratitude that Hajime brought Kaori back home, he often pick up a fight with Hajime from his jealous feeling that his daughter is taken by a harem bastard. Each time Kaori got the Hannya out and then he would dogeza.

- Shirasaki Kaoruko

Kaori’s mother. Possess a Stand of Yaksha. Super skilled cook. Generally Tomoichi will dogeza to her.

- Shirasaki Sakura

Kaori’s cousin. A frank female college student who Kaori idolizes like her real big sister. In general she is a victim who often got caught between the father-daughter fight of Kaori and Tomoichi.

- Yaegashi Shuuzou

Shizuku’s grandfather. The current head of Yaegashi-style. Other than sword he specialize in kusarigama(sickle and chain). He is generally going in offense.

- Yaegashi Koichi

Shizuku’s father. A good looking middle aged man with scar on his cheek. He is generally going in offense.

- Yaegashi Kirino

Shizuku’s mother. She made her entrance gracefully from the ceiling. She will serve poison with elegant smile.

- The disciples of Yaegashi dojo

They are ninja in general.

- Hatayama Akiko

Aiko’s mother. She has guessed the general picture.

- Hatayama family

Aiko’s two parents and the grandparents from the mother side. The father was adopted into the family. Fruit farmer.

The family is making a killing with Aiko Power.

- Old man Yamashiro

102 years old. He is able to reproduce any kind of carving using cotton candy.

- Furukawa Taichi

Aiko’s childhood friend. He survives even after approaching Aiko.

- Umeko-san

The helper in Taniguchi house. Her selling point is hearty consolation. Created the mood-maker Suzu. (Her name overlapped with Sugahara Taeko, so author nonchalantly revised it)

- Karashio

Sakagami family’s dog. Won’t lose in feeling even against werewolf. His heart is always that of a wolf.

- Sakagami family

Consist of Ryutaro and two parents and an elder sister. The mother was frightened and then mostly fainted. The father

was a hero who could face a werewolf with a bat. The big sis lost strength in her waist and mostly peed herself.

- Old man Fuji

The neighbor of Sakagami family. Love fire extinguisher greatly.

- Amanogawa family

Consist of Kouki and two parents and a little sister. The father was frightened and then mostly fainted. The mother was a hero who could face a werewolf with a kitchen knife. The little sister is a soul sister. Also she relatively peed herself.

<Myuu Arc>

- Myuu

Able to summon various kind of existences, and also with a unique innate characteristic to be liked as well. Inherited every fighting style and equipment from demon king family and is evolving toward superhuman rapidly.

※Possession in After Story

1. Donnerr & Schlaagg
2. This is a Weapon
3. Don’t Touch, Pervert

4. Piko-Piko Hammer
5. Muuramasa – Kotetsuu
6. Yue-oneechan’s Love
7. Tomcat-tan, Franka-tan,

※Friends

1. The “something” inside Demon Rangeer (seven people)
2. *Ia! Ia!*—
3. The “something” living at the river inside Japan’s mountain
4. “That guy” who was once almost get killed by the demon king, lurking inside the western sea region in Tortus

- Natalia

The daughter of a high government official of USA. Nicknamed Nac-chan. Myuu devotee. Can launch golden right straight limited to people who harbor affection to Myuu.

- Emil

Kidnapped blond haired young boy. As the result of boy meets girl, he barely thrust aside Hajime’s memory manipulation and is trying to approach Myuu. In general he ate Natalia’s golden right straight.

- The kidnapped children of USA government official or army officer.

All of them are Myuu devotee.

- Artold Schwarnenegger

USA President. So devoted to Valkyrie to the degree he got struck with the slap in the face from the first lady. The president of Valkyrie fanclub. Former commando.

- Everyone in secret service

George, Chris, Bacchus, Keyes, Neil, Hank. Devoted to Valkyrie. The upper echelons of Valkyrie fanclub with single digit membership number. Recently their enjoyment is having Valkyrie discussion with president.

- Armando Aston

Demon king worshipper. Tentatively a general in the army.

<Lord Abyssgate arc>

- Lord Abyssgate (Endo Kousuke)

The scout of former hero party. Possess innate “thin shadow” that was unrelated with the another world summoning. Casually the mankind’s strongest class.

After the decisive battle, he publicly get a rabbit eared big sis Rana (Inferina) Hauria as lover. His abyss mode was deepening mostly because of her fault.

After returning home, he is working hard aiming to enroll into a medical university in order to bring modern medical technology into Tortus……but, he is blazing through the underworld of earth because of demon king-sama’s directive.

Can brag as the demon king’s right hand despite acting relatively reluctant.

- Emily Grant

Blonde side tail + almond shaped eyes + peeing girl + charis○ guard + genius lab coat girl + easy heroine + tsukkomi attribute + loyal dog attribute, etc.

The young genius girl who is increasing her attributes day by day. Unintentionally created Berserk that change people into monster and got dragged into an incident that originated from Berserk.

Saved by “Kousuke”, she easily fell for him.

Kousuke’s second wife (?). Her newest objective is to cure Kousuke’s abyss mode and Hauria’s chuunibyou.

Although, the more she work hard, the more her popularity among Hauria clan as mascot increase.

- Vanessa Paradis

Nicknamed Danessa. She is a skilled agent of security bureau, but an otaku to a degree that she remodeled her own residence chuunibyou style. She is mostly pouring

chaos to her surrounding with her serious attitude. The self-proclaimed third wife of “Kousuke-san”.

- Reginald Down

A professor at Percival University. He had raised a lot of excellent student until now that he was called as superior educator. Emily was also one of those students and he was also her benefactor.

However, he was deeply fixated with “great work that can leave behind history” and betrayed Emily.

- Hendricks Wesk

A student of professor Down. The “senior” that Emily trusted the most. When Berserk rampaged inside the research building, he become bait to protect Lizzie and Emily and unable to go back home.

- Lizzie Aston

A student of professor Down. Someone with tsundere trait and held romantic feeling toward Hendricks, a “big sister” that Emily trusted the most. In Berserk incident, just like Hendricks she became bait in order to save Emily who was like an important little sister to her and she was temporarily missing then.

- Rod Hurst

A student of professor Down. A mood maker with light hearted attitude. His relationship with Dennis was like a quarreling friend and it became a common sight in Down classroom how the tow of them were quarreling with each other. He died leaving behind the last words “Live on properly okay” to Emily.

- Dennis Litton

A student of Down classroom. An intellectual and the most serious person. The quarreling friend of Rod. When he was changing into Berserker, he cut off his own life.

- Jessica Cubit

A student of Down classroom. A beautiful woman who can put her effort more into playing rather than research. She remodeled the doctor coat Emily was always wearing to make her have more interest to fashion. Emily’s one other “big sister”. She was killed by Sam who was infected with Berserk.

- Sam Redman

A student of Down classroom. A man with big built. After he got infected with Berserk, he died.

- Milo Ieny

A student of Down classroom. The one among Down classroom’s student who died the very first at the Berserk incident.

- Kimberly Warren

An agent of security bureau. An expert at army hand-to-hand fighting. He was Vanessa’s coworker, but he betrayed his comrades in order to earn money with Berserk and aimed at Emily. He got hit with Vanessa’s punch to the face (strengthened by Lord Abyss version) and got injured to the level where his face collapsed, after that her was infected with Berserk as the demonstration of the mastermind and died.

- Sharon Magdanese

The chief of Britain national security bureau. A woman past her middle aged. A coolheaded pragmatist that possessed both good and evil within. An iron woman who is married with Britain, a living legend who is even called as the cornerstone of Britain’s protection.

However, in front of Myuu she is “Sharon-obaachan”, She is terribly dere then.

- Allen Parker

An agent of security bureau’s not existing “JD Agency”. His code name is K. A virtuoso hitman. Normally he is a joker, an uninteresting analyst who is always complaining. He is

always looking for encounter with girl. Recently it seems he is a getting a bit of good vibe from “Aby-san’s girl friend” that he got acquainted with in a certain case.

- Bernard Pace

The commander of security bureau’s special assault force. He raised death flag as easy as breathing, however, for some reason he was helped with good luck, a person who is loved by the death god and goddess of fortune at the same time. He called Kousuke as Aby friendlily. He have a six year old daughter.

- Kaysis Wentworks

The director of Gamma Pharmacy, and a top brass of a secret cult society Hydra. One of the masterminds of Berserk incident. In order to remake Hydra from a cult society into an influential society that exert its influence to the surface world from the dark and then stand on the society’s top, he caused the Berserk incident. A type of person who can call himself name like Odin and so on.

Currently he is a splendid villager.

- Jefferson Allgrey

The leader of secret cult society Hydra. At the surface he is the real estate king of Britain and an authority at political world.

Currently a splendid villager. His popularity is rising drastically and someday might become the prime minister……

- Weiss Ingram

A mercenary group leader who would do anything as long as she received money. Hired by Kaysis, he worked as the one in charge of the research place’s security and the guard of professor Down. A tough soldier who once survived tangling with an agent of “JD Agency”. Cornered by Allen, he injected a refined version Berserk into himself and died later.

- Rana (Inferina) Hauria

A rabbit eared big sis from a clan of rabbit people tribe, Hauria clan (big breasted beauty). Moved by the fierce approach of Kousuke, she tried forcing unreasonable demands that would make even princess Kaguya went pale. And yet Kousuke cleared them all and she accepted him as lover. Although, she is planning for Kousuke who is the right hand of the demon king to have seven wives. She is calling Kousuke “Kou-kun”.

Every single time Kousuke acted rash, reckless, and impulsive, generally it was this girl’s fault.

- Woody

A former unlawful employee of Gamma Pharmacy who was working the dirty work. He was awakened to salmon

sandwich because of Kousuke. Currently he is managing a restaurant that specialized in salmon sandwich, and also acting as information broker by making use of his connection with the underworld.

- Samantha

The former employee of the restaurant where Woody awakened to salmon sandwich. She was fired because she was loudly declaring that 「Our salmon sandwich isn't that delicious」. When she came into Woody's restaurant by chance, she was awakened to salmon sandwich. Currently she is doing missionary work for salmon sandwich at Woody's place.

<Liliana arc>

- Heliotrope

Liliana's exclusive attendant. Actually she was selected by demon king-sama and then given special training Hauria style, now she was the leader of the combat maid group—Fleur Knights. She could take on one battalion of knight order right from the front alone.

There was also a princess who is envious of the relationship between the demon king and her because they are more like a master and servant than the princess with her. Her real name was sealed.

- Nakano Shinji

The representative of a security company that specialized in celebrity. God of the otagei(fans cheering at concert) world. His video of doing otagei with stylish move and black suits was creating a stir, making him more of a celebrity than the real celebrity. His dream was having a shotgun wedding with and idol someday but there was still no sign of it coming true.

- Saitou Yoshiki

The number two of a security company that specialized in celebrity. Similarly he is also a god of otagei world. Recently he was attempting the expansion of the business thinking 「If Japan is no good it's foreign idol then」.

- Davis-kun

The friend of Liliana's heart.

- Sandra Winchester

The woman who is serving as Liliana's secretary in earth. She is actually Heliotrope-san in disguise.

<Tio arc>

- Nagumo family's grandfather and grandmother

Habitual repeater of out of body experience.

- Roze Phiris Avenst

The queen of dragon country Avenst. Her country was stolen when she was a baby, since then she was doing air pirate imitation at the country above ship Avenst. She retook her country with the cooperation of Hajime and Tio, and now she is waiting for the visit of Hajime and Tio along with battleship Avenst that was turned into an extravagant passenger boat. A lecher with quiet exterior.

- Kuwaibel

A silver little dragon. The last king of the dragon race and Roze’s partner. Can manipulate extreme light. Idolize Tio as mother.

- Sabastian Orto

Roze’s loyal butler. Formerly a royal guard but his current retired self was stronger than before. Can dodge bullet normally. Or deflected it with a tray. Can overwhelm a fully armed squad with only tableware and martial art.

- Olga Crow

The captain of Roze’s royal guard. The direct pupil of Sabas. A beauty with semi long blond hair.

- Jean Crow

The vice captain of Roze’s royal guard. Olga’s little brother. Stronger than Olga in bare handed fight.

- Cline

Avenst’s captain.

- Cutter Gilton

The captain of flying warship Rozeria.

- Oaks

The captain of flying warship Averia.

- Gregor Cluzet Qwailent

The king of sky divine country Qwailent. A former air pirate and the man that usurped dragon kingdom Avenst. Went poof from breath attack.

- Silas

The high official of sky divine country Qwailent. He was entrusted to take charge during Gregor’s absence, but Sabas

talked to him and he cooperated gladly. It seemed that later on he got terribly scared of the living being called a butler.

- Higgs

Former sky battlecraft pilot of sky divine country Qwailent. A trauma was planted thoroughly into him by the demon king-sama, and in the end he was tortured by his comrade under the name of questioning, he went full circle and became an amazingly courageous sky battlecraft pilot. Currently a pious dragon believer. Although for some reason dragons wouldn’t get near him because he felt unpleasant.

- Helmut

One of the king dragons that guarded the dragon kingdom in the past. The big brother of Kuwaibel. He despaired with human and lost his sanity from losing his family, turning into an evil dragon. He filled the world with corrosion rain and polluted the ground. He picked a fight with the demon king and went poof.

- Serio/Pike/Weber/Raymond/Olson

Royal guard members. Absurdly gutsy.

<Shizuku arc>

- Kohai-chan(Junior-chan)

If you saw one in the open, that means there are thirty that you haven’t seen. One of the step sisters(soul sisters). Have innate characteristics of meeting trouble. A mysterious girl who can have adventure in the modern day Japan in the same level like adventurer in Tortus. Twintail. Raise the flag of revolt to overthrow Hajime, but generally she got tormented affectionately where in the end she will run away while spouting out parting threat.

The regrettableness of her behavior is like Shia in the past, unexpectedly Hajime and others are receiving her in favorable light. At the root she is a diligent and earnest girl, but she is slipping bit by bit.

- Fudou Akari

A female kendo athlete at the same grade with Shizuku. She had inferiority complex with her appearance that was like Fudou Myouou, so she staked her life in kendo. Because of that, she harbored jealousy to Shizuku who stopped doing kendo after returning, become Lord Vad○, and for some reason received Chrystabel’s evilish remodeling and became a beautiful girl.

- Chrystabel

The manly woman haunting the clothes shop at Brook city. She shaves Hajime’s SAN status just by existing. Can deflect bullet with her muscle if it’s just stun bullet. Ask for a favor from Yue and others secretly from Hajime in the attempt to expand to earth.

According to Hajime, it’s not an expansion but “erosion”.

In front of the manly women, Hajime job changed from demon king into hero.

<Kouki arc>

- Amanogawa Kouki

Hero with many worries. He was awakened to <Limit Break – War Demon> that enable him to continue fighting until his body is smashed apart, and <Serene Mind> that make his sword attack very hard to be perceived, he achieved a growth that it won’t even be an exaggeration to say that as a swordsman he is in the furthest level one can reach.

Mostly he is getting summoned.

- Female knight

Formerly a member of royal guard knight order attached to Liliana. She is too much of Shizuku’s soul sister and got demoted as normal knight. After the decisive battle, she followed Kouki in his extermination of the monsters from Holy Precinct as observer and helper. She is fundamentally following Shizuku supremacy doctrine, so she won’t have motivation in matter that isn’t related to Shizuku, but she will be overdoing it in matter that is related. Her specialty is in plainly unpleasant prank magic using her darkness element magic. Once she schemed to give emperor Gahard

athlete’s foot before she was sent flying with a punch by her captain.

- Sona Masaka

The elusive daughter of an inn. This girl—is watching!

- Moana de Shelt Synclea

The queen of Synclea kingdom. A beauty with white hair that lost its color and brown skin. Older than Kouki. She is endeavoring to use male way of speaking to be more like a queen, but her way of speaking will return to her original feminine way when something unexpected happen. She is doting on her little sister and add “tan” when calling her name, has a regrettable side on her with how she is misunderstanding that she is liked by animal when she is actually hated from how she is too affectionate to the animal. Her personality is fundamentally gentle while also valorous.

- Koone de Shelt Synclea

Moana’s little sister. Blonde twintail and brown skin, a little girl with black heart (eight years old). She is doting on her big sister, to the degree that she declare her big sister is more important than the world. She is skilled in reading the direction of the other party’s thinking and perception, she often draw near unnoticed without any presence and surprised people. If there is uproar happening in the capital, generally it’s this girl’s fault.

After Moana abdicated, she is currently the queen of Synclea kingdom.

- Anneal

The attendant of the royal sisters. She is the equal of chief caster Linden in regard of the use of precise blessing art.

- Spenser Haim

The captain of the royal guard. Somewhat has the attribute of idiot parent toward the royal sisters. However, his eyes will become like dead fish when he heard about Koone’s mischief.

- Spike Haim

Spenser’s adopted child. In his twenty he is already the equal of Spenser if it’s just in sword art, a young genius swordsman. The leader of Koone’s guard squad. His attitude is too straight that he often get misunderstood by woman. Has experience getting threatened by Lilin □I’ll chop up your ball y’know□.

- Lilin Stohl

A soldier of the royal guard. A talented woman that possess the strength in the level of the captain in her sixteen. A beautiful girl with long chestnut colored twintail as her characteristic. Her speech is polite but the majority of her

consciousness is geared toward battle, she will drop mind blowing words in respond toward smooth talking against her.

- Linden Stohl

The chief of blessing art user group. The father of Lilin.

- Donar Quin

The leader of the soldier force.

- Bruitt Cube

The head of civil official. A tottering gramps who looks like he will fall to pieces anytime soon. But he has dignity that even Moana and Koone cannot go against.

- Rothko Arquette

The feudal lord of Arquette territory. His wife is Syla. His son is Rondo (ten years old). A user of dogeza complete with splendid shout that resembled Hajime in the past. It seems that his son Rondo is conscious of Koone.

- Ivana Borgia

The vigilance corps leader of Arquette territory.

- The spouses of fruit shop

A well-known store of a fruit named kukuri. Actually when the capital was at war, the two were people of valor that exterminated a platoon of <Dark Beings>.

- Dark King

The strongest <Dark Being> in history. His body was clad with full plate armor made from miasma, possessed abilities like teleportation, erosion, weapon creation within his territory, subordinate beast creation, generating giant, and so on.

- Niebla

A black wolf species <Dark Being>. The first opponent that Kouki fought.

- Ragal

A scaled dragon species <Dark Being>. The first opponent with will that Kouki killed.

<Others>

- Inaba

The kick rabbit that possess the nickname Leg Assault King. He originated from the first floor of the abyss, but by accidentally drinking the god water that Hajime accidentally spilled, he obtained thinking ability and strength, an irregular monster.

After the decisive battle he went out in a training journey. He is a battle junkie. There is almost no monster in Tortus that is his match anymore. A friend with Lee-san.

The two of them were chasing after a mysterious object that appeared in the western sea region, after that, they went missing.

For some reason he talk in Kansai dialogue.

- Leeman

Nicknamed Lee-san. As “the friend of the godslaying demon king”, he is acknowledged by human. Presented by the demon king with Triaina (v.2), a small submarine that can be used underwater or in the air, using that he was protecting the west sea.

He displayed his chivalrous spirit and went in a journey with Inaba. There is no guarantee that he will be able to go home again.

- Hamada Shouta

A freelancer journalist. Yuuka’s fan. The originator that made Yuuka into magical girl. Since then, each time he went to the restaurant it was only him who was served coldly, but he was a person that is painful to look at with how he misunderstood 「Perhaps she has feeling for me!?」 instead.

- His majesty Randell

The boy king who faced much hardship, this time he fell in love with Myuu. Inside his heart was the thinking ‘One day I’ll punch that guy flying!’, and he would yell it out loud when the person wasn’t nearby.

- Vice principal

The wig who is tsundere toward Aiko.

Arifureta Chapter 282

Arifureta After II Mundane School Life ②

AN: Warning: This isn’t the resumption of the update.

It’s the advertisement for the release of the comic’s second volume (25 September)!

Although, I’ll feel guilty if it’s just advertisement, so I wrote this in a real rush, a brief chapter without any particular content but,

Allow me to post it.

「Everyone! It’s sudden, but there will be a school trip tomorrow! All of you must be still unprepared! Let’s hurry with it through this day!」

The morning homeroom. The class’s homeroom teacher——Hatayama Aiko-sensei was arriving with brisk footsteps that sounded unusually restless. The first voice she said was that sentence that was declared energetically with forced momentum while her face was pale and twitching.

Naturally, an overwhelming silence ruled over the morning classroom.

Even Hajime who was commonly acknowledged as the class’s demon king was looking at Aiko with his mouth gaping open. It was extremely unusual for him to look like that.

Shizuku who seemed to guess the situation instantly covered her eyes with her hand and looked up to the ceiling. But, as the common sense person of the class, her status was that of a proper leader, different from Hajime. She immediately raised her hand and took the stance of 「I have question!」.

Aiko jumped.

「……Yaegashi-san.」

「Yes, sensei. Please spit out everything without glossing over anything.」

It wasn’t a question, but an interrogation. Aiko was shivering all over like a small animal.

While the fixed gaze of the whole class was directed at her, Aiko averted her gaze with a complicated look before explaining while staring at the stain in the classroom’s corner.

According to her, it was somehow overlooked, but the school trip was already finished being carried out.

According to her, due to the disappearance case, it was only this class that didn’t have the trip.

According to her, the school officials were going ‘If the fact that it’s only “them” that haven’t gone is leaked to the mass media, won’t the school get criticized again? Dealing with that is seriously a pain in the ass y’know. That’s why see,

let’s adjust the schedule in this occasion and shove in “their” school trip in between’, and so this event was ordered from the above.

According to Aiko, the order had been given since two months ago.

According to her, there were various things and so she completely forgot to tell them about it and so sorry, seriously sorry!

Aiko-chan-sensei did a beautiful prostration above the teacher desk.

「This is the first time I saw a teacher prostrating on the teacher’s desk.」

「In the first place for a teacher to prostrate is already unusual though.」

Tamai Atsushi and Nimura Akito spoke with twitching face.

「We, well, we know that Ai-chan is pretty busy, because the brunt of the “returnee uproar” is directed at her, right?」

「Ye, yep. That’s why raise your face already, Ai-chan-sensei.」

After Sonobe Yuuka spoke consolingly with her face was also twitching as expected, Sugawara Taeko also expressed her agreement in hurry.

「Getting on top of the desk like that, she is strangely haughty huh.」

「Hajime-kun, just shut up for a bit!」

Kaori said 「Don’t corner Ai-chan even more than this」 to warn Hajime for his statement.

For the time being, in order to do something about Ai-chan who was in the middle of prostrating, the students, mainly the girls did their best to drag her down from the desk before the whole class comforted Aiko whose movement was jittery from her sense of responsibility while saying 「For a working adult to forget getting in touch……」.

Certainly it was really a failure in her part, but all of them knew about her daily activity to protect them the “returnee”, her getting treated like a tumor among the teachers, and how recently she was troubled because the vice principal who was heavily suspected of wearing wig was acting like tsundere toward her.

And so, seeing how the person herself was extremely remorseful, and how there would be no problem at all about a matter of this degree if they dealt with it, the whole class was immersing themselves in recovering Aiko’s emotional state.

「……Hajime. Give Aiko some comfort.」

Yue displayed her first wife power. She understood that Hajime’s words would affect Aiko the most. Hajime smiled wryly while saying 「Can’t be helped」, and then he went toward Aiko.

‘It’s the husband’s arrival!’ The classmates parted to left and right like a sea in front of Moses.

「Aiko.」

「Uu, I’m a useless teacher. A useless female teacher. It’s like I’m a completely useless female teacher. In short Madao」

(TN: Completely useless female teacher = da**me da**me **o**nna kyoushi = madao. Anyone watched Gintama?)

While thinking that she was seriously ill, Hajime spoke with a gentle voice.

「Is there no guidebook or something for the school trip? We know nothing at all about it here.」

「Hah!? Guidebook!? I forgot it in the staff room! I'll go bring it here!」

The truth was that there wasn't really much time, so the school trip would follow the same arrangement with this year's school trip and the guidebook for the trip was prepared already but……

It seemed that Aiko whose head was full with apologizing splendidly forgot it. She was falling deeper and deeper into a vicious circle.

Everyone saw off Aiko rushing out with *patapatapata* footsteps sound.

「For the time being, she had at least recovered to the degree where she can run around.」

「……Hajime. That's not it.」

Hajime-san was hit with tsukkomi retort from Yue. Hajime shrugged his shoulders saying that he got it, and then he went out of the classroom alone in order to help Aiko carrying the guidebook.

The next day.

The class of Hajime and co that barely managed to finish their preparation assembled at the gathering place——at the parking lot nearby the station from early morning.

The bus had already arrived. Nakano Shinji and Saitou Yoshiki were talking with the bus guide. The bus guide was really young and looked lovely. Though her expression was slightly twitching.

Actually, her face was twitching wasn't just because she was getting hit on since the morning.

There was one main cause. The job of being the guide of "those returnees" was pushed on her just "because she was the youngest". Inside her heart she was filled with trepidation. For the time being the bus driver was pushing down his hat deeply that it was covering his eyes.

'You don't want to meet my eyes that much……?' The gaze of the rookie bus guide stabbed into the driver.

「Onee-sama-, I beg you, please-, be safe! If something happen, by all means please use that man as decoy while you escape!」

「That sounded like this is our last meeting in this life, so can you stop that? It's really embarrassing.」

The one who arrived at the gathering spot earlier than anyone in the class, kouhai-chan (TN: Kouhao=junior). Saying 「This might be our last meeting」, the girl buried her face into Shizuku's chest and rubbed her face there.

For the time being, Hajime caught the back of kouhai-chan's head with iron claw. (TN: Not real iron claw, I guess it's like wrestling technique where you grab the head of someone like you're going to crush apple with your grip)

「So, you come out huh, senpai! Are you satisfied tearing me apart from Onee-sama!? Are you satisfied!?」

「Your tension is high right from the morning huh, oi.」

Hajime yawned while grinding his fingers on the forehead of kouhai-chan who was causing a ruckus. It seemed that the sight of kouhai-chan writhing in agony 「Aa~~h, my head-, my head feels like it's going to spliiit」 didn't even enter his eyes.

「As I thought, Onee-sama must not be let to go to a school trip with this kind of man! At the very least, I have to come along to!」

Turning what she spoke out into action was kouhai-chan quality. Annoyed, Hajime fixed a mouth gag on kouhai-chan and then he fastened her on the nearby electric pole with wire.

And then, he took out a signboard from who know where and gently hung it down on the neck of kouhai-chan who was struggling while going 「Muu~h, muu~!」. The signboard was written with 「In the middle of morning training. Please don't talk to me.」.

Even though there was a high school girl getting tied on an electric people, yet there wasn't anyone who said anything, far from that, everyone was watching it with a warm gaze. This situation——the SAN value of the rookie bus guide decreased until 90.

「Sa, say, say-. Hatayama-sensei? That girl is……」

「Err, err, after this, when we depart……it’s going to be this at there, after that……」

The rookie bus guide was quietly distancing herself from the small animal teacher who was confirming the trip program with extreme desperation for some reason. It’s no good to bother her isn’t it, sorry.

「A-ha-ha, everything is all right you know, bus guide-san! That girl, she will manage somehow against a mere wire after all.」

「This happens every time! Rather than something like that, is it okay for me to call you by your first name?」

Shinji and Yoshiki were shadowing the bus guide around. The rookie bus guide’s expression turned troubled. Calling the sight of a girl tied on an electric pole with wire as something that “happened every time”……inside her heart, she yelled 「Is this, the returnee quality!?」.

――Rookie bus guide’s SAN value　87

Then, at that time, a childish voice suddenly resounded from the traffic circle.

「Papaaa~~!」

「! Myuu! Even Remia too. What is it you two?」

The girl running *sutetetete-* with rapid footsteps――Myuu leaped into Hajime’s arms without pause. From behind her, Remia was going 「My my」 while walking near with her usual lax and gentle atmosphere.

For the time being, the rookie bus guide opened her eyes wide. 「Papa-!? Just now, that girl said papa!? And then, no one here is surprised by that!?」 She screamed inside her heart.

The rookie bus guide knew. At the morning, the young man who was called papa was coming to this place with his hand intimately holding the hand of an extraordinarily blond haired girl. There was also one other girl who was also beautiful, hopping up and down closely around the two at that time like a rabbit, but no matter how anyone looked at it, at the very least the two of them were a pair of lovers.

And yet, papa……

The imagination of the indulgent livelihood of a boy high school student emerged inside her head, her eyes couldn't move away anymore. It was a real soap opera right from the early morning! The rookie bus guide loved soap opera, to the degree she would video tape it to watch later!

「I'm sorry dear. Myuu won't listen to me, saying that she don't want to see you off from home as expected, but from your departure instead……」

「I see……. Well, it's fine. Thanks for coming her to see us off, Myuu. Look forward for souvenir later.」

「Nmyu!」

Myuu who happily hugged tightly, and Hajime whose expression loosened up.

And then, the classmates who were watching over them warmly……

(Why, is there no one who question this situation!? Shouldn’t this be a carnage!? No, wait, that child is around five, six years old no matter how you cut it. That means, that boy when in elementary school, with that beautiful woman he was……sensei-, Hatayama-sensei! An outrageous situation, is right before us right now! Isn’t there something you have to do as an educator!?)

「Fufuh, Myuu-chan is really liking Haji——cough-, Nagumo-kun isn’t it?」

Nonchalantly~.

Seeing no reaction that she was expecting, the rookie bus guide whispered 「Damn itt!」 with a small voice. Or rather, just now, this teacher, she almost called a student with his name before she corrected herself hastily……

The soap opera lover rookie bus guide eye- activate!

……

……

……

No way, this was no way. It was something with that feel……. Looking carefully, the other female students were also the same. This class, the human relationship in it was overly bad news! But, the worst thing was, the classmates who were accepting it as though it was natural!

Whyyyyy!? Just what’s going on!?

——Rookie bus guide’s SAN value　83

「The expression of Onee-sama when staring at senpai who is holding a small kid, Priceless-!」

「Chih. The binding almost come off already. ――Here, extra」

Kouha-chan was almost slipping off from the electric pole wire with slipper movement. A “Bola” that was taken out from out of nowhere flew. It whirled round and round and round and round from the weight’s centrifugal force.

――Rookie bus guide’s SAN value　80

「……You. Isn’t it about the time soon?」

The driver with his hat deeply lowered over his eyes as though to say 「I absolutely cannot see anything right from the beginning yeah?」 was informing the rookie bus guide in a whisper.

「Tha, that’s right! Hatayama-sensei! It’s any time now! Please start with the roll-call!」

「Ah, yes. Right away!」

When the rookie bus driver urged looking somewhat in desperation, the small animal teacher started to move while darting about like a small animal.

Before long, everyone boarded inside the bus.

On the seat at the farthest back. Straight at the end of the pathway, Hajime-san occupied the position in the middle immovably.

A thought entered the rookie bus guide’s mind for some reason.

‘He looked like a demon king sitting on the throne’, she thought.

And then, ahead of the pathway, right in front of him was herself……

——Rookie bus guide’s SAN value　73

The bus started running without any problem.

Outside the window, Myuu was waving around her hand energetically inside Remia’s embrace. All the classmates were waving back.

Kouhai-chan slipped out from her restraint and came running in pursuit. The scream of 「OO~~NEEE~~SAMAA~~~!」 was ignored by all the classmates. And then as though she was purposefully aiming for the cliché, after chasing for five hundred meter, kouhai-chan performed asphalt dive face first hard and her figure vanished far behind.

The rookie bus guide told herself that she didn’t see anything. She performed her greeting and self-introduction. She especially emphasized the name of the driver. It felt like the steering wheel handling was out of control for a moment, but surely it was just her imagination.

Shinji and Yoshiki got carried away and they called the rookie bus guide with her first name. The scolding of Aiko-sensei came flying at them there.

While all those were happening, 「Ah」 the voice of one boy student resounded. The voice’s owner was Nomura Kentarou. He was staring fixedly at the neighboring seat, and then

「Ai-chan-sensei! Kousuke isn’t here!」

□What did you sayyy!?□

Rustle rustle. □Kousuke? Ah, Endo-kun?□□Eh? Endo isn’t here?□□Or rather, was he at the gathering place?□□Feels like I saw him, or perhaps not……□□That Aby, Kousuke, maybe he is actually around here?□□Oi oi, that lord, is he left behind…..as expected ain’t it?□ The indifferent voices of the students resounded.

□Eh? Eh? Err, Hatayama-sensei, could it be there is one student that is not here?□

□Please wait a second. Everyoo~~ne! Look around you very carefully! By any chance, is Endo-kun at the corner or somewhere? Or perhaps, he is right beside you but you just don’t notice him! First let’s double check for sure!□

——Rookie bus guide’s SAN value　71

All the classmates simultaneously started observing inside the bus attentively.

The conclusion altogether was □He isn’t heree~~!□

□Nomura-kun! Fine play you did there! How amazing to be able to be the first one noticing about the nonexistence of that Endo-kun! Someone, contact Endo-kun——□

□Sensei, that guy is right above.□

□Eh?□

Hearing Hajime’s words, everyone looked up while saying □Above?□. They were thinking that perhaps Kousuke was clinging at the ceiling. But, they couldn’t see any ninja clinging on the ceiling above.

「Above the bus, above. It’s this guy we are talking about, perhaps, the bus departed while he went to toilet or something, and with no other option he jumped on the roof, something like that?」

「That Kousuke, just what the hell he is doing?」

The rookie bus guide couldn’t follow the content of the conversation.

Kentarou sent a glance at her while opening the window near his seat.

There,

「Ah, the window opened?」

A student smoothly entered inside the bus from the rooftop along with such muttering——Endo Kousuke.

「Oh man, Kentarou. Thanks. I was thinking about throwing in clone to tell someone, but with the guide here I thought that will cause commotion, so I waited for someone to open the window.」

「What are you gonna do if no one opened the window huh?」

「Until we stop at the rest area, I was going to spend time above……. When you get used to it, it was unexpectedly pleasant up there.」

The one normally taking his seat beside Kentarou and started a conversation normally, was a student who was on the rooftop of a running bus all this time.

And then, a retort of 「You can just phone someone to open the window right?」, and the shocked voice 「Ah」 that

Kousuke leaked, and the roar of laughter □As expected from Abyssgate!□□The lord blundered right from the beginning huuh!□ toward such Kousuke came from the students.

——Rookie bus guide’s SAN value　68

Inside the bus that was wrapped with delightfully bright atmosphere that was fitting for the start of a school trip, the rookie bus guide thought.

‘I wonder, in the end will I be able to I hold on my sanity until the last……?’ She thought.

The tribulation of the rookie bus guide continued……?

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I uploaded the activity report.

It’s about the release of the comic’s second volume.

Thanks to everyone paying the first volume from your pocket, the second volume could be released without incident.

Really, thank you very much!

Please take care of Arifureta from here on too.

Also, I mentioned it at my activity report too but, I’m thinking that I want to restart my update at 21 October.

I’m undecided about the content that I’ll write, but for the time being, before I write a long extra story, I want to write several short stories first.

It will please me if you all can enjoy it together with me again.

Please take care of me from here on too!

Arifureta Chapter 283

Arifureta After II Mundane School Life ③

AN: I have returned.

From here on I will be updating Arifureta bit by bit basically like usual at 6 PM Saturday.

It’s a story that is being done as though for Shirakome to have fun, but I’ll be happy if I can have fun with you readers again.

About the story of school trip at the previous chapter, unexpectedly there were a lot of voices asking to continue it, so I tried to write a bit.

Although, it’s not a story that can continue for that much so, (or rather, I don’t even think about the chronological order and so on of this story)

It feels somewhat half-hearted (sweat)

Maybe I’ll write it properly again somewhere.

Also, the Cthulhu term and rule that appear here are different from the actual thing. I prioritize the mood. I’m sorry.

It turned out long so I split the chapter.

After this I'll upload one more chapter at 7 PM.

The school trip that they were only told just yesterday.

Their destination was Kyoto. The travel of several hours using bus ended in no time at all.

The rookie bus guide had taken out all the plans for killing time mid journey she had prepared and her cheek muscles were starting to cramp from making twitching smile too much. She was relieved from the bottom of her heart that they finally arrived.

It helped that the students had good mood. The students this day were relatively cold, they wouldn't react even when she prepared things like karaoke or quiz, but the students here (especially Nakano and Saitou) were really hyped up.

Although they frequently showed speech and conduct that were far removed from common sense, it was relatively endurable if she persisted in seeing and hearing nothing. The bus driver who was similarly seeing and hearing nothing casually giving her follow-up(mental analysis) was also a great help.

And so, even after watching the party trick (?) of the students that began from some time ago, even when currently right beside her there was a female student juggling countless knifes in a level that the video of it could be uploaded to the "World Shocking Video" even while looking like she felt it troublesome, the rookie bus guide was still enduring!

——Rookie bus guide's SAN value 50

「Sonobe~. You're finished with just ten? You can do more aren't you?」

Tamai Atsushi said such thing with a disappointed look. It seemed that he wasn't satisfied with the juggling of ten knifes.

The rookie bus guide thought.

In the first place it's already out for a student to carry knife! Sensei! That child is carrying knife see! What's more it's a lot! Why are you making face as though it's normal!?

「Well, if I get serious then I can do around thirty, but the ceiling is low so that's impossible.」

「Sonobe-san, that's amazing~」

Sensei! What do you mean 「That's amazing~」!? What's with that carefree expression! Sure it looks cute, sheesh. But! Your cute student look like she is going to spend a sharp cutting life you know!? Please give her your guidance!

The rookie bus guide acted the straight man in her heart and stared at Aiko. Reach, this unsaid feeling!

「??」

Aiko tilted her head in puzzlement. A beat later she smiled carefreely for some reason.

The rookie bus guide whispered 「Damn iiit」. It didn't reach. But she was cute――how should she deal with this helpless feeling……

But, there a small whisper entered the rookie bus guide's ear.

「Ten more minutes……」

「Ah, yes.」

The bus driver was wearing his hat so low over his eyes that it was unclear how he could see the front, giving other nothing but anxiety seeing it. According to such bus driver, it seemed that they would reach the first sight-seeing area for today in ten more minutes.

The rookie bus guide cleared her throat with a cough and pulled herself together, then she urged Yuuka who had moved to juggle playing cards without her noticing to return to her seat.

The cards weren’t only juggled up, they also flew horizontally, furthermore they returned back like boomerang. Although the rookie bus guide was entranced by the artistic juggling of dozens of card moving like that, but she forced herself to do her job properly.

Yuuka returned to her seat while getting applause from everyone. Her cheeks were slightly red from feeling a bit embarrassed.

「Sonobe-san, thank you very much. Everyone else also have amazing skill. This is the first time for me seeing students this amazing.」

She smiled sweetly. Inside her heart she was trembling with fear, thunderstruck, and on the verge of madness, but as a bus guide she couldn’t forget to smile. Muscular pain of facial muscles? Bring it on!

Saitou and Nakano reacted.

「Please say that “This is the first time for me” one more time!」

「Put your heart into it! Please say it while looking a bit embarrassed!」

Truly a straight sexual harassment. The rookie bus guide’s expression was screaming.

Anyway, card abruptly stabbed into the forehead of the two. 「My head, my heaaad-」 The two idiots were writhing around on their seat.

「Chih, it got dirty.」

Blood stuck to the card. Yuuka treated it like a dirty thing just as she said by wiping the card on Saitou’s cloth. Her eyes were completely cold that if anyone faint of heart saw her they would become weak in the knees. Though all the other female students also had the same eyes.

「Guide-san, sorry. The girls in the class will firmly punish these two idiots.」

「Be, before that, blood is going spu~rt, spu~~rt out from their forehead like fountain though-. The hospital-」

It was a sudden bloodshed. The rookie bus guide was flustered.

There Kaori sighed while coming their way. Her gaze was unusually cold. She slapped a large band-aid on the two’s forehead. 「Higii!?」 Saitou and Nakano screamed in harmony. *twitch twitch*.

「Geez, you shouldn’t dirty the bus with blood! Nakano-kun and Saitou-kun is also playing too much!」

Seeing Kaori giving a scolding, the rookie bus guide had a thought. 「No, that's not the problem!」 She thought.

――Rookie bus guide's SAN value　46

「I, I'm sorry for my students behavior! I'll scold them for this later. I'm really sorry!」

The small animal teacher bowed her head repeatedly. Her figure apologizing for her students who were screwing around too much really looked like a teacher, but as expected it seemed like she wasn't concerned by the bloodshed itself.

――Rookie bus guide's SAN value　43

For a moment the bus guide was assaulted by a feeling that wanted to scream loudly while escaping by crashing through the window, but she would die if she did that so she barely desisted from doing it. Above all else, as a bus guide, there was no way she could abandon the guest!

「E, e~rr, everyone, looks like you all are full of energy there! After this, in less than ten minutes, we will arrive at our first sightseeing area for today, the Fushimi Inari Shrine. After that, we will go around several sightseeing area just as written in the guidebook before we head toward our hotel for today.」

'Yee~~s!' The students replied back energetically again with liveliness that was different from student these days. The rookie bus guide's mind that was almost toppled was slightly healed from that. These students were actually welcomed guest for a bus guide if the supernatural something they nonchalantly showed frequently wasn't counted.

‘I’ll do my best!’ The rookie bus guide fired up herself while taking a bold action of releasing her personal information in order to shrink the distance a little between herself and the students.

「Honestly speaking, I came from Kyoto. I lived at the area slightly north from here, near famous places like Kurama hot spring and Kuramadera that everyone surely has heard before. Because of that, I know about various things like the good hidden places and so on, so please ask me anything without reservation.」

‘Ooo~’ The students immediately showed surprise good-spiritedly. How should she say it, this calls had an amazing sense of unity, they looked like they really got along with each other.

She was putting her guard up because they were the “returnees”, and in actuality their many speech and conduct were removed from common sense, but it was completely unthinkable to see them as an object to be avoided.

Perhaps the rookie bus guide had also got a bit used to the students because her shoulders relaxed a bit. It felt like her willpower was recovering.

「Kurama hot spring and Kuramadera? Are they famous place desu~?」

Shia raised her hand *pyon* and quickly threw a question.

Seeing from how the other students weren’t making wondering face, certainly it seemed those places were quite popular, but for Shia it was a name that her rabbit ears heard for the first time. It seemed Yue was also the same because she was going 「Nn?」 with tilted head.

From the face of the two that were obviously foreigner, the rookie bus guide thought 「It’s not unreasonable that they don’t know」, she smiled sweetly while giving more explanation.

「It’s a really lovely inn that is surrounded by nature. The winter hot spring that is surrounded by trees with winter make-up is especially recommended. Kuramadera is known as a power spot that is famous even in Kyoto. It’s also introduced as the home of the tengu(long-nosed goblin) and so on. About the detail of the history, I will tell it at another chance if you are interested but……」

The rookie bus guide chose her words so that even youngster from foreign country could easily understood and also pickled their curiosity at the same time. She then continued speaking full of playfulness.

「It was also said that far in the past, “the demon king descended” there or something, it’s a lovely place.」

All the students without a single exception sent their gaze toward the back seat.

「E, eh? Everyone? Wha, what’s the matter?」

Their reaction was different from what she had in mind. Or rather, their reaction was more than she expected! Furthermore it was an incomprehensible reaction!

The rookie bus guide was confused!

When she followed the gaze of the students, she reached the center of the back seat——a single male student who sat firmly like a mountain right in front of the rookie bus guide.

The eyes of the rookie bus guide and him——Hajime met.

If one had to give an allusion about Hajime’s mental state here, then Hajime-san in Japan was relatively high-tensioned. Actually, he also nonchalantly joined in at all the energetic replies until now. Even when they were doing karaoke he was enthusiastically singing out anime song.

If the gazes that were saying things like 「She said the demon king descended there」「In other words, Nagumo descended there?」 were directed toward such unusually high-tensioned Hajime, how would he react……

He grinned widely, and released a tiny bit of “Pressure”! Indeed, I am the demon king-sama!

The students got roused up saying 「Oo! Nagumo played along!」「Yoo, our demon king-sama!」!

However, even though it was only a pressure that was nothing for the students who had been trained at another world, the rookie bus guide who was right at the front of that demon king was completely a different case……

□□□(kua)w□(se)drftgy□□□(fujiko)lp□□□

Such weird shriek resounded through the parking lot of the Kyoto’s Fushimi Inari Shrine they had just arrived at.

——Rookie bus guide’s SAN value　23

Liberated from the long bus travel, the students stretched their body.

Perhaps because it was a school trip that was a bit out of season, the surrounding was throwing glances at the students because it was rare for a group of students to visit at this period of time.

Amidst that atmosphere, the female students were gathering around the rookie bus guide. For some reason Kaori and Shizuku were holding her left and right hand respectively, while other girls like Yuuka, Taeko, Nana and so on were surrounding them like guards. It was a bit of harem situation in a sense.

「E, err, everyone? I'll be leading, so if possible stay behind me……or rather, why do I have my hand being hold?」

「It's fine, it's fine okay?」

「We are at your side.」

「Err……guide-san. You want candy? It's sweet milk taste. I think it will surely heal you.」

Kaori, Shizuku, and Yuka were sending extremely considerate expression and voice toward the rookie bus guide. The other female students were also sending her kind words one after another.

She was really happy that they would get along with her. Especially because it was the female students and not the male students.

However, still however.

As expected she couldn't hide her bewilderment toward this strange consideration and kindness. Rather, it felt a bit scary instead because they were too kind.

「E, excuse me. Everyone, did I do something? Everyone seems to act a little different compared to before……eh? Come to think of it, since when we arrived at the parking lot? Eh? Eeeh? I remember talking about the local……after that…….」

「It’s fine if you don’t remember!」

「Now now, guide-san. Let’s go ahead, okay? Okay?」

Kaori panicked while Shizuku hurriedly pulled at her hand and asked her for being area guide.

Certainly, right now it was time to work. For some reason her memory of a few minutes ago was a bit fuzzy, but the students were hoping for the area guide. Her guide soul would die out if she didn’t respond enthusiastically!

The rookie bus guide switched her attitude and walked. All the female students moved simultaneously with her like a colony. Behind them the male students were following in groups.

「Say, Yue. Is that person really okay? I don’t think we need to go as far as erasing her memory though.」

At the back of the group, Hajime asked Yue with a really awkward expression.

The demon king-sama never expected that the guide would go mad just from that degree of Pressure. The speech and conduct of the whole class until then that considerably lowered the SAN value of the rookie bus guide was also one cause, but it was himself who dealt the finishing blow, so as expected Hajime was unusually in the middle of introspection of fooling around too much.

Though the biggest cause of his introspection was because Yue said 「Bad!」 to him.

「……Nn. She should be okay because she was healed with Soul Magic. In the first place, it looks like she have an amazingly strong willpower that is rare for an ordinary person……perhaps, she even have some kind of amazing experience in the past?」

It was as though the rookie bus guide possessed toughness as if she even had the skill of Fear Resistance. Yue was looking at the rookie bus guide with eyes as though she was seeing a mysterious thing.

「What kind of amazing experience that would make a rookie bus guide obtain Fear Resistance……that would be too amazing for the work of bus guide.」

「……By the way, I didn’t manipulate her memory. She has resistance, but it seems that her memory was normally blown away.」

「……Perhaps I’ll give her something later as apology.」

A rookie bus guide who was given apology present from the demon king. There was no doubt that if the people of Tortus heard about it they would get a distant look.

From a glance, it looked like the bus guide-san was greatly popular with the students. The group looked around Fushimi Inari Shrine like that.

Yue and Shia reflexively leaked out voice of admiration toward place that gave off history and mystique like the famous “Torii Corridor” and so on.

The rookie bus guide stood still at a certain place.

「Everyone, this here is called “Omokaru Stone”. If you lift the head of the stone lantern, it’s said that your wish will come true if the stone is lighter than you thought, but your wish won’t come true if you think it’s heavy. Does anyone want to try~」

When the students turned their gaze following those words, there were two stone lanterns. The students made racket with chitter-chatter while trying it out one after another.

「I wish to get a girlfriend today!」

Nakano yelled a wish that was extremely reckless without shame while sending a glance toward the rookie bus guide and lifted the stone.

「-!? ……It, it’s lighttt! Very liiight!」

It seemed that it was really heavy far than what he thought. Even though he had another world cheat, but he still felt that it was heavy for some reason……. Perhaps his wish was just that “impossible~”.

Sympathizing gazes gathered toward Nakano. Saitou who saw that gave up giving a try and quietly took distance from Nakano.

The next who reached out his hand was Nomura Kentarou who showed a fine play when the bus departed at the beginning, and his party member who took the healing role, Tsuji Ayako. Both of them glanced at each other while reaching their hand, and slowly lifted up the stones.

「Tsuji, how’s yours?」

「U, uh. I thought that it’s normally light though……Nomura-kun, you?」

「Me too, I think it’s light. ……Tsuji, your wish is……」

「That’s a secret!」

Both of them blushed slightly while glancing at each other with their hand still holding the stone.

「Can you believe it? Those two, they aren’t going out even like that you know?」

「Who cares, put down the stone quickly already, Nomura. Or I’m going to crush your head along with the stone.」

Atsushi and Noboru were peevish. Seeing the two who were both conscious of each other since returning to earth and yet still hadn’t gone out with each other, not just Atsushi and Noboru, the other classmates were also making doubtful expression.

The students were making noise like that while at the end Shizuku and Kaori made their attempt. Shia asked the two with an excited voice.

「What kind of wish the two of you want to have come true? Please tell me before lifting up the stone desu.」

「I……as I thought, I want to be able to keep being together with Hajime-kun from here on forever, I think?」

「Let’s see……I wish, that my family will be a bit more quiet, something like that.」

Kaori looked a bit embarrassed while Shizuku got a distant look when saying their wish. Pitying gazes gathered at Shizuku.

Like that, Kaori and Shizuku reached their hand toward the Omokaru Stone……

「My, it’s light. I wonder if my family will restrain themselves a bit with this?」

Shizuku lightly lifted up and down the Omokaru Stone really happily. Even more pitying gazes gathered toward her.

But, beside her an abnormal situation occurred. Kaori wasn’t trying to lift up the Omokaru Stone from above the stone lantern.

No, looking at how she was shaking all over, it wasn’t that she wasn’t lifting up the stone, it looked like she “couldn’t lift up the stone”.

「Nnuuuuuuuuh!? What’s this!? Why is it this heavy!? It doesn’t twitch for even an inch though!?」

‘Could it be, the stone is glued?’ In her confusion Kaori-san even forgot the fact that just before this everyone was normally lifting up the stone.

「Is it getting stuck……」

The rookie bus guide who was watching over the students smilingly picked up the Omokaru Stone with a bewildered expression.

‘Hyoi-‘, it was lifted up really lightly.

「……」

「……」

An inexpressible atmosphere was flowing. The air felt even heavier from the fact that Kaori had spoken out her wish

before this.

「This, this time it will surely be okay!」

「Tha, that’s right!」

The rookie bus guide desperately followed up. Kaori was getting teary eyed while reaching her hand toward the Omokaru Stone once more.

It didn’t even twitch.

「WHYYYYYYY!? Is my wish that difficult!? Is it really that impossible of a wish, so much so that the weight isn’t just simply heavy anymore!? UWAAAAAAAHN」

Kaori’s posture was already clinging on the stone lantern, tyring to somehow lift up the Omokaru Stone at the head part. Naturally, she very much gathered pitying gazes.

Amidst that, Yue-sama came forward with trotting steps.

She sent a warm gaze at Kaori who was struggling hard to lift up the Omokaru Stone with tear-stained face and then,

「……Kaori. Do you know the words, knowing your place?」

「What does that mean!?」

‘Wanting to be at Hajime’s side is a wish that is beyond you, you know?’, those words implicitly conveyed that.

The strange situation where the Omokaru Stone couldn’t be lifted up no matter what she tried even began to gather curious attention from the surrounding people who came for sightseeing.

「Err, Hajime-san. Could it be……」

「Aa~, yep. It’s absurdly concealed skillfully but, from what I see with my magic stone eye, it’s that Yue’s doing.」

Just as Shia’s instinct told her, it was Yue-sama’s doing.

Yes, in front of the public she was concealing her magic power while activating gravity magic in a miraculous feat!

The proof of that was how the weight was added in proportion with the strength Kaori used. The stone lantern where the Omokaru Stone was placed was starting to make ominous sound *crack crack*.

Even Kaori seemed to notice from that sound.

「This is……YUU~~EE~~~-!! You are bullying me again! What are you thinking doing that in this kind of place!? Dispel it quickly! Now, right away!」

「……I don’t understand what are you talking about desu.」

‘Pyu~pyu pyuh pyu pyu~~~’ Yue averted her gaze while whistling unnaturally. If it was for the sake of bullying Kaori, then she wouldn’t shirk from doing miraculous feat!

Kaori who sensed that Yue had no intention of dispelling the gravity magic had a vein emerged angrily on her forehead.

The classmates who guessed the situation from the two’s conversation showed exasperated face or amused face. Amidst that, Kaori took a dee~~p breath one more time.

「Tha, that, Kaori? I know what’s going on but, there are a lot of people here, it’s better to give up……」

「Shizuku-chan. There is battle that a woman cannot withdraw from.」

Shizuku thought ‘At the very least don’t fight using body reinforcement at a sightseeing area, seriously’, but Kaori was already——activating her charging maiden mode!

「THIS STONEEEEEEEEEEEE!! I’LL ABSOLUU~~~TELY, LIFT YOU UUUUUUUUUP」

A surging war cry! Kaori displayed the physical strength of god’s apostle all out, pouring her all into conquering the Omokaru Stone! It seemed she still have some reasoning left to at least suppress the visualization of her magic power light, it was fortunate at that point but……

「……Muh. Unreasonably stubborn!」

「Watch me-, Hajime-kun! I’m, not going to lose!」

‘I cannot watch this in various sense’, Hajime’s straight man retort didn’t enter the ear of the two.

Shizuku and Aiko tried to stop them in panic.

However, before they could *crack*, an ominous sound resounded and the two reflexively stopped moving.

Looking carefully, the stone lantern finally couldn’t endure the super heavy weight and had crack entered it!

「Please spare me from sudden destruction of tourist area~~a!」

「A, anyway everyone! Form a wall! Become human wall so that other tourists cannot see!」

Aiko tried to stop the two while half-crying, while Shizuku gave instruction to the students to form a crowd.

Kaori didn’t yield against the attention from around her, she didn’t even yield against the super heavy weight, finally she succeeded to hold the Omokaru Stone in her arms. And then, she raised it high above her head with the cry ‘DAAA————!’ even while shaking all over.

Her pose looked like an athlete of barbell weight lifting, or perhaps like a combat race that went “Share your strength with me!”. (TN: This is Dragon Ball reference I think.)

At the same time, a depression formed at the ground under Kaori’s feet in radial shape. Countless fissures spread outward like spider web.

「Look, look-, Hajime-kun! I properly lifted it! My wish will come true!」

「……Nuu. Damn Kaori. She did it.」

It seemed that Kaori-san who was immersed in her sense of accomplishment already forgot. About the fact of “It’s out if it feel heavier than what you imagined”. It was already out for her right from the beginning.

But, no one could say that to her looking at that brightly glowing expression.

Anyway, while the classmates were blocking people’s gaze, Hajime punished the two with Shockwave attached forehead flick while fixing the ground and stone lantern with transmutation.

Everything was fixed in the blink of eye so there shouldn’t be any witness.

Yes, no one except the rookie bus guide who was among the students.

The rookie bus guide who witnessed the whole sequence of events was making twitching smile for a while before,

「……fuhih」

She fainted, leaving behind a strange snicker.

――Rookie bus guide's SAN value　18

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

There is one more chapter posting after this!

It's a story that I wrote without thinking of the setting or anything, so the chronological order is also vague.

And so, I won't make any allusion regarding Kouki.

Whether he is there or not, please see it with your eye of the heart.

PS

Arifureta Nichijou chapter 6 is updated at Overlap-sama's homepage.

Please take a look if you like.

Arifureta Chapter 284

Arifureta After II Mundane School Life ④

AN: I posted Arifureta After II Mundane School Life ③ before this.

Please take a look there first

Even after that, the sanity level of the rookie bus guide was shaved hard every time they went to other sightseeing area, but because of her professional spirit that was beaten into her despite her status as rookie, her inherent willpower, and then the follow-up of the terrifyingly kind students, she managed to somehow overcome the difficult situation.

After they arrived at their inn, a dispute revolving around who would share the room with Hajime ensued, there was an outbreak of TALKING physically with Yue and Kaori as the main offender, the youth was peeved, Aiko-sensei tried to abuse her authority, as the result, there was the unexpected occurrence of her getting scold(choke sleeper)-ed by Shia occurring……

For the rookie bus guide, something at the level of the commanding teacher getting strangled by a student was already not a big deal. Compared to her own condition where there were already instances in double digit number

where her memory was spotty just from this one day, it was something trivial.

However, seeing the bus driver who still wore his hat very low over his eyes that half his face was hidden even indoor, acting like it wasn’t any concern of him, it caused killing intent to boil up from inside her.

Perhaps noticing the gaze of the rookie bus guide that was teeming with killing intent, the bus driver presented her with a canned coffee but……

The rookie bus guide was someone who was overly fond of sweets. To the degree that sugar content was life for her. If she had to hold back from sugar content, she would rather woke up early in the morning and ran marathon for ten kilometer to maintain her body style even if she had to suffer lack of sleep. That was how much she loved sugar content. To the degree that she would pour down the sugar for business use down into her throat as they were if she was so inclined.

Even though the bus driver should know that about her, he intentionally gave her a black coffee. The rookie bus guide swore to herself, ‘I absolutely gonna murder you one day’.

Like that, she finished her dinner even while being completely exhausted in body and mind, and then it was time for the students to enter bath.

The rookie bus guide headed to the inn’s lobby by herself. Her body was demanding for sweets. Eating sweets at night wasn’t something good, but she couldn’t hold on if she didn’t replenish her sugar content.

□Haa~, I’m tired……where is the sugar……is there café au lait of Gl○co I wonder……□ (TN: It refers to Glico brand I

think)

Like a sugar content zombie wandering in the search of brutal sweetness, the rookie bus guide was walking unsteadily. Then she saw on the chair ahead of the corridor, Aiko was sitting snugly.

When she saw the hanging sign of the bath on the other side further ahead, she realized that she was keeping a lookout as a teacher.

「Good evening Hatayama-sensei. It must be hard having to take care everything alone.」

For some reason the rookie bus guide called out to that figure sitting alone while her legs were dangling back and forth from the chair. Perhaps Aiko had nothing to do because smiled happily when she was called out.

「Ahaha, well, it can't be helped. The circumstance is like this. Besides, it's not as hard as you think. Haji――Nagumo-kun is constructing a surveillance system inside the inn so, well, I don't think it will happen, but even if the boys think about doing anything not good, a warning will reach my smartphone.」

「Is that so.」

'Don't look down on the ignoring skill that has been polished through this whole day okay?' As though to say that, the rookie bus guide smiled sweetly and overlooked what Aiko said.

「Rather, I'm more worried whether Nagumo-kun is going to get ambushed by the girls――」

「Tomorrow will be free activity isn’t it! What will Hatayama-sensei do!?」

「Hiih!? What’s with the sudden loud voice!?」

‘It’s so that the unfathomable world of you all doesn’t encroach into mine’, Of course she didn’t say that out loud.

The figure of Aiko-sensei twitching like a shivering small animal caused her to feel 「I won!」 for some reason, the rookie bus guide was about to go in a journey searching for sugar content once more.

At that moment,

——*DOPAN-DOPAN-DOPAN- DOPAN-*

Sudden gunshots!

「Hiih!? What’s that!?」

The rookie bus guide embraced herself with both her hands while jumping up. It was a sound that people couldn’t possible hear in Japan, however, it was a sound that people had certainly heard from movie or the like. The rookie bus guide couldn’t hide her shaken up feeling!

「Na, Nagumo-ku~~n! What’s going oonn!?」

Aiko raised her voice in front of the hanging sign of the male’s bath. Then, from inside the bath,

——I’m currently teaching my classmates the meaning of recklessness~. Especially at these guys’ crotch!

Such voice came.

It seemed there was man among man who knew no fear there. The countdown to job change into manly woman had begun.

——The dream-, we only want to see the dream! That’s all there is to it!

——Fuh. We’re resolved from the start!

Such manly (?) roar could be heard, then a beat later.

——*DOPAN-, DOPAN-*

——*AAA*—–!

——*AAA*—–!

Two scream of death agony echoed.

I don’t hear anything. I don’t hear anything. I don’t hear anything. I don’t hear anything. I don’t hear anything. I don’t hear anything. I don’t hear anything. I don’t hear anything. I don’t hear anything. I don’t hear anything. I don’t hear anything. I don’t hear anything. I don’t hear anything.

Hah!? A, are you okay!? Eh!? Your eyes look empty!? Someone! Someone please he~~~lp!

The rookie bus guide covered both her ears. She curled into herself while wholeheartedly whispered the same thing repeatedly. Aiko looked after her while getting panicked.

——Rookie bus guide’s SAN value 4

When the bath time was over, the students wearing yukata were clamoring at places like the shop in the lobby and so on.

The rookie bus guide was lying down on the sofa of such bustling lobby while diligently replenishing her sugar content slurping through a long straw an extremely sweet café au lait. She was making her own arm as pillow replacement, so if one changed the angle they viewed her, it would look like she was connected with intravenous drip of café au lait.

「……Guide-san, are you all right?」

「Kaori has put recovery magic on her and even Yue had used her soul magic, so I think she is fine but……」

When Kaori whispered so worriedly, Shizuku said so with the same expression.

At a sofa slight distance away in the same lobby, the usual members with Hajime as the center (other than Yue and co, there were Ryutaro and Suzu) were sitting there. Other than them, the Ai-chan bodyguard party was also sitting there. In addition, it was only Yuka who were pulled by other girls for some reason and right now she was going somewhere.

The gaze of everyone was directed toward the rookie bus guide who was limply lying down while continuing to slurp the brown liquid *slurp slurp* without resting, and Aiko who was worriedly staying at her side.

「……Nn. That child is a strong child. She is an outstanding material whose mental strength can rival even Tio if she is trained.」

「That’s a completely unexpected evaluation from Yue-san. Is that person really a bus guide?」

Rookie bus guide-san, she received a tremendously great evaluation from the strongest vampire princess of another world…….

Shia was directing a gaze at the rookie bus guide whose intake amount of extremely sweet café au lait had reached liter unit as though she was seeing something amazing. The bus guide’s complexion had become far better than before. Was sugar content something like a recovery medicine for her?

By the way, Nakano and Saitou were collapsing with the white of their eyes exposed on the sofa in front the rookie bus guide. Their posture was strangely bow-legged.

Like that for a while everyone amused themselves with whimsical chat before suddenly Hajime stood up with a smartphone in one hand.

「I’ll call home for a bit.」

Saying that he left his seat. Different from Yue and co who had an idea of what that was about, Ryutaro and Suzu and others were puzzled about what Hajime’s business was. Shizuku who noticed their question spoke the answer with smiling expression.

「He is going to say good night to Myuu-chan.」

‘Aaa!’ Voices of understanding were raised.

When they looked around, there was the figure of Hajime leaning on a pillar of the lobby, listening on the phone while nodding frequently toward the voice that came from the

other side of the phone. His expression was gentle and very kind, overflowing with affection and love.

「He looks like a completely different person than when he was at the other world.」

「He looks like the former Nagumo-kun isn't he?」

Ryutaro and Suzu didn't even hide their astonishment. They whispered such thing with wide eyes.

「Though he looks far more adult compared to that time.」

「Somehow, he feels like a real "father".」

「Looking at him like that, certainly that's true.」

「Thinking carefully, a classmate being a father is really out there.」

Nana and Taeko were looking at Hajime with smiling expression that was filled with warm and fluffy admiration. Atsushi, Akito, and Noboru were also the same. Yue and others too, they must be used to seeing this side of Hajime because they were staring at their beloved with an extremely soft expression.

Before long Hajime finished his phone call and returned. It seemed that he was taken aback that everyone was watching him, but he immediately guessed the reason. He averted his gaze somewhat embarrassingly while sitting back on the sofa.

「It's souvenir request from Myuu. Do you all remember how we promised before we depart that each one of us will give her one souvenir?」

「……Nn. If I remember right, anything is fine, but something lasting will be better than food she said.」

「She said that there is nothing she particularly want in the house but……Myuu-chan, was there something she wanted?」

「Yeah, it seems she really want “something rare”. Also, she made a bet with Kaa-san about who will give her the rarest and also the most interesting souvenir. Looks like there will be a return present from Myuu that is filled with her gratitude for the first place.」

Thinking with common sense, in that kind of time someone should say ‘What’s with a little child making a bet!’, but for those who knew about the mother(criminal) of Nagumo family, it was something usual. In the first place, it was already too~ late when there were also others teaching that child how to handle firearm and lethal weapon, and even combat skill.

Now then, regarding the present that would be given as token of appreciation from the princess of Nagumo family.

Hajime’s gaze was really provocative. His state was openly being a doting parent that seemed to say「Well, Myuu’s number one is always me though」 without hiding it. The color of the eyes of Yue and others changed toward that provocation.

「……Hajime. You are too conceited. I’ll show you proof that for Myuu, Hajime isn’t always the number one.」

「For a girl, there is point that can only be understand by another girl desu. After all my father too once confidently gave me present that I was trouble about how to react to it.」

「That’s troubling isn’t it? The mistaken impression of father who think “If it’s girl then surely they will be happy with this”. Just what did he mean by giving me something like assassin blade?」

「Shizuku-chan……did Oji-san(uncle) really gave you something like that as present?」

「Or rather, Shizushizu. I think the troubling point isn’t the “father’s mistaken impression”, but Shizushizu’s own family themselves.」

Yue stood up. It seemed she was going to scour through shops. Sightseeing areas were also abundant with souvenir, but the request was for “something rare”. Perhaps there would be something like that in his inn’s shop.

Thinking to follow that action, Shia and others also stood up and they headed toward the shop while scrambling to be the first to arrive. Nana and Taeko were following behind them saying「It’s getting more and more interesting~」.

There, Atsushi went

「Could it be, if we also buy souvenir that Myuu-chan recognize, that means it will be our victory against Nagumo……」

Hearing that, Akito and Noboru looked at each other. Ryutaro grinned.

「Smearing mud on Nagumo’s invincible and undefeated legend……that sounds hot blooded no matter what kind of shape the victory is yeah!」

「Even if we cannot win physically, we can win in sense of souvenir huh……that might be acceptable!」

「Yosh, let’s get going too!」

Ryutaro and others also got heated up for some reason and they rushed toward the shop.

It seemed that the princess of Nagumo family would be presented with a lot more tribute than expected.

When he noticed Hajime was alone on the sofa. He smiled wryly and went ‘good grief’ while taking out several souvenirs that he impulsively bought today. Most of them were small articles like key holder and the like.

Hajime was a type of person who for some reason couldn’t help but buy meaningless and hard to place thing like pennant and so on. If it was curious small articles than it was even more so.

Like that, he lined up the small articles on the table and scrutinized whether there was anything that could attract Myuu’s interest, it was then,

「……Eh? Where are Nana and others?」

Yuka returned. Her brown hair that usually wasn’t particularly tied or decorated was currently worn in fluffy braid that was gently hanging on her shoulder. Perhaps because she had just got out of bath, also coupled with her relaxed atmosphere and eyes that were filled with enthusiasm, she looked younger than usual.

Hajime talked about the battle of souvenir for Myuu.

「Ahaha, I see. But, I don’t think there will be anything that can satisfy Myuu-chan in hotel’s shop though……」

「Half of their motivation must be looking for side entertainment. Sitting and chatting is also not bad, but this is a school trip that is rare to come by after all.」

「Then, perhaps I should join in too. And, what are you doing Nagumo?」

「Me? I'm sorting the unclear small articles that I was buying without realizing it today, while also scrutinizing if there is something that will make Myuu happy among them.」

「What do you mean buying without realizing it huh? You're talking like a spendthrift there.」

「It's a bad habit I inherited from my mother. I'm properly putting on the brake if it's something expensive, but when I saw cheap and unusual small thing, my hand would unconsciously reached out.」

「Aa, come to think of it, Yue-san and others talked about it I think. Nagumo you, eerr, what was it again, you like pointless technology? Something that is pointlessly pointless? Something like that they said.」

「Do you mean, pointlessly refined pointless technology without any pointlessness? The way you said it just now, it was already something simply pointless.」

「You attached "pointless" at the technology there, so in the end it's still pointless isn't it?」

「……」

Hajime lost the argument. Hajime's lips closed tightly and formed a thin line, inside his heart he was making a meager objection「Perhaps it's pointless but, it's romance. Exactly because it's pointless that life is interesting」.

Hajime fell silent so the conversation cut off.

There, Yuka suddenly noticed. The sofa space that was fairly spacious had suddenly become barren of people, while the surrounding was deserted. At slight distance away, Aiko was stuffing her cheeks with absurdly sweet sweets together with the rookie bus guide without the slightest care in the world.

In other word, right now, it was a situation where it was mostly just the two of them……

「……」

Yuka’s gaze wandered around. *fidget fidget, fidget fidget*. She twirled and toyed around the tip of her braided brown hair.

Suddenly Yuka lost any calm and she conscientiously fixed the cuff and collar of her yukata meaninglessly. Hajime directed a questioning expression toward such Yuka. But, his thinking immediately turned like「Well, doesn’t matter」 and he called out to Yuka.

「Hey, Sonobe.」

「! ……What?」

For some reason Yuka-chan replied with a piercing glare.

「No, why do you suddenly snap?」

「I don’t snap. I’m normal. I’m so relaxed you won’t be able to believe it.」

「I, I see. Well, that’s fine but……rather than that, among these things, in your opinion, which one of them a girl’s

sense will want?

When she dropped her gaze on the table, strange objects were lining up there. They were small articles with shape that were really hard to describe. It wasn’t like they didn’t look like living thing, but at the very least they weren’t based on existing living thing. If she had to say, were they apparition model or something?

I want to refuse receiving any of them with my whole being.

Don’t forget the prerequisite of the present being something rare. Make your judgment based on that.

Ee~. Even if you told me that, I can only call them disgusting though……

What’s with these things? Just from looking at those numerous small articles made her felt uneasy. She wondered since when Hajime purchased this kind of weird things.

Furthermore, he was thinking to present this kind of object X to his beloved daughter. Yuka spontaneously sent a suspicious gaze to Hajime.

Hey, Nagumo. Let me ask, right now, we are talking about souvenir for Myuu-chan right?

That’s right, why?

I won’t say anything bad. Go to Kaori and get yourself healed right away. Especially your head.

What do you mean by that, huh?

The glaring gaze of Hajime and Yuka collided with each other.

Yuka let out a sigh, then she began to stare at all the object X while groaning ‘uu~n’. The more she looked at them, the more she felt unease welling up inside her for some reason.

「This one. This slime thingy. Isn’t this the most better? Like, it’s disgustingly cute, or it barely can allow you to trick yourself?」

「The most better, doesn’t that mean that it’s not the rarest? Or rather, is it that bad that you need to trick yourself?」

「Anyway, if Myuu-chan is happy when you give her this, then I think you should open a grand family meeting with all your strength to discuss it.」

「……I see.」

Hajime-san didn’t look like he could accept it. In the end, he kept aside the object X that Yuka called「I don’t want to even see it!」as the tentative souvenir candidate.

And then, he quietly held out the slime thingy toward Yuka.

「……What?」

「I’ll give it to you as the consultation fee.」

「Did you listen to what I said?」

Yuka’s extremely reproachful glare conveyed how she refused to accept it. Toward that, Hajime said「I guess that’s so」laughingly while he took back his hand that was holding the slime thingy. It seemed that he was joking.

Yuka stroked down her chest in relieve.

But,

「……Sonobe? So you actually want it just as I thought?」

「Eh?」

Yuka was puzzled by what Hajime said. When she turned her gaze, without her noticing her own hand was placed on Hajime’s hand that was pulling back the slime thingy. It was as though she was reluctant to let go of the present that Hajime expressly offered to her.

Yuka’s face softly blushed.

「Eerr, this is, that……」

mutter mutter. *fidget fidget*.

Honestly speaking, she could assert that the slimy thingy object X was disgusting.

However, still. This was that Nagumo Hajime they were talking about. That person gave it to her. Though tentatively speaking, it wasn’t like it was the first present he gave her what with the various equipment like artifacts, telepathic communication device, and so on that he gave her to deal with the situation when they had just returned home.

Although, if one had to say than those things were “provision”. They were a bit different from “present”.

「Well, I’ll give it to you if you are fine with it……so, do you want it?」

With a doubtful expression, Hajime tried confirming it once more with Yuka.

Yuka’s gaze busily swam around, after that she gave a small nod.

The presentation ceremony of Objext X: Slime thingy.

Yuka looked alternately at Hajime and that thing that was placed on her palm, then she spoke her thanks「Thank you」 with a small voice. Hajime’s expression turned even more doubtful.

Hajime began to sort the other object X while keeping silent, while Yuka was staring closely at the slime thingy once more.

And then, her mouth slackened slightly.

「……Yu, Yuka-chi is, staring at something disgusting while grinning happily!」

「Yu, Yuka? You okay? Are you tired?」

Nana and Taeko who returned without anyone noticing were staring at Yuka with fear and unease in their expression. Certainly, it was only natural that they would get worried if their friend was grinning while staring at hard to describe object.

「Eh, wai-, that’s not-. This is, that’s-」

Yuka stood up with bright red face while still holding the slime thingy, then she stepped toward Nana and Taeko to make excuse.

Nana and Taeko retreated backward in proportion with the step forward Yuka took.

Yuka stood still. Nana and Taeko also stopped retreating.

Yuka took a step forward. Nana and Taeko took a step back.

Yuka was slowly approaching. Nana and Taeko were slowly backing away.

A vein emerged on Yuka’s forehead. She dashed forward fiercely. Her two best friends escaped away like rabbit on fire.

「Why are you two running awaaay!?」

「Because you’re carrying something strange thereee!」

「Nooo! Don’t get closeee!」

The three close friends vanished inside the inn.

「……They’re exaggerating.」

Hajime was staring at the remaining object X while letting out a faintly sad whisper.

By the way, when he showed it to Yue and others too, don’t mention giving it too Myuu, he was even prohibited from showing it to her. As expected, it seemed those things possessed disgustingness that couldn’t be described.

It also became obvious when the rookie bus guide who had accomplished recovery from finishing her sugar content replenishment passed through and saw the armful of object X Hajime was carrying, she raised a shrike 「Kuee~~」 that sounded like an ominous bird before she fainted.

The rookie bus guide who slept like a log until the next morning of course had her memory blown away from the shock.

There was time when her mental state was driven to a dangerous state, but it seemed last night she saw a happy dream where she ate a candy house to her heart content, so her condition was extremely excellent.

Her mental self-defense and recovery power was tremendously capable.

——Rookie bus guide’s SAN value　52

Throughout all those, where Hajime and others sometimes had fun, sometimes went through craziness, sometimes escaped from reality, and sometimes concealed an uproar with their all while digesting the school trip program, currently they were sitting silently inside the bus that was returning home while musing about the memory they made.

Several students were relaxing flaccidly and entered a light sleep. Aiko-sensei was completely traveling into the world of dream. Her mouth was mumbling ‘munya munya’ while drool was dripping in her deep sleep. She must have anxiety piling up inside her.

「Nevertheless, just what in the world that person is?」

Shia was starting on that topic from her seat in the back that was near the window.

「Aah, that woman who came talking to us at Ujibashi Bridge huh.」

「……She was really beautiful but, she might be a bit similar with Kaori.」

When it was time for free activity, Hajime and others went to Ujibashi Bridge. While Hajime and co were harmoniously having fun there, that woman was there without anyone noticing. The unfamiliar beauty was sending them dark gaze and whispered 「How envious……」 while approaching them.

Ten out of ten people would surely turn around seeing that woman's beautiful face, so Kaori felt a bit bashful hearing what Yue said――

「……with how ill that woman felt.」

「I'm not ill! I'm in perfect health!」

Yue and Kaori sat with Hajime between them, but they grappled with both their hands locked with each other through Hajime.

「Rather than that, Hajime. You really don't know that person? The other side know about you though.」

Shizuku left alone Yue and Kaori who were raising their friendship physically and asked Hajime.

Just as Shizuku said, when that beauty who approached with a dangerous look arrived at a distance where her hand could reach, her eyes opened wide as though she noticed something and she began to stare hard at Hajime. And then, neglecting the bewildered Hajime and co, the beauty nodded as though in understanding of something and whispered 「For us to meet in this kind of place……」.

「No, I don't remember her at all. But, from what she said at the end there, that's」

——I’ll turn a blind eye in deference to that child

That child……”A child” that was related with Hajime.

「Actually, a while ago I made a minor Crystal Key for Myuu. It’s so that she can come home right away no matter what happen. And then, one day that Myuu, she saw a special coverage of Kyoto in TV and the next day, she said 「That’s right! I’ll go to Kyoto nano!」, and she went strolling alone. Such thing happened before.」

「……I, is that so. Wait, you let her go alone?」

「More accurately, she only left a letter which said that and went as she pleased.」

「What a light footwork.」

Shizuku showed a dry smile. But, at the same time she guessed what Hajime wanted to say.

In other words, at that time, Myuu attracted a strange thing again, and on top of that she easily formed friendly relationship with them.

「I’m curious. That woman, was she human or not?」

「Sto, stop it. I’m getting goosebumps here.」

Not just Shizuku, even Kaori who was in the middle of conflict and Shia shuddered from chill.

「Because remember, a woman clad in disturbing atmosphere like that, and yet I couldn’t detect her until she approached in that close range? This me couldn’t detect her.」

「No, now that Hajime-san said it, I also didn’t notice her desuu!」

Kaori and Shizuku felt shuddering chill on their back. Though it seemed only Yue who didn’t think much about it.

「Well, even if she is really Myuu’s “friend”, she pulled back because of that, so I don’t think there is any reason to make this that big of a problem.」

Hajime concluded like that, but inside his heart he was at his wits’ end. A speech of 「Don’t pick up that kind of thing! Return it to where you found it!」 toward children was something relatively common, but in Myuu’s case, it was really “that kind of thing”. She only ever found “something” with true identity that hadn’t been grasped yet.

As a papa, he wondered how far he should interfere with his daughter’s strange friend relationship. It was a problem that gave him terrible headache.

Perhaps noticing the inside of Hajime’s heart, Yue began to pat Hajime’s head to comfort him.

The atmosphere inside the bus was laid-back.

The time flowed peacefully like that, and by the time there was only around one hour until they arrived, Kentarou suddenly yelled.

「Se, sensei! Ai-chan-senseiii! Kousuke isn’t here!」

「What did you sayyyy!?」

Aiko who was fast asleep leaped up.

‘Again in this timing!?’ The inside of the bus was thrown into uproar.

「E, err Hatayama-sensei? Is there one student who isn’t here?」

Even the drowsy rookie bus guide also asked uneasily. Aiko told the rookie bus guide 「I’ll confirm it!」 before she raised her voice.

「Everyo~~ne! Look around you rea~lly carefully! Check that perhaps Endo-kun is in place like a crack or something! Or perhaps, he is right beside you but you just don’t notice him! Is he holding on the roof, or maybe he is hanging down under the bus!?」

——Rookie bus guide’s SAN value　49

The students looked every which way. Commotion like 「That guy Aby did it again」, 「Wait, did you ever see that guy in the middle of the school trip?」, 「Eh, come to think of it I didn’t see Endo-kun at all……」, or 「As expected from the lord huh」 could be heard.

The conclusion,

「Ai-chan-sensei! Kousuke isn’t here!」

「Ee!? What to do!? Come to think of it, when it was time for roll-call, I don’t remember calling Endo-kun’s name! Uu, this is teacher’s responsibility……」

The lord who was forgotten even at the roll-call. Aiko felt responsible and she turned pale and she blew up her fuse. She impulsively began to speak to the driver to turn back the bus.

But before she could finish, Hajime raised his voice.

「For now, let’s try calling his phone and ask him where he is. If needed then I’ll bring him back here.」

「Hajime-kun……I’m sorry to trouble you.」

Aiko sent Hajime a teary gaze as though she was staring at the messiah. Hajime waved his hand lightly in response and told Aiko 「Don’t worry about it. Against the Abyss Lord, it can’t be helped that you completely forgot.」

Hajime called the phone. A beat later, it seemed Kousuke answered his phone.

「Oi, Endo. Where are yo――eh? What did you say? It’s pretty noisy over there I cannot hear you. Ha? What are you saying……」

After a long silence, Hajime suddenly switched his smartphone into speaker mode.

Immediately, explosive sound resounded from the other side of the phone.

「I’m telling you-, right now, I’m in the middle of battle against an unknown group! Shit-, what the hell, these guys!」

「「「「「……」」」」」

Not just Hajime, all the classmates simultaneously made expression that seemed to say 「Uwaaa」.

Right after that, a voice of a girl that sounded childish somehow resounded.

「Endo-sama! Just leave me behind! Their objective is me! Please escape by yourself!」

「You think I can just say ‘ok, bye’ and left behind a child in this kind of place! Wait, what? Talisman? What are you planning taking out that kind of――wait, that’s a lie right!? Onmyouji-, are you an onmyouji!? I saw this kind of scene in a movie before! Dowah, that’s dangerous! You asshole, something like fantasy is just cowardly!」

‘Which mouth is saying that huh’, such straight man retort entered the heart of Hajime and co.

「Shit-, enemy reinforcement!」

「Endo-sama, I’m already……」

「Don’t worry about it, just shut up! I was shocked, but just something like this is no problem――kuku-, I don’t know the circumstance but, ganging up on a child like this, that nature of yours is something that I really cannot stomach. It looks like you lowlifes are in need of education huh.」

「Endo-sama?」

「Fuh. I’m not Endo. Call me like this. Kousuke E Aby――」

There the call cut off *pushu*. Hajime was the one who cut it off.

Inside the bus was silent as grave. In the middle of that, Hajime carefully put back his smartphone inside his pocket and then spoke as though nothing had happened.

「Sensei. There’s no problem.」

「I think you’re right. Haa, I’m glad.」

Aiko-sensei sat down on her seat snugly after saying that. The other students too were also as expected, they sat down again as though nothing had happened.

Inside the bus that had recovered its peaceful atmosphere, only one person,

「……uboa」

After hearing the incomprehensible thing from the other side of the phone call, and seeing the weird atmosphere that accepted that happening as common sense, the rookie bus guide was injured with mental damage and left behind a weird groan.

Omake(Extra)

The rookie bus guide safely weathered the school trip of the “returnees” and she received a welcome like the hero’s triumphal return at her workplace.

The senior bus guide who pushed the responsibility this time to her suddenly noticed the keyholder that was attached on the rookie bus guide’s bag. It was a really beautiful crystal that had geometrical circle pattern engraved within it.

「My, it’s a beautiful accessory. I don’t remember, was it already there from before?」

□No. Actually this is a present from the students of the school trip this time. They said it’s their thanks for everything.□

□Myy! That’s great! There are various rumor about them, so I wondered whether something might happen, but for them to give that kind of present to show their gratitude, it seems that rumor is just a rumor isn’t it?□

‘So you pushed this responsibility to me even after knowing about those rumors……’

The rookie bus guide had such thought while putting a smile on the outside. If it was now she felt like she could unleash the greatest right straight of her life.

Urged by the superior, their talk ended. The rookie bus guide who took her own seat breathed out □fuu□ while taking the crystal keyholder in her hand once more.

And then, she recalled about what she was told when she received this present.

□At time when you really need help, if you take this into your hand and strongly thought then you will have help, huh……those students, they looked really full of confidence but……is this thing really that effective?□

She dangled it at the height of her eye and stared at the dazzling crystal for a while.

Like that, the rookie bus guide giggled, and then with a very small voice so that no one could hear——

□I wish that I won’t encounter any evil god or mythological being anymore.□

She still didn’t understand whether this thing really had any effect or not.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I wrote an idle story with length of just a few chapters, but the result was that it almost entered a long arc after story again.

Please take care of Arifureta from here on too!

Arifureta Chapter 285

Arifureta After III　Yue’s Diary ②

Inside one of the room in Nagumo house, *scratch scratch* the sound of a fountain pen composing letters was resounding faintly.

There was a chair and desk that was made from glossy wood. The one who was sitting snugly on that chair writing into some kind of notebook with leather cover was Yue.

For a while, the scratching sound resounded wordlessly, sometimes, Yue threw her gaze to empty air thinking of something and smiled a for just a smidgen before she began to write *scratch scratch* once more.

Before long it seemed she was satisfied already. Yue put down her fountain pen carefully, then she stretched her back while moaning ‘u～～～n’.

It was the time before going to bed, so Yue was wearing negligee. Her white smooth limbs were stretched tautly while getting exposed generously.

「……Nn. This is it for today.」

She whispered with a small voice before hopping down *pyon* from the chair where her feet didn’t reach the floor.

The room of Nagumo house that was assigned to Yue was the room with the calmest atmosphere in a sense. Perhaps it could even be said that it was “solemn”.

There was basically only wooden furniture with aged feeling in it, so the coloring also possessed depth that was calming and natural. To call it as a room of a historical European mansion was an appropriate expression for it.

In fact the kind of furniture and furnishing inside Yue’s room were mostly antique. Yue who was pleased with the antique in earth went around to gather them from here and there while it also doubled as her date with Hajime.

Even the fountain pen was something with a value that couldn’t be obtained with simple mean.

By the way, the rooms of Shia, Remia, and Myuu were room of very modern style. Their room was overflowing with the latest thing rather than old thing. Tio was making her room to be purely Japanese-style. As for Hajime, putting aside his own room, his underground workshop (it mostly doubled as his own room) was in a state that closely resembled the lab of Tony ○tark.

It was only Yue’s room that had the atmosphere as though one was lost in middle age Europe, but conversely it felt calming. Not only Hajime, but the people of Nagumo house really frequently would aimlessly visit Yue’s room and relaxed there.

Hajime and some other were thinking if a fireplace should just get created inside Yue’s room. They were also thinking, that going around antique shop and auction throughout the

world with Yue searching for seemingly good fireplace would also be nice.

At Yue’s room that was becoming a place for relaxation and refreshment like that in a different sense from the living room, it seemed that a guest also visited tonight.

knock knock A small knocking sound could be heard, then,

「Yue-oneecha~n. It’s Myuu nano. Can I come in?」

The voice of Nagumo family’s youngest princess could be heard. When Yue permitted her entry, Myuu who was wearing negligee that seemed matching with Yue came in.

「……Myuu. What’s the matter?」

「Err see, there is something I want to ask Yue-oneechan nano.」

‘What could it be?’ Yue tilted her head in puzzlement while inviting Myuu on her bed. They sat side by side on the bed’s edge and Yue urged Myuu to continue with her gaze.

「You see, Yue-oneechan. ――”In this world there is nothing that can excel continuously. Whether talent or education cannot excel continuously. Continuity and determination themselves are the absolute power” nano.」

Myuu said such thing with a stiff expression. Seeing such Myuu, Yue thought, ‘This child, just what is she suddenly saying I wonder’.

「……Ee~rr, Myuu?」

「――”The secret to make dream come true is summarized into four. Those are curiosity, confidence, courage, and then

continuity” nano.

Ah, yes.

Seeing the little girl proclaiming something that seemed to be a wise saying with stiff and slackless expression, the vampire princess became faltering. As though to deal the finishing blow to such vampire princess, the little girl talked even more vehemently.

——”Putting into diary your’s own thinking, experience, idea, and what you learn, will surely improve the clarity and accuracy of your intelligence” nano.

So that meant,

Yue-oneechan! Myuu is going to keep a diary nano!

……How did it become like that.

While thinking that Myuu was likely getting influenced by some kind of television program, Yue finally guessed the reason of Myuu’s visit tonight.

Yue-oneechan. A diary, what is a good way to write it nano?

……Nn~

It seemed that it was something like that just as she thought. In short, when Myuu actually tried to write a diary, she didn’t understand the way to write it, and so she came to ask Yue who had been keeping diary for a long time.

Yue showed a thinking gesture for a bit before answering.

……There is no particular rule. Myuu can just write what happened and what you thought about in that day as it is

however Myuu like it.

Yue-oneechan. ——”When you’re asked what do you want for dinner? Answering anything is fine is the most troublesome answer” nano. Answering question with “whatever you like” or “as it is” is the most troubling answer nano.

……I’m sorry.

Myuu was finding fault at her! Yue reflexively apologized because of the excessive shock!

At this rate the dignity of “Yue-oneechan” would fall to the ground. That alone had to be firmly prevented no matter what.

Yue was feeling flustered in her heart against Myuu’s *jii~* fixed unblinking gaze while trying to deduce the optimum answer, but it was the fact that there was no fixed rule in writing diary. She wondered how to explain about that……

The point was, it was fine even if it was something vague, but Myuu wanted an image, some kind of approximation like it was fine if she wrote it like this, and so on.

Yue who gave up explaining using words was bluntly speaking a bit embarrassed, but she then suggested a desperate measure to break out of this deadlock, thinking that it might be fine if it was Myuu.

……Just now I was also writing in my diary, do you want to look if you’re fine with mine?

Nn! Nano!

Myuu imitated Yue’s favorite phrase in her happiness. Perhaps from the start that was her objective. With a wry smile Yue took the diary above her desk into her hand.

Myuu seemed to be greatly looking forward to it because she was staring at the thick leather-covered diary with sparkling gaze.

Yue showed a bit of thinking gesture, then she activated metamorphosis magic. Faint golden magic power light enveloped Yue, the right after that, the grown adult Yue appeared there.

The length of the negligee became drastically short, which greatly swelled up her bewitching charm. Even if the person herself didn’t intend it, but she was a peerless beauty who just by being there could make anyone into her prisoner without differentiating gender. Of course, Myuu was only raising voice of admiration 「Oo!」 though.

「……Myuu, sit on my lap.」

「Yes nano!」

Yue sat on the bed while tapping on her thighs. Myuu then leaped on them as though she had been waiting for it. *moni moni* She adjusted the placing of her butt searching for the best position.

And then, *fui~* strength left her body and she entrusted her head on Yue’s voluptuous breast. Yue floated a smile that was filled with affection toward such Myuu and hugged her tightly from behind. She opened the diary on Myuu’s lap.

「……First, how about from——October last month?」

When Yue suggested to show the recent month of her diary, Myuu quickly nodded repeatedly. It seemed that she wanted to read Yue’s diary no matter what.

Yue let out a chuckle while opening the page that was the beginning of last month.

――October x Day

When waking up early, Shia was swinging Doryukken wholeheartedly.

It was while she was raising her voice 「Flatten flatten! Squashed flat!」.

Honestly, it was scary. I was thinking what kind of horror right from the morning.

Because, the cheek of Shia who was smiling wide had something red splattered on it, what’s more, on Shia’s feet there was Tio who was trembling all over while holding her hand……

‘Surely, she is trying to beat Tio to death for a joke’, was what I thought.

It was lucky that there was the millstone for pounding mochi that was often seen at New Year, but if it wasn’t there, I think there was no doubt that there would be a yell of 「Kyaaaa, it’s murdereeeer」.

When I asked why she was hitting mochi and Tio right from the morning, Shia replied with 「What are you saying, Yue-

san. Yesterday night didn’t we talk about viewing the moon today?□.

Certainly, there was such talk.

Moon viewing——the custom to eat mochi while gazing at moon when it’s the day of full moon.

I think that it’s a custom with really good taste.

Night came. I, Hajime, Okaa-sama, Otou-sama, Shia, Tio, Remia and Myuu, then Kaori and Shizuku, and Aiko joined. The moon viewing at the house’s yard began.

The mochi was delicious. The soft and sticky texture was irresistible. As expected from something that was made from Tio’s sacrifice. Although, as expected I wished to be spared from mochi that is mixed with the blood of a pervert dragon……

I who is sensitive with the taste of blood didn’t actually feel the taste of blood, so I wish to believe that no impure thing was mixed inside the mochi.

Putting that aside, the moon was really beautiful. It resembled the moon in Tortus, but there is also slight difference.

Especially the silhouette of rabbit pounding mochi on the moon.

Myuu said □There is Shia-oneechan!□. Her figure making rabbit ears on her head with her hands while hopping up and down was the ultimate cuteness. Especially when Shia joined in and they went pyon pyon together. Of course, I took picture. It’s collector version.

Hajime told Myuu an old story regarding the rabbit on the moon.

Rabbit-san embodied self-sacrifice and devotion…….

The content sound like a moving tale in general, but for me it’s a story that I’m unable to stomach.

I heard that the rabbit had comrade. Why didn’t that comrade stop the rabbit? He didn’t search for the old man’s food together with the rabbit?

If other say that it’s only a story then that’ll be the end of it, but if it’s me, I won’t let the rabbit throw his body into the fire no matter what.

I won’t hand over my Shia to anyone!

While inside my heart the moon rabbit and Shia are mixing, Hajime pat my head. It seemed that I was seen through. His eyes were really gentle, furthermore he was staring focused on me, so I almost assaulted him then and there.

Good grief! Hajime is an outrageously dangerous character. Because he almost destroyed my reasoning right away.

Anyway, after I finish writing this diary I’ll go charging into Hajime’s room.

Returning to the story, I like the moon of earth where rabbit is living more than the one at Tortus. Putting aside that it’s a folk tale, putting “moon and rabbit” together, right, I think it’s really good.

My name, “Yue” that means moon. In the past, at the bottom of abyss, it was the name Hajime gave to me.

Hajime said, inside the darkness, I looked like a moon, so he named me that.

Yes, he gave me the name that represent such beautiful moon that illuminate the night sky tonight.

……It’s impossible. I cannot hold it anymore. Barrier preparation OK. Recovery medicine OK. Fighting spirit at climax!

The time has come, to Hajime’s room, charge!

「Say, Yue-oneechan. What was it that you cannot endure there?」

「……Myuu will understand when you get a little older.」

‘Nmyu?’ Myuu tilted her head. Come to think of it, the next day after the moon viewing, Hajime-papa seemed like he was losing weight……thinking back Yue at that time was all smile with bewitching air. Myuu somehow read the atmosphere and stayed quiet.

「Yue-oneechan.」

「……Nn?」

After a short silence, Myuu asked looking vaguely uneasy.

「See, Myuu too doesn’t really like that story. The rabbit-san dying is a no-no.」

「……Nn.」

「Shia-oneechan, is different from the moon's rabbit right?」

The source of her uneasiness was the same like Yue, it seemed she was mixing the rabbit in legend with their family's rabbit.

Yue hugged Myuu tiiiiiiightly, then she talked to her with a voice that was full of confidence.

「Completely different. If it's Shia she won't give up until the end. Our rabbit is the strongest rabbit after all, she will overcome any trouble no matter how hard it is, and send flying everything that stand in her way.」

「With Doryukken?」

「……Nn. With Doryukken.」

Myuu smiled joyfully. Yue also smiled joyfully.

Yue continued 「Besides……」

「Shia's moon is me. Different from the moon who is only watching. Even if she died I'll revive her no question asked, throwing her back to the earth.」

「Yu, Yue-oneechan……. But, in the story, the great god did that instead isn't it?」

「……I'll kill a god like that.」

「Ah, yes.」

In a rare occurrence, Myuu averted her eyes. It seemed she was unable to look straight at the Yue's gaze that was shining mysteriously. In fact, when thinking that this was the person who took part in godslaying, it didn't sound like a joke at all. If the heaven emperor-sama saw this vampire

princess right now, he would like to hurriedly run away surely. (TN: In the raw it was Taishakuten, which translated mean Sakra devanam Indra, a deity of Hinduism, Jainism, and Buddhism)

Myuu showed a thinking gesture for a bit, then right after that her expression tensed up and she looked back at Yue.

「Myuu too, will get stronger and stronger nano. And then, Myuu will save the rabbit-san even if Myuu have to kill god nano!」

「……Nn! That's a good spirit! As expected, Myuu.」

It was the determination of the little girl who was in the process of inheriting all the technique from her cheat and bugged family. If the rabbit-san who was the symbol of self-sacrifice and devotion was here, surely it would yell 「Stooop! I won't throw myself away, so don't lay your hand on goood!」 with teary eyes undoubtedly.

Yue patted the head of Myuu who was smiling merrily, then Myuu begged Yue to go to the next page.

The page was flipped.

——October ○ Day

Tomorrow, it seems that Kaori will come here. I have to prepare.

——October △ Day

That Kaori-. Suddenly firing disintegration bombardment at me, what a girl! The smartphone I carelessly dropped turned into dust!

Good grief, what a horrible story I think. Even though I only put a little trap, that teleported her to adult shop the instant she entered this house's ground.

But well, she became teary eyed so let's stop here. I'll share my dinner's side dish with her.

「Yue-oneechan……」

「……Wha, what?」

An exasperated gaze that was unthinkable to be coming from Myuu! Large damage to Yue's mind!

Myuu stared for a while at Yue who averted her gaze desperately, as though she wanted to say 「Geez, good grief」. But then Myuu shrugged her shoulders and returned her gaze to the diary as though nothing happened. (TN: The 'geez, good grief' in the raw was worded 'yareyare daze', anyone can suggest a better translation for this?)

Not having anything said to her became an additional blow instead. Yue became teary eyed.

The page was flipped.

——October □ Day

It’s sudden, but I’m thinking to try working part-time. That thing called short-term part-time.

I hear that at the end of the month there will be Halloween. During our journey at Tortus, I heard about it from Hajime once.

In the past, it seemed there was a Halloween gathering in the school, at that time, he was approached by Kaori who was wearing lewd nekomata costume, and Hajime was greatly, realy grea~~~~~tly troubled. Good grief, that secretly lecherous Kaori-.

A Halloween party will also be held in our house with Okaa-sama’s suggestion.

Perhaps, surely, without a doubt, I think that Kaori will come displaying her secretly lecherous nature to the extreme.

I have to prepare!

And so, I’m thinking to prepare some kind of costume too. Of course, it won’t be a mass-produced party goods, but a handmade first-class goods.

It’s a rare chance, so I also want to prepare some kind of present……

Let’s prepare present for everyone. ……And not to forget Kaori’s share too. After all if it’s only her who get left out, surely Kaori will cry.

Come to think of it, when we went shopping together before this, there was a hairpin that she was fixed on right? ……Nn, let’s make it that, and do that. The price will swell up a bit,

but she was making wanting face like that. Good grief, what a greedy person that troubles other.

The money is a bit insufficient with just pocket money to gather present for everyone. I also cannot make Hajime give me the money because it’s present from me.

And so, I’m going to challenge doing part-time that I has been interested at since before.

Hmmm, it’s secret from everyone so I cannot ask them advice. The first part-time work……I’m excited.

「Yue-oneechan, you like Kaori-oneechan too much nano!」

「……I, it’s not like I like her!」

When Myuu pointed out, even though Yue-sama was in adult version, she was shaken up like a child.

She was desperately denying it, but because Myuu understood quite distinctly from the diary that Yue’s mentality was like an elementary schooler who wanted to tease someone that he liked, Myuu was looking at Yue as though she was watching a charming thing.

Yue’s cheeks were getting increasingly redder and she hurriedly flipped to the next page.

――October ◇ Day

My first part-time work was proctoring an exam of a middle school.

There wasn’t many kind of short-term part-time work for one day. This work is what I could immediately get.

As expected, a problem might come up if my height is like usual, so I used metamorphosis magic properly so that I looked like at my twenty before going.

I was wearing a casual suit, stood in front of the students, and distributed the exam paper. I also couldn’t forget to give pointer. Even the students who were clamorous turned serious and sat quietly when it was time.

There was only the tick-tock sound of the clock’s hand advancing and the scratching sound of the students filling the exam paper echoing in the silent period.

……It was boring. Very much so. To the level that I regret it a bit.

Can’t be helped, I tried to think for a bit.

Yes, I am Yue-sensei. A female teacher who will devote my body and soul completely only to one student!

The student is of course, Hajime.

Yue-sensei will give special lesson after school.

A classroom illuminated with setting sun where there will be only the two of us inside……

Hajime who keep glancing at me and cannot concentrate……

I will warn such Hajime while slowly——

「……Myuu, wait. We will skip this part.」

「Why? I want to see nano! What is Yue-sensei doing to papa nano!? “Slowly” doing what nano!?」

「……For goodness’s sake, don’t ask further than that……」

Imitating a student, Myuu raised her hand energetically saying 「Yes!」 and questioned.

Yue-sensei couldn’t answer. She covered her face with both hands and shook her head in refusal. The ears and neck that couldn’t be hidden were blushing bright red.

By the way, Yue-sense at that time was overflowing with sensuality from her wild imagination. The minds of the healthy middle schoolers were greatly thrown out of order and it invited a tragic situation.

Just in case Yue had worn the recognition obstruction glasses, but even with that effect, the impression of 「There is absurdly erotic inspector!」 was engraved into the hearts of the middle schoolers.

Although it was external mock examination, but it was truly terrible thing to do to the important exam of the middle schoolers, but the person herself didn’t realize it so she received her wage normally. She was truly an erotic-terrorist.

The page was flipped.

——October ☆ Day

Today I was doing my second part-time work.

For me who already has the experience of perfectly accomplishing a part-time work, it’s not something to be feared anymore.

That was what I thought, but for some reason it didn’t go well.

The part-time work was being a drama’s extra character.

It was being that person who would sit behind the main character inside a café. It was a simple work where I only needed to wear outfit like office lady and drink coffee suitably.

That was how it should be.

When I noticed, I had job changed into the café’s clerk while I was looking in blank amazement.

I was told that the female for the clerk role suddenly fell sick and couldn’t come, and a need to raise a substitute in a hurry appear.

Based from the age, there was only me who seemed to be usable as the substitute right away.

So that I don’t stand out, I also used metamorphosis magic to change my hair into black other than the recognition obstruction glasses, so I was picked from my plainness.

‘Memorize it in three minutes!’ The assistant who handed me some kind of script told me. I crammed it all and then the filming start.

Even though I did as I was told, they were nitpicking fault saying things like my voice is too lacking in intonation, or I’m too plain.

Incomprehensible.

Wasn’t it forbidden to stand out in order to emphasize the main character……?

Take 2.

‘Thank you for coming!’ I fill such feeling into my voice a bit.

This time it seemed that my eyeglasses reflected the light. It couldn’t be helped, so I did it one more time while paying attention to the light’s angel, but then, the middle-aged man director suddenly came near me and told me to take off the glasses. I wanted to refuse, but this is also work. Following the instruction, I took off the glasses.

The middle-aged director stiffened. The uncle stared at me gogglingly. It was unpleasant so I thought to make lightning dragon, but I did my best and endured. I’m great.

Take 3 without glasses.

I went to the seat of the actor and actress and said my line. They should speak their order then, but both of them froze completely. They were staring at me without blinking. Oi, say your line quickly. How many times you want to repeat this take, was my thought.

When I brushed up my hair in a bit of irritation, even the other staffs turned noisy. From here and there voices like 「Which agency she is from?」「Her name?」「Terrific」「This ain’t the level of extra ain’t it」「Director, the actress is upstaged there!」 came……

The actress was staring at me with a dreadful look. I thought it was Kaori’s Hannya-san.

As I thought, it’s the glasses. When I turned toward the director, he was power walking toward me and questioned persistently. His breathing was rough and his eyes were bloodshot, it was terribly disgusting. He tried to touch, so that was the limit and I escaped after doing Smash.

Being unable to complete a job was really pathetic. Although, at that rate the shooting won’t progress even with me there, so I think only this can’t be helped.

It’s still far away until the target amount of money……

I have to do more work!

「Yue-oneechan. At the TV before this, there was news ‘A mysterious beautiful extra appeared! Please report if you happen to know her!’「There will be reward money for the one who catch her. Could it be……」

「……Am I a rare animal? I won’t do that kind of work anymore. No way, no way.」

「Muu. Yue-oneechan appearing in TV……I wanted to see it nano.」

Seeing Yue shaking her head with rejecting expression, Myuu’s expression turned a bit disappointed.

Although, if Yue appeared behind the TV, it would feel like there was a distance that way, so Myuu changed her mind

thinking ‘Well, doesn’t matter’.

By the way, a certain director who got Smashed later made great advances as big sis director and became a world-famous director.

The page was flipped.

——October # Day

I tried doing part-time work distributing tissue.

No one accepted the tissue.

It couldn’t be helped, so I used Divine Statement. Fuhahah, I finished giving out the tissue in five minutes!

「Yue-oneechan……」

「……Don’t say anything, Myuu.」

Yue quietly averted her gaze from Myuu who was looking back across her shoulder.

——October ♪ Day

A part-time work of walking doggies are really healing. At the path home, a deviant appeared.

Wearing cross necklace and three sword thingy held between his fingers, he suddenly attacked.

I Smashed him and left him behind.

「Yue-oneechan! This part is written out so simply, but surely you were aimed at by really troubling people there nano!」

「……? What are you saying Myuu? Something like deviant is relatively a lot anywhere. It's not rare.」

「That person is absolutely not a deviant nano. Myuu think he was a pro who came for a vampire hunt nano.」

「……I don't really get it, but if he stand in my way then smashing is the only way.」

「Thinking carefully, there is no one except papa who can win against Yue-oneechan nano.」

Myuu sighed in relieve before she shook her head saying 「Nothing at all nano」 toward Yue who was tilting her head in puzzlement of what made caused Myuu to be that alerted. Myuu then urged to continue reading the diary.

――October ※ Day

I tried doing a bit incomprehensible work of substitutng to attend a wedding.

I think that something like blessing is better if received from people who actually want to give it but……

Anyway, it’s for the sake of the bride.

I am Yue. A woman who bless with my all for the sake of a girl’s happiness, even if it’s an “unfamiliar friend”!

Unfortunately outside was raining, but so what. Little things like controlling the weather and generating rainbow of blessing is no big deal!

It went without saying that the venue was in great excitement.

□Yue-oneechan. Some time ago there was a large commotion because of the strange weather……□

□……It’s no good to get fixated at trivial thing.□

□……Yes nano.□

Myuu became a bit wiser. Should be.

——October $ Day

I tried a part-time work of cleaning graveyard.

The chief priest was greatly shocked that the one who came for the work was a young female like me.

When I was sweeping, a family from somewhere came and stood for long in front of a grave. During that time, a person who seemed to be the daughter broke out crying, the person who seemed to be the mother and a person who seemed to be the big brother were desperately consoling her.

It seemed that there was something she wanted to tell to the dead person no matter what.

It was pitiful. Even though it was right before her eyes, but to be unable to convey her feeling……

I was unable to just watch and activated soul magic. The person who she wished for appeared in front of her. The family was taken aback from shock, even the dead person was surprised and screamed 「Hiih, what happened!?」, but at the end it looked like they were able to understand each other, and everything end well.

But, perhaps because of the influence of the activated soul magic, the ground of the graveyard became overflowing with evil spirits of rivers and mountains. A blunder.

It seemed they were somehow revitalized? And then they rampaged.

Even poltergeists were occurring.

Personally, I was feeling ‘damn you’. Because, even though I’ve finally swept the ground!

I am Yue. A ghost buster who is merciless even against the dead!

I swept clean the grave, and also the evil spirit thingy lurking around there thoroughly. I felt really refreshed.

When going home, for some reason the chief priest was kneeling and praying to me though……

Just why in the world? How really mysterious.

「Yue-oneechan. Are you waiting for straight man retort nano?」

「……Myuu. I beg you, don’t look at me like that……」

Myuu’s exasperated gaze stabbed Yue. It felt like showing Myuu the diary also decreased the “Yue-oneechan’s dignity” parameter steadily.

The page was flipped.

——October @ Day

There was Halloween party.

It seemed the information that Nagumo family will do Halloween party was leaked from somewhere, and the classmates charged Nagumo house.

As the participation fee, they prepared a throne and demon king costume for Hajime. The sight of the boys making self-satisfied look and Hajime’s twitching expression left an

impression. In the end, Hajime became great demon king and sat on the throne.

Shia wearing vampire costume was a surprise. Saying 「Today I'm matching with Yue-san desuu」, she made her fang sparkled while laughing. That figure, yep, I thought she is planning to kill me with moe.

What's more. Even Myuu was wearing vampire costume. Both of them approached me saying 「Blood~」「Blood nano~」. Both Shia and Myuu wer adorable!

I am Yue. A woman who will always welcome cute vampires!

As for Tio……perhaps she was a mummy woman I thought. Her whole body was wrapped all around with bandage after all.

……I think to the end it was a costume. Though she was twitching continuously while making expression of ecstasy. Right, surely it was nothing more than act. It also felt like Hajime brought her to the backyard before the party started but, it must be only my imagination.

Shizuku was in white kimono appearance. Perhaps she was costumed as ghost I think. But, midway, Suzu whose costume was a young witch made her wore pink mask. The sigh of her getting dumbfounded was funny as expected.

At the empire, masked pink is still talked as an urban legend, so certainly that must be horror. Perhaps the person herself is thinking that it's a black history, because the moment the mask was fixed, she fell down and hugged her knees.

Otou-sama was werewolf, and Okaa-sama was rabbit. It implicitly said that tonight Okaa-sama will be eaten by Otou-

sama! I thought that it was that kind of meaning, but according to Okaa-sama, 「Bunny girl? What are you saying! That's not it! This is Hauria clan's costume!」 she said, so perhaps it was Otou-sama who would get hunted.

At any rate, they are intimate. I wish for me and Hajime to become husband and wife like them.

Next, Yuka was caught by the girls of the class and turned into magical girl. It was cute. Her trembling figure with magical stick in one hand and bright red face caused the class's boys to raise admiring voice spontaneously.

When Hajime made fun of her 「Magical girl Yuka-chan, is here!」, right away she yelled 「Nagumo you idioo~~~ttt-」 while rushing out, but……

Running through street at night with magical girl appearance……

Feels like the rumor will spread again.

Now then, about the last one, it was the problematic girl. Yes, the master of being secretly lecher that embodied "slyness", Kaori.

That girl, as expected, she really did it.

It seemed that after cat it was dog. She wore dog ears and tail and dressed like Shia when she was at Tortus. According to the girl herself, it seemed that it was a wolf girl costume, but I know the truth. That's a wordless appeal that she want to become Hajime's dog.

'This dog in heat-', I insulted. (TN: Actually if the raw is translated literally, I should use bitch there)

After that, 「Do, don’t say strange thing! If you say that, Yue yourself is a female cat!」 she argued. What a remark. How cheeky. Just what is lewd from miniskirt costume attached with cat ears and tail? I can assert that this is a really modest costume compared to Shia’s usual wear.

In the first place, it’s not female cat. It’s Yue-nyan. The nekomata Yue-nyan who Hajime cannot stop loving. The level. The level is different from the dog in heat Kaori.

Anyway, I repel doggy Kaori who is loitering around searching for her owner with cat punch while enjoying the Halloween party until the end. I think that it will be nice if next year we can do this again.

That aside, when I went to the backyard searching for Myuu who was gone in the middle of the party, Myuu was talking friendlily with someone wearing pumpkin head and mantel though……

Just who in the world was that?

「That person was Jack-san nano.」

Myuu casually answered the question written at the end of October’s diary. Yue went 「Who?」 while tilting her head.

「……I know that. Because he wore the costume of Jack o Lantern right? That’s not it, I’m asking who was inside the costume. When I asked later, everyone said that they didn’t wear such costume.」

「?? Jack-san is Jack-san nano.」

「……E~rr?」

「Jack-san was a really bad person nano. He cannot go to both heaven and hell and is wandering in this world forever nano. He said that he is seriously reflecting. Right now he is doing good thing with his all nano. That's why, he became friend with Myuu nano.」

'What to do', Yue thought. In the end, was this that kind of "setting"? Or else, perhaps it was that. It couldn't be said as far as Myuu's "bad habit", but that troubling "disposition" of Myuu, was it calling out another something again……?

When looking at Myuu's serious face, Yue somehow felt that it was the case of the latter.

Yue's expression was turning troubled while deciding that she would report to Hajime later just in case. She then patted Myuu's head.

「……Anyway, a diary is something like this. Whether the way of the writing, the sentence amount, or the day you write it, it's okay if you write as you like it.」

「I somehow get it nano. Thank you, Yue-oneechan!」

It seemed that Myuu managed to get the image of a diary in her mind.

Yue wished that Myuu would write her own diary without stopping by all means. If Myuu did that, then perhaps she would be able to grasp more detail of Myuu's mysterious friendship.

After that, Myuu begged that she wanted to read Yue's diary when she was at Tortus, after Hajime's group parted with

her, but it was already time to sleep, so Yue said that it would be for another time.

‘I’m not sleepy nano!’ Myuu insisted. It seemed that she was really pleased with “Yue’s Diary”. Though for Yue personally it was really embarrassing and damaging……

Even the strongest vampire princess couldn’t win against the begging of the youngest princess of Nagumo family.

In the end, they finished the diary reading for this night and they ended up sleeping together on Yue’s bed. From this day, Yue and Myuu would open diary reading group with just the two of them at night for quite a while.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

It’s After III from today.

There is no particular reason, but I’m just feeling like it.

Also, I want to write several chapters of brief story that will end up as long After.

PS

The comic version is updated.

Please go take a look if you like!

From Overlap-sama’s homepage!

Arifureta Chapter 286

Arifureta After III Shia Arc Lovely Base Search

A clear, cloudless sky. Hot weather. Trees growing so abundantly that it could be considered a dense forest. A large, light-brown river that was winding throughout it like a snake.

At a certain place in a certain country along the river, two foreigners, a male and a female, were traveling by foot on a path without any pavement but was created by the passing of a long year.

"Coming to this kind of place right from the middle of Japan's city makes it feel like returning to Tortus, doesn't it? Well, this side is lovelier though simply due to the lack of a heavy mist covering it like in the sea of trees."

"It more or less feels hotter than Haltina's sea of trees though."

The two people walking along the previously mentioned long road, which perhaps would make one exaggerate and call it an "endless road", with light steps were Shia and Hajime.

Unusually, Shia was wearing her light-bluish white hair tied together in a ponytail by a largish ribbon. Her lively footsteps made her hair and the rabbit ears, which could only be seen by Hajime, prance around *pyon pyon* energetically. (The ribbon was an artifact which made ordinary people unable to recognize the rabbit ears.)

Shia was wearing a plain cutter shirt with its sleeves rolled up, short pants, and short boots while carrying a large bag on her back. The rucksack that had the mark of a winking bunny on it seemed to make the statement that「This is Shia's property desu」.

Hajime was also dressed in a white simple cutter shirt and jeans. As expected, he was also carrying a large bag on his back.

「Hey, Shia. Is it no good if I take out Schuteif?」

Hajime suddenly asked. His gaze was directed toward the sun blazing down on them while his hand was wiping the faint sweat trickling down his forehead using the wristband on his wrist. The emotion of 「I don't want to walk anymore, troublesome!」 was oozing out together with the sweat.

Hajime suggested to move using a bike; however, Shia made an X – mark using her hands, full of energy,j to show her rejection.

「No! We rarely travel with just the two of us like this! Advancing so quickly like that is no good.」

「Even if you say that……」

「Geez. This act of meaninglessly walking, and also this surrounding with an unchanging scenery consisting of only

a dense forest and river, how can Hajime-san not enjoy them.

It’s because of the meaninglessly walking and the unchanging scenery that I want to ride on Schuteif……

Hajime-san, you bean sprout kid! Traveling is something done with public transportation or by your own feet!

Don’t you start saying things like Aby——like Endo.

Even though Hajime let out a long sigh ‘haa’, he raised both his hands in an expression of surrender in order to respond to Shia’s wish.

In the first place, why were these two here in this kind of foreign land, in the backwoods overflowing with nature which was unrelated to civilization?

In the first place, if we were just going to search out prospective land for the Hauria clan’s Earth settlement, we could just find the optimum place using the Compass and teleport there using the Crystal Key. Convenient tools are fundamentally forbidden on our trip this time desu! After all, this is a date under the guise of searching for prospective land!

I get it; I get it. After all, it has been really long since it was just the two of us alone. This time I’ll fully go along with your demand.

In other words, it was like that.

The Hauria clan who remained behind in Tortus was in the middle of steadily expanding their power even now. Taking down the Empire, liberating slaves, heroic achievements in the legendary decisive battle……through all that, the Hauria

clan was abusing their name as the clan that was recognized by everyone as the strongest among the beastmen.

Admiration, sympathy, flattery. There were various reasons, but naturally, at present, a lot of the rabbit-man clans were merging with the Hauria clan. There were also a great number of people who, while belonging to other races, went down on their knees wanting to become the Hauria clan’s subordinate.

Their subordinates came from the Kingdom, the Dukedom, also the Church; not to mention the Empire territories too. Furthermore, there were even those from the South Continent.

As that continued, they finally wanted to put a base on Earth too and came to Hajime for consultation.

They said that eventually they wished to raise a secret clan that would serve the Nagumo family even through its descendants.

Hajime plainly replied 「Eh? No need」, but Kam and the others doggedly pushed the idea. Not just them, but the whole clan was doggedly begging. 「It’s for the future generations! Please let our clan stay at your side! Forever and ever at your side! Bossss!」 A group of middle-aged men with rabbit ears growing on their heads were wailing while clinging onto Hajime like that.

As a result, Hajime compromised because each time he went to Tortus, they appeared every time, everywhere. The middle-aged rabbit-eared men staring at him with wanting eyes, or possibly moist, sad eyes……

Hajime’s heart couldn’t endure.

「Rather, if they are going to move to this side, they can just live normally in the city. Just live in Japan directly.」

「Because there is the Hauria's exclusive "gate" after all~. It doesn't matter where the base will be located; it won't be that much of a hindrance. As expected, the beastmen will calm down the most in the middle of a forest. Perhaps a savage land, no, that's going too far, but inside the forest of a developing country where people don't really go into will be especially good.」

「……Before long, it feels like the rabbit-eared clan will be featured on TV like "Eyewitness testimony in an undeveloped land! Is it a new UMA!?".」

「Ahaha, my family isn't that soft that they can be apprehended by a TV crew you know~」

Shia cackled while holding her stomach, but Hajime wondered about it.

The guts of a TV crew couldn't be underestimated. If it was for the sake of increasing their audience rates, then they would go anywhere as far as their budget would allow.

And then, what was especially terrifying was the cameraman. They were shouldering their camera while closely following a star or professional right beside them whether they were going to a savage land, dangerous region, or climbing the highest mountain in the world.

Even in a situation where a star would whine 「No more!」 looking like they were really at their limit, where the viewers would unconsciously go 「Do your best!」 in front of their television, the cameraman would merely stay silent, recording that image perfectly to send it to the viewer's living room.

Frankly speaking, every time Hajime watched that kind of program, he wondered if the profession of cameraman could only be done by superhumans. He thought of things like perhaps if a guy with a vocation of “cameraman” on his status plate appeared in Tortus, wouldn’t that guy be the strongest?

「Well, they can do as they please if they won’t reap the head of every fellow they encounter.」

「How rude! What does Hajime-san think my family is! Even if some TV personnel come, such a thing……such a thing…… won’t happen, you know?」

「Stop it, don’t speak in a question. As the daughter of the clan head declare it clearly there.」

Shia insisted that “They aren’t a savage clan desuu!’, but midway through it seemed she lost her confidence. Toward the end of her sentence, her voice was vanishing. Hajime was half-joking, but he shuddered because it might become a reality. Perhaps a lecture would be needed before they moved to this side.

By the way, before their trip this time, it was Yue’s suggestion that he went with only Shia. It seemed she guessed what was inside of Shia’s heart 「I want to go on a date with just the two of us sometime desuu.」. Yue encouraged the two of them by saying ‘It’s a nice time for you to accept the proposal of Kam and the others, so how about going traveling while searching for prospective land?’.

What first wife power it was. It went without saying that for a while after Shia hugged Yue tightly and didn’t let go.

Like that, it was a trip to search for a base on Earth for an environment that resembled the sea of trees for the Hauria

clan——that was the cover. Shia’s rabbit ears were suddenly twitching in reaction as they were leisurely enjoying the overseas trip with just the two of them.

「Mu? Hajime-san, there is a human presence. It’s far but…… it looks like there is quite a commotion.」

「Commotion? Is it something troublesome?」

「No, if I have to say, it feels like cheers.」

「Hmm? Is it a festival or something?」

Hajime tilted his head. Shia tilted her rabbit ears while saying 「I don’t know about that」.

The footpath in front of them bent greatly. The dense forest obstructed their sight ahead. However, there wasn’t any other path that seemed like a path, so Hajime and Shia nodded to each other and advanced forward just like that.

Before long, even Hajime’s ears started to catch the sound of cheering, and from there they advanced along the path as though circling around the dense forest for five minutes.

The two finally discovered the source of the cheers.

「Woow! It’s a village inside this dense forest. What’s more, it really is a festival just like we thought so. It’s lucky desuu!」

「Festival? Is that a festival?」

An unforeseen encounter in the middle of their trip! Beside Shia, whose tension was rising, Hajime had a「?」 mark floating over his head.

「I’ve seen it on TV before, but it seems in this world there are also festivals with the main event of jabbing at each

other like a fight. This village is also the same!

Just as Shia said, a stage like a boxing ring was created in the village, and two burly young men were standing on it while punching each other. The villagers were gathered around the ring while clamoring hectically.

Hajime looked doubtful because the young men looked quite bloody. He thought whether it was too stimulating for a festival's sideshow, but watching carefully, everyone looks like they were having fun. A lot of food and drinks had also been prepared. It didn't seem mistaken that it was a festival.

Come on Hajime-san! Let's try going there too!

You are highly tensed huh. I get it, so don't pull my hand.

Shia hopped around like a child while pulling Hajime's hand. Her rabbit ears were also moving wildly with an unruly high tension, expressing the inside of Shia's heart really clearly.

Hajime's mouth couldn't stop loosening into a smile seeing Shia as such. He let his hand be pulled by Shia. The emotion residing inside his eyes was extraordinarily gentle.

On the other hand, the villagers also noticed Hajime and Shia.

They had darkish skin and black hair with finely chiseled features. At a glance, their appearance was different from that of Hajime and Shia. Also, their clothing, which didn't resemble a tribe of an undeveloped land, were familiar things like T-shirts, short pants, and so on. But the appearance of Hajime and Shia, who were in the middle traveling, made it quickly clear that the two of them were foreign travelers.

That must be why. The villagers who noticed them expressed shock with their eyes turning round, and they immediately raised their voice toward the people around them. The people who noticed had their eyes similarly opened wide when they saw Hajime and Shia and were pointing their fingers at them.

「Nice to meet you! You can call me Shia! Everyone, is it okay for us to watch the festival too?」

Full of liveliness, Shia, who said such a thing with a wide affable smile, caused the eyes of the villagers to turn even rounder with shock.

The choker around Shia's neck was instilled with "Language Comprehension". The thing called a language barrier didn't exist.

Nevertheless, from the point of view of the locals who didn't know about such outrageous circumstances, it looked like a young girl, who was obviously a foreigner, was fluently talking in their own language. It was only natural that they were surprised.

But, their expression burst into smiles without even any cautiousness.

「What a rare guest! Of course, it's fine! Come over here!」

「My my, it must be hard to come to this kind of place. Now, please drink this.」

「Uwaa, somehow there is a foreigner here!」

「You've got good timing coming during this fighting festival day.」

They talked to Shia one after another. The children of the village were also shuffling to gather toward the foreigner that was unusual here.

As expected, Shia’s smile and affable atmosphere seemed to be the greatest magic to dispel everybody’s vigilance. The innocent rabbit who was sparkling with curiosity invited smiling faces from the villagers.

「Fighting festival? Is it a festival for fighting?」

「That’s right. Once a year we decide the strongest person in the village. The family of the winner can receive favorable treatment for a year. They will receive bigger shares of the hunting and fishing, and they will get more shares from the things we barter in the city.」

「Most of all, the champion will be respected. It’s about honor. That’s why the young men of the village train since they are little. They were told that they absolutely have to become a champion once in their life.」

「Hoe~」

Shia looked at the ring above with an expression of admiration and understanding. The two young men there kept concentrating and punching at each other regardless of the sudden appearance of the foreigners. Although it was a festival, it was certain that it was also a serious battle that concerned their honor.

「Somehow, their moves resemble Muay Thai. It looks like they have the proper form, but it’s different from just simply punching each other. It must have a long history.」

「Oo, you get it?」

Hajime was slurping down a sweet juice that he received from the village’s grandma while muttering. Hearing that, a muscular middle-aged man made an admiring expression.

「Long ago in the past, in order to hunt and fight other villages, the men of the village learned various martial arts, and it kept being handed down until even now. It’s called Uga.」

「Of course, right now it’s only used during the festival.」

「But in order to win that festival, as expected it’s necessary to learn Uga, so the men of the village all learn it from their fathers.」

By now, they normally use tools both in hunting and fishing after all. The village’s men laughed while explaining.

「And, why are you two here? You two are really fluent in our tongue, but you aren’t someone from around here right?」

「Yeah. We’re only traveling where it struck our fancy. Looking at the map, it seems there is quite a big city at the upper section of this river, so, for now, we are going that way.」

「Aah, Puhang City. That place is near the place where the branch streams are merging, and there are also a lot of restaurants with delicious foods there. However, if you are going there by foot right now, the sun will set for sure before you arrive there, you know?」

「Well, at that time we’re going to camp out.」

Hajime shrugged. To which the uncles frowned. Their gaze was directed toward Shia who was swinging her fist while cheering 「Gooo desuu! There desuu! Aa, do your best!

Stand up-, stand up Joeeee!」 together with the grandmas. (TN: Reference to Ashita no Joe)

By the way, the name of the downed young man was Urt. The grandma beside Shia gave a straight man retort of 「My kid's name is Urt you know! Who is Joe!?」.

「Oi oi. You said you're going to make that cute girl sleep out in the open? Around this area isn't that particularly dangerous, but it's not safe by any means, you know?」

「Yeah. I heard that recently delinquents from other villages are loitering around. Naturally, there are also animals.」

The village uncles seemed to worry from the bottom of their hearts; they were good people. Even while saying thanks to them Hajime repeated,

「It's fine. We are used to traveling, and we are strong.」

The village uncles were getting increasingly worried, thinking that it might be the excessive confidence of a foreign traveler. They unanimously suggested that the two of them should stay in the village for today. One reason they were doing this was because they could understand each other's words, but they were also really good people.

Amidst that, Shia, who was together with the villagers, no, rather she was taking up a position near the center of the villagers by the time Hajime noticed, was doing shadow boxing perhaps because she got heated up from watching while saying out advice-like things.

「Mister, what are you doing! Please look carefully at your opponent! He has a habit in his movements! See through it and then gouge him out!」

shu-shu-shu-shu-shu-shu-BAM! Consecutive punches that shook the air were unleashed. From Shia.

Those deft punches that looked like they were generating afterimages caused the people around to feel shocked 「uwah」 while taking a distance from her.

「Oo! Just now looks like a technique! Make the one-two into a decoy and then combine with the elbow! Like this, is it!」

One-, Two-, elbow strike! Shia-chan was perfectly tracing and stealing the technique that downed the opponent on the ring just now.

Different from boxing, it seemed there wasn't any countdown even when one side had fallen onto his knee. The downed young man rose up with guts while launching a sweeping kick. In addition, right after that kick was evaded a roundhouse kick from the opposite leg came!

「Splendid combo from kneeling! Like this, is it!」

Shia-chan perfectly traced it as expected. No, rather no matter from where anyone looked, Shia's movement was clearly sharper than the two fighters on the ring. It was an adroit movement. The moment Shia launched a kick, *GOU-* the wind groaned!

Gazes were gradually gathering on Shia rather than on the ring.

The girl of a foreign country who perfectly traced and absorbed the martial arts handed down in their village just from watching the motion of two people fighting……it was understandable that it gathered more interest than the important fight.

「Hajime-san, Hajime-san! It really makes the blood boil, doesn't it!」

「Right, I guess.」

The disappointed rabbit that once said 「I'm no good at fighting desuu」 didn't exist anymore. In her place, there was only a superhuman rabbit whose blood would seethe and her flesh dance if there was hand-to-hand combat. The incarnation of a bugged character, the martial arts maniac who would beat to death even god's apostle.

Thinking back on the past Shia who would blunder every time she was doing something, Hajime couldn't help but get a distant look.

But, at that time, the fight on the ring was finally settled. It seemed the next fight would be the final. The young man who won would fight the last year's champion.

However……

「Aa, looks like this will be a bit harsh for Urt.」

「It looks like just standing is all he can manage.」

Urt-kun, who managed to advance to the finale, seemed like he would have to withdraw from the fight.

「Oh my~. It was a good match, so I looked forward to the finale too though……it's unfortunate.」

「Well, even if you say that, with the current Urt he is still not a match against Bantas.」

Shia tilted her head toward the villager who spoke with a wry smile.

「That’s the strongest man in this village currently. He has been hogging the champion title for nearly fifteen years already. He is really strong. It’s to the degree that recently rather than the championship, defeating Bantas is the real honor!」,people said.

「Hoe~. So there is an absolute champion here.」

Looking closer, Bantas, who earned the title of the champion because the opponent withdrew, was being congratulated by the whole village. Different from Urt-kun, there was only some hit marks on his body without looking like he was really wounded. He was a huge man whose age was around forty. He really had the appearance of the fighting festival champion that would make anyone nodded in understanding of his status.

Bantas climbed on the ring and put on a show by lifting up the champion trophy that looked aged. The villagers sent him an applause and cheer. Hajime and Shia also sent him an applause together.

There, Bantas suddenly turned his gaze to Hajime and Shia.

「This is a rare chance. If you like, how about participating in the fighting festival?」

Above the ring, Bantas was gesturing with his hand in an inviting motion. It was clear that it was an invitation to try fighting him. His gaze was turned once at Shia before turning to Hajime in amusement. From there it was clear that he was referring to Hajime.

「Of course, I won’t fight seriously. I’ll go easy on you, but this is a rare chance so you can show off to your girlfriend――」

「It’s really okay!? I really, really wish to be allowed to participate desuu!」

「Eh?」

Bantas-san’s eyes turned into dots. The villagers’ eyes also turned into dots.

At the same time, Shia hopped *pyon* lightly and jumped on the ring. She rotated her wrist around and turned around her ankle. She jerked around her neck to warm up.

「What a fortuitous thing to be able to directly experience the unique martial arts that are handed down in this village deep inside the forest! I’m grateful for your hospitality desuu!」

「Eh?」

「No need for holding back any, please come at me seriously desuu!」

「Eh?」

「Now, come at me yaah! Desuu!」

BAAM- The sound of the air rupturing resounded. It was the sound of Shia-chan hitting her fists together. For such a sound to resound when it wasn’t expressly a clap was because there was a shockwave generated from that gesture……

「Wa, wait you! Is it okay that you don’t stop your girlfriend!?」

「If it’s Bantas then he will surely go easy on her skillfully, but there is a lot of dangerous techniques in Uga, you

know!

The villagers spoke up worriedly. Above the ring, Bantas also couldn’t hide his bewilderment.

No, rather from my point of view, it’s that girl who looks like she is too high-spirited that I’m worried about the opponent instead though……. I won’t say anything bad. Just stop fighting Shia.

On the other hand, If you’re going to fight, remember to hold back okay, Shia! End it in a good vibe, don’t forget! Hajime urged caution to the high-tensioned Shia who he worried would overdo it.

Doing something like beating up the leading part of the festival of the village who were welcoming them was something that would make the later development to be the most awkward it could be. Hajime-san was staring worriedly at the unruly rabbit ears.

Hajime’s words that weren’t to stop his lover, they weren’t even saying ‘I’ll fight in her place!’, rather they were worrying for the absolute reigning champion Bantas caught the villagers off-guard, and they got tongue-tied.

But, Bantas was instead coming out of his bewilderment. For someone to think that it was only natural for a young girl to go easy on him……his pride as the absolute champion was stimulated.

Something like the fist of a girl wouldn’t even be an itch against his trained body no matter how hard it hit. Then, he would at least let himself get hit and show an imperturbable presence despite that. Then, in the end, he would get serious and stop just an inch before his fist hit, which would

open the eye of these foreigner travelers. His fighting spirit overflowed with that decision.

「Good grief, making his own lover fight, as a man your boyfriend is really unbecoming.」

「Here I comeee!」

Shia-chan wasn’t listening at all.

Bantas shrugged his shoulders in exasperation. He imagined the light slap of a girl while spreading his hands in a pose of 「Come at me from anywhere」.

When he looked closer at Shia, who was mimicking the Uga stance, he noticed she was making a shockingly beautiful face. Honestly, she must be the most beautiful female he had ever seen until now. In a sense, to be able to spend a playful time with this kind of super first-class beautiful girl…… Bantas’s face almost broke into a grin thinking about it……

「SHAORAAAAAAA-!!」

「Eh?」

A war cry exploded, and an impact sound akin to a cannon exploding resounded the moment she took a step forward.

Within an instant Shia’s figure was right before Bantas’s eyes. Without any time to even become conscious of it, a twisting BODY BLOW! generated an impact sound akin to a cannon firing once again!

「GOHOOH!?」

The grinning face distorted grandly from the impact and was replaced by shock and light panic. But, the rabbit with sky-high tension was swinging her fist with a cheerfully smiling face.

「If I remember right; it's like this!」

Traditional martial art's hidden technique (imitation)! The copied technique assaulted Bantas!

「Oy, wai-, gefuu!?」

「Ora ora ora ora ora ora-! Desuu!」

Left then right, Bantas-san continued to get toyed with. The villagers got into an uproar!

Seeing Shia, who was absorbed with testing out the technique that she newly acquired, Hajime covered his face with his hand saying 「So it's just as I thought」. For now, if this continued then the absolute champion's heart would break, so Hajime put a stop to Shia with telepathy that was on the level of a sound explosion.

Shia went 'hah' in surprise and stopped moving.

「Qyu, qyuite something, a, aren't you……」

The absolute champion who was already dead on his feet was desperately keeping his pride. It really looked as though he wanted to say 「Just now I purposefully got hit without fighting back, you know? It's true, you know? There is no damage at all from your attack. I'm not lying, okay.」.

The villagers were deathly quiet.

As expected, Shia too seemed to realize that she got too carried away. She smiled to varnish over the awkwardness.

「As, as expected from the champion. I don't get the feeling that I'll be able to win no matter what.」

The absolute champion looked like he was going to faint at any moment now.

Hajime sighed. He secretly sent out a spider-shaped living golem "Arachne" under Bantas. Arachne's leg struck a needle *pshew* into Bantas's ankle.

Bantas didn't notice at all because of the pain all over his upper body. Far from noticing, the damage was leaving from him rapidly, and he was staring in wonder at his own body.

「Wha, what? The pain is suddenly receding……. Ah, no, it's not like I was pained or anything from the start. My body feels light somehow but……hah, don't tell me, did I receive god's divine protection?」

It seemed they also had their own faith. The mysterious experience was thanks to god.

Actually, it was the apology of the demon king, but he surely couldn't even imagine that.

'I can fight like this! This beautiful girl in front of me too. I'm not thinking of her as a normal girl anymore!' Bantas-san thought, and he stepped forward.

「UOOOOOOOH」

「Nice spirit! Please show me your technique desuu!」

A clash. The fist, leg, and elbow strike from both sides collided into each other like surging waves. A terrific exchange of offenses was unfolding.

「As I thought, my body is light! Strength is welling up! Oh god! My gratitude to you! Right now, I will display the greatest battle that will ever exist!」

Bantas-san’s tension was rising. Though it wasn’t god’s divine protection, but just doping……

「HAAAAAAAAAAAH!!」

「Urya-rya-rya-rya-rya-rya! Desuu!」

A terrific kind of fight that was never seen before!

Even the villagers who fell deathly silent finally returned to their senses from witnessing that heated fight. They began raising their cheers with a mentality of 「Who cares about the trivial details anymore, huh!」.

「Keep going, missy! That’s absurd, oi!」

「Bantas! Get a hold of yourself! Don’t lose to a girl younger than you!」

「O, oi! That girl, did she use the hidden technique just now!?」

「Thi, this is a great match that happens only once a century!」

The fierce fight between the absolute champion who received the doping of the demon king’s specially made medicine unknowingly and the bugged rabbit who outdid

even the god’s apostle (body strengthening level I) became a hectic great furor in the village.

After that, the battle between the two ended up in a draw with nice feelings (Shia fixed the match properly). Bantas smiled wryly while taking Shia’s hand and lifted it up high to the sky. Then a grand applause echoed in response to it.

Shia, who got down from the ring, was crowded by the villagers, especially the children. They bombarded her with questions like how could she become that strong, and just who in the world she was.

Hajime also went through the same thing. He was given a storm of questioning and praise like ‘Just what in the world is your lover?’ while his shoulder and back kept getting clapped.

In the end, even when the sun had set, the atmosphere didn’t show any signs of cooling down. They ate and drank while Shia was exhibiting other martial arts like karate or eight extremities fist or capoeira and so on, and the place got even more heated up. In the end, she held a bout with Hajime 「Even the boyfriend is strong!?」 which shocked the villagers to their heart’s content.

「Ahahaa~, it was really fun. Getting heated up with the locals that you accidentally meet. This is exactly the real pleasure of traveling!」

Shia was in an extremely good mood. Hajime was making the bed (complete removal of dust and mite using Arachne) while smiling back 「You’re right」.

The party broke up after a fashion and right now they were staying at the house of a certain husband and wife. They were lent a room because the villagers wished for them to

stay no matter what as their thanks for showing them a magnificent fight.

Shia sat down with a plop on the bed that had been cleaned while her rabbit ears were swinging *piko piko*.

「Incidentally Hajime-san. I have a bit of rabbit good news.」
(TN: This is a play of words using the kanji. There is a word ‘mimiyori’ which means welcome news. The ‘mimi’ means ear, and Shia added the word rabbit before it.)

「What do you mean by rabbit good news? You can just say good news normally right……and, what is it?」

「I heard from the villagers, it looks like there are some ruins deep in the back regions far away upstream where no one is living.」

「Ruins?」

Shia, who was lying upside-down with her legs and rabbit tail kicking around, nodded.

「Yes. It’s really old, and the locals don’t really go near it. They said it’s cursed or something……」

「So to speak, it’s like a horror spot huh……. And?」

Hajime also sat on the bed while asking. Shia rolled around and put her head on Hajime’s lap. She rubbed her cheek on Hajime’s thigh.

「It seems that this country’s investigation team and foreign research team once went there to investigate, but in the end, they didn’t find anything, and from the style of the ruins, they concluded that most likely in the past it was used as a dwelling spot for people. It’s not really recognized as

historically valuable. Even us can enter if we go there, you know?」

「In other words, you want to try seeing it?」

「Yes desu.」

Hajime patted her rabbit ears. Hajime's hand was loving the rabbit ears on a subconscious level. Shia's body was shuddering pleasantly. Her eyes were getting slightly moist.

「Well, isn't that fine? The more unexplored and uninhabited the area is the better it is for Hauria's earth base, right? Let's set the backwoods area further than the ruins as our target. We'll go and take a look around there while we're at it. If people don't go near it, then those ruins might become one kind of boundary line to push away people.」

「Nh. Going deeper than the ruins, nn~, it feels like there will be a dense forest that is really untouched by human hand, fuwaa」

Pat pat. *Pat pat*. Shia's voice was starting to get mixed with sweetness even while they were talking. Even while having a lap pillow, Shia's hands were going around Hajime's waist and began to hug tightly.

「I see. Then tomorrow we will go to Puhang only to have a meal and resupply there. After that, we will aim for those ruins.」

「Yeees, desuu~. By, by the way, Hajime-saaan」

「Hm?」

Shia spoke with a sweet voice and melting expression that was dripping with bewitchment.

「Errr, the ba, barrier……the wall looks thin so……」

「It’s okay. Don’t worry.」

Hajime got it even without Shia finishing her sentence. He already finished laying countermeasures. The group of Arachne-san had finished deploying a barrier with each of them as the starting point.

The light inside the room vanished.

Under the moonlight shining in from the window, the shadow of the two slowly became one as though it was only natural.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

It’s Shia’s arc, but it won’t be a long arc (in the plan).

For Shia’s long arc, I’m planning it to be the teleportation incident from Akihabara.

But that story will not involve the other members at that time……

During the After Story, there isn’t a single chapter where Shia is the main, so I wanted to write a story for her where it’s just her with Hajime.

PS

This story became ranked 2.

Thank you very much for the many congratulatory comments!

Please take care of [Arifureta] from here on too!

Arifureta Chapter 287

Arifureta After III Shia Arc Raised! The Flag is Raised!

Hajime and Shia, who left the village even while the villagers were reluctant to see them go, were aiming straight for the city of Puhang upstream.

They were stuffing their cheeks with bread that looked like nan, with a lot of meat in between, that was kindly given to them by the villagers when they left. They were eating while advancing along the river that still had the coldness of the morning remaining.

「Delish- desuu. I missed the chance to ask, but what kind of meat is this?」

「I wonder. This feeling of overflowing wild taste, it somehow reminds me of when I was in the Abyss……」

Hajime and Shia were going ‘delicious delicious’ in a display of gluttony regardless of the fact that it hadn’t even been a few hours since they received breakfast.

「In any case, they were a pleasant bunch, weren’t they. That……Wandam? Though I cannot say the same about the way he was looking at me.」

「It’s Bantas-san. Certainly, it was a beautiful spinning kick. Though it’s still not at the level of a certain muscular actor.」

Shia laughed loudly. Bantas, who fought a young girl to a draw, got high spirited when Hajime and Shia exhibited a mock fight with sublimely advanced fighting styles. He begged to also have a match with Hajime by any means.

The way Hajime fought compared to Shia left an impression of boorishness that couldn’t be erased. It didn’t have the flowing elegance of “martial arts” that was backed with history like Shia’s, who was adopting various hand-to-hand fighting techniques.

Although, Hajime’s taijutsu that was sublimated by accumulating real battle after real battle where his life was on the line should be said as the height of rationality.

His figure perfectly handling the entirety of Shia’s flowing offense that was like a surging wave using the minimum movement necessary made anyone who watched it feel beauty from it in its own way.

Not just Bantas, it also went without saying that the men of the village had their blood boiling.

「Hajime-san, sometimes you are strangely popular among the males, just like with Tou-sama(father) and others. Especially among the beefy people……」

「Stop it, don’t say any more.」

Recalling how the village males were approaching him with their muscles twitching, Hajime shuddered while shaking his head. Shia raised a chuckle seeing Hajime react so.

「They said that they wanted us to come again next year. They expressly gave us the invitation, so let's come again while bringing a souvenir next time, okay Hajime-san?」

「……I guess.」

Shia expressed her happiness at the unexpected chance meeting on the trip with a wide smile. Her rabbit ears were also whooshing around.

However, Hajime showed a bit of a thinking gesture while agreeing. Shia thought 「Eh? He isn't enthusiastic?」 while she peeked at Hajime's expression with a bit of unease.

Hajime smiled wryly thinking that he was worrying Shia and spoke while patting her head *pon pon*.

「Don't make that kind of face. I'm just thinking a bit.」

「Thinking……is it?」

「Yeah. I'm thinking that if you are enjoying it that much, then perhaps it's fine to make the travel date with just Shia a custom for once a year at least.」

「Hajime-san!」

Her rabbit ears stood straight *Pi—n-!* The lovely suggestion caused Shia's eyes to sparkle with stars of delight, and then she leapt at Hajime while glittering with joy.

And then without pause, she puckered her lips 「Nn~~」 and approached for a kiss.

「I get it that you're happy, so, for now, how about you clean up the food scraps around your mouth first?」

Shia’s face became bright red, and her body backed away gracefully.

It was a rare occurrence, but sometimes, like just now, Shia became a disappointing rabbit. Hajime fondly watched such Shia with affection, and then he personally cleaned Shia’s mouth. Shia look embarrassed, but she kept her eyes closed.

Toward such Shia, Hajime brought his face closer to continue where they left off even though it was early in the morning. Shia, who felt his presence, also leaned her body forward in response……

「A?」

「Hmm?」

Both of them simultaneously turned their gaze deep inside the forest. *rustle rustle* The sound of feet treading firmly on vegetation resounded faintly.

「It’s not some animal, isn’t it?」

「There was the talk about the youngsters of other villages loitering around, but……」

Now then, what could be the reason for them being here? The answer immediately became clear.

「So it’s really true. There are a foreigner man and woman here.」

「Oo, they got various pricey looking things on them.」

「The girl is drop dead gorgeous.」

「Whatever, as expected foreign tourists are idiots, huh. Taking in sights defenselessly in this kind of place.」

Just from that conversation, it was clear that these were the insolent people the villagers warned them about.

While the fighting festival was happening that merrily, surely the rumor about a foreign couple with affluent looks, just from their nice belongings, would quickly spread to the other villages too.

Tourists visiting dangerous places with a sightseeing mood without really gathering information about the locals and even without the self-awareness of how ignorant, rash, and reckless they were acting while holding a groundlessly optimistic view that it was impossible for misfortune to befall them……

This rude bunch was surely aiming for that kind of tourists, who were just begging to be robbed.

With a grin on their faces, the robber look-alikes were gathering while showing something that looked like rifles, even though they looked old.

「This kind of people exist no matter what world it is, isn’t it? Well, it doesn’t matter. Right here, with the fist of Uga that I had just learned, I will teach them the harshness of socie——」

The moment Shia clenched her fist to give them a lesson,

——*DOPAN-DOPAN-DOPAN-DOPAN-*

Consecutive gunshot sounds echoed inside the forest. At the same time, the young men showing up from inside the forest were disappearing into the forest as though in a video playback. More accurately, they were sent flying, or perhaps it should be called as knocked flying.

「Wha-, wha-, this guy——」

「He is carrying a gun! Run――」

「Sto, stop! We aren’t planning anything! Look, I’m putting down the gun! So don’t sho――」

Everyone peacefully returned back deep into the forest. There was no exception.

「Be thankful, tearfully, that you guys at least didn’t get returned to the earth.」

Mercilessly, no, just using a stun bullet was already merciful, Hajime-san shot everyone without caring whether they were escaping or raising their hands in surrender.

It didn’t even take five seconds for the figure of about ten people from the bunch to vanish from view.

「Ha, Hajime-san?」

On Earth, Hajime fundamentally didn’t pull out Donner. If it was only someone picking a quarrel, then he would deal with them using his bare hands (he used his left hand without reservation); but here he chose the gun without a moment of hesitation. Shia’s eyes turned round seeing Hajime’s reaction that was different from usual.

Hajime shrugged his shoulders and stored Donner back into the holster on his chest.

「There is no one watching after all.」

In other words, it seemed if it was a place where there were no witnesses, he wouldn’t hesitate to use Donner in order to settle the problem in a flash. For the insolent people who encountered Hajime in a place outside of the public gaze, it was a dangerous place indeed.

Hajime, who normally said something like 「I'll comply with the law and ethics that is appropriate for a citizen of a constitutional country. After all, there is a difference from Tortus here you know.」, was shooting unhesitatingly……

「Hajime-san. The way of thinking that it's okay to shoot if there are no witnesses feels like it's normally outlawish though.」

「Oi oi, how can you say that to a virtuous and exemplary Japanese person like me.」

A virtuous and exemplary Japanese person was surely a person who would modestly respect propriety, avoid acts of violence, and honor the law to the best of their ability, was how she felt……Shia's expression turned really complicated.

「Before this, Myuu-chan said "innocent until proven guilty. Everything is legal if it's not leaked out." She said outrageous things by quoting someone's words, but……now I feel like I understand whose words they were.」

「There is nothing in my log about that.」

Hajime papa averted his gaze to escape Shia's fixed stare.

※Those were words that a good kid must not believe no matter what!

Shia made a wry smile toward the bad papa who was turning the other way. However, her expression turned into a bright smile right after that.

「Well, they are scoundrels, so it doesn't matter whatever happened to them!」

That’s a lovely conclusion Shia. I’m falling in love with you all over again.

ruffle-ruffle! pat pat! The scene of an idiotic couple flirting beside the forest where multiple locals had collapsed was truly surreal.

By the way, in case it was Shia who dealt with them, they would definitely have ended up in a state where they were an inch before being beaten to death, so in a sense, Hajime’s non-lethal gunshots were more fortunate to them. The gunshots that came from the irritation from the kiss getting obstructed……in a sense, they attacked at a nice timing.

Time advanced boisterously and flirtatiously for a while.

The sun had risen high in the sky, about the time when it could almost be considered afternoon. The river’s width suddenly expanded, and a town could be seen up ahead. It was the town of Puhang.

The automobiles and maintained road that were common conveniences of modern civilization could be seen.

Originally, it was a place that could be reached in four hours if one used a car or bus from a town that had a train station or airport. There were no whimsical travelers like Hajime and Shia who would intentionally walk inside a thick forest along the river for a few days laboriously to reach this city.

「How should I say it, it’s that. It feels like when you encounter someone who used a cable car to reach the summit after you were climbing up with trouble.」

「The mountain climber is enjoying the climb, so it’s fine desuu.」

Hajime smiled wryly after seeing an old truck pass by noisily, which caused Shia to pout.

「Don’t sulk. I also had fun. Rather than that, it’s afternoon already. I’m hungry after a good workout, what about you Shia?」

「You’re right~. I’m also getting hungry. According to the villagers, there are a lot of delicious restaurants, so let’s eat lightly.」

「Yeah. If I remember right, the recommendation is for a restaurant with a terrace along the river was it?」

「Desu desu. They told me that the steamed river fish is tasty.」

They continued talking while entering the city. There they saw that unexpectedly there were a lot of foreigners. It shouldn’t be a particularly famous tourist spot, but far up ahead of here there was another tourist spot, so perhaps this place was bustling as a resting point.

Shia asked a local for directions with her innate amiability. In this place too, the sight of the locals getting bug-eyed hearing Shia talking in local language fluently could be seen as expected. The person she talked to also started smiling naturally. And then, they taught her the directions kindly and thoroughly.

「Over there he said! Hajime-san, it’s that white building!」

「I got it, that’s why you don’t have to hop around. You are being stared at with lukewarm gazes by everyone around, you know? Even me too.」

The local people, whether they were young or old, male or female, were watching Shia who was running across the street toward her lover with gentle eyes. Incidentally, pleasant gazes were also directed toward Hajime, who was looking somewhat embarrassed.

It was then that a car was seen gunning past with quite the speed. Even though it was in the middle of the city, with that speed, the car undoubtedly would be unable to stop even if something suddenly leapt out in front of it.

Shia, who was in the middle of crossing the street, leapt toward Hajime in a bit of a panic.

「That’s really dangerous isn’t it~. Why is that car in such a hurry, I wonder?」

「Who knows. Rather than that, they are driving a good car there. What’s more, the cars’ types are all the same. Are they in a group?」

Just as Hajime said, the car dangerously driving wasn’t just that one alone.

Six SUVs that at a glance looked high class with high performance were gunning through in a line. It felt like the cars were prepared altogether, so at the very least there was no doubt that they were from an organization with quite the financial muscle.

Hajime’s interest was a bit tickled at the sudden appearance of these people who came to this kind of place in a group of high-class SUVs, but it also wasn’t something to the degree that would make him intentionally investigate. He immediately chased them out of his mind and started walking while holding Shia’s hand so she wouldn’t hop around.

They walked through a place that looked like a promenade along the riverbank heading toward the restaurant.

The river’s appearance wasn’t beautiful, so no foreign tourist was watching the view, but several local people were fishing on a protruding wharf. They were chatting while placing their feet into the river. Some other people were washing clothes or other things. It could be seen from this how the river was closely connected to daily life.

Furthermore,

「There are a lot of boats. There is also a floating market~」

「This is the place where the river branches merge after all, so a ship must be a valid method to transport material here.」

As though to show it, ships with a lot of utility were mooring at jutted out wharves, which were also numerous. While there were wooden rowing boats, there were also boats with engines. However, they were all uniformly only old things that had been used for a long time.

Suddenly Hajime asked something that came to mind.

「Come to think of it, Shia. About the ruins we were told about at the village, based on what I saw on the map they’re really far from here. Are we still going to walk? It will take

around a week if we detour up until the place with the bridge, you know?」

「Aa~ uu~. Actually, it will be nicer to walk, but……as expected, that will take too much time. I have enjoyed traveling by foot a lot, and here boats also seem to be mainstream……」

Shia kept glancing at Hajime looking a bit embarrassed perhaps because it sounded like she was taking back her own words.

Hajime smiled wryly while secretly making his Treasure Warehouse II shine. He summoned the hard working Arachne-san who were in the process of being turned into Jack of All Trades. He took them out from inside his clothes so that they wouldn’t come out from thin air, and all the Arachnes went down to the ground through Hajime’s foot with a rustling sound.

「……Hajime-san. I’ve been thinking since some time ago, but why spiders? Honestly speaking, they are a bit chilling.」

Countless spiders were crawling out from his body……. Certainly, normally it would be a sight that would make anyone faint.

Hajime, who was asked such a question, positioned Arachne in four directions and activated an awareness obstruction barrier while answering with a puzzled look.

「Eh? It’s cool, right?」

「……」

Shia softly averted her eyes. It seemed that Hajime’s fundamental chuunibyou was impossible to be healed.

A flustered look emerged on Hajime’s face. Despite him thinking that if it was Shia, she would approve saying 「You’re right!」, but she was just getting creeped out. Her rabbit ears were tapping *pon pon* on Hajime’s head softly, as though saying 「It’s all right, it’s all right I’m telling you. Okay?」, making him feel like asking just what was all right.

「No no, Shia. Try imagining it for a bit. A multi-legged tank is cool, right? It’s romantic, right? On the Armor○ Core we played before this, even you were using the multi-legged tank, weren’t you? Besides, it’s that. See, even that person in a certain ○moon game, he said 「a spider who laid string on the surface as a nest」 about himself, also there is that! Even a certain hero of America is totally a spider you know! After that——」 (TN: About the moon something, it’s a reference to Nanaya Shiki from Melty Blood, Hajime is quoting that guy’s victory line there.)

「I understand. I understand already. It’s fine you know, Hajime-san.」

「Oi stop it. Don’t look at me with gentle eyes like that! Eeei-, don’t pat me! Don’t hug me!」

Shia’s gaze was full of compassion. 9999 damage to Hajime’s heart.

Hajime forcefully tore Shia away from himself and whimpered while taking out a boat and mooring it at the nearby spot. It was a black coated boat with the proper construction.

——Prototype amphibious boat Triana

It was the prototype boat of the artifact that he had sent to a certain friend. Other than being able to move at high speed

on the water, it could also run on land by pulling out its stored wheels.

「Let’s use this until we get near the ruins.」

「Does it need to be taken out right now?」

Shia tilted her head in puzzlement. Even though they were going to have lunch after this, why did Hajime took the boat out right now?

「No, actually, this is still in the prototype stage……or rather, it’s incomplete. I’m thinking that while we are eating, I’ll use the Arachne for remote transmutation and complete it to some degree.」

「Arachne-san is working hard, isn’t it? But, it’s floating normally right now, it can run on water already, doesn’t it? I think it’s enough like that though……」

Shia was puzzled. She wondered that despite Hajime calling it a motorboat; perhaps, unexpectedly, it was still at a stage where it wasn’t even equipped with a propulsive mechanism. But Hajime began by saying 「Of course it will run normally if I make it run, but……」

「It’s not installed with any weapons at all.」

「Yes?」

‘I don’t really get what you are saying desu,’ Shia made an astonished expression that said that.

「Err, Hajime-san. I think it doesn’t really need any weapons or anything though……」

Shia said such a thing in bewilderment. Hajime turned a shocked expression toward Shia. His face truly looked as though it was expressing ‘I don’t really get what you are saying desu.’

「Are you in your right mind Shia? Something like a vehicle without a weapon is the same as a car without any brakes! That’s too dangerous!」

「Rather I think that it’s Hajime-san’s heart that is in need of some brakes.」

If it had to be said further, rather than a car without a weapon, it was the cars with weapons that were dangerous no matter how one thought about it.

But Hajime shook his head as though to say ‘Just what are you saying,’ and then opened his mouth as though he was persuading an unreasonable kid.

「Listen well Shia and think really carefully. What will happen to Bon○-san if there are no weapons in his Bo○d car? Even if it’s someone of his caliber, he might simply die, you know?」

「Please don’t confuse the vehicle used for traveling together with a spy car. Hajime-san, since when did you join the spy agency of England? It feels like Magdanese-san will be really happy then……ah, no, I’ll take back my words. It feels like it will give even more damage that will be beyond healing to Magdanese-san’s stomach.」

In any case, something like a vehicle without a weapon wasn’t a vehicle was the fixation that Hajime wouldn’t concede. And that seemed to be connected with why he pulled the boat out now.

All the Arachne-sans quickly clung to here and there on the boat and began their improvement work.

「I get it already. I’m hungry, so let’s quickly go to the restaurant.」

「……How strange. I get the feeling that Shia is looking at me like I’m a troubled guy……」

Shia pulled the hand of Hajime, who was making a look that wanted to comment on how upsetting the whole thing was, and this time it was her who started walking while dragging Hajime behind.

Since coming back home from the other world, whether it was Hajime or Yue, both of them sometimes caused Shia to take this kind of attitude as though she was dealing with a hopeless person. Depending on the situation, there were also times when she got plain angry……

Compared to when they first met, it wasn’t like Hajime didn’t get the feeling that their positions were oddly reversed.

The cooking of the restaurant they visited was rather delicious; just like the villagers recommended. Taking the meal on a wooden terrace that was protruding out into the river was also not bad with how it was giving an effective modifier to the place category.

It seemed that Shia was pleased with the steamed cooking of freshwater fish, as she was passionately trying to steal the

taste since some time ago.

Everyone recognized the handmade cooking skill of the rabbit who was almighty in housekeeping. She had also completely learned the taste of the Nagumo family; so despite the cooking duty being done in rotations if it was asked who the head chef who was entrusted the most with the Nagumo family's kitchen was, then the answer would unanimously be Shia.

「Fumu fumu. I somehow get it, but in the first place, what seems like will be the most trouble is whether the spice can be obtained in Japan.」

「You'll surely find it if you search. And if not, you can just come here to buy it using Gate.」

「……Now that Hajime-san mentioned it, that's right. Hajime-san is too all-purposeful that I'll turn deprived of the convenience.」

「If it's for the sake of Shia's handmade cooking, then I won't hesitate to use everything I got.」

「Err……I'm really happy that Hajime-san says that, but those are profoundly memorable important words that were said the previous night before we were taking down the emperor's castle, so I wish that it won't be said lightly for something gluttonous……」

Once, when Shia kept her mouth shut from being stuck between her family's determination and her reservation toward Hajime, Hajime gave her those words. Those words were one of several "important words" inside Shia. And so, her expression became really complicated.

But, the one in question, Hajime himself, showed not even the slightest sign of joking around. Rather he said those words just now with an expression that was even stiffer than the previous night before taking down the emperor’s castle.

「Calling it “light” is really a cruel remark. After all, Shia has firmly taken hold of my stomach. If it’s for the sake of Shia’s handmade cooking, I’ll even pick a fight against the world. I won’t hold back.」

「My, my handmade cooking as the trigger of a war!? Tha, that’s heavy desuu.」

Even while she was saying that, if one looked at her rabbit ears whooshing around it was clearly obvious how happy she was. 「Or rather, what kind of situation will make Hajime-san pick a fight with the world for my cooking? I don’t get the meaning at all~」 Shia muttered such things while poking the food with her fork and doing her best to hold back her mouth from grinning widely.

The atmosphere of the two was meal terrorism in a sense, with how it forcefully changed the food in the area to become a “sugary taste”. Inside the restaurant that was quite bustling, there were various guests, but those who were male and came by themselves felt like clicking their tongues.

There was also the fact of how Shia was an exceptionally beautiful girl.

Actually, since she first entered the restaurant, she was gathering quite a lot of gazes. Even the restaurant’s staff were stealing glances at her, and the guests who entered after would also surely take one or two glances at Shia.

Also because normally there would be Yue and others around her, people would recognize her as “one of the beauties”, but originally she was a possessor of beauty that couldn’t help but gather attention even by herself.

Hajime gazed at the embarrassed Shia with gentle eyes. In order to hide her embarrassment, Shia stuffed her cheeks *hamu-hamu-hamu* with food. Hajime-san watched with even more fondness at her acting like that……

「Geez. Ple, please don’t stare at me like that~」

「Where should I look then huh.」

Hajime spoke with a wry smile. Depending on how to perceive those words, they could also be heard like 「There is nothing else that I should see except Shia」 or 「I want to look at Shia all the time」.

In fact, the male faction inside the restaurant perceived Hajime’s words like that. They gritted their teeth audibly and clicked their tongue with a lot of jealousy filling the sound.

A male restaurant staff member let his jealousy drive him and put down the dish he was carrying on the table hard. The hot soup splashed on a male customer and a scream 「Hoott!?」 echoed.

boguu Such a graphic sound resounded. It seemed there was a male customer receiving a golden right hook straight from the female he was taking on a date.

It seemed only the seats of the two had a different atmosphere around them. If it took place in a two-dimensional world, then there would be hearts floating around them. Above all else, Shia’s happily smiling face,

which was filled with embarrassment and happiness, produced a lot of shot victim.

Right now, the sound *splash-* that could be heard must be the sound of a man walking on the road beside the terrace falling into the river. 「Aa~」 such a voice could be heard vanishing into the distance. It was unknown how far that man would be carried away by the stream.

If Yue was charming people like a moon bewitchingly shining in the night, then Shia was charming people like a sunny spot that was scattering happiness around warmly. Although the vector of the two was different, the demon king's rabbit possessed a charm that wasn't superior or inferior from the bewitching vampire princess.

But, at that time, Hajime looked like he was taking a breather.

「Could it be, the improvement has finished?」

「Yeah. It's properly armed now. A total of four small gatling gun placements on the back, front, left, and right. Then 120 pencil missiles. It's also loaded with torpedoes and mines, twenty of each. I'm a bit uneasy with the firepower, but well, it's okay, I guess, for a quick job. With this, it's become a safer vehicle more or less.」

Hajime smiled in satisfaction. Shia went 「Rather it's a mass of dangerous things desuu」 with her rabbit ears going limp.

And then, her rabbit ears caught a sound *kasa kasa* that caused her to shudder reflexively. When she turned her gaze toward her feet, all the Arachne-san, who had finished their tasks, were currently gushing forth from the terrace floor's gap.

They skillfully used their legs and gave a smart salute before they were enveloped by light one after another, returning into the Treasure Warehouse.

Shia thought, 「Those Arachne-san, they are controlled by Hajime-san, right? Somehow I feel a sense of self from them, but that must be my imagination, right?」. It was scary, so she didn’t ask.

「Hajime-san, it’s better not to show those Arachne-san in front of Kaori-san or Shizuku-san, you know? I was raised in the sea of trees, so I’m all right with insects, but even someone like me shuddered a little seeing a lot of Arachne-san.」

Also, they strangely felt like they had their own will — countless wills at that. Shia whispered so inside her heart while giving Hajime a warning.

Hajime averted his gaze.

「……Hajime-san has a criminal record already, don’t you?」

「Shizuku was……unable to go out of her room for a while.」

To go further, everything that looked like a gap inside the room had tough planks nailed on them so that transmutation wouldn’t work, and she holed up inside there. Just like how Goddess Amaterasu was hiding inside the Heavenly Rock Cave, it was a hardship to make Shizuku come out.

「Of all people Hajime-san showed it to Shizuku-san, whose reaction is the most feminine……Just what are you doing?」

「I’m also reflecting on that. You see, Shuuzou-san said to me 「I’m thinking of a renovation, can you help with making a

huge underground space?, so I used a lot of Arachne for construction work, but……

Shizuku-san unexpectedly encountered them, is that it?

They had just finished the first phase and were returning from the underground. It was then, while they were gushing out in large amounts from the house’s garden, she saw them.

Hajime could also use Gate to teleport inside Shizuku’s room and persuaded her there, but it felt like it would have the opposite effect instead; so Hajime, together with the disciples of the Yaegashi-style, did various things under the operation that was named Shizuku-ojou(young miss), Heavenly Rock Cave Operation! so that she would come out voluntarily.

In any case, the disciples of the Yaegashi-style were proficient in doing performances. Very much so. To the level that made Shizuku spontaneously peek out from the gap of her door and thinkWhat? What are they doing? Why are they looking like they having so much fun?

Hearing that kind of story, Shia directed a pitying gaze to the far away Japan while thinking that next time she would let Shizuku fluff her rabbit ears to her heart’s content.

But, at that time, a commotion suddenly entered Shia’s rabbit ears. Oh? When she turned her gaze to the direction of the commotion, a group of what seemed to be foreigners were already gathering around Triana unnoticed.

Hajime-san, Hajime-san. People are gathering around the boat, you know?

「Hm? ……Are they sightseeing because its color is different from other boats? Well, leave them alone. It moves using magic power, so no matter what they do it’s impossible to steal it.」

「That’s true.」

Shia also returned to her meal while feeling a bit curious. What bothered her was that they didn’t look like tourists…….

Or rather, they didn’t even look like respectable people. Several of them looked like normal people, but the people surrounding them, as though guarding them, were emitting auras that were unique to people who were familiar to violence.

Although, there was no way they could become a threat to the both of them, so Shia acted as though it didn’t bother her.

But, it seemed it was them who had business with Hajime and Shia.

A highly strung middle-aged man with blond hair that had been mostly receding was pointing at Triana while asking something to a man nearby who seemed to be a local.

The local male shook his head, but when he called out to other people who seemed to be his acquaintances, although they looked puzzled, they still pointed at Hajime and Shia who were continuing their meal on the terrace.

They must be saying that although they weren’t a hundred percent sure, those two might be the owner of Triana.

There was also a man with a well-featured face like an actor beside the man who looked high strung. When he looked at Hajime and Shia, his gaze stopped on Shia. And then he raised a voice of admiration that sounded exactly like an actor.

With the “highly strung” and the “sham actor” in the lead, a man who looked like a secretary, and five men who seemed to be bodyguards, were heading toward the terrace in a group.

「Uhee. They are coming here Hajime-san.」

「Leave it to me. I’ve often been told recently that I have “become mellow”. I’ll show you how I can settle this amicably with a peaceful and cultured communication.」

「I somehow can see the future already.」

Shia’s characteristic magic “Future Sight” didn’t activate. This was this thing that was commonly referred to as “pretend”. It could also be called cliché.

“Highly strung” was making a rude entrance into the terrace. And then he soon stood in front of the two’s table.

「Oi, you two. Is that boat yours? I’ll buy it with cash. This is enough, right?」

Without letting the other party get a say, he slapped a roll of banknotes loudly on the table. His voice was like a monkey going ‘kiii kii’, and his gaze was glaring hard. From the start, he didn’t have any intention of hearing their opinion. It seemed he was thinking that there was no way his demand wouldn’t go through.

Those glaring eyes turned toward the muscular men who were standing by threateningly behind him. He was intending to make his will become known using more than words.

Against such a person, Hajime peacefully

「*Aaa*?」

「Hih!?」

The “highly strung” lost the strength in his waist! The fiendish eye gleam that would make even a yakuza run away barefooted tormented the nerves of the “highly strung”!

The bodyguards’ hands moved to their waists or their breast pockets reflexively.

But, before they could take out something, Shia’s voice resounded.

「Hajime-san! Hajime-san! You’re a peaceful and cultured person!」

「Oops.」

Hajime patted his own face. What next appeared was an expression that was truly gentle and peaceful. If they hadn’t seen the evil countenance just a moment before, then they would surely think that it was truly the amiable expression of a Japanese person. But right now, that change instead made it scarier.

「I’m really sorry, but I have no plans to sell that boat. If it’s a boat you want there are a lot of other boats. How about you take a look at another place?」

「Hih!?」

The “highly strung” was backing away while still sitting on the ground.

「……Shia, what is the meaning of this? I was treating him gently, right? Why is that guy scared?」

「That’s obviously because Hajime-san showed him what lies behind that smile first.」

Hajime whose expression wanted to say ‘I don’t get it’ caused Shia to make a straight man retort to him.

Then the “sham actor” came forward.

「Oh no my apologies, to suddenly intrude without even introducing ourselves. The one losing his legs there is Brandon. While I am Wilford. Nice to make your acquaintance.」

The “sham actor” also known as Wilford put his hand on his chest and respectfully—or rather with a gesture that was excessively theatrical—greeted them with a bow.

「To be able to encounter a young Japanese man with such an inspiring aura and a beautiful lady like yourself in this kind of place, truly a trip is really a good thing.」

The smile looked appropriate on the man. He looked like he was familiar with his own charm. If seen from nearby, he was truly a handsome man that would make anyone understand why he had self-confidence. His age must be around the early thirties. He also had an adult sex appeal that if it was a normal girl, their cheeks would redden unconsciously.

Wilford smiled sweetly at Shia and presented his hand gently. Because Shia’s hand was in the direction where his hand was going, perhaps he was intending to make “the greeting of kissing the back of the hand”.

「??」

Shia was plainly puzzled and put the fish her fork stabbed on Wilford’s palm. It seemed that she thought Wilford-san was a gourmet and wanted to say to her 「That fish look delicious so share it with me」.

Hajime almost snorted reflexively while Wilford’s expression was twitching. Even so, he said 「This is, thank you so much」 while eating the fish on his palm. His guts were quite something.

「Cough cough. And, Mr. Wilford. Is your business the same as that man said before?」

「Unfortunately for the two of you, that’s correct. No matter what we wish to purchase that splendid boat from the two of you. Can I please ask you to accommodate our request somehow? If it’s money, we will pay your asking price. Of course, there will be a limit if we are using cash though……」

As Wilford said that he took out a check from his pocket. He must be telling them to write any amount they liked. It was a terrifyingly lavish attitude.

「We are a research team from the Reletense company. Brandon is the researcher, while I……am someone like a businessman. This will fall under necessary expenses so write down your price without reservation.」

Hajime titled his head toward Wilford who was saying such a thing with a jesting attitude.

"If this isn't a personal project, then you should be coming quite prepared, right? Why are you doing something like the negotiation of a boat transaction? It should be something that you prepared or arranged beforehand, right?"

"There was an unexpected situation. Life is something that is always moving to an unforeseen bad direction. We have secured boats to some degree, but in our situation, it's still a bit lacking. A boat with good performance that is."

Perhaps it was a miss in the arrangement or perhaps it was the local people who broke the contract at the last moment. In any case, it seemed they lacked the number of boats.

Come to think of it, the line of SUVs they caught sight of before if Wilford and his group were riding inside those, then certainly they must have quite the number of personnel and equipment. If their people here weren't all of them, then it seemed to be a fairly large research team.

However, Hajime's answer was already decided. No matter the reason, he couldn't hand over something like a boat that only moved by using magic power. There wasn't any meaning to giving it to them.

"My bad. I want to cooperate here, but that boat is specially made. I cannot hand it over no matter how much money you stack up."

"Can I ask you to please do something about it?"

Wilford asked doggedly. His words were polite. His face was also smiling. But……joviality was slipping from his eyes.

It seemed this man was far more dangerous than Mr. Brandon.

「I told you already, it’s impossible. If it’s a boat, then there are a lot here. Look for one in another place.」

「Your boat is good. I only looked briefly, but with the condition of all the boats here, it won’t be strange if they breakdown anytime. With more time we will be able to procure quite some good boats, but we don’t want to waste that much time.」

「I understand your circumstance. But, even so, I cannot. My bad.」

Shia was sending Hajime a gaze that was full of admiration while saying 「Oo~, Hajime-san is properly persuading others with words!」. Was that how much she thought he was a person whose thoughts were negotiation = violence……. Hajime felt a bit wounded.

「Hmmm. This is troubling. I thought that if it’s a Japanese person, then compromising is their specialty, but……. it seems that the youngsters these days are bad at reading the atmosphere. No, peace idiots always exist anywhere. Perhaps it can’t be helped that you lack a sense of danger.」

A cold gaze poured forth from Wilford to Hajime. That gaze could even be called inhuman. Normal people who got that gaze directed at them would tremble from a chill. Those eyes were also slowly moving toward Shia.

Wilford’s fingertip made a beckoning motion. Following that, a large-bodied and tough looking man came forward and bared open his jacket slowly. There was a handgun there.

「What do you think? For the sake of your lovely lover too, won’t you allow this negotiation to end productively by all means here?」

「Negotiation? I think that you are mistaking it with a threat though.」

Hajime snorted mockingly. Wilford's eyes narrowed slowly. The bodyguard was moving to circle behind Shia.

It was unthinkable that they would shoot in midday in front of the public, but what if they pressed the gun muzzle up against someone and threatened that if they moved away from there……such a thing was possible enough.

「Good grief, it's unbelievable that these guys are corporate workers. Or perhaps, is your company some kind of private military or something?」

「Now, I wonder about that――」

Wilford showed a cruel smile; however, his words halted.

clack He saw the thing that was placed on the table.

「……」

「Even if I shot you guys to death right now, looking at the gun you guys are keeping in your pockets, it will undoubtedly be justified self-defense. After all, we here are a young couple. While your side is a mysterious organization. There are also a lot of witnesses seeing you guys surrounding us like this.」

Everyone's gaze was fixed on the bizarre large revolver. No matter how they looked at, it was a custom made order. What's more, it looked well used. And the terrifying thing was, even though they were all paying attention to Hajime all this time, they didn't notice the gun until the moment he pulled it out.

「……I think that you should put the number of people into your consideration though?」

「I absolutely don’t care.」

The sound of gulping saliva could be heard from the experienced bodyguards.

At the same time, there was the abnormal pressure overflowing from Hajime. Certainly, the mood that a difference in numbers wouldn’t make any difference was permeating the air.

「……Who are you? Don’t tell me; you are aiming for “that” just like us?」

「? That?」

「Chih. So it’s only a case of us pulling a bad card huh. Really, life is something that moves in unexpected directions.」

Wilford clicked his tongue; then his hand made a gesture to back down while his expression looked like he had bitten something sour. The bodyguards pulled back slowly.

「Sorry to have bothered you. We will look for a boat at another place.」

「……I see. What’s important is that we can understand each other.」

Wilford shrugged his shoulders, then easily turned around and left. Brandon followed behind him in a panic, and the bodyguards were leaving the restaurant while staying on guard against Hajime up to the end.

「What’s with those people I wonder.」

「Who knows. In any case, they aren’t decent people for sure. Nothing beats not getting involved with them.」

Hajime shrugged his shoulders while staring sadly at the food that had become cold. He then resumed eating.

Shia also followed suit and resumed eating while whispering inside her heart.

(No matter how you think about it a flag has just been raised desuu. We are absolutely going to be involved with those people again! Because this is Hajime-san we are talking about!)

The future prediction of Shia’s, whose vocation was “Fortune Teller”, was……no, even if it wasn’t Shia, anyone who knew Hajime could easily predict that.

The correctness of that prediction……

Would be proven as early as today.

AN: Thank you very much for reading every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

For some reason, I was writing lengthily.

I will speed up the development starting with the next chapter.

PS

Arifureta Nichijou has been updated with its newest chapter!

Tio has also appeared, and it has become all the more lively you know~

Please read it by all means.

Arifureta Chapter 288

Arifureta After III Shia Arc The Ruin of Curse

Large splashes danced on the broad river with the cloudy, light-brown water. Waves were spreading as though the river was being cut up from something heading upstream.

The cause of this was a black coated boat——Triana. Taking in water and then jetting it out, the chain of process was moving with magic power through a jet propulsion mechanism, so the driving force was shockingly silent when compared with to normal engines that used propeller mechanisms.

「Nn~, it feels good desuu~」

Rabbit ears were energetically flapping about *patapatapatapata-*. Shia's whole body was being showered by the wind while she narrowed her eyes pleasantly.

The speed that couldn't be obtained from the local old boats seemed to grant the rider with pleasant wind. Even Hajime, who was similarly basking in the wind while holding the wheel, nodded 「You're right」 in a good mood.

「Hajime-san, Hajime-san, I also want to drive.」

「……Just sit obediently there.」

Shia was making her request with eyes that were sparkling with hope, but sadly Hajime, whose eyes twitched for an instant, rejected it. Shia’s cheeks puffed up roundly. It was easy to guess that she was stating 「I’m dissatisfied desu!」 with that expression.

「I want to drive desuu!」

「Are you a spoiled brat? Even though you puffed your cheeks like that, if I say no, then no.」

「Why!? Just what kind of problem is there with me driving!?」

「Dangerous driving.」

‘Heh?’ Shia tilted her head in puzzlement. Her expression looked as though she had just heard an unknown word. It seemed that at the very least she was believing, without a doubt, that it was a word that was completely unrelated and inapplicable to her.

「Now see here……」

「Wha, what’s with that exasperated face?」

「I’ll tell you then if you don’t have an awareness of it…… Sometimes there are people who will completely change when they are holding the wheel, right? You are exactly that kind of person. Currently, Schutaif feels like it’s mostly for Shia’s exclusive use, but…..」

「That’s right, if it’s a vehicle running with magic power, I’m already riding Schutaif around regularly, so there is no problem at all!」

「Try saying how many times you have been chased by the police.」

「……」

Shia stared at the sky. Aa, today too the sky is really clear. For the sky to be this blue……

「Oi, what's the matter rampaging rabbit. I'm telling you to say how many times you've been playing tag with a few dozen patrol cars.」

「……I don't really understand, what is it about I wonder――」

「Far from obeying the word 「STOO~PP!」 of the police, you were yelling 「If you can catch me then try to damn catch me desuu!」 while driving recklessly. You were putting out speeds more than 200 km/hour even though you were on a public highway and won the race by a wide margin. Now try saying who that person could possibly be.」

「……」

Shia's rabbit ears were limply flopping as though to say "the rabbit ears feel painful".

However, the reproachful eyes of Hajime-san didn't stop from dealing an additional blow. He divulged every evil committed by the rabbit who would rampage when she held the wheel!

「How many times have you won against the bunch that look like delinquents or biker gang while mocking them 「S-LO~OW! DESUU!」? Who is the one who secretly got called 「the mysterious rampaging anego(big sis)」?」

「……Tha, that’s a person who accidentally resembles me, you know? It’s a different person.」

「You know, just in case, the Schutaif has the recognition obstruction function for its rider, and its number will automatically get rewritten periodically. The police must be unable to identify the criminal.」

By the way, among the police, this person was known as 「the rampaging girl with a screw loose」. The high-speed riot squad carried out improvements on their cars in order to oppose Shia while the squad members were levied with demonic training in order to raise their driving skills. Finally, even the sortie of helicopters became a common thing, but because the criminal’s identity was still unknown they were all holding their heads in frustration……

「Tha, that’s right. The criminal’s identity is still unknown. In other words, it’s not me! Oh dear, in this world there are those kinds of outrageous people, isn’t it!」

Actually, Shia got more into the hobby of driving rather than her hobby of martial arts. She was enjoying rampaging during holidays or late at night. What was troubling was that rather than driving in a vast plain like on Tortus, she preferred to drive on maintained roads like those of the urban areas of Earth.

Perhaps she had self-awareness as a bad rabbit who was averting her eyes from the Road Traffic Act at full power while merely pursuing speed. It seemed she was intending to keep her hobby of driving recklessly a secret from her family in her own way, but……

Everything was seen through already. Hajime’s gaze stabbed at her with that meaning.

Jii～～-. *Jirijiri～～～-*.

「Uu……」

「You think the mass media didn’t sniff it out after you rampaged that much?」

A girl of unknown identity who, although she didn’t steal anything, was running around at night on a bike. No matter how much effort was spent to capture her, she would escape. And mysteriously, it was mysterious how that girl left no impression at all except that she was a “young girl”.

It wasn’t a complete removal of memory, so there was no way the mass media wouldn’t bite at it.

「Bu, but, there isn’t anything on the news or anything……」

「Because I dealt with it.」

「Guuu」

She let out a ‘guu’ sound. Shia’s gaze kept swimming around a lot. (TN: In Japan, there is a phrase of ‘cannot even make a guu sound’, which means someone is so speechless that they cannot say anything back.)

Hajime-san was making a reproachful stare on the level of Yue while dealing the final blow.

「Before this, Myuu made a mess by having a dog fight with the ASDF (Air Self-Defense Force) using a toy aircraft.」

「!」

「When I asked her why she did that, 「It’s unfair that only Shia-oneechan had fun nano! Even though Myuu cannot

ride both Schutaif or Brieze! That’s why Myuu played with the JSDF officer using Tomcat-tan! Just like Shia-neechan! Just like Shia-neechan!」 she said――」

「I’m really deeply sorryyy! I’m the criminal desuu!」

Shia did a dogeza posture on the deck of Triana’s bow. On her butt, her rabbit tail was flapping *patapatapata-* from the wind.

Hajime sighed and patted Shia’s head fluffily while saying.

「Because of that reason, not letting Shia holding the wheel while there are other people riding together was the decided method of the Nagumo family emergency family meeting that was held while you were in the middle of rampaging.」

「Tha, that kind of decision was made while I was becoming wind……」

Shia’s expression was becoming lost for words while she was sitting meekly on her seat this time. Thinking that she finally accepted it, Hajime shrugged his shoulders and returned his concentration to driving.

For a while, while enjoying the wind and the sound of water, Shia suddenly titled her head saying 「Eh?」.

「If everyone knows, why didn’t anyone stop me?」

Shia didn’t know the chronology, but from what Hajime had said before, it felt like Shia’s driving hobby was already known from the start.

Then even though it would be fine if he just stopped her normally, why instead was he not saying anything and even went as far as quieting the mass media……

Thinking about it, just now Hajime said to her 「he is riding together with her so he cannot leave the driving to her」, but he didn’t tell her to stop her habitual reckless driving.

Hajime’s answer toward that question was,

「You like it, right? Running around on the bike?」

「……」

In other words, it was like that.

He didn’t stop her because it was something that Shia liked. Rather, he did all in his power so that Shia could have fun.

The recognition obstruction function that was installed on Schutaif was also a part of it. With Shia’s reflexes, driving technique, and Schutaif’s excellent operability that was working together with the direct operation of magic power, surely there wouldn’t be any incidents even in the slightest chance. However, twofold and threefold safety measures were still prepared ahead of time that covered even the risk of indirect incidents. The countermeasure against the mass media was naturally also being done.

Shia’s expression turned into a look as though she had stuffed her cheeks full with delicious sweets that were extraordinarily sweet.

And then, she quietly stood up and wordlessly embraced Hajime’s back. She circled her hands around him from behind and hugged tightly. She put her chin on Hajime’s shoulder and rubbed her cheek on his face.

「Oi oi, it’s getting hard to drive.」

「You can directly steer using magic power operation righttt~」

Her melting voice sounded as sweet as her expression. Hajime chuckled slightly and fluffed Shia's head from across his shoulder.

The travel date of just the two of them……the air became sweet anytime there was an opening.

If they were looked at from the side, it wasn't any inferior with Hajime & Yue during their Tortus period. If the classmates were here, surely everyone would harmoniously get the malady of vomiting out sugar.

But, at that time, some kind of large object from upstream was flowing near with strong momentum. Shia, who noticed that while still embracing Hajime from behind, raised her voice「Ah」.

「Hajime-san, a large piece of driftwood is――」

'Right there. It's dangerous.' The moment she was going to say that,

Uin! Gakon-! Pashu! Chudon-!!!

「Hm? What did you say?」

The large piece of wood that was flowing in a direct course to block the river became the prey of the pencil missiles!

Triana went right through on the river that was colored by flame blasts and water pillars as though nothing had happened. A barrier that let wind past but deflected rain was blocking the pouring down water. However, the heat wave was caressing Shia's cheek.

Perhaps because of the surprise from the explosion that suddenly occurred, a crocodile poked its head out from the river! It tried to run away to the river bank in a panic! A lot of birds were flying up from the opposite bank!

The gatling reacted!

Uin! Gakon-! Stand b~~~~~y!

「WAAAAAAAAAH, CROCODILE-SAN WATCH OO~~~UT DESU!」

Shia leapt at the gatling on the starboard and directed the muzzle up forcefully. At the same time, she took out a metal ball from the treasure warehouse and used only her foot to kick it flying, directing the muzzle of the gatling on the ship's port to a different direction too.

A rain of bullets flew out above and to the rear. Shia didn't make it in time slightly, and several shots attacked the crocodile-san and all the bird-sans.

A bullet grazed *chuin!* the crocodile-san and it desperately escaped in a state that it felt like「NOOOOOOO-, CROCODILE KILLERRRR!」 such a scream could be heard. While all the bird-sans, with an act that might be from their instincts, dispersed with movements so splendid that it felt like 「BREAK! BREAK UP!」 could be heard. In addition, they succeeded in a super dodge from the bullets' trajectory using beautiful barrel rolls.

Shia spoke while grabbing hard to Hajime's shoulders.

「Hajime-san, please switch places with me.」

「Why? Just what kind of problem is there with me driving?」

「Dangerous driving.」

‘Heh?’ Hajime tilted his head in puzzlement. His expression looked as though he had just heard an unknown word. It seemed that at the very least he was believing without a doubt that it was a word that was completely unrelated and inapplicable with him.

Although the vector was different, Hajime too was a habitual offender of dangerous driving.

That’s dangerous driving just now! Nagumo family, assemble! An emergency family meeting is needed desu!

After that, they were advancing for around an hour while there was a scramble for the wheel on the ship.

Hajime and Shia finally arrived at the riverside that was near the rumored ruins that were their destination. From here onward they would walk.

「Huff, huff, Hajime-san, you blockhead! In the end, you didn’t let me hold the wheel even once!」

「Haa, haa, na, naturally. Shia’s driving is dangerous after all.」

Both of them mutually deployed fierce offenses and defenses with Triana’s steering wheel in the center which caused their breathing to rise somewhat. They got down on the bank. Shia was looking at Hajime storing Triana into the treasure warehouse while discharging an objection with her rabbit ears looking disheveled.

「It’s Hajime-san who’s driving dangerously with high killing power!」

「Where. Removing dangerous animals or driftwood that we won't get away unscathed if we collided with are rather acts that remove the danger.」

「Does Hajime-san have the awareness that you are the most dangerous organism on Earth? Or rather, just what is dangerous from the bird-sans; try saying it.」

「……About the bird-sans, honestly, it's not like I do not think that I didn't do anything bad. I'll improve the gatling's movement sensor later.」

That wasn't it. On Earth, where it wasn't like there are any monsters, having a gatling――or rather, something that was functionally a sentry gun――being installed on a boat was itself dangerous.

「……That thing was attacking automatically. At least please make it something that is operated manually.」

「Removing Sentori-sensei, you said? How dare you say such a rude thing.」 (TN: In Japan, sentry is read as sentori. Also, the sentori here is written with the kanji of thousand (sen), and bird (tori), which is the sentry gun's nickname in Japan.)

Hajime, who was running on romance, couldn't be stopped by anyone unless it was Yue's 'chuu chuu' or Shia's backdrop.

Shia let out a sigh, then muttered 「This matter while be put on hold. It's family meeting time when we go home desuu」. For the time being, she overlooked Hajime's troubling hobby. After all, he also overlooked her hobby.

Both of them pulled themselves together and stepped inside the thick forest that was growing densely.

They walked through the trackless path. They were cutting down leaves and branches rapidly using large hatchets. They decided the direction where they should be heading using the hand-written map and compass that they received from the village. They weren’t using the Compass or satellite pictures.

It was an inconvenient and greatly troublesome method, but Shia, who was waving around a hatchet and cutting open the path in front, looked like she was really having fun. Her rabbit ears were moving rhythmically from her agile movements of avoiding the jutting out branches.

Just when he thought that she liked running through the city, she also liked to go through a pathless forest. In the end, Shia could have fun with anything, and in fact, she had fun with everything. It was the way of this gloriously simple rabbit.

「This place is really not bad at all, isn’t it? The river is nearby, and from this presence, it feels like there are a lot of living things here. Plants that look edible are also abundant.」

Hajime reflexively laughed hearing that way of talking that sounded like a person searching for an apartment room confirming the site condition. Certainly, they were coming to search for a new base, so making such comments weren’t mistaken, but……her migration requirement that sounded like she was saying that the drug store was near, and there was also a convenience store nearby, was actually really wild.

「Even though people frequently pass through here, right now there are no signs of that at all. It’s just like the people

in the village said, this must be a place that usually no one will go near. It’s not bad for Kam and the others.

Looking at the map, as long as they don’t cross the river using a boat, it will be necessary to take quite a far detour.

In the middle of talking, Shia hopped. When Hajime looked below her with a questioning gaze, several small flowers were seen blooming there. Hajime also avoided them so as to not step on them.

Hajime-san. Are we going the right way?

Hm? Aa, it’s fine. It’s straight ahead of here.

Roger desuu.

The hatchet’s movement stopped still suddenly, and then Shia shifted the position slightly and cut through the branches in a single stroke. She advanced forward once more. After looking closer, the branches that she was going to cut first had a spider web laid out on them, and a large spider was clinging quietly on it. For the moment Hajime too went through while avoiding the spider web so as not to destroy it.

Oops, it’s dangerous you know~

?

Shia swung her hatchet again. However, it was obvious from a glance that it wasn’t to cut an obstacle. She turned the hatchet so that its flat surface was facing the direction of her swing. She swung it downward slowly in a scooping way, catching a snake that was rearing its head, and gently threw it into the brush.

「You really are a Hauria huh.」

「What are you saying?」

‘No, nothing’, Hajime shook his head with a wry smile.

Kam and others who were fussing about insects. The young boy Par who loved flowers.

Everything was the story of a distant past. If it was the current them, by the point in time a snake reared its head, it would surely be killed in a snap. With fiercely glinting eyes and a fearless smile tugged on their lips.

It was only Shia who was carrying a fragment of the “ Hauria gentle forest bunny-san clan ” that had become a phantasmal species now. It could be said that she was a rare rabbit in another sense.

The one who caused that was Hajime himself, but he put that fact aside and stared warmly at the back of Shia’s figure who continued to advance while paying attention to the forest’s fauna and flora.

Like that, the two advanced deeper and deeper into the dense forest, but after walking for nearly two hours, regardless of how, it wouldn’t be strange if the ruins came into view at any moment. However, at this point in time, not even a hint or shadow of the ruins could be found, so Hajime finally started whining.

「Say, Shia. Compass……」

「No.」

「Just a little bit……」

「Geez-. Hajime-san, you modern youngster! You are poisoned too much by the convenient tools! You cannot escape to the easy path just because of a bit of difficulty!」

「Shia-mama, please. I'm begging you. I'm already tired here, mentally.」

「Who are you calling mama? Surely, it's just a little bit more. Let's work hard without giving up until the end.」

Hajime said jokingly because Shia's speech sounded like a mom, but it appeared that Shia-mama was the ally of a kid who did his best until the end.

The sun would set in just a few more hours, so he only tried saying that for a bit, Hajime thought with a wry smile. He lifted both his hands to show his surrender.

「Nn~, but certainly, I want to pinpoint the place by today at least. ……Yosh, let's try looking around a bit from above.」

She was trying to climb a tree and to find the location of the ruins from above the dense forest.

While Hajime was watching, Shia was……*gugu-* bending her knee. In the next instant, *don-* an impact sound came the same time Shia vanished. No, more precisely she jumped with so much force that it caused her to seem to vanish.

「That's like the main character of Mat○ix, huh. However, it's in real life though.」

You are jumping into the sky with a force that caused the ground to undulate. The messiah-sama of a certain movie would fly to the beyond without pause like that, but Shia only came out to the sky above the forest before returning right away.

She landed softly in a way that felt weightless. Most likely, she was decreasing her weight using gravity magic.

Certainly, it was a searching method that was only using her own strength without any convenient tool at all. Hajime couldn’t fully accept it though.

「H~m. I cannot really see anything that looks like a building. Are we lost?」

「If the ruins are really at this position on the map, then we shouldn’t be going in the wrong direction. And it’s not like our sense of direction has led us astray like in the sea of trees. The compass is also functioning normally.」

「In that case, there is a problem with the distance then. That villager too, 「If I remember right, it’s around here I think」, said it a bit vaguely like that.」

Shia groaned ‘mumumu’. For the time being, the two would keep advancing like this. However, they were doing that while Shia frequently leapt with a great jump above the dense forest to check the surroundings.

A rabbit was hopping *pyon pyon* in a dense forest…….

However, it was a consecutive jump of close to thirty meters.

Even though the convenient tools were sealed, as expected, Hajime felt like he couldn’t fully accept this.

Although, it seemed that the method was effective. Not even fifteen minutes after that, Shia raised her voice 「Aaa!」

「Discovery! Hajime-san, I discovered iit!」(TN: Not a typo, this is the character speaking with a prolonged word. If you found anything like this before then most likely, it’s also not

a typo. But when I reread it, it feels like a strange way of writing. Can anyone teach me if there is a correct way to write something like this?)

「Oo~, finally. It’s worth it going pyon pyon like that huh.」

According to Shia, the leaves and branches acted as an obstruction so that she couldn’t see from above, but when she looked at it diagonally from an angle of 45 degrees, there was an opening between the leaves and branches that was just right for her to be able to see a building. In other words, it was difficult to discover the place using things like satellite pictures.

Both of them were heading toward the ruins with footsteps that felt somewhat excited.

As they got closer to the ruins, the trees became thick, and the density of the plants increased. It was as though nature itself was blocking any invasion.

Shia was cutting apart those plants with a hatchet. The sword pressure, no, the hatchet pressure’s shockwave blew away the obstructions while they advanced, and then finally that figure appeared.

「Oo. Indeed, they’re ruins that make us feel its many years of history.」

「The vegetation is dense, so that might be why the area around here is gloomy. It feels a bit eerie. I feel like I can understand why the villagers fear it.」

Inside the dense, gloomy forest, some building made from stone was standing quietly. Stones with sizes even bigger than human adults, which were unknown from where and how they were brought here, were piled up to form a

structure. The cut sections were surprisingly smooth, giving the impression that the stones were sticking together perfectly.

Although weeds and roots were sticking out from between the stones, the whole building was covered with vines; and the stones themselves also appeared cracked and weathered.

A fully-grown tree broke through the building. It could clearly be seen how the passage of time affected even the stones.

The construction itself was extremely simple. The size was similar to a largish residence that could be found in the countryside. It didn’t have two floors and was only a one-story building. There was no door. A wide gaping hole was filled with a spreading darkness that looked inviting.

After Hajime and Shia exchanged gazes, they nodded once to each other and stepped inside.

……Fifteen minutes later.

「There really is nothing at all!」

「Please give me back my thrill desuu!」

Inside the ruins, Hajime and Shia’s tsukkomi echoed.

In fact, the inside was so empty that it made them want to make tsukkomi about just what was with the atmosphere of the ruins that made it appear as if there would really be something.

「Well, this is after an investigation has been done here. Even if there was something here, it’s obviously had been

taken away. But still, it should be a bit more, like……right?」

「I understand what Hajime-san wants to say. Something that can make us imagine the livelihood of the people in the past or something like a painting on the wall that will make the brain ponder 「Mu? What is this picture expressing?」, or like the trace of relief, something like those!」

「Yep yep, something like those!」

A beat later.

「Good grief, what a total let down.」

「Good grief, what a total let down desuu.」

Hajime and Shia's shoulders dropped with their voices matching each other.

Surely, if the ruins had its own will, it would surely object 「No, even if you told me that. Or rather, who the hell are you guys」 without a doubt.

Well, this was Earth, so there was no way there would be that many unexplored regions that were filled with mysteries and puzzles like in Tortus. Both of them quickly left the ruins.

「It will be one more hour until the sun sets, I guess? What to do Shia. We finally found a building, so I think it's fine to stay here today.」

「You're right. But if we still have an hour, we can explore the surrounding quite a lot you know? From the start, our objective was to search further back from the ruins. While the ruins are only a replacement boundary to repel people, how about going to take a look for a little bit?」

「Well, if it’s just searching the surrounding, starting now isn’t too bad……」

Hajime made a little wry smile at Shia who was really active. And then, he followed behind Shia who was energetically stepping deeper into the forest behind the ruins.

Before long the sun had completely set. Hajime and Shia doubled back to the ruins with hurried steps while thinking that they had spent a bit too much time on the search.

Suddenly, Shia’s rabbit ears twitched around in reaction.

「Eh?」

「What’s up Shia?」

「Uu~n. There are people. At where the ruins are.」

「At this kind of time? I wonder if it’s the local people coming for a test of courage?」

It was just an inch from complete darkness if there was no light. The moonlight also didn’t reach inside this dense forest. That was about the only possibility that Hajime thought was possible.

But, that prediction of Hajime’s was immediately proven wrong.

「No, I think that’s not it. It feels like there is totally a lot.」

「Is it a large number of people? About how many?」

「I don’t know clearly, but……thirty? No, it’s more than forty.」

「That’s a lot! Seriously!」

As expected, even Hajime’s eyes opened wide in surprise.

“What do we do, Hajime-san?”

“In any case, we won’t understand the situation from here. Besides, I’m also curious as to why a lot of people are visiting those empty ruins at this kind of time. Let’s approach without being found out by those guys and confirm what they are doing.”

Shia nodded at Hajime’s suggestion, and the two approached the ruins while erasing their presences.

The closer they got, even Hajime became able to sense the presence of a lot of people. In addition, when they came up to a few dozen meters away from the ruins, they understood from in between the gaps of the branches and leaves that the area around the ruins was brightly illuminated as though it was afternoon.

Hajime and Shia looked at each other’s faces, and without pause, they soundlessly leapt on a thick tree branch where they could look over the whole ruins.

“Oi oi, seriously? Where did this investigation team come from?”

“After this long? When it’s already been investigated?”

Ahead of their gaze, there were several large tents set up in front of the ruins. A great number of large lightings illuminated the surroundings. Furthermore, equipment of unknown function was set up here and there.

“I don’t really know the details, but everything looks to be of nice quality. They obviously aren’t from around here.”

「Foreigners……perhaps, they are from the USA. There are a lot of them. The Americans number around twenty people, and the locals……perhaps around thirty, including the presence inside the building?」

「Seems so. ……Oi, Shia. Can you see the logo on those tents and machinery?」

「Ee~rr, yes yes, I can see it you know? It's a picture of an arrow stabbing a treasure box with an opened lid?」

「Aah. That huh. I remember seeing it somewhere.」

Most likely it was a logo of a company that manufactured or possessed machinery and so on. Hajime seemed to know about the logo. Shia asked him 「Where did you see it?」.

Hajime's expression was really complicated while saying 「Was that a flag, god damn it」, he then opened his mouth to answer.

「At the restaurant in Puhang.」

「That's, could it be……」

Yes, Hajime saw the logo when the guy who seemed to be the bodyguard of that "sham actor" took off his jacket. There was the same logo on the inner part of that jacket.

As expected, from the tent that was conspicuously larger than the others, a familiar man came out while fiddling with a tablet.

「Look, that guy. It's Will Turner.」

「That's not it. It's Helmut-san.」

It was Wilford-san.

By no means was that person the quasi-main character of a certain pirate movie or an evil dragon of a sky world.

That Wilford watched the table while thinking about something. Sometimes he gave out instructions to the local people.

The figure of that “highly strung” Brandon could be seen. He was giving out instructions to his fellow Americans that looked like researchers, who seemed to be his underlings.

There were also muscular men around a bit of a distance away from the tents and ruins. Although, from where the two were standing, they couldn’t see anything that looked exactly like a gun, the men were running their sharp gazes around the surrounding forest.

「Those guys, so this is their destination.」

「As expected, it was a flag, wasn’t it? As expected of Hajime-san.」

「You’re noisy. At any rate, this bunch, just what in the world are they doing at these empty ruins that have been investigated――」

‘Already’, the word that Hajime was going to say was stopped midway.

「aAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA!!」

A scream that sounded like the yell of a death throe resounded from inside the ruin.

The place suddenly became noisy.

A local man rushed out from inside the ruins.

He screamed while rolling around on the ground, and before long he stopped moving. The hand pressing on his face lost strength and fell limply to the ground.

The face of the expired man was melting tragically.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I had fun writing the conversation with Shia.

As a result, the story didn’t progress.

It looks like my “serious” power was used up during the Kouki-arc. Please bear with me until I recover.

Arifureta Chapter 289

Arifureta After III Shia Arc Underground Labyrinth

□No, this really is Indi○na huh.□

□Or perhaps, this is The M○mmy or To○b Raider isn’t it.□

That was their impression of the gruesome death of the person in front of their gaze. From the point of view of the people who had the experience of repeated adventures in another world, they had already seen even more gruesome deaths; so perhaps it could only be said that their reaction couldn’t be helped.

□Even so, there should be nothing inside those ruins though……□

Below, people were gathering around the man who had died while his face melted and yells began flying around. Hajime dubiously whispered while watching that.

□Did we fail to notice it?□

□Let’s confirm it now.□

rustle rustle, the familiar figures of the jack-of-all-trades Arachne-san became a regular appearance. One of the Arachne-san swung its leg as though to say □You bastards! It’s time for workkk!□ before leading all the other Arachne ahead.

Their figures simultaneously heading to the ground by grappling on string looked like the rappel of a special army unit.

Shia was watching that sight with an expression like 「As expected they really have a will, don’t they? But as expected it’s scary, so I can’t ask!」 while beside her Hajime took out his smartphone.

It was a hybrid smartphone that combined modern technology with the crystal display made in another world. Basically, the smartphones of Hajime and co were all of hybrid make. It could contact another world, display statuses, fire lasers of concentrated super small sunlight with the thickness of a needle; anyway, it was multifunctional.

Right now, one of its functions, the function of sight sharing with Arachne, was activated. At the same time, the screen was a bit small to be watched together with Shia, so the hologram function (midair display) that was created from Earth’s programming technology, another world’s magic (space magic and so on), and special ore-like distant penetration stone, etc. was activated.

In the air before the eyes of Hajime and Shia, the field of vision of Arachne-leader was projected from the smartphone three-dimensionally. At the corner of the main projection, there were also small reflections lining up in a vertical line. Those were the field of visions of all the other Arachne.

「Yosh, there is no problem with the vision linking. Erst up to Funfte go toward the ruins. Sechste up to Neunte, head inside the surrounding tents.」

Hajime, who sounded like he was giving out instructions to the Arachne, caused Shia to crack her neck while putting up

some spirit 「Yo~sh, I’m going to put in tsukkomi nooww~」.

「Hajime-san Hajime-san. Hajime-san is controlling all the Arachne-san, aren’t you!? Why are you making them salute like 「Rogeer!」 while following your orders!? As I thought, they have their own wills, don’t they!? It’s true, isn’t it!?」

Hajime showed a doubtful expression as though saying ‘This bunny, just what is she spewing on about?’. Shia was irritated.

「Don’t say scary things like that, Shia. They aren’t Myuu’s golem squadron. There is no way they have a will or anything, right? I just programmed them to act to some degree when they receive voice input. They are golems, but I’m also equipping them with Earth’s robot technology, you know?」

「……That salute is also included in that?」

「Yeah. After all, I use Arachne a lot for situations that demand secrecy. I put in the program based on the reference from the action pattern of special squads, but I’ve gone through that much trouble, so putting in a salute movement while I’m at it should be okay, right?」

If that was the case, then it wasn’t strange……was it? Shia’s rabbit ears dropped down powerlessly.

When she glanced at the display, she caught sight of the Arachne bunch skillfully raising two of their legs and doing reactions as though expressing 「Good grief(yare yare)」.

「Their performance is really detailed, isn’t it. Is that also an action pattern that is inserted into them?」

「Hm? Which one?」

Hajime returned his gaze from Shia toward the display. All the Arachne-san had already resumed their actions in order to accomplish their work.

「No, that's why I said, it's their movement of shrugging their shoulders as though saying 「good grief (yare yare daze) this girl」.」

「That's why I'm telling you, Shia, stop that. Do you want to scare me? There is no way they can move like that when I'm not giving them instructions, right?」

「……」

Shia stiffened still. Her rabbit ears were shuddering while standing on end. Shia wanted to insist 「The one who is scared is me desuu! As I thought, those Arachne-san, they are possessed by something for sureee!」, but it didn't seem like it wouldn't be just merely a snake that would come out if she poked the bush.

And so, 「After this, I'll consult with Myuu-chan, let's do that」 Shia swore inside her heart while she made a tsukkomi at another matter.

「Cough-. Then one more thing. Did Hajime-san name those Arachne-san?」

「More or less. It will be more convenient in various things if they have individual names, right?」

「Their names sound terribly familiar for me though.」

The platinum apostles flashed in the back of her mind — the people who Shia worked hard to beat to death.

Hajime grinned widely,

「Great name, right?」

He said such a thing. It really sounded like sarcasm. The names of the opponents who she once carried out mortal combat with were used to name subordinate golems……

「If the people of Tortus heard it; then it'd easily be something that they would yell 「Accursed thing!」 at……」

「The civilians don't know things as far as the names of the apostles, so it's fine. In the first place, Shia, try looking at Japan's literary work. Whether it's god or devil, they are toyed around with a lot just as anyone liked in their work don't you see. Even things like eroge (erotic game) won't blink an eye to do it. Like a certain archangel, just how much terrible experiences did that angel meet in the past……」

「Can you stop talking about eroge in front of your lover!? Besides, I think that Japanese people's karma is just too deep desuu!」

「I cannot deny that, huh. Recently, anything will get turned into a story character, and even after that, it will be anything goes for them following where the creator's heart is going. But, I'm proud from the bottom of my heart toward such people in that business.」

Hajime said such a thing with a serious and tense expression. Toward such Hajime, Shia thought 「This person, no, rather Japan is totally no good. There is no saving them anymore desuu」 while holding her rabbit ears. She wanted to see the face of the parents who raised such a son. Although, the parents were a manga artist and a game company president. The father was in the middle of diligently producing a new eroge!

While they were making such stupid talk, the group of Arachne who were given the name of god’s apostles accomplished the infiltration into their respective targets safely.

Hajime put his finger on a midair display and slid it to the center in order to make the vision of Sechste, who infiltrated the nearest tent, as the main screen. The screen could be directly controlled with by the concept of a touch panel.

Sechste was sticking on the ceiling through the tent’s framework, using a bird’s eye view to overlook the whole tent.

「This is……how should I say it, my heart is fluttering.」

「Isn’t that right! My heart is drumming fast here!」

What was displayed in the midair display was a single room that was covered with transparent curtains and people wearing protective outfits who seemed to be researchers. No matter how they looked at it, it was a sterilized room, or perhaps a quarantine room.

Those factors that didn’t suit the facility of a ruin investigation caused the eyes of the two to sparkle with curiosity.

The image from Siebte and others who also accomplished their infiltration into other tents didn’t project only the image of excavation equipment. There were also a lot of things like some kind of measurement devices and sensor equipment.

One of the Arachne circled around to the back of Wilford.

Wilford was investigating the condition of the melted man. He then gave some kind of new instruction and persuaded the scared locals to make them return to their work. Perhaps because of that he looked a bit tired and shrugged his shoulders in exasperation. It seemed that he kept making an exaggerated gesture like a drama even when no one was looking.

The Arachne who stuck on his shoulder without getting noticed then……

「Hajime-san. This Arachne-san, it's mimicking the movements of Luffy-san and pointing using its leg see. Ah, this time it's putting two legs on its mouth while twitching. I can hear the voice of its heart saying 「You saw the reaction just now? Laame~~e! Gi~ggle giggle」.」

「Eh, strange. This guy……Neunte, you again. Come on, Neunte! Work properly! Don't make strange movements! Okay, movement check! Lift upper right! Lift upper left! Don't lower your right, lower your left! Ah, oi! Don't lower your right! What are you doing lowering it along with the left! Is the voice recognition blurred?」

「……Somehow, Neunte and Erst are coming to mind though. Being able to see them following Hajime-san's order and playing the raising the flag game is really surreal.」

The god's apostles expressionlessly raising and lowering their hands. Sometimes they made mistakes and became flustered.

Certainly, it was a terribly surreal sight.

By the way, Shia was calling Wilford as Luffy because, in the end, the two were unable to recall his correct name, and as the result of the two of them complementing each other's

memory, they decided that the guy’s name sounded like Luffy! And so they called him that. The self-proclaimed businessman Wilford-san might be aiming to become a pirate king before long like this.

「Leave alone Neunte. What about Erst?」

They switched the screen to the vision of Erst who was at the main objective. The timing was just right when Erst arrived at the room where a lot of workers were gathering. It stuck to the corner of the ceiling and took an overhead view.

「They are digging a hole. What’s more, they are really going all out.」

「Looks like it. There might be something underground. Zweite. Go right above them.」

Hajime kept Erst’s overhead view in position while he gave instructions to Zweite to take the recording from right above the hole. Shia showed a deeply emotional feeling thinking 「Aa, that person who I shaved to death using the 100-ton hammer + drill」.

「This thing……it seems, there really is a path going underground.」

「Path……is it? It looks like a rectangle well though?」

「No, try looking closer. There, look.」

Saying that Hajime magnified the image while pointing.

Inside the image, a rectangle hole was projected. It was so big that there would still be some space left even if a lot of men were lining up inside it. The rectangular hole was

hardened with stone on its four sides, stretching out straight below.

Indeed, it was just as Shia said, at a glance, it was more fitting to call it a “well” rather than a “path”.

But, if one looked closer at where Hajime’s finger was pointing at, a protrusion like a ladder was jutting out at regular intervals from the stone wall. Furthermore, something like a tube that was giving out some kind of white smoke was sticking out.

「You will get it if you look at that tube’s surroundings. The man whose face melted just now was most likely from when he was in the middle of going down that ladder, and the acid or something flying out from that tube got him. Don’t you think it’s really dangerous for just a well?」

「Certainly, after all, it might enter the water for daily use if that’s a well.」

In other words, it was a vertical route leading underground.

What’s more, the word “secret” was attached to it. Around that vertical path, the stone floor was destroyed by heavy machinery, and the soil beneath it was dug up, and wreckage was scattered around. From that condition, there must be no mistake of this conclusion.

And then, looking from how even now there were the figures of locals excavating the vertical path up to around five meters below, it could be seen how that path was completely buried with rock and soil. And fairly severely at that.

「Putting aside the floor and stone, there were quite a lot of stones covered with soil. What’s more, they are

manufactured to be like that to a certain degree.」

「In other words……」

「The path wasn’t buried naturally. It was intentionally blocked by covering it with several layers of soil and huge processed stones.」

When Hajime said 「This thing is looking more and more like India○-san huh!」, Shia went 「No no, if I have to say which this is, then this must be Ra○der-san you know, surely! Ah, but, an ancient mummy just like in The Mu○my! That possibility cannot be dismissed yet!」 Their tension was rising.

「Now then, Shia-san, what to do yah.」

「Of course, we are going to expose the secret sleeping underground, Hajime-san yah.」

Hajime and Shia chuckled ‘fu-fu-fu’ suspiciously while facing each other. It seemed they couldn’t help but feel their heart fluttering from encountering an ancient secret in their travels.

「Suppressing these guys and then asking them just what kind of information they have is the fastest way, but……」

「I am in the faction of conquering a game without looking at the strategy guide desu.」

「An adventure has to be like that I guess. My transmutation magic will shine here. Let’s slip underground using a different route from them and pay our respects to the ancient secret faster than them.」

This was an excavation team that spent money on this enterprise. They also had special equipment and machinery. In that case, this wasn’t a simple academic investigation. Ahead there should be a profit that would worth the investment for sure — a profit in the form of treasure.

「Hajime-san Hajime-san. Let’s do that. Leaving behind a message, just like a phantom thief!」

「That’s good idea! 」We will receive the treasure first――」

「――by demon king and rabbit」 isn’t it!」

The demon king-sama and the bug rabbit-san of the forest bumped their fist while going ‘yaa~y’ with their motivation going through the roof.

Both of them kept their presence hidden while jumping down from the tree. Then they turned back inside the thick forest where the armed guards couldn’t see them at all.

Shia’s rabbit ears were swooshing-swooshing around 「Quu-iick! Quu-iick!」 while she was frolicking around. Hajime sent a glance at her before he activated transmutation magic while smiling.

While the crimson sparks surged vividly, a large hole that the two could enter in easily even if they walked side by side was opening. Furthermore, it was stair-shaped. In addition, so that there wouldn’t be even the slightest chance for the soil to collapse, the surrounding was thoroughly reinforced with metal plates.

They then went down the stairs into the underground while continuing the transmutation. It didn’t even take ten seconds for their figures to vanish completely from view.

「For now, when we reach the depth of around 8 meters, how about we try connecting the path to that vertical path from the side?」

Hajime confirmed the angle of the path and transmuted a cave aiming at the depth that had been dug up to this point plus three meters. He didn't make any changes to the ground, but he transmuted the wall and ceiling into metal plates while setting chemical lights along the wall.

Of course, Hajime had "Night Vision", and Shia was also a beastman, so her night vision was on the effective side. In addition, she possessed super excellent rabbit ears that could grasp the space three-dimensionally to a certain degree from the echo of footsteps even inside complete darkness, so they wouldn't be that troubled even without lighting.

Having said that, being inside total darkness would depress the mood by quite a bit. In fact, their feeling was eased to some extent by the green light illuminating the underground path.

As though to express such a feeling, the path that was illuminated by the green chemical lights looked like the Orcus Great Labyrinth. The two of them looked at each other and smiled.

The smartphone was showing the position of Erst that was left behind on the surface, so without any mistake in the angle, the underground passage collided into a stone wall before long. A subtle vibration was transmitted through it, so without a doubt, right above them was the vertical passage that was being worked on.

Surely, the people above there would never imagine even in their wildest dream that there were already people right

below the passage that they were desperately digging while trembling with fear from the risk of the melting liquid trap flying at them at any moment.

「We are going to follow alongside the vertical passage downward just like this.」

「I wonder how deep this passage is going to continue.」

A spiral staircase was created vertically alongside the stone wall.

While digging down deep underground, midway through, there were devices set up along the wall everywhere. There wasn't just melting liquid, but gadgets that fired short arrows, mechanisms that thrust out spears, a set-up of rotating swords came flying, etc, etc……

It would be pitiful if the number of locals that had been sacrificed increased, so Hajime casually destroyed them. 'What a consideration that is really like the Japanese people', was the praise that Hajime sang in his heart.

Most likely, there were other traps on surfaces other than the wall. If he was a person who really thought about the locals, he would destroy all of them, but……Hajime-san ignored that aspect.

Before long, they dug down up to a depth that felt really deep, and around the time they were thinking about just when this vertical path would end, they finally reached stone pavement under their feet.

「……So deep.」

「From the bodily sensation, it feels like it's around forty meters deep.」

「Measuring our distance with Erst……it’s a total of 43 meters. If the height of the ceiling is excluded, then certainly it’s around 40 meters.」

Hajime measured the distance using his smartphone while transmuting the stone pavement under his feet. Under the opened hole, darkness spread like a gaping open mouth. A really indescribable smell stabbed the nose.

Based on what he could confirm using “Night Vision”, he couldn’t see anything really strange. Hajime looked at Shia, but her rabbit ears weren’t particularly reacting.

Just in case, Hajime tried dropping a chemical light. It raised a *clong* sound at about three meters below and rolled, but there was nothing around the light. He could only see stone pavement. There was nothing reacting at all.

Hajime and Shia nodded at each other and leapt down to the underground space.

And then……

A sound rang from below Shia’s feet.

Gakon- It sounded.

It was a strangely nostalgic ominous sound.

The stone floor sank down slightly. Shia tilted her rabbit ears saying 「Eh?」. At that moment, spears jutted out from the wall at the side!

「Hyowa!?」

「Nuwah!?」

Shia bent backward to dodge the spears. Hajime, who was right behind her, unusually raised a small scream and caught a spear. The spear tip stopped right before his right eye. It was relatively close.

「Shia, why did you dodge, huh? I thought you are going to catch or hit them down, so I got a bit surprised there.」

「So, sorry. Somehow I was reminded of the past, and I reflexively dodged.」

「At Raisen huh……」

At Raisen's Great Labyrinth, Shia once fell into a whole load of booby traps, and she evaded with desperation. It seemed that the memory of that time was resurrected inside her.

When they looked over the surroundings once more, the path that was made from stone stretched deep to the left and right. The passage was splendidly created with a width of five meters and a height of three meters. There was a metallic door on the wall, most likely if they passed through the vertical passage, they would come out from there.

Hajime got it. The trap just now, then this passage, certainly it was a vivid reminder of the Raisen's Great Labyrinth.

「Even so……is this really an ancient ruin? If that's the case, the stone making technology at that time really surpassed the imagination.」

「On the television or internet, theories like 'the ancient civilization possessed advanced technology!' often comes out though.」

Even though many years had passed to the degree that the stones had weathered, the trap was still working, and the

underground passage was still properly remaining without caving in. Furthermore, the depth was forty meters. Certainly, “an ancient civilization that possessed advanced technology” that might be featured on television could be smelt here.

「And, which path we are going to take?」

「Let’s see……. Shia, how about trying to use “Assumption Future”? You are a diviner (lol), right? Isn’t it your role to show the future?」

「Please don’t add (lol) to someone’s vocation.」

「Because, your vocation is “Monk” no matter how you think about it, right? Or else “Asura” or “Martial Arts God”……or perhaps “Berserker”? At the very least, you ain’t a fortune teller showing the future who is living quietly deep inside the forest.」

If she kept silent, then her appearance would “fit” her vocation. Her faint bluish white hair, her beautiful features. If she would wear a shrine maiden outfit and lived quietly in a place like a shrine deep inside the forest, then she would really look like a mystical fortune teller that saw through the world.

Even by mistake, a person who used that ability only for battles like ‘Seeing through the opponent’s movement several seconds ahead of time and beating them to death by making the first move! A super warrior who is impossible to get ambushed by detecting every fatal surprise attack!’ couldn’t be called as “the forest’s honored fortune teller”.

Shia averted her gaze. “Assumption Future”, an ability that essentially was to see through the future by the assumption

of “What happens if this option is picked?”. She almost never used it, so she couldn’t really argue back though she objected just in case.

「But but, divination is my forte. My fortune-telling often hits the mark, and it’s popular among the girls, especially the girls in the class. They often consult me, you know?」

「The problem is that even though divination is your forte, you yourself don’t particularly like it or anything. Your hobby is martial arts and bike riding. ――Fortune telling? I can do any kind of variety, and it will come true with a high probability, but it’s not like it’s my hobby desu――right?」

「……」

Shia averted her gaze and rabbit ears. And then, as though evading that topic, she used “Assumption Future”. What if they went to the right passage? In the case of the left passage? Like that.

Her rabbit ears were bobbing up and down *myon myon*.

「Mumuh, I’m getting it Hajime-san! No matter which way is totally filled a lot with traps!」

「……」

Hajime’s fixed staring stabbed her.

「Bu, but it’s fine! I don’t feel any danger! Because generally, I’ll pulverize them all right from the front!」

Hajime wordlessly took out a chemical light. And then, he held it so that it stood on the ground and released his finger. *Pote-* It fell toward the left passage.

「Yosh, let’s take the left. The light pointed to the left. It’s a good omen.」

「……Just what in the world was I, who consumed a vast amount of magic power to divine the future, doing……」

Behind Hajime, who quickly advanced to the left passage, Shia was following him while directing a sad gaze.

A few hours after that.

Just like Shia’s divination, the two of them met a storm of traps.

――Countless spears stabbing out from the ground

Shia blasted them all together with the ground using tremor step.

――Melting liquid sprayed in a misty shape from the wall

Shia blew it away with fist pressure.

――The hanged ceiling fell

Shia pulverized it with Shouryuu○ that pierced the sky.

――A pitfall trap with a line of spears set up below

By using metamorphosis magic “Steel Clothes”, she destroyed the spears.

※Shia’s metamorphosis magic “Steel Clothes” : Just like Tio’s “Dragonification”, it was a technique that morphed a part of her body into steel. It made its first appearance during the main story’s last arc chapter 「The Young Girl With Rabbit Ears is Excelling」.

——Rolling giant rock

Nijuu ○ Kiwami! (TN: A fist technique from Rurouni Kenshin)

And then now……

Ranranra~n♪ The passage that Shia was walking through with light footsteps had flames with a terrifying amount of heat jetting out from both sides of the walls and the ceiling.

At the entrance of the passage, Hajime was staring at Shia who was swallowed by flames with an expression that couldn’t say anything. Rather, he was even harboring sympathy to the creator of this underground space that was littered with traps.

「What a trifleee! Spirit defensee-!!」

Shia did something. Shockwaves ran in all directions and pushed the flames back. The walls and ceiling cracked, and the flame also stopped.

Naturally, let alone scald, Shia wasn’t even sooty.

「……Shia. What is spirit defense?」

「I created it using a certain muscle head bug character as a reference. A technique that uses spirit defense!」

Hajime thought. That ain’t explaining it at all.

Perhaps, it was the defensive technique, “Vajra” that Hajime used, which she learned using spirit?

While advancing forward, Hajime asked Shia with a twitching expression.

「Is there, any other technique you created using that certain bug character as a reference?」

「Of course there is! Next, I had finished learning Shia Impact and Eternal Shia Fever!」

「Serious, ly……」

Shia was radiant in this comedic exchange. Would something rush out from her whole body……? Thinking so, Hajime directed an expression that could be seen as trembling with fear toward Shia. At the same time, he hallucinated a vision of Shia turning into a brawny lump of muscles taking the most muscular pose.

Hajime went around and cut in front of Shia who was walking ahead in a good mood, and then he grabbed both her shoulders hard and pleaded from a very close distance.

「Shia, keep being as you are forever. Forever.」

「Ye, yes? What's with you Hajime-san, so suddenly. Your eyes are so serious it's scary though……」

Shia was somewhat creeped out. That was just how much Hajime was serious. He didn't want to see a macho Shia!

「At any rate, this underground space, it's wider than I thought. Geez, rather than calling it a space, it's completely a labyrinth. The mountain of physical traps too, it's seriously like Raisen's Great Labyrinth.」

「It's far better with no annoying comments coming out at all though~」

When thinking that under the vertical passage there was this space and a treasure was sleeping there beyond a

doubt, then it could be considered that the main event was starting from there. The vertical passage seemed to be nothing more than the entrance into the underground labyrinth.

Around this time they became genuinely curious about the objective of Wilford and co.

「An amazing treasure might be sleeping here.」

「Is it treasures of gold and silver I wonder~. If we discover it, it feels like we are going to become the man of the hour isn't it~」

They were chatting idly like that while crushing the mountain of booby traps that were highly filled with killing intent from the front (mainly by Shia) and advanced for a while.

Hajime suddenly 「Oh?」 leaked out a voice.

「What's wrong?」

「The excavation work is halted. ……Looks like while we are being absorbed with the exploration here, around three more people become sacrifices. The locals are getting really scared. Luffy is saying something.」

Hajime gave instructions to Neunte to pick up the voice of Wilford.

「……Looks like he is making them stay by raising the compensation reward. Also, it looks like the lowering of their morale is really bad, and that today he is allowing everyone to rest.」

「How much has their progress advanced?」

「Around fifteen meters I think. It feels like they will reach the bottom just before noon tomorrow at the latest.」

「Come to think of it, the date has already changed to the next day. Fun times make it feels like the moment just flies away doesn't it~」

The underground labyrinth that normally would produce dead victims in the dozens seemed to be no different than an attraction at an amusement park for the current Shia.

But, at that time, *kyuu~~~* such a sound rang out. Shia pushed on her stomach in a flash.

「Ehehe. I'm hungry.」

「Come to think of it, we didn't take a dinner huh. We got too high spirited.」

Shia blushed shyly. Hajime warmly smiled while proposing a break.

「Those guys won't be reaching the underground space until around tomorrow at noon anyway. Even at the fastest, it will be a few hours after the sun rises. They won't catch up. Let us rest for today too.」

「Yee~s. Theenn, I will prepare the dinner quickly~」

The two of them picked a spot casually. Shia took out the "Anywhere System Kitchen" from her treasure warehouse and quickly began to cook. Beside her, Hajime took out a sofa bed and table set and endeavored in forming a pleasant space. Of course, he also didn't forget to set up Sentori-sensei (sentry gun).

Like that, by the time Shia finished making dinner……

Well, how should it be said? The dreary ancient underground labyrinth that was overflowing with highly murderous traps was changed into a lovely space that was decorated by warm lantern light.

An antique table set, the sofa bed of the highest class, Sentori-sensei, and then a hearty beef stew that stirred up the appetite adorned the once empty passageway.

The technique of the artisan was shining there.

After saying ‘itadakimasu’, Hajime wolfed down the dinner greedily.

「Second.」

「Geez-, are you chewing properly? Beef stew isn’t a drink, you know?」

Even while saying that, it seemed that Shia was happy seeing Hajime engrossed in eating her cooking, so Shia’s expression was warm and loose. Her rabbit tail was fluttering around *furifuri*, and her rabbit ears were bobbing up and down *myo~n myo~n*.

Surely even the ancient people would never even have imagined it in their wildest dream. Even though they were making a “labyrinth that would absolutely kill the intruder”, a sight of newly wedded spouses were developing there instead.

After that, they did things like harmoniously cleaning the plates side by side and clearing away the meal before falling sound asleep on the sofa bed while clinging closely to each other.

Next morning.

The excavation work had already resumed on the surface. By the time the work reached a point of just several meters above the underground space, the two sleepyheads finally woke up and aimed for the deepest part in a bit of a hurry.

They were able to reach their destination not too long after.

There, for the first time, the two discovered “that” which wasn’t an abnormal sight in this kind of place.

「Finally huh. All this time I had thought that it’s strange, but……」

What they found was a corpse that had already turned into a skeleton. There were also things like swords and armor all around. After looking at this labyrinth that was fully loaded with lethal traps, it wouldn’t be strange even if there were a lot more corpses lying around everywhere. It was also strange how they only found a corpse in the deepest part.

「It can also be seen as though it’s protecting that door.」

Just as Shia said, the corpse was found in the deepest part, lying down with its back leaning on the door. From its equipment too, at a glance, it gave off an impression that it was protecting the door to the death so no one would pass.

For the time being, aiming to check inside the door, Hajime avoided the corpse and put his hand on the door.

It was a large metallic door. It didn’t move even with Hajime’s physical strength. Thinking that perhaps it was a sliding door, he tried moving it aside, but as expected it didn’t move.

「Hajime-san, what is this depression here?」

「Hm? ……Keyhole, perhaps?」

「In that case, without a key normally no one can enter then.」

Shia ran her gaze at the spot around the corpse. But, she didn’t find anything that looked like a key.

「Can’t be helped. We already used a cheating technique to enter the underground space anyway, so we don’t need to search for a key or anything this late in the game.」

Hajime said that and put his hand on the metal door. Crimson sparks surged, and the door was changed into a mere ingot.

Hajime and Shia stepped inside the door that was forcefully opened.

「A corpse again huh……」

「It’s not silver and gold treasure is it? Ah, but, that corpse-san, it’s holding something.」

From its skeletal frame, it must be a female’s corpse. Inside the room that was around the size of six tatamis, a single skeletal corpse was lying down. They didn’t find any precious treasure, but rather it was a dreary room.

Therefore, the blackened metallic box that the corpse was holding stood out even more. It was as though a mother was embracing her child, especially with how the body was curled up embracing it like it was a precious treasure.

「This must be it. This is those guys’ objective.」

「Must be. Quickly, let’s take a look at the contents!」

thrill excitement
Waku waku, doki doki. It seemed that there was something really important inside.

But, no matter how tough the lid was, no matter how secure the seal was, as long as it was made from a mineral, it was meaningless against Hajime.

‘Now, I’m opening it’, Hajime used transmutation magic――

But just before he could.

「-!? Do, don’t, Hajime-san!!」

「!?」

Shia sent the metal box flying from Hajime’s hand. Her rabbit ears stood tensely on end, her eyes that were just recently shining with curiously was dyed in the color of vigilance.

「O, oi, Shia. Just what is it?」

「……That is, bad news. It activated after so long.」

Hajime guessed it from her words. At the same time, his vigilance jumped up to the highest level.

「You got a vision?」

Shia nodded briskly.

Since the legendary decisive battle, because there was no existence or phenomenon that was a threat to the bug character Shia, one of her abilities, the characteristic magic “Future Sight”, hadn’t activated all this time.

It was the “vision of death” that would automatically activate regarding a future that was directly connected to Shia’s death.

In other words, the inside of that black metal box wasn’t anything like a precious treasure……

It was “something” that could possibly kill even the demon king and the bug rabbit.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

※Joke explanation just in case for those who don’t get it.

- A certain lump of muscle bug character

It’s Ja○ Rakan-san of Negi○. The character that Shirakome super liked. Volume 27 tightly grabbed my chuuni heart.

※Arifureta Nichijou’s latest chapter is updated!

The cuteness of stability and the amusement of toying with the main story.

Sometimes I’m doing reimportation of joke material lol (Like Shia-mama or macho Shia).

My overwhelming gratitude to Mori Misaki-sensei!

It can be seen from the homepage of Overlap-sama, so please go take a look without fail.

Arifureta 290 finished

Arifureta Chapter 290

No Jack come to me huhhhhh. (SAN point -30, huhuhu)

Question, what will happen if I equip 5 cards that increase the probability of sock dropping added with one more of the same card from the support? The probability will be 120% then, but will it be any different with 100%?

Also say that all my space for servant archive and the second archive are full, then I claim experience card from my present box, will that item disappear or what?

Arifureta Chapter 291

Arifureta After Ill Urgent Thanks Planning Yue's Diary ③

※AN: I posted a chapter before this chapter, so please pay attention.

When I woke up this morning, I received a lot of comments congratulating me for Arifureta's anime, so Shirakome is really terribly grateful.

And so, this is only a short chapter that I wrote in two hours, but allow me to post a short thank-you story for the congratulatory comments.

No, I was really happy (^ ^)

–

――December ○ Day

It seemed that in Japan the last month of the year, December, is called 'shiwasu'. (TN: Shiwasu = □□, the first kanji means 'teacher/mentor' while the second kanji means 'run'.)

When I asked Hajime the meaning of it, he said that the end of the year will be busy because of various things and that

even a “teacher” who is usually calm will be running around busily, something like that? That was what Hajime taught me. It seems he doesn’t know the exact reason though.

I see.

Busy……

Busy, is it……

–

——December X Day

Tio and Remia are looking very busy as of late.

It seems that the clothing and jewelry shop they are managing together is really booming. It looks like they are going to be opening a shop dedicated to kids within the year, and for the start of it, they will be doing something like a kids’ fashion show.

It seems that Myuu will serve as the vanguard for that.

Today too they were making Myuu try on clothes for the fashion show one after another. Myuu was floundering while nearly drowning.

Fumu……

Adorable! Surely an angel will descend at the end of the year fashion show!

–

——December △ Day

Recently Kaori is looking busy, so I cannot really prank her.

Damn you, even though you are just Kaori, but making light of me like this, how cheeky.

I hear that she is following around the Yaegashi family that wants to end the dispute within the year or something. It seems that quite a lot of injured people are appearing, so she is busily serving the role of healer.

Come to think of it, Shizuku is making a really tired face isn't she……

As expected from the Yaegashi family. Them being a combat race isn't just for show.

……

……I wonder, will both of them quickly get free time……

–

——December @ Day

Recently Hajime isn't giving me attention.

father-in-law
It seems that Otou-sama's company is now like a scene of carnage.

It looks like they want to release the newly created game within the year. Both father and son won't come home.

Lonely……

And so, today I'm going to be bringing them supplies.

I dislike going to Otou-sama's company, but……this is in order to stay by Hajime's side.

I am Yue. Even if the staff-sans of Otou-sama’s company came praying to me as though I am a founder of a new religion each time they meet me, or even if I’m really troubled when they come worshipping saying 「The healing came! Our goddess of healing has descended!」, I am a woman who won’t withdraw for the sake of my husband!

Although, it’s troubling that it becomes such a great commotion every time, so this time I’m putting on the glasses of recognition obstruction.

I was noticed normally.

「Glasses girl Yue-sama has descended!」 Like that it became a great commotion.

Otou-sama said 「Yue-chan, thank you for coming! Everyone is half-dead already, but this is a more effective vitality restoration than an energy drink or caffeine! We can still fight!」 happily, so I’m glad but……

Perhaps I should say that it’s as expected from the subordinates of Otou-sama.

For them to easily ignore the recognition obstruction artifact of Hajime’s……

Hajime is frequently saying 「Just how in the world……」 while tilting his head in puzzlement.

Anyway, after that, Hajime cared for me a little, so I’m satisfied.

It seems that the battle against deadline? is still continuing.

I sent an encouraging yell of ‘thank you’ for their hard work before going home quickly, but if I can say my true feelings,

I wish he would finish quickly and stay by my side.

–

――December # Day

Shia crossed over to Tortus.

I hear that the Hauria clan is quarreling with the empire. She is going to assist with resolving it.

I asked her if I should help out, but she said 「It’s okay. If it becomes troublesome, then I’ll just mow down both sides!」 before she energetically slipped through the gate.

It looks like she will be staying on the other side for a while.

When the mood maker Shia is gone, as expected, the Nagumo house feels like it becomes quiet somehow.

……Damn Shia.

How cheeky of her to leave me behind.

Even though I told her that I’d help out, it should be fine not to refuse……

–

――December ☆ Day

The occasion of everyone being away from home came often.

shiwasu

Because it’s December.

Because they are busy.

Because, they are busy……

……

……

Eh? I’m, not busy though?

–

——December ◇ Day

Aaa, I’m reeeally busy!

In place of everyone who is away from the house, I’m doing the cleaning, the washing, sending things to them, aaa, I’m reeeally busy!

–

——December □ Day

I said a lie.

I’m not busy, at all.

Because, when I’m thinking of doing something, it will generally be over in a flash when using magic.

Because the electrical appliances of the Nagumo house are artifacts, it doesn’t take effort or time at all.

Today too, everyone except me seems busy……

–

——December $ Day

Right now, I am flapping around, rolling around on the bed, while writing in my diary.

Then, I suddenly thought.

Could it be I’m……

A NEET?

–

——December ※ Day

mother-in-law
Today, I tried asking Okaa-sama.

Am I, a NEET vampire princess? I asked.

Okaa-sama was dumbfounded. Then she exploded into a laugh so great she rolled around on the floor.

I don’t understand.

According to Okaa-sama, the cheat heroine vampire princess from another world, getting bothered that she might be a deadbeat is just too surreal, and it hit right on her funny spot.

Okaa-sama was laughing with teary eyes.

For now, I’m sitting in the corner of the room, hugging my knees, while facing the wall.

I’m feeling like not wanting to do anything for a while.

–

——December ☆ Day

Okaa-sama is inviting me while grinning widely.

girl comic
Amazingly, it seems that the shoujo manga Okaa-sama is working on will get an anime. It appears that she is busy with various things, like the preparatory meetings and the like. She told me that she wants me to become her assistant, doing secretarial things.

What consideration.

Okaa-sama! I love you! The vampire princess gets a job!

I am the assistant Yue. The perfect secretary of Okaa-sama!

I cannot stay like this. In order to become useful for Okaa-sama, first I have to fix my appearance properly! This isn’t the time to wear a sulking jersey!

–

——December □ Day

Today, I accompanied Okaa-sama to work.

It’s strange to say it myself, but I believe that I was a perfect secretary.

I became the adult version using metamorphosis magic, wore a stylish suit smartly, I also bundled up my hair crisply, and put on sharp glasses as insurance runs. No matter from where and how anyone looked, it was the secretary Yue.

Not just appearance, I casually guessed what Okaa-sama was looking for using soul magic and made preparations ahead of time.

In order to give the other party a good impression, I smiled a lot more than usual.

Even if I don’t have the needed thing in hand, I could take it out quickly using space magic.

……How dreadful.

My own perfect way of working is dreadful!

Perhaps being a secretary, is my hidden vocation.

But, what concerned me though, was how Okaa-sama was smiling wryly for some reason, and it felt like all the staff-sans of the other side had their gazes fixed on me the whole time……

……

……Okaa-sama. Is secretary Yue, not needed anymore?

–

——December♪ Day

O Nagumo house! Everyone came home!

Their expressions were tired, but it seemed that everyone finished their business safely.

It became a gathering of the whole family after so long.

I heard various stories from them. It looks like everyone had it difficult.

……Having the whole family present is happiness.

There is no doubt that I’m happy.

No doubt about it, but……

It feels like the fundamental problem isn’t resolved.

Is it mistaken for a vampire princess of another world to be a NEET?

Thinking that, at night, I went to consult Hajime.

I’m anxious about the future. Is it all right for me to stay a NEET like this? Should I do something like a part-time job?

Hajime rolled around with laughter. Damn you, Hajime. Even though I consulted you while enduring shame that almost broke through the heavens. The reaction of parent and child is really similar.

Like that, when I stared at Hajime resentfully, Hajime apologized 「My bad, my bad」 while he also apologized 「It was my bad that I made you feel lonely」.

It was a fact that I was lonely, but it’s not like he needed to apologize for that.

Just, I only thought a bit if I too can say 「I did xxx」, then how nice would that be?

When I told him so, Hajime talked with a preface of 「Yue is unexpectedly a person who is brimming with curiosity, so isn’t it fine if you try your hand at everything from A to Z that caught your interest? And so basically……」, and then he,

「’I’m a fulltime housewife’, isn’t it fine even if you say that?」

Sheesh Hajime, he said such a thing while looking a bit embarrassed.

It felt like the scales had fallen from my eyes.

Housewife. Fulltime housewife. The yamato nadeshiko wife who is waiting for her husband’s return!!

The murkiness in my heart cleared up all at once.

I am Yue. The cheat fulltime housewife vampire princess!

For now, as the duty of the housewife, I’ll push down my husband and receive him deliciously.

–

TN: It was announced in the Niko live yesterday, but Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou will get an anime.

It’s planned to be broadcasted by April of next year.

Other than that too,

- 25 December Seventh volume plus Drama CD & Side Story first volume will be released at the same time
- Side story [Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou – Zero] will get a manga version
- March of next year the Eighth volume plus Drama CD & comic version third volume

Etc, etc, there were various information, so I’ll be happy if you readers can check them out.

For the details, please go to the official site (Https://arifureta.com/)

In any case, this too is all thanks to everyone who gave me support.

Really, really thank you very much!

From here on too, Shirakome himself will also have fun to the maximum while also working hard so that I’ll be able to share a fun time with everyone. So from now on too please take care of Arifureta by all means.

Arifureta Chapter 292

Arifureta After III Shia Arc Take Care of the Rest

The boats floated side by side, and a dialogue was carried out on the river.

Wilford, who was face to face with Hajime, also had a gatling gun and large revolver facing toward him on this occasion. Cold sweat was flowing down like a river from his whole body. Especially due to the dignity of the large revolver that was grinding on his forehead, surely his life span was shrinking with certainty even now.

By the way, about his underlings, perhaps it should be said to be “just as expected”, they were really excellent. Although the majority of them were either those who were on Wilford’s boat or currently holding onto the edge of the boat tiredly, almost everyone survived even after going through Triana’s violence.

Also, for some reason, the researcher Brandon was riding on Wilford’s boat, and he was currently trembling while holding his head inside his hands. It was completely unknown why he was coming along.

「And, who are you guys actually? If I remember right……the Reletense Company you said?」

In response to Hajime’s question, Wilford opened his mouth with his business smile in full throttle.

「Hahaha, it’s just a mere trading company. It deals with various goods――」

Gorit- Donner’s muzzle was carving a wrinkle on his forehead.

「That is the business on the surface, but behind the scenes, it’s searching, researching, and making use of “relics of power”……especially to use as weapons. It’s that kind of company.」

Hearing Wilford easily confess everything, Brandon, who was holding his head, suddenly opened his eyes so wide.

「You idiot! Are you planning on betrayal!? The thing about relics is an extreme secret!」

Wilford didn’t even turn his gaze toward him.

The men also didn’t show any particular reaction. If they had to choose, it seemed they were people who leaned more to Wilford’s side.

Hajime tilted his head and asked.

「……”Relics of power”? Another fantasy word comes out again huh. What do you mean by that?」

「From where I’m standing it’s you who is more fanciful though……」

Wilford showed a pondering face as though he was picking his words. His forehead was ground again.

Seeing Wilford looking like he was going to spew out the company’s secret like a Merlion statue, Brandon bellowed. Gyan gyan, Gyan gyan.

「Young man, excuse me for a bit.」

Wilford quickly approached Brandon, constricted his neck hard, and easily silenced him for eternity. What a quick exit from the stage.

「Oi oi, you did that really easily. Wasn’t he your coworker?」

「I considered him an unpleasant guy since the beginning. Besides, the situation is like this. In order for me and my subordinates to survive……right, it can’t be helped. Now then, about the “relics of power”……」

According to the explanation of Wilford, who wasn’t an ordinary person as expected, it seemed that existences called “relics of power” existed on Earth. So to speak, they were things that had some kind of special effect even among the “ OOPart ”.
out of place artifact

It wasn’t something that was known widely by society, but only an extremely small fraction of people knew about it. It seemed that the information was regulated, even from countries. Or rather, OOParts were items to divert attention from these kind of relics.

「……What to do, Shia. Even Earth is fanciful enough.」

「I don’t feel that surprised though. There are also things like UFOs or UMAs. Special programs for those kind of mysterious phenomenons are often broadcasted on television, right? I think it won’t be that strange even if one or two among those are actually the real thing.」

「I had already hardened my resolve that that special program was counterfeit, but……well, certainly this Earth is vast. Or rather, before speaking about Tortus and so on, thinking really, really carefully, even our own environment itself is a fantasy that occurred on Earth huh……」

The world was overflowing with mystery and the unknown. Hajime pressed on his forehead with one hand while groaning 「Was I too caught up with common sense despite having an outrageous experience?」.

「And, what are the contents of this box? You already grasped its exact location, so you must have understood what exactly this thing is, right?」

The muzzle ground again. It was a demand to talk using Donner.

「I thought that perhaps it was like this because you were purposefully asking for a talk, but as expected, you don’t know about the details huh. How about it, young man. Isn’t this a good time for making a deal? If you want even more information than this――」

Gorit.

「tsu. My bad, but just like I said before this, I prize my life. It would be unbearable if the moment I told you everything you just go ‘bang’. Aa, I’m used to torture so you can just consider that it won’t be effective. That’s why, first release us, after that――」

Hajime pulled Donner back.

‘He is going to negotiate!’ Wilford made a smile.

Hajime-san lifted one hand to the sky.

Wilford and co were all going □???□ with their heads tilted.

A few seconds later. A star was twinkling in the sky even though it was afternoon.

□□□□□……□□□□□

Wilford and co all looked up to the sky. An afternoon star that was gradually increasing in brightness. The mouth of Wilford and co dropped wide open seeing that brilliant light.

Then, in the next instant, a pillar of light spreading a heat wave and arrived with an impact poured down from the sky! By chance, the impact point was the remains of the boat that had been sent flying before this! The result wasn’t at the level of being smashed to smithereens anymore. It was truly complete annihilation! Water instantly evaporated and showed the bottom of the river! A terrific impact flooded the river!

And yet, for some reason, around the boat it was like only a ripple could be felt. There was no heat wave or impact at all.

Before long, after the terrain of the river was slightly changed and the light from heaven settled down, a refreshing voice resounded.

□Today’s weather is very good huh. On a day like this, it will make you want to drop the light of the sun and dye everything reallyyy crimson.□

Wilford and co were turning their faces toward Hajime with a movement that felt like a *gigigi* sound would be made. Hajime’s lips split open.

□Ok, boss. Call me your dog.□

「Who are you calling boss. Stop that.」

Wilford was truly coveting his life. It seemed that his subordinates also had no objection. Perhaps it should be said that they were truly a pack of dogs. It appeared they were obediently following the decision of the top dog.

「No, see, this work is a failure, after all, so we will lose our place from the company. In the first place, I joined the company in order to earn funds to become an independent treasure hunter. I thought that it would soon be the time for a change of job. Boss, I believe that we will be really useful, you know?」

「You don't need to promote yourself like there is no tomorrow. If you answer what I want to know, I'll let you go back alive.」

「……We are going to be useful, you know? Seriously.」

「I'm telling you it's fine, so you don't have to keep reassuring yourself. I got a loyal rabbit here in place of a loyal dog. You think I'm gonna take the burden of a troublesome bunch for more than this huh.」

Hajime wouldn't excessively apply hostility=murder like his time in Tortus. Unlike in Tortus, here there would be various troubles occurring if people died or vanished. Thinking of the effort it would take to carry out the countermeasures afterward, Hajime would instead give a pardon to a certain degree. Of course, it would also depend on the situation and the other party. Wilford and his group were people of the underworld, but they weren't like a cult group or terrorists that couldn't be talked to. And so, Hajime's words weren't a lie.

Wilford focused his gaze on Hajime for a while to sound out his true intention, but perhaps he somehow guessed Hajime’s thinking because right after that he recovered his bright smile.

「Hahaha, that’s really good to hear. We will vanish right away after the talk is over, so I earnestly beg for your mercy. And, about what that box actually is……」

According to him, the inside of the metal box was filled with an ancient biological weapon as expected.

Actually, they discovered a lot of lithography at some ancient ruins that were excavated at a completely different place, and it was written there that there was a biological weapon here.

According to the results from the deciphering of the lithographs, a minority tribe that was originally living in a secluded region was making use of it for medical treatment. The raw materials were from a very small fraction of soil of the mountainous region. It seemed that by taking the medicine in a dose using peculiar ways, all kinds of sicknesses would be mysteriously cured. But, if the way and amount of taking it were mistaken, it would instead cause the inside of the body to crumble and bring about death.

At the time, a certain large country that was aiming for hegemony had their eye fixed on that effect. And then, they researched the soil and diverted its use into a weapon. They would process the material, use wind to spread it, cause an airborne infection to spread, and then the infected humans would have the inside of their body crumble in no time at all and die.

「After deciphering the records of that time, the research team of the company formed a hypothesis that it might be

the microbes in the soil——furthermore, it might be a carnivorous microbe that was alive in ancient times. The infected would be feverish, and then it’s not that their cells would get necrosis or anything, they would physically “be eaten from the inside and die”.

「How can you understand such a thing?」

「A mummy was discovered. From how it was strictly stored, most likely it was a quarantined corpse……it seems that the research team understood the effect from investigating it.」

Hajime thought 「I see」. If that was the case, then it wasn’t a matter of poison resistance. Because it was practically no different from a physical attack, what would be necessary was physical defense instead of resistance abilities. And then, it was difficult to expect a physical defense from an internal organ. From the story, it was understandable how it could even affect Hajime.

Though he got a hunch that if it was Shia, she might be able to defend even her internal organs against it using fighting spirit.

「Hm? Come to think of it, was the team that discovered it all right? They discovered a human that got done in by the biological weapon, right?」

「It was from the BC era. The microbe already died.」

It was a strange story. If that was the case, Shia’s Future Sight shouldn’t have activated.

In that case,

「I see. That lithograph also recorded the way to preserve the biological weapon and the chronology of how it was brought

here.

……That saved the time.

There was no definite record, but even that microbe went extinct due to some kind of cause. The fury of the biological weapon was ended. But, not all of them. It seemed the excavated ruins were the grave of the royalty of a destroyed country, and according to the records a single princess survived.

After many twists and turns, the girl secured the method to preserve the microbe in a hibernating state, and then she escaped from the pursuit of the enemy country.

And that is these ruins huh.

In the beginning, it seemed to be the exclusive hideout for the royalty of that country. You understand if you have seen that underground labyrinth, right? It’s impossible to build it without great authority and fortune.

Certainly, it was natural to think of that place as the gathering of the best technology in the country.

Wilford and co thoroughly investigated the records and determined that the last princess had escaped. At the same time, they also found out that the last princess tried to accomplish her revenge by using the biological weapon inside the hegemonic country. These ruins were truly a hideout where the time in obscurity was spent.

But in the end that princess didn’t use the weapon huh.

Looks like it. It was also left in the records.

According to the records, the princess wasn’t going into the labyrinth because of the enemy pursuit, but most likely she was wavering between her vengeful heart and the weight of the sin of releasing the nightmare once more into this world. In the end, she reconsidered that the biological weapon should be buried for eternity, but her vassal didn’t agree.

The vassals who were driven by hatred and vengeful thoughts attempted to seize the weapon.

The girl escaped to the deepest part of the labyrinth, and after that, she never came out in order to seal the weapon along with herself.

□Or perhaps, she might’ve been exhausted because of her vassal’s betrayal and the truth of her ruined country.□

The corpse of the warrior in front of that door. Was he the only ally of the princess? Or else, a traitor who pursued the princess to the very end? In the end, why did she die on that trap mechanism?

Right now they didn’t understand, but there was no doubt that it was a tragedy that happened in the distant past.

□Naturally, the enemy country came to search for the princess. They rounded up the surviving vassals and grasped the situation. They then entered the underground labyrinth, but it resulted in a lot of victims. As a matter of fact, it seemed that the king of that country who disseminated that biological weapon went □This is bad, seriously bad□. They then decided to seal the labyrinth completely.□

□Why are only the words of the king of the country that disseminated the biological weapon so rough like that huh.□

In any case, the Reletense Company that investigated those kind of details then dispatched Wilford and co in order to obtain the ancient biological weapon.

「Now then, young man. I have said everything that I know. It seems that you aren't the Vatican's people, so I think you shouldn't have any more business with me, right?」

Wilford pleaded once more 「Don't kill me very please」 with a strong gaze.

Hajime personally felt that somehow there was a curious word mixed in with Wilford's sentence just now, so he ground Donner once more while ignoring Wilford's gaze.

「Why are you mentioning the Vatican just now?」

「Aa, I'm glad. I'm convinced seeing your reaction. No, you see, in our business, the Vatican is like our biggest rival. Fundamentally, that side is collecting and managing "relics of power". The agent from there is really merciless. They are our rivals while at the same time they are also the synonym of terror.」

Earth was seriously fanciful. Thinking that Hajime looked up to the sky with a complicated expression.

But Wilford's next words changed his expression.

「Well, in a sense, taking on a "returnee" as an opponent instead of them is more not worth it though.」

Gorit. Wilford-san's forehead was drenched with cold sweat.

「A, haha, as I thought, that's the case huh. Goddammit. So I had pulled the worst card right from the start. This is why

I’m saying that life is always going in an unexpected direction.

It’s fine to curse, but you understand what I want to ask, right? Answering honestly is for your own sake, y’know? You don’t want to become fish fodder, do you?

Wilford answered while still sweating coldly.

I’m in the business of chasing after the world’s mysteries, you know? There is no way I wouldn’t be interested in the group disappearance incident and “returnee” commotion in Japan.

……Well, certainly. We also got probed by occultist secret societies after all……

In addition, the bizarre information control that is so perfect it’s eerie. The Reletense Company investigated it thinking that it might be related with a “relic of power”, you know? Though they didn’t get a satisfactory result.

Hee, even though there weren’t any satisfactory results, how did you understand that I’m a “returnee”?

No, because……

Wilford’s gaze turned toward the spot where there was a *chudon* from the sky just now.

It’s about three months ago I think. You used that in Britain too, right?

? Britain……ah, that time huh.

The time of the *chudon* that a certain lord requested.

It seems that the Reletense Company also grasped the situation in Britain to a certain degree. Hajime did forbid the related people from talking and manipulated society’s recognition to a certain degree, but as expected, he didn’t do anything like erasing the memory of all the people living nearby who saw that light. It wasn’t strange that the sky *chudon* was known. After all, a facility was blown away along with the terrain. And as a result, there was a temporary water outage after that.

「And so, the Reletense Company is gathering the information of you all to a certain degree. That’s why even if you dispose of me――」

「So you’re saying, don’t kill me even if I’m not gonna take you in. ……You are someone really good at calculating, right?」

「Yes, boss. I, Wilford and my subordinates won’t get involved at all with boss and the “returnees” and people related to them! Rather, when you need it, I will be really useful――」

「You are really persistent at promoting yourself! It’s fine; we are going to take care of things like that by ourselves. Also, if you call me boss again, I’m gonna shoot you.」

Hajime stored away Donner with an exasperated expression. Tension left Wilford’s shoulders, and he let out a long sigh. It seemed that inside he was really nervous in contrast with his outward appearance.

「If there is no more work, I’m thinking of being allowed to withdraw quickly, but……」

「Aa? Aah, it’s fine already. Go.」

「Right, I really want to do just that, but look, our boat is destroyed so……」

Wilford. He really had a great personality. It seemed he was implicitly pleading ‘Can you take us to the ruins, or to Puhang city?’.

Certainly, there was quite a distance whichever way they would go. Furthermore, this river normally had crocodiles. The men hanging on the edge of the boat were sometimes worrying about their surroundings even now because of that.

Wilford and co were turning a gaze that was filled with hope at Hajime.

Toward them who was like that, Hajime naturally smiled brightly.

「Is that necessary?」

The place became deadly silent.

「Noo, see. There are also injured people here, as expected――」

Gorit

「You guys! It’s a race to Puhang city! Now, swim! Be careful of crocodiles!」

Wilford energetically swam downstream like a fish that had obtained water. The men were carrying the injured while hurriedly following him.

「In a sense, they are a happy bunch huh……」

「Isn’t that right desuu~. I thought that he was just a smug person, but if I have to say which one, he is a gag personnel instead.」

By the way, they casually left behind Mr. Brandon. It couldn’t be helped, so Hajime and Shia left the boat where Brandon was at to be carried away by the flow. Surely, he too would drift away to somewhere.

「Now then, Shia. About from here on……」

「Yes desu. What to do?」

Hajime showed a pondering gesture for a bit.

「Let’s see. At first, our objective is to search for Hauria’s base farther in the back region of the ruin, but now, I think it should be fine if we just made that ancient ruin into Hauria’s base.」

「Isn’t that riiight. It’s easily a fortress already after allll. An underground labyrinth overflowing with killing intent.」

「Right? They are a bunch who greatly love booby traps after all. They are going to be happy for sure. Right now it’s submerged and broken, but it can just be fixed later.」

「But, as a hideout……that Reletense Company or whatever, knows about it already.」

「About that, the local people won’t get near because of the rumor of the curse, and the government of this country doesn’t know of its worth. In that case, it’s necessary to do something about the recognition of the foreigners.」

If only that point could be cleared, then the ancient ruin’s underground labyrinth would definitely become a good base

for the Hauria clan.

Hajime said 「And so……」 as a preface,

「I’m thinking of marching into the Reletense Company for a bit. Right away. I’m also curious about their information on us.」

「Isn’t that right~. I’m concerned about the information about us. It’s unfortunate that the date is interrupted, but yes, let’s go right away.」

Both of them nodded to each other, then Hajime took out the compass and crystal key and immediately teleported from the forest area to the center of a metropolis in America.

–

–

–

A metropolis on the west coast. A high-rise building in the corner of that city――the Reletense Company’s thirtieth floor.

「To think that a robbery case already occurred at the place we infiltrated, this is just too much.」

「As expected of Hajime-san. No matter where and what you try to do, you will encounter trouble. It’s only Hajime-san that is impossible to find the “expected unexpected” happen to you.」

Such a conversation between Hajime and Shia resounded.

Ahead of the gaze of the two was flickering lights, glass walls that were partly smashed, a little bit of scattered

blood, and then several collapsed guards, along with several people who seemed to be staff.

No matter how they looked, it was the scene of an invasion.

Due to the difference of time zone, the curtain of night had already descended here. It seemed that most people had gone home, so there were a few presences of people inside the company. Seeing how there weren’t any alarms or commotion that could be heard, it seemed that what happened on this floor hadn’t been discovered yet.

The two came here with the guidance of the compass, so they should be able to find the file regarding “returnees” or ancient ruins at the terminal on this floor, but……

「Is this done by industrial espionage? According to Luffy, it looks like this is a company that is prosperous behind the scenes.」

「Hajime-san, Hajime-san. Before we get dragged into strange trouble again, let’s accomplish our objective quickly.」

Hajime nodded to Shia’s words and called out the Arachne-san group. It was in order to inject sleeping drugs into the collapsed people, just in case.

Seen from the side, it was like an inhuman act of beating a corpse, but because the guard whose wound seemed serious also received a tiny bit of healing medicine injected into them, it was a good deed instead even if they were starting to convulse *twitch twitch* from it.

「Come to think of it Hajime-san, how are we going to check the information? I imagine that the PC has protections, right?」

For the data related to the ancient ruin, they could just destroy the server later and also apply recognition manipulation to the staff with something like 「Heh? Feels like I forgot something? Well, it mustn’t be a big deal if I forgot about it」.

Although, regarding the information of “returnee”, just in case they also wanted to confirm how much the company actually grasped and how skilled their information gathering ability was.

And so, it would be quickest to browse the data from the terminal, but something like the data of a company naturally couldn’t be browsed that easily. The data was obviously being protected using a password and so on.

Something like hacking was completely the field of Earth technology> Hajime could do programming for things related to creating games, but he had no technology to infiltrate the terminal of a company.

And so, Shia’s question was only natural.

「No problem. I’ll use this.」

「What is it?」

Hajime took out two sunglasses from the Treasure Warehouse. He put one on himself while also putting the other on Shia.

「It’s an artifact to replay the sight of the past through the lens——Urd Glass.」

It was an artifact that Tio often used to gather image albums. In Tio’s case, the camera she used had Urd Glass as its lens.

Seeing the past through this artifact would consume magic power in proportion to the amount of time that was traced back. That consumption rate was also at a level that couldn’t be made fun of, but just peeking back through this whole day to look at the password wouldn’t be a problem.

‘I see’, Shia nodded while she cracked her neck. She was putting herself in a fighting spirit~

「Why is it only my sunglass that looks like a party-goer’s specification!? Isn’t the frame absurdly heart shaped!?」

「That’s not all y’know. Try filling it with magic power.」

She tried pouring in some magic power to the glasses. The glasses shined really bright! Light of seven colors brilliantly and super colorfully decorated the inside of the dark room!

Shia was shining bright!

「Are there others?」

「What are you dissatisfied about?」

「Mostly everything.」

Even though he created them for Shia. Even though Yue was pleased with it. Hajime muttered such things while taking out different sunglass. It was a teardrop type.

Shia personally felt something like 「Ee~, isn’t there anything with a smarter look?」, but……when she put it on she thought 「Eh? It unexpectedly suits me?」.

「Well, I’m fine with this, but……when Hajime-san is wearing round type sunglass, it feels terribly suspicious, or really fishy.」

「It’s been booming recently. When you meet the people of a government wearing this, they generally will draw back. The bunch who should be good at poker faces will have their thoughts 「Thi, this guy, he is totally fishy!」 completely appear on their face.」

「Please don’t play around with the reaction of government officials.」

Hajime cackled while prompting Shia to activate the ability of the Urd Glass to see the past.

Through the Urd Glass, the past of the room began to be projected.

First, the situation of the incident was projected.

「Oo, it’s like a movie desuu! This mister thief somehow is amazing! Hajime-san, let’s start from the beginning of the assault!」

「Certainly it’s like movie huh. Yosh, then starting from the beginning of the attack……」

The image was projected like a replay, and the beginning of the attack was normally played back.

Just as the two said, a sight that was like a movie scene spread out.

The attacker wore a really fit coat with his face hidden by a mask. That mask was like the face of Kao○shi of a certain anime movie with a spirited away phenomenon; it looked really eerie.

It seemed the attacker was alone. He made several staff members who were working overtime faint, then threatened

the last one with a knife and began to browse the information on the terminal. And then, he gave instructions to the male staff member who was stiff from terror and began to copy the information to a storage medium.

「……This guy.」

The browsed information and the copied content caused Hajime to narrow his eyes and reflexively leaked out his voice.

「It’s the information of the ancient ruins isn’t it~. How timely. Well, that is fine, but why, even the information of the “returnees”……」

「Rather than it being his objective, it feels more like he discovered it by chance and snatched it on occasion huh.」

Although, Hajime wondered why there was a need to go as far as copying the data expressly. If the man was an industrial spy, there should be other information that could be more profitable.

The image was progressing even while Hajime and Shia tilted their head in puzzlement. Then, two guards carelessly arrived in the middle of the copying progress. It looks like they were patrolling.

The threatened staff instantly looked relieved, but right after that he was punched and fainted. The attacker also attacked the guards. He sent one guard flying using an old-looking collapsed baton, while the other one was blown away to the glass wall with a midair spinning kick.

After confirming that the guards were silenced, the attacker pulled out the storage media that had finished copying the

data before vanishing inside the dark corridor as though melting into darkness.

「Hoee~, it was amazing. That's obviously a pro. Just who in the world could he be?」

Shia raised an admiring voice, but Hajime didn't react. When she looked, Hajime was folding his arms thinking of something.

「What's wrong? Is Hajime-san concerned with the information of the "returnees" being taken?」

「No, that's not really a big problem. After all, using the compass, we can find the attacker's whereabouts right away. There is no rush. Just……」

「Just? What is it? Is there something concerning?」

「It was just for an instant, but the baton that guy showed, also when he jumped, at the inner part of his exposed coat……I saw a cross mark.」

「??」

'What's wrong with that?' Shia's rabbit ears tilted. Hajime explained while pondering.

「If you say that it might be just a fashion, then that's that, but if that's not the case, then it will be quite troublesome I guess. If that guy has a backing just like what I'm imagining, the people behind him will become interested in the "returnees".」

「The people behind him……you mean that attacker-san belonged to an organization, and that organization is troublesome?」

「I don’t know whether they are troublesome or not though. I also don’t know what their intention is.」

「H~m? Who could it be?」

「Luffy said it, right? The organization that should be avoided in this business?」

「Ee~rr……ah」

Shia hit her palm *pon* when she remembered. Hajime who saw that nodded and spoke the organization, or rather the country the attacker might belong to.

「Right, it’s the Vatican.」

–

–

–

A residential area in a certain place in Britain.

The town had splendid harmony between new and old buildings. Inside a house at a tranquil area slightly distanced from the center of the city, resounded the voice of a girl that sounded delighted, or joyful, or it wouldn’t even be an exaggeration to say that the voice sounded happy.

「Ko~suke~! The pie is finished baking~!」

The voice’s owner was a blonde-haired beautiful girl with hair in a side-tail style and wearing a frilly apron and fluffy kitchen mittens——Emily Grant.

Her hands held a container of apple pie that was baked just now. She sniffed *sun sun-* at the sweet, gentle aroma in

enjoyment with her almond-shaped eyes that were like a cat’s narrowing in satisfaction.

□Ko~suke~! Can you hear me~? You can leave trimming the garden for later, so let’s eat before it gets cold~□

Emily-chan was calling to her beloved person who was currently tending the garden with a voice that sounded sweeter than the apple pie.

At present, the one in the garden was Kousuke E Abyssga——no, it was Endo Kousuke.

Although, to be more accurate it was one of his clones. The main body was in Japan. Although, even though it was a clone body, it could share information with the main body in real time, and it also could eat. The sense of taste could also be shared.

From the point that it “wasn’t the main body”, Emily personally felt lonely, she also longed for the real one, but she convinced herself with saying □A convenient communication method that is a bit real□.

By the way, right now her family wasn’t at home. They were going out. And so, there was just the two of them. Emily would restrain herself in front of her family, but when it was just the two of them, she became awfully indulgent. In various things.

From the garden, □Got it~! I’m coming soon!□ such a voice could be heard. Just from that, Emily’s expression loosened ‘funya~’.

She put the apple pie on the plate while humming, and went toward the living room with light footsteps.

And then,

「Yo, sorry for the intrusion.」

There was a demon king.

「HIIIIIIIIH, HE CAME OUUUTT!?」

Emily-chan screamed and leapt on the spot. The apple pie danced in the air.

「WATCH O~UT! AND THEN IT'S A WASTEE~E! DESUU!」

Shia caught the plate and apple pie while generating an afterimage. Hajime glanced at that while speaking his dissatisfaction with a throbbing vein on his forehead.

「Oi you, why are you screaming right after seeing my face?」

「I'm sorry! My Kousuke is always much obliged to you!」

She stood at attention before giving a beautiful bow. It was as though her husband's superior——furthermore, it was someone at the rank of a president or chairman——suddenly visited her home. Even while at her wits' end, Emily-chan desperately greeted him like a young wife.

At their first meeting, various things happened. Various things.

「Geez, Hajime-san you dummy! That's why I told you not to teleport in directly but to come in from the entrance. Please don't scare my cute little sis. Are you all right, Emily-chan?」

「Shi, Shia-oneesan……I'm, ALL RIGHT DESSU!」

She didn't look okay at all no matter how one looked at her.

By the way, they teleported directly inside the house because there were the guards from Britain’s intelligence bureau around Grant’s house, so this was so they wouldn’t get spooked though Shia wished that they didn’t spook Emily rather than them.

Then, Kousuke entered the living room saying 「Emily? Are you okay? It looks like Nagumo and Shia came though」 while wiping his hands with a towel.

「Kousukee!」

Emily quickly snuggled beside Kousuke. It seemed she was really nervous about being in the presence of the demon king.

Kousuke comforted Emily ‘there, there’ while asking.

「Nagumo, and also Shia-san. What’s the matter you two? If I remember right, you two were in the middle of a trip, right?」

「Aa, it became a bit of a troublesome mater. This is a work request.」

「……Trouble?」

Kousuke’s vigilance jumped up. He looked at Hajime with a reluctant face.

Hajime smiled wryly at such a Kousuke while putting a metal box beside the apple pie.

「You see, this is something we found at an underground dungeon of an ancient ruin. A powerful biological weapon that destroyed several countries in the past.」

□WAIT A SECOOOOOOND-! There are a lot of places to tsukkomi that I don’t know where to begin here! But for now, don’t put that beside Emily’s apple pie!□

Kousuke recovered the apple pie swiftly while putting in a deft tsukkomi.

His gaze was intensely pleading □Explain the situation right from the start! No, as expected just go home!□.

Of course, the demon king-sama didn’t go home!

Emily said □Come to think of it, sheesh me; I didn’t even bring out tea!□, she then returned to the kitchen with hurried footsteps looking like a young wife as expected. Hajime gave her a glance while starting to explain the situation without allowing any argument.

Hajime talked while indulging in Emily’s handmade tea and apple pie. When he finished talking, Kousuke raised a dry laughing voice saying □Earth, is seriously fanciful.□. Hajime grinned widely at him and said.

□And so, it will be a lot of hard work investigating that guy’s too big backing, so I’ll leave it to you.□

□Don’t leave it to me. Stop. I don’t know anything.□

□You see, this biological weapon, it seems that originally it would become a cure-all when it’s mixed in a peculiar way.□

□No, listen to me. I’m not going to accept it, you listening?□

□If Emily is interested then it’s fine if you turn it over to her. It’s something like this after all. I’ll prepare the facility, and I’ll also set up any necessary things. It’s going to be a part of

the reward. If you aren’t interested, then I cannot handle it so I’ll just dispose of it.

Oi Nagumo, listen. I said already I’m not gonna do it. The opponent is just too big, you said it yourself. Rather than me doing it solo, you guys doing it is――

The reward is this much see. You will need funds for the wedding, right?

What do you mean wedding fund!? If you think I’m going to get lured by such words――

Kousuke howled to Hajime who ignored his words and continued talking, but beside him, the girl with a superabundance attribute, Emily, tensed her face and taking the bait, she answered.

Accepted! Demon king-sama! Let’s do our best, Kousuke!

Emily is baited!? That’s just too easy, right!? Or rather, which is it? Which got you hooked? Is it the ancient cure-all? Or else the marriage fund with me!?

Ko, Kousuke……in front of the demon king-sama and Shia-oneesan, you said “marry with me” like that……I’m, embarrassed……

Can you stop extracting only convenient words from my comment like a journalist!?

Emily-chan pressed her cheeks with both hands while fidgeting with a faked reluctance. Her trademark side tail also swayed *furi furi*.

It’s great that you two get along really well. If you need anything else, contact me again later.

「Ah, wait, Nagumo! Why are you looking like you aren't going to touch this even with a pole! You are leaving this wholesale to me too much! At the very least do this job together with me!」

Hajime stood up from his seat and opened a gate, to which Kousuke pleaded earnestly to him.

Hajime smiled brightly to such a Kousuke once more.

「I'm in the middle of a date with Shia. Telling me to suspend it like that……Endo, since when did you become that kind of terrible guy?」

「Shut up-. I don't want to be getting told that I'm a "terrible guy" only by you!」

'You've really changed huh……'. Hajime said such a thing with that kind of attitude. In response, Kousuke put in a tsukkomi with a throbbing vein on his forehead.

However, such an objection was just like a breeze against a swaying willow.

「Because it's true, right? For the moment, you already received the results from the mock exam to your targeted medical university that can be said to be certain. If you do nothing but study, then you'll want to move your body, and then you said that you wanted to do something, not sports, but something with risks. That's why, I suggested this to help you refresh, and yet, you told me to do it myself even if it will make Shia sad, really, someone like you is just――」

「DAaaAAAAH, I got it! I got it already! I just need to do it, right!?」

mumble mumble, grumble grumble Seeing Hajime starting to talk like that, Kousuke responded in abandonment.

To that, Hajime bestowed 「Oo, so you will accept huh? As expected from Abyssgate!」 words of praise (?) to him.

「Then, take care of the rest.」

He easily said that and walked to the other side of the gate accompanied by Shia.

From behind, 「I'll contact you later for sure! Pick up the cell okay!」 such a voice resounded. It was regarding an information leak of their comrades, so in the end, surely Kousuke wouldn't hesitate to help out Hajime right from the start. It was just that the opponent would be too big if their worry was right on the mark, that he was a bit anxious to do it alone.

Perhaps guessing such a complicated worry of Kousuke, Shia groaned after the gate closed.

「Uu~n, will he be okay I wonder?[

「It's going to be all right if we leave it to Endo.」

In a sense, that was the greatest proof of the demon king-sama's trust.

「Certainly the date with Shia is a priority, but when the date is over, I want to reconsider things related to the enterprise. Just like the Reletense Company. Besides, there is no one that is superior to that guy in covert investigations, so he is the most suitable person to deal with an opponent that we don't want to discern our movements. Well, if it's necessary, I'll lend him as much help as possible.」

Hajime said that with a shrug. He then pulled himself together and suggested something.

[Rather than that, Shia. We are still in Britain, but are we going to continue the search for a base? We still have time remaining on the trip schedule anyway.]

[What are we going to do with the ancient ruins?]

[We are keeping it on hold for now. In Britain, there are a lot of forests with abundant nature. And there are many famous stories of forests with witches in them. Occult stories like sorcery or magic are also the staple here. So perhaps, we might find a new Earth fantasy here.]

[Oo, that sounds good! Then, let’s go on a date in Britain’s forest for the remaining time!]

Shia hopped around happily.

Hajime too naturally smiled.

It felt like they would get the attention of some kind of great power like this, but in front of the smile of the rabbit that was the very definition of innocence, he could think of it as just a trivial problem.

After having a lot of fun spending important time with Shia……then, he would check on the lord’s condition just in case. Hajime muttered that inside his heart while……

Hajime strongly gripped the back of the hand that Shia presented to him with a delighted smile on her face.

–

–

–

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Continuing from last week, I received a lot of congratulatory comments for getting an anime.

Really, thank you very much!

Now then, there are two notifications.

- At Gardo, Arifureta Nichijou’s latest chapter is updated!

It’s interesting as usual. To the degree it makes me want to reimport the material back into the main story lol.

If you like, please go there to look at it by all means.

–

- The second is an apology.

The spin-off [Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou Zero 1] that was planned to launch on 25 December will be moved to 28 December.

It got delayed. ……It seems there are various circumstances.

Volume 7 will still be launched on 25 December.

My deepest apologies to those who have made a plan or are looking forward to it.

It will be delayed by three days, but please kindly take care of it.

Arifureta Chapter 293

Arifureta After Ill Tortus Travel Journal ①

At that time, when the “returnee” uproar was calming down, on a certain day where there would be consecutive holidays in a few more days.

In the living room of his home, Hajime was encountering an extremely troubling situation.

「If you want to pass through here, then step over your mother’s dead body.」

「……」

His mother Sumire was standing in his way while repeatedly jumping sideways, for some reason.

Her gaze was sharp, and her movement was agile. She was muttering 「kabaddi kabaddi kabaddi」 with a small voice…… it seemed that it wasn’t sideways leaping, but she was imitating India’s sport.

It was completely mysterious that, for some reason, his mother challenged him with an Indian sport even though he was only trying to go to the kitchen to get something to drink.

And then, speaking of a mystery,

「Hajime. Tou-san will cry if you don’t start showing any kind of reaction soon, you know?」

Surely it also applied to the father――Shuu――standing behind him in a Joj○ pose that looked relatively painful. (TN: Jojo pose)

In other words, currently, Hajime, who was trying to take a drink from the kitchen, was being surrounded by his mother who was doing kabaddi and his father who is standing in a Joj○ pose, for some reason.

Hajime let out a long sigh.

「I don’t want to say something like this to my parents, but……I’ll dare to say it. ――Seriously annoying.」

「Myy, how can you say that to your father! Just because he is a bit like that, it’s cruel! Apologize!」

「Oii, how can you say that to your mother! Just because she is a bit like that, that’s cruel! Apologize!」

Sumire and Shuu looked at each other. It seemed they both thought that Hajime’s words were directed to the other one. It never crossed their mind that those words could be for themselves.

「Wait a second dear. Just what is annoying from me? He referred to the father who is standing in a Joj○ pose in the living room, you know? In this world, there are no humans more annoying than you right now.」

「Ha? I don’t get what you mean though? Is there something more annoying than a mother who is doing kabaddi inside the house? Stop running from reality, Sumire.」

A beat. 「Aa?」「Oo?」 They both pressed on each other. The Nagumo family’s married couple were glaring at each other while sandwiching their son in between.

Hajime was massaging his forehead to endure the headache from the outbreak of this incomprehensible matrimonial quarrel.

「Anyway, leave aside the matrimonial quarrel for now. Can you say just what in the world you two were planning to do?」

Sumire and Shuu who were glaring at each other returned to their original positions with a jump *hyupa-*, and then with good coordination that would make one wonder just what with the dangerous atmosphere before this, they spoke their desire.

「「We want to go to another world and travel!!」」

Sumire and Shuu’s eyes were sparkling. It seemed they wanted to go to Tortus. There would be consecutive holidays soon, so they must be wanting to go on a family trip. And they were requesting for the destination to be another world.

「……Tortus huh. My bad, but is it no good to postpone it for a bit later? It’s not that we cannot go, but it will make my plans get disordered greatly.」

There was a method to go to Tortus. The method was simple. If there was the compass and Crystal Key, they could go anywhere.

Although, it wasn’t like there was no problem at all. It was the fuel. Even calling the amount of energy needed to travel between worlds as enormous was still underselling it; an

absurd amount of magic power would be necessary. They couldn’t travel that easily.

For now, there was a stockpile of magic power that qualified as just barely enough. There was enough, but there was a set schedule to use it until Hajime could establish a method to travel easily and freely to another world. He hesitated to use it merely just to go play.

Hajime was looking reluctant; however, Sumire and Shuu showed a complacent smile as though wanting to say 「That reaction is just as expected」.

And then, they signaled by whistling in front of the dubious Hajime. By the way, Sumire couldn’t whistle, so she was saying 「Pyuuu」.

Right after the whistling echoed inside the Nagumo house, multiple silhouettes appeared in the living room. It was a method of teleportation that requires the use of gate――”Divine Existence”.

Naturally, the ones that appeared were Yue, followed by Myuu, Remia, Shia, and Tio who seemed to be teleported by Yue. Yue and co then began moving with a smooth movement that was like a trained troupe.

「A-no-ther-world! Want-to-go! A-no-ther-world! Want-to-go!」

While Sumire started to take the lead, at the front Myuu, Yue, Remia, and then Sumire were lining up vertically in that order and began doing the Choo Choo ○rain. (TN: Choo Choo Train, google it)

Myuu was laughing while doing her best to move her small body in a big circle. Yue was depicting a circle with slightly delayed movements. She was expressionless, but she looked

like she was having fun somewhat. Remia too was chuckling 「Ufufu ♡」 while following their movement splendidly.

Hajime thought ‘These guys, they absolutely practiced this.’ At the same time, the face of his mother who was pleading to travel to another world with a triumphant look made him irritated somehow.

「That’s right!」

「To another woorld!」

「Let’s go! Desuu!」

When he looked back, Tio, Shuu, and Shia were lining up horizontally while making chuuni poses. Their pose was a Joj○ pose that came from accumulating research on top of research.

In the front was his mother’s gang who was perfectly reproducing a revolving dance that was leaving an impression in the heart somehow even though its formal name still wasn’t clear despite the dance’s fame while at the back was his father’s gang who was doing perfect chuuni poses that were also impossible to forget.

「I waaant to see my son’s cool side juust for a biit~♪」

「It was my dream to get my son to take me on a trip you knooow~. I wish my son will fulfill his filial piety~」

The mother and father were whining with their all.

Hajime’s forehead massage was getting more intense.

When he was holding his head at his wits’ end toward the eccentricity that was under the name of parents’ pestering,

Yue, who was expressionlessly twirling, opened her mouth.

「……Hajime. It’s important to do what should be done, but family service is also important.」

『Yue……』

A telepathic message suddenly arrived from Yue.

mother-in-law father-in-law

「……Besides, Okaa-sama and Otou-sama want to know of the road that Hajime walked on. This isn’t simply curiosity, but because this is about their treasured son.」

「……」

「……I understand. Hajime doesn’t really want Okaa-sama and Otou-sama to know about what Hajime did. Isn’t that right?」

「……You’re right. I think it’s something they don’t need to know.」

「……Okaa-sama and Otou-sama also understand that Hajime is thinking like that. But, exactly because of that, they want to know. In order to convey that they can still embrace Hajime with their feelings like now even after knowing.」

Hajime looked up.

Tortus was an important place where he met Yue and the others. There was no way he was avoiding it.

But, at the same time, that world was also hell for Hajime. What he did to escape and return home, should be considered as gruesome on Earth.

He didn’t have the slightest bit of regret, and if it was necessary, he would do the same thing even now.

Although he had already told his parents about what he had done, even Hajime would hesitate to make his father and mother to expressly follow his footsteps and make them feel it for real.

For example, even if he was convinced that how his parents were looking at him wouldn’t change from it, as a son, he felt a sense of hesitation that couldn’t be explained with logic.

The travel to another world had been done several times, but he had never brought Shuu and Sumire together on those occasions due to the manifestation of such thinking.

Seeing that Hajime was indecisive, Yue spoke encouragingly at him while still doing the twirling dance.

「……I also want to know. With what kind of feelings, what kind of hardship you overcame, in order for Hajime to return back to Okaa-sama and Otou-sama. The two of them have the right to know. Hajime, answer them.」

「……If Yue speaks that much, then I cannot escape anymore huh?」

That’s right, escape. It was unlike Hajime to do that.

Hajime smiled self-depreciatingly, and his shoulders that were tensed unconsciously relaxed.

「Haa. I got it. Kaa-san, Tou-san, I’ll invite you two to Tortus on the coming holidays, so stop doing the Choo Choo Trai○ and Joj○ poses inside the house already.」

Immediately, 「Wa~i!」 Sumire and Shuu raised both their hands joyfully. They jumped for joy while high fiving each other.

Their frolicking caused Hajime to spontaneously want to tsukkomi (retort) 「Are you two children!」. That was how happy they were to be able to know about what Hajime went through in another world.

「We did it dear! With this, we can see a lot of animal ears as much as we want!」

「Oi oi, Sumire. Don't forget about elves in the flesh! We've got to see the pointed ears twitching even at the risk of our life!」

「That's obvious! Especially the girls! Gufufuh, I really cannot wait to see erlves in the flesh it's painful……」(TN: In Japan, elf is read as erufu, with the 'r' sounds like 'l'. Here Sumire switched the 'u' in the middle with 'o', into erofu. When Japanese people read it, it will still sound like elf, but the ero here refers to erotic.)

「That's it!」

Hajime turned his gaze to Yue.

「What did you say about following my footsteps?」

「……O, of course, they also want to know about that, should be……」

Yue's gaze was fiercely swimming around. Seeing how the two were merrily frolicking while chanting 「Erlf! Erlf in the flesh!」, no matter how anyone looked at it, no parental feeling of wanting to know the son's experience could be

seen at all. Rather, their own interest and desire was bared to see.

There, someone pulled *kui kui* at Hajime’s hand……

「Papa. Whaaat is erlf?」

Myuu’s pure question. Her eyes were shining with curiosity. There was no way he could teach her the meaning of the words of the two dirty adults. Those pure eyes made Hajime feel like that.

Hajime was directing a nihilistic gaze toward Sumire and Shuu.

「Myuu. There are things in this world that shouldn’t be known.」

「??」

He answered like that.

–

–

–

In the morning of the holiday.

A lot of people were inside the Nagumo home’s living room.

「Kaori? My angel? Won’t you get back into a good mood soon? Look, somehow Otou-san is also coming like this. Okay?」

「……」

On the living room’s sofa was the figure of Kaori whose, although she was sitting demurely in an upright gesture with both her legs sticking close to each other and her hands placed on her knees, expression wasn’t even trying to hide her sullenness.

Toward such a Kaori——the one who was desperately cheering up his beloved daughter was Shirasaki Tomoichi.

「Kaori, Oji-san (uncle) is seriously depressed, so how about leaving it at that?」

The one who was smiling wryly beside Kaori while intermediating was Shizuku.

「Tomoichi-kun too is receiving hardships from his daughter huh.」

「……Otou-san? What does that mean? Rather, I believe the one receiving a hardship here is me who found out about my family’s hidden occupation and outrageous behavioral principles though?」

「……I stirred up the hornet’s nest.」

The one who sent sympathetic words to Tomoichi and got rewarded with a reproachful gaze from Shizuku was Yaegashi Koichi who averted his eyes. Beside Koichi, the one who similarly averted his eyes was the grandfather Yaegashi Shuuzou.

「Fufu, Tomoichi-san and Kaori-chan are really close.」

「……It’s always embarrassing every time it happens, Kirino-san.」

There were two ladies leisurely watching the father-daughter quarrels while drinking tea at the living room’s table. One was Yaegashi Kirino, and the other one was Shirasaki Kaoruko. They were respectively the mother of Shizuku and Kaori.

Hearing the talk of the Nagumo family going to Tortus for a trip during this consecutive holiday, Kaori and Shizuku pleaded ‘In that case, we too!’. The result was the families of both households gathering like this in the living room of the Nagumo house.

Unfortunately, the families outside of these two families weren’t able to take consecutive holidays. One other family would be the exception and passed off in this time.

In order to bring along that last fellow traveler to this Tortus travel group, currently, Hajime wasn’t in the Nagumo house. The people here were waiting for his return.

girl comic
Actually, Kaoruko was a great fan of Sumire’s shoujo manga, and Kirino, who didn’t know about the manga itself but knew about the live-action film, knew about Sumire’s true identity as the author. Their nervousness was rising, and they were also getting excited talking with Remia and Myuu who joined in the conversation about the mother-daughter’s story of the fishman tribe.

Shuu was making fun of Tomoichi; Tomoichi snapped and assaulted Shuu……

Yue was making fun of Kaori; Kaori snapped and assaulted Yue……

Shia coaxed Shuuzou and Koichi that she wished to be shown the technique of the Yaegashi-style (hidden), then

the two displayed outrageous ninjut——ancient martial arts technique in the garden……

On that garden's tree, a regrettable dragon who blundered early in the morning was being hung down wrapped in a bamboo mat……

The neighbors who saw the garden of the Nagumo house while passing through then used hurried footsteps……

The gossip among the neighbors that the Nagumo house was the haunted house of the residential area was accelerating……

They killed time like that for a while.

Suddenly, the space in the living room began to distort like jelly. It was proof of space teleportation using "gate".

As expected, a round hole that allowed a person to pass through was expanding.

「That bastard, he obviously has a lingering attachment. As I thought, perhaps I should create a scene of the Inugami house once to him properly?」 (TN: Inugami house is something like a murder story or something in Japan I think.)

「That's why I'm saying, why is Hajime-kun so fixated with the Inugami house?」

「Taichi-kun also receives a lot of hardships, doesn't he? More importantly, it's really like the Anywhe○ Door. How amazing~」

The one who entered was Hajime and Aiko, and then Aiko's mother, Akiko.

It would be Akiko alone who joined them from the Hatayama family. The other family members couldn’t leave their farm even temporarily, and this time they would pass up the opportunity. They would participate another time when the travel between worlds became easier.

Hajime who crossed through space while talking about something saw the two fathers and the two wives scuffling before his eyes, and then he saw the Yaegashi family displaying things like Katon (Fire Style) or Kawarimi (Substitute Technique) in the garden, then he saw the four madams chatting and giggling while feeding Myuu, and said a short sentence.

「Eh? What’s with this chaos?」

Even though he only left them for thirty minutes, for some reason, he was shown a great commotion inside the house. His expression cramped.

And then, he saw the Hatayama mother and daughter whose eyes opened wide.

「Aiko’s home is really peacefully nice huh. I really like the Hatayama family you see~」

「Hee!? I, is that so? Ehehe~」

「My, Hajime-kun you flatterer, saying happy things like that. Come again to play in the future. Our house’s fruits are the best thanks to Aiko, you know?」

「Yes. I will come at that time without fail.」

Hajime and the Hatayama mother and daughter conversed peacefully.

Under their feet, there was still a great ruckus. 「Speaking of the cause, it's the son of you bastard!」「Ha-ha-ha! Tomo-kun, your heart is really narrow huh~. This is why recently Kaori-chan is calling me "Otou-san" adoringly――」「Don't say anymoreeeeee! I'm a bit aware of it after allll-. Also, don't call me Tomo-kunnn-」 The father of the Shirasaki family and the father of the Nagumo family were grappling like that.

Incidentally, beside them was「Muiiiiiiiih, Yue you idioooot」「Nniiiiih, Kaori you stupiiidd」 an exchange of cat punches and kicks.

Furthermore, 「Pa, papaaa! Save meee!」 Myuu, who was jostled and treated affectionately like a cat by the madam group, was reaching out her hand to him while gasping for breath. In the garden, Shia VS Shuuzou & Koichi was about to start as Shizuku was desperately attempting to stop them.

In the end, it would take an hour for everyone to calm down so they could depart.

–

–

–

Everyone was only bringing baggage in the amount that wouldn't become a hindrance and moved to the underground of the Nagumo house.

The parents from each family were going「A really deep underground room is……」 in surprise. Tomoichi whose occupation was an architect was muttering something like 「The Building Standards Law is……」.

Before long they could see the end of the stairs, but ahead of it a wall appeared, and the path ended.

While everyone’s attention gathered on Hajime wondering what to do, Hajime put his hand on a corner of the wall. Instantly, brilliant crimson light ran through the whole wall, and the wall split into two. 「Oo~」 Admiring voices were raised.

「The wall is created using magic called soul magic. If it’s not someone that Hajime-kun gives permission to, they absolutely won’t be able to enter inside. After all, the magic literally investigates the compatibility of the soul. Of course, I can enter inside!」

Kaori showed a triumphant look, especially toward her father. 「I’m trusted by Hajime-kun, you know!」 Such an implicit claim caused Tomoichi to display a “sullen face” that was exactly like his daughter before this.

But, in the next instant, he made a grand tsukkomi with his eyes snapping wide open.

「WAIT A SECOOOOOOOOND! This is obviously strange, isn’t it!? What’s with this size!?」

Yes, the underground space Hajime was proud of had the size a bit like a theatrical building. No matter how one looked at it, it was of the size that reached up to the other houses in the neighborhood and even under the main street.

As an architect who often got troubled by how to create as much as “size” as possible with limited space, surely this underground space that felt like it was saying 「I exist for the sake of crushing the Building Standards Law!」「The land of other people is mine. The land of the country is also mine」 couldn’t be tolerated no matter what.

This space that was as though it existed for the sake of making him, a first-class architect, want to say ‘Are you showing off this outrageous thing to me, huuuuh!?’ caused Tomoichi to send a glare toward Hajime. Hajime smiled wryly.

「I didn’t do anything that would make it troublesome to deal with if it’s exposed. I’m enlarging the underground space using a magic called space magic. You know about the Treasure Warehouse that Kaori has right? The principle is the same.」

「I, is that so……. Anything is really possible with magic huh……」

Tomoichi felt like the common sense of an architect was overturned right from the roots, and he looked up.

He barely ignored the overwhelming gaze of his angel beside him that was looking for agreement 「Hajime-kun is amazing, isn’t he? Right, right? Otou-san also thinks so, right?」. He was also doing his best to ignore the exasperated gaze of his wife who was looking at him acting like this.

「Hmmm. This is nice. When Tomoichi-kun yelled just now, his voice didn’t really echo. The walls and floor also look strong against impacts; it feels like we will be able to have some good training here without being a bother to the neighbors. And above all else, it’s making the heart dance just from the fact that it is underground.」

「Right. Hajime-kun. About this underground space, can you make it under the Yaegashi house too if we request it?」

Grandfather

「Otou-san!? Ojii-chan!? You two are still planning to make our house into an even more outrageous residence!?」

The current house head and assistant instructor of the Yaegashi-style, who were repeatedly stepping on the floor and roughly striking the wall, were leaking out their admiration, envy, and desire all over. Together they also ignored the grieving voice 「Stooopp it!」 of the daughter who wanted them to stop.

「……If Shizuku is okay with it, I won't be reluctant to be of help.」 (TN: A reminder, Hajime is using polite language all this time when he is talking with his wives' family here. He is using casual language when talking with his own parents though.)

When Hajime was worrying whether it was all right to increase his lover's hardship more than this while looking at Shizuku, Shizuku shook her head left and right in a display of 「Firm rejection!」.

「Hajime-san, I wonder if you would also receive a request for an individual underground space? I want to have a consultation about a space where only certain people can enter using soul magic though……」

「Okaa-san!?」

Shizuku had no ally. Kiriko's gaze with her index finger touching her cheek and her head tilted, which strangely looked appropriate for her, was looking straight at Hajime.

Even while Hajime's cheeks were cramping, for now, he put away the problems for the future by saying 「If there is a chance, I will be open for consultation.」.

Except for the father of a certain bug rabbit, Hajime was doing his utmost to be considerate to the speech and conduct of his wive~s' family, so he hesitated to reject them down bluntly.

「Hmmmm, no matter how many times I hear it, the discomfort from seeing Goshujin-sama using polite language art still amazing.」

「Isn’t it~. A lot has happened since coming to Earth. I have also seen Hajime-san like this several times though.」

Tio and Shia were looking at Hajime with really complicated expressions. For the two of them, the demon king Hajime who was crushing absurdity with even more absurdity was exactly what Hajime was to them, so they only felt chills that made their body shiver, for some reason, after seeing his actions and speech that were considerate to other people.

Although this was the manifestation of Hajime’s feelings that was trying to treasure the entirety of his wive~s’ family, so they didn’t intend to stop him.

They advanced deeper into the underground space that was also Hajime’s “underground workshop”. Here and there, things like transmutation material, or modern technological goods were placed. The golems that were in the process of being created were especially eye-catching.

Grim Reapers

Even Yue and the others, along with Sumire and Shuu, who were used to seeing them to a certain degree had their gazes wandering around restlessly in curiosity. While that was going on, Hajime pulled several books from a bookshelf that was safekeeping various materials.

Instantly, *gogogo-* a heavy sound resounded, and the bookshelves split left and right. The wall behind it had a metallic two-leaf door that was also solidly made.

Seeing that, it seemed Shuu had a question suddenly welling up inside, and he asked while tilting his head.

「Come to think of it Hajime. Why are you using that kind of door? If you have that crystal key something, you can connect the space from anywhere, right?」

It was a question that was only natural, which caused everyone's gaze to gather on Hajime.

「Certainly that's true. But this door is also an artifact more or less. It's taking part in economizing the use of magic power. It erased the need to use magic power for designating or fixing the coordinate in place. Though it only has the effect of reducing the cost by twenty percent.」

「I see. If I remember right, the exit is fixed at the palace in the other world. Hahah, Tou-san completely thought that the reason you made this is only because this is cooler.」

Hajime slowly averted his gaze. Actually, eighty percent of his reason was that. Also, he secretly gave the name "World Door" to it.

Even though there was already a door that was locked using soul magic to enter the workshop, by the point he set up bookshelves to hide this it was beyond obvious that this was merely his hobby working in full.

The gazes of Yue and co, the wive~s, who guessed his reason, were lukewarm. Myuu's praise of 「Papa! These bookshelves are cool nano!」 echoed inside his heart in a bad meaning. Sumire's wide grin that seemed to say 「I understand, you know?」 was unbearable.

「A, anyway, I'll open the door so back away a bit.」

Hajime took out the Crystal Key from his Treasure Warehouse, then put it inside the keyhole of the World Door that wasn't particularly necessary. A crimson light that was

particularly meaningless surged throughout the whole surface of the World Door, and a pattern that seemed really meaningful emerged, also without any particular meaning.

When even more magic power that was taken out from magic crystals in stock was poured in, before long, the World Door started to emit light that was overflowing with mystique and impact. Of course, the light was meaningless.

There, Yue and the others also joined in by pouring magic power in order to lighten Hajime’s burden. All of their magic power brilliantly illuminated the underground workshop.

Sumire and Shuu were watching in fascination at that sublime sight without even making a commotion with wide eyes. The other parents were even more so.

Before long, the magic power of Hajime and co that was a real cheat was completely taken by the Crystal Key and World Door. Finally, space connected to the other world, Tortus.

Hajime rotated the Crystal Key. *Click*, the heavy sound of a lock being released rang and the door opened. At the same time, *RINGOOOON!* a bell sound reverberated. This was the sound that notified the “gate opening” on the palace’s side.

Hajime’s crimson, Yue’s golden, Shia’s bluish white, Tio’s pure black, Kaori’s silver, Shizuku’s lapis lazuli, and Aiko’s cherry blossom, lights of seven colors overflowed. In front of the opened gate, Hajime, who was illuminated by the backlighting, looked back across his shoulder while smiling.

And then,

□Then, let’s start the travel to another world.□

Then he stepped inside the light ahead of everyone.

Sumire and Shuu looked at each other’s faces, and they burst into a bright smile. They raised 「Yafuuuuuh」 a cheer while leaping into the light following their son. After them, Yue and co followed while smiling.

「Now, Otou-san! Okaa-san! Let’s go!」

「O, ooh, yo-yo, you’re right! But, is this thing really all right……」

「As expected, it gives a bit of hesitation.」

Tomoichi got cold feet, and Kaoruko felt nervous. Kaori grasped the hand of her parents who were like that and jumped into the gate while pulling the two.

「He, hey, Aiko. I know that it’s fine, but the other side, that’s, it cannot be seen from here?」

「……It should be visible though……haa. This is because of Hajime-kun’s excessive dramatic act. Geez……sometimes he is just like a child.」

Aiko was making an expression of ‘really can’t be helped’ while taking the hand of Akiko who was getting a second thought as expected. Then she led her into the light.

Seeing the Shirasaki family and Hatayama family respond as such, Shizuku fired herself up「As expected; normally anyone will get a second thought like that this time. I have to get a hold of myself here!」.

「To think that I’ll be able to have a mysterious experience like this at this age. Kukuh, I’m feeling quite high spirited that is unbecoming for an old man.」

father/old man
「That’s only reasonable, Oyaji . This is the world of sword and magic you know? It’s natural to be thrilled if you are a man. The first one from the Yaegashi family who will enter will be me!」

「Muh, damn Koichi! Getting a head start is unforgivable!」

「Geez, men will be like boys no matter how much time passes, isn’t it? But, fufu, my heart also cannot calm down, so I cannot say anything about other people myself. Please
father-in-law
wait, dear! Otou-sama!」

Every one in the Yaegashi family leapt into the light eagerly, leaving behind their daughter.

Inside the spacious underground workshop, Shizuku was left alone. Even though she was fired up because it was a trip to an unknown world for her family……her eyes were turning hollow.

But, seeing that the light was gradually getting weaker, she suddenly returned to her senses.

「Wa, waiiiit! Don’t leave me behiiind!」

She raised her voice in a panic while leaping into the gate.

–

–

–

The World Door was set up inside the Nagumo house’s underground workshop.

That door that was connected to another world with lights of seven colors overflowing was passed through by people who were fearful, people who were used to it, and also people who were high spirited.

Like that, while the *ringooon* sound that was like a church’s bell was ringing out, they whose eyes were narrowed because of the dazzling light finally managed to secure back their sight. There, what leapt into their sight was――

「……This is another world.」

「Haha……what grandeur. No more words are coming to me.」

It was a grandeur nature.

The World Door on the Tortus side was on the summit of a tower that was connected to the place with a sky corridor. Naturally, the sight was like a fantastic 360-degree panorama.

The God Mountain was destroyed, so although they couldn’t pay respect to the sight of the highest peak that once displayed a majestic appearance, the view around became better instead.

The mountain range that was continuing on and on to the north without end was truly the very sight of another world that was usually seen from fantasy movies and the like. The great plains that were spreading out to the south, the palace that was nearby, and the scenery of the capital that was filled with the sounds of reconstruction was within their view.

It was a magnificent sight that was the same as on Earth, but without any reason, from the air that the skin felt, the

people who were currently watching in fascination at the scenery of Tortus from the summit of the tower felt it.

That this wasn’t Earth. That this was another world of sword and magic.

Sumire’s dazed muttering was agreed upon by Shuu who similarly had his eyes wide open.

Their voice finally caused the parents of each family to return to their senses.

The round tower was about a hundred meters above ground. Just in case, there was fence set up, but normally anyone would refrain from approaching the edge.

But, Tomoichi and Kaoruko, also Shuuzou and Koichi, Kirino too, and then even Akiko followed behind Sumire and Shuu who were striving to be the first to reach the handrail, and they ran their gaze to the sight below.

「……Nn, nnh. Ee~, below, you can see the capital of the Hairihi Kingdom that is in the middle of reconstruction.」

Suddenly, Yue pointed one hand slowly toward the capital while saying such a thing theatrically.

「Yue? What are you doing?」

Hajime asked as the representative of everyone.

「……I am tour guide, Yue. Entertaining the group is my mission!」

「Eh? Why tour guide?」

「……Bus guide-san at the school trip was amazing in various things; she looked like she was having fun, so I wanted to

give it a try.□

□I, I see. Or rather, was that guide really that amazing?□

She was amazing. Her mental strength was.

Yue said that and then coughed.

□……And then, the mountain of rubbles that is visible over there is God Mountain that once boasted a height of the same level as Everest on Earth. It was destroyed by the meteors that Hajime rained down by a lot.□

□□□□□……□□□□□

For now, there were three convulsing expressions and three expressions that were unknown what kind of thought they contained. And then,

□As expected from my son! You got flashy there huh, oi! So you destroyed another world’s Everest!?□

□Please tell me! How did it turn out like that!?□

Even though their son was carrying out large scale destruction that changed the geography, for some reason, the Nagumo married couple Sumire and Shuu were making a ruckus with rocketing spirits.

Kaori answered in place of Hajime who was making a really conflicted expression.

□See, we knew that the enemy would come out from the God Mountain, so in that case, it’s fine isn’t it if they are blown away along with the God Mountain right after the battle started! That was the idea, wasn’t it? It was really amazing.□

「I guess. Countless meteors were raining down from the sky, and they impacted on God Mountain one after another……a shockwave that was like a great earthquake was spreading……I thought, perhaps the end of the world was something like that.」

Shizuku talked with a faraway look. Tomoichi asked with a convulsing expression still on his face.

「Ha, Hajime-kun. You, are you really able to make meteors rain down? I, I don’t think it’s possible, but you cannot do the same on Earth too, right?」

「……」

Hajime-san slowly averted his gaze. As expected, no matter what he couldn’t say that he was able to drop meteors down even on Earth. Furthermore, it didn’t just stop there; he had sent up a lot of satellite weapons into the orbit, where he would be able to go *buppa* with a sunlight convergence laser at any moment. It was even harder to say that.

Although, it could be guessed from his behavior. Tomoichi’s expression was convulsing grandly even more. One of the causes of his expression was also because Kaori was making a triumphant look for some reason. He wondered since when had my angel become a child who would be proud of mass destruction……

There, as though reading the mood, Shuu tapped on Tomoichi’s shoulder. When Tomoichi, who was busily rethinking the cultivation of his beloved daughter’s aesthetic sensibility, turned a conflicted gaze at him, Shuu made a nice smile that seemed to say 「It’s all right, leave it to me」 while nodding with a thumb up.

「Listen well, Hajime! Absolutely don’t use it on Earth! You understand, right!? It’s a promise with Tou-san!」

He rebuked with an unusually strong tone like that. Hajime’s eyes turned round seeing that, but even so, he smiled wryly and answered 「I got it. There is no way I will use something like that there」.

But,

「Are you serious? It’s absolute, you know? You really, really mustn’t use it. I’m telling you! A~bbsolutely y’know! Really――」

「Are you pretending!? Are you planning to make Hajime-kun use it!? I’ve been thinking of this since some time ago though! Hajime-kun’s unprecedented conduct was inherited from you, right!? Nagumo-Shuu!」

Tomoichi howled. The person in question himself was making a happy face like 「Tomo-kun’s reaction is really nice huuuh」. It went without saying that a pulsing vein snapped into place on Tomoichi’s forehead.

It looked like the grappling of Tomoichi VS Shuu would start again. Beside them, Kaoruko smiled wryly saying 「I’m sorry for my husband everyone」, while Sumire lowered her head saying 「My husband himself, it looks like he is really pleased with Tomoichi-san……I’m sorry that he is an idiot」.

There, tour guide Yue-san went *buppa* with a bombshell announcement that would send the place falling into even deeper chaos.

「……By the way, that was also the location of the headquarters of the sacred teaching church that was the largest religion on Tortus; but they were the puppet of the

evil god with the pope for starters, so all the people there were bombed to death. By Aiko.」

「Hauh!?」

Aiko's chest was pierced by the spear of words and she crumbled. Akiko was saying 「I heard the story, but when looking at the actual spot of the scene like this……I don't have any words……」 with her expression somewhat pale, and her body slightly trembling.

「Oh my. Geez Aiko-sensei, even though you are as cute as a small animal……you are unexpectedly radical, aren't you?」

「Hmmm. A teacher who won't shirk from bombing many to death for the sake of the students……you are truly a model teacher.」

「I'm glad that you are the one in charge of Shizuku.」

「I'm sorry-sorry-sorry-sorry-sorry-sorry-sorry-sorry-sorry——police officer-san, I'm the culprit. Sorry-sorry-sorry-sorry-sorry」

Kirino hid her mouth elegantly with her hand while chuckling 「hohoho」, and Shuuzou with Koichi gave her words of praise……for Aiko it became an additional blow instead.

She was fiercely and doubly stimulated with trauma and guilt that she even began prostrating on the ground with hollow eyes while beginning to apologize profusely.

The parents who were on the verge of fighting because of what the children did, then began apologizing to each other, with pale expressions and praise from a playful sense of values……

Shia who was watching that smiled wryly, while Tio spoke with a troubled face.

「I have anticipated this, but as I thought, the travel through Tortus has become chaotic.」

「The number of people shouldst be reduced a bit mayhaps.」

On the other hand,

「Papaa~. We still aren't going down nano~」

「My my, geez Myuu……to not only act completely unperturbed but instead even feel bored in this situation.」

Myuu was already urging to embark on the lift. As though to say that the chaotic situation before her eyes 'ain't my business at all'. Remia's expression was turning conflicted seeing her daughter's nerve that was getting bolder day by day.

Seeing everything including Myuu just now, Hajime looked up to the sunny sky.

「This is bad. I want to go home already.」

He muttered such a thing earnestly.

–

–

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

For those who hoped for the Abyss Lord arc, I’m sorry (sweat).

I’m unable to elaborate any plot yet!

And so, it will be my happiness if you all can go along with the idle chapters until I get an idea.

By the way, I also still haven’t thought of a concrete detail for Shia’s long arc.

Even the decision of which one to write is still pending. In any case, I’m thinking that writing some kind of long arc from the first Saturday of next year might be good timing to start perhaps.

There are two weeks remaining in this year, but please treat me well!

By the way, it feels like the Tortus Travel Journal will include a lot, so if there are a lot of people who say that they want to read it, I’m thinking of putting it in between bit by bit like Yue’s diary or the student life series.

Arifureta Chapter 294

Arifureta After III Although Formerly, I’m a Princess You Know?

Liliana moved from Tortus to Earth, and around the time she became an idol princess Lily had gone through a lot of ○○ Princess chapters.

Hajime was walking through the streets at night with one hand holding a bag filled with supplies.

He was heading toward the condominium that Sumire was renting to use for her work.

Even after becoming a top idol, Lily didn’t throw away her position as “mangaka princess”. When she had the time, she would draw her own manga at Sumire’s workplace, and she was also working as Sumire’s assistant even now. Tonight too she was doing that.

By the way, Sumire’s workplace was rented by thinking about the distance to the publishing company rather than to her own home, so originally using a “gate” to teleport was the quickest way.

Regardless of that, Hajime was walking the streets at night while feeling the coldness in the air. The reason was simply that he was feeling like it.

A certain friend with a thin shadow said it to him that the Artifacts were too convenient and all-purpose. If one didn’t control themselves and be prudent to a certain degree in using them, it felt like they would enter the territory of laziness. After hearing that, Hajime too could nod 「Certainly」 in agreement.

And so, as long as it wasn’t really necessary, he would walk with his own two feet like this, or even if he used it, he would manage it so it would still be in the realm of Earth’s common sense.

「It has become really cold huh……」

It wasn’t to the degree that his breath would turn white yet, but it would soon be at a period where the autumn colors also ended. Ordinarily, it was a period that would make anyone want to put on a warm jacket.

Hajime’s physique was tough, so it wasn’t necessary, but without exception, Hajime also put on a long cardigan with slightly thicker fabric.

Hajime’s appearance today consisted of black jeans and a white shirt with a loose collar. In addition, he was wearing a dark grey long cardigan. His attire itself was simple, but from an outsider’s perspective, it looked really good on him. The quality of the clothes that were obviously not cheap even from a glance also somehow raised Hajime’s manliness.

In fact, a woman who seemed to be just coming home from work that he passed by just now was throwing several glances at him when they were passing each other, so it seemed that the attire was good enough to be able to make a woman forget their wariness to the opposite sex while walking on the street at night.

To tell the truth, Hajime’s recent dress code was decided by Remia most of the time.

She and Tio were bearing the responsibility for the design and management of “the jewelry shop that had just a bit of a miraculous blessing” made by Hajime right from the start, but right now they were managing the business with an objective of venturing to the apparel industry.

Whether it was Remia’s western-style design or Tio’s design that was a mix of eastern and western style, they became quite the topic, so the business was completely on track. In that situation, Remia brought home the clothes and accessories with the design from their own company and made Hajime wear it.

Remia looked like she was having fun, so Hajime generally dressed like she was telling him to.

Returning to the main topic.

Hajime was secretly enjoying the night air and the silence as he would soon arrive at the condominium. It was then that Hajime suddenly stopped. And then, his eyes slowly narrowed.

At that time there was a female high school student who seemed to be coming back from a school club activity glancing at Hajime while passing by him, so she twitched thinking「No way-, my glance was noticed!」. She quickened her pace while shaking.

Of course, Hajime wasn’t exposing his displeasure because he couldn’t bear the glance of a student.

「……Well, it doesn’t matter.」

Hajime’s gaze fell to the supplies he was holding while slightly hesitating, but then he shrugged and resumed walking.

The condominium Sumire was renting wasn’t a high-rise condominium or a high-class building, but its security was solid. It also had a manager that was permanently present there which Hajime was acquainted with. Hajime greeted the manager who was a former police officer and entered inside.

He used the elevator up to the tenth floor. Even there, for some reason, Hajime’s gaze was getting strained while he fished inside his pocket and did something with a sigh feeling that it was troublesome.

He pulled himself together and rang the interphone. When he showed his face through the camera, an excited voice 「Ye~s! I’ll open it now!」 could be heard.

「Welcome! Hajime-san!」

From the door that was opened within just a few seconds, an idol who recently often appeared on TV——so to speak it was Liliana——leapt out. Her wide smile that was like a blooming flower was obviously different from the smile that was seen on TV.

「Yo, I came bringing supplies as well as a helper.」

Hajime returned a smile while showing the bag filled with supplies. The warm bag was filled with warm food like a toasted sandwich and so on. The toasted sandwich was handmade by Shia, and it was made from ingredients with a reduced sugar content, even the bread. A late-night snack that would make any woman happy.

「Fufuh, thank you very much. Now, please enter. Although it still cannot be considered winter, the air is really cold already.」

「You're right. It feels like a lot of the time an idol will wear thin clothes, so rather than me you should watch out for your health Lily.」

「I'm fine. There are times that it might become fatal for the country if I collapse and the work piled up, so I've been really good at managing my health since my time as a princess.」

「……Rather than working hard even if you collapse, working hard so you don't collapse is still better huh……」

Lily was more concerned to prevent hindrances toward her work rather than her health itself; in the end, at her root, Lily was a workaholic princess.

Liliana took the supply bag from Hajime's hand and also took off his long cardigan.

The inside of the room was warm, and wearing the cardigan would be a hindrance in working, so it was surely better to wear only a shirt but……

From an outside perspective, she also looked like a young wife being gallantly helpful toward her husband who was coming home.

In fact, everyone would surely think that.

The assistants who were peeping from the inside door that was left open had a really wide grin on their face. How they were all peeking in a vertical line like a totem pole was really as expected from Sumire's assistants.

Hajime’s face grimaced at the bad omen that felt like he would be teased, so he opened his mouth.

「Machi-neesan and everyone, what are you grinning at?」

「We are a shoujo mangaka’s assistant, you know? There is no way we won’t grin after seeing that kind of scene!」

「A real harem man. Just seeing it stills make my heart beat fast. What’s more, it’s a boy I’m acquainted with.」

「Ha-kun, you aren’t going to give a going home kiss to Lily-chan!?」

From above, the most veteran assistant Hagiwara Machiko (45 years old), the assistant who even though she was planning a shoujo manga but, for some reason, turned into a fighting manga near the middle and until now she still hadn’t gotten lucky with a serialization, Wakai Tsukasa (24 years old ♀), and a half-Japanese who had an American mother got attracted by Japanese manga and left the university aiming to become a mangaka, Rurikawa Anna (25 years old).

Other than them, there was also an assistant who was acknowledged by herself and others as a homo comic lover, and each time she met Hajime her gaze would stickily crawl all over Hajime, Aoyama Narumi (42 years old), and the assistant who was managing a maid café as a side job (?) and would do her assistant work wearing a maid uniform, Mochizuki Mae (29 years old), and so on.

Also, Sumire’s pen name was “Nano Sumire (Sumire of South)”, but the regular members of the Sumire Studio at present were the five names above.

Every one of them was his mother’s coworker, and Hajime was acquainted with them since before he was summoned to another world, so even after coming back he treated them politely. Especially toward the longest-serving member “Machi-neesan (Machiko)” and “Naru-san (Narumi)”, Hajime still couldn’t raise his hand against them.

Both of them were also close in age with Sumire, and they were affectionate to Hajime as though he was their real child (teasing included). So when he showed his face to them right after coming back from the other world, they were embracing Hajime tightly while wailing loudly.

Hajime was smiling wryly at them who were jeering at his relation with Lily like usual. Then Sumire came out from inside. Both her hands were already holding Shia’s specially made toasted sandwich.

「Hajime, you are late. Just teleport here with a puff next time.」

「? Are you in that much of a pinch? I thought that even without Naru-san and Moe-san here, the pace is still enough to make it in time though……」

「About that you see~. Suddenly, a non-serialized collaboration project with Lily-chan’s work came up. I went with the mood and said okay, so it’s really a big pinch.」

「Don’t say ok because of the mood……」

「It can’t be helped, can it? I never thought that Saya-chan in Naru’s place would get hospitalized because of pneumonia.」

「Pneumonia? Is she fine? If not, I’ll do something.」

「She only went to the hospital just in case, so it seems she is fine. See, Naru said “I don’t know any daughter who cannot read the atmosphere and get hospitalized in this important time!” and tried to come here anyway. As expected, that’s too much, so I stopped her though.」

「Haha……as expected from Naru-san.」

By the way, “Saya-chan” was Narumi’s daughter who turned fourteen years old this year. When the mother was a homo comic lover, the daughter was also the same. Hajime was also acquainted with her. Similar to her mother, her gaze would also be really sticky when looking at Hajime.

「What about Moe-san?」

「As for Moe, right now……she is in a police station.」

「What the hell!?」

Hajime made a fierce tsukkomi. When he asked, it appeared that a maid of the maid café she was managing was sexually harassed by a nasty customer, and the maid snapped and ended up smashing the customer’s crotch.

An ambulance and police got involved, and although the circumstance was as it was, an injury resulted from the incident, so the maid in question was interrogated at the police station while still in her maid uniform. Moe-san seemed to get angry 「What are they thinking doing that with my worker!」 and headed to the police station. While still wearing a maid uniform.

「I, is that so. Various things happened one after another huh. Well, I understand the situation. Lily, are you okay?」

「Yes. My part is finished already, so I’m helping Sumire-okaasama. If Hajime-san helps out, then we will make it in time for tomorrow morning!」

「……So the deadline is at morning.」

‘It’s seriously a disaster at the eleventh hour here’, Hajime thought with a bitter smile while sitting at a desk. And then, after hearing the work content, he started working with a practiced movement.

The man who slaughtered a god in another world and was called as his majesty the demon king, or the incarnation of unreasonableness by friends and acquaintances, was doing assistant work for a shoujo manga with very veteran aura……

Inside her heart, Liliana was thinking ‘If the people of Tortus knew about this, their souls would literally come out from their body won’t they’ while she also started working.

A quite bit amount of time had passed. The only audible sounds were the sounds of Hajime and Liliana working, and the sounds of Sumire and the assistants devouring Shia’s special toasted sandwiches.

Before long, Hajime’s hand stopped moving for just a moment, for some reason, but he immediately resumed his work while asking Liliana nonchalantly.

「Come to think of it, Lily. Recently, is there anything strange or anything you are concerned with?」

「Something I’m concerned with, is it?」

While Sumire and co were placing sandwiches into their mouths with gusto at the side, the two were conversing with

each other without taking their gazes from their respective desk and also without stopping their hands.

A brief moment of silence ensued due to Liliana searching her memory before she answered.

「No, there is nothing like that though……why do you ask?」

「Hm~. Look, since you started that help network it has been quite some time, right? It seems it has been spreading quite far and wide already even in foreign countries, hasn't it?」

「……Yes, indeed. It's already expanding to a level where I cannot pull back anymore.」

Liliana made a completely dry smile. The light was vanishing from her eyes.

「If I remember correctly, a foundation is in the process of forming, right?」

「It seems like it. For some reason, they asked for approval only after the fact. The members of my fan club want to establish it they said……. The atmosphere felt like the holy light church thing, so that's why I intended to push it so that it became a "volunteer" organization but……」

'How far will it go I wonder……', she said with an expression like a person adrift on the sea. But, her work speed hadn't dropped in the slightest.

「Lily-chan's "odd jobs" is going well isn't iiit~」

「At this rate, you are going to end up as the founder of a new religion.」

「Eh? Don’t you know Sumire-sensei? Lily-chan is already being worshipped by a minority as ‘Saint-sama!’, ‘Founder-sama!’ and so on, you know?」

Sumire and the others snapped 「Seriously!?」 at Tsukasa-san’s information. They were also nibbling at the remaining toasted sandwiches while doing that. Liliana’s eyes were getting increasingly dead. Of course, her working speed still hadn’t dropped.

Hajime smiled wryly while continuing to speak.

「It seems that the organization’s influence is getting too large and crossed over the country border.」

「That’s……could it be, it is causing a movement to start from a not so good place?」

As expected, Liliana who had a quick wit couldn’t help but devote her attention to this information. She stopped her working hand and lifted her face, her eyes turning round.

Sure enough, Sumire and co also couldn’t turn a blind eye to this. They forcefully washed down the toasted sandwiches with hot coffee and focused on Hajime.

「I don’t know if it comes from a good place or not. I also cannot say whether there is unconditionally any movement somewhere. After all, the extent of your influence is reaching too wide. It’s even spanning the whole world. The method of taking the first move to crush them is inefficient.」

「Indeed. Besides……as I’ve said just now, I cannot pull back anymore……」

「If Lily seriously wants it, then it’s possible somehow though.」

It was the tide of the era that was built by piling up goodwill on top of goodwill with Liliana as the starting point. If Liliana personally wished to sever that flow, Hajime wouldn’t think twice.

Hajime asked her 「You don’t wish it though, right?」 with his gaze and a wry smile. Hearing how he understood her and how he would do anything for her caused Liliana’s cheeks to blush while she nodded once.

‘Kyaaaah, showing off like that! Yoo, Hajime-kun, you the man! Geez, Hajime-kun! This lady killer!’ Sumire and co made a commotion. Hajime’s eyes were twitching while he ignored them.

Liliana’s blushing was increasingly deepening while she pulled herself back together and asked.

「Cough-. And, Hajime-san is telling me to be careful because soon there will be some kind of action happening around me, aren’t you?」

「No. Have you noticed that we are already surrounded? That’s what I mean.」

Silence fell in the room. It was a painful silence. Anna-san who was drinking the remaining coffee at that time spewed it out ‘Bufuuuh’ from her mouth.

「While I was going up, I roughly confirmed the spying device and the like in the whole place, and I took measures beforehand so that no sound can be picked up from here even if they used a sound gathering device, but quite a number of people are placed around this mansion right now.」

Silence, as expected. Whether it was Liliana or Sumire and co, they stiffened without being able to move.

But, a beat later, 「LIEEEEEEEEES」 screams were raised.

「Si, si si si, since when!?」

「Wait Hajime! Why are you leaving this alone!? Someone like Okaa-san is inconsequential for you is that it!?」

A bunch of unknown people from who knows where were monitoring the condominium……. Liliana was shaken because she didn’t notice while Sumire and co were shaken because of the uneasy situation approaching them.

「I’m not leaving them alone, but they came here only today. I guess they built their surveillance base only a few hours ago. They weren’t there when I came here two days ago. While I was working just now, I was checking the surrounding images of these two days through my magic eye stone, and the suspicious people and vehicles started deploying only a few hours ago.」

The surrounding images Hajime mentioned was the function from the crow type surveillance artifact——”Ornis” that he stationed as a surveillance network in an important place.

The sight that was reflected in Ornis’s eye was also projected into Hajime’s magic eye stone. In addition, it also had the function to save the images, so the past images could also be replayed in the magic eye stone using a remote control.

When Hajime reached near the condominium, he sensed the presence of countless people in the outdoors around the building despite the time being as late as it was already. He then checked the past images up to now.

The result he found out included unfamiliar foreigners coming and going from the wagon that was parked in the parking lot of the condominium and the large vehicles in the parking lot a slight distance away. They were committing suspicious actions by spending most of their time inside the vehicles.

In addition, he also noticed several foreigners in the nearby apartment and condominium coming and going while carrying in equipment.

He sent Ornis flying and made them perch on the veranda of those rooms to look in. There were a lot of devices like telescopes, cameras, sound collection devices, and so on being pointed toward this room from those rooms.

The assistants who listened to those explanations were looking at each other’s faces with similarly scared expressions. Sumire was looking at Liliana worriedly while asking Hajime.

「What is their objective? Does it look like they’ll attack?」

「Who knows. Just like I said before, most likely their objective is the founder Lily-sama who is the origin of the network, but whether it’s only surveillance, or if they are gauging the timing to come hammering in the nail that is sticking out……In any case, something like a foreign country’s secret service must be similar to guys like these.」

「Please stop saying founder Lily!」

Both parent and son ignored Liliana who was making a tsukkomi faithfully. Sumire tilted her head.

「……This is unlike you Hajime. If you already know that much, usually you would go to crush them first before

coming here.」

「That's because I had the important mission of delivering Shia's toasted sandwich to Lilianna while it was still warm.」

Hajime said that with a crisp expression. Sumire wordlessly gave a thumbs up. The son also returned a thumbs up.

The assistants gave a tsukkomi 「No no, the priority is strange there. It's delicious though! It's delicious though!」 to them.

「Also, I'm thinking of also taking the opportunity to confirm how those guys will move, and what their action guideline is.」

「Action guideline, is it? What do you mean, Hajime-san?」

「I said it just now, right? Including the sound gathering devices, I neutralized their surveillance devices. It's not like I broke their equipment, but I simply put up a barrier covering this whole room……」

Now then, when all their surveillance methods suddenly become disturbed, without a doubt, they would think that their presence has been discovered and a countermeasure was taken against them. After that, what kind of action would they take after taking that into account?

They would investigate the cause of their surveillance devices' disturbance, contact their comrades, or perhaps they would ask for instructions from their superior who might be in their home country or a different place. If that was what they did, then they should be taking action soon.

Would they retreat, or else……

「……I see. So that’s what they chose. Have they forgot the “returnee uproar”, or else, do they see a value from Lily that they cannot just ignore even with that factored in?」

「Hajime-san? Don’t tell me……」

「-, Hajime? They’re coming?」

Liliana and Sumire’s expression stiffened. The assistants who quickly understood also shivered a bit knowing that foreign people of unknown origin were coming.

But, amidst that grave looking atmosphere,

「? Why are you all looking that grave when I’m here?」

Hajime alone was making a dubious face.

This talk was too sudden, so even Liliana and Sumire unconsciously thought of this event as a grave matter, but now that he said it, that was right. Tension immediately left their shoulders.

Although the assistants were not used to this kind of extraordinary day, they only knew about Hajime’s abilities and achievements from verbal stories, so they didn’t feel that it was really real. And so, they were still scared.

A “?” mark was floating above Hajime’s head as he was pondering just what made them feel that worried for a beat.

「Ah, I see. You all are worried about the deadline.」

Hajime’s fist lightly hit his palm *pon* in understanding. The assistants appealed 「Wrong! That isn’t it!」 to him, but Hajime raised one hand to say that they need not speak further.

「Good grief, putting aside Machi-neesan and others, Kaa-san and Lily are really worrywarts. It won't take that long to take care of these guys. Ah, perhaps it's that. It will take a bit of time to interrogate them and other trivial things I guess……. I see, I'm a bit thoughtless here. Even though the deadline is fast approaching. As expected from Kaa-san and Lily. No matter what the situation is, finishing the work is number one. That's pro for you.」

「Ah, yes, that's right.」

「Ah, yep, right, number one.」

Hajime came to an understanding by himself. Liliana and Sumire both turned a complicated expression to Hajime. It wasn't like they were worried about the deadline while a foreign force was approaching though……they thought.

Hajime glanced at the two's gazes and hesitated a bit.

And then, he suddenly called out.

「Heliotrope.」

「Yes, right here.」

Out of nowhere, a maid-san appeared from behind Hajime!

Everyone screamed 「HiIIIIH」 and jumped!

「He, Hellina!? You, since when were you there!? No, before that, why are you here!? You should be aiding Randell and Okaa-sama in the palace, right!?」

The "exclusive maid" who was Liliana's confidant and would always stay by her side——Hellina. She had dark brown long

hair, almond eyes, a tall body for a female and moderately sized breasts.

Right now, she was wearing a Victorian style maid outfit. It was unclear from whose preference it was. Her characteristic trait was her scarf that was attached with a brooch of a crimson jewel. Her airily spreading skirt was hiding her legs completely, but the outfit from her waist, which was tightly constricted by an apron, and above was artistically hugging tightly to her body.

It was emphasizing her charm even with her graceful atmosphere.

Plainly speaking, she was an extremely beautiful woman.

That Hellina was,

「Liliana-sama. I am called Heliotrope.」

「Eh? That’s, certainly, Hajime-san said that just now but, Hellina is Hellina――」

「I am called Heliotrope.」

「Bu, but――」

「I am called Heliotrope.」

「……Yes.」

Princess Liliana folded against the smiling arm twisting. She also didn’t receive a single answer for her question even though the other party was her trusted subordinate. Even though she was the princess…….

Seeing Liliana’s eyes gradually turning teary, for some reason, Heliotrope-san smiled sweetly before she faced

Hajime and said 「My apologies. Your order?」.

Hajime concisely ordered, as though it was only natural for him to do that.

「Suppress them. Extract information from them. I'll leave the rest to you.」

「Yes, my lord.」 (TN: It's said in English in the raw.)

「You said my lord just now! Hellina, you are calling Hajime-san as your master! Your master is me, right!?」

Heliotrope-san smiled sweetly and turned her gaze to outside the window. Everyone was involuntarily attracted by that gesture and looked over there. There was nothing particularly there. They returned their gaze. Heliotrope-san was gone.

「Eh!? Hellina!? Where are you!?」

「Calm down Lily. She is your head maid, right? You cannot lose your calm like that.」

「Hajime-san is saying that when you look more like her master than me!? Uu, since some time ago it felt somehow that she is prioritizing Hajime-san's instructions rather than mine, but to think it went to this extent……. I didn't even know that she was normally here. Even though I'm a princess……」

「That's because you are a "former" princess, so it must be that she is being considerate of you. Surely.」

Liliana thought that no matter how she looked at it, it felt like something like "I found the true master that I have to serve." The two of them had known each other since they

were children, so there was no doubt about it. Yes, even though she was always staying by her side since their childhood and Liliana had put her trust in Hellina as though they were family, she realized too late that she had become the demon king’s maid!

「Uu, hics, my Hellina got NTR-ed by the demon king……」

「That sounds bad in other’s ears. That woman is the leader of the maid group that I trained for guarding Lily, you know? Even if you took a holiday from being a princess, she is still your Heliotrope whether now or in the past.」

「……That story, tell me more. It’s the first time I heard about that maid group to guard me though? And even though I am calling her Hellina many times, you are ignoring me really naturally and calling her Heliotrope. From that I can catch a glimpse of how intimate your relation with Hellina is though?」

「……Putting aside the intimacy of the relationship……eh? I didn’t tell you about the Fleur Knights?」

「I heard noo~~~~~thing at all! What is that! Knights? Knight order? Even though they are maids!? Furthermore, Hellina is the leader!? She is purely a maid with a nonexistent combat skill, you know!?」

「She worked really hard.」

「I don’t get it!」

Liliana held onto her head at her wits’ end and turned small.

Fleur Knights

To think that a combat maid group was formed while she was ignorant of it; furthermore, the girls went through the hellish boot camp at the Hauria clan’s place, and they were all

raised into valorous warriors so that even a single one could take on a battalion of a regular knight order. She had never even dreamed of such a thing.

Come to think of it, when she was in the kingdom, there was a time when she gave them some free time for a few months, so it was at that time! After all this time, she finally remembered. Because she knew Hellina from the past, she still couldn’t form the image of her as a combat maid.

Sumire and the assistants threw away their sense of danger from just now to the wind, and their excitement was rising up without end at the entrance of a genuine combat maid. While they were causing a commotion, Hajime resumed his work as though everything that had just transpired was normal.

While Sumire and co were getting heated up, it seemed that they also grasped that it would be fine to leave it to the combat maid, so they each resumed their work.

Liliana too returned to her work while being lost 「I have a lot I want to ask, but where should I start……」

Hajime then answered the questions from Sumire and co without stopping his hand from working. Then, by the time Liliana too finally recovered her calm, she asked Hajime while looking a bit worried, deciding that she should at least ask this one for now.

「Say, Hajime-san. This is Hajime-san we are talking about so I believe there won’t be any problem but……is Hellina really――」

‘Is she really okay?’ Just before Liliana could complete that question,

「Are you calling, Liliana-sama?」

「Hyowa!?」

The sudden whisper into her ear caused Liliana to jump and scream while looking flustered, which was inappropriate for a former princess.

When she looked back in a panic, without her noticing, Heliotrope was standing there with a smile looking completely the same as before.

「He, Helli――」

「It’s Heliotrope.」

She wouldn’t back down on that. She corrected her with a pressuring smile.

「Helli, otrope! Don’t surprise me so suddenly like that! Are you all right!?」

「I believe it’s Liliana-sama who is not all right though……」

‘Because you never fought or anything before, and yet……’ Thinking that, Liliana approached Heliotrope and patted all over her body to check for any injuries. Seeing such Liliana, Heliotrope displayed a delighted and warm expression.

But, when Hajime said 「That’s fast」 toward her, she tore Liliana-sama off from herself and tossed her away like a piece of waste. Then with both her hands propped in front of her apron, she respectfully lowered her head with a beautiful motion that would fascinate anyone watching.

「Err, Helli, otrope? You see, although formerly, but I’m a princess, you know?」

「Your majesty. Reporting. All the enemies have been removed. They are being confined altogether inside a rented room.」

「The information?」

「I will do so immediately after this. But before that, I returned because I wish to report something first.」

Below, Liliana was crumbling on the floor in dejection, but the two didn’t look at her.

「Is there any problem?」

Hajime tilted his head and asked, to which Heliotrope shook her head.

「No. There is a guest for your majesty.」

Most likely, it was a guest who seemed to have business with the foreign force originally. Hearing that report, Hajime seemed to see through something, and he stared at empty air for a bit……

「I see. Let them pass.」

「By your will.」

Heliotrope-san respectfully lowered her head.

Seeing Hajime’s practiced manner in acting as a master, the assistants were making a commotion like 「Thi, this is demon king Ha-kun」「Sheesh Hajime-chan, what a natural manner as a master……」. Among that commotion, Liliana, who was still collapsing emotionally, got dejected once more.

「……Hics, as I thought, Hajime-san is more like her master than meee」

Muttering that.

–

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Thank you very much for the many reviews regarding Tortus Travel Diary.

I’m thinking of writing it bit by bit.

Now then, the chapter this time. Heliotrope? Who is that? For those who thought that, I believe if you browse 「Character Introduction Part II」 and 「Stubborn Princess Lily」, you will go 「Aa, she was there huh, someone like this」.

I’m sorry for those who were expecting Tortus Travel Diary ②.

I wanted to write about the combat maid group no matter what. I want to write the next update with my interest in full throttle too. Please forgive me.

Now then, in preparation for Christmas, I will inform you once more.

The publication of volume 7 and Zero volume 1 will be on the 25th and 28th respectfully.

There are also places where volume 7 has been lined up in the storefront.

If you are aiming for special content, early inquiries might be necessary. Please pay attention.

The detailed information (like the special SS and so on) will be uploaded in my activity report.

If you want, please go check it out.

Best regards.

Arifureta Chapter 295

Arifureta After III Christmas Special After Ski Trip

AN: There was an update on 23 December. For those who haven’t read it, please start from the previous chapter.

–

There the figures of two people were trembling halfway up the advanced course of a skiing spot.

「A, Aiko-sa~~n! Are you all riiight~!?」

「M, my my my my, my groin feels like it will loosen up, buuut I’m not……fii~ne! Is Liliana-san~ all riiight~~!?」

「M, my my my my, my legs feel like they will cramp, buuut I’m not……fii~ne!」

The two who were like this were Aiko and Liliana. They spread their skis to the very limit and were slipping rather than sliding.

They wanted to put the brakes on and stop, but they couldn’t stop, or perhaps they actually intended to ski after a fashion. It was unclear what they wanted to do.

In any case, the two who were spreading their skis too much with legs that wouldn’t stop shaking were amateur skiers no matter how anyone looked at them. They shouldn’t be on this advanced course.

They became able to slide for just a bit. After that, they got cocky and came to the advanced course. There, they got taken aback 「What’s this? This is practically a cliff!」; however, their pride got in the way 「We already climbed all the way up here, going down with the lift will be embarrassing……」, and they skied down. Now they were regretting that it’d come to this.

Now then, just as could be seen from the situation, today the Nagumo family came here for a ski trip.

Having said that, Sumire and Shuu were absent. By this time, the two of them must be going on a hot spring date with just the two of them husband and wife without any outsiders present. Shia won a pair of tickets from the shopping district’s lottery roll, and she presented it to the two filled with her gratitude for every day.

To that, Sumire said that if that was the case they should have everyone come together by paying it from their own pocket, but Shuu said 「She is giving us a pair of tickets, it should be fine going with just the two of us at least once a year, right?」, so Sumire agreed reluctantly.

And then, perhaps to hide her embarrassment or something, she suggested (?) that while they were enjoying the hot spring trip, it would be painful if their son’s family just did nothing at home, so ‘Hajime should give a service to his family!’; and like that it became this ski trip.

Back to the topic at hand.

Aiko and Liliana finally became teary-eyed.

「YAFFUUUUUUUUUUU!!」

「SOMETHING LIKE THIS ART NOT TOO BAAADD!」

‘Brake? What is that, is that tasty?’ Shia and Tio were passing through with terrific momentum as though to say that.

Their figures magnificently manipulating the snowboards was the very definition of skill. Both of them were engraving the figure 8 on the snow’s surface with beautiful symmetry. Even though they only learned how to ski today, their figures were like pro snowboarders.

「……」

「……」

Aiko and Liliana were staring at the backs of Shia and Tio that had become small in the blink of an eye while trembling all over.

「……nn. Kaori, sloo~~w」

「The grudge of getting dropped from the lift just now! I HAVEN’T FORGOTTEN ITTTTTTTT-!」

「Wait Kaori! That’s a ski! It’s not a board! It’s thin, so you understand, right!? I’m telling you to wait!」

SHA! SHA! SHA! Yue, Kaori, and Shizuku were passing through in that order. Yue-sama kept facing backwards while Kaori was riding on a single ski, for some reason, and Shizuku was holding one ski and Kaori’s snowboard. They were sliding by at high speed as expected.

「……」

「……」

The two had dropped, no, slid down for about three meters from before. *Slid slid, slid slid*. Aiko’s and Liliana’s legs, which were spread out too far, were already passing through shaking phase and now they began to tremble.

Someone, please help……

The two were in a state where it felt like the voice of the heart was audible.

The hero of the girls who would surely appear at this kind of time……

Certainly appeared this time too.

「Oo~i, both of you. Are you two going through withdrawal symptoms there?」

It was his voice! They were saved! They wanted to tsukkomi so much at the content of his words, but right now, they were in the middle of the danger of having their legs almost forcefully spread. They couldn’t be concerned with trivial matters! Thinking that, Aiko and Liliana made a joyful look and turned their gazes to the direction of the voice.

「Faster! Even faster! Myuu is becoming wind nano!」

「My, Myuu! Slo, slow down a bit……」

「It’s fine Remia. I’m holding you firmly.」

Myuu, Remia, and Hajime were riding on a sleigh in that order harmoniously while passing through with terrific speed, as expected.

Myuu looked like she was having a lot of fun. Remia, who was sitting between Myuu and Hajime, was a bit scared with the speed, and yet her cheeks were slightly blushing because she was getting hugged from the back by Hajime.

It was a really warm family scene.

They instantly passed through though.

The two were completely left behind.

「I can’t anymore……」

「A, Aiko-saa~~~~~nn」

Screams were reverberating from halfway up the advance course.

After that, at an inconspicuous place in the corner of the course, the figure of Liliana applying healing magic to the groin of Aiko who was fainting from fear was seen, but……

From the viewpoint of an outsider, they only saw the scene of a young girl gently touching the groin of another girl behind cover. After the two somehow got down to the foot of the mountain, they were exposed to inquisitive gazes from the people around.

–

–

–

「Nn? It feels like I heard a scream just now.」

Hajime felt like he heard a scream from behind and spontaneously looked back.

「Dear? Is there something?」

Remia asked across her shoulder with an upward gaze. Today Remia was without her usual atmosphere of a smiling holy mother. Her being in the environment of a snowy mountain for the first time, her inability to ski at all, and the speed that Myuu exerted as though she was a speed demon were making her twitch uneasily from beginning to end.

Hajime said 「No, nothing」 and smiled wryly while shaking his head. And then, he embraced her once more with even more strength. Tension left Remia's body slightly.

「Hei hei hee~~i! Nano!」

「Myuu, it's fine to be high-spirited, but Remia is scared, you know?」

Hajime tentatively warned her, but Myuu didn't notice because she was being absorbed in beating the snowboard that was sliding side by side with them.

A sleigh that was boarded by two parents and a child were rushing down at a reckless speed on the advanced course……

It wasn't unreasonable for the snowboarders who were overtaken to watch that with wide eyes. Several people were so shocked that they lost their balance and 「AA~~~~~!!」 tumbled down.

While that was going on, the foot of the mountain came into view. A lot of people were there, so it would be dangerous if they didn't decrease their speed soon.

Thinking that, Hajime opened his mouth to tell Myuu to brake. Myuu said that she wanted to steer the sleigh from

start to end bringing papa and mama, so he was thinking to leave the stopping to Myuu too.

But, before he could speak,

「Papa! Over there! Something that looks really fun is happening over there nano!」

「Hm? Aah, a half-pipe huh.」

After looking there, a half-pipe that could be approached directly from the advanced course was seen. The snowboarders were displaying each of their techniques there.

The sight of snowboarders executing techniques in midair tightly grasped Myuu's inquisitiveness and sense of adventure. Her eyes were sparkling bright, and the hands that were grasping the reins clenched tightly.

「Papa! Mama! We will do that too nano!」

「Can you? I also prepared a board for Myuu, but――」

「Watch Myuu's technique! Nano!」

Myuu slanted her weight drastically and pulled the reins. The sleigh obeyed the driver's control and changed course instantly! The destination it headed to was, of course, the half-pipe!]

「Ah, hey, Myuu! Who will go there using sleigh!? Stop it for now!」

「If you can stop this, then damn try to stop it! Nano!」

「This brat! She is receiving Shia's bad influence!?」

The face of the smiling holy mother Remia-san was twitching senselessly. She was desperately hugging Myuu on her chest really tightly to stop her, but Myuu, whose excitement was rising too much and had entered a state of adrenaline, didn’t stop!

Hajime-papa put his foot outside to stop the sleigh forcefully.

There was one thing to remember here. Actually, this sleigh was an artifact Hajime created for Myuu, but Hajime had the nature of being unable to feel satisfied unless he put romance into a vehicle.

For example, things like weapons, or transformations……

This time, the romance that was installed into the sleigh for Myuu’s exclusive use was……a propulsion device.

It has propulsive power so that it can slide even on a level surface! Great, isn’t it, Myuu!?

「BOOOST~~~~~~」

「Hoi! Myuu! Stop play――」

「ON NANO!」

BOOM The sleigh instantly accelerated! Hajime-papa’s feet were only digging grooves into the snow and didn’t function as a brake!

And then, before he could forcefully stop the sleigh with another method――

The sleigh charged into the half-pipe!

「YAFUUUUUU NANOO!」

「FUAAAAAAAAAAAAH」

The sleigh instantly rushed up the curving part, and then……the Nagumo family flew to the sky.

On the ground, the audience and snowboarders were dumbfounded and astonished at the sight of a family tree dancing in the sky.

Myuu’s joyful voice, and Remia’s scream that was rare to hear reverberated.

The sleigh hovered for a moment in the air. The centrifugal force pushing up the sleigh vanished, and then the three were thrown out weightlessly from the sleigh.

Remia-mama’s soft knitted hat flew. The person herself almost fainted with the white of her eyes showing! The audience returned to their senses, and they screamed from imagining the end of the family that flew five meters from the lip part of the half-pipe!

「Haa……there will be punishment later.」

Hajime somersaulted midair. Each of his hands caught Myuu and Remia, and he held them in a posture akin to sitting on his arms. Both of them reflexively grabbed onto Hajime’s neck.

Hajime used the centrifugal force from his somersault and caught the sleigh with his foot using the principle of a midair spinning kick. He adjusted the way the sleigh was facing and then boarded it while catching Remia’s knitted hat with his mouth.

Next was free falling. The moment he landed on the curved part, he made use of his knee to kill the impact completely.

Without letting go of the two, he slid, and when he flew out of the opposite side, he kicked away the sleigh at the same time, and then landed on the ground with a *splat*.

The noisy surroundings of the half-pipe fell dead silent.

But, that too was only for a few moments.

The next moment a loud cheer rose. 「What was that just now!?」 or 「No way, you saw how he caught two people and landed from that height!?」 or 「Rather, why a sleigh!?」, voices that were filled with excitement came one after another.

Amidst that,

「Fuwaa. It was fun nano!」

Myuu smiled innocently. Hajime-papa let down only Myuu gently……*pechin-* a forehead flick burst.

「~~~~~~-!?」

Myuu writhed in pain. The soft knitted hat that was matching Remia’s offered no defense at all against the impact. Both her hands pressed down on her forehead, and she squatted while trembling *purupuru* with teary eyes.

「Myuu. Certainly, papa is also bad for installing a propulsion device so that you can play even on level ground. But, you were told before playing, right? Don’t do something that papa, mama, or one of the onee-chan told you to stop. You broke your promise.」

「Au……bu, but……」

「Look. Mama was really scared. Does Myuu want to have fun even if you have to trouble your mama?」

Remia-mama was still hugging Hajime. Seeing Myuu's figure being scolded by papa, Remia spoke her usual 「My my」 while scolding her 'bad' like Hajime.

Seeing that, Myuu got dejected. She spoke 「Sorry nano」 with teary eyes and a teary voice.

「Yosh. You are able to apologize properly huh?」

「My my, Myuu. Look, papa isn't angry anymore. Lift up your face.」

Her head was patted by papa and mama. Myuu rubbed her eyes repeatedly then smiled widely.

For some reason, 「Oo」 a voice rose from the surrounding. It seemed the audience was feeling moved after seeing a bit of family drama.

Or rather, that was how much a center of attention they were.

Remia, who was finally mentally recovered from the harrowing experience, didn't notice the situation around before, but now she recalled her own state, and her cheeks puffed red.

「Say……dear? I'm fine already, so please let me down now……it's embarrassing.」

「Hm? Aa, I see. Here.」

Remia was let down gently. Admiring voices and fascinated sighs leaked out once more from the surrounding people.

Remia was undoubtedly a beauty with blond hair. Furthermore, right now she was blushing from embarrassment and other things with moist eyes, and a strange sex appeal was overflowing from her.

At the same time, the surrounding——especially the men——were sending jealous gazes like a line of spears at Hajime. Thinking of Myuu's existence and how she called Hajime, it was clear what the relationship between them was.

But naturally, Hajime-san didn't shrink back against such a gaze of that level.

He ignored the rabbles as though to say that there was no one here except himself, Myuu, and Remia. He took Remia's hat that fell off and put it on Remia's head in a manner as though he was handling glass artwork.

Hajime adjusted the placement of Remia's hair. Each time his fingertip gently brushed Remia's forehead and ear, Remia would expose a ticklish expression that also looked like she was feeling good.

Seeing that, the men became increasingly peevish.

「Chih. A blonde-haired foreign wife……how did he get a wife like that, huh?」

「Even though we here don't even get lucky in picking up girls.」

「Don't say it. I'm gonna cry here.」

「Wait, you guys. The sleigh. It's using a sleigh. If we slide on the half-pipe using a sleigh……」

□□□We can marry a blond-haired foreign beauty!?□□□

Half-pipe, sleigh——it was the moment a new sport was created.

□Hajime-saa~~n! What are you doing thereee~□

□……Hajime. Ride the sleigh while hugging me too. Like Remia. Like Remia.□

□A sleigh……it looks a bit embarrassing.□

□You're right……but, it can be used to slide on level ground too; if it's in a place where there is no one……□

□Rather, I wisheth to be used as a sleigh.□

Shia was running at the front while hopping *pyon pyon*, and behind her was Yue, Kaori, Shizuku, and Tio. By the way, Yue-san today was a teenage version.

Naturally, the people were making a commotion at the appearance of the army of beautiful girls. Furthermore, they were approaching the man who was currently displaying a scene of flirting with a blonde-haired beauty while also holding a cute daughter. The commotion was gradually increasing!

□Shia. You, you were bringing Myuu out on your drives secretly from me, weren't you?□

□……I, I don't really understand what you are saying.□

□Your rabbit ears are twitching there. You're really shaken up.□

The rabbit ears that an ordinary person couldn't see were in plain view for Hajime and co. The rabbit ears were fiercely

trembling. It seemed she was guilty.

Hajime stretched Shia’s cheeks *munyo~n* and made her be tearful. Yue and the others were gathering around him.

「Half-pipe sleigh……no way. So it’s actually that effective.」

「I’ll go rent a sleigh for a bit.」

「Wait, I’m going too.」

On this day, people getting sent flying or rolling around showily from trying to slide using a sleigh appeared in succession; the ski area was falling into temporary chaos.

–

–

–

Leaving behind the half-pipe that was getting increasingly enthusiastic people in a completely unknown direction, Aiko who was walking pigeon-toed, for some reason, and a completely exhausted Liliana returned, so they took a break while also wandering leisurely around the facility at the foot of the mountain.

There, they discovered a crowd a slight distance away. Wondering what was going on, Hajime and co also tried approaching.

「Hee, a snowball fight huh.」

「……Nn. It doesn’t really look like a tournament.」

「Looks like anyone can freely join. Eerrr, let’s see here…… looks like you can enter in three-man teams. O, it looks like

the winning team will be presented with a memento.」

Shia read the nearby plank while saying that. Hearing that, Myuu's eyes were sparkling enthusiastically, as expected.

Three-man teams meant that three people from a family could participate. It seemed to be a consideration from the organizer's side, and just as they intended, there were a lot of families participating, fighting each other in three-man family VS three-man family.

There were three courts, but rather than a serious competition, everyone was having fun in the event.

Furthermore, the snowball had to be created by themselves. There were three defensive walls, and the time limit was five minutes. The team with the most survivors at the end would be the victor.

「In other words, it's fine to just annihilate the other team nano!」

What a child with a quick comprehension. It seemed she was fully motivated to participate.

Hajime-papa was making a smile that looked like 「Fuh, so it's my turn」. It seemed that he thought that there wasn't the slightest chance he wouldn't be picked into his beloved daughter's team.

Beside Hajime, Yue was making the same smile. 「……Fuh. Is an annihilation battle what you wished for?」 the vampire princess who was specialized in annihilation class magic was also not doubting even the slightest bit that she would be chosen.

「Tio-oneechan! Shia-oneechan! Let's go together!」

「Hoe? Me? Fufu~n, that’s fine! I will answer commander Myuu’s expectations without fail!」

「Hou, so you chose me. Myuu, that’s quite a discerning gaze thou hath there. My vocation art “protector”. I wouldst protect Myuu perfectly there.」

Hajime-papa and vampire princess-oneechan crumbled. Both of them were similarly going 「Impossible……」 in stupefaction.

「Ee~rr, Myuu? Why didn’t you pick papa?」

Remia tried asking in the place of the crumbling Hajime. Myuu made an expression as though she was asking something obvious, and she spoke her standard for choosing.

「First, what is necessary is physical firepower nano. Then, the only option for the attacker role is the bug rabbit Shia-oneechan.」

If it was just an event, then it felt like anyone would be fine; however, her reasoning made sense. Her choosing standard was quite something.

「For the other one, Myuu was thinking of Shizuku-oneechan who is good at throwing, but……」

It seemed that Hajime-papa and vampire princess-oneechan were out of the question right from the start. The two were starting to draw circles on the ground together.

「In case there is someone who specializes in attacking among the enemy, Myuu believed that defensive power should be insured nano.」

「Myuu, thou hath learned tactics really well.」

The player would be out by the time a snowball hit them, so defensive power wasn't related at all in this, but……starting from Shizuku, Kaori and Aiko and Liliana were making a warm smile.

Until they heard her next words.

「And so, Myuu chose the meat shie――the tough Tio-oneechan nano!」

「Wait a second, Myuu. Just now, thou was about to say meat shield, wasn't you? This art the biggest shock Tio-oneechan received in these few years! For the cute Myuu to think of Onee-chan as a meat shield, I doth not know how to process this though!?」

It seemed she was also receiving bad influences from Hajime-papa.

Tio, who was greatly shaken, approached Myuu while saying 「Tell me that it's a lie Myuu~」. Myuu was also shaken, and her gaze darted around……then she made a stiff expression in resolve and spoke.

「Think of it as a good thing!」

「Think of it as a good thing. Thou mean it's a good thing to think of Onee-chan as a meat shield!?」

「If it's Tio-oneechan, you should be happy nano! Rather Tio-oneechan who won't be happy with this is just a mere beautiful Onee-chan nano!」

「Art not that a good thing!?」

「It’s a loss of identity~ nano! A loss of character~ nano!」

「Nuguo~, mine self art going to lose in an argument~~」

Should she be happy to be called a meat shield Onee-chan, or should she be unhappy? That was the problem.

Myuu took the worrying Tio’s hand, and led away Shia who was smiling wryly; then she applied for the registration with momentum.

Hajime and Yue who were still down were left as they were.

Myuu’s snowball fight began through such happenings. Her opponent was a team of female university students. Myuu’s team also consisted of only females; both sides had good looks, so the audience was quite aroused.

Myuu put Shia and Tio on her left and right. She was folding her arms while standing imposingly. A fearless smile was tugged on her lips. It was as though she closely resembled a certain someone.

The females on the opposing team saw Myuu and started squealing 「Look look, that girl! She is really cute!」「Waa, she is really enthusiastic! So cute!」.

「You can have fun while you still can now. Myuu will show you hell soon, nano.」

「Hajime-san, you cannot speak about other people. It’s Hajime-san who is influencing Myuu the most.」

Shia smiled wryly seeing Myuu speaking like a gangster with that cute face.

「Tio-oneechan. When the match begins, Myuu wants you to go forward. Hold back the snowballs, and when a snowball that Myuu cannot evade comes, then Myuu wants Onee-chan to block it nano.」

「As I hath thought, I am treated as a meat shield.」

Commander Myuu wouldn't be bothered by such trivial things.

「Shia-oneechan. Myuu doesn't want to waste time nano. Please do Shia-oneechan's special move nano.」

「Special move? Uu~n, a, something like that is it. Roger desu.」

Like that the snowball fight began! The referee saw Myuu and made a warm smile, and then gave the signal 「Start~」 leniently.

At the same time, the females on the opposing team picked the snowballs they had diligently created and threw it 「Ee~i!」 really leniently. Their aim was all over the place; most of them were toward inaccurate directions.

It didn't look like there was any need to use Tio as a meat shield. Tio was taking cover at the front line defensive wall while tossing *po~I po~i* returning fire to hold back the enemy with a complicated expression.

「Shia-oneechan.」

「Ay ay, preparation is finished desu!」

「Roger. Target, the enemy's rear defensive wall! Fireee!!」

「Go fly until the moooon! Desuu!」

A snowball that was super compressed by super grip strength was thrown in a way that caused the air to make a strange sound *hyugoh*――

「ABAAAAAAAAH!?」

「Ah……」

「Myu……」

Shia inflicted powerful friendly fire. The sudden impact that was dealt on her back caused Tio to collide with the defensive wall before her in a posture that was like a shrimp. The defensive wall was half-destroyed from that, and she ended up hanging on the top.

「This is……mine, identityyy~」

She murmured such a thing with an expression of ecstasy before she stopped moving with a plop.

The cheers stopped. The place fell dead silent. The females who were squealing until just now were staring at Tio with pale faces.

Amidst that silence,

「Hi, hit confirmed! Correction shot! Fireee!」

「Ro, roger desuu!」

Commander Myuu was unperturbed! And then, the loyal rabbit held the snowball firmly this time and threw! Accurately, it shot through the side of the enemy team and pulverized the defensive wall at the back! That result was truly like a bombing!

「Hit confirmed! Target destroyed! Effective shot~, fi――」

‘Fireee!’ Surely that was what would be said. But, before the word was completed a snowball hit Myuu, so her order was interrupted. Looking back, the referee was there.

「Disqualified.」

「Aa, yes nano.」

The referee emitted a pressure that wouldn’t allow any objections. Aiko and the others with Remia-mama at the forefront were bowing their heads repeatedly while retreating in an escape.

A beat later, screams and cheers reverberated from behind.

–

–

–

Roll roll, roll roll Kaori was rolling a snowball while talking to Yue who was similarly *roll roll, roll roll* rolling a snowball beside her.

「……Making snowmen is calming the heart somehow.」

「……Nn.」

Roll roll, roll roll. The two continued to form snowballs silently. Unusually they didn’t show any signs of quarreling.

This was an open space some distance away from the ski area. A place that was near the buildings of hotels and inns lining up. It was a public park for relaxing like where the small children would play with snow.

It was a place where it was okay to create snowmen and leave them there (only in the case that they asked for permission and bought decoration items at the stand under the management’s control), and so there were various snowmen and objects in various sizes around.

In a few more hours the blazing light of the evening sun would create a long shadow.

If it had to be said why Yue and Kaori were making snowballs silently in such a place,

「We got too high-spirited, didn’t we?」

「……Nn.」

Yue-sama was excessively taciturn.

When Kaori glanced to the side, Yue was somewhat teary eyed……

「…..Hajime got angry.」

「Yeah.」

After the snowball fight, the group was strolling aimlessly once more and encountered an event of making snow sculptures. The organizer prepared a lump of hardened snow for the participants to carve into a snow sculpture.

There, the two who were starting a stupid fight like usual provoked each other and decided to settle their dispute in this event, but they both made Hajime into the model for the statue they sculpted.

If it was just that, Hajime would just endure his embarrassment.

Even if Kaori used the outrageous technique of the twin sword art when using the large chisels, or if Yue was pretending to sculpt while forming a shape using ice element magic, with each side using foul play and irrational methods, and that the place fell into a commotion because of that, well, Hajime would surely ignore it because they had fun.

But the two's quarrel entered into a criticism toward each other's sculpture, their statues shifted into naked sculptures that was like the David statue, and then they escalated it. By the point in time they got fixated on forming the crotch, Hajime's embarrassment burst.

Two beautiful girls were heatedly arguing with each other in front of the public eye about the molding of a single man's crotch. In addition, because it was a delicate part, they didn't use any tool and shaped it using their hands, that part of the snow sculpture.

The parents who were participating in the event naturally covered their children's eyes「You cannot watch that!」, the fathers were sending their wide smirks at Hajime, the young men were sending him murderous gazes, and the girls were getting unjust suspicions of the relationship between Hajime and Yue & Kaori with blushing cheeks.

And so, Hajime smashed the snow sculptures into nothing. He dropped his knuckles on the head of the two who were protesting him, grabbed their collars and dragged away the two who turned limp while leaving the place.

Due to that, the two were self-reflecting a bit while making snowmen in a quiet place. When Kaori recalled the event, it felt like her face would catch on fire.

A slight distance away, Hajime was rolling a snowball that was around two meters big. Myuu was balanced on top of it while walking.

In another place, Shizuku and Aiko were arguing cheerfully with each other about the face part of the snowman, like this or like that, while decorating it.

Shia and Tio were diligently making several moderately sized snowballs.

In addition, there was a snow hut near the spot where the snowmen were planned to be placed at, where Remia and Liliana were inside of warming themselves. Both of them seemed to be relatively weak against cold.

The size of the snowball Hajime was making gathered attention from families and couples that were scattered around sporadically. Amidst that attention, Hajime raised his voice to check.

「O~i, how is over there doing?」

In response, Shizuku who was in charge of decoration cheerfully replied.

「Yep, over here is all right.」

「The material is also complete~」

Liliana and Remia crawled out slowly from the snow hut while lifting up some things for decoration.

‘Oh, finally they are going to decorate?’ The people in the park gathered around them.

The plan of Hajime and co was to make an especially large snowman——a total height of four meters with three snowballs piled up——right in the middle of the park, with nine small snowmen around it.

There, Hajime suddenly noticed something.

「Ah, come to think of it, I forgot the ladder……」

Hajime muttered things like「Ah damn」. Putting aside the small snowmen, the especially large snowman's torso and head would need a big ladder to place them in position.

He had one stored inside his Treasure Warehouse, but he didn't take it out beforehand, so it was hard to take it out with all the gathered attention.

Should he obediently go to a shop to rent it……while Hajime was thinking that,

「Oo~I, you guys. Want to use this?」

「Hm? Aa, that will help……」

An unfamiliar middle-aged man was carrying a splendid ladder on his shoulder while walking toward them. Seeing Hajime open his eyes wide in surprise, the middle-aged man laughed pleasantly and spoke.

「Haha, it looks like you all are going to make a really splendid snowman, so I wondered if you would let us participate in the commemoration if you don't mind.」

「I see. So it's like that.」

After looking closer, there was a boy hiding behind the uncle.

Hajime smiled slightly and showed his agreement. The boy’s expression brightened.

With that as the beginning, ‘Please let us too!’, the other families and couples asked to be allowed to join.

Yue and Kaori, and Shia and Tio who were diligently rolling snowballs for the small snowmen, were slightly surprised, but when they looked at Hajime, he was smiling slightly and nodded, so they also smiled and rolled snow together with the other people.

Seeing participants increasing one after another, Myuu who was on top of the huge snowball puffed out her chest.

「Myuu is the leader nano! Everyone, work hard! We are making snowmen that will last until spring nano!」

There was also an atmosphere in the place. The families and couples that numbered nearly twenty people, in the end, were all responding「Oo~!」 cheerfully at Myuu.

「Ahaha, then leader Myuu. Please give an order to everyone.」

「Mufufu~! Leave it to Myuu nano!」

Hajime’s respectful way of speaking caused Myuu also to smile while she started giving instructions energetically.

After that, with the cooperation of the many that they obtained, they completed a total of ten snowmen genuinely under Myuu’s instruction.

A snowman with a fixed stare, a snowman with rabbit ears, a snowman with a ponytail attached, and so on. They were

snowmen with traits that closely resembled certain people somewhere.

Even the participants surely could guess which was who. They were giving a warm smile to Yue and co who were looking a bit embarrassed.

In the end, Hajime was carrying Myuu in his arms while climbing up the ladder that was supported by the people, and with a relay format the head of the especially large snowman――the head part of the demon king-sama with an eye patch attached――was carried to the top.

「Myuu, don’t fall. Put your feet on the ladder firmly.」

「Yes nano.」

Hajime put Myuu down on the ladder. He then received the head part that was brought from below, and then he made Myuu hold it.

Myuu staggered slightly even with Hajime supporting her.

From below, a lot of participants were watching over them while holding their breath.

Myuu was scolding her arms that were shaking all over while carefully, carefully holding the last snowball……*plop* she set it up on the designated spot.

And then, she sloo~wly took her hands away……

「「「「「「Oo~~~~~」」」」」」

Cheers and applause reverberated all at once!

When Myuu made a guts pose「It’s completed~~」, the enthusiasm of the place echoed even further hearing that

bright shout of joy that was filled with a delighted sense of accomplishment.

Yue and co also exchanged smiles with the participants who they knew only just now and thanked each other. They were really having fun.

Hajime hugged Myuu once more while his expression looked as though he suddenly recalled something.

「Oi, Tio.」

「Mu? ……Oo, I see. That wouldst be nice. Leave it to me.」

Tio noticed Hajime’s intention as though they were of the same mind, and then she immediately left the circle of people.

「Papa?」

「Myuu, bestow those words to everyone. The present will be that.」

Myuu was making a puzzled face. Hajime turned his gaze toward Tio while saying such a thing to Myuu.

Myuu’s expression turned ‘hah’ in realization, and then she once more remembered what day today was and smiled widely.

And then, Tio who finished setting up the artifact tool gave a thumbs up. Confirming that, Myuu waved both her hands and raised her voice.

「Everyone~~~~!」

Myuu gathered all the attention once more. Toward them all, Myuu took a deep breath……

「MERRY~~~~~ CHRISTMA~~~S!! NANO!」

And then, she pointed with her finger.

Lured by that, the participants turned their gaze, and there a splendid camera was set up.

It was something Tio pulled out from Treasure Warehouse outside of the people’s gaze.

The participants who guessed the intention adjusted their positions hurriedly.

Hajime and Myuu were on the ladder. Yue and co were right below the demon king snowman.

The participants were surrounding them.

「Then here we go!」

Kaclick. Tio dashed with hurried footsteps and slid beside Yue and the others.

And then,

――*pasha!*

After that, a photo that really conveyed the delight from people they didn’t even know, who were centered around the snowmen and the Nagumo family, was completed. The giant snowman and small snowmen would later be reported on TV that they really didn’t melt until spring.

Of course, it was possible to mass produce the photo like Polaroid camera right on the spot, so it was distributed to

the participants as a Christmas present.

The participants, every single one of them, broke up while immersing themselves in pleasant fatigue and an enjoyable aftertaste with a photo in hand.

□This kind of thing isn’t bad once in a while. Merry Christmas.□

While returning to their inn, Hajime said that with a peaceful smile.

Of course, Yue and co, everyone similarly,

□□□□□□□□□Merry~ Christmas!□□□□□□□□□

Replied like that.

–

–

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

At the end of the chapter this time, in a relatively unusual event, the casts were mingling with ordinary folk.

It’s Christmas, so I wanted to write a story that can give warmth as soon as possible.

By the way, a story of making snowmen with unfamiliar people……

Is there also those who somehow feel déjà vu?

Yes, its inspiration came from Shirakome’s bible, Aria.

In the anime it’s [Aria the Natural Episode 26 : From that gentle white town…]

For Shirakome, it’s an episode that entered the top 5 of my favorites.

Everyone too, how about feeling warm and fluffy by watching Aria on Christmas?

In any case, Merry Christmas!

Arifureta Chapter 296

Arifureta After III I Am A Maid

「Ahaha, really, I’m sorry for coming at this hour. Furthermore, it seems that I’m being a hindrance to everyone’s work.」

The one who came to the room looking like he was really sorry while frequently bowing his head was a middle-aged man without any conspicuous traits.

His attire, like his suit or hairstyle, was well-ordered, and yet, on the whole, he was wrapped in a lax atmosphere that would naturally make the other party feel like letting their guard down.

「Fukube-san, it must be hard for you. Being outside the jurisdiction of the labor standards act is the harshness of being a public servant.」

「No no, you are making too much of a big deal for the likes of me. On the contrary, to think that a maid this beautiful will welcome my arrival, it really blows away my fatigue.」

The man who was smiling while taking glances at Heliotrope who was showing the way was someone from the “returnee response division” who was shouldering the role as a contact person with the “returnees” (basically with Hajime), Fukube Koutarou.

At a glance, his face gave the impression of a good person, but Hajime and Liliana saw through that and at how deep inside his eyes there was a sharp glint. In contrast with his lax atmosphere, he was a person who couldn’t be underestimated.

That could be seen from how this man had already continued to shoulder the role of being a contact person with Hajime for more than a year. Being involved with Hajime and co would guarantee anyone to be afflicted with a stomachache, and for this man’s predecessors, being able to stay on the job for three months could be considered as amazing.

By the way, the “returnee response division” was a new department that was made from many organizations related to the “returnees” by building a cooperative system. The section was under the jurisdiction of the police’s security division after a fashion, but various related departments in the government, like the public security intelligence agency and ministry of foreign affairs and so on, were sending their people to get closely involved and coordinated with each other while making it so that they could respond to situations comprehensively.

It was a section that was made after the government got involved in this and that in the “returnee uproar” in the past. Various departments made their move, and as a result, all of them received retaliations that were too severe.

「And, I think that what you want to talk about is the group just now……」

「Yes, yes. It’s about that matter. My deepest apologies. Our side planned to deal with it before they started trouble, but

they moved faster than we imagined. No, this is only an excuse. And, about the details of the situation――」

Before he started to explain, Hajime raised his hand and stopped him, so Fukube closed his mouth. Cold sweat instantly oozed out from his face. 「Good lord-, is the demon king misunderstanding that it's the government trying something again!?」 Such thinking came out on his face.

「I'm not that hasty, so don't get that pale.」

「Ha, haha. So it came out on my face? I'm still too green.」

Fukube wiped the sweat on his forehead with a handkerchief. Then he threw a pill of stomach medicine into his mouth with a practiced motion.

Hajime smiled wryly at Fukube's motion that he often witnessed and turned his gaze toward Heliotrope.

「It seems there is a circumstance regarding that group. Show them the way to the subordinates of Fukube-san who are waiting downstairs. Liliana and I will hear about the circumstances here.」

「Understood. How about Sumire-sama's work?」

「About that. Originally being Kaa-san's assistant is more important than accompanying some idiot, but……」

Sumire shook her head left and right *bun bun* repeatedly. A foreign force assaulted with Liliana as their target, and on top of that, an official from public safety came visiting in order to explain the situation. As expected, she didn't have the nerve to have her way of saying 「The deadline is more important!」.

「And so, this concerns Liliana, and it seems that Fukube-san has a better grasp of the whole picture of the present situation. We will listen to the circumstances directly. During that time, I'll leave the work here to you.」

「Your will. Should I add more personnel, just in case?」

「I'll leave it to you.」

The talk was progressing unhindered. Liliana was murmuring 「Yes yes; my opinion won't be heard anyway. Far from that, even my question is being ignored. Ahaha~」 with a faraway look.

「That's how it is, Sumire-sama.」

「Ye, yes! What is it, maid-san!?」

When Sumire was addressed with a respectful attitude, she replied with heightened tension. Looking at her blushing face and nasal breathing that was somewhat rough, it was clear that her inspiration was greatly stimulated. Perhaps her next work would have a combat maid as the main character.

「While presumptuous, will you allow me to lend you a hand?」

「But of course! Is what I want to say, but……will you be all right?」

There was no way a maid from another world would have experience in assistant work for a manga artist.

Although Sumire loved maids, she was a pro manga artist. Having problems come to the surface because an amateur

got involved in the drawing was out of the question. She had to confirm it properly.

But, Heliotrope was completely unperturbed. She smiled beautifully while responding.

「Please leave it to me. My lord has made me learn everything in the case of something like this occurring. Please consider me as a battle-ready force.」

「Geez Hajime, just what is he making a maid of another world learn. I'm happy though!」

「Also, I have finished reading all of Sumire-sama's works. Your works are greatly popular even among us the Fleur Knights, all of us are holding deep respect toward Sumire-sama. Therefore, being allowed to help is an honor that is equal to receiving a command from my lord.」

Heliotrope-san clenched her fist strongly and strongly insisted. Actually, not just the Fleur Knights, even the maids in the palace of Tortus and the young daughters of nobles were also swallowed in an unprecedented shoujo manga boom.

Nagumo

The selling agency was the South Cloud company. The majority of the direct sales was handled by a cooperating company, Yunker Company.

Surely, Sumire felt the truth and seriousness from Heliotrope's sparkling eyes. Sumire's cheeks blushed in an embarrassed look that was unusual for her. Even in Japan, she was treated as the great Sumire-sensei, but she looked happier with this rather than getting called that by the people in the industry.

「……Even though she is never helping me out. Hellina you idiot.」

The former princess muttered something. Surely, she was feeling that the attendant who had been staying by her side since her childhood was taken away. She was completely sulking.

It was unclear whether that voice was heard or not, but Heliotrope beautifully ignored it and made a finger snap.

「Salvia.」

「Yes, captain.」

The assistants and also Fukube-san twitched when they noticed the number of maids was already increasing from behind Heliotrope!

It was a lovely maid with dark brown hair worn in a braid that was tied by a scrunchie. Her body was wrapped in a similar Victorian maid outfit like Heliotrope. She was smiling warmly.

Seeing that girl, the sulking Liliana snapped her eyes open in a flash.

「I won’t ask anymore how she appeared just now, but please let me say at least this! You are Samiya-san, aren’t you!? The grandchild of the Yunker company’s president Motto! What are you doing in this kind of place!?」

「I am a maid, Liliana-sama.」

‘Well of course. That’s a maid uniform she is wearing.’ Sumire and others were of the same opinion inside their heart.

‘I’m not asking that!’ Liliana was at her wits’ end. Hajime explained it to her straightforwardly.

「Fleur Knight rank five. She is a commanding officer class who is responsible for managing goods and information. Of course, her combat ability is also without fault.」

「Why is a merchant’s daughter like thaatt!?」

「Everything is thanks to the lord discovering me.」

Actually, Motto Yunker of the Yunker Company, who had a deep relationship with Hajime one way or another, sent this talented person to him because he wanted to secure a connection that was as substantial as possible. To speak without hiding the ulterior motive, 「If possible, I wish that you will accept her as a wife so that I can be related with your majesty the demon king as a relative」, or something like that.

Naturally, Hajime was also aware of Motto’s merchant soul, and he had also guessed his expectation, so he ignored Salvia’s——real name Samiya Yunker (17 years old) ——approach to him, but……

When Hajime was working out the plan of the Fleur Knights’ conception, the girl’s name was written in the candidate list Heliotrope made. He tried giving her various trials as a test, and it turned out that she was quite an outstanding talent.

By the way, Samiya herself didn’t have the perception that she was made a tool for a political marriage. She too was someone who inherited the merchant soul. She sniffed out the scent of money from the demon king’s surroundings and the other world (Earth) and volunteered herself.

But, after she was selected as a member of the Fleur Knights and received various trials, she went through many twists and turns and reached a point where it was her purpose in life to swear loyalty to the demon king.

The structure of the Fleur Knights was that those in rank one to ten were commanding officers with their own subordinates, but when looking at how she reached rank five when those positions were mainly grasped by people with combat jobs as their original occupation, it could be seen how astounding her talent was and how far her loyalty went that she would make a great effort with that as her driving force.

「Well then Sumire-sama. Please allow me and Salvia to be of assistance.」

「I get it. Well, if Hajime trained you two, then I don't think I'll have to worry about your skill. Best regards, okay?」

Heliotrope and Salvia deeply bowed their heads and said 「Please leave it to us」. After that, they also deeply bowed their heads to the assistants while saying 「Honorable seniors, if there is any mistake in what we are doing, please point it out without mercy」.

All the assistants together said 「Please take care of us toooo!」 while bowing back with a perfect gesture, for some reason.

「Fukube-sama.」

「Oo!? M, me? What is it?」

Surely, he never thought that he would get addressed. Fukube's middle-aged uncle face blushed red.

「I sent a subordinate of mine named Primula to Fukube-san's subordinates who are waiting outside. She will show the way to the place where the captured people are at. By the lord's command, we will extract information from them using our methods, but please cooperate with us as much as possible.」

「Ro, roger. I will contact my subordinates right now.」

When and how did Heliotrope-san contact her subordinate? Well, she was a maid of the demon king, no~thing would be strange no matter what she did~. Fukube thought that inside his heart while taking out his mobile phone and began contacting his subordinates who came together with him.

There, Liliana asked somewhat carelessly.

「……By the way, that person named Primula-san……is she a person who I know as expected?」

Hajime answered after thinking a bit.

「You know her. Her real name is Philim Zaara――」

「Hahah, so this time it's the little sister of the active captain of the templar knights is iit~」

Liliana-sama looked somewhat broken. Her friends and acquaintances were transformed into members of a superhuman maid group while she didn't know.

Her state resembled Shia in the past somehow. Yes, the Shia at the time when she saw her gentle and kind family that had completely turned into a 'hyahhaa' group.

By the way, the present templar knight-captain was David Zaara, the former captain of Ai-chan’s escort squad.

The legendary decisive battle was publicly seen as the deed of an evil god who misrepresented himself using the name of Ehito, so the people’s faith toward the church was unchanged. And so, the church was also planned to be rebuilt at the same time as the reconstruction of the capital.

David and co, the members of the former Ai-chan escort squad, consolidated the knight order of that reborn church. Although, ninety percent of their faith was offered to “our goddess”.

The captain of such reborn templar knight order actually had a little sister. She was a former nun, a magic expert who possessed the vocation of “prayer master” who could display a high ability toward magic in general by praying.

But, her relationship with her eldest brother was bad, and she was sent to a remote region because she was holding doubt to the way of faith of the church headquarters.

She also participated in the choir at the legendary decisive battle. There she also fought side by side with David, so the ill feelings between them vanished, and as a church official, she gave a lot of help to Liliana who was striving hard in governmental affairs to restore the kingdom at that time.

Though it seemed she had changed jobs into a combat maid without Liliana noticing. By the way, her rank was sixth.

□Aa~, can I interrupt? It seems that my subordinates have joined up with Primula-san, and they are heading to where the group is apprehended. Ahaha, my subordinates who are usually composed are suddenly agitated. A blonde-haired,

beautiful maid suddenly knocked on their car window, so they thought they had actually gone crazy.

Well, anyone would doubt their own eyes or head if they saw a blonde-haired maid at midnight.

Fukube’s wry smile was also responded by Hajime with a wry smile.

Then Fukube-san. Can you tell us the details in the other room?

Yes, allow me to do that. It has become a bit of a troublesome matter, isn’t it? If I have to say my true feelings, there is some aspect where I want to borrow Nagumo-san’s strength. Of course, this is just my personal wish though.

The government’s stance was that they absolutely didn’t want the demon king faction to do anything, but it seemed that Fukube himself was thinking If that’s the case, then it’s us the people at the scene who will have to take care of this difficult problem! Spare us already! Just how many holes in the stomach will we need to have until you all are satisfied huh!?.

Led by Fukube who was casually throwing a stomach medicine pill into his mouth once more, Hajime and Liliana, who was still having a distant gaze, entered into another room.

–

–

–

To sum up the talk that they had in the other room, it seemed that other than the group that was attacking just now, there were also intelligence operatives or forces from multiple countries sent into Japan.

Their objective went without saying, the gathering of information on, or removal of, Liliana, the leader of the huge organization that was on the rise all over the world.

If it was just a leader of a mere company than the story would be different, but when it came to a global organization with an ideal that was like a new religion as its root, then it was understandable for many countries to be apprehensive.

Although, it was too sudden. It was understandable for the countries to want to take some kind of measure before the network was established as an organization. Be that as it may, the movement of those countries was still too abrupt.

Regarding that point, according to the explanation that Fukube gave them while oozing cold sweat, it seemed that a higher up of a part of the government messed up.

Liliana was related with the demon king, and she was a contact person who could talk directly with that demon king; although it was only after a fashion, a friendship could be built from there, and that was why a scheme to gradually make Liliana’s organization belong to Japan was carried out.

As a result, that movement was grasped by many countries, and they began to move all at once just in case because it would be troubling if the organization really got attached to Japan.

「Realllyy~~~~, it’s inexcusable!」

Fukube-san prostrated himself. Recently, he was lamenting that the top of his head was getting desolate, but……so this was the reason.

Hajime strangely felt pity and respect toward such Fukube and shook his head while smiling wryly.

「There is a saying ‘danger past and God forgotten’. It’s about time that the pain from the time of the “returnee uproar” got forgotten and some group who thinks “just a bit”, “only this much……” came out. I’ve predicted this will happen. As long as Fukube-san and others take care of it within your own organization, then our side doesn’t intend to make a move, so well, please take care of it okay.」

「Haa, it saves us that you say so. We are already working on a way to deal with it, so please kindly go easy on us.」

Fukube showed a flagrant look of relief, and he threw a stomach medicine pill into his mouth with a terribly natural motion. His hand’s motion was flowing just like the commercial of Fris○ candies; the pills were thrown directly from its case into his mouth.

This too was a factor that caused Hajime to feel pity for Fukube strongly. Just how used to swallowing stomach medicine pills was he? And then, how many was he planning on swallowing in a day?

In exchange of Hajime who was looking at Fukube with really complicated eyes, Liliana was making a caring expression while asking.

「So, Fukube-san. Have you all predicted how this situation would develop after this? Personally, I expect that it will become a really troublesome situation though……」

「That prediction is right to the point. From what we have confirmed so far, there are already personnel from three countries who have already entered this country. There are also four countries that are definitely moving. Ideally, all of the countries will work together to gather full and accurate information, so we wish that for the time being it will only be a battle of observation, but……」

「I'm not going to allow it huh?」

「Yes, Nagumo-san won't allow that. However, that means that there will be no information at all about the leader of a growing global organization. An "unknown" is something that is feared the most. Therefore, all of them will be pressed with the choices, whether to resign themselves and accept that fear or to take measures. I believe Hajime-san understands, but……」

「They surely won't pick the former choice, unless the fact that they will meet a bitter experience that won't be worth it from picking the latter choice is carved to the depths of their body. It's impossible for a country to make that choice.」

「That's how it is. Ideally, when an act of removing or kidnapping Liliana-san is going on, other countries will intervene, and they will remove each other, but well, something like ideal is just a word in a book after all.」

Something like a choice of accepting a life of being monitored didn't exist for Hajime's side. And then, even if their side handed over some degree of information about themselves, the next time those organizations would think 「Is this offered information really true?」, and as expected they would come to observe once more.

And so, in all probability, it would be as Fukube said. At the time the force of each country understood that "observation

was completely neutralized”, they would surely take a strong measure.

What was truly terrifying wasn’t the countries that would make such decisions, but the network that was growing in influence and power even now to the degree that the countries couldn’t just ignore it and were forced to make such decisions――in short, it was Liliana’s existence.

For some reason or another, Hajime and Fukube’s gaze moved toward Liliana. There, Liliana was having a distant look for a different reason from before.

On her face was written 「Even though I only wanted to help troubled people. Even though it’s basically only relying upon others to make it happen……how did it become like this?」 loud and clear.

Hajime and Fukube’s gaze turned lukewarm at the same time, and they simultaneously averted their gaze and decided that they didn’t see that.

「However, this situation, if that is the case, within a few days, these groups will gather in large numbers around us huh?」

「……Originally, we wanted to deal with everything before it turned out like that, but……I’m sorry. The demon king section’s――cough-, my apologies. Even for the returnee response division, honestly, we are in a situation where we don’t have enough time and personnel.」

「Oi, just now, did you say demon king division? Could it be, that’s the nickname on your side?」

「Diplomatic response is also starting already, but it will be better to not expect anything from it. From our view, we wish

to avoid gunshots in the middle of the city, and we also wish to evacuate Liliana-san to a place with few people by all means in preparation for unforeseen situations. That is our suggestion, or rather, our true feelings.」

Fukube beautifully ignored Hajime's question and gave a suggestion with an apologetic look.

Hajime was making an awfully displeased look, but it wasn't because of Fukube's suggestion, rather it was surely because of the response division's nickname that Fukube leaked out.

National Police Agency Security Department Demon King Division……. Certainly, such a police institution was disagreeable.

「I don't mind that. If I remember correctly, I shouldn't have anything scheduled that cannot be rearranged. After all, I'm worried about a skirmish occurring in a place that is outside of our perception.」

「I guess. It's also troublesome if they are loitering around sporadically. Gathering them in one place and taking care of them in one go will also give off a better impression to those countries.」

「Then, allow me to continue the talk in that direction. About the place, we prepared several hideouts for the sake of witness protection, so perhaps it will be better to use those.」

「As expected from Fukube-san. You work fast.」

After hearing Hajime's praise, for the first time this day Fukube showed a relieved smile that wasn't a forced smile, wry smile or convulsing smile.

After that, when they finished hammering out the details, the subordinates of Fukube who came together with Primula shared the information of the background, objective, the plan forward, and so on of the attackers who came.

It seemed that the information had been thoroughly extracted, and they didn’t ask as far as the method used, but when looking at the gaze of terror that Fukube’s subordinates directed toward Primula……it must be something that shouldn’t be asked.

Primula, although formerly, was a gentle and kind sister though……

「Hajime-san……you are endeavoring to act prudently on Earth, but in exchange, aren’t you cutting too loose on Tortus?」

「……」

Liliana was looking alternately at Hajime and Primula with sad eyes. For some reason, Hajime was at a loss for words and averted his gaze in response.

By the way, Heliotrope and Salvia were finishing their assistant work perfectly.

They didn’t borrow the work tools, but instead they had prepared them beforehand; furthermore, they took them out from inside their sleeves *shakin!*, or took them out from their breast or inside their skirt, so Sumire and co were able to have fun working while getting heated up from start to end.

Not forgetting to improve the work place’s atmosphere too, they really were perfect maids.

–

–

–

The next day.

There the figures of the Nagumo family were in a splendid lodging deep inside the mountain of a certain prefecture.

It was a mountain forest with an abundance of nature in the surroundings, and a refreshing river was streaming nearby.

It was a hideout for the protection target that Fukube prepared. It was separated enough from human habitation, and even if some commotion occurred, there would be no one who noticed.

The autumn colors of the mountain still remained. It could also function as a refuge in the meaning of a holiday place or health resort.

This might be a consideration from Fukube in his own way toward the Nagumo family who had to deal with a dangerous situation in this season when autumn was over.

Furthermore, not just Sumire and Shuu, currently even Remia and Tio were also busy people, but everyone emptied their schedules even if they had to force it and came here. Their family was being targeted. So this was only natural.

Hajime came out of the lodging and looked around the surrounding. Even the beautiful forest landscape that still had red leaves remaining would undoubtedly make a complete change in expression when night came. Thinking about when the people targeting Liliana would come, the

forest at night would be a suitable cover for them. The darkness would become terribly frightening for the side who would be attacked.

But, Hajime made a fearless grin while staring at such a forest.

And then——he declared.

「Now then——let’s barbeque~~~!」

□□□□□□□□□□OO~~~~~~~-!□□□□□□□□□□

The Nagumo family responded in excitement. They all showed wide smiles on their faces, with a lot of ingredients in their hands!

「Papa! Quiiick! Quiiick! Myuu’s stomach is crying nano!」

「My my, Myuu. To be so happy……」

「Right, it was a bit forced, but it’s good that we hath emptied our schedules for this last family trip of the autumn.」

「……Nn. This year everyone is busy, we weren’t really able to go on a family trip.」

「Yue wasn’t really busy though.」

「……Kaori. It will become a scuffle again if you say that. Aa, look, Yue is taking a fighting pose already! Oi, you! Kaori too, don’t take a stance with that green onion!」

Even with Shizuku’s intermediation, Yue and Kaori were starting a quarrel using vegetables as weapons. Myuu was lifting a lump of A5 rank meat above her head while making

merry 「Meaat, meat!」 in high spirits. Remia and Tio were watching her with similar smiles.

Shia was smiling wryly at such a scene while devoting herself to preparing the other ingredients promptly; beside her, Liliana was helping.

「Ahaha……well, the incident this time became a good chance. Especially because Lily-san is extraordinarily busy, she cannot really spend time with us. We owe the attackers one! Ah, come to think of it Myuu-chan. Do you want to go looking for fish in the river later? Let's fire at the fish using finger bullet♪」

「Shia-san, please fish normally! Don't make the river be dyed crimson!」

The wive~s were clamoring 'kyaa kyaa' with high spirits.

……It seemed they didn't empty their schedules because they were worried about Liliana, but they purely wanted to go on a family trip, that was all.

「……Ee~rr, then I will stand by in the operation headquarters, so……」

Fukube actually accompanied them as a guide, but seeing the people of the Nagumo family enjoying the holiday normally without looking burdened or feeling in danger at all, he emitted a sorrowful air thinking 「Well, it's the usual thing」 while going back. Tonight too……it would be cup ramen for him. 'Let's have Ra○', he muttered inside his heart while glancing longingly at the lump of A5 rank meat. (TN: Raoh cup ramen, seems to be popular in Japan.)

「Oh, Fukube-san. Are you going back already? If you like, please eat together with us.」

「That’s right. If you don’t eat properly and get some nutrition, the top of your head will rapidly get desolate you know?」

Warm (?) words from Shuu and Sumire!

Fukube turned around in a flash, and his gaze turned toward Hajime. His eyes were just like a puppy that was seeking permission from its owner after getting told 「Wait!」 in front of its meal!

Inside his heart Hajime thought 「This person, at his root he is someone that you really cannot let your guard down against, but why is he sometimes giving an impression like a comedian or dog like this huh」 with a wry smile.

「You see, Nagumo-san. That’s because I’m a dog of the nation.」

「……Really, even though you are someone that one must not let their guard down against.」

The wry smile of Hajime’s whose mind was normally seen through was deepening while nodding to convey 「Okay!」.

Fukube happily rushed toward the barbeque saying 「I’ll take care of the charcoal management~」. Next, he said 「Ah, I also want to bring back some for my subordinates, so can I pack up some?」 trying to secure a lot of meat casually.

In the corner of his sight, Hajime caught Fukube eating Myuu’s throwing technique when his hand reached toward the meat 「What are you going to do with Myuu’s meat nano——!」 and got thrown away. He gave a sidelong glance at that while enjoying the autumn mountain’s scenery to his heart’s content.

–

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

It didn’t end…the story got long when my interest was at full throttle. Ah, it’s always like this……

Tomorrow, I’ll have to take care of the brats, so perhaps it will be impossible, but I’ll update if possible.

At the very least I’ll update on New Year’s Day! Around midnight perhaps……

Also, to everyone who commentted「I bought it~」「It’s interesting~」 regarding「Arifureta Zero」,

Really~~ thank you very much.

I wrote it completely on commission, so I was in suspense that perhaps it would make everyone disappointed……

I was really happy, and I felt a bit relieved.

The same with the Drama CD too. Really, thank you very much!

Also, has everyone read the 「afterword of afterword」 too?

In Overlap-sama’s homepage, if you click on the referral part of Arifureta 7 and Arifureta Zero,

You will be sent to the exclusive page of each volume where there is a「Reader Questionnare」 there.

If you fill out the questionnaire, you will be able to read a bit of a short story.

The seventh volume is a short story regarding「Myuu at that time」 while Zero is regarding「That girl of the restaurant at that time」.

If you like, please read!

–

About the greeting for this year, I will say it once more in tomorrow’s activity report, but

Let me say a few brief words as an afterword.

Everyone, the people of Narou, thank you very much for having fun together with me this whole year!

Best regards for next year too!

–

PS

The comic version and Nichijou version were updated in Gardo!

Hauria lol Or rather, Karm turned into something amazing.

Myuu appeared in Nichijou! Myuu’s「desuu」 hit’s the bull’s eye in Shirakome lol

RoGa-sensei and Mori-sensei too, my greatest gratitude to you.

Everyone too, please go take a look at Gardo at the end of this year by all means.

Arifureta Chapter 297

Arifureta After Ill Fleur Knights

AN: The Ame Talk yesterday was a stable fun lol.

Today too naturally looking after the brats is the priority but,

Please read for a relaxed new year~

※I also updated on 30 December, so those who still haven’t read it, please go read that first.

Everyone in the Nagumo family was relaxing as they liked in the big lodging that was a hideout for target protection owned by the public safety department.

It was the night where autumn had ended; furthermore, since it was deep inside a mountain, the air would be getting colder in its own way, but fortunately, there was an antique fireplace with firewood blazing up even now, warming the air without pause.

Naturally, the members of the Nagumo family were also gathered near the fireplace.

「Knight to A5. Charge at healing master on D5!」

「Aah, my healing master is skewered! Furthermore, it’s tossed away like trash outside the board! Cruel!」

On both sides of a largish game board, Yue and Kaori were glaring at the board’s surface. The two were amusing themselves with another world’s version of chess.

The basic rules were similar to the chess of Earth, but most of the parts were in a way that was characteristic of another world.

For example, the variety of pieces was abundant, and the player could set the kind of piece and their positioning in each game. There was also a growth system for the pieces themselves. For example, even if a piece was in a position that could take the opponent’s piece, they could have the tables turned on them. The game board could have its field set up with game things, and there were advantageous and disadvantageous fields for each job……

Anyway, it was reproducing a real war with quite a high degree of realism.

And then, the greatest feature of this game was,

「Why-, why did you kill heeer! She is your little sister!」

「Hmph. I have long age severed something useless like family ties. My loyalty to my king is absolute! No matter who my opponent is, if they stand in my way, I will pulverize them!」

「This stupid idiot! That girl-, if this war is over, she said that she is going to live together again with her big brother someday. She was smiling when she said that-」

Like that, it had a feature where fellow pieces would act out a drama every time.

Just now, the little sister who defected because she was unable to endure the despotic rule of the king at Yue’s side was reunited with her big brother, a knight serving that king, on the battlefield. The big brother murdered the little sister and then argued with a knight on Kaori’s side who was in love with that little sister-chan.

It appeared that it was the big brother who made the little sister defect, and then he promised that he would follow her for sure, and yet he changed his mind……that seemed to be the setting.

「How awful-, as expected from Yue, how awful!」

「……Kaori. It’s not a setting that I thought of. The game’s drama is completely randomized.」

「Right now, I’m doubting that setting. Because, Yue, you also aimed at the healing master right from the start before this too! Surely, you are using soul magic or something to read the player’s heart! Yue’s desire is reflected in the story!」

「……It’s just a coincidence. The healing master should die, no mercy, is not what I’m thinking.」

「Lies! That’s a~bsolutely a lie! I know the truth! Each time Yue plays this game, first of all, you will always check the healing master’s position! I know it from your gaze’s movement!」

「……Kaori. You are just tired.」

「Shut up!」

While they were making a racket ‘gyaasu gyaasu’ like that, actually the frequency of these two intimately playing

games together was the highest, Hajime and co felt warm seeing the sight that was exactly the same as usual.

Shia was sitting on a rocking chair in front of the fireplace. She was rocking *sw~ay sw~ay* back and forth while her rabbit ears were also doing *sw~ay sw~ay* at the same time. She asked Hajime without moving her gaze from the knitted material in her hands.

「Hajime-san, what is actually going on with that game? Is the game reading the player's emotion to set up the story?」

「No, there is no such setting, should be. All of the inserted stories are love and hate drama, a family quarrel, and so on — things like the soap opera story. The players are only projecting themselves into it arbitrarily.」

Hajime, who was putting Myuu on his lap while playing on a laptop together, answered like that lacking a bit of self-confidence.

By the way, right now, what he was playing together with Myuu was a simulation game of building a country. He was beta testing the new game that Shuu's company was making.

It was possible to build a country with quite a high degree of freedom, but Myuu said 「Military power is everything for a country's strength」, and she only concentrated on augmenting military affairs like defensive walls or weapon development.

Even when Hajime tried to insert a heartwarming setting like "Ani○al Crossing" casually, Myuu would say 「My, as expected of papa nano, placing the beastmen on the frontline by makin them pretend to cultivate a new land」. Her thought was leaning to military affairs as usual.

Just where is this child going? What kind of direction is her growth heading to……

Hajime papa was a bit worried.

Shuu, who had a personal opinion about the game, sharply noticed Hajime’s unusual lack of confidence and tilted his head.

「What’s the matter Hajime? You said “should be”, isn’t this a game you made?」

「No, you’re wrong Tou-san. This another world version of chess isn’t something I created. Oscar Orcus……that founder of the Orcus Great Labyrinth was the creator. When I was in the abyss’s hideout, I found it in Oscar’s Treasure Warehouse. I often played it with Yue to kill time.」

Hearing those words, 「What the, this is the first time I’ve seen an artifact that is made by anyone other than Hajime」, not just Shuu, but the others were also showing surprised expressions.

「However, that Oscar too, why didst he maketh this kind of bizarre game setting. No, the greatness of his skill art conveyed, but……」

「You’re right. When we went on the Tortus trip before this, in the past image at Orcus’s hideout that you showed to us…… I got the impression that he was more like a serious young man though.」

When Tio tilted her head in puzzlement 「Hmm?」, Shizuku also said 「Certainly」 while tilting her head because of the difference from her impression.

「……Well, I can imagine it. It must be Miledy butting in anyway, making him add the drama setting. This annoyingness of unrolling a soap opera story each time the pieces clash must be painstakingly created……I cannot think of anyone than her who would do this.」

Hearing Hajime's words, everyone went 「Even though she was the world's protector huh~」 with a distant look while also accepting it.

「Everyone, how about a second helping of warm café au lait?」

Remia returned from the kitchen with both her hands holding a tray. Several mugs were placed on the tray with hot steam rising up from them. At the same time, a slightly sweet scent tickled the nose.

「Remia-chan, nice! Sumire-okaachan loves Remia-chan who is attentive like that you know~. Also, if there are some cookies too, then I'll be even more happy~」

Sumire who was lying down while writing something on the tablet she was holding was demanding for seconds by holding up an empty mug in one hand and waving it around.

This mother of the Nagumo family, after the barbeque was over and she finished taking a bath, she hadn't risen up even once since she started relaxing in front of the fireplace. She was rolling around all this time. It seemed she had zero motivation already for today to get up and do something.

A mother-in-law who was completely behaving like a spoiled child to her son's wife……

It was a laziness that would normally become an impetus for a daughter-in-law and mother-in-law conflict, but Remia

smiled 「My my, ufufu」 like usual toward such Sumire. No, rather her smile was even warmer than usual. She said 「Of course I have prepared it~」 and then put down a mug and also cookies in a spot that was easy for Sumire to reach.

「Remia, don’t spoil Kaa-san too much. Once she gets carried away, she will act spoiled until she is just a step away from getting scolded.」

「My my. Isn’t that fine? We are in the middle of this trip that is hard to come by after all.」

Remia was smiling like a holy mother. Sumire rolled while saying 「I’m acting spoiled to Remia-chan because my son won’t spoil me~」 in response.

By the way, Sumire was strangely skilled at determining where the line was. The demon king son let out a small sigh toward his mother whose laziness increased by thirty percent from the usual on this trip.

He accepted the café au lait from Remia, and at a good timing, everyone put the mugs to their mouths. Their throats gulped a bit of the content as though to taste it.

Everyone leaked out a relaxed voice 「Hafuu」.

Then, as though to pour cold water on such a laid back atmosphere, the ringtone of Hajime’s smartphone sounded. When Hajime took it while making a conflicted expression, there were the words “Fukube” on the display screen. He sighed even further while answering the call.

「Nagumo-san, the organizations have come, you know?」

「They are quick. I thought it would take two to three days.」

「Unfortunately, it seems they are full of competitive spirit. Though you all were at least able to enjoy a relaxing holiday on the first day.」

「Fukube-san too. You brought back quite a lot of meat behind Myuu's back, right? Didn't you immerse yourself in the aftertaste of a laidback dinner together with your subordinates?」

「Yes, I received a blissful time that I seldom experienced with the low salary of a civil servant. My subordinates too are extremely thankful――」

「By the way, Myuu said 「Fukube, unforgivable. The grudge for meat cannot be forgotten nano」 you know?」

「I beg you to please mediate for us! It was a sudden impulse! I couldn't possibly win against A5 rank meat!」

「Well, putting that aside――how many?」

Hajime smiled wryly at Fukube's reaction, and then he asked with his atmosphere slightly changed. Fukube also changed his tone and answered.

「Just from what we can confirm here, fifty-two people have entered the mountain. From their equipment and positioning, there are four teams. All those teams must have different affiliations.」

「……A lot of people came huh. Any sign of them crushing each other?」

「None so far. It looks like they aren't interfering with each other, first come first serve. That is, their superiors have been talking about it beforehand it seems. Although, it's not

clear how they will act after one of them secures the target though.

Is this all of them?

No. There are also around three countries that came. They crossed the prefectural border some time ago. They are likely to be fifteen minutes late.

So the total is less than a hundred people huh.

What will you do? We here are also prepared. If necessary, we will send our force. It will be harsh to take all of them, but hunting one or two enemy teams is possible.

Hajime showed a thinking gesture for a bit toward Fukube's proposal.

The attackers must also understand that they were being lured seeing how Hajime and co came to this place at this kind of timing. In the first place, the hideout of the public safety department being known was also because Fukube and others were leaking out the information.

Even so, for them to come simultaneously in a short time like this, they must be resolved. They should be moving with a calculation that surpasses monitoring and the like already. The came with their elite force and fully equipped.

The special force of the returnee response division was strong enough. They were elites among elites. After all, around the latter half of the "returnee uproar", they intercepted the subordinates of many countries with fierce efforts in order not to let the demon king personally take measures.

That was how much Japan also weightily considered the matter regarding the “returnee uproar”, and thus this division was formed……

Although the scope of their duty was extensive, the personnel of the returnee response division are scattered throughout the country and even the whole world.

Just like what Fukube said previously, it was a fact that they were short of hand to be able to immediately deal with the sudden movement this time.

Although it was only after a fashion, the personnel of the response team was an ally, and they had also come to know each other. Hajime didn’t feel the necessity to send them into a disadvantageous battle and cause pointless sacrifices.

Although,

「We are completely in a relaxing mode here.」

「Yes? What did you say, Nagumo-san?」

Hearing Hajime’s small murmur, Fukube asked with a dubious tone.

Hajime didn’t answer that. When he looked around inside the room once more, everyone was laidback while drinking Remia’s special café au lait with relish. Hajime was also the same.

Then, there.

「While presumptuous」

A refreshing voice resounded inside the room.

The woman’s voice, who didn’t belong to anyone among the Nagumo family, and then the presence that appeared suddenly caused Myuu to raise her voice 「Pya!?」 and leap up. Sumire, Shuu, Remia, and then also Liliana twitched.

When they turned their gaze toward the voice, there was a maid-san behind the sofa where Hajime was sitting!

Liliana spontaneously yelled.

「Helli――!」

「It’s Heliotrope.」

「otrope!」

The members of the Nagumo family who were acquainted with Hellina who was the princess’s attendant greeted with 「Hellina-san?」「Long time no see」 and the like. Of course, without delay, the maid corrected 「It’s Heliotrope」.

After everyone looked like they understood 「Ah, yes」, Heliotrope smiled sweetly; then she opened her mouth with her gaze directed at Hajime.

「I believe that there is no need to use everyone’s important family time for the sake of the likes of those companies. Lord, please leave this to us.」

「I guess. The conception of the Fleur Knights is also mostly completed. The matters on Tortus are mostly taken care of, and with Liliana’s situation like this, you all were called here……Ok, the original duty of you all, Lily’s protection and the enemy’s elimination――I’ll leave it all to you. Do it.」

「Yes, my lord.」

Heliotrope bowed her head reverently and then like that her figure vanished quietly.

Hajime told Fukube on the other side of the call 「That's how it is. You guys can get back to immersing yourself in the meat's aftertaste now」. Fukube answered 「Roge~r」 happily and cut the call.

Hajime pocketed his smartphone and brought the café au lait to his mouth as though to say that the troublesome matter had been dealt with.

「……What?」

His movement stopped seeing the really complicated gazes of his wive~s.

They knew that Hajime was training a force that should be considered as imperial guards for the sake of Liliana. And also how the force was a maid corps.

Although, as a matter of fact, today was the first time they genuinely witnessed a direct conversation between Hajime and the maid.

Just as Hajime said, the Fleur Knights' activity was fundamentally on Tortus until now because there were duties here and there that were being carried on.

「I've thought of this even when meeting with Hellina-san on Tortus, but……Hajime-kun, she felt completely different than when talking with us, didn't she?」

「You really felt like her goshujin-sama didn't you, Hajime-san?」

「How enviable……」

「Hey, Hajime. It’s a maid force for Lily’s sake, right? No matter how I look at it, it looks completely like she is serving Hajime though. What is the meaning of this, I wonder?」

「Papa, will you be happy if Myuu is a maid nano? Is it better to call papa as goshujin-sama rather than papa nano?」

「My my, Hajime-san. Did you want a maid-san for yourself so much like that?」

「That’s right isn’t it!? Everyone also thinks so, right!? To begin with, that Hellina, she is obviously delighted! She is really happy being commanded by Hajime; it’s really incomparable with when I was the one who commanded her!」

Starting from Kaori who was giving him a fixed stare, Shia, Tio, Shizuku, Myuu, Remia, and Liliana was speaking vehemently. They were speaking as though Hajime was undoubtedly arranging a maid force for his own sake because of his hobby. No, he was obviously under suspicion!

「There is no way that’s true. If I have a preference for maids, then rather than making Heliotrope and others wearing maid clothes, I’ll ask you all to wear――」

「……Oscar Orcus was a severe maid lover.」

Hajime, who was making an excuse with an exasperated look, was interrupted by Yue who spoke something that seemed unrelated. When everyone turned their gaze to her, Yue slowly stood up and spoke.

「……Before getting out of the abyss, when we were living in the hideout, there were times when Hajime vanished at midnight. What’s more, he even purposefully built an artifact to leave his presence inside the bed.」

-, Yu, Yue. You see, that time――

……Close your mouth Hajime――and then one night, I, who got concerned, secretly tailed Hajime. Hajime was inside Oscar Orcus's secret room. And then, I witnessed it.

A surprise "Divine Statement". Even Hajime would need a bit of time to resist it.

And then, everyone glanced at Hajime who was strangely flustered while focusing on Yue. Like a detective cornering the culprit, Yue,

……The figure of Hajime, getting engrossed with the maid golem that Oscar left behind! Hajime is the same as Oscar――a maid lover!

Yue's finger pointed sternly, exposing the only truth!

By the way, the maid golem-san at that time was turned into pieces by Yue-sama.

Hajime who resisted the "Divine Statement" argued.

A misunderstanding! I was just interested because it was a "maid golem"! "Maid robot" is a man's romance! It only got my blood as an engineer boiling up! Oscar you see, he pursued a real maid so much that he instead got troubled with the dilemma of getting distanced from the real thing. That was why he entrusted it to a transmutation master of the future generation. I tried to inherit his will and――

……Guilty? Or, not guilty? (TN: Yue spoke in English here.)

Judge Yue once more interrupted the words of Hajime who was stacking up self-justification and asked for the verdict. The jury group of the wive~s & beloved daughter all smiled.

□□□□□□□GUILTY!!!□□□□□□□

The wive~s & beloved daughter stood up quietly. The demon king-sama was drenched with cold sweat.

□Just accept your judgment obediently~□

□You cannot go against blood huh. Tou-san too, in the past I often forced Kaa-san to wear a maid uniform.□

Sumire’s eyes didn’t move from her tablet while Shuu was getting a faraway look while immersing himself in memory. Or rather, it was information about their son that they didn’t want to hear.

□……Either way, I won’t be able to relax huh……□

Seeing the approaching wive~s and his beloved daughter who corrected her seating to face him above his knees, Hajime’s face was twitching.

–

–

–

Inside the forest that was wrapped in darkness, where the moonlight mostly didn’t reach, there was a group that was abnormally silent even while advancing swiftly.

It was a special force of a certain country that publicly didn’t exist.

The leader’s legs were fluently advancing while he was grumbling inside his heart.

(……Good grief, we were made to draw a terrible short straw.)

The person who was their target was someone who even the leader knew well. A famous idol and a manga author whose work was translated throughout the world. Whether on television or the internet, anyone would catch sight of her even if they weren't interested in that business.

Now they had to kidnap, or if that wasn't possible, to murder such a person……

(If she is just an idol with too much influence, then I'll only get my conscience hurt though……Now then, this isn't something that we who are the nation's expendable goods originally should desire, but……let's accomplish this and return alive.)

The leader thought. Certainly, the existence of the girl who was the origin of the network was a threat. He also could understand why his nation couldn't leave her alone.

But, however, still.

That girl was a relative of him——the one codenamed "demon king".

A few years ago, his fatherland that made a move on them went through a very bitter experience……

Like the leader's friends, they were now volunteer members who were working diligently digging wells in a developing country. Sometimes they would send him postcards of them posing with the local children while smiling refreshingly.

Even though they were people of the underworld, who excelled in murder and subterfuge at the same level or even

better than him……

Had his superiors in the fatherland already forgotten about that terror?

The leader let out a small, a really small sigh.

Although, as long as he was serving his nation, orders were absolute. He pulled himself together.

Then, at that time *rustle*, there was the sound of leaves being stepped on from deep inside the forest. The leader lifted his fist. The force’s members stopped moving. They lowered their stance and raised their guard.

The leader focused on the direction of the sound through his night vision device while pointing his rifle muzzle that was attached with a suppressor. The other members also focused on all direction.

Perhaps it should be said to be just as expected. The way they killed their presence was befitting for elites. They were paying attention to every single piece of their equipment, so they assimilated themselves with the forest’s darkness and vegetation. It wouldn’t be an exaggeration to say that it would be next to impossible for an ordinary person to spot them.

The leader’s eyes scrutinized carefully. He intended not to overlook any movement no matter how slight, and depending on the situation he would shoot mercilessly……

「Welcome.」

「——」

He had no words. This was exactly what being speechless meant.

Would the force of another country break the agreement and attack, or perhaps it would be Japan’s respond division’s special force, or maybe the most terrifying, the demon king or one of his wives……

Even though the leader was anticipating that the one who showed their figure brazenly without even hiding was,

「The demon king’s subordinate, rank ten of the Fleur Knights――I am called Freesia.」

A beautiful maid.

Pure white hair that was like snow springing up at night. A beautiful face that was so well featured it felt like a joke. The eyes that were shining crimson were bewitching, to the degree that for a moment it felt like the heart was seized despite her expressionless face.

The force’s members who were the elites among elites gulped their saliva in a daze.

But at that time, perhaps it was just as expected from the leader. He immediately made his judgment. “Demon king’s subordinate”――it wasn’t the time to falter anymore. There was no option of retreat; they could only do it.

「Fire-!」

The leader pulled his trigger while yelling at the same time. The troops who came back to their senses in surprise also immediately pulled their trigger.

While the firing sound that was unique to sound suppressors was leaking out, the maid who introduced herself as Freesia who was being showered by a rain of bullets was――

「Kuh, it won’t be as simple as expected!」

A huge variable shield, which was unknown from where it was hidden, instantly unfolded, blocking the all-out fire without the slightest tremor.

The hard impact sound of metal clashing with each other echoed inside the forest.

「Grenade! Alpha 4, launcher!」

Seeing that there was no meaning in being secretive anymore, the leader decided to up the firepower. Two troopers threw grenades with a deft motion.

Immediately, a roaring sound and explosion blast, and then a blown up cloud of dust enveloped the maid. Furthermore, a bullet from a rifle with a grenade launcher attached impacted. A flame blast enveloped the girl.

The leader made a hand signal to tell the troops to stop firing temporarily.

A beat later, when the dust cloud and flames cleared up――

There was a metallic globe there.

Similar to Hajime’s variable large shield Aidion, it was a type that unfolded in all directions.

Kashon kashon kashon The shield folded into the size of a normal shield while making a nice sound. With the Aidion in one hand, Freesia elegantly brushed off her apron.

Not a single scratch. Far from that. Whether that pure white apron or her long straight hair that was split in the center, either wasn’t dirtied at all.

-, spread out! 5 to 9, hold her in place!

The leader left his subordinates to hold back the enemy while the main force would move to accomplish their objective. They couldn’t defeat her, or even if they could, they would receive damage on the level that would become a serious hindrance for accomplishing their duty. The decision to sacrifice some subordinates was made because of that judgment.

There was no way the troops would harbor dissatisfaction at that judgment of the leader. They were able to take action swiftly……or was how it should be.

? How long are you guys planning on acting dumbfounded! Come back to your senses!

The team’s Alpha 5-9 didn’t reply. The leader, who wouldn’t avert his gaze from the threat named Freesia, raised a scolding voice that was filled with irritation toward his subordinates who didn’t respond right away.

But, as expected no reply came back.

This is Alpha 4. 5 to 9 are lost-

-, 12! Is he there!?

No-, I don’t see him! 10, as well as 11, are also lost! Until just now, they were right beside——

The voice disappeared. A cold sweat trailed down the leader’s forehead. He quickly gave instructions, and 2 to 4

who were around him changed their formation slightly to cover each other’s back.

「They got us. So you’re a decoy.」

「A sharp discernment.」

The answer came from Freesia, no, it was a voice that sounded more childish. Furthermore, the voice came from the side.

The one who appeared, as though melting out from the forest’s darkness, was a new maid.

「Nice to meet you. Fleur Knights rank 2――I am called Nemesia.」

「……A, a child? Or rather, ra, rabbit ears?」

The leader’s gaze involuntarily flowed completely toward the new maid.

That was understandable. The girl still looked like she was in her early teens from a glance, and even with an overestimation, she would only be 15 at most. Her appearance was really cute, but it wasn’t her age or appearance that should be focused on. But the thing above her head, the splendid, fluffy――rabbit ears!

A Hauria.

Her real name was Nea Hauria. A girl the same age as Par-kun. Her nickname was “Neashutatrum of the External Murder”, but right now she was Nemesia. (AN: This girl appeared in the LN version.)

When the Hauria clan heard that one of them would be recruited into a maid group to work *directly under* the demon king, a great fray among the whole clan (limited to females) that lasted for three months occurred. The unexpected result was that this Nea repelled all the Onee-sans and grasped the glory for herself.

She was rank two from the comprehensive evaluation for various reasons, but regarding secret information abilities and assassination abilities, she was at the top. She put her name in the top 3 even in pure combat ability despite being of a rabbit clan, and recently, she even made inroads into the struggle for the top rank in femininity. She was a young elite.

「Your comrades have been moved. Are you still going to struggle?」

The leader couldn’t answer after Freesia opened her mouth once more.

Right beside him was the maid who most likely drove the force into a state of annihilation soundlessly while the force was attacking Freesia.

In the front, was a maid who couldn’t be harmed at all by firearms.

At this rate, they would simply get annihilated……

The leader looked around at his remaining subordinates just for a moment. His lips suddenly twisted, and he lowered his rifle muzzle……

「My apologies. My words were lacking. ——You will be crushed even if you struggle.」

「Eh?」

Freesia thrust both her hands forward. Right after that, both her arms transformed. *Kashun kashun kashun* With that sound, the arms became gatling guns in the blink of an eye. The very arms themselves. No matter how they looked, she wasn’t human.

The leader who saw that raised a dry laugh.

「That’s why, even though I told them this is bad」

Before the mission, to his superior.

Right after that, the fury of the gatling guns covered them fully along with a cloud of dust.

Also, the rank ten Freesia was a human-shaped Grim reaper that was fully loaded with a lot of artifacts inside her body——pile bunker, small sunlight convergence laser, missile, super vibration death scythe (large caliber shotgun attached), flying all range ordnance, and so on. She was the grand sum of Hajime’s romance——a maid robot.

–

–

–

After that, the forces of many countries received maid attacks altogether, and they were helplessly annihilated.

The following forces were also crushed without leaving any behind. Fukube and his subordinates who were watching that sight from the surveillance system made a firm oath to

not harbor any more illusions toward maids for a second time.

–

–

–

A few days later.

The top of each country who made a plan about Liliana——ten people were gathering in a certain place while they were all cordially sweating coldly like a waterfall together.

It was a lineup that would make one wonder if an international summit would begin here, but the gathering this time was completely unofficial.

On the contrary, they weren’t gathering for negotiations or cooperating with each other.

To be more accurate, they were gathered. *Forcefully.* All within these few minutes.

The top of a certain country, who had only taken over after his predecessor not so long ago, glanced at the cause, or rather, the culprit.

「Perhaps you have any business with this one?」

「……No.」

‘Rather, it’s you who got business with us!’ Was how the leader wanted to tsukkomi, but he didn’t want to stir up the hornet’s nest, so he shook his head.

That person——a maid——was standing by silently once more near the wall.

Yes, that maid was exactly the culprit who abducted a leader of a country.

Just when he thought that a maid suddenly appeared behind him, he suddenly ate a fist to the guts, and then he noticed he was inside a spacious room that he didn’t know where it was located.

He believed that the leaders of the other countries most likely also went through the same thing as him.

Because standing behind each leader of a country who was made to sit around a round table, were maids who seemed to be in charge of the leaders in front of them.

Every single one of the maids was a beauty who would make anyone be taken aback in surprise and their breath was stolen away. Anyone who was a man would surely have their eyes reeled in.

But, naturally, no one had the composure to admire the view.

(Former president Schwarnenegger. I was wrong calling your attitude weak. I should listen to your warning……)

He rubbed his stomach that still felt a bit hurt while murmuring in his heart. When he looked closer, it seemed the other people were also oddly concerned with their stomach. It appeared everyone ate a punch to the guts.

This was where he wanted to say just what they were doing to the leader of a country, but the person who would come after this was a monster who would crush the

unreasonableness brought by a country with even more unreasonableness to have his own way.

「Forgive my rudeness, but just now, were you perhaps thinking of something strange?」

「N, nnoo, I’m not thinking anything!」

「Is that so……my apology.」

The maid was too sharp. And then too terrifying. An aura of wrath leaked out for a moment, no, it was killing intent. The amount of cold sweat doubled from that. It was already a waterfall. It was as though he was getting showered.

When he glanced at the clock, it would soon be the time that was told to him.

Tick tock, the sound of the clock’s hand was strangely reverberating.

Before long, the time arrived.

Without any advance warning, all the maids moved in front of the door simultaneously. Without making a single sound of footsteps, they split to the left and right with five people on each side. Their posture was beautiful.

「The lord has come. ……Don’t you all know any manners?」

The maid——Heliotrope-san emitted a gruesome killing intent!

The leaders of the countries simultaneously stood up! Cold sweat was flowing from them to the degree that there was a worry of dehydration!

A beat later, Heliotrope opened the door with a reverent gesture. His majesty, the demon king, who showed his figure was……

「O, oou?」

Leaking out a bewildered voice that sounded slightly creeped out.

He gave the order to gather the ringleaders of the case this time because he wanted to talk to them, but the moment the door was opened, the maids were lined up in a good order while bowing their heads; furthermore, the leaders of each country were lowering their heads with faces that looked like they had seen death. Especially while they were sweating so much, it caused Hajime to be taken aback!

Even the demon king――Hajime-san too was a bit surprised.

Cough Hajime cleared his throat. He entered inside after pulling himself together.

There, a spasming voice rose from among the wive~s who were accompanying him together.

「Ve, Venri!? Thy, what art thy doing in this kind of place!?」

「I am a maid, princess.」

Well, of course. She was wearing a maid uniform after all.

‘That’s not what I wisheth to ask!!’ Tio stamped her feet in frustration.

Real name Venri. Her true identity was a dragonman. Furthermore, she was Tio’s wet nurse. An existence that

wouldn’t be an exaggeration even if she was called as her second mother. (TN: Appeared in the extra story of LN vol 3)

Such an existence was being her husband’s maid before she noticed!

No, she was from a clan that was serving the Klarus family for many generations, so it wasn’t strange even if she was serving Hajime now, but still! ‘Still, still, I di~dn’t hear anything about this thy know!?’ Tio argued vehemently, but Venri or rather, the Fleur Knights rank three Ivy-san only smiled sweetly. (TN: Until now I have been using Claus for Tio’s surname, changing it to Klarus here cause it seems I have misread the reading until now.)

In addition, she was older than Tio, so originally she was a woman that looked to be past her middle age, but now, no matter how Tio looked at her, she looked like she was around the middle of her thirtieth. She felt like an attractive mature lady who was overflowing with motherhood and sex appeal. No matter how Tio saw it, her age was rejuvenated.

It couldn’t be helped that even Tio whose mental strength was at a cheat level got flustered.

Tio was going to speak further, but before she could, this time it was Shia who raised her voice.

「Nea-chan!? Don’t tell me, don’t tell me even Nea-chan!?」

「I am a maid, Shia-oneesama.」

Well, of course. She was wearing a maid uniform after all.

And then Liliana asked further with a gesture as though she was enduring a headache.

「Excuse me~, could it be that you are her highness the imperial princess of the empire, Tracy D Hoelscher?」

「I am a maid, Liliana-sama.」

Well, of course. She was wearing a maid uniform after all. 'I get it — this pattern. I'm used to it already! Even if it's an imperial princess of the empire; furthermore, it's a princess who is famous for being a war hawk even among the imperial family, yes, that's right, isn't it!? You are a maid, aren't you!?'

The maid imperial princess-sama——or rather Fleur Knights rank seven Torenia was chuckling 「Ufufu」 bewitchingly. In response, Liliana also smiled back 「Long time no see, ufufu~」looking like she had abandoned everything.

Naturally, because Liliana had obtained such an immunity, she didn't make a tsukkomi or anything when at the corner of her sight she caught sight of one other person who she recognized. Even if, for example, that person looked exactly the same as the captain of the kingdom's knight order, Kuzeri Rail!

「He, hey, Shizuku-chan. No matter how I see it, that can only be Kuzeri-san though.」

「Kaori, what a coincidence. I also see it like that.」

It seemed Liliana wasn't mistaken. By the way, she was rank four. It was something terribly concerning about who the present knight order captain of the kingdom was though Liliana wanted to believe that the seat wasn't empty by all means.

While feeling the gazes that insisted 「Give us a detailed explanation!」 from everyone, especially Tio, Hajime

returned his gaze toward the country leaders who were looking at each other’s faces idly.

「Now then, why all of you are gathered in this place, you all should understand the situation already, right?」

The atmosphere changed. There was an abnormal pressure that even felt like it was giving off physical pressure.

When Hajime moved forward, the transcendental maids who annihilated the forces they dispatched and abducted them without regards of the existing security were standing by behind him.

That figure which was clad in a black-based attire and served upon by a combat maid group――

「Demon king……」

Someone muttered.

「Well then, let’s have a talk. Rationally, peacefully, just like cultured people, agreed?」

Hearing those words, the expressions of the leaders who thought that surely they would be killed just like this and were seeking for a chance to make an excuse became a bit flustered. Some had their toughness that was fitting as the leader of a country restored thinking that perhaps there was ground for negotiation.

Right after that, they became aware that it was only their misunderstanding.

「And? Whose relative do you guys think you are trying to lay your hands on, huuh?」

A black wind blew. It was an overwhelmingly ominous pressure that made them hallucinate that. They saw the vision of their heart being tightly grasped!

How were they going to pay to settle this?

Nobody was able to answer that “first discussion”.

–

–

–

And then, when the hindrances were gone, how far “Liliana’s aid network” went after that would be a different story.

The excellent secretary who was supporting Liliana from both the shadows and in the sun——Sandra Winchester-san, was actually Heliotrope-san in disguise; furthermore, all of the executive staff who were moving behind the scenes of Heiligh Volunteer Association in various things were actually people with the principal occupation of maid from another world. That too was also another story.

The combat maid group of the demon king reaching even further growth was also another story.

–

AN: Once more, thank you very much for this whole year!

Please take care of me too next year!

By the way, I’ll explain a bit about the various things that came out in this chapter.

- Another world version chess & Oscar’s maid golem

=> It’s a content that came out a bit in the special perk SS of volume 1.

I’m thinking that it will be nice if someday I can correct and revise the SS chapters too and publish them.

- Kuzeri Rail

=> She came out a bit during volume 6 and the first chapter of the Kouki arc in After Story.

The knight order captain who succeeded after Meld. The former imperial guards captain of Liliana.

Why did she become the demon king’s maid? I’m thinking that it will be great if I can write it in around Tortus Travel Journal ② or ③.

In Tortus Travel Journal, they will follow the path Hajime has taken, while at the same time

It might also be the story of where the members of the Fleur Knights make an appearance.

- Venri

=> She made an appearance in the extra story of volume 3. She is Tio’s wet nurse and served the Klarus family. A gentle lady with a strong heart.

However, she is from the dragonman clan so she is also physically strong.

- Nea

=> Made an appearance in volume 7. A friend of the same age as Par-kun——Balthoferd of Certain Death.

Her figure that was fully covered in wounds while yelling 「I WOONN~~!」 in a guts pose had become legendary.

Sooner or later, when all the members of the Fleur Knights have come out in After Story, I will make their introduction list.

The rank 8 and 9 haven’t come out yet, but it’s simply because I haven’t gotten any idea yet, so if anyone has a request 「Show this kind of character!」, then, please.

Perhaps I will make the characters appear in After Story then lol.

Arifureta Chapter 298

Arifureta After III New Year Special Planning Tortus Travel Journal ②

AN: Congratulations to the opening of the New Year!

Please take care of me for this whole year too!

Please enjoy this chapter for a leisurely time in the New Year~

※There was update on 30th and 31st too. Those who haven't read them please be careful.

The "World Door" that connected Earth and Tortus.

Hajime who somehow settled down the chaos that was produced on the top of the tower that was built adjacent to the palace finally led everyone down the tower.

Cheers arose inside the lift that was moving using magic power. The excitement of the fellow parents heightened from the aftertaste, and they talked to each other. Hajime gave a glance at them while opening the door that was connected to the palace.

Then, right after that,

「Hajime-san!」

Pata pata pata The sound of footsteps and the voice calling Hajime's name with overflowing joy resounded.

「Lily. That's quic――oops」

Hajime was going to comment on how fast she had come to receive them, but before he could finish, Liliana leaped into his chest, so his words were stopped.

Hajime lightly directed away from the impact and received her *pofuh* on his chest. There, Liliana showed him a wide smile. She was already at a state where she saw nothing else except Hajime. Her atmosphere felt like there were hearts floating up buoyantly.

「……Nn. The person who forthrightly ignored us and charged at Hajime right now is the princess of this Heiligh Kingdom, Liliana S B Heiligh-san.」 (TN: So far I also used Hairihi as the name of the kingdom, now I decided to change it into something cooler sounding.)

Yue, who seemed intent on continuing to be the tour guide Yue, gave an introduction while her index finger pressed on Liliana's cheek and ground it.

「Fuwa!? Everyone, all together! Please excuse my rudeness.」

Liliana kept up the appearance as a lady despite it already being too late. Her cheeks were blushing while she gracefully separated herself from Hajime. Then she gave a greeting with a lovely courtesy.

「Lily-chan! Long time no see! You're healthy?」

「Hahaha, you're still a princess as ever.」

「Sumire-okaasama, Shuu-otousama. It has been a while. Thank you very much for welcoming me at that time.」

Actually, Liliana had already met Sumire and Shuu.

As expected, although she was one of the wive~s, it would be too pitiful for Liliana if she wasn't even introduced to Sumire and Shuu face to face until they went to Tortus someday. So although it was only for a short time, Hajime brought Liliana to Earth instead.

At that time, the entrance of a real princess from another world; furthermore, that princess being a wife to their son caused Sumire and Shuu's excitement to rise up drastically. They prepared a warm welcome using every method available for Liliana.

Liliana was even more nervous about giving a greeting to Hajime's parents than when she was doing governmental affairs, but the two's unexpected reception caused her to be moved to tears spontaneously.

Liliana's appearance in a dress, the refinement that could be felt from her even without her doing anything, and then the tiara that was snugly placed on her head and so on, it was obvious just from a glance that she was a princess. Tomoichi and co, the parent~s who saw a princess of another world for the first time were staring with emotional gazes.

No, it was only Tomoichi, who while feeling emotional, was also sending glances at Hajime that seemed to want to say 「This bastard. So there is still more girls he had laid his hands on-」.

Hajime smiled wryly while saying.

「……Tomoichi-san. I believe I have mentioned Lily before.」

「Really, sorry, Hajime-kun. When I heard that you have another woman other than my angel, my heart was completely dyed by killing intent then.」

And so, he didn't hear most of the story. Or rather, he immediately assaulted Hajime at that time. Right after that, he ate a backdrop from his angel, and his consciousness was blown away.

Tomoichi-san mumbled about such fault-finding while attempting to calm his heart.

Kaoruko left her husband alone, who was like that, and walked toward Liliana.

「So you are Lily-chan, no, Liliana-sama. I often heard about you from my daughter. She said that you racked your brains very much for them all in the middle of that terrible situation. Please let me express my gratitude.」

Kaoruko said that and bowed her head. Tomoichi hurriedly stood by her side and lowered his head, and then everyone in the Yaegashi family, and also Akiko, altogether lowered their heads saying 「Thank you for what you had done for our children」.

Liliana opened her mouth in a panic.

「Such a thing, please lift your head, all of you. We were the ones who involved them in our world's circumstances. It's only natural for me to do everything that I could. Besides, what someone like me had done were only trivial things compared to the things that Kaori and everyone else had done for us.」

Liliana gently put her hand on Kaoruko’s shoulder and made her lift her face. She also prompted the others to lift their heads too. Liliana smiled sweetly with a warm gaze.

「Everyone’s daughter is this country’s……no, this world’s savior. I should be the one who says thanks — my heartfelt gratitude for having raised these wonderful people. I express my thanks as the representative of this world’s people.」

‘In addition, being able to become friends with everyone, and being able to fight together with them, those are things that I will be proud of for my lifetime.’ Liliana bowed her head deeply and displayed her gratitude to the parents.

Kaoruko and Tomoichi, Shuuzou and Koichi and Kirino, and then Akiko too, they were staring at Liliana wordlessly. Even Sumire and Shuu who were already given the same words from her were staring at Liliana with expressions that were at a loss for words.

Every single one of them felt the surge of indescribable emotions in the back of their heart. It was close to deep emotion, and perhaps it was delight; however, it was a surge of feelings that was bigger than what could be described with words.

This person said to them that she was proud to be able to meet their children, that she was grateful that they had raised their children into such people.

As a parent, there was no greater gift than this.

When glancing to the side, Kaori, Shizuku, and Aiko were blushing slightly with embarrassment while their gazes were averted to other directions.

Tomoichi and the others smiled slightly at their children’s state, and then they lowered their heads even deeper than before toward the princess of another world who gifted them with such lovely words.

「We too, thank you.」

They said.

‘I see. So this is a real princess.’ The parent~s were in acceptance. Amidst that, Liliana opened her mouth with a bright voice to change the atmosphere slightly.

「And, for everyone to visit here……」

「Yeah, just as Lily guessed, it’s for sightseeing. Tou-san and Kaa-san threw a tantrum asking for that.」

Hajime shrugged his shoulders and replied like that. Liliana chuckled hearing that. And then, 「If it’s something like that」 she puffed up her chest with overflowing motivation.

「Then, I will have to give hospitality to the best of my ability. Hajime-san, what kind of plan do you have?」

「We haven’t really decided anything. If we are traveling normally, then no matter how much time we have available it won’t be enough, so I’m thinking of deciding a base and then using the gate to guide them to every place.」

「If that is the case, then please, stay in this palace by all means.」

「Yeah, I was thinking to ask you that though……」

「Yes, please leave it to me.」

It seemed that it would be Liliana herself who would receive them, so Hajime’s expression turned a bit worried.

After all, Liliana was super busy. She was the one who practically managed this country. It wasn’t so clear without focusing closely, but there was a faint shadow visible under her eyes. It was skillfully hidden using cosmetics, but she should be so tired that some sign had appeared on her face.

「Are you all right? You are being pressed with work, right? We can take care of ourselves, you know?」

「No no, please don’t mind it. After all, the work won’t end at all whether I rest for a bit or don’t rest at all!」

「……」

How could she say 「The work won’t end!」 with such a bright voice?

The occupation “princess” seemed to be a really black type of occupation. Sadness was pooling inside everyone’s eyes.

「Now now everyone. First, please let me introduce my mother and little brother. Okaa-sama earnestly wishes to meet with Sumire-okaasama and Shuu-otousama. Not just to Okaa-sama, but please allow me to introduce the family of the heroes to other people too by all means!」

Liliana led them in high spirits. Hajime and co looked at each other with a bit of a wry smile seeing her like that, but even so, they obediently followed her.

Although the capital was in the middle of reconstruction, because the palace was a building that would become the country’s symbol, and because it was the symbol of the reborn kingdom that surpassed the hedge of race in the new

world, its construction was done the fastest with the most effort poured into it.

Because of that, although there was no air of history that could be felt in it compared to the previous palace, it still had an impressiveness that would move the emotion. Especially for Japanese people who in the first place had never seen the inside of a western-type palace.

Like Tomoichi, with his occupation as an architect his gaze was moving around busily with deep interest. His wife and daughter chuckled and smiled at him.

「Hmm, just how many hidden routes and mechanisms are here……my blood is seething.」

Grandpa
「Ojii-chan……I wish you would focus a bit more to other aspects though.」

Shuuzou's gaze was also busily moving around, but it seemed he wasn't observing the building's construction but that it was his heart of adventure that wished to discover any hidden route. Looking at them, Koichi and Kirino were also concentrating on the feeling of 「I will be the one who finds out the most!」.

They completely ignored Shizuku's exasperated face.

Midway through, they passed by several servants, civil officials, and military officers. Seeing their peculiar conduct, Sumire and Shuu turned a grinning expression toward their son.

「Fufu, it's itchy somehow, isn't it?」

「Ahaha, after seeing that kind of conduct from close by, you really are the demon king-sama huh?」

「……It’s not like that title is self-proclaimed, you know?」

Each time they passed someone, those people would naturally move aside to both sides of the corridor and lower their head. After all, among them was Liliana of the royal family.

But, everyone noticed it. The people’s gazes weren’t directed at Liliana, but mainly at Hajime.

The moment they saw Hajime, their bodies would turn stiff without exception. It was apparent that their stiffness wasn’t caused by fear, but from being filled with awe.

After all, just from them bowing deeply it didn’t look like they were being forced at all. Every single one of them thought from their heart that they should do so; it was clear just from seeing them. A reverent atmosphere was overflowing from their whole body.

In addition, mainly among the maids, the heat residing inside the females’ eyes was amazing. Although they didn’t make any obvious moves of flattery, their extraordinary emotions were transparent.

Indeed, if such an attitude and eyes were directed toward their son, as parents, it surely couldn’t be helped that they would be writhing a bit from pride, and also itchiness.

Hajime didn’t pay any mind at all to the attitude of the palace’s people, but as expected, he was bothered by the gazes and expressions from his parents and the other parents, so he averted his gaze with a really complicated look.

Then, when they arrived at a crossroad, Hajime’s averted gaze caught the sight of a maid coming from the corridor

ahead.

Different from other people, she didn’t stop and lower her head or moved aside toward the wall, but approached nearby in a straight line.

「Liliana-sama.」

「Hellina!」

The woman with long dark-brown hair swaying behind her and smooth footsteps approaching them was Liliana’s personal maid Hellina. She was quite tall for a woman with a straight posture, and her smiling expression was also filled with refinement. As expected from someone who was picked as the princess’s personal attendant, she was a beautiful woman who would make anyone accept it.

The moment that Hellina turned her gaze to the group of Hajime and co, she bowed with a beautiful motion that would also make anyone get taken aback and continued her words.

「Liliana-sama. Luluaria-sama wishes to receive a bit of time for preparing right now. If you are going to introduce everyone, then perhaps you should first go to where Randell-sama is.」

「Eh? Ah, you’re right.」

Thinking carefully, something like a sudden visit without any contact beforehand shouldn’t be done when the other party was a queen of a country.

Luluaria was a woman with a tolerant and gentle disposition, but as expected, it would be troubling for her to suddenly meet the family of the heroes who were their benefactors

without any preparation whatsoever. As a queen, it was necessary for her to prepare the appropriate appearance. To say nothing of how this would be their first meeting, it would be even more important.

Noticing that, Liliana's cheeks blushed when thinking of how she was slightly too high spirited, and she cast her eyes downward.

「Hellina, about contacting Okaa-sama……looking at you it seems you have already done it, haven't you?」

「Yes. Right away, after the bell of the gate opening rang.」

Hellina understood that Liliana would immediately rush away without giving attention to anything else. The reason she didn't come together with Liliana despite being her personal attendant was for the sake of arranging all the preparations beforehand.

Truly an excellent maid.

The entrance of a genuine maid (the meaning here was in a broader sense) of another world, and what's more a maid that looked to be in a class of her own, caused Sumire and Shuu's eyes to blaze fiercely. Their excitement kept rising up without stopping.

But then, Liliana suddenly showed a questioning face.

「Hm? I'm thankful that you got in touch with Okaa-sama, but……Hellina, you knew about the visit of Sumire-okaasama and everyone else?」

Hajime and co had met with Luluaria several times, so if it was with someone among them, Luluaria wouldn't prepare

her appearance meticulously every single time. They had built such a lighthearted relationship between them.

For Hellina to intentionally get in touch with Luluaria meant that right after the “bell of gate opening” rang, she was aware that Hajime and co arrived with their family in tow.

How? It was only natural to feel doubtful about that.

The answer to that was immediately shown from the words of the sweetly smiling Hellina after that.

「Hajime-sama. As you commanded, I have arranged for the rooms, lunch, and so forth. Where will you all have your lunch?」

「For now, it will be after we look around the capital in general. We haven’t decided the specifics yet.」

「Understood. Then, please contact me again at that time. Also――」

「Wa-wa-wa-waaai~~~-t a second!」

Liliana-san intercepted.

She cut in with a pose as though she was doing Kabaddi between the two who were conversing like they understood each other as though it was only natural.

「What do you mean by command? Since when?」

「I had received an artifact for communication from Hajime-sama, so right after the gate opened, I took action following the command that I was given. That’s all.」

「Just now I told you that we could take care of ourselves, right?」

‘What are you doubting?’ Hajime and Hellina both tilted their heads harmoniously.

「Artifact for communication? Wait, don’t tell me it’s the broach Hellina is wearing!? It has a crimson jewel attached and looks like it’s something really expensive, so perhaps spring has also come for Hellina!? Was what I thought, but don’t tell me that’s an artifact!? What’s more, it’s Hajime-san’s!? I didn’t receive anything like that, you know!?」

Hellina-san smiled sweetly to the shaken princess.

「Hajime-sama. About the aforementioned matter, my deepest apologies. I’ve never thought that your arrival would be this fast, the writing of the list is still not finished yet.」

「Don’t worry about it. This is also an unexpected trip for me, after all.」

「Much obliged. For the moment, 80 percent of it is finished. I brought that part with me. Will you look at it?」

「80 percent? That’s fast……. Fine then, I’ll take a look at it at night.」

「Then, here it is.」

Beside the ignored Liliana, the two had a transfer of some kind of document. After Hajime briefly ran his gaze on the document, a faint smile emerged on his mouth.

「You did well compiling this. This quality in this short time……. Good work.」

「I’m honored.」

Again she was bowing her head beautifully, the exclusive lady attendant of the princess Liliana——Hellina-san.

「E, eeh? Hellina? Hellina is my attendant, right? That's right, isn't it?」

「? But of course, Liliana-sama.」

It was very suspicious.

Everyone there thought so. Doubtful expressions and fixed stares were sent to Hajime from the wive~s, and then a grinning face from Sumire and Shuu, a sharp gaze from Tomoichi, and, for some reason, an admiring gaze from the other parents.

「Goshujin-sama, if thou wish to hath a beautiful woman to abide by thee so much, then look, the best woman for it is here, thou see? Give me commands to thy heart's content without reservation! Now, now!」

The greedy, disappointing dragon who couldn't hold herself back approached with rough breathing.

「……Hajime, as I thought, you like maids? Should I wear a maid uniform?」

「Papa, do you like maid-san nano? Then, Myuu too will wear a maid uniform nano!」

「My my, Hajime-san too is a man, isn't he? Ufufu.」

「Uu, I have been worried about the relationship of Hajime-kun with the maids in the palace since before, but……to think he is already progressing this far. A failure!」(Kaori)

「Hajime, that, it’s not a strange relationship, is it? It’s not, right?」(Shizuku)

「La, laying your hand on the maids is no good! Hajime-kun! Do you understand!?」(Aiko)

The questioning wive~s.

Hajime sighed as though to say ‘just what are you all saying?’ while storing the document into the Treasure Warehouse. And then, he turned toward Hellina who was waiting with a graceful air about her without being perturbed by the commotion, and then his hand quietly gestured to the side.

It seemed to be a signal that said “Leave”. Hellina quietly bowed her head, then quietly left.

「Ha, Hajime-san feels more like her master than me……」

It went without saying that Liliana felt down after that.

–

–

–

While Hajime was receiving really complicated looks from the wive~s and the parent~s, the group finally arrived at the room of Liliana’s little brother and the next king Randell.

The throne was still empty because Randell’s enthronement would be matched with the timing of the festival of the reconstruction completion. The thinking was that it would be a really good omen for the new king to be enthroned at the rebirth of the kingdom.

And so, currently, Randell was spending every day immersing himself in studying for his enthronement.

Even now, he was receiving a lecture from his instructor in his room.

「Randell. It’s me. Do you have time right now?」

When Liliana knocked on the door and asked, a dubious-sounding voice replied back from inside the room.

Elder sister
「Ane-ue? Of course I don’t mind, but……」

Randell was suspicious because even though the “bell of gate opening” had rung out, and yet Liliana came to his place not so long after that. Because when that bell rang, that “hateful son of a bitch” was undoubtedly here.

That “son of a bitch”, basically, if he didn’t have any business with him then he wouldn’t come to visit Randell by his own initiative. Most of the time, it would be Randell who would go to where he was to snarl and curse at him.

And so, surely, Randell thought that this was unusual. Such a feeling was oozing from his voice.

In place of Randell, the old instructor who served as his private tutor opened the door.

And then Hajime’s group came into view. The old instructor’s eyes opened wide, and Randell who was sitting at the back raised a shocked voice 「Bya!?」 and his body leapt up.

「Randell, and then Sagesse-sensei too. Forgive me for disturbing you in the middle of the lesson. The families of Hajime-san and everyone are coming to play, so I’m thinking about introducing them.」

「Wha-, the parents of the bastard!?」

「Truly! Then I have to give my greetings by all means.」

Sagesse-sensei showed pure surprise and delight, but Randell was obviously showing vigilance other than surprise. It seemed that his agitation was great because the way he called Hajime inside his heart came out from his mouth carelessly.

Hajime and co entered inside Randell's study room in groups.

There was nothing particular inside the room, but even so, Sumire and co ran their gaze inside the room curiously. And then, Randell's state that was like a completely vigilant cat, for some reason, caused interested attention to gather on him.

Perhaps because he was in the middle of studying, Randell's outfit was casual and simple. He didn't look formal at all, so he only looked like a cheeky rascal. His look was that of a pretty boy, just as expected from Liliana's little brother, as he gave off a striking impression.

Yue came forward like usual.

「……Everyone, the one you see here is the next king of this country, the little brother of Liliana, Randell-kun. He was head-over-heels with Kaori for a period of time, but the queen of insensitivity, Kaori, unhesitatingly ignored him, and in the end, without any awareness that she stabbed him messily with blades of words, reduced his first love into misery.」

「Yue!?」

While Kaori quickly turned toward Yue and raised her voice, Randell-kun who got various things about himself exposed was stabbed by Yue’s blades of words. His hands pressed his chest, and he groaned 「guhah」 while falling on all fours.

Shizuku and the others who knew about the time that Yue mentioned smiled wryly, but the mothers went 「My!」 with their eyes sparkling from hearing the prince’s first love story.

「Geez-, Yue, don’t say strange things! That’s impolite toward his highness Randell! Even though he was only looking up to me and Shizuku-chan who are close to Lily. Even I wouldn’t do anything terrible like ignoring him or anything! I thought of him like a cute little brother who is a bit naughty!」

「Kufuuh」

「Your highneeees! Get a hold of yourself! It’s something that is over already, isn’t iiit!?」

A further blow came this late from Kaori, who still hadn’t noticed Randell’s feelings yet.

Everyone there thought, in various senses, it was you, Kaori, who was being rude.

「Hmmm. Should I be happy that a prince of a country fell in love with my daughter……. Or else, should I feel indignation that a pest will appear no matter where it is……」

「Dear. Before that, we have to apologize to the prince first. If the situation was always like that while he was taking care of everyone in this world here……it’s just too much for the prince.」

The Shirasaki married couple. Although it was from a different angle, they were also made to worry about their

daughter.

「Mu, Kaori's parents……. There is no need for concern.」

Prince Randell. Even though he was trembling like a baby deer that only just got born, he stood up by his own strength!

「Let me introduce myself once more. I am a man who won't look back to the past! Randell S B Heiligh! The next king of this Heiligh Kingdom!」

「No, your highness. I always taught you to please properly reflect on your past.」

Prince Randell threw out his chest proudly with a triumphant look. Something like the accurate tsukkomi of Instructor Sagesse didn't mean anything for him.

Anyway, Sumire and co read the mood and gave an applause 「Oo~」.

The old instructor Sagesse also introduced himself, and after that, Sumire and co also introduced themselves. When the introductions were over, Sumire raised her hand 「Question!」 energetically asking for permission to ask something.

Prince Randell's vigilance was heightened. Somehow, it looked like his silky blonde hair was standing on end.

「A, a question to me? Bri, bring it on. I won't run away! Come at me!」

「Kufuu! Prince Randell is adorable――cough. Honorable prince! What do you think of my son?」

It seemed that the voice of heart that leaked out in the first half was small and didn’t reach Randell. Randell didn’t look particularly offended, and his expression became really complicated after hearing the question in the latter half.

「The basta――cough. Na, Nagumo, do-do-dono-, what do I think about him, is it……」

‘He doesn’t want to call him by his name that much……?’ While everyone was thinking that, Randell was oddly sweating while desperately searching for words.

And then, his gaze glanced at the Hajime in question――

「Myu?」

「Myu, Myuu! So you also came……」

It seemed that the shock and agitation from the arrival of Hajime and Kaori’s parents caused him not to notice Myuu who was behind Hajime. The prince’s cheeks were dyed red, for some reason, after seeing Myuu who showed her face suddenly from behind Hajime.

「Randell~, long time no see nano~」

「Yo, you are still, talking like that toward meee~. I am the next king, you know!?」

Myuu waved her hand repeatedly with a friendly smile. In response, Prince Randell was surprised again, for some reason. His gaze darted around while he spoke frankly.

Myuu tilted her head cutely and asked.

「It’s no good, nano?」

「Eh!? I, it’s not no good, but……」

「Then it’s fine nano.」

「Bu, buuut, like it’s too candid, or it cannot be shown in front of other people……in the first place, I am the older one!」

It was common knowledge that Myuu was the beloved daughter of the demon king, so hiding behind his position could be said to be strange. And so, by making the fact that he was older by four years was a good excuse, and he used it as a reason and began to mumble, but……

「But, Lily-oneechan told Myuu, “Myuu-chan is more adult than Randell mentally, aren’t you”, you see nano.」

「Ane-ueee!?」

Liliana-san averted her gaze to the side.

The other people somehow guessed what kind of feelings Randel harbored toward Myuu from his attitude, so the mothers got sparkly eyes once more from the premonition of the prince’s love, but other people were making pitying expressions that said 「Again, really, what hardship he receives」.

Since just now, Myuu was staring at Randell with a head tilted in puzzlement ‘Just what do you want to say?’. Randell’s calm was gradually disappearing against such Myuu. *Fidget fidget, fidget fidget*.

Perhaps unable to look on quietly, this time Kaoruko who loved shoujo manga and love stories asked a question with the intention of giving timely help to Randell.

「Say Myuu-chan. Is Myuu-chan close with his highness Randell?」

「Yep. We are friends nano!」

「Fri, friend……I’m a friend……」

Randell looked happy, or unsatisfied……. *Fidget fidget, fidget fidget*.

「I seee, you two are friends. Your highness Randell, he looks kind, and his age is also close to Myuu-chan.」

‘As expected from Kaori’s mother! Are you a goddess!?’ Randell’s gaze seemed to want to say that.

As though in agreement, Myuu grinned cheerfully while nodding. ‘Good. My time has come!’ His expression also seemed to want to say that too.

Kaoruko who still only knew about Myuu from her daughter’s hearsay knew that Myuu was a child who loved her papa.

But she didn’t know as far as the *depth of that love*. She thought that it was like 「When I’m older, I’ll become papa’s wife~」 that a little child would often say. She was thinking with common sense.

And so, imagining the love between a little girl in the city with a young prince, she spoke with sparkling eyes.

「I seee. Ufufu, could it be, perhaps there will be a future where Myuu-chan becomes a queen? That’s if you get even closer with his highness Randell, right?」

Randell’s cheeks became bright red. He was about to say 「Kaoruko-dono! Mo, more than that is――」, but……

Myuu, who seemed to guess the meaning of Kaoruko’s words, spoke as though to pour cold water on it.

「There ain’t such a future nano.」

「Eh?」

「Eh?」

Kaoruko and Prince Randell, their eyes turned into dots together. Hajime and co covered their eyes as though to say 「Oh dear~」 while the parents other than Sumire and Shuu gazed in wonderment.

That was understandable.

After all, Myuu, who was always full of energy with a wide smile on her face, was now making a terribly serious face.

Kaoruko added on to her words even while feeling shaken.

「Bu, but you are close with his highness Randell――」

Kaori tried to stop with 「O, Okaa-san, let’s stop there」, but it was already too late. The blades of words were fired once more.

「Myuu will marry papa.」

「You really like your papa, don’t you? But, his highness Randell is also――」

「It’s impossible.」

The serious-faced Myuu. The serious heart that was conveyed to everyone whether they wanted it or not.

And then the resounding scream of a heart.

「GOD DAMN IT ALLLLLLLLLL-」

「Your highneeess! Don’t do anything rash!」

Randell-kun fell on all fours and said 「Again! It’s you agaiiiinn! I realized it a bit though!」 while hitting the floor repeatedly.

A really complicated atmosphere drifted inside the room.

Perhaps feeling responsible for that, Kaoruko was all flustered.

Here there was one thing. It was a well-known fact of how Kaori had natural airheaded characteristics inside her. It was her forte to drop explosive words without any awareness, and she was also a maiden who just charged ahead.

Now then, there was one question. Who in the world did she get those from?

The answer was simple.

In trying to help the completely dejected prince somehow, Kaori’s mama merciless stepped forward!

「Myuu-chan. Don’t you think that his highness Randell is a cool boy? Perhaps――」

Kaoruko desperately tried to encourage Randell.

「Cool?」

Myuu bluntly asked back. Her face was absurdly puzzled!

Crack, there was a sound like a crack entering a glass. The sound came from around Randell’s chest.

Myuu glanced at the wincing Kaoruko, then her gaze turned toward Hajime, and after that, her gaze returned to Randell.

「Cool?」

Myuu tilted her head and spoke once more.

Inside Myuu, the definition of a “cool person” had been fixed along with the person for it. When she used that as the standard, the prince crumbling down before her gaze was……it seemed her evaluation became something like 「Somehow, he looks unreliable. Just what is cool from him?」.

A painful silence descended.

Kaoruko was going ‘Awawah’ while turning a gaze that seemed to say 「Kaori, what to do? Okaa-san has really done it now」 toward her daughter. Certainly, it seemed she had totally killed the prince’s heart.

Randell stood up while keeping his gaze downward.

And then, while everyone was watching over him, he began walking with brisk steps to the door where he suddenly stood still. He opened his mouth without looking back.

「Sumire-dono, about your question before this……」

「Eh? Ah, yes.」

Sumire’s gaze was unusually swimming around. ‘I cannot find any words to say to this young prince! I cannot endure being here!’ Her state was like that.

While everyone was focusing on Randell with the same state, the young prince glared rigidly at Hajime across his shoulder.

「OBVIOUSLY, I HATE HIIIMMMMMMMMMMMMM-!!!」

‘Reach to the heavens!’ A yell that seemed like it was let out with such intention resounded inside the room. And then he ran out of the room.

Behind him, Instructor Sagesse suddenly returned to his senses with a ‘hah’ and chased behind while yelling 「YOUR HIGHNEESSSSS-! WE ARE STILL IN THE MIDDLE OF A LESSON YOU KNOOOOWWW-」. With amazing agility. Like *shutatatatatata-*.

An odd atmosphere was drifting inside the room as expected. The color of Kaoruko’s face was red from feeling responsible.

But, it seemed Randell too had grown.

After a while, from the other side of the corridor, 「But, not yet! It’s still not over yet! I swear, I’ll win without fail next time! I’ll beat up that bastard for sureeeeeeee-」 such a yell could be heard.

It seemed that his fighting spirit hadn’t been broken yet.

「In a sense, your little brother is an interesting guy huh.」

「Haa, that child, geez. The way he falls in love, or something……」

Hajime grinned in amusement hearing Randell’s war proclamation (?). Beside him, Liliana thought of her little brother’s suffering disposition or nature. She was massaging her head as though she got a headache.

In the end, Hajime and others left the study room that was left alone by its owner, and they headed to the next place.

Arifureta Chapter 299

Arifureta After III Tortus Travel Journal ③

After Randell burned his fighting spirit toward his second springtime of life while running away to somewhere, Liliana showed around the group inside the palace.

Luluaria, who was making preparations in a great hurry, would also be finished around this time, so they didn’t go as far as the capital.

Hearing that the knights were doing some morning training at this time, right now they were heading to the training grounds especially because of the request from Shuuzou and Koichi knowing that they would be able to see real knights of another world.

「The army of the kingdom, in general, is classified into the soldier division, knight division, and magician division. Among the knight division, there are even more classifications into kingdom knight order and imperial guard knight order. Right now, it’s the kingdom knight order that is practicing in the training ground.」

Liliana was talking about such things while on the way. The tour guide Yue was resting. The reason was that she had no knowledge at all about something like the organization of the kingdom’s army. She had zero interest in it.

The parent~s were listening to the story with deep interest while going ‘I see I see’. Their digital cameras were already standing by. They were fully motivated to take photos together with the knights.

Sumire was asking Liliana with a gaze that was strangely filled with expectation.

「Lily-chan, are there female knights too ? Or perhaps, it’s a completely male occupation as expected?」

「Of course, there are also a lot of female knights. Or rather, the current knight order’s captain is a woman.」

「Myy-! Is that so!」

「Hou, a female knight order captain huh……hmm」

Sumire’s eyes were shining extraordinarily with expectation. After her, Shuu was also making an expression that was excessively filled with expectation.

Hajime was turning a ve~ry exasperated gaze at his parents who were like that. He was their son, so he understood what they were thinking. They must be wanting to make a female knight say 「Kuh, just kill me!」 anyway.

Kirino was opening her mouth with a voice that was filled with expectation but from a different point of view.

「As the captain, her strength must be number one in this country too, right? Amazing. ……I wish to have a bout with her by all means.」

「Okaa-san. Restrain yourself, okay? If not, I’ll cut you down, you know?」

Shizuku was directing a ve~ry exasperated gaze at her mother who served poison when Hajime came to play at their house (at least, it was nonlethal) or trapped him with a lot of playfulness. She understood what she was thinking because she was her daughter.

Hearing Kirino’s words, Liliana made a bit of a wry smile.

「The person herself is frustrated that her strength still hasn’t left the immature level though. In the first place, she was the head of my exclusive royal guards, so her strength is more than enough, but……her predecessor might be just too great.」

「Hou, so the predecessor is that strong? I wish to meet that person too by all means.」

Shuuzou spoke his hope in the same line as Kirino. But upon hearing that, the expression of Hajime and everyone immediately clouded.

Especially Liliana and Kaori, and then Shizuku and Aiko. Their expressions looked sad, lonely, or perhaps nostalgic……many emotions were contained complicatedly within their expressions that couldn’t be expressed by a few words.

Starting from Shuuzou, the parents who didn’t know about the circumstances made a dubious face. But, they immediately guessed it somehow.

In order to change the atmosphere that became slightly tense, Hajime opened his mouth while getting a slightly distant look.

「Meld Logins. The previous captain of the kingdom knight order. The man who worried himself sick almost as much as

Lily, no, in a sense it was even more than Lily. He was thinking of us students who were summoned here. In terms of pure sword skill, until the very end even Amanogawa, whose spec as a hero was cheat level, wasn’t a match for him. He was a man who was authentically the kingdom’s strongest.

He was a splendid man without compare whether in spirit, personality, or strength.

Those words of praise were without exaggeration.

Even Sumire and Shuu were holding their breath in surprise at Hajime’s rare words and attitude.

Kaori and Shizuku continued after him while immersing themselves in memory.

For us, he was a person who was like a big brother whose age was slightly separated from us. He was reliable, and when he was at our side, we could feel really assured.

For us who didn’t know left from right after getting summoned here, he was our heart’s support. Not just Kouki, I too am wondering whether I can match him in pure sword skill even now……. I wanted him to see, just how strong we have become.

Aiko looked up to the ceiling while speaking with a small smile tugged on her lips.

I was a bit jealous toward that person. It was like all the students were relying on Meld-san rather than someone like me.

And then, Liliana added more words while looking straight forward.

「He was without a doubt, this country's pillar. Unfortunately, he lost his life in the middle of the terrifying scheme that assaulted this kingdom……Even now, there are a lot of people who idolized him; the man called Meld Logins. He is the one who is "a knight among knights", "the symbol of the kingdom knight" they said. Even Kuzeri, who is the present knight captain, idolized him very much……」

She compared her current self with Meld because she knew about how large he was.

Shuuzou spoke his request once more with a quiet expression.

「If it won't be a problem, I wish to be allowed to offer a prayer in front of his grave by all means……」

Looking closer, the other parents also asked for the same thing if it was for the person who had done that much for their children.

Liliana's expression became a bit troubled.

「There is a hero memorial monument. But previously, the monument was in the style of being engraved directly onto the rock surface of the god mountain, but it was lost because the mountain was destroyed like that. So right now a new hero memorial monument is in the middle of construction at the center of the capital. The name of Meld Logins has been inscribed there at the very least. Will everyone be fine with that?」

「Mu? Is there no custom of a cemetery or erecting individual gravestones in this world?」

「There is. Rather, that is the norm. In fact, the cemetery that got dragged into the capital's destruction has been repaired

to a certain degree. We cannot neglect it after all……」

Shuuzou and everyone's expression turned dubious once more after hearing Liliana explaining with a hesitant tone.

They could guess that Liliana surely attended to the maintenance of the cemetery at a really early stage in consideration for the emotions of the living and their feeling that was grieving for the dead.

And yet, why was she unable to guide them to the graveyard of the people who sacrificed themselves for the country……

Shuuzou and everyone tilted their head in puzzlement. The one who gave them the answer was Hajime, the cause of it.

「As expected, there is still not enough leeway for them to repair the graveyard that has no bodies in it while putting off the reconstruction of the capital. When the reconstruction of the capital has progressed to a certain degree, the gravestones for those people should be next in line.」

「No bodies? That's……I see, so their bodies still haven't been found. The removal of the rubble is still――」

「No, it's because I turned their bodies into mincemeat with the gatling railgun.」

「「「「「「「「……」」」」」」」」

A painful silence descended. Even Sumire and Shuu gulped their saliva 「Nnguh」 hearing that.

The hearts of the parents were as one.

That was, 「Just now, you praised him as a great man, right!? What do you mean you turned such a person into mincemeat!?」.

The parents were staring hard at Hajime after hearing the shocking truth that was spoken casually.

Hajime went 「Aa~」. He was at a loss for words while speaking out the insufficient words――the shocking truth part II.

「Including Meld, a lot of the kingdom's knights and soldiers were already dead and had turned into manipulated puppets. The culprit was a girl from our class. Ah, Meld was killed by god's apostle though. Then, they were tenacious because they were already dead, so turning them into mincemeat was the quickest and surest way. After all, that time was when Shizuku and others were attacked and fell into a pinch. So, well, the biggest reason was that Kaori got killed and I snapped though.」

「Wait a secooondd!? What do you mean that my angel got killed!?」

Tomoichi-san's eyes opened wide.

It was already shocking enough that a girl classmate killed a lot of soldiers and turned them into puppets, but getting told that 「Your daughter died once」 was a shock that Tomoichi couldn't overlook. Of course, Kaoruko was also losing her self-control saying 「I, I've never heard of that! Kaori!」.

Kaori's gaze was darting around.

「Eeerr. I didn't say it because I thought that you two would just worry, but actually, my heart got stabbed, like 'pusu-'」

The light Kaori-san who apologized 「Sorry I didn't mention it」 with an embarrassed laugh 'tehe-'. Kaoruko staggered on her feet before Sumire supported her.

Tomoichi's gaze was directed to Hajime, questioning him just what happened.

Hajime nodded deeply as though to say 'That's exactly how I feel'.

「Please rest assured, Tomoichi-san. Whether it's the god's apostle or the guy who killed Kaori, I had properly murdered them.」

「Thank you very much! But, that's not what I want to ask right now!」

It was about how his beloved daughter who had grown angel wings after missing for a long period of time before returning home. 'Don't tell me; she became an angel because she had ascended to heaven once!? Any side effects!? Will she go back to heaven!?' Tomoichi demanded an explanation while getting half-panicked.

「Ca, calm down Otou-san! Okaa-san too, hang in there! I'm all right! See, it was Hajime-kun and the others; they revived me back to life. Look, it was soul magic that I had shown before. Using that you see. Certainly, I got only my soul transferred into the body of the god's apostle, but right now I'm living inside my authentic body, that's why, okay?」

「Bu, but there is actually angel wings growing……」

「That's from metamorphosis magic. I got Yue to cooperate to make it so that I can turn into an apostle even in my original body, that's all.」

「I, I see……」

After Shizuku and the others also explained the details of the situation of that time, the shock from the incident “Hajime-san turning someone he respected into mincemeat” somehow got settled down too.

Sumire and others looked at each other’s faces, and their expressions were clouded from realizing anew that the situation was just that terrible at that time.

「However, Hajime-kun. From Shizuku’s story, at that time, that devil race army were invading in a great number, right? It’s amazing that this kingdom was safe while the classmates were in such a situation where even Kaori-chan was in that kind of danger.」

‘I had heard the story to a certain degree, but……’, Koichi groaned while stroking his chin.

After going back to Earth, Shizuku talked about Hajime in order to narrate the heroic tale, so he had learned of the methods that Hajime took. But when the story of a person that actually died got mixed into it, it felt even more real. Because the feeling of realness appeared like that, the story about how Hajime repelled an army of tens of thousands felt even more unreal instead.

「Hmm, then how about thou hath a look?」

Tio took out some kind of small crystal plate from her Treasure Warehouse. Its size was exactly the same as an SD card, but its material was of an ore that was like a water-colored crystal.

This was a medium artifact that recorded the image of the past that was projected using regeneration magic.

Tio set it into her own smartphone. And then, she operated it with a practiced hand movement and projected the image into the empty air like a hologram.

「The image of the training ground at that time wouldst be a bit too stimulating, so I will project it from when Goshujin-sama repelled the devil army.」

The projected scene――the orb that Hajime lifted up shined brilliantly, and then right after that, a pillar of light was fired from the sky. The world was dyed white. The impact shook the atmosphere, and it felt like it could be felt even through the image.

The monsters running about in a panic. The devils who were looking dumbfounded at the approaching light pillar.

Everything got *chudon* altogether.

The devil army was vanishing, as though an eraser was rubbed on a paper that was lightly painted on using a pencil. Everyone’s faces were twitching watching that.

「I, it’s truly a magnificent CG huh?」

Tomoichi-san tried to escape reality.

「It’s live filming though?」

Tio-san thrust the reality forward.

The parent~s leaked out a weird moan 「Uboa」 altogether.

「Hajime! Don’t use it on earth, okay!? Absolutely don’t! Promise Tou-san! You absolutely, absolutely must――」

「Nagumo Shuuu!! That’s why I’m telling you to stop speaking jokingly! It’s seriously not funny at allll!」

As expected from the demon king’s papa-sama. Even after seeing a scene of nearly ten thousand monsters and devils being erased with his own eyes, he was a man who would still run a gag. It wasn’t funny just as Tomoichi said, so he grasped Shuu’s collar and shook him back and forth.

The atmosphere that was stiffening from the continuous shock was slightly loosened by such an act by the two.

Hajime gazed at Shuu and Tomoichi who were quarreling, and he made a slightly grateful smile. It was a faint smile, but it seemed it was enough for Shuu and Tomoichi who glanced aside at him.

Shuu winked slightly while Tomoichi snorted slightly and continued the quarrel.

「……Nn. Hajime.」

「Ou. Tio too, thanks.」

「I think it’s also not something to be intentionally showed though, Goshujin-sama.」

Hajime smiled at Yue who was looking up fixedly at him, and he also thanked Tio who was acting just as he instructed through telepathy.

Yes, Tio showing the recording just now was from Hajime’s instruction. As expected, he avoided showing the actual gruesome scene as it was in consideration of everyone’s degree of mental tolerance, but he wanted to show Sumire and Shuu what he did even if it was just a part of it.

Because even though they were making a ruckus of ‘erlf, erlf’, it should be certain that the two of them wanted to know about the path Hajime had taken.

And then, Shuu’s speech and conduct was an implied message of 「It’s all right」 to his son. It was the expression of his feelings as a parent, that he would accept his son properly, and that he was glad his son would show that to him.

What was unexpected was how Tomoichi too seemed to understand and got onboard with Shuu’s conduct.

That must be the implicit declaration of his intention that said 「I won’t reject you」.

Thinking normally, even if it was in a unique situation of being in the middle of a war, putting aside the monsters, a lot of “people” were killed there.

No one would be able to blame Tomichi even if he showed an even stronger refusal.

Looking closer, it wasn’t just Shuu and Tomoichi, even Kaoriko, everyone in the Yaegashi family, and Akiko didn’t show anything like refusal.

Even if they showed him feelings of terror or refusal, Hajime wouldn’t feel regret or a necessity to change what he had done. He didn’t even intend to. So he planned to silently accept it in case that happened, but……

「Let me say my gratitude once more. Hajime-kun. I’m thankful that you brought Shizuku home. In that kind of situation, without you there, whether our daughter could be here at our side like this right now or not is……」

Following Shuuzou’s words, Koichi and Kirino nodded to Hajime. Kaoruko and Aiko also seemed to feel the same.

「……No. I was only doing what I wanted to do.」

Hajime only answered like that with a few words. Hajime wasn’t an ally of justice. He didn’t fight for any reason like “to save his classmates”.

Everything was for the sake of forcing down all of the unreasonableness this world thrust before him right from the beginning. Merely for the sake of showing that he wouldn’t bend his knee or pull back even for an instant.

And so, being thanked for saving their child felt really uncomfortable for him.

「Hmph. What’s with that face. ……For us, our child is the most important thing. The child of our family, Kaori, you brought her back home for us. That’s why I’m thankful as a parent. Just accept it honestly.」

――Rather than other people’s death, our son’s safety is far more important.

The words that Shuu once said right after Hajime went home were resurrected in his mind. Perhaps parents were that kind of people in the end.

Hajime thought that when he saw Tomoichi’s displeased look that might be him hiding his bashfulness.

When his gaze looked around, whether it was Kaoruko, Akiko, Shuuzou, Koichi, or even Kirino, they all nodded with a gentle expression.

Hajime awkwardly scratched his cheek while he answered 「……Yes」 to Tomoichi’s words.

A quiet, gentle atmosphere filled the area.

Their legs had stopped moving, so they resumed walking without anyone, in particular, prompting it. And then, Liliana opened her mouth to tell everyone that they would soon arrive at the training ground. She was going to speak with a bright voice to change the atmosphere a bit, but it was then,

「Everyone, over there is――」

「UoOOOONEeEEEE-SAMAaAAAAAAAAA-」

A scream that sounded like it was piercing from the bottom of the earth to the heavens resounded! It was a joyful yell that was like a beast overflowing with delight and zeal!

Shizuku leaked out「Ugeh!?」 a voice that was unbecoming for a young lady.

Right after that, someone broke through the corridor's window and sprang out in front of the group. Even though that silhouette was wearing a knight's helmet and armor, it leapt up with unbelievable agility. That figure was exactly that of a Lupi○ Dive!

「Onee-samaaa! I wanted to meet y――」

「Sei-」

A single shout. Shizuku also leapt toward that person who was coming in a Lupi○ Dive. She rotated midair and caught the head of the diving person between both her legs, and then without pause Shizuku twisted her body to knock the person onto the ground.

「Hou! That's the Yaegashi-style Taijutsu (Martial Art) – The Third Secret Technique――Ryuugatsui (Dragon Fang Fall)!」

「Magnificent, Shizuku! Your skill improved again!」

「Oh my. Shizuku, since when!」

Her family was joyful even though this was where they should worry about the opponent who got her head struck on the hard stone floor with an impact that cracked the surface.

「Hah!? Oh no. I unconsciously shot her down……. Wait you, are you okay?」

Shizuku was a bit flustered while addressing that person whose forehead was pushed down on the floor while her butt stopped moving in the position of pointing to the ceiling.

Then,

「But of course-, Onee-sama! To be able to receive affection the first thing right after our reunion, it made me completely wet from the happiness!」

「Ah, right, as expected you're all right. ……I wonder why there is no damage……」

The female knight stood up in a flash as though nothing had happened. Her temple was just turning a bit red, but there was no sign that she was even concussed.

'This is only natural for those who are worthy of becoming a little stepsister of the secret society "Soul Sisters"!' She was making a face that seemed to express that, but if it was an ordinary person their consciousness would undoubtedly be sent to dreamland, or perhaps their forehead would split, and blood would go *spurt~*.

‘Just who in the world is this girl?’ While the parents were puzzled like that, tour guide Yue-san whose turn finally arrived stepped forward.

「……Even this world is infested by the self-proclaimed “stepsisters (Soul Sisters)” who idolized Shizuku as “Onee-sama”. This is one of those vermin. Or rather, she is their representative.」

Just from that explanation, everyone immediately got it saying 「Aa, a stepsister girl huh」. Shizuku was bewildered saying 「You all get it with that explanation!?」.

「Muh, so Hajime-sama is also together like usual. …… Tonight is a night of the new moon I believe.」

「Oi, rotten knight. So what if it’s “a night without moonlight” huh?」

The female knight whistled *pyu~ pyupyu~* while facing aside. Hajime sighed at the stepsisters (assassins) who existed everywhere, watching vigilantly for an opportunity to prey upon his life no matter in which world he was.

Tour guide Yue-san gave a supplementary explanation of the female knight’s career history.

「……She was once a royal guard of Lily, but when there is a man who approaches Shizuku, ‘then it ain’t matter whether they are his majesty the emperor or whoever!’ She would attempt to cause an abnormal status effect using the darkness element magic as though to declare that. Demotion upon demotion was piled up on her; however, she is a valorous person with a nonexistent sign of introspection. By the way, her prank magic is truly excellent.」

It was an unexpected praise from the prodigy of magic Yue. And then, everyone let out a dry laugh at such a personality that was beyond help and her expertise in such a good-for-nothing magic.

A certain kohai (junior)-chan on Earth was also like this, but it was a wonder why Shizuku's self-proclaimed little sisters were all nothing but people with strong peculiarities like this……

「Sheesh Shizuku, there are nothing but funny kids who idolize you, isn't it?」

「Kaori-chan is also a funny kid in a sense after all.」

「Eh!? Koichi-ojiisan!? You thought of me in the same category as that person!? I'm plainly shocked here!」

「Oi Koichi! Don't lump my angel together with this kind of strange creature!」

「Just now, I got a feeling that I was disrespected very naturally by Kaori-sama and an unknown gentleman though……」

The female knight was slowly, gradually approaching Shizuku even while saying such a thing. 'It ain't matter who is watching! I will dive into Onee-sama's chest no matter what!' Such a desire wasn't hidden at all.

Naturally, Shizuku was also slowly backing away, trying to hide behind Hajime.

'Kuh, as expected there is no other choice but to bring carnage here huh', thinking that, the female knight glared at Hajime while entering the battle preparation. She was going to activate a darkness element magic to make it so

that a lot of flies would fly annoyingly around the eyes, but it was then,

「YOUUUUUUUUUUU-, WHAT ARE YOU DOING THEREEEEEE-!!」

「Gee!? Captain!?」

The one who came running at full speed with a look that resembled Hannya noh mask was the present captain of the kingdom knight order who was mentioned in the topic before this――Kuzeri Rail, that person.

From her intelligent eyes, her tight eyebrows and lips, she was undoubtedly a beauty. Her straight blonde hair was let down freely while it was slightly split to the left side from the center, but her figure when she brushed up her hair with one hand often fascinated the knights.

The demonic look of such a woman gave off a big impact. It was to the degree that Liliana, who should be used to seeing it, unconsciously raised a scream 「Hiih!?」.

The female knight immediately attempted an escape, but the captain-sama showed an astounding acceleration! The female knight’s escape route was cut off!

The female knight tried to further struggle in vain, but Captain Kuzeri launched a magnificent body blow without hesitation!

Zudon- Along with a sound that was like a cannon firing, the female knight’s body floated. 「Uboa」 Such a groan leaked out. Looking closer, the knight’s armor that should be of the highest quality was dented with a fist shape.

The female knight fell on her knees on the spot. Ignoring her, Captain Kuzeri faced Hajime and co with a pale expression. And then, she bowed her head in a flash with a vigor that made one wonder whether she planned to headbutt the floor.

「Everyone! My subordinate has been extremely disrespectful!」

The captain-sama looked as though ‘I’m not gonna raise my head no matter what until I’m forgiven!’.

「Aa~, it wasn’t like she did any actual harm, and even if she tried there won’t be any problems, so don’t mind it.」

‘That’s why you can raise your head’, Hajime said in the place of everyone else who was still looking with wide open eyes at the sudden happening.

Captain Kuzeri timidly and slowly raised her head.

「However, this is this fellow we are talking about. If Shizuku-dono is present with Hajime-dono beside her, without a doubt, she would try to attempt some kind of magic……」

「Well, you stopped her just before she could.」

「My deepest apologies!」

The head that was almost lifted up moved toward the ground once more in a standing dogeza posture. It was amazing flexibility she had there.

At this rate, it felt like the captain-sama who didn’t do anything bad would continue to lower her head forever, so the other people also called out encouragingly to Captain Kuzeri unanimously.

Captain Kuzeri kept shrinking down in shame. Different from the broadminded Meld, it seemed she was a diligent and worrywart type of a person.

This time too, Kuzeri received a notice from Hellina about the arrival of Hajime and co along with their family to play. As the knight-captain, she came here to give them a brief greeting, but when she arrived, she found a subordinate who shouldn’t be here, so then she charged forward while feeling a stomachache.

After Captain Kuzeri who was pardoned greeted them respectfully, she faithfully asked for permission 「Please allow me to take a bit of time」, and then she glared fiercely at the female knight who had recovered without anyone noticing.

「You, why are you here!?」

「Because Onee-sama is here!」

The female knight saluted smartly while sending a gaze that seemed to say ‘Why are you asking such an obvious question?’. *Biki-* A blood vein emerged on Captain Kuzeri’s forehead.

「I’m not asking that kind of thing! You, what about Kouki-dono!?」

Hearing that, Liliana raised her voice 「Ah, now that you mentioned it!」. Hajime and co made a questioning expression, wondering what the relationship between the female knight and Kouki was.

Liliana explained it simply. So to speak, while Kouki was active on Tortus, in order to silence the people who said various things about it, a knight would accompany him as

an observer as well as support, and this female knight was the one who received that duty.

Everyone looked at the female knight, thinking that perhaps Kouki was also returning to the capital. But, for some reason, she looked triumphant.

「I got the hunch that Onee-sama would be summoned soon, so I returned here independently!」

She said that. While sending a gaze that seemed to say 「I want to be praised, Onee-sama!」 toward Shizuku. An illusion of a dog tail wagging around could be seen behind her.

「This stupid idiot!」

Zudon-, Kuzeri Blow exploded once more. This time it was a splendid heartbreak shot. A fist-shaped dent similar to before was made in the armor around the heart.

The female knight said 「My, my heart……it, feels like it will stoopp」 with a pale face and staggered feet. The impact of the heartbreak shot seemed to cause an irregular pulse in her heart.

「In other words, you left Kouki-dono behind! The current him will immediately act recklessly! I should have commanded you to support him attentively on top of observing him!」

「E, err, ca, captaiiin. My, my heart is……」

「Listen here, your duty this time was something Liliana-sama decided in consideration for you who kept causing nothing but trouble so that you who are actually skilled and also accomplished won’t need to quit being a knight!」

「I, I am thankful……bu, but, before that, my, my heart is…… sto, stopp――」

「Even I don’t actually want to fire you or anything. I know you very well since you still belonged to the royal guard. You are someone who can do it if you try. I thought that if you left the capital to travel together with Kouki-dono and worked for the sake of society and people, you would recover yourself slightly. Even you yourself, weren’t you brimming with motivation before departing saying “I will bloom the second time at the central for sure!”? That’s why I――」

「……」

The female knight’s face was pale. Foam was bubbling from her mouth, and the light was vanishing from her eyes.

‘Eh? Could this be something plainly bad?’ Liliana and the others were flustered. Even Hajime was saying 「I, is she okay?」 while looking alternately at the captain and the female knight.

「Eei! What are you doing sleeping like that! Listen to what I’m saying properly!」

Zudon- A second heartbreak shot for today. The fist-shaped dent on the heart sunk deeper.

At the same time, 「Gahah!?」 the female knight breathed again. 「Eh? Just now, I thought I saw Captain Meld desperately telling me to go back from the other side of the river……」 She then murmured something terrifying.

The captain-sama who could freely move and stop the heart of her subordinate cleared her throat once and then gave an order once more.

「Anyways, this duty is something important even for you too. If you understand, then quickly return to where Kouki-dono is!」

「I firmly protest, captain!」

「What!?」

「Because that bastard, he was loitering at the north mountain range area for three days without eating or sleeping, you know!? I cannot accompany that kind of man whose thoughts are filled with “holy precinct’s monster absolutely kill”!」

「You, do you understand the meaning of order? No one will recognize your rejection!」

「Respect of fundamental human rights! It will!」

「Annoying! Who cares, just go back! I’ll fire you for sure this time if you don’t!」

「Bring it on! I have resolved myself to follow Onee-sama from here on!」

‘No, even if you resolved yourself like that I won’t accept it, you know?’ Shizuku immediately insisted that, but the female knight only showed an unshakeable determination.

After seeing her like that, something sparkling was starting to gather at the corner of Captain Kuzeri’s eyes.

「……I can’t do this anymore.」

The dignified and strong knight order captain-sama’s spirit was on the verge of breaking!

The female knight who threw out her chest stubbornly, and the completely exhausted captain-sama……

While a really odd atmosphere was ruling over the place, Hajime moved while letting out a sigh.

He confirmed something with the compass in one hand, and then he approached the female knight briskly.

「Mu? What is it, Hajime-dono?」

「For now, not just the captain but Shizuku is also troubled with you being here, so go back to the mountain.」

A gate was opened. Hajime grasped the female knight's collar violently.

And then, the female knight who was bewildered 「Wha, what are you doing!?」 was tossed away by Hajime into the other side of the gate――thrown away at the air above the place where Kouki was at, the "north mountain range area".

From the other side of the closed gate, 「ONEe-SAMAaAAA-, II'LL BEe~ Baa~~CK!」 such a shriek could be heard. But, it immediately became quiet.

「Anyways, I sent her to Amanogawa's place. Even if she returns here, it will take a while. Well, look, those soul sisters bunch. I think you will be quite used to them if you treat them while thinking that they are that kind of creature. So get a hold of yourself, okay?」

「Ha, Hajime-donooo. I'm grateful for your consideratiooon.」

As fellow people who were similarly troubled by soul sisters, Hajime spoke to Kuzeri with a bit of a sympathetic feeling.

For some reason, Kuzeri spoke her thanks to him with tears of gratitude.

In front of Hajime and co who thought that she was a bit exaggerating, Kuzeri started talking while making eyes that looked like a dead fish.

「Really, I really don’t know anymore. Just what should I do with her……. A knight-captain who is toyed with by a single subordinate, in the end, can someone like that be called a captain? Besides, the reconstruction is currently going on, so I have anticipated it, but disputes keep happening without end……. Besides, my subordinates were also frenzied as though they were triggered by those. Perhaps they were venting their emotions that they cut loose while in their days off, but they did it too much that complaints came from the people……. If they wouldn’t change after I talked to them, then I would beat them up thoroughly, but for some reason, recently there were several people who got happy from that treatment instead……. How can they translate getting punched as a “reward” in their mind? It’s impossible for me to comprehend. Vice Captain Komold too, he would try to cut corners when I took my eyes off of him just for a bit……. And yet that guy only has popularity……. As I thought, it’s impossible for me to succeed after Logins-sama――」

「I, I see. I understand that you have been piling up various stress, so calm down a bit. It’s no good if the knight-captain cries in front of people, right?」

「My apologies. I received kind words and consideration after so long so I unconsciously……」

Captain Kuzeri wiped her eyes clean with her sleeve.

Everyone’s gazes were filled with a lot of sympathy. And then, Hajime naturally turned from Captain Kuzeri toward Liliana.

「Say Lily.」

「To, to think that Kuzeri’s stress is accumulating by this much……」

Liliana was letting out a cold sweat saying 「Perhaps I worked her too much」.

Certainly, in the present situation where the reconstruction was going on, there was a mountain of problems even just within the kingdom.

And then, the knight order that was dispatched to take care of a lot of those problems. Certainly, it would be very difficult for Captain Kuzeri who was taking supreme command of the knight order. Simply beating up everyone just like in wartime also wasn’t a good thing to do. Especially when it was a problem related to the beastmen who they were finally able to start the process of tying friendships with. She would have to act considerately to deal with that.

「What about the bunch in the church? The new pope should be handling the situation well, right?」

「……Right now he is in the middle of a provincial tour. The lightness of his footwork, it’s as expected from his Excellency the pope of the reborn holy church, but……」

「It’s a bit too light huh……」

The pope, whose role wouldn’t be an exaggeration even if it was called as governing over the peace of people’s heart, was in the middle of a trip. Surely the pressure on Captain

Kuzeri doubled from that. Perhaps her subordinates consisting of only broken people was also a factor that drove her to the wall.

Kuzeri who took command while fighting in the frontlines at that legendary decisive battle wasn’t being looked down upon by her subordinates by any means. Rather, they trusted her at the same level as Meld, or perhaps even more.

In contrast to the macho “big bro” Meld, Kuzeri should be called the “big sis” who gave a heartfelt consideration instead. A part of her subordinates who was consisted of broken people perhaps could be said to be similar to the soul sisters’ attitude toward Shizuku.

Naturally, such a captain that had attained a deep trust like that from the subordinates was an existence that the kingdom couldn’t continue without; especially right now when the kingdom’s foundation wasn’t solid.

Captain Kuzeri was too overworked in various meanings that she almost broke down, but if she actually broke down for real, then Liliana would have her soul slipping out from her body after that without a doubt.

Seeing Captain Kuzeri who looked somewhat down and Liliana who was in a dither wondering what to say to Kuzeri, Hajime scratched his head.

「Captain. I’ll give you this. Even in this work environment that is like a black company, it should become a bit better with this. Don’t lose against the soul sisters and the deviants……live strong.」

What Hajime offered was a broach with a crimson jewel fitted into it.

Captain Kuzeri instinctively accepted it, then immediately after, her eyes snapped wide open because she felt her body getting lighter as though she was floating.

「It’s an artifact filled with things like regeneration magic, soul magic, and well, there are various things. Exhaustion recovery, mind stabilizer, limit break, regeneration acceleration, beautiful skin effect……there is no harm in wearing it.」

「I, I cannot receive such an amazing thing!」

「It will be a disaster if the captain snapped and stopped functioning right now. Just accept it without reservation. You can just think of it as the husband of your black-hearted boss sending you refreshments in her place.」

‘Who are you calling a black-hearted boss!’ Liliana almost raised a protesting voice, but she was the person in charge of the work environment that had driven the knight-captain almost into tears, so she held her tongue ‘muguu’.

And then, the captain-sama who was gifted with a healing artifact……

She cast her gaze down while her hand kept grasping the broach tightly, and somehow her body started trembling slightly.

「I offer my sword to you-! My lord!」

She said such a thing unexpectedly while kneeling. Her eyes that were clouded from anxiety were sparkling bright.

Liliana complained 「Offering your sword like that is no good, right!? Your lord is me, you know!?」, but Captain Kuzeri’s gaze didn’t leave the demon king.

While everyone’s gazes were concentrated on Hajime, Hajime showed a pondering gesture for a bit, and then he suddenly took out the list he received from Hellina before this and began to jot down some kind of memo.

And then, he cracked a smile.

interview
「Let’s have a talk slowly next time. But for now, do your best in your job as captain.」

「My lord!」

Kuzeri bowed her head happily, and then she said 「Then I will return to my work! About the training, please, watch to your heart’s content!」, and gave a bow with a briskness that was incomparable to when she first arrived before returning.

The dumbfounded Liliana suddenly returned to her senses with a ‘hah’.

「Eh, what’s this? What is the talk that Hajime-san mentioned!? Don’t tell me, you aren’t satisfied with just Hellina, and now you are planning to reach your hand to even Kuzeri!?」

「That sounds bad to other people’s ear. I was just thinking of having a conversation with her about a change of occupati――cough-. About improvements in her work environment, that’s all.」

「You said a change of occupation just now! Where is Hajime-san planning to transfer her!?」

「You are misunderstanding I’m telling you. Well, it won’t be anything bad for Liliana, so it’s fine.」

「For some reason, I feel worried though……」

At this time, Liliana didn’t even dream that a few years later Kuzeri would change occupations into the demon king’s maid on Earth.

‘Even in another world, a black place will be black huh’, Shuuzou and co made a bitter expression toward the tough world while Tomoichi sent a sharp gaze to Hajime that said 「Are you planning to add more woman!?」. Sumire and Shuu were saying 「Damn it! We forgot to ask her to say 「Kuh, kill me!」 just now!」 in vexation, and Yue and co were sending puzzled gazes at Hajime wondering just what he was scheming this time. Amidst all those,

「Everyone, Luluaria-sama’s preparation is finished.」

Hellina who came beside them unnoticed told them that.

「Nn-. Hajime-san, I will have you explain in full later, okay? Well then everyone, I will introduce you all to Okaa-sama. Please come over here.」

After reminding Hajime firmly, Liliana guided the group toward where her mother was.

–

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I’m sorry to those who are holding hope for Lord Aby.

Please wait for one more week, but for now, I will post the Tortus Travel Journal ③. Pardon me with this!

–

PS

It was announced on Overlap-sama’s homepage, but the comic version of [Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou Zero] will start serialization next month in Gardo. The illustration is over here↓

The one in charge of it is Kouchi Ataru-sensei. I received a wonderful illustration from the very beginning.

Thank you very much!

Like that, the annoying personality of Miledy is drawn like this!

Or like the name of Oscar’s “Orcus” is actually from here~.

Or like Nize being targeted by little girl sisters, or the roots of the god crystal that Hajime obtained when he fell into the

abyss.

The tale of Miledy and others, the liberators, will be connected like that now, and I’ll be happy if you readers can also feel it.

Even you who are thinking ‘I don’t think I’ll buy this novel’, if it’s at Gardo, the comic version will be free so you will be able to read it.

That’s why please, please go take a look!

Please take care of Arifureta and Shirakome in this 2018 too!

Arifureta Chapter 300

Arifureta After III Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2 Prologue

A voice could be heard.

Inside the darkness where one couldn’t even see an inch ahead, a repulsive voice was resounding.

That voice felt slimy, like a sticky sludge.

It’s already been heard for several thousand, several tens of thousands of times.

I also know about the development ahead of here. The same as the voice. I have seen it continuously repeating for several thousands, several tens of thousands of times.

No. To be more accurate, it wasn’t seeing, yes, it was remembering.

A memory that couldn’t possibly be forgotten. A memory that mustn’t be forgotten.

The repulsive reason of me being alive. It was the earliest scene my heart remembered.

Gou- The wind was blowing.

The darkness that was like a black ink that painted over anything it touched was swept away. What appeared in its place was a crimson flame——the fire of hell.

Inside the world that was dyed red, “it” was there.

The figure was like condensed darkness, or perhaps shadows. Red flames that were like its blood was gushing out from the countless cracks running along its surface, frying the surrounding to ash without pause.

The two hands that were clad in a hellfire were carelessly holding *things that were once my parents.* The eyes and mouth that were colored by the flames warped like a mocking sneer.

“Its” mouth moved slightly.

A voice could be heard.

The voice of “it” that I had heard several thousands, several tens of thousands of times.

I, who could do nothing except tremble, was impaled by “its” sneering laugh.

Flames were gushing out.

My important people were disappearing without leaving so much as even ash behind, and “its” hand was reaching forward.

The hand that was created from the hellfire and shadow completely filled my sight that was blurred by tears.

And then, hope and a future, a warm thing……as though to crush all of those things fully within its grasp——

–

–

–

□aAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH□

A scream echoed inside a bedroom at midnight.

The soft blanket was brushed aside, and a young woman around the age of twenty lifted up her body like a released spring.

After looking at her normally, she was a woman with a good-looking and well-ordered appearance, but right now, her expression was warped in grief and terror. Her blonde hair that was normally wavy and looked soft was stuck to her cheeks and the nape of the neck from cold sweat in an unsightly state.

Only the sounds of rough breathing and rustling clothes resounded inside the room.

There, *knock knock* the room’s door was knocked upon.

□Claudia-sama?□(TN: Do you guys think I should use Miss Claudia here, or keep using Claudia-sama following the raw?)

□——□

A worried voice called out her name, the owner of this room——Claudia Barenberg. Her body twitched in surprise.

But, she immediately let out a large sigh, wiped the tears blurring her jade pupils with her sleeve, and she calmed

down her breathing with her hand on her chest before replying.

“I’m fine, Wynn. I only got a bit of a nightmare. I’m sorry for the ruckus I caused.”

She endeavored to make her voice as calm and bright as she could. However, from the viewpoint of the person guarding the room from in front of the door, it was clear as day that the girl was only trying not to make others worried.

After all, this was something that had persisted for several years. At the very least, this would happen once or twice a week; sometimes it would even happen three or four times a week. Often Claudia would spring up from her bed while screaming at midnight.

The cause was common knowledge. Therefore, the people who idolized her also understood that it was something that couldn’t be solved that easily.

That was why, “at the very least”, the person who served as the guard tonight spoke just like usual.

“If you like, Claudia-sama, how about I bring you something to drink? Luckily, Anna is brewing herb tea along with the change of shift, so how about Claudia-sama have some together with us?”

Surely that herb tea was also undoubtedly the kind that used an herb that would stimulate restful sleep.

Claudia made a warm smile at the consideration of them who were her guards, her comrades, and also her family. She felt like the coldness that was blanketing her heart, the emotion that she should reject, was softening.

「It’s a coincidence that my throat is dry right now. Please let me drink it if you will be so kind. Thank you, Wynn.」

「It’s nothing.」

After that, Claudia put her disarrayed attire in order and lightly wiped her hair and sweat. Then she invited Wynn, along with Anna who arrived at that time, to enter the room.

Wynn——Wynn Keyman was a lean young man with swept-back blonde hair. He was 28 years old. He had rare grey-colored pupils, and his appearance was gallant and stern. His personality was also serious. From his way of living that prized virtue, he was called as “knight” by his comrades.

Anna who was brewing the tea——Anna Folk was a girl with chestnut braided hair as her trademark. She was fifteen years old. Her eyes, which were as brown as her hair, were always shining with a liveliness that could be said to represent her personality.

For a while, they were amusing themselves with idle talk where Anna would be the one who did most of the talking while Claudia and Wynn would throw in appropriate comments.

Feeling her heart being warmed by the warm tea and the harmonious interaction with her comrades, Claudia felt her eyes getting heavy.

In the first place, her drooping eyes and gentle gaze were her trademarks, and her personality and looks also didn’t go against the impression of a gentle big sister that she gave off. Even her speaking tone was relaxed and calm, so when sleepiness was added in, it was even said that the synergy of her appearance and voice would exert the special ability of a powerful sleep encouragement.

When such a girl got drowsy eyes, naturally anyone who saw it would understand 「Ah, she is sleepy」.

Right now, it would be less than an hour before the sun rose, but Wynn and Anna recommended Claudia to sleep once more. After all looking closer, even Wynn and Anna who were her guards were also being visited by sleepiness. She was plainly obstructing their duty.

Claudia was hesitating because after thinking of the morning prayer, it felt like it would be better to stay awake like this. It was then that Wynn’s mobile phone suddenly started vibrating to inform him that it was receiving a call.

Wynn confirmed the caller before picking up the call.

「Wynn here.」

「……This is Aziz. Mission complete. I will board the plane after this.」

「Thanks for your hard work. Were there any problems?」

「……None.」

「I see. Tell me the details after you come back, but from your tone, it seems that the ruin and the relic aren’t it, huh?」

「……Yes. But, it’s dangerous. I sent you the data. Ask the management to deal with them.」

「Acknowledged. I’ll report it as soon as I confirm the data.」

Hearing the safety of a comrade who went on a mission to steal information from a corporation in a certain country, not just Wynn, but Claudia and Anna also let out a faint sigh of relief.

Wynn’s tone became somewhat gentle, and he asked 「Is there anything else?」. There, the man who was called Aziz whose voice sounded like a young man’s faltered slightly in hesitation, then he spoke in a low voice.

「……There was, the “returnees’” data.」

「! ……How much?」

「Members and their family structure. Also the detail from Britain.」

Wynn spontaneously groaned.

The previous information was information that even Wynn’s group had collected to a certain degree. But, regarding the latter, currently, the information gathering wasn’t really progressing due to the obstruction from the intelligence department of the country in question.

He didn’t know how the aforementioned corporation obtained the information, but he guessed that it must’ve been obtained from a route that was peculiar to a corporation while inside his heart he rejoiced from being able to obtain the unanticipated data.

「Aziz, you did well. We are going to scrutinize the information here right away. Their strength and also the authenticity of it are unknown. Be very careful on your return.」

「Acknowledged.」

After that, Wynn cut off the call after talking about two to three more matters.

So we obtained the information about them……let’s pray that this will lead us to a better future.

Claudia muttered with her characteristic leisurely tone. An earnestness was hidden inside her tone.

After that commotion, it was information that Claudia and others couldn’t stop wanting. However, even after they poured all their strength into it, not only were they unable to disclose the whole picture, they couldn’t even come into contact with them, far from that. Damage even reached their important comrades as the end result.

It became prohibited to come into contact with them until a definite measure could be obtained. And now they had obtained information about them. Claudia couldn’t suppress her feelings of exaltation.

Wynn. This is a most important subject. Please be very careful in handling the obtained information, okay?

Understood. I will immediately report to the director. At the same time, I will also increase the alert level. We wholly don’t know their hand. It’s unknown when they will notice that this information has leaked. And after they know, if they followed it to us……

Wynn shook his head. He was recalling what had happened to their comrades when attempting to come into contact with them. Anna was making the same expression as though she was feeling a headache and continued.

I don’t want to do it anymore, you know? Work like returning the sanity of our comrades who were working hard to dig up a well in a developed country, or changing jobs into a mercenary killing maniac who was obsessed with murdering terrorists, or joining some animal protection

group and running around to search for anyone to adopt stray dogs, and then bringing them back here. I thought I would get mad myself doing that.

Anna was scrunching her face with an expression that looked like she was really hating it, or perhaps dreading it was more accurate. Her words naturally caused Claudia and Wynn to also get a faraway look from recalling their comrades who were overflowing with a volunteer spirit and sense of justice in various senses at that time.

Claudia drank the herb tea to calm down her heart, and then she opened her mouth Even so with a sorrowful face.

Recently, the movement of “them” is getting increasingly active. That’s why it’s necessary for us to ascertain it. Just who are they? And then, whether they are the “same” as us. Perhaps there is some meaning that we obtained their information at this timing. That’s what I believe. Perhaps……

Claudia smiled faintly and spoke.

——this might be the guidance of the Lord, you know?

She said.

‘Perhaps that might be so’, Wynn and Anna also nodded with a smile.

In the end, at that time her sleepiness was cleared up. Claudia dressed herself up, and then together with the other two she began her activities in order to accomplish her duty today.

Without knowing that unexpectedly one of “them” had already started moving.

–

–

–

A really normal house in Japan. It was in a residential area, so there were a lot of similar houses in the neighborhood. The two vehicles lined up in the parking spot in front of the house were a family car and a compact car of the types that were often seen.

That house didn’t have anything particularly standing out on it, so it was blending in well with the scenery of the residential area. However, regarding the house’s residents, there was something a bit peculiar about them.

Or more accurately, it was the family’s second son.

The family name written on the nameplate was——Endo.

Yes, it was the house of one of the “returnees”, the man who was praised by his comrades with various sayings like “nonchalantly one of mankind’s strongest”, “recently an automatic door won’t react at all against that guy, seriously”, “you bastard, even though you already got a rabbit-eared Onee-san lover, what are you doing laying your hands on a blonde-haired beautiful girl too huuuh, I’m gonna kill you”, and so on——the home of Endo Kousuke.

Currently, Kousuke was inside his room on the second floor. He was stuffing his travel baggage into his favorite rucksack that he received at the same time as when he enrolled in middle school.

His personality wasn’t particularly methodical, so he was only carelessly tossing in things like a change of clothes and

so on without folding them first.

「Ee~rr, something like this, I guess? The rest can just be entered into the Treasure Warehouse.」

Kousuke talked to himself while showing a thinking gesture for a bit.

The important luggage could be entered into the Treasure Warehouse that Hajime gave him, so originally, he didn't even need the rucksack, but it would be odd if he was empty-handed despite going abroad. There was no doubt he would get stared at suspiciously by the airport staff when in the emigration and immigration check.

He would also need to be careful of the surrounding's attention when getting out the item he wanted from the Treasure Warehouse, so it was necessary to put some things into a rucksack to a certain degree.

「Even so, the Vatican huh……First, I'll enter Italy's Rome, but it will be the first time I'm going there, so I'm feeling a bit excited.」

He recalled several things that he had forgotten and tossed them into his rucksack carelessly again.

「It helps that I won't meet a language barrier when going abroad, but……I want to go sightseeing if I'm going there anyway. ……With Rana.」

Thinking of his older lover who was an adorable rabbit-eared beauty, Kousuke's expression broke into a wide grin slovenly.

Instantly, he felt a chill, and his body shivered. At the end of the view that he shared with his clone, the figure of Emily-

chan staring unblinkingly at him with pupils of just monochrome color was……

「Cough-. Now then! I finished my preparations already! Let's depart!」

He cut! Cut! CUUT! the shared field of vision. I didn't see anything at all!

Under the thinking 「Kou-kun who is the right-hand man of the boss also needs at least seven wives who are somewhere around the world!」 of the first wife (according to the person) Rana Hauria, Emily-chan was more or less put into the position of the second wife. Emily-chan was really troubled sometimes.

The incident that occurred just a little while ago——the Berserk incident.

The girl who walked the path of research wholeheartedly since her childhood up till now as a genius unintentionally caused that incident that was related to the monster. Through that incident, the girl harbored a strong emotion of love toward Kousuke. Furthermore, it was her first love.

Her feelings were strong and undoubtedly the real thing.

Thus, even after it came to light that the target of her first love, Kousuke, had a lover named Rana, in the end, she was unable to give up. There was also how Rana herself welcomed her, and how Kousuke's clone was living together with her in the Grant family home to protect her, where the interaction between the two was deepening. Day by day her feelings were growing stronger and deeper.

The level of her worries was also increasing in proportion to that.

There was also the self-proclaimed third wife, so perhaps there would really be seven people in the end……Thinking a bit of his own future that he had never even imagined, Kousuke shivered slightly.

He had no self-confidence at all that it would go well like a certain demon king.

Though that demon king told him 「You can make a clone, so rather, you will be all right even more so than me, right?」 while laughing loudly at him.

Kousuke thought. ‘That bastard, it’s completely no good to consult him about love relationships’.

「Now then, there is also the flight schedule, so let’s depart soon.」

He shouldered his rucksack and exited his room.

「Wah!? Kou-nii, you were there!?」

A thin, petite girl jumped from surprise.

「I’m here. I have been here all this time since morning. We ate breakfast together just now, right?」

「? Did we? Well, it doesn’t matter.」

The petite girl who finished the talk with a practiced gesture——Endo Manami. She was Kousuke’s little sister who was wearing glasses with her hair worn in braids.
She was thirteen years old. She was a first-year middle schooler, and a member of the literary club.

While she gave off a plain impression, she was a lively girl who would talk briskly.

「Or rather, Kou-nii. What's with that luggage?」

「Aa, I'm thinking of going to Italy for a bit.」

「Aa, that so. To Italy――wait, why!? Why Italy!? Isn't that too far to say it in that tone as though you are only going for a bit to a mini market!? Isn't it too sudden!?」

Manami-chan made a splendid tsukkomi while fixing her glasses' position.

There, the door of a nearby room opened, and the face of a young man wearing glasses popped out.

「Manami? What are you doing getting noisy by yourself?」

「She ain't alone. I'm here. I'll punch you, you know, Aniki (big brother).」

'Ah, so you're there……' The one who was making a face like that was Endo Sousuke. The big brother of Kousuke who came of age this year. A university student who belonged in a law school.

When going on a family trip or the like, the Endo family was often thought only to have an older brother and a younger sister, but that was surely the fault of the glasses without a doubt, Kousuke thought.

As a test, Kousuke tried buying fashion glasses from a 100-yen store and put it on, and it wasn't like he didn't feel that the rate of him being perceived by the surrounding was higher than usual, but he was loudly laughed at by his little sister that the glasses absolutely didn't suit him on a destructive level, so since then he stopped wearing it.

Kousuke's little sister and big brother were conversing 「Kou-nii said that he is going to Italy!」「Eh? When?」「Now!」

「Haa!? That's too far when the mood is like 'I'm going to a mini market for a bit!' isn't it!? Isn't that too sudden!?」 that caused a déjà vu feeling to appear. Kousuke was listening to it while going down to the living room.

「Tou-san, you've got time?」

「H~mm♪ Hm hm~m♪」

A middle-aged man was lining up a set of fishing rods on the floor of the living room while maintaining them in a good mood——Kousuke Eiji. He was 49 years old, and a father who was working in the city hall's population department. By the way, his hobby was fishing, and he had a suntan like a certain swarthy actor ○suo-san who got mentioned a lot in a certain gag. (TN: I don't get the gag reference at all here. But about the actor, search for Tatsuo Umemiya.)

Tatsu○-san——not, Eiji didn't even notice that he was called by his son and continued to maintain his fishing rods diligently.

It was always like this, so Kousuke shook his father's shoulder and called to him once more.

「Oou!? What is——wait, Kousuke huh. What's up, why are you carrying luggage like that? Are you going out?」

Even though he twitched from surprise, seeing his son standing beside him, Eiji tilted his head in puzzlement as though nothing happened.

Kousuke also didn't really say anything about it in a practiced response and continued his words normally.

「Yep. I'll be going to Italy for a bit, so I want Tou-san to take me to the airport by car.」

「Aa, to Italy huh. Got it, got it. Wait a bit――wait, really wait!? Italy!? You mean Italy, that country with delicious pizza!? Isn't it too far when your tone feels like you are just going to a mini market!?」

The father got into the talk following the mood the longest, but the content of his tsukkomi also caused a déjà vu.

Hearing Eiji's voice, the mother of Kousuke who was glaring at the household account book on the dining table――Endo Misato raised her face abruptly.

「Dear, don't speak so loudly so suddenly like that. You will cause me to make a mistake in the calculations here. Something like Italian or pizza……something like pizza is no good. Even just a medium size is more than 2000 yen, you know? Recently, there are a lot of promos about buy one get two, but even so, I won't allow such a luxury on an ordinary day where we aren't celebrating anything!」

Misato-okaasan (49 years old) sharply pushed on her glasses while showing a firm rejection. She was working in the municipal tax of the city hall. She was strict with money.

「That's not it, Misato. It's Kousuke, you see. He said that he is going to Italy right now.」

「Eh? Kousuke? Rather, Italy!? Right now!? What are you saying as though you are just going to a nearby mini market!? It's just too sudden, right!?」

Perhaps the Endo family had an extraordinary interest in a mini market.

Around that time Sousuke and Manami also came down to the living room, the whole family pressed the question of what Kousuke was planning to do.

Kousuke often got forgotten, but his family’s love for him was genuine. Even though they were getting used to him repeatedly going afar unexpectedly, he had already been missing once in the past. They would worry about him no matter what.

Kousuke smiled wryly while explaining that he would go to investigate something for a bit because of the demon king——Hajime’s request. Like usual, the request fee had already been transferred to him to a certain degree, no, for Kousuke who had the sensibility of common folk, it was an amount that made him shudder. Anyway, he told his family that there was no worry about the travel expense.

「Nuu, so it’s Nagumo-senpai again……」

Manami let out a conflicted groan with a somewhat conflicted expression. For her, the demon king Hajime was her sworn enemy.

Why?

Changing the topic slightly, Amanogawa Kouki had a little sister. She was close to Shizuku since her childhood. She was idolizing Shizuku very much.

In other words, she was a soul sister.

And then, that little sister was the same age as Manami. They were friends that went to the same school.

In other words, she was a soul sister.

But why was Manami only showing a conflicted expression instead of a clear hostility like a certain kouhai-chan? That was because she had seen the sight of that certain kouhai-chan recklessly charging at the demon king Hajime when he

would be thoroughly getting affectionate with her before carelessly tossing her away like an empty can or tying her on something.

……It was a secret that she felt her heart beating slightly faster seeing such a sight. Manami-chan of the Endo family might have the same disposition as a certain disappointing dragon.

Sousuke was also making a similar conflicted expression like Manami and spoke.

「……That's, will you be all right? Before this too, there was the major disaster at Britain, right?」

「Yes, well, it was terrible though. At that time, because of Nagumo's request, I destroyed an occult organization that tried to lay their hands on us. But after that, I poked my nose into the Berserk incident on my own decision, so it was me reaping what I sow about the terrible experience.」

「But still. ……Tou-san is grateful to Nagumo-kun, but…… even if this is his request……Kousuke, even though you finally came home safely, aren't you getting involved with dangerous things a bit too much?」

As a father, such an opinion was only natural. Although she wasn't saying anything, it was clear from her expression that Misato was also thinking of the same thing.

Kousuke loosened his expression slightly seeing his parents worrying for him. However, he spoke with a determined tone.

「Certainly, I also thought just what I'm doing after I finally came home and have even decided my future aim. But, I have learned from Tortus. ――The unreasonableness won't give a second thought about our convenience or anything. If

you want to have your own way in your own convenience, you mustn’t back away.」

「Kousuke……」

While he was their own child, Eiji and Misato were always worrying about Kousuke whose inconspicuousness and thin presence reached a pitiful degree thinking 「Why?」 their son had to be like that.

Even them, his own family, would sometimes put him outside of their own awareness. For a time, they wondered if it was something like a curse and even made Kousuke receive an exorcism. They were grasping at straws then.

But when they were looking at the figure of their child who was gazing at them with a strong determination that caused them to hold their breath spontaneously, it caused them to think that perhaps Kousuke was already independent of his parents.

No, actually, they had understood it since he came home.

That the fierce experience in the other world had turned their son into an adult. Even if it was something that their hand couldn’t reach, Kousuke alone, or perhaps together with his comrades, had already become able to accomplish anything.

Eiji and Misato’s atmosphere became somewhat solemn. And then seeing that her big brother would go far away, Manami who was making a slightly lonely expression closed her mouth. The living room became quiet; however, the eldest son broke the silence 「Keh」 somehow peevishly.

「It doesn’t really matter anyway where Kousuke will go and what he will do. After all, he is just going to cajole some

beautiful girl or woman again anyway!」

「A, aniki? Are you, sulking?」

「Shut up! Don't you understand your Nii-chan's feelings!? My feelings when my little brother introduced his lover to me, a transcendentally beautiful Onee-san and a genuine bunny girl! What's more, this bastard, a few months after that introduction it was a younger blonde-haired beautiful girl and a cool beauty who is an active duty investigator!? Is it a harem!? It's a harem, isn't it, this bastard!」

「N, no, Emily and Vanessa are, still not like……」

「Still! You said still just now, this damn asshole-. Even at this time, it will be just like Rana-san said anyway. You are going to get one more of your seven wives who are somewhere in the world, right!? Nii-chan will breakdown mentally if I don't prepare my heart beforehand, so you can leave and not come home for at least half a year!」

The glasses university student Sousuke-niisan even now looked like he was going to cry with tears of blood.

Due to Kousuke and Rana's request before this, Hajime had called Rana to Earth several times when it was time for a "gate opening".

In preparation for meeting with Kousuke's family, Rana learned the Hauria-style secret skill "The – Normal Behavior That is Typically Japanese" with desperation, and she safely got herself accepted as the fiancée of the Endo family's second son, but……

To be to the point, Rana was a beauty. She had a style that was genuinely well-proportioned (body 8 times longer than the head), she had splendid twin hills, and while she had the

look of a beautiful woman, she also possessed the cuteness of someone playful. There was also her wagging rabbit ears and rabbit tail.

She was 22 years old, so even from Sousuke's viewpoint, Rana was a "rabbit-eared Onee-san",

eighth-grade syndrome

Such a girl was repressing her Hauria's nature (chuunibyou) and greeted Kousuke's family with a graceful atmosphere like a Yamato Nadeshiko.

Naturally,

「The history of not having a girlfriend = the age. Sou-nii is jelly.」

「You shut up there, little sis!」

「Last week too he confessed to a senpai in his circle and met an honorable defeat. How sad~」

「How did you know!?」

Sousuke-niisan sunk into jealousy and sadness.

Of course, he understood that his little brother reached where he was as the result of a fierce experience. He properly felt happy for his brother.

But, however, still.

If it was just a rabbit-eared Onee-san as a lover, he could still bear it.

But of all things, his little brother, the damned bastard, brought home a blonde-haired beautiful girl and a cool

beauty, and in the end, even the rabbit-eared Onee-san also recognized the two as the second and third wives.

Putting aside the cool beauty who was a bit strange, the lovable and wholehearted appeal 「I love Kousuke!」 of the blonde-haired beautiful girl, and the appeal of her wish to be accepted by Kousuke's family too……

Surely that girl was desperately learning the Japanese language because she was desperately appealing with the Japanese language that was still choppy and awkward. In the middle she would also add a body gesture and hand gesture while flustering greatly; however, she would get teary-eyed because she felt that what she wanted to say didn't really get conveyed to the other party, but even so, she wouldn't give up and bravely continued. For Sousuke-niisan, such a girl was exactly in his strike zone.

Naturally, the source of motivation for such an effort on the girl's part was wholly because of the depth of her feelings toward his little brother Kousuke though.

Because of that, the honest and unvarnished feeling of the university student who was unable to make a girlfriend would be 「DAMN IT ALLLLLLLL-, I'M DEATHLY JEALOUS HEREEEEEEE-」 in response.

By the way, Eiji and Misato were possessors of an extremely normal Japanese sensibility where it was hard to accept something like having multiple lovers. In addition, they were also extremely pleased with Rana, so it was thought that they would surely show disapproval toward the existence of Emily (+Vanessa), but……

It seemed that Emily's panicked figure that was desperately attempting to appeal to Kousuke's parents shot them right in the heart, and in the end, they completely accepted her.

Of course, Manami was also accepting of the situation. For Manami who loved reading books and light novels and could be somewhat categorized as an otaku, the real harem of her actual big brother seemed to be a target of her excitement.

She was especially attached to Vanessa who was an active duty investigator of the national security bureau. It seemed she felt sympathy and admiration for her.

Kousuke would feel a touch of anxiety when he saw the figure of his little sister whose eyes would sparkle brightly, for some reason, each time Vanessa whispered sneakily into her ear. If by any chance his little sister received a bad influence from Danessa……he was resolved with the preparedness to use even the “Staking the Pride of Villager”.

No good-Vanessa

Back to the topic at hand.

Kousuke was smiling wryly at the conversation between his big brother and little sister. He then turned his gaze back to Eiji.

「Well, anyway, it’ll be great if Nagumo takes care of everything, but if that guy told me to “do it”, and if it’s something related to my friends and me, then I’ve gotta act.」

Kousuke acted like it really couldn’t be helped, but a sense of pride and self-confidence could be peeked at somewhere in his expression.

――The right-hand man of the demon king.

It was unknown who was the one who started saying that, but it was one of the titles that his comrades fixed on Kousuke. The man who that Nagumo Hajime relied on the

most other than his wive~s, because in reality, no matter what kind of situation it was, he would come out with a result before anyone knew it.

The trust from his comrades and the achievements he accomplished himself gave a sense of self-confidence and pride to Kousuke. His face was without a doubt not that of a child, but the face of a competent man.

With a small voice, Manami muttered 「If Sou-nii could also make that kind of face, he would be able to make at least one girlfriend, and yet」, 「I can hear you, you know? …… Whe, when I become a working adult, even I can」 while Sousuke muttered such a thing. Eiji and Misato glanced at the two briefly before they looked at each other with a wry smile. They then nodded to each other.

「Got it. Airport, right? Let’s go right away. You already got a plane?」

「I ordered it on the internet already. There are still three hours left, so we will make it in time if we depart now.」

Eiji asked while tidying up his fishing set. Kousuke thanked his father while answering.

「If that’s the case, then Okaa-san will also get to see you off.」

「Ah, then me too! Kou-nii is going to Italy alone, so let’s go somewhere too when we go home!」

「Kousuke. Give some pocket money to your pitiful Nii-chan.」

Misato and Manami immediately started preparing. And then, Sousuke-niisan, who immediately threw away his pride, pestered for some pocket money.

Kousuke had already left some money for his family from the payment he earned from the demon king’s request, so he ignored his big brother.

Like that, the Endo family finished their preparations together and boarded their family car that had the loan they still hadn’t finished paying off on, then……

kyuru kyuru kyuru kyuru-

「Eh? Strange……」

The engine of the Endo family car wouldn’t start. Sousuke-niisan pondered and spoke.

「Perhaps the battery ran out? It got used a lot for the light and heating when fishing yesterday.」

「H~m, I think that it should be fine though.」

The engine wouldn’t start no matter how many times Eiji tried to turn the key. Eiji came out of the car and opened the car hood. Manami who also came out suddenly turned her gaze after hearing a sound that pierced the ear and got taken aback.

Kaaa! Kaaa! Kaaa!

「Wai-, isn’t there a lot of crows there? It’s scary……」

「Uwah, it’s unpleasant.」

When Kousuke also looked up like the others, he saw a lot of crows flying around. Even though the weather wasn’t cloudy and it also wasn’t evening, the sky looked somewhat gloomy.

「Hey, dear. How about trying to charge the battery from my car?」

「I guess……. Wait for a bit. I'll bring the cable now.」

Eiji walked behind the Endo family car to take out the toolbox. Then, as he was traversing there……

Nyaa~~

「……A black cat.」

A black cat was staring fixedly at Endo papa, and then it purred once more before running away.

「Say, how about we just go using Kaa-san's car? It will be a bit cramped, but I won't be there on the return trip anyway.」

Kousuke did his best to calm his heart while giving a suggestion in order to depart quickly.

Thinking that his suggestion had merit, Eiji looked toward Misato. Misato nodded and put her hand on the door of her compact car. And then,

「Eh? No way-, the wheel is deflated!」

Looking closer, one of the front wheels had become flat. It seemed it had stepped on something and throughout last night the air came out from it.

「Ee……wait a second. Why are all of our transportation methods getting total annihilated――」

'At this timing!' Surely Kousuke was going to say that.

However, his words were interrupted.

By the sound of a *snap-*.

Everyone’s gazes were directed at the source of the sound——at the feet of Kousuke.

They splendidly snapped. The shoe strings. Both of the shoes.

□□□□□……□□□□□

——*Kaaaa! Kaaaa! Kaaaa!*

——*Nyaaa~~*

Manami spoke to Kousuke with a relatively grave expression.

□……Kou-nii. Are you going to die?□

If Kousuke departed like this…

Cold sweat was trickling from Kousuke’s forehead.

Eiji, Misato, and then Sousuke too, they were sending him an expression that seemed to want to say □As expected, just cancel it!□.

Kousuke silently made his Treasure Warehouse shine. What came out were his spare shoes. This time it wasn’t the type that used shoestrings, but a belt type shoes.

□Hey, Kousuke——□

□Don’t say it, Tou-san. Unreasonableness, has to be fought against without backing away!□

——*Kaaaa! Kaaaa! Kaaaa!*

——*Nyaaa~~*

——*Gurururururu-*

No, this wasn’t a talk about unreasonableness anymore……

Ignoring his family who seemed to want to say that, Kousuke straddled Misato’s granny bike with a severe expression.

And then,

「Then, I’m going!」

Kousuke dashed away on the granny bike while doing a wheelie from the momentum. While the countless crows and black cats, and then some stray dogs that were there, when they noticed were crying out, a strangely sticky wind was blowing with Kousuke’s departure.

Most likely, by making use of his thin shadow that wouldn’t be perceived by anyone, midway through Kousuke would surely rampage by doing an “E.T” and the like, so even though he wasn’t using a car, he would make it just barely in time to the airport.

「Kou-nii, will he be really fine?」

The hero who started his excessively ominous journey on a granny bike……

In response to Manami’s anxious voice, Eiji, Misato, and Sousuke nodded in agreement.

–

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

This is the beginning of the Abyss Lord’s Vatican chapter.

Although, honestly I have no confidence that I will be able to write it as strongly as the previous times.

And so, I’m thinking about writing the story in about ten chapters similar to the shape of a long part within the After.

Best regards!

Arifureta Chapter 301

Arifureta After III Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2 The Lord's ○○……Vanished?

A fresh aroma and faint steam were drifting inside the living room where the morning sunlight was shining in.

「Kousuke-kun. You want one more glass?」

「Ah, thank you.」

The one who was smiling faintly while pouring the after meal tea into the held out cup was Sophie Grant, Emily's mother.

Her almond-shaped eyes that closely resembled a cat were exactly like Emily's to the degree that it would make anyone think in acceptance that indeed, the two of them were mother and daughter.

Although, her atmosphere was different from Emily. She was very gentle. She wasn't the type with a strong self-assertion and unyielding will which would be expressed through her eyes. The sharp look of her eyes gave the impression of deep thought that would see through the genuineness of something when her eyes were narrowed quietly.

She was retired currently, but her former occupation as an accountant certainly felt like it suited her.

「Oi oi, Emily. Isn’t it fine even if it’s your mother who is serving the second serving of tea? It’s nothing much. Stop getting offended by such a trivial matter.」

「Yo, you are wrong! Don’t say something strange father!」

The father, Carl, was smiling wryly at Emily who was puffing out her cheeks 「Mumu-」 when seeing the sight of Kousuke getting tea poured by her mother personally. He said to her some remonstrating words.

Carl was also someone with a gentle personality. His glossy blonde hair that didn’t show his age seemed to be inherited by Emily. Sophie was also blonde-haired, but if it had to be said, Emily’s hair was closer to Carl’s hair.

By the way, Carl’s occupation was as a restaurant owner that had several branches within the country. He himself was a cook, but right now, he was mostly focusing on management.

Although, his skill was the real deal. Even Kousuke who was currently freeloading in a household of Britain that was often ridiculed as the country with the worst cooking had his evaluation overturned by the delicious dishes he was treated to every day.

Emily had also received the initiation in cooking from the pro cook Carl since she was little. Recently, she was especially passionate about learning, so she was good at cooking. For Kousuke, Emily’s pie dishes were masterpieces.

「What are you saying, Carl? Emily also has a powerful love rival. If she wants to become Kousuke’s number one, then she mustn’t let any chance go no matter how trivial. You see, a man is a creature that is weak against a devoted woman.」

The one who said that while elegantly sipping tea with a faint smile was Sierra Grant.

She was suffering from Alzheimer, but right now, she was lucid. Perhaps it was the Grant family’s trait, but Sierra also had determined almond-shaped eyes. Even her eyelids that previously were mostly closed were wide open right now.

“No, mother-in-law. Saying such graphic talk in front of the people themselves is……”

“Carl, you really are timid no matter what. If you are a father, then you should support your daughter’s battle.”

“No, that’s an exaggeration, calling it a battle.”

“It’s a battle, right? Love is war. Without the spirit of charging forward, how will a girl make the man they are in love with theirs.”

‘Uu’, father Carl was at a loss for words. He was basically unable to go against Sierra, and it wasn’t just because he was her son-in-law.

Unyielding, hating to lose, with a strong will that was like steel, was the nature of the grandmother of the Grant family.

Without a doubt, Emily’s nature was similar to that of her grandmother. She was still immature and would immediately get teary-eyed, and she hadn’t gotten out from the stage of putting up an act of false courage or simply being obstinate, but the strength of will that allowed her to run through to the end of the Berserk incident was surely inherited from Sierra.

That *scene that was similar to the past* , of her father getting talked down by her grandmother in her healthy

state, made Emily smile warmly and muttered.

「Fufu, grandma, you've gotten completely better. ……This too is thanks to Kousuke.」

「I'm just the intermediary. The one who did it was Nagumo……no, it was Shirasaki who did it directly.」

「Certainly that's so. I'm also grateful to Kaori-san, and also to the de, de-de, demon king-sama, but……it was Kousuke who connected us.」

After the Berserk incident, Kousuke asked for a little favor from Hajime.

Yes, it was a request that asked whether Sierra, who was afflicted by Alzheimer, could be healed.

It was hard to heal a disease like Alzheimer that destroyed the cerebral nerves and made the whole brain atrophying even if they used magic medicine. But the Nagumo family possessed a cheat technique. Yes, it was regeneration magic.

The subjugation of the Alzheimer disease was also one of Emily's life works. Be that as it may, it was still a long way off until she could genuinely research the magic medicine on Tortus and the like.

Even if Emily was going to research the remedy that could be used on Earth for the sake of everybody, couldn't at least her relative be saved first, Kousuke requested.

From Emily's point of view, she actually wished to heal Sierra with her own hands, but thinking of the disease progression, it wasn't the time for being obstinate.

After that, Emily too went to greet the demon king-sama which doubled as making a request too, but……

Kousuke and Emily who recalled the first meeting with the demon king family was,

□……It was, a sad event huh.□

□u!? I'm sorry that I messed up! But, if possible, please don't recall iiitt!□

Emily-chan put her feet on the chair, held down her head with her hands, and became small.

However, even though she put up the charis○ guard, the spear of recollection couldn't be blocked.

Just what blunder had Emily made?

If the mental state of Emily, who had resolved herself to have an audience with the demon king family, had to allude, then at that time, she was extremely nervous. After all, she would meet the mastermind of that "sky *chudon* with one phone call incident".

Furthermore, she was told that even Kousuke who went through the Lord Abyssgate transformation wasn't a match against that person. So to speak, she was going to meet Kousuke's boss.

Emily-chan's head was filled to the brim with the scenes of a certain Drago○ Quest's great demon king laughing loudly with an evil expression inside the demon king castle.

And then, to make matters worse, the atmosphere of the demon king's house was a bit high spirited. After all, from

Hajime’s position, it was a situation that exactly felt like “Comrade♪ Comrade♪”.

And then, thinking of how Kousuke would become the Hauria’s clan head on the dawn of his marriage with Rana, that meant that his wives would become new Hauria family members, so naturally, Shia’s excitement was also rising.

Lured by the two with high spirits, the other wive~s were also getting high spirits, and eventually they went 「If we are going to meet anyway, then let’s answer their expectations and act appropriately like the demon king gang!」 and set up a meeting with excessive drama.

「No, that was something that couldn’t have been helped. Rather, obviously, it was Nagumo and the others who were in the wrong with their excessive drama and mischief. Even though we were coming to visit normally, why was there a signboard of 「Human, if thou wish to have your wish granted, then show me how you will overcome the trial!」 at the entrance. What’s more, when we entered the entranceway, the place became a dungeon. Anyone would normally start shaking in their boots.」

「Vanessa was really delighted though.」

Yes, the demon king-san’s mischievous drama——when someone passed through the entranceway of the Nagumo house, it would become an imitation of the Raisen Labyrinth~♪. (It was at the level of an amusement park’s attraction on hard mode. There was no danger involved.)

Specifically, the person entering the entrance would be sent to the training artifact, the game world. In the real world, Kousuke, Emily, and also Vanessa who skipped work for the sake of meeting the demon king-sama collapsed limply at the entrance.

According to Hajime, 「No, you see, it seems they were eager to meet with the demon king, so I thought that I would prepare the trials that are appropriate for a demon king until they reached the end. I'm being considerate, you know?」 something like that……

Putting aside Vanessa who was absurdly delighted, Emily was teary-eyed from start to end, but she cleared it somehow with her characteristic obstinacy and her hate of losing.

Inside the throne room of the demon king castle that they finally reached in the game, demon king Hajime who was standing with overwhelming pressure, Yue-sama who was forming the dark clouds and a lightning dragon, Tio who was surrounding the throne in her dragon form, Kaori who was floating in midair with black wings like a fallen angel, the masked pink who was looking up to the sky, and others were waiting with a deep atmosphere. After seeing the demon king family, Emily-chan's eyes finally rolled back showing the white of her eyes, and her consciousness flew away.

Emily-chan, who returned to reality, opened her eyes in the living room of the Nagumo house, and then she saw Hajime who was saying 「Haha, that was a great reaction you showed there」 in a good mood. Kousuke who was protesting 「You overdid it you idiot!」 to such Hajime, and she felt very relieved……

Trickle trickle trickle trickle~

And she messed up.

The violent shame that was assaulting Emily after the relief caused her to start crying 'waah waah'. After seeing such Emily, as expected even Hajime thought that he overdid it.

It caused the strange occurrence of the demon king-sama desperately soothing 「It's fine you know~, it's not scary at all~. Loo~k, there is only a normally virtuous Japanese person who you can find anywhere here」 while apologizing.

In addition, Yue and the others, the wive~s, also joined in all together with the soothing after participating in something that created a black history that was too harsh for a girl.

The aftermath of Emily's blunder was also cleaned up in a flash using magic while the adult version Yue gently embraced Emily. Shia caressed her while going 'good girl good girl'. Kaori and Shizuku feed her 'aa~n' sweet confections. Myuu and Remia also talked to her kindly. Only then did Emily finally get back on her feet.

……Most likely, other than Emily, there was nobody else outside the family who ever got pampered gently and considerately that much by the Nagumo family.

「We, well, as a result, grandma was healed free of charge……When I tried talking to them, everyone was really kind……I'm not, bo, bothered anymore by that!」

Emily-chan acted bravely. She was bothered every time she saw Hajime, and she would be absurdly tense. The only salvation was that she completely opened her heart toward Shia who was especially considerate toward her because she would join the clan.

「Even if you say that, Nagumo and the others are really off from common sense. Emily, tell me properly if something happens, okay?」

Surely Hajime too would think 「I don't want the lord telling me anything about common sense」, and even Emily herself would surely think 「Kousuke too feels like that in

general……, but the one who was there was the maiden in love, Emily-chan.

She was a simple heroine who easily blushed red just from the gentle and considerate words.

Her cheeks reddened, her eyes softened from happiness, and she spoke 「Yes……I'll tell Kousuke properly」 bashfully.

Seeing Emily staring at him happily like that, Kousuke also scratched his cheek shyly……

「My, there is no need to worry after looking at this, isn't it?」

「Sheesh Emily, she really loves Kousuke-kun.」

「……That small Emily is already gone.」

The earnest words and expressions of the family caused Emily to return to her senses in surprise, and she turned bright red.

To divert attention, she hurriedly tried to brew a new pot of tea and reached her hand toward the pot. She was so flustered that she almost fell. Without delay, Kousuke followed up on her. He supported her with his hand on top of Emily's hand. Emily-chan got even redder innocently.

It was a heartwarming morning for the Grant family. Today, Carl also had a holiday, so it was a really calm atmosphere.

But, at that time, Kousuke suddenly went 「Hm? This presence is……」 and turned his gaze to the entrance.

Right after that, *bang* the Grant house's door was opened.

「GOOD MO~~~~~~~~~RNING-! Kousuke-san! Your Vanessa has arrived!」

「Go home. Rather, go back into the soil.」

The one who leapt inside in a “banzai” pose with a smart suit appearance was the investigator of the Britain national security bureau, Vanessa Paradis. Her appearance was a cool beauty with very short hair, but despite this, she possessed an extremely disappointing personality.

She was a genuine otaku who boasted that her bible was the Japanese manga. And then, she was the self-proclaimed “Kousuke-san’s third wife”.

Vanessa wasn’t perturbed at all against Kousuke’s sharp remark. She sat down on a chair with a familiar attitude as though it was her own house.

‘I am Kousuke-san’s wife. In other words, I am also Doctor Emily’s relative = a member of the Grant family. Any problem?’ That was Vanessa’s claim.

※After the Berserk incident, Vanessa, who called Emily as “Doctor Grant”, now called her “Doctor” or “Doctor Emily”. A doctor was a doctor, so she wouldn’t stop calling her doctor it seemed.

「Good morning Vanessa-san. Have you eaten breakfast?」

「Good morning Sophie-san. Also everyone too. Sophie-san, I haven’t eaten breakfast yet. I’m hungry.」

The shameless Danessa-san gazed at Sophie with wanting eyes. The cool beauty, in the beginning, was nowhere to be found.

Sophie chuckled and headed to the kitchen in order to prepare a share of breakfast for Danessa.

「And, what's the matter, Vanessa? How is your work? Don't tell me, you aren't neglecting your work again, are you?」

「Seriously, you are going to get fired at this rate. Recently, the chief would contact me without fail when she couldn't find you anywhere. Try to be in my position where every time I have to listen to that person's chilly voice.」

While Emily was asking while brewing the tea for Vanessa, Kousuke was giving candid advice with reproachful eyes.

Vanessa's expression changed as though she really wanted to say 「How vexing!」 and gulped her tea. It seemed that she liked the taste because her mouth burst slightly into a smile before she spoke the objective of her visit.

「I'm not coming here to play. Kousuke-san, we wish to be at least informed of when his majesty the demon king came. He came yesterday, correct? The chief sent me here telling me to ask about that matter.」

「Eh? It's amazing that it was noticed. Even though he teleported directly inside the house and then left by teleporting again.」

Hajime teleported directly inside in consideration so that the bodyguards from the security bureau living around the house wouldn't be spooked. And yet, the security bureau also couldn't be underestimated seeing how it was exposed to them like this. Kousuke's eyes widened in admiration.

「From that reaction, as expected his majesty visited here, didn't he?」

「Geh, so that was a trap question.」

「Yes. Actually, there was a sighting report from another place. It seems that person burned down a part of a forest, so our office grasped the information from that commotion.」

「Just what is that guy doing today right after yesterday!? Or rather, what happened!?」

Yesterday Hajime said that he had a date with Shia, so he left the rest to Kousuke before leaving. It seems that after that he burned down a part of a forest in northern Britain.

Emily-chan was trembling heavily with teary eyes just from listening to the story. Even Carl and Sierra who were acquainted with Hajime said 「Uwaa」 with a creeped out look.

「The possibility is extremely high that the person will contact Kousuke-san if he is in Britain, so that's why, why did he burn the forest, what is he planning in this country? Now, Kousuke-san. ――Please spit it out.」

「Why am I being interrogated!? I don't know anything!」

「No way……. You promised the chief, right? That you would report about it when doing something in this country. The chief thought that there must be a reason that Kousuke-san didn't call, so I was expressly dispatched here like this, and yet, this is horrible. The salmon sandwich I bought while going to work for my breakfast got thrown into the shredding machine before I could eat it, and then I got chased out right from the get-go to come here. Please talk in deference to me.」

「No, seriously. Certainly, that guy came here yesterday, but it was for a different matter. I haven't got any idea at all why he would do arson. Also, the chief, she is seriously merciless toward Vanessa, huh.」

Kousuke raised a dry laugh.

By the way, the shredding machine of the security bureau that Chief Magdanese was personally supervising would shred anything.

Whether it was important documents, Vanessa’s rabbit ears hairband, Allen’s smartphone, Vanessa’s santa hat, Allen’s specially made alloy metal chip that was stuffed with the bureau’s female members’ information, Vanessa’s bible, the expensive tribute ring that Allen prepared for 「I don’t know when the ideal woman who I should give this to will appear, after all!」, or even Vanessa’s salmon sandwich, the shredding machine could turn anything and everything into pieces in one go.

Recently, in the security bureau, it was a repeated occurrence that each time the shredding machine was making a *whir whir* sound, the bureau members would twitch and tremble, wondering just whose thing was being shredded that time……

The proud iron woman of Britain mustn’t be angered.

The shredding machine of the national security bureau chief-sama was in the process of turning into her symbol.

Kousuke coughed and told Vanessa of Hajime’s objective for coming here and his request.

It was at that time that Sophie finished making breakfast and brought it to the living room, so Vanessa was listening while eating with sparkling eyes.

The crunchy and savory bread, and the syrupy melting butter. The fluffy scrambled egg, the crispy and juicy bacon.

The golden colored vegetable soup that was warming the body to the core……

「……Vanessa, are you listening?」

「Yhes? Ih’m hislening yhou nhow? Fhlease, honcinyu」

Munch munch, munch munch, hafuu~ delish-!

The way she was eating made Kousuke doubt whether she was really listening, but ‘well fine’ Kousuke continued his explanation.

When the explanation was over, Vanessa was also wiping her mouth clean with a napkin at the same time.

「I see. Kousuke-san is receiving another troublesome request with that. Ah, Sophie-san, thank you for breakfast. It was really delicious.」

「Every time I see it Vanessa-san is always eating with gusto. It makes me feel good seeing you eat happily like that.」

「I’ve shown you something embarrassing. Because of the bureau’s duty, it became a habit to eat quickly no matter what. I think that I should fix this habit, but the meal was so delicious that I unconsciously……」

「You are an investigator of the security bureau. Your body is the asset for your work, so don’t be reserved, come anytime to eat, okay?」

Based on that warm and fluffy conversation, on the contrary of her words, it seemed that she cared more about “Grant family’s breakfast” than “investigation toward the Vatican”.

investigator

As expected, perhaps this SOUSAKAN was beyond saving already.

「Vanessa……you, are you coming to eat breakfast or for work. Just which one it is, huh?」

「A superior investigator like me is able to do both simultaneously.」

「Is that so……」

Kousuke could only send a fixed stare at Vanessa who said that with a sharp expression.

「However, if that person's incident is unrelated with this then……I'm beaten. We were completely unable to grasp his trail after the forest arson. Was there no contact from that person after that?」

「No, I didn't receive any call. I'll try asking him for a bit just what he was doing.」

Kousuke called Hajime from the smartphone that was prepared for the clone in the Grant house. However, there was only the announcement of 'signal doesn't reach~' coming and the call didn't connect.

「It cannot connect……. It's a rare chance when that person is in our country, so the chief said that she wished to use this chance to give her greeting no matter what though……」

「No, it's better to stop that. After all, he is in the middle of a date with Shia-san.」

「That's……certainly.」

「Well, the plan for the conference in Japan is still not realized yet, so it's not like I don't understand the chief's feeling.」

「Yes. How the Grant family went to Japan by themselves unnoticed also caused the chief to feel plainly shocked. This matter is pretty much determined to be a matter of the highest priority, so if that person just gives the OK, the chief is planning to match that person's convenience as much as possible and head there immediately.」

「Nagumo too is busy with various things, after all. It's sad that this matter for that guy isn't that high on his priorities.」

For Hajime, there wasn't much merit for him to have a connection with Britain's security bureau. If it was about connections, then it was enough to just go through Kousuke. Hajime was entrusting Kousuke with that responsibility.

And so, Hajime's priority was his own projects, and the simplification of the gate to go to Tortus, and then the troublesome matter that was actually befalling him……it would be great if it was something like that, but for Hajime, this matter was at the level of a happy family activity > meeting with the chief-san.

So far as it went, Hajime himself had set up a day several times where it was convenient for him, but the timing was bad, and it was Chief Magdanese who was unable to match the schedule no matter what at those occasions.

After all, the connection with Hajime would only be in her position as the security bureau chief, so she wouldn't be acting as the representative of Britain's government. If she carelessly spread the connection with the Nagumo family and some fellow who meddled with them appeared, that would affect the national security with certainty.

Within her overlapping busy schedules, Chief Magdanese had to act in a way where her surroundings wouldn't suspect her. What's more, she had to be absolutely secretive before

she could go outside the country for the conference with the demon king.

Because of that, the schedules of the two sides kept missing each other, and the current situation was where there was still no prospect for a conference.

「It can't be helped. I'll report to the chief exactly what I was told here. Although, we will want to hear about the circumstance of the arson, so if that person contacts you, will Kousuke-san please notify us?」

「Hm, well, I'll do that. As expected, I'm also curious.」

When the talk came to a stop, Vanessa more or less also had the self-awareness that she was in the middle of work, so she stood up from her seat. She was planning to return to the bureau and give her report quickly.

「Regarding the Vatican, I don't think that we will be able to be of assistance, but just in case, I'll report this to the chief too. Also, if it's information regarding the company, we too are able to get our hands on it easily, so if we understand something from our side, we will notify you.」

「About the company, it seems Nagumo will take care of it himself, so I think it will be fine, but……I guess I'll depend on you.」

Vanessa nodded, then she said 「Well then everyone, let's meet again at dinner」 full of motivation to pester for dinner while leaving.

But, at that timing, Kousuke's expression suddenly stiffened, and he stopped moving.

「Kousuke? What's the matter? Have you snapped seeing Vanessa's shamelessness?」

Emily tilted her head and asked. But Kousuke didn't react even to her question. He was staring at the empty air without a single twitch.

「Kousuke-san?」

「Oi oi, just what's the matter?」

The expression of Vanessa and Carl became dubious. Sophie and Sierra were also gradually looking worried.

「He, hey, Kousuke? What's wrong? Answer me, please!」

Emily's voice finally turned anxious while her hands were shaking Kousuke's shoulders.

There, Kousuke's gaze finally moved toward Emily as though he finally came back to life, and he opened his mouth.

「-, there was a bit of something with my real body. Right now, he is around the Vatican's……perhaps it's a library or a monastery I think, but……it exploded a bit.」

It seemed something happened with the real body. His words were a bit ambiguous because he instantly saw Emily's expression, and so he spoke in a way to not worry her excessively.

Though it seemed that it brought the opposite effect, for Emily and the others, it instead became the basis of an image of a serious situation. Everyone's expression was tense from the sudden serious atmosphere that visited.

Although, this was about Kousuke. From the point of view of Emily and the others, he was the fanciful strongest hero that was outside common sense. There was no way anything bad would happen to him.

And so, they were watching Kousuke’s condition with a vaguely optimistic feeling, but……

That feeling was literally pulverized like an illusion.

「-!? What!? Red mist!? Is it poison gas!? Shit-, it’s one thing after another!」

Perhaps Kousuke had no leeway to really control the clone. Most likely, the clone was tracing the words from the real body as they were, conveying the urgent situation.

And then, time flowed for a bit with the situation still being unknown……

Suddenly, the clone body slipped out faint words with his gaze still directed at empty air.

――Sorry for making a stupid choice.

Surely those words weren’t something that Kousuke actually wanted to convey to Emily and the others through his clone. Surely, it was the feeling inside his heart leaking out.

With that small voice as the last, Kousuke――

Vanished.

「Eh?」

It was the dumbfounded voice of Emily. Her expression said that she didn’t understand at all what happened.

But, the reality was right before her eyes.

No, there was none.

Kousuke, the clone of Kousuke who was always beside her, had vanished.

「Eh? Eh? Kou, suke?」

There was no one who responded even when she called.

Her mind was still unable to catch up with reality.

Because this was strange. Kousuke’s clone body was excellent. As long as it wasn’t lethally wounded or Kousuke himself still existed, it wouldn’t vanish that easily.

And then, the clone body in this Grant house was for Emily’s protection. Even though he had to hold the burden that couldn’t be made light of from the routine magic power consumption, Kousuke had never erased this clone body no matter what.

Therefore, in other words, this was……

The proof that “something” happened to Kousuke that caused him to be unable to maintain his clone body.

「–!!!? Kousuke! Kousuke-!!」

Emily whose thought process finally reached that stage became panicked and raised her voice.

「-. Please calm down, doctor!」

「There is no way I can calm down! Kousuke is-, something happened to Kousuke!」

Seeing Emily who completely lost herself, Vanessa who was also stiffening seemed to recover her calm slightly instead.

She strongly grasped the shoulders of the deranged Emily who was shaking her head in denial.

「EMILY GRANT-!!!」

「――」

She called her name strongly. As though to make her come back to her senses.

Emily twitched in reaction to the voice of Vanessa that was filled with a dominating aura. After that, the focus of her eyes was finally returning.

「Vanessa……」

「Please calm down. Doctor Emily, nothing will be solved even if you panic.」

The expression and voice of the cool-headed and professional Vanessa that she met in the very beginning made Emily recover her calm for sure this time.

Emily took a deep breath. She sent Vanessa a gaze with eyes that had recovered their strong radiance, and she opened her mouth.

「Vanessa, what do you think we should do?」

Vanessa nodded once toward those words. While Sophie, Carl, and also Sierra were staring at Vanessa with held breath, she answered.

「What we know right now is that Kousuke-san’s main body is at the Vatican, and something happened there. And then

there is a high possibility that even the common tourists are witnessing that “something”.

Ah, I see. Kousuke said that he was around a place like the Vatican’s library or monastery before.

Carl and the others also hummed in agreement and continued.

He also said something about an explosion. The Vatican garden adjacent to it is a tourist attraction. Although it can be visited only on a subscription basis, at this time there should be some tourists there.

It’s something so great that it made Kousuke-kun lose composure. It could be that the tourists at the cathedral, the plaza, or the art museum also noticed the explosion.

I see. What Vanessa-san wishes to say is that gathering information is simple, isn’t that right?[

‘Exactly’, Vanessa nodded. Before long, the commotion that occurred in the Vatican would surely be broadcasted. At the very least, the objective fact of “An explosion occurred inside the Vatican” should be reported grandly. If they coordinated with the intelligence department, they should be able to obtain quite a lot of information.

Anyway, I will report to the chief. If it’s the chief, she will surely obtain information somehow about what happened to Kousuke-san. Although, personally I’m not that worried. Even if he is unable to maintain his clone, if it’s that Kousuke-san, then he will surely get in touch with us no matter what kind of situation it is.

……Yes. Yes, you’re right, Vanessa!

This was the hero that they believed in. He was going to be absolutely all right. Yes, she strongly believed that.

「The problem was on our side instead. I think it will be all right, but now that the absolute protector Kousuke-san is gone, what's going to happen to the Grant family……」

「Is there a possibility of us being targeted?」

Vanessa shook her head at Carl's question that was asked with a grave voice.

「No, currently there is no sign of anything like that. Just as we told you all some time ago, we made it so that everyone thought that the Berserk incident has come to an end, so there is no problem. Although, there is something on my mind. The reason Kousuke-san headed to the Vatican.」

「……It was because the Vatican is gathering information on the "returnees".」

「Yes. And then, there is the uproar this time. It will be fine if this is just me overthinking it, but we shouldn't be taking an optimistic view. Doctor, also everyone else. I recommend everyone to evacuate temporarily to the security bureau for the time being.」

Certainly, if this was a case that was related with the "returnees", not just Kousuke, even the Grant family that was connected to the Nagumo family which is the core of the "returnees" might be affected in some way. Such a possibility couldn't be said not to exist.

In the end, it was only on the level of "just in case", but nothing could beat being prepared.

「Yes. I agree with Vanessa’s suggestion. It also seems like the information about Kousuke will reach the security bureau faster, so it will be smoother to rely on the security bureau’s strength to decide how we should act from here on.」

「……You’re right. There is also the chance of the worst case scenario. Vanessa-san, my apologies, but can we depend on you?」

「Of course. I will also contact the bodyguards in the vicinity, so everyone, please make your preparations.」

Vanessa who was promptly taking action was an active elite investigator who was excellent as expected. She made calls one after another, reported to Chief Magdanese too, and concluded the arrangements quickly.

Several bodyguards from the security bureau who were living around the Grant house gathered, pretending that they would have a fun outing together with the neighbors to deepen their relationships. It looked like they were clamorously enjoying themselves when seen from the side; however, they were nervous inside their hearts. The group departed toward the security bureau.

–

–

–

A virtuous looking man who was watering the garden in front of a certain house, a male worker who was cleaning the street, an old man walking his dog, a young woman jogging——they were staring fixedly at the car procession of Emily and the others.

–

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

For some reason, it became like the latter part of a prologue.

The story didn’t progress, and I’m sorry (sweat).

There were a lot of questions in the review column, so I’ll explain.

About the timeline of the school trip. I’m thinking of making the school trip arc happen after the Vatican arc.

And so, about the little girl onmyouji (?) who appeared for a bit, Kousuke hasn’t met her yet.

I’m thinking of writing it someday, so at that time it will help if you readers think of it as happening after the Vatican arc.

–

PS

Thank you very much for the many suggestions for the Fleur Knights candidates!

‘Ah, come to think of it…’ There are also characters who I noticed like that, and they are greatly of use as references.

I want to introduce the rank eighth and ninth when I’m writing about the Fleur Knights again.

Also, from the review, I noticed that the previous chapter was the 300th chapter.

Thank you very much for the congratulatory comments!

–

PS2

Just in case, I also wrote this at the beginning of the previous arc, so please pay attention.

This work is——fictional! It’s completely unrelated with actual organizations, countries, or institutions!

The Vatican came out here, but it’s the Vatican of a fictional world.

Please be understanding even if the facility or section that originally doesn’t exist in reality appears.

Please be so kind as to put on your mind filter.\

Arifureta Chapter 302

Arifureta After III Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2 Dear Sir, Nagumo-sama. The Vatican Is Really Bad News, Seriously

---

A little bit before Emily and the others witnessed Kousuke's disappearance and went to the security bureau.

Kousuke who arrived in Roma late at night was staying in a cheap hotel like when he was in Britain.

Although it wasn't like before where it was really a worn out hotel, this hotel was cheap, its quality was fine, and it seemed able to cure the body that was a bit tired from the long flight by sleeping throughout the night.

Especially when there were no gunfights that were started upstairs, or an intruder breaking in through the window and entering like a Hollywood movie. Kousuke welcomed the morning safely and finished his preparations quickly before leaving the hotel.

And then, he was enjoying the pleasant morning sun and air of the foreign country while, for the time being, he entered a

café to have breakfast because one couldn’t fight with an empty stomach.

「Well, it’s not like I’m going to war. It’s still the first day, so I’ll look around the location while sightseeing at the same time.」

Kousuke talked to himself like that while deciding the menu.

The waiter wouldn’t notice even if he called out, so he went by himself to order.

The café’s auntie who only noticed that there was a Japanese customer after her shoulder was tapped showed a shocked expression, but Kousuke didn’t pay it any mind because he was a man of experience. In stealth.

He ordered a set consisting of a croissant, salad, and several kinds of thinly sliced ham. And then a cup of cappuccino.

It wasn’t a salmon sandwich. It wasn’t, a salmon sandwich. It wasn’t-!

「Oh? This cappuccino……it’s delicious.」

The cappuccino was exquisite. Inside the relieving gentle sweetness, a subtle bitterness could be felt, making him feel like he could keep drinking many cups of it. The croissant wasn’t bad either. It was crispy and fluffy, with an aromatic fragrance that delighted him.

「Yup, I only entered randomly, but I hit the jackpot. Though they don’t have a salmon sandwich here.」

His seat was beside the window, so he brought his breakfast to his mouth while gazing at the townscape of Roma.

The beautiful streets of stone pavement, and the buildings that were overflowing with atmosphere. There was no high-rise building to protect the scenery, which made him feel like he was slipping into a fantasy world. The atmosphere somehow reminded him of Tortus.

Naturally, what crossed the back of his mind was his lover, the rabbit-eared Onee-san. At the next “gate opening”, she would fully stay at the Endo family house.

Her staying here would also be a type of test in for preparation when the “this and that” related to Hauria on Tortus has also calmed down to a certain degree and they built their base on this side. So she would come here together with several other Hauria.

Although his family would also be there, he would be living together with Rana……

His wild delusions swelled out.

And then, Emily-chan flew into his delusions as though an interception.

□……□

He had finished introducing Emily to his family too, and his family had already accepted her. The Grant family had also accepted Kousuke as their family.

He had no intention of washing it away.

He had no such intention, but……actually, until now Kousuke still hadn’t conveyed his feelings to Emily clearly with words.

Even though his surroundings were approving, the Japanese sensitivity that had been cultivated within himself since he was born was smoldering. He was unable to express the feelings inside himself using words. It would also be fine if there was some kind of impetus that broke through him cleanly but……

「No, that's just my excuse. It's only me being simply good-for-nothing……」

He mocked himself while bringing the cappuccino to his mouth and looking at Emily using the information sharing ability of his clone body. But, the cup was already empty.

Wondering just what he was doing indulging in reverie even though he was coming for a mission, the self-deprecating smile on Kousuke's lips became even deeper. He then decided for the time being to order another cup of this delicious cappuccino that he encountered on this trip.

「Excuse me~. Another cup please.」

Naturally, no one noticed him.

He walked briskly and tapped on the auntie's shoulder once more.

「Hih!? Who!?」

「……It's the Japanese customer who ordered just now. Can I ask for another portion of cappuccino and croissant?」

After a moment, the auntie smiled while saying 「Oh my, geez, I'm so forgetful!」 to cover up her mistake before she hurriedly began to prepare Kousuke's order. She was an auntie with a plump body and good-natured face, so he

couldn’t hate her no matter what. Although, in the first place, he was used to this treatment, so he wasn’t angry.

Kousuke returned to his seat looking a bit dejected as usual. He stared at the townscape with a feeling that was different from before. The face of Kousuke who was getting a distant look when seen from the side was giving off a sorrow that was unexpected to be coming from a teenager.

「Here, enjoy. Cappuccino and croissant……」

「Ah, two of them.」

「Yes♪」

Surely the auntie understood that Kousuke liked the croissant because she took out two croissants from her basket that looked somewhat bigger and placed it on his plate in a pleasant mood.

And then, perhaps to cover up how she had forgotten Kousuke’s existence just now, or perhaps she was merely curious, the auntie didn’t leave right away and talked with Kousuke who was biting into the croissant in delight.

「You look really young. Are you with your family?」

「Aa~, no, I’m alone.」

「My! You are still in your first year of middle school, right? Could it be you are an overseas student?」

「No no, I’m sightseeing here. I’m planning on going to the Vatican after this. Also, I’m 18.」

「Oh my, forgive me! It’s hard to understand the age of Japanese people……」

The auntie flapped her hand looking like 「Good grief me」, and then she began to talk about various things. Perhaps it was a universal truth that all aunties liked to talk, or perhaps, it was just that this auntie liked to talk.

Kousuke got the feeling that it was the latter case while politely listening.

Since coming home to Earth, Kousuke's footwork was light, and his trips abroad were increasing in frequency. He was enjoying the encounters in the middle of his trips——whether it was with people, things, or anything. And so, Kousuke also liked people who liked to talk.

Such auntie was teaching Kousuke about the sightseeing spots in the Vatican, the efficient route, the delicious restaurant, and a little-known good sightseeing spot in a practiced way.

「Anyway, that place is completely crowded, so I recommend you go early in the morning if you want to go up to the dome. In general, the place is already packed full slightly before eleven o'clock.」

「I see. I'll keep that in mind.」

By the way, what the dome here referred to——was about the dome of the Cathedral San Pierro. It was a lovely place where people could take an unobstructed view of Rome and the Vatican, but it was a cramped place, so people often would have to wait when it became crowded.

Kousuke, who had finished his breakfast and drank the rest of the cappuccino, stood up thinking that he should depart soon.

「Also you see——」

「……」

The auntie who loved to talk seemed to continue talking. Was Kousuke a really good listener?

He was unable to say that it was enough already clearly. Kousuke whose act was typical for a Japanese citizen in a sense sat back down.

「Recently, it looks like there are a lot of tourists here.」

「? Will there be something happening soon in the future?」

「No. There isn’t any plan like that. That’s why it’s strange. From what I heard, it seems that in these few months the average number of tourists is increasing by 1.5 times.」

This auntie incredibly loved to talk. He wondered just where she got that data.

There was no immigration and emigration process to enter the Vatican. There was also Vatican personnel that were coming back and forth between Roma, so perhaps it was because of that.

Then the auntie lowered her voice slightly 「Also」 while bringing her face closer to Kousuke and said.

「The people who were coming here for sightseeing a few months ago, it looks like they are visiting here repeatedly with an amazing frequency.」

「They are visiting the same place?」

The auntie nodded. It seemed that it was information that was obtained from the network of the local citizens who put their roots in Rome. When he asked, it seemed there were a

great number of such tourists among the customers who were visiting this café and the restaurants of the auntie’s acquaintances.

There was also a possibility that those people were staying here for long periods because of work, but their appearance seemed to consist of normal couples, family, or a group of friends who came sightseeing.

Certainly, it was a strange story.

Although, there was also the possibility of a celebrity posting things about Rome or the Vatican on their SNS account, causing the topic to become popular temporarily.

In fact, it seemed the auntie also thought that was the cause.

「I thought that you came here also because of that……」

「Aa~, no, I’m not. Or rather, I have never heard anything like that on the internet though.」

「Isn’t that right? I also tried investigating what kind of celebrity is popularizing this area, but I didn’t find anything like that at all. I was thinking of having you tell me if you knew about it, but……it’s unfortunate.」

This auntie didn’t just like to talk; it appeared she was also a rumor lover & gossip lover & investigation lover.

Kousuke smiled wryly while saying 「I’m sorry for not meeting your expectation」, and then the auntie finally noticed that Kousuke had finished his breakfast since a while ago and 「My, good grief me, I got too absorbed in talking!」 . She flapped her hand while showing an embarrassed smile.

Kousuke paid the bill and headed to the Vatican while thinking that he had just heard a strange story first thing in the morning.

It was a rare chance, so he tried slowly experiencing walking through the “Via della Conciliazione” where the cathedral was visible ahead. His smartphone’s camera kept making clicking sounds.

He would show it to his family when he returned home. He also took a selfie. Currently, a supernatural phenomenon like the camera failing to capture Kousuke’s image had never happened.

Before long, the plaza and obelisk of San Pietro came into view. There he could see the Swiss Guard standing gallantly with a colorful outfit and stiff posture and the tourists who were visiting early.

「Oo……as expected it’s a great view.」

The cathedral in front of him went without saying. The line of pillared corridors with several hundred trees surrounding the plaza, and then more than a hundred saint statues lining up above it were also stunning.

「It can’t be helped that I have to hurry because of the mission, but……as I thought, it’s better to come to this kind of place in a group rather than alone.」

He didn’t hate traveling alone, but as expected it was better if there was a friend, family, or lover to speak their impressions to and share the feeling. Kousuke looked around at the tourists around him while speaking to himself feeling a bit lonely.

Putting that aside, he changed his feelings while subtly tensing his expression.

「……The auntie said that it would be crowded around 11 o’clock, but……there is already quite a lot of people here.」

It appeared that the story about the number of tourists suddenly increasing was a fact. Even though the time was still around nine o’clock, quite a large crowd had formed.

Kousuke pulled himself back together and thought a bit 「Now then, what to do from here」.

Actually, some time ago he tried to contact Hajime to ask him to confirm the location of the person who stole the information from the aforementioned company, but the signal didn’t connect.

In the first place, they didn’t know if the thief was really from the Vatican, so this was to confirm it for sure. If it was true, then it would be easy to investigate.

Although, it was pointless to plead for something that didn’t exist. In his first plan, he was thinking of climbing the dome to take a birds-eye-view of the whole place, but……

When he looked, there was already a line formed in front of the entrance to the dome.

「It’s not like I can just climb physically, but……」

There were two ways to get up to the dome. First, was to climb using an elevator to go midway and then continue to climb using stairs, or climb using the stairs right from the start. However, there would be more than 500 steps if people used the stairs right from the start, so most people used the elevator.

Although, even after using the elevator, people would still need to climb more than 300 steps. In addition, the stairs would get narrower the more one climbed higher.

If it was Kousuke, then he could climb without feeling bothered by that, but even so, this situation wasn’t suited to looking around at the surrounding without rushing.

「H~m. Well, I’m here already, so let’s wait while also sightseeing a bit.」

He would try waiting for one or two hours. If it looked like the queue wasn’t smooth at all, he would use the outer wall and climb up physically. He was thinking of such absurd thoughts while changing his smartphone into selfie mode and walking forward.

–

–

–

About two hours later.

Kousuke whose heart was completely stolen by the solemn and wonderful works of art and structures returned to his senses suddenly due to the hunger that he slightly felt.

「Crap. I was completely absorbed. Even though I’m in the middle of a mission, I was sightseeing like normal instead. ……How terrifying, Vatican. It’s too beautiful.」

Kousuke pretended to wipe the sweat that didn’t even come out.

It wasn’t like he would get scolded by doing this, but somehow it felt like he would get rebuked 「What are you doing slacking off like that?」 by Hajime, so he tried to cover it up by acting like a completely timid person.

It wasn’t like he was going around looking at everything, but he had gone around for quite a while to the places that were open to the public, so he thought that he should soon start infiltrating for real under the pretense of “I’m just normally intruding here, any problem?” and acted to realize that.

But, at that time,

「Hm?」

Kousuke stopped moving from the strange presence that he suddenly felt. He closed his eyes to concentrate a bit, and then his gaze turned to under his feet――more accurately, toward the ground as though he saw through to the underground.

「There is an underground passage? Well, it seems underneath the cathedral is a tomb, and it’s not strange even if there is an underground passage that isn’t open for public, but……」

The problem was the current location of Kousuke and the direction the person walking underground was heading to.

「……An underground passage that is connected to the outside, huh.」

Yes, Kousuke right now was at the edge of the northwestern side of the Vatican’s art museum. And then, the person walking underground was heading to the north without stopping. It was obvious that there was an underground passage that was connecting the outside and inside.

Kousuke, who got interested, went outside through the door of the Vatican’s art museum, and then he followed the direction of where the person underground was heading to.

Not much time had passed before he arrived at a slightly old four-story building standing inconspicuously between buildings. The first floor seemed to be a general store, where it looked like the item selection, and the shopkeeper had no motivation.

Perhaps the upper floors were for living places. Even though it was the afternoon, the curtain was closed, and the situation inside couldn’t be observed.

Because it was close to the tourist attraction spot, quite a lot of people were passing by, but no one even turned their gaze toward the general store.

That was how inconspicuous and quiet the atmosphere of the building was.

「……The person went up huh. Directly to the fourth floor without even showing themselves.」

Kousuke was observing the general store from the other side of the street without particularly hiding it. He sensed the presence of the person underground going up the aforementioned building.

When he tried detecting the presence inside, it seemed there was no one on the second and third floor, but there was just one person on the fourth floor.

For now, he would try searching inside. Deciding that, Kousuke was going to move, but before he could a person appeared a few meters beside him crossing the street.

He casually turned his gaze toward that person. It was a young man with hair of an ash brown color and a face that looked really sullen, and his height was around 170 cm. He was wearing really normal looking trousers and a hoodie while carrying a large leather rucksack on his back.

「……」

After taking a glance at him, he looked like a local without anything particularly standing out, so he could also be thought of as a tourist.

But, Kousuke understood. At the very least, this young man wasn’t someone with a respectable occupation.

The way he moved and the motion of his gaze showed it. It was the atmosphere enveloping him that especially gave the feeling of “someone familiar with fighting”. It wasn’t a sense that was grounded from a definite basis, but Kousuke, who had survived through the carnage on Tortus, somehow understood it.

As expected, the young man watched his surroundings slightly before entering into the aforementioned general store with a nonchalant face.

He then chatted for a bit with the shop owner who looked unmotivated.

「Nice timing there.」

Kousuke started walking toward the general store with a faint smile.

He entered the store casually.

Normally, Kousuke would be able to enter inside without anyone paying attention even without him doing anything. In fact, even though Kousuke felt a bit down at that fact, he still entered the store without doubting that fact, but……

Here, unexpectedly,

「……」

「——tsu」

The young man saw Kousuke.

It wasn’t that his gaze was accidentally directed at Kousuke. He detected someone entering the store, and his gaze moved toward Kousuke accurately.

Kousuke praised himself at how he was able to stop the bewilderment inside his heart from showing on his face.

He headed toward the spot where a drink was being sold inside the store without missing a beat.

(He noticed me? Certainly, I didn’t even use invisibility, but……seriously?)

Inside his heart, 「This isn’t the time to feel happy, isn’t it, me!」 he calmed his heart like that while thinning his presence bit by bit by reinforcing his invisibility.

The gaze that was fixed on him slowly moved away.

「? What’s the matter, Aziz?」

「……Nothing. I’m going.」

「Yeah, good work.」

Their conversation continued with a naturalness as though no one else was there. The young man called Aziz then went up the stairs inside the store.

Kousuke normally followed behind him.

The store owner looked as though he didn’t even notice him as he passed by him. Kousuke’s invisibility was in a different dimension from Presence Isolation. It was something that truly should be called “Presence Thinning”. In a situation where he was seriously turning invisible, it would become something dreadful to the point where a normal person wouldn’t notice even when he waved his hand in front of their eyes.

「……?」

(Seriously!? He isn’t noticing me, but this guy, he is at least feeling something out of place!)

The young man suddenly turned around inside the cramped staircase and tilted his head. Kousuke immediately leapt up to the ceiling and stuck there, so the young man’s gaze didn’t find him.

「Is it……just my imagination?」

The young man muttered that and shook his head. His sullen face became even more sullen in discontent while he rushed up to the fourth floor as though to pull himself together.

(From Nagumo’s story, the guy who stole the information about us from the Reletense Company wore a tight coat and mask and also used a primitive weapon. Well, there is no way he can keep walking dressing like that though……)

If that person immediately returned by riding an airplane after attacking the company, then the timing would match. Kousuke raised his vigilance while muttering inside his heart.

There was only one door on the fourth floor. The young man called out 「……It's Aziz」 in front of the door.

「Aziz. Welcome back, I thought you would come soon.」

The one who opened the door was a woman with the atmosphere of a refined lady, looking like she was around sixty years old. With her gentle look, it felt like she would be called "mother" by those who were close to her even if they were unrelated.

The door was opened largely, and the woman moved aside to welcome in the young man.

Kousuke also slipped in following Aziz's timing.

「……」

「Welcome back, Aziz. ……? What's the matter?」

Inside the room, there was one more person, a man with a masculine look around the middle of his thirties. Seeing Aziz look around restlessly with a suspicious gaze the moment he entered the room, his expression turned doubtful, and he asked the young man.

「No. It feels like someone has been watching me since some time ago.」

「……Since it's you who possess outstandingly sharp senses saying that, then I cannot just deny that out of hand,

but……no matter how you look, there is only us here, you know?」

No, there was another on the ceiling, clinging there.

Though, of course, that person didn’t say that. Although, the senses of the young man below were really worthy of praise.

(This guy is seriously not normal. To be able to notice something is out of place even when I turn invisible.)

Kousuke was feeling more nervous than usual. Below, the man stroked his chin while opening his mouth.

「Could it be that there is a hidden camera here?」

「My. Leda-kun. If it’s about that, the regular inspection had just been done yesterday, you know?」

「If Madam Maya had checked, then surely there is no doubt about it……」

Kousuke thought. ‘Doing regular checks for hidden cameras regularly, these guys aren’t normal as expected’.

This building was connected to the Vatican through an underground passage……. Just who in the world are these people he wondered.

He didn’t know if these people were related to what he should investigate, but at the very least, they would make a nice starting point. It could be said that he hit the jackpot.

Kousuke used all his effort to turn invisible and held his breath. Ahead of his gaze, the conversation of this unknown and not normal people was continuing.

「Well, we will be careful just in case. Even so, I will leave after this for work though.」

「……Recently, there is a lot of work, isn't there?」

「Yeah. I'm sick of it, really. What about you Aziz? If I remember right, you were investigating the danger level of that ancient ruin, right?」

「Yes. That was the work of the management department.」

「I see. Recently, it's not just worshippers, but even corporations are also getting active……it will be great if it's just a normal relic.」

「The possibility that there are worshippers in that company is by no means small.」

「……It's only bad news that they are coming from all over the world. These people who are searching for salvation even though they understand that it's a temptation that goes against god, they will be inevitably increasing in number.」

The man named Leda shook his head with a dark gaze.

「……I think it can't be helped to think that the cause is the returnees.」

Kousuke was startled by Aziz's words. It was a grand jackpot. It seemed that this was a bingo.

Maya who was silently listening to the conversation of the two spoke with a slightly rebuking tone.

「Aziz. Jumping at shadows can become our greatest pitfall. We shouldn't speak uncertain words.」

「But……what those guys did to our comrade」

「Certainly that's true, but in the end, there is no one dead. Isn't that also proof that they have a conscience?」

「……」

Young man Aziz sullenly fell silent looking like he wasn't convinced at all. It seemed that looking expressionlessly sullen was his default look, but right now, he was definitely in a bad mood――or rather, he seemed to be sulking.

Seeing that the opinions of Maya and Aziz about themselves, the returnees, were in opposition of each other, Kousuke was at a loss of how to judge their position.

Perhaps, the Vatican and the people affiliated with it were gathering their information to try to meddle with them. Such a suspicion was somewhat mollified by the peaceful and rational words of the woman called Maya.

Aziz who was childishly unable to hide his displeasure and Maya who looked troubled.

Leda was making a wry smile toward those two. In order to slightly back up Aziz who was at a disadvantage, he spoke while shouldering the baggage.

「Well, there is no doubt that that disquieting matter was increasing around the time of these returnees' return. Their mysteriousness and their strength that even us cannot approach……it's not unreasonable for Aziz to be alert against them when he is thinking about his family.」

「Certainly that is true.」

Maya’s expression was looking even more troubled. Leda opened the door with a teasing expression and spoke when he passed Aziz by.

「Besides, Aziz doesn’t want his beloved “big sis” to come near such fellows, right?」

「Leda-san!」

Young man Aziz’s voice clearly contained anger. Leda said 「Oo, scary! Scary!」 and dramatically averted his face to hide his expression, and then he said 「See you」 and left.

「I hate how that person likes to make fun of others.」

「H~m, Leda too was a stiff and serious child in the past though.」

The sensitive atmosphere from before changed completely into a calm one.

Aziz turned on his heels and signaled Maya with his gaze. Maya nodded and circled to behind the desk inside the room and pulled several drawers of the desk out halfway.

And then, in the end, she tapped the corner of the desk lightly.

Right after that, *gakon* there was a sound of something coming off. Aziz pushed the wall inside the room and the wall sunk inside. It seemed that it became a sliding door. After the wall was shifted to the side, there was a cramped staircase going down that could only be accessed one person at a time.

Aziz quickly slipped into the cramped staircase that was located between walls. He only nodded with a gaze at Maya

who was waving her hand to him while smiling and quickly closed the door.

(As expected, it’s so cramped that it’s impossible to slip inside together.)

Kousuke, who was still clinging to the ceiling, turned his gaze toward the desk. He had at least confirmed the procedure clearly, but he wasn’t clear with the extent of how much the drawers had to be pulled. In the case that it was measured in millimeters, it would be quite troublesome to try it himself.

(It would be great if that Maya person would also leave though……)

Most likely that would be asking too much. This place was most likely the outside house and also the base of these people who were affiliated with the Vatican. This Madam Maya seemed to be the manager here. It was hard to imagine that she would easily leave this place.

(Let’s hope she isn’t as sharp as Aziz-kun.)

Kousuke prayed so inside his heart while using the opening when Maya took her gaze off of the wall of the hidden passage to land down in front of it.

And then, he quickly summoned a clone on the other side of the wall. Furthermore, using Hajime’s specially made artifact, he switched positions along with the space with his clone before erasing the clone that appeared inside the room.

In exchange, a black stone with a small glint fell on the floor with a plop.

——Abyss-style Air Ninja Art Banei no Kagerou (TN: Banei no Kagerou = Heat haze of myriad shadows)

By the way, this substitute technique that was making use of a one-time use artifact was previously named “
I exist in the place that I seek
Banchi Zaikuu”. The lord’s skill name would change depending on his mood at the time! (TN: Banchi Zaikuu = Myriad earth empty existence)

Kousuke who entered inside the hidden passage was following behind Aziz while keeping a distance from him.

(Even so, it’s deep huh……)

From his instincts, it felt like the staircase descended down to two floors below ground level.

When he investigated using the compass while advancing, as expected this underground passage was heading toward the inside of the Vatican. After advancing for around 200 meters, there was a corner that was heading to the west. If the measurement he calculated inside his brain was correct, it directly passed through below the Vatican’s art museum in a straight line from the outside, and midway through the passage stretched in the direction of the Vatican’s garden.

Before long, Aziz, who had advanced to the end of the underground passage, faced the wall there and put his palm on it.

A mechanical light scanned his palm. *Kashun* a numeric keypad appeared. He typed in the password. *Vin* it made such a sound, and the floor slid. A staircase that headed further underground appeared.

(Why is only that place modern huh!?)

Kousuke made a tsukkomi in his heart.

After Aziz passed through, Kousuke also slipped through the floor using the same pseudo substitute technique as before toward the staircase.

After going down the stairs that felt one floor below, a thick metal door appeared. It was a double leaf door that could slide to the left and right. A large cross was carved in the middle.

(Finally, I arrived at the headquarters of this mysterious group.)

Following after Aziz inside the opened door, Kousuke also slipped in.

The space inside was surprisingly wide. First, the ceiling was stupidly high. He guessed that it reached 15 meters. Thick pillars were lining up in systematic order; the width and length of the space was also very spacious. The place was basically made from stone with the vital spots reinforced by metal.

A lot of people wearing habits were moving around busily. After looking carefully, there were passages on the sides of this space’s wall.

It was an underground space that was like the smaller version of Tokyo’s outer floodway that was remade in a middle-age style.

(Seriously……the position, it’s right under the forest in the middle of the art museum and the monastery. To think there is this kind of huge space here.)

Kousuke who was overwhelmed for a while went ‘hah’ and returned to his senses seeing people passing him nearby.

(If it’s this scale, the possibility that someone who doesn’t belong to the Vatican making this underground passage secretly and planning something not good……isn’t likely huh. There is no way the Vatican side won’t notice this.)

In other words, this must be a facility of something for an organization within the Vatican that wasn’t made public.

Kousuke weaved through the people and carefully advanced forward.

Everything that his sight caught was interesting.

The people wearing habits were doing something like crafting work on several large stands.

What their hands were holding was,

(Baton? Also……isn’t that an assassin blade thing? I saw it before in a movie! That’s, chain? Uwaa, are they engraving cross seals on every single ring of the chain? That one…… bow gun huh? Oi oi, they are coating the arrow with a strange liquid though!? These guys are clergyman, aren’t they!? They are clearly making dangerous weapons though!?)

Inside Kousuke was making a storm of tsukkomis with the dangerous looking middle age weaponry on parade.

Other than that, there were people intently making a written copy of a large and old book that looked like it would crumble anytime, and then even though it was underground, there was a furnace and a person who was blacksmithing, people who were meeting or perhaps having

a lecture while writing something on a thing that was like a blackboard, and people who were holding the weapons created by the previous people while having a mock battle. “Scenes that weren’t normal” were pressing on Kousuke like surging waves.

It was as though he was taking a trip to another world, or getting into a time slip to the middle ages period.

(Dear sir, Nagumo-sama. This is really bad. The Vatican is really bad news, seriously. An outrageous secret is hiding underground here.)

Inside his heart, Kousuke was weeping 「I wanna go home already. I wanna eat Emily’s apple pie……」.

When he was fighting the security bureau, inside his heart, he was also feeling really fed up, but even so, he got some composure in his heart. Their organization, actions, and equipment were extremely within the realm of reality and common sense after all.

To think that right after he infiltrated here, that common sense would receive a beating like this. He had never even imagined it.

What’s more. Since some time ago his senses felt helplessly itchy. He was thinking that it was this unrealistic space that was making him feel that, but the people coming and going——especially the people who seemed to be training——when he looked at them, he felt a strange déjà vu.

It felt indescribably strange like he knew them really well, but he didn’t.

Like that, he was advancing deeper inside while somewhat escaping from reality. Then he came to see an atrium that had a second and third floor. The deepest wall was shaved and made into a cloister while rooms were made inside the stone wall.

On both sides, there were spiral staircases made along the pillars; furthermore, there was an elevator right in the front. It was an old type with an iron barred fence and steel cage that was pulled by wire.

Both the staircase and elevator went through the ceiling and stretched up above. Most likely, it was going to the surface.

When he noticed the presence of the young man Aziz, he was inside the front room on the third floor.

It seemed that his attention was diverted from Aziz while he was being bewildered by this space’s absurdity.

He blundered. Kousuke hurriedly went to the third floor to gather information.

But, before that, he caught sight of a strange person and his legs stopped.

(……? What is he doing?)

That person was a youth on the latter half of his teenage years. He was looking up fixedly at the room that Aziz entered. What caught Kousuke’s attention was his expression rather than his action.

He was terrifyingly expressionless, but it felt like there was a disquieting shadow that was like malice or hostility that flickered inside his eyes.

The youth suddenly looked at his wristwatch. He then made a terrifyingly faint smile and entered one of the side passages, for some reason, and lowered his body low on the ground near the wall.

It was as though, yes, as though,

「……Anti-shock posture?」

Kousuke murmured that. He got goosebumps.

Instantly, there was a terrible explosive sound. And then a raging shockwave.

「GUaAAAAAAH!?」

It was unclear who screamed. Was it Kousuke or other people?

His senses were agitated, for an instant, and he fell into unconsciousness. He didn’t even have time to feel aware of his own body getting blown away. His body was struck several times, and in the end, his back collided with the wall and Kousuke finally stopped.

「Kahah!? Tsu, what-, happened!?」

The air in his lung was forcefully ejected due to the impact, and his breathing was thrown out of order, but he scolded his numb body and immediately switched into battle readiness. He stood on his knee in low position while observing the situation around him.

「-, explosive? It’s not……an incident.」

The secret space underground was now completely different from a moment before. Pillars were crumbling here and

there, rubble from the ceiling and walls were scattered everywhere, and “things that were human” were similarly scattered.

The atrium that reached to the third floor was also mostly destroyed with one of the staircases collapsing. The elevator’s wire was also severed. From right above that elevator, the ceiling fell, and a hole to the surface was opened. A faint light was shining in.

It was too terrible to be an accidental explosion. Above all else, the pillars that were supporting the underground space were mostly undamaged. Seeing as how the destruction was focused on the surrounding of the place where the people were working, this explosion was obviously the work of someone.

Kousuke himself, if he didn’t have his trained tough body and the combat outfit he was wearing on his casual wear——the clothing artifact that was weaved with metallic fiber that provided various defensive abilities like stab-proof, bulletproof, cold resistance, heat resistance, impact resistance, and so on——he might be seriously wounded.

In fact, the impact went through that defensive ability and damaged his internal organs somewhat seriously.

Inside his heart, Kousuke cursed himself 「Idiot me, I’m too careless」 while taking out a small container shaped like a test tube and drank the recovery medicine inside.

At the same time, the voice of a female resounded. Although that voice was agitated, there was dignity in it.

「Kuh, situation-, situation report! Everyone! Are you safe!?」

After looking there, a woman came out from the room where Aziz should have entered just now. She leaned her body forward from the railing of the cloister and raised her voice.

From a glance, she was a beautiful woman. Her age seemed to be around twenty. Her soft and long wavy blonde hair, her gentle looking drooping eyes, the twin hills and tight waist that were clear to see even from above the loose habit, and then her long legs.

It appeared there was also an explosion inside the room since her clothes and hair were in a mess, and although there was blood trickling from her head, she had a brilliance in her that couldn’t harm her charm with just that much.

Surely she was giving an impression of a gentle big sister usually, but right now, in this chaotic situation, her expression was becoming grave and stern seeing the dead entering her sight.

「Guh, kafuh――it’s, dangerous-. Claudia-sama-」

「Aziz! Also Wynn and Anna too! You shouldn’t move! You all are seriously wounded!」

From behind the female――Claudia――the young man Aziz showed up with staggering steps. He was in a state where wounds were literally all over his body. At both of his sides, a blonde-haired youth and a girl at around the middle of her teens were standing with similar expressions that were covered in blood and distorted in pain.

How were their injuries different from each other even though they were in the same room? From how the woman was called using “-sama”, perhaps Aziz covered for the woman.

Claudia reached out her hand toward Aziz. At that timing, a voice was raised from the side passage.

「Claudia-sama! There's a problem! The seal-, the seal of "mirror gate" is unraveling-」

「!? Aumale, what do you mean――」

Claudia's expression was clearly paling even from afar. It seemed that a situation that was worse than this disastrous explosion was occurring.

Furthermore, the situation was moving as though to keep worsening.

「Guah!?」

「What, you all!?」

Screams and an angry roar echoed. When everyone that was taken aback looked in the voice's direction, countless people were coming down from the stairs and elevator hole and started attacking the people who barely escaped from the explosion disaster.

Surprisingly, all of the intruders were dressed as though they had just been sightseeing not long ago. Their appearances were like tourists; however, they were killing people without hesitation……

The situation was rapidly worsening. The chaos was deepening, and despair was running rampant at the same time.

Kousuke too was unable to decide his next move seeing the abnormally unexpected situation that was happening one after another.

There was the possibility that the Vatican was gathering information on the returnees, so he came to investigate their objective and how much information they had, and yet, that same Vatican was being attacked.

The side that he should help, the reason why he should help, and in the first place, even the reason why he should interfere didn’t come to mind.

(Should I take advantage of this chaos and search only for our information? But……)

Kousuke’s instinct was insisting him to make sure of this situation. His danger sense was throbbing, telling him that the situation might be moving beyond salvation if he left it alone.

「Claudia-sama! Right now, it’s the seal! If the “key of cross” is gone, at this rate-」

「Kuh, but……」

Claudia was holding a huge metallic cross of about two meters unnoticed. She was hesitating after seeing her comrades being attacked.

「Leave this place to us! Claudia-sama, please take care of the seal! It’s only the “mirror gate” that we cannot allow to be opened! Anna, go to the chief! Aziz, Aumale! I’ll leave Claudia-sama to you!」

Right after he said that the man called Wynn leapt right off of the third floor with a demonic look. He splendidly performed ukemi (the art of falling safely) and went to rescue his comrades who were being attacked.

「Claudia-sama! I will bring the chief here without fail!」

「Anna!」

The girl who was called Anna too, without showing any sign of minding her face and side that were wet with blood, from her breast pocket she took out a circular rod――from its shape it was likely to be a tonfa, and she lengthened it fully. She drove in an anchor on the stair's upper part and leapt to the staircase right away like a pendulum.

And then, she descended and hit the attackers flying while rushing away with great speed.

「Kuh, Aziz.」

「I'm fine. Let's go, Claudia-sama.」

Claudia nodded in response to the determined words and gaze of Aziz. Then she shouldered the huge cross while dashing away.

On the first floor, the man who raised his voice just now about the seal something――Aumale――was waiting somewhat impatiently. He guided Claudia and Aziz in a hurry.

「Wait, oi oi, that guy……. Shit-, I don't get what's going on at all. Well, at this kind of time the best thing to do is to trust the instincts.」

Even while cursing, Kousuke manifested his clones and assisted the people wearing habits that looked like they were going to be finished off by the attackers.

At the same time, the main body of Kousuke chased after Claudia and co who vanished inside the passage.

「Wait, this is a labyrinth!」

The passage was dark, and there was almost no lighting. In addition, after advancing for a few meters, he suddenly encountered the path branching into five roads.

Without delay, Kousuke used his skill “Tracking” to search for the newest footprints. He could sense their presence, but just with that alone, he wouldn’t understand the right direction to take. If he entered the shortest route, when actually he had to take a detour through a different path, he would have to return here. Even though it was troublesome, it was necessary to track the footprints.

「The second from the right.」

Even if an ordinary person wouldn’t be able to understand it, for Kousuke, the subtle way the dust was brushed, the way the dust floated in the air, the coloring of the floor, and so on told him where the footprints were. It was just like a police dog chasing after the target’s footprints.

But, even after that, he kept encountering branch roads every time he advanced for around ten meters. Each time he had to differentiate the footprints before moving, so he was getting left behind by the three people ahead who were moving without hesitation.

「From their presence……this is the last of the branching paths?」

The presences felt really close. It seemed Kousuke’s prediction was right on the spot.

「——!? ——!!」

「——! ——」

The echo of some kind of angry yells reached him. Right after that, a short scream of a woman could also be heard.

Kousuke understood which the right path was without even finding the footprints, and he was going to go there.

At that moment,

「Kuh!? What!?」

There was a “red mist” surging from deeper inside the passage. It was flowing with intense momentum like a high-pressure gas leaking out. The mist dyed the whole passage red in the blink of an eye.

Kousuke immediately put up a barrier using his kunai.

「Red mist!? Is it poisonous gas! Shit-, incomprehensible things keep happening one after another!」

Kousuke spat out curses that he couldn’t hold back while rushing through the last path in order to ascertain the situation. And then, ahead there was the remains of a tough metallic door. It seemed to have been blown away by an explosion. Kousuke sent it a glance while leaping into the deepest room.

Like that, what Kousuke witnessed was,

「What, is……this……」

It was a large mirror. The height was three meters, and the width one meter. The mirror was enclosed with a terrifying relief of countless people lying on top of one another in heaps.

But, Kousuke didn’t know if it should really be called a mirror.

The reason was, what was called a mirror was something that reflected the sight of its opposite side on its surface. What it reflected was the thing right in front of it. A mirror should be reflecting the stone wall, the red mist, and Kousuke on its surface.

And yet, what was reflected on that mirror——no, what could be seen on the other side of the mirror was another world with rust-colored cracked ground and blowing red wind that was like the wind of blood. And then, the red mist that was intensely gushing out from there.

The worlds, were connected.

This was just like,

——Isn’t this like Nagumo’s “gate”?

Kousuke who was dumbfounded and was at a loss for words as he felt an impact at his leg. Taken aback, he came back to his senses and looked down. Over there was the young man Aziz collapsed on the ground.

「Aumale, he-, kafuh, a traito-——Claudia-sama, she-. That guy, to the world on the other side-」

「O, oi you, don’t talk! You’re dying!」

A large knife was stuck in his back. The position was a lethal one. And yet, the young man Aziz didn’t even seem to care for his own condition. His hazy eyes that were almost losing light were earnestly looking at Kousuke.

「Please-, that person——Claudia-sama, please-」

Even though he was on the verge of death, Aziz grasped Kousuke’s leg with an unshakeable strength. Kousuke unconsciously held his breath.

The young man Aziz acted as though “the last thing he could do was only to beg”. His face that looked expressionlessly sullen all that time crumbled down, and he was pleading with tears flowing out.

「Please, I beg you-. My, big sister-, my family――please-」

「……You」

The face of Aziz was soggy with tears. When looking from nearby, he was shockingly young, no, childish. With his tall height and sullen face, he looked like he was only a bit younger than Kousuke, but perhaps he was still thirteen or fourteen. He was about the same age as Kousuke’s little sister Manami.

In the end, did this young boy understand, just who it was he was pleading to? Most likely, from his wording that seemed to be directed toward a stranger, he must’ve understood that the other party wasn’t a comrade that he recognized.

Kousuke looked at the mirror that they called “mirror gate”. Inside the spouting out red mist, far away, something bizarre with a humanoid shape could be seen holding a human shape on its side.

Furthermore, he could see the ground undulating, and something unknown in innumerable number surging in.

Near the mirror, the thing that was carried by the “big sister” that Aziz mentioned――the woman called Claudia, the huge cross was carelessly left to lie there.

Kousuke thought.

Honestly speaking, this was already beyond his capacity. At the very least, this wasn’t a matter that should be faced and dealt with alone.

The Nagumo family should come to deal with this, or at the very least, he wanted them to cooperate with him. Based on what he saw at the abnormal phenomenon in front of his eyes, the case this time was undoubtedly on a dangerous level for Kousuke.

When he diagnosed himself, he was feeling strangely weary, his mind felt tired, and he felt a subtle pain around his lungs. The cause was surely the red mist that he slightly came into contact with just now.

There was no guarantee that he would be able to come back if he went to the world at the other side of the mirror.

Thus, that option was the same as suicide.

This was an abnormal situation that should be dealt with, so the best thing to do was to erect a barrier that could cover the whole mirror, devote himself to a defensive battle, and then contact Hajime, or at the very least, Yue and the others and asked them for help right away.

If he had to say more, it was an impossible choice to rush into a place that was far from being unknown. It was even a place that was surely filled with extreme danger, and furthermore, it was for the sake of saving a woman he didn’t know. He learned what reality was in the other world. He couldn’t respond to all the voices asking for help.

Such reasons why he “couldn’t answer” the young man’s wish were listed inside his heart, but,

「……God…….please, grant us salvation……please……」

「God dammit. Those words are what I hated the most.」

Kousuke muttered with a small voice where his words couldn’t even be heard. On his expression, a bitter smile surfaced, as though his answer had been decided right from the beginning.

Because this was an abnormal situation that couldn’t just be left alone.

That was one reason.

Because the wish of the little brother who wished for his big sister’s salvation caused his own big brother and little sister to cross his mind.

That was another reason.

‘But, well, the biggest reason is……

Cause, somehow, I’m like a hero.

I want to answer, the wholehearted trust that “those girls” directed at me……’

His thinking that had come to a clear conclusion of “I cannot save anyone at all” in front of the reality that he experienced in the other world was brushed aside. For just a little bit, inside Kousuke……yes, if it had to be said, a face of a “man” peeked out.

‘This ain’t a death flag, right?‘, Kousuke’s bitter smile deepened. But in a complete change, a strong light dwelled within his eyes.

Inside his heart, “Sorry, for making a stupid choice” he apologized to his comrades and family, and then to Rana and Emily while kneeling on one knee beside the young man Aziz.

And then, he pulled out the knife stabbing Aziz’s back, sprinkled the recovery medicine, and then he forcefully jammed in one more bottle into his mouth.

「Drink it all like your life is depending on it, Aziz-kun. It will be meaningless if you die.」

Young man Aziz drank it all while coughing *cough-cough-*, and his cloudy consciousness was getting slightly clear. He looked at Kousuke in a daze.

His expression looked as though he wanted to say that god had answered his prayer that was asking for salvation and sent His messenger here for him.

Kousuke stood up and wore his sunglass. At the same time, he threw several kunai around the glass and finished the preparations for a barrier to go up after he went in.

And then, taking a position in front of the mirror, he looked back across his shoulder and spoke with a fearless smile.

「My bad, but no matter what I’m no good with god. Unfortunately, I’m unable to play the part as His messenger, but……young man. I’ll grant you your wish.」

He said such a thing — Kousuke-San who was slightly turning into the lord.

Young man Aziz asked dumbfounded.

「You are……who?」

Kousuke unsheathed his short sword. He took a battle stance against the squirming existence on the other side of the mirror while,

「Me? I am――」

Kousuke answered just like usual.

――Just the demon king’s right hand.

Immediately after, Kousuke rushed into the mirror world.

In order to answer the wish of the young man who thought of his family, his big sister, from his heart.

–

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Just in case, one more time.

This is different from the actual Vatican! The stage of this work is in a fictive Earth!

The organization, people, and group here are different from reality!

I’m sorry for being long-winded.

–

PS

The update of Arifureta daily life has been posted in Gardo.

I burst out laughing at Myuu’s exclusive Schutaif lol. What sacrilege that is really hard to describe lol.

If there is something like that on the rooftop of a department store or amusement park, surely it will become a hellish scene with agonizing screams.

If you like, please go there to watch Hajime-san’s shuddering design sense.

Arifureta Chapter 303

Arifureta After III Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2 Aby Through The Looking Glass

---

AN: ↑ Subtitle. From the review of the previous chapter, it hit the spot for Shirakome, so I used it.

You who wrote the review, thank you very much!

Thank you very much for the other readers too who are always writing fun reviews!

Bloody wind was blowing violently, cracks ran through the ground, and there were countless mountains of rubble and craters.

Black clouds covered the sky, and hellfire could be seen running between the clouds. It was like magma overflowing from crevices on the ground. Thunder was constantly roaring, and the world was being dyed with the redness of blood and flame.

“The world on the other side of the glass”——the other side of the unknown large mirror hidden underground in the Vatican was truly a place that was worthy of being called as “hell”.

「Tsu!? ——My clone!?」

The one who slipped out the shocked voice was Kousuke who rushed into hell to answer the voice of a young man who was seeking salvation.

The moment he passed through the glass, his link with the clone at the Grant house was severed. At the same time, his senses were telling him that he could summon clones up to his maximum number. His clone was dispelled unintentionally.

「As I thought, the world is different……」

No matter how excellent Kousuke’s clone was, it couldn’t be continuously maintained when he crossed over worlds. Even though the clone was able to move independently, its source of power was the magic power of the main body. As expected, when the connection was severed by the interval of worlds the clone became impossible to maintain.

An ashamed feeling crossed the corner of his mind that surely he made Emily and others worried with this, but the strange and supernatural pressing situation before his eyes didn’t allow for unnecessary thoughts.

Countless shadows were squirming inside the bloody wind that became even more terrible, like a thick sandstorm.

「Shit-. How troublesome……」

He unconsciously let out a curse.

Whether it was the condition, the environment, or the situation, everything was the worst.

It appeared that the blood wind had quite that bad effect on the human body. Since the moment he stepped in here, Kousuke was feeling it——the pain as though his lungs were being stabbed, his prickling skin as though he was burning, stamina and vitality, and his spirit, the energies for the sake of living felt like they were slipping out from the core of his body.

This world wasn't kind at all to a living person.

In addition, due to the bloody wind that was increasing in thickness and intensity, he lost sight of the strangely shaped humanoid and his rescue target.

Kousuke's Presence Detection normally had a range around 150 meters in diameter. If it was a presence that he had memorized, it was possible to continue to sense the presence within 300 meters at maximum, but he couldn't detect his target's presence within his range.

In exchange, the presence of a great number of "something" where it seemed stupid trying to count them was astir.

Anyway, he at least understood the direction to a certain degree. He had to advance toward that direction, catch the presence of the woman within his range once more, rescue her, and then escape.

(The time limit is……ten minutes I guess.)

He pushed up his sunglasses, readjusted the position of the mask that was covering the lower portion of his face up to his nose, and muttered inside his heart a time limit over himself.

Instantly, repulsive voices resounded directly inside his brain.

——*Human-! Human-!*

——*There is a human-! Living, human-!*

——*Feed-, feed-*

「These things talk-!? Or rather, they noticed me!?」

To even say he was thunderstruck was not enough to express how shocked he was. In addition, he wasn’t happy at all even though he had been noticed. Rather, he got goosebumps, and it felt like there was a block of ice sliding down his spine.

But, there was no free time to stiffen from the indescribable repulsiveness. The many “something” mixed inside the surrounding bloody wind attacked.

Their speed was similar to a wild cheetah assaulting their prey with its top speed. In addition, their tricky movements that made use of the surrounding rubble and craters was like a monkey freely going through a sea of trees as they pleased.

The bizarre movement and abnormal speed made it next to impossible to deal with them on the first encounter. A normal human would surely be done in by the first move.

「I’ve got no time to care of this!」

Hyun, the streak of a sword flash ran through the bloody wind. Right after that, Kousuke’s figure appeared a few meters ahead. His pose with one hand pushing up his sunglasses while staying unmoving was truly striking. Even though he still hadn’t fully entered the Abyss Lord mode.

The result was naturally……

All of the attacking “somethings” ——bloodshot dark red eyes, hair, and teeth that grew sparsely, bizarrely long limbs, a thin and ashen body that had a deficit here and there, and yet only their stomach was strangely bloating up——had their heads tumbling to the ground without a single exception. It was as though they were monsters like ghouls.

And then, they got up as if nothing happened.

「No way!?」

Kousuke-san who entered Abyss Lord mode briefly reflexively returned to normal.

The ghoul-like things that he had definitely beheaded were regenerating their heads as the cut section began bubbling and swelling up. Their tumbling heads started withering rapidly and were blown away by the bloody wind.

Even during that time, the ghoul-like things attacked him one after another.

「Chih. Even though I don’t have time, it’s rea~lly troublesome!」

He then unsheathed his second short sword.

He dodged the incoming hands and beheaded them while passing through.

He trampled those that came crawling toward him, used those who came leaping at him as footstools and jumped further. The kunai that he let flew using a Telepathy Stone skewering five of the things altogether.

With a rotation in midair, he mowed down the ghoul-like things that jumped at him and crushed the enemy underfoot with his feet when he landed.

And then, all those enemies regenerated and got up as though nothing happened.

「They’re immortal!? There is no end to it!」

They came from all directions. The rain of ghoul-like things that leapt out from the bloody wind even caused the sky to become temporarily not visible.

「Can’t be helped-, ——”Black Vortex”!」

Gravity magic “Black Vortex” ——a magic that deployed a gravity field in the selected direction.

Kousuke made himself freefall toward the sky and forcefully blew away the swarm of ghoul-like things falling from over his head, opening a path to break through.

And then, below, the ghoul-like things which were reaching out their hands to Kousuke were piling up to form a small mountain. He got goosebumps seeing that sight while deploying a gravity field in the horizontal direction. He began freefalling toward the direction of his target.

「Guuh, it’s harsh as expected-. Yue-san is seriously a monster.」

The body was burdened because it radically changed directions from freefalling to above toward a horizontal direction, and also due to the enormous amount of magic power consumption from using gravity magic continuously. Kousuke raised an anguished voice.

In actuality, the gravity magic that Kousuke could use in battle was extremely limited. The change of gravity's direction to stand on the ceiling or a wall, the conferment of a gravity field, increase and decrease of gravity with him at the center——he could do things at that level.

If he wanted to do things like Yue, compressing the enemy to death instantly, swallowing all enemy attacks and compressing them while making a gravity sphere in return, mixing elemental magic with gravity magic, and so on, he had to spend much time on it. He also couldn't use them consecutively.

Yue could activate something like basic gravity magic "Black Vortex" as easily as breathing without any incantation and did pseudo-flight freely with it. She made it look simple, but in actuality, even that was only possible with a super advanced skill of simultaneously controlling multiple gravity magic from speed adjustment to direction adjustment and even continuous neutralization of the normal gravity.

The same could be said as how Hajime and Shia had no magic talent and were unable to use gravity magic properly.

Although Kousuke possessed some talent, he was originally a frontliner; in addition, he couldn't manipulate magic power directly, and to add further, he didn't even possess an abnormal amount of magic power. For him, the age of god magic called gravity magic was his trump card, but at the same time, it was also a magic that was too advanced with a bad usability for him.

Also, Kousuke's flight time was only around thirty seconds though it would be a different story if he was in a Limit Break state or in the deepest state of Abyss Lord mode.

Once more he grumbled that the bride of the monster of the abyss was a monster as expected!, which he wouldn’t be able to say face to face, even while continuously activating gravity magic desperately. However, he finally detected the presence he was expectantly looking for as compensation for consuming magic power like crazy.

His remaining flight time was about ten-odd seconds, but his speed was that of someone freefalling. It was more than enough to close the distance of a few hundred meters.

Kousuke held his breath and shifted his mask in order to drink some recovery medicine during that time to recover from his body’s damage and magic power. And then, he took out a recovery medicine from the Treasure Warehouse and moved to drink it……

Just before he could,

——*iaAAAAAAAH*

There was a repulsive shriek piercing his ears.

「Kuh!?」

Kousuke instantly stopped the “Black Vortex” and shifted his trajectory by falling normally. Instantly, very bizarre creatures passed through in grazing distance of him.

They were ghoul-like things with wings of a thin membrane that looked transparent. Other than wings, they contained traits such as sharp fangs and extremely irregular heads that allowed their brain to be exposed, bringing about an unimaginable ugliness.

「What is it this time!?」

Kousuke raised his voice with irritation mixed in because he dropped the medicine when the impact from the graze in passing, and because he breathed in the bloody wind without the mask.

He returned his mask’s position to normal, and at the same time he used the technique “Wood Splinter Dance” ——the derivation skill of “Shadow Dance” to leap using dust and dirt midair as instantaneous footholds——to leap and avoid the “thing” that flew toward him from another direction.

But, even here the problem was the pure number of the enemies as expected.

The winged ghoul-like things that rushed at him from all directions while letting out shrieks that disturbed the mind were rapidly approaching one after another in trajectories that totally ignored aerodynamics. Finally, one of them succeeded in tackling Kousuke.

「Woaahh!?」

——*Living-, human!*

Kousuke got cold sweat seeing the jaw that snapped close *gakin-* before his eyes. Of course, he didn’t commit the blunder of being hit directly and firmly guarded using his short sword. Although no matter what, he was at a disadvantage midair.

He was pushed by the momentum of the enemy’s rush, and they plunged through the storm of bloody wind like that. From behind, a new player came rushing in for a pincer attack!

Kousuke’s eyes slowly narrowed.

「——Can you all, stop already!? ——”Gouka Beni Senpuu”」
(TN: Hell Fire Crimson Whirlwind)

Fire Ninja Art Wind Ninja Art
——Abyss-style Katon – Futon Combination Skill
Whirling Dark Flame of the Abyss
Gouka Beni Senpuu

A vortex of flames swallowed the surrounding while spreading to the sky and earth. It was defensive magic in all directions that created a tornado of flame that was whirling with the caster at the center.

The ghoul-like thing that was biting on the short sword, the one who attempted a pincer attack from behind, and not just them, but even the things below and above that were looking for a chance to attack were also dragged into the magic flame tornado altogether.

And then, *PAN* after the sound of wind bursting accompanied the disappearance of the flame tornado, the person who was pushing up his sunglasses meaninglessly……

That was, Kousuke……

No, starting from the irritation that the situation wouldn’t progress smoothly, his binding of the heart finally came
Abyssgate
off——it was the Abyss Lord!

「Hou. It appears their regeneration is faltering before my abyssal skill, isn’t it?」

Lord Abyssgate was staying in midair with the power of the Air Force boots while narrowing his eyes behind his sunglasses in a striking pose.

Just as he said, the winged ghoul-like things which got hit by “Gouka Beni Senpuu” were turned into dust and carried by the wind without being able to regenerate.

Were they weak against flames? Or perhaps because it was an attack by magic? If it was the latter, then would physical attacks be effective as long as he coated them with magic power?

Although, the time to verify that was scarce.

Inside the thick encirclement of the winged ghoul-like things surrounding him in a spherical shape, the lord made a fearless grin and readied his short swords in a cross shape.

There was no particular meaning in that!

□If you think you can stop this me, the noble of the abyss, then feel free to try! The dead of the hell!□

It was unknown when he became a noble! But, he was always introducing himself as a lord, so let’s not pick at minor details!

The lord bent his knee in midair like a tightened coil, and then in the next instant, he leapt out like a cannon shell. At the same time, he activated the gravity magic “Black Vortex” once more.

He barrel rolled his body while cutting apart the winged ghoul-like things that came from the front.

Following the orbit of his slash, the two short swords carved an afterimage of a shining red cross in midair.

The short swords that were originally jet black were containing a radiant light right now.

——Short Sword Brilliant Lightning and Flame Sword of Ruin

It was an artifact that performed “pseudo light sabe○ transformation” by compressing advanced flame elemental magic to coat the sword.

Magic + a blade of super high heat that melted everything. It was unclear which one of them was effective, but as expected, the winged ghoul-like thing that was slashed withered and vanished without regenerating.

The lord sneered 「Fuh」 toward the things that rushed at such lord only with numbers to back them up.

The winged ghoul-like things came attacking from left and right.

「Where are you looking?」

「Above you is empty, you know?」

There were two black silhouettes that were falling from above. At the same time as the heads of the two winged ghoul-like things were sliced, their bodies were falling in a tailspin.

A newcomer reached out its long hand from the front.

「Who do you think you are standing against?」

It was pierced from right below and vanished while being blown away. The third black silhouette twirled in midair and took a position.

The three silhouettes——the three clones——surrounded the main body of the lord from the left, the right, and in front in a delta formation.

Although the enemies were pushing using their numbers, the three clones attacked with the resolve of taking down the enemies with them. When any of them vanished, a new clone would appear from the outset and unleash a one-hit kill.

The winged ghoul-like things had no way to stop the advance that was like a surging wave. The lord finally broke through the encirclement.

【Muh, out already!】

At the same time, it seemed like that also meant breaking through the very thick storm of bloody wind.

Bobah The lord slipped through the storm of bloody wind with such sound and got out to the other side. However, he was unusually at a loss of words and went into a daze.

【What is……this place?】

Black clouds covered the cracked sky. Although the density was lower, the bloody wind that was blowing violently, along with the dried and cracked ground, hadn’t changed at all.

But, there was something that made the lord gaze in wonderment.

【A, city? This place】

Yes, what was reflected in the lord’s eyes was a devastated city’s townscape.

There were numerous half-destroyed buildings that gave the impression of a skyscraper. Roads that were bulging, or gouged, littered the ground. There were also sections that

were turned into mountains of rubble, and a large hole that reminded anyone watching of hell.

Far away at the other side of the spreading devastated city, were mountains glowing red with flowing magma. A gigantic lake that seemed to be made from the magma could be seen too. The expression of “a kettle of hell” was truly fitting for it.

The saying of the world of the end undoubtedly referred to this.

The lord thought that without any particular reason.

——*IIIIIIIII*

——*HUMAaaAAAAAAN*

The lord brought down the winged ghoul-like things leaping out from inside the storm of bloody wind behind him while scolding himself for stupidly getting dumbfounded like this.

He concentrated and searched for the location of the presence he detected in more detail.

And then,

——Found you.

The lord became a streak of shadow and rushed through the air.

–

–

–

A voice could be heard.

A repulsive voice that disturbed the heart.

The voice of the arch-enemy that she had heard for thousands, tens of thousands of times.

The heat of hell and the slimy shadow caressed her skin.

Aa, it was the usual dream again……

Claudia thought so, but she wondered why.

Even though it should be a dream, it felt more real than usual.

She wondered if that demon that continued to remain clinging inside her brain was something that granted pain and suffering that was this raw.

——*The time, came*

She wondered why.

Its words were different from usual. “That guy” would first sneer, and then said it. “*If* the time *come*”. Like that, it would then continue to say “I’ll violate, lodge inside you, and go to the boundary of interval”.

‘Aa, I see’. Claudia understood inside her hazy consciousness.

The time had come. The reason why “the guy” who took away both her parents let only herself escaped. It was the time, to carry it out.

It was time, the most terrifying time!

「Uh, a?」

Buzzing and thunderous wind hit her ears. The wind that caressed her skin was accompanied by discomfort and agony, and the dull pain in her solar plexus was gradually awakening her consciousness.

Claudia groaned while slowly opening her eyes. She was in a state where her consciousness was still half in the dream world, but the discomfort and agony, and the intense out of place feeling that gave her the sense of weightlessness was pushing her consciousness rapidly to the surface.

「——kuh」

Her consciousness that became clear made her notice the thing coiling around her torso. That sensation, that presence that made her feel sick in a display of her soul's rejection of that thing that was just too repulsive.

「*The time, came.*」

A terrifying sneering that was unthinkable to come from this world reached her ears.

It wasn't a dream. It wasn't a voice that could be heard from a dream. The voice definitely, reached her ears right now!

「——!?」

Claudia raised a soundless scream. Her hazy mind was noisily raising the red alert alarm sound. The warning her soul gave her was rapidly restoring her consciousness.

「*The false kings have vanished, and the annoying seal was undone. My empty body, will obtain——I've been waiting, Claudia. The body that will give birth to me.*」

The sneering laugh that sounded like metal being scratched by a claw resounded once more. Just from that, it felt like a human’s heart could easily be turned mad. The laughing voice was just too blasphemous.

What entered Claudia’s sight when she lifted her gaze up was a nightmarish reality.

“Shadow”. A condensed “shadow” that took on the shape of a human. Countless flames were rushing about like blood vessels, spurting out from the cracks of the “shadow”. Its eyes, mouth, and nose were existences shaped by hellfire. The left arm stretching out from the thing’s body was holding Claudia’s body!

「You are-———kafuh, cough-!?」

Claudia opened her eyes wide and tried to say something, but the dull pain on her solar plexus caused her to cough.

At the same time, that dull pain shook her memory back.

「-, Aziz! Aumale!?」

She looked around while still being carried by the thing’s arm. She could only see a storm of bloody wind and desolated townscape. The people she was looking for, weren’t there.

But, the answer unexpectedly came from her arch-enemy.

「*Kakaka-. If it’s that human, he already became the nourishment for my body. It was his reward for being useful.*」

「A, aa, such a thing……」

“That human” ——Claudia guessed that it undoubtedly referred to Aumale.

Aumale Garret. He was Claudia’s comrade and also her subordinate. And then——the “traitor” who caused the incident this time.

Claudia recalled it. Due to Aumale’s report, she hurried to the “hall of mirror gate” that connected to the foreign world together with Aziz——to “hell”.

Aumale reported in a panic that the seal of the “mirror gate” was loosening and that at that rate the “gate of hell” would open.

But, what was reflected in the eyes of Claudia who arrived at that hall was the “mirror gate” with its seal in pristine condition.

When Claudia was going to ask what the meaning of that was, it was Aziz’s anguished voice which entered Claudia’s ear.

When she turned around to see what happened, she saw the figures of the two clinging onto each other as though they were embracing. It was as though, when Aziz turned around just like Claudia to ask what was going on, Aumale grappled him.

And then, her important younger step-brother fell on his knees.

They weren’t related by blood. However, since the time he was taken in when he was a child with similar circumstances as her, Aziz became her family as though he was her little brother. And that beloved little brother of hers was sinking into his own puddle of blood.

Why? Why was Aziz collapsing? Why was a knife stabbed into his stomach? Why was so much blood flowing out like that?

Claudia, who was unable to grasp the scene happening in front of her eyes immediately, screamed to call out to Aziz. Aumale smoothly approached her who was like that.

What Claudia remembered was the impact she felt right after that on her solar plexus, and how the “Heavenly Light Cross” she carried was taken and thrown away.

There, Claudia was taken aback with surprise and felt around her chest. Because she was made to abandon the “Heavenly Light Cross”, she confirmed on her body thinking ‘could it be’, but……

The result that was just as expected caused blood to leave from her expression.

「*Is this, what you were looking for?*」

「! Return it!」

Even though Claudia understood that it was pointless, meaningless, and laughable, she couldn’t help but yell it.

Something like a tentacle that was stretching out from the shoulder of the “shadow” had an antique reddish-brown cross with a chain attached dangling from there. That was exactly the reason why Claudia’s face went pale. It was the secret treasure that only Claudia was permitted to bring. It must not be handed over to the enemy no matter what.

In front of the “shadow” who was sneering at Claudia’s agitation, she slowly closed her eyes.

She wasn’t giving up.

It was the reverse.

It was for fighting.

She had no weapon and also no comrades, but since that day, from that time when the nightmarish scene of her childhood was carved into her heart, she had determined, resolved, and prepared herself!

「——Oh Lord, please hear the prayer of Thy child. Please grant Thy compassionate and lamenting voice within mine heart. Please bestow the divine protection to Thy devout believer——」

It was the manifestation of power that could only be used by a very little amount of people even within the organization that Claudia belonged too. The exercise of a miracle by chanting a scripture.

A faint jade-colored light wrapped around Claudia and burned the arm of the “shadow” that was restraining her!

But,

「*Kakaka-. Good, struggle. It’s a delicacy.*」

The unbothered sneering laugh and hellfire that was mixed with blackness coiled around Claudia. And then, an even more intense pressure assaulted Claudia. An unpleasant sound rang out from her ribs, and intense pain pierced through her brain.

「Kuh!? ——Oh Lord, I beg You to cut down the evil of the wicked, and help the righteous to stand firmly. The shield of God protects me. Those with a just heart is saved by God.」

But, Claudia didn’t stop praying. She wouldn’t stop just because of pain.

The gentle phosphorescence wrapping around Claudia like a firefly light was increasing in radiance, causing the arm of the “shadow” to smoke white.

In front of such Claudia, the lump of shadow was slowly……

「Claire? Why are you tormenting your mother?」

「-!?」

The prayer that caused the miracle stopped. Though she immediately restarted it.

「How horrible you are, Claire. You are still planning to torment your father?」

「Sto, stop!」

She missed those voices, and yet those voices contained a hatred that stopped her prayer for sure this time.

In front of Claudia’s eyes——were the figures of her dear mother and father. The two who had only their heads left.

She received a flashback of that day’s scene. To shake it off, Claudia tried to strengthen the power of the miracle further, but the two were looking pained in proportion with her effort.

「u, aa——」

The shadow loomed over her determination from that day.

She understood. This was an illusion. A nightmare that this foreign world and the “shadow” showed her.

She understood.

But,

“Stop it, Claireee”

“Please, don’t hurt us even more than this”

To think that her heart was this weak. Claudia harbored an emotion that resembled despair while stopping her words of prayer completely.

And then, the blazing hellfire burned Claudia’s skin as though to say that it was her punishment.

“aAAAAAAAAAAH!?”

“*The greatest flesh that will conceive my body. I won’t destroy it.*”

But, although it wouldn’t destroy the body, it seemed that it didn’t mean that it wouldn’t torment her. An unpleasant voice that was smeared with sadism and scorn scorched the wound.

A burn scar that was like a welt was carved on Claudia’s body like a seal. Intense pain blocked her throat. Far from praying, even her will to resist was messed up.

Small tears spilled out from Claudia’s eyes.

The tears that were immediately blown away into nothing by the bloody wind wasn’t because of the pain, but because of her mortification.

She had accumulated diligent studying for more than ten years for the sake of this day.

She repressed the negative emotion of hatred and resentment that would give strength to the “shadow” in order to fight with a heart of purity and unselfishness in order to negate the nightmarish childhood scene nesting inside her heart.

And yet, she couldn’t do anything.

Because she was betrayed by a person who she believed in. Because she witnessed her little brother being lethally wounded. Because she didn’t have any weapon in hand.

She couldn’t even make those excuses.

She believed that she could do more. With the diligent studying and experience she had accumulated, her daily prayers, and her faithful heart, she believed that she had been bestowed with the strength to overcome the “shadow”.

But, this was the result.

「……O Lord-, grant me Thy hand of salvation-. Lend me Thy strength-」

「*Kakaka-*」

She asked for salvation to God pleadingly, but what came back was a laughing voice that fanned up disgust.

The light of salvation didn’t shine down――

(O Lord, why, won’t You answer me……)

She couldn’t hear God’s voice――

Then, at the very least,

(……Please, please)

She wanted to be punished as someone who would become a great sinner for mankind after this. She wanted to be given punishment for her sin of being unable to resist evil.

And then, she prayed for salvation even if only slightly for her comrades who were like her family who fought until the bitter end――

「……? ……Human?」

That call wasn’t directed at Claudia.

The “shadow” suddenly stopped. Even while gasping in pain, Claudia somehow lifted up her face. And then, she understood even within her hazy mind that it wasn’t her who was being addressed.

The “shadow” looked around the surrounding suspiciously.

Right after that, there were countless sounds of slicing wind!

「!?」

The “shadow” swept its arm. Following its arm’s trajectory, a whip of hellfire flew and struck down the countless things flying toward it.

One of the things stabbed ahead of the gaze of Claudia who was being held.

It was a short sword with a shape that Claudia had never seen before. A blade with an extended diamond shape, with a guardless handle attached, and at the end of the handle, it became ring-shaped. A strange shape. Even though it was jet black colored as though to absorb light, for some reason, it was shining faintly.

「This is……」

Her eyes opened wide. She understood that even though she had never seen it before. It was a short sword that was suitable to being thrown even while containing many utilities, something that shouldn’t be used by an existence of this foreign world.

Yes, it was a “weapon that human used”!

「Where do you think you are going?」

A human’s voice could be heard. A voice of a young man. It came from the other side of the bloody wind in front of them.

「I don’t know the situation, but let me say that I cannot admire this. Learn some more about the way to escort a woman.」

The “shadow” narrowed its eyes quietly.

Claudia too was directing her gaze toward the voice in surprise.

Like that, he appeared.

「Although, perhaps this warning is a bit too harsh for you whose figure is only like a shoddy portrayal……In any case, this is a request from a courageous little brother. I’ll have you return that woman.」

A man in black appeared as though melting out from inside the bloody wind.

The sunglasses and mask that was covering almost all of his lower face caused his face to be unknown. His figure walking

calmly with a short sword in one hand made one apt to forget that this was a foreign world that was like hell.

She thought that her comrades came to save her, but this person’s figure didn’t exist within Claudia’s memory. He looked like a youth from the Orient who was younger than her but……

That man——was making a turn adroitly, for some reason. He pushed up his sunglasses sharply. He crossed his arms, and made a striking pose! Just why in the world!

Claudia’s brain was flooded with questions!

The “shadow” swung its hellfire whip with no questions asked. Perhaps the whip broke through sound barrier instantly because it left the bursting sound *PAN-* in its wake, arriving at its target within an instant.

Normally, the youth would be struck by the hellfire whip without even any time to blink and be burned to ash, or his body would be bisected, and his life would come to an end.

Of course, the youth——who had snapped seeing Claudia who was worn-out from torture and the sneering laugh of the “shadow” that was filled with delight which he could hear while he was approaching the two of them——the lord, easily struck back the whip with a blazing hot short sword.

The eyes of the “shadow” snapped wide open. And Claudia was also the same.

In front of such a monster from a foreign world and the woman who he ought to save, the lord grinned fearlessly——and declared.

□From here on, unreasonableness will be performed. Lament your wretched luck of being in front of the abyss and fall to ruin.□

Claudia thought.

‘Aa, my Lord, I’m grateful.

To grant salvation to this one.

But, o Lord.

Please, tell me one thing.

——Why is Your messenger, still turning and posing like that?’

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

–

PS

The comic of Arifureta’s original version has been updated on Gardo.

Karm-san is seriously terrific. Also, Yue-san’s reluctant face really hit the spot.

When I read it, Yue and Shia at that time certainly felt like that huuh. It’s nostalgic.

It’s distributed freely on Overlap-sama’s homepage, so if you like, please go read it by all means.

Arifureta Chapter 304

Arifureta After III Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2 Fleeing Is This One's Forte

---

A mere human. Know your place.

The voice of the "shadow" gushed out haughtily, without a doubt that it was the superior existence.

At the same time, it swung its arm while the whip of hellfire, which branched out and grew more than ten heads, rushed toward the lord from all directions. Every single one moved at a speed that was impossible to avoid by an ordinary human if they reacted after seeing it.

Zuban-, the sound of the lord's body being mercilessly torn apart into little pieces resounded.

Claudia almost raised her voice unconsciously. She was about to let out a mere scream, or perhaps a grieving voice, but either way, there was no need for her to do that.

Along with an anticlimactic sound *bofun*, the figure of the lord that should have been melted and slashed into fragments vanished before they had noticed. In his place, a short black sword——a kunai, appeared midair.

Then, where was the lord?

「*Foolish.*」

「Not really, isn't that right?」

Instantly, the lord appeared behind the "shadow". Using kawarimi no jutsu substitute technique, he switched locations with one of the kunai that had been deflected at the opening of the battle.

But the "shadow" instantly pinpointed the lord's position, and in less than an instant, it attacked. Its sharp tail lengthened and pierced him without it even turning around.

The lord had his stomach pierced; however, he grinned widely.

The next moment, a kunai came flying in from the direction of that pierced lord through his back.

As expected, it seemed the "shadow" didn't expect that an attack that would pierce the attacker himself would come. The kunai pierced the "shadow" without giving it any leeway to strike down the kunai.

「*Guh!? Impossible!?*」

The agitation of the "shadow" could be felt. Rather than being surprised because it got hit, the cause of its surprise was more that the damage of the attack was unexpectedly big.

A part of the "shadow" was vanishing like mist at the center of where the kunai stabbed deeply. The kunai was naturally in the state of scorching red.

The clone body that got hit by the tail vanished from the damage. At the same time, the "shadow" unleashed an attack that swept through the area behind it.

It was unknown just how many branches of the whip the “shadow” could produce. A whip of hellfire that easily contained more than a hundred heads gouged out the road of rubble completely. The buildings in the surrounding were pulverized as well. Buildings that had their bottom pillars broken were collapsing altogether. Thunderous sounds shook the world, and dust clouds were rising up.

And then, a voice could be heard from seemingly nowhere.

Earth Ninja Art Come into my world of abyss
——Abyss-style Doton Jutsu Naraku no Kairou (TN: Naraku no Kairou = Corridor of Naraka)

Immediately after,

「Kya!?」

A cute scream that didn’t suit the hellish battlefield resounded.

「*You bastard-*」

The “shadow” looked at its left arm that should’ve been holding Claudia and raised an angry voice, but it was already too late.

The lord that appeared as if he was slipping out from inside the ground held Claudia from below. And then, with a wide grin he displayed the Abyss-style Kuuton Jutsu “
Air Ninja Art
The abyss is always unevenly distributed
Bankage no Kagerou”.

The lord accomplished a forced substitution to the coordinates of a place slightly away, along with Claudia and the air around him. Naturally, the arm of the “shadow” that was dragged into the space teleportation was severed. The

attack that was immediately unleashed toward the lord also cut empty air in vain.

The lord tossed away the arm of the “shadow” that was clinging onto Claudia while holding her in a princess carry.

「*The body that will give birth to me-. You lowly human dare!*」

「You are just a “lowly shadow”, right?」

A thunderous sound echoed about.

The moment the “shadow” turned its focus to recovering Claudia, the lord’s kick, which was falling horizontally at a freefalling speed, hit the side of it.

Martial Art Fall Into The Deep Darkness
——Abyss-style Taijutsu Kicking Style Juutsui Engeki Kyaku (TN: Heavy crash flame kick)

Adding to the momentum that came from horizontally freefalling using the gravity magic “Black Vortex”, the moment the kick impacted, the lord increased his body weight by several times to raise the destructive power. Furthermore, using enchanting type magic, he wrapped his leg in the flame-element magic.

It was a technique he only thought of just now! Of course, the naming too!

「Hm. It’s not a bad technique for something that I used for the first time. But……the technique’s name needs further consideration.」

The “shadow” was sent flying into the building right beside it.

The lord landed down *step* on the spot where the “shadow” was previously standing on until just a moment ago and muttered such a thing. It seemed that the naming wasn’t really fitting. It seemed that another Hauria clan meeting would be necessary.

Founder Baltofelt! It would be his turn there!

「E, eh? Ah? Tw, two people? Different person? Bu, but the same……or rather, the power just now-」

Claudia-sama was in the middle of a great shock! Her jade eyes were swirling on and on.

It wasn’t strange for her to be like that. Even though the two people were wearing masks, their appearances up to their atmospheres were as alike as two peas in a pot.

In addition, from her viewpoint which knew better than anyone about the mightiness of the “shadow”, her natural enemy, this person easily rescued her from that “shadow”, and in the end, he even blew away the “shadow” that should be completely unaffected by physical attacks by using a single kick. Furthermore, the kick had the strength to send the “shadow” crashing into a building.

In the end, the conclusion she formed within her confusion was,

「As I thought, aah, the Lord’s messenger is――」

「Hello, I’m the demon king’s right-hand man.」

「Eh!?」

An abnormal situation appeared where God’s messenger introduced himself as an underling of evil. Claudia-sama’s

eyes were swirling once more.

But, at that time, from the other side of the building that the “shadow” crashed into, a roar that would shake anyone’s sanity thundered. At the same time, countless flashes surged from the building. It was a sight that looked like countless lasers sweeping through everything.

Zuzuzu-, the building was *starting to slip down* due to its own weight.

「You must be confused, but there is no time. I’ll save the explanation for later. Right now, stay quiet, and let me save you!」

「Eh? A, ye, yes!」

Claudia’s head nodded up and down honestly and quickly. The lord fixed his hold on her and began to turn back to the path he came from with great speed.

「Hold it back!」

『『Roger!』』

A clone leapt forward in front of the lord and became a vanguard. Then the remaining two clones appeared with a *pon-* sound and charged toward the “lump of shadow and hellfire” that was visible on the other side of the destroyed building.

Claudia opened her eyes wide saying 「Clo, clones!? It’s the mystery of the east!?」. It seemed that she was unexpectedly knowledgeable about the subculture. Or perhaps, because of her position, she knew a lot about the mystique side.

He wanted to be spared from a second Danessa. Inside, the lord wished strongly that it was the latter.

But, there, seeing the “shadow” that was increasing its pressure and repulsiveness, Claudia was taken aback and raised her voice.

“Please wait! That thing-, the “key of holy cross”! We have to take it back!”

It seemed it was something really important.

But, taking it back was an impossible request. The proof was how Claudia was coughing hard and the little amount of blood that she coughed up at the same time.

The cause was one. It was the bloody wind of this foreign world. Its toxic substance was gnawing at Claudia. The lord didn’t understand how, but it seemed that Claudia wasn’t affected by this when she was restrained by that “shadow”, but the damage was accumulating within her starting from when he took her back.

It was clear that it was necessary to escape from this foreign world even if a second faster.

Then again, it wasn’t just Claudia. Although it was somewhat different from Claudia who was under a kind of protection, the lord had already been under the effect of the bloody wind for quite some time now.

Claudia was looking up at the lord’s face pleadingly while inside his embrace and noticed that. It was hard to notice because of the black mask, but the mouth area was changing color. In addition, right now, a trickle of blood was flowing down slowly from the sunglasses.

Blood vomit, nosebleed, tears of blood. Even he who showed up as a savior was also being gnawed at by this environment that was harmful to humans.

But, even so, that key was the only thing that mustn’t be stolen no matter what. Rather, even if Claudia had to throw away her life, that was the only thing……

「No need to worry.」

「Eh?」

Different from the composed act until just now, the lord’s voice gave the impression of slight fatigue. But, mysteriously that voice that was calming was directed toward Claudia.

The lord slightly pulled his arm that was circled around Claudia’s shoulder closer so she wouldn’t fall and turned his palm to face straight up.

Claudia was pulled closer with a jerk, and her face was pushed onto the lord’s neck. Because of her special position, she had no experience of being embraced by a male who was near her age. Even while understanding that this wasn’t the time, she held her breath while her heart was skipping a beat.

But, what happened right after that caused her to gulp even more.

「It’s a bit of a bad habit of mine to have sticky fingers. An accessory this beautiful doesn’t match that kind of chap that looks like a shoddy picture, so that was why my hand moved by itself.」

「Tha, that is-」

The ring in the lord’s finger emitted light, and that light flashed on his palm. From there, what appeared was exactly what Claudia asked to take back, a cross necklace that was endowed with artistic beauty despite its antique feel——”the key of holy cross”.

It seemed Aby-san somehow also snatched “the key of holy cross” when he dealt the kick. The “shadow” was enraged when Claudia was taken from it, creating an opening. But despite that, what a quickness. Certainly, the lord’s sticky fingers were just as bad as he had personally stated.

「I don’t know what this “thing” is but……if it’s that important, don’t let it get stolen again, okay?」

「Ye, yes-. Thank you, very much.」

Claudia slowly reached out and took the “key of holy cross”. She put it around her neck, and then grasped it tightly as though embracing it into her chest. She then said her words of gratitude.

And then, she looked up once more at the lord wonderingly, thinking 「Just who in the world is this person?」.

But, even that conversation was forced to come to an end due to the pressing matter at hand.

「Chih. One got destroyed. One more time, I’ll leave it to you okay, me!」

「It’s more troublesome than expected, but just leave it to me, me.」

The lord cursed, and at the same time, he summoned a clone. Yes, one of the two clones that were left behind to hold back the “shadow” was annihilated.

Because he had already consumed a considerable amount of magic power, he only put a little bit of magic power into the clone bodies to save energy. He was also in a state where he had sealed the techniques that consumed large amounts of magic power. But for a clone to be annihilated in this short amount of time, he couldn’t stop from getting a shudder.

There, the lord rushed into the storm of bloody wind once more. The ghoul-like things rejoiced as though to say 「The prey returned!」 and rushed the lord.

The ghoul-like things approached like a muddy stream. The clone body which acted as a vanguard resolved to accept some damage and charged forward. The clone slashed about with shining short swords in both hands, discarded them, and then mowed down the enemies with flame-element magic.

「I have a question, do you have a way to seal that mirror entrance?」

The lord’s main body, even with his hands occupied, used magic and threw all his kunai that were manipulated using a telepathy stone to the surrounding to prevent the enemies from approaching while asking Claudia that.

It was a sudden question, but Claudia nodded firmly.

「This “key of holy cross” is for that.」

「I see. Even my sticky fingers can be useful sometimes.」

Winged ghoul-like things began attacking from the sky. Kunai flew and shot them down, but due to the full use of clone bodies, diverse use of gravity magic, the numerous consecutive magic, and above all else, the long stay in this environment with body strengthening and revitalization that

were continuously activated all this time his magic power had become lower than twenty percent.

Unfortunately, both his hands were full. Both the unceasing attack of the ghoul-like things and the control of the clone bodies in order to hold back the “shadow” made him unable to spare the time to drink recovery medicine.

But, if he could just return to the original world, Claudia would be able to seal the gate. He could recover himself after that. Right now, speed was of the utmost importance. It would be the lord’s victory if he just arrived at the destination!

「Hahah, a carnage like this has been too long. Not bad!」

The vanguard clone was crushed by numbers.

He used the skill “Shadow Dance” to make the ghoul-like things rushing at him as his footsteps.

He leapt across them while summoning a clone at the same time. He burned away the enemy at his landing point using fire ninja art and secured the escape route while turning the surrounding into quicksand using earth ninja art, making the enemies stumbled.

For himself, he used “Wood Chip Dance” to rush away using grains of sand as footholds. Against the countless arms reaching out to him, he used the combination technique of illusion and gravity magic “Shadow of Slanted Death” and broke through everything by a hair’s breadth.

The enemies surely wanted to get a bite of him no matter what.

Against the lord whose momentum couldn’t be stopped, the ghoul-like things tried to stop him physically by forming a thick and dense wall of flesh at the front.

The kunai floating in midair formed a circle formation in front of the lord. The kunai that were forming the circle formation like the barrel of a gatling gun started to rotate clockwise at high speed. They were even turning red hot. They looked just like a ring of fire in a circus.

But, naturally, it wasn’t something for a fierce beast to hop through.

It was for digging.

——Abyss-style Katon Futon Combined Formation
There is no hope in stopping deep darkness
Houou Daishouha (TN: Firebird’s Great Flight)

The ring of flame that flew forward while rotating like a cannonball mercilessly gouged the flesh wall of the ghoul-like things with the blades of flame and wind that whirled about like a tornado combined with the high-speed rotation of the kunai themselves.

Something that should be called a tunnel of ghoul-like things was created, and the lord sprinted through it instantly before the tunnel plugged up.

「……Amazing. What power……」

Claudia unconsciously forgot herself while watching on in fascination. Words of admiration reflexively slipped out.

But, right after that, Claudia noticed. *Gofuh*, a small coughing sound could be heard from the mouth of the young man carrying her while running.

Looking closer, the stain on the mask was getting bigger than before. It was clear that he was vomiting up blood once more.

Claudia was ashamed.

She should be a “person standing on the side that protects”. And yet, she was simply getting carried like a princess while quietly watching the person who had saved her from getting hurt!

——The Lord consecrate those who saved. O wicked people, know this. What protects me is the love of God. What break thy is the anger of God.

! This is……

The lord, no, Claudia’s surrounding was shining in a jade-colored light. The jade light that was shining like a spherical barrier repelled or even exterminated the ghoul-like things that touched the edge of the light.

……I see, so this is the out-of-place feeling that I’ve been sensing all this time. As I thought, you know about Tortus, don’t you?

Tor, tus?

The lord asked with surety, but the reply he got was a confused expression.

But, that power was…….the lord was going to press further, but in an instant, his words stopped due to the vanishing of the clones that were tasked to holding back the “shadow”.

Because his remaining magic power had decreased to less than ten percent, he almost didn’t circulate enough magic

power, and his attack methods were also limited to only wrapping his short swords in magic power, so it could be said that it couldn’t be helped.

But, the presence of the “shadow” that came chasing at them with outrageous speed was giving him no leeway as expected.

Right now wasn’t the time to satisfy his curiosity. The priority was to definitely return to their original world!

The lord swallowed his question, and in exchange, he theatrically sighed 「fuh」 like usual.

「Fuh, you’ve got guts. That helps.」

「I will protect you. I won’t let even one of the low-level demons come near.」

Even though her whole body was burned and the influence of the bloody wind was clearly weakening her, the light residing in Claudia’s eyes was getting stronger instead.

Seeing her determined expression, the lord let out a 「fuh」 that was longer than usual.

And then, he summoned two clones around him. This time he didn’t send them to hold back the “shadow”, but charged forward in a delta formation to penetrate the avalanche of the ghoul-like things in one go.

A severe and repulsive pressure approached from behind. The ghoul-like things that kept advancing endlessly no matter what were turned to ash.

It was a game of tag where their lives were at stake; however, the end finally came into view.

「There it is!」

「That’s……」

In a gap in the swarming ghoul-like things, the form of the “mirror gate” could be seen. The ghoul-like things were advancing in a desperate frenzy, but they were turned into ashes one after another and got pushed back just barely.

What came into their view was a flickering light that was like an aurora with the color of dead grass. At a glance, the swaying curtain of light looked unreliable, but the light that was deployed to cover the whole surface of the mirror wasn’t being approached by the ghoul-like things at all.

Furthermore, arrows, bullets, throwing daggers, and the likes were flying out from inside the aurora of a dead grass color, piercing and exterminating the ghoul-like things one after another.

「It seems your comrades are waiting for your return, huh?」

「Yes, it appears so.」

The lord glanced at the teary-eyed Claudia and smiled wryly inside his heart.

Just in case, the lord also through kunai in the minimum range and deployed a barrier (the type that could be penetrated from inside while isolating things from outside) to protect just the mirror surface, but like this, perhaps it was meaningless for him to do that.

「I’ll ask just in case, but that aurora-like light, it’s a type that will be okay even if we touch it, right?」

「Yes, of course. That’s the “light of sacred destruction” that the chief used. It’s the light of protection that will destroy only the wicked. It doesn’t have any effect on humans.」

「Magnificent. Then, we will charge right into it like this!」

「Yes!」

A terrific roar thundered from behind. The voice sounded as though it was shaking with frustration from being sure that its prey would definitely escape.

Claudia looked behind from across the lord’s shoulder. The girl was also similarly frustrated. She wondered just what all the training she had accumulated until now was for. Wasn’t it for the sake of this day?

Although she was suppressed right from the beginning because of the betrayal, for her to be forced to retreat helplessly like this…….

She suppressed the negative feeling that was about to bloat up and shook her head. Right now she had to survive. And then, she had to give her all to not let the residences of this world to cross over to the human world.

However, someday, she would without fail……

「-, Dodge!」

「Roger!」

A whip of hellfire rushed by like a laser, piercing through all the ghoul-like things in between.

It was the last struggle of the “shadow”. Even still, it was a strong threat.

The clones at the lord’s left and right immediately leapt to the back. They lined up after each other in the whip’s line of fire toward their main body.

——Abyss-style Doton Futon Combined Formation
Come, the dragon of dark abyss
Tenshou no Houryuu (TN: Dragon of the summit colliding on heaven)

One clone stabbed his short sword into the ground, and the ground instantly protruded. It struck the ghoul-like things around as though the ground was piercing the sky, and at the same time, it formed a thick earthen wall.

——Fifty meters remaining to the “mirror gate”.

The earthen wall stopped the whip of hellfire in its track, even if only for a few seconds.

The wall was pulverized, and the whip of hellfire that stretched like a spear pierced the clone, exterminating it.

Gravity Ninja Art
——Abyss-style Juuton Jutsu Naraku no Mashu
By my evil hand, sink, into the deep darkness (TN: Evil influence of Naraka)

A super gravity field was formed around the second clone. The rushing whip of hellfire was falling toward the ground, as though it was being grasped by the hand of the devil that was crawling out from hell.

With the lord’s remaining magic power, the gravity magic could only be activated for around two seconds, but it was worth it to maintain the magic until the very end.

The second clone was torn to pieces by the whip’s overwhelming momentum, but,

——Thirty meters remaining to the “mirror gate”.

On the other side of the “mirror gate”, they could see people wearing habits or cassocks opening their eyes wide in surprise.

「Kuh, coming! My barrier won’t be able to endure that attack without a sacred vessel!」

「It’s enough if you just repel the rabble.」

The last clone cut open the path forward.

The whip of hellfire rushed forward. Kousuke rotated with a twirl and performed a back step run while deploying his kunai. He deployed a barrier of space isolation.

——Twenty meters remaining to the “mirror gate”.

It was enough. He bought enough distance!

「This is just a second-hand opinion, but according to the demon king——」

He turned around, and then dashed with full power. At the same time, the clone who acted as the vanguard also turned around. When they passed each other, the main body and the clone body were both grinning widely.

——Ten meters remaining to the “mirror gate”.

The “shadow” was approaching rapidly. The last clone who leapt in front of it traced what the lord’s lips were saying.

「Self-explosion, is romance.」

A light flashed brightly. A terrific explosion blast mowed down the surrounding without sparing anything. The

charging “shadow” also wasn’t an exception.

After all, the last explosion was added with the release of flame-element magic that was activated with all the lord’s remaining magic power which he poured into the clone.

The “shadow” wasn’t blown into nothing like the ghoul-like things around, but it was forced to back away without being able to sprint forward or anything.

A roar resounded once more. The last attack was unleashed along with a shriek that polluted the human mind. The whip of hellfire stretched for Claudia, but……

□My bad, stalker. This is my win.□

——The remaining distance to the “mirror gate”……zero

The lord leapt into the “mirror gate” with Claudia in hand. He embraced her as though to protect her and rolled on the ground inside the previous underground room. And then, at the end, he entered a kneeling pose on one knee and looked at Claudia.

Claudia returned the gaze with eyes that were filled with a strong light, and she nodded firmly.

□Under the name of the Lord, o’ the fortress of the oppressed. Let the solid gate repel the wicked.□

She prayed so while lifting the “key of holy cross”. The “key of holy cross” emitted an intense light, and the “mirror gate” also shined in resonance.

And then, a liquid that looked like mercury overflowed from the relief, covering the surface of the mirror in the blink of an eye——

「*The day of the end is near! The path is already connected! Just wait! The body that will give birth to me――*」

The terrifying scream was interrupted as the mirror returned ta a normal mirror that reflected only the underground room and the people in it.

Silence filled the underground room. Inside the underground room, several people clad in habits or cassocks were all still staring still at the “mirror gate” while holding their breath.

They had just witnessed before their eyes a critical situation that was beyond description. It seemed they were unable to comprehend that it had happened for real immediately.

「Cough-, guh」

That silence that came from such a terrifying experience was broken by a pained voice.

Those people went ‘hah’ in surprise and turned their gaze toward the voice. There they saw an unknown young man――Kousuke, getting on all fours with red smoke smoldering from his whole body.

It seemed that after returning to the human world, thanks to the closing of the “mirror gate”, the red mist gnawing at Kousuke was dispersing.

And then, Kousuke himself was in a state a step away from running out of magic power completely, so he was suffering from the damage gnawing into his body――

「Ho, honored messenger, are you――」

「Uu, just what the hell with that「unreasonableness will be performed」, it’s just painful. The skill name is also really

painful. Even more painful history was produced!

The figure of the young man who was writhing from the wound of the heart rather than external injuries could be seen there.

It appeared, self-explosion was romance. However, it seemed that depending on the type of the self-explosion, there was one that brought nothing but pain.

Claudia, who was gently laid down before Kousuke got on all fours, was also writhing like Kousuke with red smoke rising from her body. Even so, she still called out to Kousuke worriedly. But seeing his pain that seemed somewhat different from what she thought, her quirky tone changed into doubt, asking……alright?.

While she herself was in a state where it was the best she could do to maintain her consciousness, she was still worrying about Kousuke. Seeing such Claudia, Kousuke felt like the wound in his heart was healed slightly.

She was surely a healing kind of Onee-san……. While thinking such an idiotic thing, he felt the girl’s virtuous nature and let out a relieved sigh, feeling glad that he saved her.

And then, while holding back the pain of his tired heart, Kousuke pulled down his mask and grinned widely.

It’s fine already. Your little brother too.

——aa

Hearing those words, Claudia guessed why this young man came to save her. At the same time, she recalled the

hopeless situation of her little brother before she fainted and color left from her face.

But, her heart immediately calmed down.

Because Kousuke was on all fours, and also because Claudia was lying down, Kousuke’s face right now could only be seen by her.

Due to Kousuke’s soft expression, and the ambiance of his eyes that could be faintly seen even through the sunglasses due to this very close distance, Claudia felt reassured even without any basis.

That Kousuke’s words were stating the truth.

Because of that large relief, her stretched nervousness snapped, and extreme fatigue accompanied by the great injury rapidly took away her consciousness.

The current Claudia couldn’t go against that, because the savior in front of her, who she didn’t even know the name of, was giving off so much gentle atmosphere.

An overwhelming sense of relief enveloped her.

In the end, she wondered how long it had been since she felt this much relief.

Even though her whole body was in pain, even though she couldn’t sleep……

While understanding that, Claudia let go of her consciousness with a greatly relieved expression.

Kousuke smiled slightly at Claudia who relaxed limply while taking out recovery medicine from the Treasure Warehouse

and drinking it.

But, at that time,

「Originally, we should say our thanks.」

It was a heavy voice that was filled with dignity. 「Aa~, come to think of it, I'm surrounded by THE – suspicious people of the Vatican huh.」 Thinking that, Kousuke turned his gaze toward the voice while sweating a bit coldly. Just in case, he put on his mask again before lifting up his face.

There, he saw an old man in the middle of his seventies wearing a priest's cassock.

Although, despite the many layers of wrinkles that were carved on his face which gave the impression of such an age, his straight back and dignified posture, his sharp gray pupils, and his swept-back hair that was growing ample despite the all-white color, all of those made him look younger. While the old man was wearing the outfit of a clergyman, his aura felt like a veteran soldier.

One of his hands was holding an opened book. Curiously, that book seemed to be made from metal plates. It wasn't just the binding of the book; the whole book was made from around five thin sheets of metal piled up on each other.

It looked quite heavy, but he continued to hold it with one hand without difficulty.

Zari- The sound of feet moving resounded.

Kousuke's Presence Detection told him that several people in this place were moving to surround him. The only path to escape was already blocked.

「But, who are you, and why are you here? Depending on your reason, I believe that we might need to judge you rather than thank you. ……Now then, you. Will you quietly put down your weapon and agree to be restrained?」

Now then, what should he do.

Honestly speaking, it was Kousuke who wanted to know things. His original mission was also to investigate that. He had the thinking that he might be fine with following what the other side said if they would offer him information without hiding anything.

Because based on what he saw through Claudia and Aziz, these people didn’t seem that bad.

Although, this situation right now.

Putting aside the old man in front of him who Claudia called chief, the people surrounding him were releasing killing intent, seeming like they were going to attack at any moment now.

Even if it was Kousuke who had taken back Claudia from the foreign world, it didn’t change the fact that he was an intruder. And then, these people just had a lot of their comrades killed by many intruders.

In addition, it seemed that the young man Aziz was carried away in order to be treated, so he wasn’t here. In that case, these people should have been told about Aumale’s betrayal. Inside them, there should be a jumbled feeling of paranoia.

On top of that, although he had brought back Claudia, she was in a tattered state……

In the end, how much they would listen to him?

How much would they answer if he asked them?

From the word “restrained”, they didn’t intend to have a “dialogue” but an “investigation”. The prospect was slim, and even in case the event progressed smoothly, a considerable amount of time would be spent.

And then, the greatest problem was the demand to put down his weapon……

Unknown identity, unknown objective, and then an enormous threat level.

Their demand for him to put down his weapon was extremely natural, and Kousuke could understand that. But, having his artifacts investigated wouldn’t be good at all.

“Mirror gate” “Key of holy cross”. And then Claudia’s power, and the words “sacred vessel” that she said while they were escaping.

These people……most likely possessed the knowledge and skill to investigate an artifact to a certain degree.

(Gi, giving the artifacts to the Vatican without Nagumo’s permission……impossible! I cannot imagine what kind of punishment will await!)

The demerit of agreeing to their demand was too great.

Perhaps these people felt uneasy toward Kousuke who was pondering without answering. Or perhaps, they were wordlessly insisting to each other to quickly subdue him and finish up because the killing intent of the people around

became exceptionally stronger. Everyone readied their weapons and prepared to fight.

Blood was rising to their heads……that must be a factor that caused them to be like that. In any case, a precariousness of a situation that was just a step away from exploding could be felt.

Kousuke smiled frivolously (it couldn’t be seen because of the mask) while asking.

「Not surrendering my weapon, nor restraint. A peaceful dialogue while drinking tea. How does that sound to you?」

The answer that came was the doubling of the killing intent! The voices of their hearts「Don’t screw around bastaaard!」 came rushing at Kousuke!

Kousuke tried insisting「I can understand the feeling of you all! But see, I had to at least risk my life to save your comrades, you know!?」.

Their tension wasn’t swayed though there were several people who showed confusion in their eyes.

Even the “chief” seemed to understand that Kousuke wouldn’t obey. He looked extremely calm, but the flames of rage were flickering in his eyes.

His self-restraint was really something, but from his point of view, he just had a lot of his subordinates murdered with no questions asked. What’s more, their holy ground, the Vatican, was ransacked as the enemy pleased. It seemed that welcoming an unknown intruder politely was an impossible task for him.

「It’s unfortunate. Your strength is a threat, but it seems right now you are really exhausted. We will use this chance. I’ll pray that you will understand our situation and listen obediently.」

The “chief” waved his hand slowly.

Right after that, a blonde-haired youth――someone who emitted conspicuous killing intent even among these people, a youth who was called Wynn in Kousuke’s memory, rapidly drew near with a thin sword in one hand.

(Aah, geez even though I’m tired! Although, there is no way I can obediently give up my weapon! Because I don’t want to be punished!)

Kousuke couldn’t possibly put on air whimsically to think for long in front of these people who were brimming with killing intent. He had bought enough time to let the recovery medicine display its effect to a certain degree.

The damage on his body was deep, and his recovery rate was still thirty percent but……

「Well, it’s enough.」

「What!?」

The thin sword was swung to hit the target with the flat of its blade. Seeing Kousuke use it as a foothold, Wynn let out a shocked voice that was unable to believe it.

「You won’t get away!」

A girl with braided chestnut hair――Anna, leapt forward with tonfas in both hands.

She surely thought that in midair Kousuke wouldn’t be able to do anything. Of course, Kousuke casually dodged them. He somersaulted forward using the dust floating in midair as footholds.

「Hee!?」

Anna-chan passed through empty air where there was no one with a stupid voice. She looked at Kousuke with an expression that wanted to say「That’s foul, isn’t it!?」.

「My bad, if we are going to talk, let’s do it after both our sides have cooled down a bit, yeah?」

While saying that, two men were attacking at the timing when Kousuke was about to land. They were blown away by a midair spinning kick from an agility that could only be thought of as inhuman. Kousuke dashed toward the exit passage at full speed.

「Stop!」

「Surrender!」

Two men blocked the passage ahead. Both men had shaved heads with no eyebrows. Their faces were also similar. Were they skinhead brothers?

In any case, invisibility was set to full throttle.

「Ha?」

「Ah?」

The skinhead brothers splendidly split their questioning tones with each other. Below them, Kousuke easily passed through with a slide.

Kousuke’s invisibility wouldn’t be noticed by a normal person even if he was right in front of them. Even people who had received combat training would fall into a state of “unable to immediately react even if they could see him” depending on the situation.

Just like how people wouldn’t be aware even if they noticed grass swaying in front of their eyes, the brain didn’t realize that there was something that they needed to react to.

「What are you doing! Bacchus, Bruce!」

「Kuh, sorry-」

「What was that just now!?」

Even after they returned to their senses from Wynn’s angry yell, the skinhead brothers were shaken from the strange phenomenon. A further angry yell from the chief 「Don’t let him get away!」 made them turn around in panic and chase after Kousuke.

「Somehow……that person, is strange!」

「I know!」

Wynn also agreed with what Anna said with a half-screaming voice.

Kousuke was running ahead with his back turned toward them, but even when they tried to aim at his back with projectile weapons, for some reason, they couldn’t fix their aim. Far from that, if they didn’t concentrate strongly enough, even though they were chasing right behind him now, it felt like they were going to forget who they were chasing.

Before long, Kousuke easily reached the former wide space. His figure vanished behind a pillar for a moment, but his pursuers immediately caught the sight of him rushing up the stairs.

「I'll restrain him! ——Flow and seize. Like the seven times transparent silver, refined in the hearth of the high palace.」

Right after that, one of the tonfa that Anna had was enveloped in a faint light. A chain of light flew out from its tip.

Kousuke threw a glance toward the disturbing presence approaching him from behind.

「No matter how I see it, that's Shirasaki's favorite, "Binding Shining Chain", thank you very much, god damn it all!」

As expected, other than the "mirror gate" and "key of holy cross", they seemed to have other special weapons.

Kousuke, who was in the middle of rushing up the stairs, was bound by the chain of light rushing at him.

「I got him! The Mr. oddball!」

「Who is the oddball! Braided tonfa-chan!」

Kousuke-san vanished with a pop. Only the reverberation of his tsukkomi remained. Then, only a small stone, the one-time use artifact for the use of the substitution technique, was left behind. It was disposable, so it was just a rock after use.

「Wha-!? He vanished!? What's going on!?」

「-, as I thought, that guy is also someone chosen by a sacred vessel……」

Wynn and others stopped moving from the confusion. One of his comrades, a youth with pointy hair and an Oriental face carrying an antique-looking rapid-fire bowgun went ‘Ah’ and raised his voice while pointing his finger.

「Not the stairs! The elevator!」

When everyone went ‘hah’ in surprise and looked there, they saw the figure of Kousuke climbing up by kicking off the walls.

「Lee! Do it! Don’t kill him!」

「Got it! But, don’t blame me for some injuries okay!?」

Saying that the bowgun-user youth, who was called Lee, fired a metal arrow toward Kousuke.

「Whoops!」

「What thee!?」

In response to the arrow that was flying through the air, Kousuke stabbed one short sword on the wall to stay in position, and then he struck down the arrow with another short sword.

The amazing feat caused Lee to raise a surprised yell, but he immediately fired consecutively, not wanting the target to get away. Seeing Lee’s skill that fired all the arrows aiming at spots that weren’t lethal made Kousuke understand that the youth was indeed first-class.

But the six arrows flying at him were all struck down or cut apart by a short sword in one hand. After that, Kousuke naturally continued to go up.

□As expected it’s impossible for him to do the same with a bullet, right?□

One of the skinhead brothers just now, the one called Bruce, was readying an old looking rifle.

By the way, because of the gunshot sound the rifle made, it couldn’t really be used inside the city. And due to their work, bowgun and rifle——which one was better was something that Bruce and Lee often clashed about.

Although, right now there was no need to hold back. The rifle that could fire five shots consecutively was fired by Bruce without reservation.

Of course, everything was cut apart.

□□□□□□□……□□□□□□□

Including the “chief” who came later from behind, everyone was staring speechlessly in wonderment.

It was more or less a “sham bullet slashing” with a trick of using gravity magic to pull the bullets toward the short sword, but for them who had no way of knowing that, it was certainly a scene that made them doubt their eyes.

□In my personal opinion, I’m quite able in escaping. Well then, let’s meet again if destiny wills it.□

Clink, Kousuke sheathed the short sword on his back, and then he dashed up the wall in one go after saying only that. Like that he vanished toward the surface.

After that, only them who were still standing dumbfounded were remaining.

–

–

–

Kousuke, who arrived at the surface for the time being, climbed up the dome of the San Pietro Cathedral and took a panoramic view from there.

And then, he grimaced seeing the disastrous situation inside the city of the Vatican that still had black smoke rising silently.

It seemed it wasn’t just the Vatican’s library, but the art museum, the church, and even the administration building were also damaged.

It appeared the fake tourists who assaulted here had already retreated. Within his sight, he could only see the tourists who were all shaken up while evacuating, and the staff who were leading the evacuation and putting out the fire while yelling angrily.

Of course, that didn’t mean that the attackers didn’t slip in among those scared tourists again but……

「What a terrible thing to do……」

Kousuke muttered unconsciously. There, his instinct suddenly whispered to him.

Using his sunglasses’ distance viewing function, he turned his gaze outside the Vatican that was being left behind by

the tourists.

And then, he found it.

「That guy……」

Outside the Vatican, on the rooftop of a building where it was just right to look at the library, he found the figure of a familiar man. The man was also using binoculars for some time to observe the situation inside the Vatican.

「Why doesn’t he come? What is he doing there?」

When Kousuke voiced that question, the man suddenly——dropped his shoulders in disappointment. And then, he checked his watch and turned his gaze once more at the seriously chaotic Vatican. He laughed faintly and turned around.

「……Let’s try following him.」

Kousuke took off his sunglasses, mask, and tattered coat, and then he took out a new coat from the Treasure Warehouse and wore it.

And then, he leapt down from the dome and ran to chase the man.

The man who the young man Aziz called “Leda-san” at the base outside the Vatican, who should be his comrade.

–

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The newest chapter of Arifureta Nichijou de Sekai Saikyou was updated on Gardo.

The ABYSS on the front cover. In the end, does it mean the abyss, or perhaps, the person that is being pointed at by the arrow……

Mori Misaki-sensei’s sense is shining bright!

Also, Kaori-san in Nichijou. I’m liking how her dangerousness is increasing more and more lol.

It can be read on Overlap-sama’s homepage, so if you like, please go check it.

Arifureta Chapter 305

Arifureta After III Valentine Day Special Program

AN: happy valentine

"Yoo, *friend* Hajime-kun! It's a great morning too today!"

"Good morning, *friend* Hajime-kun! Ah, let me hold your bag for you until we are in front of the classroom."

In the morning in February with its intense cold Hajime, who just arrived at school, was being greeted by his classmates Nakano Shinji and Saitou Yoshiki who were purposefully standing by near the shoe rack, lying in ambush for him.

For some reason, they were addressing Hajime like a close friend with amiable smiles that looked gross. In addition, they were calling him by his first name, something that they had never done even once before.

Hajime directed a suspicious gaze at the smiling duo. For the time being, he confirmed that there were no ordinary students around who were watching……

"Kaori. Recovery magic please."

「Right, this looks like a serious illness. I'll go with the highest-class magic. ——"Holy Scripture"!」

Kaori, who was going to school with him, showered light of the highest-class light-element recovery magic "Holy Scripture" with pinpoint precision toward Shinji's and Yoshiki's heads.

Flash The two's head started shinning.

「Who are you calling seriously ill!?」

「That's right! We are acting like usual, right? Aren't we friends——」

This time a divine light showered down on the two's head. It was the age of god magic that surpassed the highest-class recovery magic——regeneration magic.

「Stop it, Shirasaki-san! Stop applying magic wordlessly like that!」

「I'll also say this in advance, stop looking at us with a pitying gaze as though we are tremendously pitiful people!」

The two tried to brush off the radiance dwelling on their head by tapping their hair. Hajime was sighing while changing his shoes.

「And? Why are you two coming at me with a behavior that is inviting nausea like that right from the get-go? If you two are picking a fight, then I'll respond with the harassment methods that I have thought of. But only up to 108 types of them though……」

「「We are super sorry」」

Shinji and Yoshiki bowed their heads in beautiful harmony. However, it appeared they had some kind of objective as they were only moving their mouths while mumbling without trying to talk.

「What's the matter with the two of them, I wonder?」

「Who knows? Perhaps they picked up and ate some strange thing? More importantly, let's go quickly to the classroom.」

Hajime urged Kaori to keep going while looking terribly uninterested. Shinji and Yoshiki were following after them slowly.

While they were heading to their classroom, they were feeling a strangely restless and nervous atmosphere and attention, especially from the first-years. Hajime and his group getting attention was something regular, but this felt more than usual.

「? What? The atmosphere is strange somehow.」

「H~m, you're right. I wonder what's going on……wait, ah, so it's that.」

It seemed Kaori guessed something from the attitude of the underclassman girls.

「What's going on?」

「Ahaha, see, it's that. The thing that is also making Myuu-chan high spirited.」

「……Aa, Valentine's Day huh.」

'I see', Hajime nodded. Behind him, Shinji and Yoshiki twitched.

「Yep. It will be tomorrow. Look forward to it, Hajime-kun. I'll make an extraordinarily delicious one for you.」

「I see. I'm happy to hear that.」

From behind, *gan gan gan-* the sound of a fierce collision resounded. When the two looked back wondering what happened, they saw the sight of Shinji and Yoshiki bashing their heads on the corridor's wall looking like they were going to shed tears of blood……

Hajime and Kaori then looked at each other.

「Come to think of it, is your father all right? This is you, Kaori, we are talking about. Surely you prepared one for your father every year, right? Last year the event passed through uneventfully because it was right in the middle of the returnee commotion after all. Won't he hold an expectation for this year?」

「Otou-san is really restless since the day before yesterday, you know? It's so embarrassing to watch him act like that.」

They were conversing as though nothing happened while starting to walk once more.

From behind 「You guys!? What are you doing!? There is blood coming out!? Like a waterfall!」, the voice of a creeped out teacher could be heard, but it was like the BGM of a boring morning.

「You know Hajime-kun, Otou-san casually left a valentine special edition magazine on the table. And then, he kept sending glances from slightly far away, checking whether I noticed or not. Geez, as a daughter, my father acting like that is something that I shouldn't see, it's embarrassing.」

「To, Tomoichi-san……. Is it because of me that he feels that his share will be in danger this year, so he made that kind of preparation?」

「Right, perhaps so. Recently he casually sounds me out every day.」

The backbone of the Shirasaki family seemed to play his hand every day in order to obtain chocolate from his daughter. Hajime let out a dry laugh saying 「Well, I do understand his feelings.」

While the two were talking like that, they arrived at their classroom.

From the discussion between the wive~s, it was decided that they would do “going to school with just the two of them” in turns, so Yue and the others were already inside the classroom.

「……Nn, Hajime, you safe? Kaori didn’t do anything to you?」

「What do you mean by that I wonder!? I wonder!?」

Without even giving any greeting, it was Yue-sama’s “Kaori bullying first thing in the morning”. Hajime headed to his seat while giving a brief glance at the two who were starting their daily morning ritual with the usual ‘gyaa gyaa’.

「Short time no see de~su, Hajime-san!」

「Good morning, Hajime.」

While the classmates were saying 「Good morning」 to him one after another, Shia and Shizuku were approaching him. One with a hop *pyon* while the other with a slow walk.

After Hajime returned their greeting, Shia was hopping up and down *pyon pyon* while pressing with 「Please listen to me-, Hajime-san!」.

「What's up? Did something happen on your way to school?」

「That's right. Surprisingly, a hero appeared after so long!」

「……? Amanogawa? How did he return to earth……」

If speaking of a hero, then it was Amanogawa Kouki who quickly left school after returning to Earth and went back to Tortus being a "holy precincts' monster exterminator". Now, after more than a year had passed, the degree of freedom in "opening the gate" was increasing, and yet there should be no way that he was able to freely return by his own power.

Hajime tilted his head looking puzzled. Shia shook her head left and right and answered.

「It's not that hero; it's about the people who are confessing to me or Yue-san that recently have remarkably decreased in frequency.」

Hearing her words, the classmates who were nonchalantly eavesdropping were making an understanding face saying 「Aa, certainly. To attempt to lay their hand on the demon king's wife, they are indeed a hero」 in agreement.

About half a year after returning to Earth, not to mention the students in this school, even people from the neighboring schools, universities, and on top of that, even working adults were often committing "street confession" to Yue and co.

Although they didn't just get rejected, in the middle of their confession, their words were chopped down along with their love or their ulterior motive.

The number of people with broken hearts, or even their body crushed, couldn’t be counted. The rumor spread and the frequency was gradually decreasing. Recently, due to their flawless attitude in their relationship with Hajime (there was also the effect of the recognition obstruction artifact though), such heroes were vanishing but……

「Seriously? Why is it happening again suddenly……. Is it that? Are they in need of a smashing? I’ll pin down their location even right now using the compass.」

The boys of the classroom all entered a defensive stance for their crotch. Their motion that was without the slightest disorder was truly beautiful. Their simultaneous shivering from Shia’s words after that 「No no, if it’s necessary, then we will do the smashing ourselves, so it’s all right」, also had a magnificent synchronization rate.

「It must be that. As I thought, because Valentine’s Day is close, there must be people who take action with resolve.」

「From the male’s side? Normally it’s the reverse……aa, I see. So it’s just like Nakano and Saitou.」

If they were good friends with Hajime, they might receive leftover chocolate from Yue and co. Such ulterior motive was transparent from the two. The people committing street confessions must also be taking action betting on the one in a million chances.

Although, there was no way unknown people confessing at this late would have any chance somehow, but today, there were people committing street confessions. Just what in the world were they thinking?

Hajime tilted his head in confusion; however, he immediately went 「Hm?」 and looked around the classroom.

It seemed Shia’s mention of 「Valentine’s Day」 caused a reaction. The girls in the class were strangely restless. They who had survived the scene of carnage in the other world possessed guts and composure that were incomparable with normal high schoolers and the like, but now their atmosphere was somehow restless.

Among them, Miyasaki Nana, who was talking with Sonobe Yuuka and Sugawara Taeko, threw a question out casually.

「Hey hey, Shizuku-chi~. Shia-chi~. Sure enough, you two will give Nagumo-chi chocolate, right~?」

「But of course desu! Today, when we get back home, all of us will make chocolate together with Myuu-chan too!」

「Yes. Although, this is the first Valentine’s Day for Shia and others, so we won’t just make chocolate to hand to Hajime, but we are going to try making various things too.」

After Shia answered 「I’m looking forward to it desuu!」 energetically, Shizuku replied while glancing at Hajime looking a bit embarrassed.

The boys in the class were getting a faraway look seeing the two like that. They then started a conversation that sounded like they were escaping from reality 「I think this year it will just be from Kaa-chan (mother) again I think」, or 「Haa? What are you saying? Valentine’s Day will be abolished from this year, right?」. or 「Right right, if I’m not mistaken, it will be decided as a violation of international treaties in order to protect the dignity of male students or something, so it will get abolished, you know?」, or 「There was a large demo, wasn’t it? Abolish this unfair system! or something」, and so on. That was the conversation of Tamai Atsushi, Aikawa Noboru, and Nimura Akito, those three.

Exasperated gazes from the class’s girls were poured on those three.

When Nana heard what Shia and Shizuku said, she made a wide grin and repeatedly poked at Yuuka from beside her.

「You hear thaaat, Yuuka-chi. Everyone will be giving chocolate to Nagumo-chi they say~」

「So, so what?」

「It’s not so what riight~. Yuuka-chi too needs to work hard. Staying as just a mistre――」

「I’ll send you flying, Nana.」

When Nana was about to say something, Yuuka grasped her mouth *mugyuu* and stopped her. Nana tried to make Yuuka let go with a muffled ‘mui mui*, but the fingertips of Yuuka who was faintly blushing were displaying a powerful grip like a vise and wouldn’t let go.

Taeko chuckled in amusement and turned the aim of the talk to Hajime.

「What do you think Nagumo-kun? Yuuka’s chocolate. Yuuka is also good at making sweets, that’s why the taste is guaranteed, you know?」

「Wai-, wait Taeko!」

Yuuka stopped her in a panic, but it seemed she was curious about Hajime’s reaction because she was sending him restless glances.

During that time, it seemed she forgot to manage the strength in her grip. Her claws were digging into Nana’s lips,

causing Nana to turn teary saying 「Hi, higih, it will get shredded-!?」, but Yuuka-chan didn’t notice.

While the class’s attention was inadvertently focused on him, Hajime was staring in puzzlement before his gaze turned to empty space as though he had recalled something.

And then,

「Come to think of it, yesterday, when I went to your restaurant to drink coffee yesterday, you made me eat a test piece choco stick as a freebie, right? That was certainly delicious. Like, the bitterness was exquisite or something.」

「Wai-, Nagumo-, I told you to keep it secret!」

The classmates thought.

This girl, she damn stole the first move!, in their minds.

Yuuka more or less explained 「It’s a test piece and I don’t know whether to put it on the menu, so keep it secret!」 at the restaurant, but seeing Yuuka’s absurdly flustered act, it was highly possible that it was just her excuse on the surface.

‘Doing something like giving it on the big day is impossible, but he came to the restaurant at a great timing like this…… perhaps I should make him eat the choco that I had secretly practiced making’, it was something like that.

Yuuka’s shoulder was suddenly grabbed hard. If she turned around, that person would be there.

「Yuuka-chan?」

□Hih!? Tha, that’s not it! It’s a misunderstanding!□

From behind, Kaori-san brought her face closer *nuu* with a nice smile. Even though she was making persistent exchanges with Yue until just now, she had unnoticeably stood behind her.

And then, Yuuka’s two best friends withdrew from that place with similar “unnoticeable” speed.

Yuuka was making various excuses for this and that. Kaori stared at her while smiling cheerfully. Everyone averted their gaze from those two and resumed talking as though nothing had happened.

But, there, this time it was Ryutaro who dropped a bomb.

□Then, Nagumo. At the end, which one that will make you happiest when you receive it? Will it be the one from Yue-san as expected?□

□Ryu-kun!? Delicacy!□

The composed Ryutaro who would receive chocolate for certain this year, what’s more, it would be serious chocolate. The atmosphere of the boys in the class was like □This bastard stealing a march like that□ where it felt like they would spit out anytime.

Ryutaro didn’t have even the slightest ill will when he said that, but for such a simple question, it truly lacked in delicacy. The classmates, especially the girls, were candidly listening attentively.

Yue brushed up her fluffy golden hair with one hand *fuaasaa-*. The triumphant look on her face was

unsurpassed by anything. It seemed that she believed that she was number one without even a shred of doubt.

‘Say it! Now, Hajime, say it! Say the obvious and only answer!’

She seemed to want to say that.

Shia was going 「Mumumu-. Hajime-san, it’s fine to choose me as number one sometimes, you know?」. Her unseen rabbit ears were flopping *myon myon* in an appeal.

Shizuku was smiling wryly, but as expected she was sending him a gaze that was slightly in expectation.

Kaori and Yuuka too were also stopping their small judgment and sent glances.

The boys got the premonition of carnage and gulped tensely.

Like that, inside the classroom that was visited with a strange silence, Hajime answered.

Easily.

「Eh? The one from Myuu though?」

‘Why are you asking something so obvious?’, his puzzled face seemed to want to say that.

In a sense, that answer should be just as expected. He wouldn’t give a vague answer like 「Everyone」 or 「Anyone」. 1 or 0. White or black. The demon king’s answer could only be one!

Ryuutaro said 「O, ou……I see」 while his gaze was darting around. While he was doing that, *thud* there was a sound of something collapsing.

「Yu, Yue-san!? Are you okay!? Yue-san falling on all fours is super rare though!」

「Wait Yue! Get a hold of yourself!」

Yue was crumbling down on all fours. Shia and Shizuku rushed toward her in a panic.

In addition, Suzu requested for rescue from Kaori.

「Kaorin! Recovery magic!」

「Heey, Yue♪ Just now, how do you feel? Yue who got her first position taken away by her daughter after feeling convinced that she is number one, how do you feel about that? Hey hey, heey I'm asking you♪」

「Kaorii, just because you often get bullied, don't corner Yue-san by making full use of this chanceee!」

Kaori was speaking provocation just like Miledy while walking around Yue with light footsteps singingly *ranranra~n♪*. Yuuka was flustered while sending her remonstrating words.

「……This is-, the taste of defeat! Ah, I'll call out Kaori behind the gymnasium later.」

Yue-sama reflected upon the defeat while swearing vengeance toward Kaori.

As expected, Hajime felt a bit awkward seeing that, and he made his justification.

「No, well, see. It can't be helped, right? That Myuu, she is really getting into it. She's been making choco cake since around a week ago. And she even said something like, 'even

though there are quarters in pizza, ‘it’s strange that there is nothing like that in choco cake’.

Haa? Could it be she meant that? She wanted to make a whole cake that is made from four types of cakes into one?

Hajime smiled wryly and nodded at Ryuutaro’s words that were meant to say Oi oi, Myuu-chan’s concept is just too tricky there.

She was working hard while wholeheartedly saying Myuu will present papa with the best quarters choco cake nano! while there was chocolate cream stuck on her nose tip, you know? I thought I was going to die in agony there.

Understanding voices Aa~ came from here and there inside the class. Indeed, it was an overly powerful mental attack from the beloved daughter. Surely it inflicted lethal damage to the father.

Yue also stood up while saying ……Nn. I too, when I was told Myuu will present Yue-oneechan with a cherry as crimson as your eyes nano!, I got a nosebleed while recounting about her dying experience. The color of understanding was gradually appearing on her face.

Shia and others were also talking. According to their story, it seemed Myuu intended to present each Onee-chan with a chocolate cake that expressed each of their characteristic traits.

That’s, it must be unbearable. Aa~, I also want Myuu-chan’s chocolate now.

Right? I’m thinking, that if it’s for Myuu’s sake, I’ll destroy the world.

「What are you going to do destroying the world?」

「I’m wrong. If it’s for Myuu’s sake, I can pillage all the cacao and sugar in the world.」

「No, that’s not really different from previously.」

Hajime displayed his doting parent quality. He could actually do what he said, so it wasn’t really a laughing matter. Ryutaro made tsukkomi at such Hajime. Not just the classmates, even Yue and others were also showing exasperated faces.

–

–

–

The morning of Valentine’s Day.

「……」

Hajime was wordlessly sending a fixed gaze at the breakfast on the table.

On the plate that was plastic wrapped like onigiri, a very bizarre black object was placed.

When he shifted his gaze to the side, there was a letter placed there.

「To my beloved son. It’s valentine choco that is packed with plenty of love from mother. Enjoy it as a breakfast replacement. It’s not a failed work, you know? This is just a result of not succeeding using this method.」

She was saying something like what Edison-san would say, but in the end, it seemed she was just pushing the cleaning up of her failed work to her son.

Then where was the successful work?

「How passionate, isn't it, ufufu.」

Remia who seemed to be the one who was making the real breakfast arrived while going 'my my ufufu'.

Hajime said thanks to her while taking his seat. He completely agreed with her.

The successful work, which was to say the actual chocolate, must be being brought by Shuu anyway within his bag so that he could eat it at his company while boasting about it and laughing loudly in front of his subordinates who were bachelors and didn't have a lover.

Shia who was also coming out from the kitchen spoke cheerfully.

「By the way, we have given ours too, so Tou-sama (father)'s bag is littered all over with chocolates. That Tou-sama, it seems he will line everything up on his company desk.」

「He is really planning to instigate everyone there. Even though some people were just grumbling to him that they got dumped by their girlfriend or their wife returned to her parent's house……」

「It will become a scene of carnage there nano~!」

Myuu was sitting beside the exasperated Hajime while happily saying the words that shouldn't be said looking like

she was really in enjoyment. Hajime-papa’s cheeks were twitching slightly.

After that, Yue and Tio also arrived, and they began breakfast as usual.

「Papa, papa.」

「Hm?」

Myuu who was stuffing her cheeks with the swe~et rolled egg exclusive for herself called out to Hajime. There was a scrap of rolled egg stuck on the corner of her lips, so Hajime took it while tilting his head.

Myuu tensed her expression and spoke while having her mouth wiped.

「Today, come back home faster than wind, nano.」

「Leave it to me. I’ll even fly across space.」

「No, let’s just go back home normally. Or rather, it will be Myuu-chan who will come back later if Hajime-san gets back that fast.」

Shia’s tsukkomi exploded.

Myuu had worked hard from yesterday evening until the night, so it appeared her Valentine’s Day preparation had finished. Myuu’s specially made quarters choco cake, and the character choco for all the Onee-chan were slumbering slowly within the refrigerator.

It was a rare chance, so today Kaori, Shizuku, and also Aiko would come to the Nagumo family house to accept Myuu’s choco.

After finishing breakfast, for some reason, Tio and Remia left the house first. Usually, the student group would be first, but were they busy today?

Even while thinking it was strange, it would be troubling if some bunch who were still harboring ephemeral dreams for Yue and the others were to be crowding around them nonchalantly, so today Yue and Shia, and even Myuu who would be going to the nursery school went out of the home together.

By the way, this year, Myuu would enroll in an elementary school. Hajime-papa had finished producing a backpack artifact that was fully loaded with gimmicks like missiles, lasers, and the like. It could even be used to fly in the sky freely. The functions would make even Tony ○tark-san's eyes snapped wide open.

Myuu was holding hands with Hajime while talking excitedly about the valentine party tonight. Yue and Shia, and naturally Hajime too, were listening to her talk while feeling warm and fluffy right in the morning.

The group arrived in front of the station. Originally, they would ride the train here, but Myuu's nursery school was on the other side of the station, so today they would cross the street and go up to the nursery school.

The heartwarming atmosphere of three high school students and a little girl caused men and women, young and old, going to school or to work, to send them glances. Their expressions loosened as though they had that warmth shared with them slightly.

But, at that time, there were two silhouettes running toward them from behind the cover of a large object in front of the

station. It was two girls wearing sailor uniforms, one with black hair and the other one with emerald-blonde hair.

「Goshuji――Hajime-kun♪ I wish thee wouldst receive this valentine choco!」

「Uu, Ha, Hajime-san. Please accept this……」

The people in the surrounding opened their eyes wide in surprise at the sight of a young man who was already accompanied by two beautiful girls receiving valentine chocolate from another two beautiful girls.

The females were half creeped out thinking 「Uaa, would this become carnage? Or rather, that boy, is he totally popular!?」 while the other half seemed to be in admiration, but the males were clicking their tongues in synchronization.

The heartwarming atmosphere until just now vanished. Now there was the air of peevishness that seemed to really want to say 「Fall to hell!」. Naturally, there must be some men among them that also had a fiancée or girlfriend, but for every man to be like that without exception must be because of the appearance of Yue and the others as expected.

But for Hajime, it wasn’t the time for that. Or rather, the people in the surrounding also noticed something out of place in proportion to the degree that they paid attention.

‘Eh? Somehow, those two……are they really students?’, was in their mind.

「Ti, Tio. Remia……you two, what are you doing?」

Yes, the two who came wearing sailor uniforms like adolescent youths, to be frank, they were Tio and Remia. It seemed this was why they left the house earlier.

Tio looked triumphant while Remia looked so red that he was worried she might explode at this rate.

「Just as thou couldst see, we art trying to have the person in our heart to receiveth our valentine choco.」

「I know that. What I'm asking is about this abnormal situation that makes me want to escape reality.」

「We too wisheth to try experiencing the springtime of students for a bit.」

Sharara Tio twirled on the spot. Her skirt fluttered gently. Her black hair flowed in the air. *Wink* She finished it with a wink, and then Tio-san asked.

「How's that? Mine "sailor uniform look", it's really tempting, correct?」

Hajime grinned widely and said.

「It's really creepy, Klarus-san.」

「I'm called with mine family name!? Klarus-san, that hurts though!?」

'That reaction is just strange!' Is what Klarus-san seemed to want to say.

'Rather, it's your head that is strange', Hajime wanted to say, but, well, this was Tio. She was a pervert from the start. Blundering like this was her forte.

The problem was,

「Remia……」

「Please, don’t say anything……」

Most likely, she got carried away by Tio’s momentum and thought that this would be a display of her playfulness, but it seemed that when the time came to practice it for real, she was so embarrassed she could die.

It was without a doubt that the uniform looked good on them in a sense, but the atmosphere they were clad in was completely that of an adult, so no matter what they looked like they were doing indecent cosplay. That point was the problem.

Even from among the people around, some were stopping still even though it was a busy time in the morning and began to stare hard at the two. Such people continued to appear from the crowd.

Remia wouldn’t meet Hajime’s gaze no matter what. Myuu briskly approached such Remia.

「Mama.」

「Myu, Myuu?」

Myuu looked up at her sailor uniform mother and *plop* she put her hand on Remia’s hand. She then spoke with an expression that looked really like a kind adult woman.

「Mama, you must be tired. Myuu will help out more, that’s why let’s take a bit of rest, ok?」

Remia crumbled. She said 「I want to return to the sea!」 while crouching and covering her face with both hands.

「Oops, we wouldst be late if we doth not go soon. Then, Goshujin-sama, these art choco from Remia and me. Please accept them.」

「Aah, yeah, well, that's. Thanks.」

Hajime's face was conflicted; however, it was more or less something prepared for him, so he said thanks and accepted.

Tio said 「Both of us wouldst send off Myuu. Now, let's go! Remia, Myuu!」. She helped Remia stand up and pulled her hand while carrying Myuu in her arm and rushed away.

「Wai-, please wait a second, Tio-san!? Don't tell me we are going to the nursery school looking like this!?」

「Is there any problem?」

「There is nothing but problems! How will the teachers and other parents look at us!? I'm begging you; please let me change~~~~~e!」

The scream of Remia who was mercilessly being dragged away while demanding to change clothes resounded in front of the station.

However, there was no way for the seaman race to win against the physical strength of the dragonman race. The mother and daughter were easily dragged away by the hopeless dragon-sama.

「In a sense, it's Remia's figure like that that is rarer than the sailor uniform appearance.」

「Remia-san getting flustered like that cannot be seen that often after all.」

「……Nn. A sad incident.」

Hajime, Shia, and Yue, the three of them nodded to each other with half a smile. Then they entered the station as though nothing had happened.

–

–

–

After arriving at school and going to the shoe rack, a booby trap was activated.

「Hajime-san, this is a really elaborate mechanism. My family will be in admiration seeing this.」

「……Nn. Recently, the technique of the soul sisters is rapidly improving.」

Seeing the trap that was prepared near the shoe rack, Shia went 「Hohou」 in admiration while Yue immediately thought of the perpetrator in her mind and made a complicated expression. Hajime was staring fixedly.

He dismantled the trap, changed into his indoor shoes, and advanced toward the classroom inside the school building that was filled with a vague giddy atmosphere. Then, in the front, he saw Aiko and the vice principal.

The vice principal had his back turned to Hajime and the others while facing Aiko. Aiko immediately noticed them and greeted them with her gaze. It seemed that she was in the middle of talking with the vice principal.

「——That’s why, please focus your mind constantly on this kind of day.」

「Ye, yes. That’s, yes, of course, vice principal-sensei.」

It seemed Aiko was receiving a pointer. Like last time, Hajime and co erased their presence and sneaked behind the vice principal.

「Especially, Hatayama-sensei. You have the tendency to be too close to your students. Don’t do anything like making a ruckus together with them!」

Hajime took a fighting pose behind the vice principal. And then, he told Aiko 「This guy is always nagging on and on and on and on every day, let’s send him flying at least once!」 using his strong gaze and provoked with a punching gesture.

「That’s obviously out of the question!」

「Wha, what? Ha, Hatayama-sensei! What do you mean by that!? Don’t tell me, you. You have also prepared that……」

By the time Hajime and co were approaching sneakily, the vice principal’s talk only entered from her right ear before going out from her left ear. Because of that, she was wondering what the vice principal meant by “that” and tilted her head.

If she remembered right, the gist of what the vice principal was talking about until just now was about being careful so that nothing like illicit sexual relationships or the like would happen because of the valentine day.

And then, because of the returnee commotion previously, the project of making a manual that listed out the

countermeasure for every situation carried out. The other day, an instruction was given for the teachers to think of countermeasures that could be put into the manual, and about the correct way to deal with the students who would enter a festive mood on this kind of eventful day.

Aiko was convinced 「That's it!」. She felt terrified of her own deductive ability!

「Of course, I have prepared it! There is no way I'll forget!」

「What, the!? ……No, you must mean that. You mean, it will be for your fellow teachers, right? Well, if it's you being considerate……」

Aiko went 「Uh」 at a loss of words. "Fellow teachers" ——in other words, vice principal seemed to be holding the expectation that Aiko was having several ideas.

But, but still!

「I'm sorry……I only have one.」

「What, the……」

Vice principal-sensei was shaken. His wig was already shifting. Behind him, Hajime and co were watching the exchange between Aiko and vice principal with deep interest. No, it was only Shia who slowly and quietly reached with her hand to attempt righting the shifted wig. What a kind rabbit.

The vice principal pushed up his glasses up twice or thrice and asked while getting complicatedly self-aware of the surrounding. Of course, Hajime and co were also continuously moving to his blind spot in accordance with the motion of his gaze.

「Hatayama-sensei. That’s, I’ll ask just in case but……that’s, who are you planning to give it to?」

To who? It was obvious. The one who gave the instruction to think of an idea was the vice principal. Then, the one she would hand it to would be,

「Obviously it’s for vice principal-sensei!」

「!!?」

Mayday! Mayday! The wig is going to fall down even now!

The wig was sliding down in accordance with the heavy trembling of the vice principal due to the great shock. The vice principal didn’t even notice the danger above his head while his mouth was opening and closing like a fish.

「I said it before but……I have a wife and a child alreadyyyyyyyyyy-」

「Eeh!?」

Vice principal-sensei turned around in a flash and ran away.

Hajime and co instantly retreated to the side, but Shia’s finger that was trying to fix the wig’s position grazed the wig and became lethal instead.

The wig fluttered in the air……

The cool and clear morning sunlight was reflected with a momentary flash on the vice principal’s head.

「Se, sensei! Vice principal-senseii! Your wig-, your wig feeell! Don’t enter the staff rooooom-! The atmosphere there will be unbearable agaiiiiiin-」

Aiko caught the wig midair and chased behind the vice principal. Her voice resounded inside the building.

「……Nn. A sad incident.」

「Even though it’s Valentine’s Day, there are a lot of sad incidents.」

「Surely, Valentine’s Day is made up of nothing but this kind of things that shouldn’t happen.」

Hajime and co looked at each other with a really conflicted look before they headed to the classroom together.

They entered the classroom and greeted their classmates, and then immediately after that,

「Gooodd mo~~~rning! Onee-samaa! Your beloved step-sister has come!」

junior
The soul sister kouhai-chan made her entrance. The atmosphere ‘she came as expected’ flowed inside the classroom.

Kouhai-chan clicked her tongue as soon as she saw Hajime and muttered.

「Chih. Damn senpai, you are tenacious. So you are safe.」

「I can hear you there, kouhai who is making a yakuza face right from the morning.」

Kouhai-chan leaked out a murmur that sounded like a confession of being the perpetrator of the morning booby trap.

But just when Hajime thought that kouhai-chan made a cheerful smile and presented a choco.

「It was only my passion surging out for a bit. Please accept this as my apology, Nagumo-senpai.」

Murmur, part of the boys――especially Shinji and Yoshiki were shaken. This man could receive chocolate from even kouhai-chan who was considering him as her sworn enemy!? Was what they thought.

Hajime stared still at kouhai-chan, then he put the bite-sized choco into his mouth. And then, after he chewed a few times, he spoke with an expression as though he had his expectation proven.

「Oi, kouhai. You put too much laxative inside.」

Murmur, the classroom was stirred. *Pyuu~* Kouhai-chan was whistling with feigned ignorance. A shudder ran through the classroom at her terrifying act of serving poison to the demon king.

Thanks to the “Poison Resistance”, nothing happened to Hajime. He briskly approached kouhai-chan. Kouhai-chan ran away.

Without moving to cut off her path, Hajime pinioned her from behind!

「Wha, what is it senpai!? This is sexual harassment, you know!?」

「Nn~, you, you still have some left, right? Come on; I’ll try sampling it a bit.」

With a way of talking that was like a delinquent extorting someone, Hajime put his hands on kouhai-chan’s armpits and shook her up and down. A scream 「stop iiitt~」 came from kouhai-chan, but of course, Hajime didn’t stop.

「Where is it……hm? Is it here?」

「N, noo. Where are you putting your hand into――hyahn. Wai, don’t go theree!」

The demon king-sama flipped kouhai-chan’s shirt, thrust his hand around the stomach area and groped around. Without even being able to escape, her raw stomach was groped around. Kouhai-chan was writhing while turning red.

As expected, Shizuku couldn’t bear to see the super sexual harassment that occurred right in the morning and cut in.

「Wait Hajime! No matter what that’s overdoi――」

「Oo, there it is. This one is for Shizuku, right?」

Saying that Hajime took away a choco that was enthusiastically wrapped from between her skirt and stomach. Was she warming it by Hideyoshi style……? It was worrying whether the chocolate had melted or not. (TN: The tale of Hideyoshi warming Nobunaga’s shoes by putting it inside his clothes.)

Kouhai-chan went limp in the legs, and her face was bright red while she was breathing roughly. She was murmuring 「My stomach that became squishy from sampling food too much got toyed by senpai……」.

Hajime mercilessly tore the wrapping of the chocolate for Shizuku and put the content into his mouth.

「Aa~~~! The serious chocolate I prepared for Onee-sama's sake! How dare you! Even if it's senpai, this is unforgiva――」

「As I thought, something is put inside. This is…… aphrodisiac, right?」

「I don't really understand what senpai is talking about there.」

Shizuku's fierce gaze pierced kouhai-chan. Even the classmates were sending her piercing gazes with creeped out expressions that seemed to want to say 「Uwaa; this girl really did it」.

Kouhai-chan was starting to trickle cold sweat a lot. Then she ran away like a darting rabbit.

Demon king-sama circled around her. And then, he stuffed the remaining aphrodisiac filled choco into kouha-chan's mouth and pinioned her and blocked her mouth with his hand to make her swallow.

'Muuuh, muuuh' kouhai-chan groaned, but her resistance ended up in vain and she gulped. Hajime who saw that released her, and then right away,

「I, I'll remember thiiiiss――, this damn brutish senpaiiii-」

She spat out a parting threat and ran away. Perhaps the medicine was a powerful one with an immediate effect. She was writhing strangely while walking pigeon-toed. It was truly a scene that made one went speechless.

「That girl, where did she get her hands on something like aphrodisiac?」

Atsushi tilted his head while saying that, and then Noboru and Akito shrugged their shoulders and replied.

「She is the female high-school student who has adventures every day. Surely she got involved with something again and obtained it at that time.」

「It's troubling because that sounds possible. That girl, it feels like one day she will get a secret treasure that she picked up from somewhere.」

'Certainly', everyone nodded.

After that, Nana distributed chocolates that the girls of the class made to the boys. Shinji and Yoshiki wolfed down the chocolate while crying.

Actually, Myuu also had Hajime bring an assortment of mini choco for the classmates, saying 「For always taking care of papa, nano」. The classmates, whether boys or girls, ate it with relish.

Yue and the others who didn't know it went 「……Somehow, she is like a good wife」, and they made a slightly shuddering expression at Myuu's detailed attention.

By the way, about the chocolates that the girls prepared, other than the chocolates for the boys, they also prepared "offerings for demon king-sama". A single bead of chocolate from each of the girl classmates were all put together inside a square box.

No matter how the boys saw it, the dedication put into it was at a different level from the chocolate they received. Somehow it gave a "serious" atmosphere, and it was extremely splendid chocolate.

The lightless eyes of Kaori and Yue looked around staringly at the girls, but the girls averted their gazes quickly with a splendidly harmonious movement.

Also,

「Ah, this one is from me!」

The moment Suzu said that and pointed at one of the chocolates, it went without saying that Ryutaro then challenged the demon king to a duel.

Of course, Suzu immediately presented him with the serious choco, and the two of them brought about an atmosphere that was unique to a couple where they began to act shyly with each other. It also went without saying that after that the boys challenged Ryutaro to a duel.

Also, at the corner of the roused up classroom, Tsuji Ryoko secretly handed over choco to Nomura Kentarou. Hajime and the others noticed that, but they pretended not to see anything with a lukewarm feeling.

「? The choco that was over here, does anyone know where it has gone to?」

Nagayama Juugo noticed that the mass-produced chocolate for the boys that he had secured for himself was gone and raised his voice.

「Ah, sorry. I ate it.」

「Uoh!? Wait, Kousuke huh. So you are here.」

「I’m here. I came normally. I was beside you for about ten minutes already.」

Kousuke was moving his mouth in a chewing motion. With this, everyone finally became aware of Kousuke.

Right away, Shinji and Yoshiki were reminded of something and picked a quarrel with him.

「Oi, Endo. You bastard, why are you eating choco normally, huh?」

「Eh? Wha, what's with you? Is there anything wrong with me eating it?」

「Obviously! You bastard, you have someone to give you serious choco already. Several of them! Yes, several! These chocolates are for the boys who aren't blessed! Leave! "Nonchalantly a harem bastard" like you, just leave! Abyss lord, vanish!」

It was as though he was driving away an evil spirit.

Kousuke was overwhelmed and backed away while making justifications at least.

「No, I haven't received any chocolate here. Rather, the plan is for me to be the one giving the present.」

A shock ran through the boys. Certainly, they had heard that the custom of "from female to male" was uniquely applied in Japan. At abroad, the mainstream seemed to be "the male conveying their love to female".

Although, for a friend of them to plan to practice it for real, from their point of view it was a shock as though they were shown the difference of status between them.

「……So, so, this is, the nonchalantly the mankind's strongest.」

「The demon king’s right-hand man……that title ain’t just for show.」

「The abyss of Abyssgate Lord……it’s deep.」

「Don’t call me Abyssgate」

With this and that, Hajime and co were heating up until Aiko came for the morning assembly. After that, they staved off the second and third attack from kouhai-chan and her fellow soul sisters. Hajime got aimed at by a strangely passionate male kouhai, and the backbone of the Shirasaki family who came to school to pick up his daughter after school was over and got turned away by said daughter. It was after all of those that they finally returned home safely.

Aiko and Kaori, Shizuku, and furthermore even Liliana was taken away from the kingdom. That night, the house of the Nagumo family was bustling with the valentine chocolate party.

Myuu’s quarters chocolate cake was made with splendid workmanship. It was a whole cake, what’s more, it was huge. Midway through Hajime got heartburn, but he finished eating all of it with the support of chugging an espresso.

It seemed that Myuu obtained self-confidence in making sweets after seeing Hajime’s eating manner that was hearty and joyful. It felt like this would become her hobby.

This activity was very feminine compared to doing war games or having a dogfight with the JSDF, so Hajime-papa praised himself in his heart that it was the correct move to finish eating everything using guts.

「Hajime. Nice guts there, but wouldn’t it be fine even if you shared it with Tou-san?」

「It was a cake made by Myuu for me. I won’t give it to anyone.」

Hajime looked somewhat pale while Shuu was making lifeless eyes.

Actually, in the company when Shuu grandly flaunted off the chocolates from his wife and daughters-in-law with a triumphant look, the bachelor & no girlfriend subordinates (+subordinate whose wife returned to her parent’s home) snapped and caused a coup d’etat. All the chocolates were plundered by them right in front of his eyes.

In the end, he couldn’t eat even a single one and returned home with lifeless eyes the whole time.

Although Sumire said 「I thought that would happen」 and gave him fondant chocolate that she saved as a reserve. After eating that, it seemed Shuu’s mind was mostly recovered.

And then, while hearing about the sad incident in the nursery school from one other person who was making eyes like a dead fish, Remia, the Valentine’s Day of the Nagumo family kept going on.

–

–

–

「……Nine o’clock huh. When is Hatayama-sensei going to come to give the chocolate……」

Inside the staff room, there was only the vice principal alone. He was doing overtime work until he had finished the work

share for one week, but he still showed no sign of going home.

He who was recently rumored to get strangely passionate with work after that was finishing his work for the future one after another until he received a call from his wife who had snapped.

The day he became the headmaster was near……perhaps.

–

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I still had some more material left that I wanted to write, but the characters had already reached 14000, so I refrained. (TN: 14000 in kanji characters.)

Other soul sisters, mob classmates, girls of other classes=>Hajime, Shirasaki-papa’s early morning battle, etc, etc,

I’m thinking to write them at another chance again.

Arifureta Chapter 306

Arifureta After III Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2 The Fate of Traitor

---

TN: I uploaded the Valentine’s Day special program one chapter before this.

For those who haven’t read it, please take a look.

Even though the Vatican was in the middle of enormous chaos, after observing that situation, for some reason, this man that should be their comrade——Leda, went away from the scene.

Kousuke, who witnessed that, was following him even now.

Leda picked up a taxi midway and began to move, so Kousuke was sitting cross-legged, right now, on the roof of that taxi.

As always, whether it was when the taxi stopped due to a traffic light, or when there was another car running right behind, no one noticed him. He was relaxing leisurely while taking out his smartphone suddenly.

And then, he called the person he wanted to talk with.

「Kousuke!?」

The other side picked up faster than the first ring could end. The voice that sounded like an angry yell when calling his name sharply reverberated inside his ear. Kousuke reflexively distanced the smartphone from his ear.

The other party became even more anxious when he didn’t reply and let out words 「Kousuke! What’s the matter!? Are you safe!? Say somethiiing!」 like a machine gun.

The clone that had always been beside her had vanished. 「Well, of course, she would get worried」, so while thinking apologetically like that, Kousuke hurriedly replied.

「My bad, Emily. I made you worry. I’m fine.」

「Kousuke……」

She was sobbing. He could hear a small voice 「I’m glaaad, really glaad」 muttering from the other side.

It caused his feeling of guilt to become worse, but at the same time, his heart was warmed that Emily was worried about him so much like this. That hellish foreign world was really making his blood run cold. Emily’s voice was like a hearth, melting down Kousuke’s frozen heart.

「How is it on your side right now? Are there any problems?」

「No, I’m fine. Right now, with Vanessa’s recommendation, we are receiving protection from the security bureau. Hey, Kousuke, just what happened?」

‘As expected’, Kousuke let out a relieved sigh. The Berserk case was over, and the situation was one where it was fine to think that there should be almost no one who would target the Grant family, but it was really like Vanessa to make this

careful and steady judgment which paid attention to the worst case scenario.

Kousuke was opening his mouth to tell at the very least about the gist of what happened, but before he could a different voice interrupted him.

「Abyssgate. This is Magdanese.」

「It’s Kousuke, madam chief.」

The way she called him wouldn’t change no matter how many time he told her. Somehow it was turning into an exchange that was like greeting between them.

「Explain the situation, including the matter of mister Nagumo befo――」

「Kousuke-san! This is your Vanessa! Are you really safe?」

「……Agent Paradis. Right now, I’m talk――」

「About everyone in the Grant family, this Vanessa, yes, this Va – nes – sa-, is securing their protection! Please praise me! Please reward me!」

「Paradis. Stop fooling――」

「Specifically, whisper “You have done really well, my honey. I love you”――」

Right after that, from the other side of the smartphone, *uin uin* the groaning sound of a machine was resounding. At the same time, 「Aaah, what are you doing with my jackeeet! Even though I had it custom-made because of my admiration to Kingsm○n!?」 such a scream could be heard.

It seemed the chief’s cutting machine was working hard.

「Abyssgate. I’m turning on the speaker. Please report.」

「Yes, ma’am!」

Chief Magdanese’s “please” that sounded like the growl of a beast with her emotions suppressed caused Kousuke to do a seiza on the taxi’s roof and began his report.

He reported only the summary swiftly and talked about the cause of his clone vanishing. A deep sigh leaking out could be heard from the other side of the smartphone.

「What should I say? They are holding an outrageous secret there.」

「I completely agree.」

「And, Abyssgate. What is your impression? Are they also the same as you guys?」

「That was what I thought but……perhaps, it’s different. It’s similar but……they didn’t react to the wording that I used.」

「Is it not possible that they were covering it up?」

「I think their reaction was genuine. The situation also wasn’t one where they could use such a tactic. Perhaps the route from where they obtained power was different from us. Although, both powers are really similar, so I don’t think that they are completely unrelated.」

From the other side of the smartphone, several voices could be heard talking to each other. As expected, the information that there were actually other people who possessed power that was similar to the returnees was something that even Chief Magdanese could immediately make a decision concerning the plan going forward.

「Hey, Kousuke. And then, what would you do? Can you come back here?」

While the security bureau side was talking, Emily asked him worriedly. Her voice, if Kousuke wasn't misunderstanding, contained a hint of pleading mixed in it. That was her wish of 「Come back」「Don't be reckless anymore」 to him.

「I'm sending a clone there.」

「What about Kousuke yourself?」

「I'm……there are various things I have to deal with. As expected there are many things in the situation this time that I cannot just leave alone. Right now, I'm in the middle of tailing a suspicious fellow.」

「……I see.」

Emily didn't say 「Come back」 to him even while feeling down. Surely she didn't want to be a hindrance to the role and will that Kousuke was holding.

Somehow, for Kousuke, it was something that stimulated his heart terribly much but……

He somehow suppressed the feeling of excessively wanting to writhe and continued the talk.

「Emily. About the matter from here on, can you go to Japan until the situation calms down?」

「To Japan?」

「Yeah. I think nothing will happen, but as Vanessa did, this is just in case. With me getting involved with the Vatican and the group that attacked it, there is no guarantee that

they won’t make a move on the Grant family, right? I can send two clones to the places of my family and the Grant family, but it will be safer if both families are together.

He could hear Emily consulting with her parents and grandmother, and also Vanessa who seemed to be beside her.

After a while, Emily gave him a reply that sounded a bit happy.

Right, I’ll do as Kousuke says. I also want to meet with mother-in-law and everyone else again; also, the chief is――

Abyssgate. We will also come along. Allen, me, Paradis, and several other agents. In case you need help on your side, you can contact Pays.

It seemed she was planning to go visit the Nagumo family house at this chance.

Bernard huh. Roger. But, you know? I don’t mind if you go to my house, but even if you go to Nagumo’s house, that person won’t be there.

Right now is just the right timing for our side. At worst, we can at least have a talk with one of the wives. That will be enough. Mister Nagumo is a devoted husband, right? If we can leave a good impression with his wives, then that will be a good result. If I keep asking for too much, then no matter how much time passes the progress will keep being zero.

Well, certainly.

As expected from Chief Magdanese it seemed she wouldn’t let go of the chance.

After that, they talked for a bit more, and then Kousuke cut off the call after telling them his intention to contact the Nagumo house about the visit as well as reporting about the case this time.

Chief Magdanese and co would also depart after finishing various preparations. In that case, Kousuke was pondering whether it would be faster to send his clone from Roma to join them quickly in London or to send his clone to Japan’s airport.

While thinking such things, he tried to contact Hajime just in case, but as always he couldn’t reach him. Not having any other option, he contacted the Nagumo house.

Around this time, right now it was about eight o’clock at night in Japan, so someone should be in the house but……

After the calling tone rang out several times, the voice of a little girl came from the other side of the smartphone.

「Yes! This is Nagumo! Who is this!?」

An energetic voice. The polite wording might be the result of the upbringing. Kousuke unconsciously broke into a smile and opened his mouth.

「Yo, Myuu-chan. This is Kousuke.」

「……Who is it? How do you know Myuu’s name nano?」

「Yes!? Wai-, that’s a harsh joke! This is me, me! You know me, right!?」

Myuu’s voice became stiff with wariness and asked once more. Kousuke was seriously depressed thinking that he’d

been forgotten while insisting about his identity.

But, his speech that was too shaken was a miss.

「Mamaa――!! It came nano! Finally, it came to our house nano! The ‘it’s me, it’s me’ scam nanoo――!!」

「Wait! Myuu-chan wait! This seriously ain’t a laughing matter! This is Kousuke, you know!? Your papa’s friend Endo Kousuke, you know!?」

The telephone in the Nagumo house was an artifact. In other words, it also had a function to search the caller, and if the caller was an insolent person, it could make a distant attack by making use of the other party’s phone.

Kousuke was trembling with fear knowing that his smartphone could turn into a brutal weapon at any time while making a desperate explanation.

Then, it seemed that he got through.

「My? Endo, Kousuke……papa’s friend……aah, Aby――not, Endou nano! Long time, Endou! Are you healthy nano?」

「Eh? What’s with that flow!? Or rather, just now, you almost said Abyssgate……no, for now, let’s leave that aside, you are calling me Endo without honorifics!? That’s how you are calling me!?」

「Endo, your spirits are too high nano. Has something good happened to you nano?」

「There isn’t! Rather I went to hell just now! Wait, that’s not it! Before this, didn’t you call me something like “Kousuke-oniisan”?」

「Myuu is a woman who won’t look back to the past nano.」

「What are you saying! Even if it’s ok to not look back to the past, what’s with the lack of honorifics? Did I do something to Myuu-chan?」

「Nope. Endo didn’t do anything. Just, at the virtual space training, Myuu always get thoroughly bashed by Aby at level 1, so Myuu thought that calling with just Endo doesn’t matter any more nano.」

「So it’s that gameee-!?」

The artifact for full dive into a virtual space that was prepared for Myuu’s sake. The item that was previously malfunctioning because of Kaori and Yue before they got lost into it.

Myuu who was using it correctly for training faced mock battles on stages from the level 1 mode against Kousuke and all the Onee-chan.

And then, in the game world, Kousuke was always Abyssgate.

Myuu who was gradually getting irritated by his speech and actions there lowered Kousuke’s hierarchy inside herself even in the real world and reached this kind of conclusion.

「Ah, Endo. Shizuku-oneechan will take the call nano.」

「Ah, yeah. Got it. But, it’s not Endo, but Kousuke-oniisan――」

「Endo-kun? What’s the matter?」

「……It’s nothing.」

Kousuke-oniisan gave up various things.

「So Yaegashi is also over there today huh.」

「Yes. Kaori also came. Right now she is exchanging pro-wrestling techniques with Yue.」

「I, I see……what about the others? Is there anything happening over there?」

「……Everything is all right. Okaa-san (mother in law) and Otou-san (father in law) still haven't returned home though. Has something happened?」

As expected from the sharp Shizuku, it seemed she felt a presence of unrest from Kousuke's question.

Kousuke reported how Hajime and Shia who were in the middle of their trip came to the Grant family house the other day, and then what happened at the Vatican.

「It's hard to believe so suddenly……people who can use magic and artifacts in the Vatican……and also the hellish foreign world……」

「Yeah, I also still cannot believe it here. Although, it's the truth. Right now, I'm following someone who is their comrade but also seems to be involved with the attackers. As soon as I find out something, I'll contact again but……can you try contacting Nagumo from your side too?」

「Wait a bit.」

It seemed Shizuku also asked for confirmation from Yue and the others too.

After a while,

「We also cannot get in touch with him here. But, Yue said that both of them are definitely safe, so we think they are fine.」

「Even though you cannot contact them, she knows that they are safe? Is it an artifact?」

「……It seems it's "love".」

「I, I see……」

Yue-sama. It seemed she was able to confirm the wellbeing of Hajime and Shia with love. The principle of it was unclear.

「Anyway, I'll investigate some things here for a bit more. I think it will be fine, but it's a fact that the Vatican wanted our information, and that the Vatican got attacked. You guys over there too, pay attention to the surrounding. Can I ask you to contact the others too?」

「Right, please leave it to us. I'll tell everyone to be on guard.」

The returnee group had a dedicated telepathy network for emergency times. Everyone was supplied with an artifact that could convey information that felt like 「Directly to the brain!?」 during emergency times.

「Then, what will you do? Is it better if we also go to the Vatican? We will head there if you need help.」

Kousuke was thinking for a bit after hearing Shizuku's reinforcement proposal.

「No, I'm still all right. The "mirror gate" something is at least closed already, and there are also still things to investigate. Rather, I think I want you all to stay in Japan for now. There

are a lot of things that should be protected there, and actually, I’m also planning on making Emily and others evacuate there. Even though Nagumo isn’t there, if Yaegashi and the others are there then I can feel relieved.

Is that so? Then it’s fine though……

I’ll contact if it’s necessary. With Yue-san there, you all can instantly come here anyway.

Certainly that’s true. I understand. But, Endo-kun, don’t be too reckless. I won’t forgive you if you make Rana-chan and Emily-chan cry, you know?

O, ou……roger.

Kousuke patted down his chest thinking that it was now fine with this while also telling her that Britain’s security bureau chief and her agents also planned to accompany the Grant family, and how they wanted to meet and greet with Yue and the others if possible.

Like that, Kousuke cut off the call. A beat later,

……nn. Endo, long time no see. You cut your hair?

Douwaah!?

Yue-sama, above the running taxi she desce☆nded!

Of course, Kousuke tumbled and fell! The car behind was approaching! Midair consecutive leap!

……Nn, welcome back.

I’m baaaack! But Yue-san, seriously spare me from teleporting in suddenly!

Kousuke somehow calmed down his pounding heart, but the culprit in question was only tilting her head expressionlessly.

「Or rather, you are in plain sight of the surrounding.」

「……Who do you think I am? I'm putting up a barrier, so it's fine. More importantly, Emirin?」

The Emirin that she meant referred to Emily. With this and that at the first meeting, and how Shia was favoring her really much, Yue also became partial with Emily. It was to the degree that she gave her a nickname.

「Aa~, right now she is under the protection of the security bureau though.」

Other than with Kaori, Shizuku, and Liliana, Kousuke fundamentally used polite language or semi-polite language to the wive~s. No matter what he couldn't go against them. His humble appearance looked like a subordinate who was constantly shrinking back in fear against his boss's wife.

「Could it be, Yue-san came to pick them up?」

「……Nn. We made her cry last time, so this time I came to pick her up courteously.」

'Also……' Yue continued,

「……I heard that the chief of Britain's security bureau wanted to meet. Now that Hajime isn't here, it's necessary for me as his first wife to deal with it *so we won't be underestimated*.」

Yue-sama said that with a fearless smile. Kousuke pressed his hands in prayer inside his heart toward Chief Magdanese.

It seemed Yue traced this location from Kousuke’s smartphone. Then she used her own smartphone to investigate the coordinates of the security bureau headquarters. And then, she turned her gaze to empty air slightly and……

It seemed she managed to locate the coordinates for the teleportation destination.

「Ah, if you are going to teleport, can I ask you to also bring my clone?」

「……nn」

Pop A clone body popped out. It would be teleported together with Yue to Emily’s location.

「……Endo. Contact if necessary. Help will come.」

「Yue-san. Thank you――」

「……From Kaori.」

It seemed she would forcefully teleport Kaori here. The image of Kaori suddenly being thrown into Europe by teleportation and then getting indignation with teary eyes floated in Kousuke’s mind.

Kousuke nodded 「Tha, that’s reassuring」 while trickling in cold sweat. With the situation as it was, he believed that they would really come if he asked but……he felt a bit uneasy.

「……nn, then」

Yue-sama vanished with the same abruptness as when she descended. Instant teleportation that didn’t even need gate.

It was as though she wasn’t there right from the start. Yue-sama was Yue-sama. Her way of life that was too free was truly like her husband. They were spouses that resembled each other.

「Well, with this Emily will be fine. ……Though the chief’s stomach might not come out of this safely.」

Kousuke was murmuring that while resting his body until the taxi stopped.

–

–

–

After driving for about an hour, the taxi stopped at the outskirt of Roma. Midway, the taxi also did meaningless U-turns and detours several times, so it seemed the passenger was paying attention so as not to be tailed.

Surely he had never even dreamed that there was someone riding on the roof.

The taxi arrived in front of an old church built from red bricks. They were at the outskirts of a quiet residential area where the surroundings gave off an atmosphere that was even more like middle age Europe or Tortus than the Vatican.

The man who came down from the taxi——a man in his mid-thirties with a sharp gaze, Leda, was brushing up his black hair roughly while confirming that the taxi had completely left. After that, he started walking toward the church.

He knocked on the wooden door that was facing the street. After that, the church’s door was slightly opened, and a man

with muddy eyes looked at Leda. And then, they whispered something to each other in a low voice, before the door was opened with a creaking sound and Leda was beckoned to enter the church.

The man who was beckoning him in was clad in a kinked cassock. Seeing that this place was a church, this man was surely the priest here.

Although looking at his plump body, his loose flesh on his chin, and the smell of alcohol drifting from him, he was a terribly delinquent priest. If he wasn’t wearing a cassock, he would look like a drunk father no matter what.

The inside of the church was desolate. There were no signs that there was ever a mass being held in here. It looked terribly bleak, as though it lacked even more warmth than the outside.

Inside such the church that already looked unused, in the deepest part——the area around the altar, there were four men.

There was a man who was wearing a suit that, at a glance, was obviously custom made, a man who was wearing fatigues for construction work, a young man who still looked like a student, and a normal old man who looked like he was only going out for a bit of a stroll.

There, the delinquent priest and the suspicious Vatican staff joined them. The members didn’t look like they were related in any way to each other.

□I heard. It looks like it failed, huh?□

The man in a suit said to Leda with a grave expression. The other members were also directing him gazes that were

filled with emotions that weren’t so good.

But Leda who was receiving the concentrated gazes that were like a bed of nails in a sense only shrugged his shoulders nonchalantly without concern.

「I have done my own role. That Aumale also accomplished his role before becoming a martyr. I don’t know whether those lot fought harder than expected or if their luck was good……or perhaps, if “that person” failed.」

「Watch your mouth!」

The man in fatigues grabbed Leda’s collar. Leda raised both his hands in a pose of surrender and spoke even more.

「But, it’s the truth that the damage inflicted was serious. The “mirror gate” was also opened.
“That person” was unable to accomplish the objective even with such things having been achieved. I think it’s only natural to think that “an irregular situation” occurred that caused such failure.” 」

「He is the person who will become the king of the new world! Such a thing is impossible! You, you and Aumale, weren’t you two cutting corners too much!? Perhaps you got moved by affection――」

The man in fatigues grabbed even stronger as though he was scared of something. Leda let out a long sigh, twisted the hand of the man, and kicked him flying; he then backed away while groaning in pain.

The man in fatigues crashed on his back on the church’s long chair. Glimpses of dark flames that showed a lack of sanity could be seen inside his eyes.

「Calm down. Certainly, the matter didn’t progress perfectly, but the top priority which was “the opening of the mirror gate” was accomplished. The “wind of lamentation” flowed out to this world. Now, when the strength of “that person” is increasing, there won’t be any significant obstacles to the plan.」

The man in fatigues seemed to be mollified somewhat by those words. The other people were also sighing in relief and pulled themselves together.

But, at that time, everyone suddenly fell silent. Their movements stopped as though they were a machine that was cut off from electricity. They were looking at empty air with a vast gaze.

And then, everyone simultaneously twisted their heads with a snap and looked to the church’s ceiling.

「-!?」

There, the dumbfounded Kousuke was hiding. His face was filled with shock that said 「How did they find out!?」.

At the same time, Kousuke noticed something. Inside the church that was gloomy even though it was still afternoon, their eyes were shining faintly red.

Click, that sound resounded. Everyone took out a handgun. In an instant, it was clear that they weren’t trying to simply intimidate. Everyone pulled the trigger without the slightest hesitation.

「Nuwah!? That’s too much killing intent, isn’t it!?」

Shots being fired resounded consecutively. Kousuke twisted his body from the ceiling and dodged.

Splinters scattered one after another from the wall right beside him. It seemed that they had no respect for the “house of God” as something sacred.

Although, just this much wasn’t a significant problem. He had once fought the demon king-sama who should be called as the world’s strongest gunner with his super precise, as well as god speed, gunshots.

This was just a mere six handguns. Normal bullets that weren’t even accelerated electromagnetically, and only being aimed roughly, couldn’t even graze Kousuke.

Using the ceiling’s beam and wall, and furthermore, even the supporting pillar and electric light, Kousuke agilely jumped around inside the room.

By doing that, naturally, the moment the bullets ran out arrived.

(They aren’t even covering for the other members while they are reloading. ……It looks like they aren’t trained.)

Even while thinking such a thing, Kousuke landed right in the middle of them as they were trying to exchange the bullet magazines.

「You――gahah」

「Guah」

The man in fatigues and the youth took a stance to seize Kousuke, but before they could, a palm strike and elbow strike struck each of their solar plexus and silenced them.

Furthermore, the priest and old man who had finished reloading had their jaw kicked by a midair spinning kick

together and were sent flying. Kousuke hit the man in a suit’s crotch with a reverse kick at the next moment.

The priest and old man had their consciousness blown away by concussions while the man in a suit fainted in agony with rolled up eyes.

Kousuke smoothly approached Leda who was positioned the farthest. He entered right into his bosom instantly and moved to put an elbow strike to his solar plexus without pause, but,

「——」

「Oh?」

Leda lightened the impact by jumping backward by himself. It seemed he still was considerably damaged, but he managed to suppress it while only having his breath knocked out of him.

Pan- The dry sound of a gunshot could be heard, but it was the ceiling that was drilled rather than the target. Kousuke approached once more and directed the gun muzzle, along with the arm holding it, to the ceiling.

「Chih」

A click of the tongue. Leda reflexively pushed out his arm. It was a form for palm thrust, but *shan* a clear sound came, at the same time, and a blade snapped out from his wrist.

Kousuke stepped diagonally inside toward the arm that he twisted up. He evaded the assassin blade while, at the same time, he twisted Leda’s arm that was holding the gun. Furthermore, he also prompted the movement of body weight.

「Gua!?」

With the arm being twisted in the wrong direction, the body instinctively moved to avoid the danger. That was to say it became an unintentional forward somersault. Because his arm was restrained, he couldn’t even perform ukemi, and his back struck the hard stone floor.

However, Leda didn’t stop moving. He aimed the tip of the snapped out assassin blade toward Kousuke and jerked his wrist.

At that moment, *bachin-* along with the sound of a spring popping out, the assassin blade was detached and shot out.

「Be quiet for a bit.」

Kousuke casually dodged the flying blade and pulled up Leda’s arm while putting his foot on Leda’s shoulder. And then, he twisted it in a flash.

Gokin- Such a raw sound echoed. Leda raised a wordless scream.

Kousuke rolled him over to lay upside-down and bound his arms with wire to his back.

「Now then, there are various things I want to ask, but for now, how did you notice me? What’s more, it was everyone.」

「……」

Leda’s face grimaced in pain, but even so, he sent Kousuke a belittling gaze. He was showing that there was no way he would do what he was told just because of simple pain.

(Well, there is no way he will answer honestly just from being asked huh. It looks like this guy even betrayed his comrades after all. A normal way won’t work.)

Kousuke sighed while rummaging in his chest pocket. What came out then was an artifact in the shape of a five yen coin with a string attached.

「It seems you are busy with various things but……won’t you retire here and try becoming a fantastic villager?」

「Ha?」

Leda-san was resolved to stay silent, but Kousuke’s words were just too cryptic, so he let out a dumbfounded voice.

――Brainwashing artifact “Betting on the pride of the villager”

The five yen coin made from crystal was hung down in front of Leda who was unable to move. *Swi~ng, swi~ng*.

「You are gradually becoming straa~nge. You are becoo~ming straa~nge relatively speedi~ly」

「You, just what the hell you are doiing~~」

The brainwashing started relatively speedily. Leda-san’s articulation immediately became odd, and his eyes started to twirl around. Even though he was a member of a secret organization and familiar with battle, as expected it seemed he was unable to resist the charm of a villager.

But, originally, like that he should say out the standard words of 「I am a villager of ○○ Village~」, but here an abnormality occurred.

Leda’s eyes that Kousuke thought he only saw a trick of the light before this——were shining red once more.

「O, oi. What’s with those eyes——」

「No! No more-! Save me-!!」

Suddenly, Leda began to say 「Save me」 repeatedly with an agonized voice.

Kousuke was anxiously wondering if “Betting on the pride of the villager” was malfunctioning. In front of him, Leda raised his voice even louder.

「Just how many do you think I have saved! Is it still not enough!? Why won’t you answer!? How many more do I have to save until there is salvation for *me*!? I cannot bear it anymore-. Human’s, dirtiness is unbearable!!」

It was a scream as though he was puking out blood. Tears were flowing; however, there was no sadness in those eyes only hatred and despair. And then, there was a clear rage in them.

「Oi-, get a hold of yourself! Look at me!」

「No, no more. This world is hell. Humans are making it hell-. Why do I have to protect you guys!? That’s right-. There is no need to protect. Something like the inferior race who will fall into temptation before I even noticed, no matter how much I sacrifice myself, no matter how many times I saved them. They can just perish-」

Kousuke made Leda to lay down face up, and he peered into Leda’s eyes.

Leda continued to act deranged and discharged out incoherent words.

Inside his eyes that showed a red radiance, Kousuke saw some kind of shadow. When he noticed it, there was the whispering voice of someone who reached even his ear. It was repulsive, words that were obviously different from the language of humans. It gnawed into his heart and caused a sound of devouring that soaked like black ink dying a white ground.

Leda was receiving the influence of the unknown “something”!

「Shit-. Just what the hell is going on!」

Kousuke cursed while lifting up the “Betting on the pride of the villager”.

The foundation of this artifact was soul magic. It was to be used to do things like changing the will in order to brainwash for the sake of interrogation or sever the anxiety about the future, but depending on the application it could also be used for mental recovery.

But, before it could exhibit its effect, Leda was,

「Aa, that’s right. Exactly. God won’t answer. He won’t grant salvation. Then, there is no choice but “that person”. Aa, please. Please save me. My god. My king!」

With a broken expression that was streaked with tears of despair……

「? Tsu, you stupid idiot!」

Leda foamed from his mouth, and his eyes rolled up. His body started convulsing fiercely.

Most likely there was something like a poison capsule that was placed inside his mouth from the start. Kousuke immediately took out some recovery medicine and tried to make Leda drink it, but he had a hard time doing that because of Leda’s fierce shaking.

And then, the time limit easily came. *Twitch-*, Leda convulsed with an even more intense twitch……and stopped moving.

At the same time, Kousuke noticed it. The faint groaning voice.

「Wha-, you guys too!?」

Yes, even the people who he made faint earlier were simultaneously swallowing something. Surely it was a really powerful poison. Everyone expired in less than a few seconds.

The six people severed their own lives while yelling “God doesn’t answer” inside the obsolete church.

「Wha, what the hell……」

Even Kousuke was completely dumbfounded.

But, at that moment, a hand reached out to Kousuke’s collar. The perpetrator was Leda who should have already died. His hand grabbed Kousuke’s collar like a vise and jerked him closer. Leda’s eyes that were nearby were bloodshot, and they were turning into something terrifying where only madness could be felt.

Kousuke immediately tried to shake it off, but before that, Leda’s mouth opened. The voice was similar but not his voice from just now. It was a hoarse and extremely unpleasant voice that was beyond description.

「*The equilibrium has collapsed. The door will be opened before long. The king of hell who obtained flesh. His eternal reign will begin.*」

A sneering voice that was like the condensed unpleasant sounds for humans was resounding as though it was directly scratching and plucking at the mind.

Leda’s eyes opened wide, and foam came out from his mouth. He continued to laugh for a while, and then he stopped moving again. The uneasy presence had already vanished too, and nothing could be felt.

It was an abnormal and foreign situation that brought about shuddering terror. The silence that returned inside the church was terribly eerie.

Kousuke who was dumbfounded for a while muttered in a low voice before long.

「……This guy is like Nagumo huh.」

The great monster who crawled out from the abyss, who once moved easily and made the equilibrium crumble, could open the door that crossed over worlds freely and ate monster flesh. If he felt like it, something like world domination would be child’s play.

Indeed, it sounded like their demon king-sama. Right now, that demon king was breaking contact.

Kousuke shook his head and chased out the strange thought. Even if they were a bit similar, there was no way Hajime would do anything troublesome like world domination.

His only reason to make a move was only for his important people, especially his family. If someone turned their hand on that “important thing”, what was waiting for them wouldn’t be domination, but a trampling down.

「Well, there are other monsters that I happen to know huh.」

Kousuke imagined “that” which he faced at the hellish place while he looked around inside the church once more and sighed.

「For now, let’s copy their ID and……I should contact the Vatican anonymously.」

He couldn’t do anything like disposing of the corpses, so he would leave all the troublesome things to the Vatican.

After that, Kousuke rummaged around their chest pockets and took pictures of their identification papers using a camera. He also recorded their faces and the like.

And then,

「Now then, who are these guys, and what is their point of commonality……h~m, how should I investigate it……」

For a moment, ‘Should I rely on the security bureau……?’ Kousuke thought, but,

「Ah, come to think of it that guy he is strong at this kind of information huh.」

Kousuke recalled someone who was suited to it. He decided his next action.

Like that, he hid a letter inside Leda’s pocket and gently closed his opened eyes.

「Who will save someone whose job is to save others……huh. Leda-san, what did you see and experience that broke your heart like this?」

Leda’s yell. Surely that was the yell of someone whose heart was broken and completely exhausted. Were the other people here like that too?

That repulsive whisper, did it instigate these people who were completely tired and sought salvation and lured them to death?

If that was the case……

Kousuke narrowed his eyes slightly.

He knew about the unreasonable reality that anything couldn’t be done about it. He knew how it felt to have one’s heart broken. He knew the greatness of hope that was brought before one’s eyes. He knew how difficult it was for someone who broke once to pull themselves together and stand up.

That was why,

「Now, I don’t want to back down from this case anymore.」

He couldn’t back down, and not only that, but he wanted to see it through to the end.

Kousuke stood up and offered a silent prayer in front of the corpses of those who wouldn’t speak anymore.

And then, he left the church with a firm gait.

–

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

About the update next week, I will be a bit busy and might take a holiday.

Even if I take a holiday, perhaps it will be for a week or two weeks, so please pardon me.

Arifureta Chapter 307

Arifureta After III Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2 ILS

TN: It has been two weeks, this is Shirakome.

The updates will resume from today onward.

The content is becoming a bit vague, so this chapter feels more like rehabilitation for me, but

Best regards.

At a certain place in Britain.

Within the city where the buildings were built crammed together, there was a restaurant with a wooden plank standing quietly on the outskirt.

——ILS

A cute letter font was decorating the area above the entrance in an arch shape.

It seemed to be the name of the restaurant. It was really small, but there was a sentence “I Love Salmon” written under it, so it could be understood that it wasn’t the abbreviation of some kind of organization or system, but a mere sentence of salmon love.

The wooden plank had salmon dishes that seemed to be the regular menu——ninety percent of it was salmon sandwich dishes though——written on it, so it could be immediately comprehended that it was a café that was offering food created with salmon.

For some reason, a sentence “Those who pass through this door, throw away all your preconception” with an oppressive calligraphic style. Two lines were drawn on top of it and a sentence “Enjoy salmon sandwiches normally!” was written in the empty space with a cute font that felt mellow.

It was as though an obstinate cook wrote words that were strangely obsessive, but a girl completely rejected it and rewrote the sentence.

Well, in fact, it was exactly like that.

「Boss~. Please look! I finished a cute salmon illustration! Let’s put it in front of the café!」

「Rejected.」

Inside the shop, a cute female with brunette hair in a short bob style——the employee at this café, named Samantha, was holding up a sketchbook energetically.

Seeing that, a hard-faced and short-haired large man who was continuing to polish a glass that was already shiny behind the counter——shop manager Woody, completely rejected the proposal.

「Why!?」

「Don’t you understand!?」

It seemed Samantha-chan didn’t get it. She looked puzzled.

Samantha——a university student who was nineteen-years-old this year was doing part-time work at this shop while attending college. A pain in the neck who tended to be careless and blindly believed other people.

Previously, Samantha was working in the café that was chosen as the place for handing over Emily to Gamma Pharmaceutical in the Berserk incident. She carelessly declared 「This café's salmon sandwich isn't that delicious!」 loudly and got fired.

After that, she had her eyes opened to the deliciousness of salmon sandwiches in ILS that she found by accident. She begged manager Woody and got hired. That was the chronology of the events.

To be frank, Woody, who came to that café as an unlawful agent from Gamma Pharmaceutical, washed his hands from that business due to Kousuke's salmon sandwich transmission, and after that, he opened a business like a café that specialized in salmon sandwiches.

Actually, besides the café occupation, manager Woody also doubled as an informant using his experience as a former employee of the underworld. At first, many suspicious people came and went from this café, and he didn't have any intention on hiring a civilian girl like Samantha but……

He completely recalled, 「Eh? This girl, isn't she the girl from that café? The girl who got addressed by boss and then blundered?」.

Somehow, his awkwardness was grew knowing that. And then, seeing her figure that was stuffing her cheeks with his prided salmon sandwich while making a rave review, and how with sparkling eyes and a mouth full she said 「I will be the evangelist of salmon sandwiches! Please hire me!」

which made him worried about her future, manager Woody folded.

Samantha who became an apprentice evangelist of salmon sandwiches (?) with such a sequence of events seemed to be greatly displeased with the outer appearance and management of ILS.

The evangelist tried to do something in order to improve this café that tended to have slow business so that it would be advertised more.

Even now she was swinging around her sketchbook while insisting her displeasure.

Manager Woody opened his mouth with a weary face.

「No matter how I see it, it ain’t matching the atmosphere of this café. What’s this, this excessively cute illustration? My café is somber, a café for hardcore salmon sandwich lovers.」

「That’s the reason why there aren’t that many customers here! Let’s make this place cuter! The target should be young girls!」

Indeed, the illustrations that were drawn on the sketchbook were of cute deformed salmon swimming and a picture of a cute salmon that explained the menu. If the pictures were put on the signboard in front, it would surely attract the attention of a young woman.

Although, it wasn’t like manager Woody wanted to make his café modernly stylish so that his café would be teeming with young females.

Rather, it was the opposite. A famous café that was known only to those in the know. It would be fine if it was a café

where only regular customers would gather and rejected first-time customers that came without an introduction. The café was barely scraping by with only one sale every month, but he was properly earning money as an informant, so there was no problem with his living expenses.

And so,

「Rejected.」

「Whyyyy! Boss, do you have any motivation!? Do you think you can take the world like that!?」

It seemed that within Samantha, manager Woody was like a master. Of course, it wasn't in the sense of the master of a café. If it had to be said, it was a master in the sense of an expert.

He was the master of the salmon sandwich road. What Samantha meant seemed to be something like 'How can you stay like this without having your name reverberating throughout the world!?'.

「I understand. Then, not just young girls. How about this illustration so that boys will also visit!? I have confidence with this one!」

Samantha then lifted up her sketchbook once more.

Manager Woody's expression convulsed. He massaged his temple as though enduring a headache while responding.

「I'm really unwilling, but let's say we make this café cute. But still, no matter how I look at that that picture ain't cute at all! That's a monster! What kind of imagination do you have to think that young men will come with that picture!? If we put up that kind of thing here, this café will turn

completely strange! Just what are you planning on doing with my café, huh!?」

On the book, there was the picture of a deformed salmon. Limbs were growing from the fish's torso, and, for some reason, it was wearing a skirt while winking with its fisheye.

Certainly, it was a monster no matter how one looked at it.

Manager Woody launched a tsukkomi; however, Samantha made an irritating gesture that looked like 「Good grief(Yare yare)」, and then she began to explain like a teacher remonstrating an ignorant student.

「Boss, don't you know? This is the so-called "anthropomorphization". It's the essence of Japanese culture! It seems that Japanese people will love anything by anthropomorphizing them. Such culture, right now, is getting prevalent to the degree that it is spreading throughout the world.」

「Spit it out, Samantha. The one who planted that kind of half-baked and prejudiced knowledge, was it Paradis-neesan?」

「Yes! Vane-oneesan taught me!」

It seemed the two had been really close to the degree that she called Vanessa with a pet name. Even though he was an informant, he overlooked how the employee of his own café was encroached! Woody held his head.

But, at that time, a somewhat awkward voice resounded.

「That's……sorry.」

「Oou!? Who——wait, ain't this boss!?」

When he noticed, a Japanese youth was inside the café smiling wryly. Samantha raised her voice 「Kya!?」 in surprise.

Kousuke harbored a subtle feeling of guilt, for some reason, due to his inability of controlling the missionary work of the subculture-evangelist Vanessa. He apologized while sporting a wry smile.

「I told you to stop calling me boss didn't I, Woody?」

「Aa~, sorry. It was a habit. Then, head. What is it today? Are you going to have a take-home like usual?」 (TN: Head in the sense of headmaster, head director, etc. I know it sounds strange, but that's how it is in the raw. Bear with it.)

「No, calling me head is also a bit……well, for now, it's okay I guess. Today I came for a request of "that side".」

「Oops, is that so.」

Manager Woody's eyes narrowed slowly. It was a sharp gaze that was fitting for a former employee of the underworld.

Kousuke sat on the seat at the counter. Samantha was looking alternately between Kousuke and manager Woody whose atmosphere changed while her eyes sparkled.

「Good afternoon, mister Kousuke. Seeing that you are here, how about a new salmon sandwich dish? It's a new concept that I thought of that the boss okayed.」

「Samantha, hi. So there was a new recipe again? Right, I'll have that. I think I'll eat it while Woody is investigating.」

Not to mention Kousuke, who often came to buy a salmon sandwich, even Vanessa, the Grant family, and, furthermore, the agents of the security bureau were also frequently

coming here as regular customers, so Samantha was acquainted with them.

By the way, regarding manager Woody’s hidden face, he properly explained it in the interview, so Samantha also knew about it. It seemed Samantha, who was full of curiosity, was also unable to resist the little smell of the extraordinary.

Although, the point of how she was trying to reform such café to have a fancy atmosphere was a mark of how she was truly a pain in the neck. The visit of the agents would be receding due to that.

Samantha went behind the counter with light footsteps and immediately began to prepare the new salmon sandwich variant. Manager Woody and Kousuke began to talk while glancing at her.

「And, what kind of situation are you poking your nose into this time? Is it related to the forest burning case by “that person”?」

「As expected, your information is fast. About that matter, I also don’t know anything about it. I cannot contact him.」

「Then……could it be, it’s the explosion incident of the Vatican?」

Manager Woody gave coffee to Kousuke while making a half-exasperated expression because it felt like this would be another troublesome case.

Also, “that person” manager Woody referred to was about the demon king Hajime.

Kousuke couldn’t help but smile wryly every time at Woody’s way of speaking that really sounded like talking about a mastermind of a secret society.

Kousuke explained blah-blah yadda-yadda about the incident at the Vatican.

A fantasy human like Kousuke actually also existed in the Vatican. Such information seemed to be a shocking fact for manager Woody who was a former employee of the underworld who worked under an occult organization.

「As I thought, you didn’t know, huh?」

「Well, although I belonged to Hydra, I was like a private soldier of Kaysis. I was just an underling of an underling. I can boast a wide information network due to my connections from my mercenary period, but secret information of a country is something that doesn’t reach my ears as expected.」

「Well, I guess so. Rather, I wonder if the top brass of Hydra didn’t know about this, like Kaysis and Jefferson and others?」

「I wonder about that. I think they might know seeing as how they were an organization with a long history but……」

Actually, the top brass of Hydra knew about it. But, thinking about that *organization’s objective*, it was meaningless even if they laid their hands on it. In addition, throughout the long years, that organization had received painful retaliation many times throughout the process of confirming it, so they were unable to lay their hands on it despite knowing about it.

Back to the topic at hand.

「More importantly, I want to know about the connections of those guys. I think there is an organization that they belonged to but……」

「Hmm?」

Kousuke showed the recording of IDs and pictures of the faces of the five people――Leda and others, who died strangely in the church to manager Woody.

Manager Woody took the smartphone and took a look. After that, he transferred the data into his own smartphone.

「From a glance, there isn’t anyone with a big name in the underworld. Can I take a bit of time with this?」

「Around how long it will take?」

「It will depend on the comparison result in the database that I have and contacting my acquaintances, so I cannot say. Well, this is a request from head, so I’ll do it super-fast. For now, please wait about thirty minutes.」

「Got it. Until then, I’ll taste Samantha’s new salmon sandwich.」

「I don’t know about being an evangelist, but her motivation is amazing, and her skill is also pretty good. Please enjoy it to your heart’s content.」

Samantha brought the new salmon sandwich at that timing. Manager Woody’s evaluation of her seemed to make her get into a really good mood. Manager Woody’s expression became one of 「Damn it」. Samantha-chan, she was the type who would blunder when she got carried away.

Kousuke waved his hand casually to Woody who was entering his workroom as an informant in the back while turning his gaze to the salmon sandwich that was brought to him.

「Here, please enjoy. It's the new work, "miso mustard salmon sandwich"!」

「Miso mustard!?」

The new recipe seemed to be a Japanese-style salmon sandwich. It seemed that the influence of a certain SOUSAKAN (agent) caused Samantha to develop interest in Japan. She seemed to get the idea from a miso cutlet sandwich and set out to develop a salmon sandwich that used miso.

She didn't use raw salmon, but a salmon that was fried with a thin coating with a lot of some somewhat soft miso custard coating it. The shredded crispy cabbage also had mayonnaise applied on it.

Kousuke put it into his mouth a bit timidly.

A beat later……

「De, delicious……」

「Yes-! Yes! Yaaahaaaa!!」

Samantha made powerful guts poses repeatedly.

If manager Woody was a master for Samantha, then Kousuke was the grandmaster. Or perhaps a maestro? No, he was the founder of the salmon sandwich road, and he was already the salmon sandwich god……

As a trainee, the words of praise from the salmon sandwich god was truly the highest peak!

「Yep. It’s seriously tasty. But, well, as expected, I like sandwiches with raw salmon the best I guess.」

「!?」

Samantha fell on all four. She was hitting the floor *bang bang* in vexation. Dust was going to rise up from her doing that, so Kousuke wished that she would stop it.

「Samantha. Can you give me the standard salmon sandwich too?」

「……Yes. I will bring it right away.」

Samantha disappeared behind the counter with a face that looked like the emoticon (´「ω」`). The day the title “trainee” was taken away from her seemed to be still far away.

Exactly thirty minutes after that.

While Kousuke was making trivial talk with Samantha about salmon sandwiches, manager Woody came out from the backroom.

「How is it?」

「……Sorry. I didn’t get any good information.」

Manager Woody scratched his head awkwardly. However, his expression looked conflicted and baffled to be saying that he simply didn’t obtain any information.

「If there is an organization behind those guys, it feels like it will be better to rely on the intelligence bureau. If it’s head,

you will be able to request them through the security bureau, right?

I think I can do that but……

From manager Woody's state, there must be something. Kousuke questioned him with his gaze. Manager Woody made coffee for himself, and then he drank it all in one gulp before starting to report his investigations result.

I investigated using various strings too, but I cannot believe that those guys have a connection with an underworld organization. Lawyer, a university student, priest, retired former teacher. Every one of them has a clear background. Other than that Vatican's man called Leda that is. In addition, it's like these guys have nothing connecting them. Like participating in some kind of convention, or having a transaction with each other……there is no connection at all.

Are they hiding it so thoroughly that you cannot find it?

I cannot deny that possibility. That's why, in that case, you better rely on the intelligence bureau, or give me a few days to put some serious effort into investigating this.

If it was manager Woody who had an underworld information network, Kousuke thought that he would be able to pull out all the information regarding their connection, but it seemed it wouldn't go that easily.

But you know, head. There is a bit of a "common point" that bothers me.

Common point?

「……All of these guys, the people close to them are dead. By so-called tragic incidents.」

「! Specifically?」

From what he was told, for the lawyer it was his fiancée, for the college student it was his parents, for the priest his wife and son, for the former teacher old man it was his son and daughter-in-law, and for the laborer, it was his wife. They lost their important people. Murdered. What's more, all of those happened in the shape of betrayal by someone they trusted.

Kousuke recalled the scream of death agony from Leda.

——This world is hell. Humans are making it hell

Did that man also see a "tragedy" that made him think like that……

「Also, there is one more point. The former teacher old man and the college student, about them……」

Manager Woody's report caused Kousuke, who was about to be absorbed into his thoughts, to return to his senses feeling taken aback.

「After their incidents, they got involved with the police several times.」

「Police? Were they involved with incidents again?」

「No, it's the opposite. They caused the incidents.」

「……What kind?」

「Even if I said incident, it wasn't at the level of being jailed. They were only things that only got them strictly warned……

the former teacher was with his wife while the college student was with several of his friends. Both of them tried to influence other people to stop believing in religion.

——God won’t answer. He won’t grant salvation.

Leda’s words crossed Kousuke’s mind once more.

The man called Leda, was someone from the Vatican……the holy ground of religion, right? Thinking about his act of betrayal too, I think this is really suspicious.

Certainly……

Manager Woody had picked up good information in this short time. Kousuke didn’t say that with words, but inside his heart, he sent his praise to Woody.

Then, at that timing, Samantha, who was endeavoring to make a new anthropomorphic salmon illustration quietly so that she wouldn’t be a bother, seemed to be actually listening. She suddenly opened her mouth.

Saay, Mister Kousuke.

Hm? Samantha, what’s the matter?

Even while addressing Kousuke, Samantha sent a glance at manager Woody. Just in case, she confirmed to the manager Woody whether it was alright for her to enter the conversation.

This point where she could discern that, in the end, she was just an employee made anyone not hate her despite her being a pain in the neck. Manager Woody thought that while nodding with a wry smile.

「You see, that act of overdoing it in making someone stop having faith? Actually, my friend has also experienced that……」

「Eh? Seriously?」

「Seriously. It was about two months ago I think? The boyfriend of my friend went through some misfortune in his family. My friend, she said that she would support her boyfriend, but after that, the condition of that boyfriend seemed to turn strange.」

「Strange you say? Like what?」

「My friend said that he was scary. It was like he was a bit not normal. And then, several other friends and I had a discussion with her. But then, it seems that there are also quite a bit of friends of my other friends who are like that boyfriend too.」

「That many?」

It seemed that such kind of people had appeared here and there since around a year ago. After a while, those people would return to how they were before, so it didn’t seem like it would become a widespread topic, but……

「Yes. And also, that’s……」

「Hm? What’s wrong? Is there something else on your mind?」

Samantha faltered as though it was difficult to say. After she was urged to continue, she started with 「Saying it like this, is a bit bad but……」 while saying.

「Everyone said it. It’s as though——“they are possessed by a demon”, they said.」

「……」

Silence, inside the empty café, even more silence was falling. Even the air felt like it was getting colder somehow.

It was manager Woody who broke the silence.

「Head. Do you know about demon-worshipping cults?」

「I’ve heard about it before. It’s that, right? The cult that appeared in movies, doing rituals of sacrifice or something?」

「Well, something like that. Even in reality, that kind of demon worshipping organization existed. Of course, there isn’t just hidden organizations; there is a group that is recognized even on the surface. As expected, they aren’t doing sacrifices or the like. They are merely people who are charmed by the existences of a demon.」

「Hm, well, it’s everyone’s freedom to believe anything.」

That kind of people also existed in the world.

In fact, there was also an organization like Hydra that seriously sought the occult. Because their objective was merely to “personally use the mystique” that was unrelated to god or demon, religiousness didn’t take root within them, so they were of a type that was a bit different from the normal image of an occult organization.

「About that demon worshipping organization, when I was still with Hydra, I heard a bit of a rumor. In the end, it was just a talk that is like an urban legend, so there was no credibility in it.」

As an informant, he was somewhat reluctant to report about a mere rumor. Manager Woody talked while scratching his cheek.

「It’s a group that is worshipping a demon, but they aren’t an organization.」

「They are a group, and yet not an organization? Do you mean they are like a mob without anyone controlling them?」

「No no. They are organized to a terrifying degree. They aren’t an organization but a group.」

「???」

A lot of question marks floated above Kousuke’s head. Even manager Woody smiled wryly saying 「It’s incomprehensible isn’t it」 while continuing.

「Every individual in the group has the same objective and belief. However, they aren’t gathering at all. And yet, they will make a move when it’s necessary without making arrangements with each other beforehand. A jogging woman, a man who is walking his dog, a child playing soccer, a patrolling police officer……anyone who is doing a normal activity right in front of you. Normally, they even go to mass on Sunday. Very normal people. But one day, they will suddenly make their move.」

「What, is that?」

While saying that, Kousuke recalled something as expected. When Leda and others were in the middle of talking, they saw Kousuke without any sign beforehand. It was at exactly the same timing, as though they had arranged it beforehand.

At that time, their eyes were shining mysteriously.

「With our business circles as they were, those guys that are behaving eccentrically, those guys doing stupid things, those talks that are like an urban legend, we called those things with ridicule as――”demon possession”.」

If there were actually people who were possessed by a “demon” in the true meaning, not in the figurative expression or just a mental problem, then how were they living normally casually? They were slipping among society, into households, and then one day, they would suddenly obey the voice inside themselves and start acting like a different person?

Manager Woody operated his smartphone and sent something to Kousuke’s smartphone. Seeing that, Kousuke tilted his head.

「A college professor?」

「I don’t really know the details, but he is a professor in the field or something like religious study, and he is quite famous in that area. ……The college student from just now attended his seminar. In addition, that professor, in this half a year took flights to Roma nearly thirty times.]

「……Hee. It’s slight, but that’s not a bad connection. As expected from Woody. It’s not just for show that you opened your eyes to the salmon sandwich.」

「Thanks to you head.」

Manager Woody made a manly grin. In fact, he was really deserving praise for investigating this much in just thirty minutes.

Just having and knowing information didn’t really mean anything. Only after analyzing, conjecturing, and connecting them did they become useful. There were many cases like that. Perhaps it was better to say instead that informant’s work was to collect pieces of information and connect them together into one complete piece of information.

At that point, manager Woody was without a doubt first-class. That was why he wasn’t troubled about living expenses despite his café only scraping by. This was more of his lifework rather than being an underling under Kaysis’s command.

Kousuke drank his remaining coffee and stood from his seat.

But, at that time,

「E, err. Something like demon possession, that isn’t real, right?」

‘I have to ask this at least!’ Samantha asked with that kind of feeling. Seeing how her expression was greatly twitching, it seemed she was completely scared from the words of manager Woody and Kousuke’s behavior just now.

Although, the fantasy man and the man who was converted to salmon sandwiches by that fantasy man couldn’t say 「Obviously, it’s just nonsense」.

Kousuke and manager Woody looked at each other and smiled wryly at the same time.

「Wai-, what is it!? Why are you two smiling at this timing!? Tell me it’s a lie boss!」

Manager Woody. He was making a smile filled with implication while taking payback for the monster illustration she showed him before this.

「Samantha……my bad. I should have made you leave before we started talking.」

「Boss?」

「Do you know? *That kind of thing* will visit those who know of their existence.」

「!?」

「Be careful when walking at night in the street, okay?」

A shuddering chill caused Samantha to shiver from the tip of her foot to the crown of her head. Her eyes opened widely, and her painstaking piece of work fell to the floor with a clatter.

Kousuke sent an exasperated gaze at manager Woody thinking ‘This guy is really childish huuh’.

It seemed manager Woody noticed that gaze. He was about to open his mouth to say 「I’m joking」 with a wry smile but……

Before he could,

「Booss! Please give me shelter tonight-!」

「Haa?」

「Is it alright for you if your important worker gets attacked by a demon!? Of course, it’s not! I understand! And so, tonight I’ll stay at boss’s house! Thank you very much!」

「Wait wait. I was only joking just now.」

Manager Woody, 41 years old. Single. Living in an apartment. Recently, he was half-living together with a stray cat that settled down there.

Samantha-chan. 19-years-old. Active college student.

「This is concerning.」

「Head, please don't make that kind of scorning gaze when you know the situation. It's not like I'm scaring her because I'm aiming for this.」

Manager Woody made an expression that seemed to say 'spare me' in response to Kousuke's muttering.

He said 「I was joking」 one more time to Samantha, but,

「No, I won't get tricked! I understand. Yes, surely those guys are already setting their eyes on me. Like that, when I go out from this café, behind me……on the street at night, people won't be around unnaturally, I will feel a bad premonition somehow, and I will quicken my pace. And then, there will be footsteps approaching from who knows where! There won't be anyone when I turn around! But footsteps are certainly approaching! I will run away to escape, and somehow arrive at my home. After that, I'll lock the door securely, and peek outside from the peeking hole. There won't be anyone outside. Aa, I'm glad. I got away! Yep, perhaps it was just my imagination. Yup, surely that's it! I'm stupid! I was overly self-conscious! How embarrassing! Kyah. I will be like that while turning my gaze inside the room…… over there is the demooooooonnn-. Boosss! Please save meeeeeeeeeeee!」

「Rather, it would be me who wants to be saved by head.」

Samantha’s bad habit——the habit of believing blindly. Or perhaps, it should be said as a bad habit of delusion. Anyway, if she had believed something like this, she wouldn’t believe anything else most of the time.

Even though she was still in the stage of delusion, Samantha was already throwing a tantrum while clinging to manager Woody.

The face of manager Woody had zero happiness from having a young girl clinging to him. He was normally fed up, feeling creeped out by Samantha who was pleading to stay with him while crying. He sent a gaze that was pleading for help to Kousuke.

But,

「Eh!? Head!? Wai-, it’s fine if you don’t be out of recognition only at this kind of time though!? You are here, right!? You are still inside, right!?」

「Boss! Who are you talking to!? If it’s mister Kousuke, he already exited a long time ago! Hah, don’t tell me-. The hand of the demon is already reaching me!? Help meee, booooosssss-!」

「That’s why, it’s me instead who wants help……」

Manager Woody’s tired voice was drowned out by Samantha’s tantrum and didn’t reach anyone.

After that, a staff of the security bureau visited to fill his stomach, and saw Samantha who was crying while clinging to manager Woody while he was holding her face with an eagle grip attempting to tear her off from him……

The staff judged that manager Woody was assaulting his female employee.

It almost became a big case……

–

–

–

「Here huh……」

In front of a splendid university in Britain, Kousuke was looking up to the window on the highest floor while muttering.

That spot was the classroom of the person who might become a lead from manager Woody’s information――Professor Riley Littman.

Kousuke nodded once and entered the building.

「……」

He walked through a dimly lit corridor and climbed the stairs that didn’t have light shining in despite the fact that it had a skylight.

Kousuke had gone several times to the university Emily was attending while accompanying her, but somehow this building felt “different”.

He couldn’t feel the impression of “a building of education that belonged to the university” from it at all.

It was more, like……yes, as though he was getting lost inside a gloomy cave……

(Come to think of it……I haven’t seen anyone since some time ago. Is it a holiday? No, but, only this building? There were students at the other place normally……)

It was eerie. Kousuke naturally gathered strength in his body while thinking about such things.

Like that, Kousuke kept feeling a strange vibe while arriving in front of Littman’s classroom.

He didn’t make an appointment. If he had some kind of connection with Leda and others, he might’ve guessed Kousuke’s intention and escaped.

And so, he infiltrated inside the room with stealth like usual――

「It’s not locked. Don’t just stand there like that; please come in.」

「-!?」

He was already activating his stealth. And yet,

(I’m noticed!?)

Furthermore, it was from across a door.

「What’s wrong? Won’t you enter? You came to visit me, right?」

Kousuke hesitated for a moment, but he immediately resolved himself and put his hand on the door.

Gii, the door made a small creaking sound. It echoed excessively.

「Welcome, to Littman’s classroom. Although, aren’t you a bit too late, exorcist?」

Inside the room was filled to the brim with a vast number of books. Books that were placed flat and piled up forming several towers, creating a strained situation where it wouldn’t be strange for the piles to fall at any moment.

And then, the moment Kousuke stepped inside, he felt discomfort. *Splat* a sound resounded from below his foot.

Looking there, the floor surface was flooded out. A flooded floor was the natural enemy of a room that was littered with books. It was just too strange.

Above all else, it smelt weird.

There was a strange smell. It was like something was scorched. A smell that pierced the nose terribly……

Kousuke’s body took on a fighting stance.

He had smelt this before. This extremely unpleasant smell. Only recently.

In the foreign world on the other side of the mirror.

「What……are you?」

There was a man within the unpleasant smell, between the mountains of books. Gray hair limply lying flat on his head, and a face full of wrinkles that was lacking in vigor. Severe hook nose, and grey eyes with a piercing glint.

His age was around the latter half of his seventies.

He was wearing a suit with good tailoring that was obvious from a glance. One hand was holding a stick, and his back

was relatively straight for his age.

That man――Professor Littman raised an eyebrow at Kousuke’s question.

「――”What, are you”. Hm, strange. I thought you came to me knowing the situation but……the exorcist who hindered “that person”. No, perhaps I should call you the Vatican’s hidden ace? There is nothing about you at all in the information of Leda and others.」

(This guy, he know about what I did in that world!?)

Professor Littman pressed forward with his conjecture from Kousuke’s faint agitation.

「You are agitated. So it’s unexpected for you that I know. But, why is it unexpected? It’s obvious that I know. You should know about the obvious. Because you are here by identifying me. ……Hm, if that premise is wrong, I see, you aren’t related with the Vatican. Or perhaps, even if you have a relationship with them, you aren’t related to an exorcist. Then, why did someone unrelated like you move to rescue the “mother body”? Why, are you here? Besides, although “that person” didn’t display his original power, you escaped him. What is that power?」

Professor Littman spoke while linking one by one the information available and unraveled the mystery.

But, Kousuke was unable to cut in at the words of the professor that was like talking to himself.

(What? It’s not just smell. This feeling……)

The coiling unpleasant presence.

Then, at that time, following some kind of thought process, Professor Littman reached the answer.

「I see. You. You are――returnee huh.」

Kousuke lost count how many surprises he had felt. This room's abnormal atmosphere, and the way Professor Littman was talking, Kousuke felt how he was almost being swallowed by the other party's pace. He scolded himself inside his heart and pulled himself together quickly.

「I see, I see. If it's like that, then it's no wonder you still don't know.」

「What?」

「About the people that are not of this world.」

Clack clack, Professor Littman was knocking the floor with his leather shoes and stick while adding on to his words really looking like he was teaching.

「You, you must not be ignorant. Even if humans cannot be all knowing, humans have to fight ignorance constantly. That is the duty of the race that possess the highest intelligence.」

「……」

「Therefore, I will give you a lecture about "them" to the ignorant you. You, you who have fought and escaped "them" from "hell". After sealing the "mirror gate", are you relieved? Did you see hope in the future after taking back Claudia Barenberg?」

The question of Professor Littman in truth was nearly that of a mere monologue to himself. It looked like he was asking a

question to Kousuke, but his eyes were constantly wandering to empty air.

「You. Certainly, “they” cannot open the “mirror gate” and descend to this world. They who in essence are without flesh body are unable to cross the gap of “hell” and “this world”. They have no strength to maintain their existence.」

「They have no flesh body?」

Certainly, no matter how many times he cut those ghoul-like things, they kept regenerating. He was able to destroy them for the first time after using magic in conjunction with his attack. Although, he thought that they had a flesh body. Therefore, Kousuke spontaneously asked, but as expected Professor Littman continued talking without even looking at Kousuke.

「But, there are exceptions to everything. They can exert influence to this world even if only slightly. Sometimes, it will be as a whispering voice, sometimes as a shadow, and sometimes it will be as something that seems to be predestined.」

The shadow that was visible inside the eyes of Leda and others. So that was the “people of hell” that Professor Littman mentioned.

「People who are strongly influenced. People who offer their own body. There are a lot of humans who carry them inside their heart. Because they only have meager influence, they possess the way to make use of that influence to the maximum.」

‘But’——Professor Littman’s eyes caught Kousuke’s once more.

「The power of “that person” is immense, and his influence is also vast. Humans who have a connection with the other side are increasing, and then, finally “the wind of lamentation” is released to this world.」

「——What do you mean by “wind of lamentation”, is it that bloody wind?」

Professor Littman nodded slightly. His eyes weren’t seeing empty air anymore. He was looking at Kousuke.

「The gap of “hell” and “this world” is wavering. Just now, I said that they could not cross the gap of worlds without the “mirror gate” but……now is different. In this time when this gap is wavering, if there is a medium that can easily connect the interval, they will be able to descend to “this world” with a strong body maintaining their existence.」

For example, a mirror. A mirror that reflected another world, especially when there was an opposite mirror, the gap of worlds could be shaken just with that.

For example, a thick mist. A heavy mist that shut the field of vision where it was impossible to look even an inch ahead, it could also shake the spot of “this world” itself.

And then, water.

The world was connected by water. Water was a natural “gate” that crossed every world.

Kousuke was taken aback and dropped his gaze to the floor.

「The lecture is over with this. Now, please experience hell after this.」

「Chih!!」

A swift attack. Kousuke closed the distance instantly, grabbed Professor Littman’s neck and slammed him on the floor.

Professor Littman opened his eyes wide. But……his eyeballs immediately rolled and caught Kousuke. His eyes weren’t grey. They were eyes that shined glaringly red.

「The gate, has opened, you know?」

「Kuh!? You-――」

Kousuke’s voice was drowned out.

Because right after that, the flooded floor bubbled fiercely, and countless “somethings” flew out along with a shriek.

–

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Please take care of me again from today.

I’m ashamed to mention this right after the resumption, but

The Gardo comic, three manga versions were updated.

1. Arifureta original version comic

- Sonna-chan, she is normally beautiful! In the future she will become a user of “Elusive Phantom” that even the hero cannot detect……

2. Arifureta Nichijou de Sekai Saikyou

- Kaori-san’s dangerousness is accelerating. Nichijou’s Kaori-san, where is she heading to?

Mori Misaki-sensei, thank you very much! Please do it more lol

3. Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou Zero

- The spinoff light novel “Zero” has a comic version by the work of Kouchi Ataru-sensei. It’s the story of Miledy and others, the Liberators.

Surely a lot of people think it. It’s a lie that Miledy is this cute.

Kouchi-sensei! Thank you very much!

All can be read for free so,

Please go take a look at Comic Gardo by all means as one way to kill time.

(You can go there from Overlap-sama’s homepage.)

Arifureta Chapter 308

Arifureta After III　Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2　The Security Bureau’s Future Is…

–

Bubble rose up tremendously from the water on the floor as though it was seething.

Instantly,

――*iaAAAAAAAAAAH*

Disgusting shriek infringed inside the room.

――!?

An unseen impact attacked Kousuke. The hand that was holding Professor Littman’s neck was forcefully torn off and he was blown away until the wall in one go.

He collapsed the towers of books while colliding on the wall with an impact that cracked the surface.

Gahah

The air inside his lungs was forcefully ejected and Kousuke lost his breath.

He landed on one knee. When he raised his gaze, he could see Professor Littman got up with a bizarre movement like a marionette and countless shadows running on the wall.

The shadows with hard to describe shape were running from wall to wall like shadow picture.

「Guah」

An impact hit him once again from the side. Kousuke was sent flying by an unseen existence and he crashed on the wall once more.

(What!? What is there!?)

Something was there. Innumerable things. But, he couldn’t see the figure. There were only shadows reflected on the wall.

At the same time when he fell on the floor, Kousuke trusted his instinct and leaped to the side. Instantly water splash rose from his previous spot and even the wall behind it collapsed.

Desperately, Kousuke measured the timing and threw his kunai at the shadow on the wall. But, the kunai only pierced the wall and there wasn’t any effect to the shadow.

――*IAAAAAAAAAAAAAH*

「Guh!?」

Impact came from right below him. His solar plexus was pushed up and Kousuke’s body folded into the shape of “<” while floating in the air. Right after that, impact came from right above in a flash. Kousuke was blown to the flooded floor without even any time to breath.

Right after that, he was dragged as though his feet got caught and he was thrown away like that with a fierce momentum.

He flew toward an aged and large bookshelves that looked solid. Intense pain ran from his shoulder. The wood that had gone through many years were smashed by the impact and surged like an avalanche along with a lot of books.

「Hmm. The materialization into this world is successful but……only the shadow. Although, physical influence can be exerted. It’s only a matter of time until complete materialization happen.」

Professor Littman was talking to himself while directing red eyes that were shining glaringly to Kousuke who was buried in destroyed large bookshelf and mountain of books.

Perhaps Kousuke’s damage was deep because he didn’t stand up.

Professor Littman snorted and jerked his chin. Then, a part of the shadows that were running around on the wall, ceiling, and floor gathered toward Kousuke.

They were like poltergeist. The bookshelf was moved to the side and a large amount of books floated in the air. Like that, Kousuke who was buried under the books floated together with them.

「Guh, kafuh」

It seemed that he was lifted up by his neck, so Kousuke held his neck with both his hands and gasped painfully. He was shining faintly from ejecting magic power in resistance, but the strength that was grasping his neck didn’t decrease at

all. Blood was flowing from his head, dripping down from his temple.

"Kuh, yo, u-, what the hell, are you-"

"Just as you can see, I am a mere university professor, just a simple researcher."

"A simple, researcheer? -, that's, a harsh joke there."

Professor Littman turned his gaze toward the kunai Kousuke threw. Just from that, the kunai was pulled out by itself from the wall and drifted in the air. Following that, the shadow that was projected on the ceiling was slowly approaching near Professor Littman.

Most likely, it wasn't that Professor Littman had telepathic power, but the unseen existence received command from him and brought the kunai to him.

His hand took the kunai that was brought to him and he stared at it in concentration, then he started to talk with a tone as though continuing a lecture.

"No, it's the truth. I just wanted to know. God and demon, heaven and hell. Those concepts, just when and where they were created. I wanted to know the beginning. That was all."

"De, mon……"

Kousuke ruminated that one word. Yes, the existence that he encountered in the world at the other side of the mirror, and also the unseen existence that was trying to break his neck right now, indeed, they were certainly demon.

It wasn't an unknown another world or even unknown creature. This was truly what the people on earth knew as

the concept of “hell” and “demon”.

「However, you. What is called as record sometimes is something created by those in power for their own convenience, something that is falsified. When I tried to deepen my investigation and interpretation, just who can proof that it’s the truth or not.」

Professor Littman looked at the books scattered across the room with a gaze as though he was looking at a rock at the roadside. The books that were destroyed and turned into tragic condition due to the water or because of the shockwave of the battle were glared with shining red eyes.

Kousuke guessed. This situation, Professor Littman’s conduct. It must be the result of that phrase that sometimes appeared in story being realized in real life.

「I, see. You, sold, your soul to demon huh.」

「I can buy the truth with that. I think it can be said as a reasonable transaction.」

「From, that so called reasonable transaction……what did you find out?」

Kousuke didn’t struggle anymore. He was asking while looking at Professor Littman with blank eyes that looked resigned.

Professor Littman looked back at Kousuke’s eyes.

「Tell me your root.」

It seemed that even this was a transaction. If Kousuke wanted to know his knowledge, then Kousuke should also teach him the secret of his power.

「……That’s fine. But……you first. It will be unbearable if I get killed right away after talking.」

The opponent was a man who sold even his soul to demon for the sake of his pursuit. Kousuke’s condition didn’t even make Professor Littman hesitate.

「Very well. Then, you. In the first place, do you understand what is the existence that is called demon?」

‘The hell if I know’, he wanted to spit that out, but he swallowed that feeling and told no wit his gaze.

「They are human. Demon is the ruin of what human once was. However, it’s with the attached proviso that they are human of another world.」

Kousuke thought that he had heard a story like this from somewhere. Kousuke narrowed his eyes, which Professor Littman perceived that it seemed he was in doubt. His mouth warped and he continued his words, as though he was feeling really happy to display his knowledge.

「The world that we human titled as “hell”, is truly in a state that is worthy for the title “hell”, but once it was overflowing with nature and it was a world with rows of cities that were developed even further than the current earth.」

From the beginning, the “hell” was another world with existence that overlapped with “earth”. Although there was gap between world, both worlds would occasionally influenced each other——spirited away, supernatural phenomenon, UMA, etc——due to the closeness.

And then, the residence of the world that was far more developed than earth noticed the earth’s existence.

「Miracle, magic, sorcery……smoke won't rise without fire. The live coals that is the cause for the birth of those concepts was, yes, the technology of them who crossed to earth. You understand now? In the period that is called as ancient era, at the far past, miracle and magic also existed in earth. Because the residence of hell brought them here.」

Magical girl existed. Even magician existed. Legendary weapons, chosen heroes, and also great people existed. The mythical beasts and monsters certainly existed too.

Everything was due to the "god's magic" that was used by the residences of hell.

「God's……magic, you say?」

「Yes, that's right, you. The residences of hell, the demons, they performed miracles. For the earthling——they were truly gods.」

Certainly, for people who only possessed primitive technology, people using magic were equal with gods. To say nothing if they could receive that godly work, it could be said that the natural flow was to worship those people.

For the residences of hell, it might be a part of cultural exchange with another world, or perhaps it was because of their greed to rule, it was unclear which was the reason, but anyway they brought the technology called magic to the earthlings, which resulted in earth also accomplishing rapid development.

So to speak, what was called as super ancient civilization was something like that.

「But, you. Destroyed by a power that is too great is something that is repeated no matter the age. Do you

understand?」

「I, predicted that. And there, you understood then?」

「Yes, I understood. Of god and demon. Of earthling and otherworlder.」

There was no clear division. If there was otherworlder who sided with earth, there was also earthling who sided with the other world.

But, it seemed definite that there was outbreak of conflict that crossed the two worlds.

As the result, a power that was equal with the work of god transformed the other world into “hell”, and the losers were locked into that world.

「The demons are the otherworlders who lost the conflict, and the earthlings who sided with those otherworlders, reduced to a mere shadow of their former self. My understanding still cannot catch up with the details, but in order to survive in that changed world, they devised a method to survive with only their soul.」

At the same time, the bloody wind that was blowing violently in hell——that which was called as “the wind of lamentation” seemed usable to form transient flesh body which was centered on the soul.

Although, in the first place the “hell” was a world that wasn’t suitable for people with flesh body to continue to exist. Thus, just like how those ghoul-like things looked like that, the flesh body there was constantly incomplete and ugly. As for their ability to think, people whose soul was particularly of fine quality when they were human would have it to a

certain degree, but normal people were only able to act instinctually.

「That is the reason why they are trying to descend into this world. If they are able to materialize in earth, they will be able to maintain definite flesh body. Like that, naturally the rank of their soul will rise and they will be able to take back their thinking ability.」

「Is, that all? It's not, right?」

「Correct. "That person" is trying to accomplish his long standing desire. That is to unify and rule the two worlds. He wants Claudia Barenberg in order to become even more complete and mighty existence. So that even if the kings who suppressed "that person" like in the past return, he will be able to defeat them handily.」

「Ki,ngs? That's――guah」

Kousuke tried to ask more, but he was interrupted from having his neck choked strongly.

「Hm. It's not like I don't want to continue my lecture for a bit more but, it looks like the demons are impatient. Let's stop here. Although I am a body that receives the demon's thought, in the end I am just a collaborator. I'm not in a position that can give them order.」

Now, speak of your truth.

Professor Littman's eyes that were containing madness inside were insisting that. Perhaps he should be called as truth fanatic. He would sell even his soul to demon if it was for the sake of appeasing his spirit of enquiry, and he had decided that he wouldn't give a damn to what would happen

to earth. His eyes were something chilling even for Kousuke who had struggled through numerous scene of carnage.

And so,

「Thank you for the lecture. As for my truth……please experience it in practice.」

He returned the professor's words before this right back at him. At the same time, *puff* Kousuke vanished with that sound. The place he materialized was of course at the position of the kunai Professor Littman was holding.

「Shih」

「Guah!?」

It seemed that even demon was unable to capture Kousuke who crossed through space. Kousuke who appeared before Professor Littman launched a midair spinning kick that caught his face, blowing him away.

The place he was flying at was the large bookshelf that had temporarily hid Kousuke's figure. But, Professor Littman didn't crash to there.

「For now, sink.」

The bookshelf that was full of gap from losing books was blown away as though in eruption. What showed up was another Kousuke——a clone body.

Yes, while his figure was hidden by the collapsed bookshelf, Kousuke created a clone body and made it stayed inside the bookshelf. The clone body put on stealth with all seriousness, while the main body Kousuke intentionally emitted magic power to show his existence strongly. It was a

gamble but it seemed that the clone manage to hide properly.

A heel drop kick by that clone shot down the flying Professor Littman. A perpendicular drop after horizontal flight. Professor Littman bounced on the floor like reeled up fish.

The demons moved. Countless shadows were running on the wall and ceiling. Presently there were several demons inside the room. They were unseen and their presence couldn’t even be sensed. Most likely because their materialization was still incomplete their state became even more troublesome instead.

Although, just how much time had passed until now. Kousuke of course had the objective of pulling out knowledge from Professor Littman.

But, his biggest reason was to solve this troublesome situation. It was for the sake of buying time, for the technique that he could activate as long as he had time even though he had no aptitude for it……

「——”Absolute Calamity”!」

In order to use the age of god magic!

The black star of calamity formed and whirled in the middle of the room. The magic that he finally managed to activate after chanting for more than two minutes was displaying its tremendous effect amply.

Books, fixtures, and then the demons who were unseen but existing too, anything and everything were pulled and swallowed in.

Gravity magic “Absolute Calamity” pulled in the surrounding similar like “Black Heaven Destitution”. It was a magic that pulled object into it, but different from the final secret art “Black Heaven Destitution”, it didn’t have the power to annihilate the things that were pulled in, it could only compress.

Most living this would be pressured to death by that point so there was no problem, but for demons, especially when they weren’t completely materialized, they were mostly only soul, so it was doubtful whether compressing them to death would work.

And so, just in case Kousuke tossed in flame element magic noncommittally.

「Aa~, ouch ouch-. Geez, punching a person as they pleased like this. Burn splendidly there, you bunch of demons.」

The “water” that acted as substitute tunnel for crossing over the gap of the world should be evaporated too with this, so surely there wouldn’t be anymore demon that newly appeared after this.

Kousuke let out a sigh and let tension slipped out from his shoulders.

「Guh, uh」

「Oops, spare me from watching even more suicide.」

The clone that launched heel drop kick restrained Professor Littman while confirming whether there was any foreign object inside his mouth or if he was carrying drug somewhere in his body. As expected, the clone discovered a small case filled with pills inside the professor’s pocket.

Kousuke quickly took out “Betting on the Pride of Villager” to make the professor’s soul leaned toward his side before the whisper of the demon could drive him into frenzy.

Previously, Kousuke was interrupted before “Betting on the Pride of Villager” could completely exert its effect.

Even if the demon’s whisper had powerful hypnotic effect and brainwashing effect for the receiver, it should be impossible to break the artifact’s effect when the soul magic was completely applied. At the very least, as long as the demon wasn’t a powerful individual like that demon which was called as “that person” who possessed abnormal power.

「But, no matter how I think about it, the demons’ root is similar with the story of Ehito that I heard from Nagumo huh. Ehito’s former world should be destroyed already, so there shouldn’t be any relation though……」

If, the fundamental root was the same, then even the age of magic might not……

In any case, in order to protect the mind of Professor Littman, Kousuke dangled “Betting on the Pride of Villager” in front of him.

Then, just before he made the artifact went swi~ng swi~ng,

「Do you have time to bother with me?」

「My bad, but I won’t go along with your stalling.」

「There is no need for me to stall. Things are already happening. You, returnees. We aren’t underestimating you all. We are on guard against you all, even more than against Vatican. In reality you are really a threat, however, you. As

expected, you cannot go as far as differentiating the attention of ordinary people and dealing with them right?」

「……What do you want to say?」

Professor Littman's face was drenched with nosebleed from Kousuke's spinning kick. His face warped unsightly and he said.

「Your comrades, and family. And then……Emily Grant, are they important for you?」

「Tsu! Sleep!」

Kousuke activated "Betting on the Pride of Villager" with maximum effect. The professor's consciousness was grasped in a flash and then it was fixed into a stupefied state.

After that, he immediately tried to connect his consciousness to his clone……

But at that moment, he instead received an emergency notice from his clone body.

That at exactly right now, they were under attack there.

–

–

–

Returning back in time slightly.

After Emily and others grasped the unique state of Vatican and the situation that was happening at present there from Kousuke's phone call, the main members of Security Bureau were gathering in the chief office.

Right now Allen was arranging the procedure for the voyage to Japan, while the high ranked officials from each department starting from Bernard who would be staying behind were doing briefing session to discuss the plans while Magdanese was away.

Emily and others were sitting snugly at the corner of the chief office while idly staring at that flurried state of the bureau staffs.

「That’s all. Any question?」

After a while, it seemed the briefing was over. Chief Magdanese said that while looking around her subordinates. Everyone of them were only looking straight at Chief Magdanese. It seemed they had no question.

「Good. Then everyone, carry out your duty.」

「「「「「Yes, ma’am」」」」」

They were the well trained dogs of the queen. All the Grant family members thought of such impression in their heart.

The briefing session was over, but for some reason the bureau staffs didn’t exit the room and gathered toward the Grant family——more specifically, toward Emily with smile on their face.

Just like Bernard Pays who was the person in charge of the assault division, there were also many members of department that engaged in fighting scene, so the sight of tough looking men smiling at her caused Emily’s cheeks to twitch slightly.

「Doctor Grant. Long time no see.」

「Captain. It’s been a long time.」

Putting aside Vanessa and the bodyguards around Grant house, Bernard from the assault division normally didn’t interact with Emily. To tell the truth, the last time Emily directly met and talked with Bernard was at the Berserk incident.

It went without saying what about the other staffs. She had only talked several times with her bodyguards and their coworker, that was all.

Even though they had never really interacted, the atmosphere of the bureau staffs toward her was excessively friendly. Emily was bewildered at that but……the reason they approached her immediately became clear.

「By the way, is that guy Abyss alright? You talked with him right?」

「Aby-san. I heard he stuck his nose into something outrageous again? As expected from him!」

「Missy Emily. When will Abyss come here?」

「How is the lord doing? If he ask to lend him our strength, we are going to fly there right away……」

「Our division is also prepared you know?」

Lord Abyssgate was greatly popular. The chief was massaging her forehead. Her subordinates who were nodding seriously when she told them to carry out their duty, were drawing close to a civilian while going ‘Aby Aby’ right after that. Surely she was getting headache.

「Hoo~. Kousuke is really popular. As expected from the man Emily chose.」

「Wai-, grandma!? What are you saying in front of people――」

「Isn’t it fine, Emily. Mother, is really proud somehow. Kousuke-kun is already like my own son.」

「That’s right. As a father, I’m feeling half relieved and half conflicted though.」

It appeared the tension of all Grant family members was rising up seeing their daughter’s sweetheart was unexpectedly popular among the staffs of the national security bureau.

「Well, that’s because Aby is our, or rather, he is Britain’s hero after all!」

「I’m jealous at Bernard who fought together with him.」

Everyone nodded in agreement at Bernard’s words.

It seemed, for them Kousuke was a hero that Britain was proud of. Nowadays when American comic hero was rising to prominence, their mood was like ‘Even Britain won’t lose! If Iron○an is going to call Spide○man as helper, the Capt○in should call our Lord Abyssgate by all means!’.

Hearing that, Emily turned herself small on the chair. She was feeling embarrassed and shy. A hero was accompanied by heroine. She was turning smaller from imagining for a bit that it was her while shaking *purupuru* from shame.

That figure of Emily that was like a small cute animal caused all the tough looking men to showed a warm smile while

they were getting heated up like □As expected, she is the heroine!□.

Pulsing blood vein was finally emerging on the forehead of their queen. Her eye glint was saying □Stop screwing around and work□.

In fact, Chief Magdanese was opening her mouth with cold aura wafting from her.

□……You all. I said to carry out your duty——□

But, before she could complete her sentence……

Golden spark surged in the middle of the chief office.

□——!?□

□-, chief!□

Allen quickly leaped toward Chief Magdanese. Bernard and others also pulled out their handgun from their waist and stood up in front of Grant family.

In front of the supernatural phenomenon, everyone moved without stiffening not just because they were trained elites, but the biggest reason was thanks to the precedent of Lord Abyssgate.

The golden sparks intensified further and before long became shining sphere.

Right after that, the light burst into a flash. Chief Magdanese and others reflexively covered their eyes.

After the light settled down……

□□□□□——□□□□□

Everyone was speechless. They who moved precisely even in front of a supernatural phenomenon, and even Chief Magdanese didn’t even twitch. They couldn’t move. They were only opening their eyes widely with their mouth kept gaping open.

What was reflected in their eyes.

That was the perfect form of the concept of beauty.

「……Hello, it’s me.」

Though the first voice was comical.

Yes, what appeared from empty air with fluttering golden hair——was Yue.

Furthermore, she was clad in golden light with halo floating on her back. It was the adult version Yue-sama!

After teleporting away from Kousuke, she didn’t immediately transferred to here. She first teleported to nearby, then she intentionally transformed into adult version and changed clothes. After she finished, she thought of various show and picking the best timing, Yue-sama made her entrance!

Even the word peerless was still insufficient. ‘The molding of god, no, rather it might be the goddess herself who descended’, that was what everyone there was thinking in a daze. The adult version Yue who showed her seriousness with her entrance was just that intense in various meaning.

「Yu, Yue-oneesan?」

A voice timidly resounded inside the chief office that was frozen stil. Emily was staring questioningly at Yue.

Yue erased the halo of magic power light as though nothing happened and she landed gently on the floor. Her loose black dress spread out airily. Her soft and fluffy hair was also floating around gently, so it was as though everyone there was losing their way into a dream world.

Everyone, starting from Bernard were watching Yue-sama's countenance in fascination while going 'pohee~' as though their soul was slipping out from their mouth.

Seeing them like that, Yue who was convinced of the success of 「Strategy heaven piercing (tengen toppa) first impression so that the first wife of the demon king won't get underestimated!」 made a guts pose with a 'humph' from her nose.

And then, when she turned her gaze to Emily,

「……Nn. Emirin, long time no see. Did you cut your hair?」

「I'm not.」

'Nn-', for some reason Yue nodded strongly.

「Err, Yue-oneesan. Why are you here……」

「……I came to pick up Emirin. Also……」

Yue's glance burst toward Chief Magdanese. But, the one over there was the cornerstone of the country's defense who was even said as the woman of steel who was married with Britain. She recovered herself in a flash and right after that she faced Yue with a straight and dignified posture.

「Nice to meet you. I am Sharon Magdanese. The chief of the national security bureau. Am I not mistaken to believe that you are the "wife of the demon king"?」

It was a polite wording toward a superior, however, Chief Magdanese faced the unexpected meeting with the attitude that wasn’t abased by any mean. Chief Magdanese was looking firm, but Allen and some others saw through her that she was quite nervous.

Her atmosphere was as though she was facing the top leader of foreign country, or when she was attending an emergency meeting where a great disaster for the national security might be incurred if even a single misstep happened.

That tension awakened the other staffs and they similarly held themselves with that tension.

Inside the room that was overflowing with feeling of tension, Yue who was addressed was,

「……Indeed! I am Yue. The woman who is the demon king’s first wife!」

She took a striking pose *sharan* that was filled with dignity. One of her hand was on her waist, while her other hand was making horizontal peace sign above her eye. She tilted her center of gravity slightly. With serious face.

The pose was as though she was an idol from somewhere. Though her face was tense rather than bright.

A painfully silent atmosphere was dominating the place. *Tic tac, tic tac*, the sound of clock’s hand was resounding extremely clearly.

While no one was moving, Yue silently released her pose and,

「……Emirin, I failed. What to do?」

□You are asking me!?□

Emily who was asked for help. ‘Why did you get too worked up!? If you are going to regret it than act normal from the start!’ She seemed to want to say that. Certainly, when looking from the side at Yue’s face that was subtly throwing her gaze to empty air, it also looked like she was in regret.

From Yue’s view, she was convinced that she managed to give the impression of □The demon king’s wife is goddamn outrageous as expected!□ from her first show.

And so, if Chief Magdanese took an attitude that made light of her even then, she would give her cold reception in cool Yue-san mode, but if the chief behaved politely following manner, she thought that she would kindly relax the tension but……

She completely killed the atmosphere instead. Inside her heart she was incoherently trembling with shame. It was to the degree that she unconsciously asked for help to Emily.

Somehow, the gaze of everyone inside the room was focused on Emily.

Emily jerked with a twitch, her gaze swam around restlessly in panic……

She abruptly glared at the staffs. And then,

□I, I am Emily! The wife of the abyss lord, the right-hand man of the demon king! In the future!□

With one hand put on her waist, horizontal peace sign above one eye, and one leg bent with her body tilted forward *sharararan-*!!

She blundered with teary eyes and bright red face.

She didn’t know what to do, so for the time being she thought that she would self-explode together with Yue.

‘We will die at the same time! Yue-oneesan!’

It felt like such voice of the heart could be heard from the trembling Emily-chan.

Shi~n The chief office fell dead silent. However, different from the atmosphere killer Yue, now the atmosphere was warm as though the room heater was turned on. Emily-chan’s kindness was softening the adults!

Emily-chan silently became small. She held her head with both hands and buried her face onto her knee. ‘Don’t look at me…….’ It felt like such voice of the heart could be heard.

With Emily’s sacrifice, the room’s atmosphere returned. Yue gazed at Chief Magdanese once more.

Jii-, with her default stare she observed Chief Magdanese.

Yes, unblinking stare was Yue’s default look. That was her normal state to the end.

But, there was no way Chief Magdanese who was meeting her for the first time knew that. Rather, the sight of a beautiful woman sending her an unblinking stare caused her to gulp her saliva, and her misunderstanding exploded.

□I, I am Magdanese. The iron woman who is married with Britain! That’s what they call me.□

All the staffs cried at the chief’s desperate compromise! As expected, there was no *sharan*, but she was at least taking

pose of one hand on her waist! If it was for the sake of the country’s defense, she would throw away all her embarrassment and pride, the woman here was truly an iron woman!

Yue’s face turned like 「Eh, what are you doing suddenly?」, but she somehow felt that Chief Magdanese too was doing her best to revive the atmosphere of the room that Yue murdered.

She suddenly smiled and,

「……Nn. Nice to meet you, Magdanese. I’m inviting you too to our home.」

‘The first wife bestow her recognition! Our chief is given recognition!’ The staffs burst into an uproar ‘waahh’ all at once!

Emily dissolved her state of charism○ guard toward reality and looked at Chief Magdanese with disbelieving expression.

Toward such Emily, Chief Magdanese gave a small thumb up with a clear expression that looked as though she had lost something. Emily cried seeing the spirit of sacrifice of the chief.

After that, Chief Magdanese who was strangely wrapped with a sense of translucency together with Allen and a part of the staffs, and then Grant family were teleported by Yue to Japan.

After they left, there were the figures of the staffs making great ruckus like 「The demon king’s first wife, was seriously bad news! In various senses!」. There were also a part of the staffs who went 「If we can become the demon king’s subordinate, then we might be able to look at that person

from nearby again……□ with one of their hands tightly grasping letter of resignation.

The bureau chief-sama who lost something, and the staffs whose soul were stolen in various meaning by the demon king’s wife——especially the senior staffs.

The future of the national security bureau, in the end……

Also, a clone of Kousuke who was made to standby outside the security bureau for the sake of the show was muttering □A~, yeah yeah. This is the usual, the usual□ when Yue didn’t come to pick him up too. he entered the security bureau with trudging footsteps, got told by Bernard that Yue and others were already going back to Japan, and then he contacted Yue with dead eyes.

Yue hurriedly returned with a bit awkward expression and he was safely collected.

It went without saying that the positivity level of the staffs who were able to see Yue for the second time was raised further toward the lord. Though Kousuke was filled with sadness.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I cannot reach until the attack…

Sorry for ending it at strange place.

Arifureta Chapter 309

Arifureta After III　Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2

Grandma Sharon-Obaachan

–

There was a strange tense situation in the living room of Nagumo house.

One party that created such tense situation was sitting on the excessively fluffy sofa of Nagumo family. Sharon Magdanese, the chief of Britain’s national security bureau.

I’ll die if I avert my gaze…….

She was *looking down at beside her* with a rigid expression as though to say that.

Jii-, *Jiii~~~*, the one staring at Chief Magdanese was the demon king——’s beloved daughter.

It was Myuu.

「……」

「……」

For some reason the two were unmoving while staying silent. The two were sitting with their back straight, both their

hands were put above their lap in good manner. It was only their face that was staring at each other.

While the two were like that, the Britain group of Allen, Vanessa, and Grant family were watching over them while gulping their saliva nervously. Yue and others, the Nagumo family were also the same.

They were alternately sending glances at Myuu and Chief Magdanese.

Everyone was thinking.

What’s this atmosphere……like so.

By the way, the talk between Chief Magdanese and Yue who was the representative of Nagumo family ended without any particular problem.

Emily and co arrived from Britain to Nagumo house in Japan instantly using Yue’s teleportation. There wasn’t even any “great dungeon when the entrance was opened” like Vanessa was hoping for. There wasn’t even any sudden entrance from Shuu or Sumire to take delight in the visitors’ reaction.

Also, participating in the talk from Nagumo family side other than Yue were Tio, Kaori, Shizuku, Remia, and Myuu. Only them. It went without saying why Hajime and Shia weren’t included. Sumire and Shuu seemed to be busy with their work, so tonight they would sleep outside and didn’t return home. Aiko also didn’t come tonight.

And, the guards of security bureau right now were standing by around Nagumo house. It seemed they were arranging cars for transport in Japan and also other procedures, but actually, they weren’t present because it wasn’t desirable to

put multiple guards on one’s side while having talk for the purpose of building friendly relationship, or rather, frankly speaking they would be meaningless even if they were present. That was the consideration (?) of Chief Magdanese.

The topic of the talk also wasn’t anything like Chief Magdanese demanding anything or trying to set restriction. Till the end this talk was only for both sides to meet each other, and for Chief Magdanese to say that if Nagumo family contacted her beforehand when they had business in Britain, then she would be able to give her cooperation. The topic of the talk wasn’t that much different from the agreement that she had exchanged with Kousuke at the Berserk case, so Yue too wasn’t particularly in objection.

If Chief Magdanese was actually trying to start something, Yue planned to be Yue-sama, so Chief Magdanese’s consideration in that area could be said as expected from the chief of the people who were shouldering the national security.

Her feeling of wanting to build a friendly relationship was certainly conveyed to Nagumo family side. Yue also promised that in the future, she would also pay attention to the other party’s convenience when having meeting, so for Chief Magdanese it was a talk that she could be satisfied about.

Like that, the talk was over and they moved to the topic of how Emily and her family would go to Endo house, while Chief Magdanese and her men would head to the hotel they had reserved, it was then,

Myuu who had been quiet all that time suddenly made a small run *totetote* and sat beside Chief Magdanese. Then she began to stared *jii* at her.

Even when Chief Magdanese asked 「What is it?」, it seemed that Myuu was curious about something, she only stared passionately at Chief Magdanese without doing anything else. Before long, for some reason even Chief Magdanese also stared back at Myuu wordlessly……

It seemed that Vanessa finally became unable to endure the silence and,

「Allen, you are the chief's aide right? Do something about this atmosphere.」

「!?」

She whispered into Allen's ear. Allen sent Vanessa a gaze as though he was looking at a superior who was going to send him to a suicide mission.

「Tha, that's too unreasonable! Although she is a little girl, the other party is the daughter of the demon king you know!? If by some chance I hurt her feeling……are you telling me to die!?」

「From the start you are someone who is devoting your life for the country right? It's fine, go.」

「That's too cruel! Or rather, if it's speaking of devoting life to the country then you are the same!」

「My life already belong to Kousuke-san. I cannot die for the sake of country.」

「Even though you are security bureau's agent!?」

Allen and Vanessa were acting a comedic duo whisperingly, but the mutual gaze of Myuu and Chief Magdanese was completely unwavering.

「……Re, Remia? What is Myuu doing?」

Yue was also unusually bewildered and asked for help from Myuu's actual mother. Remia smiled 「My my, ufufu」……and quickly vanished to the kitchen saying 「I'll prepare another serving of tea there」 while going 'my my ufufu'.

「Sh, she escapeth, leaving us behind.」

「……Damn you Remia-. What brilliant withdrawal.」

Kaori lifted her waist saying 「I, I'll help o――」, but Shizuku intercepted with a firm hold on her shoulder. 「Rather, I'll do the helping――」 She was in the process of saying that, but Kaori also grabbed her shoulder firmly.

The atmosphere that was brought about by Myuu and the chief had a strange tension in it, to the level that even the veteran wive~s were unable to endure it.

It was unknown whether the two in question could hear the surrounding's tumult, but finally Myuu broke the stalemate.

「Chief-san.」

「What is it?」

「Is papa scary? And all the Onee-chan too?」

「……」

Instantly, Yue and others went 「Geez Myuu, you are making provocation in this timing!?」 while sending her a gaze as though they were looking a terrifying child. But, Myuu's state that didn't seem like she was in amusement at the slightest caused them to immediately tilt their head.

On the other hand, Chief Magdanese was at a loss of words. She was right in front of those “Onee-chans”. She wondered what was the correct answer. There was no way she could give a noncommittal reply seeing that although the other party was a little girl, she was still the beloved daughter of the demon king.

But, while she was at her wits’ end searching for the best answer, Myuu took action. Her little fingertip snugly touched Chief Magdanese’s hand.

「It’s not shaking, but it is.」

Contradictory words. However, Chief Magdanese couldn’t say anything in denial. Because she thought that she was seen through.

Chief Magdanese had the confidence that she wouldn’t seen through even when facing foreign country’s top authority or terrorist, but it seemed the daughter of the demon king had far better eyes than even them.

As expected from the demon king’s daughter, she was a bit too abnormal which made her fit to be called that. To think that she even had that kind of ability. Or perhaps, was she also receiving unique tool from her father just like the lord?

If that was the case, she was addressing her at this kind of timing with some kind of aim……

When Chief Magdanese heightened her vigilance to the same level when she was facing Yue, Myuu stared fixedly at her once more while asking.

「Is Chief-san, protecting a lot of people?」

「……Yes, that’s right.」

「Do you have amazing power that enable you to protect a lot of people?」

「No. I don’t have amazing power like all of you.」

「Even though you are shaking, and you don’t have power, you will protect them?」

「That is, my job. But, that’s right. About not having power, I’ll have to correct you a bit on that.」

Against a little girl as her talking partner, putting aside her wording, Chief Magdanese was giving Myuu answer seriously without looking down on her by all means. Her gaze flowed toward Allen and Vanessa.

「They, the bureau staffs who are putting their trust on me, they are my strength. And then, I’m also putting my trust on them. They are exactly the “amazing power” that the chief of the national security bureau is wielding.」

Allen went 「CHIEEFF!」 with tears flooding out from his eyes, while Vanessa took a chuuni pose. Was it the pose of a savage eagle?

The chief acted as though she didn’t see it.

Myuu continued to stare fixedly *jii* at Chief Magdanese. When she heard those words, in a beat, her mouth formed a wide smile as though she was convinced of something. It was a smile which made the previous serious expression that even gave off tense atmosphere felt like a lie. It felt like anyone would break into a warm smile seeing that smiling face.

Even Chief Magdanese wasn’t an exception. Her expression turned a bit surprised.

Myuu spoke to such Chief Magdanese with a somewhat happy expression.

「You see, Chief-san. Myuu too, also has no power whatsoever nano.」

「Eh?」

Chief Magdanese's pupils turned into dot. When she had been putting up her guard wondering just what kind of absurd power this little girl before her eyes had, but she was actually a powerless little girl.

Yue and others also opened their eyes wide hearing Myuu's words. Remia was secretly peeking out her face from the kitchen.

「Myuu won't be able to do anything without receiving help nano. Myuu won't be able to protect anyone, and unable to beat the bad guy too nano.」

That wasn't true, thought Yue and others, especially Kaori and others who were at that place at that time.

Once, Hajime despaired and transformed into an incarnation of destruction. At that time the one who stood in his way was this small hero. Even within the storm that would erase her existence just from getting touched, Myuu didn't take even a single step back.

Recalling that, Yue and others nodded 「Aa, I see」.

The reason of Myuu's sudden action. That was, surely, because she was feeling sympathy.

She had no power herself. However, she also had something she wanted to protect, something she should fight for.

Chief Magdanese was the same like her, however, this woman had protected far more people than her, in a far longer time.

Thus, Myuu's interest was strongly attracted to her.

The gaze of Yue and others became warm at the unexpected emotion of Myuu.

Even though she had been presented with numerous artifacts and grew day by day from receiving the special education from the Onee-chans, it seemed Myuu hadn't become haughty. From tThe lack of failing in her sense of values toward "strength", she was undoubtedly the demon king's daughter even though she wasn't related by blood with him.

「About your question just now.」

「Myu?」

Myuu tilted her head. Chief Magdanese returned a straightforward gaze to her while answering.

「I'm scared of your father. All your big sisters are also really scary. After all the "amazing power" that you mentioned is something that can thoroughly destroy what I deem important. I'm feeling really terrified.」

「My……papa and also all the Onee-chans won't do anything like that nano.」

「Yes. It seems so.」

As long as us, or anybody else didn't do "something stupid". Chief Magdanese added that inside her heart while continuing.

「I also think so because of this talk right now. Far from that, as long as our interest matched each other, then surely we will be able to cooperate with each other. Saying this surely won't make your big sisters feel good but, that "cooperation" will also become my, the security bureau's strength.」

I came here today for that, Chief Magdanese said.

When Chief Magdanse sent a glance to Yue and others, they shrugged their shoulders with a wry smile. I pray that the "cooperation" won't become anything like "making use", for both sides' sake……Chief Magdanese certainly read such implicit words between the lines and nodded.

And then,

「That's why, you do that too Create a lot of people who will cooperate with you. All of those people will become your strength. If you do that, surely you will be able to protect what you want to protect, and fight what you want to fight. You are the demon king's daughter. Then, you should be able to do it far better than someone like me.」

Chief Magdanese finished with a gaze that although strict, contained kindness somewhere in it.

For a while, myuu stared fixedly *jii* at Chief Magdanese. Chief Magdanese also gazed on Myuu. Their expression was mutually stiff without any smile, but there wasn't any strange tension like before at the slightest.

While no one was saying anything, before long Myuu showed a soft smile that was the same like before and yet even warmer and fluffier.

Immediately after that, Myuu suddenly clambered up on the lap of Chief Magdanese.

In respond to this, even Chief Magdanese seemed surprised. Unusually, she silently accepted Myuu’s cute act of aggression with a posture as though she was held up by a gun.

Allen went 「Awawa, doing that to the chief……. Chief! Please don’t get angry!」 looking greatly flustered while covering his mouth with his hands, while Vanessa was staring hard at the rare scene. During that time Myuu entrusted her back on the stiffened Chief Magdanese and moved around her butt to make herself comfortable.

When she finally found the best position, she looked up to Chief Magdanese and spoke. Along with the finest, dazzling smile.

「Sharon-obaachan! Myuu will do her best!」

「!?」

KRAKKATOOOOMM!! Everyone there hallucinated the scene of Chief Magdanese getting struck by lightning.

「Sha, Sharon-obaachan?」

Chief Magdanese repeated with a hoarse voice. She who had devoted her everything for the country’s protection until now had never been called like that.

Allen went 「Awawa, calling the chief like that……. Chief! Please don’t get angry! For the sake of the country!」 looking greatly flustered while covering his mouth with his hands, while Vanessa kept clicking her camera at the rare scene without stopping. During that time Myuu was sending an upward gaze at the stiffened Chief Magdanese while fidgeting.

「Myuu's Obaa-chan. ……Is it no good, that Myuu said that?」

「I am Myuu's Sharon-obaachan you know?」

It was an instant reply. With a tense and grim expression, the chief of Britain's national security bureau――fell!

Allen's eyes immediately snapped open in shock, while Vanessa yelled「I, I don't want this kind of chief!」.

Yue and others thought, 「Eh? It feels like déjà vu……ah, it's the same like that time with Okaa-sama and Otou-sama」.

Myuu's expression burst into a bright expression without caring of the surrounding.

「Sharon-obaachan! Stay here for today nano! Talk with Myuu nano!」

「Eh……I, I guess. But, Myuu. Sharon-obaachan has to work in the hotel after this too……」

This was a sudden voyage, and even though it was night at Japan, in Britain it was still daytime. There were various things she had to do, like informing the outcome of the talk and also the content of it to the headquarter of security bureau, and she also had to receive report from there too.

Even Myuu was able to guess that much.

「It's an important work. Please understand. Myuu is a good child right?」

「……Yes nano. Myuu is a good child.」

Dejection, gloom. Although she was talking understandingly, Myuu looked absurdly down seeing that her invitation to stay the night was rejected.

And so, Sharon-obaachan was,

「Allen. I'll write my letter of resignation. Please take care of the rest.」

「Chief!?」

「It's not chief. It's Sharon-obaachan.」

A firm declaration! Chief Magdanese who was called as the cornerstone of national security abandoned the country's protection!

Everything was for the sake of the beloved granddaughter. Chief Magdanese resigned and became Sharon-obaachan!

For the time being, Allen's eyes rolled and he fainted. It appeared that the chief he respected unexpectedly got overloaded in her heart's capacity. Even Vanessa was shrinking back in terror.

「Te, terrifying……. Our chief was completely subdued by the demon king's daughter!」

「Vanessa. I understand your feeling, but be quiet for a bit.」

Even while making such tsukkomi, Emily was also sending Myuu a shuddering look. What was terrifying wasn't just the chief who was taking impossible action, rather it was Myuu who made her to take such action.

「……Nn-. Ee~rr, Magdanese?」

The situation had became strange, so as the first wife, Yue kept at it and went forward. Sharon-obaachan spoke with a grim expression.

「Ms. Yue. I want to adopt Myuu into Magdanese family. Will you allow it?」

「……Obviously it’s not allowed.」

Yue’s reproachful gaze stabbed forward.

It seemed Chief Magdanese had lost her sanity somewhat from the unprecedented moe attack.

Shuddering gazes were poured once more toward Myuu who had melted the iron woman into flabby level.

「Myu?」 It didn’t seem like Myuu understood what she had done, perhaps that was the minimum salvation that could be taken here.

If she acted while aiming for this, yes, if for example she intentionally acted in order to obtain “cooperation”, then Myuu should already be called as not a witch but a little witch. In a sense she was more of a magician than Yue and others.

「Sharon-obaachan. You are going to stop being “Chief-san” nano?」

Myuu’s expression turned sad. Chief Magdanese’s expression went like「!?」.

「It’s Myuu’s fault?」

Was it perhaps because she was acting gloomy……thinking that Myuu got dejected.

And so, Chief Magdanese was,

「Myuu, let’s talk again slowly next time. Sharon-obaachan has to work after this.」

She declared that with a tense and grim expression. It seemed she retracted her resignation declaration. Allen also exposed his happiness「Returned! The chief has returned to normal!」 while getting revived.

Myuu's expression also became similarly tense and she saluted for some reason.

「Please work hard in work nano! Chief Sharon-obaachan!」

Chief Sharon-obaachan's expression that was constantly cold to the extreme like tundra was collapsing into a slovenly face like a nightmare and returned salute.

Emily said.

「That chief, is making that kind of face……as I thought, in Nagumo family even the little kid is terrific. Isn't it, Kousuke?」

「What, you only realized that this late huh, Emily.」

Everyone thought.

'You are there!?'

Even though Yue brought him here, but just by being a bit quiet without talking, even the wive~s forgot Kousuke-kun (clone body).

In a sense, he was also the same when talking about being terrific.

–

–

–

After that, Emily exited Nagumo house and went to Kousuke’s house.

Yue could also sent them off to Endo house using teleportation, but the bureau staffs who were waiting outside had prepared cars, so Kousuke declined.

Chief Magdanese, Allen, and several guards headed to their hotel right away. It was already late at night with the clock pointing at nine o’clock, so they would delay meeting with Endo family for the next day. After they finished with that, they would arrange to return back to Britain through the embassy. They had no record of departure from Britain, so they couldn’t use normal flight.

As for Kousuke, he along with Grant family, Vanessa, and three guards who he knew well from guarding Grant family from close by similarly used cars to head to Endo house.

At the entrance, a woman who seemed like an important authority being surrounded by foreign men with stern look……

That woman treated the people of Nagumo family courteously.

Then multiple black sedan type cars that were procured from who knew where……

The neighbors were properly observing even at nine o’clock at night. 「It’s Nagumo-san’s place again! It’s mafia! Foreign mafia is coming to greet them there! Dear-, what to do!」「Oi, you! I always told you, don’t peek like that! There is a limit even in being impolite……hmm, no matter how many times I see it all of them are really beautiful huh」「……Dear?」 That kind of conversation was unfolding here and there inside the neighbors’ houses……perhaps.

It seemed that Chief Magdanese somehow felt the gazes that were showered at them from the gap of curtain of such neighbors. Her cheeks were grandly twitching. 「There is really no meaning of doing unofficial talk」 She thought.

The demon king palace in the residential area.

Even Chief Magdanese was unable to anticipate only this.

Myuu who came to see her off waved her hand energetically while saying.

「Sharon-obaachan! Do your best in your work nano! Come to play again!」

「Yes, I'll come again to play. Myuu too, if you have a chance come to visit. Sharon-obaachan will take you anywhere you want to go.」

The chief didn't come here to play by any means. It was impossible for the staffs whose eyes snapped wide open in shock from witnessing the nightmare of a dere (fawning) dere chief to make such tsukkomi.

「Allen, get a hold of yourself! Protect Sharon-obaachan! Nano」

「Eh!? It's only me who got called without honorific!? What's more with self-important tone somehow!? Your "nano" there just sounded like unimportant addition you know!?」

Surely Myuu had discerning eye to look at people. During the brief period of waiting for the cars, there was time for the Britain group and Nagumo family to chat with Myuu as the center, but during that brief time, Myuu seemed to have guessed from her surrounding's behavior, of the right way to interact with Allen that was.

Am I right?, Myuu looked at Vanessa questioningly. Vanessa sent her a firm thumb up.

「Endo too! Protect Emily-oneechan properly! Nano」

「Me too as expected huh……」

Kousuke laughed drily while beside him Allen was getting on all four while yelling that「Even a little girl-, even a little girl treat me like this-. God! Is there a kind girl for me in this world!?」. He kindly patted the shoulder of the professional killer who was being a bother for the neighbors.

Kousuke was making gentle eyes. Allen smiled with teary eyes saying「Aby-san, my bosom friend」, Kousuke also said 「Putting aside being friend, my name, it's Kousuke」 and returned a smile.

Like that, Kousuke and others departed from Nagumo house.

They split into two cars and headed to Endo house.

In the first car, Kousuke and Emily sat on the back seat, Vanessa on the front seat, while one of the guards was driving. In the second car, Emily's mother Sophie, the father Carl, and the grandma Sierra sat on the backseat, while the remaining two guards sat at the front. That was the arrangement.

The topic inside the car was naturally the story about the dere dere chief. Vanessa immediately sent the smiling face of Chief Magdanese that she took to Bernard and others in the headquarters. Right about now, the headquarter was surely falling into chaos. How much SAN point of the staffs would decrease……

The main culprit of the cyber terrorist was the SOUSAKAN (agent) their fellow staff.

「If you aren't doing it moderately, your important thing will be put into shredder by the chief again you know?」

「However Lyle-san. If this kind of important information is kept secret, I will be put to trial (saiban) by my colleagues before getting the shredder (saidanki).」

The driver, bodyguard Lyle O'Connor――his age was in the middle of his thirty. A man who looked good with short black moustache――was smiling wryly.

Like that they were driving for a while getting excited. At the point when it would be ten more minutes before they reached Endo house, Vanessa's mobile phone rang out.

When she looked at the display, there was the letter of "M" there. In other words, it was from the chief-sama. Vanessa's complexion turned pale in a flash. She wondered if her crime had been found out already.

Nevertheless, this was the call from the absolute queen. She pushed the receive button quickly without hesitation!

「Ye, yes, this is Paradis dessu. Chi, chief――」

「Paradiiis! We are under attack! How is the situation over there!?」

An angry yell resounded inside the car. That was undoubtedly the yell of Chief Magdanese that communicated the emergency situation.

At the same time,

「Lyle-san-! From the right!」

「!? ――Shield 2-! Enemy-! From three o’clock!」

At the same time with Kousuke’s warning, bodyguard Lyle used his radio to contact the car behind him while stepping on the accelerator with amazing reaction speed. By stepping on the pedal swiftly, it was for avoiding from having their route blocked by the opponent.

But, it was a disaster that the car wasn’t the usual exclusive car for the bureau. The car didn’t accelerate as fast as he imagined. It allowed the car that came charging from the right path to crash on the trunk part of the car.

「Kyaa!?」

「Emily!」

Right after the collision, Kousuke embraced Emily, so Emily didn’t seem injured. Even so, it was a collision by a car that came rushing in high speed. The impact was something terrific.

In addition, because the car received impact at its back, the car of Kousuke and co was grandly rotating. Bodyguard Lyle handled the wheel with a desperate look to right the balance of the car.

They were in a crossroad at that time so the space was quite large. Thanks to that they could somehow avoid crashing onto guard rail or wall. Even with white smoke rising from the friction of the tires, the cars stopped somehow.

「Goddammit. ――Shield 2!」

「This is Shield 2! No problem here! Two headlights at six o’clock! Five silhouettes around us!」

「Roger! We are retreating from here!」

In respond to the angry yell of agent Lyle, the car behind――code Shield 1 referred to agent Lyle, while Shield 2 referred to agent Rob Garret who was driving the car that Carl and others were riding in――sharply reported the situation.

Agent Lyle listened to that while stepping on the gear once more to takeoff right away. Thinking of the the chief’s warning just before this, there was no way this was just an accident. It was out of the question to stay in this place.

Fortunately, the car crashing on them collided on a guard rail and it wasn’t moving. Shield 2 was able to follow after Shield 1 without problem.

But, right after the car of Kousuke and co took off with force that made the tires left behind skid mark, someone came rushing from the front. It was a Japanese person around his thirty. That man came rushing right from the front at the car of Kousuke and co that was moving fast.

Without pause, the man leaped on the car’s bonnet. Without minding that the car was running, he began to strike the front glass with a hammer he was holding.

「What the hell with this guy!?」

「Don’t tell me-, they are in Japan too!?」

Kousuke who covered for Emily looked at the man who was cracking the front glass and yelled. Agent Lyle stepped on the brake strongly while the car was advancing fast, causing

the man to be sent flying. During that time Vanessa was yelling into her phone.

「Chief! Right now we are under attack! There is no injured! The attacker is a male in his thirty. A Japanese! The situation there!?」

「Alonso is injured from gunshot. No danger to his life. The attackers are mostly Japanese. One of them is a uniformed police. Right now Allen is suppressing them. Our car is crushed. Currently we are travelling by foot. The number of passer-by and car here are abnormally few. We are planning to return to Nagumo house somehow.」

「Roger. After linking up with Endo family, we will also head to Nagumo house.」

A slightly relieved atmosphere was flowing. Vanessa kept the phone in speaker mode while throwing her gaze at Kousuke through the back mirror.

「Kousuke-san, the attacker's information. From your reaction just now, you know something correct?」

「Yeah. These guys are――they're coming again!」

The clone already conveyed the information about this attack to his main body. Conversely, the information that Kousuke obtained from his dialogue with Professor Littman had been shared too. He was going to convey it, however, before he could a mid-sized truck rushed out from the front direction of the crossroad.

Looking closer it was a truck that was famous for moving service. And then, the eyes of the driver were shining red, the same like the previous attacker.

「No good-, the road’s width-. Aby!」

「It’s Kousuke!」

From the width of the road, it was impossible to completely avoid the mid-sized truck rushing from the front. Even if the car moved to dodge, if the opponent felt like it they could move however they like to still crash anyway with the width of this road.

Agent Lyle who concluded so yelled. Kousuke gave his usual reply before pulverizing the window with his elbow strike, then he threw his kunai.

「Everyone, hang on me!」

Kousuke held Emily with one hand while his other hand reached out. Vanessa and Lyle caught on that hand.

The next moment, the light of the truck covered their vision. The truck was approaching right nearby like a wall.

And then, impact. Terrific crashing sound reverberated. The car of Kousuke and co pitched forward with one side floating in the air. Its front was squashed. The mid-sized truck’s rear part was also floating――

Kousuke and others stared at that sight from a bit far away walkway. It was impossible to include the car, but teleporting four people wasn’t a problem.

The truck and the car bounced several times before stopping. The truck’s driver had his face buried into airbag without showing any sign of moving. They had no time to confirm whether to check if he died or not.

Kousuke sighed while muttering.

「It’s like watching a zombie movie.」

「That’s my favorite genre, but spare me from experiencing it for real.」

People were coming out in drove from the surrounding buildings. From a glance, they were all people who could be seen anywhere. There were also quite a number of foreigners, but around half of them were Japanese. However, everyone’s eyes were shining red.

Kiki- Braking sound echoed and the car behind stopped in front of Kousuke and co.

「Emily! You safe!?」

「Father! Yes, I’m fine!」

Carl was unable to contain himself and leaned out from the window, calling out to Emily.

Agent Rob stopped him while raising his voice to Kousuke and co.

「If you need the car then we will remain behind, what are you going to do?」

One car wouldn’t be enough for everyone here. Thus, Rob asked whether Kousuke, Emily, and Vanessa would ride the remaining car while the three bodyguards stayed behind. It was fortunate that the truck toppled and didn’t block the path. If it was now the car could slip through the side.

Figures of people were approaching. There were also multiple cars coming.

And then,

——GIIiIIIIH

——AaAAAAAAA-

Repulsive voices were reverberating. Countless shadows were running on the surrounding wall and ground. Light vanished from the surrounding buildings when they noticed, and even the traffic light that was a bit far away was vanishing right now.

「O, oi oi……what is it this time?」

「It seems, it’s a fantasy again you know?」

Agent Lyle pulled out his handgun while getting drenched in cold sweat. Vanessa spoke frivolously, but her expression was sharp. There wasn’t the slightest sign of her usual fooling around.

The street lights were unnaturally flickering. They were dying out in turn starting from the farthest. In the night of cloudy sky where there wasn’t even any moonlight, the artificial light going out was as though a wall of darkness was approaching.

At the same time, countless voices resounded inside Kousuke’s head.

That was the telepathic voice from the artifacts that were supplied to all his comrades.

「Oi-, you guys hear me!? It’s Sakagami here-! For some reason I’m attacked by strange guys!」

「Everyone-, can you heaaar!? This is Nana! It feels like there is something strange in my house though!? Someone help!」

「Yuukaaa! Nanaaa! Right now, I’m outside but it’s pitch black around me! I can hear whispering! I’m no good with horrorrrr! Heeelppp!」

「Taeko!? This is Yuuka! I’m also getting attacked here! The attackers are foreigners, also, there is something unseen too!」

「You guys too!? This is Kentaro! I’m with Juugo now! I can hear disgusting voice here but, I cannot see their figure! Ah, Juugo!? You’re okay!?」

「Atsushi here! These guys’ eyes are red but they ain’t monster right!? Is it bad to cut them!?」

「Someone help me! It’s Saitou! Shinji is strange! No, normally he is already strange but, this isn’t that, somehow he is cackling crazily! Ah, no, normally he would also cackle sometimes but……anyway, something strange!」

「Ee!? Everyone too!? I’m Suzu! When I entered the bath, something came out! Right now I’m suppressing it with barrier but, what’s this……feels like my head is getting strange」

Emergency contact came from the classmates one after another.

Furthermore, Kousuke’s――his main body’s phone was ringing. The clone and the main body was in a state of information sharing, so the conversation was transmitted in real time.

「Kou-niii! Help! Otou-san is!!」

The chief’s voice came from the phone of Vanessa that was still connecting.

「There was a contact just now. The headquarters is getting attacked. Paradis, join up with us quickly.」

This evening, under this cloudy sky, it seemed the demons and worshippers that were possessed by demons were starting to move.

「Kousuke!」

Emily’s voice. The last street light finally went out. Vanessa and others turned on their flashlight, but even that immediately died out.

While darkness enveloped them, the reverberation of shriek stirred up their mind……

–

「Who do you think you are barking at?」

–

Kousuke put on his sunglass.

Even though the surrounding was pitch black.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The previous chapter, there was a scene of Kousuke confirming the safety of Emily and others, but I revised it.

Thinking carefully, Yue brought his clone so he could share information with it.

I plainly forgot about the clone……

Perhaps because I’m writing thisat the same time with the work for volume 8 publication that is planned to be sold for next month, recently the story feels repetitive no matter what, my apology.

Soon my publication work will be over too, so from next week I think I might be able to develop the story a bit more properly.

Also, I’m ashamed to advertise here but, at the same time with volume 8, the volume 3 of manga and Nichijou version volume 1 are also planned to be released.

Below is the book cover.

It’s also showed at the homepage of Overlap-sama.

I’m really thankful to RoGa-sensei and Mori Misaki-sensei. I believe their work has magnificent quality.

I’ll be very happy if you readers will obtain them.

Also, the first chapter and the latest chapter are distributed for free in Gardo Comic, so for those who haven’t read, how about giving them a try to kill time? (You can go there from Overlap-sama’s homepage) A good timing too, yesterday the second chapter of spin-off manga “Zero” were updated there. The story of Miledy and Oscar.

This one too is also drawn amazingly thanks to Kouchi Ataru-sensei, so please if everyone will kindly do me a favor and read it by all means. Kouchi Ataru-sensei’s Miledy is really annoyingly cute!

Well then, pardon me for being longwinded.

Best regard for the main story here from here on too.

Arifureta Chapter 310

Arifureta After III　Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2　The Respective Battle　Top

–

「Kousuke! It’s night right now! What’s more it’s pitch black!」

Emily made an accurate tsukkomi when Kousuke wore sunglasses.

However, he was already the lord so it was irrelevant! The lord sent a thumb up at Emily that was cryptic when seen from the side. The the lord’s gaze looked around toward the approaching cultists and the demons that were letting out repulsive shriek.

Two male cultists who were at the very front leaped toward the lord.

An aging man wearing shabby outfit and a middle-aged man wearing a worn-out suit. Each of them was armed with kitchen knife and something like a crowbar. From a glance the two men looked like a hobo and a salary man who was working in a black company. Their movement was the very picture of amateur just like their appearance suggested.

Although,

「GaAAAAAAAAH」

「*UaAAAAH*」

They were screaming with their saliva flying everywhere. Their shining red pupils were shrinking and only madness could be felt from their attacking figure. In addition, their movement was terribly fast as though their flesh body's limiter was cancelled.

Their condition that wouldn't be an exaggeration at all to be called as repulsive was enough to make those who faced them to falter.

In fact, Emily, Carl and others were shaking. Even the bodyguards who were used to fighting scene were holding their breath.

An unnatural sound of cutting wind came from behind such Emily and co.

The hazy phenomenon of something without shape exerting their influence to this world. The demons were trying to take Emily and others by surprise right now.

At the front were two cultists who had fallen into madness. At the back were demons.

It was a bit too much for the lord alone.

And so,

The abyss lord is infinitude
「——Owarinaki Mugenkyou」 (TN: The Endless Dream Lord)

The lord formed handseal that had no particular meaning and chanted such line.

Instantly, clones materialized, two at the front of the lord, and one more behind.

The two at the front immediately passed beside the two men like a wind with low stance that was like crawling on earth.

Then, the cultists raised a scream 「Higih!?」 and tumbled down, sliding on the asphalt ground with their face.

Looking closer, blood was flowing from their hands and feet. The lord severed the tendon of their limbs while passing.

At the same time, the third clone leaped midair to behind Emily and co, and then the clone chanted a line while forming meaningless handseal as expected.

「My bad but, I won't let you touch even a single hair of their body——Gouka Beni Senpu (Surging dark flame of abyss)」 (TN: Hell Fire Crimson Whirlwind)

What was generated was a tornado of flame. It was deployed to protect Emily and co, the surrounding that was even darker than the darkness of night was illuminated with brilliant radiance.

When that happened, the unseen demon let out a shriek of death agony that pierced the ear, while agent Lyle and the other bodyguards raised shocked voice「Uoo!?」, and then, Emily and Vanessa's talking voice of「How can more clones came out from Kousuke clone!? Don't tell me, the one in front of me is the real Kousuke? No, my sixth sense that is limited to Kousuke is saying that the Kousuke in front of me is a clone!」「Muh, that means……the real body of Kousuke-san used it?」.

Carl and others recovered their mind that was in the verge of panic after seeing their daughter and the SOUSAKAN who were talking normally in this situation. It was something to be greatly thankful about.

In fact, the conjecture of Emily and Vanessa was correct.

As a general rule, Kousuke’s clone body couldn’t be produced except from the main body. The only exception was when he entered the Abyss Lord mode until the maximum depth of depth V (the depth started from I until V). In that depth he was able to produce clone from another clone.

In other words, the main body of Kousuke who realized the dangerous situation here from the report of his clone immediately used the limit break artifact――

Don’t ever use it only at me okay?

Last Zell Ver.4 to enter the state of depth V.

In fact, the main body at Britain was making a chuuni pose alone inside the classroom where there was only the unconscious Professor Littman other than him.

Illuminated by the tornado of hell fire that the Lord produced, the approaching cultists and the shadows of the demons flying around became visible.

There were around twenty cultists. The majority were foreigners wearing outfit like traveler. Some number of Japanese who were mixed among them consisted only with people who were the same like the two men just now, they would either looked worn-out somehow, with some looking abnormally thin or very fat instead.

What feeling are you all harboring, why did you fell……. My bad, but I have no time for careful consideration. Grovel on

the ground before my absolute move of abyss.

As I thought! Kousuke, you are now the lord aren't you!? You completely turn into the lord! Do your best Kousuke! Keep a hold of yourself!

'Even if you are at depth V, do your best as Kousuke!' Emily-chan cheered. Hearing that, 'I wish you'll be quiet for a bit right now……' the lord might be thinking something like that, but for now such thing was put aside.

Against the tornado of hell fire, a car came charging without faltering, rather it was suddenly accelerating as though the driver stepped on the gas pedal in full. The lord made the clones that were produced from another clone to run while sending telepathy to his comrades.

Everyone, it is I.

Kousuke!?

Endo-kun!

Abyssss! Shinji is weeping now after cackling like that! He is squatting and won't move even though he is attacked! His emotion is too unstable it's seriously scaryyyyy! Do something!

With the single line of "It is I", his comrades instantly guessed that it was Kousuke. Communication came one after another. The abyss lord felt relieved that everyone was safe at present while letting out Fuh at the depth of his bond with his comrades.

But, right after that,

……Endo. Explain without screwing around.

「YES, MA’AM!!!」

Even though he was in the state of Abyss Lord mode depth V, he immediately stood at attention and saluted toward the extremely cold voice that reached him!

The voice’s owner was the first wife of the demon king, the vampire princess.

One of the clones stabbed the bonnet of the charging car with a short sword that was turned into light ○aber while increasing the car’s weight using gravity magic in addition. While giving a backward glance at the standing up car, the lord who returned into Kousuke for a bit despite in depth V began explaining.

「Listen to me everyone. The true identity of the attackers is demons and their worshippers.」

Kousuke omitted the detail and conveyed only what should be told right now briefly.

He said, the demon worshippers in the end were “human” who was in cooperative relationship with demon, they weren’t monster by all means. However, their physical limiter was released, and even if they fainted there was a risk of them waking up from the demon’s whisper, so be careful.

It would be to each of their own decision whether to kill or not, in case they wanted to render them powerless, it shouldn’t be with a blow to vital point or the like to make them faint, but with binding that made them unable to move with certainty or driving them to a condition where their limbs became unusable.

In that case, there would be a risk of them committing suicide, so to prevent that, he recommended to break their jaw if possible. They would be healed by Shirasaki later anyway, so there won’t be any problem to let loose and let them have it!

The invisible enemy――the demon was immune to physical attack, but magic power was effective against them. Even if it wasn’t offensive magic, an object imbued with magic power would be effective too, and so on.

「It seems the enemy is targeting us returnee and the people related to us. Right now I’m in a state where I can produce clone without limit. Those who need reinforcement, tell me if you have place where I’m needed.」

His comrades sent voices 「Seriously!? You are in anti demon king mode right now huh!」「Wait a second! Then why aren’t you acting embarrassingly!? Now then, you are imposter right!? (by Yuuka)」 that sounded shocked in various senses. At the same time, they also sent him the location of their house and the people close to them.

In the middle of their conversation, two more cars came rushing. He smashed the front glass and forcefully ejected the driver and neutralized them, severed the tendons of the cultists’ limbs, and crunched their jaws while increasing the number of clones even now. He hurried those clones to head toward the places that his comrades were telling him.

Of course, he also sent some to his own house.

「……Endo. In other words, if these sickening souls overflowing through the city, and the strange power interfering with human are taken care somehow, then it will be fine?」

「That’s right. Though it seems they are coming to this world through medium like mirror or water, so I don’t know how much it has to be taken care of.」

「……I see. Got it. Endo, buy time. In five minutes――I’ll bring them down.」

「Bri, bring them down? No, yes, roger.」

Perhaps something happened. Yue’s rage was conveyed clearly even through the telepathy. He didn’t know what she was planning to do in five more minutes, but it seemed the demons had seriously angered the demon king’s first wife, the strongest vampire princess-sama.

In any case, Kousuke was making his clone launch a flying knee kick to the face of a high school girl who was swinging around a hatchet while yelling why it was only she alone who met unreasonable experience, while,

her majesty the queen
「Fuh. Then, I will enjoy this dance of death until Yue ’s time limit.」

He made a turn while returning back into the lord nad declared fearlessly――

「Kou-niii! Seriously stop it with that! I’ll sever our sibling relationship you know!?」

「Kousukeee-, what stupid thing you are saying there! Otou-san is at my limit already! Also the toilet’s door is at the limit too! Stop screwing around!」

「How much do you think it will take to repair the window glass! Come home quickly before the house got destroyed even more than this! Also, Sousuke went to a mixer so go get him!」

「Ah, yes, sorry.」

Right after that, he returned back to Kousuke. Even depth V seemed to be cooled down instantly with the serious (heavy) words (scolding) from his family.

It seemed his family was taking refuge together in the toilet. Kousuke turned off the mobile phone from where the voice of his parents and little sister came, then Kousuke called the number of his big brother while giving off an atmosphere of feeling like running away from there.

–

◇◆◇◆◇◆◇◆

–

「De, demon or the like is seriously impossible you know~. Yuukaaa, Nanaaa~, you there? Talk to meeee」

「We are also busy here! You heard about the necessary thing from Endo already! Manage it somehow by yourself!」

「At worst, you can run around until Aby came! Do your best~」

Although there was light from building, for some reason the street lights all turned off. The one who was walking while shivering on a street that continued to the station where even passerby had vanished was Sugahara Taeko.

Her wavy brown hair that was braided was swaying in conjunction with her shivering. Tears were gathering in her large droopy eyes and they were going to spill out anytime now.

Her appearance was like a calm type gal, but she had quiet diligent nature. She was walking outside in this kind of place at nine o’clock at night was also because she was returning from her special short course cram school.

Such Taeko in fact was greatly weak against horror. Even when going to amusement park, she wouldn’t enter haunted house no matter what even if she died. She was so weak of it until a level where even if her friends were going to enter haunted house in amusement park with specially high tension, she would be seriously angry with serious face even if she had to break the fun atmosphere.

Thus, even though she was someone with experience of fighting god’s apostle in another world, for Taeko this situation right now where repulsive voice and strange shadows were running around in the surrounding was a despairing situation.

――*GIiIIIIH*

――*Humannn! Womaaan!!*

「Hiih!? Don’t come hereee!!」

She raised a scream to drown the demon’s shriek while lifting her hand and waved it to draw a circle.

By doing that, purplish red light surged and drew a cylinder track around Taeko. It was a sight like a rhythmic sports gymnastics athlete was dancing while whirling ribbon around her.

Right away, a shriek that was different from before echoed. That was the shriek of death agony from the demon attacking Taeko.

「Uu……if something like this would happen, I'll bring my whip in my bag everywhere with meee……」

Taeko dropped her forlorn gaze toward her hand. The thing that hand was holding which was destroying the demons was a thin chain. Stylish accessories were attached everywhere on it. It was actually the decorative belt that was wrapped around Taeko's mini skirt.

Taeko's vocation was "Whip Master". Not just whip, she possessed natural talent to freely manipulate string shaped thing.

Originally she possessed retractable whip artifact that possessed electric ability that was given to her by Heiligh Kingdom, but because it wasn't common sense to always bring whip even though she was just going to cram school, she didn't bring it right now.

In the off chance that she dropped her bag and the whip rolled out from it when it would be bad if it was seen……

For Taeko such disgraceful situation that was like a male student confessing about his porn book in school was absolutely intolerable.

Although, the whip was hung on her room's wall. Seeing the whip that obviously had seen a lot of use, Taeko's family…… especially her father and little brother were already creeped out.

Just in case, she was at least always bringing something string shaped on herself for when she was meeting forceful men picking up women or if she fell into an unexpected situation, so this time her effort bore fruit.

「*AAAAAAAAAAAH!!*」

□Wai-, what is it!?□

Even while looking like she was going to cry anytime, she somehow kept walking to reach the station. But a man suddenly leaped out from the side path. It was a foreigner youth with blond hair. For some reason he was saying things like □With this, with this I'll be saved!□ while swinging around a steel pipe with crying face.

'It's me who want to cry here, who cares of you getting saved or whatever', Taeko thought inside her heart while swinging her chain.

The chain surged in the air like a living thing and entangled one of the man's foot splendidly. Taeko then pulled the chain with a jerk and the youth tumbled backward with one of his foot pulled up.

The steel pipe was thrown to the air while the back of his head hit the asphalt ground.

There, unnoticed another foreigner woman appeared from behind and charged toward Taeko while screaming. □Die for me!□ She was also yelling another selfish line with what was likely Dutch language.

□Geez! Quit it already!□

When she snapped her wrist with a jerk, the chain entwined the falling steel pipe. At the same time, Taeko turned her body and swung her arm in large way. The steel pipe was boosted with the centrifugal force and turned into even more wicked weapon.

Hyuo The steel pipe caused the sound of howling wind and splendidly struck the woman's leg, making a vivid pulverized sound. Ignoring the collapsing woman, Taeko

entwined the chain that was accelerated by centrifugal force and entangled it around her own neck.

And then when she twisted her body and the chain left from her neck, the steel pipe abruptly turn vertically from horizontally and hit the leg of the youth just now from above. The dull sound of bone breaking resounded once more, and the youth’s scream also burst out at the same time.

Taeko’s movement didn’t stop. With a jerk she pulled the bounced up steel pipe closer. The steel pipe came flying toward Taeko with terrific momentum which she dodged by shifting half her body behind.

By doing that, the steel pipe dealt a critical hit on the face of a middle-aged man who was sneaking ut stealthily from a building’s entrance. The middle aged man got his head thrown back with blood spurting from his nose. And then,

「——”Lightning Snake”!」

She pulled the trigger of magic that she chanted with small murmur.

The steel pipe and chain became tinged with lightning. Taeko heartily rotated it around herself. The steel pipe and chain that was like a round shield that was made from lightning scattered around the demons that were rapidly approaching her once more.

She was like a fire dancer, continuously rotating chain freely to every direction. Her movement was like she was just doing something in her spare time, however, the chain didn’t pause even for a moment and then the chain let go of the steel pipe toward the middle-aged man who was bleeding from the nose.

The steel pipe flew with terrific speed and accurately pulverized the knee of the middle-aged man who was right about to stand up to charge forward once more.

「Yuukaaa, Nanaa~」

Taeko called to her friends with a pathetic voice. But, her attack was merciless, and looking at the disastrous scene around her……the gap was just too striking. Yuuka and Nana didn't really respond to her, perhaps because they understood this or perhaps because they were simply busy with taking care of themselves.

With her friend not responding and no more enemy showing up, Taeko casually continued to launch attack to all direction to not give any opening for anything to approach……Taeko's heart wouldn't feel at ease without doing that.

Finally Taeko became tearful……no, it had gone past that. Her eyes were gradually turning glassy. If someone saw her from the side, they might muttered 「Oh, Taeko's condition is……」.

But, perhaps such strange state of her became an opening……

Kara kara kara-, a strange sound resounded.

Taeko was taken aback and returned to her senses and turned her eyes toward the sound. That was a hand mirror that was rolling under her feet. Looking closer, the woman who seemed to be a Dutch whose foot was smashed just now had her hand stretched out with a crazy smile on her face.

It seemed she had just thrown her hand-mirror.

「Eh, what is……ah!?」

The moment she recalled what the lord had said, it was already too late.

The next moment, an invisible impact surged from the hand-mirror below.

「Uguh」

Taeko was sent flying with choked voice from the impact hitting her stomach. Because she immediately blocked with her arms, she was able to soften the impact somewhat, but her body flew for a few meter and her back hit the ground.

She rolled once and stood on her knee, but her barrier that she made from rotating chain was already gone. Further impact came from the side as though it had been waiting for that.

「Uah」

Taeko was sent flying once more and rolled on the ground. Her physical spec that was trained in another world still had spare strength left, but this was really bad with her balance completely broken like this.

As expected, a fat man charging from the street leaped toward Taeko.

「Fuuuh, fuuuh!!」

「Wai-, noo-, disgusting」

The fat man took mount position above Taeko and he stared hard at her with bloodshot eyes. Furthermore sweat was dripping from him, causing Taeko to spew venom spontaneously.

Perhaps the man was unable to stomach that attitude, because his face distorted uglily and he lifted up the screwdriver he was holding in reverse grip.

Taeko’s expression paled. The man’s weight must be double of Taeko. In the first place, although she was training in another world but her physical strength itself was low. Taeko’s specialty was in dexterity and agility. Even though she could struggle and got away, she had no strength to brush aside the man with one hit.

(Idiot meeeee—. I’m too carelessss-! Aaah, geeez!!)

Although the opponents were invisible something, or human with their limiter cancelled, and also the horror situation that she was not good with, she couldn’t deny that she had been careless. Taeko gritted her teeth with the resolve to take the hit and endured the pain——

At that moment, *Bang bang* dry bursting sound echoed.

(Eh? Nagumo-kun?)

The dry sound was gunshot. And then, not just Taeko, for the returnees speaking of gunshot would mean Hajime.

Taeko blinked and ahead of her gaze, the fat man’s shoulders were scattering blood, at the same time, the screwdriver fell down. Perhaps even the man’s nerves got injured, both his arms were hanging down limply. If the shooter was aiming for that, then their skill must be quite something.

Right after that, a really frivolous tone of a male resounded.

「Miss, are you okay, whoops!」

A sharp kick that gave the sound of cutting wind hit the side of the fat man’s head. The power behind the kick seemed to be quite powerful, because the fat man was sent flying with his eyes rolling up. There, *bang* one more gunshot sounded. The man’s knee was shoot through.

「When I rushed here from hearing a scream……what a coincidence this is. ——「Chief. I encountered returnee no. 18, miss Sugawara Taeko. I’m in battle at present」」

「Although I sent you there with that prediction in mind, it’s godsend that the person is a returnee herself. Explain your identity to her and ask for her cooperation. Then join us again here as soon as possible.」

「Yes, ma’am.」

The man talked through the radio on his ear before he asked the dumbfounded Taeko.

「Eerr, who?」

「Oops, Ms. Taeko. Pardon my rudeness. I——」

The man was about to introduce himself. However, right after that he was sent flying to right behind.

Surely it was a demon attacking him. But, even though the man was sent flying, he rallied his stance midair like a cat. It seemed the moment the impact hit him, he jumped backward by himself and softened the impact. Even if he had been preparing himself beforehand, it was still an astounding reflex.

Furthermore, he backflipped with his hand at the same time with his landing and leaped backward. Right after that, the asphalt where he was just at a moment ago burst.

「So, something like this is the specialty of Aby-san! I'm anti human specialist you know!?」

Even while complaining, he transitioned from backflip to side leap with flowing motion. The air at the place where he was standing just now was shaking again.

「Ms. Taeko! I'm an agent of Britain national security bureau, Allen Parker! Aby-san's fr-i-e-nd! For sure! No, it won't be an exaggeration even if I say that I'm his bosom friend! No, really! It's not a lie! It's really unthinkable for me to lie! That's why help me please!」

「Eh, ah, understood? Eerr, but, the enemy's figure is……」

「Please attack at the area around my right at count three!」

The man――Allen's movement changed. Previously his movement had sharpness to keep dodging and parrying the invisible enemy's attack, but now it slightly dulled. With a building behind him, and his left side filled with power pole, he staggered looking as though his foot slipped.

「――"Lightning Snake"!」

Taeko swung her chain toward the place that Allen said in a timing just as she was told. By doing that, a demon's scream resounded in the air.

「Hi, hiih. A chain!? With lightning!? What brutal attack even though she is a pretty girl!? It's too scary! Please absolutely don't hit me!」

Allen screamed half crying seeing the chain of lightning cleaving the wind right beside him.

But, his movement didn’t falter at all. He splendidly guided the demon’s movement and gave Taeko a chance to attack while taking on the cultists that were arriving further to not get closer to Taeko so that she was protected and could concentrate solely toward the demon.

Allen was sliding while tackling the opponent’s foot, and then breaking it while standing up without any pause. Then he accurately shot through the legs of another man. And right after that her performed cartwheel with one hand right away while shooting the legs of different cultist. Next while being upside down, he used his legs to pin the neck of another different cultist who was rushing toward him and then he twisted his body and threw the cultist’s head on the ground.

「Noooo!? Just now, it grazed me you know!? Ms. Taeko! Really be careful!」

「……」

Hyun hyun, Taeko’s chain was cleaving through the wind. Its sharpness was increasing remarkably compared to when she was fighting alone before this. She was mowing down at her surrounding while sending attack accurately to Allen’s surrounding when the timing was right.

Even Allen’s movement was increasingly matching her rhythm little by little and her aim was increasing in accuracy.

「Hih!? Why did the chain go through below my crotch just now!? You can attack normally right!?」

「……」

Because she wasn’t alone anymore, her body that was stiff due to the horror situation relaxed.

「Nowah!? Just now, aren’t you planning to hit me with that!? Crackle, the crackle sound is ringing! At my neck!」

「……」

Taeko’s feeling tensed because she almost got seriously injured. Her concentration heightened further.

「Ah!? Just now, it hit! It hit me! Ms. Taeko! It’s fine to not be that close! Increase the safety margin a bit――ah!? Just right after I said that! Ah!? Wai-, can you hear me!? Ms. Tae――ah!?」

「……Fufu.」

Taeko’s expression vaguely looked like she was having fun, as though she was in a world of her own.

All her classmates who saw Taeko swinging her whip and displayed her stuff with it knew.

She looked like a calm type gal, however at her root she was diligent. She was also a firm person who mediated Nana who had the tendency to get too high-spirited and Yuuka who was unable to be honest when it matter, but actually――

She was a hidden S[sadist].

Yes, Taeko-san whose fetish that was normally hidden got stimulated. The sharpness of her attack was increasing following her uplifted feeling.

By the way, Taeko’s father was creeped out when she saw the whip wasn’t from imagining his daughter’s fetish. It was

because he was thinking 「Taekoo, *so you too*……」, while the figure of his wife——Taeko's mother surfaced in his mind.

Allen's combat skill that neutralized the cultists and toyed with the demons was just as expected from one of the hit man group that was a country's trump card.

His abundant fighting experience and natural combat sense dragged in even the demons into his own tactic.

But, the person himself was teary eyed. He was desperately running around while sometimes making pathetic expression, sometimes screaming, and sometimes complaining.

Seeing such hopeless agent-san who always became a laughing stock even though he was actually amazing, and who kept lamenting all year round how he was unable to make a girlfriend, the hidden S Taeko-san was……

「……Cute」

She was exposing an expression that a cat would make when it found a mouse while letting slip a comment that would surely make Yuuka and Nana creeped out for sure if they were here.

–

–

–

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I’m sorry that this week it also feel half-baked.

My work writing volume 8 will be finished with just a bit more!

I think next week the sotry can advance with nice tempo, so please spare me this week with something like this.

Also, the true identity of the sender of the letter that Myuu handed to Alen in the previous Christmas project, well, it was her.

In the end, will it develop until romance, or else will it end incompletely……

Either way, Allen is completely not fated with 『female who will be kind to me』!

Also, this arc doesn’t end with 10 chapters.

Sorry for this too.

Arifureta Chapter 311

Arifureta After III　Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2　The Respective Battle　Middle

–

「Uoii! Shinji-kuuunn!? Won’t you revive soon!?」

A voice of someone at his wits’ end was resounding in a corner of the back alley that was away from a shopping district’s main street. It was Saitou Yoshiki.

Right beside him, there was also a figure sitting on the middle of the alley while hugging his legs and burying his face on his knee, weeping *hics hics*. It was Nakano Shinji.

From the bottom of his heart Yoshiki thought, 「This guy, is seriously annoying……」.

After all, right now they were in the middle of assault from multiple humans who clearly weren’t normal and unseen enemy——the so called demon. It was reasonable for Yoshiki to want Shinji to stand up right away and escape or fight. Shinji’s figure that was too unsightly made him started to think that perhaps he should just leave him behind.

Although,

(Well, it’s impossible though.)

Yoshiki smiled wryly while firing wind cannon to a foreign man that was attacking by swing metal bat.

The invisible wind ball accurately hit the man’s legs, snapping both his legs to the wrong direction.

Furthermore, the moment he felt unnatural flow of wind behind him, Yoshiki swung his arm while turning around as though he was unsheathing a katana.

「——”Wind Blade”!」

By doing that, a sharp blade of wind flew following the trajectory of his arm, and right after that a repulsive shriek echoed.

Yoshiki ran his gaze alertly at the surrounding while sighin when he saw Shinji who was still weeping. However, he was unable to abandon him. He didn’t even think to do it.

Shadow ran on the wall. He sent wind blade flying there. ……He didn’t hear the shriek of death agony.

Missed, he thought. At that time the wind above his head shook.

Without delay, he kicked the sitting Shinji flying while he himself backed away.

「——”Wind Wall”!」

He felt multiple undulation of wind around him, at the same time he deployed wind barrier that blew to all direction.

——i!!!!!!!!!-!!

A voice that sounded irritated resounded.

「Oi, Shinji! Are you okay!?」

「Shinji is……not okay.」

「Certainly you doesn’t sound okay at all huh, goddamn it!」

Shinji rolled on the ground from the kick’s momentum, and then he returned back to sitting while hugging his knees which looked artistic in a sense. Yoshiki’s expression was greatly twitching seeing that.

Really, he was thinking 「This useless bastard, just what is he doing」, but as expected abandoning him wasn’t an option.

……He had already, lost two friends. In the other world.

Furthermore one of them, Kondou Reiichi was killed by the betrayal of none other than that other friend——the man called Hiyama Daisuke.

He wondered if it was only him who thought of that person as friend.

Certainly, their usual action in the past wasn’t something praiseworthy. They were, so to speak a gathering of delinquents.

But, was their relationship, their life so light that it could be so easily sacrificed in order to fulfill one’s own desire……

There was also a time when he shut himself together with Shinji in a room inside the palace, holding their head and unable to move because of how cornered their mind was.

That was why, Saitou Yoshiki was,

「There ain’t no way, I’ll lose even more friend than this!」

In a “fight where it was possible to lose” something, he absolutely wouldn’t draw back. That will of his was firm and sharp.

The wind of Yoshiki whose vocation was “Wind Mage” was filled with his will and it was fired with even more sharpness. With his ability “Wind Perception”, he could sense the flow of wind with even more sensitivity. Even an invisible enemy couldn’t escape from the sharp sense of Yoshiki who was protecting his friend.

Although,

「Nowah!? That’s dangerous! Shinjii! You, just now you almost got stabbed by a beautiful blond haired miss you know!? Did you notice!?」

Yoshiki focused too much on the demon’s movement that he reacted lately to a foreigner woman who was approaching from the alley’s darkness.

The knife that the woman was holding had its tip almost reached toward the mentally unstable Shinji who weeping. Yoshiki felt cold sweat drenching his body.

The wind pebble that he fired with the fastest speed because it was the basic of the basic magic barely made it in time, but if he was slower just by a moment, then perhaps a knife would be growing bloodily on Shinji’s head.

――*GYAAAAAAAA*

――*Strengthhh! Hand over, your streeength!!*

「This rotten world is ending! The world is ending! Feel honored that you can become the cornerstone for that!」

「You are living without any worry and inconvenience aren't youuu!? That's just unfaiiiir!!」

Voice of desire that was hard to describe resounded from here and there. Man and woman, young and old appeared one after another with bloodshot eyes.

「Hahah. ……Will my magic power, hold?」

The number of enemy caused Yoshiki's cheeks to twitch with cold sweat. He thought that if only he at least carried his artifact——a stiletto that possessed immense support ability in regard to wind element magic, but today he was only wandering in the city.

Or rather, frankly speaking his objective was to hit on girl. Even though he was going to hit on girl, carrying a stiletto around would be completely bad. Normally he would get reported to police.

Inside his heart he was screaming 「Help me right away, Abyss!」. It was then,

「……Blonde haired, miss?」

Suddenly, there was a muttering voice.

Yoshiki was taken aback and turned his gaze to the side. There Shinji was unexpectedly looking up!

「Shinji! You finally return to your sanity!?」

「……Hey, Yoshiki. Where is the blonde haired miss?」

「Shit-, you still ain't sane huh-」

A wind bullet to vent his anger! It shot through the leg of a grandpa holding a long sword that he got from who know

where! Did this grandpa just come back from Asakusa? When he visited there before, there was a sword that looked really similar decorating one of the shop there. Why did the grandpa intentionally choose that kind of weapon……the grandpa’s madness could be felt from it.

Yoshiki dealt with the advancing enemies slightly somewhat out of frustration. Shinji sent a brief glance at such Yoshiki before looking around. And then, he found a blonde haired miss reaching out her hand toward him.

With bloodshot eyes that were shining red abnormally, she was exposing an evil face that was just like Hannya noh mask while reaching out a hand that was holding a knife!

「——trayed」

「What!? Just now, did you say something!?」

Shinji looked down, and leaked out a small voice that was unclear.

Yoshiki was launched to the sky while screaming 「Gyaa~」, however he immediately killed the demon with striking wind & wind blade while falling. Shinji didn’t even register that in his sight while making words one more time that sounded clear this time.

「My feeling is betrayed!」

「You, what are you saying!?」

Shinji-kun stood up. From weeping, changing into anger. He was shedding tears like waterfall while glaring back at the mad blonde haired miss with mad crying face.

「Yoshiki! I’m sad!」

Yeah, I’m also sad to have friend with screwed head!

Yoshiki activated whirling wind to surround him and his screwed up friend. Yoshiki blew away all the demons trying to squash them with number while screaming back angrily at Shinji.

For the first time in my life, I succeeded at hitting on girl. I was really happy from my heart. I was holding hope from my heart that I might be able to get a college student girlfriend! Because, she was all over me with her body pressing on me mon! When I invited her to karaoke, she said okay with a smile mon! She even gave me her contact number mon! No way, this is jackpot! That was what I thought mon! (TN: Sometime in light novel or anime, girl would add ‘mon’ to their sentence when they are sulking or pleading cutely)

That’s well, I agree. But, stop adding “mon” at the end of your sentence. I’m going to cut my friendship with you y’know.

To say the truth, Yoshiki and Shinji’s effort in picking up girl more or less succeeded. They saw a single girl college student who looked cute standing alone, so they tried calling out to her thinking that they got nothing to lose.

And when they did that, the girl said that her friend cancelled their appointment at the last minute, so she was wondering what to do now, and then she accepted Shinji’s invitation.

‘God hasn’t forsaken me! Demon king! Lord! Today I will stand on the same stage like you guys!’ That was what Shinji thought.

Well, he almost got stabbed the moment he entered a back alley with that girl though.

In other words, the girl was a cultist.

In proportion with the great happiness that he felt, the despair was also equally great. It was to the dgree that his mind’s equilibrium collapsed when the demon took advantage of the opening and whispered to him.

「I who am like the main character of a tragedy drama, don’t you think such me is pitiful?」

「Yeah, now I’m thinking that your head is really pitiful just so you know.」

「And yet, that blonde haired miss, she tried to finish off me who is like this! This is too much!」

「I feel like the meaning of the finishing off you say isn’t really right though……」

「These people, every last one of them is playing with my pure heart!」

「The one who said 「For now, let’s just call out a lot to all the girls. Surely we will land a jackpot if attempt a lot right?」 before we went to hit on girl was you yeah? Don’t you remember? Oi, the self-proclaimed pure hearted man.」

Yoshiki sent a scornful stare to Shinji who was increasingly stamping his feet in frustation while dispelling the whirlwind. At the same time he sent the cultists leaping on them flying with a squall onto the building and electric pole.

「But, but even so, a main character surpass the tragedy and become strong.」

「Ah, you aren’t listening to me huh?」

「The vicious treatment of many women, and the whisper of the demon who is telling me to surrender myself to desire are inviting me to a new front.」

「Certainly, it really feel like a new front. The you right now is unprecedentally disgusting.」

Yoshiki was slowly taking distance from Shinji who was making a fearless smile (?) with 'ehe eheh' voice. Perhaps even his friendship could only go this far. His resolve from the other world almost crumbled.

「——"Flame Fortress"!!」

Shinji whose vocation was "Flame Mage" instantly created a wall of flame. The demons who seemed to be approaching shrieked.

The brilliantly blazing flame drove away the darkness, and covered the advancing Shinji with a gloom.

Shinji looked over his shoulder to Yoshiki who was watching him dumbfounded from behind.

「Yoshiki, I've made you wait huh. I'm fine already.」

「No, you doesn't look fine at all. Rather you are worsening.」

Shinji-kun whose pure heart was toyed with and received the whisper by the demon wretchedly. Certainly, somehow various things felt wrong from him. His atmosphere was abnormal, like he had gone a full circle right to the perfect form.

The proof of that was how he wholly ignored Yoshiki's tsukkomi.

「Thinking back now, we already know about the summit. Yes, it's Nagumo. Our demon king who crawled up from the very bottom. The harem king!」

Shinji's Flame danced! Dancing like a butterfly, and stinging like a bee! If the demon king heard his words just now, he would surely get shot!

「Even after tasting despair, we can crawl back up. Into that paradise-like world.」

「I think it's better to not lump the despair that Nagumo tasted and your despair from being unable to get girlfriend together you know?」

「That's why, we were mistaken. It's no good if we are satisfied with just hitting on girl or picking up any kind of girl around there! We have to aim high! Aiming at the paradise! The world where we are surrounded by the ideal girls!」

——Yoshiki, I've decided

Shinji said with a resolved expression. Yoshiki's gaze were turned alternately to Shinji who was looking back to him and the whirling air behind Shinji. He pointed his finger and said 「Shinji! Look in front of you! Front!」 but……

「Someday, I'll hold a shotgun wedding with idol——」

Shinji vanished. He who received the whisper from demon and got unbound into strange direction was sent flying physically by demon and flew to the other side of a far away building.

The wind was telling him, of the raw sound of *gusha-*, and the pig-like scream of 「Pigiih」.

With the specs of returnee, it seemed his life wasn’t in danger, but there was no doubt that he got broken bones at least. Shinji-kun was cornered into a despairing situation really naturally.

The flame vanished and the demons and cultists attacked once more. For Yoshiki there was no problem to endure it using his sensitivity of the wind’s movement, but in the end, could he protect Shinji from the unseen devils……

For now, while defeating the enemies before him Yoshiki was,

「This might be it already for Shinji! Abyssss! Seriously hurryyyy!」

He called toward the lord desperately through the telepathy.

Also, twenty seconds after that, a clone appeared by using gravity magic to perform pseudo flight and safely rescued Shinji. Shinji harbored a new objective in his heart.

–

◇◆◇◆◇◆◇◆◇◆◇◆◇◆

–

「A, are you all listening? I don’t know what happened, but first let’s calm down and talk with each other. I am a consultant. Well, that’s the business I’m running but…… depending on the situation, I believe I also can become enough strength for your life planning too.」

There was an amazingly handsome man with intelligent look, sweating a lot like waterfall while pushing up his glasses repeatedly. Perhaps he got foreigner blood mixed in

him, because he had smooth brown hair and finely chiseled features despite being Japanese. He was a man around his early thirty.

Though in fact, he was already 45 years old.

「O, Otou-san. No matter how I look, I don’t think this is a situation that can be resolved somehow by talking you know?」

「Dear. Your legs are shaking like a newly born fawn you know? Don’t force yourself and back away.」

The one clinging on the waist of that handsome man while trembling with teary eyes was a super beautiful girl with her hair in ponytail. From her slightly young appearance, her age was about the age of a middle school student. She had long and slender limbs and thin waist, however her breast was brutal in contrast with her appearance.

Beside the trembling man and girl was a beautiful woman who was like a model, standing boldly while tapping a metal bat on her shoulder even though she was sweating coldly……long and soft black hair, droopy looking eyes, and yet she gave an impression like a gentle big sister, but the fighting spirit residing in her eyes and her familiarity in holding the metal bat displayed a terrific gap.

It was the very picture of a family of beautiful man and woman.

Ahead of their gaze, there were countless intruders banging on an unseen wall as though they were doing pantomime.

When they were enjoying happy family conversation, the window of the living room suddenly broke and several people came attacking.

The son who went into a trip begged his friend to set up “a barrier that isolated the space” for the sake of his family that he left behind. That barrier was protecting the family but……

——aAAAAAAAAAA

「Yaaah, I can hear it again! There is absolutely something here!」

Shadows that were running on the wall of the living room. And then numerous furniture that were suddenly sent flying.

It seemed the unseen existences also couldn’t breakthrough the barrier, however, for them who were just normal people, this situation was cornering their mind greatly.

The sight of unseen attack causing ripple to spread on the barrier many times was also really bad for their heart.

But, at that time the beautiful girl’s smartphone rang. She was taken aback and accepted the call, right at that moment,

「Mizuki-chan. This is Shizuku, are you all right over there?」

「ONEeEEEEEEEE-SAMAaAAAAAAA-!!」

A voice that was filled with sob and joy resounded. From the other side of the smart phone, a groaning voice 「Uh」 due to receiving damage in the eardrum could be heard.

「Err, calm down Mitsuki-chan. We understand the sitaution, and the artifact that Kouki left behind won’t be breached that easily.」

「Ye, yes, Onee-sama. But, the strangeness is inside our house……Onee-sama, can’t you come here?」

Someone who their daughter called with “Onee-sama”. The handsome man and beautiful woman showed a joyful look, knowing that there it could only be one person.

These people who knew well about Shizuku-oneesama was indeed, Kouki’s family. The people of Amanogawa family.

The father who worked in management consultancy, who looked intelligent at the outside but a chicken in the inside——Amanogawa Seiji. Then the mother who was a former yankee who once also climbed her way to the top, and now working as an editor in model magazine——Miya.

And then, Kouki’s little sister who even had fan club until the neighborhood middle school——Mitsuki.

Because she had known Shizuku since her childhood and could trust her more than anyone, and they also knew about her real strength, Mitsuki implored to Shizuku to come save them.

By no means she merely wanted to meet Shizuku. ‘If I use this situation, I’ll be able to hug Onee-sama tightly and sniff her all over!’ was something that she didn’t think at all.

Even if she was the originator of Soul Sisters, even if she actually loved Shizuku so much that she refused all the confessions that she received in the amount of more than ten per month from elementary school students until even middle-aged man, that she even clearly refused when scouted to enter entertainment industry when walking in the city because of a reason of 『My time together with Onee-sama will decrease』, that she even swore an oath that some day she would absolutely obliterate her sworn enemy “Nagumo-senpai” who actually shaved off her 『time together with Onee-sama』!

By no means she was calling her Onee-sama to come here for the sake of her own desire!

But……

「I'm sorry. My home is also attacked……well, I'm not worried about them at all though……anyway, I think the situation there will be settled before I can go there, so don't worry.」

「GODDAMN-!!」

The little sister-chan's yell that no one in her school had never heard. Without a doubt, she was inheriting the blood of her mother the former yankee and former boss. Kouki's kindness must be inherited from his father.

Kind, ephemeral, and beautiful like a moon. Her bearing was like a noble daughter who was naïve about the world. Mitsuki-chan who was famed as a decorous beauty even in the neighborhood persisted further. (TN: The 'tsuki' in the name Mitsuki used the kanji of moon.)

「Bu, buuut, Onee-samaa. I'm, really scared……I want Onee-sama to be at my sid――」

'I want you at my side!', Mitsuki-chan was about to let out an earnestly pleading voice that sounded really fragile which would stimulate one's desire to protect, but……

「DORASSHAAAAAAAA-!! Uncle-, auntie-, Mitsuki! You all safe!?」

A wolfman sent the cultists flying while appearing! Mitsuki-chan's earnest desire was also sent flying!

「Ryu, Ryutaro-kun! You came for us!?」

「Ou! It’s a relieve that the barrier is working properly. Well, It’s Nagumo’s artifact, it ain’t possible for it to be a defect!」

Ryutaro vigorously threw and threw away the cultists present……he was virtually breaking their limbs and threw them away. Ryutaro who was rushing here as reinforcement warped his mouth into a wicked look with his Mode Werewolf while answering.

The overwhelming battle unfolding outside the barrier caused Miya to be in admiration. Even so she asked worriedly.

「Ryu-chan, is your house all right?」

「Aa, whether it was the bunches with screw looses and even the so called demon there were all taken care off. There is also barrier there, so it’s all right! Even if something happen I can go back right away!」

The Amanogawa house and Sakagami house were at walking distance from each other that could be traveled by walking normally for three minutes. With his Mode Werewolf that was specialized for speed, he could go there in less than twenty seconds.

In addition, his guard dog Karashio and the neighbor old man Fuji were also there, so there was no worry if the opponent was human. The battle strength of Karashio whose sense of rivalry was blazing due to his Mode Werewolf and old man Fuji’s art of fire extinguisher were increasing in sharpness as the year passed.

Ryutaro intentionally rushed here to remove the anxiety of Seiji and his family as fast as possible. Seiji and Miya sighed in relieve while forming a smile……

「Oi, Ryu-nii. Meet me at the backyard later.」

「!?」

Mode Werewolf's eyes opened wide in surprise. Ryutaro had been acquainted with Mitsuki since she was born, so he knew really well of her true self. Him getting taken to the backyard by her wasn't just an occurrence of merely once or twice. She was extremely terrifying.

「N, no, it's a bit impossible. Look, it's that-, after this, there are other places that I gotta go to right a――」

「aAA?」

It was an evil face that Mtsuki-chan would never show in front of her beloved Onee-sama and the Onii-chan who she liked very much.

Ryu-nii couldn't win against Mitsuki since the past. He wanted to be spared from getting his fur shaved in the backyard again. And so, he punched a demon flying using his instinct while desperately thinking up a reason to withdraw……

「Suzu! She is stark naked right now! I've gotta go there right away!」

「!?」

Thought of shock and shame was broadcasted from the emergency telepathic channel that was in open state.

Most likely Ryutaro meant 'Suzu was attacked when she was defenseless while in a bath, I'm worried about her so I want to rush there quickly!' when he said that, but heard from the side, it also could be heard to sound like 'Before Suzu can

wear her clothes again I want to pay respect to her naked body no matter what!’.

As expected,

【Sakagami, you bastard just fall into hell together with the demon.】

【I agree completely with Atsushi. This is why someone with girlfriend is just…think about the situation right now.】

【Die, Sakagami.】

【Sakagami, Yuuka here. As expected I don’t think such thing is not suitable right now. Suzu’s shame is broadcasted really clearly here.】

【Suzu-chan! You’re your clotehs quickly! Put up the barrier! The big bad wolf is coming there!】

【Is it because of the Mode Werewolf? What Tsuji said is really right on the spot huh.】

Telepathy came from the comrades one after another.

And then,

【Ryu, Ryu-kun you pervert! What are you yelling in open communication like this! I don’t know you anymore!】

【Gofuh】

The werewolf fell on his knees. At the same time, a demon’s uppercut burst into action.

The werewolf danced in the sky. It was a truly beautiful parabolic arc.

After that, the werewolf who became the sandbag of the demons consulted with the lord who came rushing 「What should I do to put her back in good mood?」 with a serious face.

–

◇◆◇◆◇◆◇◆◇◆◇◆◇◆

–

Gatan-gatan-, inside a train that wasshaking rythmically.

Two female high school students were sitting side by side in the middle of the train’s carriage. One was looking down while pushing out her hand to the front. The other oen was folding her legs while putting both her hands behind her head.

While their surrounding was surrounded by countless passengers with bloodshot eyes.

「This is horror isn’t iit~」

「Mao, this isn’t the time to speak so carefree like that. What are we going to do now? I have aptitude for light element magic but, barrier isn’t my specialty you know?」

The one who as laughing ‘tahaha~’ while saying her impression with light tone that didn’t match the situation was Yoshino Mao. And then, the girl beside her who was putting up barrier while sweating coldly was Tsuji Ayako.

Mao’s tone and attitude were always unserious. She brushed up her short hair in respond to Ayako’s words while laughing ‘haha~’ that didn’t sound serious at all as expected.

「Now now, surely it will be fine. Look, I'm also strengthening the barrier using my bestowal magic.」

Mao's vocation was "Bestowal Mage". She possessed genius talent in magic of bestowal type that was a support magic. Even now she was strengthening the effect of lightl element middle class barrier magic "Holy Wall" that Ayako deployed using her light element bestowal magic "Enveloping Light".

On the other hand, Ayako's vocation was "Healing Master", so barrier art wasn't her specialty. She also could only use the lower version of "Sacred Severance" as magic to protect from all direction.

The phrase of demon and the horror situation just now.

After playing with Kentarou and Juugo, Ayako set out to go home, getting shaken inside train like this together with Mao, when suddenly the lighting inside the carriage was flickering eerily. Then all the passengers were staring on them when they noticed.

And then, while Ayako was bewildered 「Eh? Wha, what?」, a shriek she had never heard before that caused uneasiness resounded, and the passengers also attacked them.

Her immediate reaction that was trained in the other world let her deployed a barrier in time, but both Ayako and Mao were completely rearguard. They were different with a certain bugged Hannya who although she was a Healing Master, with her wholeheartedness (yandere) she could even use barrier type magic and binding type magic that weren't inferior even to those with vocation that was specialized for those magic, and on top of that she was even able to skillfully use the power (power) of god's apostle.

Because of that, even Ayako who possessed experience of fighting in war felt quite the strain on her mind in this situation right now……

And then the final blow came.

Don-, the barrier shook. Shrieks and the abusive language of the cultists reverberated. Blood was scattered from the fists of the cultists who were punching too much. The barrier became stickily marked with bloodstain. There were also cultists who were slapping with their palm, so countless red hand marks were pasted.

It was thoroughly a horror.

With teary eyes, Ayako averted her gaze with all her strength from a man on the other side of the barrier whose gaze suddenly almost met hers. She looked down so that her gaze wouldn’t meet anybody’s gaze.

「I, if something like this would happen, I would stay together with Kentarou-kun for a bit longer……」

「Hou, hee, “with Kentarou-kun” you say? So Nagayama-kun is unneeded?」

「That’s not what I mean!」

Mao laughed teasingly. When Ryutaro was starting going out with Suzu, Nomura Kentarou was wholeheartedly resolved ‘I cannot stay like this!’, and finally he told Ayako who was the person on his mind since the time in Tortus 「Ho, how about we call each other by our first name!?」.

It didn’t need to be said what kind of evaluation the comrades gave when he didn’t confess.

Although, at present Ayako was already satisfied with just that. In that point, perhaps it should be said that they were similar people……

But, at that time a whispering voice that froze their spine resounded at the back of Ayako and Mao’s mind.

「Tsu――this is」

「Is this that demon’s whisper thingy?」

It wasn’t the whisper of sweet temptation. It was as though its objective was to turn people mad, a whisper that simply fan the uneasiness and anxiety. A voice that disturbed the mind.

For a moment the barrier shook unsteadily. Perhaps that was the aim, because a violent roar thundered while at the same time an impact shook the carriage where it felt like the train might go off the rail.

An unpleasant sound resounded in the shaking barrier. *Crack-, crack-*. It was the sound of fracturing.

「Fuwah!? Thi, this is bad-」

「Wawah, strengthening, strengthening!」

The two were panicked, but the demon’s whisper that disturbed the mind made their concentration unfocused. Mao was making a twitching smile saying 「Why did I leave behind the artifact today of all day huhh」 while he immediately began to write magic circle for offense on her hand.

Although she had no aptitude for it, she would at least be able to use basic level attack magic if an improvised magic

circle was prepared. Originally, Mao’s artifact——a coin shaped pendant——also had magic circle for offense carved, so she didn’t always have magic circle of attack magic ready other than that. Now she was regretting it.

「I wonder if we became too much of a peace idiot.」

「Don’t speak easygoingly, reinforce the barierrrr~! It’s going to get broken!」

The crack on the barrier became even bigger and the two went pale thinking 「Ah, this won’t hold for even five minutes」, it was at that moment.

Gashan-, the window glass of the carriage was smashed apart. At the same time a black silhouette flew in.

The man who smashed through the window of a running train splendidly took a safe landing and performed a turn on the spot! The man pushed up his sunglass sharply, and then took a pose like a warrior who would give punishment in the name of the moon!

「Tonight is a moonless night. That is my domain. For laying your hand on the friends of this abyss lord, at best it——」

「Endou-kun! We’ve been waiting! We are saveeed~!」

「Oh maaan, for a second there I was thinking what would happen. Endou-kun, take care of the rest~」

Tsuji Ayako, Yoshino Mao. Kousuke was once in the same party with them. For the two of them, no matter what Endo was still Endo.

The abyss lord got a bit loss for words 「Ri, right」 while making a turn once more to pull himself back together!

□Here I come-, bunch of the dead! Mine black flame of the abyss, taste it with that bo——□□——”Enveloping Light”! Endo-kun, leave the support to us ‘kay~□

The lord who loved things like darkness or abyss or blackness shined dazzlingly bright from the support of his reliable comrades.

The lord said □Ri, right. My thanks□ while sharply pushing up his sunglass *Kui-!* to pull himself back together. He created even more clones while,

□Now, the abyss’s——□

□Ah, Endo-kun. About our home——□

□Trampling down is starting!□

The lord didn’t let the girl spoke till finish and began battle.

Of course, the clones of the lord were using pseudo flight to also head to Tsuji family house, Yoshino family house, and also to the houses of his comrades who were being away from their home, so there wasn’t any problem.

In addition, in each house of the classmates, although it wasn’t as good as in Amanogawa family house, the defensive measure of South Cloud Security——it was a mysterious security firm that rapidly expanded in business recently in Tortus. The crime prevention goods were selling like crazy not just to the royalty, noble, or merchant, but even to the average household——was set up, so the people there wouldn’t get harmed so easily.

And so, there was no need to deliberately say □It’s fine□ and explained. The lord was cutting off Mao’s words wasn’t the result of his indignation, that he wouldn’t endure getting his

fantastic introduction and speech hindered even more than this by her, not at all.

If he said that wasn’t it then that wasn’t it.

「Kukuku-. In front of the abyss that is spreading endlessly, even if you are a demon――」

「Ah, the enchantment magic almost run out……. Endou-kun, I’ll send the next one now~. If you have any request for support magic then tell me okay!」

「……」

The lord flashed shinily *pika~* once more. There wasn’t any darkness anymore at all. Right now the lord was really shining in a different meaning.

「Later let’s show this to Kentaro-kun and others.」

Ayako who had recovered her calm lifted up her smartphone. A memory that might deal a lethal damage to *Kousuke* was taken.

The former party members with whom they once entrusted each other’s life with seemed to be an opponent that was hard to deal with in various senses, whether it was for Kousuke, or for the lord.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

As I thought I couldn’t write to the finish and split the chapter.

But, I have also written『The Respective Battle　Bottom』to a certain degree, so although I cannot make a firm promise, I’m thinking to post one more chapter at tomorrow afternoon, or at 6 o’clock like usual.

–

※The cover for volume 8 that will be on sale at 25 this month is published.

Volume 8 will be the arc of capturing teh sea of trees' great dungeon. The right image is the special version that has Drama CD accompaniment. The drama CD this time has Kaori participating, there is also a dialogue of Yue and Kaori with a mood like in the after story.

At any rate, as always, TakayaKi-sensei's illustration is godly!

Also, various side stories will also be available as special perk in each bookstore, so I will report it to you readers as soon as it's decided.

In the published version, other than correction and revision to the content, there will also be extra story like usual, so I will be very happy if you reader can pick it up.

My best regards.

At the same time, manga version volume 3 and spin-off comic "Nichijou Volume 1" will also be launched.

They are the work that RoGa-sensei and Mori Misaki-sensei are handling.

I think that the end product is really amazing, so if it please you, please pick them up by all means!

My apologize for being so long winded.

Well then, please take care of Arifureta from here on too.

Arifureta Chapter 312

Arifureta After III　Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2　The Respective Battle　Bottom

–

This is consecutive update after Saturday.

A chapter before, 「The Respective Battle　Middle」 was posted so,

For those who haven’t read it, please start from there.

–

Around the same time when the returnees were attacked everywhere, in the Nagumo family house……

All the attackers were groveling around the house.

With just one word, the demon king’s first wife,

——Grovel

Ordered them to do so.

It was Yue-sama’s “Divine Statement”.

Whether they were demon or cultist, it was irrelevant. The sense of invincibility was absurd.

In a manner of speaking, Nagumo family house was the demon king castle, so although in a glance it looked like a single house that was somewhat splendid in a residential area, the inside was a completely different thing.

A type of defensive barrier that automatically detected every kind of attack as well as infiltration was prepared in five, six layers with varying form. In case those layers were penetrated, an interception system that was also automatic would attack with heavy weapons, magic, and swarms of grim reapers.

Even if someone was lucky and managed to step inside the house, the moment they stepped in, a teleportation device would activate and the intruder would be forcefully moved to an underground prison that doubled as a battle field that was set up deep inside mountain. (With setting change it was possible to send only the mind to a dungeon of game world)

In case it was a long range attack——for example, even if a nuclear missile was fired, it would surely become a nightmarish sight where the surrounding became empty lot while only Nagumo family house would still stand unharmed.

It was a house that was truly should be called as an impregnable fortress.

Who in the world the attackers could possibly be? What kind of existence the unseen enemy that was wafting off strange aura was?

Yue asked those things from Kousuke through telepathy, but just slightly before that,

□Excuse me for coming so late at nightttttttt-□

Suddenly, the space in the living room distorted. From the opened “gate”, Aiko rolled *roll roll* out. She also didn’t forget to give greeting as befitting a full member of society.

Aiko went along the momentum of her rolling and stopped into a beautiful kowtow, then she said 「eih」while twisting the “Gate Key” that Hajime specially gifted to her which could directly connect to Nagumo family house. After that, the arm of the cultist who was reaching out his hand from the “gate” exactly at that timing was……

Plop It fell on the living room.

Because the gate closed, the arm that straddled through space was bisected it seemed.

It appeared, Aiko was going to a convenience store. Her hand was holding the bag of a certain convenience store and a box of Yukimi Da○fuku was peeking out from it. She was attacked while going home and panickedly escaped to Nagumo house. Only the Yukimi Da○fuku that she wouldn’t let go no matter what. (TN: Seems like it’s a brand of manju snack or something in Japan.)

「Yue-oneechan. Someone’s hand is……」

「……Nn. There is no such thing.」

Snap A single finger snap resounded. The “hand” was swallowed by blue flame, together with the slowly oozing out blood. it vanished in the blink of eye without even leaving behind ash. Annihilation by flame for filth for the sake of Myuu’s cultivation of aesthetic sensibility.

「I’m sorry to visit suddenly. For some reason people who give off bad feeling attacked me.」

「Ai-chan-sensei, it’s gret that you are safe. Just now we were also attacked. There are quite a lot of people outside.」

「Eh? There are that many suicidal people out there?」

Aiko’s statement flew out so naturally in respond to Shizuku’s words, but it spoke volumes about her opinion toward Nagumo family house.

Although, it seemed there was no time to sort out the situation with each other leisurely.

Right after that, the emergency telepathies from the classmates were broadcasted to the whole group, and at the same time, the barrier devices that were set up in Shuu’s company, Sumire’s workplace, Shirasaki family house, and then Hatayama family house raised the alarmed that notified their activation.

And then,

「Everyone, it is I.」

The voice of the abyss lord too.

In this kind of emergency, what do you mean “It is I”, Yue-sama thought with vein pulsating on her forehead.

「……Endo. Explain without screwing around.」

It seemed the voice of extreme coldness returned the lord back to Kousuke. Yue listened to the starting explanation while running her gaze around. After doing that, the wive~s nodded in the same beat.

「……Tio, take care of the house. You can also open the underground as evacuation place.」

「Umu, understood. I wouldst protect Myuu and Remia. Go forth, Yue.」

「……Nn.」

Yue vanished silently.

Almost at the same time,

「I will return soon with Otou-san and others!」

「I'll also go check on the disciples, so I'll be a bit late.」

「Just in case, I'll borrow several Grim-chan okay?」

Saying that, Kaori, Shizuku, and Aiko, the three also teleported to their own house using their "Gate Key".

By the way, before Aiko teleported, she took several white and red balls that were placed in the living room's shelves and then returned to her own house. What was inside the balls wasn't monster, but mechanical god of death (Grim Reaper).

The balls were "Treasure Warehouse" for storing the Grim Reapers (Grimball). It wasn't Po○ball by any means. Papa wasn't creating it to be similar because of a certain daughter's begging, not at all.

Tio was listening to Kousuke's explanation that was resounding inside the brain while groaning 「Fu~mu」, her hand was pressing her smartphone *pi-pi-* during that time.

「……It dost not connect as expected.」

「You mean Hajime-san and Shia-san?」

Remia who was going ‘my my ufufu’ even at this kind of time was asking while starting the preparation to for the people who would come here to evacuate.

honorable stepmother
「Umu. The barriers protecting Hahaue-dono and
honorable stepfather
Chichiue-dono were activated. Naturally, the notification shouldst hath reach Goshujin-sama too but……」

「Umyu……where are papa and Shia-oneechan at nano?」

「Who knows. The modified phone of Goshujin-sama doth not connect. Perhaps the notification doth not reach, or perhaps they art in a place or a situation where even though the notification reach, they cannot contact back……. It doth not look like they art merely enjoying their vacation leisurely.」

Seeing Tio folding her arms in contemplation, Remia’s expression clouded slightly.

「Do you mean to say that Hajime-san and Shia-chan are also falling into some kind of dangerous situation?」

「Might be so. Although, it’s also not a matter that is so worrying. In all probability, they art only in a situaiton where the phone’s signal doth not reach. It’s not possible that they art unable to move or contact back even though the notification reached them. Goshujin-sama hath the Crystal Key afer all.」

No matter where they could possibly be, if Hajime grasped the situation here, then no matter what kind of obstacle stood on his way, Hajime could ignore it and instantly rushed here. That means, in the first place he didn’t notice the necessary to rush here itself.

That in itself was a really abnormal situation for Hajime though……

「There is no problem nano! It’s the long-awaited trip where Shia-oneechan was that happy nano! Making them go back home just because of this degree of trouble is no good-!」

The beloved daughter of the demon king declared that they had no need for papa’s help or anything it seemed. Both her small hands made clenched fists, and she puffed her chest, speaking passionately with a rough breathing 「Huff」. She even started shadow boxing with sharpness in her movement, saying 「Bring it on! If they want a fight, then come at us anytime, anyone, from anywhere-, nano!」.

Seeing the figure of such Myuu, Tio and Remia looked at each other’s face, and a beat later.

「It’s just as Myuu said. If it’s Goshujin-sama, he must hath gotten flown away to other world somewhere and flirted around with Shia anyway.」

「Ufufu, that’s right isn’t it? If the two of them are together, then there won’t be anything scary at all. Let’s take care of this properly while they are away.」

Saying that, they chuckled at each other.

–

◇◆◇◆◇◆◇◆◇◆◇◆◇◆◇◆

–

Right after Aiko teleported to the backyard of her parents’ house, she heard the voice of a person she knew well resounding.

「Yo, you guys! Just what in the world! Do you understand what you are all doing!? This is a crime!」

The voice of a young man was saying the natural thing to people who were most likely the cultist attackers.

「Ee? Taichi-kun? So you are visiting the house……」

Aiko was flustered and a bit troubled that the young man who was her childhood friend, Furukaway Taichi was in her parents' home. The presence of Taichi here itself wasn't something strange seeing how their families knew each other but……

He didn't know. About the power of Aiko and her students. The returnees publicly said to the society that they went to another world, so he also knew about that, but fundamentally he didn't know what the returnees could do just because of that.

For Aiko, although their families were close with each other, if possible he didn't want anyone other than her family to know about the matter of magic and the like.

When Aiko entered from the back entrance, she saw the figures of her parents, grandparents, and Taichi huddling together in the living room. At the same time, she could also see countless silhouettes carrying things like hoe or hammer for pounding mochi from the veranda's window.

Normally the window would break with one attack, but this was the parents' home of Aiko who was one of the wive~s. There was no way barrier that was installed here could be affected by something of that degree. Naturally, the owners of the disgusting voice resounding from around the house were also firmly prevented from infiltrating.

Although, the very voice itself couldn’t be blocked, so everyone there was scared or holding their head because their consciousness was interfered with.

「Okaa-san, Otou-san! Also Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan too! Are you all okay!?」

「Aiko! Since when you are……ah, it’s by that isn’t it?」

「Oo, Aiko! So you came back! Just in the world is going on?」

Aiko’s mother——Akiko guessed how Aiko returned home, and her distorted expression relaxed in relieve. Her father——Tetsuo also showed a relieved expression while asked with a voice that was filled with bewilderment. The grandfather——Shirou and the grandmother——Chizu also looked the same.

「A, Aiko!? Why are you here!? Or rather since when!?」

It was Taichi whose confusion was the deepest. The cultists hitting the window and the figure of his childhood friend suddenly entering inside the living room when she shouldn’t be here caused him to become slightly panicked.

Aiko was worried 「U~m, e~rr」 of how to explain, but seeing Akiko and others shaking from the demons’ scream, the string of her patience that was in the verge of breaking snapped.

「Anyway! Champion! I choose you!」

Aiko threw the Po○eball——no, the Grimball.

It made *bowan-* sound and let out white smoke. What flew out from there was——a kangaroo.

Everyone, especially Taichi let out their voice 「Eh……」 while looking dumbfounded. During that time the kangaroo type Grim Reaper that was called Champion looked back over its shoulder and glared at Taichi……

「Kyuiih!!」

「GOHOoOOOH!?」

In contrast with its cute voice, it sent a body blow that would make even a heavyweight boxer cried to Taichi's solar plexus. It was a splendid punch that put the twist of the waist behind it. Its fighting pose was beautiful.

「So, sorry Taichi-kun. There is no time to explain so……I'll properly deal you're your memory later!」

「Aiko……you……」

Seeing Taichi's eyes rolled up while he was holding his stomach with his butt sticking up caused Akiko to turn a gaze toward Aiko that looked as though she had witnessed something terrifying.

Even though there was a crowd of attackers right outside, her daughter's first attack was directed to the youth who was her childhood friend. Furthermore, she did that even though she knew that Taichi was still holding lingering feeling of love toward her.

What mercilessness……

The really complicated gaze from her family caused Aiko's gaze to swim around restlessly. But, her discomposure was only so and so, the explanation from Kousuke that was resounding in her head through telepathy was over then. Knowing the true identity of the enemy, Aiko also

understood the method to deal with them. Her expression turned serious right away and she began chanting.

「Healthily~, comfortably~, intensely grow, and strike the enemy! ――”Pseudo Soul War Tree”!!」

Along with a chanting that felt like familiar from somewhere, the garden of Hatayama family undulated.

Right after that, the mandarin orange tree that was at the garden stretched out its branches largely and then mowed down. The branches that had thickness around as big as human’s arm became like a whip. The cultists sticking on the veranda’s window had their body bent together and got sent flying.

Furthermore, at the same time when their body struck the ground, the weed lengthened and entangled them, turning into restriction tool of nature.

Aiko whose vocation was “Farming Master” possessed immense talent for ability and magic that was related with soil and plants. It was to the degree that it was possible for her to change the food production output of the world by herself.

Normally she used her power to cultivate and improve farming, but when the age of god magic called soul magic was added here, it became like this.

All living plants became Aiko’s ally.

Aiko who confirmed that the enemies in front of the window were gone then leaped outside right away.

「Champion! “Beat them up without killing”!」

「Kyuuih!!」

Champion who received order rushed toward the cultists with pee-a-boo guard style. With amazing footwork and strike, it literally beat up the cultists short of killing them.

Its appearance was a kangaroo-san with brutal eyes. Of course, its inside was metallic because it was a Grim Reaper. Every single one of its punches was the same like a strike of a mass of iron. Just a jab from it caused vivid pulverized sound to come from the body of the cultists.

Although, a machine was a machine. Its attack was completely physical in nature. It didn't have effective attack against the demons.

In addition, the existence detection from Aiko's soul magic told her that a great amount of demons were flying around.

――And so, Aiko activated the strongest defense that she installed in collaboration with Hajime.

She stretched up her hands with all her might in a banzai pose while standing on her tiptoes and,

「Vigorously~, comfortably~, increase a lot, fill with greenery~――"Sea of Trees Manifestation"!」

At the next moment, Hatayama house was swallowed by a sea of trees.

Large trees were growing up one after another from the ground around the house. It looked like the super small version of Haltina Sea of Trees. There was even pure white heavy fog generated thoroughly.

If there was anything different, unlike Haltina Sea of Trees, all the trees were containing pseudo soul and became something like treant monster.

It was an underworld that was suddenly created.

It seemed the demons were also shocked by it, a voice that sounded somewhat confused resounded.

Even so,

——GIIIIIIIH

They shrieked while charging into the sea of trees.

They were hit by the branches of the Treant imitations, or carved by leaf blades, or smashed by fruit cannons, or stabbed by the roots thrusting out like spear from the ground. Not a single one could reach Hatayama house.

Thus, it was far nastier to the demons than just a barrier. It was an absolute fortress of nature that really should be called as their natural enemy.

「The, the house, it become a demonic haunt……」

「Aiko……we are happy you come to save us but, still. This, will it return back to normal?」

「How we will tell the neighbors……」

Tetsuo lost strength from his waist, Shirou had a distant look, while Chizu was holding her head.

Indeed, they were thankful to their daughter, or granddaughter that she was solving this terrifying situation but…….

From the view point of the people of Hatayama family who were only ordinary civilian and mere farmer family, a method of creating sea of trees itself to repel the enemy back was truly a “soul-shattering” situation.

「Getting my Okaa-san and others involved like this! It’s totally unforgivable! Yes, I absolutely, won’t forgive you al~~~~l!!」

Should this be called a growth, or should it be called “infected”?

Aiko swung up her fist together with Champion who was going ‘Ugaa!’. The people of Hatayama family looked at each other’s face seeing that and made a twitching smile to each other. While deciding that next time they would call Hajime-kun to a special family meeting.

–

◇◆◇◆◇◆◇◆◇◆◇◆◇◆◇◆

–

Aiko was manifesting a sea of trees in her parents’ house. Shizuku was making a dry laugh seeing the cultists piling up heaps of bodies all around in her house, and how her family & all the disciples who for some reason were all present trying to subdue unseen enemy happily. Kaori was fighting the enemies while blushing due to her father who was making a ruckus 「My daughter is too angelic!」 when she was descending in angel mode.

Around that time Yue was,

「……Okaa-sama, are you safe?」

「Yue-chan! I’m glaaad, I’m relieved now. Although, there wasn’t anything particularly dangerous, I don’t really get what it is but the shadow thingy can be sucked with this, so I was just thinking that perhaps I should go to counterattack with this when you came.」

Coming to the place where Sumire was doing her manga work.

Yue rushed here while feeling relatively panicked inside her heart, worrying if in the worst case anything happened to the mother-in-law who she respected, but Sumire herself was giving her a thumb up with a vacuum cleaner in one hand.

Certainly, Sumire’s workplace was also half turned into fortress similarly like Nagumo house, so the attackers couldn’t even invaded inside in the first place. Furthermore she also had an attack method――that was Hajime’s quality artifact, the vacuum cleaner――”Sniper Mark VII” from her absolute safe area, so there was no problem at all.

Although, the guts of Sumire who somehow sucked in the demons even while turning slightly pale from the sudden incident was quite something.

By the way, because the artifact vacuum cleaner the “Sniper series” was improved until Mark VII, not only it became able to choose what target to suck, it could even suck in things like soul or gravity. In addition, it also could do something like sucking in air and compressed it, then fired it out like an air cannon.

Nagumo family’s vacuum cleaner couldn’t be satisfied anymore with just the absorption power that was eternally unchanging. How far would it go……

「Eerr, Yue-chan. Is this some kind of incident again?」

「It looks like there is something scary though……」

Sumire’s assistants, Hagiwara Machiko and Wakai Tsukasa were asking a little bit uneasily. The other assistants were also peeking outside with slightly disturbed look.

The assistants had known Hajime for long, and they were told about the returnees’ situation completely and on top of that they were still continuing to be assistants. Because of that it seemed they weren’t panicked, rather it was really something that they were merely scared for a bit in this situation.

Although, not only the Okaa-sama she respected was attacked, even her important acquaintances also got scared……

Yue-sama’s blank stare was staring even more fixedly than usual. The coldness contained in her eyes was rapidly getting stronger.

「……Nn, I will talk about the circumstances later but there is no problem. For now, let’s evacuate to our home.」

She also had to go to the place of Otou-sama, that was why Yue was giving explanation while making Sumire and others to grab on her.

「As expected you also need to go there huh. Yue-chan, please take care of that person okay?」

「……Nn. I will return right away. And then, I’ll kill the enemy.」

「Ah, yes.」

Sumire nodded up and down repeatedly seeing the cold side of the vampire princess that normally she wouldn’t show out.

Instantly, the place switched right away. Sumire and also the assistants were returned into the living room of Nagumo house altogether.

In a flash Yue immediately teleported to Shuu’s company.

「……-, Otou-sama! Are you alright!?」

「Oh, Yue-chan! So you come to save us!」

Shuu was eating potato chips in his office together with several employers. Yue rushed toward him in panic.

There was a bandage wrapped on Shuu’s forehead. Blood was slightly oozing from there.

「……Otou-sama, your injury.」

「Oh maan, I got attacked when going to the nearby convenience store for a bit of break time. At that time I was too panicked and stumbled. I immediately escaped back to the company, and Hajime’s protection also functioned properly so nothing direct hit me. That’s why you don’t need to look that worried you know?」

「……」

Yue’s expression completely vanished. It wasn’t a worried expression. Rather, it was a terrifyingly blank expression that would make anyone looking to hallucinate a block of ice sliding through their spine.

Shuu twitched. Even the company employees who worshipped Yue and would usually warmly welcomed her like 「It’s Yue-chan! Yue-chan came!」「Our healing has descendeeed!」「Someone, prepare tea and snack right away!」「Now now-, Yue-chan, please sit here where all of us can see you」, were all shaking without saying anything.

Yue put healing magic on Shuu and then looked outside the building. There the cultists were yelling selfish lines even now while hurling abuse to Shuu and others. The demons flying around were making unpleasant whispers and shrieks.

「O, oi, Yue-chan? Are you okay? Somehow, your face is so scary that I slightly cannot look at you directly you know?」

「……Nn. There is no problem.」

It was a voice of absolute zero. No matter how anyone looked, she got a problem.

When Yue ran her gaze at the employees she were acquainted with asking if there was anyone else injured,

「W, we’re all right here, Yue-chan.」

「O, ou. Everyone is okay, so calm down a bit. Okay?」

「Thi, this is bad. What a gaze. I’m envious of Hajime-kun from the bottom of my heart.」

「Yue-chan, is it okay, is it okay if you step on me just for a bit? While looking down on me with those eyes——ah, president-, hurts!? I’m sorry!」

「Rather, president. You are really loved by your daughter in law huh.」

The company employees averted their gaze quickly even while confirming their safety or expressing their desire.

The report from the lord was over at that timing. Yue sent the telepathy saying 「——In five minutes I'll bring them down」, and then she muttered with the pupil of her eyes contracting.

「……Everyone, I'm sorry to involve all of you into this. I will kill the enemies until not even a shred of their existence remain behind, so please forgive me.」

□□□□□……*Please, don't mind us*□□□□□

The wife of the company president's son who sometimes would come bringing supply or doing some kind of chores, not only for her family but often also for them the employees. The girl's existence had become like an idol of the company——that was the impression they had toward Yue. Seeing her dark side right now caused all the employees to talk with halting language.

The senior employees and the management staff of the company who were friend with Shuu since a long time ago and also known Hajime since he was little were also told about Hajime's circumstance and his strength, but naturally not all the employees were told about it. But, fortunately the members who were remaining in the company tonight in order to work all night were only the senior employees.

Depending on the situation, she thought that it might be necessary to manipulate the memory of some or explained the situation once more, but with this it saved time.

「……Otou-sama. I already sent Okaa-sama back home. The other family members are also safe. From here I'm thinking to have everyone evacuate to the home. The detailed

explanation will be after I massacre the enemies, is that okay?」

「O, ou, it's fine? Ah, no, about the massacre, look, yeah……」

「……It's fine. I'll leave the humans half dead. Even if they actually died, perhaps Kaori might be able to revive them. ……Though in my opinion, I think there isn't any need to leave even the ash of some bunches who harmed Otou-sama.」

「Yue-chan. If possible, can you leave at least the ash, or rather their original form behind?」

「……Nn. This is Japan after all.」

'If this isn't Japan, you will turn them into ash……? Are you trying to protect Hajime's stance?' The cheeks of Shuu who was seeing such Yue were twitching slightly even though she was protecting him.

He was really happy as her father-in-law to see her treasuring him, he felt really warm inside, but……

When he looked at the eyes of his daughter in law, where her pupils were contracting so much it looked like there was just a single color in her eyes,

(My son. You have become a man with really huge caliber huh.)

Love was heavy. Even the father-in-law felt that when he only felt a fragment of it. Thinking of his son who was receiving that love whole, indeed, his son had really grown in a big way. Perhaps. Shuu comprehended that for real now.

「……I’ll go to the rooftop for a bit. I’ll return right away, so please stay here.」

「Ah, okay. Just in case, be careful, Yue-chan.」

「……Nn-」

Yue sent a firm thumb up with eyes that were still lightless and then she vanished silently.

Somehow a relieved atmosphere flowed.

「President. The saying that a beauty is scary is true isn’t it?」

‘Also a beauty mustn’t be provoked’, all the employees nodded to each other in agreement.

Shuu was having a somewhat distant look while,

「My son, perhaps he can only get attracted to girl with strong peculiarity.」

Shuu who was saying that also obtained a wife with peculiarity that was too strong though, and the hybrid resulted into his son……

It often happened, that the one who didn’t understand themselves the most was their own self.

–

–

–

Right after Yue teleported to the rooftop, the demons shrieked and attacked her.

As though to pass through them, Yue flew up to the sky. The inversed gravity invited Yue to the sky far above with the speed of freefall.

At the altitude that was near the cloud, Yue activated the gravity magic “Kalpa of Destruction” while her golden hair was fluttering gently. The demons who were hot on her heels were knocked down to the ground by wide range gravity field.

Without even giving a glance to that, Yue put her hands together in front of her chest as though to pray.

The cloud flowed. The full moon’s face peeked out from the cloud’s gap.

With the large moon as the zenith, Yue had the background of the moonlight’s halo behind her. She closed her eyes and floated lightly. Her figure that was clad in tranquility possessed indescribable sublimity.

Below, the demons who were desperately trying to rise to the sky were struggling and shrieking. And then, there was the light of the city, of the activity below.

Golden ripple spread.

With Yue at the center, a glittering wave rushed through the whole city.

Blue light came into being inside her joined hands.

The golden ripple was gradually changing into azure ripple. Ripples ran through the city time and time again.

The demons stopped moving in bewilderment. “Something” that was penetrating their soul wasn’t dealing any harm to

them.

But, for some reason, even though they had the body of demon, when they noticed they were shaking. Their instinct was ringing out the alarm bell loudly, pleading to them to run away right now.

In the sky, an azure light that was far clearer than even the moonlight was shining.

「——*Found it*.」

Perhaps because of an extreme degree of concentration, Yue's words sounded halting.

Right after that,

Yue slightly opened her closed eyes and muttered.

「——"Selection"」

At that instant, a conspicuously stronger ripple rushed out. At the same time, the demons, and then the consciousness of the foreign world interfering to the cultists, and the main body that was granting them power that crossed over the gap of worlds……

They felt it without even any reason.

That they were caught.

「——"Flame of Divine Punishment"」

Inside Yue's opened palm, a small blue star was floating quietly. The next moment, it spread to the city like an aurora pouring down from the sky.

It was a divine flame that penetrated through all kind of obstacles and destroyed only the selected soul, or everything else other than the selected soul. Only those who were allowed by Yue would survive. Those who were ascertained as enemy would disappear.

The demons that were touched by the blue flame of god raised the scream of death agony one after another and vanished.

The cultists also collapsed and lost consciousness from the impact when their mind’s connection to the demons was burned forcefully.

And then, through the small ponds and mirrors inside the city, the flame of Yue god arrived until the other world……

Soundless scream thundered——that was how it felt.

What was transmitted at the end was fierce pain and uneasiness.

The next instant, there was a sensation of the link of the worlds being intentionally severed.

「……Chih. It ran away. How cheeky for a mere filth.」

The divine Yue-sama who exercised azure flame while wrapped in moonlight. She cursed with a click of her tongue like a demon king. It seemed she was really couldn’t stomach that her relative was attacked.

Although,

「O? Oo! As expected from Yue-san! To think you will make a clean sweep through the whole city!」

「Yue-san, thank you! I'm saveeed」

「The next……hm, no more come out huh. So it's over.」

「Medic-! Medic-! Shinji's state is too atrocious to even look aaat! Quickly come help hiiim! I cannot use healing magic here!」

「Ryu, Ryu-kun, you really came!? Are you idiot!? I already wear clothes from a long time ago!」

Voices that were filled with happiness resounded one after another. Hearing that, Yue's mood was also slightly improved. Though Suzu's mood was falling one way downward.

「……Nn, it's good that everyone is safe. I struck the foundation, but perhaps it escaped. There might an attack again, so everyone can come with your family to our house. Also, Kaori, the rest, take care.」

「Your instruction to me sound crude for some reason…… well, fine though.」

The underground of Nagumo house was expanded by space magic. There was a space that could house a large number of people and it boasted amenity that was equal to hotel. Such thing was a common knowledge among the returnees.

There were calls through telepathy telling that they would head there after this. During that, a silver light rose to the sky from a corner of the city. The human silhouette was clad with beautiful light in the sky and a large pair of wings stretched out widely.

A beat later, silver light shined radiantly in the night sky and rained down to the city like a shower. Kaori was using

regeneration magic to restore the whole city.

The figure clad in silver light with spread out wings was truly that of the god’s apostle. Kaori too also looked truly divine.

But, there a strange voice came from Kaori herself……

「Say, Yue. There are several people who cannot be done anything about with just regeneration magic though. They are obviously dead though!」

It seemed Yue-sama made a mistake with her control when burning with her flame. Several people were totally killed.

Yue nodded once 「Fumu」 and,

「……I believe that it’s those people who are bad for dying just from divine punishment.」

「People normally die when receiving divine punishment isn’t it!? Or rather, what’s with that tone like it’s a completely unrelated matter with you!?」

「……I think that it will be great if all the cultists won’t be discouraged even from this and work hard to be able to live.」

「Normally if people are killed, they won’t be able to live no matter how hard they worked! They can be resurrected but! Yes they can be resurrected but! At the very least that’s not a speech that the person who killed them can say isn’t it!? Furthermore it sound monotone! At the very least put some emotion to it!」

‘I killed you for a bit but, well work hard to live.’ Certainly, those were incomprehensible words that sounded psycho.

Sublime pillars of light flashed here and there around the city. Surely Kaori was resurrecting the dead people using soul magic jointly with regeneration magic.

「……You are making it sound like I'm a psycho. Rude. Even though I'm also thinking to help so they can live in even better way.」

「Eh?」

Yue also activated her soul magic. She interfered with the consciousness of the cultists and emphasized their desire to go home. In any case she gave suggestion to them to go home with their own strength while for the time being she applied magic of 「The memory around the last two years, vanish and bego~ne!」.

With this, they would be driven by unexplainable obsession to return home, worked hard to fill up the gap of the blank two years, and lived their life somehow or other. Perhaps.

「Wha, what irresponsibleness……」

「……They prioritized their own desire even if they have to sacrifice us. Then, doing the same back to them is also proper. No matter what kind of circumstance they have, no matter what kind of feeling they are harboring, that's not our business. It's already good that they aren't erased from this world correct? Either way――there won't be next time.」

「u, Yue, you are seriously angry. Well, me too though.」

A voice that sounded like the speaker was smiling wryly came from the telepathy. It seemed that inside her heart Kaori was also feeling quiet angry with the attack this time. The feeling that she didn't want to turn the town where her

family was living at into a sea of blood barely allowed the cultists to keep their life.

Yue shrugged her shoulders and sent her consciousness toward the lord.

「……Endou. It will be troubling to keep being at the receiving side. Where and how we should strike at?」

Yue called to the lord with telepathy.

But, there was no reply.

‘Nn?’ Yue was dubious and sent telepathy once more.

Then, she could hear a rough sound that was like a noise, as though the lord’s thought was in chaos……

「……I want to die.」

A dead voice came back. With it there was also a weeping voice.

It seemed the main body had dispelled the Limit Break state. The clone bodies of the lord that were flooding the city now had already disappeared, leaving only the single clone body beside Emily.

That clone at present was crumbling down on all four in front of Emily. He was holding his head while continuing to shake enduring his shame.

Emily-chan was desperately saying 「I, it’s all right, Kousuke! You were cool……really!」, she was desperately consoling him while she was really at loss for words.

And then, the main body in Britain inside the room where there was nobody else except the fainted Professor Littman,

Kousuke silently removed the pose he was making and slowly took off his sunglasses with trembling hand, and then walked to the corner of the room.

He sat down hugging his knees facing the wall, and locked himself inside the shell of his heart.

–

◇◆◇◆◇◆◇◆◇◆◇◆◇

–

A few hours after they endured the attack.

Kousuke whose eyes were still empty came until in front of Britain’s security bureau. A large travelling bag was hanging on his shoulder. The content was Professor Littman who was tied up, stuffed inside a bit forcefully.

After that, Kousuke’s heart somehow recovered to a degree where he could have conversation. And then following what Yue said, they talked about making a strike toward the ringleader of the attack——that demon that was in the other world from here.
hell

The conclusion was that it would be better to use the “mirror gate” in Vatican to embarked there as expected.

Although, the opponent was an existence that could send interference across world, furhtermore it succeeded in retreating when the opponent was Yue. It was concerning how the world there would gnaw on flesh body just by being there, and on top there was also a concern that after crossing to the world there, the enemy might go here instead and attacked the family that they left behind in this world.

There were too many uncertain factors, and they couldn’t simply leave the people that they really should protect.

And so, Kousuke would infiltrate Vatican once more and carried out work to erase those uncertain factors as much as possible.

By the way, Kousuke went to security bureau with the objective to hand over Professor Littman, and also because he received emergency call from Bernard.

It was noisy in front of the security bureau. Several security bureau’s cars and ambulances were parked there. There were also a lot of press and onlookers. There were barricade tapes laid out and there were a lot of broken glass fragments at the other side.

Looking closer, the building’s windows were broken here and there. It looked like the explosion came from inside and the window’s glass fragments fell outside.

Around the same time when the attack happened in Japan, the security bureau also received attack. According to Bernard, thanks to a powerful “helper”, they somehow got through it.

And then, right after Yue’s “Flame of Divine Punishment” exploded, the demons that were also welling up one after another here suddenly stopped appearing. The remaining cultists also only stood still.

Perhaps, the wavering gap of worlds itself returned to normal, and they became unable to materialize here.

Also, the thought of the demons that interfered to the mind also vanished suddenly. There was no doubt that the cultists were dazed because of that.

From the beginning, the cultists were only a gathering of ordinary people with amateur fighting ability. Without the demons, there was no way they could win against Bernard and others who were combat professional. The cultists were easily suppressed or shot to death and the incident was over.

「Even so, why did he call in emergency I wonder.」

Kousuke muttered that while entering inside the security bureau boldly from the front without anyone noticing him like usual. The noisy scene of the crime, the coming and going people, the barricade tape……he ignored all of that.

He entered an elevator and pushed the button for his destination floor. The staffs who were also inside the elevator with him also pushed the button for their own floor.

「Eh, you, what is your business in this floor?」

「Ha? What are you saying……eh, did I push it by mistake?」

A floor button other than their destinations was shining. The staffs were tilting their head in confusion. They double clicked the button, cancelling it.

「No, I'll go down at that floor.」

「Uwah!? Who!? ——Wait, Aby-san!?」

「A, amazing! Aby in the flesh, this nearby! I'm sorry, please sign this!」

Kousuke's eyes became like the eyes of a dead rotten fish. One of the staffs seemed like he had never met him directly until now. He took out a memo and pleaded for an autograph.

Abyssga~te Lord

Kousuke wrote □□□□□□□□□□ in hiragana for the staff. The staff was really happy.

Ting The elevator rang out, Kousuke got out of the elevator while receiving salutes from the staffs.

Absolutely no one would notice him if he stayed quiet, so he weaved his way thorugh the office that had become messed up, searching for Bernard, and called out to him.

□Bernard. I came. Is this place all right?□

□Uoh!? Aby! I beg you, stop sneaking on me! It's bad for my heart!□

'I ain't sneaking here', Kousuke thought. This was the usual thing, it was like this even though he was only walking normally.

Kousuke tossed the Professor Littman in traveling bag carelessly to vent his anger somewhat. He handed over the content to the security bureau staffs while asking.

□And, are you all okay?□

□More or less. there are a lot of injured, but somehow no one died. There are also some guys whose fate is unknown whether they will be able to work again though. …… Opponent where a gun is useless is just foul. If *those girls* weren't here, just thinking about it gives me chills.□

Bernard's face distorted with vexation thinking of his comrades that got done in. Although Kousuke was puzzled about "those girls" Bernard mentioned, but seeing Bernard's state, he spoke about trying to ask Shirasaki for healing depending on the situation.

Bernard’s mood seemed to be at ease somewhat hearing that. Kousuke also smiled a bit and entered the main topic.

「You told me that there is some kind of emergency business though, is it about the attack?」

「No, that’s not it. There is a guest for Aby. Due to their identity, I am at a loss of how to deal with them……. For now, I have them waiting in the reception room. Honestly, looking back at the incident this time, I really want to question them right away but……. There is also the other party’s position to think, well, there are various aspects that are over my position to deal with them.」

Guided by Bernard, Kousuke opened the door of the reception room that was deeper inside that floor.

Like that, what entered his sight was,

「I’m glad……I can meet you again like this, messenger-sama. No, is it better to call you demon king’s right hand-sama?」

The holy woman of Vatican ——Claudia Barenberg was there, her eyes partly closed while smiling happily.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I wanted to write more about the classmates’ side but, the story seriously won’t advance like that…and so, for now it end here. If there is another chance, I’m thinking to try featuring the classmates.

Also, in the「Gathering of the Returnees」 chapter, Kentarou and Ayako went out with each other there, so I revised it that they hadn’t done that there.

Thank you very much to those who pointed that out to me.

It will be seriously no good if I don’t make the chronological timeline soon isn’t it?

I will make it when Abyss Lord arc is finished. Consequently, there might be revision too because of that but, please give your best regards for that.

Also, about the hero’s little sister, I was surprised that she became overlapping with kouhai-chan, so I changed her hairstyle into ponytail.

Thank you very much to those who pointed that out to me.

※Yue’s line toward Kaori was reimported from “Nichijou” chapter 11. It was her line when her husband destroyed Fuhren lol You will be able to see it if you go to Niko Niko Douga, so if you like please go take a look there.

Mori-sensei, thank you very much for your lovely lines every time.

Arifureta Chapter 313

Arifureta After III　Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2　Saint Claudia

–

It’s mostly exposition chapter.

I cannot consolidate the story well and became unable to endure, that jokes were also entered and it become more than 18,000 characters……

Please be careful not to strain your eyes.

Claudia smiled happily from the bottom of her heart that they were able to be reunited. The smile that didn’t contain the trace of anything hidden coupled with her gentle and kind looks was something so charming that might tightly grabbed the heart of ten thousand people.

Against such girl, Kousuke’s eyes snapped open so wide……

「Yo, you are perceiving me!?」

「Eh?」

Kousuke reflexively yelled.

At the same time, Bernard who was entering inside together was exposing his wariness while saying, 「To think she notice “Aby entering the room”……as expected, she isn’t just a normal person」.

Claudia-sama went 「Eh?」 one more time.

It seemed their reaction was different from what she imagined, so she opened her mouth with slightly troubled look.

「E, err, I think it’s only natural to notice if someone enter inside the room. Did I, say something strange?」

「Na, tural……you say!?」

「Aby……it seems Vatican is a really dangerous place huh. Now I keenly feel it for real.」

Aby’s legs staggered from the shocking words. Bernard supported him while trickling cold sweat. Even he who was a veteran security bureau staff who was also the leader of the force for field work couldn’t hide his shuddering expression.

It seemed that his opinion of Vatican was improving to a strange direction.

Claudia said 「I, I don’t understand……」 while she was starting to get teary eyed somewhat. Actually she was having imagination of a reunion that was more, emotional, or more like cool and stylish.

For example, Kousuke would anticipate Claudia’s entrance like it was only natural saying 「Good grief, aren’t you late?」, or perhaps 「Hou. To think that you can find me. You are quite something」 while grinning fearlessly……

Inside Claudia, her image of the human called Kousuke was that of a superhuman who was cool and stylish, with a composure that would never lose his calm while turning around in place for some reason.

She had been working hard thinking for many hours during her flight and car drive to this place for a stylish greeting in their reunion, and yet……

The superhuman-san was absurdly shaken just from a greeting! He wasn’t calm and composed at all! He wasn’t cool! Also he didn’t make any turn!

「Err, Claudia-sama? That’s why I was telling you, aren’t you glorifying your image of him too much?」

「It’s fine to like a moving tale, but it’s Claudia-sama’s bad habit to get too heated up and excessively glorified a story that is already good in the first place.」

「Uu」

The voice of a young man who seemed to have a headache and the voice of a girl that was mixed with sigh in it were resounding inside the room.

A youth with stylishly swept back blond hair——Wynn Keyman and, a girl with chestnut hair in braid——Anna Folk. It seemed the two of them came as Claudia’s accompaniment. They were standing in attention behind Claudia.

Kousuke came back to his senses with a ‘hah’ at their existence and for the time being,

「I’m reaaal~~ly-, glad that I saved someone like you!! You are exactly the very picture of a saint!」

He said that, and with a step that no one inside that room could even perceive, he took Claudia’s hand. Kousuke wrapped her hand with both his hands while his eyes became tearful from joy.

「Eh? Ah, that’s……. Certainly, I’m performing my role as a saint but……au, you are holding me so strongly like this again……」

Saint-sama became red faced when Kousuke grasped her hand. Her gaze was swimming around restlessly in embarrassment and bashfulness. It seemed she was recalling the sensation of the powerful arm when they were escaping from hell with her being held tightly inside his arms.

The saint who had no immunity of coming into contact with male could only let Kousuke did as he pleased with how happy he was that his existence was recognized as though it was only natural.

Of course, normally against such impolite man that tried to touch her needlessly, she would gently dodged them or turned them back with strength but……

For the time being, this time it was her two escorts who spontaneously moved.

「Tsu, can I ask you to get away from Claudia-sama-?」

「What’s with that step just now!? As I thought, you are strange! Also Claudia-sama too, you are acting strange somehow! What’s with that reaction that is like a maiden!?」

Perhaps because they caught a glimpse of Kousuke’s true strength, or perhaps because they recalled the dangerous involvement of the last time, or perhaps because of their

fighting experience that was seeping into their body, their hands went toward their weapon. Wynn’s hand moved toward the handle of a small sword that jutted out from a cylinder case, while Anna’s hand moved toward the tonfa that was peeking out from the slit of her skirt.

Bernard immediately reacted to the two who were like that. With a gun in each hand, he aimed each muzzle to Wynn and Anna respectively.

An atmosphere of explosive situation instantly visited the place.

But, as for the two people in question,

「Yo, you are wrong! Anna! This is, I was just a bit startled-, maiden or anything, that’s a baseless thing to say! Geez」

「Bless you~, bless you~. In this world, there is still a person who will perceive me normally~. It’s precious~, it’s rare~. Saint-sama, bless you~」

One became even more like a maiden and fidgeted, & the other was entreated the saint repeatedly——in a sense, they were entering a world of only the two of them.

The eyes of Bernard who making a grim expression was slightly swimming around.

The eyes of Wynn and Anna who turned stiff with terrible nervousness were also normally swimming around.

The gaze of Bernard and Wynn & Anna crossed each other. 「Nn, nnn」 they made sound from their throat to each other and exchanged words 「Wha, what to do?」 with their gaze.

A beat. They let out a sigh together and lifted up all their hands to above.

And then, they turned their gaze to the fidgeting Claudia and the worshipping Kousuke, and they let out a deep sight one more time together. Somehow, their reaction were really understandable.

「Aby. I know you are happy, so return to your sanity right away.」

「Claudia-sama. Let’s make you a bit more immune after this various matters are settled. For now, please return to the usual Claudia-sama.」

「「Hah!?」」

Claudia and Kousuke returned to their senses. They both pretended to clear their throat and then sat down on the sofa facing each other without keeping up appearance at all.

Seeing that, Wynn and Anna moved to stand behind Claudia, while Bernard stood behind Kousuke.

「The, then, let’s restart from the beginning. My name is Claudia Barenberg. I’m serving as a saint in anti-demon organization “Omnibus” that is directly under the pope of Roma.」

Kousuke looked over his shoulder and exchanged gaze with Bernard. Bernard shook his head. It seemed he also didn’t know at all about that organization name.

In security bureau, Bernard was the leader at present while Chief Magdanese was away. His position was really high. For him to not know about that name meant that it was an

organization that even the security bureau wasn’t aware of……

「I am, Kousuke. Endou Kousuke. A Japanese person, I’m not a staff of the security bureau but……」

「I am aware. ——You are one of the “returnees” aren’t you?」

「Aa~, yep. As I thought, you have grasped that much huh. For you to come here……did you trace the connection from the Berserk incident?」

「Yes, Kousuke-sama. We have also grasped about that incident to a certain degree, so we thought that perhaps we could rely on the security bureau. That pillar of light descending from the sky……it also confused us, so we investigated about it quite thoroughly.」

Kousuke smiled wryly while nodding 「As expected」. Claudia nodded back with a smile, and then her expression smoothly changed into a serious look.

「Kousuke-sama. First, let me express my thanks. For saving Aziz, and for leading me back to this world, thank you very much. If there is anything I can do to repay you, then I will do anything that you wish from me.」

Claudia suddenly sent a strong gaze that shook Kousuke. Her feeling of deep gratitude was really conveyed.

「And then, I apologize from the bottom of my heart. I heard that my comrades attempted to capture you by force when we originally should be offering gratitude for you. I’m really, really sorry.」

Claudia looked back across her shoulder. Wynn and Anna went 「Uu」 and couldn’t say anything.

Although the place at that time was in chaos, and everyone there were seething with unprecedented anger, but to attack Kousuke right after he rescued Claudia, indeed, it seemed that it caused them to feel guilty now that they were calm.

The two looked at Kousuke with terrible awkwardness and then they quickly lowered their head together.

「My apologies-. Even though you even tried to establish a dialogue, we repaid back kindness with evil because of our excessive wariness!」

「I'm sorry! Also, thank you very much for saving Aziz and Claudia-sama! If it's compensation, please be forgiving in exchange of the lives of I and Wynn-senpai!」

Kousuke was surprised by the sudden words of gratitude and apology. Claudia then said.

「The director too——the leader of our organization also said that he wished to make a formal apology. Unfortunately, the situation doesn't allow me and the director to be away from Vatican at the same time, so he is unable to come here. We are greatly aware that it is impolite but……」

With a pained look, Claudia asked that if Kousuke would pardon the impoliteness of apologizing through phone, then the director was prepared to be called right away to express his apology. She looked so dispirited that her smile before this seemed like a lie.

To tell the truth, Kousuke was thinking if perhaps they were coming here as "pursuer". He never imagined that they were here for apologize, that he was unconsciously taken aback.

Looking carefully, Wynn and Anna seemed terribly nervous. They were making cold sweat. Just now when Kousuke suddenly stepped forward and grabbed Claudia’s hand, their hand immediately reached toward their weapon because they were really worried that Kousuke’s rage had exploded and he was going to turn it toward Claudia.

‘We are apologetic, but just because of that adding harm to Claudia-sama is the only thing that we cannot allow’, it could be seen that they were at their wits’ end with such feeling. At the same time, the resolve that they wouldn’t loath to sacrifice themselves for that could also be seen.

It was unclear that they weren’t making a show of their strength because that was simply their personality or because they had heard about Kousuke’s strength. They were surely also keeping in mind that the returnees side had easily suppressed the attack just before this.

Perhaps rather than being Claudia’s guard, the two of them came here as representatives to receive Kousuke’s punishment. From the surprise that Claudia showed in respond to Anna’s words, it was a resolve that they kept quiet even to Claudia herself.

Seeing them like that, Kousuke pulled himself together and scratched his cheek with a troubled expression. And then he asked softly.

「Wynn-san, Anna-san. ……How many, people died?」

「……Mu?」

「Err?」

The words that Kousuke directed to Wynn and Anna. Both of them looked at each other’s face while keeping their head

bowed before raising their gaze in question.

「That explosion, and then the attack from the cultists. Surely there were a lot of people that couldn’t be saved. Right after the explosion, Claudia-san screamed to confirm the safety of her comrades, and Wynn-san and Anna-san too, despite your heavy injury, Wynn-san immediately leaped out to help your comrades, and Anna-san also immediately rushed to call for help.」

Wynn and others were perplexed without understanding what Kousuke wanted to say. Kousuke continued without minding that.

「Aziz-kun, even though he looked like he was just a step before death’s door, the words that came out from his mouth were only 『Save Nee-san』. When I returned from hell, everyone in that place was harboring rage, not uneasiness or sense of danger. That director person too, he was maintaining calm appearance, but his clenched fist was shaking.」

That was why Kousuke was convinced.

「All of you, are surely comrades who are connected with strong bond. Isn’t that right?」

The expression of Claudia, Wynn, and also Anna slightly changed into pained smile from Kousuke’s words. Wynn quietly muttered 『……Yeah』, while Anna also leaked out a small voice 『……Yes』.

「I also have comrades. Important comrades who I entrusted my life to, who I won’t hesitate to offer my life for. When I imagined those guys getting harmed, yeah, even I have no confidence that I’ll be able to stay calm.」

That was why,

「There is no need for apology or anything――is what I want to say but, surely serious people like you all will be troubled by that, so I'll accept the apology. But, it's enough with that. This talk is over with this, I'll let the bygone be bygone! That's all! If you are feeling apologetic, then don't bring this up again in the future! Okay?」

「Ye, yeah. No, right, if that is what you wish……understood. ……My gratitude.」

「O, okay. That's, thank you very much.」

Wynn and Anna were slightly bewildered, even so, a beat later tension left their shoulders and they smiled.

Like that, Bernard was making a triumphant look for some reason after hearing Kousuke's words while hitting Kousuke's shoulder *bam bam* from behind. Claudia was also smiling cheerfully with slightly reddening cheeks during that.

「Kousuke-sama. Thank you very much.」

「Right, well, more importantly, can you stop calling me Kousuke-sama? You can just call me Kousuke normally.」

「No, I cannot call Kousuke-sama so casually. Please call me "Claire".」

Even though she was smiling, Claudia-san was making a request with a strong gaze that was strangely pressuring. That excessively powerful gaze caused Kousuke to reflexively nodded 「Ah, yes」. A mere Kousuke who wasn't being a lord was powerless in front of the saint's love.

He cleared his throat once. Kousuke corrected his sitting posture and opened his mouth with a serious expression.

「Then, Claudia――」

「……」

「Aa~, err, Claire-san――」

「……」

「Claire and others aren't coming here just for conveying your apology right?」

A smiling saint, powerful!

Saint's cheerful smile! was an almighty language tool! It didn't give the slightest attention to the conflicted expression of Wynn and Anna as though they didn't exist. The expression of the saint-sama looked really satisfied when Kousuke called her Claire.

「Yes, Kousuke-sama. it had already become a situation that cannot be kept secret at all. There is something that I should inform to Kousuke-sama, and then to everyone of the returnees――we came here in order to tell about a danger to the world.」

「Danger to the world, eh.」

Kousuke ruminated with a wry smile. It wasn't because he thought of it as a joke. They had just gotten attacked for real by demons from hell. There was no ground for doubt.

To say nothing of Claudia. Not just her title as saint, from what he had seen through the situation at Vatican, he could see that her position was really high.

It was clear from what she had said just now, that “I and the director cannot go away from Vatican at the same time”.

A woman in her position was intentionally leaving her headquarters to come here. It was natural that she had an important reason for it.

「Before I talk, please allow me to confirm first. The attack of demons and cultists before this. The gap between worlds was certainly shaken even though incompletely. In Vatican, director and others were carrying the ceremony to correct the fluctuation but……the world was corrected before they activated the technique. Was that caused by a measure that Kousuke-sama took?」

「No, it wasn’t me who tracked back the guy who was sending in demons and sent him flying. It was someone else who is far more absurd than me. I wonder, does your side know that us returnees in Japan along with the people related with us were all attacked simultaneously?」

「Tsu……I see……as I thought, all of you have that much power……」

Claudia asked while she was alredy half convinced, but hearing for real that the returnees launched a counterattack across worlds and drove the demons to retreat, Claudia and others with her gulped.

Claudia turned around with a determined expression. Wynn and Anna who received her gaze nodded with similar expression.

「Then, I will talk about everything by the order of the pope of Roma. Who are we. And then, about the unprecedented danger that is occurring right now.」

「I see. That's really helpful. Actually, the first wife of the demon king told me to bring back enemy's information because we are going to go raid their place. Actually, I was planning to infiltrate into Vatican again after this, so this saved me the trouble.」

「Eh?」

「Previously I tailed Aziz-kun and infiltrated inside using the secret passage from outside Vatican, but Aziz-kun was really sharp you see.」

「Eh?」

「The fully thrilling infiltration was really tiring. And this time that place is in high alert, so I was thinking that it feels like it will be a bit troublesome.」

「Eh?」

The facts spilled out without stopping with really light tone. Even though they were a secret organization, they got infiltrated with a level of recognition of just needing "some effort", and then even while being aware that the situation now was a high alert state that was far more stricter, said infiltrator only thought of it as "troublesome".

Claudia's expression was slightly cramping, while Wynn was holding his head saying 「Azizzz, you were tailed……no, perhaps it can't be helped」, and Anna raised a dry laugh 「What happened with the door of attestation ceremony and the like……」.

Kousuke tilted his head 「Eh?」 at their strange atmosphere. Bernard was murmuring 「I get it. I really get it you guys~, that feeling of yours. When the chief office was casually

infiltrated, we the staffs here also felt the same while making a really gentle blank gaze.

Kousuke cleared his throat *cough*.

"Eerrrm anyway, if you are going to give explanation now, then I and Yue-san……I mean the first wife of demon king who is leading us returnees right now, I will have to report to that person, so in order to avoid giving the explanation twice, is it fine for me to contact her so we can listen to the talk together?"

"If that's the case, that's convenient because our chief is also together with her. Just now, there was a communication that she had safely arrived in Nagumo family house, so I will be grateful if our chief is allowed to listen to it together."

By the way, when the chief was contacting through video transmission using computer, there was Allen behind her who was looking strangely nervous while sending glances to something outside the screen but……

By any chance, there was a female high school student there who as staring with a gaze of sadist with cheerful smile there……perhaps.

When Claudia accepted, Kousuke immediately called Nagumo house. When the other side heard the circumstance, a call with computer was immediately connected……

"……Hello, it's me."

Yue-sama, made her entrance with *teleport* once more. Of course, she was in adult version. And then, she sharply took the cool pose of a warrior who would give punishment in the

name of the moon, furthermore she formed a finger gun and fired *bakyun♡* with it.

Below her, there was also Chief Magdanese sitting down with a clear expression as though she had attained enlightenment. It seemed only the two of them came together here using teleport.

The other members could just hear the talk through video call, but it would be better for Yue and Chief Magdanese to listen directly. On the other side of the large screen inside the reception room, Kaori who was looking exasperated along with Shizuku and others could be seen. Most likely, the other classmates who evacuated to outside the screen due to the ruckus were also there.

Claudia and others were dumbfounded by the sudden appearance of the divinely beautiful girl, and her posing that was just too surreal……

「Be, beautiful……」

No, there was one person, a man who got done in by Yue-sama's *bakyun♡*. It was Wynn. He was pressing his chest and stepped back by one and then two steps.

It seemed he was shot.

When Anna beside him was sending him a shocked expression, Wynn returned to his senses with a 'hah' and started muttering 「I am Claudia-sama's knight! Claudia-sama's knight! Amen-」somewhat hysterically.

It seemed he was simply a dangerous person. Anna-chan's chilly gaze stabbed him. Her eyes were as though she was staring at filth.

「Yue-san, Yue-san. Please read the atmosphere, seriously.」

「! ……You are saying I can read the mood? Rude. Even though I’m just mimicking Lord Abyssgate who burst into the train.」

「Guhah!?」

Kousuke pressed his chest and crouched down. Certainly, he took a pose of punishing in the name of the moon. But, how did Yue know that?

The answer was of course, from the screening of the filming by cameraman Ayako just now.

「Nn-, cough-. How do you do, I am the security bureau’s chief, Magdanese. This person here is the wife……the first wife of Mr. Nagumo Hajime who is the leader of the returnees, Mrs. Yue. Can I listen to the story too?」

「Ah, yes.」

In order to rally the place that was starting to turn chaotic, Chief Magdanese really did her best. *GOGOGO-* Her pressure was such that it felt like such letters were floating behind her. Claudia-sama nodded up and down repeatedly with slightly teary eyes.

Like that, the atmosphere of the place that lapsed into chaos mostly because of Yue-sama’s fault was turning back like before while Kousuke was telling everyone once more about the detail that he heard from Professor Littman. And then the explanation that was based on it finally started.

「I see, so all of you already know until that far……. Your recognition of hell and demon, and then the cultist isn’t

mistaken on the whole. We “Omnibus” is an organization that is opposing such hell, demon, and their cultists.

According to her, there was a war between earth and another hell world in the past. Among the victorious side, in other words the people of earth, some of their descendant established an organization to take the role of watching over another hell world.

In each era the organization would match the time and changed the organization’s name sometimes, however they would protect mankind behind the scene of history as anti demon organization without any pause in between.

In other words, exorcist exist for real, is that what you mean?

Yes, Kousuke-sama. But, it’s slightly different from the exorcist in the world at general. Those who can join Omnibus and introduce themselves as “exorcist” are only people who possess the disposition to handle sacred vessel.

Sacred vessel?

For example “Mirror Gate” and “Key of Holy Cross” that Kousuke-sama is also aware of, and then……

Claudia’s gaze turned behind her. Toward the large cross that was put on the wall behind Wynn and Anna who were standing on the back. Its true shape couldn’t be seen due to the cloth and leather belt that were wrapped around it. But, it could be seen that it was something splendid with a total height of two meter which wouldn’t be strange for it to be placed on a church’s altar.

That's my "Holy Cross". It's a special weapon that is concealing a power to oppose demon. It was a weapon that was used at the past in the war between earth and another world. It's a fragment of miracle that is containing the work of god.

Yue was staring still at the talking Claudia. After that she turned her gaze to Wynn and Anna and nodded saying I see.

……In other words, "magic power possessor" would be born sometimes from among the descendants of the residents of the other world. Those people are able to handle the left behind magic tools and artifacts and they are the real exorcist.

By the way, the magic power of Claudia and others that Yue observed was really little compared to the returnee group. Compared to the returnee with rear guard vocation, the difference was by order of magnitude. It wasn't something that should be compared with Yue and others.

Even so it was only Claudia who seemed to possess magic power that was several times larger than Wynn and Anna though……

From the talk just now, most likely she exhibited atavism in her birth with the amount of magic power that she possessed. Even so the blood of the people from another world was thinning with the accumulation of generation, and the amount of magic power that she possessed also became relatively little.

Yue nodded in comprehension, but Claudia tilted her head in puzzlement toward Yue's words of "magic power possessor" and "artifact".

For the time being, Yue urged with an unblinking stare for Claudia to continue her story, the story from the returnees would be for later. She wasn’t glaring. She also wasn’t in bad mood. However……Claudia twitched while continuing her story. The serious Yue-sama was overwhelming.

「The existence of Omnibus is only known by the pope and by the generations of archbishop who is entrusted with Vatican’s second library at the surface. It is completely kept secret from others.」

「If the supreme commander in battle against demon is the pope, then the commander in the field is the archbishop that is the “director”, is it something like that? Though Claire said that you are a “saint”……what does that mean?」

For some reason the other side of the video call became noisy. Voices of「She is calling him Kousuke-sama……even Kousuke is calling her with pet name Claire? Ko, Kousuke, what is the meaning of this!?」「Wai-, Emily-chan, calm down!」 were resounding from there. Right after that「Nmuu! Mogaa!」 the voice became a groaning voice as though someone’s mouth was blocked.

Claudia answered the question even while getting a bit curious about the other side of the screen.

「The, the title of Saint is referring to the “strongest” exorcist of that era. Usually the title will be “Holy Apostle”, but in case a female become a Holy Apostle, the popular name of “Saint” become entrenched to call that person.」

「……Strongest? Claire is?」

「Uu. Yes, that’s, more or less……」

Claudia nodded shyly at Kousuke’s amazed expression. The young lady who looked calm, gentle, and kind was the strongest exorcist of this generation……

Yue-sama’s unblinking stare also was also stabbing her. It looked like she wanted to say「Haa? You are the strongest? Do you know about the phrase knowing your place?」. In reality she was only thinking「Hee~~」 in her mind though. Rather, Yue was convinced of that seeing the amount of her magic power compared to other people. It was really just Yue’s default unblinking stare.

Perhaps being unable to watch Claudia who was getting increasingly smaller from embarrassment, Wynn and Bernard interrupted.

「It’s true that Claudia-sama is the strongest among us. Certainly, it’s difficult to imagine it from her appearance, in fact she is beyond hopeless in hand-to-hand fighting and the like. Not just that, she is also truly unreliable in her everyday life. But, it is only Claudia-sama who can handle that “Holy Cross”. And then, someone who can handle “Holy Cross” is inevitably the strongest in battle against demon.」

「She was certainly amazing. When the bureau was attacked by demons, You see, Ms. Barenberg who came running offered a prayer. And then, a powerful light surged from that large cross, and when we noticed the demons were already gone, and the cultists were all collapsing. It was truly a clean sweep and felt overwhelming.」

Everyone went ‘hoee~’ and sent gaze of admiration toward Claudia. Claudia’s cheeks reddened, but the casual evaluation from Wynn like「beyond hopeless in hand-to-hand combat」 and the like caused her to avert her gaze

toward the sky that was visible from the window. It seemed she had an idea of what Wynn was saying.

Kousuke nodded with a convinced face.

「I see. So you are the strongest as a rear guard. Certainly, you were amazing even when you were in a weaponless state. You did deploy a barrier that even the ghoul-like things couldn't cross at all in hell.」

「Tha, thank you very much, Kousuke-sama. It's my happiness if I can be even slightly useful. After all my title of Saint will cry if I was only being carried in your arms from beginning to end.」

Claudia smiled sweetly. Her cheeks were reddening perhaps because she was recalling the time of the flight when she was carried in princess carry, Her smiling appearance was really lovely.

「Mugah, nnmuu! Puhah, Kousuke! What is the meaning of this!? You embraced that person!? Is that why you are so intimate to even call her Clair――」

「Yes, Doctor Emily. Let's be quiet for a bit. Right now Kousuke-san is having an important talk with the fourth wife――cough, the honorable saint of Vatican after all.」

「Nmyu~~~~-mogagaa~~~」

He couldn't hear anything. He didn't feel a chill or anything. Inside the display, Kaori and others were sending lukewarm gaze to outside the screen, but he wasn't bothered about it.

Also, 「As I thought the bastard laid his hand on a new woman」 or 「Lord, drop dead」 voices of resentment were also coming, but Kousuke activated the new skill that he

obtained just now, “Hearing sense that become like galge main character depending on the situation”.

Eh? What did you say?

「Sa, say, Kousuke-sama. That person……besides, someone said about “fourth wife”……」

「Ms. Barenberg, please continue. We still haven’t heard about the ringleader.」

Chief Magdanese looked at Claudia with a sharp glint, as though to say ‘you think I’m going to let the talk get interrupted’.

‘For some reason, Chief Magdanese, and also the wives of code name “demon king” are glaring at me, why……’, as expected Claudia became slightly teary while the strongest exorcist nodded repeatedly.

「The mastermind——the person who kidnapped me, and intervened with the gap of worlds to attack everyone. The person who wish to unify the two worlds and become ruler. The demon that cannot be talked even in bible or any kind of other books. We called him, that demon as——Unknown.」

「A demon that cannon be talked in book……. In other words, speaking in reverse he is existing as famous demon that is known by the world in general?」

If it was just those demons of “shadow”, they weren’t really a threat. However, if the greater demon that was talked in legend existed, and he was also aiming for earth……

Such concern of Kousuke was easily ascertained.

「Unfortunately, he exist. Although, about him being recorded in books is actually slightly different in reality……. In any case, there is nothing about him at all in the past record, and he was confirmed for the first time twelve years ago. He is called as “Unknown” as a great demon who possess king class strength even though he is unknown.」

The moment Claudia mentioned twelve years ago, her voice was tinged slightly with something dark. Kousuke’s expression became slightly puzzled to that.

But, before he could ask about it, Yue reacted to the words “king class”.

「……By king class you mean?」

「There is historical record that is only inherited by us in Omnibus. According to it, it seemed there were seven kings who were once reigning over the countries and nobles in another hell world. It’s said that they can control even miracle that is effecting the foundations of the world, that is even further above the works of god.」

「……Foundations of the world?」

Yue’s eyes narrowed slowly. Claudia interpreted it as shock and she continued with a meek expression.

「Yes. But, it’s not just causing fire or wind. It’s an even greater power. It’s said that the closer a demon is to the lineage of king, the stronger the power they can use but…… Unknown can also use similar kind of power.」

Such demons that possessed strength which had a line drawn from other demons seemed to be called as “king class”.

Kousuke recalled the Unknown at the back of his mind. A figure that was like a condensed shadow, and a power to control shadow itself. The impression his got from his clones that were directly battling it, rather than shadow, it felt more like a lump of force field.

In addition, the power to interfere with the gap of worlds……

Cold sweat trickled just slightly. In his impression from fighting the Unknown, although he was a troublesome opponent, but at the present stage he wasn’t an unbeatable opponent, but Kousuke got a bad premonition.

「Could it be, when I fought him in hell, that guy wasn’t serious?」

「No, I think he was serious at that time. It’s unthinkable that he would intentionally let go of me when he want me as a mother body. But, if the question is whether he could display his full strength, then the answer is “No”. At the very least, when Unknown was confirmed twelve years ago, he had the power to freely change his shape and summoned demonic beasts but, he didn’t use those powers before.」

Kousuke’s attention was caught by the words “twelve years ago” that came out once more. But, this time Claudia continued talking without any change in her expression and tone at all.

「At that time, Unknown was summoned and appeared in this world, but he was terrifyingly powerful and the strength of the exorcists couldn’t match him. At the end he received strong interference from hell and he got dragged back. He raised a resenting voice to the demon kings while vanishing.」

It seemed even the ceremony of demon summoning could actually be done for real if it was correctly carried out by people with magic power people with qualification and the equal compensation was paid.

And then, it was Omnibus's opinion that the demon kings who were driven away to hell in the past already had no will to invade to earth. It seemed that was their conclusion because since the war of ancient time, demons with high ranking almost never did interference to this world except when they were summoned by mankind.

Of course, the demons outside the greater demons with well-known names in the human side kept doing interference constantly. And then because people who were trying to summon demon in reverse also kept appearing without end, the battle of exorcist also had no end.

Kousuke then got taken aback and said.

「Now that you mention it, I heard that guy said something about the fake kings had vanished~ or the like.」

「……Yes. I don't know what kind of reason there is, but at present it seems there is no influence of the demon kings in hell. That must be the reason why the Unknown is moving. Perhaps he was also sealed, because he looks like he still cannot use his power fully……」

「……Nn. In that case, it means we might have to face famous demons too?」

「There is the possibility of that. Furthermore, the Unknown itself seems to rapidly grow in strength, perhaps because he is gaining strength from his drastically increasing believers.」

Claudia returned to her former quiet atmosphere and turned a straightforward gaze toward Kousuke, and then toward Yue.

「The next time Unknown shake the gap of worlds, I believe that it won't be something incomplete like this time. Next time hell will be completely connected to this world. Powerful demons that obtain flesh body will descend to this world endlessly. In front of the power of miracle that was once called as the works of gods, modern weapon will be useless to resist them. We too won't be able to win against the power of number. If the worlds are connected, that will mean――the destruction of the world, of the present society.」

Claudia stated that it was a danger of destruction of the present world. It was already not limited to just local invasion against the surrounding of the returnees or the like, but a world scale invasion, where the demons would be overflowing through sea as the intermediary.

If that happened, how much damage would result……

「That's why, before the worlds can be connected, we have to enter hell from here and defeat the Unknown. However, with the previous attack, we lost many comrades and Omnibus's headquarter is weakened.」

In the first place the number of real exorcist was few. Even if they summoned the people who were dispatched throughout the world, that fact wouldn't change. They also had no time.

That was why, because they knew of someone like Kousuke, of someone that was like a hero,

「All of you returnees, please lend us your strength.」

Saying that, Claudia deeply bowed her head. Wynn and Anna also lowered their head.

Originally it must be impossible for them to borrow the strength of other organization or individual. But, before this Claudia spoke about the command of the pope. In other words, the case this time was so pressing, it was literally a danger to the world that her superior had to recognize it.

The presence of security bureau in this talk was allowed was undoubtedly because their connection with returnees was taken into consideration. They had no leeway to deal with needless inquiry, if that was what would happen then it was better to share the information from the start.

Across the screen, the classmates could be heard speaking 「Seriously, the scale suddenly got really huge huh」「Just why is it fantasy even after returning to earth」 with half laughing voice.

Chief Magdanese didn’t really talk. She only turned her gaze toward Yue as though to say that she was leaving the decision to her.

Kousuke also asked with his gaze 「What to do?」 to Yue. Yue replied to Claudia and others who were lowering their head without looking like she was thinking long about it.

「……Nn. No problem. Or rather, the problem isn’t about lending or not lending a hand.」

「Eh? What do you mean……」

Claudia and others raised their face in confusion. Yue was staying expressionless, however, she spoke while emitting terrifying atmosphere that made everyone felt a chill.

「……I don’t care whether they are demon or dejected loser, but those guys picked a fight with me. That’s why I’ll take the fight. I’ll kill them. Destroy them in the entirety. No mercy.」

‘Isn’t that right~’, atmosphere that was like that was transmitted from Kousuke and the other side of the screen.

「……Claudia.」

「Ye, yes!」

「……I heard that you are targeted to be mother body. It’s better to stay behind for your safety. Looking at your combat potential, there is also no need for cooperation. Simply open the Mirror Gate. After that, I will trample over hell.」

「Tsu……that’s……」

It was an implied statement that they weren’t counted as a war potential. Certainly, on top of repelling back the Unknown, she had also witnessed an absurd deed like space teleportation. And from looking at Kousuke’s strength, this was someone who was said to be of higher ranked than him. Even if the exorcists participated in the fight, certainly, far from being of assistance, they might become hindrance instead.

It was a rational decision, but for some reason Claudia was making objection with frustrated expression.

「Ho, however, the hell is vast. According to the record, it’s not just the ground surface, but there are also several layers of territory underground. I, if it is I, I’ll be able to find the Unknown. I have connection with Unknown.」

「……Nn, it’s alright. I have already grasped that guy’s soul. If I’m in the same world with him, I will be able to find him. After that I just need to move toward him with teleport.」

「Uu……」

Claudia’s gaze swam around. Because Wynn and Anna understood her feeling, they were directing a conflicted gaze toward her.

A question mark floated on Yue’s head at Claudia’s state and she asked.

「……Nn? Is there any problem?」

「……No. Just in case, we will also form a unit and embark to hell but, please defeat the enemy without minding about us. Please, I’m begging you-, take care of the world! Please, don’t let the evil that the Unknown is spreading will befall the people even more than this!」

Her voice sounded as though she was shaking off, to suppress down something. She was bowing her head deeply, so her expression couldn’t be seen.

Yue stared at Claudia doubtfully because her condition was really strange. In the incident this time, if Yue and others defeated the enemy’s ringleader, it would also be in the interest of the exorcist side and she thought they would welcome it but……

Yue’s gaze turned toward Wynn and Anna. Wynn and Anna looked at each other’s face in respond to that questioning gaze. And then Anna silently shook her head, and Wynn nodded. He then answered as though to cover up something.

「We have also lost a lot of our comrades, so there are also a lot of us that wish to attack the enemy. If possible, it will by our own hands. However, it’s the fate of the world that is at risk here. If you say that it will be more certain to do it by only yourselves, we won’t refuse. Allow us to give support as much as possible.」

From the start, they were people who were offering their life for their mission as exorcist――to protect mankind from demon. If they were someone who didn’t loath to sacrifice even themselves in order to save someone else, then they would be no room for personal emotion too. Thus, they would choose the more certain path.

「……Nn, I see. Then, I will make them pay back for the share of your comrades too.」

Although she still looked like she wasn’t fully convinced yet, Yue said that and nodded. Even during that time, Kousuke was looking at Claudia all along and he was making an expression as though thinking of something.

「……Are you going right away? If you teach me the coordinate, I’ll teleport you all there.」

Claudia finally lifted up her face in respond to Yue’s words. At that time, her atmosphere that felt like she was suppressing something was already gone.

「No, we plan to link up with the exorcists who are dispatched to Britain before returning back using personal plane. Besides, currently we are preparing for when the gap of the worlds is connected once more.」

According to her, actually the obelisk that was at St. Peter Square was also a sacred vessel. It was something to be

activated when it was necessary to deal with large scale demon summoning.

Even if the gap of worlds was connected somewhere in the world and a path was created, if the obelisk was activated, it seemed that the path that was connecting worlds would be forcefully connected to the square.

Also, the 140 saint statues surrounding the plaza also seemed to be sacred vessels. They could deploy a powerful barrier that wouldn’t let the demon to get out from the square.

In other words, in the worst case that Unknown’s extermination didn’t make it in time, or there was unforeseen situation, the square could be used as temporary battlefield to buy time when the words were connected.

「Because some area got hit by explosion, it will take half more day for the preparation. We wish to at least finish this preparation so that even after breaking into hell, we will be able to react even if the Unknown take reckless action of going here with imperfect world connection or the like.」

「Yue-san, I will go with Claire and the others. Claire is being targeted as a mother body after all, it will be troubling if the worst case occurred.」

「……Nn. Got it. Then contact us when the preparation is finished. Until then, we will harden our own defense.」

After saying that, Yue stood up and strongly grasped Chief Magdanese’s hand. The chief stopped her in panic. It seemed she would remain here. As expected, it seemed it would be bad if the chief wasn’t present after the headquarter was attacked.

「Eh……Sharon-obaachan, you won’t return here nano?」

「Fuguuh」

On the screen, the dejected figure of Myuu was…….

The demonic chief who was capable of hushing crying children. She groaned with a hard to describe expression that her subordinates had never seen before. It was an expression as though she was enduring a severe stomachache.

「Fo, forgive me, Myuu. Obaa-chan, has a lot of work after this. A good child like Myuu, understand that right?」

「Myuu is a good child so Myuu understand. Obaa-chan, do your best in work nano.」

Myuu smiled bravely and waved her hand that was small like a maple leaf. Obaa-chan waved her hand back with a nice smile while her other hand was pressing her nose.

「Kousuke……you will stay beside that person?」

「Fuguuh」

Across the screen, there was the dejected figure of Emily-chan.

The hero who didn’t flinch even when facing man-eating fiend. He groaned with a hard to describe expression that could be seen relatively often. It was an expression as though he was enduring a severe stomachache.

「So, sorry, Emily. I’ll leave a clone behind so……」

「It’s fine, I understand. Kousuke, be careful. I will also do what I can.」

Emily-chan who smiled bravely while glancing at Claudia. Kousuke pressed his hand on his nose toward while a nice smile――「This is why, this damn Abys is just…showing off like this」「I'll tell this to Rana-san」「Idiot, it's that person so she will only get happy」「God dammit」「Lord, drop dead」 etc.――wasn't on his face. He quietly turned off the switch of the screen.

「……Nn, then, Endou. The rest, take care.」

「Roger.」

Yue-sama vanished instantly.

The conference between Claudia, the returnees, and the security bureau where a framework of cooperation among them was built had finished, and an atmosphere of relieve flowed in.

「Ms. Barenberg. Putting aside the demons, if it's guarding against the attack of the cultists, we can also lend our field work's unit for that, how about it?」

Chief Magdanese suggested that to Claudia with the calculation to have a grasp on the flow of events in the real time, and also to build a friendly relationship with an organization that was continuing to lurk behind the scene of history.

Claudia's feeling that was about to relax down from the relief of receiving assistance snapped back into focus. Originally she wasn't in the position for this kind of external negotiation.

「That's truly welcome. The director told me to accept if there is an offer. After all a combat force that possess

experience fighting against cultists and even demon is precious.

Normally it would be a great problem to accept an armed force of another country, but it seemed they had a judgment that a combat group who knew about the situation would be beneficial in regard to the later development.

Most likely they also had the same calculation like Chief Magdanese, but in any case, the Vatican side was also thinking to accept it in this time of emergency.

Claudia stood up with a stiff expression and shook hand with Chief Magdanese. Omnibus would allow Bernard and others to enter the country through their own route behind the closed doors, so the talk about things like the preparation to accept them in Vatican side and the like was quickly settled.

Well then, Kousuke-sama. Let’s depart. This time there is no need to infiltrate secretly. We will welcome you right from the front, so please don’t worry.

Claudia showed a bit of playfulness while saying that with a smile.

‘Yo-heave-ho’ She shouldered the huge cross while muttering that. Claudia herself had height around 160 centimeter, so the cross was jutting out around 30 cm higher than her head.

She was shouldering that and headed to the door even while her body was slouching forward from the weight.

Wynn went ahead and opened the door.

It looks heavy. Are you okay, Claire?

「It’s made from metal so it’s certainly heavy, but I’m already used to it.」

‘Just this much is nothing! I am the strongest exorcist after all!’ With a lovely smile that wanted to say that, Claudia passed through the do――

GAN-

「AH!?」

The tip of the cross hit above the door. The Holy Cross fell behind and Claudia was pulled by that and fell behind too. And then, the back of her head hit the cross. *Gochi-* Such painful sound resounded.

「Cla, Claudia-sama! Are you alright!?」

「Aa, even though this hasn’t happened recently! This is because you are showing off in a place that you aren’t familiar with!」

‘Uh, uuu~’, Claudia got teary eyed while holding the back of her head. Wynn and Anna helped her standing up with a practiced motion.

Until just now, she was really like a saint, and even after the discussion her atmosphere was like a calm and graceful young lady but……

Kousuke, Chief Magdanese, and also Bernard got open mouthed seeing the sudden failure of the saint-sama.

「Ju, just now it’s that. Just a bit of failure. Ehehe……」

Claudia made a smile to cover it up. She was rubbing the back of her head shamefully but, she was absolutely

covering up her pain.

「Claudia-sama, as I thought I will carry it so……」

「Wynn! I've told you every time! This is my sacred vessel. Then, me carrying it is only natural!」

'Yo-heave-ho', while muttering so, this time Claudia hugged the cross in front of her chest. She carefully paid attention to the above while slo~wly passing through the door this time.

Outside the reception room, even the staffs in that floor seemed able to imagine the scene of Claudia falling down with how desperate she looked trying to bring out the cross. The gazes of the staffs that were in suspense were gathered on her.

Without being mindful of such gazes, Claudia came out of the reception room and sighed 'fuu' in relieve while fixing her hold of the Holy Cross――at that timing the cross slipped from her hand.

「――AA!?」

The Holy Cross fell on Claudia's toes. She pulled her foot away in panic and she was going to crouch down while trembling tearfully in pain,

「――AA!?」

As expected, the Holy Cross that lost its prop fell on Claudia. Saint-sama became pinned under the heavy lump of metal and wriggled around there.

Kousuke, Chief Magdanese, and Bernard who finished a conversation with their gaze in an instant, that they would treat the incident just now as never happened couldn't stop

their mouth from gaping wide open from the failure that was already in a level that couldn’t be ignored anymore.

「Aaah, Claudia-sama! Are you injured!?」

「This is even more terrible than usual……. She must be really nervous in the conference.」

It appeared this saint, when she was feeling the tension there would be no problem, but the moment she relaxed, she became a clumsy girl.

Claudia who was helped onto her feet by Wynn and Anna turned bright red while also getting tearful eyes from the pain, even so she shouldered the cross again. And then she was desperately glossing over the failures while smiling sweetly. She gave parting words to Chief Magdanese and Bernard.

Everything wasn’t glossed over at all, not at the slightest, but it was the adult Chief Magdanese who was there. She exchanged words of parting as though nothing had happened.

Like that, Claudia started walking gallantly toward the exit but……the office that was messed up from the attack was a mountain of trap (?). She magnificently stumbled on a jutting out wiring,

「——AA!?」

Bitan- She fell face down. The weight of the cross gave double the push. 「Kue!?」 Such strange groan even slipped out.

Shi~n, the office fell into silence.

Wynn covered his eyes with his hand while muttering 「Today she is really terrible at this……」, while Anna was murmuring 「I guess the stare of that person called Yue was really severe? The way she relax with her gone is staggering」.

The nearby staffs helped Claudia on her feet in a hurry.

「Oi oi, are you okay? That was a really amazing way of falling there.」

「Are you injured? Or rather, this cross is heavy!」

While the staffs were letting out voices of shock and worry, Claudia whose face had become so bright red just a step shy of explosion, even so perhaps because of her pride as the Saint,

「Tha, thank you very much. I'm fine. Even though I look like this, I'm pretty tough. Even when I carelessly fell off from a running car, I was unharmed!」

'That ain't something to say with a sweet smile', everyone thought.

Although, the figure of Claudia who was covering up her failure with 「Ehehe」 and an embarrassed smiling face while lowering her head repeatedly to the staffs somehow gave a warm and fluffy feeling inside them. The staffs also naturally sported a warm smile from Claudia's smiling face.

Claudia gave her parting words once more to Chief Magdanese, and then without even shouldering or hugging the cross this time, she dragged it carefully while walking toward the exit.

Kousuke pointed his finger to Claudia while asking Wynn and Anna who were having a distant gaze.

「……Strongest?」

「……The strongest, without doubt. When she is in the middle of battle, or when concentrating there is no problem. But, when she is relaxed, for some reason she become like that. Mostly she will self-destruct without being a bother to her surrounding, so we can only worry without being able to get angry and say anything to her.」

「I see.」

Kousuke understood Wynn's line before this about how her everyday life was dangerous. Rather, the everyday life might be more dangerous to her than the battle.

「A saint that shoulder the cross, embrace the cross, and be swung around by the cross……somehow, it feels like there is significance in that huh.」

「Err, you don't need to force yourself to give it a conclusion with a nice note you know?」

Kousuke said those words while staring at Claudia's back. Anna made a dry smile while saying 「She is always like that」 in respond to his words.

「——AA!?」

BANG-, ROLL ROLL-, SPLAT!

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The newest chapter of “Nichijou” was posted in Comic Gardo.

Myuu’s darkness that was deliberately left untouched in the main story really hit the spot……

Mori-sensei, what a hero lol Also, Shia’s “moo” was lovely lol

Arifureta Chapter 314

Arifureta After III　Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2　Do-or-Die Battle (?)

–

「……Are you alright, Claire?」

Kousuke’s slightly convulsing voice resounded.

The location was the outskirt of a small runway inside Rome. They were descending from Omnibus’s private plane at an airport that was also exclusive for Omnibus.

It was dusk. The sun that was illuminating this day was sinking toward the west.

The sky had beautiful madder red color. The wind of the evening was cool. And then, the saint who was pressing on her butt with teary eyes below the ramp looked really painful.

「He, hehe, just as you can see, I’m fine.」

「No, I’m asking because you don’t look fine though.」

‘Ehehe’, that shy smile that emitted loveliness――wasn’t there anymore. If he had to say what kind of smile it was, Claudia-san was exposing an expression like a person who

got carried away easily saying □Heheh, sorry boss□ to cover up one’s own mistake.

She stood up while her hand was holding her butt, then she lifted up the Holy Cross and supported it with effort. She was dressed in a neat and clean appearance of a long-sleeved dress with white as the base color, but the outfit was slightly dirty all over.

It wasn’t like he was slipping up just now on the ramp and slid down on her butt. She also wasn’t attacked by demons and cultists in the middle of going back from Britain and got involved into a fierce battle.

The cause was just one.

The numerous self-destructions that Claudia generated until they reached here.

After getting out of the security bureau, Kousuke and others first joined up with two exorcists who were dispatched to Britain, but even until then, well, Claudia self-destructed.

When she climbed up a stair, she would get dragged by the cross and stumbled with her shin getting hit hard, and when she went down a stair instead, her balance would crumble due to the Holy Cross’s weight. She would misstep and slid down on her butt.

She would stumble at place where there was no obstacle and got pinned under the Holy Cross. She would look the other way and crashed onto wall or pillar and fell, and got pinned under the Holy Cross as expected. She even got completely caught inside the revolving door in the airport.

Inside the private plane, she would wear eye mask and took a nap, and when she woke up she would struggle □I, it’s

pitch black! Did something happen!?」 while kicking around. And then she would fell off from her reclining chair.

Claudia who went through numerous self-destructions like that at first would gave scream or embarrassed laugh that looked cute, but from the middle, her voice was gradually turning into a voice without any composure like 「higih」 or 「hebuu」, and at this point even her embarrassed laugh 「he, heheh」 had became something really disappointing.

「No no, Kousuke-sama. Look, I'm not injured anywhere. I'm unharmed.」

「Right, it's really mysterious.」

'This saint, could it be she is the same kind like Bernard?' he tilted his head with such doubt. Just like he was holding doubt that Bernard might be loved by the death god and the goddess of fortune at the same time, there was a possibility that she was also loved by the god of clumsy girl and a god who protected her from the self-destructions at the same time. She was a saint after all.

Claudia-sama made a banzai pose to appeal that she was unharmed. Naturally, because her hands let go, the Holy Cross-san lost its support and bared its fang toward its master. It tilted toward the head of Claudia who was smiling 'heheh'――

「That's why, are you doing that purposefully!?」

「Ah!」

Just before it hit, Kousuke leaped forward and stopped the violence of the Holy Cross-san. He supported the Holy Cross with one hand where Claudia was sandwiched between him and the cross.

It was a posture where she was practically hugged on his chest. The sudden approach of the opposite sex, furthermore it was Kousuke who she was strangely conscious against caused her cheeks to be dyed red. While that was happening, Kousuke looked behind him and raised his voice.

「Or rather, you guys too, give her a bit more warning too!」

In respond to that voice, Wynn, Anna, and then the other two exorcists who were carrying down the luggage stopped their hand and turned their gaze to Kousuke simultaneously.

And then,

「Kousuke-dono. We too」

「Have a lot」

「Of work」

「If it’s Claudia-sama, it’s always like this so――」

「「「「It’s alright」」」」

What coordination. What strength of bond. The connecting speech as though it had been arranged beforehand was excellent.

Normally they would be acting a bit worried and gave follow-up for Claudia, but right now there was Kousuke who was doing that, so they left it to him.

「He, heheh」

Claudia was smiling with strangely dead eyes at her comrade’s trust (?) on her. Kousuke’s expression was cramping a bit at the exorcists who were doing their work briskly with serious face.

「Ah. Right, somehow sorry. Thank you for your hard work. Also, Claire, stop it with that smile yeah? Somehow, I cannot bear to look anymore. At least, add “e” at the beginning, make it ehehe, okay?」

「Ehehe?」

「Right, like that.」

「Ehehe……」

He couldn’t bear to look at either anyway.

Like that, Kousuke was supporting Claudia who was swung around by the Holy Cross so much she got injured that he was suspecting that perhaps the Holy Cross was hating her?, while the group got into a private car and departed toward Vatican.

The distance from the airport was close. The wall of Vatican came into view in just around ten minutes.

「Come to think of it, that place that was like a secret base, the second library got exploded and there was a hole opened but, are we heading there now? It still hasn’t been repaired right?」

Kousuke suddenly recalled and asked.

Claudia was going to drink at that time, but she then tried to answer.

「Ah, about that. Actually——AA!?」

Bump The car shook. The drink flew. The destination? Of course, the face of the saint.

Anna quickly said 「Here Claudia-sama. It’s fine~」 while taking out a handkerchief to wipe Claudia’s face. During that time Wynn was groaning 「Really, it’s worse than usual…… h~mm」 while answering in Claudia’s place.

「Just as Kousuke-dono said, the repair hasn’t finished. Right now we are using the old headquarters. We are heading there right now.」

「Old headquarters?」

「Yeah, Omnibus’s underground facility isn’t just there. That place was a new facility that was created around ten years ago with various conveniences taken into consideration by the power of the current director.」

「Hee, certainly, there was a lot of passages there. I thought that the underground space is really vast but, so I’m actually right.」

While they were talking like that, ignoring Claudia who were frowning sadly at the orange juice color leaving spots on her white clothes, the car entered an underground parking lot of a building that was slightly at the outskirt of Vatican.

「Hm? We aren’t going directly to inside Vatican?」

「Yeah. Our existence is generally kept secret even to the people inside the city. If we show ourselves too much, then people will have question like ‘which department those guys who often show up here belong to?’. That’s why, the coming and going of Omnibus members fundamentally use secret passage from outside the city.」

「I see.」

Actually, ‘the home is constantly underground is harsh……’, that was the opinion of a director several generations ago, so Omnibus’s office also existed inside Vatican palace and the hidden room of Vatican art museum. Of course, there was also a single building outside Vatican that was wholly used as Omnibus’s facility.

While they were talking, the car parked on the space at the corner that seemed the most inconvenient spot.

Kousuke completely thought that they would walk from here, but right after that, a mechanical sound resounded. At the same time, the ground was sinking along with the car. Kousuke raised a surprised voice 「Oo!?」.

Wynn and others smiled a bit happily at Kousuke’s surprise.

「If you previously infiltrated by tailing Aziz, then you surely used the passage that is managed by Madame Marie, but that is exclusive for walking. This is an exclusive passage for car. We can go until inside Vatican riding the car.」(TN: Previously it was Madam Maya in chapter 302, but here it’s Marie. I don’t know if the author make a mistake or what)

「……Even though it’s a secret organization that exist since the ancient time, this is like a world of spy movie. The genre is mistaken.」

「Ahahah, Kousuke-san. You are watching movie too much. Even us are using computer and smartphone normally.」

Anna laughed teasingly. Kousuke smiled wryly thinking that it was true. Thinking back, the impetus that made him infiltrated Vatican also originated from the data that Aziz pulled out from a company’s computer.

Before long, they entered an underground passage and the car advanced. They then reached a vast underground parking lot. They got out of the car, Claudia bumped her head on the roof part, and then they headed toward a metallic door deeper inside that had a cross carved on it.

When the door was unlocked by biometrics authentication and they entered inside, they came out into an underground space that was far older than the previous underground facility he saw before, but it boasted the same spaciousness.

At the same time, it seemed that the exorcists had contacted beforehand. There was that old man wearing cassock with absurd pressure there. His face that had a lot of wrinkles was frowning even more sternly, so it gave a dreadfulness that would make children cried 「Demon!?」 if they saw it.

For now, he wasn't carrying that book which was made from metal, so surely there wouldn't be any battle. He wished that there wouldn't be. The old man's atmosphere felt like he was going to attack him while saying 「You bastard, I'll kill you!」 anytime, but surely it was just his misunderstanding.

「Claire, also Wynn and others, good work. Looks like you all have concluded the talk safely.」

「Yes, director. Then, this person is――」

Claudia jogged toward the director happily and she was going to introduce Kousuke. But, the director stopped her with his hand and slowly walked forward. Just by doing that, he gave off a pressure that made one hallucinated as though the surface area of his face became three times bigger.

「I am Omnibus's director, Patrick Dime. Mr. Endou. I had acted rudely in the previous incident. My subordinates…… they are like my own children. Therefore, I lost my calm.

Although, one of my children getting possessed by demon and my inability to keep my calm, all of them were incurred by my immaturity. I will accept any kind of punishment that you give.」

There was no lie in his eyes that were staring fixedly on Kousuke. At the very least, that was what he thought.

And so, he concluded that the director's eye glint that seemed as though to say 「You bastard, I'll strangle you to death!」 even while saying his apology was just his feeling. Kousuke shook his head with a somewhat twitching face.

「I'll just accept your apology. I have been asked by Anna-san and Wynn-san for forgiveness in exchange of their life. If I received an apology with such resolve, then I'll have no intention to put any blame to anyone anymore. I don't look like a narrow-minded man am I?」

The gaze of Director Dime snapped wide open. Kousuke twitched, but the brunt of that eye glint that seemed to say 「All you bastards, I'll obliterate you all together!」 was pointed to Wynn and Anna.

The two of them averted their gaze with all their strength. It seemed, Director Dime was angry at the two who were offering their life as they pleased. It looked like it was true that he was treasuring his subordinates like his own children.

Though it didn't look like that at all seeing at only his eyes.

「Punishment for sin. It's something natural. It's not narrow-mindedness. But, I offer my admiration and gratitude toward that disposition.」

Director Dime offered his hand. It seemed he was asking for a handshake of reconciliation. Naturally, Kousuke also responded. The terribly hard and rugged palm was more like a veteran warrior rather than a clergyman as expected.

Coupled with his eye glint that seemed to want to say 「I'll twist and crush your hand you bastard!」, Kousuke kept twitching.

Beside them, Claudia was smiling cheerfully looking really happy was the minimum salvation. She was splendidly softening the place's atmosphere.

As expected from the saint. In his mind the word "phony" was slightly attached with that title, but inside his heart he was sending applause saying 「You are a saint just as I thought!」.

But, the smiling face of such Claudia was changing the flow of event slightly.

Kousuke was going to let go of the handshake, but for some reason Director Dime wouldn't let go. The strength of the grip was like a vise.

'Eh?' Kousuke thought. Director Dime's words came toward such Kousuke.

「By the way, I wish to offer my gratitude for taking back Claire from the Unknown. If there is anything you want, then I wish to accommodate it as much as possible.」

「Ri, right, your welcome? But, I don't really wish any――」

Clench, strength entered Director Dime's hand. The glint of his eye seemed to say 「Shut your mouth. If not I'll annihilate you!」.

「However, in the end it’s only as much as possible. It will be helpful if I can ask you to please refrain from asking something that cross the limit. Yes, for example like asking for Claire or something, you understand me?」

「Wai-, director!? What are you saying!?」

‘Really, just what is this old man saying. Rather, the hand! Your hand is gripping too hard! My hand is making creaking sound! The pressure is too much!’

Kousuke read the mood and refrained from saying that no matter how much he wanted to.

But, seeing Claudia who was flustered and panicked with bright red face, Director Dime’s eye glint was growing even sharper. It was already a sharpness that seemed to say 「Curse you world, I’ll kill you!」!

「I, I won’t wish for something like that!」

「Something, like that?」

Now he understood. Director Dime, right now he wasn’t a director. He was just a stupid parent! He was just a stupid parent who was giving his everything to put a check on the opposite sex that his daughter the saint was harboring interest to for the first time!

At the corner of his sight, the dejected Claudia, Wynn and others who were holding their head, and then the members of Omnibus who were gathering around were sending their gaze to him. Kousuke let out cold sweat.

But, Kousuke was a man who could learn. He wouldn’t do the same failure like the time with Emily for the second time. Being unable to speak out would result in scene of carnage

(lol), the experience of bothering the airport staffs once was enough!

「I, I! Have a lover! I know that your daughter, is a really charming woman but! I have a lover so I absolutely won't lay my hand on her!」

「……Oh. Is that so? Oh dear, I jumped to a wrong conclusion. Really, growing old is a fearful thing.」

The idiot parent Director Patrick Dime smoothly let go of his hand. His eye glint was also calming down to a mere 「You bastard, I'll send you to hospital!」.

「……Lover……lover……rover?」

「Cla, Claudia-sama? Are you alright?」

Claudia was throwing his gaze to empty air 'hoe~' while she was there in body but not in spirit. Anna guessed various things while calling out to her.

The people of Omnibus also looked at each other's face while smiling wryly. They sighed in relieve and turned a complicated gaze toward Kousuke……

In any case, it was really clear that Claudia was loved by everyone.

Most likely, after the attempt to capture Kousuke before this, Claudia was giving a fervent speech about Kousuke. And then, there was no doubt that she was also unprecedentedly angry at that time.

Their saint who had never got involved in romantic talk to the level of being a sheltered girl was holding interest to a man for the first time. She was talking about him while

blushing. Including the fact that the man was one of the returnees, there was no doubt that they were paying attention to Kousuke in various meaning.

But, when the lid was opened, it was like this. The saint sunk instantly before the romance could begin……

Of course, Claudia's feeling still wasn't something so clear that she would wish for such relationship, so in a sense, it was good that the existence of Kousuke's lover was exposed here but……

「O lord, please grant punishment to this deeply sinful me! My heart is encroached by dark cloud, heavy thunder roared inside, it is raging violently like a hail of ice! Please, bestow a tribulation to me who has lost my pure heart! O lord-!」

「Cla, Claudia-sama! Please calm do~~wn! Ah, hey, what are you planning to do by activating the Holy Cross!? Ah, no, it's just going out of control? Anyway please calm do~~wn!」

The place became chaos.

Anna desperately tried to make Claudia who suddenly started confessing to god to return to her senses. The other people also rushed toward her in panic.

「……Err, director. Perhaps it will be better to give a tour to Endou……sama about this facility? The preparation for the Obelisk and also the saint barrier is also still continuing.」

「Hm. I guess so, Aziz. Mr. Endou, if you like, let me give you a tour inside Omnibus. If you don't need it, we have prepared a room so you can build up your readiness there. We have also prepared meal although it's nothing much. I will assign Aziz for your assistance, so if you need something you can tell Aziz.」

「Ye, yeah, thank you for that.」

He was thinking whether it would be fine to disregard that saint, but for some reason she was kneeling while praying passionately, so Kousuke quickly averted his gaze.

And then, Director Dime gave instructions one after another while sending away the gathering Omnibus members. Young man Aziz came in front of Kousuke during that.

「Endou……sama. I am Aziz Stein. Thank you very much for that time. For saving me, and also Nee-san……」

「Ah, Aziz-kun. You were seriously injured but, are you fine already?」

「……I won't mind if you call me Aziz without honorific. My injury, yes, thanks to the medicine that Endou, sama applied, it is mostly healed.」

「That's great. Well, Wynn-san and others too, although they should be injured quite seriously too, they look like they are completely recovered, so I guess Omnibus also has something like healing type magic――aa~, you call it miracle here right? Yeah, look like you guys here also have something like that, so that might be a needless aid. Ah, also don't call me with "sama". It's fine if you call me Kousuke you know? It looks like it's difficult to call me like that after all.」

「……I'm sorry, then I'll call you Kousuke-san.」

Aziz seemed like he had expressionless face as his default state, but the look of his eyes relaxed slightly at Kousuke's words.

From a glance, he looked like he had difficult personality, but his atmosphere toward Kousuke was soft. As expected, him saving his life and taking back Claudia in respond to his wish must be leaving great impression inside Aziz.

By the way, just as Kousuke guessed, there was also exorcist at Omnibus's side who was handling sacred vessel of healing. It was that exorcist who healed Wynn and others. A male exorcist who was called by others as "elder sister".

「……So, what do you want to do, Kousuke-san? Do you want to have a tour or taking rest in your room?」

「Let's see. I think I want to see things like Obelisk or the saint barrier. Besides, there is also something I want to ask for a bit away from here.」

「? Understood.」

Aziz nodded and he led him forward. They were receiving gaze from Omnibus's members while leaving the old underground headquarters.

It looked like that Aziz was someone taciturn in the first place. He didn't really talk along the way. But, it seemed he was curious about Kousuke and kept sending glances to him.

They rode an old elevator that connected to upper floor while Kousuke opened his mouth in the place of Aziz who was a poor talker.

「By the way, Omnibus's supreme commander is Rome's pope right? I will be too nervous to meet someone like him, but as I thought, perhaps I should at least give a greeting?」

「……I think it's impossible for now. That person is our face at the surface. Certainly he is our supreme commander but,

regarding the matter of this side of the world, he leaves everything to Director Dime.」

It seemed the pope of Rome was being pressed to deal with the bombing incident. For the person himself, he certainly wished to talk with the returnees no matter what, but from the view point of the people around him who didn't know about the circumstance, the returnees were just a Japanese group with unknown background.

If they were going to meet, it inevitably needed to be behind closed door. Also, the pope of Rome himself had no power of exorcist, so he was leaving everything in regard to demon to Director Dime.

The meeting would have to be after they overcame the danger this time and waited for a good time……that was how it would be.

「……Now that the plaza would be turned into battlefield, it will also be troubling if there other people who aren't Omnibus member. So, his holiness is working to not let people at the surface to get closer until the time the fate of the world is decided.」

「I see.」

It wasn't like there would not be anyone inside the Vatican, like staffs or clergymen. But at the very least no one would get closer to the plaza. And then, when the saint barrier by 140 statues was activated, no one would be able to notice what was going on inside the plaza. Sound and sight would be intercepted, and an image of peaceful plaza would be projected to the outside world.

「Aziz will also be in the assault team?」

「……Yes. There will be Claudia-sama, me, Wynn-san and Anna. Other than them, we will also send 80 percent of our whole force.」

「What about the director?」

「The director, he will act as fighting force along with several remaining exorcists against the demons in case they appear here. Though honestly speaking, I got the feeling that the director alone will be enough……」

Young man Aziz was making a distant look for some reason.

When Kousuke asked, it seemed Patrick-san was previously the strongest exorcist who held the title of “Holy Apostle”. Because the previous director died, he was in his current position as replacement, but different from Claudia who was the strongest in the aspect of being a fortified gun battery, it seemed the director was the strongest solely in physical aspect. Even now when his age had gone past 70.

「Eh, wait a second. That person, didn’t he carry a metal book that seems like a grimoire? I completely thought he would draw spell or something and then using that to cause miracle from the rear.」

「……You must mean the “Book of Sacred Destruction”. Certainly, it’s a sacred vessel of the highest class that can use five miracles of barrier, binding, attack, healing, and strengthening.」

「Ain’t that right.」

「……But, the director used it solely as blunt weapon.」

「Hm? Blunt weapon?」

According to Aziz, just like how a teacher would use book to hit a sleeping student awake, it seemed the director directly used that metal book to hit demon. Or else he would wrapped chain around it and used it as flail, or else he would hold it up as shield, sometimes he would throw it to shot down the enemy.

Like that, his nicknames when he was young were “Beating Priest”, “Desecrator of Book”, “That guy, he actually got no fait at all ain’t he?”, Absolute Demon Killerman”, “Physical Miracle User”, and so on.

「……He is a person who had created many legends. In the past, there were four demons who were members of the Solomon 72 Pillars appearing at the same time. He chased them away alone, and he also mounted the last one and then beat it up black and blue. It was still talked even now. It’s also written in our teaching material, that we absolutely mustn’t try to copy that.」

The exorcist comrades who came running to the scene of battle at that time saw Patrick-san continuing to beat up the demon using “Book of Sacred Destruction” expressionlessly and for a moment it seemed they thought he was the demon. ‘We have to save the assaulted victim!’ they thought.

「Seriously? If it’s like that, isn’t it better to send the director to attack hell instead……」

「……No, to kill Unknown, the “King Class” with certainty, it has to be Claudia-sama no matter what. There was no user of Holy Cross for decades. There is no sacred vessel that surpass it.」

‘Besides’, Aziz continued. According to him, putting aside when he was in this world, Director Dime was old, so he wouldn’t be able to endure the “Wind of Lamentation” in hell for long.

「Eh? There is countermeasure against it?」

「……Yes. It’s by using holy water. If we consume it, we will be able to hold out for around one hour.」

「One hour……」

‘Short’, Kousuke thought. It might not be a problem if they could immediately face the enemy right after entering hell, but although they understood the location, it would be a battle after investigating the vast hell. He couldn’t help but thought that it was a really severe limitation.

「……In any case, not everyone will be able to reach Unknown. More than half will become sacrificial pawn in order to send Claudia-sama to reach the Unknown. I said one hour because it’s the possible survival time for a person in case the holy water is divided equally.」

「——tsu」

From the beginning no one intended to have everyone returned alive from hell. Perhaps, even Claudia wasn’t thinking about the path to return home after defeating the Unknown.

「Hey, Aziz. To be frank, I think it’s pointless. When Yue-san get serious, there is no being who can win against her. What’s more Shirasaki and others will also be with her, even I will join in. No matter how powerful a demon Unknown is, our victory is unwavering. This isn’t being overconfident or being optimistic, it’s a fact.」

‘That’s why, stop with your plan of going to hell’, Kousuke spoke implicitly.

However, even after hearing the words that could be taken as humiliation to all the exorcists, Aziz gazed back straightforwardly at him without even looking angry at all.

「……Even so, we are exorcist.」

That was why, we couldn’t just watch. Even if there wasn’t even a one in thousand chance, there might be a one in hundred million chance the worst could happen. That was why, even if it was pointless they would risk their life.

「……Besides?」

「Besides?」

Seeing the exorcist who was younger than him showing a will of steel, Kousuke also returned a straightforward gaze in respond.

But, the continuation of the words that Aziz was going to say didn’t come out. It seemed he recalled just barely that it was something he shouldn’t say.

Aziz didn’t open his mouth even after waiting for a while. While they were talking while walking, they came out into a room inside the Vatican Palace. From there, they passed through a passage inside a wall once more, and they unexpectedly came out to the rooftop of Vatican Palace.

They could take an unbroken view of St. Peter’s Plaza from here. The traces of bombing here and there were dirtying the beautiful plaza. It was really sad. The members of Omnibus were busily running around the plaza. There were

also a lot of saint statues at the surrounding. They were praying to the statues, or placing some kind of tool around.

Depending on the situation, it would become the last fortress that protected earth. Every single one of them looked desperate.

Here, Bernard and others would also arrive in a few more hours.

Kousuke stared at the plaza for a while, and then he brought up the important subject to Aziz.

「About the continuation of “besides” that you said before, is it about Claire?」

「!」

It seemed he hit the bull’s eye. Aziz’s face seemed to ask how did he know.

「When Yue-san said to leave it to us, Claire, she made a face as though she was enduring something. Her expression immediately returned to normal but……Wynn-san said that Claire’s clumsiness is worse than usual. I was wondering that perhaps, it wasn’t just her being freed from her tension after the discussion ended, that perhaps her focus was on other things and she was distracted.」

「That’s……」

「I’m only guessing but, Claire, does she want to defeat Unknown by her own hand?」

「tsu……Kousuke-san, you, how far you……」

「I don’t know anything about Claire’s circumstance. I’m only wondering that she is being targeted by Unknown to become a mother body, could it be related somehow to “twelve years ago” when that guy was confirmed for the first time?」

Kousuke’s gaze that was directed to the plaza glanced at Aziz. Aziz reflexively averted his gaze quickly.

「……」

Aziz fell silent. He could be seen hesitating. He wanted to talk. But, it wasn’t something that he should say. Kousuke could clearly understand that Aziz was thinking like that.

Kousuke shrugged and spoke with a wry smile.

「My bad, I don’t think it will trouble you that much. I only thought of asking about what you know of the incident twelve years ago while you are giving me a tour……it seems, it’s not a story that can be talked that easily huh.」

「No……」

Silence filled the place for a while. There was only the hustling and bustling of people reaching their ears.

Before long, Kousuke was going to suggest for them to return back. But before he could, Aziz opened his mouth.

「……I, I don’t want Nee-san to die.」

「……Yes.」

「As an exorcist, it’s out of the question to be holding one’s life dear before a battle against demon. But, even so, I want Nee-san to live. She is the person who saved me from that

cold place. Kindness, warmth, those kind of things, it was Nee-san who gave them all to me.

.....

Aziz Stein, He was born between parents who worshipped demon. He was raised as sacrifice for the sake of summoning a greater demon.

Six years ago. Before he was safeguarded at eight years old, he didn’t even have his own will. He wasn’t allowed to. That was only natural. There was no need at all to grant humanity to a child who would be sacrificed someday.

General education and the minimum skill to interact with other people were crammed into him so they wouldn’t be suspected by the surrounding. Even so in the end that was just an acting that he was made to learn. It was like programming a robot to take action A if action B was taken against him.

Far from acting like a child, he didn’t even have human-like emotion. Aziz was like a puppet. It was Director Dime who adopted him because he had the quality to become exorcist. And then, it was Claudia who taught him humanity from zero.

That was why, it was only Aziz who wasn’t Claudia’s subordinate or comrade, but a little brother.

The truth is, if the returnees will end everything, I don’t want Nee-san to go to hell. If I have power, I want to defeat Unknown.

But,

「But, that’s not Nee-san’s wish……. I don’t want to let Nee-san go to her death but, I also want to grant her wish just as much.」

「……Wish, huh.」

Aziz turned his gaze toward Kousuke glaringly. A drop of tear was gathering at the corner of his eye.

「I thought it was a miracle. It was already hopeless, I understood that I’ll be dead, reality is always cruel, that was why, I thought that it was over already. And yet, you appeared. Like a miracle, you smashed even the cold reality. For me you, it’s you who are exactly, the messenger of god.」

Aziz turned his body along to fully face him. Kousuke also turned fully toward him.

「Can you, save Nee-san for me?」

Aziz thought that it was a wish that was only convenient for him. His face was thinking, ‘no way miracle can happen that many times in human’s life’.

Even so, he was cursing his own weakness that couldn’t help but cling on other while helplessly trying to grasp the string of salvation that was hanging before his eyes……

‘Aa, surely this is how those cultists think’, Aziz thought. He who was born as their child and understood their feeling was disqualified as an exorcist, and as a servant of god. Surely he wouldn’t be welcomed into the heaven.

The wind blew gently and caressed Aziz’s front hair. His look that peeked out made it even clearer how young he was when seen from nearby. It could be seen from his desperate

expression how much he didn’t want to let go of the family that he finally obtained.

For a little while, Kousuke stared fixedly at Aziz who was waiting for answer. Before long he scratched his head. With a small voice he was muttering 「This is bad, really bad, me. Depending on the case, it will be a bit of deathly situation even before facing the demons……」.

But, a beat later, he roughly stroked Aziz’s head that was tilted in confusion. And then, he smiled wryly at the surprised Aziz while,

「For now, I’ll go to where Claire is.」

Saying that, he turned on his heel. 「Ah……」 Aziz’s voice slipped out. Kousuke turned to look across his shoulder while adding more words.

「Well, it will work out somehow.」

Aziz was dumbfounded. And then, the next moment his face turned like he would burst out crying and he deeply bowed his head.

He kept doing so until that back which looked extremely big vanished from view.

–

–

–

Inside the church. There was someone kneeling in front of the altar offering prayer. It was Claudia.

Her bright atmosphere when she arrived at Omnibus’s underground facility didn’t remain at the slightest. She was simply maintaining the silence. But, seeing how the two hands that were clasped together in front of her chest were turning white, it was clear how hard she was tightly clenching her hands. It shed light how her mind wasn’t calm by any mean.

Suddenly, Claudia lifted her face. And then she turned around.

“Oo, you notice me just as I thought. Even though I was hiding myself a bit.”

“Kousuke-sama.”

Claudia smiled a bright and gentle smile. Kousuke too also smiled happily that he was being noticed.

“How did you notice?”

“Why do you think that I won’t notice?”

Both of them tilted their head in confusion looking like they were wondering from the bottom of their heart. A beat later, they laughed together at the funny situation.

“What are you praying for?”

“For everyone’s safety, and for the people’s peace.”

“Hm~m, is that so?”

Kousuke’s reply felt like it was implying something. Claudia’s eyes twitched for an instant.

“This is a dangerous time for the world. Isn’t such prayer only natural?”

「No, I completely thought that you are praying to the god of clumsy girl for betterment……」

「What is god clumsy girl!? There is no such god! Or rather, it make it sounds like my god is a clumsy girl!」

As expected, it seemed she couldn’t overlook making joke of god. She pointed straight with her index finger looking like a big sister scolding 「Bad!」 to a naughty kid. She was glaring at Kousuke. But, as expected her appearance and atmosphere were gentle and soft, so it was lacking in pressure.

That kind of aspect was really like the image of saint in general. Kousuke was thinking things like whether Claire’s vocation was something like childcare worker or the like.

「My bad. I guess it was a joke that isn’t suitable for a clergy. But well, it’s also a fact that it didn’t look like that your prayer was wholeheartedly for the peace of the world.」

「Eh?」

Claudia spontaneously held her breath. Kousuke stood at her side and stared at the large cross that was hung up in the church.

「Why are you going to hell?」

It was a question that could be considered as philosophical question, but Claudia guessed the meaning accurately.

「Of course, it’s because that is the mission of us exorcists. ……From the view point of Kousuke-sama and others, perhaps you think that we are unreliable or that it will be meaningless but……」

‘That’s not true’, he couldn’t say that.

In fact, Kousuke thought that it was meaningless. Inside Kousuke, Hajime, Yue, and others were the world’s strongest without any room for argument. If something brought them harm then they would obliterate it, whether it was demon or god. They were transcendental people who could possibly do that.

Although, for the exorcists who didn’t have that deep of connection with the returnees, it was natural that they couldn’t have that much trust. Thus, he had no intention to reject their ardor to also ride into hell as insurance.

They also had their own pride. They were literally risking their life for the mission of protecting mankind from demon. Even if it would end up meaningless, there wasn’t the slightest reason for them to not take action.

Just like how Omnibus had no right to stop the returnees, the returnees also had no right to stop Omnibus.

「Mission is it? You all have been fighting all this time for that. You cannot just concede the fate of the world to some group that you don’t really know although you have confirmed their strength and achievement to a certain degree. I understand that.」

「Kousuke-sama……」

「But, for Claudia, that’s not all right?」

「Tsu……that’s……」

Kousuke moved his gaze from the cross toward Claudia.

「Did something happen twelve years ago?」

「……」

Claudia held her tongue. This time it was her who turned her gaze toward the cross. But it was an action that should be called “averting one’s gaze”.

「……An incident happened when Unknown’s existence was confirmed for the first time. I mentioned that.」

「Yep. And, Claudia is related to that incident, that’s why, you actually don’t want us to subjugate the Unknown. Isn’t that right?」

「The, there is no way I’m thinking like that-」

Claudia’s voice turned panicky. That was the greatest proof that he hit the bull’s eye.

Surely even she herself also thought so. Claudia gasped and closed her mouth, however she sighed in resignation knowing that she couldn’t cover it up.

「Kousuke-sama is actually a terrible person aren’t you? Doing something like trying to forcefully expose a maiden’s secret like this.」

Even though she was doing her best to suppress the emotion that wanted to overflow out. Even though she wanted to be a saint, a model exorcist and desperately formed her determination.

‘Isn’t it fine for me to be an exorcist that pushed forward for the mission?’, Claudia glared at Kousuke reproachfully with such gaze.

Kousuke’s wry smile deepened while he opened his mouth.

「Frankly speaking, for me, the incident this time has stopped being a serious problem by the time Yue-san and others came out. I can see that Claire and others are going to ride into hell with the resolve to die but, well, you all won't die. I won't let that happen after all.」

「uu……」

Claudia glared while her cheeks were reddening slightly.

Kousuke didn't really let that bother him and he continued.

「The exorcist called Leda. I heard his last scream.」

「Leda……we recovered his body. As I thought, it was Kousuke-sama.」

「Yes. That guy, he was crying. He said, please save me.」

「……」

Claudia's gentle look warped into anguish. The traitor exorcist——Leda Rocca. She was acquainted with him for a long time. To the degree that she thought of him as big brother.

With what kind of feeling he betrayed them? Did he give his heart to the demon? Hearing Leda's last words, Claudia guessed it. Not a few number of exorcist, especially exorcist with abundant experience, would one day become suddenly seized by a feeling.

Her chest was flooded with a feeling of shame from her inability to sense his completely exhausted heart.

「Also, I was also told, save her, by someone.」

「……It's Aziz isn't it?」

Kousuke shrugged. Claudia was making a conflicted expression that was in hesitation, wondering whether she should be happy, or should she be angry at her step-brother who was making a mistaken wish as exorcist.

Kousuke turned his body to fully face Clauda, and then peered into her jade colored eyes so that she wouldn’t dodge the matter.

「If I didn’t notice, then that would be fine too. But, if I have noticed, then it’s a bit difficult to act clueless. If it was some time ago, then I might avert my eyes but, it seems, I am a hero for the people who are idolizing me.」

Claudia puffed up her cheeks, thinking that he really was a terrible person. After all when he said such thing while staring at her, the first on the list of those “people who idolized him” must be another woman, yes, surely it was that cute girl with blonde hair.

She puffed up her cheeks like balloon, however, she didn’t avert her gaze at all. A feeling of embarrassment was welling up inside her, thinking that her face that was reflected on the eyes of Kousuke who was staring on her, was able to make this kind of face.

Without minding something like Claudia’s state of mind, Kousuke asked the thing that he wanted to know the most with a powerful voice.

「We will finish everything, with that――」

――’Will Claudia Barenberg be saved?’

She would be saved. Obviously she would be saved. It didn’t matter who would be the one to defeat that greater demon who was attempting to rule this world. The peace of her

important people. If the powerful enemy of human race could be destroyed, she would happily bow her head, offer her life, and took every possible method that was more certain.

That was only natural. Whether as an exorcist, and also as a human.

Something like personal feeling……

Something like personal grudge……

There wasn’t even any need to weigh the two choices……

And yet, when she noticed,

「——The truth is-, I want to defeat him-」

She yelled so.

「Having it ended in some place I don’t know, by people who I don’t know, such thing-」

The gaze that didn’t allow her to avert her eyes dragged out the heart that she was desperately pushing down.

「Just how much do you think I have worked hard!? I vomited blood-, I even threw away normal life-. I risked my life-. Everything is for defeating that guy-, Unknown-. I gave my everything!!」

Yes, everything,

「In order to take revenge for my father and mother!!」

From frustration, from sadness, tears were overflowing in large drops from Claudia’s eyes.

It was only one time, for her to cry like this, expressing her emotion. That day, the day she lost everything, in front of Director Dime who became her second father, the day she declared to become exorcist.

Since that day she swore the oath to defeat Unknown without fail someday until today, she had never shouted and cried like this.

But, the dam of her heart once broken couldn't be fixed that easily……

Claudia grabbed Kousuke's clothes as though to vent her anger and strongly pressed her forehead on his chest.

Kousuke softly patted her back, *pon pon* in consideration.

Like that, what she spoke mumblingly along with words that were spilling out from her mouth, it was certainly a "arifureta common story" for those who fought demon. It was something that was helplessly tragic.

Twelve years ago.

When Claudia was nine years old. It was her father's birthday.

The impetus was from a long time friend of her father.

Her father himself wouldn't hesitate to call that person his best friend. That man would be invited several times a month to their house for meal. Claudia was also looking up to him as a kind uncle who she often played with.

She would even rely on that "uncle who was father's best friend" and consulted of things that she couldn't say to her

parents from embarrassment. For example, yes, like what present would make her father the happiest in his birthday.

Uncle smiled brightly and told her. The dread that ran on her back for an instant that time was something that Claudia should be more concerned about but……it was too unfair to ask that from a nine year old girl.

Uncle lowered his voice, as though he would speak a secret, as though he was going to reveal something confidential.

——’How about I teach you a method to have angel come to your house?’

Claudia didn’t doubt his words. The reason was because Barenberg family was devoted Catholic for generations. And then, uncle was also a priest.

‘Uncle is amazing! To think you know a method to meet angel!’

Being able to invite angel in father’s birthday. Surely father would be happy!

Of course, this was a tragic story.

Therefore, the summoning succeeded. And then, what appeared was,

So it was Unknown.

……Yes.

Claudia’s magic power that was tremendous for an earthling, and the correct summoning method. And then, using the medium of Claudia herself who was the best sacrifice,

Unknown that was summoned by *uncle* killed Claudia’s father who was the target.

“I only knew this later but, that man, it looked like he was harboring feeling toward my mother.”

With the man’s position as a priest, they wouldn’t be able to marry, therefore he had also never confessed his feeling. Before long Claudia’s mother married with her father, and Claudia was born.

There wasn’t anything like a big impetus that made him threw away his faith. After continuing to watch the happiness that might be obtained by him, he was unable to distance himself even though he understood that he should, and before long his dissatisfaction became hatred to god, and it accumulated……

Yes, he then succumbed to temptation.

The man who was going mad bit by bit in the end sold his soul to demon.

What was unexpected was Claudia’s disposition that was too excellent as medium, no, it could even be said as the best.

“I don’t know if it was an accident, or inevitability. It was Unknown who was summoned. That guy obeyed the contract and killed father, and just before he took me as sacrifice, he noticed my value.”

“As a mother body?”

“Yes. In the first place, that man’s summoning ceremony didn’t have that much power to be able to restrain Unknown. Unknown killed that man, and then he also killed mother in

front of me just to make me despair. In front of me, mama and papa’s necks were-」

Her hand clenched hard on Kousuke’s chest. Even though she was looking down, he knew. Surely, her expression was distorted into hatred. It wasn’t a saint there, but the woman called Claudia Barenberg was laid bare there.

The story after that was exactly like what he heard in the security bureau.

Actually, from slightly before that, Omnibus that grasped the information that there was a person who was deeply investigating about demon even while being a priest was investigating that man. Therefore, after Unknown was summoned, exorcists came running relatively quickly.

But, with his power that was already mighty from the beginning, Unknown’s power in the state of half materialized from obtaining Claudia’s magic power was tremendous. The exorcists were helpless against him, however, just before they were annihilated, Unknown was pulled back due to intervention from hell.

He was dragged away while screaming that when the time came, he would come for Claudia to use her as mother body.

「Since that day twelve years ago, I have trained until now for the sake of this day. I understand-. I really understand-. It’s the best choice to leave this to Kousuke-sama and others! But, however, then what about my twelve years!? This pitch black feeling of mine, how should I clear it up!?」

Above all else,

「How should I apologize to mama and papa!?」

Yes, that was exactly the foundation of Claudia.

She had desire of revenge. Her body was also burning with hatred.

However, her prime feeling was that.

Something that was called out by her shallow self killed her father and mother. Creating a tragedy that couldn’t be taken back.

Even though she couldn’t even apologize anymore. Even though the people who she should repent toward weren’t in this world anymore.

If she couldn’t even end this matter with her own hand, then how should she apologize to her father and mother.

Even if they wouldn’t forgive her, even if Claudia herself wouldn’t be able to forgive herself for her whole life, killing the enemy was the only remaining atonement for her.

Claudia’s yell that was as though she was vomiting blood echoed inside the church.

That voice resounded excessively clearly. When it completely vanished, even when silence returned to the church, there wasn’t any words from the two for a while.

Before long, Claudia slowly separated her body from Kousuke.

「……This is how I am. It’s ugly right? I desperately persuaded myself that it’s my mission as an exorcist, and I was finally able to keep up my respectability. Even so, I vented my feeling like this to you, I’m only a human of this level.」

Dark eyes, and clumsy stiff smile.

‘I have nothing more to say’, ‘please leave me alone’, or perhaps she was unable to endure Kousuke’s straightforward gaze, she averted her gaze as though to say those. Claudia kneeled in front of the cross in order to deceive her heart once more.

But, before that,

「If you use the Holy Cross, will you be able to kill that guy for sure?」

「……Eh?」

It wasn’t scorning words or even consoling words. It was just confirming words, which caused Claudia to become befuddled spontaneously.

Kousuke lightly ignored such bewildered state of Claudia and asked more.

「So? Will you be able to defeat him with certainty? Or else is it just a gamble with low odd?」

「Eh, ah, err, I, I think I can defeat him.」

「You think?」

Kousuke repeated with a sharp gaze and tone that sounded criticizing. Claudia corrected herself in panic.

「I, I can defeat him. The Holy Cross, it’s different from the other sacred vessel. The opponent’s strength is irrelevant, it will display tremendous effect simply because the opponent is demon. There are also several records that mentioned how it destroyed King Class demon in the past.」

「I see. Can you use it perfectly?」

Kousuke's question that was too serious and pressuring caused Claudia to only be able to nod up and down repeatedly in high speed.

Seeing that, Kousuke nodded 「Yosh」. After that, for some reason, with a stiff expression as though he was going to head toward a certain death, while he was trickling out cold sweat as though he was facing a death god――he pressed the buttons of his smartphone *pi-po-pa*.

Tururururu Kousuke was listening to the calling sound with an expression like a prisoner who was listening to the countdown of the execution.

And then,

「……Nn. Endou. Finished preparing?」

「Not yet, Yue-san. There is a chance in strategy, so I'm contacting you.」 (TN: Endou used extremely polite language here.)

From the other side of the phone, voice of 「Nn?」 resounded continued with 「Heh?」 from right beside him.

「……What do you mean?」

「It's a switch of the assault team and the reserve team. The main force will be the exorcist force lead by the saint and me. Yue-san and others, please remain as the reserve force.」

「……」

'The silence, it's terrifying!' As though to say that, Kousuke's hand was trembling in contrast with his strong tone.

「……I said, I will exterminated that lot. They picked a fight, I accepted. Any complaint?」

「I, I have. It will be troubling if Yue-san exterminates them. Claire has accepted the fight first. Claire will be the one to settle the bill.」

In the middle of the conversation, Yue must felt doubtful at Kousuke's incomprehensible request and put the call to speaker mode. From the other side of the phone, the agitated commotion of the classmates were conveyed. 「He, he is, talking back to Yue-sama!? Kousuke-, do you want to die!?」「Endou-kun-, you mustn't be hasty! Come back to your senses!」「Lord, will die」「What a novel way of suicide」, and so on could be heard.

Kousuke was trembling fiercely, but seeing at his side Claudia was holding her breath while covering her mouth with her hands, he firmly held his position.

「I understand that Yue-san is angry, I also understand that leaving this to Yue-san will be the quickest and surest way to end this matter. But, it's no good like that. There won't be salvation. I'm begging you, Yue-san. First, please let us do it.」

「……Even though it's concerning the fate of the world?」

「Ko, Kousuke-sama!? This is concerning the fate of the world you know!?」

Yue talked indifferently while Claudia talked nervously.

Kousuke looked at Claudia, however, his focus turned toward the scaa~ry vampire princess at the other side of the phone and he snorted 「Hah」.

「So what if it’s the fate of the world. I’m the right-hand man of the man who murdered the hell out of a god for the sake of a single woman y’know? What’s the point weighing the world and a woman at this point huh. Don’t say anything worthless like that if you are the first wife of the demon king.」

Screams resounded from the other side of the phone. It was the voices of the classmates. 「Kousuke! Kowtow right away! Life is the most important thing!」 or 「Yue-san! That guy, his head is a bit like that! Please forgive him!」 and so on could be heard.

Kousuke, his tone was strong, however, with a face that was the color of ash, he raised his voice in a desperation that was already abandoning everything.

「In the first place, this is an extension of the job that Nagumo entrusted to me. That’s why, I’ll take care of it my way. Yue-san and others should butt out from this.」

‘I said it! I really said it! I’m sorry please forgive me!’ The abyss lord of his heart was kowtowing.

Time that was equal to eternity was flowing. The other side of the phone was also dead silent. Air of tension where even the sound of gulping might be audible was hanging within the silence.

「……Endou, turn on the speaker.」

Kousuke who swiftly obeyed Yue’s instruction. It felt like his trembling hand would cut the phone call by itself, but he desperately controlled himself. If he cut the call right now, Kousuke’s nether region would also get cut. It wouldn’t be smash, but a slash coming for that spot. Seriously spare him from that.

「……Claudia Barenberg.」

「Ye, yes!」

Yue must had heard the voice of Claudia before this. It was Claudia who Yue was speaking to.

Claudia replied with a nervous state. Her back was stiffly straight.

After a bit of silence, Yue silently asked.

「……Speak the important thing, with your own words. What do you want to do?」

「Tsu……that's……」

It seemed Yue had guessed various things from Kousuke's words and the discussion in security bureau. She directly asked Claudia of her feeling.

Claudia was at a loss for words. Her mission as exorcist resounded in her heart. She could hear the voice of god scolding her ugly heart. That voice insisted 'throw away personal feeling'.

A voice reached such Claudia.

「What's so bad about revenge?」

「Kousuke-sama?」

「Is it that bad to have ugly heart huh. We're human. Even that, is a "heart" that everyone naturally have right?」

「A heart, that human, have……」

Kousuke walked toward Claudia and he began to speak while forgetting that the speaker mode was already on.

「Even exorcists are human. Leda wanted to be saved. Even Aziz was asking for salvation. Wynn-san and Anna-san, other people of Omnibus, even the director are surely like that too. Selfless devotion――yeah, those are wonderful words. I respect that. But, if people you want to save cannot be saved because of that, then it can eat shit.」

Claudia's eyes snapped wide open. Kousuke grabbed Claudia's shoulder and turned a blazing gaze toward her.

「I am strong you know? I'll crush any obstacle whatever it is, I'll open the door that Claire wished for. That's why, don't line up tedious apology and just say it. What do you have to do so that Claire, Claire and everyone else can be saved?」

「……」

A face that was going to cry was reflected on Kousuke's eyes. However, compared to the stiff smile that looked despairing before this, it was a far better face. Kousuke's lips split open into a wide fearless grin.

Claudia scrubbed her eyes hard. While thinking of things like 'Aa, this person, he is certainly suitable to be a demon king's right-hand man. It's unthinkable that he is god's messenger. After all he is giving this kind of sweet temptation like a demon'.

And then, with a voice that was filled with spirit, she yelled toward Yue who was waiting for an answer at the other side of the phone while her gaze was still fixed on Kousuke.

「I will be the one to defeat that guy! Since that day twelve years ago, that guy is my prey! Please don't get involved!」

The noisy other side of the phone fell silent *shi~n* once more.

A beat later, Yue opened her mouth.

「.....I see. It can’t be helped if there is a prior reservation.」

「Tsu.....is it, really fine?」

「.....Nn.」

The voice didn’t contain anger or even displeasure. Rather, Yue continued her words with a voice that even emitted warmth.

「.....However, if you show too much unsightliness, I’ll take care of it right away.」

「That’s, yes. But of course.」

「.....Nn. Even if you fail.....I won’t hand over this world. So don’t worry, do your best.」

「Aa.....」

Understanding that it was Yue’s encouragement in her own way, Claudia was at a loss for words. ‘You can follow your own feeling and realize it without feeling troubled.....’, because she understood that Yue was meaning like that.

However, before she could actually convey her gratitude, Yue’s voice returned to being cold and called Kousuke.

「Yes, Yue-san.」

「.....Endou. You are getting conceited huh. Remember this when you go back.」

「*EE!?* Wai-, Yue-san!? Just now, how should I say it, it was like the flow of the atmosphere or-」

「……Emirin's eyes are also pitch black. My lightning dragon is growling. And then, everyone here is grinning.」

「!!?」

From the other side of the phone,

「Kousuke!? That person is really that fine!? Because she has big breast!?」

「Emily, calm down. Kousuke-san. As someone who will become a father-in-law, I want to have a little bit of talk with you later, it's fine right?」

「Kousuke. Right now, Onii-chan is feeling unprecedented respect and desire to kill.」

「Ko, Kou-nii, spare me alreadyyy. Speaking out such embarrassing line in front of this many people……just what kind of face I should make as your little sister~?」

「……Dear, what should we do? That Kousuke, making a new wife again……」

「That's, right. Shuu-san, next time, how about having meal together with Hajime-kun with only us men? Regarding Kousuke's future, I want to ask for consultation about various things though.」

「Ha-ha-ha, of course it's okay. I'll give you a lecture about the way to spend a fun life with a lot of daughter-in-law!」

Such voices from family came. And then the usual voices from the male classmates that were like 'Abyss lord should

die no mercy, but I respect you a bit. Please introduce to us cute exorcist girl’ also came through.

「Ko, Kousuke-sama? Are you all right?」

「Kousuke……isn’t fine, desu.」(TN: Perhaps a reference to Haruna of Kantai Collection)

With a roundabout talk that felt familiar from somewhere, his complexion was busily changing from blue to red, from white to yellow, and then back to red again, while his eyes was changing into the dead eyes of rotten fish. Claudia-san, she was a bit creeped out, thinking 「Hu, human, can change complexion color like this?」.

Kousuke was muttering ‘I don’t want to return to home(Japan)……’ with a small voice. Yue-sama sent her words toward such Kousuke. Her voice was fearless, while sounding a bit amused.

「……Endou. You are recognized by many as someone who Hajime trust. And then, you are someone who will become Shia’s relative. Mere big talk won’t be tolerated.」

「……I will surely take responsibility for the words that I spat out.」

「……Nn. Endou, I’ll say it in Hajime’s place.」

「Yes.」

「……I’ll leave the rest to you.」

「Roger. I’ll take care of the rest. ……Thank you very much, Yue-san.」

At the end Yue replied 「Nn」 and cut the call.

Kousuke sighed in relieve. Claudia approached him timidly, and then she looked up with an expression of reflection. Naturally, her eyes that were gazing up at him were glistening with passion and tears og gratitude.

It was an expression that would surely make anyone staggered in one hit if they were a man.

Claudia was opening her mouth to say something, but it seemed she couldn’t find the words, that her mouth closed and opened several times. The feeling welling up inside was too strong that any kind of words of gratitude felt clichéd, and no words that felt worthy would come out.

Seeing Claudia in such state, Kousuke smiled wryly and shrugged.

「Let’s do something like that when everything is over. What, there is no need to get worked up. Claire can just beat up that bastard to your heart’s content. I’ll cut open the path. The strongest wive~s are guaranteeing the world’s safety. See, there is no problem right?」

「Yehs……yes-. Kousuke-sama-」

Overcame by emotion, Claudia buried her face on Kousuke’s chest once more. Kousuke smiled wryly while patting her back.

But, at that time,

「Mu? What are you guys doing? What? Right now isn’t good? Don’t talk foolishly. Claire is inside right? Aah, make way! It’ll be time for strategy mee――」

The one who entered inside the church was Director Dime who was looking irritated. And then, there were also Wynn,

Anna, and several other members of Omnibus who were clinging on his legs desperately trying to stop him.

The gaze of Director Dime was turned to inside the church. He perfectly caught sight of Claire-chan and Kousuke-kun hugging each other.

The time, stopped.

Anna yelled 「Run awaaay! Kousuke-san-, run awayyyy~~!!」.

Right after that,

「——O lord, please grant your divine protection to your pious believer. Bring down the iron hammer of god to the sinner!」

A metallic book that was taken out from who knew where flew out like a cannon shell. Chain was wrapped around it like a seal. It was a huge book that became like a flail!

「Nowaa!?」

Kousuke immediately dodged by getting down in the form of pushing down Claudia. *GOU-* The “Book of Sacred Destruction” passed above his head along with a sound that caused chill to run through his back, then with a terrible sound of destruction the altar was destroyed.

「Ko, Kousuke-sama……I, I’ll be troubled, if it’s too sudden. As expected, doing it in front of god is……」

「Eh?」

Claudia-san seemed unable to see anything else other than Kousuke. Her cheeks flashed red and then she shyly averted

her gaze without showing resistance.

Clink clink clink The sound of chain was ringing. The “Book of Sacred Destruction” meandered in the air like a living thing and returned to Director Dime. And then, seeing Claudia’s state, the cardinal and the director of anti demon organization who had just destroyed an altar like a demon once more readied his book in a way that was absolutely wrong to use a book.

「Kousuke-sama……you must not……even though you have a lover already……au」

「You bastard, I’ll kill you!」

A saint below. A demon at the entrance.

「……When everything is over, I’ll be alone for a bit, let’s do that.」

Sorrow wafted of from Kousuke whose eyes had genuinely turned dead.

Whether it was in foreign land or his homeland, it seemed there was nothing but suffering waiting for him.

–

–

–

Vatican city, outside the rampart.

There countless silhouettes were starting to gather. Several hundred people were immediately growing to become several thousand people. Their eyes were similarly——red.

The moon tonight was oddly full moon where evil was heightened.

It too was starting to be dyed red.

–

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

※New book information

At 25, Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou volume 8, comic version volume 3, and spinoff “Nichijou” volume 1 will be on sale. The fast place might already have them lined up at the shopfront.

Volume 8 is the arc of conquering great labyrinth of the sea of trees. Like always, other than revision and alteration, there will be extra story too. Especially the last boss battle is almost totally rewritten. It might be interesting to compare with the Web version of which is better.

The left image is the special version that has Drama CD attached. In the chronological order, it happens after conquering Melusine, when they were staying in Ankaji. The barrier of Ankaji can also be used as replacement lie detector. Like Hajime’s lie, or the oasis is a haunted area, or the darkness of the heart overflowing, it’s a story with that kind of after story mood.

Kaori participate for the first time! There will also be the dialogue between Yue and Kaori. Please enjoy it by all means with voice.

Comic version volume 3. There will be a lot of Shia in it. For Shirakome, I think the expression of Yue when getting involved with such Shia is the best. It’s really packed with enjoyment that is special to manga. The right image is the spinoff Nichijou volume 1. There is no more words needed

for this. It’s so interesting Shirakome cannot help but reimport the material. Please pick it up by all means.

Also, this time too there will be various special perks.

The detail will be published in Overlap-sama’s homepage, so very very please, go to check it! Regarding the SS special perk, I’ll at least give a bit of information.

【Animate-sama】

- Arifureta fairy tale ~Snow White~

The fairy tale series that is already turned into a series. This time it’s Snow White. But, the main character will be that person of the dragon country…

【Mirror, o mirror, mirror-san. The one who art the most beautiful in the world art, m, me correct?】——Chih【 It will be a story like that.

【Chain store-sama】

- Prohibited matter of sublimation magic

What sublimation magic can evolve isn’t just magic. Surely feeling can also be evolved.

Then, if a feeling that is already at max value is evolved…a story like that.

【Tora no Ana-sama】

- Beloved daughter’s deficiency disease

While staying in Fea Bergen, the one who showed up suddenly is a rabbit eared little girl. From interacting with the midget girl, the figure of beloved daughter surfaced at

the back of Hajime-papa’s mind…. Hajime who is unusually a bit gentle is priceless, by Yue-sama.

【Gamers-sama & Shosen-sama】

- I’m working as an elder at a black country but, perhaps I’m no good already

Live strongly, Alfrerick! Even if the other elders are like that mostly because of the fault of Hajime and co!

【Melon Books-sama】

- Showing the place you wish for!

How far the power of the compass will reach? What about stalker? My future? Shia’s innocence? Of course they can be found. The compass can find anything.

【Special perk of buying simultaneously – Tora no Ana-sama】

- Arifureta Magic Academy ~School Entrance Ceremony~

This is also magic academy that is turned into series. Myuu finally enrolled. In such event, there is no way the academy’s Calamity Four will be quiet……student council president Shizuku besiege while holding her stomach!

【Special perk of buying simultaneously – Gamers-sama】

- April Fool

Yue-sama who heard about the custom of April Fool from Hajime. Of course, her target was Kaori. But, that lie unexpectedly drag in Fea Bergen too into a great commotion!

That’s all. Is there any SS that attract your interest?

Whichever it is, I will be happy if you can enjoy it.

Also, Overlap’s 5 year anniversary campaign will also happen at the same time, it seem you will also be able to receive special pamphlet here. While presumptuous, Shirakome was also asked to write several SS.

The detail will be published at Overlap-sama’s homepage, so please go check it by all means.

I’m sorry for turning it so long.

Please give your support to Arifureta from here on too.

Arifureta Chapter 315

Arifureta After III Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2 Reinforcement, And Then Storming

–

Director Dime was strong.

Indeed, it certainly was really convincing that this person was even called as “Desecrator of Book” or “Beating Priest”.

The metal book with size of 40 x 30 centimeter wrapped in chain must have weighed for more than ten kilogram. It came flying and swung around with a speed of cannonball, turning into a local and manmade storm, if it was lifted up it would become shield of iron wall toward every attack, blocking anything whether it was sword, knife, or kunai.

Sometimes, the director even rode above the book and moved by sliding around on it.

And then, with incomprehensible physical strength, the director would lightly gripped that book which possessed weight like a war hammer with one hand, and when he swung it around along with spirited voice 「Munh」, the surrounding would be pulverized like a joke.

The art of book fighting which left no opening in close range……

For the time being, Kousuke thought.

‘Read it! That’s a book right!? Read it! It’s a sacred vessel that conceals amazing power right!?’ He thought.

「Woow, Kousuke-san, you’re really amazing. The director’s attack doesn’t hit you even once, as expected from the strangely moving person!」

「Clone technique is it? It’s amazing. It’s truly what you will call the secret technique of the orient. This is the first time I see the director getting subdued.」

Anna and Wynn sent him exaggerated praise.

The place was a church of Omnibus. It was late at night where it would take around one more hour until the obelisk and saint barrier were prepared. After somehow neutralizing the director who was rampaging so that his beloved daughter wouldn’t be taken away, Kousuke and Claudia, along with several other exorcists who were in that place were currently preparing before their storming into hell.

Kousuke spoke with strangely distant gaze.

「To think……I couldn’t subdue him without making clone……I’m simply shocked.」

Kousuke had quite the confidence in his own strength. At the very least, he thought that in a one-on-one fight against earthling, he wouldn’t even need to become abyss lord, to say nothing of making clone to help, but……

Director Dime couldn’t be neutralized without the help of two other clones.

‘The world is really wide huh~, perhaps I was a bit too overconfident huh~’, he leaked out a dry smile.

「Kousuke-sama, the director was rude. I will tell him that it was just a misunderstanding, that’s why」

Claudia was knitting her eyebrows apologetically. But, perhaps something was on her mind about the content of the misunderstanding. Within her gaze that was stealing glances toward Kousuke, melting heat could be felt.

「Even so Claudia-sama. The director, it felt like he was recognizing Kousuke a bit after getting subdued like that you know?」

「Yeah, I heard him muttering. 「So you want Claire that much……fuh, I too has become old」 something like that.」

The one who called Kousuke without honorific was the bowgun user, Lee Mohr. Twenty years old, a half with mixed parentage of Britain and China. His age was close with Kousuke, and Kousuke told him to just talk casually, so he did just that.

And then, the one who heard the muttering of the director that caused Claudia to look down with red face while fidgeting, was Bruce Roer. He was a user of antique rifle, the younger brother of the bald Roer brothers.

By the way, both brothers had no eyebrows. Their body was also like pro wrestler, and they had sanpaku eyes. When they were wearing exorcist’s black uniform, their appearance was completely like mafia.

「No no, I already said that I have a lover.」

「How complicated……I want Claudia-sama to become happy but, there is also this feeling that want her to keep being our Claudia-sama. Or rather, the majority is glaring at Endou.」

Bruce's big brother, the battle axe user Bacchus Roer patted his smooth head with one hand while looking around. There, the staffs other than Omnibus's exorcists could be seen glancing warily at Kousuke.

But, inside those gazes wasn't wariness toward outsider, but something that was the same like resentment of fans who got their idol taken away, saying 「That bastard, laying his hand on our Claudia-sama……」.

「Geez-, everyone, you all have been saying nonsense since some time ago. I am not harboring that kind of feeling toward Kousuke-sama! Good grief, you all are too relaxed before the important battle!」

Everyone of Omnibus received scolding from the saint-sama.

However, the scolding from her whose face was bright red, her gaze kept glancing repeatedly at the man beside him, and her whole body fidgeting, the persuasiveness was nonexistence with zero impact. Rather, everyone of Omnibus only got even more fanned up.

「Oo, a, amazing pressuring gazes here……somehow it feels fresh to be paid so much attention like this.」

Kousuke writhed for some reason. 'Omnibus, might be a magnificent place……', his expression loosened thinking so.

「Be, besides……for me to harbor that kind of feeling toward a person who has lover……」

Claudia who entered the soliloquizing time. 「Aa, lord. Please forgive this wicked me-」 She began to pray too.

The gazes of the exorcists who were dining together became warm. The gazes of the staffs of Omnibus became even more severe.

‘As expected this looks a bit bad’, Kousuke who came back to his senses coughed.

「Ee~, aa~, so about the hell, Claire know where the Unknown is located right?」

「Eh? Ah, yes. Somehow I can, it’s a feeling like I’m being called. The cause is unclear whether I’m really being called, or if it was because in the past he was summoned with me as the medium, but I understand where he is.」

「Okay. Well, the other side is also looking for Claire, so it might not be necessary to go looking for him though. And, Claire’s Holy Cross will become the trump card but, is there any special exorcist strategy or something?」

In respond to Kousuke’s question, Anna took out a small cross necklace from her bosom and answered.

「We will use this consecrated cross. This is the most basic sacred vessel, at the same time it’s also something that is like our identification that prove our status as exorcist but……」

For the sake of all human

Saying that, she muttered 「 Omnibus 」. Right away, the cross that contained faint radiance showed letters of light that read “Anna Folk”.

Kousuke nodded in understanding seeing it like a status plate but without the display of the owner’s status. Anna

continued her explanation.

"Actually, it has one more effect. When it's activated like this, we can hide our figure and presence only limited to demon."

"It's a function so when exorcist is outnumbered, they can temporarily hide from demon and call for reinforcement."

Wynn also added on the explanation. He took out the same cross necklace like Anna.

According to their further explanation, there would be no effect if the demon had already focused strongly on them. If it was low level demon, their focus was already weak from the start so this power would be effective, but against middle level and above, this power would be mostly meaningless once they got found out.

Kousuke nodded "I see".

"I see. Using that we will ignore the swarm of low level demon and fight the Unknown directly."

"Although, just like we explained, the hell is their stronghold so it's dubious how effective this will be. Even if we are able to arrive until Unknown unharmed, the other demons would notice when we enter battle."

Wynn groaned with a conflicted expression. Lee shrugged while continuing.

"Well, it doesn't change what we have to do. It's really simple. We'll protect Claudia-sama until she destroy the Unknown. Even if we have to pay with our life. That's all."

Words that showed no hesitation to use even one’s own life as shield. It could be clearly seen from his eyes that there was no falsehood in those words. The other exorcists also nodded naturally.

The determination in that attitude wasn’t “for the sake of Claudia-sama”. It was simply a display of their pride as exorcist. They weren’t going along with Claudia’s revenge. They would head to hell because it was their mission.

Certainly that must be their true feeling. But, their friendship toward Claudia couldn’t be hidden. Surely, even if it wasn’t for Claudia, but for Wynn or Anna for example, they would still take the same action.

That was why, Kousuke couldn’t say it, he wouldn’t say it. Telling them to stay put here while he alone would guard Claudia.

「I get the gist of the strategy now. Well, when it’s time for you to exchange your life, call me before that. I have confidence if it’s in number after all. Okay, next, the problem is the “wind of lamentation” though, if I remember it right, the time limit will be harsh if the item to endure it is used for everyone right?」

Clauda and others nodded. With Kousuke’s participation, for the time being the team lineup was optimized so it was formed by the elites among elites, so the share of holy water for each one of them was increased.

They weren’t thinking to hold back the demon by leaving behind their member as sacrifice, so those who weren’t strong enough to fight in hell were reassigned to Omnibus’s headquarters——to protect Vatican and the pope.

「About that, I think I can prepare medicine to lengthen the time limit.」

「Is that true!? Ah, could it be, what healed me and Aziz, that……」

「Yes, we simply called it recovery medicine though. We returnees have it in our possession. Well, it's magic medicine. In the first place it doesn't neutralize the Wind of Lamentation like the holy water, it's more healing the body part that get eroded, so I think there will be pain.」

Wynn shook his head and responded 「Mere pain isn't a problem」.

「That helps. Most likely, the greater demon with their personality won't use any underhanded method, but the possibility that the enemy will aim to make us "run out of time" isn't zero after all.」

Kousuke saw that they didn't seem to have any particular problem with using unknown medicine whether from religious aspect too, so he immediately said 「Then, I'll ask for a lot of recovery medicine」, and he was going to contact Nagumo house.

But, at that timing,

「There is no need for that, Kousuke.」

A lovely voice that was like ringing bell resounded. However that voice was mixed with tiredness.

Kousuke gasped. When he turned his gaze, a beautiful girl wearing lab coat with her blonde hair tied in side tail was there, a cooler box hanging from her shoulder.

「Emily!」

Emily’s expression broke out into a smile *funya-* at Kousuke’s call. There was the radiance of “gate” behind her.

After the phone call which should be called as a decisive battle for Kousuke before this, just in case Yue sent the artifact for space teleportation, “Gate Hole” to be placed near Kousuke. It seemed Emily had just come out from that “gate”.

「Kousuke-san. Your Vanessa is also here you know?」

‘Here here-, look at me! I’m here!’, there was also Vanessa spreading her hands like a stage actress to make an appeal of her existence. Hallucination of wagging dog ears and dog tail could be seen on her.

「What’s the matter Emily? Did something happen? What about Yue-san?」

「Complete disregard! But, even with such cold Kousuke-san, the third wife, this Vanessa is――」

「Everything is alright. There is no attack or anything, in the first place no matter what come, nothing can make that fortress fall. I asked for the gate to be opened because there is something to be delivered. As for Yue-oneesan……right now the play-off of fighting game No. 1 is being held in the house, Yue-oneesan is in the middle of semifinal against Myuu-chan. Myuu-chan……her combo is really nasty. Yue-oneesan got tearful……」

「Wai-, what are they doing playing around in this kind of time!? Everyone in the class participate!? They are getting heated up!? Rather, Yue-san is made to cry!?」

「Fu, fufu-. The two of them are treating me like air……I see, so this is the abandonment play that Tio-san mentioned――」

「By the way, it seems the final will be Myuu-chan VS Shuu-ojiisama (uncle). Shuu-ojisama……it was terrific. As expected from the father of his majesty the demon king.」

「The parents are participating too!? That's too relaxed right!?」

Ignoring the SOUSAKAN (agent) who was wirthing while making strange pose, the members of Omnibus were in confusion at the exchange between Kousuke and the beautiful girl in lab coat who suddenly appeared.

Emily who seemed to notice the situation at the surrounding blushed slightly while straightening her posture. And then, she bowed her head to the people around and put the cooler box on the table.

「Emily, this is?」

「I told you right, Kousuke. That I'll also do what I can.」

Emily opened the cooler box. Inside, several test tubes were fixed in place. Grey colored liquid was stored inside the test tubes.

「I studied the content of the relic that demon king-sama gave me and reproduced the cure-all that was used in the ancient era. It's still in testing stage, but it should be useful enough to be used for this time.」

「Eh, it's that biological weapon excavated from the ruin?」

Emily nodded once. Below her eyes, really pronounced dark circles could be seen.

Actually, after the previous phone call, Emily begged Kaori to prepare “the space where time became slow” and researched the ancient biological weapon she received from Hajime and Shia inside it.

Emily’s research inside the slowed space actually almost reached a month even with her coming out every time there was a call from Kousuke.

Although there was cooperation from Yue and others to magically solve problem like teleporting the research tool or breaking technological obstacle, normally it would be impossible to develop unknown substance into usable stage in less than a month.

Emily’s genius talent in pharmacy, her experience until now, and then, her intense will that wished to be useful for Kousuke no matter what overturned the impossibility.

「It was shocking. I’ll omit the detailed explanation, but this thing, if I have to put it into words it’s something like a pluripotent cell. If it’s used as it is, it will erode cells of living thing and destroy them completely, but if the cell is adjusted well, it will instead replace cells that has abnormality. It will constantly maintain the healthy state. ——I named it Pandora’s Hope.」

In other words,

「If you drink one tube, even in an environment that eat at your body no matter how much, Pandora’s Hope will maintain your body in healthy state. I haven’t test it in hell’s environment so I cannot say with certainty but, if there is no

hole in my theory, it should maintain its effect for three days.」

「Seriously……」

Kousuke took one tube and stared fixedly at it.

Emily threw him upward glances. It was completely obvious to him that she was thinking 「Am I helpful?」. At the same time, he also understood from the fatigue surfacing in her eyes just how desperate she was to finish this in time.

Kousuke wordlessly embraced Emily tightly. Emily raised her voice 「Fuwah!?」 and went bright red instantly.

「Thanks, Emily. This is really helpful. With this I can fight without worrying about anything.」

「Ah, uh……I'm glad……be careful okay, Kousuke.」

Emily was a bit embarrassed, however, she hugged Kousuke back strongly. Beside them, the like of SOUSAKAN who was staring still with a wanting expression while putting her index finger in her mouth was ignored.

The two separated for a bit and stared at each other in close distance……

The exorcists were somehow swallowed by the sweet atmosphere and held their breath.

Claudia who was staring at the two enviously.

And then, Vanessa who was creeping up behind such Claudia without anyone noticing.

With a slippery movement, she brought her mouth toward Claudia's ear.

「Nice to meet you, fourth. I am Vanessa. The third. Pleased to make your acquaintance.」

「Hyuwah!?」

Greeting while blowing breath into the ear. Claudia leaped up. She pressed on her ear and retreated from that spot in a flash――or she tried, but she tripped on the chair and stumbled. Her skirt fluttered. A sexy garter belt was,

「Kousukeee-, don’t look!」

「Higiih!? My eyes-, my eyeees!?」

Emily-chan’s hidden technique was executed in godspeed. Kousuke pressed on his eyes while his back arched behind into a bridge shape. It was a bridge of sorrow from the sudden eye crushing.

Putting aside Kousuke who was building a comical and splendid arc, Vanessa helped Claudia to stand up.

「Ni, nice to meet you. I’m Claudia Barenberg, Err, the fourth?」

Wynn and others had splendidly threw their gaze to every other direction, perhaps because of the demonic look Anna sent to them, or perhaps because of their gentleman personality. During that time, Claudia stood up with difficulty while asking in bewilderment.

Vanessa-san answered with a serious expression.

「Yes. You are Kousuke-san’s fourth wife right? I am the third. And so, I am the senior wife. Don’t forget to show the proper respect.」

「He? Eh? Ee? Fourth wife?」

Claudia's expression turned like a person who had just heart a mysterious language. Wynn and co along with the members of Omnibus who were watching from the distance also showed the same expression.

No good Vanessa

There was nobody to stop Danessa-san who was putting on a patronizing air as senior. Kousuke was in the middle of doing bridge of sadness. Emily was apologizing to such Kousuke while nursing him.

Claudia turned her gaze to that Emily while saying.

「She is, Kousuke-sama's lover isn't she?」

「? Certainly she is his lover, but in the future they will wed so it's fine to call her his wife. Doctor Emily is the second wife. She is your great senior, so be really respectful.」

「……Second?」

Claudia's expression was rapidly stiffening. She turned her gaze toward Kousuke who was muttering 「I, can see the light……」. The members of Omnibus also did the same. Especially the gazes of female faction with Anna in the lead were becoming bad.

「Oh, you don't know? From the beginning Kousuke-san has a fiancée called Rana Hauria.」

「Fiancee!?」

「She is a bunny girl.」

「Bunny girl!」

「And then, the first wife Rana-san said, ‘The right-hand man of the demon king cannot just have one or two wives!’, we are looking for the seven wives who are somewhere in the world!」

「Seven wives!?」

「Yes! And then, Kousuke-san has found one! In this territory of Vatican! The fourth wife! Right to the point, it’s you! Claudia Barenberg!」

「What in the world!」

The shocking fact that was fired like a storm of gatling gun’s strafing. Claudia-sama’s tension was growing strange! And then, the gaze of the female faction toward Kousuke had completely become one that was usually turned toward a sworn enemy! One of them was dashing away, surely she was going to call the cardinal with idiot parent, blasphemous, and physically violent attribute!

director

Claudia’s eyes were turning round and round while she turned toward Kousuke whose eyes finally recoverd and stood up. She then raised her voice.

「Kousuke-sama! Are you, looking at me with such view!?」

「I’m not!」

「You are not!?」

Claudia-sama staggered unsteadily. Anna pulled out her tonfa. Her gaze was like a killer. Among the female exorcists, there were also those whose hand reached for knife or spear……

Sensing the atmosphere that was a little dangerous, Emily-chan stood up for her beloved Kousuke.

「Wait a second! Barenberg-san! The one who is fussing about seven wives are only Vanessa and Rana-san! Especially Rana-san, or rather the people of Hauria-clan, all of them are a bit touched in the head! That's why don't take it seriously! Kousuke isn't that kind of frivolous person!」

The desperate Emily-chan, her true feeling unconsciously came out…….

Hauria clan that was touched in the head, the battle of Emily who was trying to rehabilitate them would be a long one.

「I, is that so? But, in that case you too, have nothing going on between you and Kousuke-sama? You aren't his lover, and especially not his wife――」

「Who are you calling unrelated person! I'm his lover! And I'll become his wife!」

「Then, there is nothing going on with this person called Rana――」

「No, Claire. Rana is my wife I'm telling you.」

Finally Kousuke spoke. And then, Emily who became tearful because he didn't respond right away when it was her saying it. Kousuke was flustered 「Tha, that's not it」 while consoling Emily. Emily too immediately smiled happily at his attention.

Action sometime was even more eloquent than words.

Anna's voice echoed excessively loudly.

□Guilty? Or, not guilty?□

The answer, came from all the female exorcists, and the males who idolized Claudia.

□□□□□Guilty! Go to hell-!!□□□□□ (TN: The go to hell is written in English at the raw.)

It was nice timing that their destination after this would be hell. However, perhaps it would be Kousuke alone who wouldn’t go home.

Director Dime’s face popped out from behind a pillar as though to say □Someone calling?□. His eyes looked like they were saying □Even if it cost my life, I’ll KILL you bastard!□.

Cold sweat trickled out from Kousuke like a waterfall. Anna and others were sidling up closer with fiendish expression that said □Toying with our Claudia-sama like this……□, fighting aura (?) blew out from the director, Wynn and others averted their eyes from reality □The dessert is delicious□, and Vanessa attempted to sneak into the gate quickly……

□Director! A radio contact just came! I think it’s from the security bureau’s force! It seems they are under attack!□

□What?□

A youth came rushing. His voice that was dripping with anxiety caused everyone to gasp and return to their senses.

He was holding an old type radio while running toward Kousuke and others.

Why did the communication from Bernard and others came from something like that? Certainly, they were really late

from the arrival schedule but……

Zaa zaa, within such noise, the sound of gunshots and the angry yell of Bernard and others could be heard.

「——This is Saber 1-. Caster! Can you hear!?
——Answer——someo——」

Saber was the codename that represented Bernard’s squad, Caster was the codename that represented Omnibus. The codenames were created just in case now that they were working together with Vatican’s secret organization. The thinker of the codename could be easily guessed.

「Bernard! We can hear you! What happened!?」

Kousuke raised his voice, but it seemed the voice from this side didn’t reach the other side. The situation that seemed to be the cause was ascertained by the intermittent communication from Bernard.

「——We are under attack——cultists
everywhere——armed——communication jamming is——」

「The armed cultist group jammed the communication and attacking?」

「Most likely, they found old radio in a house or shop somewhere and send their voice like this.」

In battle against demon, many times it would cause abnormality in electronic equipment. Because of that they were using old radio equipment even now which bore fruit at this situation. Bernard’s group seemed to succeed in sending their voice using some kind of method, but perhaps because of the other side’s communication method, the voice from this side couldn’t reach.

「The airport’s――we cannot move. The number is too many!」

「Bernard!」

Bernard who was a calm and collected veteran captain of a special force was sounding uneasy. The communication that became a bit clearer also conveyed Bernard’s resolve.

「It will be great if this voice reach someone but……. We will reduce the enemy number as much as possible here. It’s pathetic when we are coming here as reinforcement but, we cannot arrive there. But, there is no need to send help. We will defend this place to the last and reduce the number of armed group heading there as much as we can.」

「You stupid idiot-. What are you doing making resolve as you please like that!」

The angry voices of Bernard’s subordinates resounded from the other side.

「Kuh, Aby! I’ll leave the rest to you! If I survive then I’ll treat you to a cold bee――」

The communication cut off with a loud explosion. *Zaa zaa*, a somewhat sad sound resounded.

「Bernard, why did you say that line in that timing……」

Bernard who kept raising death flag until the end caused Kousuke’s expression to convulse. A feeling that Bernard might unexpectedly be alright was welling up slightly.

There, Aziz rushed out from the elevator.

「Director! The moon is dyed! It’s the red moon! Outside the rampart, there is what seems to be the cultist group! The number is beyond counting!」

Right after that the sound of explosion thundered until the underground. It was obviously the sound of explosive or even rocket.

「Kuh, I’m going to where Bernard and others are――」

Kousuke was about to say that he was going.

But, a voice interrupted him,

「You idiot, Kousuke, you have your own role right?」

「Leave that to us.」

Kousuke gasped and turned around. There, he found the figure of his two best friends. Yes, it was Kentarou and Juugo. Furthermore, from the gate Ayako, Mao, and then Yuuka, Nana, Taeko and so forth were coming out one after another.

Kentarou and Juugo talked to Kousuke whose eyes turned round.

「Oi oi, what’s with that look. Don’t tell me, you think we are going to ball up at the corner of the room until everything is over?」

「Just because you spoke scathingly to Yue-san, that doesn’t mean you gotta do everything alone right? If you ask, we’ll lend a hand yeah.」

Among the returnees, not a single one would be shivering in fear at safe place. No matter who their opponent was.

In the first place, after Kousuke stormed into hell, they intended to come out to take care of the “Mirror Gate” that was the entrance, and also this battlefield at Vatican.

「……Hics-. Cultists, kill」

「Yue……don’t vent your anger to other just because you got thoroughly beaten up by Myuu. Come on, cheer up?」

「……Hics. Kaori, go to hell.」

「Why!? Right now I’m cheering you up you know!?」

Yue who seemed to be thoroughly trounced by Myuu’s combo without being able to do anything in fighting game arrived while looked like she was going to cry in earnest.

Kaori also came together. Tio and Shizuku seemed to stay behind in Nagumo house, but even Myuu came.

Myuu in her own way was normally crying 「Hics, sniff, I hate someone like Shuu-ojiichan (grandpa) nano……」. It appeared she was viciously trounced by the backbone of Nagumo family who seemed like a demon king without even a shred of maturity.

While the members of Omnibus were dumbfounded by the excessive battle force that continuously came, Kousuke looked at his comrades and grinned with ‘fuh’.

And then, his gaze turned toward Claudia.

Claudia was taken by surprise, but a beat later her expression turned resolved and she nodded briskly.

「Director, we are going.」

「……Got it. The obelisk will be usable in thirty more minutes. Don’t worry about this place――go and accomplish your longstanding desire.」

「Yes-」

Claudia gave a hug toward Director Dime who was like her father with all the affection that she had. With that, his gaze became relaxed and warm as though that brutal eye expression was just a lie while he returned the hug.

Claudia who let go of the hug ran her gaze at the exorcists of the storming team. Wynn and others also had finished their preparation and nodded back strongly.

「Kentarou, Juugo. Take care of Bernard.」

「Ou, leave it to us.」

「Don’t mess up okay, Kousuke.」

Kousuke and others touched their fist together and made a fearless smile to each other.

「Kousuke. Be careful. Come back as quick as possible. I’ll bake apple pie when you return.」

「I’m looking forward to that.」

He also smiled to each other with Emily. Kousuke turned on his heel.

「Let’s go.」

Claudia and others nodded at Kousuke’s command, and then they rushed to the inner room where “Mirror Gate” was located.

「Look, Yue. Don’t cry, we too are going up too you know?」

「……I’m not crying. Kaori you idiot.」

「Yes yes, I get it. Look, teleport everyone to their position. Ah, are you the leader here? Can we talk a bit for planning……」

The depressed Yue. However, she properly did her work. She held the hand of Myuu who was similarly depressed and rushed out from home while teleporting the classmates to the ground above. Furthermore, Juugo and others of Nagayama party were teleported to Omnibus’s private airport to as Bernard’s rescue team.

Like that, when they got out to above the ground, the area was teeming with squirming swarms. It seemed the front gate was destroyed and wreckage was scattered everywhere. The cultists were entering inside one after another. Looking closer, even the north side where Vatican’s art museum was located also had black smoke rising from there. It was clear that place was also attacked.

Gunshots and yells resounded everywhere. There were even several drones flying at the night sky of red moon, carrying explosive in their load.

The armed group of cultists were surging in with number that made it seem like they were the dead from hell. In the middle of that, the people of Omnibus were holding a desperate defensive battle.

「Everyo~~ne! We aa~bsolutely must not let them go to the “Gate Mirror”! Let’s do our best until Endou-kun and others finished everything~~~~!! How – e – ver! Treasure your life! Please run away when it’s dangerou~s!」

□□□□□Yee~~~s□□□□□

It was looseness like in the middle of doing school trip. The students energetically replied to Aiko’s encouraging yell with rea~lly lax reply.

But, what happened at the next moment was the sight of the cultists who were flooding in like avalanche getting blown away and vanished outside the rampart like a joke.

□For now, here is the barrier~! This place is the holy ground, god’s enemy won’t pass——”Holy Severance”!!□

A dome of light spread out with Suzu as the starting point. The whole St. Peter’s Plaza was enveloped by a shining barrier.

□It’s fine to shot those down right?□

At the same time with a short yell ‘shih’, throwing knives rushed through the night sky. All of them were clad in electricity, shooting down all the drones flying in the sky. And then, the knives returned like a boomerang to the thrower——Yuuka.

□Then, that place looks bad so I’ll go there.□

Under the red moon, a werewolf howled. The next moment, that figure vanished with its swift feet.

Other than that, colorful magic of various elements danced wildly, and terrific martial arts exploded into action.

And then,

□……Condemnation.□

□That’s why, stop with venting your frustration here.□

In the sky, golden light and silver light floated back to back.

One was a bewitching peerless beauty served by a golden dragon.

The other one was a divinely beautiful war maiden spreading her silver wings.

When the lightning dragon roared, the many rockets flying in the sky were sucked in without exception and annihilated. The cultists who were touched by the surging golden light collapsed with white smoke rising without a single exception.

On the other hand, the people of Omnibus who collapsed with the injury from the first surprise attack were illuminated by the silver light pouring from the sky. Whether they were injured or dead, it didn’t matter, they were healed and stood up.

At this time when the fate of the world was at stake, this kind of miraculous sight……. Everyone of Omnibus thought. Even Director Dime thought.

“It’s, god’s miracle……”

Regretfully, they were demon king’s underlings.

While the moon was increasingly getting filled with mysterious red radiance, the curtain of battle was finally opened.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Tomorrow 【Overlap Great Thanksgiving 2018】 will be opened.

There will be various things published at Overlap-sama's homepage, seems like there will be many events and goods too. The illustration of waitress Yue is lovely!

Then update information.

In Comic Gardo, the following was updated.

- Nichijou chapter 16 I was blown with the collaboration at the end lol
- Gaiden Zero chapter 3 The gap of the little girl Miledy and the current Miledy. When looking at the picture it's terrific…
- Main comic chapter 21 The thrilling Raisen. Miledyyy… after reading Zero chapter 3, I cannot say anything anymore.

The latest chapter can be read for free, so please go take a look if you have time!

(You can read it by going to Gardo Comic from Overlap-sama's homepage)

※I revised the time limit of staying in hell by using holy water at the previous chapter.

Arifureta Chapter 316

Arifureta After III　Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2 Unknown　First

–

It became too long, so I divided it into first and second part.

After this, I’ll upload the second part too at 19 o’clock.

Amidst the shaking that was transmitted from the ground above, the members of Omnibus underground were running around while yelling in order to accomplish their own duty. While that was going on, Kousuke and others were rushing toward the sealing room where the “Mirror Gate” was located.

「To think that many cultists will launching surprise attack……」

After the previous attack, they had followed the whereabouts of the cultists who succeeded in escaping, they also confirmed whether the cultists were gathering in Rome or not.

Although, because of the considerable numbers of the dead and wounded among the members in the headquarters, the number of their personnel was drastically reduced, so it

couldn’t be said that the investigation and security they carried out were enough.

Even so, to think that cultists in the scale of thousands were gathering near……

「Is his holiness safe……」

Wynn muttered with a worried expression. The pope of Rome currently was evacuating to outside Vatican. At the surface it was to deal with the previous terrorist incident, while also to arrange an environment where Omnibus could fight satisfactorily.

Just in case, several exorcists disguised themselves as normal staff while guarding the pope. Even the normal guards who didn’t know about the existence of demon were a gathering of elite among elite in anti-personnel combat. But, the number of the enemy was also abnormal. It was understandable for them to feel uneasy.

「They will be fine. If it goes bad, Yue-san will send someone. Now that she has gone this far, she wouldn’t allow even a single thing that will make the demon side happy.」

It was a fact that Yue had snapped because her family was harmed. And then, Yue was the first wife of the demon king, both of them were similar people, like husband, like wife.

「After all, she is the wife of the guy who protect the whole mankind of another world just because of a reason to not let the enemy feel even the slightest happiness.」

Yes, in the past Hajime protected the people of Tortus because of such trivial reason of because Ehito was wishing for mankind’s extermination. He gathered warriors and super

strengthened them, and in the end he even did absurd thing like making the whole battle force to experience Limit Break.

If someone became their enemy, all of their wishes would be crushed underfoot just as many wishes they had. That was how Hajime was, and Yue was also the same.

「I see, that’s certainly what you will imagine from demon king and his wife.」

「In a decisive battle against a powerful demon of demon king class, we are challenging that battle together with the comrade of demon king……you will never know what is going to happen in life.」

Claudia chuckled. Then Wynn smiled wryly while Anna and the others let out a dry laugh that was filled with complicated feeling.

「Claudia-sama! This way! I’m bringing the equipment!」

A youth wearing habit showed his face just a bit distance away from the sealing room and called to Claudia.

When they entered the room, there was a woman with the air of a lady that Kousuke remembered seeing before.

「Maya! Why are you here!?」

「Calm down Claire. As expected, even I wouldn’t be able to protect that room to the death when being surrounded by so many cultists. I completely sealed the path and then participate in the defensive battle here. More importantly, here, quickly put your equipment in order.」

It seemed that general store was also attacked.

And then, just as the lady said, she seemed to be joining the fight too. She was clad in black tight coat, her hair was bundled up, and an ancient looking bow was hanging on her shoulder. It seemed that she was actually an exorcist too.

The lady who was smiling prettily even in this situation where angry yells were flying about everywhere, she looked really calm and reliable.

Putting aside Claudia and others who were putting their equipment in order hurriedly, Maya's gaze moved to Kousuke.

「Nice to meet you, Mr. Kousuke. This isn't your first time meeting me, but it's *my* first time meeting you, so allow me to give you my greeting.」

「Ahaha……nice to meet you too.」

'Her eyes ain't laughing……', Kousuke was letting out cold sweat. It seemed the matter of him infiltrating the secret passage that she was protecting was something that offended her slightly.

Was what he thought, but……

Maya-san smoothly closed on Kousuke and whispered into his ear.

「I has grasped your presence somehow. I won't overlook it anymore. ――If you make my child cry, I'll shoot you.」

Claire

She smoothly parted away from him and grinned cheerfully. 「Please take care of Claire」, this time she spoke in a volume that everyone could hear too.

‘Geez-, what are you saying!’ said Claudia with blushing cheeks. Maya-san elegantly laughed ‘hohoho-‘ in respond.

Kousuke was drenched in cold sweat. The instant she distanced herself from him, her eyes that he could see from close range were something fierce that seemed to say 「I’ll, kill you!」.

It was a complete déjà vu.

When Claudia and others finally finished preparing, Maya, with an aura that was filled with affection that didn’t give the slightest hint of the previous pressure that rivaled a certain director embraced the storming party members one by one.

And then, she embraced Claudia last and,

「Accomplish your long-cherished desire and come back alive. When everything is over, I’ll bake Claire’s favorite lemon cake, so let’s eat it with everyone then.」

「Yes, Maya. I’m going.」

Claudia too hugged Maya back tightly. And then, she ran her gaze toward Wynn and others, confirmed that everyone had finished preparing, and then they rushed into the sealing room for sure this time.

While running, Kousuke asked for a bit.

「What kind of person Maya-san is?」

「? Maya is just as you see, she is an exorcist of Omnibus you know? Although, she already retired and now is managing the secret passage.」

‘Perhaps, that’s not what Kousuke-dono want to ask’, the sharp Wynn-san gave an additional explanation.

According to him, it seemed that gentle lady Maya-san was a former partner of Director Dime. While Director Dime would instantly attack demon to exorcism them (physically) with no question asked the moment he saw them, she would support him with sniping using bow.

But, it seemed that essentially Maya wasn’t any different from Dime. When anyone noticed, she would already charge ahead with her bow and arrow. She would use her bow to strike, stabbed using the arrow in the place of stiletto, then while pulling out the stabbed arrow she would nock it on the bow and fired it through the enemy from super close range, the stabbed arrow was pulled out and then fired again…… like that she was a person who was carrying out super close quarter combat using bow art.

As the result, the nicknames she obtained were “Absolute Demon Killer Woman”, “The Desecrator of Bow”, “Or rather, won’t it be better if you just normally use sword or blunt weapon to fight?”, “The Ultimate Weapon Against the Beating Priest”, “The Most Terrifying Holy Mother”, etc.

By the way, although she was single she was idolized by the people of Omnibus like a mother. In the past she was the number one person who was even more terrifying than demon who absolutely mustn’t be made angry. And then, the reason why she was staying unmarried could be easily guessed when seeing her sometimes having meal or drinking together with Director Dime.

So I got two dangerous people setting their sight on me……

Kousuke’s eyes looked dead. Even though they were going to storm into hell after this.

When they entered the sealing room, there were several people inside the room clad in tight black coat that was the combat uniform of exorcist, and several people wearing habit. From among them, a youth wearing habit called out.

「Claudia-sama, we have finished the preparation of the barrier. ……Everyone, we will be waiting for your return. May the protection of god be with you all.」

「Thank you very much. I’ll leave this place to you all.」

The exorcists here would protect this area of “Mirror Gate” to the death. Claudia sent them a strong gaze while nodding.

That exorcist also turned his gaze to Kousuke and deeply bowed his head while saying.

「Mister. Please, take care of our comrades. You might not need it but, may the protection of god be with you too.」

「Yeah, thank you. It’s okay, everyone will return. It seems Madame Maya will bake a lemon cake for the celebration of our return, so we’ve got to go back no matter what right?」

「Oo, Maya-sama’s lemon cake is a masterpiece after all. If that’s the case then you all have to get back by all possible means.」

The exorcists relaxed their tense expression hearing Kousuke’s frivolous talk.

The expression of Claudia that was slightly stiff also softened.

「Yosh. Then first let's fired up ourselves.」

From his breast pocket, Kousuke took out the test tube that was filled with grey liquid――the cure-all Pandora's Hope. Following him, Claudia and others also took out theirs.

Kousuke lifted his tube as though to have a toast. Claudia and others followed suit.

「The enemy is a king class great demon Unknown. What is at stake is the fate of the world. Along the way countless demons, and depending on the situation even " Named " (Legendary Demon) will come out. But, those kind of things ain't matter.」

Kousuke grinned fearlessly. His wide smirk was exactly like a demon.

「This is a revenge match. We are going to beat up the shitty bastard who is thoroughly looking down on us. This is a battle in order to let those damned bastards of hell just what will happen if they anger us!」

Wynn and others also wore a wicked smile that was unsuitable for exorcist.

That's right. Right now they were keeping their mission at heart even now. However, the regret of their fallen comrades. What was so bad in dispelling that! They were the protector of mankind. But, at the same time they were the nemesis of the demons!

The exorcists were getting heated up. Claudia silently closed her eyes, and then, when she opened her eyes, an unprecedentedly strong flame was residing inside there.

「Iron hammer to the demons! Victory for our fallen comrades!」

□□□□□Iron hammer to the demons! Victory for our fallen comrades!□□□□□

Roaring voices thundered so loud it felt like the underground space was shaking.

And then, they drained up the secret medicine with one gulp at the same time, and following the momentum they threw the vials on the ground. The sound of breaking glass magnified the fighting spirit inside them even more.

□We are going?□

A light tone that didn’t have the slightest tension in it.

□Let’s go.□

Similarly, Claudia who responded with a light tone.

Wynn and others nodded, and then,

□——Informing the evil. Be afraid, tremble. The gate of death is opened, thy malice will be crushed by the will of steel.□

The “Key of Holy Cross” that Claudia lifted up shined radiantly. The cool and clear light illuminated the “Mirror Gate” directly. The seal of mercury was starting to flow.

□O lord, please guide us. We are those who believe in righteousness and love. We are the people who will defeat malice and hostility without valuing our life if it’s for the holy war! O lord, please guide your warrior to the battlefield! ——”Open Gate”□

A pure light surged. The mercury was completely absorbed into the relief of “Mirror Gate”. The mirror surface became

thin membrane of light. At the other side, there was that red world filled with blowing bloody wind.

「Being advance guard is my duty. Leave the vanguard to me!」

「Yes-」

Claudia replied powerfully, while Wynn and others vigorously yelled「Ou-」. With them behind, Kousuke stepped into hell once more.

–

–

–

The air changed. Crunching sound came from the completely dry ground he stepped on.

Instantly,

「——!?」

Kousuke’s body stiffened. He didn’t receive external binding by any means.

(My muscles, stiffened!?)

If he had to speak frankly about his current situation, it seemed he was “paralyzed”. What was bad was that the stiffening was also rapidly penetrating inside him.

「Tsu, Kousuke-sama!?」

He couldn’t even let out any words. But, he could react.

Kousuke suddenly received surprise attack, but his mind was calm. He felt a slight power, or rather a gaze, and in that moment he materialized a clone. And then, the clone threw a kunai toward the other side of the bloody wind.

——GII!?

The stiffening was dispelled along with that faint scream. But, it seemed the opponent didn’t plan to let him took a breather.

Chih!!

Kousuke clicked his tongue, because a presence of death was approaching from behind. From Kousuke’s shadow, a silhouette that looked as though it was made from shadow itself swelled up and lunged with a sharp arm thrust.

At the same time, the nearby rock blew up as though there was eruption. No, more accurately the rock was *rising up*. It was a giant that was nearly three meter, with a face like a demon and wings like a bat.

An arm thrust from close range behind him. From above was the giant jaw approaching as though to crush Kousuke along with the shadow.

Vacuum Release Heat Haze of Myriad Shadow

Using Kuuton “Ban’ei no Kagerou” that he activated just in the nick of time, Kousuke and the clone switched position along with the space.

The stomach of the clone was pierced, and then the clone’s upper body got devoured by the giant’s jaw.

Furthermore, Kousuke who had switched position was assaulted by more than ten dogs leaping through the bloody wind. They had terrifying figure like zombie dogs where part

of their body had been bitten off, in addition small fire would blow out from their mouth each time they were breathing.

All of them were aiming at Kousuke’s limbs and neck.

(Ho, how murderous this is oi!)

The moment he stepped into hell, there was concentrated attack as though to say that they absolutely would kill only Kousuke.

「——Pray along with the sunrise! O pebble of iron and sulfur. Lit the sacred fire!」

「——Thy, repent! The god has drawn the bow, firing the fire arrow to destroy evil!」

Just before Kousuke was going to react against the zombie dog look alike, such scripture resounded. At the same time, countless blazing bullets and arrows rushed at the zombie dogs. More than ten targets were pierced through without a single miss.

「Nice assist!」

In respond to Kousuke’s words, the user of ancient rifle Bruce and the user of bowgun Lee gave a thumb up.

And then, Kousuke snapped his finger once. The clone that got stabbed and bitten exploded. With that, the shadow was blown away, while the rock giant got its upper body pulverized in return and it crumbled down.

「Kousuke-sama! Are you safe!?」

Cladua and others dashed toward him in panic.

「Yeah, somehow. But, just now they were definitely targeting me huh?」

「Yes, looks like it. Most likely, due to the previous fight against Kousuke-sama, and how Yue-sama counterattacked, Unknown is being vigilant against Kousuke-sama and others.」

「Seems so. Unlike the previous ghoul-like things from before, these guys seems like they also have special power. When I suddenly got paralyzed, I was in a bit of panic there.」

「That……must be Gazer (One-Eyed Demon of Curse). The others are Gargoyle, Creeping Shadow, Shadow Stalker, and the last were Hell Hounds (Hell's Guard Dogs, Lesser Rock Demon).」

「They were named demon?」

「No, it's more like their race's name. They belong to middle class, so they are far more troublesome than the ghoul-like things Kousuke-sama mentioned——the Mindless (Unaware Dead), or other demons that are simply called "Low Class" though.」

Although, it was a silver lining that the great demon that would come out in books didn't come out right from the start.

If they wanted to kill returnee class by all means, than the most effective method would be by surprise attack from greater demon using unknown sure-kill attack, but for some reason the enemy only used surprise attack by placing multiple middle class demons. He felt doubtful about that.

Or perhaps, it wasn't that he didn't send greater demon, but he couldn't send them……

Kousuke shook his head. It was pointless even if he thought about that here.

「Everyone, how is the effect of the Wind of Lamentation?」

「I feel no problem. There is no pain or discomfort.」

「We also seem to be fine. This is a magnificent medicine. That girl still looked really young but……this is really something.」

Wynn made out a voice of admiration toward the effect of Pandora's Hope that completely neutralized the effect of the "Wind of Lamentation" and Emily who created it. Anna and others also nodded with a wry smile at the effect that surpassed the holy water that needed a lot of time and effort to create.

Kousuke smiled proudly for a bit while asking Claudia.

「And, Claudia. Where is that guy?」

「……He isn't nearby. Or rather……I'm being called. He isn't below, but on the surface ground……in that ruined city…… he is waiting for us there.」

'Chih', Kousuke clicked his tongue. It was because he guessed Unknown's motive.

Most likely, the other side was also predicting the intention of Kousuke and co. Pandora's Hope must be unexpected for Unknown, thanks to that they didn't have to worry about getting exhausted or running out of holy water because of the "Wind of Lamentation", but there was no doubt that he was planning to make them exhausted before reaching him.

Even though he was a greater demon but his thought was petty……was what Kousuke thought, even so, there was no doubt that the Unknown was doing this because the strength of Kousuke or Yue and others was a threat for him.

「But, in that case, it's becoming even more puzzling. Even though he is scheming to lead the force of hell to invade our world without being careless or overconfident, why isn't he sending named demon our way then……」

「Certainly, that is puzzling――, Kousuke-sama!」

Claudia gasped and took her stance. The Holy Cross that was swinging her around so much before this was kept in her hold firmly and she swiftly took the fighting stance. Wynn and others also readied themselves with a grim expression a beat later.

「Aa, they are coming seriously huh.」

Kousuke's presence detection caught a reaction. A battle force with innumerable number.

As though to say that going through the sky with pseudo flight like before wouldn't be allowed anymore, countless shadows were flitting around in the sky that was filled with bloody wind.

Malice and killing intent pierced their skin pricklingly. A great variety of demons with their red eyes shining glaringly were clearly in fervor to devour the prey that was invading their territory.

Cold sweat was trickling from the forehead of Wynn and others. They were resolved, but the enemy force that they sensed was so many.

Against the number that ought to be expressed like as many as the number of star, their side had Kousuke, Claudia, Wynn, Anna, Aziz, Lee, Bruce, Bacchus, and then three other exorcists, a total of eleven people.

Originally they were aiming to act stealthily before attacking, but Unknown’s vigilance that surpassed their imagination made that impossible. Although it couldn’t be helped, this made them wanted to spontaneously curse 「If you are demon then act haughtily like a demon」.

But, this person came out in front of such Wynn and others.

「Fuh. This is really a passionate welcoming party. If the other side is sending such intense love call, then we have to respond in kind.」

Yes, the sunglass is put o~n! The nimble turning on spot is also being do~ne!

「The turn came out! It’s Kousuke-sama of that time!」

「Cla, Claudia-sama?」

「You know what’s this is about, Claudia-sama!?」

Why was he suddenly turning on the spot? Why was he suddenly pushing up the sunglass with one hand and bending his upper body backward while his right hand was thrusting to point ahead!?

Claudia-sama answered Anna’s doubtful question!

「I too don’t know why Kousuke-sama is turning on the spot! But, the turn that in a glance look meaningless should have some kind of meaning!」

There was no meaning.

「The reason is, the atmosphere of Kousuke-sama who is turning around has changed and he become really strong!」

「What did you sayy――!?」

Anna-chan who easily got into the mood. Wynn and others thought, ‘Then, that showy pose also has meaning!?’.

Of course, there was no meaning.

A Hell Hound leaped out from the bloody wind. Kousuke struck it down with an axe kick and without pause he crushed it under his foot and then making one more turn above that corpse!

For some reason cheers ‘Ooh’ were raised. Kousuke’s――no, the lord’s tension was at the peak thanks to the audience!

That was why he said it!

「Now, it’s the start of the party. We are going to enjoy this step of death. Show your welcome with an exclamation that is like thousands of thunder! For this Abyss Lord! For this Kousuke E Abyssgate!」

For an instant the gargoyle that was rising up from the ground looked like it was drawing back.

–

–

–

Against the terrific number of middle class demons, the lords were advancing little by little while forming a circle

formation to protect Claudia at the center.

Basically the lord and three clones were protecting the four sides while cutting open the path. Wynn and others were in formation to bring down the enemies that slipped through the lord’s attack.

Claudia was preserving all her strength in order to pour it all for exterminating Unknown.

The number of the enemy was as many as the stars. Therefore, it felt like they were going to be overwhelmed but,

「——O lord, sever the evil of the wicked, hold the righteous firmly in place! The shield of god protect the believers! The god protect those who believe!」

One of the exorcists of the storming team, a middle-aged man wearing glasses, from a glance he looked like a salary man that could be found anywhere——Sharif Yeast was holding a huge shield that didn’t match his medium build.

The tower shield suddenly shined brilliantly and a light dome that surrounded the circle formation was formed. If a returnee saw it, they would think that it looked like the lower version of “Divine Severance”, the “Holy Light” defense magic.

That all directional defense absolutely wouldn’t let enemy’s attack to pass through the last line.

And then, it seemed it was only effective against demon. The battle axe user Bacchus and Anna’s tonfa, and Aziz’s large knife exterminated the demons that were stopped in place. Lee and Bruce attacked from mid range, and then,

「——Conceive the light of dawn and illuminate the world of evil. O lord, the dark clouds are cleared by your radiance, scatter the blazing ash.」

The demons were destroyed by the user of strange sacred vessel that was in the shape of lantern. A woman exorcist in her thirty with intelligent eyes——Ciara Batti's lantern absolutely wouldn't have its fire went out. And then, once she chanted the scripture, that light would fiercely blaze up and emitted the light that destroyed the demons.

Furthermore, one of the reasons the attack of the middle class demons that was like a tsunami could be defended was because there was the *musical performance* of the last exorcist.

Yes, he or perhaps she——TJ's sacred vessel was a transverse flute. He who was called big sis……but, when he played the melody of hymn, the demons would instantly lose luster, and for the low class they would suffer and became unable to move.

Furthermore, if Wynn and others who specialized in close quarter got injured, the melody would immediately change and healed their wound.

「Close, middle, long range. Defense and recovery and debuff. There is really no opening. It's the ideal formation, on top of that the proficiency is first-rate. Splendid.」

Indeed, so this was the elite force among the elite of the exorcists from the anti demon organization Omnibus that had existed for thousands of years. It was a strength that truly convinced him without leaving any ground for doubt.

「If Kousuke-done isn't here-, we would have gotten overrun since a long time ago!」

「Exactly! Kousuke-san, you are too strong!」

Wynn and Anna was yelling while continuing to slaughter the enemy with a desperate look that didn't show the slightest composure.

Toward such them,

「Right now, call me Abyssgate.」

When in hell, he wanted to be called as abyss. He wouldn't yield on this. But, if it's lord than it's okay you know?

「I don't understand!」

「What kind of fixation that is!?」

「Kousuke-san, why are you suddenly getting strange……」

「Because Kousuke-sama is Kousuke-sama?」

All the exorcists had extremely normal sense, Only Lee and Bruce were making a conflicted expression perhaps because they understood that the lord's state was "that". It seemed the two had black history of their own.

Like that, due to the lord that was dealing with sixty percent of the flooding enemy while further cutting open the path, they finally could see the ruined city.

In the battle until now, Wynn and others seemed to have accumulated considerable fatigue. Perhaps it should be said that half of Unknown's expectation was granted.

Although, the lord who sometimes would be showered with concentrated fire was still going strong. In this point, it could be considered that Unknown's tactic had mostly failed.

Unlike before, this time he came here prepared, that was why even though the enemies were somewhat bothersome, the current lord was unstoppable.

「We, we cut through……」

Wynn calmed down his quickening breathing and wiped the sweat trickling on his chin while saying so.

Just as he said, ahead of the bloody wind that they had struggled through, no demon was attacking like before.

Aziz and Anna and the others were also breathing roughly, even so their expression looked slightly relieved.

The lord called out to Claudia.

「Claire.」

「Yes, Kousuke-sama. The Unknown is――」

「Please call me Abyssga――」

「Kousuke-sama. Unknown is here, at the center of the city. He is calling me.」

「Ri, ght.」

It seemed this kind of thing wouldn’t get through the saint-sama who was in serious mode. Abyss lord faltered slightly. He cleared his throat *cough*.

He pulled himself together and stepped inside the ruined city.

「This place is……the past’s……」

Aziz was muttering while staring at the cluster of ruined buildings with a really conflicted expression. Other than Claudia and the lord, there was no one else who had stepped until this far inside hell.

The ruined state that looked really tragic made everyone imagined the war in the faraway past and the end that the residence of hell arrived at. They gulped.

「Soon……it will be soon……」

Claudia’s face also tensed in proportion.

They formed their formation and advanced through the street that was filled with debris scattered everywhere. There was no sign of demon. There were only the sound of rumble in the ground and thunder piercing their ears.

The closer they got to the center, the higher their tension became. The dry wind was taking away the moisture from their lips that were already dry in the first place.

Like that, they finally could see a large intersection that was surrounded by half-destroyed building ahead. It was a large open space that was several times larger than even the pedestrian scramble in a metropolitan.

「……Over there is the center of the city.」

Claudia said while holding her breath. The calling voice that she was hearing couldn’t be heard right now. But, without a doubt that intersection felt like the center of the city.

「Chih. If he is putting on air as ruler, he should wait brazenly there instead following the custom of demon king.」

The lord who completely thought that the enemy would be waiting brazenly like the demon king that would appear in RPG sensed the existence of trap when he couldn’t see the figure of Unknown. He spontaneously cursed.

If it was their demon king, he would properly sat cockily on a throne and at least welcomed with 「Fuhahahahah, you have done well coming here mongrels!」. That was the beauty of style. In fact the demon king had really done it at Halloween. He was absurdly getting into it.

「Even though we know it’s a trap, we can only step inside it.」

「Yeah, that’s right.」

Urged by the determined expression of Claudia, they stepped into the intersection with the lord at the front.

Instantly, several things happened simultaneously.

——*iAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH*

An intense scream of a woman. It wasn’t something that came from among themselves. It was a yelling voice that was more repulsive, stirring up the mind while being filled to the brim with resentment.

Everyone including the lord spontaneously stiffened.

At the same time, shadow was squirming under the feet of all the lord’s clones. It was as though a ripple was traveling through water surface.

「——!?」

Right after that, the lord was sent flying up. A shark appeared from below the feet. Five meter shark clad in muddy aura with eyes of flame.

It opened its mouth like a bear trap and leaped out from below to swallow the lord. In response, the lord dodged using the gravity magic he had prepared just in case by falling through the air.

But, the shark pursued by swimming in the air with great speed. The lord held back the approaching jaw with his arms and legs, however, he was getting washed away by a power that was like cannon ball.

「Kousuke-sa――!?」

The ground below Claudia who was looking up to the sky quietly vanished. No, more accurately speaking a black circle hole was created. Obeying gravity, Claudia lost her balance from the weightlessness. Her expression was cramped.

「Claudia-sama!」

Anna immediately stretched out a chain of light to catch Claudia. But, a great number of black tentacles flew out like an eruption and blocked the chain of light, furthermore Claudia’s feet were caught and she was dragged in.

In addition, the surrounding was suddenly covered by bloody wind. It was as though thick mist was suddenly generated, their field of vision was covered by storm of red, and perhaps as expected, countless demons attacked.

And then, the black hole where Claudia was dragged into began to close rapidly.

「Sharif!」

「——O lord! You established the fortress in preparation of the foe! No matter how many, they have no hope to invade the sanctuary!」

With Wynn’s command, the tower shield was stabbed into the black hole and Sharif chanted. The shield shined and the closing hole was forcefully prevented from closing.

But, although the closing was resisted for a moment, the hole was gradually tightening as though it was swallowing the light of the sacred vessel.

「Guh. It’s, impossible……. Aziz-! Ciara! Lend me strength!」

「——The lord had spoken. Thrust thy iron and crush the enemy, with the three swords forged in the hearth of the palace.」

「——Clear the dark clouds with the halo. Look, o believers, the sacred palace towering at the summit.」

Aziz took out two short swords from his pocket and threw it around the black hole. He then stabbed the knife he was holding to the ground below him. After that he chanted the scripture and the three short swords were tinged with light. It strengthened the light as though in concert with Sharif’s tower shield.

There, the light of the lantern Ciara was holding poured down and magnified the light even more.

After doing that much, the black hole’s shrinking was finally stopped completely.

「Kuuh――gather, gather, to this melody! O disciples on earth. Let’s depart together! To the promised land!」

TJ played the tune of his flute fully in order to resist the shriek that propagated the gnawing to the mind.

Aziz, Sharif, and Ciara continued to offer prayer so that the black hole wouldn’t close. In addition of TJ who continued to resist the scream, four people left the battle.

In order to protect them, Wynn and others formed a circle formation, but the swarm of low class demons surged like a tsunami. In this situation where they lost the shielder, rear guard, and also the support, Wynn and others were sweating coldly.

「――Zenha Zekkou (Raining Blade of Darkness)!」(TN: Thousand Blades Abstain Light)

From the sky, kunais were raining down like a heavy rain. The lord’s attack that was launched together with his three clones dispersed the low class one after another.

The lord landed on the ground and raised his voice.

「Where is Claire!?」

The demon shark just now. Not just swimming in the air, it could also leap from space to space, on top of that it could also bite space into shreds. It was an outrageous demon. It obviously surpassed middle class level. It was a high level demon that it wouldn’t be strange if it was a Named.

Because of that, the lord was unable to prevent Claudia from getting dragged in and his voice became unusually uneasy.

Wynn lopped off the head of the low class demon before him while answering.

「That hole! Most likely it connected to the lower strata! Unknown is over there! Go, Kousuke-dono! Take care of Claudia-sama!」

「What about you guys!?」

「We will protect the return path here to the death!」

Exorcists who wouldn't hesitate to sacrifice their life would risk their life here in order to return home. The lord's eyes snapped wide open. Wynn grinned fearlessly toward that and spoke.

「There is no guarantee you will be able to return to the surface if you fall to the lower strata. Then, there is no way we can lose this hole. Everyone will return alive. Isn't that right? Then, leave this place to us!」

「We also has received absurd recovery medicines! We can at least protect the path back!」

「In the first place, the fight against Unknown is the responsibility of Nee-san and Kousuke-san. We won't be hindrance at the fight of you two. That's the strategy.」

Anna and Aziz spoke with similar fearless grin. Sharif and others also nodded with strong gaze.

「Fuh, very well. If you all are resolved to return alive, then it's inevitable. I'll leave this place to you!」

There was no time so the turn was sealed! The lord only pushed up his sunglass and leaped into the black hole that connected to hell's lower strata.

In front of the flood of innumerable demons, Wynn and others gulped the recovery medicine that was given to

them. And then just like when they departed to here, they simultaneously threw the empty vials to the ground spiritedly.

Their fighting spirit seethed so much that the lower class demons spontaneously stopped moving.

"My bad, demons. Right now, we will beaten into all of you one more time, the meaning of exorcist (one who cleanse demon)."

Provocative words. Surely the demons didn't understand the meaning of the words but……in respond to the extremely fierce dominating aura, the demons shrieked as though to rouse themselves and attacked.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

After this, I will upload at 19 o'clock too.

Arifureta Chapter 317

Arifureta After III　Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2 Unknown　Second

–

「Unknown　First」 was uploaded at the previous chapter.

The update today is two chapters.

Those who haven’t read it, please go to the previous chapter.

Claudia fell into the black hole while being dragged by tentacles, however she was calm.

「——Respond, Holy Cross.」

Just those. With just those words that couldn’t be even called as a scripture, the Holy Cross deployed a radiance in spherical shape around its user.

The tentacles were instantly dissolved and dispersed.

Claudia tasted a strange sensation for a few seconds where there was nothing like sense of weightlessness even though she was definitely falling. The darkness where she couldn’t even see an inch ahead opened up all at once right after that.

What flew into her sight were skyscrapers with flowing river of magma.

It was an amazing sight of a bunch of buildings that should be called as a metropolitan and flowing river of magma at all the parts where originally the streets should existed.

She couldn’t see the horizon, however, seeing that she could see the bedrock ceiling until the faraway distance, she understood that this was an underground city with vastness that beggared imagination.

Claudia seemed to be falling from a hole that was opened in that ceiling.

With the speed of freefalling, she would crash into any of the skyscrapers in a few second. Even if she was lucky and could avoid that, in a few second more she would enter the worst dive into the street of magma.

But, as expected Claudia didn’t look anxious. Right now she was Claudia in exorcist mode. In the middle of work, even the god of clumsy girl was docile.

——The wings of the summit right here. Please grant me a temporary sky.

The Holy Cross shined. At the same time, shining wings appeared on Claudia’s back. They flapped loudly and feathers of light fluttered. Those wings that were enveloped in silver light closely resembled the apostle wings that Kaori possessed.

The figure of Claudia enveloped in spherical light while dancing in the sky by flapping silver wings was divinely beautiful in this hell. That sight was truly worthy to be

coming from someone who was called a saint, not a single one from thousands of people would be able to deny that.

Claudia traveled glidingly in the sky like that and landed on one of the skyscrapers. The wings softly scattered silver feathers and then vanished.

「Kousuke-sama……everyone……」

Her gaze naturally moved above. She had become completely alone. She would be lying if she said she wasn't feeling forlorn. And as expected, she would be lying if she said that she wasn't worried about her comrades.

But, the words of a hero that surfaced in her heart immediately cleared away that anxiety.

'Everyone won't die. I too won't die. I'll bring down Unknown. I'll accomplish my longstanding desire, save the world, and return home alive with everyone to eat lemon cake.'

'Fuh', Claudia's lips formed a smile.

In that moment, intense impact and ripple spread on Claudia's barrier surface.

「Tsu――Unknown!!」

Her sworn enemy was on the rooftop of the adjacent building. The body of deep shadow was around three meter tall. Eyes and mouth of flame, blazing blood vessels that were like magma were running through his whole body. He had materialized even more. His twisted horn wasn't there previously. The fierce pressure that she didn't feel even twelve years ago looked like it was distorting the surrounding space.

Ordinary people, no, even the average exorcist would lose consciousness or stiffen and became unable to move just from facing him. He truly boasted a majesty that should be called as “King Class”.

“Claudia. My mother body. You don’t know just how much I have been waiting for this time.”

Even his words had become far smoother. As expected, it seemed that his power had increased considerably perhaps thanks to his worshippers.

Unknown slowly made his body floated and landed on the same building with Claudia.

The group of huge high-rise buildings that couldn’t be found that easily even in earth had rooftop width that was also in different level. The space was around as large as a baseball field.

Thus, there was still quite some distance between them. Although, with Unknown getting that closer, the pressure became so strong it even induced nausea.

Claudia scolded her legs that almost backed away.

Her gaze was sharp and her overflowing dominating aura would make anyone wondered that there must be some mistake of her being a clumsy self-destructing saint. Truly, she was certainly worthy to be called as the “strongest exorcist”.

“I’ve also waited for this time. This time for me to take revenge for father and mother. This time where I’ll destroy you!”

「Kakah. What a pleasant hatred. It’s astonishing to hear that coming from a servant of god.」

Unknown spoke in ridicule, to corner his opponent.

「In the first place, wasn’t it you who summoned me? The death of your mother and father was――」

「Yes, it was my fault.」

But, it didn’t work anymore against Claudia.

Because,

「It seems that it’s fine to hate. It seems that it’s also fine to fight for personal enmity.」

Because that was human heart. Because there was no doubt, that it was an important heart.

But, that wasn’t all. There was certainly things that she had accumulated until now.

「I will destroy you with following my personal enmity and my mission.」

The sense of mission that she held together with her comrades was also Claudia’s strength.

Thinking of him that made her notice that, Claudia recalled his fearless smile and tried to imitate it. As though to fire herself up and push back Unknown’s pressure.

「You want me right? Then, stop with the trifling talk and come at me.」

With the Holy Cross in one hand, her other hand gestured invitingly,

「I am, the “ Saint ” Claudia Barenberg. If you think that you can make me fall, you can try.」

A war declaration. Killing intent and sense of mission throughout these twelve years were filling it.

「Kakah, very well. I’ll make you fall and become pregnant with me. If it’s me with the reborn flesh, I’ll surely be able to trample even those irritating technique users!」

Unknown lifted his hand. Right away, a pressure attacked Claudia. It wasn’t a mental pressure. It was more physical, yes, it was super gravity.

「Tsu——o lord-, please protect thy child! So that all evil will be thwarted by the solid fortress!」

She kneeled while supporting the Holy Cross. Claudia’s prayer resounded. The Holy Cross’s barrier increased in radiance and protected the user from the super gravity.

「Let’s see how far you will be able to endure.」

Unknown increased the pressure further while mixing a scorning laugh.

Blam-, the rooftop around Claudia sunk. But, even while groaning Claudia was still going strong. Her strong gaze pierced Unknown and the radiance of the Holy Cross was getting increasingly stronger.

But, it was the building that became unable to endure that intense pressure.

Cracks were spreading in radiating shape around Claudia.

「——Wings of summit!」

A moment before the rooftop caved in, she deployed the silver wings and glided. The high-rise building was crumbling below with a rumble and thunderous sound. During that time Claudia was trying to move to the adjacent building.

But,

「That light is an eyesore.」

「——!?」

Unknown’s figure was right in front of her. His arm was drawn back and then it attacked Claudia like a cannon that was fired from close range.

Terrific impact instantly almost made her lost consciousness, however, the light of Holy Cross, the strongest sacred vessel wasn’t pierced and protected the user fully.

Although, the place was midair. Claudia was blown away along with her barrier like a pinball and pierced through the adjacent building. Without stopping she crashed into the upper floor of even farther building.

「Uh, kuh」

Even though she was groaning, Claudia had endured an attack that normally would turn the victim into a lump of flesh. Her consciousness almost left her once more, but she absolutely wouldn’t let go of the Holy Cross’s protection.

Then, at that timing, a powerful torrent of power outside the building was……

「Tsu——o lord, sever the evil of the wicked and support the righteous to stand firm! What protect me is the shield of

god! God saves those with earnest heart!

The moment she strengthened the barrier further, the space screamed. Her field of vision flabbily distorted as though her sight was blurred, but the next instant the very space itself shook.

The high-rise building that received an impact that should be called a space blasting instantly turned the spot above the floor where Claudia was located into dust.

Even the floor itself was filled with cracks like spider web and it would collapse anytime.

At the center of the floor that now had good visibility, Claudia was clinging on the Holy Cross with a pale expression. Even while the barrier had countless cracks in it, it somehow endured.

But, she had used a lot of power for strengthening the barrier just now. Claudia tried to take out a test tube from her pocket with trembling hand——

Is that a kind of holy water? I won't let you.

Unknown tackled. Claudia who was blown away once more yelled aAAAAAH while pouring strength into the Holy Cross.

Claudia was blown away as though being pushed while piercing through several high-rise buildings. Before long, she crashed onto an open space near the surface ground.

Ua, hh, kuh

She groaned. From outside the barrier, Unknown was looking down with enjoyment at Claudia who was enduring the pain.

Claudia who tried to retreat was stopped by foot trampling on the barrier’s top.

「Kakakah. What’s the matter, Claudia. Is your high spirit only appeared at the beginning? You won’t be able to defeat me by simply defending you know?」

Unknown trampled the barrier while cornering Claudia with words. Claudia glared back wordlessly.

Even now when she was forced into defense one-sidedly and getting shown the difference in strength while being completely isolated, Claudia kept sending a rebellious gaze. Unknown narrowed his eyes and right after that he grinned repulsively and spread out his hands.

Then,

「Claire……please, save father.」

「It’s painful, Claire. Why are you tormenting your mother?」

Besides Unknown, the father and mother of Claudia appeared. They were broiled in black and flamed writhed in pain.

It was Claudia’s fault that they were suffering. It was only Claudia who could liberate them from this suffering.

That’s why, don’t be disobedient even more than this……

I beg you, be a good kid……

You are, really a bad kid……

「Fufuh」

A chuckle leaked out.

Yes, it was Claudia’s laugh.

Unknown narrowed his eyes in puzzlement.

「Are you going crazy?」

「No way. I’m just amused, at how cornered you are.」

「You are saying, I’m cornered?」

Unknown was getting even more puzzled. Claudia fearlessly laughed even with her pale face.

「In reality that’s how it is right? You cannot break through my barrier, but considering the possibility that I might die, you also cannot attack seriously. That’s why, you are even doing this kind of play to break my mind.」

「Just when I’m wondering what are you going to say. The delight of trampling over your heart is――」

「Even though that person is coming?」

Unknown closed his mouth. Claudia’s smile was getting increasingly wider.

「You are fearing that person.」

「What are you……」

「You aimed at him first when we stepped inside hell. Even when you were dragging me here, you sent an intense attack only to that person. Above all else, you yourself said that you have to be reborn. You are aware that you won’t be able to win against the technique users――the returnees right?」

Creak-, the barrier made a sound. It was creaking from Unknown’s stepping foot. It expressed the condition of Unknown’s heart more eloquently than anything.

「Even though you were dragging me away here without being able to finish off that person, my defense is harder than you imagined. That’s why, you even did this kind of provocation wanting me to go out into offense.」

Even if it was Claudia, the strongest exorcist, it would be difficult to activate defense and offense simultaneously at the same level. She was able to endure Unknown’s attack right now exactly because she was persisting in defense.

The moment she shifted into offense, Unknown would definitely take advantage of the opening in the defense that would slightly loosen at that time.

「That person said it.」

Claudia showed a bright grin that was terribly irritating for the enemy no matter what and she spoke.

「A demon king will be lying in wait brazenly. You who are running away, hiding, and making petty provocation have declared it yourself through that.」

That was to say,

「That you have no caliber as demon king.」

「……You don’t need any limbs to conceive me.」

Unknown became serious. Intense rage and hatred surged. His feeling that wanted to make Claudia into his mother body unharmed had vanished. As though to say it would be fine as long as she survived while conceiving him until he

was reborn, he was going to unleash an attack without holding back.

「I'm grateful that you are going along with my conversation.」

「What?」

「I'm saying, that I have bought enough time.」

Furthermore, Claudia who was forming a wide smile with loveliness that was unthinkable for someone who was in hell called out with her happiness in full display.

「Right? Kousuke-sama!」

「Exactly.」

「Guo!?」

The one who answered to that call was of course, that person, the abyss lord. The invisibility that was working in full made even Unknown to not notice his approach. A flying kick of gravity & blaze from directly horizontal——

Fall into the deep darkness

Jutsui Engeki Kyaku exploded. (TN: Gravity Crash Blazing Kick)

The technique that was created by ad-lib blew away Unknown that was hit by it once more. His body pulverized the pillar of a high-rise building and vanished to the other side.

「I'm sorry Claire, for leaving you alone like this.」

「No, Kousuke-sama. I believed in you. Besides, I am someone who introduced myself as the strongest exorcist. It

will be out of the question for me to be unable to struggle through just this much by myself.」

「Fuh, I see. By the way, right now call me Abyssga――」

「Kousuke-sama! Please be careful! Unknown is even more powerful than before!」

「Ri, iight……」

Ri, iiight~~~

‘Why won’t you call me Abyssgate? Right now, it’s okay even if you call me Aby you know?’ the lord thought, but he closed his mouth seeing the towering building at the other side of the street of magma collapsed with a thunderous sound and a spire of darkness color pierced the sky.

The lord that felt a sever killing intent directed to him carried Claudia in his arms and attempted to escape to the sky.

Right after he flew up with his pseudo flight, the place where they were at just a moment ago was hit with a shower of countless tentacles like a rain. The foothold was destroyed and sunk into magma.

The lord who flew without paying attention to that landed on the highest skyscraper.

Even though this highest high-rise building that had huge clock attached in it was devastated, it possessed a majesty that gave the impression that perhaps it was the symbol of this city when this underground city was still in good state. The stopped hands of the clock might be engraving the time when this city was destroyed……

The lord let Claudia down, at the same time Unknown also landed on the rooftop of the clock building.

「So you are going to get in my way no matter what, human?」

「I'm going to get in your way no matter what, demon.」

The hero in black walked forward while covering the holy woman behind him.

The saint believed in him and kneeled. She put up the Holy Cross in front of her and held it tightly with both hands while closing her eyes.

「I'll trample you bastard and your comrades too.」

「Looks like you have no sense of joke.」

Shan- with a clear sound two short swords were drawn out.

Of course, they were then held in the awesome cross stance!

「Let's make it simple. Claire will destroy you. If before that you can kill me, it will be your win. If you cannot……you understand right?」

「That's simple, and on top of that it's easy.」

'That's not the case', the lord laughed.

「No need to hold back. Dance with desperation to resist against death, demon. If not, my abyss will easily swallow you.」

——Activated　Last Zell v.4

Limit Break!!! The torrent of jet black pierced the sky!

「A mere human, know your place!」

Unknown vanished. He rapidly approached with a speed that made it seemed so. He went toward the center of the torrent and thrust forward his powerful arm that was enlarged like a log.

The sound of destruction was the proof that the speed surpassed the speed of sound. The torrent of jet black was sent flying.

At the same time, blades flew toward Unknown.

Neck, arms, torso, legs. Four lords swung short sword that was enveloped in flame.

「Impertinent!!」

Unknown thrust out blades of shadow from all over his body like a mountain of swords. The four lords were stabbed, however, they grinned and right after that, they split into eight lords and unleashed a storm of slash.

Unknown who got a part of his shadow cut down greatly rotated his body. His body that was covered with swords and his whip-like tail became a brutal attack to all directions.

The eight lords were shredded to pieces in an instant but,

「I'll have you stop getting wild near Claire.」

Abyss-style Katon – Futon mixed formation
The dark flame of the whirling abyss
Gouka Beni Senpuu——four layers of blazing whirlwinds were activated from the lords at the four directions.

The immense red spire scorched the air.

Furthermore, nine lords that were lined up in a single vertical line charged in a straight line toward the flame pillar.

□Mere flame-□

It wasn’t effective. At the same time when Unknown’s voice resounded, the pillar of flame was burst open.

Because the lord had predicted that, the column rush——Abyss-style Je○ Stream Attack!

Unknown’s tentacles pierced the lord at the lead, then the shockwave that resulted from a mere swing of the arm blew away the second and third lord. A super gravity that was suddenly generated crushed the fourth and fifth lord but……

The attacks couldn’t reach until the sixth. Unknown attempted to intercept with his own fist, but that fist itself was met with a kick that was enveloped in flame from the sixth, and the other arm was also deflected by the seventh.

Like that, the eight’s kick exploded on the torso that became defenseless.

□Nuguh□

□Fly away□

As an insurance, two short swords were launched into a fierce thrust that gouged even the eighth. The two swords that were enveloped in flame and ice even unleashed further impact and sent Unknown flying literally.

He flew like a pinball, bounced on the rooftop of the adjacent building, and then he crashed into the upper floor of even further adjacent building.

「Claire, can you do it?」

「Yes, Kousuke-sama. From here on, I will entrust my everything to you.」

Claire who opened her closed eyes said that and smiled. And then, she closed her eyes once more.

She was able to recover before the current fight. She had also finished her mental preparation.

Therefore she could chant, the prayer to god, the scripture with the strongest relation to the deed of demon extermination. Once it was used, she would use up all her strength and became unable to move properly. It was the strongest exorcist's words of power that should also be called a double-edged sword.

――O lord, please listen to the prayer of thy child. Please stop this lamentation in my heart.

The Holy Cross was enveloped in faint light. It was a pure white, fleeting radiance that looked like it would vanish anytime.

「Don't get carried away, human!」

Super gravity attacked the whole clock building. The high-rise building that was two building away from here was blown away and Unknown flew out.

「That's my line, demon.」

Gravity magic "Black Vortex" ――maximum activation!

The four lords that were positioned at the four directions of the rooftop formed gravity field at their respective position.

The pressure that was coming down on the clock building was neutralized by the barrier of gravity field.

Shadow flew out from Unknown. Aura that was painting out the surrounding black was spreading, even dark clouds were starting to filling up the ceiling.

From the aura of black shadow, great number of demons, monsters oozed out.

Not to mention Gargoyle, Gazer, and Hell Hound, even that shark that could cross through space, a one horned horse enveloped in purple lightning, a crow with woman head attached, a lump of dark red flame……

The number easily reached the thousand.

Unknown spread his hands widely to the demons who filled the space to the brim and spoke.

「This is the power of king.」

Then,

「This is the power of the abyss.」

In return, the lord opposed with a thousand lords.

The two armies used the skyscrapers as replacement for stepping stones or clashed in the air.

——God is the righteous judge. Thy, repent. The god sharpen that sword, draw that bow, and prepare the weapon to bring death, turning arrow into fire arrow

Unknown glanced at Claudia who was continuing to pray and raised a yell while gritting his teeth.

「You bastard, just how much power you have!? That's a power that surpassed the category that is allowed for human!」

A human who was unbelievably opposing an army of demon with troops of equal force.

Unknown joined the battle personally in order to clear away the reality that wouldn't go as he expected.

「Have you forgotten? It will always be human who destroy existences like you.」

A black hole materialized in the air. At the same time, Unknown's figure vanished. It wasn't anything like high speed movement. He crossed over space through the black hole and materialized behind the lord.

The powerful arm struck mercilessly, however, the lord too dodged by vanishing.

Abyss-style Kuuton technique Abyss is always unevenly distributed Ban'ei no Kagerou——a technique that used clone, disposable pebble for teleportation, kunai, and so on to switch spatial position.

The materialization location was of course behind Unknown. The short swords flew and shaved away the shadow!

「You bastard, just as I thought you are possessing the power of the royalty.」

Unknown muttered while his eyes of flame blazed up. Instantly, a streak of lightning fell on the lord.

「Guuh, so you can control even the weather!」

The rain of lightning poured down in godspeed was blocked by randomly dodging while using clones as shield.

——O lord, please descend. My god, please grant me salvation. With that, I will destroy thy enemy and crush the wicked heart

Lightning was also falling to Claudia, but that too was shielded by the clones who used themselves to build an impregnable wall. Not even a single attack passed through.

Claudia too didn’t bother at all with the situation outside herself. She only closed her eyes and offered her prayer wholeheartedly.

Unnoticed, the Holy Cross’s radiance was getting so bright it couldn’t be ignored. The brilliant light was like a sun in the form of cross.

Unknown created a black hole in front of himself. His narrowed eyes was looking through the lord toward Claudia behind him.

「I’ll face you at my leisure for later.」

Unknown vanished into the black hole as though he was absorbed in. His destination was obvious. Right behind Claudia……

steps of death

「Don’t speak such cold thing. This is a dance between me and you right?」

Similary, right behind Claudia——the lord who teleported between her and Unknown thrust the short sword that he held in reverse grip toward Unknown’s stomach while grinning fearlessly. And then, he activated teleportation once more.

It was a teleportation to a different place that also dragged Unknown together.

□You bastard-. All troops, aim for the woman! Don’t bother with the man’s shadows!□

Unknown gave the order to aim at Claudia and disregarded the lord’s clones that would increase with more number than the defeated clones.

The demons also appeared without end. Several hundred demons ignored the clones and advanced toward Claudia.

□I thought you will come like that!□

Multiple clones gathered to where Claudia was.

Like that, they lifted up their hands to the sky as though making a group prayer, and unleashed the trump card that he had prepared since this battle started and was desperately keeping in standby state until now.

□□□□□——Black Heaven Destitution!!!□□□□□

One of the gravity magic’s hidden technique that swallowed the whole area and obliterated everything without a single exception.

A star of calamity appeared near the ceiling, whirled blackly, and released jet black sparks. It was swallowing all the demons that were rapidly approaching Claudia.

The demons screamed while desperately struggling in the air, but there was no way they could escape from the pseudo black hole by doing something like that.

The clones were desperately protecting the clock building by deploying gravity field barrier, but even the surrounding high-rise buildings got their upper floors torn off and swallowed.

「Impossible……」

For a moment Unknown was dumbfounded. The technique that the human who he was facing right now showed was without a doubt something that could only be handled by the royalty, furthermore it was only by the few minority of them. Even he himself hadn’t reached that level!

「……No way I’ll accept this. There is no way this is acceptable-」

Unknown became indignant and caused severe quake in the space itself.

「Kahah!?」

The lord was sent flying while vomiting blood along with several hundred clones at the same time.

The use of Black Heaven Destitution was a double-edged sword. Because it was a trump card among trump card, it would use up the entire magic power and vitality of the user. It was to the degree that the lord became unable to instantly react against the wide range attack of space blasting.

Ignoring the lord who was sent flying while vomiting blood, Unknown rapidly approached Claudia once more. There was no clone on his way. He didn’t teleport but rushed straight physically to kidnap her right away.

「I, told you, I WON’T LET YOUUUUUUU-」

The lord unusually raised a war cry with his emotion bared open. Using pseudo flight that gave a speed of freefalling, in addition of the acceleration using gravity magic, he cut into the Unknown’s path.

「You’re in the way-, human!」

「The one in the way, is you asshole-, demooon!!」

The lord took a stance of crossguard with his short swords while blocking the Unknown’s rush.

He was being pushed back to where Claudia was, but at that time he had already recovered several clones. They attacked Unknown from all directions and somehow stopped the momentum of his charge.

――Even if evil has no end, even if the battle will last for eternity, my faithful heart too will continue for eternity without end. Therefore, o enemy of god. O existence of vice and scorn. Look, our light too, is eternal.

At the same time when the Black Heaven Destitution vanished, light gathered to there. The pure white light erupting from the Holy Cross was taking shape bit by bit. Yes, the shape of a huge cross of light that pierced the sky.

The demons who were nearby were dispersed without being able to even do anything to resist. Just like how shadow that was touched by the light would silently vanish.

The Unknown that was locked in a contest of strength against the lord opened his eyes wide seeing the cross of heaven.

He instantly understood. That was something that was enough to destroy him, no, all demons. The terrifying act of

god. It drew a line from a simple miracle, so to speak it was the very concept of “destroying demon”.

Unknown raised a shriek.

「KILL THAT WOMAAAAANNNN!!」

「I WON’T LET YOU, TOUCH EVEN A SINGLE FINGER OF HEEEEERRR!!」

In respond the lord was also commanding with a scream to all his clones.

Unknown directed eyes that were blazing with hatred toward the lord. Right away, Unknown’s last ability was activated.

「-, this guy!?」

Unknown changed shape. Lion’s head, feet and claws that were like dragon, snake tail and hawk wings——yes, it was that monster that once made Kousuke to swallow bitterness——a chimera.

An instant of unrest. But, he barely dodged the approaching claws and fangs due to a clone that took them in his place.

The snake tail attacked, but he severed it with his short sword.

Without pause the lord stepped in and let out a slash with the short sword in one hand——

「You still have some way to go huh, Kousuke.」

「Wha-——guah!?」

The lord got diagonally slashed instead.

The discomposure disordered his swordsmanship and right after the sword was deflected, he got hit by a counter.

The cause of the discomposure was one. The thing that was a chimera just now had become the man who was like an older brother that the lord, Kousuke, still idolized unwaveringly until now.

Yes,

「Captain, Meld……」

Unknown's last ability was to read the weak memory of the opponent and reproduced that person. Just like how he showed Claudia her dead parents. However, this time it wasn't an illusion, he was transforming himself.

「Kousuke. Don't get in my way!」

「Don't look down on me-」

A great sword that was held above the head was parried with the two short swords even while being discomposed.

The lord rotated while unleashing a high spinning kick to mow the opponent's face but,

「Kousuke-, stop-. What are you doing!?」

「――」

Instantly, the face that he was going to kick through right now changed into Emily's face.

Perhaps his discomposure showed in his face, because for a moment, Emily's lips distorted.

「Shih-」

「Nuu!?」

But, the lord kicked through Emily’s face without stopping. Even while feeling discomposure, the lord didn’t lessen the kick’s strength at the slightest. Unknown let out a shocked voice.

「What’s the matter? Come at me. You can do whatever you can.」

It was obvious for anyone who looked. The lord had quietly snapped. He gestured with his fingertip provocatively.

――Arrive at the sacred palace, the gate of consecration opened. Now, let’s gather

The light that the cross of heaven emitted was starting to burn Unknown’s flesh by bits and pieces as though in concert with the lord’s fury. The end for the prayer, and for Unknown was nearing.

「There is no time you know, demon? You naked king who is abandoned even by your fellow demons and cannot even injure a single human without relying on a cheap trick.」

「……-, I am king. I am the true king-. They aren’t responding to my call is simply because they are ascertaining! The caliber of king, exist only in m――」

From his words, as expected Unknown couldn’t gather the named demons. He didn’t know the true reason, but from Unknown’s attitude that laughed scornfully saying 「So what if I can’t」 in respond to that, as expected he wasn’t worthy to be called a demon king.

The lord snorted ‘hah’ and raised his middle finger.

□Keep barking alone like that for your whole life, you loser dog.□

Unknown charged in a state where his rage couldn’t be expressed in language anymore.

The lord met him from the front.

The ever-changing attacks of powerful arms, tentacles, and tail were all taken down by clones that were half deployed as though overlapping with the main body as though there were double or triple layers of blur.

When super gravity poured down, it was opposed by similar anti gravity. His eyes didn’t overlook the sign of space blasting and he prevented it through disturbing the space by activating his own teleportation incompletely.

Demons came attacking. But, the multiplication speed of the clones finally surpassed the demon summoning speed. A single demon would be swarmed by dozens of clones. The number was crushed by even greater number.

Unknown was repeatedly attacking with super speed while transforming into people close to the lord one after another, but unnoticed the balanced battle was……

□You, bastard-. You’re still, getting faster-□

□That is mine Limit Break. This is——Abyssgate Abyss Lord.□

The special Limit Break that increased the specs the more time passed——Abyss Lord. Using Last Zell, the lord reached the deepest depth in one go and from there he continued to drink magic power recovery medicine when there was opening.

By doing that, although there was limit for the flesh body, the Limit Break state was unbroken and the spec was increasing even further from the deepest depth. So to speak, it was a path that was leading to the last derivation technique of Limit Break, “Supreme Break”.

Specs that were completely superior. The lord was already becoming a streak of shadow in a different sense from Unknown and danced madly. Far from dodging, even ignoring the lord and aiming at Claudia had become impossible for Unknown.

——What is here is the sacred cross. The embodiment of god’s wish. The absolute concept that bring about the ultimate will in heaven.

And then, the cross that was shining in the sky——its form was completely established. It was truly the Holy Cross of Claudia itself.

The underground city was filled with light until the far end of the ground!

「Stop-, CLAUDIAaAAA-! YOU’RE, MY——」

「It’s checkmate. This is far easier than inflicting a single scratch on the demon king.」

There was no more dignity or anything. Unknown was frantically trying to stop Claudia with a deathly desperation.

But, such Unknown was once more sent flying really easily by the lord.

「Now, it’s the closing of curtain. End the nightmare throughout these twelve years! Claudia Barenberg!」

‘Yes, Kousuke-sama.’

Even though there was no voice, such soft words that were filled with determination certainly reached the lord.

And then,

「I command under the name of Saint, Claudia Barenberg.」

Claudia’s eyes opened slowly. The jade eyes shined silver, and she herself was illuminated from behind by a silver halo along with the Holy Cross.

「O residents of hell, o people whose soul are invaded by desire of strife and rule――perish.」

The words of the saint were told solemnly, however, myriad of feelings were filling it.

A scream surged out. A scream of death agony.

All the demons in this underground space were illuminated by shining Holy Cross at the sky and vanished.

「……It, doesn’t come true again」

There was already no place where the light didn’t reach.

Far from that, Unknown who was smoking white from his whole body noticed that he couldn’t even activate his own abilities and silently stared at his crumbling hands.

Unknown’s gaze turned toward Claudia who was looking straight at him. When he noticed, the man who was his greatest obstacle was drawing closer to her.

Seeing the strength of the two’s gaze, the determination residing inside those pupils that was shining in this hell,

Unknown returned an envious gaze to that for an instant.

But, before Claudia and the lord noticed that, those eyes immediately burned with the flame of hatred and,

"Hell is created from nine stratums. In the lower stratums, existences that are far beyond your imagination can be found anywhere."

He talked further while half his body was crumbling away.

"I don't know what those guys' plan are for you all, but at the very least, I have left behind a command to the dead at the stratum right below here. Even if I perish, every single one of them will trample your world until they are all exterminated to the last. The door to your world are opening in the lower stratum."

The expression of the lord and Claudia stiffened. Because both of them exerted their maximum strength in this battle, they were mostly spent right now. In addition, if the path was opened, right in this instant Vatican would be flooded with demons.

Unknown sent a mocking smile to the two of them, and then, hatefully, resentfully, Unknown was showing an expression that was filled with such complicated emotions before at the end, with a calm tone as though he had let go of the burden on his shoulders,

"These damn humans"

Saying that, he vanished.

That was the true end of the unknown greater demon who had been scheming to invade and rule over the other world since faraway past.

「Uu-」

It was Claudia's groan. The Holy Cross of heaven melted into empty air and vanished.

「-, Claire……are you alright?」

While vomiting a bit of blood and desperately maintaining his sanity that was almost lost due to his mini self inside his heart that was wearing a chuuni T-shirt, Kousuke scolded himself that now wasn't the time for that and supported Claudia. 'It huuurts, my heart huuurtts. But, work hard for a bit more okaay, meee!'

Claudia who didn't have any way of knowing the inside of Kousuke's heart that was like that was silently shedding tears.

「Kousuke-sama……am I, does Claire……succeed in getting revenge for mama and papa?」

The Holy Cross fell with a clang. Claudia who was already using up all her strength and feeling was only crouching while leaking out a sob with a feeling that couldn't be expressed in words.

The divine light vanished completely and only the redness of magma illuminated the underground city. Amidst that, Kousuke embraced Claudia's head.

「From the start, Claudia's mama and papa doesn't want Claudia to take revenge or anything. That's what I thought. They should want you to live happily.」

The family that Claudia kept thinking about even after twelve years had passed. The parents who poured their love

by that much into their daughter must be wishing for their daughter’s happiness.

「But, even so, Claire made your wish came true through the path that you decided by yourself and you traveled desperately. Even though it’s a path that is different from what your parents want, if they two of them are here, they will absolutely say this while thinking about Claire, not for their own sake.」

――You have worked really hard.

She had done her best for twelve years even while vomiting blood. There was no way they wouldn’t feel proud of such daughter.

When Claudia heard Kousuke’s words, she buried her face into his chest and sobbed quietly once more.

The two of them were snuggling close to each other like that in the middle of hell just for a few moment.

「Let’s go home Claire. Right now it’s still the time to run for that sake.」

「Yes, yes-, Kousuke-sama!」

Even though she had used up all her strength and her expression was pale, Claudia who understood Kousuke’s feeling showed a smile that looked the loveliest until now. It was a beauty that was worthy for the name of saint.

But, at that time, a terrific impact assaulted the underground city. It was an impact that was like a tremendous earthquake. Just from that, several high-rise buildings that were in the verge of crumbling collapsed and vanished into the sea of magma.

「Chih. It’s the dead of the lower stratum huh. That damn Unknown, he is irritating until the very end.」

The physical weariness that came as the after effect of Limit Break wasn’t something trivial. It was even truer because this time after entering Limit Break state of depth V, Kousuke forcefully lengthened the effect until his specs were increased to the degree that he entered the state of Supreme Break.

Kousuke became able to move somehow by using the recovery medicine of the highest grade and then he carried Claudia on his back.

「Claire, how much you can still fight?」

「Thanks to the secret medicine I received……if there are five more minutes, I will be able to somehow to deploy the minimum barrier and offense.」

Five minutes. It sounded short but long. Kousuke himself too would only be able to use elementary level magic for a while. In hand-to-hand combat too he would only be able to do a movement that was forty percent of his normal state.

But, even so,

「We are going home.」

「Yes, Kousuke-sama!」

Claudia hugged Kousuke’s neck tightly as though to bury her face onto it.

The impact that was piercing up from the lower stratum was getting stronger second by second. Other than flooding into earth, the demons of the third stratum must be trying to

climb up to this upper stratum that was this underground city, or perhaps they were even trying to climb until the surface. It was possible that their objective might be to chase after Kousuke and Claudia.

They already didn’t have even a minute of time extension.

If there was something that could be called as a small mercy, the hole on the ceiling that they used to come here was still existing. For some reason the hole wasn’t black, it was becoming a hole of light, but there was no doubt that Wynn and others were maintain the hole.

Kousuke squeezed out his remaining little magic power that the recovery couldn’t catch up with and flew right away to the ceiling.

He passed through the shining hole and flew toward the visible exit of light.

「You are back!」

「Claudia-sama! Kousuke-san.」

「I’m glad……」

They tumbled on the ground when landing. When Kousuke and Claudia raised their face, Wynn and others were there. Although they had become wounded all over, not a single member was lacking from among them.

「Everyone, I’m glad all of you are safe……」

Claudia became teary eyed once more, but she quickly pulled herself together.

「Unknown was defeated. But, at the end he made the demons at third stratum to rampage. Surely they are already appearing in our world too. We have to escape from here as fast as possible. If not we will be swallowed by a large swarm of high class demons!」

Wynn and others gulped. But, their discomposure lasted only for a moment. They immediately reformed their formation to surround Kousuke and Claudia on his back.

「Time until recovery?」

「I want two more minutes until I can make clone again.」

Even if they would be able to escape safely, the compensation of forcing himself would be him being unable to move properly for a week. Kousuke thought that while giving an answer. Though of course, if he could get regeneration magic applied to him, he would become better to a certain degree.

「Got it. Leave the two minutes to us.」

With Wynn at the lead, the ragged exorcists started running with Kousuke and Claudia at the center.

They were cutting open the path with great desperation.

Like that, they somehow succeeded in going until they could see the outer circumference of the ruined city. But, there was despair there. At the other side of the street where they were rushing through to escape from the ruined city, at the wasteland outside, low class demons were gathering in fan shape.

The number of the low class demons should be expressed as blanketing the ground. If it was seen from above, the sky

was also flooded with the winged low class demons.

It seemed they were lying in ambush.

There, even more despair was catching up with them.

DON- An impact came once more. The seismic intensity that far surpassed even 7 or 8 Richter assaulted them. Kousuke and others who were in a state of extreme exhaustion couldn’t help but collapsed or stopped moving.

「What’s that just now!? Don’t tell me, they are coming out already from the third stratum into the underground city!?」

「-, wait, what’s this pressure!? This is far more than Unknown isn’t it!?」

Kousuke and others exposed a lethal opening, however, for some reason the low class demons didn’t attack.

Far from that, they were looking around as though being scared of something. It even looked like they were in confusion.

DON-

DON-

DON-

Impacts came intermittently like the pulsation of a mighty existence. At the same time, there was a swelling up presence which applied pressure that caused even Kousuke to shrink back.

The wind of lamentation, the physical exhaustion from Limit Break, and then the mental exhaustion that he was enduring

Abyss Lord’s aftereffect

by desperately averting his gaze from it, they were dulling Kousuke’s senses and he couldn’t grasp the detail of the enemy that was approaching from the underground.

But, if that enemy appeared right now, they absolutely wouldn’t be able to win…….

Should he resolved the breaking down of his flesh and bought time by using Limit Break – Depth V mode once more……

But, if he did that, the possibility of Kousuke himself going home would be despairingly low.

At the back of his mind flashed the image of Rana, Emily, the people close to him, comrades, and then family……

(Eei, don’t hesitate, me! In any case, no one will be able to go home if I don’t fight! Fight here with the resolve of making this place my grave!)

He silently put down Claudia.

The determined expression of Kousuke caused Claudia to grasp his sleeve spontaneously. She guessed what he was planning to do.

Wynn and others also guessed the same.

That was why, before Kousuke could say 「Leave this place to me and go ahead. No worry, I’ll catch up soon」,

「We cannot let Kousuke-dono to steal the spotlight even more than this.」

「Please don’t underestimate exorcist.」

「This time, I’ll protect Kousuke-san.」

After Wynn, Anna, and Aziz said that, the other members also grinned fearlessly and readied their sacred vessel. Claudia smiled gently and embraced Kousuke’s arm.

□Let’s be together, till the end.□

Kousuke showed a slight hesitation but……a beat. He shrugged his shoulders in exasperation and nodded with an expression of resolve.

And then,

□Don’t give up till the end! We will absolutely return alive! ——Here it comes-□

At that instant, the ground was pulverized——

–

–

–

□SHAORAAAAAAAAAAAA-, DESUUU!!□

–

–

–

A rabbit flew up. Along with a giant that looked like a minotaur getting socked in the face.

–

□□□□□Eh?□□□□□

–

It went without saying that the eyes of Kousuke and others, without a single exception shrunk into a dot.

–

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Abyss Lord arc chapter 2, it will be the epilogue at the next week’s update.

After that, I’m thinking of taking holiday for around a month again.

The reason is because I want to focus at the writing of the publication.

If possible I plan to resume updating at 12 June, or 19 June at the latest.

Forgive me but, my best regards.

–

PS

In Overlap big thanks festival the other day, Yue-sama received the glorious first position in the heroine popularity poll.

This too is thanks to everyone who is giving your support everyday.

Really thank you very much!

Also, the second position is Shia, while 5th is Kaori, and 6th is Tio. Really, really thank you very much!

I also received a lot of support and words that they are always looking forward to Arifureta in the autograph session. Shirakome was nervous and desperate so that my hand wouldn’t shake, but at the end even that became gone and I got a lot motivated. Thank you very much!

–

PS 2

The key visual of the anime is published at Overlap-sama’s homepage!

The gentle and fluffy Yue-sama is really lovely, so if you don’t mind, please go take a look no matter what!

Arifureta Chapter 318

Arifureta After III　Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2 Epilogue　First

–

AN: It became too long so I divided it.

After this, the 「Epilogue　Second」 will also get uploaded at 19 o’clock.

「SHAORAAAAAAAAH, DESUU!!」

An unnatural 「DESUU!!」 resounded. Rabbit ears were flapping in the wind. The swung war hammer grandly whipped the “Wind of Lamentation”, and then,

――BUMOOOOOOOOH!?

The giant that looked like a minotaur raised a scream that even sounded like a tearful cry. It danced in the sky while drawing a beautiful parabola arc.

By the way, a part of minotaur-san’s head was caving in.

Even though they had resolved to fight to the death, even though they had affirmed their bond with each other in a great mood, the serious atmosphere was suddenly blown

away along with the ground. Even the low class demons were looking up to the sky open mouthed.

「Aa~, what? The air has changed here……」

A male voice suddenly resounded. It wasn't the voice of Kousuke or even Wynn and others. The voice came from the large hole in the ground that most likely was physically connecting to the lower stratum.

Kousuke was turning his gaze toward that hole with creaking movement like a machine that hadn't been oiled. There, a face of a familiar man suddenly popped out.

It was the demon king-sama.

「NAGUMOOO!? WHY!? WHY NAGUMO!?」

Even now it felt like Kousuke was going to yell 'AIEEEEEEE-'. Hajime who agilely jumped out from the hole landed on the edge. Then he tilted his head while going 'Eh?' and said.

「What a coincidence to meet you in this kind of hellish place, Endou. Did you get a new haircut?」

「I didn't! What's that, is that getting popular between you spouses!? Wait, that ain't it!」

Kousuke-san stamped his feet in frustration. He was in great panic toward the development that was just too unexpected and abrupt.

Though, even while he was saying that,

「Fly away until the other side of the mountain! Desuu!!」

――BUMOOOOOOOOH~~~~

The five meter mino-san got hit by Shia’s full swing and pierced through dozens of buildings of the ruined city while flying toward the mountain beyond.

Shia was emitting faint bluish white ripples in the air while descending with light step from the sky. *Step* She landed beside Hajime then with an expression that said 「Oh?」,

「Kousuke-san, it has been two days hasn’t it? Did you get a new haircut?」

「Okay. That gag is popular in Nagumo family huh? I get it. That’s why, enough with that and explain the situation pleaseee! Why are you two in this kind of place!? Why did you make your entrance by smashing through the ground!? Explain clearly and concisely please!」

‘Oh geez, getting max tensioned like that so suddenly, that’s a bit hard to keep up with you know?’

With a face that seemed to say that, Hajime-san and Shia-san talked in whisper to each other. Pulsing vein emerged on Kousuke’s forehead. Claudia and others were still dumbfounded. Also, the low class demons too were looking at each other’s face.

Hajime who was showing a nonchalant attitude answered.

「When I went to a forest date with Shia~, we encountered a witch~.

She attacked so burned her along with the forest, but then we got sent into a strange place.

Seeing that we had gotten there anyway we went into an adventure date, but then Endou was there somehow.

That’s all.]

「That’s all my ass!」

‘I don’t get it at all! It feels like my head will go crazy!’ Kousuke-kun grabbed his head.

But, at that time, the thousands and tens of thousands of low class demons surrounding the area started moving. Kousuke gasped and opened his eyes wide while taking battle stance. Claudia and others also prepared to fight despite their confusion.

But, before the hostilities began again,

「Oo, first people of another world, discovered. Somehow there are a lot of them but, well, no matter. ――Cough-. Hello, I’m, called Nagumo Hajime. We are, in the middle of a trip but, oh maaan, this is really troubling you know? We got attacked by monsters at underground you see, before we finally managed to climb up to the surface. Is it okay to talk for a bit?」

Hajime-san who talked politely with the best bright smile he got.

From the appearance of the low class demons, no matter how anyone looked at them they weren’t proper living being, and their great number was nothing but menacing. And then, the talking partner was low class demons who weren’t hiding their malice and killing intent at all but……

Hajime-san seemed to not know that the other party was demons. It seemed he was doing his best to first try talking peacefully, as befitting of a model self-proclaimed virtuous Japanese person which he regularly claimed to be.

‘Endou and others too, seem like they are getting into quarrel with the local people for some reason, can’t be helped, now that it’s like this I gotta mediate between them using my amazing communication skill’, such thinking also crossed his mind for a bit.

Shia was making tsukkomi 「Noo, no matter how you look at it, they are the same like the monster at lower level you know, Hajime-san」, but it seemed Hajime who had mellowed (?) wouldn’t just give up that easily.

No matter what kind of opponent it was, no matter what the situation was, he wouldn’t throw away the possibility of dialogue! As a Japanese person!

「Wai-, idiot! Those guys are――」

Kousuke tried to call out to stop him but, before he could, Hajime’s left hand that was held forward asking for a handshake was eaten.

Claudia and others voiced 「Ah」, Shia was staring with exasperated eyes that said 「I told you」, while Kousuke’s expression was cramped.

On the other hand, the low class demon that was biting too had “?” mark floating on its head when the sound of *clang-creak creak* and hard texture was impossibly coming from the left hand of the human prey it was chewing.

And then it slo~wly raised its head and tilted its neck as though to say 「This arm, isn’t it strange?」.

Hajime-san who was making a bright and wide smile saw the artificial skin for coating use got atrociously torn apart. His eye twitched. However he did his best to deepen his smile.

「The, the greeting in this place, is a bit extreme isn't it? Normally the arm will get bitten off like this but, it's that perhaps? Is it a play-biting that everyone here do? If that's the case――」

――GIIIIIIIIIH!! KILL! KILL! HUMAN! I'LL DEVOUR YOU!

Hajime-san's compromise was trampled.

The low class demon yelled while biting once again, but the next moment, its head was gripped and it was lifted until it was dangling down from a hand.

And then, when it was lifted until it was eye-level with Hajime, Hajime who was smiling brightly from very close distance was,

「This is, what you call a legitimate self-defense.」

Pachun! The head was crushed in the hand's grip. It seemed Hajime realized their special nature, he used the artificial hand that was thoroughly enveloped by magic power and closed his fist as though crushing an apple. Normally, that would be a case of excessive self-defense.

In any case, it seemed that became the signal for the resume of hostility. The low class demons who were fanning out outside the ruined city and the low class demons infesting the sky too were tightening the encirclement.

And so.

At the right hand was the electromagnetic acceleration gatling cannon――Metzelei Disaster, equipped.

At the left hand was the missile & rocket launcher――Agni Orkan, equipped.

Let’s, Curbstomp♪

Kousuke yelled 「GET DOOOOOWWWNNN-」 while pushing down Claudia. Wynn and others also felt an extreme chill and got down. Shia too flattened her rabbit ears and crouched down.

Right after that, there were the surging peculiar sound of *DURURURURURURU-* and countless anticlimax sounds of *hyuu～*.

Crimson flash that was mowing down horizontally. The low class demons that were sent flying until the far beyond simultaneously.

Several hundred missiles rushing through the sky. They were homing to the target and crimson fireworks bloomed profusely in the sky.

Even the low class demons lurking behind buildings were blasted, pulverized, and exterminated together with the buildings!

The time was around thirty seconds.

The extensive street behind became a mountain of rubbles, the area at the front became an empty lot with nothing existing there.

Seeing that, Claudia and others were,

「Kousuke-sama. Please, punch me! This isn’t the time to lose sanity!」

「Eh, no, wai-, Claire?」

「Kuh, TJ! Melody of curse removal please! The enemy might be attacking us with hallucination!」

「Rogeeer~」

TJ-san responded right away with big sis voice toward Wynn's grim voice. The song of purification was flowing in the battlefield.

「Eh, what, orchestra band? Endou, you have unusual friend huh.」

「But Hajime-san, everyone look tattered somehow you know? Is it that kind of fashion? Special makeup? Are they the type of people living in the future?」

Hajime and Shia were looking at Claudia's group with wondering gaze.

「No, that ain't it! This people are exorcists! She is a saint! We were in a deathly battle just now where things like the fate of the world or Claudia being turned into mother body were at stake! Sorry for having so much difficulty against small fry! Or rather, you requested me to investigate Vatican right!? Look, that boy there! Aziz-kun! He is Vatican's exorcist you were telling me to chase!」

「Exor, cist……you say? They existed!?」

Hajime-san stared intently at young man Aziz. Aziz-kun, screamed 「hiih」 knowing that he caught the eye of demon king-sama, what's more he was being stared at even now.

「I didn't dare, to believe but……oi, Endou. Could it be, this place is hell, and just now those things were demons!?」

「That’s right! This place is hell, and what you blew up just now were demons! They were low class though!」

「They are the real deal!?」

「They are the real deal!」

Haijme covered his eyes with one hand and looked up as though to say ‘oh damn’.

Demon, what a word that tickled the chuuni heart. If only he knew, he would ask various question, and forcefully made them hand over souvenirs, and yet the two of them had blew away a great number of demons at the lower stratums, even the demons who spoke with human speech!

‘They are somehow strong huh. Eh, isn’t this look like age of god magic? Woah, we are gonna die if we let our guard down! The air is also harmful, this is like hell ain’t it! Interesting! Shia, it’s adventure date!’ He thought, but……

To think , that his thought was completely correct!

Hajime was plainly shocked. He was muttering 「I thought that several of their name seemed familiar……notice that, me」 while also murmuring 「It must be that right, they are demon, they must be indestructible existence right? They will revive properly right?」.

He sent a pleading gaze toward Claudia and others.

Claudia and others quietly averted their gaze.

But, right after that, Hajime’s screwing around air vanished and his eyes narrowed. Shia too narrowed her eyes and looked at the hole in the ground. Some kind of powerful presence was approaching. From the lower stratum.

「As expected they don’t feel like letting us get away.」

「It was a lovely adventure date that made the blood seethe and the flesh dance but, those guys――eerr, the demons…… because of them, we couldn’t even sightsee satisfactorily~」

It seemed they had an idea about the presence.

Looking closer, both Shia and Hajime didn’t seem to have serious injury, but their appearance was quite ragged. It could be imagined that they had been through a very fierce battle. At the same time, Kousuke couldn’t help but shuddering at the so called “those guys” who were making these two to look tattered like this.

“Those guys” went without saying, they must be the greater demons of the lower stratums.

The speech and gesture of Hajime and Shia looked composed, but the two obviously had sharp gaze without the slightest carelessness.

「Nagumo, what do you mean? Why are they chasing――」

「Wait for a bit.」

Hajime lifted his hand and stopped Kousuke’s words. Even though his expression was serious, was it just Kousuke’s feeling that it also looked slightly like messing around?

Hajime walked toward the big hole with a steady pace. And then, his treasure warehouse shined and his took out some kind of big sphere while going 「Heave-ho」. It was a metallic ball that was around the same size like a large ball used in school sports day.

Hajime carelessly tossed it into the big hole.

Hajime-san walked back with a steady pace.

Right after that, terrific shockwave and tremor occurred. And then, a pillar of light that burned the eye was piercing up to the sky.

「Nagumo-kun, Nagumo-kun. Just now, what did you do?」

「I only dropped a solar bomb. The pursuing bunches, it seems that other than magic power they are also weak against sunlight.」

「Solar bomb you say, you-」

It was the evolved version of solar bomb “Roze Helios” which used treasure warehouse in them that once blew away even apostles of god.

Seeing the shaken Kousuke, Hajime seemed to misunderstand something and snapped up a thumb up while puffing up his chest and spoke reassuringly.

「No worries. Everything within sight underground there was all blown away yeah♪」

「I’m not worrying about the power of the bomb! No, in a sense I’m also worried about the power though!」

It seemed they wouldn’t be able to see that underground city that was filled with history anymore.

It seemed that most of the vanguard of the pursuer was blown away, so the approaching presence was slightly receding. Hajime who was convinced of that continued their talk as though nothing happened. Kousuke already stopped making anymore tsukkomi.

「So, regarding the question just now……there were monsters――well, demons at the place we were sent to. Then, I explained to them cordially and thoroughly that we only wanted to sightsee but, we were attacked with no question asked.」

Hajime and Shia went into a mystique searching date in the forest of Britain. There they encountered a genuine witch of the forest like it was a matter of course. Then, the witch of the forest-san was relatively evil. And so, Hajime-san burned her along with the forest.

But, it seemed there was a spot where it was easy to connect to hell inside the forest, so at the very end they were dropped by the very last strength of the witch. That place they were dropped at was the lower strata of hell. Both of them were thinking of it as 「It's a thrilling and lovely brutal other woorrlld!」 all that time but……

Anyway, they were attacked by the lower strata demons there.

The first thing the self-proclaimed model Japanese Hajime did was to avoid battle with the local people. It seemed there was a stair nearby them that connected to the stratum below so they escaped into it. Then, even stronger demon appeared and as expected it attacked with no question asked.

greater demons

There were various reasons it attacked like it was his turf, or questioning why humans were there, or because they were intruder, but when it targeted Shia, well, it devolved into trouble.

With Shia's magic power that was in a different league, added with her gender as female with a body that was not

just healthy but also extremely strong, it could be easily guessed how such female would look like from the view point of demon.

Like that, Hajime and Shia thought that perhaps this place was like Orcus Great Dungeon of another world. They went looking for cultured and peaceful local people. There were getting into relatively serious deathly battle against the attacking demons while climbing up until here by busting through the bedrock.

「When we came out at the surface, it became an unexpected reunion but……although it was only around nine floors, it was really troublesome to climb up until here, and yet in the end our harvest in this trip is zero. In addition the local people were all demon. And Hajime-san blew all of them away.」

The words “nine floors” that Shia said made Claudia and others spout out 「Bufuoh!?」.

That was the lowest stratum of hell. It was the authentic hell where named greater demons who came out in books were running rampant. These two were traveling from there by bursting through the bedrock.

As exorcist, they couldn’t help but opening their eyes wide until the white of their eyes showed.

Furthermore,

「The first contact was a failure. If only I knew they were demon, perhaps there would be another way before it turned into battle, and yet……」

「I wonder about that. Seeing that they are demon, furthermore by the time they are standing in front of Hajime-

san, I think the result is already obvious.

No, what are you saying Shia? It was your fault. It was because you smashed that building that looked like castle with 100 ton hammer. They absurdly snapped because of that. What was that guy's name again? If I heard right, it was a name that I had heard before. I was dodging desperately so I didn't listen properly though.

Wait a second, Hajime-san. That was a sad accident that happened in the middle of legitimate self-defense. Or rather, don't make it like other person's fault. Even Hajime-san, the instant you understood that I was targeted, you snapped and fired Hyperion horizontally. That shot made a place that was like a shrine along with the area around it into an empty lot right? The cause all the demon-san were unable to back away was absolutely that. Some guys that looked self-important and dangerous snapped into incoherent mess after that.

Named demons who owned castle or shrine……. Destruction of place that was most likely their turf's stronghold…….

Group of grater demons pursuing the two from the lowest level in a state of complete rage……

Ahaha……fuu~~~~

Aa!? Claudia-sama! Hang in there!

Claudia suddenly let go of her consciousness. Anna hurriedly supported her, but her eyes were also dead.

Aah geez. Nagumo, the Crystal Key! Let's return quickly to our world!

「Hm? Isn’t it better to do something about the group of greater demons?」

Kousuke explained the gist of the situation a bit impatiently.

That was, how the residents of hell fundamentally couldn’t materialize in their world by their own strength.

Then the extermination of the greater demon called Unknown whose strength increased by the his worshipper’s faith and possessed the authority to achieve such thing.

At present, a technique was executed to focus all the paths from hell to earth into Vatican. Yue was also at the other side, if they used Crystal Key, the connection to hell could be completely severed just by completely closing that place.

「I see. Looks like various things happened while we were at adventure date in hell huh……well, that’s fine. Tell me the detail later. The teleport location is St. Peter’s plaza, that’s fine right?」

「Ou. Please.」

Hajime took out the compass and confirmed the destination. During that time Kousuke turned his gaze toward the open mouthed Claudia and co.

「Haha-, I was worried for a moment what would happen to us but, it’s alright already now.」

「Err, Kousuke-sama……that person, as I thought……」

The gazes of Claudia and others were focused at Hajime who seemed to be fixing the coordination even while being hugged by Shia.

Kousuke rubbed his nose while answering with a bit embarrassment and also pride.

「Yeah, that guy is Nagumo Hajime. My, us returnee's――demon king-sama.」

At the same time, a gigantic and solemn door suddenly appeared in empty air. It went without saying, that was the excessively decorated "Gate" that was opened by Crystal Key.

「――"Unlock"」

GOGOGO- The door was pointlessly emitting impressiveness while opening with light overflowing out from the gap. It was just an image projection, but it was like an act of god from the view point of Claudia and others.

「Fre, freely connecting the interval of worlds, with individual power……」

「Ahaha……no wonder, even something like world wide information control was possible.」

「What power……」

The eyes of the exorcists were dead in this situation where they could only let out a dry laugh.

「Now then, guessing from the situation, it seems you all had looked after our vanguard. This isn't anything big that can be called as thanks but, I'll send you all to one-way path into earth now.」

Saying that, Hajime turned around with the meaningless light overflowing from the gate illuminating him from behind. The sight of the light that was like a halo made the

deeply religious Claudia and others couldn’t help but gulped.

It was just image projection though.

Kousuke stood in front of Claudia and others who couldn’t move right away. And then, he offered his hand with a boyish grin.

「We finished our mission. What left is only the finishing touch. Lift your face and throw out your chest――we’re going home yeah?」

Hearing those words and looking at that figure, Claudia felt like her view was blurred. Even though it was a completely dry world, she felt warm tears that almost overflowed from her eyes.

She slowly took the offered hand. The hand strongly grasped back. The best smile naturally formed in her lips.

Claudia only said a word.

「Yes-」

She energetically replied so.

Wynn and others also made a natural smile with a feeling as though the burden had been taken off from their shoulders. The followed behind Claudia.

「Uwaa, that girl has fallen completely. I wonder if Emily-chan is alright~」

「Rana will surely manage somehow. She is the first wife after all.」

Whispering voices could be heard, but Kousuke’s ears couldn’t hear anything.

That was what he decided.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

After this, the「Epilogue　Second」will also be uploaded at 19 o’clock.

With this Abyss Lord arc chapter 2 will be over.

It has become really long but, thank you very much for following this!

※Arifureta “Nichijou” chapter 17 is posted!

It’s freely distributed at Comic Gardo that can be visited from Overlap-sama’s homepage, so please go take a look by all means!

For Shirakome, the「impression」from Tio’s serious face this time really hit the spot lol

Also, 「wait for a bit」at this chapter is reimportation. Mori-sensei, sorry to always borrow from you, and also thank you very much!

Arifureta Chapter 319

Arifureta After III　Abyss Lord Arc Chapter 2 Epilogue　Second

–

AN: Before this, the「Epilogue　First」was posted.

Two chapters are posted today.

Those who haven’t read it, please go to the previous chapter.

Kousuke and others passed through the solemn (projection) gate and managed to return to earth.

Like that, what entered into their view was……

――――O king-, please answer-. Why, are you treating that kind of tiny human little girl as princess-

「You bastards-, as I thought you all are the pawns of demon-」

「You, you’re wrong nano~! Myuu doesn’t know about demon or anything! It’s true nano! It’s not a lie nano! Hell will freeze over before Myuu ever lie nano!」

Powerful greater demon that materialized with clear figure. And then, terrific number of demon swarms running rampant

behind that greater demon and in the sky.

Director Dime was making a look that was more demonic than even demon even while bleeding from his head. And then, behind him the full force of Omnibus was standing.

Myuu who was waving around her hands while desperately making excuse about something. And then, the Deadly Sins Squadron Demon Ranger who were covering hteir face with one hand and looked up to the sky while going「Achaa~」.

Also, behind the heaps of collapsed cultists all around, were Yue and others and the classmates standing still in a daze wearing a face that seemed to say「Ee~, what is this situation……」. Plus Bernard and others who were all safe even though they were looking ragged.

An incomprehensible 3-way struggle (?) was created.

「Ee~, what is this situation……」

Hajime who spontaneously muttered. The three camps who were in an explosive situation gasped and turned their gaze toward Hajime and co.

「Claire! Also Wynn and others too! You all did well coming back!」

――Crossing over the world boundary? Who are you-

「Aa――――!! PAPAAAAAAAAA-」

Myuu who rushed through the demon ranger right away *sutetetetete-* toward Hajime. Without stopping *pyon* she vigorously jumped toward Hajime’s chest. Hajime firmly caught her and caressed his beloved daughter’s head while she was rubbing her face on his chest.

「Wai-, director! What in the world this situation is!?」

Just when they thought they had returned after risking their life, they found their comrades taking combat stance toward the side of returnees who should be cooperating with them, furthermore it was toward a little girl as the opponent. In addition, even though demons were flooding into this world as expected, for some reason they weren't rampaging and instead in a dispute about something.

Honestly, it was incomprehensible. Even though they had resolved themselves to be suddenly thrown into battle depending on the situation until the path to hell was closed……

Director Dime answered while glaring at demon ranger with a demonic look that said「You bastards, I won't let even a single one of you return alive!」.

「The returnees, the daughter of the codename "demon king" is colluding with demon! Most likely the source of power of returnees is also related somehow with demon, there is no doubt about it!」

There, Hajime-san suddenly recalled something.

The golems who possessed communication ability that he didn't remember installing——demon ranger.

If he remembered correctly, Myuu said to him. She didn't name them. In other words, demon ranger introduced their own name.

——"Bel-chan", who was Belfego~r

——"Sa-chan", who was Sataan

——’A-chan”, who was Asmode~us

——”Lu-chan”, who was Lusife~r

——”Ma-chan, who was Mamo~n

——”Levi-chan”, who was Levia~tan

——”Bal-chan”, who was Baalzebu~b

「Man, they are totally demon.」

Hajime-san muttered. He didn’t even imagine that demon really existed, to say nothing of how they could existence from earth’s fairytale could possess the living golems he created in other world Tortus.

Although, for Hajime, this could be said as an act that was a bit too careless, to an unnatural degree.

One thing came to mind.

「……You guys, you did interference huh?」

Whoosh, demon rangers averted their gaze with all their might.

Most likely, they were sending thought ‘Their name is the same like famous demons but, well, they don’t actually exist so it doesn’t matter I guess……’ so that they wouldn’t be deeply doubted.

If for example demon ranger had even the slightest ill will or hostility, a mind interference to make Hajime ignore that surely would become completely ineffective, but at that time the situation was like that. Various coincidences also piled up and until now he was overlooking them.

Although, now that he realized the existence of demons, his attention couldn’t be diverted anymore!

Hajime’s eye glint was intensely focused on demon ranger. Demon rangers somehow looked like they were shivering.

(Yue, please explain the situation concisely.)

(……Nn. Leave it to me.)

According to her, it seemed Myuu summoned demon ranger in the fight against the cultists to participate.

And then, the materialized demons noticed that what were inside demon rangers were their “kings” who had vanished a slight while ago. The demons were thunderstruck and went ‘what the hell you are all doing!?’.

Then, from that exchange between demons, Director Dime also noticed just what kind of existences were inside there. And so he resolved himself to fight to the death.

After all, they were the seven demon kings who governed over the famous Deadly Sins. Although they weren’t materialized, they were fully armed with unknown technology. Depending on the situation, they could lead the demons and trample this world……

Surely it couldn’t be help that Director Dime thought so. He was the absolute demon killer man after all.

「Se, seriously……Myuu-chan, what in the world you are keeping there……」

Kousuke spoke with a dumbfounded voice. Myuu spoke with a crisp expression.

「Because I am the demon king’s daughter.」

The little girl who was obeyed by the seven sins――certainly, it was worthy for a demon king’s daughter.

It seemed the materialized demons ran out of patience. They started moving to exterminate the humans here for the time being. Yue and others narrowed their eyes and heightened their magic power to exterminate them instead. Director Dime activated his sacred vessel.

And then, Kousuke glanced aside at Hajime with eyes that asked「What to do now」. Claudia and others were flustered and,

「Oi, demon rangers」

A terrifyingly low voice that resounded from hell reverberated.

Even though the voice was only at the volume of a mutter, it reverberated to every corner of the plaza and sent fear that grasped the listener’s heart tightly.

It was a bloody and ominous dominating aura that stopped everyone there at their track.

Especially the demon rangers who were targeted by that aura, their body jerked and trembled.

「I heard that the saint or something was targeted as a mother body. When the demons at the lower stratum saw Shia, they said she will become magnificent mother body. Don’t tell me……」

Demon rangers stood at attention with their golem body. Somehow they were oozing great amount of cold sweat (?),

oil (?).

「You guys, you are possessing my golem because you are looking at Myuu with that kind of eye……it ain’t anything like that riiight?」

If that was actually the case, what would happen?

「Perishing for the second time. Want to try experience that?」

However, this time not even the soul would remain. Far from that, even the other world called hell might not even remained.

Demon rangers, they shook their head left and right *whoosh whoosh* with unprecedented high speed. They waved around all their arms. And then, unison prostration!! What a truly beautiful kowtow. It was like the kowtow that was inherited in Nagumo family.

Because, they knew! They knew a god who really god blown away until not even his soul remained! They also saw the destruction of the other world called holy precincts! They seemed to want to say that.

——Wha-, kings! Acting like that

The materialized demons were flustered and tried to remonstrate them but……

Are you guys idiot!? You guys don’t get it!? You guys will seriously get destroyed you know!? Come on, prostrate! Prostrate quickly! Come on, quickly!

As though to say that, all of demon rangers kept their head lowered while their hand was making a gesture that seemed

to be telling the demons to bow too.

「Aa? You guys over there wanna have a go?」

The pupil in Hajime's eyes shrunk and glinted. Bursting out crimson magic power. It was already Limit Break state! From the space behind him Cross Velt came out——a thousand of them. In addition, the swarm of Grim Reaper crawling out. Everything was clad with crimson magic power to annihilate the demons.

「Let's have the continuation of the trip. It's the start of the curbstomp tour of hell's residents.」

A one man army, taken to the extreme here.

The members of Omnibus with the exception of Director Dime and Madam Maya couldn't feel strength in their waist. Even those two were getting pale with their fighting spirit almost broken.

The demons finally noticed that the existence before their eyes might be a bit, no, might be a really bad news and backed away.

Bow down! Come one bow down quickly!

Demon rangers, desperately insisting.

「Papa, papa.」

「Nn? What, Myuu?」

Hajime snapped when thinking they were doing Hikaru Genji project to his daughter, that they would protect Myuu until she grew up and could bear children before they made her

into mother body. But he then smiled gently when Myuu lightly tapped on his cheek *slap slap*.

The gap was terrifying.

「See, Bel-chan and others won't do such thing nano.」

「……How do you know that?」

「See, Bel-chan and others, they told Myuu nano. They all are just bored, doing nothing but ruling or quarreling, that they even got sick of their friends, and then, one day they felt power with presence that is similar with themselves, and when they tried going following the attraction, they came to Myuu's place, they said.」

「Similar presence……」

Could it be, they referred to the self-proclaimed god of Tortus? Or else, did they mean the age of god magic? At that time, Tortus was just a step before the world's demise. Certainly tremendous power was at work at that time.

Perhaps it somehow shook the worlds interval between Tortus and hell.

「Also see, Myuu has no power, so Myuu cannot become mother body? Or something anyway, and they are desperately saying that there is no way they would do anything like that to princess nano. It's not really clear but, they are saying that it's easeful being together with Myuu, and it's fun with various things that happened.」

「……H~m?」

'Is that so? That's really the truth?', Hajime looked at demon rangers with pupils that instantly shrunk. Demon rangers

nodded in high speed simultaneously. They nodded *nod nod nod nod nod-*.

At the same time, Hajime’s eyes caught the demons.

Demon rangers emitted tremendous aura before the demons could say anything. It was a pressure that made even the returnees gulped unconsciously. They were oozing out cold sweat at the display of power that was definitely surpassing Unknown.

It went without saying how the demons reacted.

They simultaneously stood behind the demon rangers and prostrated similarly.

「Papa. Myuu like Bel-chan and others nano.」

「……I see.」

Hajime’s eyes returned to normal!

「Very well. Stay as Myuu’s ally from here on too. As long as you guys don’t show any suspicious act, I’ll allow you guys to stay beside her. However, if you turned traitor――you get it right?」

‘We understand that we will be blown up together with hell!’ Demon rangers performed an admirable salute simultaneously.

And then, they went 「Go home now! Look, go back quickly!」 toward the demons and chased them into the path that Unknown connected.

Although the demons looked like they wanted to ask various things to their kings, they turned a terrified gaze toward the

figure of their kings who prostrated without hesitation, Hajime’s magic power that surpassed those kings, and the presence of age of god magic while returning into hell.

Hajime also returned Cross Velt and Grim Reapers back into the treasure warehouse.

Voice reverberated like a ripple through the plaza that had fallen quiet.

「De, demon king……」

Certainly, it was a demon king. Demon king-sama who was carrying his beloved daughter in his arm.

A really complicated atmosphere flowed in that area.

The gazes of Claudia, Director Dime, and others were swimming around wondering what they should do. The returnees were exchanging words like 「As expected from demon king」「Rather, as expected from papa」「Or rather, Myuu-chan is just plainly bad news」 at Hajime’s entrance and deed at this time.

And so, in order to return the atmosphere that had been absurdly messed up by the demon king back to normal, a hero stood up.

「Yosh-, the case is closed! Claire! Let’s eat the promised lemon cake!」

「Tha, that’s right! First it’s necessary to talk! Let’s talk while eating Maya’s lemon cake!」

The saint answered the hero’s expectation and responded right away. She pleaded loudly 「Maya-! Cake-! I demand lemon cake-」. Madam Maya was trickling out cold sweat as

though she wanted to say “I’m troubled instead if you are expecting that much!”.

Anyway, Kousuke somehow took charge of the place, and just in case, Yue also completely severed the path that connected from hell to here. Like this the battle of Vatican where the fate of the world was at stake was over.

–

–

–

A week passed since then.

After Hajime did his thing “as expected from demon king” against Omnibus, he quickly dealt with the aftermath including the heaps of body of the cultists everywhere.

Although, what was troublesome was the custody of the cultists, and dealing with the citizens of Roma and mass media that witnessed the concentration of armed group attacking Vatican. Other than those there was also things like fixing the wounded people and damaged building, though there was no problem to heal and fix all those using magic.

And so, at the surface the pope of Rome dealt with things skillfully, and this case was taken care of with the explanation of a kind of mass hysteric by the people who lost their faith due to the tragedy that visited them.

Of course it went without saying that a certain demon king who was chuckling because Vatican was owing him backed up that explanation with the aforementioned technology –

magic hybrid information control. It also went without saying that Omnibus was getting faraway look once more.

A few days after that, an unofficial three-way meeting between Omnibus that was headed by Rome’s pope, the returnees, and then Britain national security bureau that had connection with returnees was opened once more.

Fundamentally the meeting was about declaring their non-interference policy toward the returnees. If the returnees people got involved with some kind of incident in Britain or Europe, they would report it and depending on the situation Omnibus and security bureau would take cooperative stance.

And then, the side of Vatican and Britain would also contact the returnees if they wanted cooperation about something.

However, the agreement was settled with something like ‘the contact person and also the responder will be Abyssgate-san!’.

It went without saying that Kousuke’s eyes opened wide in shock.

Also, regarding the seven pillar of deadly sins, the pope of Rome pushed through to leave it to the demon king. A certain cardinal insisted 「Annihilate them!」 till the end, but rather it felt like that was the cause of the decision to entrust the matter to the demon king.

After all, a certain someone wouldn’t hesitate to trample down sacred vessel or even if the church was destroyed if it was for the sake of killing demon, in a sense he was a berserker. It seemed the pope even said 「Please stay quiet! I’m almost died from overworking here!」.

Like that, the Unknown case was resolved more or less despite all the commotions, and everyone sighed in relief at this day.

Claudia who was the one with the greatest involvement and also service in this case asked for a brief holiday and stepped on the land of her birth.

She was walking on a quiet suburb path while her soft blonde hair and her gentle white dress were fluttering.

Sometimes, the local people, especially the youngsters who passed her by would unconsciously gulp when seeing Claudia. Their eyes opened wide, their feet stopped walking……

They were charmed by her expression that was gentle and soft like her hair and clothes.

Several youths were showing hesitation whether to call out to her or not, but in the end, they were unable to take a step forward because they felt she was a woman who was living in a different world from them.

Yes, she was like a sheltered young lady. Or perhaps, that was exactly how a saint would look……

□——Ah!?□

The beautiful person who really looked like a sheltered young lady and a saint tripped on her own feet and tumbled down.

BAM-! A comical and laughable sound resounded. The sound came from the face. Her stretched posture didn’t even twitch. It was a blessing in disguise that the ground at least wasn’t asphalt.

Although, seeing how she at least had protected the bouquet her hand was carrying to the end could be said as an astonishing progress for the people who knew her.

The brand new saint who had accomplished her long standing desire, even if she stumbled, it wouldn’t occur that easily! No, it might still occur so easily, but the damage was minimized!

Anyway, the people who kept glancing at Claudia were dumbfounded at the sudden happening.

They came back to their senses with a gasp and the youths stepped forward thinking ‘If I help up the beautiful lady, than perhaps-!‘……but, they were already too late.

When they noticed, a man was standing beside Claudia. It was Kousuke.

「……How can someone make blunder like that so skillfully?」

「……He, heheh」

It seemed she couldn’t lift her face from shame. Only laughing voice to cover up the blunder like a henchman who easily got carried away laughing apologetically to the boss he idolized could be heard from her.

Kousuke pulled up Claudia on her feet.

「Kousuke-sama, why are you here?」

「Right, I’ll explain, so first how about wiping that nosebleed?」

「! He, hehe……」

「Ehehe, huh?」

「Ehehe……」

She was helped to stand up, the dirt on her clothes was brushed off, her nosebleed was wiped off, and next her hair was also put in order.

While being taken care of, Claudia asked while Kousuke was here beside her when she was returning to her birthplace using her day off. It seemed, the cause of it was also Claudia’s carelessness.

When exorcist went far away other than for mission, they had to report their destination beforehand no matter what. It was in order to deal when something emergency came up.

And, Claudia-san, she splendidly forgot to do the paperwork for that report and thoughtlessly went out.

Unknown had been exterminated, regarding the lower stratum demons too, at their side they more or less had the cooperation of the seven deadly sins who were being led by the demon king and his daughter, so surely she wouldn’t be targeted to become mother body anymore, even so the opponent was demon. It was impossible to hold them in check absolutely, and there was also danger from the cultists.

When Omnibus tried contacting her in panic, for some reason the call didn’t connect.

As the result, it became 「Kousuke-san! Help!」.

「Ah, my smartphone……」

Claudia took out her smartphone from her pouch. It was splendidly split into two.

□What did you do that it become like that!?□

Is she swordsman!? Was it used to test new sword!? Did she use her smartphone in a flash for substitution when she was slashed!? Kousuke tsukkomi-ed.

□Wha, what do you mean testing new sword? There is no way it's like that. This is, that, I stumbled for a bit……and then on the dropped smartphone, should I say I fell on it…… that, my butt, it's a bit big so……□

It seemed there was accidentally a stone below the dropped smartphone. The smartphone that received Claudia's butt attack was tragically split into two because of the stone acting as fulcrum.

Claudia-san shyly pushed her butt with her hands while fidgeting.

From distance, the youths sulkily said □So she has a boyfriend already, keh-□ and stared intently while getting slouched forward for a bit.

Claudia's body bugled out greatly at the places where it should bulged out, and tightened greatly at the places where they should tighten. Her style rivaled Tio so the destructive power was extraordinary.

□I see……so, the smartphone was split into two by your butt……□

□E, heheh……□

'Hahaa, I've really done it now……', Claudia laughed while scratching her head as though to say that. As expected that appearance looked more like a person who got carried away easily rather than a saint.

Kousuke contacted Omnibus that he had secured Claudia, then he asked her.

「And, you came here……to report to your parents?」

「……Yes.」

Going back to her birthplace while carrying flower bouquet, there would be no other reason than that.

「Got it. I'll kill time around here then. Call me when you are going back.」

Kousuke considerately returned back.

But, the sleeve of Kousuke who was turning around was caught by Claudia.

「If it's not a bother to you, will you come together with me?」

「……I don't mind but, is it fine?」

Claudia nodded with a smile. Kousuke shrugged and accepted.

Sometimes Claudia would do an artistic blunder, but Kousuke's fine play supported her while they somehow reached the grave without her dress getting dirtied.

A lot of pure white crosses were lined up orderly.

One of them was a cross with the name of Barenberg family and the name of her parents carved on it. Claudia stood still in front of it. Kousuke also stood slightly behind her.

Claudia slowly put the bouquet that she had desperately defended in front of the cross. Wind blew gently, caressing Claudia's hair and the flowers.

「Mama, papa. I’m back.」

She plopped down to sit with girl posture while tracing the names of her parents that were carved on the grave stone with her fingertip.

And then, she put both her hand on her chest and closed her eyes quietly.

There was no word, but, Kousuke beside her understood well that she was reporting a lot, really a lot, yes, the track of twelve years worth she had taken with a flood of emotions behind it.

That was why, Kousuke also moved closer beside Claudia while quietly closing his eyes.

Claudia said that she had hatred. That she wanted to kill Unknown with her own hand.

But, she said that she wanted to get revenge for her parents even more.

Seeing the current Claudia, what would her father and mother think?

Were they thankful that Claudia had taken revenge for them?

Or else, would they get angry that they didn’t wish for her to force herself to do such thing?

Or perhaps, they would accept everything, and said the words that Kousuke thought they surely would say……

The dead couldn’t talk.

That was the truth of the world.

But, exactly because that absolute was overturned, human――called it a “miracle”.

――You have, worked hard

「Eh?」

Claudia gasped and raised her face. Kousuke too. Both of them looked forward together and opened their eyes wide.

Because there it was.

Over there.

A man with drooping eyes that looked really gentle, and a woman smiling while her blonde hair was softly fluttering.

「Papa? Mama?」

They looked like they would vanish even now. It was a transient, faint figures that perhaps could be called as just visual hallucination.

However, those figures that there was no way Claudia could mistake were certainly her father and mother who she was eternally separated from twelve years ago.

Claudia was dumbfounded.

Kousuke too couldn’t move right away. But, he gasped as though noticing something, and a beat later, he made a small smile.

And then, he gently put his hand on Claudia’s shoulder.

With that, Claudia also came back to her senses.

「Papa, mama……I……Claire is……」

Even though she had just talked a lot inside her heart, even though there was a lot of things she wanted to say and ask, she couldn’t make any word.

Her feeling only became tear that flowed down Claudia’s face.

Claudia’s father and mother formed a heartrendingly gentle smile looking at their daughter who was like that……

「a……」

The softly embraced Claudia.

Even though there should be no sensation of touch, a nostalgic warmth enveloped Claudia.

And then,

——Be happy alright?

——Live happily and energetically

Saying that, they vanished as though melting into the breeze.

With tears that wouldn’t stop keep trickling, Claudia digested the voice of her parents that miraculously reached her, and then she made an expression of crying and smiling with gentleness that resembled her parents while,

「Yes. I’ll live.」

She said that.

She kept sitting down while continuously shedding tears. Kousuke simply stood close to her quietly.

After that, it was unclear how long they stayed in front of the grave. Before long, Claudia wiped her tears and stood up while sniffling.

「Let’s go, Kousuke-sama.」

She put on a beaming smile as though what was possessing her had gone away and she was reborn.

It was the best radiant smile that couldn’t be expressed with words, that made him convinced a new Claudia Barenberg would start from here.

Kousuke gulped for a moment and……

「……Yeah, let’s go.」

He replied with a soft smile and nodded.

Both of them left the grave and walked silently for a while.

The miraculous phenomenon just now. Claudia didn’t try to talk about it. She also didn’t question whether Kousuke had seen it too or not.

For Claudia, something like the cause was trivial. Even if it was just a kind of daydream, even so Claudia understood. The feeling of her parents certainly existed there.

She understood that much. That much was enough.

There wasn’t even the slightest awkwardness in the silence. They shared a deeply emotional and gentle time as though their heart had become one, walking through the street with roadside trees beside them in the aged townscape.

……

……

……Although, surely this time should be ended soon. Kousuke thought.

He turned his gaze toward Claudia and opened his mouth.

But, it seemed Claudia had been staring at Kousuke before that. Their eyes met and she averted her gaze in a bit of embarrassment.

「Kousuke-sama, are you hungry?」

「Eh?」

Claudia asked a bit unexpected question with a slightly fast talk.

Leaving behind Kousuke was unable to respond right away, Claudia talked quickly while looking down and her cheeks slightly blushing.

「A, ahead from here, there is a really delicious pancake restaurant. I often went there with my parents. It was managed by husband and wife, the wife was really close with my mother. They were also really affectionate with me.」

「O, ou, is that so. But wait a second, Claire. Actually――」

「A, and, sometimes I exchanged letter with them, but I haven’t met with them since becoming exorcist. When I looked from afar before coming here, they were still opening the restaurant, so I thought to visit there! That, if you like-, let’s have tea, together with me-」

Claudia-san was talking innocently with a tension like someone who was inviting opposite sex to a first date.

There was no doubt that until now she couldn’t even approach the places of memory with her parents. That was, until now that she had accomplished her longstanding desire.

The inside of her heart needn’t to be said after seeing her inviting him to such important place with an attitude that would make anyone writhe just from looking from the side.

It was an invitation filled with all the might of the fidgeting saint-sama. A normal man would be openly happy without restrain in respond to this.

Of course, Kousuke was……going pale. He was absurdly going pale.

Because,

Bernard
——This is Saber 1. The target seems to plan to head to a café four block ahead.

——Saber 1, roger. Nagayama party is waiting three block ahead.

Vanessa
——This is Archer. Contacting everyone. Light is disappearing from “Doctor”’s eyes. What should I do?

Wynn
——This is Caster 1, there is a bad news. Director is guessing the movement there. It seems he is already heading there with personal airplane. He will launch airborne assault in two more hours.

Yue
——Caster 1, this is Queen. No problem. I’ll shoot it down.

——This is Ange……uu, it’s embarrassing as I thought! Calling myself angel make me looks like a painful person! Also, Yue! No shooting down! Absolutely!

——O, oi! That saint-san, he is staring at that bastard Endou with moist eyes there! Is it okay to burn him!? Is it okay to turn Endou into cinders!? Using my flame of envy!

——Calm down Shinji! Ah, no, Envy! Wait, this guy is crying blood here!? Someone, Saito——not, Envy 2-, Envy 1 is going to go berserk! Lend me a hand!

——This is Archer. Contacting everyone. “Doctor” is starting to tremble all over while staying expressionless. What should I do?

——Aah geez, this is Caster 2! Saber team and also Returner (Anna) team too, if you are only going to be a hindrance (returnees) just go home right away! Claudia-sama is doing her best right now!

Because Kousuke’s excellent ears caught such conversation. The overhearing skill of vocation Assassin was perfect.

Or rather, he was feeling countless familiar presences at the surrounding buildings’ rooftop and interior encircling around him and Claudia.

To say more, there was even a classmate shedding tear of blood trying to crawl out from inside a trashcan that was put on the street. The lid of that trashcan was being pushed down with wind pressure by a desperate looking classmate inside the adjacent trash can.

Above all else, he could perfectly see “Doctor” with only half her face showing out from the shadow of roadside tree diagonally behind him, sending him a lifeless gaze.

She was indeed trembling all over! It was absurdly scary!

Yes, Kousuke and Claudia were currently completely encircled by returnees and Omnibus and Britain national security bureau’s assault department members! From slightly a while ago! With objective of peeping!

Claudia’s parents appearing too was of course wasn’t because of god’s miracle, but because of Yue and Kaori’s soul magic. It was realized with the two of them using necromancy by age of god magic.

Kousuke of course noticed, but when he sent his gaze toward Yue and others, Yue put her index finger in front of her mouth and winked, so he stayed quiet.

He thankfully accepted the consideration to let the miracle stay as miracle.

Well, putting that aside!

The problem of Kousuke’s fourth wife was a matter of concern and interest for everyone!

「Let’s calm down for a bi, a bi~~t, Claire! Tha, that’s! If it’s a restaurant that is that amazing, ri, right! Let’s go there together with everyone! If we call them, they will come here right away! They will really come right away!」

Well of course. They were right nearby.

But, Claudia-san who seemed to be about to blow her fuse was of course, couldn’t guess Kousuke’s intention.

「That……if possible right now I want……to go with just the two of us, alone with Kousuke-sama……」

Fidget fidget, wriggle wriggle. The saint asked with an upturned gaze 「Is that no good?」. Really a saint. Kousuke spontaneously leaked out a strange voice 「Nuguu」.

Snap- Emly-chan's eyes opened wide! Kousuke sensitively detected it! His body jerked and trembled.

And then, Vanessa who tried to stop her ate a lariat that could be said as artistic, and Emily launched out to exterminate the thieving cat that was making eyes at her beloved!

Seeing Emily's battle ready state walking with heavy footsteps toward Kousuke, all the observers at the surrounding went into an uproar 「O, oo!? A carnage!?」. No, the security bureau group was cheering 「Go-, missy Emily! Two heroines aren't needed for the hero!」.

「That isn't allowed! Barenberg-san!」

「Eh? Yo, you are! Kousuke's lover……eh, fiancée? Wife…… but, second……err, a, anyway-, the somewhat intimate looking person!」

「Gafuh」

Doctor Emily was suddenly hit with a body blow of words.

It seemed her heart was damaged when someone who might be her love rival pointed out implicitly how ambiguous the nature of her relationship was.

The security bureau members sent their encouragement 「Don't lose-, missy Emily!」「That's just a shallow scratch!」「A woman of Britain shouldn't fold just from that-」「Remember-, your guts at that time!」.

On the other hand, the members of Omnibus were also sending encouragement like 「Claudia-sama-, don’t withdraw! We exorcists know no retreat!」「Please show the stubbornness of the saint!」「You are the exorcist’s strongest-. Don’t lose against a mere little girl!」「It’s faster than expected! The director will descend in one and half a hour! Recommending short decisive battle!」.

Claudia too finally noticed that she was being peeped at by her comrades and the returnees. Her face turned bright red and she glared angrily at her comrades.

「A, anyway-. I think there is something wrong with inviting a man who has a lover to a date.」

‘That is really a boomerang statement……’, everyone starting from Kousuke thought, but they put it aside for now.

「Yo, you’re right……」

Emily’s words made Claudia looked down in shame because she had done a shameful behavior. The saint was looking wholly downhearted.

‘E, eh? Somehow her reaction is different from what I expected! Perhaps the way I said it was a bit too harsh? It was harsh wasn’t it!?’ Emily was starting to get flustered like that.

Claudia opened her mouth even while her expression turning a bit pained.

「Even though Grant-san who is younger than me is also controlling yourself, I’m sorry. I was really shallow.」

「Uguu」

Emily-chan who didn’t control herself at all. Rather, she was living together with Kousuke although it was only his clone. Everyday she was full of happiness. She baked apple pie and so on.

Emily averted her gaze with all her might while starting to sweat strangely. Claudia tilted her head seeing her like that.

The expression of the saint which was only filled with pure wondering made Emily-chan’s paper armored heart easily raised the white flag and she divulged the truth.

「Err, that, it was only with clone but, we more or less, cohabitating……」

「Cohabitating? ……Come to think of it, when you were delivering the secret medicine to Omnibus, you two also hugged each other weren’t you……」

「Tha, that was, simply, an expression of affection.」

「……You are saying, you had no ulterior motive at all?」

「……That, how should I say it, it’s, you know?」

Gazes that seemed to say ‘’You know?’ my ass’ pierced her from the Omnibus faction.

Sharp gazes that seemed to say ‘This is because you asshole is indecisive!’ stabbed Kousuke from the returnee group and security bureau group.

Claudia-san somehow guessed it. Emily’s position, and the current situation.

Like that, when she looked at Kousuke, he was looking at Emily who got teary eyed from having the table turned on

her (it was mostly her self-destructing though), then after showing hesitation for a bit, next he showed an expression as though he was resolved about something.

Yes, it was as though he was going to declare the matter about his lover (second) or his fiancée (second) for the sake of Emily!

And so,

「Emily. I――」

「Then, Grant-san. That, how should I said it, it's, you know? Like that is it fine if I also go to the nostalgic café together alone with Kousuke-sama?」

「Wha-, tha, that's no good! That's obviously no good!」

「Why?」

「Wh, why you ask……that's, it's……」

She couldn't say. 'Because he already has lover!' she couldn't say that anymore. Emily who noticed this late that she had no weapon whatsoever even though she charged forward. She was all flustered and shook up.

Kousuke whose words were intercepted was also all flustered and shook up.

The cornered Emily raised the corner of her cat eyes glaringly as though she had thrown caution to the wind.

「What! I'm the one who encountered Kousuke earlier!」

It was Rana who encountered him even earlier. 100 boomerang damage in Emily's heart.

「Just because you are a bit beautiful, big breasted, have tight waist, your butt and legs are also sexy, and you have bombshell style……just because of that……I, I'm, I'm more……hics, saint, is just too powerfuuul……」

Emily-chan who was speaking herself and damaged herself too as expected. Even now she looked like she would crumble on her knees anytime.

「E, err, thank you very much? Bu, but but, Grant-san too, is really cute! Like your legs are really long and pretty! Your gaze also looked crisp, looking really intellectual! I'm often told that I'm really clumsy so, a beauty that is cute and yet intellectual is just unfair!」

「What's with you! Thank you! But, Barenberg-san yourself, you even have special power! Even when you were rushing into hell while carrying a large cross, it was really cool!」

Why was it? Even though it should be a battle of woman, it was excessively warming. The security bureau faction and Omnibus faction, and not just them, even the returnee faction were looking at them with warm gaze.

It seemed even Emily herself also had the feeling that it shouldn't be like this. In order to make an appeal that she was the one who was worthy for Kousuke, she wracked her head searching if there was something……

「I am-, a doctor! I have a doctorate!」

That was what came out. Everyone's eyes turned sad.

「I, if you say such thing, even I am a saint! A saint sound more like a heroine!」

The saint didn’t even make tsukkomi and accepted the challenge from the front. Emily made a sound 「Kuu……」 in vexation.

Kousuke was saying 「He, hey. Both of you. Listen to what I have to say――」, but his voice didn’t reach the two’s ears at all. The two were getting even more heated up.

「In the end it’s only “like” right!? In other words, it’s not heroine!」

「Even though like is just like but it’s really like! In other words, it’s already heroine!」

「Like isn’t heroine!」

「Like is already heroine!」

Like like-, like like-, lili~ke-, the saint and doctor who like like at each other. Kousuke tried to cut in a bit forcefully saying 「Both of you, let’s stop there and listen to――」 but, 「Kousuke just stay quiet!」「I wish Kousuke-sama will stay back from this!」 he easily got rebuffed.

「Whaat, it’s decided that doctor is better!」

「Somehoow, it’s obvious that saint is the better one!」

Emily and Claudia pushed their forehead on each other and they both kept insisting while getting teary eyed.

And then, a beat later, the two called on Kousuke 「Kousukeee~」「Kousuke-samaa~」,

「Doctor is better right!?」

「Saint is better right!?」

‘Even though you two just told me to stay quiet or stay back……incomprehensible’ even while thinking that, in front of the pressure from the two’s menacing look that made him unconsciously stepped back, against his better judgment Kousuke――said it.

「I think bunny girl is better? How do I say it……」

「「……」」

Returnee faction, Omnibus faction, security bureau faction. From all the factions astonished muttering like 「He is saying that in this situation!?」「That guy, that’s just too heroic right!?」 leaked out.

Kousuke’s expression was convulsing while cold sweat was trickling out.

Why?

That was obvious.

Because before him, there were the doctor-chan and saint-chan who were making eyes like rotten dead fish.

It would still be fine if he was insulted. He also wouldn’t protest if he was punched.

But, he wanted to be spared from the two of them losing sanity.

Furthermore, even though they were making such eyes, those eyes were getting teary fast. Kousuke was already having guilt crushing his heart that made him wanted to say 「I’m begging you, just insult or beat up an asshole like me!」.

However, a beat later Kousuke tensed his expression. In any case, he should firmly convey his honest feeling to the two, especially to Emily.

He was still having hesitation and resistance to have a relationship like a certain demon king and the wive~s. But, he couldn’t keep depending on Emily’s devoted feeling while being ambiguous.

「Both of you, listen to me. I――」

But, not letting his right-hand man having things went as he wanted in that timing was demon king quality. Hajime-san who actually was there from the start together with Yue and others made his entrance when the time was ripe!

The ground beside the three rippled like a spring! Or rather, with the Crystal Key’s image projection, an illusion that was really like a spring was created!

From there, like a lady of the lake, Hajime-san surfaced up slowly with a bright smile, one of his hand carrying something. It was “that” which looked terribly familiar.

「Is the order a Hauria?」(TN: Reference to Gochuumon wa Usagi desu ka)

If possible surely normal rabbit would be better. Not the head decapitating rabbit.

Although, surely there was no mistake with the order. Because “that” was,

「Ah, Kou-kun! I was wondering what was going on because boss suddenly abducted me♪ Boss! So you are taking me to meet Kou-kun! Thank you very much!」

「Your welcome.」

A pure Hajime-san was there. It was the effect of the dazzling spring. His wide smile looked radiant.

And then it was thrown, the first wife. (Rana Hauria)

「Ra, Rana」

「Kou-kun♪」

The rabbit eared-oneesan who was at her best form too today. She happily embraced her younger lover. Kousuke who was buried into the heavy twin hills. He tried to say that right now wasn't the time for this, but strength instantly left his whole body.

Power of resistance, zero. The first wife was powerful.

After that, it went without saying that Emily and Claudia made a great commotion, and Rana's gaze who noticed the two brightened.

It also went without saying that after seeing through Claudia's heart, Rana's skillful words that were like a sect founder inviting someone into a new religion attempted to drag Claudia to become the "fourth".

At the end, Claudia said 「The, the god had spoken! Love thy neighbor (other wife)!」. She kept muttering with low voice many times while her eyes were rolling around like a brainwashed person. Surely it went just like Rana's expectation.

Like that, that night something like "Congratulation party for fourth wife Claudia and the finishing of dealing with all the

aftermath!” was opened in Omnibus where all the factions participated. The party was greatly heated up.

Of course, a certain director took action in order to make a certain screwing around bastard who called his beloved daughter as “fourth” into a rust of his book but……

Unfortunately, Kousuke wasn’t there.

The reason was, that guy who tossed the primed explosive called Rana with his mischievousness in full force,

「——Last Zell. Limit Break」

「Eh? Wai-, you-, stop tha——」

Yes, because a thousand lords were chasing after the demon king who was running away while blocking his ears with all his might going ‘no no’.

The game of tag between demon king and abyss lord continued until the dawn came.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Anyway, the abyss lord arc chapter two is over with this.

Things like the detailed setting, or the later development, or the hell trip of Hajime and Shia, I want to write various things but, I don’t have the time and stamina……

I’m thinking to do it when I have time again.

I had notified at last week’s afterword too but, I’m thinking to take a rest for a month starting from next week.

Most likely I’ll resume at 16 June, so please take care of me again if possible at that time.

Best regards for Arifureta from here on too!

Arifureta Chapter 320

Arifureta After III　Yue’s Diary ④

–

AN: It has been a long time.

I’m really happy that you readers come to read this again!

Month ○ Day ♪

Several days has passed since Hajime and Shia went out for a travel date.

Everyday Shia will enthusiastically send a email that said ‘Today we did ～!’.

It’s just……too long. The eemail is terribly, long.

Shia. A diary isn’t a written progress report.

It’s fine to not write everything starting from the moment you wake up in the morning in chronological order.

Ica used Kaori who saw the email to misunderstand 「Uwaa, Yue, you, I thought you were sending them off cheerfully, but you were actually tasking Shia with monitoring Hajime-kun that strictly? That’s a bit putting off you know～」 with a creeped out face.

At that time I sent lightning dragon right away at her though.

Good grief, I wonder just how much Shia likes me. If she has the time to compose that kind of long email for me, it will be better if she use it to flirt with Hajime instead.

That adorable rabbit!

Even so, the photo that was sent from Shia’s smartphone……

Just from which jungle and which local people that photo was taken from? Why were you making a fresh smile while showing body builder pose with a group of beefy men? It’s a bit painful for the eyes looking at it……

Hajime, be firm! Look at Shia properly! It’s no good if she turn into a second Myuu!

–

–

Month ○ Day □

When I replied to Shia that ‘It’s fine to send shorter email you know?’, she sent a email that is titled □From earth version Raisen Great Labyrinth (lol)□ that had a single photo of a trap’s wreckage.

I see, I don’t get it at all.

No, I can imagine it. I can, but still!

Shia. It’s abbreviated too much, Yue-san is bothered about various things.

It’s fine even if you send more detail at this kind of time you know?

Also, Hajime. Even if you sent me a email saying 「It seems Shia now has become able to shot Eternal Shia Fever. What do you think I should do?」, I also don’t know what should I do……

Or rather, what do you mean by Shia firing out great excitement eternally?

–

PS

Just now, an additional email arrived.

I was dying with curiosity wondering just what kind of situation that makes them looks like they are conquering a great labyrinth even though they are in earth. I checked the email while feeling a throbbing thrill but……

The email’s content is 「I forgot to mention just now! We are going to hold Nagumo family’s emergency family meeting when we get home desuu! The agenda will be about Hajime-san’s dangerous driving! I think there I something wrong with the thinking that a vehicle has to be installed with weapon no matter what!」

No, not that. Shia, it’s not that, what about the detail? The vampire princes want to ask the rabbit-san about the detail of the travel you know?

Reach her, this feeling!

Also, Hajime. Even if you told me 「It seems that Shia can also do Shia Impact. Now I’m thinking that perhaps I should

just create things like Warship Beheading Sword or the Hero With Thousand ○ at this occasion, what do you think?, in the first place I don’t really get what are you talking about.

Anyway, let’s google it before going to sleep.

–

PS 2

More reply came. It’s a fast reply. As expected from my Shia. Our mind is connected.

Was what I thought, but……

Rather than something like that please listen to me, Yue-san! The arachne-sans of Hajime-san are strange! They are absolutely being possessed by something. Perhaps by the apostles even!

That’s not it~, what Yue-san is curious about isn’t that~-.

No, the arache-sans being possessed by something is also really curious though!

Eeei-, Shia! As I thought, report everything to me without leaving anything!

The vampire princess is demanding a written report that goes into the minutest details!

–

PS 3

The reply came.

「Everything, you say……. Geez-, Yue-san you are really a possessive woman! This greedy attention seeker! I'll talk to you when we go back home, so please wait patiently while looking forward to it. Then, I'll go to sleep already, good niii~ght.」

Wait, wait a second! There are various things that I want to say!

Thinking that I replied immediately but……

The reply, didn't come.

I sent email three times. 'Now that it has come to this!' Thinking that I also tried calling directly.

The reply, didn't come.

The call, also didn't get picked up.

I don't get itt~.

Now I can only throw tantrum on the bed. I even punch the pillow.

This damn pillow-.

I who vented my anger for a while toward the bed and pillow for a while suddenly got a clever idea. I went to Myuu's room. I thought that if it's Myuu who called, then perhaps it will be picked up.

The sleeping Myuu is cute no matter how much I look at her. I cannot bring myself to wake her up. But, Yue-san is already too curious about various things that I cannot sleep.

Thinking so, I shook Myuu's body several times and woke her up. And then, when I told Myuu who woke up while

rubbing her eyes that I want her to call Shia,

「……Yue-oneechan. That’s enough already, I wish you will learn to let go of Shia-oneechan nano. Or rather, I’m sleepy. The exit is that way nano.」

I was told like that with terribly cold voice and reproachful gaze.

A crack entered my heart.

–

–

–

Month ○ Day □

I who couldn’t even sleep at night wondering whether I’m hated by Myuu stealthily lie in wait beside Myuu’s bed in seiza posture but……

At morning, when Myuu woke up she raised a very loud scream.

According to her, when she opened her eyes, there was me staring with unblinking eyes that had no light in them, it seemed that it was extremely scary…….

……Right, that’s indeed scary. It was something that I did myself but, it was completely a horror.

When I kowtowed and apologized, I was forgiven and felt relieved.

Or rather, Myuu was letting out a sigh before in the end she apologized instead with a gentle gaze because last night

she was saying too much, furthermore she consoled me.

……

It’s depressing.

Today I have no motivation anymore to do anything.

–

PS

Kaori made fun of me about the morning incident, so I teleported only her underwear and let the wind carried it away.

Fly away~, to the ends of the earth~

–

–

–

Month ○ Day ∽

Right now, there are a large gathering of the classmates and their family inside the house.

It’s in order to prepare against the attack of the demons and their worshippers.

Fuh, pay a close attention. At the first wife Yue-san’s “hospitality”!

Setting that aside, those demons targeted my relatives and comrades, on top of that although it was indirectly but they even caused Otou-sama to be injured.

Kill. Not even a fragment of their existence will remain……

Was what I thought but, Endou told me to butt out, so I’m staying quietly in the home, writing diary like this right now.

After Endou said that it’s him who was entrusted with the job by Hajime and so on, I have to let him do it, besides, that girl……she said her name is Claudia? When I recalled that girl’s earnest eyes that are holding back something, it also made me want to let her do it.

Anyway, when this incident is taken care of, I’ll strangle Endou for a bit. Right now, what I should do is doing my house-sitting duty perfectly, and watching over the children who are trying to advance forward with all their might.

Oh? While I’m concentrating to my diary, the inside of the house is turning really chaotic when I noticed.

Yuuka is looking absurdly fidgety. Come to think of it, is this the first time Yuuka entered into Nagumo family house?

Are you curious? Are you that curious about Hajime’s room? Very well. This me the first wife will generously play the role as the guide for touring around Hajime’s place in Nagumo family house.

But, taking home Hajime’s clothes as you please, especially the underwear like our family’s girls is not allowed!

Also, Taeko. Stop swinging whip around inside the house. Stop licking your lips too. Allen is shaking really pitifully there. Also, several of the boys are also muttering 「Queen……」 while looking at you.

Doing strange play in Nagumo family house isn’t allo——

It isn’t allowed other than this family!

Also, Kaori papa and Otou-sama is quarreling and grappling with each other aga…..

Oh?

I see. There are a lot of people so they aren’t quarreling physically, they are going to settle it with fighting game.

It’s a rare chance, so I want to try holding a tournament with everyone.

……Very well. Let’s show them the true strength of gamer Yue!

……

……

……

Uu, Hajimee. Myuu is! Myuu iiss~.

This is totally strangeee. Myuu, she is too strong……I was completely helpless there……

Myuu, could it be, you are still angry? The midnight waking up, the seiza standby in the morning, you are still angry about them? Is that so?

Ah, Myuu is getting thoroughly beaten up by Otou-sama.

Myuu is desperately trying to rally herself while looking like she is going to cry, but Otou-sama, he is viciously beating her up with nasty combo while laughing loudly.

Aa, Myuu’s character is flying in a beautiful parabolic arc…….

Otou-sama stands up while proclaiming his victory 「I’m number o~~~ne!」 with raised index finger.

Otou-sama……

Seeing you seriously playing to win against a little girl and celebrating your victory wholeheartedly like that caused everyone to get put off.

I too, am a bit put off.

Myuu is falling on all fours below Otou-sama’s feet you know? Do you notice?

Aa, look, Myuu cried, she is wailing.

Ah, Myuu activated the final weapon 「I really hate Ojii-chan!」!

Otou-sama crumbled!

A grown-up man is getting on all fours beside a little girl who is also on all fours…….

For some reason the classmates and their family are making a face that seem to say 「I see. So this is the daily life of Nagumo family……」.

Everyone, you are wrong. Nagumo family is, Nagumo family is……right, it’s like usual.

Rather, it’s really peaceful compared to usual with Sumire-okaasama doing her best in giving hospitality to the classmate’s family.

Remia is hugging Myuu and consoling her. Beside them Kaori papa is patting Otou-sama’s shoulder with excessively kind expression. He is saying「You really felt it right? Like this, in your soul. I received such pain, almost everyday」 with a face like an old man that had received enlightenment.

When I looked at Kaori, she quickly averted her gaze.

I see. In Shirasaki family, dispute about Hajime occur almost everyday, and each time Kaori papa will get hit by bullet of words from his daughter until he is on the verge of death.

Nice job, Kaori papa! Do it more! Win over your daughter and pull her apart from Haji――

Ah, what are you doing-, Kaori!

――

――

――

Good grief, trying to take away the diary while I’m in the middle of writing like that, Kaori is really violent. She is wild Kaori. She is like a beast that is constantly getting cornered. Or rather, even though I’m writing at the corner of the room while hiding, how did she know the content of what I was writing?

She said something like a maiden’s instinct but……fuh, damn Kaori, not bad.

Mu-. It looks like there is movement at Vatican. Let’s finish the diary here. Midway the sweat of my heart trickle down

and it somehow become hard to read, perhaps I'll rewrite it later.

Now then, demons. It's time for war.

My sorrow from getting thoroughly beaten up by a little girl in fighting game.

You can taste it to your heart's content-!

–

–

–

Month ○ Day √

The incident finally reached a point where we can take a pause.

The diary is also blank for several days, but I'm resuming it from today.

Even so it was shocking. To think that the people inside Myuu's Deadly Sin Ranger were actually the kings of the demons.

Before Hajime, the so called Belphegoor (?) said 「No, that's too insolent in front of the demon king. The likes of us are just mere demons, no, we are just some punk!」 but……

When they showed their seriousness in order to hold back their subordinate demons, their pressure was terrific. Perhaps it was in the level that wasn't at all inferior compared to Ehito.

They’re dangerous. It’s dangerous that they are in the level that we cannot let our guard down against.

It seems Myuu trust them, but just in case, it’ll be better to display the power of the first wife to them.

Thinking that, today I asked Myuu to take them out.

When that happened, the so called Belphegoor (?) said 「No, it’s really insolent in front of the first wife of the demon king. The likes of us are just some punks, no, we are just the princess’s pet!」.

What should I say, is that really fine? Each time you came out, your “status” just keep getting lower though.

Furthermore it’s you yourself who are lowering it so low like that.

The seven deadly sins are tentatively demon kings who made appearance even in books, you all are legendary demons right?

For some reason it made me felt painful. Just like Myuu said, they aren’t giving me bad feelings, so perhaps it’s fine even if I don’t make a display of my strength. If it feels like they are getting cocky, I’ll discipline them along with Endou too at that time.

Although, that Myuu, getting called as 「Princess!」 by demons of Ehito class, and getting treated with sentiment of deep affection from who knows if it from loyalty or friendship or anything else……

Remia was saying 「Myuu, I wonder where is she planning to head to」 with a faraway look. I think it can’t be helped that she got like that. I also have the same thought after all.

Thinking really, really carefully, we——the person who is called as demon king or demon god in another world, an immortal vampire princess who can use even the power of god, superhuman rabbit whose ability is broken at various things, a covert pervert who completely became god’s apostle, a maiden swordswoman who recently became 「There is almost nothing that I cannot cut! ……No, actually there is really nothing at all isn’t it, thing that I cannot cut」, an abnormally pervert dragon, etc. ——too, objectively speaking are people who are treating Myuu with sentiments of deep affection.

While writing on the diary, I got a bit of cold sweat.

A sudden thought suddenly crossed my mind, when Hajime and Shia first encountered Myuu, could it be it wasn’t that the two of them discovered Myuu, but perhaps Myuu was the one who drew them toward her?

This time too, she shrewdly caused the chief of Britain’s security bureau to lose her backbone.

She already turned the next king of Heiligh Kingdom spineless.

As a kid who can restrain the seven pillars of demons, even Vatican can only take their hat off toward her. Rather, in the end it seems that the exorcist chief who looks like he can kill someone with his gaze melted to look like a good-natured grandpa.

……Yep, let’s not think further of this.

–

–

–

Month ○ Day ⇔

Now, Myuu! Take the controller!

It’s the fighting game’s revenge match!

The true power of fighting game gamer Yue who had secretly polished her skill through days of sleepless night, taste it to your heart content!

I’ll teach you that there isn’t anything like a vampire princess who lose against little girl!

–

–

–

Month ○ Day □

Not yet-. It’s not over yet!

–

–

–

Month ○ Day †□

I, it’s not over yet

–

–

–

Month ○ Day ≠

N, not over yeeet

–

–

–

Month ○ Day □

Myuu is! Myuu is too strong I cannot defeat her!

–

–

–

Month ○ Day ∃

Hajimeee. Myuu! Myuu finally won’t play with me anymore!

What should I do!

–

–

–

Month ○ Day □

These several days, it seems I’m somehow not like usual. For me to get absorbed into fighting game until dark circle appear under my eyes……. It’s simply, Hajime scolded me,

Myuu is looking at me with a really complicated gaze, Kaori completely made fun of me, Otou-sama and others are looking at me with warm eyes……

This vampire princess, is greatly reflecting.

Setting that aside, Nagumo family’s family meeting number ‘……does anyone remember what number of meeting this one is?’ is being held.

The agendas are 「Regarding Hajime’s habit of weaponizing vehicle」 and 「problem of the people inside the suits」.

The former was an agenda that Shia brought up. Also, while she is at it, it seems she also want to overturn the decision 「In case there is passenger other, Shia cannot be allowed to touch the handle」 from the previous meeting.

Anyway, Hajime’s fervent speech was amazing. To explain just how indispensable weapons are for a vehicle, he even expressly brought out a projector and strongly insisted like he is doing presentation for a company somewhere.

Sumire-okaasama who seemed to get fed up in the middle said 「Aah geez, it’s troublesome! Just do whatever you like! Also, Shia-chan’s revocation request is rejected」. With that Hajime made a guts pose while Shia fell on all fours with her head hanging down.

Well, this is Hajime who installed weapon not only in vehicle, but even in Myuu’s bicycle, so I think it’s already too late talking about this now, and until something is done about Shia’s personality shift when she is gripping handle, there will be no room argument for that.

……I too previously met horrible experience when riding behind Shia on a bike.

Now then, it’s the important 「problem of the people inside suits」.

The people inside the Demon Rangers, they are like that. There is possibility that there are also others. The possibility that it’s only Myuu’s golems is certainly existent, but it has to be confirmed to erase all doubt.

Because of that, Hajime tired taking out the Grim Reapers, arachnes, and other things at the vast underground space but……

As expected.

Although it’s mainly with the Grim Reapers, demons with famous backgrounds are possessing them.

According to them, it seems 「It’s unfair that it’s only the kings. We don’t know why but for some reason master’s puppets are ignoring various restrictions and are easy to be possessed y’know」 (liberal translation).

It looks like there are quite a lot of fellows who shrewdly got in when Hajime got lost into hell.

Hajime tried to chase them out with twitching face but……

Even when they got hit by bombardment that dealt damage to the soul, 「Stop-, we are going to perish so stoop. We are going to be useful for master so pleaseee!」 they were considerably persistent like that. Do they want to have fun in this world and other world that much?

It seems that hell is a really dull place.

In the end, with Myuu’s intermediation too, Hajime allowed the haunting of the golems.

Fumu. With this Hajime became “demon king” without any way to make excuse about it.

Hajime! Lovely!

Setting that aside, there are around two golems of different disposition.

They are the arachnes. The golems that Hajime named Erst and Neunte to amuse himself.

The two golems didn’t introduce themselves as demon. Or rather, it felt like they didn’t have name and couldn’t introduce themselves.

When Shia tried asking 「Don’t tell me……you two aren’t really apostle aren’t you? You two aren’t Erst and Neunte that I and Hajime-san murdered right?」 with slightly twitching face……

The two golems simultaneously looked toward the far away. They wouldn’t meet anyone’s gaze no matter what.

It was terribly suspicious.

But, for apostles their every single movements are comical, the excessively feels human. If speaking about apostles, it was their default to be cold, emotionless, and expressionless. They were an existence that truly ought to be called “god’s puppet”.

For a test, Hajime took out a certain thing.

After Kaori returned to her original body, I used a secret art and made her able to use apostle transformation by herself, but after that Neunte’s body was stored just in case.

If someone fell into a dangerous situation that made them lost their flesh body, we imagined it would be better if there is an excellent body that can be used for emergency refugee in the same way like with Kaori.

The instant Neunte’s body that was stored inside a crystal was taken out.

The two arachnes dashed fiercely. Toward Neunte’s body.

Of course, Hajime didn’t instruct them to do that.

Furthermore, in the middle Erst took a violent action of tripping the leg of Neunte who was running parallel with her and made her stumbled.

Then, the tumbling Neunte spouted out string and caught Erst’s leg. She then kicked flying the struggling Erst and dashed fiercely again.

Not allowing her to do that, Erst fired the needle attached to her leg and sent Neunte flying……

The two started an ugly scuffle. They hit their opponent repeatedly with their legs, and rolled around the floor while grappling continuously.

When Hajime returned Neunte’s body inside the treasure warehouse while holding his head, the two simultaneously reached out their legs and went □Aa~~!□, and then they hung down their head.

Hajime. Let’s recognize it? The people inside them are the apostles.

Hajime’s expression was twitching grandly. The expression of Shia and others were also twitching.

Hajime was muttering to himself 「No, impossible. In the first place those guys didn’t have anything like soul, and even if they had soul, this kind of behavior is like that of a human cannot be explained」 with a low voice.

Certainly that’s true but……

For some reason, even when we tried asking for detail, it seems even Myuu cannot hear the voice of the two. Even when we gave them writing tools they didn’t try writing anything.

The instant Hajime muttered 「……Let’s dispose them」, they desperately appealed that they will be useful (it’s only a guess though), and Myuu’s impression toward them is that there is no bad feeling from them, so for the moment their disposal is put on hold.

Since when, where, and how did the arachnes got possessed?

It looks like Hajime also want to solve those questions, so it seems he is going to research and investigate it for a while.

Fumu. It’s also something I’m really curious about.

Anyway, until then Erst (temp) and Neunte (temp), for short they are called Etemp-san and Netemp-san, are the last decision made for today’s meeting.

–

–

–

Month ○ Day ×

The Haurias came!

Starting from tomorrow, it will be earth sightseeing together with the Haurias.

By the way, Hajime. That 「Special attention needed when handling! Hauria Manual」……

Will it be fine?

Yep, surely it won't be fine.

Let's also prepare various things for tomorrow.

–

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Notification.

Currently, I'm unexpectedly getting pressured to write the second volume of spin-off Zero. It's a harsh situation to take time to write new chapter update.

The words number and content of this chapter are also (sweat)……my apologize to all of you who were looking forward to it.

The update for next week too, it will depend on the progress of my writing but, perhaps it will be hard.

I'm sorry toward those who are looking forward to new chapter, but it will really help me if you all can think of it as

‘Shirakame is really hopeless huh’ and kindly wait until 30th day of this month.

My best regards.

–

※I haven’t mentioned about the newest update in Comic Gardo until now, so just in case.

– Nichijou chapter 19 is updated

=>Myuu who coached Hajime hit the bull’s eye lol

– Zero chapter 4

=>The beginning of the annoying Miledy. Her expression at the end was really great. My respect to Kouchi-sensei’s drawing skill!

– Main story comic chapter 22

=>Miledy is in here too! The golem is cool.

–

I’m ashamed to put an advertisement here but, the comic of Zero volume 1 will be released at 25 July. It’s also announced at the homepage of Overlap-sama.

Her energetic atmosphere is cute! My thanks to Kouchi Ataru-sensei!

Why is she that annoying, it will become clear from Miledy’s past (the little girl Miledy).

I will be very happy if you readers will pick up the book.

Arifureta Chapter 321

Arifureta After III The Hauria Came! First

–

One day after the problems about Vatican and demons and so on were taken care of and around a month passed.

A strange tense atmosphere was floating inside the living room of Nagumo family house. Everyone was excessively restless.

It was only Myuu who was lying down on the living room’s sofa with her small legs moving back and forth while she was focusing on her portable game but……. Sometimes her fingers would mash the button fiercely while swearing 「Goddamn! Nano!」 that she learned from who knew where.

「Myuu-chan, as I thought she is really amazing. Her nerves are just too brazen.」

The one who muttered so was the man with thin shadow sitting on the neighboring sofa——Endo Kousuke.

「A, as expected from the daughter of demon king-sama……」

The one who replied with shivering expression was Emily Grant who was sitting stickingly close beside Kousuke as though snuggling up to him.

Why were these two in the house of Nagumo family? The reason was the same with why the people of Nagumo family were strangely tense.

「It’s about time……I guess.」

Hajime muttered while staring at the wall of the living room. Inside the living room, Yue, Kaori, Shizuku, Tio, and also Remia were swallowing their saliva audibly altogether.

Additionally, the two happy-go-lucky two people of Nagumo family who delighted in people’s shocked reaction were currently facing battlefield in their workplace. The two of them were so vexed with a look as though they were going to cry tears of blood because they were unable to stay at home in this day that ought to be commemorated. Surely around this time they were working hard while crying river of blood.

Then, at that timing, the wall suddenly began to shine. Light danced sparklingly in a vortex, and right after that the space distorted like jelly.

It was a gate. A sign that spaces were connected.

The light became even stronger, and before long an illusionary door appeared. It was shining brilliantly while opening along with a solemn music that was flowing from out of nowhere. *Gii*, a sound like the door of an ancient mansion opening was piercing their ears.

Light was overflowing from the gap of the door that was gradually opening.

At the same time, there was even smoke that was crawling on the floor overflowing out. The living room was instantly filled with a lot of white smoke like a sea of clouds……

Everyone’s gaze turned to Hajime. Is this also a newly added show feature? They wordlessly asked. Hajime shook his head left and right repeatedly. It seemed that other than the illusionary door and light, he didn’t know anything including the music.

The Crystal Key’s creator-san was bewildered. Yue-san and others who were even more bewildered.

And then, there was Emily-chan who was muttering 「Ah, that’s why Rana-san said that she was recently working hard on musical performance using instrument……」 with a faraway look, and Kousuke-san who was muttering 「Ah, that’s why that Rana was so zealously asking about the way to make dry ice……」.

Before long, inside the whirling white smoke and the light that was like halo, silhouette could be seen inside the completely opened double-leafed door. The figure wasn’t clear due to the backlighting.

At first there was one person. The figure was slowly advancing with a swagger and a way of walking that was putting on airs. Also, there were rabbit ears.

Next, there were two small silhouettes that appeared at both sides of the person who was walking at the forefront. As expected, they were also walking with exaggerated swagger. In every single step of the way they were walking, there was refinement that even gave off sexiness as though their toes were caressing the floor. Also, they had rabbit ears too.

And then two more silhouettes appeared at both sides again. The silhouettes of the newest additions looked female. Their hand was placed on their fragile looking thin waist, their unrealistically slender legs were moving forward as though

being crossed. That way of walking was like model. Also, they had rabbit ears too.

And then, behind them were four people. They were similarly walking with a swagger (abbreviated)——they also had rabbit ears.

The expression of Hajime and others was twitching. Kousuke was writhing while both his hands were covering his face. Emily was looking up to the ceiling. Amidst that, the figures that appeared through the whirling white smoke that was like sea of clouds were……

「The heaven is calling, the earth is calling, boss is calling」

「No, I ain’t calling anyone here.」

The man in the lead let out a sonorous voice. Hajime’s tsukkomi also burst out. Skill 「Sudden rabbit ear’s deafness」 activate!

The man in the lead meaninglessly lifted up one leg overhead and turned beautifully! The move was truly brisk! There was no doubt that the move was amazingly practiced!

「Crossing over time, crossing over land, crossing over world——」

「We came running. For the sake of the boss」

「Have some self-respect.」

Next was the rabbit eared boy and girl. They were moving with a smooth motion from the pose of a savage eagle to a flowing turn. Even their rabbit ears were flowing savagely!

「Watch, and be amazed.」

「We are the one and only clan of black darkness. The light devouring fang of demise.」

「No, you guys are forest rabbit aren't you? Rather, right now you guys are absurdly bright. The backlighting is completely covering you guys.」

The two rabbit eared ladies were generously showing off the goodness of their body style that would make even world level model to run away barefooted. They brushed up their hair, curved their waist sexily, and make a tuu――rn-! It was truly the height of refined movement!

Then, the four people at the back starting from the right also one by one (abbreviated)

Kousuke finally blocked his ears with both hands and started with his legs put up on the sofa where he buried his face into his knees to escape from the callous reality with all his power. There was no doubt that he was also running away in full power from his other self.

Emily-chan was rubbing the back of Kousuke with a gentle hand movement.

The man in the lead spread open his arms like a stage actor and raised his voice to a degree that resounded to the whole neighborhood.

「Shrink back, lament, despair! We are the dagger of Nagumo Hajime, the white fierce god crimson demon emperor, the rondo of red scarlet and ruination white, the incarnation of the god of thunder clad in frenzied whirlwind! We are the crawling dark hunter demon!」

From out of nowhere, the sound *DODODODO-* like a drum roll was sounding. The next instant, smoke blew out strongly.

Furthermore, due to magic item of lighting that was rolled out below them without anyone noticing, spotlight was turned on from right under them!

And then, a simultaneous tuuuuuuuurn-! They took their own preferred cool pose and a proclamation burst out grandly!

□□□□□WE ARE HAURIA-!!!□□□□□

A painful silence ruled the place.

Hajime had covered his ears with both hands and his face buried into the knees that were raised on the sofa before he knew it, running away with all his strength from the callous reality. Surely, without a doubt he was also running away with all his power from the chuuni self that wouldn’t vanish by any means inside his heart.

Yue who was snuggling beside him was patting Hajime’s back with gentle hand movement.

□Yes yes yes! It’s enough already! You all are satisfied right!? Come on, maintaining the gate isn’t easy! Please get in right awaaay!□

‘Hau, ugeh, higii’, such screams rose up. At the same time, the rabbit eared silhouettes were thrown in one after another from the other side of the gate. There were also people holding musical instrument and people holding fan, even people holding case filled with dry ice. Looking from that, they must be the show production staffs at the other side of the gate.

Shia returned from the other side of the gate without even giving a glance at a rabbit eared boy who was screaming due to the dry ice that was sticking on his face. No one

mentioned about the red something that was sticking on her fist.

「Hajime-san! I'm back――」

Rakshasa Oni of Calamitous Realm of the Dead
「Boss! "Ominous Hell Disaster" Carmlite Mors Exdix Hauria, has arrived in your presence! In this chance, we Hauria clan cannot endure our feelings of gratitude from receiving the summon into boss's world! This is truly our greatest honor!」

'The name is different from before……', Hajime thought, but he was busy with shutting himself inside his shell, so he kept being small while not reacting. He didn't see the strange person beautifully kneeling right beside him, not in the least.

But, such figure of their respected and beloved boss was something completely trivial. The Haurias who arrived here introduced themselves one by one.

Abyss's True Wife
「It has been one month, boss! "Abyss Cenicienta" Ranainferina Bride Hauria, is present!」

Certain Death Madness
「"Death Rapsodia" Baltfeldt Tirailleur Hauria. Boss! Please kidnap me too this time no matter what!」

「Wait a second Baltfeldt! Stealing headstart is forbidden!
Outside Massacre Flower
Boss! "Kill Nahatol" Nea Stadtrm Adeka Hauria, has arrived! That aside, it's unfair that it's only Ranainferina! I beg you please kidnap me!」

Rending Vacuum Burial Jail
「Little kids just stay quiet. My lord, "Reaper the Inferno" Minasteria Diabolos Hauria, is at your side! If possible, allow me to stay at your side for eternity in this chance!」

「Boss! I will surely be of use-. This “Thunder Blade (abbreviated――”」

‘Anyway’, Hajime thought. ‘They have powered up even more than beforeee’, he thought. ‘I don’t even get what are they talking about anymoreee……’, he thought.

As expected even Yue and others had expression that gone past the usual wry smile and became twitching expression.

It seemed that because the Haurias were able to come to their boss’s world, they were in a state of max tension……it didn’t just stop there, it seemed they were in the limit break state that pierced through the heaven. Surely, without a doubt they were spending days of sleepless nights to think of their new name. Also, things like the naming’s name or the basis of the naming were without a doubt absolutely noncommittal. They only focused at the impact of the wording.

The blank eyed Kousuke was staring at empty air while saying 「Heheh, can you believe it? I’m slotted to become these people’s head you know?」, Emily was clinging on him imploringly and said 「Get a hold of yourself-, Kousuke!」. Seeing them, Hajime rallied his mind somehow.

There was a person in even more terrible state beside him. Somehow it felt like he could still keep going-! Something like that.

But, there,

「Everyone of Hauria! Good work in coming here! Nano! I am the one and only “demon king’s daughter”, Myuu Southcloud nano!」

Standing imposingly on the sofa, and both arms crossed with cool impression! Myuu’s triumphant look was fixed on her face!

Carmlite――not that, Carm and others offered their loud applauses and praises saying 「Oo! Myuu-dono! What a magnificent introduction!」.

Remia suddenly looked like she would faint. Tio hurriedly caught her body. It seemed mama Remia’s consciousness was getting farther when she overlapped her daughter’s future with the current Hauria.

「Dear-, please! Myuu! Myuu is!」

「Yeah-, I get it, Remia!」

The two’s figure was like a mother whose beloved daughter was kidnapped and a husband who was relied on by his wife and took a stand.

From behind, Hajime hugged Myuu who was making a turn with a triumphant look. Without pause he lifted her up. The Haurias’ eyes were shining in expectation 「Will it be the introduction of parent and child!?」. For the time being Hajime sent them flying and then he scolded Myuu with ‘No-‘.

Myuu was making an unconvinced expression saying 「Even though papa sometimes would also be like that……」, but it seemed she somehow consented. Though her muttering inflicted a deep fissure into papa Hajime’s heart.

After that, Hajime pulled himself together and coughed once.

「Aa~, let’s see. Well, for now, good work in coming here.」

「Thank you very much, boss. Allow me to express our gratitude once more for listening to our request for base searching.」

「This time it will be a preliminary inspection. It will be mostly like a sightseeing, so relax. Shia too, she was enthusiastic that she will be able to give a tour to her family in this world.」

When Carm who heard those words looked at Shia, Shia was making a slightly embarrassed look while her rabbit ears were moving restlessly. Carm too, his seriously ill chuunibyou state vanished and he displayed a warm face of a father.

The Haurias came this time was because their work of hardening their foothold at Tortus had calmed down, so they raised up a new objective of getting useful for Hajime even at earth too.

For that, they requested to search for base at earth (mainly to Shia), but in any case there was also Shia's request of wanting to show them the sight in the world of this side at least once. That was how the visit this time came to be.

By the way, as expected it was impossible for the whole Hauria clan to come, so it was the visit of the picked elite twenty.

「Tou-sama. How about we go to the city right away?」

「Let's see……. I'm curious about the base location candidates that Shia and others picked out for us but, we don't know anything about this world other than some second-hand knowledge.」

「That’s right. It’s better to get used to the atmosphere a bit more. After all Tou-sama and everyone else’s head is like that even at the best of times! Please feel the atmosphere and common sense of this world directly with your skin!」

「Aah, let’s do that. Also, what do you mean by “our head is like that”, Shia.」

Shia papa made a tsukkomi at his daughter’s natural insult, but he was beautifully ignored.

Hajime smiled wryly while opening his mouth.

「Right. Let’s stroll around the city relaxedly and then eat outside. Although, moving around in a group of twenty will be a bit hard.」

「……Do you mean that it’s better to split up then, boss.」

「Ou. For Rana, it’s better to be together with Kousuke right? I called him here for that.」

Rana was moved to tears by the boss’s consideration while leaping toward Kousuke――Emily-chan intercept!

Although, she only cut in between them really like a cat going 「Fushaa!」. In the end, she instantly got embraced together and became totally flustered.

「That’s how it so, Tou-sama. Please decide――」

‘The grouping’, Shia was about to say, but those words got swallowed back in the middle. She was literally made to swallow those words by the extremely dangerous atmosphere that Carm and others emitted.

「Fumu. Then, this is the clan chief's order. I will be with boss. The other can decide by yourself.」

Killing intent!

「Chief, you want to die?」

「Rather, I'll kill you.」

Par-kun made a neck cutting gesture with a smile.

Nea-chan equipped a sunglass! & at both hands short swords stand b~~y-.

Even though the two of them were still around twelve years old, the atmosphere they emitted was that of a veteran warrior.

「Shia and also Rana are unfair! Why was it only me who couldn't come at the spring! At the very least I should be allowed to serve at boss's side! I'm not scared at all against the like of Shia! Do your best me!」

Mina-san often listened to Rana talking fondly of her lover, so it seemed her mind was relatively cornered. She pushed aside the chief and challenged Shia to a fight was also because she wanted to serve the boss it seemed.

The other Haurias were also claiming that 'I am the one that will go sightseeing with boss!' and they equipped sunglass one after another. They started to take out short sword or knife or the like from who knew where.

「You bastards……that's some guts you have there trying to supplant your superior-」

Killing intent overflowed from Carm-san. ‘I absolutely won’t yield the place at boss’s side!’ Such passionate thought was overflowing from the rabbit eared uncle!

A bloody “contest for the spot at boss’s side” by the Haurias was going to start at Nagumo family house.

「……Nn. Hajime, you’re super popular.」

「Papa, you’re super popular nano~」

「Everyone really loves Hajime-san aren’t they~. Anyway, the way everyone is looking cornered like that is terrible…… something have to be done quickly.」

「Goshujin-sama. Like this, art not it better to just do a group tour?」

Yue and others directed a complicated expression toward Hajime. Kaori and Shizuku were desperately trying to remonstrate Carm and co. Kousuke too, he was being told unreasonably by Rana 「Now, Kou-kun! As the next chief, tell them firmly with impact here!」. Even though his eyes were looking dead, he was standing up to respond to the expectation.

Anyway, they were at the living room of Nagumo house, so Hajime took a deep breath.

「Etemp-san, Netemp-san. Do it.」

‘Roger!’, the two arachnes that had appeared on the table unnoticed by anyone pushed out their improved front legs. What was shot out from there was super small stun gun. The moment it hit the target, the switched was turned and electricity flowed.

Chu chu chu chu chu chu, such strangely cute shooting sound resounded. At the same time, 「ABAA-!?」 countless screams rose.

In less than a few seconds, the living room of Nagumo house was filled with a mountain of rabbit corpses……

Also, the true identity of the two arachne-san still hadn’t been ascertained at this time.

「This is bad. As I thought, something like sightseeing feels like a suicidal act to me. Especially for my social position.」

Hajime’s spasming voice echoed slightly.

Although, he had a rabbit eared wife who wanted to give a tour to her family in earth, so he had no choice but to do his best. There was no option of cancelling since the beginning.

Hajime made a wry smile toward Shia who was looking slightly apologetic while standing up and psyching up himself.

–

–

–

It was noisy somewhere in the downtown.

There was a heavy pedestrian traffic also because it was nearby a large shopping mall nearby a station. The gaze of all those people was fixed toward one place. There were people whose jaw dropped down, there were also people who was watching in fascination, people who were raising voice of despair because their smartphone went up in smoke

for some reason when they were trying to take picture using it, etc……

「……Damn it. I was only vigilant of their speech and action, but these guys are the rabbit people race in the end.」

「Ahaha……. In a sense it was also a bad decision to ask Remia-san to coordinate their outfit isn't it~」

Hajime's expression looked like he was enduring a headache. Shia was making a wry smile in respond.

The source of the attention was naturally, Carm and co.

After the contest for the spot beside boss was suppressed, in the end it was decided to split the group into four. Each group was composed of five Haurias with two people attached as guide. With that each group would walk around separately to various places and later on the Haurias would share the information with each other.

Then, in the glorious "boss group", Carm, Par, Nea, Mina, and Io, these five were chosen for it. It would be troublesome if it became a dispute, so it was decided by the boss's command. Here, two more people, Shia and Myuu were also added as guide.

In addition, the other groups consisted of Yue & Tio group, Kousuke & Emily group, and Kaori & Shizuku group.

「Hou hou. This is also amazing. Buildings like large trees are lining up like this……good gracious, this is truly another world. Truly a magnificent view!」

「To think that boss's Brieze and Schutaif are spreading through general public like this……I had heard about it

already but, seeing it with my own eyes still make me lost for words.

Yeah, everything is different from our world. As for the air, well, it’s a bit like that though……

Carm, Mina, and Io, the three of them were saying so. They were looking around with a surprised and admiring expression.

Each time admiring long sigh leaked out from the surrounding.

There was one reason. It was the good look of Carm and co.

For Hajime and co, they had gotten used on seeing it and on top of that they knew of the Haurias true character, so they didn’t think anything about it anymore. But Carm and co were of rabbit people race. That was to say, every single one of them was a possessor of good look that boasted terrific popularity as prized slave.

Furthermore, their current appearance was dressed to blend normally into modern Japan. No, far from blending in, the great sense in the clothing coordination was suiting them too much.

Carm’s appearance was a classic fashion that looked tastefully casual with a felt hat on his head, which made Hajime wanted to make a tsukkomi that he looked like a dandy movie actor from somewhere. If he also held a cane, it wouldn’t be out of place even if he introduced himself as an old noble gentleman.

Mina too, she was wearing pants look with calm atmosphere on the whole. She was only wearing a round-necked T-shirt with a long cardigan put above it, but because she was a

possessor of a figure that wasn’t at all inferior compared to Shia or Rana, her gallantly walking figure stole everyone’s gaze without exception. No one would hold any doubt if they were told that she was a top model from overseas.

Io had a rough appearance that consisted of slacks and jacket, but compared to Carm he was taller and had better physique, so his appearance was truly fit to be called as a good looking man. He truly looked stylish.

And then,

「We are strangely gathering a lot of attention here. Milady, I don’t think there will be anything to worry with boss here, but just in case, please don’t get too far away from us okay?」

「Well, these aren’t unpleasant gaze like from the people of the empire so I think it’s fine but still……. It will be fine, milady. This Neastadtrm will protect you even at the cost of my life.」

Par and Nea were standing in position that were putting Myuu between them while sending sharp gaze toward the surrounding. They were unmistakably a handsome boy and a beautiful girl.

The two of them, or rather the Hauria clan was basically calling Myuu as「Myuu-dono」or「milady」in respect and affection.

She was the boss’s beloved daughter, so from their point of view she was like a princess. The way they were calling her sounded like yakuza was for fun.

The dignified atmosphere of the two and their adorable appearance formed a gap that struck the heart. Whether it

was Par who was dressed in a jean and white jacket, or Nea who was wearing a miniskirt and sleeveless shirt with a necktie, both of them were giving excessively stylish impression even though they were children.

By the way, all of them were using artifact that was hiding their rabbit ears. Carm's hat actually had holes opened for his rabbit ears, but it too was turned invisible using a type of illusion.

「My? What is Par-kun and Nea-chan talking about nano?」

Myuu tilted her head in puzzlement. In contrast to the two, Myuu was wearing a loose white dress. She was truly giving an impression like a princess.

Everything was fashion coordination from Remia who was requested by Shia. It seemed that all the clothes were the creation from her company from how she was saying「This will be a great advertisement!」. She really had a strong business spirit.

「……Milady. I am Baltfeld yeah?」

「Milady, please call me as Neastadtrm by all means.」

「? Par-kun is Par-kun, and Nea-chan is Nea-chan nano.」

「Mi, milady~. Please properly call our name there.」

「We are begging youu, milady~」

「Ee~? Because, those names, they're long. It's troublesome nano.」

Par-kun and Nea-chan, the two of them raised a groan 「Guhah」 together while hanging down their head.

Even though they looked dignified just now, the handsome boy and beautiful girl got depressed by the words from a girl younger than them and looked dejected.

The big sisters at the surrounding were spurting out red shower of happiness from their nose! The station’s front was dyed by blood!

Also, rough breathing of excitement was blowing out from the nose of the gentlemen. Someone, please call the police! It will also be for protecting their life!

Hajime was giving his all to chase out the surrounding commotion from his sight while looking up at the large shopping mall across from the traffic ahead.

They came here first to have Carm and co to experience the common livelihood and marketplace of the people in this world, but right now he could only look at the shopping mall as a thrill ride at a clamoring amusement park.

The schedule tomorrow would be a sightseeing at place of abundant nature using teleportation, but right now Hajime was already anxiously looking forward for that time to come.

「Ee~rr, Hajime-san! Perhaps it will be fine!」

「Right, yeah.」

If speaking about the beginning, the cause of this was because of his devilish remodeling toward the Hauria clan. He was reaping what he sown, his just deserts.

Above all else, it was his role as the host to make Shia’s family had fun.

No problem, I’ll do it. My head has received damage since the entrance scene but, I won’t go down just from this much!

Look, the moment I psyched up myself, the traffic light turned green. Isn’t it look as though the traffic light-san is telling me「It will be fine you know?」. 「Your future is green lighted♪」 it said!

Now, let’s go. It will be fine, problem won’t occur that quick――

「Say~, can I have a bii~t of your time? I am from the ○○ television, is it okay if I hold a street interview with you here?」

「!?」 flew out above Hajime’s head.

「Hmm? Are you talking to me, beautiful young lady?」

「O, oh you, calling me beautiful like that……」

When Hajime turned around, he saw TV staff doing street interview there and the figure of Carm and co facing them smilingly.

As expected, it seemed a group of good looking people was really conspicuous.

The female interviewer looked a bit enthusiastic facing the stylishly dandy old gentlemen. She was asking his name with her cheeks slightly blushing. She was also asking about his profession, whether they were a group of model or actor.

Hajime tried to intercept in panic but……

「O, oi, Carm. Something like this is――」

「Fuh. You are telling us to introduce ourselves? Very well. In that case, put up your rabbit ears and listen well!」

The old gentleman smirked! Blood left the demon king-san's face. "That" would be broadcasted into the living room of houses throughout Japan!

「We are――」

「You think I'll let youu-」

Boss's right blow!

「Gahah!? Bo, boss? Even though I was at the nice part just now! Just why!?」

Carm held his side while falling on one knee. Cold sweat was oozing from his whole body.

A beat later, the female newscaster screamed 「Kyaaaaah! A violenceee!」.

Ignoring that, Hajime informed the Haurias smilingly.

「Listen to me, you guys. It's forbidden to introduce yourself without my permission. What you are allowed to say is only your real name. You get it? Just try introducing yourself with more than six letters. I'll tear out your prided rabbit ears for eternity.」

「Ye, yes, boss! We won't introduce our name using more than six letters!」

Carm stood in attention and displayed a beautiful salute. The other Haurias were also turning pale simultaneously and displayed an admirable salute posture.

That harmoniously synchronized movement conveyed clearly to the surrounding people whether they liked it or not.

It conveyed, just who was the boss of that group.

Shia was covering her face with one hand while muttering.

「……Hajime-san. I understand your feeling, I also understand why your body reflexively moved. But, I think your action just now also feel like that enough you know?」

Hajime-san gasped in realization. The camera was firmly recording the figure of the boss and his underlings. The figure of Japanese youth who was being absolutely obeyed by a group of foreign good looking people that stole everyone's attention was…….

「Excuse me~, can I question you mister for a bit too?」

The female newscaster timidly held out the mike toward Hajime.

「Boss! Please, teach us how to deal with this kind of situation too!」

「Please! This Balt——cough-. This Par swear that he will learn it in one go without fail!」

Carm and others raised their spirit. The TV crew looked deeply interested.

Hajime looked up to the sky.

And then, he thought.

'I hope, this isn't a live broadcast', he thought.

‘Also, let’s not have lunch in the shopping mall, let’s do it in Sonobe’s restaurant, yeah let’s do that’, he also thought.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I’m thinking to return to the usual update interval from next week.

I’ll sort out the chronological order already (sweat)

–

At Comic Gardo,

- Main story comic version chapter 23
- Nichijou chapter 20

They are updated.

They are in the middle of being freely distributed at Overlap-sama’s homepage, so please go take a look!

The main story comic finally entered the versus Miledy golem fight. The impact is amazing lol

At the Nichijou, Kaori-san’s proclamation from the rooftop is nostalgic lol. I saw it every week in the past huh, it made me recalled various things.

Arifureta Chapter 322

Arifureta After III The Hauria Came! Second

–

Fortunately, the downtown interview wasn’t broadcasted live.

The camera was hindered due to the interference from Lightning Clad. The TV crews withdrew because they weren’t in a state to do recording anymore. They looked terribly frustrated.

It wasn’t because their camera broke, but because it returned to normal after they took a certain distance. Surely that was frustrating for them.

Hajime and Shia dragged away the Haurias from the noisy location to escape. They let out a large sigh when they entered the entrance of a shopping department.

「Hajime-san, are you alright, mentally?」

「It felt like my soul got shaved off a lot, but I’m still alright. Though, don’t let your guard down Shia. Concentrate. If not――you’ll die.」

「No, we aren’t in a battlefield. This is a departm――」

「Boss! This is a really amazing place! If it’s here surely they will have splendid collection of weapons!」

「Around here there are only clothes……. Boss, where are they selling tools? I want to resupply my wire soon.」

「Ah, boss, I also want sharpening stone for my knife.」

「Are they selling hidden weapon here? I want a spare blade for the assassin blade boss bestowed to us.」

「No no, chief. Also all of you too. We are finally able to come to boss's world yeah? Then, first it has to be explosive! Boss, please show us the best explosive material!」

For the time being, the ladies who were sending feverish gazed to Carm and Io opened their eyes wide in shock. Their eyes were darting around was undoubtedly the proof that they were hesitating whether to report this to the police or not.

Shia raised a dry laugh 「Ahaha……」.

「I retract my words. This place is a battlefield. Our heart will be done in if we let our guard down. Also please don't report this to police.」

「Perhaps it might be best to go to hardware store.」

There wouldn't be any explosive or assassin blade there, but perhaps there would be a full set of material there. At the very least, there would be a mountain of product for making trap there.

Although, the store would also have bar or chainsaw. Hajime didn't want Hauria to equip these two items.

Rabbits equipping "bar-like thing" or "chainsaw" inside forest……that was nightmare. If it was turned into horror

movie, it felt like it would give terror that surpassed that person in Friday the 13th .

Hajime shook his head to chase out the scary imagination. He then thoroughly, very thoroughly told Carm and others that there wasn’t any weapon here, that till the end this was a market for general public. He told them to never ask anything like 「I want to buy explosive though, where is it placed?」 to the shop staff no matter what.

Carm and others were a bit disappointed, but they came here today for the sake of learning a part of living in another world. They accepted that they didn’t came for weapon resupply. For the present time they were following behind Hajime obediently.

「Hmm, it’s unfortunate that they have no weapon here, however, this place is really resplendent. It looks like the imperial castle’s audience hall or party venue.」

Carm let out an impressed voice. The first floor that became atrium which reached until third floor was certainly resplendent not just from the ceiling’s lighting, but from the lights of each store too.

「Look around casually. Tell me if there is something that pique your interest. However, don’t go off by your own. Tell me properly. You all get that? This is an absolute order okay? Completely absolute okay?」

「……That’s a joke isn’t it boss?」(TN: Here Carm said the sentence in a slang wording usually used by youngsters in Japan)

「That ain’t it.」

The chief-san grinned broadly and guessed the boss’s meaning. It made Hajime wanted to make a tsukkomi why they knew about earth’s culture (?) only in that kind of area.

The atrium floors that reached until the third floor were basically consisting of only brand clothes or bag shops. Perhaps because of that, it seemed the Haurias weren’t really interested. Their gaze were sliding away from all of those in disinterest other than learning what kind of clothing Japanese people were wearing and just how much was the price.

「Hmm, Mina-san, Nea-chan. Are you two interested in western clothes? Look, something like this, I think it will look good on Mina-san see? Isn’t it cute?」

Shia smiled wryly at the disinterest of her fellow female Haurias toward fashion while pointing at the mannequin display of a certain shop.

The group of good looking people was naturally also standing out inside the department store. Noticing that Shia stopped walking, the female shop staff’s eyes were shining hopefully. She was quickly closing the distance with a perfect smile.

Two beautiful women who looked like foreign models. The female customers inside the shop and also the passing by people inadvertently directed their gaze to them.

Amidst that, Mina who was staring intently at the mannequin display that was dressed in long skirt Shia pointed out was……

「It looks hard to move at. I think it will be a hindrance in battle.」

「……」

The shop employee stopped approaching. The female customers went 「Eh?」 and tilted their head wondering if they were mishearing.

「No, now now, Mina-san. This is a casual wear you know? It's worn in time like when you are going out shopping for a bit for example, at that kind of time――」

「Fuu. You have become completely lax haven't you, Shia.」

「Yes?」

In response to Shia who was explaining that it wasn't a battle clothes with a bitter smile, Mina shrugged her shoulders looking like she was saying 「Oh dear」 really condescendingly. Shia's expression became somewhat irritated.

「Casual wear? Shopping? I wonder what could you refer to by that. We are the Hauria! How can you be so lax to forget the constant alert state of mind as though you are in a battlefield like this!」

「Eee~」

Shia who was preached at for some reason by her relative who was like her big sister. In addition, Carm and others were also sending her an exasperated expression that said 「Good grief Shia. Can you properly become boss's wife like that?」. Shia's irritated expression was getting deeper.

But, she endured! Because, Shia was an able bunny wife after all! Though she couldn't avoid having her unseen bunny ears trembling.

The female shop employee thought 「Ah, these guys might be a no good type of bunch」 and stopped approaching. Her impregnable friendly smile wasn’t disturbed at the slightest, but her legs stopped moving completely. She was entering a wait-and-see mode.

Mina didn’t even bother with the surrounding’s thought and,

(This is a chance! If I speak as Shia’s big sister that I want to watch over my unworthy little sister, I might be allowed to serve at boss’s side! Ku-ku-ku-. Don’t think bad of me, Shia. Onee-chan is at her limit already here. Each time I listened to the love talk of Rana and you, my heart feels like they are going to crack!)

Mina slipped out a black smile inside her heart. Like this she was going to develop a carefully reasoned logical argument that she ought to stay at the boss’s side using Shia’s clothing choice as excuse. But, however,

「Aa, geez-. What’s with that attitude just because of some clothing! It’s alright to wear cute western clothes occasionally! Even your attire today is lovely you know!?」

(Fuh, that’s naïve, Shia. Really naïve! My outfit right now is trouser look. What’s more, I asked Remia-san to choose one with soft fabric that has elasticity for me! In other words, it doesn’t violate my constant state of mental readiness at all! You who don’t even notice that really need my supervision just as I thought!)

Mina thought that within 0.03 second and replied with an overreaction that wished to express just how exasperated she was toward Shia.

「Fuh, really Shia. You are really a hopeless little sister aren’t you? Now listen, this is――」

「Hajime-san. Don’t you think that this long skirt will absolutely look good on Mina-san?」

「Hm~? Well, I guess it will?」

「Clerk-san! This one, give it to me!」

Mina-san snapped her finger and changed her attitude as easy as turning her palm. Inside her heart the scheme of just a moment ago had been sent flying to the beyond.

(Waa~~~i♪ I was praised by bosss~♪)

She was in a really high spirits. By the way, this year Mina was 23 years old.

She flapped her unseen rabbit ears energetically while passing by Shia who was making a look of incomprehension toward the shop employee.

By the way, each Hauria had been given their own Japanese yen of a certain amount. This was their “first shopping”. It was a part of their learning of currency value and calculation.

It was a brand product, so the price was quite expensive. The shop employee would prepare a different item that was the same like the one in the mannequin display. While waiting for it, Mina was humming ‘un un’ while counting the money she had with all her might.

While waiting for her calculation, the sleeve of Hajime’s clothes got pulled weakly. Hajime went 「Hm?」 and when he turned his gaze, there Nea who was fidgeting went……

「Bo, boss. I also, want some clothes. Is there anything, that suit me?」

The rabbit eared beautiful little girl kept sending glances with an upward look. She was explicitly begging 「I want clothes that boss think will look good on me」.

It seemed there was a gentleman among the passerby. The gentleman made a beautiful turn while passing through. He continued to walk backward while gazing intently at Nea and collided on an auntie with a huge build. *Slap* Such nice sound resounded. The price of staring at a beautiful little girl seemed to be getting hit by an auntie’s slap.

It was Myuu who became flustered by Nea’s attitude.

「Ne, Nea-chan! Myuu and Shia-oneechan will pick up clothes that will look good on Nea-chan nano!」

「Eh? Milady, but, I want boss……」

「Don’t say something bad nano! First-, Myuu and Shia-oneechan will be the one who choose! It’s okay to ask papa whether it look good or not after that!」

Myuu’s stern look was frightening. Myuu tightly grasped Nea’s shoulders and persuaded (?) Nea with a ghastly look.

「That’s right, Nea-chan. It’s just as Myuu-chan said. If not――」

「I, if not?」

「You will end up wearing something like the sweater of a black dragon with terrific fashion taste!」

「You also will end up wearing something like sweater of crap taste with hear mark scattered on it nano!」

It seemed that Hajime-san was thought by his beloved daughter as a person with crap fashion sense. By the way, the black dragon sweater was a loose and oversized sweater with the kanji of “ □ (black dragon) □ ” printed on it, while the heart mark sweater was a sweater with heart mark printed everywhere on it.

The former was for Tio’s use, while the latter was for Yue’s use. The expression of the two of them became something that was hard to be described which they had never shown until that time when they were wearing the sweater. (TN: This referred to a scene in Arifureta Nichijou when Hajime designed clothes for Tio and Yue. The design and their expression were pretty funny)

□Nea-chan is cute nano! There is no way we can allow papa to choose clothes for you nano!□

□Spare me already Myuu.□

Hajime had a faraway gaze. Just where in the world he could be looking at.

Was he looking at the distant past? His previous offense? Or perhaps only the world of unreality……

Carm clapped Hajime’s shoulder kindly. When Hajime turned his gaze toward him, he found a gaze that was displaying understanding and sympathy there. That was the expression of a father who had gotten the pile bunker of heart driven into him by his daughter who was at that age. Surely Carm had also gotten struck down by Shia in the past.

Hajime made a clear smile and nodded. It was a moment when their heart was connected as fellow father.

After that, Hajime and others were dejectedly following behind the female camp that was getting excited choosing clothes.

Midway, Par alone got treated as dressing doll by Shia and Mina, even his scream and begging 「Stop iiit! Please spare me only from thaaat! Bosss, heeelp!」 ended up in vain and he got dressed with female clothing. He looked like his soul had left his body but……

Baltfeld of certain death was supposed to be a tough man, so surely he would be fine.

After that, Hajime and co entered the general store in the fifth floor. There, Carm and others accomplished a revolutionary meeting.

「Bo, bo-bo-bo, boss!」

「What is it Carm? I told you not to be loud.」

A loud voice came from a slight distance away from Carm who was taking wallet into his hand and staring at it fixedly. The surrounding people were also paying attention to him wondering what was going on. Hajime approached him and Carm showed him that.

「This is-, what is this!?」

「It’s wallet.」

「That’s obvious when looking at it! It isn’t that, it’s this!」

Rip rip rip sound resounded.

The wallet opened.

Carm closed the wallet once more. The wallet’s mouth closed without any sound.

Then once more, *rip rip rip*!

「What……the」

Io opened his eyes wide in shock.

「Don’t tell me……this is an artifact?」

Mina took a different wallet with trembling hand. *Rip rip rip-*. *Pop-*. (AN: I just can’t find any good sound word for the wallet closing)

「Just, what in the hell…..」

Young boy Par’s dead and rotten fish eyes recovered their light. *Gulp-*, he swallowed his saliva.

「……」

Rip rip rip-. *Pop-*. *Rip rip rip-*. *Pop-*.*Rip rip rip-*. *Pop-*.*Rip rip rip-*. *Pop-*.*Rip rip rip-*. *Pop-*.

Nea-chan wholeheartedly did *rip rip rip-* and *pop-* without stopping while staying wordless and expressionless.

「……It’s called magic tape.」

「Magic……as I thought, it’s magic.」

Hajime smiled wryly while explaining the manufacturing of magic tape. The expression of Carm and others became even more astonished knowing that it was functioning without any magic at all.

「Unbelievable……here is, here is the crystallization of mankind’s wisdom!」

「You are that astonished with it huh.」

Certainly, Hajime also thought that it was a ground-breaking and genius invention, but hearing someone praising something so common for him until that far caused him to make a really complicated expression.

‘Also, Nea-chan, I wish you will stop opening and closing the wallet expressionlessly and wordlessly like that soon’, Hajime thought. The smiling shop employee was slowly closing the distance.

Hajime was making a slightly twitching expression and took away the wallet that was making ripping sound from Nea’s hand.

「Ah……」

Nea-chan, she showed a sad expression that she had never showed before! It looked like she just had her treasure taken away from her. Her eyes were getting moist with tears. He could imagine her rabbit tears drooping down with dejection.

It caused a terrible guilt even for Hajime.

Unconsciously,

「I, I’ll buy it for you, so do the ripping at home.」

Nea-chan’s expression brightened radiantly in a flash! It was the radiance like the shine of a dazzling sunlight after the dark clouds of a century was cleared away. Her usual cool warrior face couldn’t be found at the slightest.

Her rabbit ears and rabbit tail were whooshing up and down fiercely! So much so the illusion was shook off and they became faintly visible, expressing her intense happiness!

「I, I'll treasure it forever!」

「O, ou. No, don't make a wallet of only a thousand yen as your treasure. Hearing that make me sad for some reason.」

At that timing, quietly young boy Par――not just him, even Carm and others, all of them were wordlessly, but, with extraordinarily sparkling eyes, they were slowly showing him the crunchy sounding wallet.

「……Geez, I'll buy the magic tape itself, so put them back.」

「That is that. This is this, boss.」

It seemed what was important for young boy Par was to receive the discovered crystallization of mankind's wisdom from boss as present.

Hajime was making a difficult expression at the cheap Haurias and purchased matching wallets with five different colors at the cashier. When the female clerk properly received the really crunchy sounding wallets at the counter, her smile also became a genuine smile.

He already came this far, so he also asked for the wallets to be wrapped. He then handed them to the Haurias. The Haurias' expression became really pleased.

Especially, Nea was,

「Ehehe……」

She was already making a soft and loose smile. Not a trace of her warrior expression or chuuni disease could be seen.

「Tha, thank you very much, Onii-chan!」

「@?」

“!?” came out above Hajime’s head. He was so shocked he took a step back.

A beat later Nea noticed her own statement and she corrected herself 「Tha, that was rude-, boss! My deepest gratitude for this!」 in panic.

However, when Hajime also saw Par’s face that was similarly showing a soft and loose smile that was fitting for his age……

「Shia, this is earth-shattering. I, might have found a way to return them to normal.」

「So it’s “happiness” that surpassed their maximum tolerance! I have to quickly tell Emily-chan about this desuu!」

When they first met, the way the children of Hauria called Hajime was basically 「Onii-chan」. Now that word just came out from a Hauria’s plain self, on top of that looking at their current peaceful and warm atmosphere……

The sign for the betterment of their symptoms had come into sight.

Hajime and Shia nodded to each other and wordlessly did a high-five. Emily-chan! It’s a good news for you!

After that, they went to a shopping spree for bunches of magic tape, and then they also got stuck further with bubble wrap (cushion with a lot of small bags filled with air. The thing that went *pop pop*), and it became a great commotion of the crystallization of mankind’s wisdom part 2, the shop’s employee came out……

Midway, at the toy corner, they encountered with the boss and young leader of the “self-employed profession which started with ‘ya’” that Hajime had previously crushed. It seemed they came to buy present for the birthday of the boss’s granddaughter. It looked like the granddaughter was very loved seeing how the boss directly came to buy the present.

When the two of them saw the good look of the Haurias and the way they called Hajime as boss, they raised a loud voice 「As I thought, you are really a mafia boss!」 half in shock and half in understanding.

Furthermore, that yell was broadcasted to the surrounding, and the department store at afternoon fell into an uproar of ‘there are dangerous organizations having meeting here!?’ and so on……

‘No, what kind of yakuza and mafia will have meeting at toy corner’, Hajime made such tsukkomi……

There, the Haurias who heard that the other party was a group with occupation that was similar with them and they had got beaten up by their boss tried to make it clear which one of them was the superior one. They glared while going forward to introduce themselves……

‘Could it be, it’s not a meeting but gang war!?’, the security came running while trembling……

Hajime applied pressure on everyone and retreated from that place for the time being into the rooftop. When they arrived there, a hero show was playing. When the hero introduced himself, the Haurias went ‘That’s insufficient!’ and tried to interrupt. Hajime tied them up……

And, at the end, they could see police car coming. Knowing that they had got reported, they hurriedly escaped from the department store.

Like that at present Hajime and co was in the middle of moving using a subway train.

「Hey, the place we are going at right now, are you guys really okay with it?」

「Of course. We heard it from Shia, isn’t it the “holy land” in this Japan? In the past, we guided boss to the location of the sacred place, the giant tree. And right now boss is generously guiding us to a holy land……I can completely feel destiny at work here.」

「No, there ain’t anything like that at all though.」

Hajime watched at the corner of his sight of Carm who was soaking in deep feeling alone while nodding to himself. At the same time he stared fixedly at Shia who was sitting beside him.

「Eh? What is it, Hajime-san? Akiba is a holy land isn’t it? Otou-sama (father-in-law) and Okaa-sama (mother-in-law), and also the people in their workplace also said that you know?」

「……That’s because the people you asked are all people in that business.」

Yes, the holy land of the people who were completely immersed in the subculture, Akibahara, or Akiba for short. That place was exactly the place where they were heading at because of the request of the Haurias.

Incidentally, today was the day of –car-free day. That place was surely bustling right now. For him to bring people with real animal ears there although they were hidden with illusion artifact……

How terrifying. Hajime shivered, at the same time he resolved himself like a hero that was going to face the final battle. Everything was for the sake of giving “hospitality” to the important family of his rabbit eared wife.

Putting that aside,

「Oi, Par, Nea. Sit properly. Are you two kids……no, you two are kids huh.」

Even though there wasn’t anything particularly interesting to see while riding subway train, the kid duo Par & Nea were on their knees on the chair while looking outside the window. When Myuu rebuked them with 「Par-kun and Nea-chan too, mind your manner nano」, they reseated themselves looking somewhat embarrassed.

「Sorry boss, milady. I never thought that there would be a place that is like a great labyrinth in this side too.」

「There are a lot of tunnels and doors outside. Boss, just how large the scale of this place is?」

「Labyrinth you say……no, well, certainly, this is an underground space that is like labyrinth so it I guess it can be called as earth’s underground labyrinth……as for the scale」

For the time being, Hajime put out the track map of the subway train in his smartphone and showed it. Seeing the vastness of the scale, not only Par and Nea, all the Haurias opened their eyes wide in surprise.

「This is astonishing. What about the depth? Is it at the level of the abyss where boss fell into?」

「No, as expected there isn’t anything like that. Till the end this is only an underground route for travelling long range. Even though the extent is vast, the depth doesn’t reach the level of the abyss at all. Although I said that, it seems there is also space under the city that the general public doesn’t know about. It’s unknown how large the scale of it in reality though……」

「Hou……」

Carm’s eyes were shining mysteriously hearing Hajime’s explanation.

Hajime returned a suspicious gaze.

「You, you aren’t thinking anything like this might be a good base candidate right?」

「! As expected from boss! What a keen insight!」

「Stop it, seriously stop. Something like Hauria infesting the underground is seriously scary to imagine. It will completely become an urban legend.」

「Is that so? Really unfortunate.」

That was what Carm said, but his eyes were still shining mysteriously. Somehow, even Par and others gave the

impression like 「Ora, that sounds really exciting yeah!」. They were sending gaze outside the window with fiery eyes.

Perhaps the day was near that the underground in the city center got occupied by the rabbits……

While that was happening, the train arrived at the station of Akiba. They got down on the platform and the Haurias were looking with eyes shining with curiosity toward the back of the leaving train……or rather, to the underground space that was continuing deeper. Hajime and others dragged them away and got out to the surface.

Even though it was a familiar sight for Hajime, for the Haurias there were a lot of things that knocked them with surprise as expected, so they were looking around restlessly at the surrounding just like country bumpkins.

「I thought it would be a quieter place because it's called as a holy land, but, to think that there will be this many pilgrims, it's shocking.」

Hajime's face turned complicated at Carm's statement and he averted his gaze.

They advanced smoothly through the crowd with assassin-like movement and visited the shops that were managed by acquaintances and Hajime often visited. They were people who were friend with his father Shuu, so they were also acquaintance with Hajime since he was a child.

They didn't go to shops that expanded countrywide and visited by a lot of people was of course as countermeasure for Hauria.

As expected, as soon as they entered the shop, the Haurias saw the promotional video for the animes that were running

this season, and then they began to copy the speech and posing from the video.

The people inside the shop was shocked, but as soon as they saw that Carm and others were foreigners, their eyes turned warm and ignored them. As expected from the pilgrims of the holy land.

It was a shop where customer could do trial read of a volume for a lot of books, so the Haurias split up and fished for books with a serious expression as though they were going to a final battle.

「If possible, I want to find the bible for us Hauria here.」

「So the culprit is Vanessa huh.」

「Her affinity with my family is extraordinary after all~」

Hajime and Shia instantly guessed. Hauria wanted to come to Akiba seemed to be for searching for bible.

「Boss! Boss! Please look over here!」

「Wha, what does boss think!?」

「Hah? ……」

The voices of Mina and Nea came from deeper inside the shop. Hajime who turned his gaze there witnessed it.

What was there was a figurine display.

And then, there were the two rabbit eared girls who were mimicking the sexy pose of heroines who showed a lot of skin. Yes, they arbitrarily took off their artifact and displayed their rabbit ears!

‘The heroine we are copying has rabbit ears so it’s fine!’ Perhaps that was what they thought. Mina made a pose that was emphasizing her breasts, while Nea was taking a pose on all fours while giving an upward gaze. Their eyes were sparkling with anticipation as though saying 「Praise me, praise me!」 at Hajime.

At that time, several of the customers inside the shop had their gauge of ignoring power decreased until zero instantly and had blood spurted out. Also several people clapped their hands together and prayed. It seemed they were thanking the god and the girls because they were able to look for free at the sexy pose of undisputedly beautiful woman and girl.

Then, regarding Hajime who was asked for comment,

「Sorry. Shia had also done that. And, Shia is better.」

「What are you saying at outsideee!」

Hajime asserted that his wife was better with a serious face. Nea hung her head down in disappointment, while Mina fell on all fours and hit the floor repeatedly while cursing 「Shiiit, shiiit-」.

Hajime who mercilessly cut down rabbit-eared beautiful girl and woman. While the customers were sending him a shuddering expression, Hajime immediately put the artifact back on them.

A while after that, it seemed Carm and others had discovered manga that was worthy to be their bible seeing from their pleased face. Hajime and others led them to walk around the city casually.

The Haurias who had obtained the crystallization of mankind’s wisdom and the bible seemed to be very satisfied already. They were in a state of complete obedience. It looked like they were purely enjoying the atmosphere of another world.

「Papa. I’m hungry nano.」

「Yeah, I guess it’s a good time to go there now.」

Myuu’s eyebrows arched into a troubled look. One hand was rubbing her stomach, it looked like she had been enduring for quite long. Today was the day they were giving hospitality to Hauria, so they were prioritizing Carm and others. However, it seemed even that would reach the limit soon. *Kukyu~*, a cute empty stomach sound was starting to sound.

Hajime confirmed the time and agreed while carrying up Myuu.

So that they wouldn’t bother other customers in Sonobe family’s western restaurant Wisteria, they planned to go there when it was quite late, but it would soon be a good time.

By the way, the female camp became absorbed with choosing clothes at the department store, and while Par became a noble sacrifice, Hajime made a call to Wisteria. Yuuka who seemed to have become a proper helper there took the call. When she heard that there was a group of Hauria here, it felt like her voice was shaking a bit but……

Also she was huffy saying 「Say something like that sooner! I cannot give a proper welcome like this!」. But, as expected Wisteria was the oasis of his heart at the point how the possibility of Yuka refusing was zero from the start.

The Haurias were obedient, and soon it would be time to go to a safe area. Hajime’s expression also loosened thinking that. Yes, it loosened up. His vigilance to not let any danger approach was slightly loosening!

「What the! There is a fellow family here in another world!?」

When Hajime went ‘Eh?’ and his gaze chased the figure of the Haurias, there was a rabbit-eared maid there calling at customer with energetic voice. She was a resident of this holy land.

「No, chief! Please look closely! That girl……she is a fake!」

Par-kun pointed out with a pointing finger like a detective saying 「You are the culprit!」.

Io’s expression looked uncomprehending.

「Although it’s a fake, why is she wearing animal ears by her own initiative……」

「Iorni――cough-. Io, I’ve heard about this. In this world here, it seems “animal ears are status”. They are raising their status by compensating what they don’t have with that kind of fake.」

「The discrimination toward beastman has lowered considerably even at Tortus but……to think that there are humans who are seeking to put on animal ears by their own, it make me feel strange.」

Mina and Nea stared hard at the rabbit-eared maid with great interest.

「You guys, I think you understand already but――」

Animal-eared people didn’t exist in earth. And then, a part of Japanese people greatly loved animal ear. That’s why, absolutely don’t take off your artifact……

Hajime was about to explain the situation once more like that, but before he could, the rabbit-eared maid who noticed the passionate gaze on her approached them by her own.

「Oo! What a good looking group of people pyon! Do you understand Japanese languagee? If you please, won’t you come to our shop pyon♪」

「Boss, she put an unfamiliar strange word at the end of her sentence. It seems that the translation artifact you lend me is broken.」

‘That’s not it you know, she is just acting that kind of character you know……’

Hajime explained to them about the adding of ‘pyon’ at the end of sentence. A crack appeared on the smile of the rabbit-eared maid who got hit with the calm tsukkomi, but it seemed she was a rabbit-eared maid who was a hard worker and had guts. She desperately smoothed over her smile!

Hajime was explaining, however, Io and Par were tilting their head.

「Character acting, is it……. However, boss, why is it ‘pyon’?」

「Yes, I also cannot understand that point. Rabbit and ‘pyon’, just what is the relation between those two?」

「H, hmm. Err see, you know, rabbit give the impression of pyon pyon with their hopping right?」

「Certainly that's true but, in the end that is the sound that express the time when rabbit is hopping correct? Then why is it used like it's a rabbit's voice? At the very least we have never seen any clan who add 'pyon' at the end of their sentence.」

「Even sir Inaba too, he would cry 'kyu!', but he never said any 'pyon'.」

「……」

Hajime was at a loss. 'These guys, why are they serious at only this kind of thing dammit', he thought with twitching cheeks. His gaze naturally moved to the rabbit-eared maid in a search for resolution but……

The rabbit-eared maid, she jerked with the smile still fixed on her face. Par launched pursuing attack.

「Onee-san. Please teach us. Why did you use 'pyon'? Just what kind of obsession you have with the word 'pyon'?」

In respond to the serious and earnest question from the handsome boy, the rabbit-eared maid……

「……That, I'm sorry for saying 'pyon'. I won't say it anymore, so please don't bully me.」

A smiling face. The smiling face didn't crumble at all. However, tears were gathering at the corner of her eyes while she was smiling!

The rabbit-eared maid heroically dealt with the troublesome foreigners so that the evaluation of her shop wouldn't drop. Surely, her rabbit-eared maid café was an amazing café without a doubt. After all it had this kind of rabbit-eared maid as a mirror to reflect it.

「Oi, you guys cut it out already. It’s fine that there are various rabbit ears out there. It’s fine to say ‘pyon’, no problem at all! That is also the rabbit ears of Japan!」

A mediation from Hajime-san. The people at the surrounding who were watching raised admiring voices 「Oo」 for some reason. Shia already took away Myuu from Hajime and pretended to be stranger.

‘Ah, Myuu-chan, you want to eat candy? I’ll eaaat~♪’

The rabbit-eared maid looked at Hajime as though he was a messiah, however, the Haurias were merciless! Because, they were deeply interested with the rabbit-eared person of another world who was mimicking them! They attacked further purely, without any malice, simply because of their pride!

Mia’s face frowned at the rabbit-eared maid’s rabbit ears while opening her mouth.

「Understood. Then, it’s fine already in regard to the ‘pyon’. But, I want to ask you. Is it fine that you are wearing such rabbit ears?」

「I, it’s fine. I think there is no problem.」

As expected from the rabbit-eared maid. Against Mina’s question, she was doing a skillful thing of despairing with a smile because the torture was still continuing while replying with a template answer. As expected, the girl was a capable maid.

「There is no way it’s not a problem!」

「Hii!?」

The one who raised an angry voice was Nea who was raising her eyebrow. The oppressive aura that was too heavy to be coming for a girl in hear early teen caused the rabbit-eared maid to jump *pyon*. She didn’t express it with words, but it seemed she embodied it with her act.

Nea was quietly approaching the rabbit-eared maid who was trembling fiercely like a rabbit.

「You, are you looking down on rabbit ears? Or perhaps, are you actually an idiot?」

「Tha, tha-tha, that’s not my intention……」

「I see. In other words, you simply don’t know what is a real rabbit ears, is that it?」

Nea-chan sighed ‘fuh’ and smiled. Beside her, Mina and Par sighed ‘fuh’ similarly. Carm and Io also stood in sideway posture and sighed ‘fuh’.

「Hajime-san! I’m getting an acutely bad premonition desuu!」

「I know! Oi, you guys! Don’t――」

‘Take off the artifact’, there was no doubt Hajime wanted to say that.

Before he could, Carm took a small pipe from his pocket and threw it on the ground, causing a thick smokescreen to rise. Because of that, screams came from the surrounding and Hajime’s words didn’t reach.

「Observe carefully! O comrade of heart who loves rabbit ears even without rabbit ears of your own! This is the real rabbit ears!」

The smokescreen was blown away. Inside, there were five rabbit eared people who were posing like five men rangers.

Twitch twitch twitch. Flap flap. Myo~n, myon♪

The rabbit ears that were moving as though to reflect their emotion.

The rabbit-eared maid swept away her mental state that almost fell into panic due to the smoke screen and spoke with a trembling voice.

「I, it’s like the real thing pyon……」

It was the real thing. Also, the ‘pyon’ was returning.

「It’s fine to touch it you know?」

Nea walked forward. It seemed she was specially allowed to touch the ears because she was a comrade of heart in another world.

The rabbit ears were adorably waving up and down as though to say ‘Come come♪’, The rabbit-eared maid approached Nea with an unsteady footstep as though she was sleepwalking, and then her hand reached nervously toward the rabbit ears.

「Flu, fluffyyy. Soooft~. Ya~ahn, it’s waaarm~」

The rabbit-eared maid instantly lost her backbone. Both her hands moved around to enjoy the fluffiness, and at the end she rubbed her cheeks on the ear and her expression became a look of ecstasy that was a bit dangerous to be exposed in public.

Perhaps it was a bit ticklish getting the ears rubbed like that because Nea twisted her body while letting out 「Nh」. The eyes of the surrounding were starting to emit suspicious light seeing her figure. Furthermore, ‘what what, it’s rabbit eared beautiful girl! Ah, there is also middle-aged man!?’ Like that people were gathering one after another.

「Aa~, Hajime-san, what should we do?」

「Those guys……」

Hajime looked like he got a headache.

There was no way anyone would believe that there could be a genuine animal-eared girl, so naturally they would think that it was a very well made imitation. And so, there was really no need to worry about the concealment.

‘Anyway, let’s punch their stomach and drag them away……’, Hajime decided. It was at that timing,

「Excuse me! Please let me take picture!」

「Please look over here!」

「Can you make a pose!?」

The people who were readying their camera pleaded Nea and others to be allowed to take picture. These were trained people who couldn’t be found on other city looking at how they wouldn’t suddenly take picture without permission.

And then, the trained rabbits couldn’t reject them normally.

Mina brushed up her rabbit ears coolly while saying.

「Fuh. It’s not like I don’t understand the feeling of wanting to leave behind memorial for the rabbit ears of this me, but

please refrain from that. Even if it’s just a picture, boss is the only one allowed to put me at his side!

Mina-san made a wink with all her might that she sent toward her boss. Everyone’s gaze moved toward the Japanese youth who seemed to be the person in the heart of this foreign rabbit-eared beauty. Cloudy gazes that looked like they were filled with mud stabbed Hajime simultaneously.

E, err, then. Won’t you come home together with me pyon?

It seemed the rabbit-eared maid had completely became Nea’s prisoner. She was still rubbing and enjoying the fluffiness in a posture that was almost completely hugging.

Fuh. Although you are a comrade, nh, that cannot be allowed. Be thankful, uh, for being able to touch my rabbit ears already, au, wait a second you are touching too much! Let go already!

Just a bit more! Only a little bit more!

This is enough! After all my body and my heart, all of them are only for boss!

The surrounding’s gaze became severe. A girl whose age was in her early teen no matter how they looked said that she was devoting her body and her heart to a Japanese youth while sending said youth a mushy gaze.

Among them there were also people who were sending Hajime a gaze with eyes that were cloudy with jealousy like a black hole. Also, there were also people talking to their smartphone. One could see it from their expression. It was written on their face that they were making report.

「Fuh. That’s how it is. My everything belong to boss.」

「We cannot allow this body to become spectacle without boss’s permission.」

「Because boss is the only one who can do as he please to us.」

Par, Io, and Carm prattled in order with a pleased look.

The surrounding people were making shuddering expression. The beautiful woman was understandable. The beautiful little girl, it was out but still understandable. However, to even lay his hand on a handsome boy, handsome man, and also a dandy gentleman……

「Tha, that man, just how high level is he-」

「That ain’t at the level of having wide strike zone anymore! Monster!」

Certainly, he was the monster of abyss.

That monster of abyss-sama was expressionless.

It was to the degree that everyone there reflexively jerked and stiffened.

Hajime suddenly stroked his face with one hand.

What appeared was a smile as though the expressionless look just now was a lie.

Everyone jerked.

「It’s fine.」

The Haurias replied 「Eh?」 at Hajime’s words. Hajime continued still with a smile.

「It’s fine to take pictures. Take them without any reservation.」

「E, err, boss?」

Carm was trickling cold sweat while asking back, but Hajime kept smiling widely.

「Rabbit-eared maid-san.」

「Hy, hyes!」

「I give you permission.」

「Pe, permission?」

「You want to bring that girl back home, I give you permission.」

「Bo, boss!?」

The rabbit ears of Nea who was sold away stood straight and shivers ran through it, but Hajime looked around him and declared smilingly.

「Everyone, these people love cosplay and Japan’s subculture. Even now they are completely submerging themselves into the character that they remembered from somewhere. In reality they wanted their photo to be taken by everyone so much they can’t help it. Especially, the woman over there seem to want a boyfriend. As for the males, they are willing to do one night stand you know? Please, do with them as you like without holding back.」

「「「BOSSS!?」」」

The boss’s conclusion toward the Haurias who violated the boss’s command and displayed their rabbit ears, and also dealt serious damage to the boss’s social status.

The boss left all them in the hand of the holy land’s warriors.

The people themselves said that it would be okay if there was the boss’s permission. Now that boss had given permission. There was nothing in the way anymore!

War cry resounded through the holy land.

People who stretched their hand toward the rabbit ears, people who pushed their camera button like mad, the rabbit-eared maid who was trying to bring Nea home……

「Nuoh, wait-, don’t push! My rabbit ears are boss’s-
——Ah!?」

「Sto, stoop! Don’t get neaaaar!」

「Bo, boss! Somehow these guys seem dangerous! Heeelp!」

Carm, Io, and Par were buried under people, especially by women.

Nea and Mina were also losing strength in their waist from the rough breathing and bloodshot eyes of the warriors.

「Now then, Myuu, Shia. You two must be hungry. Let’s go eat delicious meal in Wisteria.」

「Pa, papa……is it okay nano? Ah, Nea-chan is carried away by the rabbit-eared maid-san nano!」

「That, Hajime-san. Par-kun is in charis○ guard pose against the Onee-sans dangerous look though……he is looking like Emily-chan like that though.」

□No problem.□

Hajime was walking toward the station with a calm expression like a Buddha. Shia and Myuu were looking at each other seeing their family and friends in a pinch but……

‘Well, the world’s toughest rabbit clan is going to be fine I guess’, they rethought back and followed Hajime.

□Kuh, what pressure-. In addition their physical ability is also awfully high! You guys! Disperse! Secure your safety using pattern β!□

□□□□YES SIR!□□□□

Such order and angry yell resounded from behind. In addition there was also the command of the warriors □The targets are running away! Go around and cut their path!□. Amidst the yells, Hajime and the others departed to the safe area——Wisteria and continued on their way without looking back at all.

–

–

–

–

–

Like that, they safely escaped from the holy land and when Wisteria came into view.

□Oh maan, as expected from the holy land. It’s filled to the brim with nothing but people that cannot be underestimated.□

「That rabbit-eared maid, her run was absurdly fast. Even though she was carrying me, no one could catch up with her. She made a sharp turn at the corner without any loss in speed, and she showed super reflex while shouting something like ‘god speed im○lse!’. The rabbit of another world is also amazing.」 (TN: Reference from eyeshield 21)

Carm and others were unharmed, on top of that theywere speaking while looking strangely delighted. The chase that occurred in holy land didn’t become punishment, far from that, it seemed that it ended in a result that satisfied them instead.

「Is that so.」

「Hajime-san……that’s, I’m sorry about my family.」

「Papa……are you okay? Want to eat candy?」

‘Even though the sky is this blue……’, Hajime looked up to the sky with a faraway look that seemed to want to say that. Shia and Myuu turned a considerate expression at him.

Hajime replied 「It’s fine. I’m used with Tio already at this feeling of the opponent getting satisfied no matter what happen like this」 with a strangely enlightened expression while his hand reached at the doorknob of Wisteria.

No matter what happened, his willpower would surely recover after fortifying himself with a meal. He opened the door while thinking so.

Clang clang, a pleasant sound was tinkling into the ear while Hajime entered inside the restaurant. What he found was,

「Ah」

□Nn□

□Ahaha……□

They looked at each other’s face.

Kousuke & Emily group, Yue & Tio group, and then Kaori & Shizuku group.

It seemed that everyone had the same thinking.

Sonobe family’s western restaurant was everyone’s oasis of heart.

–

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I was unable to finish writing, so I split the chapter.

I’m sorry but, please accompany the Hauria chapters for one more week.

Regarding the joke material.

- The black dragon sweater and heart mark sweater are reimported from the aforementioned “Nichijou” (Chapter 10) lol

I burst out laughing at the seriously indescribable expression of Tio and Yue there lol

- God speed im○lse

It’s from American Football manga that has a main character with number 21 on his back and wearing a certain eyeshield. Amazing reflexes. By the way, the rabbit-eared maid is also able to use Devil ○t Ghost.

- This one is advertisement.

At July, Arifureta spin-off——Zero volume 2 and comic volume 1 will be published.

The cover illustration of Zero volume 2 is that person from the undersea ruin. Yes, the person who carelessly throw out Hajime and co into the sea.

The root of the undersea ruin and the newly appearing liberator, what kind of person she is……

Please get the book no matter what and check it yourself. Other than that, I also scattered various things that will connect to the present time, so I will be happy if you readers can enjoy that part too.

The right image is the cover of comic volume 1. In Gardo comic the last scene of little Miledy that is also included in this volume is being published for free, so please take a look if you are interested.

Like usual, there will also be special side story. I will report it as soon as the details are finalized.

Best regards!

Arifureta Chapter 323

Arifureta After III　The Hauria Came!　Third

–

Hajime smiled wryly while entering inside the restaurant with Myuu in his arms. Behind him, Shia also followed inside with the same expression.

「Oo! You guys! So all of you also came here!」

Carm who entered after them opened his eyes wide in surprise seeing his whole family gathered there and his face broke into smile.

In respond to that, one of the Haurias who was assigned to Kousuke & Emily team, “Creeping Decapitation” Jorgandr……——perhaps his name right now should have become something with even more gorgeous feel, so for the time being he was Jor——rushed toward Carm smilingly.

And then, without stopping,

「Die, chief!」

A sharp slash from creeping posture was unleashed! It seemed he was hiding a kodachi on his back.

「Naïve!」

Carm splendidly blocked it using the short sword stored in the holster on his waist.

Kin- High-pitched sound from the clash of metal resounded.

Furthermore,

「Go to hell-, Baltfeldt!」

「Hah! Is that all? Anikiii!」

A teenage Hauria around fifteen years old threw knives. The four knives cut through the air. Par intercepted them with quick draw of sling shot. He splendidly shot down all four knives with four simultaneous shots. It was truly a superhuman feat.

Right after that, Nea and Mina, and then Io too had fierce attacks from their comrades rushing at them. The three of them snorted while handling the attacks.

「WAIIIIITTTTT! Just what are you all doing in someone's restaurant!」

In the place of Hajime and others who were dumbfounded with opened mouth, the one who raised an angry yell was this western restaurant Wisteria's poster girl——Sonobe Yuuka.

She came out from deeper inside the restaurant wearing crimson apron, scarf, and limp hat. She stood with her hands on her waist and her eyebrows bristling on end. She looked pretty angry.

Jor who fired the first shot answered while locking sword with Carm.

□Chief who is in a good mood after being shown around by boss directly is irritating!□

□Are you a kid!□

Yuuka’s sharp tsukkomi. In respond to that the other Haurias who were launching surprise attack argued vehemently.

□However, Yuuka-dono! Did you see Baltfeld’s face!? That self-satisfied face! I cannot hold back!□

□That’s right! Besides, please look! That bag Neastadtrm is holding so carefully! Neastadtrm won’t make that kind of face if htat is something she bought by herself!□

□Minasteria too! In other words, those are undoubtedly a present from boss![

Correct.

□So what!?□

Yuuka who witnessed bloodshed suddenly occurred inside her restaurant raised her voice with extreme anger.

The criminals, no, all the Haurias inside the restaurant who were brimming with battle spirit declared□There is only one answer!□ in one voice.

□□□□We will take it away even if we have to kill them!□□□□

□DO IT OUTSIDEEEEEE!□

Vegetable sticks materialized from both of Yuuka’s hands. The celery and radish and cucumber and carror that were held between her fingers flew in the air with impossible trajectories like jet coaster.

The vegetable sticks that were thrown using throwing technique that could be called as godlike feat without any exaggeration flew into the mouths of Jor and others who were getting highly spirited and Carm and co who were preparing to meet the attack with a battle cry. It was direct hits to the throats.

‘Hogeeh!?’ Carm and others raised a strange scream and fell on their knees. Yuuka sent them a brief glance before taking out playing cards from her pocket and spread them out in fan shape like a magician.

Like that, she swung them in a horizontal sweep. All the Haurias who were about to advance in order to steal the “presents from boss” from Carm and co got the tip of their rabbit ears *slice-* cut off.

□□□□□……□□□□□

Rabbit furs fluttered midair inside the restaurant.

All the Haurias stiffened with a snap as though they had been frozen. Next *gigigi-* they moved their head toward Yuuka with a stiff movement……

Yuuka-san beautifully caught the playing cards that were making U-turn and returned to her. She then spoke with a grin.

□Quarreling is not allowed inside our restaurant. Will you all act as docile customers, or will you get thrown out with lopped off rabbit ears……choose which one that you like.□

The Haurias folded their rabbit ears flat on their head with a plop and slowly returned to their seats. They then sat down on their chair with straight posture like a new graduate

coming for a job interview and silently stared at the cup before them.

Yuuka-san nodded in satisfaction. And then, her face turned toward Hajime in a snap. Hajime quickly averted his gaze.

Carm and others who somehow finished eating the vegetable sticks even while choking opened their eyes wide. They seemed to want to say「Boss averted his gaze!?」.

「Nagumo. How long you are going to stand at the door. How about coming in right away?」

「Yes ma’am. Excuse me.」

「「「「「!!!!?」」」」」

Even more shock ran through the Haurias.

Respectful gazes were sent to Yuuka who was narrowing her eyes suspiciously at Hajime’s behavior. But, before Yuuka could notice it,

「Yuuka~? The cooking is done so please bring it ou~t.」

「Rogee~r!」

From inside, Yuuka’s mother——Yuuri’s voice resounded. Yuuka turned around to respond to that.

Hajime ran his gazes at Carm and others.

「You guys, sit wherever you like. Do that while offering your gratitude to Sonobe Yuuka who someday will become the owner of this Wisteria, the “holy land of us returnees”.」

「!? A, as boss command! You lot! I want to exchange information! Hauria clan is to gather over here! Don’t you

dare do anything coarse to Yuuka-sama for the second time!

□□□YES SIR!□□□

Hajime glanced at Carm and others who quietly gathered at the seats deeper inside before sitting beside Yue. Yue looked at Hajime as though she was looking at a slightly difficult person.

□……Yuuka-“sama”?□

□She settled down things right away from the start after all. I’m thinking to leave the disciplining——cough-, looking after the Haurias to her at least in lunch time.□

□Hajime-kun……don’t play stupid. You are planning to push everything to Yuuka-chan right?□

□Kaori, this too is within the category of serving customers. In other words, it’s Sonobe’s job.□

□Goshujin-sama. Do thy know that it looks like Yuuka were working hard to contact the regular customers because we suddenly made the reservation?□

‘That’s why, be kind to her’, Tio implicitly said. Shizuku, Kousuke, and even Shia nodded in agreement.

By the way Emily-chan, right after Yuuka shut up the Haurias, she sent a gaze that was filled with respect somewhere inside toward the kitchen while saying□Yuuka, oneesama……□.

Hajime nodded deeply at such gazes from Tio and others.

「It’s fine, there is no problem. In the end, that girl is a magical girl filled with love and dream and hope――」

「Just who are you calling magical girl」

Gon-, a large plate of potato salad was placed on Hajime’s head.

When Hajime looked across his shoulder while skillfully keeping the potato salad staying on his head, Yuuka-sama was there giving him a super reproachful look at him. She had three plates placed on one arm, while her other hand was placed on her waist.

Hajime brought down the potato salad while spreading open the menu. And then without any delay, he pointed at the picture of fluffy and melty egg decorated with this restaurant’s original ketchup and spoke his order with an extremely serious face.

「Give me a special omelet rice.」

「I’ll bring you food scraps if you don’t fix that screwing around attitude.」

「How can a restaurant employee say something like that.」

Yuuka let out a deep sigh「Haa」 at Hajime’s playful attitude while placing the plates safely. And then, her displeased expression toward Hajime changed completely into a soft smile and she asked「Have you decided what to order?」 at Shia and Myuu.

「Please give Myuu the special omelet rice! Nano!」

「Ah, I’ll also have the special omelet rice!」

After Myuu and Shia ordered energetically, even Carm and others all ordered the omelet rice perhaps because it was what Hajime ordered.

「Ahaha, today the omelet rice is greatly popular huh.」

Yuuka wrote the order on the sales slip while orally telling the head chef who was her father――Hiroshi the order.

Hajime's attitude returned back and he smiled while speaking to such Yuuka.

「My bad, making reservation so suddenly like this. I didn't think that everyone will come here.」

「Exactly right. Next time I have to give some kind of service to the regulars here in exchange.」

There were a lot of neighbors who became regulars here since a long time ago, so Yuuka knew their phone number. The number of customers who came late after two o'clock in the afternoon was limited, but even so it was painful to contact and told them that the restaurant would be used by a group that was quite large in number.

For the regulars who Yuuka didn't know how to contact, she prepared a bit of her handmade sweets for them, even so as expected it was painful to make them go back after especially coming here.

Of course, a group suddenly visiting a restaurant which caused the regulars to be unable to come was something that happened to restaurant everywhere. Customer who would complaint about that was just a selfish claimer.

In fact, at this time it seemed there wasn't a single regular who was feeling dissatisfaction. Rather, their heart was

feeling warm that Yuuka had expressly contacted them to let them knew or prepared sweets for them.

This consideration that normally wouldn’t be done was surely the reason why Wisteria was loved.

「But, you really saved us. After all I cannot think of any other place except yours where it’s possible to eat delicious food without feeling any mental fatigue.」

「……E, even if you praise me Nagumo, I’m not going to give you any service.」

Yuuka said coldly, but her fingers were playing with her scarf. Although she was averting her gaze, her lips kept twitching as though they would break into a grin.

The Haurias were staring with deep interest!

「No, I didn’t say that looking for anything. Rather, I need to pay you back somehow in return for the bother.」

「……It’s not like I’m thinking that it’s a bother or anything. I’m happy that you come to our place……ah, just now I don’t mean that I’m happy Nagumo is coming! Don’t misunderstand it!」

「No, I’m not but……. Well, anyway, I owe you one. Tell me if there is something that you want. If you like, I’ll even work part-time here for free when it’s busy y’know?」

「Eh? Nagumo working part-time here? Nagumo……working part-time…….here……」

In other words, Hajime was saying that he would wear Wisteria’s uniform and worked together with her? If that happened, the two of them would be in charge of serving

the customers. The two of them would team up to take order, set the table, sometimes they would almost crash on each other and smiled in embarrassment to each other because of that, they would converse with only their gaze about who would be in charge of the cash register……

And then, finally when they closed, inside the quiet restaurant the two of them would sit side-by-side and sighed in relieve. No words would be said with only the sound of the clock’s hand resounding clearly.

Yuuka would brew coffee while feeling strangely embarrassed. Hajime would took the cup and took a sip, then he would only say a word「Delicious」 and thanked her with a smile.

They would spend a quite time once more then.

That time felt unbelievably happy……

「……Perhaps, this is the picture of the future of the two of them, Yuuka thought, the end.」

Storyteller Yue concluded with a triumphant look. It really looked like she wanted to say「How’s that? Right in the mark right?」.

Everyone’s gazes that were directed to Yue who suddenly started talking moved toward Yuuka.

That Yuuka was,

「I, I-I, I’m not thinking thaaat!」

It seemed she wasn’t thinking it.

Though her face was bright red and she was taking a step back while trembling all over. She looked absurdly shaken, but! If she said she wasn’t thinking it then she wasn’t thinking it!

A hand clapped Yuuka’s shoulder. She went *Twiiitch!* while hesitantly looking back. There, that person was standing.

「Yuuka-chan. How about we “talk” for a bit?」

It was Kaori-san who wasn’t smiling even though she was smiling. There was something that was faintly visible behind her.

「No no no, I’m really not thinking of anything! It’s just Yue-san saying whatever she like!」

「Yuuka-chan! Why is it only the two of you!? If it’s a talk of the future, I think it’s fine even if it’s all of us working in Wisteria!」

「You aren’t listening to me!? Or rather, really please stop that talk of everyone working here! It will be chaos!」

「By that you mean, you want to monopolize Hajime-kun for yourself isn’t it! You want to manage this restaurant with just the two of you forever isn’t it!」

「Words play catch! It’s important!」

Kaori-san shook Yuuka back and forth. Shizuku went ‘good grief’ while moving to tear off Kaori from Yuuka. Shia and Tio sent a glance to that and,

「Come to think of it, when everyone evacuated to our house before this too, Yuuka-san, she was really absentminded like

‘pohe~’ when Yue-san gave her a tour of Hajime-san’s room.

Right, after that her face suddenly became red and she slapped her own face. She didst that while making tsukkomi alone Are you idiot me!..

How cute desuuu

That art truly cute~

They sneakily talked about such thing.

There, Emily who was the most uninformed about the relationship between Hajime and co asked a question reservedly.

Say~. Yuuka-oneesama, she isn’t demon king-sama’s wife?

I, I’m not. Or rather, what’s with that “onee-sama”? Something like that is Shizuku right?

Yuuka who somehow escaped from Kaori’s demonic clutch was breathing hard ‘zee zee’ while saying that. Emily fidgeted looking a bit embarrassed.

That, Onee-sama’s figure when shutting up everyone of Hauria just now, I thought, you look really cool……is it, no good?

The ongoing battle that Emily threw herself into——the war front of chuunibyou treatment versus Hauria.

At present she was unable to even make them shut up, far from that she only got toyed around as though they doting on her like one would treat a cat. It seemed that from the

view point of such Emily, it was no one but Yuuka who was “Onee-sama”.

Emily spoke her wish with an upward gaze, however, Yuuka was,

「No good.」

She completely and thoroughly rejected her. The reason was, if she was treated like a big sister by Emily who would become a member of Hauria, it felt like even her would also get considered as a member of Hauria. It would be unbearable if a subspecies of soul sister got created with Emily as the impetus. That was her reason.

「It’s fine if you just normally call me while adding ‘-san’ or ‘senpai’. Or rather, Emily has also skipped grades right? Then I’ll be happy if we become equal friend without taking our age into consideration.」

「Friend……」

There Emily suddenly noticed.

‘Come to think of it, is there anyone around me who I can call “friend”?’, she thought. Naturally she had none in the university. She skipped grades so she also had no acquaintance in the same age with her. She was close with the people of Britain national security bureau, but they were a bit different from friend. Kousuke and the Hauria too were of course different.

Vanessa was……that thing was just a SOUSAKAN AGENT. She was in the Hauria category. She often wore rabbit ears hair band anyway.

After that, she had substitute big sisters and big brothers……

‘Eh? I, have too few friend? No, it’s pretention saying that. I, don’t have friend……

「Yep-, friend is fine! Yuuka-san-, nope, Yuuka! Be my friend!」

「Yo, you are really enthusiastic. Of course, it’s fine though……」

Emily-chan’s eyes brightened. She rushed toward Yuuka and tightly grasped both of Yuuka’s hands with her hands and did a little dance while singing 「Friend♪ Friend♪」. Kousuke cried seeing that.

There, a certain rabbit-eared lady who was actually watching the exchange between Yuuka and Hajime with fixed stare of hollow eyes since some time ago slowly approached Yuuka.

「Please become my friend too.」

The person strongly grasped Yuuka’s shoulder and requested with a strongly spirited voice. The sudden appearance of the rabbit-eared lady clad in dreadful aura——Mina caused Yuuka to say 「Ye, yes?」 while tilting her head with twitching expression.

「I, I don’t mind but……why, so suddenly?」

Shia who seemed to have guessed the answer of that question held her head looking like she was at her wits’ end while Rana was covering her eyes with one hand.

Mina answered Yuuka’s question with eyes that were starting to get slightly bloodshot.

□Because I caught the smell of a first class mistress from you! If I’m together with you, perhaps I will be able to casually position myself as boss’s mistress!□

□I take my words back! No way I will be your friend!□

□Please! Let’s become mistress friend!□

□What is mistress friend!? I don’t understand! Or rather your face is close! And scary!□

□I get it! Then let me call you master! One day you will be a great mistress! My sharp instinct is telling me so! Let me study under you from now on!□

□Stooop! I’m not a mistress! I won’t become one! Let go of my haaand! Also your face is too close!□

□Master! I won’t let go!□

□Don’t call me master!□

‘Heeelp!’, when Yuuka who became teary eyed from Mina’s bloodcurling state asked for help, right after that Shia’s fist impacted Mina’s head. Rana caught Mina whose eyes rolled back until the white of her eyes showed. She then bound her and laid her down on the sofa.

Even the Haurias were giving off conflicted atmosphere at the amazingly desperate state of Mina. Inside the silent restaurant, the voice of Yuuka □It was scaryyy□ who was half crying and the voice of Shia and Emily who were consoling her were echoing overly clearly.

It was at that timing a bright voice resounded to change the atmosphere.

「Thank you for waiting~. It’s the special omelet rice.」

「Hahaha-, it’s always lively around you guys.」

Yuuri brought the omelet rices while smiling wryly at the atmosphere inside the restaurant. After that, Hiroshi who was similarly carrying several plates on his arms also arrived.

Carm had been quiet until now, but as expected he had kept his rabbit eats opened wide all this time even then. He appeared suddenly in front of the parents of Yuuka. Hajime and others directed a gaze to him that seemed to say ‘So it’s you next huh……’.

「Forgive me for the late greeting. This is the first time we met. I am “Omi――”」

Boss’s killing intent!

「I’m Carm. Carm Hauria. I am Shia’s father and boss――Nagumo Hajime-dono’s loyal servant.」

「How polite. I’m Yuuka’s father, the owner of this restaurant, Sonobe Hiroshi. Thank you for taking care of our daughter.」

「I am the mother Yuuri. I’m happy to meet you.」

Hiroshi and Yuuri returned the greeting smilingly. While Hajime and others were looking at Carm who was suddenly giving a polite greeting with suspicious gaze, Carm received the plates from Hiroshi and Yuuri and instructed Io and others to distribute them.

「Oh, thank you. But, you don’t need to be that considerate……」

The Haurias were starting to proactively carry the other dishes that hadn’t been taken out too. Hiroshi was feeling obliged seeing that.

The Haurias even started to voluntarily clean the rabbit furs that were sliced off by Yuuka just before. Yuuri hurriedly said 「We will do it」, but the Haurias refused respectfully.

Hiroshi and Yuuri were a bit troubled at their awfully polite attitude.

Carm said to the two of them.

「What are you saying? Aren’t you two the family of someone who will become the wife of the person who we respected and even offered our faith to? That is enough reason for us to offer our life.」

「Life!? No, that’s too exaggerated.」

「No no, Otou-san! Your tsukkomi shouldn’t be about that! The wife part! It should be the wife part!」

Hiroshia and Yuuri were flustered at the reverent attitude of the Haurias. Yuuka sent them a fierce tsukkomi.

「Yuuka! I’ll teach you! This flow is one that cannot be changed no matter how hard you tsukkomi-ed them! After this kind of atmosphere, usually I will get toyed around by the Haurias!」

「Thank you for the information Emily! But, even if you said that with a face that seem to say 「I wonder if I’m useful as friend?」, the content just make me want to cry!」

Yuuka sent her gaze to Hajime. Although her face was bright red, her gaze pleaded to him 「Deny it!」.

Hajime nodded as though to say leave it to me.

「Oi, Carm. I don’t know what misunderstanding you have, but Sonobe is just my classmate. Our relationship isn’t like that, and it’s not gonna become like that even at the future.」

Hearing that, Yuuka was strangely feeling depressed even though it was something that she demanded herself……was how it looked like.

And then, Emily strongly insisted 「Demon king-sama! How can you say such terrible thing about my friend! Please retract it!」, and for some reason the wive~s starting with Kaori who was pressuring Yuuka just before this for some reason were also sending him gaze that seemed to say 「That’s saying a bit too much……」.

「……Why are you all looking at me like that?」

「Fuh, boss. No one knows what will happen in the future. In that case, we will just move by hypothesizing all of boss’s future.」

「I want to punch your self-satisfied face that is spitting out words filled with implication like that.」

Carm immediately returned to his seat in respond to the reproachful look from Hajime. Like that when then they began their lunch, the Haurias were giving praise one after another.

It seemed the western food of Wisteria had firmly grasped the stomach of the rabbits from other world. The special omelet rice was especially popular, to the degree that Par and Nea returned to their “former rabbit-eared handsome boy and beautiful girl” once more.

It went without saying that Emily’s respect level and friendship level toward Yuuka were deepening.

After a while, around the time they had eaten about half of their food, their hunger was finally quietening and calmed down a bit, Hajime addressed Yue and others.

「So, how did it go with all of you? You also brought them around to place like department store or downtown right?」

In order to obtain as many information as possible regarding the marketplace and townscape so they could share to each other later, it was decided that every group would basically look around similar places.

Yue put the mixed sandwich she ordered into her mouth and chewed while making a distant look. Tio answered in her place while smiling bitterly.

「We hath also gone to department store, but it seemed they felt let-down because there were only clothes there, so we immediately went to another place.」

「Aa~, there is only one female Hauria in your group so they didn’t get excited huh. So, where did you go?」

「Right. We departed to home center Goshujin-sama.」

But of course. As expected it seemed that place was great for the Haurias. Hajime and Shia could only smile wryly.

「It was terrible……. They said that the hardware store art a mountain of treasure. Everyone was overly enthusiastic. They almost started a gunfight using nail gun, they also bought up the crowbar and chainsaw when I noticed, they asked the store employee which one art the ingredients for explosive and got reported……」

「O, oo……they did everything I feared……」

「Yue-san! Please get a hold of yourself! It’s fine already!」

The Haurias tried to fearlessly oppose the police that came after receiving the report head-on, so the commotion was rapidly growing big.

Yue used gravity magic to forcefully made the Haurias kowtowed and shut them up, but from the outside it looked like a peerlessly beautiful girl who was being obeyed by a dangerous group was trying to buy up dangerous objects. The police officers completely suspected the group as a suspicious and dangerous group (in the end around 20 officers gathered and asked the group to accompany them to the police station) and they received police questioning.

The other side was only trying to fulfill their professional duty, so the bad one was completely their side……because of that, for the first time in her life Yue experienced bowing her head repeatedly while apologizing with her all just like a fresh recruit office worker.

Even with Shia hugging her and patting her head, the eyes of Yue whose pride was greatly injured from kowtowing to the polices were staying somewhat unfocused.

Hajime left Yue to Shia’s care and cleared his throat once. He then directed the talk to Kaori and Shizuku to also change the topic.

However, before he could,

「I’m sorry……Hajime-kun. I was, powerless…….」

「Please harden your resolve, Hajime. I think that the Haurias will appear in the evening news.」

□Just what in the world happened!?□

Kaori-san and Shizuku-san had distant look as expected. Perhaps an unpleasant memory was resurrected in the middle of her eating because a piece of spaghetti slid out from Kaori’s half-opened mouth. It was a serious illness…….

Shizuku returned the spaghetti back into Kaori’s mouth while answering. According to her, the incident seemed to happen at the sky tower.

□After giving them a tour of a shopping mall, we went to the sky tower. They saw the tower at far away from the shopping mall and said that they really want to go take a look from nearby. It was also a disaster with them in the mall, so we thought that it was convenient. I proposed that we go up with everyone until the viewing platform.□

By the way, in the shopping mall, one of the female Hauria saw the animals in a pet shop and got a flashback of rabbit demi-humans who were captured as slave in the past. She rampaged to free them, and in the end she hugged an infant rabbit in her chest saying □Please! Please at least overlook only this child!□while crouching down and wouldn’t move at all……

It was like a mother whose child was going to be taken away from her so she was pleading while crying to be let go. Or rather, she was also wailing loudly in reality which caused uproar inside the mall.

In the end, they bought the young rabbit, and right now the female Hauria in question was at the corner of the restaurant feeding the little rabbit with the carrot stick that Yuuka threw before this. Her face looked like a mother.

「And then, we relaxed our attention a bit. Because, you can only look at the sight on the viewing platform. It's different from the shopping mall that is a minefield.」

「It's also amazing to hear you call shopping mall as a minefield though.」

Ignoring Hajime's tsukkomi, Shizuku continued while hugging Kaori who got dead-looking eyes with her spaghetti sliding out from the corner of her mouth once again.

「When we noticed, they, had climbed. The sky tower.」

「Hm? What is strange about tha――」

「They climbed, the outer wall.」

'Uwaa……', a put off atmosphere was hanging in the air.

「Kaori immediately chased after them and dragged them down but……looking objectively, it became a scene of a high school student rushing up the outer wall without even using hands and then going down while carrying five adult in her arms. Coincidentally at that time there were also TV crews taking picture with the sky tower in the background……」

With that, the surrounding was showering Kaori with tremendous attention as superhuman high school student.

Fortunately, when Kaori was in the middle of rushing up the tower to bring back the Haurias, Shizuku at least stopped the recording by launching a slash from using her hand as sword to cut little part inside the camera like the circuit or something, so it seemed that most of the scene wasn't recorded but……

With the location as it was, surely there were a lot of people taking picture with their smartphone.

At the very least, after that they received strict lecture from patrolling police officers. There was no doubt that their kowtowing figure while apologizing was perfectly recorded.

Also, a person who introduced themselves as the producer of the TV crews invited them to appear in TV as superhuman high school student with extremely passionate speech. During the process the Haurias also gathered attention and it went without saying that their usual behavior exploded into action.

「……Well, that’s. I’ll do something about the TV so, don’t worry okay?」

「Yes……thank you, Hajime.」

「Hajime-kun, thank you.」

「Ou. More importantly Kaori, the spaghetti is coming out you know?」

Kaori who seemed to slightly recover put back the spaghetti into her mouth while Shizuku was sighing in relieve.

After that Hajime who heard the name of the TV station left his seat and opened the restaurant’s door. And then, he made arachnes——Etemp-san and Netemp-san to appear on his hand,

「The place is around here. Link your vision with me when you arrive nearby, I’ll guide you then.」

Hajime showed the two a map in his smartphone. Etemp-san and Netemp-san saluted ‘Roger!’ with their front leg and

deployed their new function of flying wings. Even though they were spider, they were flying in the sky.

Surely they would descend on the TV station from the sky and infiltrated inside like in spy movie.

「So, how about you two? You two are more used to the Hauria compared to Kaori and other right?」

Hajime who returned to his seat directed the talk to Kousuke and Emily.

For some reason, Emily quickly averted her gaze. Kousuke made a transparent smile like someone who had sensed his death and answered.

「It was carnage.」

「……I see. It must be terrible.」

Hajime returned a kind smile. It seemed he had guessed various things. Kousuke unconsciously stabbed the fried minced meat before him with his fork repeatedly while opening his mouth.

「We went to the city hall. Rana and also the others said that they want to go looking the workplace of Tou-san and Kaa-san.」

「Aa, if I remember right, your parents, both of them are working in the city hall huh.」

「Yeah. Tou-san is at the citizenry department, while Kaa-san is at the department of municipal tax. So, first we went to meet Tou-san but……」

「He, hey, Kousuke. Can you stop telling that story? Tonight I will properly apologize to Otou-sama (father-in-law) and Okaa-sama (mother-in-law) so――」

For some reason Emily tried to interrupt Kousuke, but Rana who seemed to be opening her rabbit ears in attention smoothly approached.

「Boss! Please look! I received this marriage registration directly from Otou-sama (father-in-law)!」

Mina who was restrained and laid down reacted. She moved her body into a posture like a shrimp. Everyone pretended to not see.

「Marriage registration huh……. Speaking about that, Rana, if you are going to tie marriage bond legally in this side, I've got to prepare a family register for you too huh.」

「I beg you to please do so, boss. But, I don't mind if you do it all at once later.」

「Hm? All at once?」

Those words that gave him a feeling of discomfort was exactly the cause of the commotion.

「Yes! Putting aside Emily, Vanessa, and also Claudia, there might be those who don't have family register like me among the people who will be Kou-kun's wife in the future! Here, please look! I have properly asked for seven marriage registrations!」

Emily covered her face and looked down. Kousuke raised a dry laugh while focusing his gaze at a single spot on the ceiling.

Hajime imagined that Rana surely asked Kousuke’s father——Eiji for seven marriage registration forms with a bright smile.

Naturally, the city hall staffs should be curious because a son of their coworker was asking for marriage registration form. There, a foreign beauty was demanding for seven of the form……

Surely Emily tried to stop her. And then, there was no doubt that she did something like insisting that if there was only one form then it would be hers.

The place then inevitably descended into carnage.

In the end how would the virtuous citizens and the earnest staffs who were in the city hall thought about such scene……

And then, what would happen to the future of Eiji-otousan there!?

「Sonobe! One drink to heal Endo-kun here!」

「What do you mean by healing drink huh…….well, I’ll prepare it though.」

Yuuka who was diligently working behind the counter inside was making a complicated expression.

Hajime turned toward Kousuke with an extremely kind expression.

「Thanks for the consideration, Nagumo. But, your face is irritating for some reason so stop it.」

Kousuke looked like he had shaken himself free from something and put the fried minced meat heartily into his mouth.

It was at that timing, Myuu who was subduing her kid’s lunch quietly (or rather she was really absorbed into it) since some time ago let out a sigh ‘fuii~’ of satisfaction after finishing her meal. And then she asked something that everyone was doing their hardest to not think while escaping from reality.

「Papa~, what are we going to do after the meal nano?」

「Hardening our resolve.」

‘That’s not what I’m asking’, Myuu thought with a troubled look, but everyone starting from Yue nodded seriously.

The latter half of the battle that would test their resolve.

For the time being, let’s just say that later on everyone would have to bow their head and kowtow at least three times to the police officer.

–

–

–

From the next day Hajime and others would set out into a trip to visit several sightseeing spots as well as inspecting the base location candidates.

At the end, the Haurias seemed to prefer the area of ancient ruin and the witch forest in Britain that Hajime and Shia discovered.

But……

Actually, in the middle, some people——Shizuku’s papa and grandpa came and said that they really wanted the Haurias to come looking at their secret training place. The two led the Haurias to a mountain that seemed to be owned by Yaegashi family.

There, the Haurias who participated in Yaegashi-style training seemed to receive deep impression. They ended up sharing the secret place as a joint training area with Yaegashi family and that place also became one of Hauria base.

They also taught their technique to each other and the disciples of Yeagashi-style were increasingly becoming superhuman. It went without saying that Shizuku’s eyes were turning dead.

Also, while staying in Nagumo family house, it seemed that a part of the Haurias were passionately investigating about the subway and underground facility but……

Before returning to Tortus, Carm handed a document to Hajime with a bright smile. No matter how he looked, it was a comprehensive report regarding underground facilities that must be government secret.

He wondered when did they infiltrate the government. Or rather, how did they usurp the facilities……

The day that Japan’s underground, no, the world’s underground got infested by head-reaping rabbit might be near as expected.

–

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

※Sky Tower

The fictive tower of this world. Let’s not climb the outer wall of the real tower and tree.

※Gardo update

“Nichijou” chapter 21 has been updated.

I burst out laughing at the cross-counter of Yue and Kaori lol

Also, Lili-san is giving a hint of the future lol

Right now it can be read for free in the homepage of Overlap-sama, so please go take a look.

※Regarding the timeline

I put it up at the activity report.

Arifureta Chapter 324

Arifureta After III　Tortus Travel Journal ④

–

AN: The Tortus Travel Journal at the last episode

- Hellina looked like she was going to become the demon king’s possession
- Randell was sunk down in a flash by Shirasaki mother and daughter, but he showed his guts.
- Liliana was a black-hearted superior. The knight commander too looked like she would become the demon king’s possession.
- Hellina came to inform that Queen Luluaria’s preparation was finished <- We are here right now

---

The place Hellina led Hajime and others at was a small garden in the palace.

There was no various flowers blooming profusely or trees that were artistically pruned like the previous garden. It also had no size that was ideal for small children to play hide-and-seek.

However, it was a garden that was vaguely giving a gentle atmosphere that blew refreshing cool breeze that calmed down the heart that was continuously blazing with zeal for the country’s restoration.

Hajime and others sat surrounding pure white long table that was placed in the middle of such garden. A bright voice that invited jovialness was resounding with tea and sweets in front of them.

「My, Sumire-sama. If you speak more than that, Hajime-done won't be able to recover anymore.」

The one who was elegantly speaking with a pleasant, high-pitched sound while placing her hand in front of her mouth was Liliana in ten more years……it was a beautiful woman who could be mistaken like that.

Luluaria S B Heiligh――she was Liliana's mother and the current queen dowager of this Heiligh Kingdom.

This year she would become 34 years old, but her figure sitting side by side with Liliana at the head of the long table looked like they were sisters. She was clad in gentle and kind atmosphere that was similar with Liliana.

Although, unlike Liliana, perhaps because she was a queen she was overflowing with grace and dignity that ought to be expressed as the lady among lady.

With the death of the king of the kingdom, her husband Eliheid, the destruction of the capital, and then the matters related to the reconstruction, her heart and body were exhausted from all the hectic situations. She looked thinner compared to before, that was why she was really looking forward to the future of her daughter Liliana.

「What are you saying Luluaria-sama. My son will be your son-in-law, so there are a lot more things that I want you to know about――」

「Kaa-san, just be silent already.」

Hajime’s entreating voice interrupted the words of Sumire who was going to continue talking gleefully.

Sumire sent him a dissatisfied looking gaze that said 「Even though it will be the good place from now」. Ahead of her gaze there was the figure of Hajime lying face down on the table with an atmosphere like he was wounded all over for some reason.

「Even if there are things that her majesty the queen should know about, it’s not my black history by all means.」

Yes, after they finished with self-introduction and idle talk, Luluaria asked about how Hajime was at his home. Since then until now Sumire kept talking about Hajime’s black history――how he tried to fire Kame○meha at the garden while yelling in high spirit when he was a child, how he was feeling that he was being targeted by a mysterious organization when he was in elementary school, how he wouldn’t stop playing game until he collapsed forward while sitting down when he was in middle and high school.

In the middle Hajime tried to intercept, but Shuu intercepted the intercept. Furthermore the wive~s who were eager to know about Hajime in the past no matter what it was about blocked Hajime using all the skill that they had, so in the end Sumire kept talking until Hajime’s soul was slipping out from his mouth.

Like that, seeing the maids who were desperately holding back their laughter and Hajime who looked like his soul was going to leave his body because of the demon king’s unexpectedly, cute (she wouldn’t say it was painful no matter what) past that they heard from his mother, Luluaria finally extended a helping hand for Hajime.

Luluaria nonchalantly changed the topic even while smiling joyfully. The demon king-sama sent her a grateful gaze as though he was looking at messiah!

「Nevertheless, it's a relief to know that Sumire-sama and Shuu-sama are kind people. Everyone else are also good people that surpassed my imagination. Now I don't have any doubt about the happiness of my daughter's future.」

「Oh no, that's really exaggerating……not!」

「Ha-ha-ha-, I'll warmly welcome a good child like Lily-chan!」

Sumire-mama and Shuu-papa weren't timid at all even when it was a queen they were talking to.

Even though Tomoichi and the others shrunk back timidly from the overflowing grace and dignity of the queen when she introduced herself, these two were the only one whose eyes brightened right from the start.

An encounter! With the seriously real queen of another world! Thank you lord, thank you!

That was how they were acting. It went without saying that the expression of Luluaria was slightly convulsing seeing that.

Tomoichi opened his mouth a bit reservedly.

「About that……your majesty, you don't feel any dissatisfaction or anything that your daughter's partner has relationship with other women?」

「Wait, dear」

Kaoruko elbowed her husband chidingly. Kaori was looking at her father with her eye pupils contracting into a dot. Tomoichi-san was trickling out sweats like waterfall.

Luluaria perceived the feeling of a father from such Tomoichi and she answered while making a small smile.

「From the beginning, people with high social status are often surrounded with mistress or lover, and when it come to royalty and nobility, it's something natural to accept mistress. My husband――Eliheid didn't have a concubine was a rare case.」

「Ugh……I see, certainly there is an image that royalty and nobility are like that.」

Tomoichi nodded with a bitter expression. It was hard for him to accept. Even though he was thinking that perhaps he could increase his ally with Luluaria, something like 'How can my daughter not be the first wife when she is a princess!'……. It was completely obvious that he was thinking such thing.

Hannya-san stand b~y. A strange aura was rising from Kaori who was staring with her pupils contracting into dot.

The smile of Luluaria who was sensing the habitual quarrel of father and daughter was deepening further, and then she gently caressed the head of Liliana who was sitting beside her.

「Originally, this child has no freedom to marry based on love. A marriage that isn't useful to the country's interest is against the duty as royalty. Such thing cannot be recognized no matter what.」

It was a sense of value that wouldn’t be found in the modern age Japan. Tomichi and others unconsciously held their breath hearing Luluaria who was sternly asserting that without dressing it up.

「But, fortunately my daughter fall in love with “the godslaying demon king”, and that feeling is accepted. The love and country interest coexist in this case, and not just that it’s a peerlessly good opportunity that cannot be matched by any other. Even if she doesn’t become the first wife, there is no reason to object at all. That is just how great an existence Hajime-dono is for this world.」

Hajime who was the godslaying demon king and the savior of the world in the common recognition of Tortus’s people had the standing that was above the royalty of any country. Therefore, even if a princess only became his concubine or even just a mistress, that would be an unequalled honor and fortune……that was the thinking of the people in this world.

Putting aside Tomoichi who was making a difficult expression, Luluaria continued 「Besides……」.

「This child went through a lot of hardships because of my worthlessness. As a mother, I want her to go to the side of a gentleman that she love without being concerned of something like the country’s interest.」

「O, Okaa-sama isn’t worthless. I have never thought that I went through hardships!」

Luluaria looked apologetic from the bottom of her heart. Liliana gripped her hand tightly while responding with words of denial.

Certainly, it was Liliana who was publicly grasping the popularity and the heart of the people. It was also Liliana

who was managing the diplomacy with the empire.

However, it was Luluaria who brought together the nobles after the king and top authorities died and the kingdom fell into chaos. She was also shouldering the majority of the burden regarding government affairs. Although Liliana acted as the substitute of the king, but until now it was Luluaria who was playing the role of the unsung hero.

Luluaria directed a loving expression toward her daughter who was vehemently arguing against her while asserting that because of such reason she had no complaint even if Liliana wouldn’t become Hajime’s first wife.

「Besides, this child is saying things like this but, it’s a fact that she is burdened with many things. Perhaps because of her strict upbringing, she become someone who completely prioritized duty above all things……even if she actually entered a political marriage, I’m worried that if it’s this child she will keep work and work and won’t be able to build a good marriage life.」

Liliana looked at Luluaria with a shocked gaze.

At the same time, the figure of the knight commander who they met just now crossed the mind of Hajime and others. The knight commander Kuzeri who was like a pitiful office lady who was cornered both in body and mind by a black company.

Hajime nodded while speaking.

「I see. Certainly if it’s Lily, I feel like her first sentence when waking up her husband in the morning will be 『Now, it’s time to work!』.」

「……Nn. Even in the middle of work I think she will say 「Eh? Rest? Didn’t you just have it for five seconds just now?」.」

「That’s possible. Lily seems like someone who will say something like 「Holiday? I’m sorry for my ignorance. I’ll look up the word in a dictionary in a bit」 when getting asked about a holiday.」

「Rather, even if her husband invite her to a date in holiday, I think she will say something like 「Because it’s a holiday shouldn’t we do a fun work instead?」 with a serious face desuu.」

「Lily……a work date is, as expected that will be too pitiful for the husband……」

「Liliana-san. Perhaps it’s strange to hear this from a teacher like me but, I think it’s better to introduce labor standards act in this country.」

「Everyone, is that how all of you are thinking about mee-!?」

As expected Liliana howled in surprise from getting treated as a regrettable wife from the mouths of Hajime and co. She slapped the table repeatedly and fiercely protested that she was a healthy maiden and an exceedingly proper princess.

However, in reality she prioritized her duty as princess and chose to not come with Hajime to earth. Her action thoroughly took away the persuasiveness from her protest.

「Uu, Okaa-sama! Okaa-sama too please tell them the truth!」

「Let’s see. Indeed I think that right now she has become far more girly than before. Fufufu, that day, when you came back from the empire and kept talking endlessly about Hajime-done in the meeting, I got thinking ‘My my, so the

day that even this child know love finally came!’ and got into high spirits that was unbecoming for me.」

Liliana remembered the embarrassing past and she went 「Uh」 in a loss of words. Yue immediately urged Luluaria 「More detail of that story please」 to continue to talk.

Acccording to Luluaria, after the “Revolt of Hauria” at the empire was over and the business at Fea Belgen was finished, Liliana who returned to the kingdom attended the meeting to give report and consolidated their plan going forward, where she complained about Hajime endlessly.

But, that too was going on only at the beginning and her complain was gradually changing into a talk that sounded like a maiden in love.

「If I remember correctly, you said that he helped you gallantly when you were in danger right? And then, I think you said in the party after that you pushed away the imperial prince who was your fiancée and asked him for a dance? And you also said that even with the prince glaring, he took your hand while looking really troubled correct?」

The gazes of Hajime and others snapped at Liliana. Liliana averted her gaze quickly.

It was a fact that Hajime took Liliana’s hand. It was also a fact that he danced with her while ignoring Prince Bias. However, the fact was subtly shifty. It could be interpreted like Hajime was trying to take away Liliana from the imperial prince.

「I remember she was also talking happily how Hajime-dono praised that she looks good in her dress.」

「Sa, say, Okaa-sama? Let’s stop with――」

Liliana pulled at Luluaria’s sleeve while sweating from the gaze of Yue and others, but Luluaria continued further with a delighted look.

「Besides, when Lily talked how Hajime-dono said something like he would protect her no matter what happened, geez, she was really-, her face was adorably bright red. I never saw her like that before……that was truly the face of a maiden in love. Even though she is my daughter it made my heart beating fast.」

「Stop it alreadyyy-」

Luluaria blushed remembering what happened at that time. Liliana’s cheeks was blushing even redder than her while begging for her to stop.

Certainly, it was also a fact that Hajime said “something like” he would protect her.

However,

「Oi, Lily. If I remember right, at that time――」

「That’s right-, I exaggerated it a bit! Do you have any problem! I’m sorry!」

The princess snapped and then confessed. Her maidenly heart wanted to make her experience to sound a bit more like a moving tale no matter what. It was what people called as a sudden impulse.

Kaori was looking at Liliana with a difficult expression.

「How should I say it, it’s that isn’t it? She isn’t saying any lie but, how she is talking in a way to create misunderstanding

is completely similar with Hajime-kun when inciting the people.

.....Nn. After all they were the draft writer and also the editor of the truth (lol) of the church and god.

In a sense, these two are the strongest provocateur couple isn't iit.

We, well, any maiden would exaggerate about their love episode.

The whispering talk of Kaori, Yue, and Shia that wasn't hidden at all made Liliana to fall prostrate on the table.

It was only Shia who at least sent her a consoling word but.....most likely that came from her feeling of fellowship with Liliana. Shia too often went into a rant about her start of romance without being aware of it.

——'How did it feel when I first encountered Hajime-san? I felt an impact that shook my brain and a tingling that made my whole body stiffened! I also felt like I was flying in the sky! It was truly a destined meeting!'

Something like that.

Luluaria was looking at Liliana who was writhing in shame looking somewhat amused. It seemed she was making fun of her daughter with full awareness of what actually happened.

By the way, is it alright if I ask everyone what is your plan from here on? If possible I wish to hold a welcoming parade, and the a party.....

Sumire and others opened their eyes wide hearing things like welcoming parade or party. In their imagination it was

something like a parade in Disney ○nd. Their self advancing through the street while waving their hand to the many citizens surrounding them.

Kaoruko whose expression was twitching the very first exchanged glance with Tomoichi beside her while speaking their reservation.

「Tha, that is a bit……yo, you know right, dear.」

「Ye, yeah. Doing something too grandiose is also a bit…… too much see.」

It seemed their commoner sensitivity wanted to be spared from being the leading role of such parade. Akiko also nodded up and down in high speed in agreement with the Shirasaki couple.

「That's right. I'm not good at being standing out.」

「Yaegashi live in the shadows――cough-. We are just commoners after all.」

「It will be troubling to have our face getting known by so many people.」

Shuuzou, Koichi, and Kirino were also looking unwilling because of their commoner sensitivity……or something that seemed to be a bit different from that.

Shizuku stared fixedly at her family. It was a gaze that felt like saying 'Right now, you almost blurt out thing like "We are a family that live in shadows after all" aren't you!?'.

「Everyone, it seems that you all don't really like appearing before the public!? I believe that it will be a great

encouragement for the people of this country to catch a glance of everyone here but……」

「H~m, it sounds fun, I’m completely okay with that. Right, dear?」

「Oo. I want to experience that at least once in my life! Something like showing up with impact you know.」

The Nagumo couple was in high spirits. Tomoichi was looking at Shuu with eyes that seemed to say 「This guy, unbelievable!」.

「Now look here, Nagumo Shuu. I’ve been thinking to say this since some time ago but, an adult at your age sticking your neck at anything just because of curiosity is just not right in my opinion.」

「Tomoichi-kun. You are a man with no guts aren’t you? It’s because you are like that Kaori-chan is closer to me――」

「Don’t say thaaat! Let’s take it outside-, this bastard!」

Kaoruku admonished Shuu and Tomoichi who looked like they were going to start quarreling and grappling with each other like usual while she was doing her best to express their intent to refuse with inoffensive words.

「Your majesty. Thank you for your kind words but, about us becoming an encouragement to the people just from seeing us……it will be a different matter if it’s my daughter and Hajime-kun and the others, but we are just their family, we really are just commoners in reality.」

「……I see. It looks like there is a bit of difference in our perception here.」

「Difference, is it?」

「Yes, I should have made clear our position respective to each other from the very beginning. It was something that is the norm for us that it became a lapse in my memory.」

Luluaria lightly apologized before she explained to Kaoruko and others who were tilting their head.

「In the first place, if we are speaking about status, then everyone here is above me you know?」

「Eh? You aren't referring to Hajime-kun and my daughter Kaori, aren't you?」

Luluaria nodded silently. Kaoruko and others looked like they didn't really get it.

「Naturally. Sumire-sama, Shuu-sama, Tomoichi-sama, Kaoruko-sama, Shuuzou-sama, Koichi-sama, Kirino-sama, Akiko-sama――everyone, you are the family of the apostles of god you know? From the viewpoint of the people of this world, you all are equal to the residents of heaven.」

「Tha, that's exaggerating……」

「No, I'm saying the truth. Sumire-sama and Shuu-sama who are the parents of the demon king goes without saying but……it's especially even truer for Akiko-sama.」

「Eh? Me?」

Akiko whose name was suddenly mentioned looked at Luluaria with a shocked face.

「Yes. Akiko-sama is the mother of Aiko-sama who is the "goddess of good harvest" as well as the "goddess of

victory” after all. To be the parent who gave birth to a living god……from the viewpoint of the people of the church, you are worthy to even become an object of worship.

“I’m just a housewife of a farmer though!?”

A housewife in countryside. But in another world she became an existence that was like holy mother Mary.

The holy mother whose specialty was rolled omelette and chopped burdock root. The tough holy mother who rampaged on a granny bike for a round trip of 14 kilometer for the sake special sale, four times a week.

Akiko looked at Aiko looking like she wanted to say “There is some kind of mistake right?”. Aiko averted her gaze quickly. Akiko feebly staggered. She leaked out a strange voice “Uboo” while her eyes rolled until the white of her eyes was showing. “Okaa-saaaaaan!?” Aiko yelled while immediately supporting her.

Aiko too, perhaps because she knew about the zealousness of the people, especially the people of the church toward her, she was pleading to Hajime “Please spare us from the parade, really!” with teary eyes.

Hajime smiled wryly while speaking to Luluaria.

“Your majesty. I’m sorry but please don’t hold any parade. In any case, such thing will put a great burden in the time and also manpower spend for it while this country is in the middle of the reconstruction like this, isn’t that right?”

Luluaria smiled with a face that looked slightly troubled.

“If Hajime-dono say that, then it cannot be helped. Although in the first place this is a sightseeing tour for your family in

the end.

Yes. We are coming here by using the consecutive holiday that is going on at our world. We don’t have that much time. We are students, and our parents also have work.

I understand. But, in the dawn of the reconstruction’s completion, please grace the people with your appearance along with your family too. Everyone surely will be happy with that after all.

I’ll give it a consideration.

Somehow the welcoming parade was successfully averted. Kaoruko and others sighed in relieve. They sent thankful gaze toward Hajime. But, at the same time they were in admiration that he was able to exchange conversation with the queen properly unlike his parents. They were sending extremely complicated gaze at Shuu and Sumire who were looking really down that they wouldn’t get a parade.

They were chatting for a while after that. And then when everyone was starting to think that it might be the time to break up soon, Sumire spoke a single request.

Luluaria-sama. I have a request though……

My, what could it be? If it’s a request from Sumire-sama then I wouldn’t say no.

Luluaria answered with a friendly smile but……

If possible, can you allow us to give a prayer in front of the grave?

——

Luluaria spontaneously held her breath in a loss of words. It was unnecessary to ask who Sumire was referring to.

There could only be one person if Sumire was requesting Luluaria herself in this place.

Yes, it was Luluaria’s husband, the dead king――Eliheid S B Heiligh.

「I heard from Lily-chan that the graves for those who died are still not build. But, as expected I don’t think that even the king won’t have a grave with only his name put on the memorial monument……」

「……Yes. It’s just as you said. It’s also related to the country’s dignity, so there is a graveyard that is exclusive for royalty within the palace’s ground. My husband’s grave is also there……Sumire-sama, I’m greatly obliged by your consideration.」

Luluaria made a faint smile and nodded slightly.

In respond to that Sumire hid her frivolous attitude and gazed straightforwardly at Luluaria.

「I’m not being considerate.」

「Eh?」

「I just want to give a greeting to the person who will become family after this.」

「Family……」

「Yes. Although he has died, a family is still a family. I was wondering whether it will be a rude thinking toward

someone who was a royalty but, it seems there is no need to worry about that.

That's……of course, Sumire-sama has higher status than me after all.

Luluaria thinned down the queen dignity that she was wearing from the beginning and showed a slightly perplexed look. Sumire shook her head slightly toward Luluaria's words.

I heard from Lily-chan that Luluaria-sama was earnestly wishing to meet with us. We are also feeling the same. However, what I want isn't to meet with the queen dowager of this country as the mother of the demon king. I want to come here to meet my new family.

Sumire-sama……

That was why she was interacting with Luluaria with an attitude that was friendlier compared with other people. She didn't understand about the way Luluaria thought and her sense of value, so she proactively talked to her to probe her and grasped the sense of distance between them.

From the bottom of my heart I express my condolence, Luluaria-sama.

……Thank you very much, Sumire-sama.

A gentle wind was blowing. The words of Sumire who wanted to interact with her as family made Luluaria's eyes to moisten slightly. Tears weren't flowing from her eyes because she was a noble who mustn't cry in front of other people, but those eyes expressed her feeling more eloquently than anything.

Liliana graped Luluaria’s hand with a gentle expression. Luluaria also grasped back with her warmed heart in it.

There, judging that the talk had reached a stopping point, Hellina quietly appeared.

「Luluaria-sama. The lunch time is approaching, what should we do?」

「My? It’s already that time?」

It seemed they had talked for quite long. It seemed that Luluaria herself was also enjoying the tea party more than a simple reception. In addition, there was also how Sumire was talking too much. Looking at how a third of the whole conversation consisted of Hajime’s black history, in a sense it should be said that she was stronger than the demon king in this world.

In the end, this tea party became a luncheon meeting, and after that they had even more lively talk. Basically each parent got heated up in exposing the black history of each of their child, the demon king and also his strongest wive~s were looking uncomfortable, or rather they were looking desperate in enduring their shame. The people of the capital would surely doubt their eyes if they could see this.

Although, in exchange of the sacrifice of the children, Sumire and others seemed to manage to deepen their friendship, especially Sumire and Luluaria entered a relationship where they called each other as “Sumire” and “Lulu”.

Like that, while Hajime, Kaori, Shizuku, Aiko, and Liliana were completely limp due to the mental exhaustion, the whole group went out to take a stroll through the capital.

–

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The chapter this time become a story that only consist of conversation due to my poor health on top of the business that I had to do.

Perhaps I will revise this chapter later.

Everyone too, please be careful of the heat wave!

※25 July 「Arifureta Gaiden――Zero volume 2」 as well as 「Zero comic volume 1」 will be sold.

The left image is Zero volume 2. It’s a story about the distant past when Melusine’s undersea ruin was still on the surface. This time it will be a 3-way struggle between Meil VS Miledy VS Raus (liberator of god mountain)? That kind of fight……

There are also a lot of points that will connect to the present included in this volume, so please purchase it if you like!

The right image is Zero comic volume 1. Little girl Miledy appears. There is the chance meeting of Miledy and Oscar, and then the past of Miledy is exposed in this volume.

※Regarding special perk side story

【Coupled】 refer to special perk when purchasing Zero volume 2 and Zero comic volume 1 at the same time.

- Chain store-sama

【Girl power-!!】

The girl power showdown of Miledy VS Meil-oneesan. Or so it seems but, that person’s girl power is just like regarding the case of 530,000 power level (TN: It seems this is reference for Dragon Ball)

- All specialist shops 【Animate-sama, Tora no Ana-sama, Melon Books-sama, Gamers-sama】

【Secret and black history and other this and that】

A short time in a hideout of the liberators. Corin and co along with liberator members are talking about the past story of Oscar and Miledy……the black history of the two are overflowing

- Animate-sama 【coupled】

【Romance will be accompanied with sacrifice】

Oscar produced a great number of romance weapon, but there the mother of success, experiment is necessary so……

Comrade = test subject, by Oscar

- Tora no Ana-sama 【coupled】

【That guy is there, surpassing the era】

That guy is there. No matter how many months and years passed, no matter what era it is without fail he will be there! Yes, the monster of the clothing shop will!

- Gamers – Shosen

【Through 10,000 km searching for the beloved transmutation master】

That poster girl who love Oscar, this is the story of her travel while making a mess of various things.

=>It’s the continuation of the story in the afterword of afterword at Overlap’s special site for Zero volume 1.

- Melon Books 【coupled】

【Poster girl killer】

A new nickname for Oscar……this is why handsome guy is just……

- CCC (Tsutaya)

【She is siscon in any case】

Meil-oneesan is a “genuine Onee-san” who will love any kind of little sister.

※The special perk’s information is also written at Overlap-sama’s homepage.

Please confirm there too if you like.

That’s all.

It will make me happy if you readers can use them for accompaniment to kill time in a safe room where the air conditioner is working.

Best regards!

Arifureta Chapter 325

Arifureta After III　Tortus Travel Journal ⑤

–

After finishing the luncheon meeting with the queen, Hajime’s group that was joined by Liliana who was acting as guide set out to the new capital that was in the middle of reconstruction.

The sound of craftsmen exercising their skill was resounding from everywhere. Furthermore magic power lights of various colors were surging from the surrounding.

It seemed the magic used wasn’t mainly transmutation magic, but body strengthening magic and wind element magic to assist with material transport were also being used. The fantastical scene that couldn’t be found at earth caused the eyes of Sumire and others to shine.

Especially someone like Tomoichi who was a first class architect, as expected the stimulation to him was strong due to the nature of his occupation. When other noticed he was already getting drawn toward the dazzling sight ahead of his gaze with unsteady steps.

His figure was like a lost child wandering around following his curiosity. Kaori smiled wryly while grasping Tomoichi’s hand firmly.

「Looks like the recognition obstruction is working properly……」

「……Nn. No problem.」

In respond to Hajime's words, Yue coolly pushed up her red framed glasses while nodding.

If the demon king's group was walking at the capital, obviously the people would instantly mob them. Because of that, right now everyone was wearing Hajime's quality product, the recognition obstruction artifact.

「So, Hajime-san. Where are we going?」

Liliana imitated Yue with coolly pushing her glasses while asking. Perhaps because she was the princess who was making work as her priority, that gesture looked excessively appropriate on her. If she was also wearing earth's ladies suit, it would make her look like a female director that seemed really capable. She would be the director princess.

「We haven't really decided. I was only thinking of getting them experiencing the fantasy world for now……. It also depends on how much the reconstruction has progressed.」

「I guess that's understandable. Everyone, do you have any request――」

「I want to go to the adventurer guild!」

「I want to go to the adventurer guild though!」

The two people who were splendidly raising their hand swiftly in harmony were as expected, the Nagumo couple. They had bright smile on their face.

「Adventurer guild……if my memory isn’t mistaken, it is the organization of people who make fighting in this world as their occupation huh.」

「Hmm, that’s certainly interesting.」

「I wish to see what kind of weapons they are using there.」

‘Eh? Suddenly the guild? There are other places we can go sightseeing to you know?’ Liliana almost said that, but before she could, the members of Yaegashi family displayed strong approval. With fierce smile on their face.

「I’m sorry Lily. Can I ask you to take us to the adventurer guild first? If we postpone it, Ojii-chan and others might assault that place on their own instead.」

「I agree with Shizuku. It looks like Tou-san and others were talking with each other last night, that it’s the custom for earthling that arrive in other world to go to the adventurer guild first. They might rush there on their own if we ignore them.」

The eyes of Shizuku and Hajime looked distant. They were thoroughly familiar with their parents’ behavior……. Their ability to take action sometimes could slip through even the awareness of the demon king and the swordswoman who would sometimes argue in the other world.

「I, I understand. The requests that are coming to the adventurer guild is in rapid increase because of the ongoing reconstruction, so we had prioritized its reorganization. I believe that everyone will be able to see it in a state that is no different from before.」

‘Yahoo!’ The intimate spouses Sumire and Shuu high-fived with each other. And then there was also the intimate (?)

spouses of Koichi and Kirino who were making dangerous statements like 「I'm itching to have a go」「I'll have them show us the degree of their strength」 for some reason. Their daughter was sending them a fixed gaze hearing that.

And so, Hajime and co went to the adventurer guild that was newly set up slightly to the eastern side from the center of the capital.

Previously the guild's building made from wood with solemnity that gave the impression of its long history, but the new guild headquarter now was a building with a lot of metals used in its construction, giving it a solemnity in a different sense from before. Perhaps because the building's solidness had increased, its height had increased by three times, from the previous two floors into six floors right now.

There was a large double-leaf door at the front entrance, but surprisingly there was a very thick iron bars above that door. From its construction, it seemed that it was something like a shutter that could be dropped down or lifted up.

「It has really changed huh……」

「Yes. It was the idea of the headquarters' guild master. He said that previously we were overestimating the capital's great barrier. He intended for the guild to serve the role of a fortress when push comes to shove.」

Hajime and others were listening to that explanation while getting hurried on by Sumire and others who looked like they were going to charge in anytime.

Due to the requests regarding the reconstruction or being the guard of the people who were coming and going because of the progressing cooperation with other countries, it seemed that it was the truth that works were rapidly

increasing here. The enlarged request board was fully covered with request forms.

Adventurers with various appearances were tearing off those request forms one after another. The guild staffs were putting up new request forms continuously.

The place was extremely busy……it was clear that the guild was filled with energy.

Sumire and Shuu cheered ‘waaaaaah’ and rushed toward the request board. It looked like they were somewhat regressing to become kids after seeing the basic staple of the fantasy in other world that they yearned for. They were completely like kids getting highly spirited in an amusement park.

The two were hopping up and down behind the many tough looking adventurers gathering in front of the board while staring at said board. Tomoichi was getting concerned with the attention from the surrounding while raising his voice toward the two.

「O, oi Nagumo Shuu! You’re too high spirited! It’s embarrassing so restrain yourself!」

「Tomoichi-kun! There is a request for construction work see! In order to produce a novel architectural style that is worthy for the new capital, they are recruiting people who are knowledgeable about the architectural style of foreign country!」

「Secure that request!」

Tomoichi-san raised a cheer ‘waaaaah’ and rushed toward Shuu. Kaori’s hand was shaken off and she raised her voice 「Ah!」.

Kaoruko put her hands on her cheeks seeing her husband’s childish act and her face blushed.

「Tha, that person, really-. How embarrassi――」

「Kaoruko! There is a request about cooking here! Looks like it’s looking for assistant, but it’s written that if you want then the shop’s original recipe will be added as the reward too!」

「……」

Kaoruko-san wordlessly moved with soundless footsteps smoothly. The woman who was also a researcher in the level where she could open her own cooking class used Sumire’s shoulder as support while hopping up and down to confirm the request.

「E, even Okaa-san」

「Kaori. State of emptiness. Empty your heart and then count prime numbers in your head.」

The high spirit of the two groups of spouses that didn’t look like adventurer at all no matter how you looked at them bewildered the surrounding adventurers and caused them to look at the spouses with warm gaze. Kaori covered her face with both hands seeing that.

Hajime kindly patted the shoulder of such Kaori. He was showing a clear smile like somehow whose mind had opened to enlightenment.

Shizuku suddenly gasped and looked around. The Nagumo spouses and Shirasaki spouses were like that. There was no way her hopeless family would just stay still!

As she expected.

「Hou. You guys have the atmosphere of really “capable” people……your weapons are also really something.」

「You yourself have a sword that is quite high quality. If you don’t mind can you tell me the workshop where you got that?」

There, Koichi and an unfamiliar adventurer were showing to each other their kunai and long sword,

「You……you ain’t a normal person. It’s like your footsteps ain’t making sound at all.」

「Fuh. Just as I claimed, I have taken your back. Now teach me about that special short sword.」

And, there was also Shuuzou who was placing his ninja sword on the neck of a coldly sweating adventurer from behind,

「Fufu, this is just a side show, so please calm down, the two of you.」

「I, I get it! I get it already so untie this!」

「It’s digging into me! It’s digging into me I’m telling youuu!」

And, Kirino were with two adventurers that were tied with superfine string which forced them into the posture seiza……

‘WAAAAAAH’, Shizuku raised her voice angrily while dashing forward. She dealt a blow to her family that had too much freedom using her black katana (sheathed).

Just where in the world they were hiding weapons like ninja sword or kunai? She should have made them toss away those when departing from home, and yet……

「Ojii-chan, Otou-san, Okaa-san. Try jumping for a bit over there. Jump quickly, now! Come on, quick!」

「Oh my, Shizuku. It sounds like extortion you know?」

「Okaa-san, shut up!」

‘Come on, just jump already!’ Shizuku pressed with a fixed gaze. Everyone of Yaegashi family shrugged their shoulders and jumped up and down.

Instantly, flashes of slashes ran through the air. Shizuku’s exquisite skill that only cut what she wished to cut caressed the body of her grandpa and parents.

Immediately, *drop drop clang* the sound of things dropping——caltrop, throwing star, dozens of type of bundle filled with unknown powder, sickle and chain, blowgun set, retractable claw, camouflaged thin fabric, log——from many kinds of ninja tool.

「Log!? Where did you keep something like log on you!?」

「It’s just a bit of storage technique. We were thinking of teaching it to Shizuku too but, you know, that. You received treasure warehouse from Hajime-kun so we thought you must have no need for it.」

「That’s not the problem! Ojii-chan you idiot!」

Just where in the world they were storing that many hidden weapons and dangerous looking drugs and even a log inside their clothing that wasn’t really that loose?

The surrounding adventurers were taking steps back for about ten steps. 「These guys, they're absolute bad news!」 was written on their face.

In contrast, there was a single man who was getting excited.

「I, is that for substitution technique!? Is that log for that!? Shuuzou-san! Please show me the substitution technique in the flesh at least once!」

「Hajime!?」

Shizuku was taken aback. Hajime's eyes that seemed to have opened to enlightenment now were sparkling with curiosity and romance. And then, Myuu beside him was also……

「Myuu too! Myuu also want to see substitution technique nano! Or rather, Myuu want to do it nano! Shuuzou-ojiichan! Please teach it to Myuu too!」

「No way, Myuu-chan!? These similar father daughter!」

Hajime and Myuu were going to rush toward Shuuzou while going 'waaaaaah', but Shizuku put herself on the line to not let them pass. Shuuzou-san, he didn't look that dissatisfied to be asked so by the two.

'These guys, they are already hopeless!' With expression that seemed like that, Shizuku sent a gaze that was asking for help.

「Right right, Hajime-san. Let's calm down.」

「My my, Myuu. Let's try asking again at night okay?」

Hajime, Shia put him in choke sleeper while dragging him back.

Myuu, she was carried up in Remia mama’s arm and got brought back.

Shuuzou-san, he got dejected because he couldn’t show his technique to the two while storing away the log.

As expected, it was unclear where and how he stored away the log.

Perhaps because they were making ruckus like that, someone called out to them.

「Oh myy! Isn’t this the demon king-sama! Long time no seee. What are you doing at this kind of place?」

「Eh?」

A voice that sounded familiar made Hajime to tap on the arm of Shia that was around his neck and he turned his gaze toward the voice……

「……?」

It made him blink.

Ahead of his gaze, there was a beautiful woman of blooming age that he didn’t recognize. Although she seemed to be of considerable age, her exceptional figure and her unique atmosphere that was bewitching even while giving the impression of liveliness and coolness made her a woman that was attracting much attention.

She was middle aged woman that looked really young for her age as though through magic. It was clear she was a

staff of the guild from the uniform she was wearing.

She should be an acquaintance from how she was saying long time no see, but frankly speaking Hajime had no recollection of her.

「My bad, who are you?」

Hajime who was released from the choke sleeper tilted his head while asking. Just in case he also looked around to Yue and others, but they too were only tilting their head. As expected it seemed they also didn't know this woman.

The bewitching middle-aged guild staff folded her arms and shook her head toward Hajime and co who were like that. The twin hills that rivaled even Tio's got emphasized which spontaneously drawn in the gaze of the adventurers whose attention was caught because of the words "demon king".

「What is this. Could it be you don't remember me? How heartless. Who do you think took care of the adventurer registration of you all?」

「? It was the granny guild staff in Brook city whose appearance show the harshness of time progression though?」

「What, so you actually remember.」

「???」

Hajime was getting increasingly bewildered at the talk that didn't mesh with each other, but Yue and Shia looked like they noticed something. Their eyes opened widely and then they asked with a trembling voice that seemed to say 'that's impossible'.

「……Co, could it be, you are Catherine?」

「Are you Catherine-san?」

「That's right you know?」

'What did you saaay――!?' Hajime's yell resounded. Sumire and others gathered toward them wondering what was going on.

「Ahahah, you children are talking strangely. Who else can I be other than Catherine.」

「Rather, you look like someone who cannot possibly be Catherine! Is this metamorphosis magic? Are you using metamorphosis magic!? You have completely metamorphed here!」

'This kind of before-after is impossible!' Hajime yelled.

「H~m, well, certainly, Brook was tranquil, I was also putting on a bit of weight from the good life there. The busy time in the headquarter here made me lost a lot of weight, so perhaps now I'm giving different impression from before.」

「No no no, this ain't at the level of different impression. This is in the level of Moo○n turning into Shia.」

「Moomi○? I don't know what is that, but you are really exaggerating there.」

The transformation that was like a lovable chubby character turning into a lovable peerless beauty with extraordinary figure gave Hajime a great agitation.

Although, her current figure was understandable if he recalled the talk of the branch guild leader of neutral

commercial city Fhuren, Iruwa Chang——that Catherine was an existence that was like the Madonna of the guild staffs, who were idolized and called as “teacher” due to her position as the guild master’s private secretary and also her guidance to the staffs.

「Wait Hajime, don’t just stand there alone making funny faces, introduce her to us. She is your acquaintance right?」

Sumire sharply slapped the back of her son who was in the middle of confusion and said that. In respond Hajime introduced Catherine half in a daze.

In the city that they first visited after getting out of the abyss, this woman was the person who took care of his adventurer registration. He explained that after that, she also wrote introduction letter for their convenience in other guild branches and gave them a lot of help.

Sumire nodded in understanding and then quickly bowed her head to Catherine who could even make RIZA○ seriously went white in the face from her dramatic before-after. (TN: RIZAP, it seems to be a famous private gym in Japan)

「My son is really indebted to you. Catherine-san, please let me express my gratitude for that to you as his mother.」

「Don’t mention it. It is my side instead that received the favor of having the world got saved. Rather it’s us who have to say thanks. If I was able to become of help to your son, then there is no greater honor than that.」

Catherine made a charming smile and grasped Sumire’s hand.

Hajime thought. This was a scam. Catherine’s outer face was made from scam, he thought.

Incidentally, he also wondered that perhaps Brook city was really a den of devils just as he expected.

After that, Catherine also exchanged brief greeting with Shuu and others. Sumire and others were completely pleased with the lively woman who was completely open without hiding anything and they hit it off.

But, it would also be troubling if they hit it off too much with each other……

「That’s right. That demon king-sama, even while he was being served by two beautiful girls like Yue-chan and Shia-chan, he was really disappointed seeing it was me who acted as the receptionist.」

「Wai-, that’s misunderstand――」

「Aa~, that sounds likely. That son of mine, he is a child who love the templates of another world, so there is no doubt that he would want to hear the guild’s receptionist saying things like 「Amazing-, you aren’t an ordinary person!」 when seeing his ability or the material that he sold.」

「Kaa-san!? I didn’t think anything like――」

「It will be troubling if you are underestimating woman’s instinct. Yue-chan also noticed at that time, after all she was tightly grasping demon king-sama’s hand to the limit at that time.」

「Stooop! That’s a groundless――」

「……Nn. Hajime, he was also holding expectation for the receptionist girl in the capital’s guild.」

「Yue!?」

With what Catherine, his mother, and his first wife pointed out, Hajime ended up in a state where his soul was going to escape from his mouth.

Shuu gave a thumb up saying 「That's how a boy is!」 with an understanding gaze. Tomoichi's murderous gaze was stabbing into Hajime, while the surrounding adventurers――especially the men were making highly sympathetic gaze that seemed to say 「I understand that」 toward the demon king's unexpected side.

But, at that timing, a voice called out to Catherine. For Hajime who wished to divert away this topic, it was truly a salvation.

He sent a grateful gaze that said 'Who is the one that is my savior!?',

「Myyy? Temporary manager Catherine-samaa! What are you doing in that kind of place I wonderr? The work is piling up you knoow?」

「God dammit! There is no salvation!」

Hajime despaired seeing the arriving savior.

The one who appeared from the guild's stair was a mass of muscle that was nearly two meter high. It was a pseudo human with grim face, short mustache, braided hair, wearing guild staff uniform's mini skirt version.

「Oh, Alabell, sorry about that. I'll return right away.」

「Please do soo. ……Oh? Ohooh? Could it be, the person over there is Yue-oneesama!?」

「……Nn?」

The girl (?)——Alabell’s movement was showing excessive wiggling and swaying. She was undoubtedly one of the group that was being mass produced by a certain monster of clothing shop.

One of that mass produced manly women was calling Yue as “onee-sama”. That mean she was without a doubt one of the person who received Yue’s smash.

「……Who?」

「It’s understandable for Onee-sama to not remember. I was the stupid youngster who tried to make a pass at Yue-oneesama and Shizuku-oneesama in the past.」

‘I really don’t want to remember it, the mistake I committed due to my youth……’ the manly man became melancholic. It didn’t matter but, she/he was standing still on the stair, so it felt like the inside of the extremely short skirt could be seen.

The area between the extremely muscular thighs was almost visible!

Several people among the adventurers were already collapsing with pitiful expression as though they had seen something that mustn’t be seen. They were like the people who got done in by a certain cursed video.

As a matter of fact, it was truly a brutal brief glimpse.

「Ah, could it be, you are the adventurer of that time? Er~r, if I’m not wrong, you said your name at that time was Abel the “Flash Blade” or something?」

「Myy! Shizuku-oneesama! You remember!」

Gou There was the sound of wind roaring. When they noticed, the gigantic face that seemed only possible because of the use of metamorphosis magic was already in front of Shizuku’s eyes. Shizuku-san spontaneously screamed 「Hiih」 and backed away.

The fake gold ranked adventurer that picked a quarrel with them in the capital’s guild at the past. He was a handsome man with pompous attitude. Even such person now had evolved into a splendid abnormal creature. It was unclear why he changed job to become a guild staff, but based on his strength there was no doubt that he was gold ranked for real this time.

Yue hit her palm *pon-* and opened her mouth.

「……Aa, the person that time. I remember. Is Mariabel healthy? Has he opened a shop in the capital?」

「I’m happy! You remembered! Yes, yees, Mariabel-neesama is also healthy! She made a lot of lovely clothes! Please be kind and visit her shop no matter what!」

「……I see, that’s good. It was worth it for me to smash him.」

Yue nodded while using barrier to block the gigantic grim face that was quickly approaching.

At the same time, the inside of the adventurer guild became noisy. The presence of the demon king’s group here was gathering people and attention, but Yue’s remark caused the male adventurers to push and shove at each other to back away.

「Do, don’t tell me……don’t tell me she is the legendary!?」

「Smasher……she is the legendary Smasher! The founder of the path of smash that wouldn’t let go of the prey it aimed!(crotch)」

「!?」

A mark of “!?” appeared above Yue’s head. When she restlessly looked around her, she saw the male adventurers looking at her with frightened gaze.

She was feared even more than the demon king, limited to the male!

Or rather, what in the world the path of smash was……

The treatment that was treating her like she was some kind of legendary gunman was also extremely curious.

Yue was a bit shaken up while trying to know more about that but……

「Tha, that person is Smash Master Yue……the grandmaster of the path of smash……」

「That’s right-, she is the one and only peerless Smasher who made numerous men to reincarnate! The Smash Goddess (Goddess of Manly Women) who can’t help but going smash if she meet a crotch!」

「! ! ?」

Even more terrible title showed up. It seemed the first wife of the demon king had become a goddess without noticing it. The goddess of crotch crusher that is.

「Yue-chan……」

「O, Okaa-sama, this isn’t what you think. There is a bit of misunderstanding……」

Starting from Sumire, the parents' gazes were getting really doubtful. 'It will be a disaster if they think I'm a wife who love to crush crotch!', Yue-san was shaken up like that while attempting to dispel the misunderstanding.

Shuu was listening to that while speaking to Hajime with a slightly twitching expression.

「Ha, Hajime. You, what in the world you made Yue-chan did……」

「No, I'm telling you that's not it, Tou-san. I also have smashed numerous crotches to this day. Me and Yue combined were even called as "Smash Lovers", shortened into "Sma-Love".」

「Oi, Hajime-kun. That won't serve as excuse at all.」

Tomoichi started to take distance from him with a creeped out expression.

To speak further, Yue was the only one whose title became expanded was because midway Hajime refrained from doing smash due to his sense of impending crisis from the mass production of the manly women.

Even after the legendary decisive battle, the whole world banding together in solidarity without any exception was obviously impossible. Among the people naturally there were those who were thinking of bad things.

Especially the fools who were trying to target the female of the beastman who tried to go out from the sea of trees.

The one who flattened their crotch flat was none other than Yue. From that, she was given the title as the grandmaster of the crotch smash, the smash goddess of the manly women.

As expected, it was a nickname that was embarrassing to be known by her relatives. Yue was unusually red faced and shaken up. However, the fact was the fact so she was at a loss for words and sought for help from Hajime with teary eyes.

「……Ha, Hajime. Hajime too say somethi――」

「Yue……I, told you before to refrain from doing smash in order to avoid their propagation too. But, you said you cannot forgive woman's enemy and didn't stop. That will of steel in smashing crotch……it's worthy to be called as grandmaster!」

「! ?」

Seeing the refreshing smile and thumb up of Hajime who was always supporting her in any kind of time, Yue showed a really shocked face that made it felt like the sound effect of *GAAAAN* could be heard. And then, 「……Uu, Hajime! Idiot!」 she expressed her dissatisfaction with sulking light punches on him.

Seeing such Yue, there was one girl who approached with a refreshing smile at this perfect timing.

「Hey hey, Yue♪ Right now, how are you feeling? Grandmaster-san, how are you feeling? Vampire princess-san who is showing an abnormal obsession to man's important part, how are you――」

「……Drop dead, Kaori!」

Yue-sama transformed her light punches into a serious punch with flowing smoothness. A golden right straight gouged into Kaori's cheek! But, she must had anticipated it.

Naïve! Kaori’s fist that was unleashed at the same time became a cross-counter and drilled Yue’s cheek!

Both sides didn’t flinch and executed an artistic body blow! *BAM-* The graphic sound was accompanied with exhalation 「Fuguu」 that leaked out from their mouth.

「Aaa, Yue-chan! Now ow, Okaa-san isn’t put off by you so calm down!」

「Kaori, you are violent only to Yue-chan. Now, apologize! Ah, hey! Don’t kick with your feet!」

Sumire and Kaoruko each pinioned Yue and Kaori from behind and separated them from each other. The two who would quarrel (?), frolic around (?) if there was a chance made their respective mother unable to hold back their wry smile.

Each of them knew that their daughter would only take this kind of attitude only toward each other, so their expression was complicated.

The noise inside the guild was getting louder and louder. Too many people had gathered that not only moving in and out of the guild, even the work inside the guild was starting to get hindered.

They would be nothing more than hindrance if they stayed longer than this, so Hajime bid farewell with Catherine and urged everyone to go outside.

Hajime responded to the cheers of good will from the people like a celebrity appearing in front of the fans before he suddenly noticed an unpleasant fact that he spoke up.

「……Come to think of it, it feels like there was never a time where there was no commotion when I entered the guild……」

「As expected from Goshujin-sama. Thou must be born under that kind of star.」

「That's one unpleasant star.」

Hajime was feeling down at Tio's words that seemed to say 「What are you saying after this late」 while escaping from the guild.

After escaping from the eyes of the people for a moment, the recognition obstruction was coming into effect once more. Hajime and others talked about the commotion just now while heading to the center of the capital.

The plaza where the church of the reborn holy church was located had the size that was similar with a sports ground. There was also a fountain at the center of the plaza. Liliana explained like a tour guide that the place was set to be a place from relaxation and refreshment.

But, for some reason she was showing a strangely awkward look even while explaining, so Hajime and others tilted their head in puzzlement. Especially Aiko who kept getting glances from Liliana was feeling even more confused.

「Err……Liliana-san. Is there something that you want to tell me?」

「N, no. That's not……」

Liliana was evasive, but when the plaza came into view, she fixed her gaze at Aiko as though she had resolved herself.

「Aiko-san……please be strong!」

「What do you mean!?」

Liliana clenched both her hands to form fists and yelled out 「Fight!」. That behavior made Aiko wanted to ask her for more detail. But, there was no need for that. The cause immediately became clear after all.

Yes, at the center of the plaza. Enshrined at the center of the fountain that was spurting water in arcs to twelve directions was……

「……Eh? Li, lies……tha, that's, could it be……」

It was an Aiko statue.

An artistic statue that lifted both its hands to the sky as though offering a prayer to the world was there! Aiko was looking up to the sky with an expression of love! She was smiling as though she was asking for blessing to spread far and wide in the world!

Truly a goddess! It was the magnificent statue of a living god who governed over good harvest and victory!

「No, NOOOOOOOOO-!? WHY!? WHY IS SUCH THING!?」

Aiko's scream echoed.

In the world, just how many people could see a statue of themselves while they were still alive? To say nothing of people who could see believers kneeling in front of that statue and praying wholeheartedly, how many of such people existed in the world?

Hajime and others glanced at Aiko who snapped into a frenzy while leaking out strange voice 「O, ou……」 that was unclear whether it was a voice of shock or sympathy.

But, at that timing, the door of the church that was located at the south side of the plaza was thrown open loudly.

When they spontaneously turned their gaze there, they saw multiple men clad in armor and priest robe breathing roughly.

「A, AIKO-SAMAAAAAAAA-」

「Hii!?」

A familiar man at the forefront raised a loud voice that shook the world. The volume of the voice that made even the windows of the church to rattle calling at her caused Aiko to scream while jumping up in surprise.

「AIKO-SAMA IS GRACING US WITH HIS PRESENCE YOU ALLLLLLL-」

「Fuhya!?」

The next man was also someone who they had seen from somewhere. The look of the man who was holding back emotional tears with bloodshot eyes was guaranteed to make ten from ten people to be creeped out. Aiko jumped up in surprise once more.

「YOU GUYS! GOO! GOOOOOOOO-!!」

「JUST WHAT IN THE WORLD IS GOING OOOON!?」

‘Is that a call when dealing with intruder?’ Aiko made that tsukkomi in his heart while snapping and yelling angrily.

ZUDODODODO- The men’s footsteps resounded and without pausing they performed head sliding. They performed a forward roll with superb positioning and smoothly ended up kneeling on one knee sharply.

「Aiko-sama. It has been a long time! Your David is present here!」

「Similarly-. Your eternal servant, Chase, is right here![

「Joshua here! It has been like an eternity that I’m waiting for the day where I can meet you once more!」

「My goddess-. Please bestow this Jade with any divine decree of yours!」

Aiko turned on her heel with all her strength. It was the greatest turn of her life, with sharpness that spontaneously made her wanted to sing her own praise.

But, even that superhuman movement that was brought about by her feeling that wished to escape from this dangerous place for even an instant sooner didn’t work against the demon king. Hajime strongly grabbed the collar of Aiko who was trying to escape.

「Let me goo! I’m begging you please release me, Hajime-kun! I’m in front of my mother! I cannot endure this at all!」

Because of the shame.

Akiko blinked seeing the men who was handsome but a bit creepy kneeling in front of her daughter. There, Yue-san suddenly stepped forward. It seemed she still hadn’t forgotten the setting of tour guide Yue.

「……They are the people who once belonged to Aiko’s bodyguard squad. Aiko made all of them fall for her and they became the member of her reverse harem.」

「Yue-san!?」

「Aiko!?」

Both mother and daughter raised a voice that seemed to say 「Just what have you done!?」.

「Fuh. Even that is a matter of the past. The current us are pious believers who are faithful to Aiko-sama. We are the knights who protect the goddess.」

「David-san please just shut up for a bit!」

‘By your will.’

Like that, David, the captain of templar knight order understandingly bowed his head. He had only changed the target of his faith, but it seemed his slightly dangerous fanatically faithful heart hadn’t changed at all.

While that was going on, the plaza was starting to get enveloped by a commotion.

They were too noisy, so as expected the recognition obstruction was dispelled. The people could be heard saying things like 「Oo, don’t tell me, the person over there is the goddess?」「Wha-, the living god who was sent by Ehito-sama!?」「It’s Aiko-sama in the flesh! Bless her!」「Aiko-sama in the flesh, banzai!」「Aiko-sama in the flesh! YAHAAAAAAA-!」 and so on.

Aiko went ‘Oh nooo-‘ and slowly backed away. Or rather, she hoped that they would stop with the “Aiko-sama in the

flesh”.

Even though beside her there were also the demon king and the princess, the gazes of the people that were gathering in accelerated speed were fixed on Aiko.

In the occasion of the legendary decisive battle, with his incitement technique Hajime called himself as “the goddess’s sword”. That was one of the causes of this. In their point of view, the relationship between the two was something like master and servant in love with each other. Of course, the master in this case was Aiko-sama.

To say nothing of how Ehito had already got flattened in reality. In the first place the common believer would never heard their god’s voice even once in their life. But, such common sense was overturned by the living god Aiko.

It could even be said that, perhaps……it was already at the level that it was natural for them to be moved to tears and breathe roughly while staring in fixation at her.

If Aiko was left alone then she might ran away alone to the end of earth, so Hajime tightly grasped Aiko’s hand. That also caused the people to cheer.

Aiko’s face was rapidly turning red. If it came to this then she would just act in abandon like usual! ‘I’m gonna do the goddess act seriously yeaah~, I’ll super seriously do it yeaaah~’, like that she accepted her fate……

「Puh. Aiko, even in another world, this is how it always goes for you?」

「……Okaa-san?」

Akiko-okaasan was trembling while desperately biting her lips to hold back the laughter.

Of course she was shocked by her daughter’s position, but she was her mother. She was able to accurately guess what was going on inside her daughter’s heart. She understood like the back of her own hand that his daughter was going to act as goddess in completely desperate state.

Even if her daughter was getting worshipped at another world, she was still making useless effort and charging ahead in complete desperation like usual……

And then surely after that she would hold her head while being at her wits’ end.

It seemed that the gap between her daughter that was like usual and her daughter that ended up became a living god went past through her shock and caused laughter to well up from her.

Aiko’s eyes became resentful seeing her mother laughing at her cornered self.

And then, she turned around to face the direction of the plaza and,

「Everyone in the capita~l! Good day, it’s me!」

She brazenly greeted the people while lifting both her hands to the sky just like her statue. Cheers burst out and Hajime and others focused on her half in bewilderment and half in interest while going 「Oo?」.

Aiko whose eyes looked somewhat glassy moved her hand in a snap toward behind her dramatically——pointing at Akiko. Aiko glanced at Akiko who went 「Eh?」 and grinned widely,

「Today, I came here in order to introduce my mother! Yes, this person is none other than my mother――the mother of the goddess of bountiful harvest and victory――the holy mother Akiko!」

「Aiko!? You!」

The shocked and protesting voice of Akiko-okaasan was drowned by the loud cheer that was like an explosion right after that.

The chorus of voices that were praising the holy mother Akiko was resounding wide.

「Fu-fufufu-. A mother that is laughing on the suffering of her daughter who is treated as goddess can just become the holy mother.」

「You! You are selling away your own mother!」

「That sounds bad in people’s ear! I’m just taking you along with me!」

「Either way it’s still bad!」

In the capital’s central plaza that was enveloped in roaring cheers where even hymn was starting to resound, the ugly quarrel of mother and daughter was developing.

And then, at that timing a woman wearing a beret quietly approached Hajime.

「Demon king-sama. I am a painter called Caliope Elegy. Please, allow me to draw the beautiful frolicking of the honorable goddess and holy mother.」

It seemed she was a painter. She had tools for drawing picture set up throughout her body.

Hajime thought for a bit before looking at Aiko and Akiko who were still quarreling……he grinned.

「I allow it. Draw to your heart’s content. I don’t mind even if you dramatize it.」

「All my thanks to you!」

The female painter took distance with a movement that seemed slimy somehow, then she set up her tools in the blink of eye. She began to draw with bloodshot eyes and terrific momentum.

「I don’t care of someone like Okaa-san anymore!」

「A child like you! Even if you come home I won’t make rolled omelet or chopped burdock root for you anymore!」

「That’s harshhh!」

The two were still doing a questionable quarrel (?).

They didn’t know. That currently they were being drawn by the painter of the age.

The quarrel scene was drawn as religious painting of beautiful frolicking between the goddess and the holy mother. The duplicates later on would sell like hot cakes.

And then, with this as her stepping stone Caliope-san would attain great success instantly, she would get the job to draw a huge painting to decorate the shrine, and it would become a legacy until the later generations.

The housewife of a farmer family and her daughter would be depicted in a historical painting in another world and got worshipped religiously……

It went without saying that later on, the mother and daughter would go 「Uboo」 together with their soul coming out from their body.

–

–

–

After that, Hajime and others succeeded in escaping from the plaza that was in uproar.

At that time, the little sister of David who heard the commotion and arrived there exercised her shrewdness and gave them an escape but……

Hajime who recalled that her name was written in the document that Hellina wrote up smiled inside his heart at the capableness of the actual little sister nun-chan and Hellina’s capability that didn’t overlook that.

Like that, they went around at places that were unique to another world like weapon shop, magic tool shop, and shop of general good, and Sumire and others, the parent~s had a good time in the capital of the other world.

–

In the middle, it seemed that Hajime’s visit was detected by the artisan’s instinct of the leader of the kingdom’s exclusive transmutation masters, Wolpen, he and his happy go lucky subordinates crawled out from the woodwork to

crowd Hajime, then Mariabel who heard the news from Alabell assaulted——or rather coming to give his greeting……

At the site of the demolished library, regeneration magic was used to reproduce the figure of Hajime who was working hard in the past there in order to supplement his lacking ability by learning knowledge. Shuu and Sumire felt warm seeing that, while Tomoichi and others were blinking in shock seeing the complete difference of the image with Hajime’s current atmosphere……

Everyone shivered seeing the figure of Kaori that was continuing to watch fixedly at the studying Hajime from behind bookshelves……

Each time Hajime moved between bookshelves, Kaori would swiftly and silently moved from shadow to shadow while keeping a fixed gaze on him through the gaps of the bookshelves. Seeing her daughter like that, Tomoichi escaped from reality while Kaoruko was holding her head……

When Kaori was desperately making excuse, as usual Yue raised her voice in delight □……Proof obtained! Proof obtained! Officer, it’s this person! This person is a genuine stalker!□, and then as usual too it devolved into a scuffle……

Hajime’s group who was spending enjoyable time like that enjoyed a dinner with Luluaria once more that evening,

Like that, the next day, Hajime and co departed to the place that Shuu and Sumire strongly wished for.

It was a place that for the two of them, no, for anyone was a harsh place, however, it was a place where a happening that could even be called as fateful occurred.

Yes, they departed to Orcus Labyrinth.

–

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

※Below is the update in Gardo.

- Zero Chapter 5　Oscar’s serious mode
- Nichijou Chapter 22　Meunte-san finally appear.

※Arifureta Gaiden——Zero volume 2 as well as Zero comic volume 1 are now on sale!

The left is Zero volume 2. Meil and Raus appears. Also, a guy who hasn’t appeared in the main LN but has appeared in WN version also appears. The story also bring to light of the original place of the undersea ruin. The right is Zero comic volume 1. The cause why Miledy has such annoying personality is brought to light there.

※Regarding special perk side story

「Coupled」 refer to special perk when purchasing Zero volume 2 and Zero comic volume 1 at the same time.

- Chain store-sama

「Girl power-!!」

The girl power showdown of Miledy VS Meil-oneesan. Or so it seems but, that person’s girl power is just like regarding the case of 530,000 power level (TN: It seems this is reference for Dragon Ball)

- All specialist shops 【Animate-sama, Tora no Ana-sama, Melon Books-sama, Gamers-sama】

【Secret and black history and other this and that】

A short time in a hideout of the liberators. Corin and co along with liberator members are talking about the past story of Oscar and Miledy……the black history of the two are overflowing

- Animate-sama 【coupled】

【Romance will be accompanied with sacrifice】

Oscar produced a great number of romance weapon, but there the mother of success, experiment is necessary so……

Comrade = test subject, by Oscar

- Tora no Ana-sama 【coupled】

【That guy is there, surpassing the era】

That guy is there. No matter how many months and years passed, no matter what era it is without fail he will be there! Yes, the monster of the clothing shop will!

- Gamers – Shosen

【Through 10,000 km searching for the beloved transmutation master】

That poster girl who love Oscar, this is the story of her travel while making a mess of various things.

=>It’s the continuation of the story in the afterword of afterword at Overlap’s special site for Zero volume 1.

- Melon Books 【coupled】

【Poster girl killer】

A new nickname for Oscar……this why handsome guy is just……

- CCC (Tsutaya)

【She is siscon in any case】

Meil-oneesan is a “genuine Onee-san” who will love any kind of little sister.

※The special perk’s information is also written at Overlap-sama’s homepage.

Please confirm there too if you like.

That’s all.

Best regards!

Arifureta Chapter 326

Arifureta After III　Tortus Travel Journal ⑥

–

A huge object was floating in the world of azure where the light of the sun was pouring down.

Hajime’s artifact, the airship Ferner. It was flying as though gliding above the sky where clouds that looked like cotton candy were floating sparsely.

Originally they planned to use gate to teleport until the city of Horuad, but the wish of Shuu and others 「This is a rare chance, so we want to try flying in the sky of another world」 resulted in this.

「UOOOOOOOOH」

「HOAAAAAAAH」

It went without saying who was the people who were making those strange voices. It was the Nagumo spouses. They held on the handrail on the rear deck and leaned their body forward to gaze at the superb view of another world. As for the strange voices, it seemed it was because they were deeply moved.

And then, although the other weren’t raising strange voices like those two, the Shirasaki spouses, Hatayama Akiko, and the members of Yaegashi family were also similarly feeling

moved seeing the other world’s sky, mountains, plains, and the European Middle Ages styled cities and villages that sometimes came into view.

The scenery that they were seeing right now itself was moving, but it was also added with how they were staring at the surrounding area outside the plane that was moving in high altitude. The experience that was impossible to get in earth made them couldn’t help it to feel excited even though they were adults.

「Son! You are amazing!」

「Son! You are the best!」

「Well, thanks.」

Shuu and Sumire rotated their upper body and snapped up a thumb up to behind them. The synchronization in their words and action made one wondered whether they had made prior arrangement beforehand. Though for Hajime, his parents were already like this since he became aware, so it was already too late to wonder about that.

Hajime smiled wryly at the delight and action of his parents. Tomoichi asked him then with a bit of excitement.

「Hajime-kun. What’s with this avant-garde hull? How about the propulsive power? How can something this big is flying even though it has this kind of shape? Or rather, in this altitude we aren’t having trouble breathing or even feeling the slightest breeze……」

Hajime’s wry smile deepened at Tomichi who looked like he would press his question further even now while explaining.

So to speak, Ferner was moving by adjusting the gravity neutralization effect and the gravitational direction from the gravity stone. More accurately speaking, the airship was “falling” rather than “flying”.

So to speak, the propulsive force came from magic power, as long as Hajime was on board, he could freely move the ship no matter where he was. There was a barrier put up so the wind pressure could also be adjusted, and so on.

Also, about the avant-garde hull——the shape that was like manta fish was because of Hajime’s preference. Things like aerodynamics and the like, he didn’t give a damn about those things, so he said.

「No, how should I say it, it’s really fantastical huh……」

「Fufuh, Otou-san, Otou-san. Hajime-kun is amazing right?」

「……」

Tomoichi-san fell silent morosely. His daughter circled to in front of him and pressed for answer, but he turned around and drove her out from his vision. When Kaori circled around once more, he turned around. Tomichi, turn-. Kaori, turnn-.

The Shirasaki father and daughter was turning and turning and turning.

It was the persistent offense and defense of the father and daughter, but seen from the side it only looked like a super close parent and child. The atmosphere was naturally getting filled with warmth and smile.

Tomoichi was sending a gaze that was filled with demand for help! To his wife.

Kaoruko was making a gaze as though she was looking at difficult people while her gaze turned toward Hajime. It seemed she left it completely to him. Please change the topic okay! Her gaze said.

Hajime shrugged in acknowledgement and after showing a pondering look for a bit, he grinned widely.

「Oi, Tio.」

「Mu? ……Aa, I see. Kuku, I doth not mind.」

Tio was quick on the uptake. The two of them really had mutual understanding of each other.

Everyone's gaze was turned at Hajime and Tio, at the same time the two of them started walking together to the edge of the deck.

「Yue, take care of the ship's handling.」

「……Nn. Have fun.」

Yue laughed 'fufu'. Sure enough, it seemed she had completely grasped the intention of Hajime and Tio. She poured her magic power into Ferner and accepted the control of the ship while smiling gently.

「Tou-san, I'll show you an astounding fantasy scene after this. It will be a fantasy among fantasy that anyone will absolutely admire if they are a man.」

「What? Hajime, just what in the world are you planni――」

Shuu didn't even hide his excited face after hearing his son's words, but the next moment, his expression became frozen.

Because Hajime and Tio jumped off the ship.

A single hop from Ferner, really casually.

「Heh?」

「Eh, huh?」

Shuu and Sumire were dumbfounded with mouth gaping open. Tomoichi and others were also in a daze with their mouth staying open.

But, the next moment they raised a shocked yell ‘WAAAAAAAAH!?’ and rushed forward toward the deck’s handrail.

Yue and others the wive~s were completely calm. Despite that they didn’t notice that fact at all and they leaned forward while holding on the handrail to look below in order to search after Hajime and Tio who suddenly leaped to their death.

It was right at that moment.

――’GURUAAAAAAAAH!!’

A grand and majestic roar that stirred the air hit the ears.

Shuu and others spontaneously jerked and backed away while trembling.

Ahead of their gaze, a giant jet black shadow passed through from below to above.

Akiko and Kaoruko unconsciously fell on their butt from the impact of the view. The shadow that was causing that by rushing in the sky was of course,

「Dra, dragon!」

Shuu's emotional and shocked voice echoed to the surrounding.

He already knew. That she was able to transform into dragon like what came out in book or game. He had also seen it for real before.

Although, this was the first time Shuu and Sumire saw her flying in the sky freely like this. In the end they had only seen her figure transforming on the ground.

Above Ferner that was gliding in the sky, Tio in the black dragon form was circling around elegantly.

The jet black dragon scale that was shining from the sunlight reflection was very beautiful. The large wings that were catching the wind and the huge body that was full of impact were tremendously majestic.

One more roar surged out as service. This time it was accompanied with a scorching breath attack.

The eyes of Shuu and others who were looking up from the deck of Ferner were emitting a shine that didn't lose to the sunlight. They were letting gout voice of excitement that sounded similar like a roar.

Tio circled around above them one more time before flying parallel to Ferner with smooth gliding.

「How's that, Tou-san? Great right?」

Hajime said that while unusually sticking out his chest looking incredibly proud. He was standing imposingly on Tio's back with his arms folded while grinning.

「I’m totally jealous-. A man’s romance is right in front of meee-」

Shuu hit the handrail in frustration repeatedly. He was also kicking the ground with a vexed look.

Hajime laughed cheerfully seeing his father looking like that. Then he told Tio to land on the deck.

「It seems Tio doesn’t mind, so how about Tou-san and everyone else also ride on her back? Flying on the sky riding on a dragon’s back in another world will be a nice memory of a lifetime you know?」

「……Tou-san has never felt so grateful like today, for having a son like you who have a dragon wife. Please let meee!」

「Tio-chan! Actually I had the thinking that someday I want to ask to ride on you! Please」

「Fufu, it wouldst be mine pleasure if it’s Hahaue-dono and Chichiue-dono. The others art also like family to me, so come up without worry, because I wouldst guarantee thy safety.」

The voice of Tio that was directly resounding inside their head seemed to make Tomoichi and others to be convinced for real that the majestic black dragon near them was really Tio. They nodded up and down in high speed speechlessly.

Like that, Shuu and Sumire rode on Tio first and Tio leaped up to the sky once more.

Just when it seemed they looked a bit scared, as expected from the parents of Hajime, the spouses’ tension was at max right from the start. Shuu was even hopping up and down on Tio’s back while yelling ‘hyaho~i’.

「……Fumu」

「Hm? What's the matter Tio?」

Hajime sharply noticed Tio letting out a voice that sounded deeply emotive and asked. Then, Tio spoke with a voice that sounded vaguely in agony.

「No, it's nothing big. Being stepped on like this by Goshujin-sama's parents art quiet pleasant in its own wa――」

「Hmph」

「HIGYAAAAAATHANK YOU VERY MUUCHH!」

Goshujin-sama's fist that impacted hard until the internal organs smashed on the back of the perverted hopeless dragon. The hopeless dragon-san smoothly spoke out her gratitude even while screaming.

The terrific impact caused the altitude to drop with a jerk and the body balance crumbled.

「――ah」

Shuu fell leaving behind that voice. Like that 「aAAAAAAAAAA~~~」 a trailing scream resounded through the sky.

Hajime made a face that said 「Ah, damn it」, while beside him Sumire screamed 「DEAAAAAARRR~」. And then, a silver flash rushed at the corner of their vision.

A beat later.

「Geez-, Hajime-kun, what are you doing! Otou-san almost turned into a stain in the ground just now!」

Kaori flapped her silver wings to fly up while carrying Shuu in her arms from behind.

Shuu who experienced skydiving without parachute was muttering 「Thank you very much, thank you very much-. Living is wonderful……」 while his eyes were half rolled back.

「Well, even if he become a stain on the ground, if it's Kaori then it's recoverable……」

father-in-law
「Don't treat Otou-san like a broken doll! Geez……treat life with care, you know?」

Although there was limitation to a certain degree, the demon king-sama's group had basically risen above death. Even Hajime himself was starting to have thinking like 「It's fine, it will only be death for a bit. It will only really be for a bit」 taking root inside himself.

Flap flap. Flap flap. The silver wings that actually didn't need to be flapped at all to fly were flapping adorably due to habit and Kaori returned Shuu on Tio's back.

The moment it became obvious that there wasn't any particular problem, Shuu stared fixedly at Sumire who was laughing while holding her stomach while raising his voice toward Tomoichi who was on the deck.

「Tomoichi-ku~~~~n! It's just like you saiiid, Kaori-chan is~, certainly an angel!!」

「That's right isn't it! Kaori is an angel! Kaoriii~, that was amazing~! You did great! But, Otou-san's life has shrunk by fifty years here, so please don't suddenly jump off anymore~」

It seemed that Tomoichi-san would soon run out of life span.

「Chichiue-dono, I beg for thy forgiveness.」

「No no, that's fine. I was getting a bit too high spirited. And it was also really thrilling.」

「Pupupu~, dear, you went 「Aa~~~」 in real life! Ahahahah」

Laughin unreservedly at her husband's shameful sight was Sumire quality.

Shuu cleared his throat to cover up his embarrassment while attempting to shift the topic.

「The great labyrinth we are going to right now is also a really thrilling place right? That free diving was a good side entertainment.」

「I think the thrill of a great labyrinth is different from just now though……」

There, Hajime who was also smiling a bit like Sumire made a slightly worried expression.

「Tou-san, Kaa-san. As I thought, I think it's better to only visit the surface floor and Oscar's hideout in Orcus. Fighting against monster is……it's more gruesome than Tou-san and others think……」

「No, Hajime. We came here because we want to know the track that you followed. I want you to show us what kind of path you were walking.」

「……」

Although, Hajime wondered how much he should show them. In his opinion, the happening before he fell into abyss

and the survival after he encountered Yue would be fine to be shown.

That was as long as the two of them, and also Tomoichi and others didn’t give up from the bloody battle.

However, the event at that time when he went through the change of his mind……

He flatly refused to do something like bragging of his misfortune. There would be no point of him purposely showing the bloody and nauseating event. If they wanted to know about the path that he walked, he thought that it would be enough to start from after his encounter with Yue.

But, would Shuu and Sumire be convinced with that much……

It would be great if it went well and they let the censoring passed. Hajime was thinking of such thing for a while.

「Kuku. Even Goshujin-sama who was always quick and decisive art also a parents’ child. I couldst see thou straying in various things before thy parents.」

She was saying those words while laughing slightly, but her voice was filled with gentleness, understanding, and also affection toward Hajime’s hesitation.

It seemed that the telepathy was sent only to Hajime seeing that Sumire and Shuu didn’t react.

Being seen through at various things and having a definite affection directed to him like this made Hajime to avert his gaze to faraway in embarrassment.

「You’re right. I’m like this in front of family, “princess Tio”.」

□!?□

□Really thank you for always considerate at various things, “princess Tio”. You are always reliable, “princess Tio”. No, I’m seriously not your match, “your highness”.□

□Stop calling me princessss-. That is truly embarrassing! Goshujin-sama! Thou art childish!□

Strength left Hajime’s shoulders and he sat down cross-legged. He then caressed the solid and smooth scale with a surprisingly gentle hand movement. Tio slightly shook as though writhing emotionally.

□Tio, turn around. Also hold back that expectant gaze of yours. Perform a lovely sightseeing flight okay?□

□Right-. Leave it to me. I’ll have them taste to their heart content, just how great the black dragon of Goshujin-sama art.□

Question mark floated above Shuu and Sumire seeing the intimate conversation of their son and his dragon wife that seemed to have ticklishly sweet atmosphere somehow. Even so they were sending a gentle gaze at their son.

After that, Tomoichi and others also enjoyed being dragon rider to their heart content. Then the group arrived at the city of Horuad while their excitement hadn’t cooled down.

–

–

–

「……Right, everyone. Here is the spot where the famous incident “Kaori-san confessed wholeheartedly, she got easily rejected though and went pugyaaa” took place.」

「YUEEE!!」

In front of Orcus Great Labyrinth, the cat fight that was like usual occurred.

Hajime and others who entered Horuad introduced the inn that they once stayed at and the guild that they used while going until the entrance of Orcus Great Labyrinth.

Like that, the first voice that Yue spoke out was that.

Tomoichi’s gaze became fierce. 「You bastaardd, why the hell you rejected my angel, huuuh!?」He spoke with a thuggish look like that.

However, surely even if the place got introduced as 「The place where her confession succeeded」, there was no doubt that he would still say 「You bastaardd, what do you mean that you are going out with my angelll, huuuh!?」 with a thuggish look.

While Kaoruko, Kirino, and Akiko were giving a deeply interested gaze that said 「Oh my」, Shia smiled wryly while giving mediating words.

「Eeer, about that. It’s not like it was just Kaori-san who got rejected by Hajime-san. Other than Yue-san, everyone got thoroughly rejected after all.」

「My, is that so? Shia-chan also got rejected?」

「Somehow that sounds hard to believe.」

Kaoruko and Kirino’s eyes turned into saucer because they knew about the current intimate relationship of Hajime and co.

Myuu smiled cheerfully while adding the explanation at the two.

「For papa Yue-oneechan was “special” nano!」

Kaori whose appearance was a bit messy made a displeased expression as though to confirm those words and said.

「It’s frustrating but, that’s how it was, Okaa-san.」

「Truly. Goshujin-sama at that time was completely an adherent of Yue supremacy doctrine.」

「He hasn’t changed that much even now though~」

Tio and Shia muttered in nostalgia. Aiko and Shizuku smiled wryly while continuing after them.

「Thinking back, Shia-san’s guts was amazing. Even though when I reunited with Hajime-kun it was a Hajime-kun that was a complete believer of Yue supremacy doctrine, she still brazenly declared 『I’m Hajime-san’s woman desu』.」

「In a sense, that time of confession was Kaori’s turning point. Since then, Kaori began to rush nonstop to a strange direction.」

It was human’s nature to become absurdly curious when seeing the related party to be immersed in recollection by that much. Especially when there was a method to reproduce that scene, then it would be even more so.

Kaoruko’s eyes shined and she pressed on Yue.

「Yue-san Yue-san. Can you reproduce Kaori's confessions scene?」

「……That's a piece of cake, Kaori mama.」

Yue's crimson eyes sparkled. She gave a powerful thumb up. Kaori attacked to stop her……

Kaori mama pinioned her from behind.

Kaori papa who didn't want to see something like his daughter's confession scene tried to chide his wife, but before that the magic of past viewing activated.

And then, the confession scene was unfolding before their eyes.

「I love you.」

「NOOOOOOO~~, DON'T LOOOKKK~~~!」

Kaori who turned bright red blocked her ears with her hands while yelling 'no no', but the past image was mercilessly progressing. The eyes of her mother were shining brilliantly as though saying 「Myy myy」.

Inside the image, Hajime turned Kaori down, however, she exposed herself with strong gaze and words.

And then, at the corner of the image, for some reason there were men piled up with this and that getting discharged from their crotch……

「Because, my feeling that think of Hajime-kun won't lose against anyone.」

「NYUWAAAAAAAA~」

Kaori tried to drown out her own words with a loud strange voice, but her line resounded clearly.

By the way, they were at a public place, so naturally there were a lot of people. Like adventurers, or merchants……. Everyone had warm eyes like 「Hou」 or 「Oh my」.

Anyway, Kaori kept blocking her ears and rolled around on the ground while hugging her knees. It seemed she couldn’t help but roll in a frenzy from the overflow of her embarrassment.

The battle of woman inside the image ended, and at the end Yue gave permission for Kaori to accompany them while Hajime got left out from the talk for some reason, and then the two smiled at each other fearlessly.

It was the moment of beginning of the history of the love rivals that still continued even now.

「Watching it once again, rather than the beginning of Hajime and Kaori, it’s more the beginning of Yue and Kaori. They are super close with each other using the love rival relationship as cover.」

「「We aren’t close!」」

Yue and Kaori intimately objected in synchronization. They were really close with each other.

By the way, the image of Kouki challenging Hajime to a duel and fell into hole at that time was also playing, but the kind everyone splendidly pretended to not see it.

「Uu, Okaa-san you idiot!」

Kaori pointed the tip of her ultra shyness at Kaoruko. However, Kaoruko gently caressed the head of the crouching Kaori like she was a little kid.

「Fufu, I'm sorry Kaori. But, Kaori was really cool there. As expected from Okaa-san's daughter. You really did your best.」

「uu……Okaa-san……」

Other people were watching, it was a bit embarrassing to be consoled like a little kid……Kaori fidgeted with blushing cheeks.

「You see, Okaa-san too was fighting against the swarming cockro――cough, women in order to catch your Otou-san. I remember in the past~」

「Okaa-san, just now, you said cockroach……hey, just now, you were going to call other woman as cockroach――」

「Your Otou-san, he was really, really popular. What's more, he was someone who couldn't differentiate between being kind and pampering, he was being kind to any kind of cockr――woman, so Okaa-san had it hard.」

「Ka, Kaoruko? You don't need to go that far about the matter of the past I think? I think? We are in front of Kaori, look, there are also everyone else, right?」

「Otou-san. More importantly than that, Okaa-san called other woman cockroach……」

It seemed that the Shirasaki spouses had also gone through various things. Tomoichi-san was sweating like rivers, while Kaori-san was put off that her mother almost called other woman as cockroach so naturally.

The bearer of the original Hannya, the current user of Yaksha stan○――Shirasaki Kaoruko.

Seeing from this, indeed, it seemed that Kaori had really inherited her blood. As expected, Kaori didn’t call other woman cockroach, but that must be because luckily she was similar with Tomoichi in that aspect.

Soon the crowd of people would get too big, it looked like it would become a commotion if they stayed longer than this.

Hajime thought that as expected, this wasn’t something to be done in front of the entrance. He forcefully carried Yue like a sack when she was going to invite even more chaos by saying 「……And then, this is the figure of Shizuku rejoicing from receiving a present of sharp thing from her best friend’s loved one」, and he urged everyone to enter inside Orcus Great Labyrinth.

–

–

–

「Hou, it’s quite developed. It looks exactly like a game’s dungeon.」

「Really. The lighting is……aa, is this the green light stone Hajime mentioned? A natural mineral become lighting for the place as it is.」

Shuu and Sumire were looking around busily inside the dungeon with great interest.

Tomoichi and others too surely had the image that the place would be darker and eerie like a tunnel. They seemed to be

greatly interested seeing that the path was unexpectedly developed.

「The monsters that comes out in the surface of Orcus aren't a big deal. But raw material can be taken from them to a certain degree. With the level of the monsters here, not just low level adventurers, even civilian can manage somehow, so there is also a lot of demand. That's why this area is properly developed.」

Hajime's explanation that was like a tour guide was added further by Kaori.

「Conversely, if you come out to a place like a natural cave that isn't developed, it means that it's a place that is dangerous for people who aren't combatant, so be careful okay?」

Hajime said 「Although……」 there while pulling out Donner with really natural movement.

And then, he pulled the trigger even without really taking aim. It wasn't accelerated electromagnetically, even so the firing sound was loud and echoed greatly due to the location.

The bursting sound that made the air shook made Shuu and others to turn their gaze to the front in surprise.

Over there, there was a monster like mice with its head blown away. It was a ratman.

「Uh」

「……」

Kaoruko covered her mouth with her hand while Akiko went a bit pale. It seemed the people of Yaegashi family were calm, but even Tomoichi’s expression looked tense.

Even more ratmen crawled out from the corner ahead. They shrieked up ‘KIIIIIII’ which sounded harsh on the ear and their dark red eyes glinted fiercely with killing intent.

Clear killing intent and hostility rode on the wave of air that descended on the group. Kaoruko immediately clung on Tomoichi while feeling like weak in the knees. Tomoichi was supporting her with pale expression.

Beside Hajime, Yue was looking up at him wordlessly. Hajime guessed what her gaze was saying, but he smiled and shook his head.

Right after that, the group of ratmen fiercely rushed forward. Their number was roughly thirteen.

「O, oi, Hajime? That’s――」

「Hajime, it’s alright isn’t it?」

Shuu and Sumire asked in a bit of agitation. Hajime answered with his action.

Firing sounds burst out consecutively. It was precisely five shots. One shot would open wind hole on several of the ratmen altogether, furthermore the penetrating bullets would ricochet and dug into the remaining targets.

It was a swift killing, no, it was truly an instant killing.

Shuu and Sumire, and then Tomoichi and others were dumbfounded in mute amazement seeing gun fired from

nearby and the technique that looked like it came out right from Hollywood.

Even calling the fight overwhelming would still be presumptuous. It was a difference of status between both sides that was exactly like an elephant stomping on ants. They couldn’t help but feeling that.

Hajime made his “treasure warehouse” shined and summoned bullets from empty air like it was nothing and casually performed gun spin reload while turning around. The bullets were loaded into the cylinder like a joke, and just right after they perceived that the gun was put into a holster with flowing motion.

「Just as you saw, even if we are in the abyss, there isn’t anything here that is a match against me. And just like Kaori said, I hope you all would refrain from acting on your own because of curiosity but……well, Yue and others are also here so it’s fine even if you think that there would be no danger here.」

Tio and Shia stayed in the rear, while Kaori, Shizuku and Aiko stayed at the left and right. As long as they were staying in the middle of that formation, nothing would happen even in the worst case.

There was one problem. The reason why the monsters weren’t turned into ash by Yue’s magic or turned into dust by Kaori’s disintegration, but dealt with gunshot that left behind remains which looked the most graphic in a sense.

「So, how is it? As expected, should we just go directly to Oscar’s hideout?」

That question was especially directed to Kaoruko and Akiko.

They must had understood how graphic a battle could get from the scene just now. Although they were monsters, seeing a living thing burst out right before them was a traumatic shocking sight.

However, the image of the past they would see from here on would be even more gruesome than this. It would be better if they rethought once more right now.

This was a consideration from Hajime who was thinking that. Sumire who saw the how greatly shaken Kaoruko and Akiko were proposed that the two of them took a rest at the hideout ahead of them.

It seemed that Sumire and Shuu didn’t plan to pull back. They intended to follow after the track of Hajime till the end.

Kaoruko looked at Tomoichi. Tomoichi nodded with a strong gaze even while he was still a bit pale. Kaoruko looked at Akiko next. Aiko was worried about her and grasped her hand, but she too took a firm look at Aiko and then turned her gaze to Kaoruko and gave a strong nod.

After Kaoruko saw that, she looked like she had resolved herself.

「No, we are fine Hajime-kun. Please teach us too the path all of you have gone through. ……I too want to know the path my daughter had followed.」

「……I understand. But, please don’t force yourself. The chance isn’t just this time. If it’s necessary, I’ll be available anytime to show you anything.」

Seeing Kaoruko recovering her smile back and saying her thanks, Hajime shrugged with a troubled expression in resignation.

After the parents cleared the first barrier, he advanced while talking about the memory of that time.

Midway a monster that looked like a cute raccoon came out,

「Kukyu?」

「Uh」

Shizuku who loved cute things hesitated a bit. This monster almost had no combat ability, but it had a battle style of approaching with its adorable appearance and then injected a powerful paralysis poison with a bite. And so, there was no danger even if she hesitated but……

「Haa, I'm not good with this type――」

「Ei-」

Supan-, a pleasant sound resounded. The raccoon-chan cried 「Kukyu?」 and its head flew.

The perpetrator was Kaori-san.

Kaori turned around while behind a fountain of blood spurted out from the monster's neck.

「Shizuku-chan, it's alright? Leave this kind of thing to me!」

「……Yes.」

The empty eyes of the raccoon's head that was rolling on the floor was looking at Shizuku hatefully.

Shizuku replied with a faraway look. Surely ahead of her gaze there was the Kaori of the past who was gentle and unrelated with violence.

Kaori papa and Kaori mama who were making the same faraway look behind Shizuku undoubtedly were also recalling their past daughter in nostalgia.

After that, Shuuzou and others said 「I can’t endure anymore! Let us fight!」, so they advanced while experiencing real battle under their daughter’s supervision. After a while, the group finally arrived at floor 20 that connected to the floor 65.

The first thing they did was taking care of several Rock Mount that were camouflaging themselves as rock by disintegrating them, opening win hole on their body, splattering them, or turning them into ash.

「I think you can call this place the fated crossroad. It has been removed right now but, at that spot there was a crystal with beautiful appearance called Glanz crystal, but it was a trap that teleported the victims to floor 65.」

Tomoichi asked with a complicated expression after hearing Hajime’s explanation.

「……I heard. The kid that once killed Kaori, activated that trap right?」

「Yes, that’s right. That guy had feeling for Kaori, and because of that he reached out for that Glanz crystal for her.」

「I wonder, what would happen if that time I didn’t show interest to that crystal……」

Would their fate change? Kaori showed a complicated expression.

Hajime kindly patted the head of Kaori who was like that while speaking.

「It wouldn’t change anything. He didn’t act because of one cause. ……The target of his scorn which was a virtually incompetent guy had the attention of the girl he liked. The days in the school and then everything that happened since coming to this Tortus were nurturing the seed of killing intent inside that guy.」

And then, he literally “succumbed to evil temptation”. He, the human called Hiyama Daisuke didn’t have the strength to oppose that devil’s whisper.

「There is no need to worry about it, both in good meaning or bad meaning.」

Hajime asserted firmly with unwavering tone toward Tomoichi and others whose complicated thought was showing on their face from hearing the deed of the classmate who died in another world.

「That guy is already gone. I killed him. Everyone doesn’t need to feel troubled about that guy or that guy’s family. Even if there is a need to worry, it will be my burden. It will be troubling if other people get concerned on their own about my burden.」

‘I’ve got no plan to feel burdened about it though’, Hajime read the atmosphere and didn’t say that.

It was a harsh manner of speaking that felt like rejecting away others, but it was clear that those words were filled with thoughtfulness toward Tomoichi and others. Tomoichi and co relaxed their expression slightly.

Even so, perhaps in order to change the atmosphere that had become slightly gloomy, our Yue-sama took a step forward.

「……Don’t worry, Kaori. It’s just as Hajime said, nothing would change.」

「Yue……」

The smile of Yue that was even emitting kindness made Kaori’s expression broke out into a smile……

「……Yes, no~thing would change. Hajime would encounter me without a doubt, and inevitably rejected Kaori.」

「Yue?」

Yue-sama threw out her chest and snorted ‘fufuh’.

「……Because, Hajime said it. Even if he returned to the past, 『I’ll follow the same path no matter how many times』『I want to meet Yue after all』 he said.」

‘Mufufuh’, Yue-sama laughed while her hand elegantly covered her mouth. *Snap* Kaori kept smiling while blood vein pulsed on her forehead.

「……Yes, Hajime would come to meet me. Leaving Kaori behind! Leaving Kaori behind! No matter how many――」

「Disintegrate!!」

A silver flash surged out while grazing Yue’s head. The thrust of a large sword that was clad with disintegration magic was unleashed!

If Yue didn’t immediately bent down, she would become like the raccoon-chan before this!

「……My, my scalp, it got slightly shaved, perhaps」

「Chih, I missed.」

Yue-sama held her head with both hands saying 「Even though the experience of my scalp getting shaved happening once is enough……」 while her eyes became slightly tearful. It seemed she still perfectly remembered how in the past she got shot by Hajime.

「……You-, this stupid Kaori! It's really childish to get angry from hearing the truth!」

「Yue is the bad one! Besides, I'm still in my teenage year! Not like Yue! Eh, come to think of it, Yue-san Yue-san, how old are you right now?」

「……Die」

「Come at me!」

Yue and Kaori started quarreling that was like breathing to them.

Certainly the atmosphere had returned to normal but……at this point this felt a bit exasperating already.

While the two were grappling with each other, they

「If the trap didn't activate, various things would absolutely change I'm telling you!」

「……No way it would change! No matter what kind of path it was, it's destiny that Hajime would meet me!」

「The, then, it will be fine if I lock him up! Like in the inn or in the palace……anyway I'll just lock him up! If it's Hajime-kun at that time even I can lock him up anyway!」

「……Confinement!? Terrible!」

「I, it’s not terrible! Everything is for Hajime-kun’s sake!」

「……Kaori you psycho! Rather than getting confined by the dangerous Kaori, better me who confine Hajime!」

「No! I’ll be the one confining him!」

「……I’m the one-, who am going to-, confine him!」

‘Confine, confine! Confine Hajime in!’ Yue-sama and Kaori-san grappled with each other while repeatedly yelling that.

Hajime opened his mouth with unusually pale expression and also trembling voice.

「The past me was really in serious danger huh. Before talking about Hiyama or whatever, the imprisonment bad end from Kaori and Yue was right beside me……look, this arm. It’s really getting goose bumps.」

A hand gently patted Hajime’s shoulder that was slightly trembling. Unexpectedly it was Tomoichi.

「Hajime-kun. It’s fine, in the end love will win. I too, in the past I also got confined by Kaoruko.」

‘This uncle, he suddenly revealed something outrageous’……not just Hajime, everyone other than the two grappling with each other also thought that. It was only Kaoruko who for some reason was fidgeting with embarrassed look while saying 「Geez dear, don’t mention that」.

「You see, at first she would only come to look after me devotedly like a regularly visiting wife, but during that time

her private items keep increasing inside my room, and when I realized it was like the two of us were living together……

E, err, Tomoichi-san?

Tomoichi-san was looking back at the past while slightly trembling. What's this, it looked like light was gradually vanishing from his eyes……

We were always together when going out, even though we had different class in the university, when I noticed she would be waiting for me outside the classroom……

O, o~i! Kaori! Stop fighting and look after your father for me! Somehow this looks bad!

Tomoichi-san's eyes were rapidly getting blank.

Kaoruko would do all of the shopping, so there wouldn't be any need for me to go out other than for a date. But, even that date would gradually turn into things like watching movie inside the house, or spending comfortable time together, things like that……

Kaoruko-san! Your husband's eyes are dead you know!?

Kaoruko-san was blushing hearing her husband talking about their life before marriage while fidgeting.

I wonder when did it happen. Once I went out for drinking with the girls in the university, then the next day, Kaoruko told me. It's okay that you don't go to the university anymore. Leave everything to me. It will be fine if Tomoichi-san stays forever in this room she said……

Kaoriii-!! The dangerous one was actually your mother! Ah, no, you are also a dangerous enough girl huh! God

dammit!

‘Tomoichi-san! Return to your senses!’ Hajime said while shaking him back and forth.

Tomoichi gasped and returned to his senses, then he looked at his daughter who was still making racket about ‘confinement-confinement’……

Hajime-kun. Call me when it get bad. I’ll give you some advice.

……Yes, thank you very much, Tomoichi-san. If it feels like Kaori finally become like “that”, at that time please let me listen to your life experience.

Right now they looked like a happy husband and wife, so surely Tomoichi had handled the past yandere Kaoruko well.

In Hajime’s view, for the first time Tomoichi looked like a very reliable adult.

And then, seeing Hajime honestly begging for help with an expression that was slightly twitching, Tomoichi too was also feeling something.

The two of them exchanged a powerful handshake with each other.

Hajime and Tomoichi. It was the instant where the distance of their heart shrunk by a little.

After that, Myuu who was actually having fun with following the track of the Hajime before she met him remonstrated Yue and Kaori because the group didn’t make any progress at the slightest due to their quarrel.

She came forward, faced the two and pointed her finger forward and said 「Myuu know the two of you are really close with each other nano! That's why please be a bit more quiet nano! Both Yue-oneechan and Kaori-oneechan are bad nano!」.

To think that a five years old little girl would caution them with 「Let's be quiet」……

Yue and Kaori who were told that they were bad got depressed and sat with seiza posture before Myuu, and they apologized 「……Sorry that Kaori is too high spirited」 「Forgive Yue for her noisiness」.

Like that, the group that pulled themselves back together finally teleported to the floor 65 using the gate, toward the destination of that trap.

–

–

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Next chapter, the Orcus sightseeing part of Tortus travel journal will be over.

At that point I will put an end to this arc temporarily, do another short story for a bit, and then I'm thinking that I want to write a long extra story again (like the story of Shia, the hero that punch the enemy to death……or perhaps another story……).

The Tortus travel journal that is following the journey of the past is a story that Shirakome himself want to write slowly while having fun remembering various things, so forgive me that the chapters are scattered here and there like this, but please understand.

※The main comic chapter 24 is updated in Comic Gardo.

It’s the climax of the battle versus Miledy. It’s impactful like usual!

It’s distributed free of charge, so please go there to look no matter what.

※Arifureta spin-off——Zero volume 2 as well as Zero comic volume 1 are on sale!

You can use them as accompaniment inside your cool room.

The murderous heat wave is continuing, so all of you the people of Narou too please pay attention to your health.

Arifureta Chapter 327

Arifureta After III　Tortus Travel Journal ⑦

–

They noticed that the air had changed at the same time when they got through the dazzling light.

Hyuu hyuu The sound of wind shook their eardrums.

「……So this place is like this.」

「How should I say it, this place, it’s really eerie.」

It was a space that was shaped like a gigantic dome. And then, there was a long and large stone bridge that connected that space from end to end.

Shuu and Sumire who were looking around on top of that spoke their impression sounding like they had their breath taken away.

The wind that felt like it was stickily caressing their skin from the bottom of the earth was blowing up from below. It made the parents to get goosebumps.

They were on top of a bridge that felt like it was floating midair without any handrails or a curb. Kaoruko and Akiko were looking around with terrified expression while staying at the center as much as possible.

Hajime opened his mouth toward the parents who were busily looking around.

「This is the place where we were teleported to by the trap――the sixty fifth floor.」

In case they were descending through the floors normally, they wouldn’t come out into this place. This was a place where they would teleported into only in the case they got caught by the trap.

Hajime explained so, but,

「I, I see, I got it, Hajime. But you see, before you explain!」

「Oi-, Hajime-kun! Behind, behind!」

Shuu and Tomoichi were desperately pointing behind Hajime while raising their voice. Hajime’s tour guide explanation entered their right ear and slipped out through their left ear. Kaoruko and Akiko, and then even Sumire were staring unblinkingly at behind Hajime right now with a pale expression. They didn’t look like they were listening to his talk.

That was only natural.

After all, if speaking in manga terms, there was a monster approaching with a pressure that felt like there would be *GOGOGOGOGO-* sound effect drawn behind it with big and bolded letters. It was emitting pressure that forced the parents to comprehend whether they wanted it or not that this was an existence that was in a completely different level from the monsters they saw until now.

――’GURUAAAAAAAAA-‘

The monster’s roar resounded and shook the atmosphere. Kaoruko and Akiko hugged each other tightly while their legs became unable to stand anymore.

Furthermore, a lot of Traum Soldiers were approaching from the other side of the stone bridge. Their eye sockets were shining piercingly with dark red flame. Even the members of Yaegashi family had tense expression.

「Aa~, this is bad. I should have put mental resistance on everyone beforehand.」

「……Nn. This is a failure. Everyone, sorry.」

――’GURYAAAAAAAA-‘

Hajime awkwardly scratched his cheek while he still hadn’t looked back. Yue too was making an apologetic look while applying fear resistance using soul magic on the parents.

‘No, that isn’t the time for that though……’

It felt like the sound of the parents’ heart could be heart like that.

――’GURYAAAAAAAAA-‘

The third roar. At the same time, the stone bridge shook fiercely.

The monster was the master of the sixty fifth floor that once cornered Hajime and co into a predicament. It began to charge above the stone bridge where there was no place to escape.

And so, for the time being,

DOPAN-♪

——*GYAAAAAAAAAH*

A roar that was a bit different from before resounded.

A crimson flash blew up one of the monster’s front legs. It happened right when it was stepping forward, so the monster that lost its support fell on the ground face first like in a comedy skit. It then obeyed the law of inertia and slid *SUZAA~~~*.

And then it stopped still right before Hajime with only a single step of distance remaining between them.

「Cough-. Ee~, this thing’s name is Behemoth. Fundamentally it only has two attack patterns of a normal rush or a rush while transforming scorching red like “My horn is burning reeedd”. It’s a relatively disappointing monster.」

Behemoth roared *GURYA-* and somehow it managed to stand up. It stared down Hajime with an angry eye glint while its horn transformed scorching red above its head.

Hajime-san pointed with his finger and said 「As you can see, this is its scorching red transformation」 as introduction for Behemoth-kun’s signature move.

「Although it was when we still hadn’t arrived for long in Tortus——」

Behemoth swung down its head.

Hajime’s uppercut burst up.

The artificial arm’s vibration pulverization and skill “Strong Arm”, and then the explosion from the elbow accompanied the punch.

――*GYAN-!?*

New discovery. Behemoth’s scream sounded like a dog.

「Thinking back now, getting tossed around helplessly by this kind of pseudo cow that know nothing except charging ahead is nothing but the height of stupidity. Surely there was a way that would be a bit better to deal with it.」

「It can’t be helped Hajime. At that time everyone was absolutely at their limit.」

Shizuku smiled wryly while agreeing. During that time Behemoth that got hit by a fierce punch on its nose was desperately rubbing its nose with its remaining front leg. It was a gesture that a puppy would often do when appealing 「My nose feels reeally hurts」.

「Hajime-sa~n! What should we do about the skeletons over here?」

The crowd of Traum soldier was gradually approaching Hajime and co.

Hajime pointed there with his finger while saying 「Please look over there. They are bones」. The parents’ gaze was naturally guided to there.

「They are called Traum soldier. Their strength isn’t really much. But, they have many soldiers. The choices in the trap at this floor is fundamentally to advance ahead and slip through a single powerful Behemoth, or to pass through the Traum Soldiers with their violence of numbers and then go back to floor 20 through the stairs ahead of them. 」

Hajime continued his explanation while turning to Kaori and gave an instruction 「Ya, Kaori-san, disintegrate them along

with the magic circle sounding like an elderly nobleman from somewhere. Kaori replied lightly Ye~s, while at the same time silver flash planted trauma into the Traum Soldiers.

They instantly became ash, and furthermore the magic circle that continued to produce the Traum Soldiers turned into ash along with the ground.

The parents went O, oo sounding half bewildered and half in admiration like ‘Kaori-san is seriously awesome’.

There, Behemoth recovered from its pain. It made its horn scorching red once more and assaulted Hajime with clear killing intent and hostility.

And, through one thing and another, I held back this Behemoth, the bridge crumbled, and we harmoniously fell together.

Along with the really abridged explanation, a Cross Velt appeared above the Behemoth that was going to charge ahead. *Pashu-* An object that was like an anchor fired into the Behemoth, and right after that it got pulled toward the end of the stone bridge.

——’GUO!? Gu, GURYAAAA-!!’

‘Wai-!? What’s this!? I, I’m pulled……no, NO WAY I’LL LOSEEEEEEE-!!’

It felt like such voice of Behemoth could be heard. It desperately stood its ground in the attempt to prevent itself from getting dragged away, but from the beginning it almost had no leeway to control its posture with the size of its physique.

When it got dragged draggingly for a meter, its resistance ended in vain and it easily got dragged toward the stone bridge’s edge.

‘AH!? My hind legs!?’

Behemoth wriggled and struggled. Its hind legs fell while its front leg’s claws were clawing on the ground desperately to crawl up but……

「Ee~, about its depth, I fainted at that time so I don’t know how deep it is, but in this rare chance we have here the Behemoth-san who possess a conspicuous burning horn, so let’s test for a bit if we can confirm how far it will fall down.」

Behemoth’s gaze snapped toward Hajime. Surely there was no way that it understood his words, but its expression really looked like it was saying this.

――’You’re lying right?’

Like that.

Hajime-san grinned and aimed his Donner.

His aim was the front leg of Behemoth that was desperately clinging on the ground, the claws there.

DOPAN- A shooting sound echoed. At the same time the claws of the Behemoth that should be said as its lifeline were pulverized.

Behemoth’s eyes were saying 「This is, just too cruel……」……it felt like that.

――’aAAAAAAAAAA-‘

Behemoth raised a scream that sounded slightly similar like Shuu when he was free diving from Tio’s back while falling toward the bottom of the Abyss.

Thanks to the scorching red horn, the sight of its falling could be seen clearly.

For a while everyone was peering down harmoniously without saying anything, and then Kaori opened her mouth with a really complicated expression.

「……Thinking back after looking at this, it’s really deep. It was really a miracle that Hajime-kun survived from this.」

「You’re right. If I remember right, he was blown away by the water stream that spurted out from a tunnel on the wall and the stream brought him into a different tunnel was it……」

「Papa, papa. Myuu think if Papa appeared at the nine death one life special show in the TV before this, papa would surely get the first place nano.」 (TN: Nine death one life, it’s a phrase in Japan that means a narrow escape from death)

「Myuu, I wonder about that. Goshuujin-sama hath returned alive quite a lot from extremely deathly situations, so it couldst already be said that it’s nine death nine life instead.」

「……Nn. Perhaps it will be ok if it’s a special show about a man that absolutely won’t die no matter what happen.」

「No no, Yue-san. In that case it will be better to just upfrontly make special show of shocking video or astonishing video. There is no doubt that Hajime-san will monopolize the best 100.」

The parents were letting out a dry laugh while making faraway gaze at their son and daughters who were talking carefreely with the fading Behemoth’s scream as BGM.

They slowly and quietly returned to the center of the stone bridge and let out a large sigh.

And then, Sumire spoke.

「Theeen, Yue-chan. Please replay the past image okay?」

「Why!? I had explained it carefully and thoroughly just now right!?」

Hajime spontaneously made a tsukkomi. Yes, Hajime was acting like a tour guide because he was aiming to avoid the replaying of the past image by explaining it orally.

「……Nn. Hajime, you don’t know when to give up.」

「N, no, but you know, Yue.」

Hajime who got scolded ‘bad child’ by Yue, but for him who was always decisive and resolute in everything, at this time he was being really obstructive even at this late.

「Goshujin-sama, firm thy resolve already. Hahaue-dono and Chichiue-dono, as well as everyone else, they wouldst not change their decision to watch the past of Goshujin-sama.」

「That’s right Hajime-san. Besides, if it’s the usual Hajime-san, even if everyone’s mental image of you become bad, won’t you say something like 「So what. If it become bad, then I just need to make it good again」.」

Yue and others thought that Hajime was still reluctant to show his gruesome past. They made a slightly exasperated

expression while expressing such words to persuade him.

However, Hajime attempted to object with his expression still looking bitter.

「No, about that it doesn’t really matter anymore for me. I have consented and also resolved myself regarding *that point.*」

「……Nn? Then what are you dissatisfied about?」

Yue tilted her head. Hajime spoke in respond.

「……This is just for example, something like a drama that you are acting in it, isn’t it a relatively high hurdle to have your family watch such thing?」

「……」

The reason of Hajime’s reluctance came to light. It seemed he was simply embarrassed.

Kaori and Shizuku, and then Aiko turned their gaze to their respective family and nodded 「Indeed!」.

At that time they were under various pressing crisis. Their discomposed figure, their heated figure when making some kind of resolve, their failure, and also their hardworking figure, everything would get seen by their parents.

Thinking really carefully, certainly it might be embarrassing! Shame assaulted Kaori and co at this late.

An atmosphere that perhaps as expected it would be better to explain orally and stopped with the past playback was starting to flow.

「Tha, that’s right isn’t it. It’s a bit, you know, the me at that time, was like that in various things……」

「Ce, certainly. Unlike Kaori, I think it’s fine for me at Orcus but……I, I want to be spared from the past playback in the ic, ice and snow cavern……」

「I wasn’t here at all so there is no problem but……after this……e, especially in the city of Ur……」

Seeing their daughter who were starting to become reluctant, Kaoruko, Kirino, and Akiko looked at Yue with a smile. Their gaze spoke more eloquently than their mouth.

Yue glanced at Hajime.

「That’s why, Yue. Also you too Tio. Right now stopping it is――」

「Yue-chan, Tio-chan, Sumire-okaasan is feeling sad.」

Sumire cut off Hajime’s words and said such things with a dramatized gesture.

Yue and Tio who were about to accept Hajime’s words thinking that it couldn’t be helped were startled and looked at Sumire.

「I really hope you two will listen to Okaa-san’s request. If not, Sumire-okaasan will become really sad and have to rethink about various things, about the suitableness of my son’s wife and so on――」

「……Nn-! Please watch Okaa-sama! The image that is even more vivid than the combination of Ultra Blueray and 4K HD! Fast forward, replay, skip and slow function, everything can be done at will!」

There was no hesitation. Hajime raised his voice 「Yue!?」, but Yue intentionally put her hand on her ear saying 「Eh? What did you say?」 and pretended not to hear.

While that was going on, the figures of Hajime and co getting teleported to the center of the stone bridge were projected.

Sumire and others, the mother camp high-fived 「Waa~i」 with each other. Shuu and others the father camp were sending Hajime kind gaze of understanding and sympathy. During that time the nostalgic Hajime and others of the past were teleported to the center of the stone bridge.

‘Oo!’ Cheers were raised. Sumire and co watched over their children of the past. But, their voice immediately quieted down and their expression stiffened.

――‘I definitely won’t let you kids die!’

The tense voice of Captain Meld resounded.

The reproduced Behemoth and also the Traum Soldiers were things they had seen just now. They were monsters that Hajime and Kaori casually took care of.

But, the situation where the students inside the image were becoming half panicked conveyed the urgent situation at that time clearly. It conveyed the killing intent of the monsters fiercely through the image.

Kouki got into a heated dispute with Meld who was trying to make him retreat. Shizuku recommended to obey Captain Meld, but Kouki shoved aside the words of his childhood friend and resolved to fight.

There, Hajime came running.

——’They’re all panicking because their leader isn’t with them!’

Hajime who had docile personality and thoroughly avoided quarrel raised a thundering yell.

——’Quit being so focused on what’s in front of you! Look at what’s behind you for once!’

The classmates were attacked by the Traum Soldiers and showed a chaotic situation.

The scene of other kids also screaming in fear and despair while fighting made the parents wanted to avert their gaze.

The development after that was truly like surging waves.

Behemoth’s charge. The shockwave blowing violently. Hajime and others who tumbled around like toys.

In the place of Meld and other soldiers who were wounded and couldn’t move, Kouki and co challenged the monster.

However, even the hero’s trump card “Heaven’s Might” didn’t do anything. Kouki was blown away and they ran out of method.

——’Carry Kouki out of here!’

Meld’s words were directed to Hajime. His words said to abandon them the knights, and even Shizuku and others, to save only Kouki no matter what.

In this situation where no one would survive if someone wasn’t abandoned, Sumire and others, especially the members of Yaegashi family who was shown right now the decision to cast away their daughter were gritting their

teeth hard. Their daughter was lying down on the ground while groaning in agony before their eyes. It was unknown how they were feeling as parent.

Like that, the moment of destiny finally arrived.

A single young man whose fighting ability was equal to nonexistent came forward.

He only had a single weapon. With just the technique to process mineral, he remained in the battlefield by himself.

「Hajime……」

「……」

While everyone was retreating, he was frantically holding back Behemoth. Shuu called out the name toward that figure of his son, while Sumire was tightening her lips.

They understood. Their son normally had the principle to not rock the boat, but he was a child who wouldn’t hesitate to take action when it was really mattered.

At this kind of time, he was a child who absolutely wouldn’t show his back no matter how scared he was.

However, as parents they thought this as expected.

‘Why didn’t you run away.’

They felt proud of their son who took a step forward for the sake of someone else, but at the same time they also thought that they wanted him to discard such courage.

Like that, 「Ah」 a voice was raised.

It was unknown whose voice it was. Or perhaps, it might be the voice of everyone there.

The multitude of magic that rained down like falling stars were flowing above Hajime who was desperately retreating, and then, a single fire ball landed right beside Hajime.

Hajime was blown away easily like a leaf. His eyes were blank, however, he desperately tried to return.

That effort, was prevented by Behemoth’s last killing intent.

□□Hajime!□□

Shuu and Sumire spontaneously reached out their hand toward Hajime inside the image.

As though reacting toward the two of them, Hajime was reaching out his hand while falling toward the abyss.

He was immediately swallowed by deep darkness and vanished.

What resounded after that was Kaori’s yell. Only that sad yell that screamed out her pain which broke open the heart echoed in the surrounding.

And then, the image of the past vanished suddenly.

Not to mention Shuu and Sumire, even Tomoichi and others continued to watch the spot where Hajime was falling.

Seeing that, Yue seemed to think of something and nodded □Fumu□.

□……Nn. That was a marvelous gutsy image of Hajime. I can eat three bowls of rice with only that gallant figure of Hajime just now.□

「……Yue, try to read the mood for a bit.」

Kaori-san's tsukkomi ended up as empty air. Yue lifted her hand and said 「……By the way everyone. Please look at this image for a bit」, then she snapped her finger while looking at Tio.

Tio wordlessly asked 「Ee~ seriously? We are going to do that in this atmosphere?」 with a troubled expression, but Yue pointed sharply with her finger as the GO sign.

Tio sighed while putting into her smartphone a pseudo SD card that had recording of past image. She then projected the image in midair with hologram.

――――'Nagumo-kun, are you awake? It's me, Shirasaki. Can we talk for a bit?'

「!?」

「!?」

The two who reacted and turned their face toward Yue in a flash were Kaori……and Hajime.

「Wawawa-, Tio! Stop!」

「……I won't let you!」

Yue-sama took the advantage of Kaori's agitation and restrained Kaori with combination magic of gravity – space – binding light chain. Kaori screamed 「Fukya!?」 while collapsing on the ground like a bagworm.

「Hajime-kun! Please!」

「Acknowledged!」

Hajime aimed Donner at Tio. He planned to shot the smartphone. He pulled the trigger instantly without any hesitation.

But, in that instant,

「……Shia!」

With Yue's order, the superhuman rabbit reacted spontaneously. She reached her hand in front of Tio with a speed that didn't even leave behind afterimage, and grasped the bullet that flew with speed that far surpassed the speed of sound.

Although it wasn't railgun shot, but this rabbit was really damn bugged……Hajime thought with twitching expression.

Shia stepped in within that opening and restrained Hajime firmly with a solid grapple.

「Ahaha……I'm sorry, Hajime-san.」

「……In most case, you are prioritzing Yue rather than me huh.」

Hajime thought 「How miserable」 somehow.

The image kept playing even during that time. Kaori dressed in negligee entered into Hajime's room even though it was late at night.

「Kaoriii!? Yo, yo yo yo, you are in a man's room dressed like that! Otou-san don't remember raising Kaori into such bad child!」

「Oh my Kaori! How bold!」

The Shirasaki husband and wife were in great excitement. Although it seemed their excitement's vector was to the opposite direction.

「Yue! Stop alrea――muguh」

Kaori removed the binding by disintegrating it along with the magic power, but she was unable to stop the recording. She was embraced by her own mother and her mouth was also blocked. There was no way she would be able to disintegrate her own mother.

Inside the recording, a conversation that caused the people involved to writhe in agony was continuing.

――'Why don't you protect me?'

――'I'll protect you, Nagumo-kun.'

Groans that sounded like 'NUOOOOO~' resounded. They came from Hajime and Kaori. It seemed the mental damage on them was critical.

Kaori separated herself from Kaoruko and covered her face with both hands and crouched down. Yue patted her shoulder kindly.

「……Don't worry Kaori. From here on I will also properly display my embarrassing sides after all.」

「Rather by that you mean, because it's unavoidable if Hajime-kun's past image is displayed, before that happen you will take me down with you……it was something like that right? Right?」

「……Kaori. This is what I think. Friends are wonderful.」

「Let’s review the definition of friend okay! It isn’t anything like a relationship to go to the grave together just so you know!」

Kaori grabbed at Yue with teary eyes. Yue lightly dodged her ‘hyoi hyoi’ while rythmically humming 「Friend♪ Friend♪」.

Excluding Hajime who was still having a faraway look from the serious damage he bore due to shame, everyone returned from the painful atmosphere just now into the usual atmosphere seeing the two who was acting comical harmoniously like that.

Amidst that, Shuu was roughly stroking the head of Hajime who was busy running away from reality due to the lethal embarrassment damage.

「What are you doing, Otou-san.]

「It’s nothing? More importantly, what happen after this? From here on is exactly the time when you have it the hardest right? Show it to Tou-san properly.」

「……Haa. I get it. I’ll bring you there. Just, it’s worrying that you all have Yue acting considerate just from a past image of this level.」

「Haha……I get it.」

It seemed that everyone understood that more than the objective of taking Kaori down together with her in shame, Yue was projecting Kaori’s past image because of her consideration to the parents.

Warm gazes that were filled with gratitude were showered to Yue who got her cheeks stretched out by Kaori.

Yue who noticed such gazes while her cheeks were stretched out *munyo~n* by Kaori blushed slightly from a bit of bashfulness.

–

–

–

Hajime and co arrived to the abyss instantly using gate.

When they stepped on the bank with flowing cold underground water where Hajime was washed away to, there was a magic circle there, the one that Hajime carved in the past using transmutation magic in order to warm himself.

After staring at that a bit emotionally, Hajime turned his gaze ahead of the tunnel, to the depth of the darkness.

「……So Hajime, advanced through this path.」

Hajime shrugged affirmatively at Shuu's question.

「Now then, with us here, even the abyss won't pose any trouble. Although, the abyss is the abyss. The level of the monster here is different. I'm thinking to take some measures before advancing.」

Saying that, Hajime looked at Myuu. Myuu tilted her head in puzzlement. Hajime spoke to her.

「Myuu. It's the demon ranger's turn. Have them thin out the enemy at this floor for us.」

「Got it nano! You bastards~, it's time to work yeah! Nano!」

Myuu's exclusive treasure warehouse shined.

The next instant, smokescreen of seven colors that didn’t have any particular meaning burst out! What showed up from inside the colorful smokescreen that dispersed with a whirl were Myuu’s exclusive multi legged living golems where each one of them were making cool pose.

Their name, Demon Rangers!!

「Everyone have at them! Nano!」

‘Aye aye-ma’am!!’ Demon rangers made a splendid salute as though to say that, equipped wheels at their feet, and then they showed beautiful skating like master of skiing while vanishing into the corridor ahead.

After a while, explosive sound *chudon-* and firing sound *dorurururururu* resounded, then after that screams like 「Kyukyu!?」 or 「Gurya!?」 or 「Pigyaaaaa!?」 echoed.

‘Aa, surely the wild rabbit ears are being turned into raw meat thereee’, thinking so, Shia asked while her rabbit ears were slightly shaking.

「Hajime-san Hajime-san. Why are you using Myuu-chan’s golems? I think it’s fine to us your own Grim Reapers.」

Hajime scratched his cheeks awkwardly while replying with a really complicated expression.

「Well, that’s true, but in that case, their action fundamentally will stay within the range of my perception no matter what. Even if there are multiple of them, it doesn’t change the fact that I’m the one controlling them.」

‘However. Demon Rangers are……’, when Hajime looked at Myuu,

「Myu? Myuu isn’t controlling Bel-chan and others nano. Bel-chan and others will do their job properly if they are ordered nanon.」

‘Why are you asking something so obvious?’, Myuu tilted her head while saying so.

「That’s why. Rather than controlling multiple bodies using the perception ability of a single person, seven people…… no, seven bodies? Aa~, well, setting aside the inside, having seven perception ability to deal with it is more certain right?」

「Thinking it over once more, what is “inside” them?」

Not just Shia, the other people were also asking with their slightly twitching expression. However, Hajime also didn’t happen to have the answer. They tried looking at Myuu but,

「? Bel-chan is Bel-chan nano. Sa-chan and the others are also Sa-chan and the others nano.」

‘Why are you asking something so obvious?’, Myuu tilted her head while saying so.

「We, well, no matter. In this world here there is also soul magic or necromancy, this kind of thing must happen sometimes. I’ll clarify it eventually but……for now, it’s not anything bad for Myuu so I guess I’ll put it on hold.」

Their identity would come to light due to a certain incident, while the demon king would notice that the unnatural working of their consciousness that didn’t try to seriously investigate the inside of the golems true identity seriously was the working of demon kings. But this was a story of slightly ahead in the future.

「Now then, those guys are securing the safety of this area so there is no problem……Tou-san, Kaa-san. Also Tomoichi-san and everyone too. Sorry that I'm sounding persistent, but I think it's pointless to watch what happen from here, rather it will be disgusting. Putting aside Tou-san and Kaa-san, for Tomoichi-san and everyone else it's not like what happen here is related to Kaori and the others. Purely unrelated to my own feeling, I strongly recommend to not see the event here.」

Hajime's words that were laced with the air of seriousness didn't even shake Shuu and Sumire's determination.

Tomoichi and others looked at each other for a bit. And then, they seemed to reach mutual understanding and nodded to each other, then they turned a strong gaze toward Hajime.

「There is no way it's unrelated to us, Hajime-kun. We here are the parents of our daughter who got caught by a harem bastard. You, the case that made it necessary for you to become the current you……as Kaori's father there is no way I can avert my eye from it.」

It seemed everyone shared that thinking of Tomoichi.

Then, Hajime shrugged and he had nothing further to say.

And then,

「Understood. Then, Yue, I'll leave the image projection to you. Skip and fast forward at the timely moment. After all I was here at this level for about ten days. Also, Kaori and everyone else, I'll leave the protection of everyone's mind to you all.」

Hajime gave his instruction while lightly lifting up Myuu in his arms for some reason. Next he also took Remia's arm and

pulled her to his side.

Myuu and Remia tilted their head. Hajime smiled brightly to the two of them while saying this.

「Let's meet again here when you all finished. We are going to have tea time, so take your time.」

「Myu!? Papa! What about Myuu!? Myuu also want to watch nano! Or rather, papa also won't go with them nano!?」

「I won't.」

Hajime papa. His face was smiling, but his tone was firm.

Sumire and Shuu went 'Ee~?' with a dissatisfied voice.

「Hajime, just what are you saying.」

「No, Kaa-san. Why do I have to watch together with everyone else the scene of my sad self writhing around. What's more if I have to give commentary or something…… that's too surreal, impossible.」

「No, but you see, Hajime……」

「Tou-san. If it's about what I was thinking at that time or whatever, ask about that to Yue and the others. When we created the Crystal Key at the ice and snow cavern, my emotion was completely transmitted to them. They should know about it really well.」

'Besides', Hajime strongly hugged Myuu while saying.

「If it's Tou-san and the other parents, and Yue and the others who already know about it then it's one thing! But I absolutely cannot show to Myuu the embarassing sight of

me writhing around looking like this and that because of whatever while shouting kill kill kill!

It seemed that was the biggest reason. A papa always wanted to show only his cool side to his daughter.

It's not embarrassing at all nano! That's why, papa! Myuu also――

If you say that you want to see it no matter what, then go after crossing my corpse.

It was a tremendous resolve and determination.

Myuu's expression became dejected saying Ee~, that's just not done nano……

And then, Myuu tried to wriggle and squirm to escape from Hajime's hold, but the desperate Hajime papa showed no carelessness or opening with resolve that there ain't no way he would show his daughter his black history. His hold was unshakeable and she couldn't get away.

E~rr, dear. I'm also staying behind? I too have interest to your past though……

Remia. Look, this struggle of Myuu. It's obvious that after this she will be in a bad mood. I need support to fix Myuu's mood during the time until everyone come back. The burden is too heavy for me alone.

That's true. He would be the culprit of her bad mood. Like that the papa~s nodded deeply. It seemed that it was the same for everyone at how they had it hard when dealing with their daughter's bad mood when they were the cause.

Shuu too, when he against his better judgment viciously beat up his granddaughter Myuu in a fighting game, Myuu would often tell him 「I hate someone like Shuu-ojiichan!」 and he would end up like a corpse, so recently he came to understand really well the difficulty of dealing with a daughter. ……Though that was simply him reaping what he sow.

While Remia mama was sending to Hajime papa a gaze that was saying 「My my, really you are……」 as though she was looking at a truly difficult person, Hajime urged Yue and others with his gaze that was saying 「Now, leave this place to Myuu me and go ahead!」.

Yue and others, and then Shuu and others advanced ahead with a really complicated expression.

From behind, a loud voice of 「Papa you idiooo~t!!」, and then there was a loud voice of 「Ouch!? Oi Myuu! You mustn’t squeeze the base of the nail! Ah, oi! Don’t bite!」, and a voice without a care 「My my ufufu」 were resounding. It made their expression became even more complicated.

Like that, after they took a distance that hid the figures of Hajime and others in the darkness, Yue finally reproduced the image of the past around the area of a large intersection.

The illusion Hajime that appearedin reality was advancing step by step even while looking scared.

The frail figure that was completely different from Hajime’s current state that was overflowing with confidence that could even be said as haughty and arrogant made Shuu and Sumire looked nostalgic. Tomoichi and others looked like they couldn’t connect the illusion figure with the current Hajime no matter what, so they were showing a bewildered expression.

Then, right after that, a battle between a kicking rabbit and two tailed wolf began. Hajime’s expression was twitching at the kicking rabbit’s overwhelming power and he tried to get away from that place……

「Hajime-, don’t!」

Right after Shuu spontaneously yelled so.

A cruel past began to play in a pace that was like raging wave.

The eyes of Shuu and others couldn’t even perceive the kicking rabbit’s charge. It was a kick that possessed a destructive power that surpassed Behemoth’s charge even with that small body.

Hajime was blown away along with the blasting of the ground. He rolled over on the ground many times. His left arm was broken and dangled down powerlessly, however it didn’t end there.

「U, a……」

It was unknown whose groan it was. The appearing floor master——claw bear. Even through the image of the past, the atmosphere of killing intent and brutality that ran off the proper course could be felt.

Ahead of the gazes of the parents that were completely swallowed by the sight, Hajime lost his left arm. That arm was eaten right in front of him and he crawled deeper into the wall desperately while crying.

「Uh, guuh」

Kaoruko and Akiko fell on their knees. They put their hand on their mouth with their face losing complexion. It was literally a memory that overturned their stomach. Kaori immediately raised their mental resistance using soul magic and healed them with regeneration magic.

「……He is really something.」

In the place of Shuu and others who were losing their words, it was Shuuzou who muttered with a low voice.

Koichi and Kirino whose expression was similarly grave like Shuuzou continued after him.

「Exactly. In this situation, there aren't that many people who can move for survival even only unconsciously……」

「Normally, they would be unable to move from fear and it's over.」

Kirino got close to Sumire who was biting her lips.

Yue was making an expression that seemed to say 'No matter how many times I see it, I want to kill this claw bear!' while turning toward Shuu and others and asked.

「……It will be even more terrible from hereon. Will it be fine?」

「……Yeah. Please do, Yue-chan.」

Yue nodded briefly and continued the replay. In the reality, there was an entrance where people could enter while standing into the place where Hajime once used it as a base. They advanced from there.

The playback from there was fastforwarded. A total of ten days. Hajime feeling nothing but agony and the process of the way of his mind getting remade could be clearly seen.

There was no help from anyone. There was darkness, hunger, phantom pain, and then solitude.

Even if there was anything unpleasant, Hajime’s principle was always to make a troubled smile and warded it away without rocking the boat. Even when he stepped forward for someone else’s sake, rather than getting into a fight he would perform a dogeza with his principle of nonviolence.

Such Hajime divided the world into two sides in order to survive.

That was, whether it was an enemy, or not.

And then, he established an absolute standard.

That was, to kill anything hostile to him. He absolutely wouldn’t yield toward everything in this world.

A completely transformed look. Eyes that were like beast.

「Dear……」

「……」

Sumire clung on Shuu. Shuu also wordlessly hugged Sumire tightly.

From there it was the height of gruesomeness.

In order to survive, he slurped the lifeblood of beast and devoured their flesh. That was truly the act of a beast.

The breakdown of his flesh arrived. The regeneration using the divine water.

He was within the violent agony where death would be a salvation, however, it was a hell where he couldn’t die by all means.

Breaking, healing, breaking, recovering.

Perhaps it was because of the agony that surpassed the permissible amount, his hair lost its color. Perhaps it was the proof of his reincarnation and growth, faint dark red line ran on his skin.

It was, truly.

The moment of the birth.

The monster of the abyss.

While such scene was playing, not just Kaori, even Tio and Aiko were busy rallying up the mental strength of the parents many times using soul magic. If they didn’t do that, the parents’ mind would already shut down from a long time ago. It wasn’t a scene that could be watched by ordinary person with their sanity intact.

For a while no one said anything.

Before long, inisde the past image, around the time Hajime was starting to do numbing trial and error in order to create Donner, Kaori opened her mouth and a small voice leaked out.

□……I wasn’t able to do anything for him. It can’t be helped that I, we all vanished from inside Hajime-kun.□

Her eyes were holding back tears. Rather than sadness, it was the proof of her frustration.

Everyone’s consciousness was finally taken off from Hajime and turned toward Kaori.

「I’m thinking it once more, I’m glad that Yue was here, at the bottom of this abyss for Hajime-kun.」

「……Kaori」

Kaori spoke her words with her eyebrows knitted apologetically because she knew about Yue’s suffering from being imprisoned for a long time here.

However, Yue didn’t look like she was feeling any displeasure at the slightest, far from that she was showing a faint smile. A gentle smile.

Seeing the two of them like that, even the parents who had their heart completely chilled after losing all complexion watching Hajime’s past that was too ghastly looked like they recovered back a little bit of warmth.

Even if only awkwardly, everyone had a small smile on their face. And then, they began to watch once more at Hajime who was standing up.

Following the past Hajime, they arrived at the scene of a decisive battle.

The battle against the claw bear that once broke Hajime’s heart.

Even though they understood the result already, the ferocious battle made everyone clenched their sweaty hand.

Like that, Hajime who won the battle at the end and finished off the claw bear was……

――’That’s right… I just want… to go home’

He would live, and went home to his birthplace, to his family. To where his father and mother were.

No matter what he had to do. Even if he had to kill someone else.

He would absolutely go home.

He looked up and ascertained his own heart.

Hajime started walking. Toward the abyss’s even deeper abyss.

However, this time he wasn’t tumbling down into it, but with his own legs, carrying a clear and absolute determination, and resolve.

Shuu and Sumire couldn’t endure it anymore. There was no way they could keep their tears from flowing.

Their cry might be infectious. Tomoichi and Kaoruko, and then Akiko too were wiping their eyes. Shuuzou and others seemed to hold some kind of large emotion within their heart which caused them to take deep breath repeatedly.

Yue, she took the hand of Shuu and Sumire and formed her words while smiling gently.

□……Otou-sama, Okaa-sama. Please feel proud. Hajime was strong. He didn’t return home because he became strong. He went home because since the beginning, his heart, was

really strong. It was Otou-sama and Okaa-sama, who granted him that strength.

「Yue-chan!」

Sumire was overcame with emotion and strongly hugged Yue. Shuu too hugged Yue along with Sumire.

Everyone was staring at that with warm gaze.

Before long, perhaps a bit embarrassed from such gazes, Yue tapped the back of Shuu and Sumire *pofu pofu* and separated her body from them.

Within the atmosphere that was solemn but somewhat warm, Yue coughed and cleared her throat.

「……Then, for now let’s return to where Hajime is. Hajime should agree now to properly accompany us from here. Or rather, I will make him come along.」

The first wife-sama declared with a serious expression. Next, in order to change the place’s atmosphere, she even uttered something unnecessary.

「……From here on, it will be the happy and embarrassing heroine time of Yue-san. Forgive me Kaori.」

「Why do you apologize I wonder!? I wonder!?」

「……At first, surely anyone had this thought, the “Kaori is the heroine theory”. Forgive me for betraying that.」

「Who are you apologizing to!?」

「……I’m sorry for stealing the person that you love.」

「Okay, you are picking a fight with me aren't you! I accept, bring iiit!!」

'Calm down Kaorii!' Said Shizuku while pinioning Kaori from behind. Kaori-san struggled somewhat more than usual.

With Kaori's noble sacrifice of her emotional state (?) as the compensation, the atmosphere recovered to some degree just as Yue aimed. To be able to use even recovery magic for the mood through the sacrifice of her emotional state, as expected from the healing master.

Like that, Yue and others returned to the bank where they first arrived at.

Shuu and Sumire were wracking their brain thinking what kind of words they were going to say to their son. Tomoichi and others were also at a loss of how they should act toward Hajime. When they arrived while feeling like that……

「Look, Myuu. What about this? It's pretty right? It's a ring processed from the grantz crystal I mentioned just now. There is also a necklace see!」

There was the figure of the relatively no good Hajime papa who was desperately observing his daughter's mood by giving present of expensive accessorry.

However, Myuu herself kept hugging tightly into Remia's chest. She looked like a koala.

She glanced across her shoulder briefly at Hajime, but she immediately huffed 'puih' and returned her face on Remia's chest. Her face was completely buried into Remia's breasts, so even her field of vision at the left and right was completely shut out.

The five year old kid who was completely sulking seemed to be a formidable enemy even for the monster of the abyss.

「Remia! Give me your wisdom!」

「My my, dear, really……first thing first, I think trying to win over a young daughter using jewel is completely out you know?」

「……Then, what about candy?」

「Myuu isn’t that kind of simplistic woman nano.」

「Guh……」

The monster of the abyss-sama finally collapsed on all four.

「……Somehow, it feels stupid to think complicatedly.」

「You’re right.」

The ghastly and grand past of just now felt unreal. No, well, he was like this right now after overcoming all of that, so it wasn’t like it was strange though……

The Nagumo husband and wife smiled wryly thinking that.

Tomoichi and others too, seeing the figure of Hajime in a whirl of busyness dealing with his daughter erased their pensive feeling.

However, their emotion and gaze were a bit different from before. Like that they walked toward Hajime, Myuu, and Remia.

‘Let’s see, as your senior in fatherhood, we will kindly give you a little lecture in how to deal with your daughter’, the father~s said.

After that, it went without saying that the father~s got hit by their respective daughter’s nitpicking of their fault and they got sunk instantly.

Like that, the “papa group” deepened their camaraderie in a strange way. The distance of their heart toward Hajime was especially shortening while the group went toward the next fateful location——

Toward the place of encounter of the monster of the abyss and the vampire princess.

–

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The Orcus arc isn’t finished……

I plan to finish it at the next chapter, but before that forgive me,

I wish to have holiday for the Obon festival next week.

Best regards.

–

PS

Nichijou’s newest chapter is in the middle of publication at Gardo.

Lily’s pitifulness gave a nice taste lol

Also, in the latest chapter of Nico Nico Manga’s Nichijou, they become able to use the space magic.

If you like please try reading it lol

Arifureta Chapter 328

Arifureta After III　Tortus Travel Journal ⑧

–

Hajime papa who managed to fix the humor of Myuu somehow or other showed a tired look like right after his transformation from eating the monster meat the first time.

「About from here on ahead, it will only be a repetition of me single-mindedly fighting and eating monsters until floor 50. The sun will goes down if we are going to watch all of those, and it’s not really entertaining anyway. I’m thinking to go right away to floor 50 so……」

‘Is there any objection?’, Hajime asked with his gaze. Shuu and others replied that they didn’t mind.

「……Nna. We teleport?」

Yue raised her face with a slightly lascivious expression from Hajime Hajime’s neck and asked.

She was replenishing her magic power that was decreasing from consecutive use of regeneration magic by bite and chuu~. It looked like she was biting from behind while getting carried on his back.

Yue habitually bit and chuu~ at everywhere on Hajime’s body if there was a chance, so her movement was so natural

just like how grass swayed from blowing wind. It was to the degree that there was no ground for making tsukkomi at it.

Yue was going to crawl her tongue on Hajime's nape looking like she wanted to have a bit more, but Kaori tore her off from him and tossed her away. Hajime glanced at that while saying.

「Before that, this is a good chance, there is something that I want to take a look for a bit beforehand.」

「Hajime, what could it be?」

Shuu tilted his head in puzzlement. The one who knew this place the best was Hajime, and there wouldn't be anyone else than Hajime who was doing anything here. It was natural to wonder what in the world he would want to see.

Hajime carried Myuu on his shoulder while starting to walk ahead. At the same time, he took out a sunglass from his Treasure Warehouse and put it on.

Sumire's gaze became excessively gentle.

「Hajime……」

「Stop it Kaa-san. That gaze which is saying 「Putting on sunglass in a dark cave like this, geez, really this kid! He still isn't able to graduate huh!」, don't look at me with that gaze.」

This sunglass was an artifact to look at the past image——Urd Glass. Hajime explained while walking through the cave searching for something.

「Hajime-san, what are you searching for?」

Everyone walked behind Hajime. There Shia asked as their representative.

「A rabbit.」

「A rabbit is right here you know?」

Pyon pyon!, Shia rabbit hopped up and down while placing both her hands beside her rabbit ears. Attracted by that, above the shoulder Myuu was also mimicking rabbit ears with both her hands while going pyon pyon!

Hajime smiled warmly while adjusting the Urd Glass and looking around,

「Ah, there it is.」

Saying that, he sent a gaze at Yue asking her to execute regeneration magic. Yue consented and snapped her finger.

What was projected was……

「That’s, a kick rabbit? Ah, could it be!」

Shia went *pyon!* with a comprehending expression. Right after her Kaori continued with the answer.

「Inaba-san!」

Yes, what was being projected before everyone was Inaba-san in his younger days with his splendid rabbit ears twitching around, no, this was the origin of Inaba-san!

「Kaori, what is this Inaba-san you are saying?」

In respond to Tomoichi’s question, Kaori explained in a way so that everyone else could also understand.

She explained, that Inaba was a monster of this floor, a kick rabbit, but he accidentally consumed the god water that Hajime spilled behind, which strengthened his magic power and physical body further. From that he became an existence that deviated from a normal monster.

「It seemed that he was watching Hajime-kun defeat the lord of this floor, the claw bear. He said that if he too can still become stronger, then he want to chase after Hajime-kun! So he departed to a training trip while going down the floor with his own strength, that's the kind of rabbit he was.」

Tomoichi and others made admiring voice 'hoee~' hearing Kaori's explanation. Ahead of their gaze, Inaba-san was searching for the slightly remaining god water in the ground's depression and drank it while casually kicking and killing its brethren and two tailed wolf.

Shizuku smiled wryly while adding more explanation.

「before the final battle, Suzu who came here to obtain subordinate monsters accidentally discovered him and she formed a contract of employment with him.」

「Co, contract of employment……」

――Full guarantee of all necessities of life. Three meals a day. No, four meals with afternoon nap included, five days work a week with two days off. Paid vacation provided! In addition, free time also could be negotiated! Furthermore! If the offer was taken right now, oh my, a special magic stone of Suzu would come along free of charge! With this you could say good bye to yourself of yesterday! Now, in this chance, wouldn't you take this status up surrounded by happy comrades in a lovely workplace!?

Surely, Suzu at that time wasn’t right in the head. Because the monsters that obeyed her were nothing but insects, her heart became somewhat ill. She was desperate. It was for the sake so that Eri who was her opponent in the decisive battle wouldn’t say「Ee, what’s with this insect woman. It’s disgusting……」 to her.

While hearing that explanation, Inaba-san finally had an encounter.

Yes, an encounter with the claw bear-san that was revived by the dungeon’s characteristic function. The rabbit face was totally anxious looking like it was saying「This is bad-, totally badd-」.

The claw bear made the gaze of a predator and didn’t doubt that it was absolutely the stronger monster. It approached as though to show off that dignity.

There was no place to escape. Death would be a certainty if he showed his back.

His instinct was ringing, insisting to run away immediately, but the thinking ability that was bestowed by the god water was thrusting that fact before Inaba.

There was no path of survival other than fighting, it said. Nothing but death was waiting if he escaped, it said.

「Kyu……kyukyuu—!!」

「Oo! He resolved himself!」

「Inaba-san! Do your best nanoooo!!」

‘Rather than resolve, it’s more like a complete desperation though……’, everyone starting from Shia who were watching

the sight were thinking so, but the father and daughter who reconciled with each other were getting excited for some reason, so they were staying quiet.

Hajime and Myuu were completely transformed into cheering audiences. Everyone else glanced at the two of them who were like that while also directing their focus toward Inaba’s do-or-die battle.

Inaba-san made use of his speed and did everything he could to leap around the claw bear. From a distance that should be said to be a super close range, he evaded the claw and fang of the claw bear and landed a low kick.

「Ah, that’s dangerous nano-. Inaba-san! Put some more distance nano!」

Myuu reflexively covered her eyes with both her hands, however, she was properly watching the battle from the gap of her fingers while yelling.

「……No, it’s fine like that.」

「What do you mean papa, nano?」

「Listen Myuu. The claw bear, even though its body is big like that, it’s a speed fighter. In a straight fight, it’s faster than a kick rabbit. It will be a checkmate if that big body approach with that speed. It will be impossible to get out from it’s attack range.」

There was the extending wind claw, and also the flying slash.

In other words,

「It’s only blind spot is right beside that big body! A super close infighting is the only path of survival for Inaba!」

「Oh gosh nano! It’s a single high risk high return gamble! Inaaba-san, what a man nano!」

The father and daughter were absurdly heated up.

「AA! Inaba-san’s midair spinning kick hit the claw bear-san’s head nanoo!」

Taking advantage of an instantaneous opening, Inaba leaped using a claw that was slashing at him as a foothold and his fierce spinning kick caught the claw bear’s head. The claw bear staggered and pitched forward.

However,

「It’s not working nano! Inaba-san! He got hit by a severe counterattack and got sent flyinggg! His stomach is seriously damaged nano! Papa, why is the claw bear alright nano?」

「At the moment of the impact, the damn bear shifted the hit spot slightly. That super reflex is also the claw bear’s strong point. After all even my railgun too, as expected it couldn’t be dodged if the enemy reacted after confirming the attack by sight, but it dodged it by sensing the killing intent the moment it fired.」

「I see nano.」

While they were speaking like that, Inaba narrowly escaped from that due to the continuation of the god water’s effect. He raised a battle cry「Kyuuu~~~-」 while standing up. It looked like he was saying「Not yet……ain’t no way, I’ll die hereeeee-」.

「Wo~ah! Inaba-san's speed is increasing nano! What's more! He is accelerating further within acceleration nano! What could that be, papa!」

「That's……Ground Shrinker and, Stacked Ground Shrinker. That guy, he awakened the derivative skill at this instant……」

「Say, Myuu and Goshujin-sama. Somehow, both of thee hath become like commentators……」

Myuu and Hajime looked at each other in respond to Tio's half smiling pointing out,

「No good nano! Even with him getting faster the claw bear-san is going even further than that! A sharp turn using the claw stabbing on the ground! The claw bear-san's mobility is monstrous! Nano! Inaba-san, he received a fierce tackle and got blow awayyyy! Commentator papa-san, is there any chance of victory for Inaba-san? Nano.」

「Broadcaster Myuu-san, let me answer. If it stay like this, Inaba-san's chance of victory is zero desu!」

「Both of thee art having fun!?」

When everyone noticed Myuu was even holding a mike. Above her broadcasting seat which was Hajime papa's shoulder, she shook around her small fist while continuing with her passionate broadcasting.

「Inaba-san fell! Can't he stand-, can't he stand anymore!? No, he stand up-, he is standing up, Inabaaaaaa-! Nano!」

「Standing! Inaba is standing! This is really soul stirring!」

Inaba-san was vomiting blood, even so he stood up. In his eyes the color of resignation was nonexistent. Rather, the flame of fighting spirit was burning up even more fiercely there!

And then, Hajime papa and Myuu were also blazing up! Somehow that spirited mood spread out, so that not only Sumire and other parents, even Yue and the others were also letting out feverish cheering.

Like that, Inaba got sent flying many times, he were slashed up many times, even so he held on to his thread of life by desperately moving to avoid fatal wound with the god water's recovery only barely holding on. Even while his whole body became covered in wounds and blood……

「Inaba-san! Fast! He's fast! Only his afterimages can be seen nano!」

「I'll explain. That is a movement of variegated and free tempo using the skill Rhythmless. The braking and acceleration that are too drastic surpassing the focused acceleration and produced afterimages!」

「Thank you nano, commentator papa-san! Ah, when Inaba-san swung his feet at empty air, the claw bear-san got sent flying nano!」

「Fuh, it looks like he finally also learned the flying kicking attack――Rank○ku. That cheeky bastard, he is rapidly growing in this battle……no, he is evolving-」(TN: One Piece reference)

「○ankyaku! Evolution in the middle of battle! Powerful words are coming out! Oooohh! What could that be, commentator papa-san! When Inaba-san crossed his feet while headstanding right below the claw bear-san, the neck

of claw bear-san who should have dodged burst out and blood spurt like fountain nano!□

□Holy cow……is that Dragon Sla○……□(TN: Slayers reference)

□○gon Slave? Commentator papa-san, what could that be? Nano.□

□It’s the martial art that boasted undefeated in the history of a thousand years……the opponent will die!□

□Commentator papa-san who is getting lazy with the explanation, thank you very much nano! Just search the explanation in google okay! Nano!□

Kaori spoke □Myuu-chan!? Who are you talking at!?□ in bewilderment, Shia was saying □That bastard, he was hiding his technique……how impertinent. Next time, I’ll make him taste my Mu○ha desuu□enthusiastically, while Shuu and the parents were cheering in high spirits. Right after that, Inaba made his last dance. (TN: Search for □□□ in google for the reference of Shia’s word)

The claw bear’s balance crumbled from consecutive flying kicks, furthermore Inaba-san leaped up using Rhythmless and vanished from the claw bear’s field of vision. He landed on the ceiling right above.

His bending legs caused a great crack to occur on the ceiling, the next moment, □KyukyuuUUUUUUU (With this…… IT’S OVERRRRRRR-)□ along with such battle cry, a crater was formed on the ceiling while he fell like a comet.

The crown of the head of the claw bear that had just adjusted its balance was pulverized when the strong kick with maximum power landed.

□□□□YEAHHHHHHHH————□□□□

□INABA BANZAI!□

□INABA AWESOMEEE!□

□□□INABA-! INABA-! INABA-! INABA-!□□□

□He did well despite his injury! Thank you for the moving scene!□

Loud hip-hip-hurray applause was echoing inside the cave. Even the demon rangers who had returned when anyone noticed were stomping the ground with their many legs and giving grand applause.

Ahead of the gazes of Hajime and co who were as though they were looking at a Hollywood masterpiece action movie, was Inaba-san looking up to the sky in front of the formidable enemy he defeated.

Even without any words, from his strongly clenched fist, his rabbit ears that were standing up straight toward the sky, and his rabbit tail that was shaking with warrior’s excitement, it was easy to guess the inside of his heart.

Right now, he understood his wish. That wish was to train himself, and ran up toward the faraway height. It was the wish to go out to the wide world, fight against a the line up of powerful opponents, and then one day, to reunite with the new king!

With his front leg he brushed away his rabbit ears *fuasa-*!

Like that Inaba-san started walking. Toward the dark path ahead.

「……Somehow I’m feeling déjà vu.」

「Before this, it’s exactly like what my son had done.」

Hajime pretended to not hear the words of Shuu and Sumire and looked aside.

Sumire mama and Shuu papa grinned widely toward such son while attacking further.

「Or rather, compared to a certain somehow who was messily eating various things that mustn’t be eaten……」

「While chanting kill kill disturbingly, while laughing like a psycho……」

「He is, far more like a main character isn’t he!」

「He is, far more like a main character!」

‘Certainly!’ Tomoichi and the others also nodded.

In respond to the parents who were like that, Hajime screamed ‘This is why, I don’t want to show my black history at all!’ inside his heart while yelling back 「My bad okay! For not being like a main character!」 with slightly reddened cheeks.

–

–

–

The party that was greatly heated up from the beginning of Inaba-san’s adventure directly teleported to floor 50 also because of Hajime’s shame.

In that place, there was a large door that was in an opened state, and large human shaped depression at both sides.

In front of that sight, Hajime turned a worried expression toward Yue.

「Are you alright, Yue?」

「……Nn. No problem.」

This was, the place where Yue was imprisoned for three hundred years. Ordinary person wouldn’t even be able to guess what she was feeling inside her heart.

Guessing Hajime’s concern, Sumire and the others were also giving her worried look.

「Yue-chan. If it’s painful for you, you don’t need to force yourself you know?」

「It’s just as Sumire said. Yue-chan, if you like we don’t mind if we just go already to the hideout at the lowest floor.」

「……Nn?」

The concerned Sumire and Shuu, and then Tomoichi and others who were also feeling the same were directing gaze of consideration toward Yue. However, Yue was showing a perplexed expression that seemed to say 「Eh? What’s with this atmosphere……」. But, she immediately guessed the circumstance and smiled wryly while opening her mouth.

「……It’s misunderstanding, Otou-sama. Okaa-sama.」

「Misunderstanding?」

「……Nn. Hajime is worried, not because this is the place where I was sealed. Ahead from here, I was mostly stark

naked, that’s why.」

「「Ah……」」

When Yue said that shyly with blushing cheeks while fidgeting, not just Shuu and Sumire, everyone there leaked out 「Ah」 from their mouth.

Correct, Yue-sama, from here on ahead, she would be mostly wearing only a coat with opened front while being stark naked underneath. She would be in such truly outrageous appearance all along from here. When there was battle, it was a coat with defensive power that was lower that a wet tissue. This was the same like a lavish panty shot……no, it was a dreadful appearance that was normally exhibiting this and that completely.

「Tha, that is certainly, it’s understandable that Hajime-kun would worry……」

Tomoichi’s words that had no composure at all was responded by Yue with the shaking of her head.

「……No, what Hajime is worrying about, is not me but the eyes of Otou-sama and everyone else.」

「……Eyes?」

「……Nn. The meaning of his worry is 「Are your countermeasure really effective? Depending on the situation, the eyes of Tou-san and others will get crushed but even so, is it really okay, Yue?」, like that.」

「Hajime-kuuun!?」

Knowing that his eyes were in the verge of danger, Tomoichi turned in a flash toward Hajime. Shuuzou and Koichi were

also taking slight distance away from him in wariness.

In the home, when they almost got a look of various things from a happening that was like lucky pervert event (mainly caused by Yue and others running wild), Shuu often got hit with eye crushing or electric attack. Because of that right now he was making a comprehending look.

Hajime was showing a really surprised look seeing the slightly scared Tomoichi. Seeing that, Tomoichi said 「As expected, it must be Yue-chan's joke isn't it」 and he was going to sigh in relief……

「There is regeneration magic so it's fine.」

「It's not fine at all!」

It looked like, regeneration magic would give bad influence in various senses.

Hajime coughed while watching Shuuzou and Koichi who were taking even more distance from him.

「No, it's really alright. Because Yue want Tou-san and Kaa-san to watch the time when she met me no matter what, it seems she has already prepared a countermeasure properly.」

「……Nn. Leave it to me.」

Yue-sama was full of confidence. Seeing that attitude in this situation where it was involving the possibility that her nakedness could get seen, Shuu and the others felt tension leaving their shoulders thinking that it would be fine in that case. The seriously wanted to be spared from getting their eyes crushed, and also from the situation where their wife

would give off frightening air that would be accompanied with some kind of physical violence.

「……Then, let’s start.」

Yue’s finger snap echoed clearly. The past playback began.

The past Hajime appeared, and two pseudo Cyclops manifested from the wall’s depression. Hajime took care of them with his gun.

「By the way, these monsters don’t resurrect because only the monsters related to this sealing room have a different origin.」

Hajime’s explanation was given while the past Hajime was fighting the other remaining pseudo Cyclops.

In other words, while the great labyrinth’s monsters were prepared by Oscar Orcus and his comrades the liberators, the pseudo Cylops and pseudo scorpion were monsters created by Yue’s uncle, Denreed, so they wouldn’t resurrect again.

Denreed was a user of creation magic and metamorphosis magic, but he couldn’t use regeneration magic or soul magic, so it was only natural that it was like this.

「……Nn! It’s here! Everyone attention! Here! Here!」

At the same time when the explanation ended, Yue-sama was greatly excited for some reason. She extended her finger straight and urged for attention.

Inside the projection, Yue who was imprisoned within a gigantic sealing stone was desperately saying 「Help」 with a hoarse voice……

――――’No way’

And there was the figure of Hajime-san who was going to close the door mercilessly.

Everyone’s gaze turned toward Hajime.

Seeing an imprisoned beautiful girl desperately asking for help, Hajime looked absurdly suspicious and absurdly irritated.

Even Shia and others who knew about this already were making look that said 「This is just not done isn’t it~」 or 「Demon~」 once more. As for the parents, it went without saying.

However, when it came to Yue-sama herself who was the person who got abandoned,

「……Nnh, this lack of hesitation. Hajime right now who is extremely sweet is also great for me, but Hajime of this time who was relatively merciless was also great. Kufu-」

She looked slightly intoxicated. She was already, or rather, as expected, this person, if it was regarding Hajime then it seemed anything would be fine.

「Yu, Yue. Acting like that, art not that mine character? I wish that you wouldst not take away mine setting.」

「Tio-san, I think it’s not that kind of problem though.」

Tio was speaking with troubled look. Aiko too was giving a tsukkomi with even more troubled look after that.

「That time at the encounter with me, Hajime-san was also completely merciless though……although I sometimes

talked about it with beautification, even so I won’t get intoxicated while remembering about it. Yue-san is too much of an advanced level. As expected from someone who is able to hit it off with Kaori-san.」

「Shia!? What do you mean by that!? I wonder!?」

「The meaning is exactly like it sounds. Kaori, you, remember like the time when Hajime dropped his fist on your head because you played around with Yue too much, you were grinning for a bit from that weren’t you? Both of you are two of a kind.」

「……」

When Shizuku pointed that out, Kaori turned her gaze to far away. Tomoichi was crying seeing his daughter wasn’t denying that.

「……Nnh. Quiet! It will be the important scene after this! It’s Hajime and my, yes, Ha – ji – me – and – my! Scene of the beginning!」

「You don’t need to emphasize it like that! Yue you idiot!」

Inside the sealing room where Kaori’s angry yell echoed, Yue’s pained scream 「I was only betrayed!」 resounded.

Hearing those words, the light from the gap of the door that was becoming a thin line kept shining in just barely before it completely vanished.

Hajime looked up to the ceiling.

A painful silence was enveloping the area.

At this time, what could be happening inside the heart of Hajime who was betrayed and fell into the bottom of the abyss.

For the sake of living, he shaved off all superfluous parts and swore in his heart to make his wish came true even if he had to get off from humane path.

And yet, with that single sentence, he stopped moving the door that he should close. His expression turned like he had just bit a sour grape.

His heart vehemently argued to not get involved with something unnecessary, however, his body wouldn’t obey.

When he noticed, he was opening the door.

As though to buy time in order to ascertain his heart, Hajime asked Yue’s circumstance.

And then, Yue was simply earnestly staring at such Hajime continuously.

She looked as though, she was a person who was witnessing a miracle itself. Or perhaps, like a person who finally came across someone she had been waiting all this time by chance.

Like that, it gushed out.

Hajime should have cut off everything, removed anything that would be a hindrance, and swore to live only for himself, but he then poured all his strength in order to save only a single girl.

Vivid crimson color filling the room. Red sparks brushing away the darkness.

The cage of three hundred years, melting down like mud.

Like that seeing the liberated Yue, Hajime was……

「No, this just ain’t right, Yue.」

「!?」

A tsukkomi came with a greatly twitching expression. Yue-sama, a shocked face was on her face as though to say 「That’s impossible!?」.

「Right, this isn’t right at all, Yue.」

「It’s disappointing nano, Yue-oneechan.」

「!?」

Kaori and Myuu launched their exasperated tsukkomi. Yue-sama, her face was twitching as though to say 「You’re lying right!?」.

「Yue-chan, can you perhaps make it a bit better?」

「Okaa-san, is sad. Yue-chan’s sense, perhaps it’ll be better if I personally polish it.」

「!?」

Tsukkomi mixed with a sigh also came from Shuu and Sumire. Yue-sama, her face was blank as though to say 「I don’t understand」.

She believed in hope and looked around but……there wasn’t even a single ally for her.

If it was said that it couldn’t be helped, perhaps it really couldn’t be helped.

After all, no matter although it was so that her nakedness wouldn’t be seen……

——This can’t be shown!

There was a Self Restraint-kun appearing in front of Yue holding a signboard with those words. (TN: Ask google sensei this □□□□□ to know what is going on)

Even though it was a serious and moving scene, it became wasted in various things because of this.

□……Ho, howeverr, in TV it’s always like this!□

□It’s mainly in variety show right? If this comes out in the emotional scene of a drama, the show will undoubtedly goes down in flame.□

□!? Blu, blunder……□

The vampire princess who sometimes just fail fell on her knees and then got on all fours.

This was the result from her thinking that from the sensitivity of Japanese than Self Restraint-kun surely wouldn’t harm an emotional scene, but actually, that sensitivity, isn’t it a bit……but, when in Rome do as the romans do……nn, it should be ok! Was what Yue thought. This was a complete lack of research on her part.

It was like the misunderstanding of foreigner who was under the impression that in Japan there would still be someone who was styling their hair in topknot.

□……E, even though I thought, that I finally can show my emotional scene with Hajime to Otou-sama and Okaa-sama……□

「Aa~, Yue? This is an illusion laid on the past image right? Then, won't it be fine if you just overlap clothes appropriately on your image?」

「……Hics. I'll do that. Okaa-sama, Otou-sama, can I replay it for a bit? Is it okay to do a Take 2?」

The warm expression of the Nagumo spouses expressed their okay permission more eloquently than anything.

Take 2-!!

For now in the image Yue looked like she was wearing a dress. The figure of Hajime breathing roughly from magic power exhaustion was also projected.

The Yue in the image had faint expression that couldn't be compared with the current her. However, she took Hajime's hand and with a straightforward gaze,

――'Thank you'

They could see the overflowing emotion from Yue who was saying that.

「……Well, about this time」

「What is it?」

Shuu asked in respond to Hajime's mutter. Ahead of their gaze, the moment when Yue became "Yue" for the first time was playing. Everyone was watching with a moved expression and warm gaze.

Hajime stared at the past Yue with a gentle expression. And then he turned his gaze toward the current Yue and opened his mouth.

「When Yue told me “thank you”, perhaps, it connected me to Yue. Like, even though I’ve fallen to become a monster, I didn’t fall to become a fiend.」

Saying that, Hajime turned his gaze toward the past image once more. When everyone’s gaze followed to where he was watching, there was the image of Hajime and Yue facing the pseudo scorpion.

The pseudo scorpion had terrific appearance that was in a different level from anything before.

Yue was in front of that monster, however, she was calmly staring at only Hajime.

That wasn’t a gaze that was begging for help at all.

It was a gaze that yielded herself to him.

It was the expression of her will, that no matter what option Hajime picked, she would entrust her everything to him.

Getting betrayed, and then three hundred years in the darkness at the bottom of the abyss.

Toward the determination of such girl, Hajime formed a fearless grin that bared his canine teeth.

「Thinking back, the determination at this time was the turning point. It wasn’t about walking to the future with Yue or not. It was the crossroads, whether I’ll be able to stay as me or not. Seeing Yue who entrusted her life to me even after getting betrayed and then locked into this kind of place, rather it was me who was saved.」

He was going to completely lose his human heart and be reduced into a beast that wouldn’t shirk from any inhuman

act.

If he abandoned Yue, or perhaps, if Yue only begged to be saved without caring of her appearance, surely Hajime would walk through such path, and then he wouldn’t interact with Shia or anyone else, and surely he also wouldn’t be able to laugh like right now.

「……Hajime」

Yue entangled her hand to his hand and snuggled on him. Hajime’s hand gently grasped her hand back and poured an extraordinarily gentle gaze on her.

Although the past Hajime and Yue were in a mortal combat against the pseudo scorpion, however, the gazes of Shuu and others were directed to Hajime and Yue.

The two snuggling on each other looked really natural. They looked really picturesque.

It truly made anyone watching to be convinced without any reason, that the two were fated to meet and in the end they actually met with each other.

Shuu and Sumire stood before Yue.

「Yue-chan, thank you that you met with our son.」

「It was really great that in this foreign land of another world, Hajime was able to meet a girl like Yue-chan.」

「……Okaa-sama, Otou-sama.」

‘Nnu’ The sound of a small groan surely came from Yue holding back her tear.

At that time, within the past projection Hajime and Yue finished defeating the pseudo scorpion at that timing and smiled at each other.

Kaori puffed up her cheeks slightly, however she immediately formed a wry smile that seemed to express 「It can't be helped」.

Even Kaori was feeling like that. The expression of everyone else was soft, and then, they certainly seemed to be understanding.

How Yue was special for Hajime, and how Hajime was special for Yue.

What was between the two of them was something unshakeable that no one, yes, not even god could lay their hand on.

「Kaori, you're amazing. To charged in between these two, Okaa-san is in admiration at you once more.」

「Is that a praise……I wonder? Somehow it also sound exasperated though……」

Kaori's expression was complicated toward Kaoruko's words. And then, Tomoichi's expression looked like he had stomachache, it was a hard to describe and complicated expression.

「It's really just as you say. Aiko, since when you became that proactive? What's more even though it's with your student.」

「Fuguuh!?」

Aiko-sensei. Her expression became hard to describe, as though her vital spot got stabbed through.

「Shizuku――」

「Don’t say anything, Okaa-san!」

「It’s amazing that you got between them, Shizuku. What’s more, even though it was with a person who your best friend Kaori-chan loved……the life in another world really changed our daughter.」

「Fuguuh!?」

Beside Aiko-sensei, Shizuku was also making a hard to describe expression, as though she just got hit with the body blow from a heavy weight boxer.

「However, if we art saying that then Shia is the most amazing one then. Thou were the first attacker right? Furthermore, at that time it was Goshujin-sama who was still eighty percent made from brutish factor, and against Yue who was the advocator of Goshujin-sama supremeacy――no, Yue who couldst be called as the founder of Hajime religion without any exaggeration. Thou art seriously a hero.」

「A, ahaha……looking back, I was really blind to any fear even if I say so myself.」

While Shia and others were laughing like that, Yue who separated herself from Hajime took the hand of Shuu and Sumire.

「……Nn! Next, over here! Otou-sama, Okaa-sama, over here! Come!」

「Oops! I get it I get it. Yue-chan, we will properly follow, so you don’t need to pull like that.」

「Fufuh, Yue-chan really, you are so high spirited……」

Seen from the side, Yue who was insistently pulling at the two was really enthusiastic. Her cheeks blushed and her eyes sparkled. She looked like a child in amusement park pulling at the hand of her parents toward a ride.

It seemed she was very happy that she could share with Shuu and Sumire her important memory with Hajime.

Starting from Hajime, everyone was stimulated by the gap moe from her childish figure and they had a warm expression. Even Kaori who usually should be ridiculing Yue right away was like that, so it could be seen how powerful the destructive power of the childish Yue.

The place that such Yue was pulling them toward, was a cave in the same floor.

□……Nn. This is the place, where I and Hajime conversed with each other slowly for the first time, after finishing the battle against the pseudo scorpion.□

The finger snap went *snap-*. The past projection started.

The two’s conversation. Before long, the scene that Yue wanted to show the most arrived.

——’Going home?’

——’To my original world? Of course I’ll go home. I want to go home. ……I have completely changed in various things but, I want to go back to my birthplace……to my home.’

Shuu’s hand messed up Hajime’s hair roughly, while Sumire placed her hand softly on his shoulder. Perhaps Hajime was slightly embarrassed, because he intentionally didn’t react and fixed his gaze toward the image.

Ahead of his gaze, shadow fell on Yue’s expression.

——’I already, don’t have……a place to go back to.’

Unlike the past Yue, the present Yue’s expression was extraordinarily sweet, and overflowing with warmth.

It was clear to anyone’s eyes, that the next words were a treasure that couldn’t be replaced by anything for Yue.

——’Then, won’t Yue come too?’

Hajime’s words asking if she would come along to his birthplace.

Yue couldn’t hide her shock, however, she asked 「Is that okay?」 along with hope and slight anxiety that couldn’t possibly be hidden.

When Hajime nodded in respond……

「He fell.」

「He fell in love there.」

「……」

The words of his mother and father made Hajime averted his gaze with all his strength this time. While getting slightly red. While thinking that the grinning face of his parents was extremely annoying.

Although, it couldn’t be helped that Hajime reacted like that. That was how charming the smiling face of Yue that was like a blooming flower after making that “promise”.

Kaori leaked out a negligent voice 「So this was it~, this was where Hajime-kun~」, Tio and Shia spoke 「Now I see」「It

can’t be helped isn’t iit□ in understanding, □……Dear?□□Yo, you’re wrong Kaoruko! It’s not like I got charmed or any――hih!?□ and the comedy skit of Shirasaki spouse played on.

□I, I’ll say this first, at this time it was still like that you know? I’m telling you I wasn’t that much in love with Yue okay? We were in the middle of survival live with our life in the line. Something like time off for romance was――□

□We get it, we get it. In other words, you fell in love, but the situation was too desperate in various senses that you “didn’t have the awareness”, that’s what you’re saying right?□

□Right, he just didn’t have the self-awareness. Even so, the factor that made Hajime fall in love with Yue-chan was “blushing smile” wasn’t it~. It was that kind of smile so if you said that it can’t be helped it can’t be denied but Shuu and Sumire were speaking together to Hajime who was making twitching expression with grinning face that couldn’t get any wider.

□□Hajime-san, you were seriously easy heroine!!□□ (TN: In the raw they called Hajime choroin, or choroi heroine, or easy heroine. It referred how in WN or LN a heroine can easily fall in love with the MC or consoled just from a single smile or the like)

□Shut up!□

Even though he was a man, the monster of the abyss, someone who was called the demon king and the like, to be like a heroine that blushed easily when getting smiled at……

Hajime couldn’t admit it by all means and objected. But Yue silently snuggled up on him and smileee-.

Hajime-san, he became quiet like a deflating balloon.

Everyone thought.

‘That’s seriously easy!!’

「……Fufu」

「Nuguh」

Yue looked delighted, and Hajime raised a groan. And then, ‘that’s some guts trying to lead me around by the nose…… no, I really got led around by the nose already but, that’s that, this’s this! No way I can back away like this!’

Like that, Hajime was somewhat getting wild while in embarrassment.

He took out the Crystal key and connected the space to somewhere,

「Let’s stop by somewhere else for a bit. There is something that I want everyone to look no matter what.」

Saying that, Hajime invited everyone to the other side of the gate.

The place they arrived was a cave that was particularly gloomy. Hajime used Urd Glass to confirm the past’s time axis and place before whispering to Kaori for some reason to perform past playback magic.

When Kaori was doing the past projection just as she was told while getting bewildered……

「That’s, Yue right?」

「……Nn. That’s me but……-!?」

Inside the cave, Yue who was properly clothed was walking alone while looking around restlessly.

Why, she was at this kind of place……rather, why, Yue was alone here……

Kaori was going to speak that question representing everyone, however, those words were prevented from coming out by Yue who turned toward Hajime in a flash looking like she had noticed something.

「……Ha, Hajime?」

「Hm? What's wrong Yue? You looked shaken. I only want everyone to watch Yue's cute aspect you know?」

「……Payback for just now!? Childish!」

「I don't know what are you saying.」

Hajime laughed 'ha-ha-ha-ha-'. Yue looked at him with a slightly angry look saying 「Geez-」 while――assaulting Kaori.

「Wai-, Yue!?」

「……Resolute, prevention!」

「Shia!」

「Acknowledged!」

The rushing Yue and the shaken Kaori. Hajime who handed down the order that was even accompanied with aura of supremacy. Shia who moved reflexively from her conditioned reflex.

Yue's face crashed on the chest of Shia who stood on her way with speed that didn't even leave behind afterimage.

Without delay she then got restrained by Shia's breast valley and both arms.

'Fuga!? Fugafuga!' Only that sound could be heard but, surely she was saying 「Shia!? Me and Hajime, whose ally you are!?」……perhaps.

Even while all that was going on, the image was still playing. At the same time, Hajime started explaining.

「This is image from after conquering the lowest floor and we were training using the hideout as base. I was doing hide-and-seek with Yue as training in presence isolation. Yue had the demon role. Because she is a vampire.」 (TN: In the raw, there was a play of word here. The kanji for vampire has the kanji for demon mixed in it. That's why as the vampire Yue got the demon role)

'You are doing wordplay there……' Such tsukkomi was poured on Hajime from everyone's gaze, but Hajime-san didn't pay it any mind.

「Please look. The figure of Yue who was unable to find me and gradually become anxious.」

'Fugaa~h', a stifled voice resounded from Shia's breasts, but Shia also didn't know about this scene, so she said 「Yue-san, sorry! But, I'm curious!」 and strengthened the restrain from curiosity.

――'Ha, Hajime~? Le, let's take a break for a bit? Come out~'

Yue-chan couldn't find Hajime and raised her voice while walking trudgingly inside the cave.

However, in training, Hajime of this time was absurdly stoic. He was a person who would act until surpassing the limit in everything.

——’Wh, why aren’t you replying to me? Hajime~’

Her eyebrows were knitted down pathetically, her small hands were placed in front of her chest, while walking coweringly, nervously. That figure of Yue-chan was far removed from the figure of the current Yue-sama who was brimming with confidence.

She was like a lost child……

It was a figure that dangerously stimulated the protective desire, to the degree that the parents almost stepped forward reflexively altogether. If it was in the middle of city, it was guaranteed that the big friends or the self-styled gentlemen would gallantly come to protect her. Without fail!

Hajime-san who should be able to hear the voice of such Yue-chan, even so Hajime-san didn’t come out.

In everything, do it until surpassing the limit!

Like that, Yue-chan passed through the limit.

——’Hajimee~, whereee~, uwaaaahn’

It was only a matter of time until she cried, Yue-chan wiped her eyes while starting to cry normally!

As expected, it seemed Hajime couldn’t endure that and hurriedly rushed out.

While keeping such image at the corner of their eyes, everyone’s gaze moved toward Shia’s chest.

Yue who was liberated from the restrain was covering her face with both hands. It really looked like she was in a state of wanting to enter a hole if there was one! She was bright red from her ear until her neck.

There,

「Yue-oneechan, is cute nano!」

Myuu's words were half serious and half consoling in her own way but,

「……Please just kill me.」

Yue-sama who was immortal so she couldn't die held her knees curled into herself!

It was a truly rare appearance.

「Hajime. You are really childish huh. Good job!」

「Really, to be happy from seeing Yue-chan's crying face, what kind of sadist you are. I don't remember raising up that kind of son, GJ!」

Hajime smiled with a sigh 'fuh'. With the parents like this, the son was also like this. And then, 「Uu, Stupid Otou-sama and Okaa-sama! Also, Kaori who is grinning over there, you'll absolutely get judgment」 Yue expressed her indignation.

Kaori raised her voice 「Why only me!?」. Completely ignoring that, Yue opened a gate with a heart that was blazing in revenge.

「……Everyone, over here.」

The pressure that wouldn't let any objection to be said caused Hajime to let out cold sweat saying 「Crap, I might

have overdone it□. While he was like that, the place they arrived at was a cave somewhere.

Right away, green spheres flew from deeper inside like buckshot.

□……Nn, Lighting Dragooon□

GOAAAAA- The lightning dragon raised the roar of a thunderbolt and annihilated all the green spheres while going deeper into the cave.

A beat later.

From inside the scream of □GYAAAAAAAH!?□ could be heard, but it became silent right after that. ……Evil had left. Without even any chance to make its appearance.

Yue began the past playback as though nothing had happened.

It projected Yue who had flower blooming on her head that manipulated her, and a vexed Hajime. And then a quasi alraune appeared. A scene of Yue being turned into hostage which would be an impossible sight at the present flew into their sight.

――’Hajime! Don’t mind me……shoot!’

A tragic heroine, get. Everyone was holding their breath at the urgent situation and Yue’s self-sacrifice.

‘Where has the comedic footage just now gone to, it suddenly become too serious!’ Shuu and others wanted to say.

But, as expected serious-san was in the middle of vacation.

——’Eh, is that okay? That saved me the trouble.’

DOPAN-♪, after a li~ght speech, the trigger was pulled with a really li~ght feeling.

Above the crown of Yue’s head burst, and the pulverized flower fluttered in the air.

Inside the projection, Yue went 「Eh?」. Even the quasi alraune went 「Eh?」.

At the same time, Shuu and others also went 「Eh?」.

「……Nn-. Everyone, do you see! Do you see!? Hajime, he shot! He shot me without hesitation! Please look! My scalp, it was shaved! The sound *pshew-*, it was the sound of my scalp getting shaved! Truly a brute! Inhuman! A super sadist!」

‘Certainly!’ Everyone nodded.

It appeared Yue brought out the “Yue-sama’s scalp *pshew-* incident* for revenge against Hajime. It seemed she was plotting to overwrite the memory of her embarrassing past using Hajime is a brute opinion.

「Hajime, you, such thing……」

「If it’s in a tale, Yue-chan is the heroine you know? I never heard something like a main character that shaved the scalp of the heroine.」

「Hajime-kun, don’t tell me, you’ve never done anything like that to Kaori too right?」

Shuu, Sumire, and Tomoichi stabbed Hajime with their creeped out gaze. In addition Kaoruko, Akiko, and Kirino too

were stabbing him with gaze that was saying 「As expeted, Yue-chan is too pitiful」.

Hajime tried to cling on a ray of hope by sending his gaze to Shuuzou and Koichi, thinking that if it was them then perhaps they would recognize his method as valid when a hostage was taken? But,

「We, well, that's. That was a nice shot.」

「Although it was in order to shot through the flower, aiming at the head is……as expected it was shocking.」

Koichi and Shuuzou, as expected they were creeped out. 'That's impossible!' Hajime pleaded. 'You two are in the lacking common sense faction right!? Here is a scene where you two should go 「Umu, splendid!」 isn't it!?' He insisted with his gaze.

「Ha, Hajime-kun at this period, is really merciless isn't he……」

「Ka, Kaori, even you……」

「Look, those eyes of Goshujin-sama when saying 「saved me the trouble」 and pulling the trigger! Not calling those eyes as the eyes of a brute art――」

「Tio, you just shut up.」

「Papa……」

「Sto, stop it, Myuu! Don't look at papa with those eyes like you are looking at someone beyond help!」

Hajime papa who seemed to be tormented the most by Myuu's gaze threw a sharp glare at Yue who was making a

triumphant look for some reason.

「Yue, you, you are still holding a grudge huh. That's really petty of you.」

「……Nnh!? What a remark. Even though it's a fact that Hajime is a brute.」

「It's in the past. Besides, you are too exaggerating just from getting your scalp shaved slightly.」

「……It's not that kind of problem. The shooting itself is the problem.」

「You told me to shoot.」

「……You don't understand woman's heart too much.」

「It was because I was considerate to your woman's heart that I even showed hesitation in the middle of combat. Or rather, in reality there was also the idea of not aiming at the flower and just shot through the face, and yet I did my best to settle it with only shaving your scalp.」

「!? ……Fi, first time I hear that. Hajime, you intended to shot my face!?」

「That will be the fastest right? You can regenerate after all, so I thought it might be alright.」

「……No way it'll be alright! Stupid Hajime ! Brutish fiend!」

「Wah, what's with you! Wait, dangerous! Stop with the Flame of Divine Punishment! That ain't a joke!」

Kaori took over the past projection and repeated the image.

The projection of the manipulated Yue and Hajime battling overlapped with present Yue and Hajime getting into a fierce exchange.

Kaori led everyone to the corner of the room and activated a powerful barrier, then she spoke with a bright smile.

「Couhg-. Eee~, just now an extremely rare event of Yue VS Hajime-kun started. Please, watch till the end leisurely.」

「Kaori……you're really」

Shizuku's exasperated face didn't do anything.

Something like the quarrel of Yue and Hajime, certainly, it was extremely rare to the degree everyone was thinking that perhaps this was the first time.

Even if they weren't Kaori, it couldn't be helped that their gaze unconsciously became fixed into the scene. In fact, even Shia, Tio, and also Aiko had their gaze fixed to it with their eyes and mouth wide open saying 「Oo~」.

「Ka, Kaori, is it alright not stopping them? Somehow Yue-chan become an adult and something like a halo is starting to appear behind her. Hajime-kun too, somehow crimson light burst out like a tornado around him.」

Tomoichi asked his daughter with twitching face. But, Kaori herself was,

「It's fine, it's fine. They are going to flirt with each other at the end anyway. ……Chih」

「Kaori!? Just now, did you click your tongue!? Otou-san don't remember raising Kaori to be that kind of child you know!?」

Putting aside the Shirasaki father daughter,

「……Stupid Hajimee! Recently our alone time is too little! Spoil me moreee」

「That's really my bad huh! This damned spoiled woman! When the Tortus travel is over, I'll plan the travel for just us two next time so just be quiet!」

Hajime and Yue's quarrel……quarrel (?) was getting increasingly intense. Their argument was completely off the mark, but in the end did the two of them notice it?

「Chih」

「Kaori!?」

After that, Kaori forcefully interfered when the quarrel became something that only looked like mere flirting.

Hajime and Yue who were showered with warm gazes from everyone curled to become small together while urging the group to the next place to divert the attention.

During that time, it needn't be said that Kaori's clicking her tongue was mass produced.

And then it also went without saying that even from here on, Kaori's clicking her tongue kept getting mass produced.

–

–

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

While writing what I want to write unexpectedly was increasing,

The result, it’s like this. Orcus arc will continue for a bit more (sweat)

At Gardo, the comic below got updated with newest chapter.

- Zero Chapter 6

=>’Manner makes the man’, it make me want to say that to Oscar lol Also, it was a nice smile there.

- Nichijou Chapter 24

=>Endo-kun, long time no see! You are there? lol

The chapters are freely provided from Overlap-sama’s homepage. Please go take a look no matter what.

Best regards.

Arifureta Chapter 329

Arifureta After III　Tortus Travel Journal ⑨

–

Hajime collapsed before their eyes.

『『Hajime!』』

Shuu and Sumire spontaneously rushed toward him seeing that scene.

They kneeled beside him and reached out their hand, but those hands passed through their son’s body and wandered in empty air.

『Tou-san, Kaa-san. I’m over here.』

Hajime approached Shuu and Sumire while smiling wryly. Yes, the real Hajime was.

The two gasped and turned their gaze. They saw the figure of their son holding up Myuu there and let out a long sigh in relieve. And then, they made a similar wry smile.

At the same time, before their eyes the past Hajime who was wounded all over melted into thin air and vanished.

This place was the true Orcus Great Dungeon――floor 100. The final destination of the abyss, the place where the

hideout of Oscar Orcus was located, and then, the location where the strongest guardian the Hydra was lying in wait.

Until now Hajime and co were watching the grand last boss fight that Hajime and Yue got into.

Even though they understood that it was nothing more than projection, it was a fight for survival with impact that couldn’t be compared with a mere 3D movie.

The hydra’s roar, the fatal breath attack, the counterattack using magic and gunshot……

And then, Hajime who covered Yue and got swallowed by the fatal light.

His right eye was evaporated, a part of his body was carbonized, and he pitched forward falling as though he had no strength left.

In order to protect Hajime, Yue dashed forward holding Donner with one hand in her condition that only had meager magic power.

The scene was a storm of light bullets trampling through space like a meteor shower couldn’t help made the parents but stiffen up even though they knew that it was just a projection. In fact, if Kaoruko and Akiko didn’t receive magic that increased their mental resistance from Tio, they would have fainted more than dozens of times about now.

The sight of those light bullets hitting Yue hard until her body became tattered was something hard to believe looking at her current invincible queen like self.

At the same time, her figure that was gritting her teeth without taking even a single step back no matter what,

risking her life in order to protect Hajime looked so noble it shook them. Sumire and Shuu too, they couldn’t help but hugging Yue tightly while watching the projection.

Before long the fatal light of judgment was fired. Before that attack that was unleashed in order to annihilate the insolent intruder, Yue was staring straight ahead, however……

Hajime revived in a hair’s breadth.

Everyone spontaneously cheered 「Oo!」. But, they immediately understood from looking. That Hajime didn’t revive or anything. It was only his guts supporting him. Hajime’s figure that was visibly in appalling state vividly displayed that he almost wasn’t even healed at all.

However, from there it was a dramatic development. It was overwhelming, astounding, and miraculous. It was like a tale of a legend.

The two nestling close to each other within the meteor shower was slipping through as though they were dancing. The light of annihilation was already like it was nothing more than a splendorous lighting illuminating the two.

Running through the air, smashing the ceiling and dropping it, transmuting an improvised smelting furnace. The blue flame of demise was unleashed with harmonized beat of the two.

The scream of death agony of the last guardian echoed.

When everything was over, Shuu and other parents, no, even Shia and the others who were watching that sublime scene that could be mistaken as a part of a myth forgot to even breath due to the intense deep emotion they couldn’t describe with words inside them.

Like that, when Hajime said 「I’m spent」 and fell flat, all of them finally returned to their senses.

「Amazing right?」

Hajime’s words that sounded somewhat elated echoed.

Shuu and Sumire’s eyes turned wide hearing that.

If pushed to say, all this time Hajime had no motivation in showing his past projection all this time, but now he wasn’t even really alluding anything like 「It’s just something of the past」 about this scene, instead he looked proud……no, just from looking it could be seen that he was being smug.

In the middle, Myuu who was being hugged clung to Hajime tightly, so half of his face was covered by the little girl, but the other half of his face was clearly showing his smugness.

「That’s unusual, for you to make such self-satisfied look when it’s not about your invention.」

「Because it was that kind of deadly battle. ……The cheat recovery item that was the god water, a weapon that can fire excessive fire power regardless of the state of the user, and then a partner with cheat-like magic ability. I wouldn’t be able to survive if even a single one of those was missing. It was a battle that was literally putting up everything I and Yue had.」

In a sense, perhaps it wouldn’t be an exaggeration to say that everything began from this victory.

「Above all else, my partner did her best here. The victory of this battle, well, there isn’t any need to be humble about it. It’s my and Yue’s——pride.」

Saying that, Hajime gently patted the head of Yue who had come to his side unnoticed. Yue’s expression became loose and soft, as though a voice 「funi~」 would leak out from her mouth somehow.

Shuu muttered 「Is that so……」 while narrowing his eyes from the dazzling sight, while Sumire too was saying 「I see」 with a gentle smile.

「Even so, that was truly intense Goshujin-sama.」

「Yes……it far surpassed my imagination.」

Tio and Shizuku’s words served as the beginning. After them the other people also started saying their impression.

The parents couldn’t hide their excitement, while Shia and others were oozing out some envy and admiration. Shia alone was knocking her fist together while saying 「I want a one-on-one fight. How far I can go in a handicap battle using only my fist, I wish to test myself desuu! Won’t the monster pop up again?」 with her rabbit ears shaking wildly.

The wild rabbit couldn’t stop herself from swinging her fist after knowing there was such a formidable enemy.

The hopeless rabbit of the past who wasn’t good with strife……had died!

「Now that she said it, Hajime. The monsters of the labyrinth can pop up again right? It looks like the hydra doesn’t come out though……」

「Aah, perhaps because it’s the last boss. It won’t pop up when I or Yue are here.」

‘I see, so if I’m alone I’ll be able to have at it with that guy then!’ the fighting god rabbit said with her rabbit ears swinging wildly. Leaving the rabbit aside, Tomoichi was turning his gaze to deeper inside with shining eyes.

「So Hajime-kun, the hideout is behind that splendid door?」

「Yes, that’s right. How about we go there right away?」

For Tomoichi, it seemed that this last boss room was actually really interesting and attracted his attention.

The pillars in the pillared corridor had splendid engraving applied to every single of them, displaying a solemn atmosphere. The double-leafed door standing at the inner part itself was also a work of art. In that case, the hideout was surely a place that would charm the heart of an architect without a doubt, Tomoichi thought.

By the way, it seemed regeneration magic was applied to this place, so the trace of the fierce battle had been automatically fixed. In a sense, this large space itself could be called an artifact that possessed automatic recovery function. It could be perceived clearly that Oscar’s skill was godly.

「……Nn, before that, please watch the training scene of Hajime without fail.」

This room after the battle versus the Hydra became a good training place for Hajime and Yue during the two months after the dungeon conquering.

It seemed that Yue wished to show everyone that the current Hajime’s fighting ability and precise shooting that made everyone shudder weren’t something that were easily obtained. She wished to show Hajime’s effort here.

Tomoichi said 「Hmph……very well, let me take a look of it」 while he sent the gaze of “evaluation of worthiness to become son-in-law of who knows how many times it is” toward Hajime. He received an elbow on his side from Kaori.

「Actually I’m really interested. That shooting skill isn’t normal. I’m curious what kind of training he did to learn it.」

「His martial art too. It’s not systematic but, it has a really rational movement……I understand that it’s something cultivated in real battle but, as expected, I’m also extremely curious at his training too.」

It seemed that this was an extremely fascinating event for Shuuzou and Koichi. The eyes of the two were shining blazingly. Next they moved forward in order to secure the front seat with rough breathing. They received a strike from the back of Shizuku’s katana.

「……Nn. Then……around here I think?」

Yue muttered while at the same time she adjusted the time axis and snapped her finger.

What was projected was the firefight between Yue and Hajime.

From what they could see, Hajime was exhausted from excessive training while Yue was looking worried. Even so, Hajime said that there was no meaning in training that wasn’t surpassing the limit and he asked Yue to be his opponent.

Yue nodded to respond to Hajime’s determination. Hajime yelled to her.

――’Now, no need to hold back. Come! Magic cheat!’

——’Nn-. Eat this, the violence of quantity!’

It was the violence of quantity. It was flame bullets in number that covered the sky. And then, for some reason the bullets were heart shaped. Yue-sama, seeing the heart shaped fire bullets got their magic core fired through and dispersed, her chest tightened *kyu-!* and she prattled something like 「I was shot through」.

Her feeling toward Hajime, was 3000 Celsius♡

Something like that. In addition, it was a tyrannical number that showed no end in sight.

「Yue-chan……Okaa-san, doesn’t hate you okay?」

「Tsk-……」

「Yue-san……」

「As to be expected from thee, Yue.」

Gazes that were filled with exasperation stabbed Yue. There was just a single person clicking her tongue.

「……Nn-. I made a slight mistake.」

It seemed she mistook the time axis. She tried to show the training in a different time axis while feeling slightly flustered but……

Putting aside Yue’s behavior, the unfolding scene was intense. The storm of magic bullet that even resembled the meteor shower of light bullet before this was shot through by the two handguns Hajime wielded. He continued to stave off the attack just barely.

Concentration power to the degree that made his speech became halting.

Super high speed midair reload using super fast gun spin. Precise sniping that was like aiming at the approaching grains of rice which made the heart of the spectators skipped――firing through the magic's core.

Like that……

――'Then, itadakimasu'

――'Wai-, sto-, aaa―–!!'

Hajime-san who was unable to resist was overcame, or rather he was pushed down and devoured deliciously――

【Disintegration-】

The past projection was disintegrated along with the magic power and it dispersed.

【Yue you pervert! Saying it's a training while doing such envio――impure act! Unbelievable, completely unbelievable! What's more, to think that you would assault Hajime-kun who was completely exhausted and couldn't move, how envi――terrible!】

【Kaori, your real thought】

Just as Shizuku pointed out, Kaori-san, her real thought was completely leaking out. She was slightly drooling. Tomoichi san was looking at faraway. It seemed that he decided that he didn't see anything.

【……Nn, I'm sorry. Assaulting Hajime became a daily occurrence so】

‘That ain’t any excuse at all……’ Everyone thought. And then, the male faction thought 「So he was assaulted routinely…….」 and looked at Hajime with a complicated expression. Hajime threw his sight to really faraway.

Like this and that, for a while they watched Hajime who trained until he collapsed every time, Yue who would nurse Hajime who became unable to move in various senses, and Kaori who would go ‘Disintegrate-‘ every time the nursing looked like it would become R-rated.

By the time Shuu and others started to show comprehending expression of Hajime’s current strength seeing how he continued to train absurdly, the training (flirting) show (show) ended and the group finally stepped inside the hideout.

「This place……is it underground here?」

The one who unconsciously muttered that was Tomoichi who was looking forward to it the most. It seemed that the whole group had the same feeling like that leaked out sentiment.

Spacious area, artificial sun shining at the ceiling, one side of the walls inside became a waterfall, there was also a river and also fruit trees and vegetable field.

And then, a three storey mansion that looked like it was created by directly scraping off the rock wall was being illuminated by the artificial sun, showing its white wall gorgeously.

「The sun will become like a moon when night comes. By putting this artificial sun into practical use, I created the sun convergence laser weapon——Hyperion.」

「……Hajime-kun. As an adult, I think there is something that I should say to you who thought of a mass destruction weapon when seeing a sun of blessing but……sorry. I cannot find any word.」

「No, Tomoichi-san, even if you apologize to me with that kind of creeped out face……」

「Papaa–! Myuu also want a sun as present for Myuu's next birthday nano!」

「No, Myuu. Even if you begged me with such smile that is like a sun……」

Although, Myuu was also a girl at that age. Perhaps she would need a weapon soon……

Putting aside the hopeless Hajime papa who was pondering such thing, Yue took the initiative to act as guide.

「……Right, everyone. This is the residence of me and Hajime in Tortus. This is our love nest.」

「This is Oscar Orcus-san's hideout isn't it!」

'Aa?' 'Oo?' Yue-sama and Kaori-chan glared at each other. This was a scene where anyone would definitely want Self Restraint-kun to put censor on the face of the two. That was just how terrible the two were making the expression that beautiful girl shouldn't show.

'Okay okay, break it out you two~', Shia & Shizuku separated the two. While that was going on, Hajime invited the parents inside the mansion. At the end of the line Yue and Kaori were being dragged by their respective best friend.

Tomoichi let out a long sigh.

「How beautiful…….What's more, to think that the building *doesn't have any joining point*.」

「Oscar was a transmutation master like me. This residence was also created using transmutation, so it's style is very different from a normal building.」

Tomoichi was earnestly letting out sigh of admiration seeing the strange architecture style that he had never seen before. His eyes were sparkling bright, like a child that was visiting an amusement park for the first time. Kaoruko was watching her husband who was like that with a warm gaze.

After that, Hajime showed around the living space and workshop, the treasure warehouse where many of Oscar's creation were still left behind, and the site of the storage place of the "Oscar's prototype – succeeded by Hajime" maid golem that was burned and destroyed by Yue in the past.

There were only novel things inside. The parents were excited from start to finish.

Especially when it was times like when they found "Prototype – Dragon Killing Sword" (Named by Oscar) in the treasure warehouse, all the men went into festive atmosphere where they all tried swinging it.

By the way, for some reason the one who handled and looked the best with it was Kirino-okaasan.

「And then this place here…….it's where we obtained the first age of god magic and learned the truth of this world.」

After opening the thick door at the third floor and entering inside, it was the room where the magic circle for inheriting age of god magic was inscribed.

Hajime showed a thinking gesture for a bit. Shuu asked him while his eyes were shining seeing the magic circle.

「Hm? What's the matter Hajime?」

「……Aah, I'm thinking that I might as well introduce everyone.」

「Introduce? Who do you mean?」

「Of course, I mean the liberator who was the creator of this great labyrinth. The extraordinary transmutation master――Oscar Orcus.」

Saying that, Hajime sent an eye signal to Yue.

Right after that, a silhouette emerged in front of the chair placed at the back of the room. A black clothed youth――Oscar.

「You did well overcoming the trial and arriving here. My name is Oscar Orcus. The person who created this great labyrinth. Perhaps you will understand if I say that I'm a rebel?」

The entrance of the intellectual looking young man wearing glasses with his black hair tied behind his neck gathered the attention of all the parents who were curiously looking around inside the room.

「It's the recording medium Oscar left behind. It's something like his last will. When entering the magic circle after

clearing the trial, he will show his figure to the dungeon conqueror. Right now it’s just a past projection though.

Even while Hajime was giving explanation, Oscar was continuing his talk with deep intellect and firm will behind his eyes.

The truth of the world, the path they had taken, and then their wish.

.....They were, unable to win against the god. But, they didn’t lose the battle.

Yue talked with narrowed eyes. Unusually a deep respect could be seen in her eyes. The parents felt a bit surprised at that. Someone who Yue genuinely and deeply respected from the heart was extremely few.

Kaori formed her words after her.

They themselves were no good. But, they didn’t give up the future. Believing that someday people who will inherit their power will appear, they vanished to the corner of the world. They even parted from their comrades.

That became our strength. Kaori was able to survive was also thanks to what they had left behind.

With deep emotion Shizuku let out her words tremblingly filled with deep thought of gratitude. Aiko also spoke with a voice that was filled with similar deep gratitude.

Everyone was able to return to Japan was also thanks to them leaving behind their strength.

Truly, they art worthy to be described as brilliant. Even in the long history of the dragon race, there were none who

persisted in such firm and striking way of life like them.

Tio closed her eyes as though praying for the dead’s happiness in the next world and she silently gifted them with the greatest eulogy.

Shia lowered her rabbit ears solemnly and opened her mouth.

Someone like Miledy-san was seriously annoying, but she even turned into a golem and continued to live……a thousand years, ten thousand years? Throughout a long period of time that no one know about, by herself alone…… she was annoying but, she helped up, saved the world, and died a noble death.

……Nn. She went out with a smile. She was an annoying person but, she was a strong person who was worthy of admiration.

O, oi. Shia, Yue. You don’t need to keep saying annoying every time……no, she was really annoying just as you said but……

Usually Hajime would deliberately not read the atmosphere, but now that he was reading the atmosphere for a bit he was making that kind of statement, though naturally he was ignored.

I pray that from here on you will live under free will.

Oscar finished with that and vanished.

A tranquil atmosphere silently filled the room.

A beat later, Shuu and Sumire came forward. Tomoichi and others also came forward as though they understood what

they were going to do.

All the parents put their hands together before the place where Oscar was standing and prayed silently. Their prayer was filled with gratitude and respect, and various other thoughts.

――’Nn. What to do?’

――’Hm? Nothing particular. In the first place, we were summoned by the god as he pleased and got told to go to war. That god is nothing but trouble. I don’t give a damn what will happen to this world.’

Everyone went 「Hm?」 hearing that conversation. Hajime and Yue leaked out their voice 「……ah」.

――’Yue, are you bothered about it?’

――’My place is right here……I don’t care of anything else’

After the last will of a deceased person, what’s more it was the last will of a great person, for some reason a pink colored space was formed. Kaori’s eyes turned hollow.

Not just the gaze of the parents, even the gaze of Shia and others toward Hajime and Yue became complicated.

Yue tried to end the projection right away, but Kaori took it over in the middle. Yue tried to protest 「What are you doing!」, but before she could,

――’Aa~, for now, this place is already ours, let’s clean up that corpse’

――’Nn. Fertilizer for the field’

Next, Hajime-san took the ring that was the proof of conquering the dungeon from Oscar’s finger.

They had conquered the dungeon so it was only natural to take it but……

The figure taking off the ring without any hesitation was the figure of a pure outlaw who didn’t possess the very concept of compassion or sympathy itself. Furthermore, that figure said 「Does this guy has anything else on him」 while rustling the black clothes around. Like a vulture.

The doubtful gazes of the parents and the wive~s were becoming reproachful eyes that made even Yue turned pale.

Hajime and Yue turned their gaze to the beyond with harmonized movement.

But, Shuu grinned widely and clasped his hand on Hajime’s shoulder. And then, he spoke with a voice that was scarily lacking in intonation.

「Hajime. Do you know what is Tou-san thinking right now?」

「E, e~rr……Tou-san, you know, though not much, I at least made a proper grave.」

「I see. Then I want to offer prayer in front of the grave, so show me the place after this.」

「Ro, roger. Then right away――」

Hajime immediately tried to turn around to gloss over the matter, but he didn’t manage it. His opposite shoulder also got clasped by a hand. Whose hand? Sumire’s.

「Hajime? Don’t you have anything to say to Okaa-san and Otou-san I wonder?」

「Anything, to say?」

The smile of Sumire-okaasan became really deep. Hajime thought, 「Ah, this, it’s that thing huh」.

That hunch was right on the money! Right after that, the eyes of Nagumo married couple slanted upward with great momentum.

「Don’t treat the dead rudely-, this stupid son!」

「That person wasn’t your enemy or anything right! Far from that he was someone who gave you important gift! This idiot son!」

Indeed, it was completely as they said. *Bam-*, Hajime-san received clenched fists on his head.

It was absurd to expect such emotion and common sense from Hajime of that time, there were various excuses he could make.

Although, now that he was harboring a definite respect toward Miledy and others the liberators, looking back at his action then, even he himself was thinking that perhaps it was a bit unforgivable……

Because of that,

「So, sorry」

He honestly showed remorse.

「Go, Goshujin-sama art apologizing!? A dream! This art a nightmare! Shia! Help me to wake up!」

「Leave it to me! Shaoraaa-!!」

Thunderous sound.

A full swing of the war hammer. A silhouette flew into the wall and went through it. And then, the voice of happiness saying 「Thank you very much!」 with echo.

Shuu and Sumire turned their gaze to Yue as though nothing had happened.

「Yue-chan too! Your generally cold reception toward non family, well we don't mind it but, an act that is blaspheming the dead, Okaa-san cannot admire that at all!」

「……Ye, yes. I'm sorry.」

「Well, considering the situation at that time it might be understandable but……treating the dead as fertilizer even though he didn't do anything bad to you, I don't think Otou-san can overlook that.」

「……Ye, yes, Otou-sama. When I myself watched that scene anew, I think that perhaps it's a bit unforgivable.」

'I'm really reflecting……' Yue-sama was downhearted. 'Otou-sama and Okaa-sama scolded me……' She was seriously depressed.

The demon king and his legal wife who achieved being the world's strongest for real were reflecting. It was an extremely miraculous situation. If the people of Tortus saw this sight, they would go crazy or faint, or perhaps they would revere and worship the two parents similar like the mother of a certain goddess of bountiful harvest, no doubt about it.

There was nothing that was representing Oscar on the chair inside the room but……

Hajime and Yue somehow got the feeling that he was laughing wryly at them.

After that, they offered prayer in front of Oscar’s grave, pulled out the dragon woman who was stuck on the field, and then the group activated the past playback everywhere in the hideout while getting a glimpse of Hajime and Yue’s life at that time.

It was truly a sugary livelihood where they could only be called as newlywed spouses.

Extremely high sugar content. The scenes that would undoubtedly give anyone sugar diabetes in one shot made Kaori’s tongue clicking to generate like machine gun.

And then, Yue was looking smug even while feeling embarrassed. A flash of silver grazed her cheek.

「U~n……」

「? What’s the matter?」

Shizuku looked like she wasn’t convinced somewhat. Aiko tilted her head and asked her.

「How should I say it……some footage flew in here and there unnaturally……somehow it’s like I’m looking at an edited recording……」

「Ah, certainly, there is that kind of feeling.」

It seemed it wasn’t just Shizuku who was feeling that something wasn’t right. Aiko also clapped her hands in

agreement.

There, Sumire pointed at a door deeper inside the room and raised a questioning voice.

「Hey, Hajime. We haven’t go there. What is behind that door?」

「Aa~, that place, it’s that. The bathroom. It’s connected to an open air bath.」

「My! That’s great! So there is also bathing custom in another world! Or perhaps is it the personal hobby of Oscar-san?」

Saying that, Sumire turned her step toward the bathroom energetically. Hajime spoke toward his mother who was like that.

「It goes without saying but, we won’t activate the past replay there.」

「I get it. There is also Yue-chan here, there is no way I’ll be so sad that I’m going to intentionally watch my son being stark naked.」

There was one reaction to Sumire’s words. However, everyone entered inside the bathroom while no one was noticing it.

「Ho~, it’s a splendid bathroom!」

「There is like a waterfall coming ahead of our gaze……it looks like Oscar-san was also talented when it come to architecture design.」

Shuu and Tomoichi were in admiration. Hajime poured his magic power to activate the Merlion hot spring version to show how the hot water came out from it.

But, at that instant,

「Aaa, my hand slipped~」(monotone)

Kaori-san, it seemed her hand slipped and activated the past replay.

What would slip inside a bathroom should be the foot, and even if the hand slipped why would the age of god magic got activated? But putting aside those questions, what got projected by the careless magic activation was the figure of Hajime relaxing in the hot spring at night.

「My, nice body.」

「!?」

「……Oh my」

「!?」

By the way, the top was Kirino, and it was Koichi who turned toward her in a flash. The bottom was Akiko, and it was Aiko who turned toward her in a flash.

「Hey-, Kaori! What do you mean your hand slipped! Dispel it right away!」

「……」

「Don’t stare hard at it like that! It’s nothing you hadn’t seen before! Aah geez, you aren’t listening huh. Shizuku! Hold down that secretly perverted childhood friend of yours right

away……wait, why even you are staring hard at it like that huh!

Hajime lightly slapped Kaori’s cheek *pechi pechi* to return her to her senses while demanding her to dispel the magic once more.

Come on return to your senses, hidden pervert meister!

I’m not a hidden pervert or a meister!

Who cares about that, just dispel it right away.

E, err, it feels a bit difficult! It’s because my hand slipped! My hand keeps slipping!

What do you mean your hand keep slipping!?

Like this, like a bobsleigh!

Bobsleigh!?

While the meister and Hajime were doing their comedy skit, the situation that Hajime feared finally arrived.

Yue! Hide it!

……Nn-

The one who finally came was the past Yue. She immediately projected a swimsuit illusion above her past projection. The eyes of the male faction got protected just in the nick of time.

Kaori

Uh, I’m sorry.

Hajime was oozing out cold sweat at the accident that almost happened while sending Kaori a reproachful gaze. Kaori too reflected on herself that she was messing around too much while dispelling the magic.

But, for some reason the projection didn’t vanish. Inside the projection, Yue-sama who was scattering around a bewitching atmosphere in full blast for some reason was standing before Hajime.

‘Why didn’t itt vanish!?’ Hajime’s expression was flustered, however, he immediately discovered the magic power stream using his magic eye stone.

The culprit, was the hopeless dragon.

□SHIAAA!□

□Ah, yes! SHAORAAA-!!□

□Thank you very much-□

The hopeless dragon vanished into the other side of the waterfall.

But, it seemed the projection cut off too late.

——’I’m getting out!’

——’You won’t escape!’

——’Wai-, wait, ah, AAA——!!’

There, the projection dispersed as though something precious had scattered.

Shii~n, a really awkward silence was flowing.

There, Yue’s cheeks flared up bright red while she reported once more.

「……Nn. Otou-sama, Okaa-sama. Let me apologize beforehand. It was delicious. Thank you for the meal.」

「Ah, yes, sorry that we can only prepare such meager meal?」

「No, Sumire, I think that’s not the right thing to say.」

The awkward atmosphere became even more awkward. Shia and others were showing complicated expression that felt like saying 「Aa~, it was this timing……」.

「Papa~. What delicious thing Yue-oneechan was eating nano?」

「……Ask Remia about it later.」

「!?」

The question of a child that was troubling parents was completely thrown toward the mother by Hajime-san. His life gauge was at the red zone.

「I, I see. The past projection that looks edited is because something like this.」

「……The projection got really heavily edited.」

That was how many daily scenes that were in the category of “We cannot show it okay!’. The blushing Shizuku and Aiko were restlessly looking around with indescribable expression.

Kaoruko and Kirino said 「Aa~, to be young」. They felt awkward, but they also gave a slight teasing atmosphere.

On the contrary, the atmosphere of Shuuzou and Koichi felt half awkward and half lukewarm.

And then, Tomoichi was,

「Tsk-tsk-tsk-tsk-tsk-tsk-tsk-tsk-tsk-tsk-」

「Ka, Kaori……」

His expression was shuddering in respond to his daughters gatling tongue clicking that came from her grand self-destruction due to replaying the past as he pleased because of curiosity.

「……It will be, lunch time soon, let’s eat.」

「……Nn-」

Yue was still bashful and fidgeting. Hajime had a distant look while announcing the end of the morning part of Orcus tour in order to change the atmosphere somehow.

Hajime and co easily returned to the royal palace using a gate. A long time had passed without them noticing while they were doing the Orcus tour. The time had gone long past noon.

Perhaps because they were shown various things, they forgot about their empty stomach. But now their empty stomach abruptly began to declare their existence. Hajime and co took lunch that was prepared by Hellina along with Liliana who almost cried because she got left behind while doing her work in desperation.

They had fun talking about various memories, which caused Liliana’s teary eyes to become increasingly sullen.

At the same time, she was also showing a superhuman technique of listening to Kaori’s complaining 「Hey, listen to me Lily! That stupid Yue! That stupid Yue! She was an erorist-san! Hey, are you listening? Lily!」 that was like a machine gun while acting sullen while she was doing her work and also calming Kaori down at the same time, furthermore she was doing it while eating with a beautiful table manner.

Hajime slightly consoled such Liliana while the group finished their lunch.

「I never thought, that I would be left behind for real……」

「No, my bad Lily. But you see, the power of Hellina’s gaze was terrific. It told me 「There is, work. Taking, princess away, absolutely no good (monotone)」.」

「What’s with the halting language. Or rather! I – a – mm! The princess! Hellina, is the maid! Why does Hellina get prioritized!」

「……Haha-」

「Why are you laughing!?」

Hajime looked aside with a face that seemed to say ‘The after meal tea, is delicious~’. Liliana glared at him with a resentful expression. Though she got teary eyes so that expression not only lacked impact, rather it looked cute.

Liliana directed a tearful glare to the culprit who was her exclusive maid. Hellina bowed respectfully.

「My deepest apologies, Liliana-sama. However, in order to accompany the trip of Lord——cough-, Hajime-sama’s trip starting from tomorrow, it is also necessary to finish within

today all matters for the next couple of days that needs Liliana-sama’s decision.

Pe, perhaps that’s so but……no wait, just now, didn’t you say lord just now? You just referred to Hajime-san as your master didn’t you!? Hey, Hellina!?

Today the destination is Orcus Great Labyrinth. This Hellina know what is inside Liliana-sama’s heart so well it’s painful, but I believe the place Liliana-sama should accompany them to should be the imperial capital that will be the destination starting from tomorrow.

Uu……I cannot deny that……but, I want to know about Hajime-san’s past in the great labyrinth……also, you casually ignored my question didn’t you?

If Liliana-sama wish it, it will come true someday. The thing that has to be done right now should be done right now. I will sort out the work that can be postponed for later. If Liliana-sama’s work get delayed, the lord surely will also feel worried for you.

……You’re right. I understand, Hellina. Also, now you aren’t even hiding how you are calling him lord anymore. Please come to my room for a bit later. I will teach you once more who is your master!

Hellina bowed respectfully. Shuu turned his gaze toward Hajime while feeling a bit concerned about the crisis the relationship of the master and servant.

So Hajime. What are we going to do in the afternoon?

For the time being I’m thinking of going to Raisen Grand Canyon.

「That’s where the encounter with me happen isn’t it!」

The rabbit ears moved *myon myon*. Shia looked really happy.

But, Kaori put a halt on that.

「Shia, sorry. I want to go to Orcus one more time before we go to Raisen Grand Canyon. Is it okay?」

「Hoe? I don’t mind that but, is there still anything else to see there?」

They would use up the majority of their schedule here if they were also going to watch the minor detail. Shia tilted her rabbit ears, thinking that they should have seen all that should be seen.

「You see, the time when we reunited……I want Otou-san and everyone else to watch it.」

‘I see’, Shia nodded.

In this trip, it felt like Tomoichi and Hajime had closed the distance between them by quite much, but as expected, Tomoichi was still holding a strong reluctance toward Hajime. That was why Kaori wanted to show her father the time when she was rescued.

「Yeah, I also want to see that no matter what.」

Shizuku too seemed to recall something about that time. She glanced to Hajime while blushing slightly.

Hajime turned expressionless just for a moment from receiving that glance. But, that too really only happened for an instant.

「……I guess. The time after we came out from Raisen Grand Canyon would also be fine but……there was also that scene huh.」

「……Hajime. It’s alright.」

Beside him Yue sharply noticed. She said “it’s alright” not with a questioning tone, but with a tone that was filled with conviction. Hajime looked fondly at Yue in respond and caressed her cheek. As though to say “I’m fine”.

Hajime smiled wryly at Shuu and others who were tilting their head in puzzlement while gulping down his tea all at once. Then he announced their departure for the afternoon part of Orcus tour.

While getting seen off by the princess who had bloodshot eyes as though to say ‘Even if it killed me I’m gonna finish all the pressing work for these few days within today for suree~’, Hajime and co returned to Orcus Great Labyrinth.

Their destination was the surface level of Orcus Great Labyrinth——the floor 89.

Kaori’s gaze slightly wandered off to empty air as though to look back to that time while she started talking.

「At that time, we advanced until the next floor, the floor 90.」

「I think it was around four months since Hajime fell into abyss.」

Shizuku added.

The place they arrived at while giving that explanation was the place where Kaori and co once fell into a desperate

situation in the past. They were at a spacious space with octagon shape located in floor 89.

There was a large hole still gaping open at the ceiling and wall. At the ceiling was the trace where Hajime smashed through using pile buker. The tunnel at the wall was the improvised hideout where Kaori and others escaped for dear life while carrying the wounded.

There was a regenerating function for the stone bridge at floor 65 that was a destination for a trap, but the majority of Orcus Great Dungeon’s surface level didn’t have regenerating function. And so, the trace of battle from that time was remaining clearly.

Kaori performed the past replay. The time axis was seemed to be when they escaped from floor 90 into this room.

With Kouki in the lead, the pale looking hero party, Nagayama party, and Hiyama party showed up from the passage deeper inside. After having some words, Nomura Kentarou who possessed the vocation earth mage started opening a hole in the wall.

「We were ambushed at floor 90. By a demon race woman and a lot of monsters. All of the monsters were unthinkably strong.」

「Two of us were petrified, Suzu was also heavily wounded. The mental shock and the exhaustion from going through losing battle, where, it’s just as you can see there.」

Hajime and Yue and the others also didn’t know about the detailed timing when the demon race woman——Cattleya attacked. And so, they were watching with great interest at Kaori and the classmates who were escaping into the improvised hideout at that time.

Then, ahead of where Hajime and co were watching, Nomura and others were starting to talk to each other. And then, they were staring still without any word at one of the four passages inside the room.

「? What are they doing? ……Hah!? Kaori, replay the scene just now for a bit!」

「Eh? Okay but……」

Kaori rewound the scene slightly. And then she resumed the scene.

This time she noticed. A black silhouette was soundlessly vanishing into the passage.

「It’s Endou! Endou is there!」

「……Nn-, as expected from Endou! He couldn’t be noticed just with a single playback!」

「Endou-san is really absurd isn’t he. As expected from the man who could travel through the dungeon without getting noticed by the monsters even once desuu! That thinness of shadow cannot be copied!」

「Umu. It’s truly a mystery. Even the projection of past replay inadvertently failed to notice him……even within the long history of the dragon race, someone with shadow that thin art the first time.」

「Endou-kun……I’m sorry that I always forgot to call your name when taking absence in the class! Sensei cannot forget Endou-kun’s despairing expression when you got told 「Your number of attendance days is lacking」 by the first year’s head teacher!」

A wailing resounded from earth……it felt like that.

By the way, Endou-kun had perfect attendance. He had never even arrived late.

Anyway, all the parent~s thought of Kousuke and his parents and cried.

「E~rr, Kaori? Why did he go off alone?」

「E, e~rr you see, Endou-kun he, how should I say it, his presence, should I say that it is weak, anyway he is a person with constitution that is hard to notice. It’s to the level that even monster will completely ignore him even though he is right before them.」

「……Such human exist for real?」

「……He really exist. I think that it’s mysterious though. It’s not a skill or magic. It’s a constitution that he has since before we were summoned.」

「Even earth was relatively filled with fantasy huh. Otou-san didn’t know……」

Anyway, thanks to the man who was nonchalantly within the category of mankind’s strongest and could escape from the dungeon to the surface just by himself, the reinforcement that was Hajime made it in time. The parents were given that explanation.

Tomoichi and others understood that he too was one of the benefactor of their daughters’ lives. They asked to rewind the projection slightly and expressed their gratitude.

They couldn’t find him just like how hard it was to find Wall○ though. (TN: Ask google-sensei about find Wally)

‘Eh? The projection has been rewound, so he should be right in front of us shouldn’t it? Where?’ While thinking that.

‘Find Endou!’ After spending a bit of time for that, the past projection displayed the attack of the monsters that were led by Cattleya.

The entrance of the hideout that was camouflaged was blown away. Kouki resolved himself and rushed out.

From there the situation developed quickly.

The hero’s power that used Limit Break was absurd, however, Cattleya used Meld as hostage and sealed it.

Unable to retreat or fight, Kouki was defeated against a monster called Ahatd that was in a different level from other monsters. Cattleya offered a deal which was responded by Shizuku with a grave expression.

Shizuku desperately string together her words in order to find a path of survival somehow. Then, Meld who recovered his consciousness put his life on the line for the last struggle――he tried to explode himself.

「So he is Meld Logins-dono.」

「I see……he is a magnificent warrior.」

Shuuzou and Koichi who were staring so hard at Shizuku’s figure they could open a hole with their gaze saw Meld who got mentioned in the talk at the palace and raised voice of admiration.

But, right after that, even Meld’s determination for death was sealed and ended in futility. He received a fatal wound

and tumbled down on the ground. Seeing that, the expression of Shuuzou and others warped in grief.

The one who snapped seeing that was Kouki. Inside the projection, he displayed an astounding strength and cornered Cattleya once.

But, the matter couldn’t be resolved that easily. At the eleventh hour he finally noticed that “he was turning his sword toward a person” and Kouki’s sword turned dull. Regarding the matter of killing a living being, not to mention having the resolve for that, Kouki didn’t even have the self-awareness of it. Cattleya laughed at that.

Like that the table was turned.

In the place of their trump card Kouki who became unable to fight, it was Shizuku who stood at the front line.

Although it was the period of time where she was unskilled compared to the present, her speed and sword skill were astonishing. Seeing their daughter in a genuinely desperate battle in another world, Shuuzou tightened his lips forming a thin line, while Koichi was clenching his fist hard.

And then, Kirino quietly grasped Shizuku’s hand.

Right after that, Kirino’s hand grasped so strongly that Shizuku felt pain.

——’Shizuku-chan!’

The scream of Kaori. Shizuku too also suffered defeat. She was literally vomiting blood and crouched down. As a mother, it was undoubtedly a sight that Kirino couldn’t endure to watch.

「Ah, Kaori!」

「Kaori!」

The two who unconsciously yelled were Tomichi and Kaoruko. Ahead of the two's gaze, Kaori recklessly rushed out alone by herself from the party's formation that crowded to each other in order to protect themselves.

――'Ka, Kaori……what are you doing……go back quickly. You mustn't stay here'

――'No. It's the same anywhere. If that's the case, then it's better to be at Shizuku-chan's side'

――'……I'm sorry. I couldn't win'

――'It's me who should apologize, for being unable to do anything than this. My magic power is nearly spent'

It was like their last words. No, those were truly their last words.

They were helpless. It was a complete checkmate.

Ahadt approached as though to engrave that on their body.

The parents trembled seeing the sight that had gone past being urgent and could even be said as despairing……

「It's here! Otou-san Okaa-san! Everyone pay attention! Here! Here!」

Kaori-san was greatly excited for some reason. Her fingers pointed out straight and asked for attention.

「……Kaori. That's, don't copy……my act before this.」

「Silence! It will be an important scene after this! After all it is Hajime-kun and my, yes, Ha – ji – me – kun – and – my! Scene of reunion!」

「……Nn-, you don't need to emphasize! Stupid Kaori!」

'Or rather, Kaori, you remember most of Yue's speech huh……', a lukewarm atmosphere flowed among them. At the projection Kaori and Shizuku were snuggling on each other where they were just a step before death, but the tension was completely dispersed.

Then, the next instant the ceiling burst. A giant stake with crimson spark running on it pierced Ahadt along with the despair and pulverized them.

From the smashed ceiling, Hajime descended and landed lightly.

His back was turned toward Kaori and Shizuku as though to protect them, and he looked toward them across his shoulder.

――'You two are really close like usual huh'

Hajime smiled wryly while saying that to the dumbfounded duo.

Instantly.

「KYAAAAAAAAAAH♪ HAJIME-KU~~~N!!」

「……Kaori, noisy!」

Kaori grabbed Yue's shoulders and shook her back and forth while raising a shrill scream like a big fan accidentally encountering a celebrity.

It seemed she didn’t even hear Yue’s protest. Yue was already in a jostled state. Her reproachful gaze was rapidly evolving to become a super reproachful gaze.

「Otou-san Otou-san! See see!? It’s moving right!? That’s Hajime-kun see! And then, the one getting protected there, is me! Kufuu!」

「Ah, right, I’m watching. I, it’s really moving」

‘If only Kaori doesn’t act so high spirited a bit creepily like this.’ Tomoichi-otousan added inside his heart. Kaoruko put her hand on her forehead and her expression turned as though she was watching a troubling child.

And then, the Hajime-kun in question was covering his face with his hands. If there was a hole he would want to enter inside.

On the other hand, the other involved person which was Shizuku was

「……」

She was staring at the paused projection of past Hajime’s face from the side with a somewhat dazed expression *pohee~*.

「She fell in love.」

「So she fell in love here.」

「I see now.」

「!?」

The words of Kirino, Koichi, and Shuuzou caused Shizuku to twitch. She wouldn’t deny that at this late hour, but just in

case she mumbled「At this time, it’s not like, I have self-awareness of it or anything……」 with a small voice.

Gentle gazes showered down on her. Unable to stand it, she wrapped her ponytail around her face. Ponytail guard activate. Don’t look at me!

Kaori who was in a good mood hugged Yue’s head from behind and she nuzzled it in delight while saying.

「Theeen, I’ll put the scene in the loooop~」

「……Bakaori, don’t get carried away.」 (TN: Baka + Kaori = Bakaori)

Yue lightly slapped *pechi pechi* the cheek of Kaori who was hugging her while she was going to forcefully end the past projection.

「Yue, my bad but keep the projection playing.」

「……Nn」

Yue obeyed Hajime’s words and forcefully advanced the past projection ahead. Kaori was annoying, so she reflexively wanted to end the scene.

Due to a curbstomp fight that would put off any ordinary person watching it, the powerful monsters were easily turned into mince meat. Just in case, faint mosaic were applied to the image by Yue’s miraculous feat so the scene was kind to the eye compared to the reality.

Like that, that time finally arrived.

A single dry gunshot sound. It resounded excessively loudly.

Shuu and others didn’t speak any word. They couldn’t say anything. It was like there was a solid lock closing the box where their words were stored.

Fresh blood danced within their sight.

——’Why, why did you kill her. Is there any need to kill……’

Kouki’s words echoed.

「If you are watching then you can understand, the demon race is undoubtedly “person”. What was done just now, was without a doubt a “murder”.」

Shuu and Sumire silently looked back to Hajime who said that. Tomoichi and other parents covered their mouth and went pale.

Shuu walked toward Hajime. And then, in opposite of the time when Hajime carelessly treated the corpse of Oscar before this, he clasped his shoulder gently. He massaged the shoulder as though to loosen something stiff.

「Thanks for showing us that.」

Shuu only said that. He didn’t say anything else.

Sumire was also the same. She only stroke Hajime’s hair messily, then she only silently watched the continuation of the past image.

Things that should be asked had been wholly asked that time when Hajime returned home to them. What they wanted to say had also been wholly expressed in words.

There was nothing that they wanted to discuss once more, to say nothing of wanting to admonish Hajime or anything.

They simply wanted to watch his experience with their own eyes. That was all.

Hajime didn’t understand what should he call the deep emotion dwelling within Shuu and Sumire’s eyes. However, somehow, he thought that the emotion resembled ocean.

While Yue and others were watching over them, Tomoichi and other parents snuggled close to Kaori and Shizuku, and then Aiko too.

Within the projection, Kaori was being shocked by Hajime’s complete change, even so she said her gratitude that he was alive.

「Otou-san, I was only lucky.」

「……I see. No, you’re right.」

Tomoichi looked at Hajime. With Japanese people’s sensitivity, no, with a human’s sensitivity, the act that occurred before their eyes where something that was hard to accept right away.

However, Tomoichi, and also Kaoruko and the other parents too were certainly feeling emotion that couldn’t be measured with just ordinary common sense or ethics.

「Shizuku. You had done your best. You did great surviving.」

「Otou-san……」

「You fought well in order to protect your friend. I’m proud of you.」

「Ojii-chan.」

Koichi and Shuuzou naturally noticed. Shizuku was scared at the bottom of her heart, however she faced Cattleya with a definite killing intent.

Both of them caressed Shizuku’s head with clumsy hand manner. Shizuku wanted to cry slightly but then Kirino gently hugged her.

Like that, Tomoichi and others faced back toward Hajime and spoke out their thanks once more. Their words were short, but their words were filled with the deepest emotion until now.

The projection ended and silence returned.

For a while, everyone were entrusting their body and heart to the silence in order to sort out their heart.

Before long, unexpectedly it was Tomoichi who breached the silence perhaps in order to return the atmosphere to normal.

「Even so, when I imagine that my Kaori will get turned down after this……yep, I want to punch Hajime-kun flying until the end of the earth once more.」

「Shouldn’t that feeling be past its expiration date soon?」

「There is no expiration date to the feeling of a father who is thinking of his daughter you know, Hajime-kun.」

The atmosphere of the place softened just as planned from that conversation.

After that, Hajime and co looked around at the happening in Orcus for a bit more. Somehow it felt unfitting to come out from here and then go right away to a new destination and had fun there.

Within their chest there were complicated emotions that were transparent, complicated, clear but heavy, such contradicting emotions were jumbled within them. They wanted to keep hold to those feelings for a bit more.

And so, the group visited the sealing room once more with an atmosphere like taking a walk. It was Hajime's idea.

What he showed them there was the event before the legendary decisive battle.

――'Let's take her back, without fail'

――'Yeah. We'll take her back, without fail'

Kaori and Hajime were talking about their memory of Yue, and then they showed a determination that was like blazing flame.

Yue writhed while leaking out strange voice「Nfuu」. Kaori blushed for some reason while also incomprehensibly acting tsundere saying「I, it's not like I like Yue or anything, I'm telling you there is no way it's like that!」.

They also replayed past projection in Oscar's hideout once more, showing the time axis before the legendary decisive battle.

――'I wish for my life and death to be together with Yue-san'

Shia's resolve was displayed to Hajime. In order to take away the option of letting only her survive. If they were unable to save Yue, then she would rather die together with Hajime, so she wished.

'Obviously, rather I won't let you get away', Hajime responded with a smile.

Yue leaked out a voice「Nuwaa」as though she was in the verge of death. Shia blushed and said「Do, don't misunderstand, I simply super love Yue-san!」, inflicting a straight punch directly on Yue. Yue died in agony. She automatically revived though.

Through various things like that, everyone's feeling recovered their calm. Around that time.

「Now then, let's continue the trip.」

Hajime ordered that with a gentle voice. Gentle voices of agreement resounded.

Like that the group headed to their next trip destination——the Raisen Grand Canyon while looking forward to the encounter with a hopeless rabbit.

–

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

With this, Tortus travel journal Orcus arc is over.

I'm thinking to write another different story next time.

I hope that there will be another chance to write the continuation of this while feeling the nostalgia slowly.

Best regards!

–

PS

The story of training time in the abyss that appear in this chapter is an excerpt from a part of the LN volume 1’s extra chapter.

For example, like Yuuka’s standing that is based on the LN (the female student who was saved from the Traum soldier), this after story sometimes would reference material from there.

It will help if you readers can be magnanimous.

–

PS 2

Dragon Killing Sword => It’s reimported from Nichijou lol

Arifureta Chapter 330

Arifureta After III Brutal Hero Shia Arc That Place is The Front Line City

–

(Translator Note: In the raw it was Ousatsu yuusha Shia, translated literally it means Shia, hero who beat the enemy to death with her bare hand. Something like that, so I just shorten it using brutal. Or perhaps brutalizer is more fitting? Anyway I might change the term later if the author shade some more light on the naming)

Author Note: Warning

This work is a fiction. It has no relation with the person, group, and city in reality.

In other words it isn't Akihabara, till the end it's the city of Akiba.

That's how it is, please remember it.

One day after several months had passed since Hajime and co returned to earth.

「Shia……you are really going alone?」

The worried voice of Hajime resounded in the living room of Nagumo house.

Shia replied with a troubled expression while putting things like wallet and accessory into a rabbit bag that was embroidered with deformed rabbit mark.

「Geez-. Hajime-san is really a worrywart desuu! How old do you think I am?」

「Even if you say that……you still haven't gotten completely used to the culture and sense of values here right? I don't think it's alright for you to go everywhere alone.」

「Now see here~. That's exaggeration when I'm only going shopping for a bit! I'm not a little kid you know?」

「But still, Shia. This is your "first time visiting Akiba" you know?」

The reason why Hajime was showing concern to an overprotective degree for Shia who was going shopping alone seemed to be that.

In front of Shia who was somewhat exasperated, Hajime showed a difficult expression and raised his voice 「No good. As expected I'm worried. I'm also going!」.

「Just what are you worried about……. It's a lovely city that is overflowing with the subculture that Hajime-san loves right? It's even get called as the holy land of the people with the same hobby like Hajime-san. And yet, why is Hajime-san acting like I'm getting send off into a battlefield?」

「Battlefield, huh. ……In a sense, you aren't wrong.」

Hajime muttered lowly. Shia tilted her rabbit ears limply hearing those words and made a doubtful face.

Hajime cleared his throat with a cough and declared once more with a serious face.

「Anyway! I’m also going with you!」

「Gee~~z. That’s just no goood」

Shia’s rabbit ears were flapping *funya funya* with delight and also embarrassment at Hajime’s obstinate announcement.

Although, there was no way she could bring Hajime along right now.

「Someone with shadow that large under his eyes cannot come along! Hajime-san haven’t sleep in these few days from running around to do information control for the sake of helping Aiko-san and creating new artifacts right? Please rest properly today!」

「No, I’m used to have all-nighter. If it’s the current me who was trained in another world, I can go without sleep for a month easy.」

「Please don’t familiarize yourself with not sleeping for a month.」

Shia hit Hajime’s head lightly to scold him. She let out a long sigh, however she was happy that he was worried for her so she tried giving an alternative plan.

「Then, I will go together with Yue-san. Hajime-san will be relieved if it’s the two of us right? Yue-san is generally a

person with nothing to do in the house since coming here anyway.」

「!?」

Yue-sama who was watching the conversation of Hajime and Shia from the sofa in the living room with amusement got hit. She pressed her chest saying 「Hauu」 as though she got pierced by arrow from an unexpected place.

「No good. Rather, that's even more no good. Listen to me Shia. You don't understand at all about the place called Akiba. You or Yue going to that town, yes, it's like throwing raw meat in the middle of a pack of hungry lions.」

「I don't really understand what you are saying.」

「……Then, I should also compromise here. Shia, in the first place your business isn't anything big right? Then, how about going together with me at the next holiday?」

「For me it's an important business desuu!」

'Upsetting!' Shia-san's rabbit ears bristled up as though to say that.

By the way, Shia wanted to go to the town of Akiba because today she coincidentally had free time, there was nobody else to play with than Yue-san who mostly had nothing to do, Hajime was in a state where he should sleep right away, and so it occurred to her to try taking a walk in the city of Japan that she still hadn't known much about.

And then, if she was asked why Akiba, it was for the sake of researching rabbit eared girls.

In earth, or rather in Japan, there was a kind of culture of loving animal ears. It was a preference for their animal ears that were a target of persecution until only recently.

And then, there was also a lot of tales with rabbit eared girls playing active part in it. That was why Shia thought 「In that case, I have to study it desuu!」. Yes, in order to become a rabbit that was loved even more by Hajime!

For the time being, her plan today was to buy up all the product about the work where an absurdly powerful rabbit eared girl that was troubled by problem children rampaging in another world was playing active role, and the work of a uniformed rabbit eared girl who was controlling madness in a fantasy land.

Both rabbits in those works were skilled in housework and surrounded by many people with excellent capability but with problem children trait. Those points caused feeling of affinity to rise up inside Shia.

Also, she planned to buy anything she could get about works related to genuine hand-to-hand fighting. She already finished reading everything inside the book collection Hajime owned, and even though it was only half playing around she had finished learning most of the techniques that came out in them.

She was still unable to learn techniques from work with strong fantasy setting——for example the techniques of a certain bugged character like Shia Impac○ or Shia Feve○. But Shia’s body was really accustomed to techniques that were realistic to a certain degree.

Back to the topic.

Hajime who realized how firm Shia’s determination (?) was let out a sigh.

His hand suddenly reached toward Shia’s rabbit ears. He petted them *mofu mofu*.

「Nnh, nnu~. What is it, Hajime-san?」

Hajime said with a serious face toward Shia who was narrowing her eyes in pleasure.

「Shia, have a self-awareness. Your rabbit ears are the most valuable treasure of mankind.」

「What are you saying?」

「Mankind won’t hesitate to go to war if it’s for this.」

「Hajime-san, you are tired. Never mind that, please just go rest already.」

Hajime ignored Shia who was giving him an unblinking stare and put on ear cuffs on Shia’s rabbit ears. The rabbit ears instantly looked like it melted into thin air and became invisible.

「You are tired with the usual hair band artifact to hide your rabbit ears right? I tried making ear cuffs type too. I improved it so it apply recognition obstruction on your appearance too. After all if you are strolling alone in the city, you will get hit on by men like there is no tomorrow.」

The rabbit ears flapped *myon myon*! The rabbit ears were as expressive as words coming from her mouth!

But, Hajime’s face was serious in front of the bashful Shia. He grasped both of Shia’s shoulders with a serious face that

even looked a bit scary.

「Ha, Hajime-san?」

「Listen well Shia. That ear cuff is your lifeline. Be really, really careful in the town of Akiba. Don't you dare taking it off no matter what. ……After all Akiba is rough. No, perhaps it's the world that is stormy……anyway, it will become really troublesome.」

「Ye, yes. That's, well, I won't take it off……」

'Isn't this a bit too exaggerated when I'm just going to a lovely town that is overflowing with subculture?', Shia's expression became really doubtful.

She self-concluded that as expected Hajime's head became a little strange like this because of the lack of sleep. Shia shouldered her rabbit bag and displayed her will to depart.

Shia who possessed a treasure warehouse was purposefully carrying the rabbit bag was in consideration when she had to take in and out item in the public.

At the entrance, Hajime was coming along with her to see her off. She wondered what Yue was doing, but Shia's excellent rabbit ears picked up mumbling 「……A vampire princess who mostly got nothing to do……a vampire princess who is always in the house……NEET vampire princess full speed ahead? ……There is no way……」, so she ignored it while letting out a bit of cold sweat.

She decided to buy Yue's favorite sweets when going home.

「Then Hajime-san, I'm going.」

「Yeah. …You bring your wallet? You know the direction?」

「Yes, no problem.」

「What about handkerchief and tissue? You don't forget your smartphone right?」

「……I bring them. I'm telling you there is no need to be that worried.」

As expected, the sentences that were really like a parent acting worried for his little child going at her "first errand" made Shia felt a bit weary but……

「You bring your Drucken? You have enough hand grenades?」

「I, I'm properly carrying my treasure warehouse you know?」

「Are your bullet magazines sufficient? Is your war preparation okay?」

「Who are you talking to!? Akiba is electronic item quarter isn't it!? It's not a battlefield isn't it!?」

Shia-chan suddenly became anxious. She came to think that Akiba was the front line with bloody wind blowing.

「……Come back safely Shia. Show a good fight out there!」

「Is it a battlefield just as I thought!? Right in the middle of the city!? Japan is scary!」

Turning her back toward Hajime who made a sharp salute with a serious face, Shia departed while twitching.

While thinking for a bit that perhaps it would be better to just cancel this trip.

–

–

–

–

A few hours after that.

「Haa haa, kuu~, how persistent. So this is what Hajime-san was worried about!」

There was a silhouette nimbly running at the back alley of Akiba while their beautiful light blue hair was fluttering behind.

It was Shia who was cursing while her pure white miniskirt was flapping.

Her usual innocent smile couldn’t be seen on her face. She looked bitter due to her own blunder and the demonic hand that was cornering herself exactly at this time. The rabbit ears she was proud of were also twitching around busily *piko piko* in vigilance to the surrounding.

Shia dodged trash can and piping lightly like an acrobat while rushing through the narrow alley between buildings.

She looked like someone who was attempting to escape desperately……

No, in reality, unbelievably, at present Shia was being forced to escape.

There was no existence that could become a threat to Shia who was in the same inhuman group like Hajime and others. It was to the degree that all who knew Shia dubbed her as 「Real certain bugged character」.

She could pluck fired normal bullet from the air, on top of that recently she would say 「Please watch this Hajime-san! I finally mastered it!」 while perceiving railgun bullet by sight and dodged it like an agent from the Matr○x. It caused Hajime to let out a bizarre groan 「Uboa」.

Such bugged rabbit was being forced to escape one-sidedly. The existence that forced her to do so was……

「Fo, found heeer! Rabbit eared missyyyyy!」

「Hii!?」

Carrying a backpack on their back, clad in T-shirt that had the sentence 「This is my life」 skillfully written on it, blazing eye glint peeking out from between the long hair, while that hand was holding a solid looking camera——the “Akiba warrior”, was right there.

Just a bit before Shia could rush out from the back alley, the door of a building’s rear entrance was slammed open. The young Akiba warrior who appeared from there made Shia spontaneously screamed pathetically.

That was natural. After all just a moment ago Shia’s rabbit ears detected that his presence was at the other side of the building. And yet, within an instant, right after she diverted her attention the young man appeared before her eyes.

‘This is earth isn’t it!? The peaceful country, Japan isn’t it!?’ Shia made a tsukkomi with a scream inside her heart.

The Akiba warrior young man faced Shia whose face was shuddering and raised his camera. Then he suddenly lowered his head in a flash.

「Ple, please let me take a photo!!」

「I told you already no-!」

Shia replied reflexively.

However, the young man was completely not discouraged! He didn't draw back! He didn't flinch! He didn't look back! 「E, even so please-!」, even though he was stammering slightly, he bowed his head even lower with a posture that strangely radiated a strong will.

Seeing that there would be no end to it, Shia jumped to the building's wall and kicked on it to jump over the young man's head. She came out on a street somewhere.

Then, it seemed that Shia's angry yell just now got heard, the bunch who were chasing after Shia before this——the group of warrior and gentleman was gathering in drove.

「Ra, rabbit ear-san-, please, allow us to take a pictureee!」

「One shot, just one shot is fine, so-」

「Tha, that gaze, please turn it over here!」

「Is it okay to request a pose? I, if possible please take a gun finger pose. Also, can you make the rabbit ears to look a bit wilting? Or rather, I, I have a uniform right here, i, is it okay to ask you to change into it?」

In the blink of eye Shia was surrounded by warriors and gentlemen. The youngest of them were at their teen while the oldest of them were at their 60. Swiftly a formation was formed with praiseworthy skillfulness. On top of that, there were even curious onlookers gathering thinking that there was some kind of event, finally even a crowd was starting to form.

□Uu, just what are you all saying. Even though there are also people wearing cat ears or dog ears. Even someone like the rabbit eared maid-san just now, somehow she was making an amazing movement, and yet why is it only me……. What Hajime-san said that □Akiba is rough□ is completely right on the mark desuu□

Shia's face contorted looking like she was going to cry. Finally her surrounding was filled with Akiba's warriors, gentlemen, and ladies. They were eagerly aiming for the photo timing while waiting for Shia's permission.

By the way, the rabbit eared maid-san Shia mentioned. Shia only saw her from afar but……

When the maid was doing her job attracting customer on the street, it seemed she discovered the crime of taking picture sneakily. The rabbit-eared maid-san broke into a run with terrific speed and in the blink of eye she subdued the criminal who was escaping like a startled hare while yelling some kind of technique name □Lightspeed Triden○ Tackle!□.

Shia saw a hallucination. There was the image of a trident, overlapping on the hand that the rabbit eared maid-san stretched out.

Setting that aside.

About why the situation became like this, that was simply caused by Shia's painful blunder.

For Shia who had lived as a discriminated race for a long time, girl wearing animal ears by their own accord was a terribly rare existence. No, someone like Yue often performed "Yue-nyan, meow", but that person was strange like that in various things, so setting that aside……

Anyway, such girl was an existence that drew in her gaze and attention very much.

That must be why. In the street that was already filled to the brim with people, Shia whose attentiveness was distracted bumped with another person, and in that instance her ear cuffs got caught on something and fell off.

Furthermore, she then acted in a way that was common for a panicked person.

When she tried to pick the ear cuffs in panic, her toes inadvertently kicked it away. That was her bitter blunder number two.

Unluckily, the ear cuffs that were tumbling away on the ground got bounced away like a pinball by the crowd and it flew away into the gutter at the side road with splendid trajectory that would make any commentator to yell □GOAL!!□.

Shia tried to check inside the gutter in a flustered state but……

If the ear cuffs were gone, naturally, it became exposed.

Yes, Shia’s rabbit ears, and above all else, her beautiful look.

The beautiful long hair that reminded one of the pale blue moonlight, the beautiful face that would make foreign superstar to run away with their tail between their legs, the perfect body proportion that would put any model to shame.

Even though she was a super beauty but the atmosphere she was clad in was gentle and overflowing with loveliness that would make anyone wanted to look at her forever.

Such lovely girl who was already like a miracle even at the best of times, was

Of all things, wearing twitching rabbit ears *piko piko*.

At this occasion, the matter of the rabbit ears looking too realistic didn’t worth any consideration. How was it moving, how their movement was just too natural……such tsukkomi was buried deep at the bottom of everyone’s heart.

Because, if they were a man, no, even if they were of the same gender, if they were someone who loved Akiba then they could only have their heart gotten stolen away!

The rest was inevitable. The warriors, gentlemen, ladies, and wizards of Akiba crowded like hyenas.

If they acted rudely toward Shia here, if they acted forcefully toward her, Shia would mercilessly punch them flying and disappeared right away.

However, as expected from them. They properly bowed their head and asked for permission before taking picture, and even though they were throwing their demand that was filled to the brim with their zeal without any reservation, they didn’t force or threaten their target.

In the first place it was also Shia’s fault for committing the blunder of losing her artifact even after Hajime’s warning that it would cause a commotion. Conversely she was unable to bulldoze her way through them who were acting like this.

And so, she immediately ran away from the town of Akiba but……

They weren’t that soft.

They cornered Shia, just like how in the past the craftsmen of Heiligh Kingdom cornered Hajime using only their passion as their weapon!

With the astounding tracking ability and physical ability and coordination that was unthinkable to be carried out by fellows who only had met for the first time that made Shia couldn’t help to make a tsukkomi ‘Are you guys really just human!?’, they approached her and earnestly begged for their request to be granted.

It was truly a situation of “Shia escape! But the enemy cut her off!”. (TN: I think this is reference to Dragon Quest, when you try to escape from battle but the escape failed. Sadly I don’t remember the exact notification message from the game English version)

She was unable to run away from the warriors, gentlemen, ladies, wizards, hunters, and searchers of Akiba!

Shia thought, 「The station is far away……」.

「Fuu, it can’t be helped. I don’t really want to do something absurd in Hajime-san’s world but……rather, it’s you all who are absurd! Surely just this much will be fine!」

When the voice of 「Please, let us take a photo!」 was starting to become a loud chorus, she let out a long sigh while starting to walk briskly.

The crowd surrounding Shia in a circle was stirred, but she didn’t pay it any mind and advanced straight ahead and then she stopped in front of a young man.

The young man muttered 「Eh, eh? M, me? Could it be, it comes? My springtime comes?」, but as expected Shia didn’t

pay it any mind and she grasped the young man’s shoulders tightly.

The young man’s face blushed bright red from having both his shoulders grasped by a lovely rabbit-eared beautiful girl who couldn’t be found even in TV right in front of him. The surround became even more stirred!

The young man’s face was vaguely filled with expectation, however, Shia heartlessly presented such young man with words that would be a reward for a minority of human with unique nature.

「I’m sorry. Can I ask you to kneel for a bit?」

「Eh?」

「Can you, kneel for me?」

Shia smiled sweetly while strengthening her grip to just barely the limit. The young man was taken aback for a moment, but for some reason his face became even redder and he bent his knees while his breathing grew a bit rougher. It seemed this young man too was a part of that “minority human with unique nature”.

Shia stepped on the shoulder of such young man. The young man spontaneously almost looked up, but right after that a great pressure assaulted him and he instinctually lowered his head. He was like a knight swearing fealty toward the princess.

The surrounding people gulped wondering if they were going to start abnormal this and that in front of this many people. The camera lenses were sparkling here and there.

But, the next instant, they all became wide eyed.

「Well then everyone, forgive me for the commotion.」

Shia bowed her head shortly along with word of apology, then right after that she put her weight into the foot stepping on the shoulder of the young man, and then she made a big jump right after that.

The young man was surprised that the recoil from supporting the jump of a single person was shockingly lacking and he turned around with a gasp.

Then, over there was the figure of Shia making a single rotation in midair while making the bald head of an uncle at the back as her next stool.

Like that Shia was making the warrior, gentleman, lady, wizard, knight, hunter, searcher, shop owner, rabbit eared maid-san, and residence of Akiba as her stepping stool while rapidly advancing through the crowd.

「I, I'm used as stepping stooool!?」

「Thank you very much-」

「My heart is jumping pyon pyooonn」

Everyone was greatly excited seeing Shia hopping *pyon pyon* beautifully by stepping on the crowd.

The rabbit ears waving *pyoko pyoko* and the rabbit tail shaking *furi furi*, and then the brutally bouncing twin hills *barun barun* made the many people to be just one step away from madness. The warriors almost turned into berserkers!

Of course, Shia wasn't doing this because she was aiming for it. It was something easy to leap over the whole crowd in a

single leap.

However, such feat would be truly inhuman. Jumping by using people as stepping stools was just barely within the range of what could be processed as common sense.

Ignoring the noise of the people, Shia executed her last big jump along with a marvelous midair somersault that would make any gymnast went pale and landed lightly on the ground. And then without pause she dashed away like a startled hare.

The warriors who returned to their senses screamed 「HYA—HAA—!!」 and moved simultaneously. ……It seemed around half of them had transformed into berserker. Also, the rabbit eared maid-san was absurdly fast. The voice that said 「Please accept me as your pupil!」 seemed to reach Shia's rabbit ears but, surely it was just her mishearing, no doubt about it.

「This time for suree, I will reach the station of Akiba no matter whaaat! Don't look down on the rabbit who beat down even the god's apostle!」

Surely the apostles of god too would cry in the shadow if they knew they got compared with the warriors of Akiba. Especially Erst-san.

Like that Shia sprinted through the last alley and caught sight of the station at the front. She resolved herself that she wouldn't come to Akiba anymore without Hajime's company and she relaxed her tension from the relieve——it was then.

「Hae?」

Shia's foot that was stepping forward wandered in empty space. She unconsciously leaked out a stupid voice.

Losing the foothold where she should step on, her body shook forward while her gaze was turning. She saw a hole like a dark black hole there.

Just a moment before, there should definitely be a street there. There wasn’t anything like a manhole with shifted cover. Above all else, the insistence of her instinct showed strongly that it wasn’t just a hole.

Shia was going to fall into the hole, however, even while feeling shaken she used the power of “Air Force” that was built into her shoes with reaction speed that was worthy for a bugged character. She created a foothold to escape to the other side of the hole.

But,

「Wha-!? I’m getting sucked!?」

Yes, the expression of black hole really fitted to describe that hole.

It was like the “Severance Calamity” of Yue. The extraordinary sucking power that was difficult to oppose was completely capturing Shia!

「Kuh, Hajime-san-!」

The surprise attack that was too sudden couldn’t be handled by Shia whose battle instinct seemed to have grown slightly dull due to the peaceful days after the legendary decisive battle. At the end, she called the name of her beloved while getting sucked into the bottom of the darkness.

Silence returned to the alley where Shia vanished.

Swirl, there was only wind blowing vainly.

–

–

–

–

–

–

After a sensation of great weightlessness, Shia felt the sensation of hard ground under her butt.

Light filled her field of vision and she couldn’t see clearly. However, her excellent presence detection ability sensed the multiple presences surrounding her at the other side of the light.

It seems I’m spared from getting instantly killed but……the smell of troublesome thing is strong.

Shia smiled wryly while pouring magic power into the treasure warehouse worn on her left hand’s ring finger. At the same time she held up her palm horizontally and grasped. Vire Drucken that manifested at a superb timing settled into her hand.

It was an unexpected situation, the profound weight of her partner made Shia formed a fearless smile. The self-confidence to smash through any kind of situation and the resolve to reunite with Hajime and others without fail were dwelling inside her sparkling eyes.

Like that, Shia was on her guard while observing the situation. Before long the light melted into thin air and

vanished.

‘Now then, what kind of fellow is committing the foolish act of kidnapping me’, thought Shia while looking around her with her gaze dangerously narrowed.

「Oo, is it a success!?」

「As expected from the chief royal magician-dono.」

「Look at that beauty. It’s like she is the goddess of the moon.」

There were around twenty people being noisy in surprise and delight. Those people were wearing clothes like priest clothes or armor like soldier.

Shia stayed silent while her observing gaze looked around. A single youth who looked slightly exhausted walked in front of her.

The youth was wearing a magnificent robe that was decorated with geometrical pattern with ultramarine and silver color, and he was holding a cane that was made from wood that looked like twisted oak. His braided long hair had vivid silver color. He was wearing a small pince-nez glasses and his long-slitted eyes gave intellectual impression. He was a terrific handsome guy of intellectual type.

Such intellectual handsome guy faced Shia and opened his mouth, however, he was stopped by a hand grabbing his shoulder from behind.

「Wait Louise. Don’t approach her carelessly. That woman is holding a weapon. We don’t know what she will do.」

Saying that, the one who directed wary and suspecting gaze to Shia was also a terrific handsome guy. Vivid golden hair and golden eyes. Sharp gaze that was like a predator and trained body that was obvious even from above the light armor he was wearing. He was a man that gave the impression of a wild lion.

「Ee~, is that so? I think she is a really cute girl though? I want to get near her right at this very second.」

「Just shut up Phil. The opinion of a playboy doesn't hold any weight.」

「You say that Eric, but inside your heart you also think that she is cute right? Besides, look, Greg who usually make uninterested face toward girl is completely staring in fascination there.」

The person who appeared with frivolous comment was also a handsome guy as expected. He had slovenly appearance of greatly exposed chest while his finger was casually twiddling his wavy deep green hair.

In addition there was also a man with short black hair muscular build, but, as expected he was also a handsome guy of some kind of clichéd trope. He was staring intently at Shia.

Seeing them, Shia grew impatient and opened her mouth while lightly tapping Vire Drucken on her shoulder.

「Say, I don't know what is your objective in kidnapping me, but if you aren't hostile, then can you all explain the situation to me already? I want to go back home quickly……」

Then, perhaps feeling irked by that attitude of Shia, the golden haired man who really looked like someone with arrogant personality——the man called Eric squinted his eyes and he was about to say something.

This time it was the silver haired and delicate looking man called Louise who stopped him. He made a gentle smile while speaking out their objective.

「Pardon our rudeness. We called you my lady to this place because we wish for you to save the world. My deepest apologies for our selfish rudeness. But, please, I beg you to save our world.」

Like that, decisively following the template, the extremely clichéd word was said.

「——Hero-sama.」

Their words and gazes were earnestly filled with great expectation.

Seeing that, hearing that, Shia reflexively,

「Eh, I don’t wanna.」

Replied like that honestly.

A really painful atmosphere filled the place.

–

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

In Brutal Hero Shia arc, it’s basically only a story where Shia solve 90% of the problem all over the world (another world) with violence.

And so, there is also Shia arc that I had done before this, so I don’t intend to do this arc for long.

Although, I have previous offense regarding the advance notice of the number of chapter, so I won’t make any definitive statement!

Sorry if it become long.

Also, the chapter this time is the revised version of the side story I put in the activity report previously.

–

PS

Arifureta main comic chater 25 is uploaded in Gardo.

Miledy battle is concluded there. Shia who is happy from Yue’s praise is cute.

Also, mini Miledy is annoying in a nice way lol

Please take a look of it by all means!

Best regards.

Arifureta Chapter 331

Arifureta After III　Brutal Hero Shia Arc　Fly Until The Moon-! Desuu!

.

The silence was deafening. It was like the time had stopped.

「Err……I don’t wanna do it though.」

She made doubly sure! It was important so she said it twice!

The place finally turned noisy because of Shia’s words.

Looking closer, this room had beautiful cylinder shape, the width was around the same with gymnasium in general, and inside it there were about thirty people.

Complicated geometrical patterns was carved under Shia’s feet. There were the people who were calling out to her just now surrounding the pattern, and further around them there were people wearing robe or armor surrounding them. Although, there was just one person who seemed to be out of place due to the maid uniform that she was wearing……

Anyway, their expressions were all similarly distorted with bewilderment, sorrow, and also indignation.

Among them, a young man who seemed to recover from the unrest earlier than others took a step forward.

It was the silver haired, blue eyed, intellectual looking glasses young man who was called Louis just now.

「Hero-sama. I am the chief spirit priest of Balted Kingdom's royal court――Louis Lektor. I am the one who summoned you here.」

Louis's robe swayed gently while he kneeled on one knee with a courteous manner. He then silently bowed his head.

「Your anger is only natural. My deepest apologies. But, I beg you, please understand that we don't have any other way. We don't have the slightest intention to be rude. If we have a method to contact you beforehand then we would dispatch a messenger first to ask for your consent――」

「Err, I'm not angry you know?」

「Eh?」

The intellectual looking young man slipped out a stupid voice that didn't suit his face. Perhaps it was just her imagination, but it felt like his glasses also slipped down slightly.

「Bu, but, just now, you said that you refuse to come to our aid……」

Didn't that mean that she was feeling offended because she suddenly got summoned here without any explanation whatsoever beforehand? Louis asked that, but Shia spoke with a troubled look while tapping Vire Drucken on her shoulder.

「Well, certainly I'm thinking that this is really troublesome, but I'm not thinking that you all are rude or anything. If what you are saying about the danger to the world is real

and you are grasping at straw as your last hope, that’s, it’s only natural for someone in your place to do whatever you can. ……I have memory doing the same thing myself, so it will become a boomerang if I get angry here.」

「I, I see.」

What came to mind was her figure in the past clinging on someone else with all her strength without any reservation at all. Shia’s gaze became slightly distant.

「While it was an act that I did myself, the way I clung on someone else in the past was really something. I got elbowed on the stomach, showered with electricity, got kicked, and in the end I was sent flying into a swarm of magic beasts, even so I believed without a doubt that person surely would help me!」

「……In other words, you are saying that if I get elbowed, electrified, kicked, and in the end get send flying into a swarm of magic beast……is that, some type of monster? If I get send flying into a swarm of them, you will help……」

The intellectual type handsome guy Louis-san was trembling weakly while his face was turning pale. He was oozing out cold sweat like a waterfall.

The expression of the golden haired high-spirited young man called Eric shuddered as though to say 「Are you……a demon」, the frivolous green haired youth Phil said 「I, is the girl from another world all like this」 with his expression twitching greatly, the black haired and taciturn young man Greg was closing his eyes while praying for Louis’s happiness in the next world.

And then, the other people were also saying 「Te, terrifying……」 while looking at Shia like they were looking

at a demon. They were backing away.

"No no no! That's not it! I'm just recounting my experience! A long time ago I too was asking for help and the other party did that to me, that's all I'm saying!"

"That in itself, I think that person is a savage or something……doing something like that to a beautiful girl asking for help is……"

"Tha, that is, well, it's……"

Her beloved person was called a savage but, Shia-chan, she was unable to object.

Thinking back, certainly she couldn't help but thinking "What a thing that was done to me at that time……".

Shia got a faraway look once more while mumbling "Come to think of it, even Tio-san suddenly got pile bunkered in her ass……Yue-san also got her scalp shaved……Hajime-san is merciless even toward girl isn't he……".

There, Eric cleared his throat and stood beside Louis.

"I am Eric Luxeed Balted. The king of Balted Kingdom. Let me ask you. What do you wish for? You who said that you understand our feeling stated that you refused to aid us, then you must mean that we need to compensate you! What do you wish from us who are facing our destruction!?"

It appeared that Eric who resembled a golden lion was a young king of a country.

From the start he seemed to be strangely tense against Shia. From that it seemed that the opinion of the summoner side wasn't united.

Shia didn’t really understand why the king was opposing the hero summoning but……

In any case, if the summoning was still carried out despite the king’s opposition, the only possible hypothesis was that most of his subordinates were at the agreeing side.

In other words, it was a situation so pressing that they couldn’t help but doing this even despite the king’s protest.

Shia formed that conjecture while answering frankly.

「I don’t want anything.」

「Wha, what did you say?」

Eric spontaneously revealed his bewilderment.

「Ah, if I’m forced to say, I want to be returned home but……」

Shia said that as though she had just remembered it. Louis fixed the position of his glasses while speaking with a grave expression in respond.

「……My apologies. We are only able to reconstruct the summoning formula from the old literature. The return method is……」

Louis answered while getting cold sweat. But Shia only shrugged her shoulders casually. ‘It’s the golden pattern isn’t it!’ She said.

Eric questioned her once more while frowning.

「If you say that you don’t even have anything you want then, why……in the literature, it’s said that the hero will lend their strength on their own will……」

"I've never proclaimed myself as a hero. Besides, I don't know what do you want me to do but, something like saving the world is a serious affair. Wouldn't it be accompanied by great danger? Furthermore it should be at the level that is beyond all of you."

"What? In other words, you are saying that you are scared?"

'Getting cold feet even before hearing the full story……', Eric questioned somewhat provocatively and also with exasperation coloring his expression, in respond Shia——

"Yes! Exactly!"

"Wha-"

She immediately answered bluntly without any hesitation.

Eric and everyone else lost their words. Shia smiled wryly toward them while saying.

"Now see here, even I have important people you know?"

"Important, people?"

Correct, she had a family. An important family of important people who treasured Shia above all else.

"My life, it doesn't belong to me alone."

"……"

Her life that was treasured by them, there was no way that she herself could treat it so casually. An act that easily put her life at stake was like she herself was treating the family that was treasuring her irresponsibly.

「That’s why, first I have to prioritize myself above everything else. I cannot risk my life for the sake of a world and people that I don’t even really know. Of course, if there is someone asking for help and the situation isn’t that dangerous, I will lend them a helping hand but……in a situation where there isn’t even a way to return back, in another world where I don’t know what could be here, I have to protect my own life above everything else.」

For the sake of her family. For the sake of her beloved people. For the sake of the people who loved her.

That was why,

「I’m sorry. I’m going to abandon all of you to protect myself!」

No one ever heard an abandoning statement this decisively. They could only become speechless.

If it was just a mere fright or self-protection that came from calculation, a ground for negotiation would still exist no matter how difficult it was.

They had done their best to prepare the material for such negotiation beforehand.

However, for someone to be this driven for their own protection so wholeheartedly and straightforwardly……

「Fufufu……you are a kind person.」

A tiny laugh and voice resounded inside the dead silent room. It was Louis.

He stood and walked in front of Shia. Shia went 「Heh?」 and tilted her head.

"Just now, you said that you are going to abandon us but……"

Shia frowned in displeasure, wondering if this person was the occasional oblivious person who interpreted everything to fit their own convenience.

However, Louis kept gazing gently at Shia while even his comrades were looking at him strangely.

"For you who spoke that you will fully focus on your own protection, the proclamation just now is a poor move isn't it? The best way for you would be to pretend that you are cooperating with us."

It was Shia herself who said that she had no one and nowhere to depend on in this other world. In that case, then certainly that would be the best way for her in order to secure the basic necessities for herself.

Eric and others gasped and looked at Shia after hearing that.

"And yet, you made your declaration even while still knowing nothing of the situation. That is……your sincerity isn't it?"

She didn't want to trick them and imprudently give them hope.

That was why, first she conveyed her own will while knowing that it was a poor move.

While being aware of the possibility of getting thrown out into the world where she had no one to depend on.

「……That’s because a promise that is made has to be kept. My dignity, and my family’s dignity is on the line.」

Just like he who responded to Shia’s request for help at that time. Even when the elders offered a new and better offer which made Shia and Hauria clan became unnecessary, her most beloved person made his declaration without any hesitation of making a country into his enemy, just because of the reason “because that’s the promise”.

That was an important rule for the powerful, in order to not fall into heresy even if they were called a monster.

Shia averted her gaze awkwardly. Her gesture and words made Eric and others blinked with surprise. Her rabbit ears were swaying up and down *funyon funyon*. Several people blushed seeing Shia like that.

Louis’s expression became even more gentle and he turned his gaze toward Eric.

「Your majesty. In any case, let’s return to the palace. It’s the fact that we are calling hero-dono here for our own convenience. We won’t be able to talk about the matter ahead without first proving our sincerity to hero-dono.」

「Nuh…….got it.」

Eric looked reluctant, but looking at the way he was looking at Shia, it seemed that his severity toward Shia had lessened compared to before.

Certainly they were too impatient in their talk. First they should move to a place where they could calm down. Eric who was convinced like that offered his hand in order to welcome Shia to the palace――

At that time,

「For now, I'll show you to the palace. You should put down that dangerous weapon already――」

「!? This is too sudden!」

Suddenly Shia's rabbit ears stood straight, then right away with a terrific speed Shia rushed toward Erik who was offering his hand to her.

The sudden action of the girl from another world who was holding a gigantic war hammer was responded by the royal guard captain Greg who was showing an amazing reaction speed.

He grasped Eric's collar and switched their position so that he was between Eric and Shia.

But, Shia didn't pause in her charge. Her palm pressed on Greg's chest and,

「Nuguh!?」

「Please stand back!」

With the overwhelming arm strength that was unthinkable coming from the slender girl, Eric wasn't even allowed to brace himself and he was sent flying backward.

'Is the hero rampaging!? Is she rampaging because she think that she is going to be dragged to the palace!?' The knights and mages were bewildered while thinking that. It happened at that instant.

Thunderous sound.

Dazzling flash.

The ceiling was annihilated, furthermore a light pillar pierced into the room.

The spot where Shia and Eric were at just a moment ago was completely swallowed by the gigantic light pillar along with the surrounding. The impact sent the people around flying.

(Electricity! It’s an extra large lightning attack!)

Shia immediately deflected the shockwave that was assaulting her with a single wave of Vire Drucken while analyzing what happened in her mind.

It was just as she analyzed, the light pillar was emitting electrifying sparks which showed that it was a lightning strike.

Although, seeing how it was continuing to pour down without pause and the impact zone that was too accurate, it was impossible that this was a natural phenomenon.

As though to prove that, Louis who was similarly blocking the impact like Shia using some kind of method yelled with a pained voice.

Celestial people!? So our action is noticed!

The lightning was getting thinner. But they couldn’t sigh in relieve yet.

Because Shia’s excellent senses detected great torrent of power converging in the sky.

But, Eric yelled fearfully before she could say anything about it.

「Everyone, form the formation!! Something is coming!! Louis-, protect the hero!」

Not only Greg, Phil and other knights and mages were also gathering toward Eric's position all at once. Those who judged that they wouldn't get in position in time took anti-impact posture on the spot.

Louis who responded immediately to Eric's words muttered something while sliding toward Shia.

「Hero-dono! Don't move from there!」

Right after that, Louis's gnarled cane was tinged with light, then a half-spherical barrier was created.

Shia slipped out an admiring voice「Oo~」that was out of place, at the same time Eric at the rear pulled out the large sword on his back and stabbed it into the floor. By doing that, a barrier of faint golden vortex was produced.

The next moment.

The ceiling collapsed and fell like cannonball.

「Guuh」

「-!?」

The large stone of the ceiling impacted the barrier. Groaning voices enduring the attack reached Shia's rabbit ears from everywhere.

(This isn't a mere collapse. This is……wind's sound? Is this a more powerful version of "Wind Hammer"?)

Shia looked up to the sky. Her superior rabbit ears accurately perceived the phenomenon occurring outside the barrier.

The wind element magic “Wind Hammer” that Tio and Yue sometimes used. It was a magic that blew powerful gale to strike downward.

Right now what was attacking Shia was something more powerful than that. In a manner of speaking it was like a downburst.

「Kuh, no good-. The building won’t hold! Hero-dono!」

「Wawa, oops!」

Cracks ran through the whole room like spider web. It seemed the building wouldn’t endure even before the endurance of the barrier.

At this rate they would be blown away along with the barrier……

Louis seemed to judge so. He tried to carry Shia by quickly leaping toward her.

And so, Shia swiftly dodged.

Louis-san made a face that seemed to say「Eh? It’s a lie right?」while passing through in front of Shia.

In that instant, the whole building was blown away in radiating direction. Naturally the people who were forming barrier and also the people enduring using shield and the like were similarly blown away.

Shia was sent flying by the violent squall and got thrown into air. Louis reached out his hand yelling「Hero-dono!」but……

For Shia, it wasn’t the time for that so she turned away her gaze.

「The killing intent is high desuu」

Her rabbit ears were twitching *piko piko!*. Sharp wind slicing sound that was different from before entered her rabbit ears!

A stone that was the material of the former building was flying at her at that timing. Shia lightly hopped using it as her stepping stone and then an invisible wind passed through right beside her.

Furthermore! Even more wind slicing sound in great number! There was even flashs of lightning visible far above!

Countless wind blades poured down like heavy rain. In addition they were not visible to the eye. There was no way they could be evaded, and even if it was possible, most likely the lightning rain that fell in the speed of lightning after that would be inescapable……

And so, Shia took a peek into the future.

「The safe zone is~, here!」

Shia stepped on empty air with a casual step and walked three steps ahead. The countless wind blades that rained down in an instant passed through around Shia in vain.

Without pause Shia took a step backward like a leaf swaying in the air. A flash passed through in front of her with lightning speed like a spear.

When she twirled as though dancing, it was like the wind blades and lightning themselves were falling while avoiding her.

Ton- She stepped on the air with light footsteps. However, in contrast with that lightness, Shia’s body leaped backward like a bullet. The guillotine that was falling from the sky after that was hot on her heels, but Shia wasn’t even grazed.

She easily got out of the attack range and landed on the ground, there she finally witnessed what kind of place she was at.

A round moon that was far bigger than the one at earth was floating.

What the moonlight shining down from the clouds’ interval illuminated was dilapidated buildings……no, many obsolete buildings that ought to be called an abandoned or ruin.

It seemed that all of them were made from stone. Half of them were crumbling, there was an arch that looked like it could collapse anytime, and straight stone pillars with unknown utility were standing in a disorderly fashion.

The cylinder building where Shia was summoned seemed to be a splendid building that was conspicuously big even among these buildings. Though there was already nothing remained of it except a crater.

A forest was visible at far away. At every direction. It seemed this bunch of abandoned buildings that were like ruins were located in the middle of a forest.

□Uu……□

A groan reached her rabbit ears. When she turned her gaze there, the maid-san wearing maid uniform who looked out of place was lying on the ground right nearby. Blood was flowing from her forehead. It looked like her consciousness was also hazy. She must have gotten hit by stone and received light concussion.

Then, the night sky suddenly became bright. It was a dazzling brightness that was different from moonlight or lightning flash.

「Ugeh, this time it’s flame!? They are really brimming with killing intent!」

Even while she was cursing, countless lump of flame fell down as though a volcano had erupted.

Shia glanced at the maid, then she sighed deeply and said 「It can’t be helped」. She quickly carried her in her arms and leaped behind a large stone pillar.

A beat later.

Tremendous explosive sound resounded. The flaming lumps impacted and exploded, scattering flame and shockwave abundantly everywhere.

It was truly something that ought to be called a carpet bombing.

Shia peeked out from behind the stone pillar and looked around. She could see Eric and others enduring the attack desperately.

Shia immediately withdrew behind the stone pillar and lightly slapped the cheeks of the maid who was groaning 「Uu~n」.

「Onee-sa~n! This isn’t the time for sleeping you knooow~. It become really troubling right now you knooow~. Come on, please wake up!」

「Uu~, don’t slap my facee~……hah!? Where is here!? I am Dahlia!?」

‘Who am I!?’ That might be what she wanted to say before she bit her tongue. Or perhaps that was her saying her name properly? (TN: I don’t know how to translate this one. In Japan ‘who am I?’ is ‘watashi wa dare da?’. Here the maid said ‘watashi was daria!?’, it can sound like she isn’t talking clearly because she bit her tongue, or it can be interpreted that she is speaking her name Dahlia.)

The maid-san with blond hair and golden eyes, her hair bundled up with a barrette looking like she was in the first half of her twenties had beautiful face even from Shia’s perspective. That beautiful face was flashing through many different comical expressions.

「Onee-san Onee-san. I understand you got your head hit and feel confused, but right now we are in the middle of extravagant bombardment. Please return to your senses quickly.」

「You are……hero-sama!?」

Bang-, explosive sound shook the air. Pebbles and dusts flew along with the impact. The stone pillar guard was going strong, but all of those flying at both sides woke up the maid completely this time.

「Hero-sama, you saved me? I’m grateful!」

「Your welcome. More importantly, what is going on? That glasses person said something about celestial people or

something.」

「He, hero-sama, what composure……as expected!」

「Ah, yes, let's set that aside for a bit now.」

The maid-san seemed moved for some reason. This person too was relatively composed or perhaps she had thick nerve……Shia was thinking that while making a gesture of putting an object to the side.

The maid-san――when Shia asked to check, she didn't bite her tongue, instead it seemed her name was really Dahlia――looked up to the sky with an expression that was filled with unease and loathing.

「It's the celestial clan, hero-sama. They are arrogant bunches living far above in the sky pretending as the messenger of god.」

「God's messenger……」

Shia's voice spontaneously slipped out「Uhee」. She had no good memory at all in regard of such existence.

「Most likely that bunch sensed hero-sama's summoning. They intend to obliterate hero-sama along with all of us!」

Shia's rabbit ears jerked in respond. From the falling sound of the flame lumps raining down from the sky, the attack was in a direct course toward them.

Shia lifted up Dahlia into a princess carry and rushed away from that place.

Dahlia was surprised, but right after that she saw the place they were at just now got swallowed by flame blast and she

gulped.

Shia immediately hid herself behind a half-destroyed building.

「Obliterating, that doesn't sound peaceful. Besides, that's strange. From what all of you said, aren't you all wishing to save the world? Why are they trying to kill you all who are intending to save the world?」

Shia implicitly asked 'Are you all lying?'. Dahlia quickly shook her head left and right in respond.

「You are wrong-, hero-sama! Please trust us! We are certainly wishing to save the world!」

「H~mm, then why? What is the objective of this celestial clan whatever?」

'She doesn't look like she is lying huh', Shia thought while asking so. Dahlia then informed a truly unpleasant information to Shia.

「The one trying to end the world is god——the divine spirits, that's why-」

「So it's that kind of pattern again!」

It seemed that it was that pattern again. Shia went 'Oh my god-' while looking up to the sky with both hands covering her face.

「The various divine spirits has given up on mankind. Indeed, mankind had done something to the extent that caused that decision. However, even if that is the case there is no way we can just allow ourselves to be destroyed obediently-」

「Somehow concerning words are flowing out like flood.」

Even when she appealed「I don't want to hear anymoore!」 by flopping down her rabbit ears flat on her head, Dahlia-san's high speed explanation that was overwhelmingly lacking in detail continued rapidly like machine gun.

And then, Shia's excellent rabbit ears caught all her words without missing anything!

「The celestial clan obey the decision of divine spirit absolutely. That's because they are worshipping divine spirit. What's more, even if the people on the ground are destroyed, they alone are living in the sky. There is no way they won't help the divine spirits-」

「Aa~, so that's why. I who was summoned for salvation also become erasure target like this.」

「Hero-sama is a target to be erased!」

Even if she strongly said it like that……. Even if she clenched both of her small fists and strongly said that looking a bit cute…….

She wanted to punch that pretty face. Shia couldn't help but laughing drily.

Then, at that timing several people slid to where the two of them were at.

「Dahlia! You are safe! The hero!?」

「Your majesty! Hero-sama is safe!」

The one who arrived with a grave look was his majesty Eric and Greg, Phil, and then several knights.

「We are running into the forest now. We'll return to the palace somehow.」

「But, your majesty. The celestial people are……」

「Louis is holding them back for us……we're going to retreat by ourselves.」

The mouth of Eric who said that was gritted tightly looking like he was enduring something that was hard to bear.

「No way……even if it is Louis-sama who is called as the kingdom's strongest, he won't be able to face that many celestial people! Furthermore he is also terribly exhausted right now due to the summoning ceremony!」

「Don't say that-. I know it already-」

Shia guessed from that conversation.

Most likely, that glasses young man chose to use himself as sacrificial pawn in order to hold back the enemy.

For the sake of protecting his master, and allowing the hero who was their hope to escape.

From the conversation right after the summoning, Shia understood well that the king Eric and his close aides had relationship as close friends. They were tied together by such strong trust to each other.

The fist of Greg and others were shaking because they had to use one such friend as a sacrificial pawn.

「Anyway we have to bring the hero to a safe place!」

Eric gave his order. Greg reached out toward Shia.

「Thi, this is heavy desuu. It’s troubling if you all are risking your life for me as you please」, Shia said with a really troubled look.

Then, in that timing a voice came from the sky. The voice sounded irritated because the opponent just wouldn’t die.

「Stop the useless struggle. It’s unsightly.」

One of the celestial people who were above the clouds descended until few dozen meter above the ground. Something like a dazzling pattern was floating on his back while he was hovering in the air. He was a bald man wearing pure white priest’s robe.

Just like his voice, his gaze that was looking down to the lower world was also colder than ice.

「Good grief, to think that there is someone who is able to revive the summoning method that should have been lost several hundred years ago……you humans are really foolish without end.」

That extremely cold gaze was directed to the building where Shia was hiding.

「I know you are there, otherworlder. So you come to disturb this world once more like in the past.」

Louis and his caster subordinates hurriedly put themselves in front of his gaze.

Eric and others said「Don’t come out!」 to Shia, but Shia shook her head saying「It’s meaningless to hide」 and showed herself resolutely. Behind her Eric and others also came out preparing to fight.

「Hah. I brought a squad here just in case because we will be facing someone called by the summon ceremony but……to think it's just a beastman girl.」

The scorn rode the wind and resounded through the night sky. As for Shia, she said「Hee, so beastman also exist in this world~. Ah, I see. That's why no one kicked up a fuss even after seeing my rabbit ears」 with comprehending face without even showing any displeasure.

Eric placed himself in front of Shia. He spoke vehemently toward the celestial man who was still looking grave.

「Celestial, I ask you to withdraw from here. Certainly, humans have harmed so much nature. We used the spirit element so excessively that it cornered the spirits. But, we noticed that foolishness. We are making preparation to recompense for that!」

「Hou, recompense?」

The exhibition of peculiar words that Shia didn't really understand caused Shia to be assaulted with an intense feeling of wanting to say「Let the concerned party take care of the rest」 and left this place but……

Unlike Hajime, she didn't happen to have the lion heart that allowed her to intentionally ignore the atmosphere. Shia's heart was always the rabbit heart. (It was self-proclaimed though)

And so, she stayed in this place for the moment.

「That's right. We are amassing spirit elements and all the spirit stones that the people throughout the country have in order to return them to the star tree, to return the power of the world. Certainly we human might be foolish. But, we are

a race that can notice our mistake and recompense for it! That’s why, please――」

His majesty Eric desperately pleaded. But it was interrupted by a sneer.

And then,

「Worthless.」

It was dismissed with just one word.

Through the gaps of the clouds, countless dazzling light was created in the night sky. Those lights were like stars in the sky, however, they were raining down the smell of death which was too ominous toward the ground.

It seemed that the force of celestial people above the cloud was going to drop the light of judgment to the surface.

「Repent. The judgment is absolu――」

「Excuse mee~, can I interrupt for a bit?」

A voice that felt just too nonchalant was cutting across the vexed Eric and others.

The celestial man’s glare pierced into Shia.

「I’m unable to understand most of the situation though. I was suddenly summoned just now, and then suddenly designated as erasure target with no question asked. Soo, please, it will be great if you can take those factors into consideration no matter what.」

「Worthless.」

As expected it was dismissed completely with one word.

「Your circumstance is of no relevance for us. Simply because you came here from another world, you are already an evil that is harming this world's order. Know that your existence itself is a sin.」

「Ah, now see here! Even I have family! Besides, they will come to pick me up in a day or two! Like that I think me being here won't be any disturbance to the world order or anything!」

Shia understood that Eric and others weren't bad people.

But, as expected it was her own life that should be prioritized. She was unable to risk her life to face unknown enemy for the sake of a world that she didn't even knew what its circumstance was.

Besides, it wasn't like she was completely unable to understand the reason of the celestial people. Even Hajime was called irregular and the like at Tortus. For people who treasured the world order, something like people of another world was nothing but a cause of headache.

That was why, Shia did her best talking.

'Let's stop fighting. I'll leave soon, so let's not treat each other's life so cheaply.' She argued.

However, these celestial people, indeed, certainly it was just like Dahlia said, they were an existence that was like a walking lump of arrogance.

「Stop talking further. It's filthy. A vulgar creature that cannot do anything other than crawling on the ground, who do you think you are talking to.」

「……Regardless of your sense of value, even I have the right to live. My family is waiting for me to return home.」

「Right to live? There is no such thing. The right over life and death always belong to us, the celestial.」

No good. The talk wasn't getting through at all……

Shia's rabbit ears tiredly slouched down with heavy gloominess covering it.

And then,

「It's irrelevant even if they are human from another world. This family of yours must be inferior creature just like you without a doubt. If you say that they will come to bring you back, we will exterminate them until nothing rem――」

Suddenly the celestial's words stopped. The person himself didn't understand why he stopped talking.

Just,

「Inferior creature? Hajime-san is? Yue-san is? Otou-sama and Okaa-sama and everyone are?」

What was sure was that the pressure emitted by the rabbit eared girl who was muttering that was causing his skin to get goosebumps.

「Those words just now, I'll pretend that I don't hear anything. I will ask one more time. Can you all please withdraw from this place? Can't both sides walk the path that doesn't endanger anyone's life?」

The celestial man showed his answer by creating a gigantic mass of lightning above his head.

There was no more delay. It seemed that the execution was absolute, as expected. A moment later, the gigantic lighting would surely trample the ground below.

So.

Shia leaped straight up and punched with her right!

"a, eh?"

It was like teleportation. The girl who was right below just a moment ago was in front of him. The celestial man who could do nothing except making stupid voice toward that fact, instantly, ate a hard fist that felt like there was steel inside it and he was sent flying!

The celestial man who was turned into cannonball pulverized an abandoned tower and pierced through! Without pause he opened a wind hole on the abandoned building that was on his trajectory before impacting the ground. He bounced like rubber ball while vanishing into the forest.

From the distance, several trees could be seen collapsing before finally there was a thunderous sound that was accompanied by dust smoke rising.

Perhaps that man was flying for around 400 meters.

Disturbance rode on the wind and rushed through the ruins. Through the ground below, and also through the clouds far above.

"I thought it will get blocked by someone at the level of apostle, but unexpectedly there is no resistance."

The fist went *crack crack*. The neck went *clack clack*.

The treasure warehouse shined, an iron ball the size of a basket ball was summoned. That ball that was dragged by gravity and fell was lightly kicked up like performing football juggling. Vire Drucken was held up.

「How long you all are going to look down at heree! Fall down here-, SHAORAAAAAAAAAAA-!! Desuu!」

The out of place「Desuu!」 echoed magnificently.

GOGAN- The impact sound of metal clashing sounded out, at the same time the metal ball that was hit by Vire Drucken flew vertically.

Midway it generated a membrane that looked like white air, and *paan* impact sound resounded through the night sky.

The celestial people recovered from their shock and hurriedly tried to shot down the flash but……

They were already too late.

In the next moment, the metal ball that instantly flew to above the cloud powerfully burst out and spread ripples with vivid light blue color over and over again.

A beat later fierce vibration shook the air and thunderous roar fell like waterfall.

The clouds were blown away in a round shape and a splendid hole was created in the sky.

At the center of that hole that was created in the cloud, the moon could be seen completely. Clear moonlight fell to the ground, forming a heavenly ladder with superb position as though it had been calculated.

Shadows were falling in pieces, like people losing their footing from the ladder.

It was around ten people perhaps. The force of celestial people that was one-sidedly slaughtered from the sky.

Several people fell to the ground as they were and raised cloud of dust.

Only a single person flew away to escape, but the rest barely fixed their balance and headed toward Shia.

「Divine punishment-」

Countless flame lumps and lightning attacks surged toward Shia.

「Screw off desuuu!!」

A swing of Vire Drucken. *PAN-* A sound like the air bursting rang out, then it was like the air was distorted with the shockwave surging through it, erasing all the attacks.

「That’s impossible!?」

「Don’t falter!」

One of the celestials opened his eyes wide as though he was seeing a monster.

A different celestial scolded him while manifesting a sword of compressed flame in his hand.

「Tha, that’s!? Don’t tell me it’s light sa○r!?」

「Li, ligh? Eei, it’s too late to get scared now-. Die――」

Begyo! Such sound came out, at the same time Vire Drucken’s horizontal swing hit the celestial-san along with the light sa○r (?). He was turned into the second pinball and flew into the forest.

「A mere inferior creature dare!」

「Receive your judgment obediently!」

Two swords approached. They weren’t light sa○r (?), but physical swords. However, they weren’t normal sword. Whether it was the pressure they emitted or the blade that was reflecting the moonlight, they were sharp thing that gave off impression of terrifying sharpness.

――*KAAN*

Such sound rang out. The sound came from Shia’s hand and leg that blocked the swords.

――Shia-style metamorphosis magic　Steel Garment (Nickname, Spirit Defense)

「Ha?」

「Eh?」

There wasn’t a single scratch on Shia-chan’s precious skin! The eyes of the two celestial-san turned into dot. Because, it’s sword you know? A really sharp sword came slashing you know? It’s so sharp it can sever a large tree with one stroke you know?

Or rather, how could *KAAN* sound came from human body?

「An opening desuu!」

Shia tossed up Vire Drucken. Aa~nddd.

——Shia-style　Double Lariat!!

Pleasant sound *gokyu!* sounded from the celestials’ neck!

「Idiot! Letting go of your weapon like that!」

‘Like this, she couldn’t create shockwave like before to erase the lightning!’, another two celestials thought and fired their lightning.

「Barrier desuu!」

「Aa!? Formid! Churchila!」

Using Shia-style Barrier, the celestials whose neck made *gokyu* sound and got invited into heaven reincarnated into splendid meat barrier. They got burnt black and fell to the ground. Even the cremation was perfect.

During that time, Shia snapped the falling Vire Drucken into her grasp and then she made use of the centrifugal force to throw it.

The two celestials barely dodged, but they gasped seeing the passing war hammer.

Because there was a chain stretching with clinking sound from it.

「Funnuu!」

It was a yell that was filled to the brim with charm. However, if the chain that was linked with the handle was pulled by inhuman physical strength……

Naturally, the huge war hammer was pulled back with a movement that ignored the law of inertia.

「Guaa!?」

An impact came from behind right after they thought the hammer had passed through. One of the celestials was squashed as though he just got run over by a truck.

――Shia-style　Rabbit Punch (War Hammer version)

「This-, this damn monster-!!」

The last celestial was covered all over with lightning spark. Shia grumbled 「Mumu-, it's like Hajime-san's Lightning Clad!」 and she strengthened her vigilance.

The celestial charged forward like a streak of flash. Both his hands were grasping lightning ball that looked like plasma. A pressure that could scatter human body just from touching it could be fell from them.

And so,

――Learned from Hajime　Yakuza Kick!!

「Gobouo!?」

Shia's kick splendidly ran into his solar plexus.

The spark vanished and the celestial man was staggered while holding his stomach.

The celestial was wordlessly closing and opening his mouth like a fish gasping for air. Ahead of his gaze Shia was twisting her body greatly. Her hand that was holding Vire Drucken was turned backward as though she was drawing a bow……

「No matter what kind of circumstance there is, no matter what kind of existence is the enemy, I won't surrender my

right to live.

The rabbit ears stood straight. The rabbit tail also stood straight.

If you wish to kill even after everything that I said, then there is no choice!

Wa, wait-

The celestial man squeezed out his voice asking Shia to stop, but Shia hit him with her unflinching gaze……

Fly until the moon-!! Desuu!!

GON- The sound resounded and a single shadow flew.

Dancing at the center of the beautiful moon.

Shia relaxed her swinging posture and placed her war hammer on her shoulder.

She tapped the war hammer on her shoulder while looking down. There, she saw the young king and his people watching in a daze with opened mouth and stupid looking face.

From where they were standing, it was a scene of a rabbit eared girl standing in the middle of the large moon.

The light blue hair glittering from the moonlight looked far removed from reality when it was swaying by the night wind. It had mystique that stole everyone’s gaze unconsciously.

‘I see.’

Everyone was convinced.

That she was special.

Putting aside whether she was the hero that was extolled in legend, without a doubt she was a special girl.

Because, she was that terrifying,

She was so terrifyingly beautiful,

And then, because she suited the moon so much like that.

.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Forgive me for the story and world view that are like the default (sweat)

Shia arc is mainly Shia-style violence, so it will be great if you can enjoy that part.

.

Nichijou chapter 25 is posted at Gardo Comic.

Lily is……lol

Also, Samba Yue-san can only be showed somewhere huh, was what I thought.

Please try reading it no matter what!

Arifureta Chapter 332

Arifureta After III Brutal Hero Shia Arc I'll Rabbit You Up! Desuu!

.

A horse cart was running along the forest while vibrating and making rattling sound that didn't sound gentle to one's butt.

It moved in the way that hid itself from the bright moonlight.

Although, there were several knights and mages riding horse around a horse cart, so it wasn't really hidden.

It was running along the forest was only for peace of mind.

From its running speed that was too fast to be called stealthy, it could be clearly seen that the group was wishing to reach their destination as fast as possible.

The inside of the horse cart that was hurrying through the road like that was filled with really awkward silence.

(This feels absurdly awkward desuu~)

It was oppressive……well, not really, but the silence that was containing delicate tension that was observing how the other party would act was silently giving damage to Shia's rabbit heart.

If she had to say, yes, it was like that.

She was feeling like a transfer student in her first day.

Who should she talk to? In the first place should she be the one who started the talk? Or rather, if you guys are going to glance like that then it’s fine if you call out to me you know? Look, there must be at least one person in the mood maker role right, there is right? It’s fine even if you call out to me cheerfully you know! C’mon!

That was how she felt. The mental state of meaninglessly checking one’s own belonging to ignore the awkwardness, such feeling!

The cause was obvious.

The battle VS celestial race just now.

And then, the overwhelming physical power.

‘Get close and punch! That is exactly the ultimate skill!’ The battle that seemed like to claim like that with its simplicity and clear cut intend without concealing anything, it seemed to carve something unforgettable in their mind.

Their eyes that were looking at Shia when she lightly landed on the ground were similarly filled with awe, as though they were witnessing the descend of genuine goddess——or rather a fighting god.

It was to the degree that everyone starting from the king Eric simultaneously kneeled without delay.

It went without saying that Shia got flustered by that. She hastily said □Please don’t knee~l! You there, please don’t worship mee!□ and made everyone stood up. It even made

she herself to be the one who suggested to go to the kingdom by saying ‘Anyway first let’s go to somewhere where we can calm down’.

Also, the royal capital was in a different place from that old ruin where the literature of hero summoning was discovered.

Shia reflected of such thing while peeking out from the coach’s window. The wind was making her rabbit ears flapping while she was praying to the moon.

(Hajime-sa~n, Yue-sa~n! It’s fine if you come to pick me up right at this moment you knoww~)

Reach! This feeling!

「Shia-sama……you’re beautiful……」

It seemed that her prayer reached. To the maid-san in front of her. The rabbit heart’s range appeared to be relatively short.

It was different from the content of her prayer, but finally the silence was broken.

Shia smiled sweetly while turning her gaze to the maid-san——Dahlia.

For some reason she looked intoxicated. It seemed that she was fascinated by Shia who was looking sorrowful while the moonlight was illuminating her from the window.

「Err, thank you very much? But, Dahlia-san is also beautiful you know?」

「No, no way……that praise is too much for me. Compared to Shia-sama who is strong and beautiful like the goddess of

the moon, the likes of me is a mere pebble on the roadside!

Dahlia-san clenched both of her small fists and spoke insistently with rough nasal breathing Funsu- . “Raising both hands and clenching fists” seemed to be the peculiarity of this person.

Pebble on the roadside you say……you don’t need to abase yourself like that. Or perhaps, someone as beautiful as Dahlia-san is the standard of this world?

Shia wasn’t giving flattery or anything, even from the perspective of Shia who was used to seeing transcendentally beautiful women and girls, Dahlia was a beauty whose humility just now only sounded like sarcasm.

Although, thinking carefully his majesty Eric and Louise and others too, the male camp was also a complete line up of handsome men. Shia tilted her head wondering if it was this kind of world or perhaps country.

Louis who was sitting beside Shia sighed in relieve. He must have been searching for a talk starter. He looked relieved and joined the talk.

Not at all, Shia-sama. Dahlia is a beauty who is even praised as beauty princess in our country.

Beauty princess? Is she a princess?

Then, what’s with the maid uniform? Shia’s head was tilting in confusion even more.

By the way, the way Louis called Shia changed because after that battle both of them made their self-introduction once more.

For Shia, being called a hero vividly reminded him of a certain someone, and it was a title that would produce black history to call oneself like that. And so she asked them to be spared from that. As the result they compromised by calling her Shia-sama.

「She isn't a direct descendant of the royal family. Though she is a duke's daughter, so she has the blood of royalty in her.」

The one who answered in the place of Louis was his majesty Eric who was making a sullen expression for some reason. He was sitting diagonally ahead of Shia and he had been crossing his arms all this time.

His atmosphere made her wondered whether he was in a bad mood but, the source of the glances was this guy. It was transparent that he was immensely curious about Shia.

Louis smiled wryly while continuing.

「Honestly speaking, we never thought that a lovely woman like Shia-sama would appear from the ceremony of hero summoning. Even in the literature it was mentioned that all the heroes who were summoned in the past were male. That's why……」

「Aa~, in other words, a honey trap?」

The words of denial came from duke's daughter maid Dahlia.

「It's not trap or the like. I'm resolved to offer both my body and heart to the hero.」

「I won't deny that there is the calculation of increasing the hero's favorable impression toward our country.」

The words that Louis said with a wry smile were certainly really blunt.

However, from their story, it seemed that Eric, Louis, and then Dahlia. Also, Greg and Phil, these five had the so called childhood friend relationship. It seemed everyone was treasuring Dahlia.

Although it was by the person’s own will, to offer such woman to a hero whose personality wasn’t even certain seemed to be a terribly bitter choice for them.

Even so, there was no one with greater aptitude than Dahlia to keep the hero company.

「Ahaha……it feels like that is too blunt but, I’ll interpret it as the sincerity of Louis-san and everyone. But, why wear maid uniform? It’s too strange for someone who is praised by the people as beauty princess to dress like that though……」

「? Isn’t maid uniform the battle outfit and also the greatest dress for woman?」

「……」

‘This gentle faced glasses, is his head alright……?’ Shia thought with her eyes spontaneously turning reproachful.

With a bewildered face Louis said,

「The hero-sama in the past introduced this outfit. The hero said that this is the most prominent outfit in the other world……」

「I’m sorry for our world’s idiot herooo-」

‘A Japanese. That hero was absolutely a Japanese! Furthermore that person must be an Akiba warrior desuu!’

Thought Shia while she apologized reflexively. The bastard hero acted as he pleased because this was another world and made his own preference as tradition. That damn hero……

The inside of the coach turned uproarious at Shia’s sudden apology. The people outside the coach seemed to hear the voice too. Various words like「What happened!?」or「Crap-, has his majesty angered Shia-sama!? He will turn into mince meat!」could be hear from them.

「Ju, just what’s with you!」

His majesty Eric told the outside that it was nothing while complaining to Shia. It was a problem that she found it difficult to say anything about……or rather, explaining about the unique people that was shouldering unique karma even in earth——the Japanese was extremely difficult, so Shia only laughed to divert the question.

※Warning! This is the personal opinion of Shia who is another worlder!

「Ahaha……it’s nothing. More importantly, how long it will be till we reach the kingdom?」

「Ri, right. I believe we will arrive around dawn.」

It was dangerous to march throughout the night. However, they couldn’t stay for long in that place after the attack by the celestial race. There was a need to return to their country and hardened their defense even if they had to act a bit recklessly.

Shia frowned slightly and opened her mouth.

「In that case, my pick up might come faster than we can arrive there.」

The expression of his majesty Eric turned grave. Dahlia turned an entreating gaze toward Shia, while Louis showed a sad expression that was mixed with perplexity.

「Shia-sama. What could you mean by someone picking you up? If it's alright with you, please kindly let us know.」

Crossing over worlds wasn't something that could be done casually. It was an act that twisted the principle of the world.

For Louis who was the kingdom's greatest and strongest caster who was called as genius with no one to contest it, it took him nearly ten years since he accidentally discovered the lost literature of hero summoning and reconstructed it. In the literature, there wasn't any mention at all that the ceremony of returning back the summoned person had ever been held.

「Err, well, how should I say it, if it's my family then they can normally cross over worlds.」

Shia's instinct told her that Louis and everyone were relatively good people. Although, she didn't really know them well, furthermore when the other party was at the scale of a country, Shia's mouth wasn't so loose that she would lightly prattle about her family. She naturally spoke ambiguously.

Louis's glasses glinted.

「By that, do you mean it's the person who elbowed and electrified Shia-sama in the past?」

「Tha, that’s right……」

「In other words, that person is someone so powerful that he could do such thing to someone at your level?」

「Well, yes……」

Gulp, the sound of swallowing saliva resounded. It might be Eric, or Dahlia, or perhaps the other two.

A tense atmosphere was flowing, as though they were imagining a monster that a fighting god like Shia was helpless against.

Actually, even that monster recently would spoke shudderingly「This bugged rabbit!」 seeing his prided bullet (normal bullet though) got normally dodged or plucked from midair but……

Shia guessed what Louis wanted to say and replied first.

「But, I think it will be difficult to beg for help from him you know?」

「……That is, as expected it’s because of the same reason like Shia-sama?」

No, simply because he would feel it was troublesome. He was a person who was absurdly dry toward other people.

Such words weren’t said by Shia-chan who read the mood. She was different from Hajime! Really different!

Shia smiled vaguely to dodge the question. Then Louis pondered with a difficult expression.

「Shit-. This is why I opposed something like hero summoning-」

His majesty Eric cursed with a choked voice. Dahlia paid attention to Shia’s expression while she immediately said 「Your majesty-」 to stop him, but surely he was accumulating a considerable amount of stress. The young king who was standing at the front of the path of salvation of the world that was heading to ruin discharged his words as though to spit out that heavy pressure.

「This is our, mankind’s karma. We who are living in the present should be the one to shoulder our ancestor’s sin-. We shouldn’t rely on someone from another world from the very beginning-」

「Your majesty……. But, this is the conclusion from discussing it many times――」

「I know-. I know but still-, Louis! Me agreeing to it is my weakness-. In the first place it’s nearly impossible to obtain salvation with only our strength. I understand that, that was why I also clung to it-. I harbored hope-」

That was why, he harbored even stronger hope after witnessing that much power, but because of that……

「I know that this is just an unjustified resentment! Even so let me say this, Shia Hauria-. You are――cruel-」

「……」

Certainly, it was a terribly unjustified resentment. Shia was only getting kidnapped. She was simply brushing away the sparks of disaster coming down on her. There wasn’t the slightest reason for her to be criticized. Rather, it was Eric and others who were very cruel for asking her to risk her life for the sake of strangers.

He understood. Surely, most likely, as the only one who opposed the hero summoning, he was the one who understood it better than anyone.

However, the face of his retainers that flashed at the back of his mind, the face of his retainers who were waiting back home while believing that they surely would return together with the hero(hope)……

And above all else, the face of his kingdom’s people who he should protect……

The dam of the young king’s words was destroyed.

His majesty Eric covered his face with both hands and hung his head down. That appearance was like an old man who was completely tired of life.

It was thoughtless words toward the hero who they personally summoned. However, both Louis and Dahlia also stiffened as though they had lost their words. That expressed their feeling more eloquently than any words.

They had failed in the hero summoning.

They were unable to obtain hope. Those realizations.

「……Why is it me who got summoned I wonder.」

‘If it’s hero, there is someone else who possessed that title, and yet’, Shia thought with an expression that looked like she just got stuffed full with bitter things.

At the same time, for some reason she recalled back.

About her family who sacrificed their life for her.

Escaping from the sea of trees, chased by the empire, hunted in the great canyon……

Everything of that, was for Shia’s sake.

Family, would never abandon family.

Because they were the rabbitman race, who were the weakest among the beastman race, and because of that they were tied together with the strongest bond.

That was why, until the very end, because she understood that they wouldn’t abandon her, Shia ran.

Toward the sign of hope that was showed to her by her power. The power to peek at the future.

Believing that the future could be changed, she paid no mind to her appearance and acted with literal “desperation”.

Right now, seeing the king who was hanging down his head, she suddenly thought.

If, at that time, Hajime and Yue deserted her, would she also hold unjustified resentment? And then, would she lament and crumble down like this?

She didn’t even want to imagine it. However, it was a most terrifying “what if”.

Gloom……, her rabbit ears naturally drooped down.

Perhaps that was why. When she noticed, her words resounded within the oppressive atmosphere.

□Come to think of it, what was that about spirit art or spirit element?□

「What?」

「Hah?」

「Eh?」

Question marks in three different shapes floated in the air. Everyone was taken aback by the question that wasn’t reading the atmosphere.

Shia added more questions without paying that any attention.

「Like the flying method of that celestial being-san, or divine spirit? something, various things were mysterious.」

「No, I think the way you punch is far more mysterious though?」

‘That wasn’t power output that can be displayed by slim girl, or the whole mankind even……’, that tsukkomi of the heart of his majesty Eric felt like it could be heart. Louis and Dahlia also nodded deeply.

‘Let’s not mind that!’, Shia made a gesture like she was putting a box to the side while speaking with a wry smile.

「I said it before this, “If it’s not that dangerous then~”.」

In this world the celestial race was the messenger of god. And then, looking at how the king of a country Eric was interacting with a man who wasn’t even the king of the celestial race as though the other party was his equal or even higher in status, it could be determined that in this world the celestial race was a superior race that was placed in really powerful position.

However,

「Those celestial people, they were ordinarily weak.」

「We, weak……certainly, Shia-sama was overwhelming but……」

Louis showed a twitching expression.

When Shia asked 「Those people, how strong they are among the celestial people?」, Louis thought for a bit before answering 「They must be around the middle. The elites would be several times stronger than them」.

Shia nodded with ‘I see’ and said.

「As I thought they are weak. At present I’m not feeling any danger. Of course, there must be those that even more above the elites but……」

「But?」

「For now, even if they become ten times faster I don’t think they will reach the speed of sound.」

「Yes?」

「They also don’t have anything like constant deployment of attack that will deal lethal wound just from touching.」

「Shia-sama? What are you talking ab――」

「They also don’t have martial arts that is installed directly from god.」

「……」

「They also don’t have the physical strength to split the earth with one attack.」

「……」

「Also, it doesn’t look like they will crawl out infinitely like cockroach!」

「Shia-sama. I think that’s not a living thing anymore.」

Louis-san, correct answer.

It wasn’t a living thing. Naturally. After all that was exactly the “god’s apostle”.

The complexion of Louis and everyone recovered a bit hearing Shia’s remark. ‘Could it be……’, such thinking was welling up.

「Shia-sama, could you perhaps――」

「Please don’t misunderstand. I won’t ignore my family who come to pick me up and run around for the sake of this world with just me alone.」

「……」

‘But’, she continued. Her gaze was directed toward his majesty Eric. The gentle aura that could be vaguely seen in those eyes made his majesty Eric held his breath reflexively.

「If I’m fighting together with my family, of course I will also do my best. In order for that to happen, I will at least help to persuade them.」

Just like what Yue did for her in the past.

「That’s why, please teach me about this world. If there is something rare here that would make anyone unable to say troublesome, surely my family too will lend their help for everyone.」

Actually, if Shia asked then Hajime surely, no absolutely wouldn’t refuse. Far from that, he would instantly read Shia’s feeling and said 「Say what you want」 with a gentle expression to her, no doubt about that.

Even if it was about a world unrelated to them. Even if there was unknown danger existing.

There was no need to talk about merit or demerit. That was what family was.

However, she didn’t want that. Not just Shia. Yue too, Kaori too, Tio too, Shizuku too, everyone else too, they absolutely didn’t want to think “We are family, so Hajime will do anything if I ask him”.

They wouldn’t speak it out loud but, if Hajime heard it then surely he would say 「It’s fine even if you all act more spoiled though……」 with a wry smile.

The demon king was really sweet to his family. It was sweetness to dripping and melting degree.

To be Hajime’s wife, heart that was strong in various senses was necessary.

Shia thought of her beloved person while forming her words.

「And then, if my family lend their help」

Eric and everyone stared back in fascination at Shia’s eyes that were sparkling with pride and confidence.

‘Ehhem!’ The rabbit ears curced up while Shia declared.

「There won’t be anything to fear anymore! Whether it’s fate, or an impossibility, everything will get solved all at once!」

Eric, Louis, and also Dahlia, they all were captured by an intense feeling that couldn’t be expressed in words and couldn’t say anything.

They thought that they had to say something here, but it was as though their throat was stuffed with something and words couldn’t come out. In exchange, their blood boiled as though there was strength that lost its destination inside them rampaging to search for outlet.

Thump thump, their heated blood flow could be heard inside their ears. Their brain felt dizzy from the heat as though their head was boiled up. They couldn’t take off their eyes from the rabbit eared girl as though their gaze was sewed on her.

Even so, perhaps the obstinacy as the king, or perhaps simply because as a man he was unable to endure getting one-upped continuously by a girl.

His majesty Eric’s hand reached out toward Shia’s hand that she placed on her lap as though he was getting pulled while,

「Shia, you――」

「Please stop calling me without honorific.」

「Ah, yes……」

Shia-chan! She absolutely wouldn’t yield what couldn’t be yielded!

The inside of the coach that almost got completely enveloped by a bizarre heat instantly chilled down due to Shia’s smiling rejection.

By the way, for his majesty Eric it was his first experience replying 「Ah, yes……」 like this toward a woman.

「A, ahh, Shia-sama. His majesty is near your age……just calling you with your name is……」

Perhaps unable to watch his majesty Eric whose expression was dumbfounded as though he just got hit with an unexpected slap, Dahlia timidly speak considerately but,

「Rather, it’s because he is an opposite sex who is almost the same age with me. I won’t mind if it’s an elderly or a small kid though.」

It seemed she somehow felt unpleasant to have man the same age with her other than Hajime calling her name directly. Of course, if it was with someone who was close with her to a certain degree――for example, if it was with the classmates at the present time then it would be okay even if they called her name……

Although, at that time the demon king punch would come flying from Hajime so no one called her by her name without any honorific.

Anyway, it appeared she wanted to be spared from a man who she only had just met to call her like that. Add ‘-san’ or call her with her family name……such wordless demand was keenly conveyed to everyone.

Shia’s guard was solid.

Cough-, Louis cleared his throat to change the atmosphere. He glanced at the king who was still dumbfounded and opened his mouth toward Shia.

「Ee~, then, Shia-sama. While presumptuous, please allow me to explain the situation.」

「Yes, Louis-san. I will properly open my rabbit ears, so best regards.」

Whoosh-!! The rabbit ears turned toward Louis. Louis's cheeks loosened.

For some reason his gaze was really warm since when Shia declared that she would abandon them at the place where she was summoned. It appeared that he liked Shia's straightforwardness.

According to the explanation of such Louis.

It seemed that an energy called spirit element existed in the nature of this world.

Spirit element was the energy source for every kind of tool. It became the cornerstone of mankind's development. Especially the technology to generate a phenomenon using the spirit elements——the spirit art was a primary factor to mankind's development.

Other than being a technique to cause pseudo natural phenomenon, spirit art was also a technique to reinforce the body and healing.

(It's not really different from magic isn't it……. But, my magic power doesn't react at all, is it a different energy?)

She had no analysis ability like Hajime, so Shia thought like that with her instinct.

Louis confirmed that Shia seemed to comprehend and continued explaining.

「The development of technology and tools, and then the expansion of living area by means of reclamation……that was how mankind developed. By using spirit elements and spirit arts, the development progressed at an accelerated speed.」

However, spirit element is a finite resource that was produced by nature. Human themselves also produced it to a certain degree inside their body, but it was minuscule compared to nature.

Also spirit elements aren’t a resource that was granted to only mankind.

「There is an existence called spirit.」

「Spirit……is it?」

「Yes. The will that is born from a natural object or natural phenomenon is called something like that.」

Shia vaguely recalled a certain belief of Japan that she heard from Hajime while thinking.

(If I remember right……gods are residing in everything. That’s why, let’s treasure everything, something like that. The eight million gods was it again?) (TN: A belief in Japan that there is many god for everything, around 8 million of them. Ask google-sensei for more detail)

It was said that spirit had tens of thousands of varieties that was proportional to be considering existing in all creations. The representatives of spirit could be found in the nearby phenomenon——like spirit of wind, fire, water, earth, or so many others.

In general the shape of spirits was like a ball of light, what they were saying was also mostly unclear. However, there was also existences among them who was able to communicate their will clearly, and many of such spirits were able to take the form of small person. Of course, there were also spirits in the shape of insects or animals.

And then, those spirits,

「They make the spirit elements as their energy source.」

「E~rr, in short, the meal of the those spirit-san are spirit elements?」

「Ahaha……exactly. And then, that's exactly the cause of the emergency for mankind.」

Shia interpretation made Louis showed a warm expression that seemed to want to say 'How really cute', even so his expression immediately turned pained and he continued.

「Fundamentally, spirits obtained vitality by having meals of spirit elements that is produced from the nature like from earth, plants, and so on. And then, spirits are able to put the nature in order.」

「But, mankind developed……using spirit elements, consuming the nature, is that it?」

「It's just as you say.」

Human dug out the resources underground in order to make tools.

They fell forests and cleared the land in order to widen the living space.

Because of that a great amount of spirit element was consumed.

Trashes that were hard to be disposed were piling up.

Pollution filled the water.

Wounds that couldn’t be healed were engraved into the land and rivers.

Technology advancement accompanied the development, the convenience of living became better, safety level increased, and the population explosively multiplied.

And then, the resources got consumed with accelerating speed further and nature was polluted.

In the end of all that,

「When population increases, peoples sense of values also become diverse. When a country is developed, even greater greed is born. As the result, what happen next is……」

Historically, it occurred within a certain cycle.

「War is it?」

「Yes, Shia-sama. We were in a war just twenty years ago.」

This world, or rather this continent other than the oldest country Balted Kingdom which was a human country ruled by his majesty Eric, there was also the country of beastmen

called Tinted Beast Kingdom and the country of demon race called Rated Demon Kingdom.

「Hm? Demon king? Demon race?」

Shia tilted her head. Because words that also existed in Tortus suddenly came out.

The one who answered her with disgusted expression was his majesty Eric who was staying quiet and left the explanation to Louis while resuming stealing glances at Shia.

「Those guys started to call themselves like that since the war twenty years ago. They claimed things like spirit's protection, the protection of natural environment, and faith to the spirits are worthless. They even changed the name of spirit element and spirit art into demonic element and demonic art with the reason of ridding themselves from such sense of values.」

「There is no need to hesitate to use spirit and spirit art because in the end it's resource that mankind discovered and it's technology that mankind built up, that's the claim of the demon race's side. They called it the doctrine of technology's supremacy, that even the problem of spirit element and resource drying up, everything can be solved using technology. Who cares about spirit or whatever, rather they are unnecessary! That's what those guys are insisting.」

「That's really……」

Shia made an expression of being unable to say anything.

Louis continued.

「Because it’s that kind of country, their sense of values make the matter between their country and other country including our country to become greatly problematic. The country that reacts the most sensitively is the country of the celestial people, the Honted Celestial Kingdom.」

「The country of those celestial-san is a country that hold faith to all the spirit-san and divine spirit-san isn’t it?」

「Yes, exactly. Their sense of values is completely incompatible with the demon kingdom.」

「And war occurred because of that?」

‘Yes’, Louise nodded.

The people in the demon kingdom were unique race that produced spirit element within themselves in a different scale compared to the human race and beastman race. Those people established and developed their own country.

Exactly because of that their sense of values was different from others.

And then, although their population was the fewest among all countries, they could use powerful spirit art because of that. The demon king was selected based on their ability, the demon king of this generation also possessed outrageous power.

「And then, the celestial race is also special. They don’t use spirit art. Even without using such thing, they are able to directly ask the spirits to cause every kind of phenomenon.」

Spirits that were able to clearly communicate their will were really few. However, the celestial race was able to

communicate even with spirits that didn’t have distinctive will.

Inevitable their power was vast. It was natural, after all the nature was their ally.

「The war continue for long, many countries are swallowed by the flow and participated in the war, and then they were eliminated.」

In the end, what left were only the four countries that were mentioned just now.

「War accelerate technology development. With a speed to a terrifying at that.」

It seemed the demon kingdom not only rivaled the celestial race, far from that they even developed weapons one after another that could obliterate even the divine spirit who intervened in order to protect the nature. Of course, the amount of spirit element consumed by those weapons was also tremendous in proportion to the effect and power.

「Now that you mention it, what kind of existence divine spirit it? Hearing the title made me think of them like the higher class of the spirit-san.」

「My apologies. My explanation was lacking. However, Shia-sama. It’s just as you discerned. Your perception of them is mostly correct.」

‘However’, Louis continued.

「Shia-sama. Please imagine a natural disaster.」

「Natural disaster……like typhoon, earthquake, or cold wave……those kind of things?」

「That’s right. Divine spirits are those things taking human form.」

「Offu」

Shia unconsciously made a strange voice. That wasn’t in the level of higher class of spirit anymore. ‘Oh my god, ain’t that the fury of nature itself’, her expression was like that.

By the way, those divine spirits in general had the appearance that was almost the same like human and possessed high intellect. Even throughout the history, only several of them had their existences confirmed, the foundation of nature――wind and fire and water and earth and the like, it was thought that the divine spirits ruled over each of those aspects.

And then, the demon kingdom seemed to manage to repel a manifested divine spirit although only barely. They used a lot of weapons that consumed great amount of spirit element, and the demon king himself consumed the spirit element of the nature like it grew on trees.

「Although, it was really just barely. Even they who believe that the development of technology will turn all impossibilities into possible got really frightened as expected……」

The development of technology still couldn’t catch up in order to defeat a divine spirit. Although, if they succeeded to repel a divine spirit, they would surely able to defeat it too. Right now it was necessary for them to buy time.

They who made that judgment was,

「They accepted to negotiate with us.」

「Aa~, I see. Was it the salvation plan to return the spirit element to the star tree something and ask for forgiveness?」

In respond to Shia's words, it was his majesty Eric again who cut in with a sternly handsome expression.

「Those guys are really a race that know no shame. Right now they are acting ingratiatingly and even accept having the spirit element inside their body getting collected, but at the bottom of their heart their ambition must be still blazing fiercely……something has to be done about them as soon as possible.」

'Even if the demon race had to be destroyed……', such words were explicitly conveyed.

Also, with the demon kingdom responding to the negotiation, naturally it was necessary to increase the feasibility of the salvation plan.

That was,

「That's where the hero comes in then.」

「The star tree……the north of the continent. It's the gigantic tree located at a solitary island across the sea that is called the "land of the beginning". It's an existence that is said to be the first one to produce the spirit element, it's also said to be the very will of this world. Also, it is called as the mother of all divine spirits and spirits.」

According to a manifested divine spirit, the drastic consumption of spirit element and nature destruction was weakening the star tree remarkably.

At this rate the star tree would perish and the balance of the natural world would also greatly crumble, the divine spirit

said.

Therefore, there was already no more time for delay, the star tree, and then the divine spirits decided to destroy the mankind.

But, at that time Shia’s rabbit ears suddenly twitched in reaction to something.

With a really natural movement, she aimed Vire Drucken in bombardment mode to outside the window.

A beat later.

A burst slug bullet flew along with an explosive sound. The horses neighed and the royal guard captain Greg who was riding right nearby along with the other guards were shocked.

At the same time, the head of a beast that was like a frenzied boar rushing out from the forest got blown up.

There was something that looked like a dull yellow gem buried on its head, but it also got blown away and reflected the moonlight sparklingly.

「Ah, sorry. I interrupted you. The animal-san came attacking full of killing intent so I unconsciously」

「Ah, pardon us for making you bother with that.」

Louis-san said thanks even while getting a little bit of cold sweat.

From the window Greg’s masculine face silently peeked inside.

「……Shia-sama. My deepest apologies.」

「No no, it’s like a conditioned reflex for me. I should be the one apologizing for taking away your job.」

「……No. That was magnificent.」

After staring fixedly at Shia, Greg’s lips loosened slightly and he nodded. He immediately took distance from the coach and gave instructions.

「That’s surprising……Greg-sama just smiled.」

Dahlia went 「My!」 with her hands pressed on her cheeks while saying such thing.

「Eh? It’s something shocking? He is human so I think it’s normal to smile though.」

Even a certain vampire princess who was believed to have default expressionless face toward other people was actually a really happy-go-lucky in the inside. She wouldn’t laugh loudly or anything, but her expression was quite abundant in front of relatives.

However, Greg-san’s expressionless level seemed to far surpass the vampire princess.

Dahlia said.

「The probability of meeting divine spirit is still higher than him smiling.」

「Just how expressionless he is!?」

The sound of clearing throat 「Cough」 could be heard from outside the coach. It might be a warning from Greg-san to not say needless things.

Dahlia leaned closer to whisper into Shia’s ear and said 「Greg-sama’s ear is really good, so surely he could hear Shia-sama’s words just now」. She added that perhaps his attitude was softening because Shia became a little bit cooperative.

‘I see’, Shia nodded in acceptance.

Louis smiled wryly while returned the talk on its track.

「It’s a nice timing, Shia-sama. About the beast just now, that wasn’t a mere animal. It was a special beast that is called spirit beast. It can use the power of spirit.」

That spirit beast was exactly their prime reason to summon Shia.

「The star tree is rejecting us. The path to the north is lived by great numbers of spirit beast. Currently they will mercilessly attack anyone heading to the north.」

「Naturally, the spirits beasts will get stronger the closer we are to the north isn’t it? Also, it feels like the celestial-san and even the divine spirit-san will naturally come out too.」

「Exactly.」

In other words, their reason for summoning hero was for cutting open the path.

It was in order to return spirit stone, gem that could store spirit element back to the star tree. And then it was for the sake of obtaining the last chance to beg for mercy toward humans.

Because with just themselves they wouldn’t be able to overcome the fierce attack of the great number of spirit

beasts and the divine spirits.

「……That’s why, Shia. We are asking――」

「Your way of calling.」

「Shia, dono-. Can we ask for your cooperation?」

Shia wiggled her rabbit ears uneasily at the question of his majesty Eric that was filled with expectation and anxiety.

「I cannot give any guarantee.」

「Tsu……」

His majesty Eric gritted his teeth at Shia’s blunt words.

「But――」

Shia was going to continue, however, her rabbit ears reacted once more and her words stopped.

「? What’s the matter, Shia-sama?」

「No, just thinking that the weather is a bit bad……」

There was a low sound that resembled earth tremor. There was also the existence of spirit beast, so Shia strengthened her rabbit ear’s hearing, even so it was a small sound that she could only catch slightly.

Right after that,

「Eric!」

「Phil, what’s the matter?」

Outside the window at Eric’s side, the one who appeared upside down was the frivolous looking green haired young man——Phil Espion.

In the military he was the captain of the scouting force, at the same time he was also the captain of the royalty’s direct intelligence corps. This time too he went ahead of the path to confirm whether there was any danger, and it seemed there really was something.

He leaped to above the horse coach and peeked inside from the window upside down. That was just how hurried he was.

「I can see flash of lightning from afar. It’s not something natural looking from the intervals of the flash. It looked like it’s flowing toward the direction of the capital.」

「-!?」

His majesty Eric immediately pushed Phil aside and took his head out from the window. When he looked up to the sky, although there were some clouds, the sky was really clear as far as the eye could see. The light of the moon was beautiful.

Tonight the wind directly blew from the front. Even though there was thunderclouds in eyesight range that was generating flashs of lightning fiercely, no sign whatsoever could be seen from the air and also the night sky.

And then, what clinched it was……

「I used spirit communicator but to contact my subordinate at the relay point but……no one is replying.」

Spirit communicator——it was a long range communication device using spirit element. It seemed to be using the vibration of spirit element. It was a convenient tool, but

actually five kilometer was the limit of its range. And so when communicating in super long range, personnel to relay the verbal message was necessary.

Phil’s subordinates were standing by to serve as relay by hiding in the village or hideout along the road until the capital, but it seemed that all of them fell off the grid.

“Shia! Can you ride a horse!?”

‘The way you call’, Shia tried to warn, but she read the atmosphere and answered “I can” for the time being, while thinking that later she would beat the way he should call her into his body.

“Abandon the horse coach! Everyone, we are returning to the capital in full speed!”

His majesty Eric loudly commanded from the window. Obeying him, the horse coach was immediately stopped. Louis and Dahlia too swiftly got down from the coach.

When Shia got down, the horses were immediately released from the coach and the driver got on one of them. The knights rode on the other horses, and the conspicuously splendid horses they were riding until now were handed to Eric and others. It seemed those horses were only temporarily rode by the followers, but originally they were the horses of his majesty Eric and others.

Shia wished to ask various things about the circumstance, but she closed her mouth when his majesty Eric reached out his hand toward her with a serious face.

He looked really tense.

“Ride in front of me, Shia!”

「Even the patience of saint will eventually run out you know?」

Shia looked reproachfully at his majesty Eric who was casually calling her without honorific while quickly dodging his hand that was trying to pick her up.

And then, her treasure warehouse lit up.

「Tha, that's?」

Not only his majesty Eric, everyone also opened their eyes wide.

「It's my partner desuu!」

After saying that, Shia cut short the explanation and straddled her partner.

Yes, Shia's partner that was handed over to her from Hajime, the cause of her game of tag with polices late at night in the city.

The magic powered motorcycle – Schutaif!

※Good child must not imitate it. Let's adhere to the traffic rule!

「Come on, what are you doing standing in a daze like that! It's some kind of bad situation right? We are departing!」

「Ah, yes……」

His majesty Eric pulled back his hand that was wandering in a lost in the air and cleared his throat once.

He pulled himself together and gave the order.

.

.

.

One hour of riding after that.

The horses seemed to be strengthened by a spirit art, so they displayed a good speed. Their endurance seemed to be strengthened to so they didn’t show any sign of fatigue.

Like that several black smokes rising to the sky came into view.

What came into their sight the closer they got was a village that was turned into ash. There was no house that retained its original shape, there were several craters on the ground, and the fields were ravaged.

And then, there was offensive smell from among the burnt smell piercing the nose……

Shia knew.

This smell.

In the past, when they were pursued by the empire, this smell accompanied their scorning laughter.

Yes, the smell of her burnt family——

The smell of burnt people.

「……Louis! Leave behind several people who can use healing arts! Search for survivor!」

「By your will!」

His majesty Eric bit his lip. Louis accepted that royal edict and sent hand sign to his subordinate.

They didn’t slow down the speed of their horses and passed through the destroyed village.

The black cloud seemed to be heading straight to the royal capital as expected. There was no sign of them catching up.

That stimulated the anxiety of his majesty Eric and his subordinates even further. It made them felt vexation that made them want to scratch off their chest.

「……Eric-san. Is this what got mentioned in our talk before?」

「That’s right. That is truly the divine punishment.」

His majesty Eric said that as though to spit out. Shia drove Schutaif in parallel with him while pondering for a bit.

Before long, her gaze became distant……a beat later.

「Should I go ahead?」

「What?」

His majesty Eric looked down beside him hearing those words that were filled with unexpected strong will.

The straightforward eyes of Shia who was looking up from the position that was lower than the horseback caused his majesty Eric to unconsciously gulp.

It felt like his heart jumped inside, but he ignored it and asked.

「……Is it okay?」

Shia made an expression that looked troubled, as though she had bitten something bitter, it was an expression that was hard to describe.

「I have said that I'll at least help persuading my family. As expected , I won't be able to sleep well if everyone get turned into ash before that.」

She was unable to be as decisive as Hajime, and she was unable to discard herself to the degree of a certain hero.

She would face what came later, later. Now she would run with all her strength for the sake of the future that she wouldn't regret.

That was Shia.

If she didn't know anything about the circumstance, she could also pretend to not know.

However, she had heard the circumstance and felt sympathy.

If she said something like 「As I thought this look bad so I'll run away」 here……

——It's a promise after all

The wound in heart. Important memory. Shia's pride.

His majesty Eric surely couldn't read those feelings, but he seemed to comprehend something and nodded.

And then,

「Pursue the thunder cloud. That way is the capital. …… Please, Shia.」

「Your way of calling.」

「Ah, yes. ……Shia, dono」

His majesty Eric felt quiet scared at Shia whose face became blank for a moment.

Leaving behind him who was making twitching face, Shia step fully on the accelerator.

.

.

.

She advanced in a speed that left behind even the wind.

Shia explosively advanced using the automatic ground flattening function using transmutation magic and the deployment of barrier path that made it also possible to run in midair.

Midway, she found several villages that were similarly turned into ash.

She couldn’t pick up the groan of even a single survivor even when she focused her rabbit ears.

She wondered just how many people had died.

After advancing while thinking of such thing, her rabbit ears finally heard a clear thunder. She leaped to the sky and accelerated further.

Before long, she could see at the other side of a large hill. There……

「……This is terrible.」

It was a large capital blazing in flame, with agonized cries echoing loudly.

The outside and inside the city walls were blazing up. Lightning was attacking unceasingly. A beat after the thunder there would be explosive sound ringing out, each time a building would be blown away.

The solemn and huge building at the center――most likely that was the palace. That place was covered by a shining dome that defended against the lightning.

However, each time it was struck by lightning that fell like intense rain, the dome would greatly bend and flicker, its scale was reduced little by little. It was only a problem of time before the dome got destroyed.

Instantly.

A clear vision crossed Shia’s mind. The vision of her dying from lightning that pierced herself like spear.

「――!!」

She instantly leaped back. At the same time, the left behind Schutaif was pierced by the lightning spear.

Schutaif was blown away while scattering away broken pieces at the same time with a thunderous roar.

「Aa!! My Schutaif-taaann!? Even though it’s a new one that I asked Hajime-san to upgrade from zerooo!!」

Putting aside the danger that almost killed her, there was almost nothing that could beat having one’s new vehicle

getting damaged in dealing mental damage.

‘How could you!’ Shia thought while turning her gaze ahead, there,

「So you come, child of another world.」

There was a good looking man that was emitting sparks. He was shining gold like a lightning that was taking human form, a man with terrific body build. His upper body was naked, while his lower body was wearing something loose that looked like hakama. His voice was like heavy bass sound but there was no discomfort from hearing it, however, it felt like the voice resounded directly inside the brain.

Shia went 「Uhee」 at the pressure she felt and her face grimaced.

There was no doubt. He was equal or superior compared to god’s apostle.

「Forgive me」

Although, he was far more humane compared to god’s apostle. It looked like he also had abundant emotion.

Even now his face looked really sad.

And then, he threw a gigantic lighting spear while still looking sad.

「Wawawah!?」

She could see the vision of death once more.

She survived without problem by finishing dodging an instant before the lightning spear was thrown. But, instantly

she could see her death by a hand strike that pierced her chest from behind.

「It’s a bargain sale of future sight desuu!?」

Shia forcefully twisted her body and dodged.

At the corner of her sight, she could see the sparking good looking man appeared all of a sudden.

That good looking man vanished with light *pashi* sound.

At the same time she got a vision of death. An extra large thunder strike from right above.

Dodge.

Vision of death.

Evade.

Vision of death.

Evade.

「———–!!」

The verge of death after so long. There wasn’t even any time to breath. Things like counterattack was out of question.

She merely focused all her strength in slipping through the descending scythe of death god. She relied only on the notification of the future sight and continued to dodge the lightning fast death!

Seen from the side, it might look like a girl was dancing in the middle of wild lightning.

After making the dry sound *pasha*, the good looking man appeared at slight distance away.

「Oh child of another world. Please stop struggling.」

「Fuu fuu. I cannot agree to that――divine spirit-san.」

He was truly a divine spirit. The avatar of lightning. No, perhaps he was the very lightning cloud that covered this capital.

Shia caught her breath while trying to say something.

「Please listen to me.」

「I wish to at least grant you a tranquil death.」

「No, before that you see, perhaps repairing this world is――」

「Oh child of another world. Oh pitiful child. Please forgive my powerlessness that is unable to return to where you should belong.」

「Hello? Are you listening? You know, soon someone will come to pick me――」

「Now, close your eyes. Feel peace. I won't let you feel pain.」

No good. The talk didn't go through at all.

In a different meaning from the celestial race.

Shia realized. He was undoubtedly within the category of "god".

He felt sadness. He even felt pity. He even respected the weight of life and watched over the quarreling people even

while feeling pain in his heart.

However, his decision was absolute.

There was no ground there for man’s will to intervene.

He was truly, the personification of unreasonableness.

The decision of god, was absolute.

「Haha……I’ve really done it. I made a really stupid choice even for me.」

Hajime was really spoiling her so he would not blame her, even so it felt like Yue would scold her.

She easily made her conclusion just because the first enemy wasn’t any problem, and completely underestimated the enemy’s mightiness……

Because, look.

The vision of death was flooding her head so much like this.

That was why,

「Oh child of another world. Oh child of man. This is for the world. Perish.」

「Hah! I refuse.」

Shia grinned widely and fearlessly, and swung Vire Drucken.

A sound that tore through the air burst out before it was tapping lightly on her shoulder.

「If there is no choice but to fight then I can only fight. I will acquire the right to live without fail.」

As a matter of fact, the power of god was unreasonable.

The decision of god was unreasonably absolute.

Especially……

□I don’t give any damn whether you are divine spirit or whatever. This little me here, is a wife of a godslayer you know?□

As long as that “absolute” wasn’t beaten to death by even more unreasonableness.

DON-, magic power that shook the atmosphere pierced to the sky. It was a beautiful torrent with faint bluish white color.

The divine spirit’s expression changed slightly for the first time toward the fighting spirit the rabbit eared girl threw at him from the front.

Facing that divine spirit, Shia’s rabbit ears stood up straight,

□I’ll rabbit you up! Desuu!!□(TN: Honestly, I don’t really know how to translate this sentence. In the raw the words are ‘□□□□□□□□□□□□　□□□□’. It’s read ‘Ussa usa ni shiteyanyou! Desuu!’ The word usa is taken from usagi (rabbit). Ussa usa is a slang word in Japan without clear meaning, only that it’s related to rabbit. From the implication it might mean I’ll rough you up or I’ll mess you up, but I don’t know how to include the rabbit implication in the translation like that. Tell me if you have any better idea)

She howled powerfully as though to blow away the lightning cloud.

.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Arifureta Chapter 333

Arifureta After III　Brutal Hero Shia Arc　I’m Opposed to Violence! Desuu!

.

「……This is really something. Also, pitiful.」

The divine spirit said that seeing the faint bluish white torrent piercing the sky and opened a hole in the black thunder clouds.

That was all.

It was a great power for a human, if she kept living there was no doubt that she surely would become a heroic figure.

However, it was meaningless because she would perish.

How pitiful that was.

That was why, at the very least he would end this instantly……he thought.

「Dance, children of heaven.」

Lightning flash ran through the thunder cloud and thunderous sound rang out. It was exactly as though gods

were roaring in anger.

□Mumuh□

The rabbit ears stood straight! The vision of death assaulted Shia!

Shia unconsciously groaned.

Because although she tried to dodge, however there wasn’t any place to dodge from the start!

Instantly, extremely huge lighting that covered the sky descended from right above.

Sparks burst out from empty air and high waves of lightning manifested.

It was an attack that enveloped Shia.

The flash painted the world white.

It was an overwhelming lightning storm that seemed to say if the enemy would evade, then they simply needed to provide no place to escape from the start.

That was truly an absolute death that couldn’t be escaped from even if she could see it.

The unreasonableness of god.

And so,

——Level V

The thunder roared a beat later than the lightning flash. A cute voice that shouldn’t be audible resounded through the interval.

And then, the moment the storm of divine lightning that had finished its role was about to disperse,

【URYAAAH!!】

【!?】

This time the expression of the divine spirit definitely changed clearly.

The attack that should deliver absolute death.

As though to break through that light, that despair, the approaching rabbit eared girl was——unharmed!

The fierce shock delayed his reaction by a beat.

Even though he possessed perception ability that was worthy for a god, when he returned to his senses in surprise he was inside a kill zone that was impossible to escape from.

What filled his field of vision was the huge war hammer’s hitting surface.

The attack of the war hammer that surpassed the speed of sound caught the divine spirit along with a sound that split through the air.

【Nuo!?】

At the instant of the impact, the divine spirit was assaulted with fright and immediately crossed his arms.

Impact!! The divine spirit who seemed immovable was sent flying like a pebble.

He was spinning in the air before stopping somehow while sparks surged from him.

「Guuh. Impossible-. A mere blow is injuring me-」

An agitated voice echoed at the sky of the capital.

He was lightning itself. If he transformed into lightning instantly, every physical damage would be nullified.

Attack from spirit art would be effective, but even that wouldn’t be able to catch his lightning speed movement.

Since his birth, throughout the ten thousand years of history, he had no experience of getting hit hard.

The girl before his eyes stepped on the air and charged forward to deal even more blow. The divine spirit unleashed lightning attack to all direction once more.

However……

「Explode! Smash! Desuu!!」

Shia who was swallowed into the lightning was as expected, she was only stopped for a brief time. The lightning’s effect was lessened, at the same time she charged forward as though smashing through the flash.

「Impossible-」

The divine spirit immediately took distance with lightning speed.

Yes, one of the gods that was the avatar of thunder cloud chose to escape from human opponent.

Without even any time to realize his impossible action, the divine spirit agitatedly yelled toward Shia who was still rushing toward him.

【Why aren’t you harmed!?】

【Guts!!】

‘That’s absurd!’ Divine spirit-san’s face seemed to say that. Even though he was a handsome man, that expression made his expression looked somewhat like a disappointment.

Shia instantly closed the distance and swung down an attack to the divine spirit from overhead.

【Slow-】

Surely his perception ability was also at godly territory. The divine spirit didn’t show unsightliness for the second time.

He vanished with a light sound *pashi-*. Right after that, several dozen divine spirits appeared around Shia who hit empty air.

【It’s the end for sure this time.】

The arm of the divine spirit emitted spark while enlarging. Furthermore it transformed into the shape of spear. It became spear wall from all directions and attacked Shia.

He didn’t know what kind of method she used to dodge inside the ultimate lightning attack before this. But, in that case, he would just finish her with his own hand directly without fail. It was an attack that was truly filled with the determination of certain kill.

But, Shia didn’t dodge or anything from the beginning.

Shia didn’t move from that place and silently closed her eyes. The divine spirit who thought that she finally gave up was,

「Impossible-. What is that!?」

The agitated voice that came out from who knew how many times echoed in the night sky once more.

――Shia-style space magic　Half Transition

That magic that could also be called as a failed space magic was a method of absolute defense that worked by forcefully shifting one’s own phase to neutralize all attacks.

Shia who became half-transparent wasn’t in this space at this instant. Thus all attacks slipped through her!

The lightning spear arm dispelled. The divine spirit was going to switch to another attack even while feeling agitated.

In that instant, Shia’s eyes snapped wide open. From being half transparent she took back a definitely corporeal body.

「Go fly-!! Desuu!!」

「Guah!?」

A single extreme strike. Vire Drucken that used impact to accelerate instantly from its standstill state sped up even more by Shia’s physical strength while rotating like a pinwheel.

The war hammer that was swung horizontally blown away the divine spirit radially.

In addition, Shia grabbed the leg of the divine spirit that was above her head and mercilessly threw it in the place of her war hammer toward the divine spirit below her.

A flash dispersed in an instant and the clones of the divine spirit vanished all at once. The main body of the divine spirit materialized a slight distance away along with a spark.

「Not just hitting me but even catching me? Just what have you done――」

「Guts!!」

It felt like a voice 「Shiiitt-」 that sounded like the divine spirit was grinding his teeth reached Shia’s rabbit ears. His appearance was barely maintaining his dignity, so surely it was just her imagination.

By the way, it wasn’t guts, but soul magic.

Even if his true body was something vague like lightning, him existing like this meant that there was soul residing in him. The essence of soul magic was interfering with existences that possessed no corporeal substance. Shia possessed no talent for magic to a sad degree, so she could only use it for grabbing and hitting the target.

Although, the divine spirit was looking really wary toward Shia who caught him even though it wasn’t even an attack of spirit art.

「……It seems, I have to recognize it.」

「Oh? You are going to be open to dialo――」

「Thou are, even more a threat than the child of another world who visited in the past.」

「Ah, so that’s what you mean.」

‘Even though I’m feeling a bit hopefulll!’ The rabbit ears raged.

「Let me revise my perception. Thou are an enemy of the world that ought to be removed!」

「……I got designated as an enemy of the world. Even though, I’m a forest bunny who love peace, it’s inscrutable desu.」

‘That self-recognition itself was inscrutable……’, surely if it was the classmates they must be thinking so.

In any case.

「Well, I’m the demon king’s wife anyway! Let’s just consider that as an honor here!」

「I will pay thou with death, for order and peace!!」

Even though she should be summoned here as hero, she was instead in a completely opposite position. Shia smiled bitterly at that while taking stance with her war hammer.

Instantly, vision of death attacked Shia like a high speed slideshow.

「Kuh, too fast desuu!!」

His tactic changed. There wasn’t any more powerful wide range attack that left big opening. He also didn’t stay at close range.

The sound of lightning firing consecutively burst out. Countless sparks flew around in empty air like sparklers.

In one second there were uncountable attacks coming.

Yes, it was a flawless hit & run in lightning speed.

(So he is getting serious! The attack’s sharpness is at a different level!)

Overwhelming speed that was incomparable from before. No, it was a phenomenon that should be called teleportation already.

(I cannot dodge completely!)

Shia screamed inside her heart. Even though it wasn’t simultaneous attacks, the speed made it looked like that even with Shia’s perception ability.

The moment she dodged by slouching her fist, a knee strike aimed at her face.

Unable to doge, she defended with Steel Garment. The impact felt like she was hit by her own Vire Drucken. Her body was forcefully thrown up and bent backward.

Throughout the pain Shia also unleashed a kick, but the divine spirit wasn’t there anymore. In exchange she was shown a vision of death. A moment when a lightning speed kick that approached from behind attacked the back of her head and exploded it.

「Nnnniii!!」

She raised a voice of fighting spirit and forcefully rotated Vire Drucken behind her. The tough war hammer became a shield and she avoided death, but this time she was blown forward.

A presence of death approached from behind. Shia rotated her body like pinwheel by making use of the attack’s

momentum and struck behind her.

As expected he wasn’t there.

And then, a heel drop kick was approaching before her.

「——!?」

「Fall」

Thunderous sound that split the air resounded. Right after that, Shia fell with several hundred million volt lightning strike swallowing her.

She was struck down as though telling her it was insolence to be in the sky with a human body.

The impact came along with a thunderous explosion. A crater was created at the plain at the capital’s outskirt.

Pashi- along with that sound, the divine spirit already descended at the edge of the smoky crater.

「How suprising. So thou are still alive.」

「……Haa haa, obviously.」

The smoke was blown by the wind and cleared up. Shia spat out blood ‘peh’ at the center of the crater.

If the classmates looked at her appearance, they would open their eyes wide in shock. That was how great her injury was.

Her skin swelled red due to the lightning that she couldn’t dodge and even the Steel Garment couldn’t block. Her hair and rabbit ears were also burnt here and there, there were traces of hit here and there in the shape of internal bleeding.

Furthermore, due to arms and legs that were transformed into lightning spear or sword in the middle of the fight, blood was flowing from some spots that were shallowly slashed.

「……Only that much injury……it’s a power that surpassed what is tolerated for a human.」

「Haa haa……yes, it’s only this much. Your fist was really lukewarm. You are lacking in spirit.」

‘Haa fuu’, Shia caught her breath and showed a fearless grin that closely resembled a certain someone.

The divine spirit was slightly pressured and held his breath. However, he immediately sent a sharp gaze at Shia.

「But, it’s only a problem of time. You cannot catch up to me. The strange technique that neutralized my attack. You also didn’t use that. Are you unable to use it anymore? More than this and you will only prolong your agony uselessly.」

「So?」

「……I wish, to grant you a tranquil death.」

That was his compassion. The divine spirit who said that was unreasonable, but surely he was someone kind.

That was why,

「Hah」

Shia laughed it off.

Because in this world there was nothing more despicable than giving up.

Because what that beloved person taught her, was “tenacity”.

「……How foolish.」

The divine spirit slightly closed his eyes, and then, a grand killing intent boiled up.

At the same time, Shia leaped from that place with all her strength. She escaped from the crater and moved by rolling on the plain.

Lightning consecutively stabbed the spot where she was standing just an instant ago. The several hundred million volt of lightning strike that didn’t give any sign beforehand became a squall from the lightning cloud in the sky and rained down.

Thunderbolts fell down like countless pillars lining up throughout the pillared corridor of a shrine. The divine spirit weaved through the gap of the pillars and approached near.

An instantaneous sure kill attack came at Shia.

(As I thought-, this is harshhh!)

Shia gritted her teeth, evaded the fierce attack desperately, defended, and endured through it.

A one-sided defensive battle. It was as though she couldn’t counterattack at all.

She might have died already if she wasn’t in the state of body strengthening level V.

Yes, if it wasn’t for the body strengthening “level V”.

Shia’s wound was increasing even with Vire Drucken and Steel Garment.

However, Shia wasn’t trying to *strengthen her body even more* no matter what.

Vision of death was rushing around inside her brain in high speed even now.

The ability that automatically showed the future that directly led to Shia’s death inevitably consumed magic power. Although the magic power consumption was exceptionally less than the original Future Sight, it couldn’t be trifled with by any means in this battlefield where dozens of visions of death were attacking in a second.

And then, the Half Transition that also consumed absurd amount of magic power had been used three times. Thinking how she had only used it once at the decisive battle against the apostles, it wouldn’t be an exaggeration to say that the magic power consumption had been drastically improved, but……

Even so, even more consecutive use than this wouldn’t be really possible even with the magic crystal she had.

Her situation was gradually getting worse.

Just as the divine spirit pointed out, it was getting worse for her.

As long as Shia didn’t finish this fight at once using the maximum body strengthening that is.

But, Shia didn’t do so. She simply endured. She determinedly endured!

Just how long she was doing that? Thunder roared each time the divine spirit moved in lightning speed. The plain already looked plough from several million thunderbolts, countless craters were created.

Just how many intense attacks that changed even the geography was sent at her?

Shia was full of wounds all over. Even Vire Drucken was already blown away and tumbled far away, right now it was like she was a boxer that was cornered into the corner, covering her head with both hands while maintaining her defensive stance……

Her expression hidden behind her guard couldn’t be seen.

Did she notice?

That before she knew it, many people were watching from the capital’s outer wall.

And then, Eric and others who finally caught up just now were staring from the hill slight distance away speechlessly.

That figure looked as if to say, that she wouldn’t let him lay his hand on the people of the capital further than this.

Seeing that girl’s appearance, a lot of people were crying.

The people who fell into despair and could only wait for death were praying!

And then, in order to try to save such girl, no, even if it was something impossible, even without the order from the king, the capital’s army couldn’t keep staying still like this and prepared to sally out!

「……Why won’t you fall」

The divine spirit muttered while scattering sure kill attacks.

It wasn’t known what he wished to obtain from his voice…… even so if it had to be expressed, there was an emotion like awe included in it. Did the person himself notice that?

She had received attacks that it would be strange if an ordinary person got evaporated or pulverized by several hundred of times over. And yet why, is she still able to stand tall and so imposingly?

Even though she should be completely helpless, why is it that her heart didn’t break!?

「But, you cannot move anymore. It will be the end with this.」

He took distance and changed his arm into a spear. It rotated in a spiral and spark ran through it. Several lightning that fell from the sky converged into it.

Seeing that Shia had no spare strength left, he prepared to launch a big attack once more.

「Shia!! It’s enough-, ruuuuuuunnn-」

His majesty Eric’s scream thundered.

「Kuh, make it in time-」

Louis focused his strength into his cane with his expression distorted in impatience.

「Shia-sama!!」

Dahlia’s sorrowful voice reverberated.

And then,

「Order to the world」

The avatar of thunder cloud became a streak of light in preparation of the one hit certain kill attack and charged.

And so,

「Don’t call me over familiarly! Desuu!!」

She punched with a right straight!!

「Goa!?」

The ultimate cross-counter beautifully, perfectly hit.

The lightning spear grazed Shia’s face and stabbed the empty air in vain. Shia’s right straight bore into the right cheek of the divine spirit.

Even though it was lightning speed that shouldn’t be possible to be confirmed by sight or anything.

Even though until now, she was only able to dodge by knowing in advance using vision of death.

The counter that Shia unleashed was so perfect it would make anyone fall in love!

The divine spirit helplessly got deflected back like a light that was reflected by a mirror!

He flew, bounced on the ground, and then without stopping he gouged a deep trench on the ground before he finally stopped.

「……Guh, impossible. That’s an accident.」

The trembling voice showed that he definitely felt the damage. The divine spirit instantly entered into the world of lightning speed from his downed posture.

And then, he circled on Shia's back within an instant and lunged with lightning hand chop――

Bam A pleasant impacting sound resounded. At the same time,

「Nugua!?」

The divine spirit's scream also resounded.

He was blown away once again due to the countless impact to his face. This time he barely recovered his balance and quickly took distance. There, the divine spirit saw it.

Shia let go of her stance.

No, that was also a stance, the divine spirit sensed. It wasn't that defensive stance of covering her head with both arms, she lowered her right fist to below her chin, and lowered her left arm to form 'L' shape, most likely it was a more offensive style.

Yes, that was

――Shia-style boxing　Hitman Style

Another name for it was Detroit Style. The jab of the left arm that made use of snapping the arm was like a whip.

「Fumu, it's working quite well. It's worthwhile learning this properly from You ○ube.」

Tap tap Shia's feet rhythmically stepped on the ground, then when she also launched some jabs to familiarize

herself, *bam bam* a sound as though the air was ruptured rang out. That wasn’t jab anymore……it felt like earthling would say that after seeing this.

Not just once but even twice, the divine spirit was blown away.

That fact caused his majesty Eric who was about to charge forward to unconsciously stop with his mouth gaping wide open. The people of the capital also fell dead silent.

Within that atmosphere, Shia looked at the divine spirit who wasn’t moving in fear wondering if it wasn’t a coincidence……

The right fist that was held below her chin moved away.

And then, her finger crooked into inviting gesture.

It was clear even without words. Even the divine spirit understood it well.

So to speak, 「Come on, what’s wrong? Come at me」 was what she meant.

「……Don’t make light of me. No one can follow my speed domain!」

Pashi- Electricity was discharged. Toward the direction of the left arm that was in unprepared state. From there he was going to strike with a kick instantly――

「――」

Pashi- He vanished. Aborting his attack.

This time he moved in lightning speed like teleporting to the opposite right side.

And then, a hand chop――

□――□

Another abort. He continued to move around Shia looking for an opening.

The domain of lightning speed where the surrounding lost color and even the flow of time looked slowing down was a world of only his.

In that world, there was no way anyone could perceive him as long as they didn’t have the power to peek at the future like Shia.

It was a domain that far surpassed the limit of perception ability of the race called human. It was exactly because of that it was a god’s domain!

And yet.

And yet even though that was the case.

How!

(Our eyes met!?)

The divine spirit screamed inside his heart.

Aa, look.

Again.

The eyes of the girl who was alertly holding her stance.

They were following……

Him who was inside this absolute territory!

Even though she was definitely unable to see him just a while ago, now he couldn’t get away from her gaze!

DON-, the ground exploded.

When the divine spirit who was seized with fear got taken aback in surprise, the figure of Shia who took a step was before his eyes.

「Shih」

「NUOOO!?」

He desperately dodged in panic. But, the left arm that warped like a whip was already hard to predict even at the best of times due to its trajectory, what’s more it was fired constantly aiming at his future position!

Not only was she able to see. His very movement was seen through!

「I can see! Even I can see! Desuu!!」

「It’s lightning you know!? There is no way you can follow it with your eyes isn’t it!?」

It should be impossible. And yet, as expected Shia’s gaze was chasing him no matter where! She was certainly chasing the lightning speed with sight!

Even when he circled around, even when he rapidly approached from the front, the fist of unparalleled accuracy came flying! Even when he temporarily retreated, he was cut off instead at the place where he was running.

It was as though he got locked on, the barrage of fist caught the divine spirit and wouldn’t let go. The accuracy, the

speed, and also the foresight, they were increasing in precision moment by moment.

Like that, finally,

「Shaoraaa-!!」

「Gahah!?」

The divine spirit who received ten left jabs in an instant stopped moving. In that instant, Shia's full powered right fist dealt a severe body blow.

The fist that also used soul magic was literally a fatal attack that resounded until the divine spirit's soul!

The divine spirit's body bent into '<' shape and he stumbled.

「Seeii!!」

In contrast with the yell that gave cute impression, the might of the launched kick was completely merciless.

The divine spirit hung his head down. His face completely ate the kick that approached from right below and his head snapped up.

Yes, he was unable to maintain the lightning body and his head snapped off from his body!

The slender and long leg that vertically stretched up as though to pierce the sky was beautiful.

「Kuh, you damn――」

The divine spirit immediately sparked and regenerated, but losing his head created an instant of fatal opening in his

consciousness.

Grab-, two arms circled around him from behind. The divine spirit’s words spontaneously stopped. When he looked across his shoulder, a grinning rabbit eared girl was there. My, how cute. And then there was nothing scarier than that.

「DOSSEEEEIII!!」

「Wa, wai――」

She didn’t wait.

Divine spirit-san experienced his first back drop in his divine life. 「Pugya!?」 a scream that was unbecoming for a divine spirit was raised and his head snapped off once more.

Pashi-, the divine spirit attempted to take distance somewhat looking like he was panicked and desperate.

Rather than regenerating his head, first he got to get away from this rabbit eared girl somehow! Such will could be glimpsed from him.

The divine spirit who somehow regenerated shouldn’t feel anything like physical exhaustion, and yet he was breathing roughly 「Zee zee」.

Surely it was the fault of mental exhaustion due to damage to his soul or the unknown existence of the absurd rabbit.

Shia faced the divine spirit with vigilant Hitman Style once more. The divine spirit also faced her with a look that had lost all composure……

「Wha, what’s going on! Thou, what happened with thy wound!?」

He slipped out a voice that sounded like a shriek.

That too wasn’t unreasonable. After all, the bruises and gashes from before, and then the burn and her tattered state that should be on her body were somehow getting healed normally!

The cause was of course,

——Shia-style regeneration magic　Guts Healing!

It would be impossible for fatal level heavy wound, but something at the level of bruise, broken bone, burn, and light abnormal state would be healed completely in a few minutes.

And so, naturally, her answer to the divine spirit was also,

「With guts!」

「Damn youu-, guts again!」

「Anything can be done if you have guts desuu!」

「Aren’t it too almighty!? Child of man is really terrifying huh!」

Everyone could easily guess how really terrifying it was from how the divine spirit was speaking as though making a tsukkomi which he had never done even once until now.

Perhaps he was starting to view here as an existence of equal level because dialogue was starting to form between them.

「In the first place, how can you follow me! How can you keep up with this speed!?」

「Gu――」

「Enough with guts!!」

「I got used to it!!」

「Damn youu, that kind of reason isss」

Shia was sticking to defense determinedly while observing fixedly from the gap of her guard wasn't just for show.

For Shia, body strengthening max was truly her trump card. With training, right now she was able to reach "Level X" with her own strength even without Cheatmate or Last Zell.

However, if she reached that state, she would be unable to move for a while, and at the very least her battle strength would decrease considerably.

She heard that there was multiple Divine Spirits, so she wanted to avoid bulldozing her way through with physical ability in case the worst happened.

In that case, she thought that the enemy's attack itself wasn't even disintegration attack like the god's apostle, also it felt like she would be able to barely endure using body strengthening level V and Steel Garment, in addition there was also how she felt that she had become dull after the decisive battle due to distancing herself from real battle, so she wanted to take back her "instinct" here.

Thanks to that, it was guaranteed that Hajime would open his eyes wide in shock when she returned to earth.

After all with her becoming able to follow lightning speed attack with sight and dodged, furthermore she even became able to land a counterattack, it meant that she became able to dodge even Hajime’s prided railgun.

The bugged rabbit was becoming even more bugged the more she fought!

「……It can’t be helped.」

The divine spirit who somehow recovered his calm muttered with small voice.

Actually, a clear death didn’t exist for divine spirit. Although, they also weren’t invincible. Because they were existence of nature phenomenon with their own will, their existence was depending on their will——in other word their mental strength.

In other words, if they were damaged to the extent they lost the willpower to regenerate, they would lose strength or get forced into dormant state for a while. They would become unable to materialize for a few years to dozens of years.

That was why the divine spirit resolved himself.

And then, Shia sensed it.

Right now, the divine spirit’s mind was certainly taken off from her. His fighting spirit, his killing intent, were averted from her. But, she was able to sense only his hostility.

In other words, the divine spirit was going to pull back from this place. At the same time, there was the possibility that he would return leading even more force.

That was why,

「We, the divine spirit protecting the mother, the great tree, will never let thy――」

「Level VII」

An impact attacked the divine spirit. It was a super fast punch that couldn’t be responded to even though he didn’t let his guard down.

However Shia accomplished it without moving from her spot. It was a flying fist that she could do for the first time in the realm of body strengthening Level VII. Yes, it was fist pressure! Just like a certain chairman of a hunter association!

The divine spirit should just run away and vanished like startled hare instead of giving tedious talk.

Because he didn’t do that, his face got blasted and he was forced into an instant of stagnation. And then, the next moment, he lost the possibility of retreat for eternity.

「Kuh, another strange technique is――!?」

When he was taken aback with surprise, it was already too late.

She wasn’t ahead of his gaze, and an unpleasant premonition came from behind.

The divine spirit looked back across his shoulder and saw it.

That was, a falling red moon……

「You won’t be able to escape from this forest rabbit! Desuu!!」

Which was the crimson colored war hammer that his eyes mistook.

――Shia-style metamorphosis magic　Crimson War Hammer

A war hammer created from blood using blood manipulation.

It was mercilessly swung down as though being sucked toward the future location where the divine spirit was going to escape to with lightning transformation.

A severe tremor that resembled an earthquake shook the capital’s outskirt. A shockwave that shook even the atmosphere attacked the people of the capital and his majesty Eric and others above the hill.

Clouds of dust rose as though an explosion had gone off.

Everyone held their breath and the area fell dead silent.

Right after that, 「Ah」 a voice was raised. It was unknown whose voice it was. Everyone was lured by that voice and looked up to the sky.

And then they saw.

The dark cloud was vanishing as though melting into the night sky. At the other side, the perfectly round moon was peeking out.

Unbelievable. That was what they thought, but the phenomenon happening at the night sky was telling the fact more eloquently than anything.

The wind blew and the cloud of dust was clearing up.

The gaze of the people and his majesty Eric’s group returned from the sky to the ground.

There,

「Fui~~, it has been a long time I've gotten a fight that made my blood boil and my flesh dance like this.」

There was the rabbit eared girl there wiping the sweat on her forehead while letting out a really relaxed voice.

The war hammer was vanishing like crimson petals scattering and fluttered in the air.

In exchange, Vire Drucken came flying toward the hand the she outstretched. *Pashi-* It made a pleasant sound when Shia caught it before giving it a swing. She put it on her shoulder where she tapped it *tap tap♪*

Under her feet, a sparking sphere as big as a fist was rolling while pulsing. It looked like it was twitching and convulsing.

The light sphere that was most likely what the divine spirit was reduced into was stepped *mugyu!* by Shia so it didn't escape. And then, she said 「You finally become quiet」 while her finger pointed to the light sphere in a snap, and she said with a loud voice.

「I'm opposed to violence desu! Let's talk with each other peacefully!」

She was the true hero who accomplished the great achievement of defeating a divine spirit.

The hope of mankind.

They understood that. But, in everyone's mind.

'That rabbit eared girl, is dangerous as heck……', they thought.

□Ah, also *your majesty.* That was the fourth time you called me so over familiarly wasn't it?□

□!!?□

In his majesty Eric's mind. 'I'm in a heck of a trouble……', he thought.

.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Material introduction

- Hitman Style and Flicker Jab

Shirakome's knowledge only came from Hajime no ○po's ○shiba-san.

By the way, in the drama CD of volume 7 Shia heard it from Hajime and reproduced it when facing scoundrel at Fhuren, but in the WN version the setting is she learned it only from You ○ube.

Similar with the drama CD, other than that things like space C○C, magica○ Hakkyouken, and sex○ commando gaiden are also used.

- Fist pressure

The material is from Hyakushiki Kanno○, but it also came from a certain dandy glasses's Iaike○. Though Shia didn't put her hand into her pocket.

There are updates in Gardo!

- Nichijou chapter 26　Shia’s housewife power lol
- Zero chapter 7　It’s Oscar’s battle chapter. Though at the end it’s that person who carry out the day as expected lol

They are published free of charge, so please go take a look!

Best regards!

Arifureta Chapter 334

Arifureta After III　Brutal Hero Shia Arc　I Killed Him, Desu?

.

「……Hajime, wake up. Hajime.」

A voice that was like a breath of fresh air entered inside his very heavy head.

「……Hajime. Shia is……Shia is……wake up, Hajime.」

The familiar lovely voice had a reverberation that sounded vaguely agitated.

Shake shake The small hand was shaking him. The sensation felt like he was in a cradle that invited sleepiness instead.

「……Hajimeee. Wake uuup. Shia is~」

Shake shake. In addition, *bum!* a weight came down on his stomach……

Sleepy. He was really sleepy. But, it seemed his beloved vampire princess wanted Hajime to wake up no matter what.

It wasn’t a trivial matter for her to be this agitated. Even his brain that was working dully from sleepiness’s attack could

sense that at least.

With hardship, Hajime faintly opened his eyelids that were transforming into powerful magnet.

「Aa~, Yue?」

「……Nn, Yue here.」

It was Yue-sama. Yue-sama who looked like she was fretful for some reason, or perhaps looking troubled, was straddling Hajime's stomach with expression that was hard to describe.

「What's wrong, why are you making that face? Did something happen?」

His voice was filled with heavy sleepiness, however, Hajime asked while caressing Yue's head with extremely gentle hand motion.

Yue narrowed her eyes pleasantly for a brief moment, but she immediately renewed her expression as though to say 「This isn't the time for this!」.

「……Hajime, trouble.」

「Huh? Did I make some trouble?」

「……Nn, wrong. Hajime didn't cause any trouble. You were just sleeping normally. Rather, thank you for the wonderful sleeping face.」

「Ah, right. So? What is it?」

「……About Shia.」

「Shia?」

It seemed there was a trouble that happened to Shia.

Hajime focused his eyes and kicked his awakening brain into gear while asking what Yue meant.

The straddling Yue-sama made a really serious expression.

Hajime was filled with bad premonition. ‘Don’t tell me……’ he thought.

Did Shia turned the city of Akiba into a scene of carnage?

Did the warriors raised their howl?

Did Shia’s rabbit ears get targeted by them whose boundary was broken?

Or perhaps, had the world already moved?

Every possibility formed and vanished, formed and vanished……

In that case, this might be bad even if this was Shia they were talking about.

In the end, would she be able to escape from that city that had been transformed into a wicked haunt with her own strength?

No, Yue was making a grave expression like this, perhaps the SOS had already arrived!

The battle strength of that city’s warriors, gentlemen, ladies, etc. when finding prey was something that couldn’t be measured with logic.

After all, it surpassed the agents under every country government at the very least!

「……Hajime, listen calmly.」

「Yeah.」

Hajime gulped while staring back at Yue's eyes that looked like they were going to burst into tears and listened.

「……Shia is, Shia is-」

「What happened!?」

「……possibly thinking that I'm a NEET!!」

Yue's voice echoed like a scream.

Tick tock tick tock, the sound of the clock's hand was echoing excessively clearly. The room was deathly silent like a grave.

The tearful Yue was making a really grave expression just as before.

「For now, calm down.」

That was Hajime's first sentence after calmly listening.

「Whatever……」 was written on Hajime-san's face. The completely spoiling Hajime-san who would forgive almost anything as long it was Yue made a still stare that was reminiscent of Yue. Furthermore, he immediately put back the blanket over himself and moved to shut out Yue from his mind. It felt like the voice of his heart 「I'm sleepy here, stupid idiot」 could be heard.

Yue's face turned into one where it looked like she had received the biggest shock of her life. If this was in a manga then a sound effect word *GAAAN!* would be drawn behind

her. Or perhaps there would be lightning strike and sound effect *PISHAA!!* on the background.

Yue grabbed the blanket barrier that covered Hajime until his head and started pulling insistently.

「……Hajime! Hajimee! Listen ! Listen to mee!」

「……What?」

「……If Shia thought of me as a NEET, I, might die from shock.」

「You are immortal.」

「……The wound of the heart cannot be automatically regenerated.」

「……Is your mental strength soft like tofu huh?」

Most likely it was like that because the other party was Shia. The strongest vampire princess-sama was unexpectedly weak against a blow from someone she liked.

Hajime insistently tugged on the blanket to pull it back on him while answering half-heartedly.

Yue insistently tugged on the blanket to pull it away while speaking with a serious face.

「……I, have a thought. That rather than being told right from the front, being told from words that appeared inside a casual conversation is more damaging.」

‘Generally a person with nothing to do in the house……’, certainly, it sounded like a true feeling that inadvertently leaked out.

She got the feeling that since coming to earth, Shia's respect toward her was fading.

Certainly there were times when she put her clothes into the washing machine while there was still tissue in her pocket (three times) and she got scolded with fury like erupting volcano……

There were also times when she forgot her turn to take out the trash (four times), it angered Shia greatly……

When she took care of the whole thing with azure dragon because it couldn't be helped, Shia looked at her with a really exasperated gaze for some reason……

She got reminded frequently about the classification of laundry……

'Wait a second Yue-saaan! Please don't roll around at that kind of placeee. I cannot vacuum that place like thii~s', she was often told like that……

However! Even with the me who am like that!

「……I want Shia to look at me with her usual respect and affection filled gaze!」

'What should I do?', Yue-sama turned a pleading gaze while shaking Hajime repeatedly *shake shake*.

Hajime wordlessly turned his eyes at the clock. And then, his gaze became really complicated.

「It has been two hours since Shia went out huh……. Just how much are you troubled by this?」

Yes, *two hours* already passed.

During that time, this vampire princess-sama was sitting and hugging her knees on the living room’s sofa while acting dejected all this time.

Hajime let out a sigh, then he suddenly reached out to Yue and pulled her under the blanket.

「……Hajime?」

「For now, let’s sleep. You will feel refreshed for sure when waking up.」

‘Perhaps’, he said inside his heart. He pulled back the blanket over himself while making Yue as his body pillow.

「……Muu. Hajime is avoiding the question……」

Sleeper’s breathing immediately came out from Hajime. Yue pouted her lips while looking up from his chest.

After staring fixedly at him for a while, Yue was also lured by sleepiness. Her eyes drooped and she squirmed in her search for the best position.

And then,

「……Nn. I’ll give Shia a firm talk when she come home.」

She wasn’t an idler by any means. She was only enjoying the time where she wasn’t doing anything!

In other words, she was always super busy at any time!

‘Will it become evening when she return home? Shia, won’t she come home quickly?’ Yue thought while entrusting her body to Hajime and joined him in his afternoon nap.

「……Good night.」

.

.

「Good morning!」

Dahlia’s energetic voice resounded in her rabbit ears.

「……Morning.」

Shia returned the greeting even while not stirring at the slightest. And then, her voice was terribly bitter.

She was imposingly standing still while crossing her arms. She was watching the morning sun completely rising to the zenith of the hill from the window of a luxurious room.

Yes, she was watching the morning sun.

The night was over and the morning arrived. Furthermore, several hours passed.

And yet,

「My pickup hasn’t come.」

Her rabbit ears, her eyes, and also the corner of her mouth were twitching. Her eyes looked completely angry.

When looking at her wristwatch, eight hours had passed since she was summoned. She went out of the house before noon, so at this time the evening had passed since a long time ago already. It was dinner time.

Then, there should be a phone call to Shia who hadn’t returned home, at the same time they should have noticed that she couldn’t be contacted.

And yet, her pickup hadn’t come.

Could it be, that the gap between worlds were larger than she expected and the magic power requirement was harsh?

She was thinking such possibility, but she still felt a it sad due to the expectation she held at the beginning.

She couldn’t possibly imagine, that to think *only two hours* had passed at the other side.

And then, she also never imagined that her nonchalant words had deranged Yue.

(We, well, it must be that. Surely there is a problem with the magic power requirement, yep. Even the transfer to Tortus is still in the middle of research to make it simpler I’m told.)

Shia convinced herself somehow.

Beside such Shia, Dahlia bowed with a reserved attitude humbly.

「Udar-sama, good morning.」

「Right.」

The reply came from the sphere of light……the divine spirit of thunder was floating lightly between the rabbit ears of Shia who was standing imposingly while staring at the morning sun. His name was Udar. His true name was longer, but it seemed that was how he was called because humans could pronounce his real name.

「By the way Shia. Respond to me already. This is the first time I’m ignored like this. I don’t know what to do.」

Float float, float float. Whirl-.

Udar-san made an appeal about his own existence toward Shia with a somewhat pleasant impression.

Wonder why? It was nothing more than a light ball, but it looked sad somehow……

「Eh? What? I’m sorry, I didn’t notice at all.」

「……I’m, a divine spirit though.」

「Right now you are just a ball though……」

「……That’s, right isn’t it」

Flo-loat~, flo-lo-lo-loat~.

It somehow looked like it was crying.

Now then, why was the divine spirit of thunder cloud Udar was staying at Shia’s side in this state?

To explain it simply, the divine spirit who bore a wound in his heart due to Shia’s blow that resounded until his soul became unable to maintain his human form and got reduced into the state of being a light sphere.

However, Shia had no intention to annihilate the divine spirit, so she didn’t even deal the finishing blow to Udar. Like that, Shia requested the bewildered Udar ‘I’m begging you, let’s have a talk’.

She was victorious in battle when challenging a divine spirit like him right from the front, however she merciful and didn’t take away his life. Her wish was only to have a discussion. It seemed that left really deep impression on Udar.

In the first place he was the loser. In other words it was equivalent that the will and determination of a divine spirit had lost against what Shia had.

In that case, ‘It’s only right that I respond to the wish of this strong, beautiful, and noble girl!’ it turned like that.

In any case, even if they were going to talk the royal capital was in the middle of full pandemonium and the damage was enormous. The night was also late, there were a mountain of things that had to be dealt with.

And so, Shia who had rendered a distinguished contribution was to rest in a room in the palace. Eric and others would prepare a place for dialogue with the divine spirit after the sun rose, and they ran about to deal with the aftermath before that.

And, that was how they reached this point.

「Shia, Shia. When will the pickup you mentioned will come?」

Boing boing, Udar who landed on Shia’s head went *boing boing* while asking. Even though he was a ball of light, his movement was like a slime for some reason.

「H~m, they haven’t come at this time, so perhaps it will take a bit longer……」

「Will it be alright? Our mother Lutria is weakening moment by moment. There won’t even be ten years.」

「Ahaha, I also won’t wait that long.」

Udal bounced *boing boing* on Shia’s head. The gap from his good-looking man appearance was terrific. His

appearance was practically like Puyo○yo.

By the way, the mother Lutria he mentioned referred to the will residing in the star tree. The mother of all divine spirits and spirits.

Shia put the bouncing Udar on her palm and smiled wryly while saying 「As expected from god. Their sense of time is really different」.

「……Divine」

Dahlia who was silently watching such interaction of Shia and Udar unconsciously whispered that.

In her eyes, with the dazzling morning sunlight was illuminating them from the window, it seemed that to her it looked like a greatly exalted existence of the divine spirit and the beautiful hero were frolicking with each other.

It was as though she was witnessing a myth that was talked in the book. She watched enraptured.

「Dahlia-san?」

Shia tilted her neck seeing Dahlia whose mind went into a trip.

「My, my apologies! I have only seen a divine spirit-sama calling a human with their name and acting intimately like that only in books so, I unconsciously」

Dahlia returned to her senses in surprise and bowed respectfully.

「The preparation of breakfast will finish soon. Before that, how about taking a bath first?」

「Aa~, I see.」

She was also recommended to take a bath first before she was guided to her room, but as expected, Shia had no intention to expose her defenselessness in this place where she didn’t know what would happen and firmly refused.

However, Shia was a wholesome woman. She loved taking a bath. She didn’t feel refreshed at all with just lightly wiping her body.

She endured thinking that there would not be a problem entering the bath and relaxed after her pickup came, but now her heart shook when it looked like her pickup would come late.

Although, she didn’t know when a divine spirit like Udar would come.

Udar guessed Shia’s worry that was wondering what to do and called out.

「Shia, are you being wary?」

「Yes, well. There is no guarantee that Udar-san’s comrade won’t come after all……」

「Then leave it to me.」

「Eh? Will you stop them from coming?」

「Right. They will listen if I call out to them.」

He was really cooperative as though that situation where words wouldn’t get through to him at all was just a lie. No, rather it wouldn’t be an exaggeration to say that he was being friendly.

Shia said 「In that case……」while moving her rabbit ears back and forth *piko piko* happily……

「It also has been a long time since I took a bath.」

「……Yes?」

「It's something unnecessary for a divine spirit. But, in the past I imitated a human and often took a bath. It was really pleasant, I like taking a bath. Now, Shia, let's go take a bath――」

Shia clenched her fist *mugyu-* with the divine spirit located above her palm.

「Shi, Shia. I'm feeling a bit of pain. My inside is going to leak slightly.」

Udal raised a complain, but the pressure that Shia's smiling face emitted stopped his words.

「What are you doing trying to nonchalantly enter together?」

「I, is there any problem?」

「This no good god-, desuu!」

Pugyu-!! The clenched fist strengthened the pressure. Udal hurriedly argued vehemently.

「I see, I understand now Shia. You are feeling embarrassment right? I know that the child of man feel resistance when their naked body is seen by the opposite sex.」

「That's how it is.」

「Right. But, let me say that there is no problem.」

「Yes?」

「Certainly I have a nature as a male god. However, I like Shia. Male and female with good will toward each other will interact nakedly with each other. In other words, there is no pro――」

Mugyugyugyu!!

Udar-san fell silent. It looked like he was going to dissolve and vanish even now might be because he was just one step before annihilation from Shia-style Iron Claw. The figure of a good-looking man opening his eyes wide in fear could be seen somehow.

「I’m sorry Dahlia-san. As expected, I really want to take a bath, so can I entrust this to you?」

「Eh!?」

The divine spirit-sama was tossed away like pebble by Shia who was staring reproachfully. Dahlia’s expression shuddered while catching the ball in desperation.

After that, Shia firmly refused the assistance of the maids and took a bath at ease.

.

.

.

「Shia, that was horrible.」

「I’m sorry. God is fundamentally unreasonable, so I thought that I won’t be able to enter normally without making you faint.」

「……」

Inside a spacious room of the palace, Shia was sitting at a round table and replied to Udar’s complain with a blank face.

As expected it seemed Udar really intended to do that from how he was falling silent.

「Isn’t that alright? Shia, I like you. That strength which defeated me, that nobility and beauty which persisted in righteousness. I will even welcome you as my spouse.」

「Sleep talk when you are asleep, desu.」

Shia stuffed her cheeks with vegetable breakfast while making reproachful stare. Udar slime was sagging *monyon* on her head. Perhaps his words were said quite seriously.

But, there, a single man raised his voice as though to say ‘I cannot endure this anymore!’.

「Oi, Shia! Why――」

「Your way of calling.」

「Guh. Aren’t you allowing Udar-sama to do so!?」

It was his majesty Eric. The king whose face was beaten up black and blue until dawn and now his handsome face looked like a Buddha statue. Right now he had a light black and blue face due to healing using spirit art. Even now spirit

art healing was being applied to him, so he would surely recover completely after dozens more minutes.

In addition, other than him Louis, Greg, Phil, and Dahlia were also present on the breakfast table.

「That’s, well, he is a god. Because he is an existence that has lived for several thousand or tens of thousands of years.」

As expected, it seemed that Shia didn’t intend to insist on the way Udar was calling her name.

「Even so, if he is seeing me not as “child of man” but as a “woman”, there will be a need to have him rethink about the way he is calling me.」

When Shia sent a glance, Udal was lightly floating *float float* on air. He gave the impression that was like 「Eh? I cannot hear anything though?」.

Shia made a reproachful glare that seemed to say ‘This god~’ while ignoring his majesty Eric who still looked like he wanted to say something and asked.

「By the way, is the dealing with the aftermath going well? I think that the people of the capital also know that Udar-san is here but……won’t that cause a great opposition from them?」

Udar’s divine punishment came down on a lot of the populace.

Although Shia defeated him, she didn’t deal the finishing blow. That fact must have become known throughout her walk until the palace that was like a parade.

Although Udar wasn’t in human form, if there was a light of spirit drifting beside Shia, those who didn’t realize that it was the defeated divine spirit would be the strange one. Shia was amazed that riot like 「Finish off the weakened divine spirit!」 didn’t happen on the way to the palace.

「It seems, there is a bit of discrepancy in Shia-sama’s perception toward divine spirits.」

The one who answered was Louis who was watching the exchange between Udar and Shia with a smile that looked like it was pasted on his face.

「Discrepancy?」

「Yes,Shia-sama. First, it’s like what I said in the beginning, divine spirits aren’t evil by any means.」

Yes, they weren’t evil.

They didn’t consider life as light by all means. They were existences that watched over the world, watched over the people, and loved life. There wasn’t any existence that loved this world as much as them.

Even if they destroyed villages without giving any room for compromise, even if they rained down thousands of lightning on the capital, there wasn’t any ill will in there, they also didn’t feel any pleasure from that.

「Shia-sama, we……especially, the people of our oldest country the Balted Kingdom deeply understand that.」

「……Right. We aren’t laying our hand on the children of man by choice, the children of man are also one of the precious lives filling the world.」

「……Yes, Udar-sama. Therefore, this is what we think when the divine spirit lay their hands on us. “We are the one who made them do this”.」

「I, see?」

For Shia who didn’t have good recollection toward existence called god, it was a sense of values that was a bit hard to comprehend. She wondered whether in the end, the people who lost their precious people could be convinced like that.

Louis who guessed that nodded with a wry smile.

「Just as you guessed, not all people can be convinced like that. The prime example is the demon kingdom but……」

「Aa, I see. ‘That’s intolerable, so we’ll oppose by developing technology!’ It’s like that isn’t it.」

「Exactly. That is their root, the feeling that is their origin.」

His majesty Eric stared at Udar with an expression that hid his emotion while continuing.

「Last night, Shia was there so no one acted violently. Rather than fear and grudge toward Udar-sama, their heart was filled with hope that is you. I don’t know what will happen as time pass but……even so, all the people of my country know. The karma of human forced Udal-sama and the rest of the divine spirits into this action.」

「I see.」

Certainly, the populace of the capital raised a fervent cheer at Shia.

They witnessed her great exploit of defeating a divine spirit, and then that divine spirit recognized her and stayed close to her. Such hope had appeared for them. It wouldn’t be strange that rather than the execution of the divine punishment, it was the fact that the divine punishment had been averted that had won their heart for Shia.

Phil who was also someone in charge of intelligence must have investigated the feeling of the capital’s populace since the morning. He spoke the result.

「There is no sign of riot at the present. It’s all thanks to Shia-chan――」

「*Aaa?*」

「I, it’s all thanks to Shia-chi!」

Phil sweated coldly from Shia’s ominous gaze while changing the way he called Shia slightly.

「……The knight order is also considerably harmed. But, at present there is no one whose blood got into their head. Shia, it’s thanks to you.」

「……Haa. Your welcome.」

The gaze and words from Greg that were filled with sincere gratitude made Shia gave up correcting the way he called her while she let out a deep sigh. If she didn’t do that, the conversation would drag on.

She munched on a vegetable stick that was like a carrot in high speed like a rabbit.

Seeing Shia who was a bit sulky like that, the look on his majesty Eric’s eyes softened slightly while he asked.

「So, Shia. It seems your pick up hasn’t arrived, what will you do?」

「Let’s see……although they haven’t come, as expected I believe they will come for me within a few days. During that time, I will standby here while being on guard against new divine spirit-san perhaps?」

「Is, that so.」

His majesty Eric crossed his arms and fell into his thought. After a little while he lifted his face and turned his gaze toward Udar.

「Udar-sama, what do you think about our determination and atonement?」

There was unexpressed wish in those words that if Udar was in acceptance, perhaps he could assist them to reach the location of the star tree. If there was permission of divine spirit like Udar, then perhaps the hindrance of divine beasts could be removed.

However, Udar’s voice was cold.

「Our mother Lutria has despaired over you “humans”. Do you think that there will be a parent whose heart won’t be chilled when turning their blade toward their children?」

「That is……」

「Even so our mother Lutria continued to be merciful toward you all. Until the brink of the collapse of the world’s equilibrium. But, what she loves isn’t just “humans”. She also has to protect her other children.」

「……」

His majesty Eric bit his lower lip in shame because of their selfish and convenient wish. Louis and others were also the same.

Udar was unmoving as though fixedly watching them. He slightly flickered.

「But……after coming into contact with all of your hearts like this, I myself, think that perhaps there is hope.」

「Udar-sama……」

He was defeated by Shia and communicated with them from up close like this. He was able to understand that certainly a part of humanity had reflected on themselves. However, as expected, in the end it was “too late” already by the time the divine spirits had genuinely moved into action. That was why, divine punishment with no room for argument rained down because it was already a time where nothing could be done with just words anymore.

「……I will cooperate. This is also a request from Shia after all. However, I have lost almost all my power. I cannot do anything considerable.」

「Even the path toward the star tree?」

「Right. Even if my voice reach’s her, surely mother won’t listen.」

‘Above all else’, Udar continued. His tone of voice was strict.

「The root of the problem isn’t the drying up of the spirit element. It’s the heart of humans who won’t change at the drying up. You understand that don’t you?」

「Yes.」

「We know. That the children of man are like tree leafs that is carried by the wind. A fixed sense of values won't change easily. It cannot be changed. You will be strongly blown, drifting, and cannot stop until arriving at the end.」

Especially, when there wasn't an impact that could blow away even the wind.

「Our plan of salvation……is meaningless, is that what you are saying? That there is no saving the children of man?」

「As long as you don't change.」

A sorrowful atmosphere filled the place. Their plan for salvation was denied by the divine spirit himself that was protecting the star tree. It was like their hope was cut off.

But, there an out of place light tone resounded.

「Then, we have to work hard to reach the star tree-san isn't it?」

His majesty Eric and others were flabbergasted by the indifferent tone. They were putting on expression that was saying what is this person saying when the salvation plan had gotten rejected just now.

「Shia. Aren't you listening? There is no salvation for human, we were just gotten told that clearly.」

「Then, you are giving up?」

「Tha, that's――」

「Impossible right? You cannot do something like giving up the live of your precious people. Then, don't just talk pointlessly, first you need to act.」

‘In the first place’, Shia continued. The attention all gathered at Shia. It was as though they were staring at a light floating inside darkness.

「Not apologizing because you won’t be forgiven, that feels really no good. If you do something bad, apologize even if you won’t get forgiven! Isn’t that just obvious?」

「Eh, ah, tha, that’s right……」

「Yes. ……Certainly, it’s difficult for everyone to change. But, Eric-san and everyone here has changed. You all reflected from the bottom of your heart and are desperately struggling like this.」

Shia smiled brightly and spoke.

「That’s why, Udar-san’s heart is also moved. All the same the star tree-san might also recognize Eric-san and everyone.」

Till the end it was only “might be”. The prospect was slim. It was so bad that it wasn’t even a gamble.

However,

「Even though it’s despairing situation, even though it’s a reality that make you want to cry, it’s not a reason at all to give up. It’s nothing more than a reason to do your best with everything you have.」

Because,

「The future, it can be changed if you do your best with everything you have. At the very least, I believe so.」

His majesty Eric and everyone thought, if spirit of word really existed, then her words must be it.

In Balted Kingdom, throughout generations it was said that the oldest spirit art was words itself. Even without spirit element filling it, words had power. That was the spirit of words. (TN: Another hard to translate phrase. There is a phrase in Japan which is called “kotodama”, it consisted of two kanji, the kanji of word and the kanji of spirit. Translated it means soul of language or power of words, translated literally it means word spirit)

Everyone forgot to even breath and they were charmed by the girl whose eyes shined like the cloudless sky.

If your surrounding is pitch black and you cannot see anything ahead, let’s just run! It doesn’t matter where. Let’s run thinking that surely it will connect to a good future! No matter the case, first it starts from there!

Everyone somehow understood that surely that was what she had done until now. For the sake of the future she wished for, she always ran with all her strength.

‘Haa’, a shaky breath leaked out. It was his majesty Eric. Inside his chest, a burning emotion that felt like it would burn him to ash and a big emotion toward the strong girl before him which he couldn’t express in word were filling him to the brim. He let out a long sigh.

His father the previous king died early and he became a king when he was still a young boy and continued to run at the front for the salvation plan. A pressure beyond description was always weighing him down.

It was to the degree that if he learned that the hope called hero wasn’t a hope at all, he felt like he couldn’t stand up

again. That fear made his body and heart screamed and he rejected the hero summoning. His whole body felt terribly heavy as though he was shouldering a giant rock.

And then somehow, he now was feeling unbelievably light from just a single sentence.

「……Yeah, you're right. It's just as Shia said. We have no future anyway. Then, we only have to do what we should do.」

It was a quiet voice, however, it was a voice that was far more powerful than everything until now. His majesty Eric renewed his resolve.

Then, Louis let out a sigh as long as his majesty Eric's and turned a gaze that was filled with affection that would make anyone who saw it to feel bashful toward Shia while continuing after Eric's words.

「Yes. In any case we have to apologize first before thinking whether mankind can continue to exist or not. In anything it's important to take responsibility, no matter whatever the result is.」

Greg, Phil, and then Dahlia too, they were looking at Shia with a gaze that was filled with burning passion of different types while continuing.

「……First, let's show ourselves to the star tree. I want the star tree to know that human's sincerity hasn't run out yet.」

「That's right isn't it. There is no meaning in just standing still.」

「I'm unworthy and inexperienced but, I too will do everything that I can!」

Seeing them like that, Udar flickered a bit strongly. He didn’t say anything, but he looked somewhat happy.

His majesty Eric kept gazing passionately at Shia while concluding their plan ahead.

“Then, we will concentrate at organizing the allied force while waiting for the arrival of Shia’s family.”

The allied force here referred to the elite gathering of the strongest elites from three countries, the Balted Kingdom of his majesty Eric here, and then the demon kingdom and the beast kingdom to form a mixed force.

It had been planned since long ago. Messengers were already dispatched within the night and it was arranged for the force to gather within a few days.

In addition of the mankind’s strongest battle force, there would be Shia who defeated even a divine spirit. With them the possibility to reach until the star tree was great, but it seemed his majesty Eric intended to wait until Shia’s family arrived just as he promised.

“Although, Shia.”

“Yes?”

Even while she was still feeling a bit irritated by the way she was called without honorific, Shia wiped her lips clean after finishing the breakfast and replied.

When she turned her gaze there, the expression of his majesty Eric was faintly blushing for some reason. His gaze was also being averted shyly.

‘What, acting fidgety like that. This guy just ain’t decisive huh’, Shia thought, but let’s put that aside.

His majesty Eric said 「As a king, it’s necessary to exchange opinion properly in preparation of the worst」 in advance with an unnatural attitude, then he said it.

「If, this is only a what if. If no one come to pick you――」

「They will come.」

Shia’s face was blank. But, his majesty Eric was a person with steel in his spine who wouldn’t give up calling Shia without honorific even after getting beaten up black and blue. He was doing his best believing that the future can be changeeed!

「However, you see. You said that they will surely come before dawn, but in the end they didn’t come. In that case, the worst case――」

「Won’t happen.」

「If, only if. If that happen and you don’t have any method to return――」

「I’ll return even if it kills me.」

「If there isn’t any method! It’s fine even if you stay here forever! In that case, you will surely feel lonely. It won’t be bad even if you make a new family here. In that case, outside you are the hero so it will be better if your partner with someone with considerable status. For example, someone of the royalty or――」

「Please wait, your majesty.」

‘It seems the beating is insufficient desu. All right, I’ll turn you into a queen with the smash I directly succeed from Yue-san.’ Shia thought while she was about to stand up from her chair. It was at that timing that Louis interrupted his majesty Eric’s words.

The glasses glinted. His mouth was forming a smile, but it was strangely pressuring.

「Shia-sama is denying that she is the hero. Perhaps it’s too rash and imprudent to state that a royalty will be worthy for her with the consideration of her being the hero.」

「……What did you say?」

「In the first place, she won’t be able to live in peace if she become a queen for example. I’m in objection of putting a heavy responsibility on Shia-sama.」

「Hou. Then, are you saying that there is other worthy partner for her?」

「That will depend on her opinion, so I cannot say anything. Ah, but please don’t worry. This is not a matter that your majesty needs to trouble yourself with. About Shia-sama, as the one who summoned her I have responsibility to look after her.」

Twitch A vein pulsed on his majesty Eric’s forehead. In respond Eric’s smile was also deepening. However, his eyes weren’t laughing at all though.

「……Eh, what is this, this situation.」

Shia couldn’t hide her bewilderment at the battle of words that suddenly started.

Even during then, this time Greg spoke out「She is a warrior. Then, I who am the knight order captain can also talk to her in the same language」, and in response Phil spoke out 「What are you saying, Greg never talks most of the time! At that point, if it’s me I can make a lighthearted atmosphere and able to have Shia-chi enjoy herself you know」.

Then, next,

「……Hmph. Shia is a gifted woman who can defeat even me. The likes of children of man couldn’t possibly be worthy of her.」

Even Udar began to join the battle.

「Even Udar-sama……as expected from Shia-sama. You are popular!」

「Eh? Aa~, so it’s something like that?」

「It’s like that!」

Both Dahlia’s hands clenched energetically. She informed the right answer with her usual gesture.

Her attitude before this was relatively sharp, and she even beaten up his majesty Eric and Udar viciously, and yet why did it turn like this……Shia was bewildered. Or perhaps, were they Tio’s compatriot? A masochist king and god, honestly, she couldn’t bear watching something like that.

(Or rather, even though I have Hajime-san. Trying to seduce me even though I have a husband, are they looking down on me……)

Shia grimaced in distaste but, there she went「Eh?」.

(Come to think of it, have I mentioned that I have a husband?)

Thinking really carefully, she only mentioned “family” with the consideration of hiding information.

In her left ring finger, a ring that she received at Tortus before going to earth was fitted in. It was the proof that she was the demon king’s wife. She wasn’t his wife based on earth’s law, but the fact that she was a wife was generally accepted by the surrounding.

However, right now no one reacted at the ring on her finger. Perhaps, in this world there wasn’t a concept of wedding ring.

Shia thought that she should make it clear before even more meaningless thing happened and she opened her mouth.

「Say~, actually . I’m marri――」

In that instant, Shia took a single leap and landed on the opposite side.

「……Hou. Amazing reaction. I should have erased my presence completely.」

Those words were filled with admiration and interest. And then, it was a terribly sexy voice that would strongly stimulate the opposite sex.

Before anyone knew it, a single man was inside the room without any warning. He was right behind the chair Shia was sitting before this.

Glossy black long hair. Intellectual eyes with long slit. Bewitchingly shining pupils that were like amethyst. He was

a terribly good looking man. His body was wrapped with a jet black and luxurious outfit.

His reached out hand stopped above the chair. From the hand’s position, that hand must be trying to stroke Shia’s hair.

The good looking man who was smiling bewitchingly caused his majesty Eric to return to his sense a beat later and he raised his voice.

「Arogan-dono!? Why are you here!?」

「My apologies for the unannounced visit, Eric-dono. I was unable to suppress my excited heart after hearing the momentous news of the hero summoning and the defeat of a divine spirit.」

「The messenger shouldn’t have arrived already but…… should I say that it’s as expected from the demon king-dono. As always, you have a long reach.」

The man called Arogan shrugged. Surprisingly, it seemed he was his majesty the demon king of Rated Demon Kingdom. Most likely he made his subordinate to monitor the capital and grasped the information earlier than anyone using some kind of method.

Although, there was a limit on being outside common sense with how he suddenly arrived in the palace, and alone on top of that.

Such preposterous his majesty demon king Arogan moved his gaze toward Shia who was behind his majesty Eric. And then, he suddenly chuckled ‘fuh’ and the next instant, his figure vanished. But right after that, he was instantly in front of Shia.

「Wawah, oops.」

The distance was too close. Shia took a few steps back. The wall was right behind her.

「Nice to meet you, hero-dono. I am the king of Rated Demon Kingdom, Arogan Spervia Rated. To think that a person with strength to defeat a divine spirit could be a woman this lovely, it's really unimaginable. Please, allow me to ask your name.」

His majesty demon king Arogan smoothly approached while smiling. With his terribly good looking face and the bewitching atmosphere he wore, the average woman would be entranced by him.

「Ah, yes. Nice to meet you. I am Shia Hauria.」

「Shia……even your name is beautiful.」

The smile strengthened. Really this demon king seemed to be really knowledgeable on how to use his good looks. He came until a distance where his hand would be able to reach if he reached out and even then his body kept closing the distance.

His majesty Eric and others spontaneously tried to stop him but,

「Wha-, barrier!? Arogan-dono, what are you planning!?」

「What, I only wish to spend time together with Shia for a bit. Eric-dono had been together with her all the time last night correct? Isn't that unfair?」(TL: Ew that suggests Shia slept with Eric…Hajime won't be happy desu)

Saying that, his majesty the demon king Arogan looked back across his shoulder and smiled charmingly at everyone who couldn’t approach due to the barrier.

And then, his hand thrust right beside Shia’s face when she was close to the wall. It was the so called wall bang. He stared into Shia’s eyes straightforwardly right from the front.

「Err, you are too close, so can you back away?」

「……Hou.」

Normally, at this point most girls would become weak kneed. He himself seemed to have absolute confidence in his charm. His eyes expressed his confidence that there was no woman who wouldn’t fall to his advance.

Seeing Shia who wasn’t just completely not agitated and instead even looked annoyed, his majesty the demon king Arogan was increasingly growing even more interested and his other hand reached out.

It seemed that the objective was Shia’s chin. So to speak he was going to attempt lifting her chin.

「If you do that, I will have to resist. Even though you are a king of a country, I won’t hold back you know?」

Suddenly a chill assaulted his majesty the demon king Arogan. His hand unconsciously stopped.

「……Then, if I overcome that resistance, will you become mine?」

His hand reached out once more as though to say ‘interesting’.

And so,

「Fuhn」

「Mu?」

Shia’s elbow struck. To the wall behind her. With an thunderous sound the wall behind her was pulverized into dust.

——Shia-style　Wall Bang

When she got wall bang done to her by anyone that wasn’t Hajime, she used this technique to pulverize the wall to erase the existence of the wall itself that was sandwiching her.

Shia who took a step back at the created space displayed herself swinging back her fist with a smile toward his majesty Eric and the others who were trying to dispel the barrier behind his majesty the demon king Arogan.

Everyone behind the barrier instantly noticed. They went 「Hyaa~~~~」 and jumped away from the line of fire.

Right after that,

「Level VII」

「!!?」

The pressure instantly shot up.

His majesty the demon king Arogan who underrated her due to his own good looks, status, the situation and so on was,

「Narcissist should die, no mercy. Desuu!!」

He opened his eyes wide and tired to do something, but in the end he couldn’t do anything and his face ate the godspeed fist that could hit a divine spirit. It *scattered him away.* Even the wall behind him was also smashed up along with him, and he became scattered sparkling particles.

Shia who saw that was,

“E, eh? ……Could it be, I killed him?”

She didn’t intend to go that far though……

Shia thought while sweating coldly.

.

.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The latest update for the main story comic version is posted at Gardo.

It’s love comedy chapter at Masaka Inn lol

When I saw Sona appeared, it make me want to write her again.

The chapter is posted free of charge, so please go take a look!

Best regards!

Arifureta Chapter 335

Arifureta After III　Brutal Hero Shia Arc　Now, I Become The Wind! Desuu!

.

Around the time when the sun would soon reach the zenith.

A cute humming was resounding in a corner of the courtyard in the palace of Balted Kingdom.

「Funfunfu~n♪ Fufu~n♪ You are really late Hajime-sa~n♪ Come quickly Yue-sa~n♪ The bunny of~, Nagumo Family is riight heere you know~♪」

Correction. An original song that surpassed a humming was resounding. From Shia.

Her rabbit ears were twitching *piko piko*, and her rabbit tail was shaking *shake shake* while she was singing. Several maids including Dahlia were watching such Shia smilingly.

If Shia was singing while admiring the flowers that were blooming profusely in the courtyard, surely they would watch enraptured at a beautiful girl frolicking with flowers.

Though unfortunately, what Shia was admiring right now was a lump of metal.

□Pain, pain, fly away~, my soul friend Schutaif-ta~n♪□

Shia’s soul buddy——magically powered two-wheeled Schutaif.

It was her beloved vehicle that was sent flying from a lightning spear of several hundred million volts. It was damaged here and there, but when Shia diligently checked it like this in the courtyard, it seemed that it didn’t have any fatal damage. It was a small mercy that the weapons loaded in it didn’t explode. Right now she was washing it with appreciation of its service to her.

Now then, Shia who literally made his majesty Arogan who suddenly appeared at the breakfast went splat, why was she working hard to give maintenance to Schutaif as though nothing had happened……

The truth was that his majesty the demon king Arogan was apparently a kind of clone. A spirit art or something that Louis was also able to perform after a fashion.

It was a body made from spirit elements, so naturally it could also fly. It could also perform pseudo teleportation by means of binding and reconstructing spirit elements. Because one could travel far faster with it rather than traveling in the flesh, it was often used as messenger or the like.

It was a convenient spirit art, but in the end it was something like an illusion that only created an outer appearance using spirit elements. Originally it didn’t have a material body, to say nothing of performing magic with it.

But, in regard to that, it was just as expected from the demon king. In a feat of skill the clone was given a substantial body and the caster could even use spirit magic

remotely to a certain degree. Thus resulting in a creation of a clone that was completely the same as the real thing.

Although, even for someone at the level of the demon king, “Shia-style straightforward right straight” seemed to be beyond his imagination.

Not only in the senses of the fist’s power and speed, but also in the sense of experiencing getting punched in the face by a girl of that age.

Seeing his majesty Arogan who was smashed apart and reduced into sparkling particles, his majesty Eric and Greg made twitching faces, while Louise smiled widely, Phil went pale, and Dahlia showed a face that was even more sparkling than the particles.

Within the atmosphere of heavy silence, they broke up for the time being to take care of various businesses including confirming the true intention of his majesty Arogan who suddenly visited. Shia didn’t really have anything she particularly needed to do, so that was why she was servicing Schutaif appreciatively like this. She was passionately wiping the frame with a sponge that came with it.

(Come to think of it, I missed my chance to mention about Hajime-san……)

Shia suddenly remembered and her hand stopped in thought.

The arrival of her popular period that visited her suddenly. She felt an emotion that was akin to bewilderment. After all, until Shia encountered Hajime she was living under the concealment of her family. Before she met Hajime, she had never interacted with opposite sex other than her relatives.

And then, since her existence was discovered in Fea Belgen, she was swimming desperately in a sea of malice and hostility. Even after meeting with Hajime, even though there were people who desired Shia as slave, there wasn’t anyone who came into contact with her with pure affection.

Of course, it was also caused by Shia blatantly directing her immense affection toward Hajime alone, so no one tried to lay their hand on her but……

Anyway, she had almost zero experience of being popular. Since coming to earth, sometimes there would be passerby attracted by Shia’s appearance and made a pass on her (a part of the classmates called them the hero passerby), so it wasn’t like her experience with this was non existence.

But, most of the time beautiful women and girls like Yue and others would be nearby, naturally those people’s eyes would be turned toward them too, so her awareness that “I am popular” was thin.

Furthermore, even those occurrences lately never happened. Hajime created the artifact of the recognition obstruction, and even before that Hajime’s existence was well-known. Men who tried to make a pass at Shia wasn’t a hero passerby anymore, they were already nothing more than an applicant for a novel way of suicide.

(Nufufu~, that Hajime-san, even though he is endeavoring to be peaceful, when it come to us he will immediately enter demon king mode)

Shia sang in a good mood while polishing Schutaif diligently.

(He should come to pick me up tomorrow, or the day after tomorrow at the latest, it will be fine if I introduce him then~)

While she was thinking lightly like that, the shining slime Udar who was on Shia’s head like usual called out to her.

「……It’s really something.」

「Eh? What is?」

Shia tilted her head. Udar jiggled *poyoyon* and leaped on top of Schutaif while continuing his word.

「After receiving my lightning, how did it come out of it with only a part of its armor blown away? What is it made of?」

「Rather, I was the one who was shocked that its armor was blown away even if only a part of it though.」

「That war hammer too. In the end I couldn’t destroy it and could only make you let go of it. I know nothing that boasted toughness to such degree even among divine spirit arms.」

「Divine spirit arms? What is that?」

According to Udar, tool that was using spirit element was called as spirit instrument. And even among them, tools that are forged personally by divine spirit was apparently called as divine spirit arms. It seemed to possess powerful strength that are on a different level from divine spirit arms.

Actually, the great sword that his majesty Eric possessed, that too was a divine spirit arms that were handed down from generation to generation in the kingdom. Its name was “Tarnada”, and it was able to manipulate wind.

「Hee……it’s like what we called artifact in our place. But, if it’s something that Udar-san’s people created, aren’t you going to take it back now that they are opposing your side?」

「It won’t be able to do anything to us anyway when it’s used in the capacity that humans can handle.」

It wouldn’t amount much to anything if not by abnormal being like Shia or exceptional existence like his majesty Arogan. By the way, according to Udar, Louis also possessed strength that was close to his majesty Arogan. When he wielded his full strength and worked together with his majesty Eric when he was using a divine spirit arms, the two of them might possibly display strength that was equal or surpassing his majesty Arogan.

「But, a divine spirit was repelled when attacking the demon kingdom wasn’t it?」

「It wasn’t me. It was Oros.」

「Oros-san? Is it a different divine spirit?」

「Correct. He is the divine spirit of earth. I met him before coming here. Oros told me that apparently the spirit element weapon of that country is even more of a threat than the demon king.」

There Udar was emitting a dark atmosphere that could be guessed even with his light sphere form.

「I was told, that the earth was screaming.」

「The earth, was screaming?」

「What that country created thoroughly sucked up the spirit element of the earth. Not only that, it seemed that even the spirits of earth were sucked in to bring further destruction.」

It was as though the earth was screaming at that time. That was why Oros pulled back.

Certainly, Oros who received terrific destruction was injured in his soul, but it wasn’t to the degree that he had to retreat. However, he was unable to continue listening to the screams of the earth even more than that.

「Objectively speaking, it might be a bad move on Oros’s part to retreat like that.」

If he kept attacking, the demon kingdom might fell. In the end, he was only postponing the problem. The earth might be screaming again in the future.

Oros understood that and yet didn’t attack till the end was because of his terror. It wasn’t a terror for his own destruction, it was a terror toward the scream of the children, the spirits. As a divine spirit, as the executor of divine punishment, it could be said as an unbecoming failure.

However,

「I cannot bring myself to criticize Oros. I too understand his feeling painfully well.」

「Is that so……」

Shia wondered what she should say. Shia gently moved the depressed Udar from above Schutaif to her palm. She was unable to find any words and only patted him in consolation.

Shia thought.

In earth, a world where information was overflowing, she saw and heard many things. The problem of this world was similar to earth’s problem.

Population explosion, drying up resource, pollution of land and air……. The difference was in the divine spirit. A world where the scream of the natural world could be heard and a world where it couldn’t be heard, which one was more fortunate she wondered.

Shia didn’t know. She didn’t understand, but when she looked at the dejected Udar, she was unable to consider it as other people’s problem.

It was then, she suddenly could see flickering light at the corner of her vision. ‘Oh?’, when she tilted her rabbit ears while turning her gaze there, she could see a light sphere that was really similar with Udar was converging around Vire Drucken that she put near a flower bed nearby.

「It’s my children. They are spirits of lightning. It’s unusual for them to come out in front of people. Is it because I’m here?」

「Now that you mention it, recently the spirits-san too won’t come near human settlement isn’t it?」

Were they relieved because the embodiment of lightning cloud was nearby? However, in spite of that they weren’t gathering toward Udar, rather it looked like they came out because of great curiosity toward Vire Drucken. A part of them also came toward Schutaif.

「Are they curious toward the artifacts?」

「Hmm. No, that’s not it. Shia. These war hammer and two-wheeled vehicle, do they have the function to stockpile lightning?」

「He? Lightning? ……Aa! They have!」

Shia took Vire Drucken into her hand and poured magic power to activate one of its gimmicks. Right after that, Vire Drucken sparked *bachi bachi bachi*.

The lightning spirits went 「Waa~~~h」 and crowded toward it in delight.

「It has electricity storage installed. It's a function to electrify the opponent when locking weapon with them, but it's faster to send the opponent flying so I've never used it you see~. And so, I completely forgot about it~, ahaha.」

「Ri, right. I see.」

Udar couldn't really laugh as someone who had been sent flying before. While Udar was somewhat creeped out, Shia also made her own body to spark bluish white.

「Like this I can also wrap myself with electricity after a fashion as a part of body manipulation, but in the end it's only to the degree of static electricity that is only useful for playing a prank.」

She would use it to shock Yue's butt when Yue transformed into lifeless Yue and wouldn't move away from in front of her vacuum cleaner. Yue would raise a cute scream 「Hyaa!?」 and moved away squirmingly while holding her butt. It was a cute sight and actually it became Shia's favorite scene recently.

At the beginning she learned it in order to wake up Hajime at the morning when he just wouldn't wake up, but it didn't work on Hajime who possessed "Lightning Clad". Rather, she was the one who got electrified and dragged into the bed instead. Honestly it was faster to use "Shia-style Good Morning (Physical)".

Dahlia and others who saw from afar how Shia was enveloped in bluish white spark went 「My!」 and they pressed their hand on their mouth. The lightning spirits also similarly went 「My!」 and converged toward her. They twirled around Shia as though they were dancing.

「……It looks like they like you. Shia, the spirits are in high spirit, saying that it’s comfortable beside you.」

「Is that so? Wait, wawah, please don’t play with my rabbit ears! Hyah!? Inside the clothes is not allowed~! Ah, please don’t pull my haiiir!」

The spirits were making ruckus looking like they were having a lot of fun.

Udar’s atmosphere became really gentle seeing that scene of the spirits being playful with fondness toward Shia. His depressed mood just now cleared away as though it had never happened. Such scene between human and spirit was nostalgic, and then this scene was how the world should be originally. He himself also seemed happy.

Above all else, the emotion he directed toward Shia was really warm. No, rather it had reached a passionate degree.

「However, Shia. As the personification of lightning cloud, I cannot just ignore how you mentioned that the power of lightning isn’t really useful.」

「Even if Udar-san say that, you understand right, after experiencing my battle style? By the time an opponent enter the state of weapon locking with super heavy weapon like my war hammer, it’s the same like entering a disadvantaged situation. They can only get blown away.」

「In other words, in an instant of contact――if you can inflict electric attack to the opponent through a blow in that moment it will be effective enough right? Or perhaps, it will be fine if you fire lightning attack like me.」

「That's, well, that might be so.」

「Right. Then let's try it.」

Udar hopped *poyon* and moved onto Vire Drucken. And then he called out 「Children, lend me your strength」 to gather the spirits on him. They became together and vanished into Vire Drucken.

「Eh? Wait a second Udar-san? What are you doing?」

「Mumu? What is this? I don't understand. However, well, what complicated and precise making. As expected the child of another world cannot be underestimated……. Hmm, is it like this?」

Somehow Shia got a bad premonition. She swung around Vire Drucken like a small lucky mallet while saying 「Udar-saa~n, don't enter inside as you please~」.

Because, thinking really carefully this was extremely bad. Udar and also the spirits were all personification of lightning. And then Vire Drucken was a weapon loaded with ammunition……

「Observe carefully! This divine spirit of lightning cloud, Udar will grant new power to Shia Haur――」

Electricity ran fiercely. Vire Drucken emitted spark and flash. It was like the hammer that was possessed by a god in a certain Avenge○ group.

Then, explosion. Along with an explosive sound.

Shia screamed 「Hyawaa~」 while tumbling. Udar and the spirits who were sent flying rotated high in the air. Dahlia and others who were watching from afar were also screaming 「Kyaa~」 while rolling on the ground.

Boom Vire Drucken fell on the ground and caused a tremor. Black smoke rose up from any holes on the war hammer. The outer shell wasn’t harmed, which was as expected from Hajime quality. It appeared that Hajime had properly put countermeasure so that the war hammer itself wouldn’t become unusable even after the unlikely chance of explosion occurring inside.

Although, there was no doubt that the whole ammo loaded inside were annihilated now. Its function as war hammer wasn’t affected, but it might be dangerous to use its shooting function without having Hajime checking it first.

Udar slime fell with a plop on the ground. Shia wiped away the soot while sending him a reproachful glare.

「After a close observation, my partner is reduced into a terrible state though?」

「Incomprehensible.」

For Udar who didn’t know about ammo, it seemed he didn’t understand why the explosion occurred.

Shia thrust her finger on Udar slime and spoke while grinding on him.

「Could it be, that? You are thinking about the future ahead and tried to destroy my weapon while you can right now?」

「It’s a misunderstanding. I did it thinking of Shia’s sake. I thought that a weapon of this level will be able to endure divine spirit armsification.」

「But it exploded.」

「Right, it exploded. Even before that, my power couldn’t be accumulated well. So a material from another world will have different property huh……. I think it will go well if there is spirit stone with high purity included into it though……」

「Well, I will believe that you did that with good intention in mind. Thank you very much, Udar-san. But, it’s forbidden to experiment on my partner further than this.」

She had no intention to entrust her partner to anyone other than Hajime. Udar hung down his head hearing Shia asserted clearly that it was forbidden to enter Vire Drucken. He was like……someone who failed in increasing the positivity level.

There, a commotion and loud footsteps could be heard.

「Shia! Are you safe!? What happened!?」

His majesty Eric and the royal guards including Greg came running. It seemed they rushed here after hearing the explosion.

Seeing Shia crouching down while poking at Udar slime, they thought that perhaps she was crouching because she was injured and approached her in hurry.

Looking at his majesty Eric who was reaching out with both hands, perhaps he was going to hold her up with both hands.

Of course, Shia swiftly dodged by rotating her body. His majesty Eric went 「Ah」 and his balance crumbled. And then, like that he dived on the dejected Udar.

An awkward atmosphere hung in the air.

「Are you safe, Shia-sama?」

「Ah, yes. ……Sorry for causing commotion.」

The royal guard captain Greg ran near in worry of Shia's condition as though nothing had happened. Shia replied with a wry smile.

During that time, his majesty Eric stood up while shaking from either anger or shame.

「……My apologies, Udar-sama. For pressing down on you.」

「……It's fine, I forgive you.」

Somehow, their heart as man seemed connected with each other. The hardness of the guard of the woman they liked created a friendship that surpassed the barrier of man and god……perhaps.

His majesty Eric stood up as though nothing had happened. He coughed once and opened his mouth while looking at Shia.

「Don't make me worry so much. If something happen to you, I……」

「Er~r」

The passion burning in his eyes was amazing. Just what in the world she did to make him harbored such emotion toward her. Shia completely didn't understand. It felt like a

feverish feeling that was unlike all of those hero passerby who were only attracted to her appearance would be transmitted through the air.

Like this, it might not be good for her to just nonchalantly dodge him while waiting for Hajime’s arrival before saying ‘I’m already married desu~’. Thinking that, Shia tried to open her mouth once more.

However, it was as though some kind of curse was hanging over them. Another hindrance entered. Furthermore it was a really emergency news.

「Your majesty-. A news came from the demon kingdom――what are you doing, your majesty?」

Louis arrived riding on something like a flow of light. Perhaps it was a travel method using spirit art. When he was going to report something, he witnessed his majesty Eric reaching out toward Shia along with a passionate gaze. His glasses glinted while he asked with a smiling face that looked empty.

「I, I’m going to check for injury――」

「You can’t do that you know? Or rather please don’t touch me.」

Thorn of words that didn’t contain even a shred of deredere came back to him. His majesty Eric’s heart was stabbed. There was no sweetness at all in it so it only felt painful.

While that happened, Shia also casually took distance from him. It also plainly dealt damage on him. The physical distance represented the distance of their heart.

「More importantly Louis. You have something to report right? I'll hear it.」

「Oops, that's right. Your majesty, the true reason of his majesty the demon king Arogan's visit has come into light. His subordinate received communication from his country and came to convey it to us.」

「So a spy infiltrated us, well, let's put that aside for now. And?」

「Yes. His majesty the demon king's objective is――reinforcement request.」

His majesty Eric's eyes opened wide.

Louis reported the detail while the air of the place became tense all at once. According to the report, the divine spirit of the earth Oros resumed the divine punishment to the demon kingdom. Furthermore, this time he even led a large force of celestial race with him.

The force had already reached a distance of half a day away from the demon kingdom's capital.

「So that's the reason of Arogan-dono's irrational visit. He didn't show even the slightest unrest but……was he actually agitated inside?」

His majesty Eric nodded in understanding. Shia also nodded deeply.

「I see. So he approached me also because he wanted to win over the hero with certainty.」

「No, that's the nature of that person. If he see a beauty, he cannot help himself from seducing them. What's more, he

was really interested in you Shia.

I cannot comprehend it.

Even if she was told that she caught the eyes of that man who was like the personification of narcissism, furthermore combined with how his majesty Eric and others called him as “demon king”, it only made her felt really weary.

In addition, she made a pass on woman when coming to ask for reinforcement, and in the end got blown away which delayed the reinforcement request itself. It couldn’t even be called a joke. For a guy like that to introduce himself as “demon king”, even as a joke it felt like it would make Shia’s discomfort index to burst through the max value.

Shia shook her head to drive away the unpleasant feeling and talked to Udar to change the topic.

The report said that the distance is half a day away but, is Oros-san’s traveling speed really not that fast?

That’s not the case. He has an appearance of the land taking human form. Most of the time he is as big as ten children of man, but he can change his size at will. If he turn bigger, his traveling speed will also grow faster in proportion.

Apparently Oros’s appearance was like a giant golem. Normally he was as tall as ten humans, so he must be around twenty meter or less. If he enlarged himself, his travel speed would change with the enlargement of his step’s width.

However, in that case the reason why it would take half a day for him was unclear. Udar sensed that doubt and answered with a groan.

It must be the expression of his resolve. That this time, he absolutely won’t pull back no matter what. At the same time, he is compelling the people of that country to resolve themselves.

Oros’s slow approach was the same like a convict’s walk climbing the stair toward the gallows for the execution. Each of his step was the stair that the demon kingdom climbed to their doom.

What will you do? O child of man. O king of this country.

Udar’s solemn voice resounded. His voice was filled with dignity that was unthinkable coming from his slime shape until now. That was unmistakably the questioning of god. Even without eyes, Udar’s gaze was obviously being directed to his majesty Eric.

His majesty Eric clenched his fist and gritted his teeth. He showed an expression of enduring a great pain. It was obvious that a deep conflict was tormenting him.

If thinking normally, in a sense the best way was to abandon the demon kingdom that still hadn’t abandoned their ambition even at this point and in the future. If they were ended by divine punishment, one concern toward the future of cooperation with spirits would disappear with certainty.

It was the rational thinking. It was the best thinking as a king of a country. Because making a choice of which to sacrifice and which to let live was a duty that was imposed to king.

However, but……

Someone who will abandon his fellow kind, who is also a partner who though imperfect, had made a promise to help

each other. Will someone like that be able to live together with the spirits-san in the future ahead?」

His majesty Eric, no, everyone there became taken aback. Their gaze moved toward the voice. It was Shia who casually said that while checking Vire Drucken's state.

「Shia……but……」

「Ahaha, please don't mind it too much. I am not the king, so I cannot think like a king. Just now in the end is only my own thinking.」

Shia herself was smiling wryly, saying that her thinking was too optimistic and idealistic.

'Aa, but……', his majesty Eric thought.

「Doing everything you can, for the future you wished for, is it……」

His heart suddenly turned light. Once more the words, attitude, and way of life of the girl before him were clearing away the weight of his heart.

His majesty Eric looked at Louis and other with a troubled expression. Interestingly, everyone also made the same face. His majesty Eric felt like he was going to burst laughing. He somehow endured it while staring at Shia, then he turned his face toward Udar once more.

「Udar-sama. We will go to reinforce them. We will fight Oros-sama until our words reach him.」

「I see.」

「Surely you have seen through it. Of the ulterior motive of Arogan-dono and the people who admire the demon kingdom. As expected, we who will try to save them are really a sinful race.」

「I cannot deny those words.」

「Yes. However, even so, I want to show our sincerity with this reinforcement.」

「Sincerity? By trying to defeating a divine spirit?」

「No. We swear that we will never abandon anything anymore, not a single thing. This is our sincerity in protecting that oath.」

「……」

Rational judgment, pursuit of the benefit for one's own country or possibly the benefit of the race called mankind, necessity, calculation, greed fulfillment.

Such things were enough already. In exchange of their development until now through those means, they ended up making light of many important things. And then, as the result, they were heading to destruction.

Then, let's take back the sense of values that was obvious as a human, as a country. Let's just protect them simply because they had promised. Let's save them because their conscience was screaming to save them. Let's carry up the morals that were only natural for human to possess. Let's run forward for the sake of idealistic decision rather than realistic decision.

They were going to be destroyed anyway. Then, let's return to the starting point. Let's return to be the "human" that the

mother the star tree and the divine spirits surely loved at the beginning.

「……I see.」

Udar's reply was only that. But, surely the gentle atmosphere they vaguely felt from him wasn't just their imagination.

His majesty Eric digested the fact that no rebuking words came from Udar, then he turned his gaze toward Shia.

「……Shia. It will be too late if we don't sally immediately. Your family won't make it in time.」

「I guess.」

Originally, it would take a whole three days to rush from Balted Kingdom to Rated Kingdom even when forcing a horse that was strengthened with spirit arts to run until they die. However, when the salvation plan was decided in the meeting of leaders of the three countries, they were given a flying dragon from Tinted Beast Kingdom. If it only carried the elites, they would be able to arrive in just a day.

And then, if it was Rated Demon Kingdom, they would be able to hold out for a day although they would be greatly damaged.

「……I will keep the promise. I won't force you to do anything until your family come.」

「Is that so.」

Hearing his majesty Eric's words, Shia turned a smile where it might be the first time she directed such expression toward him. Seeing that smile, his majesty Eric

unconsciously hid his mouth with his hand while looking aside. It seemed that the stimulation was too powerful.

However, there was Louis’s wide grin ahead of his averted gaze, so he hurriedly returned his gaze. It seemed that the stimulation was powerful.

「But, I wish that you immediately come to help us if you succeed in persuading your family. We swear we will hold out until then. That’s why, that’s why Shia. Can we hold out hope? That you will come to save us?」

His gaze was hot. Like a man who before heading to the battlefield was making a promise with his lover to reunite once more. Louis and others also stepped forward and left similar words. As though they were trying to carve their existence to Shia even for just a bit more. Udar too also bounced *poyoyon*.

Shia smiled wryly and shook her head. His majesty Eric and others distorted their expression in pain.

「There won’t be any meaning to a promise if there is no opposite side to keep it.」

「……What?」

Shia swung Vire Drucken. Putting aside its shooting mode, it had no shortcoming as a war hammer. Next, Shia straddled Schutaif and poured magic power into it. Instantly, *KIIIIIII* Schutaif started with such starting up sound. There was no problem with its running function.

「Now then, my Schutaif-tan, compared to a flying lizard-san, which one is faster I wonder?」

Shia said such thing with a chuckle ‘nihi’. His majesty Eric couldn’t hold himself back anymore,

「Shia!」

He was overcame with emotion and stepped forward to hug her. And then, 「Oops」 with such light voice Shia kicked him flying and he vanished behind a flower bed.

Shia might have gotten used to it because she then addressed Louis as though nothing had happened.

「I’ll tow a carriage behind, so can I ask you to make the preparation? I will be going really fast, so please prepare something sturdy.」

「As you wish, Shia-sama.」

Louis also bowed his head respectfully as though nothing had happened. As though it was Shia who was the one worthy for him to offer his everything to serve her.

Like that, Louis immediately turned around to prepare for the expedition while giving instruction to his subordinates. Then he looked back after a few steps and,

「Shia-sama. Something has been on my mind since the first time we met.」

「Yes, what is it?」

He said along with a pure smile that contained no hidden meaning that the females of the kingdom were greatly in love with.

「You are really a softhearted person.」

「……」

Shia’s rabbit ears went limp. Her troubled expression might be because of her self-awareness that even while she wished to make a clear distinction like Hajime and Yue, in the end she couldn’t really do that.

In the past, Shia’s mother told Shia that she wished to become a hero even though she was rabbitman. She didn’t want to become a forest rabbit that could only run and hide, but a hero that could protect anyone.

The woman possessed a heart that was stronger than anyone, but the cruel fate gave her the weakest body of the weakest race……the wish and disposition of such woman had been inherited by her daughter with certainty. Furthermore it was to an extraordinary degree.

Perhaps, it was exactly because of that she was chosen.

To be the savior of the screaming world.

To be the <ruby>brave<rt>hero</rt></ruby> that could protect everyone.

.

.

Thirty minutes later.

Shia and everyone else became people of the sky.

At the lead was Schutaif. The sky road from the barrier created by the other world’s bike realized the world’s first midair wheeled travel through the large carriage it was towing behind. [ED:E.T.?}

「Shi, Shiaa! I, is this really all right!? Or rather, isn't it fine to slow down a bit more!?」

「It's fine! There is nothing better then going fast yeah! Desuu!!」

Shia was really in a good mood that it felt like a cry of 'hyahhaa' could be heard.

Toward such Shia, his majesty Eric who took out his face from the carriage's window and called out to her was turning pale because his breathing was obstructed by the wind pressure. No, he was simply turning pale from the terror of running midair in a speed that was nearly 200 km/hour. (124.27 mph)

Inside the carriage that was connected to Schutaif, there were Louis and others the childhood friends group. Other than them there were also people selected from the best members the knight order and the palace spirit artist division had, five people each from those two groups were inside the carriage too. But everyone was sticking close to the wall. They didn't move at the slightest while their expression was stiff.

They would die if they moved……their expression seemed to think that.

Shia's rabbit ears flapped wildly from the wind pressure. She was driving wildly while sometimes she would make eccentric poses that looked strange but curiously left impression in the heart. There was nothing more that could enter her rabbit ears when she was in that state.

His majesty Eric pulled back his face inside the carriage with an expression that had given up on various things. He was also praising himself who tried to ride together with Shia on

Schutaif at the beginning but ceased from doing that because he got a vague bad premonition.

But, right after that, Shia’s voice resounded from outside.

「Mumu-! No one will be able to stop the current me yeaah! Desuu!」

His majesty Eric and everyone made a face that said 「Hm?」 and looked at each other. The next moment, consecutive explosive *boom!* sound resounded. The carriage was shaking from the shockwave, which caused the knights to also shake in their boots.

「Shi, Shia!? What happened!?」

「The celestial people-san got in the way, so I threw explosive slug bullets at them!」

「Ce, celestial people you say!? Kuh, our reinforcement was predicted――」

His majesty Eric gritted his teeth while sending signal to Louis with hand gesture to intercept, but the next moment another *boom!* explosively resounded.

「Shiaaa–!! Are you alright!?」

「I’m fine desuu! There is no problem! Fu-ha-hah! Try to stop me if you caa~~n desuu!!」

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom♪

In between of the consecutive explosive sounds, they could vaguely hear scream like 「Gyaaaah」 or 「Hii~」 or 「Goddamn iitt」.

In addition, there was a voice saying 「Now, I become the wind!」 in a good mood, at the same time the carriage accelerated even faster. The G-force pressed on everyone and they turned pale while clinging desperately on the wall.

「Your majesty-. I propose to attach handrail in the carriage's seat or wall!!」

「Accepted!! Do it right away if we go back safely!」

「By your wiiiiilll」

Rattle rattle-, creak creak-, mekyo! Ominous sounds were resounding from the carriage and everyone became tearful while the proposal that Dahlia desperately yelled was adopted instantly. The brawny knights gave a thumb up at Dahlia tearfully.

After that, the carriage curved with terrific centrifugal force, rolled over upside down, and so on. His majesty Eric and others who had their fill of a fun time like jet coaster became even paler than a drunkard this time.

After a while 「I took care of them~」 a carefree voice could be heard. In that moment everyone thrust both their hands to the sky and cheered loudly.

'We are saved! Saveeed! We surviveeed! Let's go home quickly!' Their atmosphere was like that.

But the way, Shia defeated the attacking celestial people not with shooting. There was no change in Vire Drucken that it would be dangerous to use its shooting mode without maintenance first.

And so, 「Rather, it's troublesome to reload before shooting, it's faster to just throw it!」 under such thinking, she threw

the explosive slug bullets to defeat the enemy. The bullet speed wasn’t really different from when it was fired normally.

The multiple battles that she went through since coming to this world was rapidly transforming Shia into monster. But, luckily or unluckily Shia herself wasn’t really conscious of that.

Louis who checked the situation outside the window fixed the position of his glasses while opening his mouth.

「Your majesty. It’s the Enaton Hill. We have already traveled through two thirds of the distance.」

「……Amazing.」

The distance that would take a day even when using a flying dragon. This was going to be finished in just around three hours.

The yell 「Fuhah, fuhahahahah. The sky of other world feels super gooooooooodddd-desuu!!」 of Shia whose tension was climbing in proportion with the speed pierced everyone’s ear.

It was a bit scary, but she sounded like she was greatly delighted so his majesty Eric’s lips naturally slackened.

Louis who saw that narrowed his gaze.

「Your majesty, what is your intention with Shia-sama?」

His majesty Eric was taken aback by the sudden question and his eyes opened wide. He wondered what was Louis thinking at this kind of time, but Louis’s eyes were unexpectedly serious so his majesty Eric mended his expression.

「What do you mean with that question?」

「You understand right?」

It was about his feeling toward Shia. Even though not even a day had passed since they met, his heart was turned toward her as though a spirit art of charm was put on him.

「Shia-sama will return back to her original world when her family arrive to pick her up.」

「……So what?」

「I'm saying that your majesty ought to draw a line properly.」

His majesty Eric's mouth frowned. He understood but didn't want to recognize it. Such feeling could be clearly seen from him.

「……What about you yourself, Louis. You are the oldest one among us childhood friends, but until now I've never heard any serious romantic talk about you. You made a face like you aren't interested to woman, but you are sending really passionate gaze toward Shia.」

It was a meager counterattack from his majesty Eric toward Louis. He pointed that out with a sulking tone toward Louis who was his best friend and someone who was like a big brother to him.

Before anyone knew it, everyone's gaze inside the carriage was gathered toward the two. However, even within that atmosphere Louis didn't turn timid and replied with a wide smile.

「If this heated feeling is called love then, yes, certainly I'm harboring love toward Shia-sama.」

「Nuguh. Tha, that's really straight.」

「Yes, if I face your majesty straightforwardly, then your majesty will also face me back straightforwardly just like usual right?」

「Muu……」

While thinking that 'I really cannot go against this guy', his majesty Eric raised both his hands in surrender pose and replied back.

「Let's see……. It's the first time I feel like this. I don't want Shia to go home. I want her to be together with me in this world.」

「Yes, I also think the same. And then, surely it's not only me and your majesty who think so.」

Louis said that and smiled. His gaze moved toward Greg and Phil too.

「After all, she is a girl who charm even a divine spirit like Udar-sama.」

「For certain.」

Phil spoke while shrugging, while Greg affirmed with a small smile.

Gentle smiles between fellow people who understood each other spread inside the carriage.

「Now then, from the perspective of the country it will be a matter for great congratulation if Shia-sama is wedded with your majesty, but personally it's hard to accept for me.」

「Yo, you really said it straight huh, Louis.」

Louis continued while pushing up his glasses.

「Although, it’s a fact that her heart belong to her family, it won’t be a trivial matter to change her mind. It’s my thinking that here we should band together and cooperate to convince her family.」

「That’s logical. In any case, we have to make them think that it’s fine for Shia to remain here.」

「At this point, I believe that she has no bad impressions of us seeing how she is helping us so much like this, but I don’t think that it’s so far to the degree that she is holding affection for us.」

「The prospect is grim.」

The four male’s heated discussion continued. While that was happening, only Dahlia alone was strangely dripping cold sweat.

(……If they are thinking that Shia-sama is charming, why aren’t they considering the possibility that she might have someone already in her original world?)

She recalled Shia’s figure when she was singing at the palace’s courtyard.

(“Hajime-san”……it will be great if it’s just my imagination but, somehow Shia-sama’s atmosphere felt different only when she was speaking that person’s name……)

Dahlia-san’s female instinct was sharp and clear.

The words “grim prospect” that Greg spoke. In reality it might not be just a mere “grim prospect”.

Dahlia averted her gaze from the four men who was passionately discussing of how to make their advance toward Shia, looking like 「If that is the case then, I cannot watch this anymore!」.

For Dahlia herself, it would feel terribly lonely to part from Shia. She wanted to become even closer with her. That was why, if it was a discussion in order so Shia wouldn't sever her connection with this world, she would happily participate but……

(Shia-sama! If you can please play the requiem for them as soon as possible!)

Dahlia prayed to the Shia in her heart for the slightest mercy.

And then, whether that prayer actually reached or not, actually since some time ago Shia had stopped yelling completely. From that fact, and from the fact that Shia's rabbit ears were rabbit ears of hell, it could be easily guessed.

They didn't know. Outside the carriage, the person they were discussing was writhing and couldn't endure being there saying 「Stop it~, don't have a love talk in a range where the person you are talking about can listen~!」.

Like that, just as Dahlia wished, Shia resolved herself that she had to perform the requiem over them as soon as possible, but right after that,

「Oo!? Eric-sa~n-, Louis-sa~n-, something huge is coming here!」

「! What, what's going on!」

「Huge thing you say……」

Everyone heard Shia’s yell and leaned out from the window simultaneously to look outside. The sight that flew into their eyes made them gazed in wonderment.

「Wh, why are you here!?」

His majesty Eric questioned while addressing the existence lying in wait for them by floating in the air ahead with a loud voice.

「Tinted Beast Kingdom’s, beast king——Gruelle Dullac Tinted-dono!」

A red dragon was hovering as though to block their way. He was his majesty the king of beast kingdom who had completely transformed into a beast using a spirit art.

.

.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Nichijou’s latest chapter is updated in Gardo Comic.

The nostalgic expression technique……

Perhaps I have to make Shia do something like fourth wall breaking soon at least lol

The chapter is posted for free, so please go take a look!

Best regards!

Arifureta Chapter 336

Arifureta After III　Brutal Hero Shia Arc　But I Refuse! Desuu!

.

It was a majestic red dragon. Wind could be seen faintly whirling around its body that was sized as big as a house.

「This is the first time we met since the conference of the three countries isn’t it, youngster of Balted.」

The voice sounded like it resounded from the bottom of the dragon’s stomach. The jaws that were lined up with sharp fangs didn’t move, but the vibration of the air could be felt so apparently the words themselves were transmitted normally.

Shia thought ‘The way he talk is different from Thio-san huh’ while judging that the dragon wasn’t an enemy and put a brake on Schutaif.

She confronted the red dragon midair on a bike that had a carriage attached.

「I’ve told you every time, please stop calling me youngster, Gruelle-dono. I am the king of Balted.」

「Fuh, forgive me. I am completely unable to forget the you at your youth.」

His majesty Eric who leaned out from the window asked the dragon to correct his words with a bitter face.

Apparently his majesty Eric and his majesty Gruelle were old acquaintance. Their countries were neighboring each other without any particular quarrel between them, in addition their two countries were fellows surviving countries among the three remaining countries, so it was only natural.

In contrast with the dragon’s fiendish appearance, it seemed his majesty Gruelle had gentle disposition. Shia thought so from his voice and atmosphere.

The dragon eyes of his majesty Gruelle moved toward Shia. And then, his breath was taken away. He looked at Shia once more from closer and he seemed to have something in his mind from the way he was staring fixedly at her.

「……I’m surprised. I presume that you are the hero. To think that the hero is a fellow tribe member and a girl who is this beautiful.」

「Er~r, nice to meet you, king of the beast tribe. My name is Shia Hauria.」

Shia kept sitting on Schutaif, but she bowed her head briefly just in case. However, she somehow got an unpleasant premonition and her lips were subtly twitching.

「Pardon my rudeness.」

His majesty Gruelle said that and the next instant, he was wrapped in light. Then, a beat later he transformed into a red haired dandy handsome man. His appearance looked like someone whose age was at the late forty. An attractive middle-aged man who was overflowing with dignity and

youthful vitality. There were only dragon wings growing from his back.

His majesty Gruelle then lightly flew to Shia’s side and,

“I am the king of Tinted Beast Kingdom, Gruelle Dullac Tinted. It’s a pleasure to make your acquaintance, o beautiful hero of fellow beast race.”

He said that and smiled while taking Shia’s hand and moved his lips toward the back of her hand.

First thing first, Shia swiftly dodged. It might be a typical greeting, but even if what she did might be rude, she couldn’t tolerate a kiss from the opposite sex. She also couldn’t help but sensing an ulterior motive from how he excessively stressed the part of “beautiful” and “fellow beast race”.

“Im sorry, I’m not used to this kind of greeting. Besides, right now we are in a hurry.”

They were marching with uncommon speed and also travel method, so it wasn’t like they didn’t have some leeway, but Shia spoke that excuse in order to avoid any troublesome matter.

“I see, that was really rude of me. It’s really unbecoming of someone of my age to be this high spirited after witnessing your loveliness.”

“……Is that so. Thank you.”

‘Somehow it feels like many of the kings of this world seems to be playboy……’, Shia thought while exerting herself to prevent her expression from spasming. Whether it was the demon king or the beast king, Shia was extremely troubled

whether she should called them as idiot who couldn’t discern the situation, or whether she should consider them as composed king who was unperturbed in any kind of situation.

As someone who knew Tio’s grandfather――Adol Claus who was also a red dragon who was the very picture of honesty and sincerity, she was unable to hold a good impression about the king of dragon man in front of her no matter what.

While she was thinking that, his majesty Eric timidly got down from the carriage and stood on the sky road that was made from barrier. He walked toward Shia while sending a helping hand.

「It should be fine to postpone the formal introduction for hero-dono who was successfully summoned after we overcome the danger that is occurring right now.」

「Hmm. Danger is it?」

「Yes. For you to be here, it means that you also received request for assistance from the demon kingdom just like us correct? In that case, we have to hurry right now.」

He said words that sounded like a citation of Shia’s words. His majesty Eric glanced at Shia and nodded.

Shia also nodded while grinning with feeling of gratitude at the helping hand from his majesty Eric.

His majesty Eric, was shot. His cheeks blushed and his hand covered his mouth while he looked aside. Inside her heart Shia made a tsukkomi 「Are you a maiden!」.

「……I see. Although the strength of Louis Lector was needed for the summoning ceremony, as I thought apparently it’s a

mistake entrusting this to other.」

Such small whisper was carried away by the wind. It was only picked up by Shia's excellent rabbit ears. Shia could somehow understand what the meaning of that whisper was from how his majesty Gruelle was looking alternately at his majesty Eric and Shia.

(Even though it's our first meeting, what's with this? Certainly there is merit in winning over the hero but……I can sense a sentiment that is more than that……)

From the conversation of his majesty Eric and others on their way here, and how the way they looked at Shia was identical with how his majesty Gruelle and his majesty Arogan acted, she couldn't say that it was just her imagination.

(That Erst, did she put a curse of charm or something when I defeated her?)

Shia's popularity period was so amazing to the degree that she had such doubt. Perhaps, Shia was an article of the finest quality for the sensitivity of the people in this world.

「I was waiting here due to that matter of reinforcement request.」

Shia was taken aback by the words of his majesty Gruelle and she returned back from the vortex of her thought.

「What do you mean? Do you mean that you wish to match our pace in heading there as reinforcement?」

There was a small forest below if they looked down. The figures of beastmen could be seen here and there down there. Most likely they were elite force that was the royal guard of his majesty Gruelle.

His majesty Eric and others couldn’t help from frowning.

The location of the three countries from each other was positioned like a triangle. Which was to say, the route to go to the demon kingdom from Balted Kingdom wouldn’t overlap with the route from Tinted Beast Kingdom.

The success of the hero summoning along with the degree of the hero’s strength had been conveyed to the beast kingdom before dawn using flying dragon as messenger. The reinforcement request should be coming to the beast kingdom at around the same time with that.

Then, it could be surmised that the best way to be reinforcement was to fight together with the demon kingdom to buy time until the hero arrived rather than intentionally flying to different direction and lying in wait like this.

Furthermore his majesty Gruelle shouldn’t know about uncommon transportation method like Schutaif, so he should be under the impression that Balted Kingdom would be coming using the flying dragon his country lent to them. In other words, he must be planning to wait here for one whole day.

Furthermore, he quickened only his departure so he would be able to intercept Balted Kingdom in this route with certainty.

If the intention from such act was compared with the way of thinking of his majesty Gruelle that they knew well then……

「No, I came here to stop you all.」

「As expected huh.」

It was like that. His majesty Gruelle was waiting here in order to stop the reinforcement from Balted Kingdom. He prepared a powerful card of the king personally coming to stop them courteously.

「Eerr, what does that mean? We cannot go to help? Is the people of beast kingdom in the same position with the celestial people?」

When Shia asked her question with perplexed feeling, his majesty Gruelle smiled wryly and shook his head.

「No way, the celestial people consider us as enemy. There is no way we can join hand with them. But, we are simply thinking that we shouldn't reach out to help the demon kingdom.」

In other words, it was something like that. There was no need to go as far to fight a divine spirit to protect the demon kingdom. Rather, they had no intention to go against the divine spirit by not getting involved. 'Please help yourself to the sinner, judge them as you please, that is the expression of our remorse', they wished to convey that by doing this.

Apparently the king of the beast kingdom was abandoning the demon kingdom.

「Your majesty Gruelle, that's no good. That is no different from what we have done until now. The sincerity that human should display shouldn't be something like that!」

「You are really young, Eric-dono. As the king of a country, I cannot praise such thinking that is making light of the benefit for your own country.」

「That way of thinking is what invited this situation!」

「There is no guarantee that we will end up safe by opposing divine spirit. You are getting carried away due to the hero's power, young king.」

「There is no point seeking any guarantee at this late hour-. Why won't you understand that the only path left for human is to advance forward!」

「It's you who are the one who won't understand. You cannot call yourself a king without being able to make the decision to obtain benefit.」

It was a thorough rationalism. His majesty Gruelle shrugged in exasperation and behaved as though he was talking with a little kid.

Next he asked Shia「Won't you come to me rather than staying under this kind of immature king?」 with his gaze. Shia didn't really change her expression and simply looked back at his majesty Gruelle with a fixed stare. She looked like she was trying to ascertain something.

His majesty Eric couldn't control himself from the attitude of his majesty Gruelle that was like that and spoke roughly.

「Who will listen to an opportunist like you-」

「……I won't stay quiet if you intend to mock me you know?」

「I spoke the truth. You completely ingratiated yourself to demon kingdom's technology supremacy ideology, but when the divine spirit started to act you immediately turned around to the plan that our country carry out. And yet, even then you still acted subservient to the demon kingdom and wouldn't give any satisfactory help to us until Oros-sama attacked!」

「Watching for opportunity is also the role of the king. What is bad from ascertaining the feasibility of an absurd plan?」

「Feasibility you say? Then, why did you suddenly become cooperative after Oros-sama attacked the demon kingdom? That's unrelated with the plan's feasibility right? You simply abandoned the demon kingdom and turned side toward us!」

「Good grief……I don't come here to listen to a child's temper tantrum.」

His majesty Gruelle shook his head with a wry smile and this time he directly offered his hand toward Shia.

「Shia-dono, although you are someone who has defeated even a divine spirit, surely this action isn't something that is completely not dangerous for you. There is no need to head to a meaningless battlefield. Won't you come together with me to the star tree? If the demon kingdom is judged, the star tree too should understand that there is already no more bad people among the humans.」

「Your highness Gruelle-, you are really-. Now it's the hero you are currying favor to-!?」

「This isn't currying favor. I hope that you will see this as me possessing the eyes to perceive the tide of the time, or perhaps even the destiny. Unlike you.」

His majesty Gruelle was completely unperturbed. He didn't give any glance at his majesty anymore and simply preached the rational and beneficial path to Shia. He offered his hand implying that taking his hand was the best course of action, that it wasn't Balted Kingdom, but Tinted Beast Kingdom that would welcome her as honored guest.

Shia looked at his majesty Eric. His majesty Eric was looking at Shia with pleading gaze.

Shia smiled wryly and looked at his majesty Gruelle. His majesty Gruelle smiled kindly. He invited Shia with eyes that believed the survivor would be those who could ride on the tide called destiny skillfully.

「I am a commoner, so I don't understand about how the king think. That's why, I also cannot deny the way Gruelle-san think. To always side with the advantageous direction for the sake of one's own country's benefit……perhaps that is a correct decision that is only natural for the king.」

「Shia-dono is truly wise.」

「Shi, Shia……」

The smile of his majesty Gruelle deepened. Shadow of despair colored the expression of his majesty Eric.

The next moment,

「But I refuse! Desuu!」

Shia's expression changed completely.

Her smile crumbled and the bewildered king Gruelle asked 「Why?」.

「I'm unable to like such thing.」

「……What do you mean?」

Shia proudly answered toward the dubious expression and words of his majesty Gruelle.

「There is also a person of dragon clan in my family. That person is always sincere. She is unshakeable. She honor righteousness, she would stake her life for the sake of benevolence, even if it's a stupid choice, she will never take back what she has decided.」

「……」

「She who is like that hold the pride as the protector. We too proudly consider her as the one and only protector. Even though normally she is always fooling around, when the time comes, when it is necessary, she will always show her back to us. A back that is worthy for the princess of the dragon clan, a great, noble, sublime, and the most beautiful standing figure.」

Even though her voice was quiet, for some reason a terrific pressure could be felt from it. His majesty Gruelle lowered his hand from the pressure.

「For me, that is the kind of person a "dragon race" is.」

That single sentence spoke the story more eloquently than anything. His majesty Gruelle couldn't even be compared with "her".

No, more accurately if Shia's feeling was to be expressed, it would be "what a miserable state". Her feeling would be 'I'm amazed that someone like you is the same "dragon race" like "her", furthermore you are even introducing yourself as king'.

From the beginning she was unable to harbor good impression toward him for some reason was because of that. Shia's discerning eyes informed her that he wasn't a "dragon race" that she knew. And then, 「Aah, even though you are a "dragon race", don't show such appearance to

me」 her instinct was feeling unpleasant. It was as though one of her important family was dirtied.

The sky was silent except for the sound of the blowing wind.

While no one was saying anything, Shia suddenly made a wide smile that blew away such atmosphere.

「*Beast king-san,* I apologize. I will go with Eric-san and everyone to persuade Oros-san!」

Behind her Eric made a guts pose that pierced to the sky. The inside of the carriage was getting roused up with ‘hip hip hooray’.

His majesty Gruelle lost his smile from before and turned expressionless. Was he feeling rage from reading Shia’s emotion? He was simply looking at Shia fixedly with colorless gaze.

Shia confirmed that Eric had returned inside the carriage and started Schutaif. She advanced in a way that went around his majesty Gruelle. Even when she passed beside him, in the end his majesty Gruelle only stared at Shia and didn’t do anything.

In response to him who was like that, Shia stopped for a moment and looked across her shoulder before saying.

「Beast king-san, forgive my presumptuousness but will you allow me to speak about an experience of mine?」

「……Speak.」

Shia listened with her rabbit ears to the beastmen standing by below that were getting into commotion that Shia and others were going to pass while she said.

「Certainly it might be stupid to go against the flow of the river. But, I also feel doubtful for those who only ride on the flow simply like leaf or searching only for gentle stream. Because, based on my experience, that kind of people――」

――Have no future

Although his majesty Gruelle didn’t know about Shia’s vocation “Divination Master”, something must have come in his mind seeing Shia’s figure talking about the future. He didn’t say any objection, and only slipped out 「Is that so……」 while saying nothing else.

「Then! I pray that I will be able to meet everyone in a good future!」

‘What a thing to say to a king!’ Shia thought while smiling slightly shyly before driving Schutaif away fast.

Beastmen riding flying dragons were rising up from the forest one after another. His subordinates were calling out to him, however, his majesty Gruelle didn’t reply.

He was simply watching the back of the leaving Shia silently.

.

.

「Your majesty-, the barrier won’t hold anymore!!」

「Golem’s emergence is sighted at the west gate! Three hundred in total-. The third defense corps is pushed back!!」

「The fourth and seventh spirit cannon corps are retreating from the front line due to running dry! Please send reinforcement!」

「Your majesty!! The sinking of the ground won’t stop-, at this rate-」

「Messenger from captain Henzes of the eight defense corps! Intrusion from the breach, increasing! Many are injured!! The first defense line is abandoned!」

Hearing the reports about the unfavorable situation that were coming one after another, his majesty the demon king Arogan was grinning fearlessly while getting cold sweat.

As a king, he absolutely couldn’t show any fretfulness. But, soon he was about to become unable to avoid his fearless grin from spasming.

「Deploy all the defense corps. What about the repair of Tyrant?」

His majesty Arogan reduced a squad of celestial people whole outside the barrier from the viewing platform at the highest floor of the demon king castle while asking.

「It’s seventy percent finished. Currently it’s in the middle of getting re-erected. If it’s fine to aim manually, it will be able to fire in ten more minutes.」

「Do it in five.」

Tyrant——the spirit weapon that the demon kingdom boasted of. It was a huge tower that reached 300 meter with shape like a tuning fork. It could absorb the spirits of the land, vibrated the spirit element in high speed and fired it. The spirit element itself couldn’t endure the vibration and would immediately self-destruct, but in that moment it would indirectly create shockwave.

The power was something truly worthy as the crystallization of the demon kingdom’s technology. When it was fired to all direction, anything inside the range of 1 kilometer around the capital, even a mass of rock would be pulverized indiscriminately. If the opponent was human, they would be driven into a state that was unable to battle even within the range of 2 kilometer.

If it was fired into a single direction, the power and range would increase even further. Previously, it was also this weapon that drove away the divine spirit of earth Oros. His large body that was two hundred meters high in total was pulverized many times.

Of course, Oros could regenerate as many times as he liked as long as there was ground so the demon kingdom couldn’t win completely, but there was no doubt that it dealt a serious damage to a divine spirit.

Although, even that super weapon right now was destroyed by Oros’s first attack and became unusable. Fortunately the damage wasn’t fatal, so it would be able to fire as long as the tower was raised with spirit art.

「However……your majesty, is it alright? Using Tyrant will be a violation of the treaty regarding the salvation plan.」

A man in his prime with splendid moustache growing on his face——the confidant of his majesty Arogan, Barius——asked with a hesitant tone.

Collection and relinquishment of the spirit element refined within human body, prudence in using spirit element resource, and then directly pleading to the star tree to beg for coexistence with the spirits. Those were the gist of the salvation plan. Therefore, when the alliance of the three countries was formed, naturally the banning of the use of a

weapon like Tyrant that thoroughly consumed vast amount of spirit element along with the spirits was one of the conditions.

If they used this nightmarish weapon once more, who in the world would believe the words 「We are reflecting. We will reform ourselves from now on.」 coming from their mouth. The salvation plan would be a failure when they used it. They had to resolve themselves for the demon kingdom to be isolated after using it.

Toward his anxious confidant, his majesty Arogan didn't slow down his attack toward the army of the celestial people while answering coldly.

「Barius. Look at our country.」

The capital was split. The ground was cracked in radiating shape like a spider web. The ground was split by Oros's first attack.

It seemed that Oros's slow pace was to invite negligence. The demon kingdom's attention was fixed into his gigantic body, while in actuality he sent small clone of himself for surprise attack. In order to first make Tyrant unusable above all else.

It was the demon kingdom's trump card, so the security for it was heavy. His majesty Arogan who immediately noticed Oros's clone immediately crushed it, because of that the Tyrant avoided complete destruction, but the shockwave greatly damaged the capital.

And then, severe earthquake was assaulting them even at this moment. Oros's towering body was sending down fist on the barrier like a meteor. The powerful attack of spirit art from the army of celestial people that numbered of 2000

people was also attacking the barrier without pause. The size of the barrier was being reduced in every second.

In addition, small golems were physically tearing down the outer wall and flooded in. They clung on the barrier and started to recklessly attack like a battering ram.

Even inside the barrier there were golems swelling up from the cracks running on the ground. They couldn’t help but to send battle force to the center of the capital. It was a situation where it wouldn’t be strange for the inner part to collapse anytime.

Many citizens and soldiers were already parting from this present world.

The countdown toward the end of the country was starting.

Should we perish graciously for the sake of the world’s future? Foolish. Such outrage, that haughtiness of the god is unforgivable.

For his majesty Arogan, he was planning to wait until the very limit. Right now in this world existed a way to cut through this situation without using Tyrant.

He didn’t see it by himself so he couldn’t be sure, but certainly there was a divine spirit of lightning cloud beside her who was so exhausted he couldn’t even take human form.

If it was against a woman, no matter who they were they would lose the strength in their knees when his smile and words bathed them. But that beautiful, interesting girl wasn’t only unperturbed, she even punched him.

If she and the divine spirit of lightning cloud held back Oros for them, then the possibility of realizing the salvation plan (buying time) would heighten drastically.

Although, there was no guarantee that reinforcement would come.

"Have your majesty considered the possibility of them abandoning us?"

"Do you think that lizard king who favor turncoat diplomacy won't admonish that inexperienced king?"

His majesty Arogan understood well how his country was seen, how they were evaluated by others, how was the personality of the kings of the other countries.

That was why he sent his projection to directly cajole the inexperienced Eric. And then, because the hero was unexpectedly a beautiful girl, he believed that the possibility of reinforcement would increase if he made her his captive and made advances on her. He never thought even at his wildest dream that a fist would fly into his face.

"If they abandon us, then we too will give up the salvation plan. In any case, everything will be over if we don't survive. If we are able have a way of thinking like contributing to the future by perishing, we wouldn't join something like salvation plan from the beginning."

"It's just as your majesty say."

The world of man had to be ruled by man.

They mustn't be controlled by the sense of values of god. Such unreasonableness couldn't be forgiven.

They mustn’t be imprisoned by the old convention. Advancement and progress were exactly the characteristic of human. Existences that obstructed that couldn’t be forgiven. They had to fight resolutely.

That was the fundamental values of the demon kingdom. It was the people who were charmed by those values who were the people of this country.

And then, the person who obeyed those values, who were given expectation by those values, and aimed to even further height was none other than the demon king Arogan Spervia Rated.

「Your majesty!! Oros is-」

「――」

A report was screamed.

When they looked there in surprise, the surrounding ground was undulating and bulging up. The soil became a high wave and massed into Oros. At the same time, Oros was enlarging in size even further.

「Impossible……there is no record of this.」

Divine spirit ought to be opposed, so naturally the demon kingdom was researching them thoroughly. In the literatures, there was no record of Oros enlarging bigger than 400 meter. There was no such thing even in the legend and tales when the divine spirits were fighting enemy of the world called the outsiders or in the incidents when they were involved with the historical heroes.

Oros who finally reached an unprecedented enlargement of 600 meter which might never to be seen again in the future

raised a sound that shook the air and he lifted both his arms. The joined hands became one which created a terrifically huge lump of rock. It was a giant fist that blocked even the sunlight.

"Reinforce the barrier!! Wring out all your strength!"

Things like calm order or fearless grin were all blown away at this moment. The order's volume that was magnified with spirit art was broadcasted around. The spirit artists who deployed and maintained the barrier poured their spirit element with deathly desperate look. Even his majesty Arogan poured his tremendous spirit element like water to reinforce the barrier.

But, in front of the god's crushing hammer, all that effort was just too transient.

There was a thunderous explosion as though the world was split.

The barrier showed an instant of opposition, but the next instant cracks ran through and it shattered like broken mirror.

A direct attack to the capital was barely avoided, but the spreading shockwave mowed down the citizens and soldiers. The buildings that were already brittle from before were blown away.

It was a great disaster that was truly like a falling meteor.

And yet, the divine punishment apparently wouldn't forgive them even at the slightest with just this much.

Shadow covered them. The huge shadow that blocked the sunlight.

□You bastard-, I won’t let you-□

Extremely fierce light of spirit element burst out from his majesty Arogan who opened his eyes wide. It was an overwhelming torrent of power that was worthy for a demon king.

□Element is water, stream shape, distance seven, coordinate formula——”Raging Stream”□

Right after that, Oros who was holding aloft the crushing hammer was enveloped by water stream that suddenly manifested from empty air. It didn’t look like the water itself had any particular effect, but the second attack that was immediately released——the freezing air froze the soaking wet Oros.

Creak Creaking sound resounded. The hammer that was going to fall exactly at that timing was stopped.

□Element is earth. Compressed state, distance seven, coordination formula——”Hades”.□

Right after that, the ground below Oros’s feet immediately caved in. It was a bold attack that was opposing the divine spirit of earth by caving in the ground, however, it was enough to break Oros’s balance coupled with his frozen state.

The ground shook with tremor and cloud of dust rolled up grandly while Oros fell on one knee.

□Element is mixed, the main is wind, the sub is flame. Converged shape, acceleration formula four times——”Flame Cluster”□

Wind growled and the air was filled with heat. Wind and flame were gathered and mixed in front of the hands that his majesty Arogan thrust out, showing radiance like plasma. The next moment, it was fired and exploded at the center of Oros without missing.

The instant it hit, explosion and shockwave surged and shook the air.

The cloud of dust was instantly cleared by the wind blast. Ahead, there was the figure of Oros with a large hole opened in his chest and his right half being partially destroyed. The power that partially destructed a giant with size bigger than 600 meter was terrifying. The power of the demon king was displayed fully here.

But,

「……Good grief, even though I have used a third of the spirit element inside me, this is just too unreasonable.」

As expected, their base power was too different. With the sound *prang*, Oros broke through the freezing and gathered raw materials from the ground in the blink of eye, repairing his body.

「Repent」

A heavy voice that was like crawling out from the bottom of earth echoed. It was Oros’s voice that they heard for the first time since this battle began.

Gogogo- Rumbling that was like the shaking of the ground was resounding while Oros’s large body was rising up. He spoke while lifting up both his hands into a crushing hammer once more.

「O world, obtain peace」

「Divine spirit! Listen! We have prepared to repent!」

His majesty Arogan deployed a barrier while yelling once more the sentence they had been yelling all the time since the opening of the battle. However, Oros[s movement didn’t stop. The second crushing blow was descending from the sky.

It hit the barrier.

「Guuh」

He groaned while his peerless handsome face twisted, even so he poured all his strength into the barrier.

Surprisingly, the second divine punishment was deflected along with an explosive sound even though only barely. It seemed his majesty Arogan included the spirit art of wind blast just now into the barrier.

But, it seemed that his resistance only went that far. The demon king lost his strength and fell on one knee. His subordinates starting from Barius ran toward him, but their expression twisted into despair.

The hammer was already lifted up as though nothing had happened.

「The Tyrant!?」

「-, Not yet-. The celestials are hindering them.」

It seemed that the trump card wouldn’t make it in time. His aides, his own art, and his prided spirit weapon that he

developed himself laid out multiple layers of barrier to protect the king.

But, most likely, no, undoubtedly their barrier would be unable to block the next attack.

Seeing the god’s hammer was going to be dropped anytime toward a corner of the demon king palace where surely the demon king was located, all the soldiers and all the citizens were drowned in despair.

Other than the force whose objective was to destroy Tyrant, the celestial people had stopped attacking when the barrier of the capital was destroyed and they were looking down as though they were the witness to the divine punishment. Their expression was completely dyed with joy.

「For the sake of mother Lutria.」

Perish. He informed so and executed the divine punishment.

His majesty Arogan glared at the mass of rock that covered the sky and,

「Someday human-, will reach all of you bastards!! Remember that!!」

He yelled――

「SHAORAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA-!!」

A piercing yell of fighting spirit surged up. What came flying like a streak of flash was a rabbit eared girl clad in bluish white radiance.

In opposition of the falling giant hammer of god, was a war hammer that although huge was only in the level that could

be handled by human in the end.

The girl who stepped on midair with deep stepping sound brandished the war hammer behind her with her body twisting like a bow……and she swung.

And then, it was blown back.

Without any petty trick. Without even any technique. Without even any spirit art or any mysterious phenomenon.

It was blown back simply by pure violence right from the front!

「……Impossible.」

From the first time since he was born, his majesty Arogan’s beautiful face crumbled into a stupid look.

Around him, there were Barius and others whose jaw dropped down so wide it fell like it would fall off. From here and there voices like 「Lies……」「Is this a dream」 that were escaping reality leaked out.

And then, Oros who was a divine spirit that embodied firmness also wasn’t an exception.

「……No way」

His posture was forced into banzai gesture and he hurriedly separated his hands that were fused into a crushing hammer. He recovered his balance with both hands while stepping back one step, two steps from the impact.

Ahead of the gaze of all these people, the rabbit eared girl——Shia was,

「Fuu, I barely made it in time.」

She swoop back her rabbit ears *fuasa-*. Vire Drucken tapped *tap tap♪* on her shoulder. Bluish white magic power glittered and the hair that was the same color with the wind fluttered. The dreamy beautiful legs lightly stepped down.

Like a flower of wide petals blooming in the battlefield, she was so lovely to the degree it was like a joke.

「Now, Oros-san! Let’s talk!」

Her voice resounded dignifiedly. That figure charmed the demon king, the people, and then, even the divine spirit.

.

.

At the same time.

「Nuooh」

A scream resounded inside the room. Hajime’s body leaped up in shock.

He blinked inside the dim room with its curtain completely closed.

——Chu~, chu~

The light weight his body was feeling was something he was very familiar with. His memory was hazy, but he somehow recalled how he half-heartedly handled the no good vampire princess and dragged her to him.

When he turned his gaze that was in order to ascertain it……

「……Yue. She is doing her sleep sucking again.」

Sleep sucking——that was Yue-sama’s bad habit (?). Just as the words meant, she was sucking while half-asleep. Even now she was hugging Hajime closely while her mouth sucked on Hajime’s neck.

The sensation of her tongue crawling on his neck made him felt a bit of shivers. He looked at the curtain that had faint light shining in from it while feeling the sensation. It looked like the sun had slightly set.

He groped for his smartphone and made it display the time and he felt understanding. The time was about to reach four o’clock at the afternoon.

□So I slept for nearly six hours……I must be really tired. I overestimated my toughness a bit too much.□

Like this, Shia was right telling him to rest, Hajime thought with a wry smile.

The sleep sucking that was continuing even now along with the sleep of nearly six hours made his head felt clear even though he just got woken up.

For the time being, he tickled Yue’s side in the attempt to remove the sleep sucking. Yue let out a strange voice □hahih□ and her mouth opened. Removal success.

Yue’s hands wandered around as though to say □Ha, Haijme whereee~□. Hajime smiled wryly at that while gently fixing the disordered hair of the waking up Yue.

At the same time, he felt a presence inside the house and tried searching in detail.

□Tio and Remia, and Myuu too had come home……Kaa-san is also here. ……Shia is, not home yet?□

He didn’t find Shia’s presence. It appeared she still hadn’t come back from the Akiba battlefield.

He checked his smartphone, but there was also no call from her.

「……She is looking around that place really enthusiastically huh.」

He tried saying that to himself but, somehow, really for some reason his chest felt a vague uneasiness.

It felt like his head that was cleared throughout the rest was raising an alert.

Hajime wordlessly took out the compass from his “Treasure Warehouse”. Perhaps noticing that Hajime’s presence that turned sharp, Yue woke up in a snap.

「……Hajime? What’s the matter?」

「Shia still hasn’t come home.」

Yue looked at the clock and tilted her head slightly. There was still some time before dinner. The time was only slightly entering evening. She wondered what the problem was.

From a glance, Hajime could be seen as a fiercely possessive boyfriend who confirmed with GPS her girlfriend’s location in succession as though he wanted to constantly grasp her position……

Naturally, Yue didn’t have such thinking. Hajime was getting serious about Shia even if only slightly. It wouldn’t be strange no matter what happened. She immediately woke up fully and be still while waiting for Hajime’s words.

Hajime’s magic power surged and the compass activated. It loyally carried out his order to search for Shia’s location.

But……

「Tsu, no, reaction?」

「……Hajime?」

The compass’s effective range was in proportion with the amount of magic power poured into it.

With the magic power he poured right now, just a mere distance from here to Akiba, no, even if it was anywhere in Japan the compass would be able to cover it. And yet, there was no reaction. Shia wasn’t within the search range.

Hajime leaped down from the bed and his magic power surged even more. As expected, there was no way the activation of magic power that tremendous would be unnoticed. Downstairs he could feel Tio was taken aback. The sound of her immediately going up the stairs in hurry could be heard.

The door was opened loudly *bam* and Tio entered.

「What’s the matter, Goshujin-sama. What art――」

Tio asked forcefully, but seeing Hajime’s tense atmosphere and Yue’s serious expression, she immediately closed her mouth so to not disturb their focus.

A beat later, Hajime opened his closed eyes.

Shiver-, Tio’s spine shuddered. Hajime’s other face that she hadn’t seen for a long time――the face of the godslaying demon king was there.

「Coincidence? Or else a deliberate act?」

The others must be curious of Tio's hurried look and followed after her. Remia, Myuu, and then even Sumire and Shuu peeped inside and their eyes opened wide.

「……Hajime. Shia?」

「She isn't in earth. She is in another world that isn't Tortus.」

「Muh, doth that mean she was summoned by someone?」

Hajime shook his head. He must mean that he didn't know.

'But', Hajime continued.

「If that's the case, kuku-. Just whose woman do they think they are taking away without permission……I've gotta make sure that they thoroughly pay their debt.」

「Tha, tha-tha, that's right Goshujin-sama.」

Tio pressed her hands in prayer inside her heart. If Shia was sent into another world accidentally because the border that separated the worlds were shaking or something, then that was still alright. But if that wasn't the case……'then those people really hath done something stupid. I wouldst at least pray for their happiness in the afterlife.', Tio thought.

「Tio, call Kaori and others. Our magic power stock is unreliable after the previous gate opening. In preparation of the worst case, I want to keep in reserve a stock of magic crystal so we will be able to return right away.」

「We art going to collect the stock for going there from those with magic power? So it's not enough with just us, Shia hast been sent to a really far away place.」

Tio immediately began to contact Kaori and others. Myuu's face peeked out from Tio's side.

「Papa……Shia-oneechan, she is alright?」

Next, Remia, Sumire, and Shuu too were asking worriedly. Hajime shrugged and answered.

「No way that bugged rabbit will get done is that easily. We are going to bring her home before dinner, so don't worry.」

「Yes nano!」

'Certainly, this is Shia-oneechan we are talking about! Much less god, even if the whole myth come attacking she will flatten everything and come home like normal! Rather, it feels like she will even be in good mood from a mortal combat with god of war that make her blood boil and her flesh dance! Nano!', Myuu replied energetically.

Myuu's smiling face made Hajime said 「Ri, right. You really get it, Myuu」 and he nodded while feeling slightly creeped out.

From how her 'nano' was said with forced timing, somehow it felt like Myuu's relationship with Shia was the best among all the big sisters, or rather it felt like she received the biggest influence from Shia. If before long Myuu started saying things like 「Go fly till the moon! Nano!」 or 「Right now, Myuu become the wind! Nano!」 while riding bike, what should he do……Hajime papa thought with worry.

While that was going on, multiple magic power reactions came from inside the house. Kaori and others who received the call must have used their personal gate key to teleport here.

Hajime patted Myuu’s head while switching his feeling. From a model Japanese who loved peace, to demon king mode that would kill even god if it was necessary.

He gazed at empty air and thought of his beloved family. Since when did she vanish? When he thought that it happened while he was fast asleep, a killing intent that was targeted to even himself was welling up. Surely even right at this moment she was waiting for their arrival impatiently.

「My bad, Shia. I’m going there now.」

It was a proclamation that was dripping with rage that although small, was overflowing.

Five minutes later.

The godslaying demon king teleported to the world that kidnapped his bunny wife.

.

.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

About Shia arc, apparently there are a lot of the readers who got vexed by it, my apologizes. It really makes me keenly realize my inexperience (sweat). I will do my best to make everyone’s attachment to Shia to bloom profusely, so I beg you all to please not abandon [Arifure] even from here on and take care of it.

.

PS 1

I noticed from the comment I received, I made a mistake with the timeline of Brutal Hero Shia arc. I didn’t consider the time difference from the several hours Shia spent in Akiba, I’m sorry! I will revise the needed sections. It’s complicated so generally it will be like the following below (in my mind). Please use it as reference.

[Shia side]
[Hajime side]

10:00 (Going out) 10:00

| 2h | 2h

12:00 (summoning) 12:00
(Hajime sleeping, Yue hugging her knees)

0:00 (Time after summoning) |

| 8h | 2h

8:00 (The pickup ain’t coming) 14:00
(Ignoring Yue’s worry, sleeping again)

| 1 h |

9:00 (Bathing, splattering demon king, etc) |

| 3h | 2 h

12:00 (Thunder god hammer creation failed) |

| 4h |

16:00 (Arriving in demon kingdom) Around
16:00 (Hajime, turning back into demon king)

To everyone who informed me of the timeline, thank you very much.

.

PS 2

Actually this month, I’m right at the midst of publication work, perhaps the update for next week will be difficult. I want to go limit break and update as much as possible, but if there is no update it will help if everyone can understand that Shirakome has entered Level X and has no spare strength. The week after that……should be alright. Best regards.

.

PS 3

Brutal Hero Shia arc is far before the traveling date with Shia arc. And so I think there is many inconsistencies but, it will help if everyone can be magnanimous. It will be great if I can deal with it like the other timeline inconsistencies in my activity report that were pointed out by everyone. Forgive me for always doing whatever I please following the momentum!

.

PS 4

About Shia’s breaking the fourth wall that was alluded last chapter, Shirakome’s image is like ○donge that came out in the video called GF2 in Niconico douga. □□□-sama, thank you for the magnificent creation! Everyone too please go take a look no matter what!

.

PS 5

Salmon sandwich was sold in Seven Eleven-san!

Arifureta Chapter 337

Arifureta After III Brutal Hero Shia Arc I Am A Married Woman Desuu!

.

The rabbit eared girl dignifiedly threw out her chest above the pale bluish white ripple.

Even the divine spirit of earth couldn’t take the next action immediately in front of that. Confusion, shock, ……the thought of 「A talk, isn’t that impossible?」, putting aside all of those, it took all he had to return to normal the iron hammer that was deflected by a small girl who was like an insect from his point of view.

The celestial people too, the demon king too, and then even every single one of the demon kingdom’s people, they were completely speechless.

In that blank period of time that was brought about by that dumbfoundment and charm, the yellow slime……not, the divine spirit of lightning cloud who was catching up plopped in front of Shia and started hopping.

「Oros, it’s fine even if only briefly, please lay down your arms.」

With a piercing glare, a sharp glint came from the far 600 meter above. In the head of the gigantic golem, there was certainly a pair of light that although small was visible.

「Udar……that’s some state you are in.」

There was no objection. Because his appearance was completely a slime. But, he wished to be allowed to groan ‘muu’ in protest at least. Udar flickered flashily in order to express the inside of his heart while forming his words for the sake of his promise with the girl who he deemed worthy.

「Won’t you lend your ear to what the children of man have to say?」

「……」

Oros didn’t answer. But, he also wasn’t ignoring those words. He also wasn’t ruminating. What could be felt from him was shock and anguish, and then rage.

「We are sometimes liable to forget. That lives have as many color as its number in existence. The “children of man” are also included in that.」

“Children of man” didn’t consist of a single living thing. There were many lives that were born, and so there were also as many different will, sense of values, and then the way of changing, and the speed of that change in accordance to that. That was what Udar said.

‘That’s why’, Udar continued……

However, before that,

「So you have fallen, lightning cloud.」

‘How truly pitiful, what a tragedy. Oh my brethren, that state of yours that I cannot bear to even look at, there I already no right or wrong in it. If you say that you are going to turn your back on mother, then perish together with them.’

Even without words, the torrent of killing intent that shook the land was thrust before them.

It was expressed by the shape of the iron hammer. Although it only came from a single arm, it wasn’t inferior compared to a gigantic falling meteor just like before. It was more than enough to crush a divine spirit who had been weakened.

【Begone!!】

Of course, such future wouldn’t be approved by the bugged rabbit.

A thunderous roar stirred the air, at the same time Oros’s crushing hammer was deflected once more.

But, this time he didn’t display an unsightly dumbfounded look. If one attack was impossible, then two attacks. If two attacks were no good then three attacks. He would attack no matter how many times, until they fell, until they perished.

GOU- The wind howled.

That was truly a battering that was like a storm. The two arms of Oros who was firmly stepping on the ground were unleashing consecutive attacks in order to destroy the small rebel and his fallen brethren.

The crushing hammer of the combined two arms that was falling like a meteor was nothing but a nightmare seen from the view point of the demon kingdom’s populace who were targeted by it.

But, that nightmare, it could be regarded as just a nightmare if they survived it.

「Level VII!! Come at me with all you gooot-, desuu!!」

It was like a barrier. The meteors of crushing hammer, all of them were deflected the instant it reached a point in the sky.

Each time that happened a thunderous roar reverberated, shock waves shook the land, and the air was blown away in radiating direction.

A swing of war hammer.*PAANN* It smashed the wall of air and struck dead the death with a blow moving in the speed of sound. Against the meteor shower that was increasing in speed, the war hammer also increased in speed moment by moment, intercepting the calamity right from the front.

「Damn hero of another world……annoying.」

His hands didn’t stop even while saying that. The rage toward the irregular existence that made his brethren fell and brought danger closer to his mother was stirring up Oros more than his sense of mission.

「The land isn’t as light as the lightning cloud. Attempting to save the children of man……realize your own hubris.」

The storm of crushing hammer increased further in intensity. As though to say that the strikes would continue attacking eternally until the hero who worked for the salvation of man was crushed.

That was why, Shia yelled. She raised her voice, undaunted against the thunderous roar.

「I won’t save anyone!!」

Damn straight. Shia wouldn’t save. She wouldn’t save the people of this world or anything. Because there was no meaning in them being saved. Because they had to save themselves by their own.

「Exactly!! Please, listen to our words-, divine spirit of the earth!!」

Because Shia left behind Schutaif and rushed ahead alone, Eric got left behind and only caught up now. It seemed that he came ahead with only Louis using Louis’s spirit art.

「We are foolish-. So foolish that we aren’t able to unite our heart even at this late hour.」

The words of the young king of the human race resounded in the interval of the thunderous roars.

Even the people who were scared out of their wits by the fight between fellow supernatural existences like in legend finally returned to their senses hearing that voice that was raised until the throat was almost torn up.

The eyes of the people of the demon kingdom brightened when they finally keenly realized that the reinforcement had arrived. The celestial people fired up themselves to remove the threat that was opposing the divine spirit.

「However, even so-, please I beg you to listen! To the prayer of the people who are trying to reform, trying to take back the goodness of heart from the old day! Please I beg you to ascertain it with your own eyes! Of our repenting figure!」

Oros didn’t answer. As though to proclaim that something like words to say had been exhausted already since a long time ago.

Even so, Eric continued to scream. Because that was the only thing that he, humans could do, no, should do.

「How idiotic. Something like the words of vermin crawling on the ground won't reach the ear of the great ones.」

It wasn't Oros who replied. It was the celestial people. A portion of them who came back to their senses spread out. Above they created sparking mass of lightning. Their aim was Eric and Louis below. The fired spear of roaring lightning became an intense rain that poured on them.

「I won't allow that. Prompt execution――"Water Wall"」

Just as Louis's words meant, barrier of water that was casted with abbreviated chanting enveloped the two. The lightning spears couldn't pierce the water barrier. The lightning ran along the water flow and scattered to different direction.

As expected from the strongest caster of the kingdom. Apparently even the killing intent of ten-odd celestial people wouldn't reach him when he was in perfect readiness.

Although, that attack certainly became the signal of resuming battle. The army of celestial people, two thousand people who believed without a doubt in their own superiority started attacking the barrier-less demon kingdom once more.

Shia was still in the middle of exchanging blows against Oros right from the front.

It was hard to imagine that the bugged rabbit would lose in a one-on-one straight fight. However, that was because she possessed the strongest strength in close quarter combat. She who couldn't use magic properly was lacking in annihilating power.

For a moment, the thought of advancing to Level X crossed her mind. If she subdued Oros quickly and fought with the style of throwing exploding slug bullet like grenade, she would be able to take one a mere two thousand.

Although, the problem was whether she would be able to beat unconscious a divine spirit who was nearly immortal, furthermore a divine spirit of the earth who was boiling in rage in a short time or not……

Thinking of the demerit of Level X's limited usage time, she couldn't help but hesitate.

The current Level VII was the maximum level that she could use without feeling any demerit. More than this would burden her body more or less.

(But, I cannot say that in this situation.)

Her rabbit ears were twitching *piko piko*. Agonizing cries were resounding from the capital. Not only the attack of the celestial people, apparently the great army of golems that should be called as small sized Oros were overflowing from the underground of the cracked earth.

Eric and Louis were also under the concentrated fire of celestial people who had drastically increased until a force of several hundred.

Even so Louis was still continuing to endure. One couldn't help but to admire his skill that surpassed the imagination, however, he couldn't be expected to do more. He was unable to launch a counterattack, he had his hands full with simply protecting the king. In front of the violence of number, his mental strength and spirit element were shaved away bit by bit.

Greg and others were rushing closer with body reinforcement, but they would need a bit more time.

(I’ve promised.)

She promised to Eric and others of wanting to deliver the feeling of human to the mother the star tree no matter what resulted from it.

The risk of Level X was too high. It wasn’t realistic. But, if she ignored the burden to her body, she would manage somehow until Level VIII, or IX with her guts! Shia thought with her rabbit ears standing straight, it was then.

「!? What!?」

「You bastards……」

The air was shaking unnaturally. The land was vibrating, and unpleasantness that was crawling stickily on the skin was attacking.

When they looked with a taken aback expression, the structure that looked like a tuning fork had been standing erect without anyone noticing.

Yes, it was the ultimate weapon of the demon kingdom——the Tyrant.

The faint illumination it was radiating was giving a graphic account how it was activating.

Eric and others opened their eyes wide in disbelief, while the celestial people fanned up their fighting spirit to attempt to destroy it this time for sure. During that time, Arogan who had recovered slightly floated in the air while raising his voice.

It was a foolish voice, in various senses.

「Listen-, my people! The foolish divine spirits! She is the one and only savior of mankind, the hope of us “human”, the hero Shia! ——My queen!」

‘Haa!?’ Such shocked voice resounded. That was Shia’s voice, and also the voice of Eric, and also the voice of a portion of the demon kingdom’s people.

「Shia! You are the first one to come running here in our predicament and protect me like this, that love, I have certainly received it! if your strength is combined with my strength, no, my country’s strength, there is no need to fear the likes of god! Let’s go together toward the new world that is filled with glory! My people! Observe carefully! The moment of us the strongest husband and wife defeat the god!」

The demon king’s speech didn’t stop. Tyrant growled in concert. In less than a few seconds, all the spirit elements in the surrounding would be thoroughly stolen and an act that should be reviled would resume.

The reason of Arogan’s eccentric behavior. In a sense, it was exactly just as his words meant. After witnessing Shia’s true strength, he saw the hope of winning against divine spirit, however, he despaired because Shia was unable to also handle the fierce attack of the celestial people and the golems, because of that he formed a plan.

That was a plan to draw in Shia to his side and made it into an established fact. He made it as though Shia fell in love with him and came running to their help because of love, then he proclaimed that he accepted that love.

Like that, by pulling in Shia from her neutral position completely into demon kingdom’s side, she would be brought into an absolutely hostile relationship against the divine spirits, making it into a situation where she wouldn’t be able to survive without joining hand with them.

Later, after overcoming this emergency situation, it would be fine if he just made Shia fell for him.

Arogan didn’t have any doubt. Of his own charm, that eventually there would be no way she would be able to resist him. If he obtained Shia in his hand, there would be no need to wait for mankind’s technology to reach the divine territory. And above all else, a radiant girl like Shia was the only one worthy for him.

Because the demon king who was human’s ambition taking form was completely cornered and saw hope in that desperate situation, he didn’t harbor any doubt that this was the method to overturn the table in this hopeless situation.

「Wai-, what are you prattling abou――」

Naturally, Shia raised an objection, but before she could finish,

――Queen Shia! Queen Shia! Rated Demon Kingdom banzai!

The loud cheers of the populace reverberated in a volume that didn’t lose at all against the roar of the battlefield, drowning Shia’s voice.

Furthermore,

「Oros-sama! The union of hero of another world with the demon king is the worst situation that cannot be ignored!

Please give permission for us to give you reinforcement!

Even the celestial people were greatly misunderstanding just like Arogan planned. They didn't intrude until now believing that Oros would defeat Shia and entrusted exterminating her to Oros, but now they sought for permission to give help.

That's why I'm saying that's not――

As I thought you will save mankind even if the world will be destroyed in the process, you demon's child-

Even Oros was saying such thing. Perhaps he was feeling impatient seeing Shia facing him right from the front undaunted no matter how many times he swung down his crushing hammer and seeing Tyrant was activating. His attacks became even more severe and he also gave permission to the celestial people's request.

Listen to――

What lies are you spewing! Oros-dono! Don't listen to that libel!

As expected from the king of Balted Kingdom. He properly……

Even if for argument's sake she is looking for a spouse, it absolutely won't be the demon king! It is our Balted Kingdom who summoned her, the one who is worthy for her is our country that has taken back the goodness of heart of the olden days! In other words the one who should be her spouse i, is, me!

'What is this bastard saying amidst the confusion', such tsukkomi came from Louis who raised his voice in rivalrly,

and,

"Don't make me say it so many times, you fools. Shia is already an existence in the divine territory. In that case, it's a self evident truth that I who am a divine spirit is the only one worthy for her."

"You guys really should stop screwi――"

When her eyes glinted with burning flame, a thunderous sound that could burst the eardrum erased Shia's voice. When Shia turned her gaze thinking 'What is it this time you bastard!', over there of all thing was

"Please witness it clearly, o great divine spirit of the earth. Our beast kingdom will hand down the death penalty to the demon kingdom. And then, please listen to our voice in respect to our deed of destroying that weapon."

It was the red dragon――the figure of the beast king Gruelle. In addition, there was also Tyrant that was slightly tilting once more.

It seemed he fired a breath attack toward Tyrant. It seemed Arogan's elite force desperately defended the weapon and avoided its destruction, but its activation was now got reset again.

With the repeated attack from the celestial people too, the elite force fell on their knees across the board. It was doubtful whether they would be able to endure the next attack.

"Just as you can see, Shia is our brethren. That strength isn't something that oppose the gods. She is just like us beastmen, someone who love the world. If her marriage with me is recognized before the gods, then together with me we

will become guardian of the world and build a magnificent future!」

The turncoat dragon was a turncoat as expected. It was really outrageous of him to aim for profiting amidst the confusion. For him to have a skin so thick until this level made it felt refreshing instead.

Greed and ulterior motive swirled with Shia as the center.

「Listen to what I have to sa――」

「Now, Shia! Take my hand! Let's share the world between the two of us! It's possible if it's you! I will give you glory and pleasure as much as life permitted!」

「Shia! I'll daringly say it now! I love you! Stay together with me in this world!」

「Although I am a divine spirit, I know of love. Shia, accept my affection.」

「Shia-dono, your words left deep impression in me. My heart belongs to you. Let's go together toward a beneficial future.」

The demon king, the human king, the divine spirit, the beast king, they were unanimously asking for her agreement. The celestial people were boiling with hatred and fighting spirit and hurled down abusive words, the people's eyes shined bright in hope of being able to rid themselves from the rule of the gods and shouted "Queen Shia" as though it was a done deal.

And then, Oros judged that the cause of the chaos in the battlefield was wholly the fault of the irregular that was the

hero of another world and said 「You cannot be left alive!」 in refusal of her survival.

The divine spirit of the earth joined his hands once more and created a crushing hammer.

Tyrant activated once more and worked toward the reproducing of the nightmare.

The demon king and the beast king schemed to bring her to their side, while the young human king was acting desperately doing everything he could at the moment.

All the celestial people responded to Oros's killing intent and focused the fatal art of sure kill in front of their hands toward Shia.

.

.

Even though she was lending a help in order for the people of this world to reach salvation by themselves.

No one was listening to Shia.

.

.

Snap, there was that sound.

「Level X」

Shia's figure vanished. No one, not even the divine spirit's perception was allowed to sense the overwhelming speed.

When anyone noticed, a gigantic shadow was covering the sky. Oros who looked up to the sky saw that.

The figure of a rabbit turning in the sky far above, brandishing a super large war hammer.

The god’s crushing hammer?

Very well, in that case this side would use――100 ton hammer!!

Shia stepped on the sky, and from upside down posture she fell in super speed. She surpassed the sound barrier instantly and further increased the gravity. In addition she performed pseudo weight increase. Super increase! Her body was truly like a meteor!

「—!!?」

「Become a stain on the ground-, desuu-!!」

The ground raised a scream. Sound instantaneously vanished, right after everyone thought that a shock wave that was like explosive wind surged.

Oros’s giant body crumbled like a joke. The ground was turned up. It was similar like when a skyscraper was demolished with explosive.

The shock wave with clouds of dust was spreading in radiating direction.

All those surged on the capital, but before that like a nightmare the super gigantic hammer was swung.

With just that the shock wave and also the dust cloud were blown away to other direction.

But, there was no way anyone could feel relieve or anything. In a flash, following the centrifugal force the 100 ton hammer was swung horizontally in a flowing motion. The swing blasted away several beautiful spires in the demon king castle as though they were tree branches, and without pause the swing literally pulverized one conspicuously high tower.

Yes, the Tyrant that was just a moment before activation was destroyed.

As though following behind the wake of the super gigantic hammer, explosive wind was generated and the three kings, their aides, Udar and the populace, and then the celestial people living in the sky, anyone and everyone without discrimination were presented with forceful tailspin rotation.

‘Overwhelming physical strength is justice!!’ In front of the unbelievable fact that seemed to say that, they rolled on the ground together harmoniously without even any leeway to split their attention to the idea of resisting.

Everyone, equally.

Like that, there was only one person in the sky.

In the center of the pale bluish white light that was drawing a spiral, the super large hammer caused the air to groan while going *tap tap* on the shoulder like usual.

However, the usual casualness was nonexistent, her expression was the same like the face that her beloved would sometime showed——a yakuza face.

Shia who had snapped took a dee~~~~~~p breath, and her voice resounded to her heart’s content in the battlefield that she had silenced with brute force.

□I – A – M!! A MARRIED WOMAN DESUUUUUUUUU-!!!!□

Those words echoed boomingly.

Shiin, silence came as though time had stopped……a beat later.

□□□WHATTTT————!?□□□

□What……did you say?□

The three kings and one god replied with such voices.

Murmur murmur, murmur murmur. The people of demon kingdom were stirred.

‘Eh, what’s this situation…….’ The celestial people were bewildered.

Squirm squirm, squirm squirm. Oros was in the middle of regenerating.

The petrified Eric (& Louise, and Greg and others who came running at that time), Arogan whose mouth opened gaping wide stupidly, Gruelle who wrinkled his eyebrows and groaned, Udar who was hanging his head down.

It was truly, truly, a chaos of the battlefield that was brought with only a sentence.

But, the snapped Shia who activated until even Level X without even thinking about the consequence was emitting a pressure that overwhelmed even that divine spirit while making her voice resounded akin like a shock wave as though to say □I don’t give a damn!□.

□I have a husband who I love desuu! I’ll go home when he come to pick me up!! Something like devoting my life for

this world is as impossible as the heaven and earth getting overturned-. I’m not going to get together with other people even if it kills me desu-. I’ll rather gamble for the miniscule chance of meeting him again at the next life!!」

The heart of Eric and others got hit with break shot of words!! It was a destructive power that rivaled 100 ton hammer!

Ignoring Eric and others who were becoming grey colored, and Arogan and Gruelle who were narrowing their eyes, Shia raised her voice 「In the first place-」 toward the people of the demon kingdom who were looking up dumbfounded at her.

「Don’t you think it’s pathetic expecting me to clean up after all of you while calling me a queen!! There is a limit even in being shameless!」

The harsh words slapped the cheek of the people. Yes, this was truly like a mother (motherland) scolding the son (people).

「Take responsibility of what you have done by yourselves! That’s only obvious! Not even taking responsibility, depending on other people, and only want to enjoy the benefit, that’s preposterous! I don’t have a rabbit ear to listen to the words of people who won’t struggle for the sake of the future!」

The people showed a bewildered expression. There were also people who made rebelling expression, but there weren’t that many of such people. It seemed the spoken words stabbed their heart more or less.

Shia’s intense momentum overwhelmed even the celestial people that they stopped moving. The three kings shut up

and looked up, and even Oros who only recovered to a mini sized golem was focusing his gaze on her.

「I don’t have any intention at all to kill the divine spirits-san you hear! If you are saying that you all are still wishing for war even then――I’ll run away!」

All the people opened their eyes wide at that proclamation, and then they understood. That the hero of another world Shia wasn’t mankind’s ally by all means. She was merely wielding her power to mediate them with the gods.

She wasn’t a savior or anything. Yes, so to speak, she was an aid for the people living on the ground, so that their prayer would reach toward the heaven once more.

In that case, it was only natural that those who stopped praying would lose that aid. What would be left after was only to fall to the ground.

All the people now understood the hero called Shia. Understanding permeated into them.

The people’s expression twisted as though their cheeks that was slapped by her words felt painful stingingly. This time, words that sounded like she was giving a slap on their back reverberated.

「That’s why-, if you are really thinking of the future-, don’t just chatter pointlessly and first! Change from yourselve――――s!! Desuu!!」

In the end, what would the children think of the mother’s hand that slapped their back? Would they be able to start walking toward the future due to the push of that hand?

A silence so quiet it was strange enveloped the battlefield.

The three kings held their tongue as though unable to find any words. Oros stopped regenerating and stayed in his small golem size, blinking his eyes. Without saying anything Udar descended down on his shoulder, and the two spirits looked up to the sky as though they were seeing something radiant.

The battlefield halted.

What moved it was,

「Really ridiculous.」

A single celestial person. From his outfit, the domineering aura he wore, most likely he was the commander in this place. His sagacious look froze even colder, however, his mouth displayed a scorn and disdain that he didn't even try to hide.

「It's not a problem of changing or not changing. The god's verdict has been handed down. Therefore, perish. That's all. In the first place nothing will change from the struggle of inferior species. It's fine if there is only us, the celestial people who stay together with this world and the gods. That is exactly a pure world is.」

The bigoted attitude from extreme elitism cut down Shia's words. Those words declared that the very existence of race other than celestial people itself was a sin.

The celestial people who were overwhelmed by Shia returned to their senses one after another and rose to the sky.

「Oros-sama! Now, please revive using this chance! We will risk our life to hold back that demon!!」

Surely there weren’t any other people than them who were more fanatic toward the gods’ decision. They who continued to live in prosperity together with the spirits on the floating island far above the sky weren’t subjected to the divine punishment. Because they were a clan who served the spirits and divine spirits as priest or shrine maiden since the ancient times, the mother the star tree wouldn’t discard them.

Exactly because of that, they absolutely wouldn’t let go of this chance of a lifetime where they would be able to monopolize the affection of the gods.

Exterminate! Exterminate! Exterminate the vermin crawling on the ground, discharging filth and devouring the blessing!

Wild joy and insanity were blending, storm of fighting spirit and killing intent blew violently. They wouldn’t loath to throw away their lives exactly like their words.

「You guys……」

「……」

A slight vibration ran in Oros’s voice. Udar didn’t say anything. Destiny, the path to the future, it had to be entrusted to the humans. A slight assistance to Shia, that was the line that Udar could only barely tiptoe around.

Eric desperately called out to Oros whose eyes were shaken. But, a beat later, determination burned in Oros’s eyes. It was a resolve toward his mission.

The ground flowed, Oros was enlarging once more. The divine punishment was the mother’s decision, it was absolute.

War cry rose from the celestial people. They surrounded Shia to back up Oros.

They would kill Shia, the cornerstone of mankind’s salvation without fail. That will whirled in the battlefield.

The god responded to that.

「–!?」

A vision of death. An extremely thick flash swallowed her and extinguished her without leaving even dust.

Shia instantly raised her 100 ton hammer overhead. Right after that, sun descended from the sky. The sun of annihilation that dyed the world with light. It was truly like,

(Ha, Hajime-san’s Hyperion!?)

Yes, it was the same like the sun convergence laser weapon “Burst Hyperion”.

The extremely thick pillar of light swallowed the 100 ton hammer that Shia raised. Right below it, the surrounding of Shia who was enduring the impact was showered with light that was like waterfall.

「Wawawa-, this is bad desuu!」

She was at Level X. Even the direct hit of Hyperion could be endured with physical strength as long as she had a shield. However, as for that shield——the 100 ton hammer itself?

Because of the surface size and the volume of the mass, unlike Vire Drucken it wasn’t coated with Azantium that was a relatively rare metal. As expected, a part of the 100 ton

hammer was melted. The red hot metal was struck further by the waterfall of light and it dripped down like magma.

From afar, voices that were calling Shia’s name could be heard. It must be the voices of Eric and others. From their point of view it should look like Shia had been swallowed by a pillar of light. The scream must be coming from the people of the capital. There wasn’t even any composure to think that it was fortunate that the place Shia was at was outside the rampart.

One second, two second……a full ten second.

A gigantic crater was formed right under Shia. The crater was boiling like magma.

It was the divine light that should be impossible to survive through when hitting directly.

「So its you huh……against that even the hero will die.」

「I wonder about that.」

Oros and Udar took refuge. Oros shook his head while speaking his words, while Udar denied with a wry smile. ‘What are you……’, before Oros could say that,

「Fuii~~~, that was dangerous desuu!」

「……Impossible.」

「Yes. Truly.」

Shia shouldered the previous Vire Drucken while wiping her cold sweat with one hand. If Oros had a jaw, there was no doubt that it would fall down without him being able to close

it from his atmosphere when whispering his words. Udar sympathized with him keenly.

Although, Shia’s magic power was taken away in large chunk due to evading with half teleportation. Her Level X state was cancelled. She cancelled it just before the breaking point, so she didn’t feel so fatigued she couldn’t move, but she used it because she snapped and didn’t think of the consequence, furthermore she consumed the majority of the activation time by not doing any battle. The reparation for such a foolish act was relatively heavy.

Though at least there was merit of the pressure from Level X increasing her word’s persuasiveness greatly but……

In any case, her cold sweat was relatively serious.

Ignoring Oros’s gaze that was as though he was witnessing a monster, Shia looked up.

Over there was the figure of a beautiful woman clad in a raiment of white flame.

——Divine spirit of fire wheel　Soare

Someone muttered that. She was the divine spirit that governed over heat and light, who could even be said as the avatar of sun.

「Lightning cloud. And then even the earth. What a state you two are in.」

A voice that sounded transparent, or perhaps burning came down.

「Although, to be unharmed after receiving my light of judgment……what a monster. It’s just as mother feared.」

A burning appearance, and harsh words that sounded burning. And yet, her voice and gaze were absolute zero.

「Nice to meet you, my name is Shia Hauria――」

To suddenly go for the kill out of nowhere, well, all divine spirits so far were the same, it was too late complaining about that……Shia did her best to be understanding like that while trying to greet with twitching face. No matter what the situation, first it was important to give a greeting.

But, even those words of Shia, or rather even her will apparently didn’t garner the interest of the blazing cold lady at all. She was looking at empty air. As though she was communicating with someone else from afar with telepathy.

Right after that, it happened.

――O children of man. I don’t consider all of you as my children anymore

It was a voice of different woman. It didn’t come from the sky. It was a voice that resounded directly inside the brain of everyone there. It was a voice lacking in vitality that it was shuddering, as though it had lost color due to the emotion of sadness, resignation, anger, and resolve saturating it.

「Mother……」

「Mother Lutria. No way……」

Oros and Udar’s voices reached Shia’s rabbit ears. In other words, it must be like that.

This voice was,

――I won’t let my divine spirits children be harmed further than this

The mother of everyone who possessed life, the star tree Lutria. The great noble existence located in the far lone island at the distant sea. She made the will of the world resounded.

Udar’s strength was extremely weakened, and even Oros was defeated even if only temporarily.

That fact woke up the mother.

——Let there be peace in the world with this judgment

The sky distorted. The sky with burning evening sun that was entering dusk distorted, twisted, rumbled as though it was exactly the time of the witching hour, and then,

——oOOOOOOOO–!!

——GURYAAAAAA-

——GAAAAAAAAA-

The mother’s divine punishment took shape. The sky was filled to the brim. With a great swarm of spirit beasts.

Several hundreds? Several thousands? No, their number was in the tens of thousands.

Spirit beasts were existences born from the nature with spirit stone as their base. Therefore, they were truly the scene of the nature baring its fang toward those who made light of the nature.

Apparently it was her intention to defeat the hero with divine spirit’s overwhelming power and pure violence of number, and annihilated the demon kingdom and the key characters of mankind in this place.

——O child of calamity

Dread ran through Shia’s whole body. She didn’t see any vision of death. It was simply her instinct ringing the alarm bell noisily.

——Fall, to the interval of the worlds

The moment that sentence resounded, the space behind Shia twisted crazily.

「Wha-, this is-」

Shia immediately attempted to retreat from that place, but she was pulled in by a tremendous power and she stumbled midair.

When she looked across her shoulder, over there the twisted space and whirling darkness were……

「Don’t tell me, a gravitational field!?」

A power greatly resembling that which frequently used by the vampire princess she was so close it caught Shia and wouldn’t let go.

She desperately stood her ground using the foothold of the “Air Force”, but the twisted space and whirling darkness expanded in proportion of her effort. It was trying to envelop Shia in spherical shape.

It covered her above, spread below her too, and narrowed in from left and right.

In that situation she already had no other choice but to leap forward, however, at this point the after-effect of Level X worked against her. She could only reinforce herself until

Level V, with that she was unable to get away from the gravitational field!

「Nununu-, this is a biiit bad!! Or rather, interval of worlds you said!?」

In order to recover even by a bit more, she summoned recovery medicine from her treasure warehouse and caught it in her mouth. She crunched the rim and gulped down the content while yelling. In the end, was the star tree Lutria answering her, or perhaps it was just a one-sided proclamation?

――To somewhere that is not here. Simply, because you shouldn’t exist in this world.

「That’s unreasonable! Even I didn’t come here because I want you know!? Where are you planning to send me!? At least please make it a world I can survive in you know!?」

The interval of worlds, she could only feel uneasy hearing those words. It would still be better if it was another world. But, if it was a place just like the words meant……

The distortion of space was enveloping Shia further. The whirling darkness behind Shia was getting bigger to a size that completely covered Shia, and then it approached her like a high wave.

The worried voices of Eric and others came from below. Arogan and Louis tried to attack the gravitational field using spirit art but,

「This is truly the will of god! There is no way at all for the inferior race to live! The insect should be exterminated obediently just like an insect should!!」

The celestial people launched attack to all who tried to save Shia.

「Mother! Shia isn’t our enemy! Please be merciful!」

Udar leaped in front of Shia and desperately tried to mediate. But,

——If you are going to feel resentment, resent your own misfortune

That was all the reply that came back.

It was truly like throwing a trash into a trash can. A sentiment that was truly like a god. If she was able to throw away Shia from this world, than she wouldn’t care what kind of destination that place would be.

Shia’s legs that were holding her ground on midair were getting gradually dragged behind, ‘nugigigi-‘ slipped out from her mouth while she was doing her best, but she already had nothing else that she could do. Even if she did her partial teleportation, her magic power would run out after several seconds and she would only got dragged in then.

There was nothing more that she could do.

Shia glanced at the people below her and smiled wryly. Eric and others whose eyes were opened wide raised their voice in a scream……

——Existing in this world. Know that in itself is a great sin.

A complete refusal of her existence.

That was the divine will bestowed to Shia from the god called the star tree.

That was why,

.

.

.

.

"Whose woman do you think you are barking at?"

.

.

.

.

A hand reached out from the swirling darkness.

It was an arm of jet black metal, as though darkness itself was condensing and taking shape.

That arm circled around Shia's waist from behind.

Faster than her mind could understand the situation, her instinct, body, heart, and then her rabbit ears! They were all simply jumping with overflowing joy!

Inside the darkness that should be swallowing anything and everything, a crimson radiance came into view. Crimson that radiated sparks and, appearing as though oozing out from

inside the swirling darkness, the one who made the hero rabbit into his captive――

□Hajime-san!!!□

Yes, it was the genuine “godslaying demon king”.

.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

.

Newest updates in Gardo

- Nichijou chapter 28 I burst out laughing at the last Yue & Tio lol it’s troubling that there are a lot of material that make me want to reimport here lol
- Zero Chapter 8 Orcus arc concluded! The expression of serious mode Miledy is priceless……as expected from Kouchi-sensei.
- Main story chapter 27 the first lightning dragon scene. Yue is magnificent!

They all are in the middle of free distribution, so please go take a look no matter what!

.

PS

Thank you very much for the many salmon sandwich reviews! I’m happy!

It’s something really sought that a long line at the storefront continued even throughout the whole day isn’t it.

……Everyone, it’s exactly the overwhelming demand that give rise to supply. Surely.

Arifureta Chapter 338

Arifureta After III　Brutal Hero Shia Arc　Desuu Cannot Be Forgotten Desuu

.

A person oozed out from inside the darkness along with crimson sparks.

The metallic arm embraced Shia’s waist and strongly pulled her closer. Shia showed not the slightest resistance and settled on the person’s chest as though that was extremely natural.

She who refused to even get touched now showed a completely relieved expression. That expression……

But, there wasn’t even the slightest leeway to be charmed by that expression. Because the moment the white haired and eye patched man completely came out, a pressure descended. It caused all living things to hold their breath in mute amazement.

「Shia, I’m glad you are safe……」

「Yes-, yes desu! Hajime-san!」

The released pressure was an atrocity that denied all life. And yet, the words that were spoken to Shia on his chest were meltingly sweet. The voice was oozing with relief from her heart. Shia’s rabbit ears wrapped around Hajime’s neck affectionately. Her soft cheeks were rubbing on her beloved person’s chest as though there was no tomorrow.

Regardless of the space that was continuing to twist in frenzy even now to expulse the target and the super gravitational field enveloping the area that wouldn’t allow any escape, what was drifting in the air was an extremely sweet atmosphere.

Although,

「Chih. What a gloomy air.」

And so,

「—”Limit Break”」

The crimson magic power exploded. Forgot about the atmosphere, the very space itself felt like it would be blown to smithereens from the shockwave that detonated around Hajime and Shia. That phenomenon that looked like a red moon instantly scattered away the twisting space and gravitational field.

The crimson shock wave blew away all the dumbfounded people. They were tossed around like a cloth flapping inside a bomb blast. Arogan, Gruelle, and Louis laid out their barrier with amazing reaction speed in order to protect their respective comrades and lords who were relatively near, but they were blown away along with their barrier.

The use of the “Limit Break” was only for an instant. Be that as it may, everyone there felt it. Everyone comprehended it.

That wasn’t human. It was something terrifying that exceeded such framework.

—What in the world……new child of another world. To think that you would cross over worlds with your own strength, and repel my power!

The voice of the star tree who returned to her sense descended once more.

The eyes of Hajime who looked up to the sky narrowed quietly.

—As I thought children of another world are dangerous. Vanish for the sake of this world!

The spirit beasts leaped as though they had received divine revelation. The tens of thousands nature that took form as beasts heard their mother’s wish and seethed with killing intent. The celestial people were also the same. They shook off the fear and awe they felt and raised their fighting spirit in order to exterminate the new harmful insect that was another worlder.

……I see I see I see. This situation, those words, I guess this is a very pressing emergency situation. Do you have someone who you want to save? Do you have something that you want to protect? All of you must you’re your own unavoidable circumstance.

Hajime didn’t know the situation in detail. He teleported to this side, however, the gap between worlds was too powerful and he got shifted to very far away from Shia’s coordinate. And so, after he arrived in this world, he adjusted the coordinate once more and teleported again here.

Although, the hostile supernatural existences and people, the gaze they directed toward Shia, the situation Shia was placed in, the words coming from the sky, when he was considering the situation from those factors, he was able to guess it to a certain degree.

He also understood enough that this existence wasn’t some evil mastermind who took delight in other people’s suffering like that Ehitorujue.

But, however,

【Die】

The crimson light burst out once more. The treasure warehouse shined brilliantly.

Instantly, as though in a revenge—the sky was completely covered.

Those were crimson and jet black crosses—a thousand of Cross Velt.

Those were death gods made from special metal alloy—a thousand Grim Reapers.

The crosses of funeral that were loaded with fang that would pulverize steel with one attack rotated their muzzles all at once.

Griffons that were fully loaded with weapons had their back split open and two gatling guns came out. Their jaws opened and anti material rifle sparked. Pencil missiles cartridge unfolded under the wings.

The opponent was trying to have their way using number against the godslayer whose specialty was in material

resource battle. It was truly highly ridiculous.

The atrocious “things” clad in crimson aura that instantly appeared from thin air. Even without knowing their true identity, the spirit beasts and the celestial people comprehended it in their instinct.

—That right now, death was right before their eyes.

—Slaughter them all.

There was no mercy. The world’s fate and Shia’s life. They mistook the thing that they put on the scale.

Consequently the demon king’s imperial command was given.

At that instant, the lid of hell was opened. Explosive roar and flash flew wildly about in the sky. Crimson firing line drilled through the beasts in just one attack, bursting them apart and exterminating them.

Shit-, what-, what the hell is this!?

The celestial person who called Shia a harmful insect desperately ran away from the dark gray monster that closed the distance in an instant. But, the griffon that was performing pseudo flight with bullshit method of gravity control couldn’t possibly be beaten by a mere flying method by manipulating wind, as long as it wasn’t at the level of supersonic black dragon.

Sto, stop-——gupeh

He let out a really stupid voice and his head was bitten off like a paper scrap.

「Co, commandeeer――」

The subordinate celestial person let out a scream, but at that instant the griffon that was biting off the head of the so called commander fired the electromagnetically accelerated anti material rifle right away. Flesh and blood were blown out from its mouth as though it was vomiting blood and immediately after that the yelling celestial person was blown to bits by the rifle bullet.

The dragon type, the eagle type, the winged lion spirit beasts became like a tsunami that approached Hajime, but in front of the bullet barrage of Cross Velt, they were scattered away as though hitting a mud wall and crumbling.

Although it was a fight of thousands versus tens of thousands, it was Burst Bullets fired with electromagnetic acceleration at the rate of 1500 shot per minute. The moment it hit, everything within the range of ten meter diameter would be blasted off by the installed shock wave in the bullet. Rather than calling it a bullet barrage, it was an air carpet bombing.

Inevitably the spirit stone of the spirit beasts and the flesh and blood of the celestial people became heavy rain and poured on the ground. A nightmarish battlefield――no, curb stomping ground was created.

「What in the world……unforgivable!」

The sight of his trampled allies, the battlefield that was just too gruesome, they drove the divine spirit of fire ring Soare into anxiety and rage. She climbed high to the sky and instantly created light overhead that was like a sun. That was exactly the solar flash that was fired at Shia.

「Burn in the light of sun and vanish!」

「Right back at you」

When Hajime grinned widely what appeared was the artifact――”Burst Hyperion”. The charging took an instant. The light of judgment that was falling from the sky was met by the demon king’s fang right from the other side.

The raining down flash clashed with the bursting up flash at the midair. Intense heat wave and shock wave were spreading in radiating shape.

The world was dyed by the light of sun, the world of dusk with the curtain of night in the process of falling down was illuminated as though it was noon.

In front of the sight that was like in legend, Arogan and others were already unable to do anything except protecting their own tiny self.

The judgment of god and the demon king’s killing intent were competing for supremacy.

「Tsu, impossible. This much power, from mere human-」

Sores’s output increased. Perhaps it was her obstinacy as god. The pillar of light swelled further, becoming an extremely huge flash that approached to swallow Hajime.

And so, the second Burst Hyperion was summoned.

「Wha-」

There wasn’t even any time to feel shocked. Third summoning. Still holding on? Okay, fourth summoning.

「Impo, ssiblee―-!?」

The flash that pierced to the sky swallowed the light of the sun, and the god that ought to be called as the personification of sun.

「Monster of another world……you will perish here」

The earth was swelling. The earth was roused up seeing the danger to the fire circle.

「A mere lump of dirt, who do you think you are opening your mouth at?」

Hajime’s hand was holding the super large electromagnetically accelerated anti material sniper cannon――”Schlag Acht Acht AA ”. The 88 mm bursting cannon shells of romance pierced Oros’s body from its head until its length of the leg with one shot.

It was truly like lightly crushing a lump of dirt. A mere golem that was simply gathering soil couldn’t possibly stop the romance. It was as though telling him to come again after he became a romance golem wholly made of metal armor at the very least.

Oros immediately starting to regenerate again, but before he could completely regain his huge body, the romance cannon would shoot and blast through him at the spots on the ground where he was trying to regenerate from. Throughout that the regeneration speed was visibly dropping down.

It was Udar who lost his presence of mind. He floated to the sky and offered prayer to the sky.

「O mother ! Lutria! Please call back the fire circle and the earth! At this rate they will-!」

The personification of the sun that was continuously getting burned in sunlight. The personification of earth that was continuously getting smashed with steel. At this rate they wouldn’t be able to avoid annihilation. Even if they didn’t die, they wouldn’t be able to manifest in this world for several hundred years. And then, when they revived, it was unknown whether it would be the same personality that came back.

Because the star tree was the origin of all divine spirits, they could be reverse summoned the same like teleporting the spirit beasts here. Udar called out to his mother with the wish for the two divine spirits’ emergency evacuation.

But……

「Wh, why won’t you answer, o mother……」

Thinking back it was strange. Why when it wasn’t just the spirit beasts, even the divine spirits were falling into danger Lutria wasn’t doing anything?

A bad premonition was filling Udar’s heart, however, the mother answered. There was some distance but, if there was dozens of minutes, they would surely arrive, the second wave of “land spirit beasts” in the number that could fully cover the whole demon kingdom. Although it was different from Udar’s wish, the mother Lutria had certainly responded.

At the same time, the answer why the star tree didn’t summon, no, unable to summon the divine spirits back was also given.

「You asked why? Well, that’s because she must be desperate to survive right now.」

From the sky, a calamitous star was falling. A gigantic lump of stone that changed into red hot color with white smoke rising from it——meteor.

It passed above the head of Hajime who was grinning devilishly toward the approaching new great swarm of spirit beasts that was approaching from the other side……and impacted.

A fierce quake attacked the planet. The ground was turned inside up, undulating like a sea, and earth and sand covered the sky. The shock wave and explosion blast reached until this place that was two kilometer away from the impact site.

——Meteor Impact

The star of calamity that fell from the sky wasn’t an accident by any means. This too was also one of the destruction’s brought about by the demon king.

「Don’t tell me-」

It was exactly that. It wasn’t that star tree Lutria didn’t want to back up the divine spirits. It was the best she could do to send the spirit beasts their way.

Because it would be troublesome if she used the power of expulsion again, Hajime had already sent Meteor Impact to the lone island at the distant sea far in the north.

He had already grasped something like the location of the star tree using the compass. The Meteor Impact too, right after he teleported to this world, he finished preparing them thinking that something like this could possibly happen.

Right now the star tree was in the middle of desperately dealing with the danger to her continuing existence.

「You bastard-, do you understand what are you doing!? Lutria is the very will of this planet itself! She is the mother of all lives in this planet! All creations are――」

The destruction of star tree would surely influence many lives heavily. Udar yelled about the gravity of that, however, as for Hajime himself,

「Quit yapping」

He cut him off with a short sentence. 「Wha-」 Udar was at a loss of words, and then, Hajime spoke to all the people in the battlefield that was ravaged by bloody wind.

「You kidnapped someone’s woman, and then in the end, you tried to kill her, what importance of life are you talking about」

Killing intent, rage, they became crimson storm that dyed the world.

「Rather than the lives of everything in this planet, the life of Shia alone is heavier. That’s obvious isn’t it?」

No one could answer with anything. Because they were exposed to physical tyranny, and a will of steel that was just too much steeped in insanity, but an unshakeable one at that.

「I won’t let you lay your hand on her for the second time. Whether humans or imitation gods, you all can perish together.」

That was the demon king’s decision. The proclamation of monster.

They had stepped on the tail of not tiger, but the demon itself, they had incurred the imperial wrath of not dragon, but a monster. The fate of the world was decided like this just too easily――

「Ha, Hajime-saa~~n-, please calm down a biiit! Though I'm happy with your feeling! I'm really super happy with your feeling thouugh!」

Shia went to a trip from the relieve of her pickup arriving and the bliss of getting embraced, but she returned to her senses in front of the danger to the world. She fluffied Hajime's brutality with her rabbit ears.

「Oi stop that Shia. Right now is a serious scene, have a bit of prudence. I'm going to a fluffy paradise trip like this.」

「No, have some prudence is exactly my line though.」

Anyway just stoo~p! The insistence of the bunny wife turned Hajime's expression into a doubtful one.

「But you know, Shia. This is the bunch who kidnapped and then tried to kill you.」

「The one who kidnapped me was the human side, and the one who tried to kill me was the god side. So they are separate matters.」

「In that case ain't it just fine to beat up both sides and obliterate them all? They tried something on Shia. What else there is for them other than to apologize with their death?」

「Ah, it's hard being too loved……no, well, I was also really irritated in general though……」

Even so, Shia’s nerve wasn’t so bold that she could laugh nonchalantly if a world got destroyed just because of her alone. Surely even Kaori, Tio, and Shizuku were the same. Only people like Hajime or Yue who could do that. The type of people who could carry out annihilation without any hesitation. These two were truly the evilest couple……

「Hmm? Slaughtering them all will just weigh your mind, huh……」

There was no way Shia would go banzai happily if tens of thousands of lives scattered away because of her. The cold blood that was rushing to Hajime’s brain finally lowered down.

After his emotion of rage chilled down somewhat, Hajime looked over the battlefield. The spirit beasts of the sky were already reduced to a degree where they could be counted, while the celestial people were at the brink of total annihilation. The spirit beasts were the personification of nature, so as long as they still had their spirit stone somewhere, they could revive using that as core, but at present they couldn’t even do that.

For the time being, when Hajime stopped Hyperion and Schlag AA that he was firing repeatedly in his spare time, a slime that looked like a ball of red fire fell to the ground, while an amber colored slime was splattered inside a crater.

But, at that time with his compass Hajime noticed that the presence the compass was pointing at was still going strong.

(Hou, this imitation god pulled through huh. Just to be sure I sent three waves of meteor that way but……)

It seemed the star tree barely endured against the three consecutive Meteor Impacts. Seeing from how she wasn’t

talking from the sky much less counterattacking, there was no doubt that she had no leeway but……

(I ran out of meteors that I prepared beforehand. It’s possible to prepare them once more but……)

The use of meteor that was equal to intercontinental ballistic missile consumed considerable magic power. Shia was also relatively exhausted. The enemy’s remaining war potential was unknown. The magic power portion for going home was only barely enough. It would be a different story if Shia and Hajime’s magic power was at full tank, it would take time for natural recovery in this world that had no natural magic power.

The conclusion.

□Can’t be helped. You guys narrowly escaped death. Cry tears of gratitude for Shia’s kindness that is deeper than sea.□

They would return home to earth for the moment and secured Shia’s safety, then depending on the situation…… without Shia knowing maybe he would once more Kill them All……if Shia got summoned again it would be troubling after all……

Without even any way to know that such thing was going on inside Hajime’s heart, the people of the demon kingdom that was mostly in a crumbling state due to the tyrannical after wave and the impact of the Meteor Impact were trembling in fear wondering when that tyranny would be directed to them while they all thought together.

□□□□He, Hero Shia-sama! Banzai! Banzai! Banzai!□□□□

The one who stopped the demon king was always the hero. In a sense that hero was the one who summoned the demon king, but for the time being they set that aside due to the threat before their eyes leaving for the moment.

「Don’t look down on us celestial people-. The far and high land of ours will surely devote their all to exterminate all of you vermin! This world filled with only the gods and us celestial people is exactly the ideal――」

The celestial person who finally became the last floated in the sky with his body wounded all over while yelling. His bloodshot eyes weren’t filled with fear toward Hajime, but with madness that was denying reality.

DOPAN-.

Without even glancing at the falling thing that was previously a celestial person, Hajime turned his gaze to Shia.

Even while feeling relieved from avoiding a situation that couldn’t be taken as either tragedy or comedy if the world that she was helping to reach salvation got destroyed by the hand of her husband, Shia once more got deeply emotional that Hajime properly accepted her words like this and,

「Hajime-saaann~~~~」

「Nmu」

Gave him a kis *muchuu~~*. Her hands went around his neck, and her legs also clung tightly around his body while giving a passionate kiss that was as though to embody her feeling of ‘I won’t let go anymoreee~~~’. In respond to that, Hajime also received her with a gentle expression. He hugged her back tightly as to not let her go away.

The two piled up on top of each other without paying attention to anyone else on the sky above the battlefield that had been left behind by the storm of madness and tragedy.

The atmosphere changed, at the same time strange groaning voice 「Uboa」 slipped out from a portion of the people. It was Eric. He fell on all four with a face as though the world was ending.

Louis's face was also spasming, Greg was in an absurdly depressed state, Phil averted his face with all his strength, and the other knights were also making eyes like rotten dead fish. The heart of the Balted force was dying. Though only one person, Dahlia was looking with sparkling eyes.

But, there,

「Can I interrupt for a bit?」

There was one person rising to the sky and called out to the two. It was Arogan.

「Nn~, Hajime-shaan~, I wanted to meet youuu」

「Aa, my bad. I was a bit late.」

He tried clearing his throat 'cough-'. I am more or less demon king you know? I'm right here.

「It's not just a bit desuu! It's almost one full day! Just what have you been doiiing」

「Ha? One whole day? ……Is the time axis out of sync? Was the teleport coordination shifted because of that too?」

Arogan tried clearing his throat grandly *coouughh-*. Right beside the two.

However the two apparently could only look at each other. Their lips kept meeting each other even while talking. Right before his eyes.

「The time was? Err, what about Yue-san and others?」

「The magic power of everyone was completely used up in order to come here. There was no way I could take those guys to this place where we don't know what might be here while they are in exhausted state.」

「This world is really that far huh……」

「Can I-, interrupt for a bit!?」

'I can't be patient! Since I was born I never got ignored like this for even once! I'm hurt!' Arogan's voice was raised with that kind of feeling.

Hajime and Shia finally noticed and went 「Aa?」「Yes?」. Even during that time Shia was still clinging all over Hajime.

Arogan faltered for a moment at Hajime who was looking at him like he was a pebble at roadside, but he had seen Hajime's strength. He suppressed his expectation and feeling and firmly observed Hajime in order to attempt conversing with him.

And then, after a moment, he smiled widely and offered his hand.

「My gratitude for the reinforcement Shia and company. There was also a misunderstanding so first let's have――」

‘A talk’, was what he was going to say, however, Arogan stopped talking. No, he was stopped.

By the pain from his tightly grasped wrist. Who was it that grasped the wrist? Hajime? No, it was Shia.

「Oi」

Shia who got down from Hajime when anyone noticed casted her gaze down. And then she let out a murky voice that even Hajime never heard before.

「Tsu, wha, what are――」

「You, just now, you compared yourself with Hajime-san right? You were searching for some area where you won right? And, you thought that you won in manly charm right?」

Hyuh Arogan caught his breath. Because he was a king he was good at hiding what was inside his heart, and yet regardless of that he was completely seen through.

Bekyo- A raw sound rang out. At the same time a soundless scream 「–!?」 also came out. Shia’s hand crushed Arogan’s wrist inside her grasp.

Arogan immediately tried to pull back, but Shia’s hand didn’t even twitch. Her expression was hidden by her long beautiful hair and couldn’t be confirmed.

「I have various things I want to say to you. Like, your an idiot without even a shred of remorse. Like, both your appearance and action are all disgusting without exception. Like, I’ll turn you to mince meat you bastard, treating me as your queen as you please……but, well, putting aside those things」

DOO- Magic power flared up. The eyes of Shia who lifted up her face was shining faintly bluish white. At the same time her rage was seething.

Arogan’s instinct was ringing out the alarm bell loudly. He tried to escape by using spirit art. But, it was already too late.

The tightly clenched fist, moved behind like a drawn out bow.

「Against my husband, there is no way in hell there is even a fragment of area where you can win! You misunderstanding narcissist bastaaarddddd-————desuu」

Thunderous boom. Shia’s right fist ran straight into Arogan’s face. The fist that was filled with so much rage to the degree Shia inadvertently forgot her 「desuu」 pulverized Arogan’s jaw and cheek bone with one attack and he fainted.

But, with just him fainting, Shia’s feeling that had continuously piled up resentment in addition of him looking down at her beloved at the end wouldn’t be settled down! The crushed wrist still hadn’t been let go!

「ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA-!!」

Rush! Rush! Rush! Shia’s right fist hit consecutively so fast her fist looked blurry! After getting blown away Arogan would get pulled back by his broken wrist and received the storm of punch once more. He completely became a sandbag.

「O, oi, Shia?」

「ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA-
——desuu——ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA ORA-」

□It’s fine even if you don’t force yourself to add “desuu” you know?□

Looking at Shia’s excessively savage figure to making a handsome man from somewhere starting to turn into a tattered rag, even Hajime got slightly taken aback. Also, he tried to say that if she was so angry she even forgot then it was fine to go without □desuu□, but that might be a fixation of Shia because □desuu□ would appear in between occasionally.

□You, your majestyy——□

□Please stooooppp, hero-samaaaaaa-□

Arogan’s confidants screamed in panic. The populace too were dumbfounded seeing their king gotten beaten up black and blue while having abuse □This misunderstanding narcissist bastard-□ hurled at him.

Like that, after getting beaten up until a level that couldn’t be cutely called something like getting rabbit up anymore, at the end of Arogan’s pleading □Ple, please stop it alrea——□ after he repeatedly fainted and awakened by the pain,

□Go, cross the Sanzu river-!! ——Desuu!□

Shia released Arogan with a giant swing.

Arogan flew like a cannon ball and it looked like he was going to crash into castle wall, but his confidants caught him with deathly desperation. But, the momentum couldn’t be killed and they harmoniously pulverized the castle wall while vanishing inside the castle.

Shia whose anger was cooling down with ‘fuu fuu’ rotated her neck in a snap then.

「Where are you going?」

「!!?」

The one who was caught by those shrinking pupils was Gruelle who was quietly attempting to escape. He aimed to profit while others were fighting, however, seeing Hajime’s curbstomp he felt that even the god side was dangerous, like the turncoat he was he thought to slip within the confusion to retreat and bought time while observing the situation but……

「Wait, Shia. I――」

「Excuse is futile. Those wings and scales, leave them behind――desuu」

Full beat down time once more. Gruelle screamed and tried to escape, but he was restrained by the chain Shia took out and she punched, punched, punched-. She physically destroyed his scales, tore them away, snapped his wings, and sunk his head into the ground.

「My heart belong to youu? Who do you think want that kind of rotten thing-――desuu」

The elite force of the beastmen flew near to help the beast king, but toward them in her spare time Shia shredded, punched, shredded, punched……

「I cannot stomach your guts that dare trying to escape because you are scared of Hajime-san and pushed only the responsibility to other people! Are you listening-, you turncoat bastard!」

「Wa, wai-gehah!? I am, as a king gofuh!? Besides, dragon man――」

「You bastard don't you dare calling yourself a dragon maaan, desuu!!」

His dragonification was already dispelled. Shia mounted Gruelle's good looking figure and made him ate her battering. He resisted for a little while, but even that was immediately gone and he became a perishable that only convulsed *twitch twitch*.

ED Note: eating his own beating means in other words forced to eat the scales and such that were ripped off…damn that is brutal.

'Fui~~~~' Shia-chan sighed while wiping her sweat with a truly nice smile. For some reason she looked really refreshed.

They were like fierce god married couple……the people of demon kingdom who thought like that, including the people who felt objection at Shia's words 「Change if you are thinking about the future」 from before became really quiet.

The two divine spirits seemed to lose consciousness from their limp and flat shape, and Udar was jiggling up and down nursing after them. But there was no voice raised to attack them. Their feeling was like, yes, like the feeling of baby rabbit holding its breath desperately under the grass when in front of the king of beasts……

Hajime landed on the small mountain of rock lump that was higher than the castle wall that was the remains of Oros. Shia rushed back toward him with a refreshed smile.

「I'm sorry, Hajime-san. I was a bit irritated from the advances, and from people introducing themselves with title

like demon king or dragon man or beast king.」

「Advances? ……I see, then it can't be helped.」

Hajime shrugged and easily accepted the violent drama of the fierce god bunny wife. He recalled Shia's words before returning that 「The kidnapper is the human side」, then in order to take over the violence he was going to ask Shia about the culprit.

But, before he could, perhaps detecting the dangerous air, or perhaps it was his intention from the start, a person quickly rushed toward Hajime to surrender……

「It's an honor to be in your presence. I am the chief spirit artist of Balted Kingdom, Louis Lector. The summoning of Shia, dono was done by me.」

「……hee」

In front of Hajime who was standing imposingly on the mountain of rubble, Louis was beautifully falling prostrate into a dogeza.

Killing intent was bursting out from Hajime, but it was a bit delayed perhaps because Nagumo family held a personal opinion in regard of dogeza. If Shuu and Sumire were here, there was no doubt they would bestow the certificate「We certify you with semi first class dogeza official certification!」 to Louis. That was just how beautiful and unhesitating Louis's dogeza was.

「I intend to obediently accept the punishment of tearing apart a family. If it is your wish, then I will atone for it with my life. But-, I beg you-, please give us your assistance!」

Hajime didn’t answer and looked down on Louis with cold eyes. There, Eric who caught up with Louis prostrated beside him after a moment of hesitation.

「I am the king of Balted Kingdom, Eric Luxeed Balted. It was me who gave the final approval for the hero summoning. All blame lies on me. That’s why, I beg you, please lay down your anger toward the star tree! Everything is because the deed of us humans!」

Behind Eric who was talking in anguish, Dahlia and others were similarly kneeling. Eric briefly explained about the sin that humans committed and about the salvation plan.

「I heard about you――your personage from Shia. That there is possibility of your assistance if there is benefit in it. I deeply realize how selfish the matter that I am talking about is. But, we have no other path but to rely on you! If there is anything we can offer then we will over anything! That’s why, please can you lend us your strength!?」

A king of a country kept prostrating while desperately begging. That appearance was also seen by the people of the demon kingdom. Even Arogan and Gruelle who recovered their consciousness and were in the middle of receiving treatment also could see him.

The entreaty that was filled with his entire body and soul was wholly from him remembering the ancient goodness of man, repenting, and thinking once more of the future of the many people.

The appearance that was completely without any self-interest was truly touching to the heart……

DOPAN-♪

「Bastard, whose wife it is that you are calling without honorific huh? I'll shoot you.」

「Hajime-san, you already shoot.」ED:LOL

Intentionally Not Reading the Atmosphere

INRA ! was Hajime's justice. Eric's forehead was instantly shot when he raised his face saying「Can you lend us your strength!?」, the white of his eyes were showing up while he was rolling on the mountain of rubbles. The scream of Louis and others「YOUR MAJESTYYYYYY-」 were resounding. (TN: In the raw it wasn't INRA but AKY, aete kuuki wo yomanai)

For Shia who couldn't stop Eric from calling her name without honorific no matter how many time she told him and had half given up because the talk wouldn't advance at the slightest if she kept beating him up, she was really happy and felt terribly refreshed on top of that seeing this. Her rabbit ears were spontaneously flapping happily.

Within such light atmosphere, Dahlia who thought Eric to be dead pressed her hand on her mouth while she unconsciously,

「Wha, what have you done」

Muttered that but,

「It was set to non lethal so it's fine.」

Hajime-san answered so and nonchalantly looked away. He intentionally shot with rubber bullet which was the least mercy he could show.

「Now then, we are going home Shia.」

Other world’s circumstance? World danger? A king’s dogeza? ……’I’ll at least acknowledge the dogeza’, Hajime denied the request as though to say that. Shia went「Of course it is~」 seeing such Hajime and her eyes turned a bit distant.

But……

Dahlia grasped her chest tightly and looked at Shia pleadingly. The gazes of Eric who only barely opened his eyes and everyone else were the same like her.

Those were eyes that were oozing despair. However, those were eyes that wouldn’t give up no matter what. Surely even if Hajime took Shia back just like he proclaimed, they would still struggle till the end. Because they knew a lot of people were trying to seriously change for the sake of the future and the wounded star tree and the spirits.

It was an act that was similar like tackling a huge steel wall in full speed. Even children would know which one would break.

That was why Shia smiled wryly and pinched Hajime’s sleeve with her fingers.

「Shia?」

「……Hajime-san.」

Hajime looked at Shia’s eyes. Just with that Hajime understood. Yes, he understood everything.

Even so, Hajime’s true feeling was that he wanted to get away quickly from this kind of world. He asked her with a wry smile.

「Why is it?」

「Annoyingly, I sympathized with them.」

Shia wished that a happy end would wait for people who struggled thinking for the future. That was why, she promised that she would put in a word when they appealed to Hajime. Just like how Yue did the same for her in the past.

「Feeling regrets, trying to manage somehow and yet failing, but unable to give up even more, and so it become a desperate feeling of what can be done by oneself, I deeply understand that feeling so……」

Her existence put her family into a dire situation, she worked hard but her family was gradually getting taken away, so she charged toward the single ray of hope that she could see with everything she had.

Hajime and Yue

「I'm sorry, I cannot properly come to a clear decision, and said troublesome things. I'll entrust the conclusion to Hajime-san. I won't object no matter the answer.」

That was Shia's maximum compromise after involving her family.

She fulfilled her promise. She had sent words that were far more valuable than even "benefit" to Hajime.

Shia entrusted the decision to Hajime with a straightforward gaze, however, Hajime was,

「This total idiot rabbit」

「Ouch!?」

A flick on the forehead came back. 「Wh, why? You intend to not read the mood even noow!?」 Shia said with eyes that teary eyes that contained various meanings. Hajime spoke to such Shia in exasperation.

「Did you forget? In the past, I told you right, I won't hesitate to use all my strength if it's for your sake.」

「……There is no way I can forget that.」

That was why, she entrusted the decision to him like this. Because, if Shia wished for it, Hajime would really become her strength with everything he had anytime. That was why, prudence was necessary. That was the common understanding of the wive~s.

Hajime was pampering his family too much. If they let their guard down, it felt like Shia and co would become no good.

While thinking inside her heart「I wish that Hajime-san yourself will be prudent in spoiling us desuu」, she couldn't avoid her mouth from mumbling incomprehensibly.

「So?」

Toward Hajime who was looking for her words, wish, and true feeling, Shia smiled with a troubled look while saying.

「……Their, no, a lot of people's wish, of wanting to express their current heart toward an existence that was important, I want to grant that wish.」

They couldn't be concerned about the result after that too. After all it wasn't Shia who was shouldering the future of this world.

The mother had continued to remonstrate her child, but her voice didn’t reach, and for the sake of protecting her other children the mother hardened her heart. However, Shia wished to at least lead the reflecting child to the side of such mother.

「Roger. I’ll lend a hand.」

The answer was simple. However, it was filled with powerfulness that firmly promised success.

Hajime didn’t think of it as troublesome or anything. Because Hajime loved this kind of side of Shia.

Shia already had no words, she simply hugged Hajime tightly.

Hajime lightly lifted up such Shia with one hand, then he heavily sat down on the top of the mountain of rubbles. And then, he made Shia sit down on one of his knees and ran his gaze to the surrounding like a demon king lording over the lower world.

Ahead of his gaze were the three kings, the two divine spirit that had recovered until they could jiggle up and down, and then Udar who were watching his conversation with Shia.

「For now, it’s information. You guys, line up over there.」

With *poyoyon-* jiggling, the divine spirit of fire circle that was like an overly conscious carrier woman Soare reacted.

「Shut up monster of other world! Your deed will――」

DOPAN-♪ *Splat*……, the red fire slime was scattered. The attack that came when she was in the verge of annihilation and somehow maintained the slime state caused the slime

to only be able to slosh around where it was difficult for her to return to normal.

「You bastard-, toward us divine spirit――」

DOPAN-♪ The divine spirit of earth Oros became a stain of earth. He only sloshed around in a state that was difficult to return to normal.

DOPAN-♪ 「Why even me!?」 Udar was scattered.

Seeing that, the three kings gathered near in a slight panic.

After Hajime's words of 「Sit there」, Arogan with his face that was still black and blue exerted his last dignity by displaying his will to keep standing saying 「No, I'm fine」 and……

DOPAN-♪ It was lethal so no problem! He died!

Arogan-san's brain matter was scattered and he fell.

「Sit」

「Wait. You――」

Gruelle made a gaze that doubted Hajime's sanity after he so easily stole a life――*DOPAN-*. A wind hole was opened in his forehead and he fell.

Dead silence filled the place. A beat later, the aides of the two camps who understood what happened and the populace were going to scream.

But, before they could, *Pika~~* light showered down. It was the light from an object that was hovering on the sky without anyone noticing――the regeneration magic beam artifact "Bel Agartha". If it was just a freshly dead person

that was still warm and fluffy, it was possible to fish them back forcefully from the realm of hades, an unbelievable artifact.

「Hah!? What in the world!?」

「–!? Just now I!?」

The two who should have their brain matter scattered and died stood up abruptly. At the same time even the two pseudo slimes that were splattered flat also returned into slime.

「You bastard! Toward this me the incarnation of fire circle――」

DOPAN-, *splaaat-*, *pika-*, revive! 「You bastard――」, *DOPAN-*, *splaaat-*, *pika-*.「You bas――」, *DOPAN-*, *splaaat-*, *pika-*. 「Sto――」, *DOPAN-*, *splaaat-*, *pika-*. 「……」

The red slime-san jiggled obediently in front of Hajime.

「They say idiots won’t be cured even with death but……you guys are called god and king even for an instant. Don’t tell me that you guys aren’t able to learn?」

Eric-san and others were trembling all over.

Arogan-san and others were also trembling all over.

The divine spirit-san also wasn’t an exception, the people of the demon kingdom were shaking even more.

How many times you need to die repeatedly until you reform your heart to be docile?

So to speak that was,

——108 Harassment Demon King Style I won’t say just once, want to try dying no matter how many times?

It was a devilish harassment (?) that would make a certain girl from hell to say 「That’s wrong」 with serious face.

「Freely manipulating life and death……even mother Lutria……」

It wasn’t human. It was something more demonic, a territory that even god didn’t reach……

「And? How many times more you need to die before becoming docile?」

Aa, demon god huh.

It was the moment where all existence in this world regardless of whether they were god or human or any other species became one in heart before Hajime’s cheerful smile.

.

.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Brutal Hero Shia arc, will end next chapter.

But, regretfully……due to the publication work and private matter the update for next week and the week after that is uncertain.

If it’s no good then I’m sorry!

.

PS (Material introduction)

- Thousand crosses

=>The image was from Bleac○’s sixth division captain-san’s Slaughterscape – Senbonzakura Kage○.

- Kill Them All

=>From ○reat Magical Cap’s Puni○-sama

- Leave them behind

=>From Drifte○’s Shimazu-san (also from the apparition Kubi Oiteke)

- Want to try dying?

=> From Hell Gir○’s Enma-chan

.

PS 2

About Hajime’s appearance, with Yue and others unable to come, he went in serious mode, so the camouflage of his arm, hair, and eye were all removed. So to speak, the demon king mode.

Arifureta Chapter 339

Arifureta After III　Brutal Hero Shia Arc　In The Middle of Recovery Desuu

.

AN: I’m sorry, I’m a bit late.

The publication work is over for now, but Shirakome is in the middle of recovering willpower.

I wrote this in a quick pace so the story didn’t advance, my apologize but please tolerate it.

In a room inside the demon king castle. In the dining hall that was extravagant but filled with countless cracks, the figure of Hajime and others could be found.

At the seat of honor of a long table that was also extravagant——at the place that originally was reserved for the demon king who was the master of this palace to sit at, a demon king was sitting there as expected.

It was Hajime.

If people who didn’t know anything saw this scene, first they would surely think that Hajime was the master of this palace

without holding any doubt about it. That was just how brazen Hajime was sitting on that seat. He crossed his legs and supported his cheek with his hand that rested on the armchair. His figure lording over the inside of the room truly looked appropriate……

Beside him, Shia was snuggling close to him like the queen, however, her mouth was energetically getting stuffed with food while chewing *mokyu mokyu* looking like a girl that could be found anywhere.

「Shia-sama, I'll refill your water.」

「Thank you very much, Dahlia-san.」

Shia smiled with a slacken expression. Dahlia also gave a slackened smile back.

Inside the space that was filled with tension without any sound at all other than the *mokyu mokyu* sound from Shia, the smiling face of the two beautiful girls that was like a breath of fresh air spread out.

Yes, it was only Shia who was eating. The people other than Dahlia who was serving Shia helpfully——Eric and others of the kingdom group, Arogan and others of the demon kingdom group, Gruelle and others of the beast kingdom group, and then the divine spirit of thunder cloud Udar, the divine spirit of earth Oros, the divine spirit of fire circle Soare, they were all sitting at the lower seat of the table while holding their breath like rabbit in the presence of lion.

Mokyu mokyu.

「Does the taste suit your palate, Shia-sama?」

「It’s really delicious, Dahlia-san! I want you to teach me the recipe later!」

「But of course! I’ll look forward cooking together with Shia-sama!」

「Sheesh Dahlia-san, even though you are a daughter of a duke, you can even cook on top of being a prodigious spirit art. You are really a perfect lady desuu」

「Ge, geez Shia-sama……that’s a really excessive praise~」

The conversation of the two beautiful girls that was really warm and fluffy echoed inside the quiet and tense space. Dahlia-san who was fidgeting bashfully and restlessly was extremely adorable.

Apparently with Shia keeping her promise and kept Hajime in check, her positivity level toward Shia had reached the counter stop.

Shia hadn’t eaten anything since noon, on top of that she even used body strengthening Level X. Toward such horribly starving rabbit Shia, Dahlia wanted to serve her so much that she even physically silenced the people of demon kingdom (the palace cook and staff, etc) so that she could serve her handmade cooking.

By the way, after hearing the circumstance from the kings and gods who became obedient after the 「I won’t say just once, want to try dying no matter how many times?」 at the summit of rubble, why then everyone gathered in the dining hall of the demon king palace? It was simply to wait for Hajime and Shia’s magic power to recover.

But, there, *tap tap* a small sound rang out.

Hajime who was glaring at the lower seats even while softening when glancing at his bunny wife who was yummily eating was making knocking sound on the table with his finger. In front of him was a glass that had turned empty.

Snap-, tension ran through the room as though lightning had struck!

Amidst that, Dahlia-san instantly moved. She calmly, elegantly, but swiftly, poured chilled water using spirit art into the empty glass.

She bowed, then quietly backed away.

Hajime who put the water into his mouth as though it was only natural went 「Hm?」 and squinted his eyes.

「Lemon water huh?」

When he looked back across his shoulder and asked, Dahlia-san reverently lowered her head while answering.

「I thought that it would be wearisome to keep drinking the same water, so I took the liberty to add taste and scent.」

At first coffee or tea was recommended to Hajime, however he refused saying 「Just water is fine」. This was Dahlia's meager consideration to such him.

While the kings were making face that seemed to want to say 「Do, doing that without asking! You're going to get killed you know!? Around ten times!」, Dahlia was standing quietly without particularly turning pale.

「My deepest apologies if that displeased demon king-sama. I will accept any punishment.」

「……No, let me thank you for your consideration. Shia has opened herself to you after all.」

「It's my deepest pleasure.」

Dahlia's expression loosened happily, however, she lowered her head reverently once more. Shia stuffed her cheeks with meat while conveying 「The cooking is also delicious~」 with her gaze. Seeing that Hajime made a thinking expression for a bit.

「I don't intend to eat because it will be dinner when we go home though……」

「I have also prepared some variety of light meal.」

「You're really prepared huh.」

「Because from demon king-sama's talk with Shia-sama, it seems the difference of time of your world with this world is really big.」

It seemed that she judged that if they would pass some time at this world, then she should at least prepare some light meal even if he said that he didn't need to eat.

Dahlia-san, truly capable.

Also, Arogan reacted when hearing the words demon king-sama but he then averted his gaze as thought to say 「Ah, right, it's not me isn't it. That's right isn't it」.

「In that case I'll have a bit then. If possible I don't want something too heavy, you have anything like that?」

「Let me bring a salmon sandwich.」

「Yeah, that’s fine. Also, as I thought give me coffee too. No need for sugar.」

「By your will.」

Eric thought, 「Eh? Dahlia’s master should be me though…… somehow, doesn’t she act like a servant more than before there?」. Of course, he didn’t say it out loud. Because, it was scary.

「E, eh? Dahlia-san, somehow your atmosphere is different compared to with me……」

「? What’s that about? Or rather, Shia. You too don’t eat too much. You won’t be able to eat dinner. Everyone is waiting for you to return back home.」

「It’s fine. I will work out as much as I ate. My stomach will be empty when returning home. It was said that you cannot even fight if you don’t eat meat.」

「You, it feels like soon you will master something like the secret skill of “fully immersion to eating” Shoku○ huh.」(TN: Don’t know what reference is this)

She was the rabbit that was principally evaluated as bugged in regard to physical ability. She could even manipulate her hair and blood, that was why it felt like something like changing the meal that she ate wholly into energy was something she would do normally.

「Even so, I have to apologize to everyone when we returned. Especially Yue-san, it feels like she will scold me at how did I get kidnapped so easily.」

The rabbit ears drooped down powerlessly.

「No, hm, I wonder about that. That Yue, she was seriously damaged because of your nonchalant remark, so she might not be in the state of doing that.」

「Eh? Did I say something to Yue-san?」

It was because she was like that, that her true feeling got needlessly conveyed and the vampire princess ended up hugging her knees for several hours.

Hajime smiled wryly while caressing Shia's astonished rabbit ears. Shia's expression instantly brightened.

But, there, Eric who was unable to bear with the atmosphere of the two raised a trembling voice.

「Ca, can I ask something」

「No.」

No compromise. His Excellency Hajime's dismissal bullet.

「About how the two of you are husband and wife, is that really true-」

The young king of the human race with established reputation of not getting discouraged even after getting beaten black and blue resolutely charged forward as expected. A gaze that seemed to say 「You, are you a hero……」 came from the demon king and the beast king.

Arogan Gruelle

「If so then what?」

「It's nothing-」

'What's with that tsundere reaction', Hajime sent him a suspicious gaze.

Eric’s face looked like he had swallowed a ton of sour grapes and gulped them all. The other people were also glancing at Shia before making bitter expression.

「Hmph? Shia, looks like you are really popular huh?」

Shia made a dry expression at Hajime’s teasing gaze. In exchange,

「It’s exactly as you say!」

「Ou!?」

Dahlia-san who swiftly appeared immediately set the table, and strongly confirmed with her usual clenched fists pose. Hajime was subtly surprised by that. It was really rare for him to be like that.

「Not only the men of our country, even his majesty Arogan and his majesty and Gruelle, and not only them but even Udar-sama over there, everyone is madly in love with Shia-sama. Especially someone like his majesty Eric, no matter how many times he was rejected he wouldn’t stop calling her without honorific, and if there was a chance he would try touch Shia-sama from start to end.」

「Dahlia!?」

The unbelievable betrayal from his vassal and childhood friend.

「Furthermore, in the case of his majesty Arogan he even tried to steal her lips……it was truly a heinous deed.」

「!?」

Arogan looked at Dahlia with eyes that wanted to say 「Don’t say more than that!」.

The kingdom group was in the middle of flustered state due to the unexpected traitorous tattling by their friend, however, the duke’s daughter maid-san who seemed to have completely changed the allegiance of her heart made guts pose with both her hands and emphasized 「However-」.

「Please have a peace of mind, demon king-sama. Shia-sama displayed her rejection sometimes with her fist!」

「No, well, I get it even without you insisting it with your eyes snapped wide open like that. Calm down a bit.」

「What a relationship of mutual trust……it was truly sacred.」

Duke’s daughter trippy maid. Hajime’s eye turned to Shia and he asked with his gaze 「What’s this interesting maid」, Shia used her eyes too to answer 「It looks like she inherited the teaching of the Akiba-type heroes of the past」, and Hajime-san showed his tremendous power of understanding with 「I get it. So that’s why she is a maid even though she is a duke’s daughter. She was taught about the supreme equipment huh」.

Oh Akiba-type heroes of the past……good job!

「By the way demon king-sama. Are the other family members here? This Dahlia wish to be granted the honor of greeting them if possible.」

「That’s impossible. It’s only me who come to pick up Shia. Well, perhaps you can at least give them greeting when I opened the gate to go home……」

「Is, that so……that's unfortunate but, please let me do so at that time then. Putting that aside, that person called Yue-sama, could it be that she is Shia-sama's mother?」

Shia burst out 「buh」 hearing that question. It was the vampire princess-sama who got damaged just from being treated as NEET. Such relationship was possible based on their age, but if she was mistaken as her best friend's mother……she might have hugged her knees in a corner of the room for ten more hours.

Although, from the point of view of Dahlia who saw how strong Shia was, when speaking about "a family scolding" such Shia, it couldn't be helped that she misunderstood like that.

Shia wiped clean her mouth while correcting her.

「You're wrong. Yue-san is my best friend, and she is also like a big sister for me, and more importantly, she is the seisai (first wife) desu.」

「Restraint? Is it? Is she a deterrent toward Shia-sama?」 (TN: A play of words here, the kanji of legal wife and restraint are both read as seisai, so Dahlia mistook the meaning of the word)

'You think she is nuclear bomb huh, no, that's also not really mistaken though……', Hajime thought with a wry smile while Shia spoke the answer.

「No, that's not it, it's seisai in the meaning of the first wife.」

□□□□□Hah?□□□□□

The replies came from inside the room. Especially from the three kings.

As expected even Dahlia turned speechless at the answer that was too much outside her expectation.

Eric’s chair clattered from the force of him standing up. He unconsciously raised his voice toward Hajime.

「Wai-, wait a second! Shia is――」

「Oi」

「Shia-dono is, Hajime-dono’s wife right!?」

「That’s right, so?」

「Then, what does she meant by first wife!?」

「It’s exactly like the words meant though?」

「I, I don’t think it can possible be true but……other than Shia――」

DOPAN-. *Splaaat-*. *Pika-*.

「You aren’t going to say that you have other wifes than Shia-dono right!?」

「She already said it right?」

Tremble tremble, shiver shiver. Eric shook. The expression of the other people was also turning grim.

Eric’s gaze sharply turned toward Shia who was stuffing her mouth with meat.

「Shia, dono! Why are you so calm!? This man-, he is two-timing you!」

Mokyu- Shia swallowed the meat and said calmly.

「It’s not two-timing you know?」

「Eh? No, but just now……he said that there is other wife than Shia, dono……」

「Yes desu. Other than me and Yue-san, there are six other so it’s not two-timing.」

「Eh!?」

The lovely woman their heart turned to was nothing more than a harem member. Eric turned into stone from that fact. Louis’s expression was hidden by his glasses’ reflection from unknown light source, while Arogan and Gruelle did their best to stay expressionless.

「Eh? Rather, I’m the one surprised here. Eric-san and others are king, rather isn’t this normal?」

Certainly that’s true. It was only Eric who was unmarried, but both Arogan and Gruelle were already keeping more than ten beautiful maidens to themselves. Just what was strange from the same thing applying to Shia in another world?

Although that was a logical point, the unmarried men here including Eric couldn’t accept it in their heart.

「I, I don’t have any intention to surround myself with multiple women!」

Arogan and Gruelle showered Eric once more with a gaze that wanted to say 「You, are you hero」.

However, Eric who was infatuated toward the hero rabbit who came from another world didn’t give a damn at such gazes. He glared angrily at Hajime.

「You bastard-, you already have Shia but you still with other woman-……unforgivable-, such thing is absolutely unforgivable-」

「……Eh? It’s like a déjà vu……」

Hajime without delay was about to move from *DOPAN* to *pika-*, but for some reason he tilted his head and searched his memory.

「Shia, dono! Are you saying that you are alright with that kind of man!? What is good about him!?」

「Eh, what is it so suddenly……geez-, it’s embarrassing to be told to speak what I like about him in front of other people~. If I’m asked what is it I like about him, it’s everything desu! No other answer……fufufu-」

Eric-san, when he got hit by Shia’s unshakeable boasting of her loved one, he pressed on his chest 「gufuh」 and crumbled. He was on all fours.

But, there Hajime hit his hand *pon* and made a face of realization.

「Aah, that’s right! It’s his highness!」

「It’s his majesty!」

Eric corrected. ‘I’m properly a king you know, I ain’t a prince’ he insisted.

Of course, that wasn’t what Hajime meant. He understood the true form of the déjà vu he felt from Eric’s words, so he made that remark. Yes, the exchange just now, the young prince of Heiligh――Randell-kun said exactly the same speech when he recklessly challenged Hajime due to his first love for Kaori. Even his questionable self-important temperament was really similar.

「Wha, what? Why are you looking at me with kind gaze like that!?」

Because Randell was Liliana’s little brother and also his brother-in-law, Hajime in his own was didn’t dislike Randell who came charging at him every time despite his trembling. It seemed that he saw Randell’s figure from Eric.

There was nothing more terrifying in this world than a gentle expression from a terrifying man.

Was what the trembling Eric-kun seemed to want to say.

But, there, a whispered voice was……

「This is stupid.」

「O, oi, Soare.」

It was the divine spirit of fire circle Soare. The divine spirit of thunder cloud Udar talked to her with small voice in a bit of panic to stop her. By the way, the three god slimes were too short to sit on normal chair, so they were placed on chairs for children where they were jiggling.

Everyone’s attention turned toward Soare. Shia continued going *mokyu mokyu*. Hajime too was going *mokyu mokyu* with the salmon sandwich Dahlia served him. Mu? ……Delicious. My greatest thanks!

Soare who was focused at twitched and jiggled *poyon* for a moment, then she started to jiggle restlessly. She was strangely flustered from her own remark that resounded unexpectedly.

Eric asked timidly.

「Soare-dono, by stupid you mean……」

「I, it’s stupid right? Something like hero of foreign world is just a danger factor. All of you children of man is destined to perish. Talking about a future that won’t even come can only be called as stupid.」

Soare immediately rattled on while intensely flickering. Eric argued vehemently at her.

「However Soare-dono! We are――」

「Silence! The decision of mother Lutria is the divine will, all living things obeying it is the only truth! For all of you, to struggle so far that you even summoned the monster over there! There is a limit even in being unsightly!」

「……」

「The result from that is this situation where even the voice of mother Lutria cannot be heard! To summon even evil that bring monster to this world, as expected the children of man is――」

「Oi」

Just a word. With only that one word from a man who had a scrap of salmon sandwich sticking out from the corner of his mouth, the place’s atmosphere changed. Soare who was

heating up shut her mouth 「Fuguuh」 as though she just got splashed with cold water.

But, the instant she was fiercely glared by Hajime,

「Wha, what is it-, you want to have a go!? Aa!? AA!? I'll take you on-, you-, you……youuu-」

「O, oi, Soare, calm down.」

Perhaps because of nervousness and fear, Soare-san who was a cool character like an overly conscious career woman somehow became like a yankee character who was a shitty small fry but bluffed the hell out of it.

She must be wanting to hurl abuse at Hajime, but if she did that then she would be guaranteed to go *splat*, so she only ended making strange swearing 「youuu-」. She was giving off an incomprehensibly disappointing smell.

Hajime wordlessly placed Donner on the table. *Thump* a heavy sound resounded.

「Tsu!? Tsu――tsu」

She lost her nerve. The divine spirit of fire circle-san, was losing her nerve at full speed. It was to the degree that she immediately dragged out Oros and Udar on top of the table, then she wrigglingly crawled behind them to hide.

「A, AA!? Yo, you really want to have a go!? Youu-! I, it will be a disaster if I got serious you know!? Right, I wasn't serious before! It will be really, yes, really a disaster!」

「……No, Soare, before this you were evidently fighting seriously.」

「Or rather, say something like that after getting out from behind us.」

Oros and Udar spoke somewhat apathetically. If they were in their human form, they would surely stare at Soare reproachfully.

The terror and nervousness assaulting her, her pride and obstinacy, etc, various emotions were saturating her and she became unable to control them. Hajime stared unblinking at such Soare. And then, for the time being he cocked the gun. *Click* The fiendish sound resounded.

「-!? Tsu, tsu――e, even if you defeat me, the second and the third me will surely appear! In other words, it's meaningless even if you defeat me right now! Meaningless thing shouldn't be done right!? Yes, it should not! Youuu-, understand at least that much――ah, Udar! Oros! Where are you two going!? Leaving me behind, where are you going!?」

The meat shields who jumped *poyoyon* away.

In that place where the obstruction had gone away, a gaze from an existence that was evil according to Soare pierced her.

Shake shake, fidget fidget, jiggle jiggle……

Soare who was the focus of attention on the table was moving about in confusion for a while, then――

「……Sniff……hics……tsu」

Unbelievably a crying voice resounded. The red slime was spreading on the table as though it had lost all consistencies. Perhaps, surely, if she was in her human form

she would be showing a figure of her feet crumbling and laid prostrate on the floor while weeping uncontrollably.

The bluff of divine spirit of fire circle-san whose heart wasn’t just merely broken but completely pulverized since a long time ago seemed to only be as solid as wet toilet paper.

This figure of a divine spirit, an exalted existence that stayed really high in the sky that was just too much like this, caused sympathetic eyes to be turned toward her not just from the kingdom group, but even from Arogan who decided his country’s objective as 「God should die!」.

As expected Shia seemed unable to watch it. She also had properly finished her meal, so after she wiped her mouth clean, she stood up from her seat.

「Sheesh Hajime-san……please stop it with this much.」

「No, about that, I thought that they are unexpectedly pleasant creatures in spite of introducing themselves as god so, I went too far.」

As expected, Hajime never imagined that there would be god who would weep uncontrollably. He was looking at Soare with really deep interest.

Shia reached out toward Soare who was currently turning into a stain on the table.

「Wha, what are you-……hics……you want to have a gooo-, youuu-」

「Please calm down. We won’t do anything if you don’t act violently.」

「Yo, you said that but you want to do something horrible right!? Hics, you, youuu-」

「Yes yes, there is nothing scary heree~. It's alright~」

「Fu, fuguu……even if you, act kind now……hiu……hics」

Shia lifted her up and patted her as though saying 'good kid, good kid'. Soare-san was turning docile as she was doing that. She was starting to docilely turn limp on Shia's palm.

「I see! So this is the taming style from the world of Shia-sama and demon king-sama!」

A truly scandalous word came out from Dahlia-san who was making her both hands guts pose.

The demon king's whip, and the rabbit's carrot……even though the two didn't have any intention like that it was troubling because it was the fact.

「……Do you intend, to do the same to mother?」

The one who asked that with a quiet voice was the divine spirit of earth, Oros.

「Udar is moved by affection, Soare has fallen, my strength isn't up to the task.」

It was a voice that was heavy, dark, and depressed.

「You don't destroy us, however, are you going to subjugate us?」

Because the hero of foreign world and her spouse literally beaten their aberrant strange into him, despair could be felt from the flickering Oros.

「We won’t do such thing.」

It was Shia who said it. And then, she asked back.

「I have said it before. I won’t do anything like killing Oros-san and others no matter what. What I can do is only helping so that the voice of Eric-san and everyone reach all of you.」

「Such words, is too late now. Do you know how much the children of man has trampled on our remonstrating words before this?」

「……Oros-san, you cannot forgive the children of man anymore no matter what?」

「Why should they be forgiven? What is the reason why the children of man, who possess not a single thing except foolishness should be forgiven?」

「Eric-san and everyone said the answer to that is what they want to convey to you.」

「……」

Oros’s flickering became stronger. He must be holding back his feeling of antipathy inside.

Oros shut his mouth as though he was shutting himself behind a rock door. It was Udar who called out to him.

「Oros. Putting aside the people of this country and the beastman, I believe that the feeling of that young king and his people is genuine.」

「Udar?」

Udar crawled close to Oros and slowly flickered as though he was driven by some kind of thought.

「Perhaps it was because I lost against Shia. I felt that my burning heart cooled down slightly.」

「What do you want to say?」

「I recalled something. The figure of the children of man of the ancient times that was locked behind my rage and determination.」

「……」

Something that only the children of man possessed. They were a race who knew how to create things, they found happiness in that and tried to progress toward the future.

But, they were obviously different from other race who entrusted themselves to nature and simply lived and died.

Since the primeval time, the children of man were the target of the mother Lutria and the divine spirits.

「It’s a sin that is hard to forgive.」

What the children of man had committed. However,

「Perhaps, it’s the mother Lutria, might be the one who actually wish for the words of the children of man once more……」

In the first place, it was the star tree Lutria who was reluctant to bring down the divine punishment toward the kind until the last moment. Rather it was the divine spirits whose rage reached the boiling point from witnessing the exhausted figure of their mother and strongly insisted to carry out the divine punishment no matter what.

「Shia won’t break her promise. If Shia wish it, then that man also won’t break his promise. So, in that case, I won’t oppose the children of man expressing their feeling. Oros, and also Soare. What about you two?」

「……」

「……」

The earth and fire circle were silent. The two right now couldn’t deny Udar’s words and concluded that he was a traitor.

「But, even now, there are still many who won’t repent.」

There were two people in this room who were the chief perpetrator of that. Oros’s focus turned toward Arogan and Gruelle.

The two of them tried to say something, but Eric stood up before that.

「To be unable to have any change in heart even at this point of time……it’s truly something shameful.」

However,

「Even so, apologizing for the crime we have committed, conveying our feeling to the star tree Lutria, I don’t think of it as something pointless.」

「And, you wish to be spared from divine punishment with that?」

「……That, will depend on star tree Lutria’s heart. It’s not the problem of whether we can receive forgiveness or not. What

is important is sincerity. I…no, we are taught that by the hero of another world.

The gaze of Eric and also Louis and everyone turned toward Shia. Their gaze was filled with love and affection.

Eric returned his gaze to Oros once more and spoke more.

Thus, even if this is an unavoidable fate of destruction, as the representative of the people who regained their past goodness, I wish to meet with star tree Lutria.

Just like how a child wished to meet with his mother.

Oros and Soare continued to stay silent. However, their slow flickering showed that the anger inside them was decreasing. At the very least, they didn't discard Eric's words as mere empty platitude.

Although, their emotion that was like a mist that wouldn't clear hadn't changed. That was why even as a god they couldn't find any word to say.

Udar's voice that was filled with wryness resounded there.

Oros, Soare. Either way, mother would be in danger if that man there gets serious. Right now, how about we believe in Shia's words and watch over where is the path the children of man is heading to?

There was no objection.

While an air of relieve was flowing, while Hajime asked for second helping of salmon sandwich acting like it had nothing to do with him, Soare whose heart had recovered from Shia's gentleness spoke to Udar as though she was venting.

「You are really infatuated with someone who defeated you crushingly there.」

「Fuh. There are things that can be communicated through fighting. Shia is a wonderful――」

「Even though you were knocked out when trying to bath together……」

「How do you know that!? Or rather, why are you saying that now!?」

「Good grief, that's embarrassing as a fellow divine spirit.」

You are saying that? Anyway setting that aside, 「Hou」such voice that resounded until the stomach like the low bass of baritone sax was……

Coming from Hajime-san.

Udar twitched and jiggled. He started crawling away bit by bit from Hajime.

「Shia, did you get peeped at?」

「No no, no way! I firmly sent him flying, and I also stayed on guard so it's fine!」

'Is that so, then let's stop with the mixer artifact and spare the divine spirit with simple beating……', Hajime thought, but,

「Ah, that's right! Because of Udar-san I remember. Hajime-san, can you take a look at my Vire Drucken later?」

「Hah? What's wrong with it?」

□Udar-san did something without asking so the shooting mode got strange!□

□Shia! There is better way to say——□

Udar-san was thrown into mix.

.

.

.

After that, Hajime heard how Udar attempted to transform Vire Drucken into divine spirit armament. Hajime who got interested to spirit stone, spirit weapon, and spirit art made knowledgeable people including Louis and Arogan to spit out every knowledge and article while repairing Vire Drucken……

Through the process he heard how Shia became able to evade lightning speed by sight in the fight with Udar and his expression spasmed. In fact Shia provoked □Hey, come on Hajime-san!□. So Hajime tried shooting at her outside her vital spot but his bullet was dodged normally. He put Udar in mix for venting □What have you done to my wife huh□……

While that was going on, the magic power of Hajime and Shia was also completely recovered.

The preparation of Eric, Arogan, and Gruelle was also finished, and the group finally departed to the “land of beginning”, the solitary island in distant sea——the territory of the star tree.

The dinner of Nagumo family was waiting, so Hajime used crystal key to teleport abruptly to the solitary island.

Hajime and others passed through the door of light, and looked there.

□Hee□

Floating above the solitary island, was a huge flying island——the stronghold of the celestial people.

And then, the rest of the divine spirits and innumerable spirit beasts were lying in wait for them.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

.

PS

The salmon sandwich in Seven-san……vanished?

Arifureta Chapter 340

Arifureta After III Brutal Hero Shia Arc Police Officer, It’s This Guy Desuu!

.

This is really one flashy welcome.

An amused chuckle resounded.

Eric, Arogan, Gruelle, te three kings along with Louis and others, the elite forces accompanying each king were taken aback.

Floating in the sky, the stronghold of the celestial people, the giant floating island’s majestic appearance went without saying. Then there was the great swarm of spirit beasts covering the land and sky, and the figures of multiple divine spirits.

Strong pressure and killing intent that were shaking the atmosphere were welcoming them. Coupled with the cloudy sky, it was like the end of the world.

Because it was clear that all they were rejected as visitors, they as the people living in this world couldn’t help but held their breath. Their throat was dry, their heart shrunk, their

waist lost strength, and their spirit was on the verge of breaking.

That was how much the welcome committee was displaying their rage, and they were ready to fight to the death, it wouldn’t be out of place at all to describe them as suicidal soldiers.

「Or rather, the teleport destination, it got slightly shifted……this star tree is something, not bad.」

Hajime who grumbled that looked around and smiled wryly.

The place they teleported to seemed to be the edge of the star tree’s solitary island——above a cliff. They planned to teleport directly to the star tree’s location, but apparently the space was interfered with and they ended up on the island’s edge.

In the end, was it the star tree that was absurd with how it obstructed the Crystal Key’s teleportation ability, or was it the Crystal Key that was absurd with how it overcame the obstruction of a god of a world and teleported the user through even if it was only to the edge of the stronghold?

In any case, looking at the present situation objectively, they were now truly people who were cornered to the edge of a precipitous cliff but……

「Looks like they’re really in high spirits, did something happen?」

The tension of Eric and others completely didn’t matter. Everyone’s expression turned really complicated at the joke Hajime cracked. It couldn’t be helped, so Shia poked at Hajime’s cheek and said.

「Hajime-san, are you waiting for tsukkomi to that? No matter how you look at it, this is caused by Hajime-san's meteor party.」

It's exactly like Shia said. Obviously the other side would be angry & scared because of that. After all this person tossed a meteor to their sacred ground.

The island originally should be lushly green had black smoke rising from here and there. A part of the verdant mountain was collapsing. It was already like that just from the visible range. There was no doubt that the center of the island, the surroundings of the star tree was even more tragic than this.

Then, at that timing the explosive sound of a waterfall suddenly resounded behind Hajime and others.

Hajime and others went 'Oh?' and turned around. There, they saw a giant silhouette that was dropping sea water like a waterfall——a figure of a monster lifting its long neck. Its length might reach 300 meters. Considering the height of the cliff that was around 100 meters, its whole length might be in the unit of kilometers.

「Di, divine spirit of ocean current-, Meeres——」

When Eric yelled, that monster——with a figure like a giant dragon enveloped with water current that looked like tentacles and accompanied with water tornados behind it, the divine spirit of ocean current "Meeres" opened their mouth at the same time.

What was fired right after that was a breath attack without any preceding conversation. The furious water current that would swallow and pressured everything to death with its mass attacked Hajime and co.

Due to the breath attack that was fired from right above their head, the figures of Hajime and co vanished inside the water current. The surrounding was blown away, and the cliff cracked from being unable to endure the pressure.

In front of such destruction that wholly broke a part of the cliff,

「Close your mouth a bit.」

A crimson spark surged. Right after that, in the next instant, like a rising dragon climbing a waterfall, the crimson light split the water current breath into two right from the front.

「——!!?」

A voiceless scream and surprise.

The crimson flash blown away the upper jaw of Meeres without stopping and also blew open a circle shape on a part of the cloudy sky before vanishing to the faraway sky.

While the water splash of the water current breath that was burst open scattered around, what appeared was the unharmed figures of Eric and others along with Hajime who was grinning fearlessly. And then, the Cross Velts that were deploying barrier and the long weapon that was still emitting spark——Schlagen AA.

「Somehow it reminds me of Tio-san isn’t it~」

「That’s another nostalgic story huh.」

Hajime made a light talk with Shia while placing Schlagen on his shoulder. Seeing that, Eric and others instantly resolved themselves and returned to their senses.

「Hajime-dono! Shia-dono! What did you do!?」

The eyes of Meeres who was already finished regenerating distorted in rage. Eric watched that while asking Hajime with an expression twisted in anxiety.

「No need to ask, the plan stay the same. I'll open the path. Just go to your star tree mom and quickly say sorry.」

「O, open the path you say……no, before that by mom you mean……」

'Such absurdness……or rather, what did you call the star tree……', not just Eric, Arogan and others also thought that. They did their best to ignore the way Hajime called the star tree while turning their gaze toward the front, at the center of the island.

Countless roars were raised. The roars that made the atmosphere shook belonged to tens of thousands of divine beasts. As expected from this place that should be called their sacred ground. It looked like their level was different from the spirit beasts sent to the demon kingdom.

Dragon that normally should be dealt by dispatching an army formed a flock here like mere rank and file. Huge wolfs and lions that would send people into despair if they encountered even one of them were running rampant, large bugs with extremely atrocious appearance that gave the impression like a master of a forest was covering the ground like they were tiny ants.

In addition, white mist was gushing out from the floating island. Which was an optical illusion from the army of the celestial people flying out. Their number was also in the unit of tens of thousands.

The condition was different from before.

Destructive attack like meteor impact or sunlight convergence laser that would also destroy the island would be putting the cart before the horse. If Hajime wasn’t careful to not destroy the spirit stone that was the core of spirit beast, to not kill the celestial people, and to not exterminate the divine spirits, then trying to persuade the star tree would be something impossible.

Doing something like opening the path under that condition, was very very……

「It will be dinner soon considering the time difference. There is no way I can let my hungry daughter to wait. Oi, charge forward quickly.」

In front of the recoiling Eric and co, Hajime inserted the Crystal Key into space and twisted. A shining gate was deployed. The gate that was its pair could be seen at afar. It was at the other side of the great swarm that was standing in their way like a wall, barely right above the forest.

Even though it was impossible to open the gate at the center of the island, it seemed that it was possible to teleport only barely if it was within sight.

「Yes yes, everyone! This isn’t the time to look dumbfounded! Hajime-san is taking charge, so we’ll rush forward full of spirit!」

「Wha-. You’re going to make Hajime-dono alone facing off that large crowd!?」

Eric yelled in doubt of Shia’s sanity. It seemed he never thought that Hajime would remain here by himself. He believed that they would forcefully breakthrough together.

Hajime leisurely sent bullet to Meeres that was going to fire another breath, in addition he met the charging spirit beasts, celestial people, and divine spirits with a swarm of Cross Velt & Grim Reaper while shrugging.

「In a sense, it wasn't bad that the coordinate got shifted. Rather than continuously pushing back the large swarm attacking from behind while you guys are apologizing to the star tree mom, having *me* holding them back at a distant place is easier.」

In other words, it wouldn't be Hajime holding back the spirit beasts and others, but it was the spirit beasts and others that would be holding back the advance of Hajime so that he wouldn't get near to the star tree seeing that they should be considering him as the most dangerous existence here.

「Don't tell me, Hajime-dono, you will……」

「He won't kill them, he won't. Hajime-san, doesn't lie.」

'Damn suspicious……', everyone thought. Although, they had no ground to raise objection. Because they entrusted the possibility of carrying out this salvation plan to Hajime and Shia, then they could only follow what they said. They could only aim toward the star tree straight ahead.

「……Forgive us. Hajime-dono. Someday we will pay back this debt without fail to you and also Shia-dono.」

「Yeah, be really grateful. More specifically show your gratitude with goods. If it's a gloomy thanks I'll kill you.」

「Hajime-san, Hajime-san, you are forgetting to act as exemplary Japanese person. The modest heart desu! Or rather, isn't this for my sake in the first place?」

Of course, it was for Shia. Hajime was here because Shia wished for it. But, that was that, this was this. If he didn’t get paid with the compensation that was equal with his labor, than even the god of labor would surely get enraged. It was only this time that Hajime was a pious believer of the god of labor.

「In deference to Shia, I’ll let you go with only all you have and your country’s treasury.」

「……I think, that’s demonic enough already though.」

Arogan mumbled in a low voice. Gruelle nodded to that. Perhaps because they had experienced the hell of life and death together, it felt like they became slightly cordial with each other.

「Enough, just go quickly.」

「Go, got it. Please take care of the rest.」

Saying that, Eric and others changed their expression into one of resolve and lined up in front of the gate.

Shia jumped at Hajime and lightly kissed him.

「Then I’m going, Hajime-san.」

「Ou, be careful. Don’t bring a result that will make me snap okay?」

「That’s right isn’t it~. I have to protect the world from Hajime-san.」

The two cracked jokes at each other like that before Shia twirled around.

「Everyone, have you resolved yourself?」

This was the fork road toward the future. The turning point. The shining gate was the entrance to that.

Eric and others nodded deeply toward Shia who questioned with the light behind her.

「Then let’s go! To cut open the future!」

The reply was naturally, the powerful yell that was filled with resolve.

「By the way demon king-sama! The “daughter” you mentioned just now, is she the child between you and Shia-sama!?」

「Dahlia!? Why are you asking that now!? Even though I did my best to not ask! Even though I also pretended to not see the kiss!」

The question of Dahlia just before rushing into the gate caused Eric to scream. Anyway Shia threw the two of them together into the gate to quickly depart.

Like that, the other members also vanished to the other side of the gate with indescribable expression.

And then, Shia too hopped *pyon* and Hajime became alone in the battlefield.

「That was really lacking in tension.」

Hajime talked to himself with a wry smile.

Toward such Hajime.

GOU-, divine punishment descended from right above. It was a super localized downburst that was accompanied with ice and snow of absolute zero.

Hajime’s figure vanished inside the pure white wind pressure that was striking down with strength that created crater on the ground.

「Ice and snow, and then flowing sky, don’t hold back. Only this guy, we must destroy him without fail here.」

「I know that.」

「We’ll sink him down like this to the sea along with the cliff. If it’s inside the sea, then that will be Merees’s territory.」

Far above the sky, there were three divine spirits exchanging words with a grave expression.

A beautiful woman of blooming age with long black hair clad in jet black dress and mist——the divine spirit of dusk who governed night and darkness, “Laila”.

A beautiful girl with appearance around the age of 16, 17 years old wearing outfit like a dancer, with fluttering her light green hair tied into twintail——the divine spirit of flowing sky who governed the world’s wind, “Enti”.

A large eagle with transparent body like a crystal that reached a total length of five meters——the divine spirit of ice and snow that governed vapor and the cold, “Barahu”.

Combined with the divine spirit of ocean current Merees, they were the last divine spirits.

All of them were launching attacks that resembled a calamity while their eyes showed not even a fragment of carelessness or haughtiness. Far from that, from the it could be seen that there was even anxiety and fear as though they were praying that it would be over like this.

They were frightened even as a god. That scorching star which fallen from the sky. They still didn’t even want to believe that such thing could be done by someone who wasn’t a god.

A downburst that felt like it could even produce hell on earth, and absolute zero where living thing wouldn’t be able to avoid annihilation, in addition there was also the ability of abnormal status effect from Laila that submerged the target’s consciousness to darkness. They weren’t holding back at the slightest. That Laila raised her voice to the celestial people while they were still maintaining their attack.

「This is a divine decree. O king of celestial people! Run to the mother’s location and put the outlaws to death!」

In front of the army of celestial people lining up orderly in the sky, a good looking man with conspicuously extravagant outfit straddling a white horse that grew out wings like a Pegasus lowered his head reverently. His cheeks were flushed because of the happiness of receiving a divine spirit’s divine decree. The flame of mad joy were blazing up roaringly in his eyes.

「I received this decree with honor, oh our god. I, the sky king――Astrus Fin Honted will put my existence on the line to exterminate the vermi――kueh!?」

「Well, don’t be that eager, let’s play a bit.」

「Wha-!?」

The cry of the sky king Astrus that sounded like a bird that got strangled and the shocked voice of the divine spirits resounded.

Of course the culprit was Hajime.

Without anyone noticing he slipped out from the inside localized disaster area and got on the rear of the Pegasus. There he tightly grasped Astrus’s neck.

The metal fingers wonderfully dug into the neck of the sky king *mekyo-*. In addition the sky king was going ‘ababa’ from the “Lightning Clad”. Hajime was thorough, he also wrapped the pegasus with electrified bola and fixed it in space.

The eyes of the sky king along with his favorite horse rolled the white of their eyes showed. Their spasming figure was truly tragic.

「Since when……no, teleport is it.」

「Even if that’s the case he shouldn’t be unharmed right!? That guy, is he really human!?」

Laila’s expression turned like she had just bitten a sour grape, while Enti raised an angry voice with her twintail standing on end.

「You bastard-, what disrespect!」

「Take off that dirty hand!」

The celestial people also never even dreamed that their king would be instantly approached. They were shaken. Even so their face went bright red and rage flooded their expression.

The sky king was a priest and also an apostle serving the god. He was the leader of the celestial people. That was to say, he was a human whose existence was the closest to god. For the common people, he was an existence that was

the equivalent of a living god. Naturally, his personal horse was also a spirit beast——no, a divine beast that was considered as sacred and noble existence.

To think that a human would step on the rear of that divine beast with dirty shoes and strangled the neck of a living god……it was an unprecedented accident in celestial people’s history.

It couldn’t be helped that they were shaken.

And so, Hajime tried something seeing that it wouldn’t cost him anything to try.

「Don’t move if you value this guy’s life! Or else do you want to see what a smashed tomato looks like?」

Hajime-san pulled out Donner and grinded it to the forehead of the sky king-sama.

It was totally the scene of a criminal taking hostage.

「What vulgarity!」

「Don’t you have any tears or blood!?」

「This guy has misplaced his human emotions somewhere!」

Reproaches flooded from the divine spirits. The celestial people too said 「This damn demon-」「Coward!」「Fight fair and square!」「When people mention brute and savage they refer to you!」 and so on. Criticism comments flew like a barrage.

In that place that was like a bed of nails, Haijme went 「Hmm」 and nodded once then,

「It doesn’t matter if you win-」

That line that felt like it would be said by a vampire princess somewhere was asserted with a smug face, full of confidence, without any shred of shame and chest puffed out proudly.

But there, Astrus who was leaking out a pained voice started to emit some kind of light.

「Divine spirit-sama! Don’t mind me, shoot down this monster! My proud and noble people of the sky! The imperial command has been given! Then fulfill your mission! That’s the way of us celestial people! Exterminate the vermin!」

It seemed he used a skill that borrowed the power of some kind of spirit――a spirit art. Even while his throat was constricted and his body’s freedom was also taken away by the electricity flowing through his body, Astrus desperately broadcasted spiritual words that resounded through the whole area.

Such readiness that didn’t value his own life……

And then, Hajime-san who was holding a gun to the head of such person, taking him hostage……

It was truly a terrible scene.

「Oy you, don’t speak like I’m the bad guy here. Even this is the result of me racking my brain in order to hold you guys back without hurting any of you.」

‘If that’s the case, then it’s even more excessively fiendish……’, surely the divine spirits and also the celestial people were thinking that.

Laila raised her voice while crying.

「It can’t be helped! O children of the sky! O devout leader of these children! Thy feeling, we will not let it go to waste no matter what!」

「It’s……my greatest……honor-」

He said the last words with his own voice. The sky king Astrus forced himself to smile.

In respond to that, one of the celestial people who was most likely the army leader, a noble youth wearing a silver armor yelled with a resolved expression that was shedding tears.

「Don’t let the will of the king to go to waste! The whole army, reverse direction! Leave that monster to the divine spirit-sama and spirit beasts, we will carry out the extermination of the vermin!」

‘UOOOOOOOOOOH’, the whole army of celestial people chased Shia and others like suicidal soldiers who put their life on line following their dying king’s last command.

At the same time, the spirit beasts who slipped through the violence of number from Cross Velts and Grim Reapers rushed Hajime.

In addition, the divine spirit of dusk Laila changed the black mist she was clad in into several thousand spears and fired them. The divine spirit of flowing sky Enti wrenched away the air from Hajime’s surrounding, the divine spirit of ice and snow Barahu made the surrounding space into absolute zero, while the divine spirit of ocean current Merees fired his breath like lines of laser.

「It won’t be that easy as I thought……」

Hajime let out a small sigh. He pulled the trigger of Donner.

To above.

Instantly, Hajime’s figure vanished.

——Special bullet　Exis Bullet

It was a special bullet that completely switched the position between bullets or the position of Hajime with the bullet. The bullet moved in lightning speed. Therefore it also became possible for Hajime to move in pseudo lightning speed.

Hajime gently (?) kicked away the sky king along with the Pegasus just before teleporting, so when the attack rushed in, they only ended up becoming stain on the ground. They are still alive so it’s fine!

「Kuh, we’ll take revenge, no matter what-」

The leader of celestial people’s army was flying while gritting his teeth due to the king’s extremely tragic situation. That man was none other than the sworn fated enemy of the celestial people, he swore that after carrying out the mission he would use any kind of method to exterminate Hajime.

All the other celestial people felt the same with him. Their eyes were similarly filled with resentment.

「No matter what we have to do, no matter……」

The army leader suddenly remembered. The hero girl from another world that they were chasing. Their sworn enemy came here chasing after that woman. They also kissed before this. In other words, she was a really important existence for him.

「Kukuh, so there is actually a good way to carry out the mission and divine punishment at the same time……」

From the slight darkness in the eyes of the army leader along with the spasm on his mouth, it was obvious in a glance just what was he thinking about. Do back what others do to you. If he served that monster the retributive justice, just how satisfying that would be.

Inside the head of the army leader, the scene of him trampling down that girl and tossing her in front of that sworn enemy was spreading.

He felt amused, really amused that it was unbearable.

As he thought, carrying out divine punishment to the inferior race was truly pleasant. This special privilege that was only allowed for the celestial people, it was something extremely wonderful.

Aah, he was looking forward to it. Really, really looking forward to it……

「Kukukuh, fuhahahah——bubeh!?」

The army leader became a stain on the wall.

He crashed on an invisible wall, midair. His nose was smashed, and his face’s bone broke. He was sticking midair like an awkward pantomime.

The same phenomenon occurred to all the celestial people flying in the lead of the army. They were sticking on an invisible wall. The impact from charging on it and the pain from their broken face, shoulders, and chest caused them to faint in agony.

And then, *slid, slid* they were gradually sliding down the invisible wall with only their blood could be seen sticking on it.

――108 Harassment Demon King-style　Welcome to My Battlefield

※The classmate’s naming => You cannot escape from the demon king-sama!

It was a simple harassment done by simply making several hundreds Cross Velts laying out super wide range space isolation type barrier. Currently, the space in a radius of three kilometers around Hajime as well as until the height of three kilometer was completely isolated.

Hajime feigned to take on the spirit beasts and celestial people while secretly positioning the Cross Velts inside the forest on the ground as well as moving them around the cliff.

By the way, it was first used when the illegal agents of a certain country in earth tried to make a move against the returnees. At that time, Shinji and Yoshiki who carelessly entered the range kept yelling「Let us outtt~, let us out from hereee~」 while hitting on the invisible wall.

With the cooperation of Tio who was the best in using metamorphosis magic, Hajime succeeded in developing the Grim Reaper – Bi○ Hazard version that he was completely fixated upon. And he released them inside the barrier at that time, so the two’s reaction was understandable. The Tyra○t was especially popular. To the degree that several people completely lost their SAN value.

Also, that was one of the 108 harassment demon king-style too, the name was “everyone died here you know”.

Back to the topic.

「Chief! Hang in there!」

「Guu, wha, what happened? What is going on?」

It must be healing spirit art. The army leader who was supported on other's shoulder and got wrapped in faint light barely kept his consciousness. He shook his head while muttering. 「We cannot advance! There is an invisible wall-」 The voice of his subordinate report even through the chaotic situation, the army leader was also feeling even more confused……

The next moment, *shiver* he felt a goosebump from his back. His instinct was turning on the alarm bells loudly. He was feeling it whether he wanted it or not.

The army leader turned around stiffly like a machine that hadn't been oiled forever.

There, a terrifying scenery was unfolding.

Everything, was red.

A crimson torrent was covering the sky. Like a muddy stream. Or perhaps, like a spreading dense fog.

And then, as though announcing the ill omen, a great number of crows flew out.

It was from the man laughing devilishly at the center of the crimson torrent. As though he was liberating the familiars he was keeping inside his body.

「I don't know what you're planning to do but, I'll blow away such thing!」

A dignified voice slightly encouraged the heart of the celestial people. Looking there, the divine spirit of flowing sky Enti was trying to scatter the crimson heavy fog that was starting to cover the sky using the tornado she produced.

The crimson mist was sucked in by the tornado in the blink of eye, it was hoisted up to the sky.

「–!? Enti-sama, don’t-!」

The army leader immediately yelled. He didn’t understand it himself, but in any case he understood that it was a bad move.

He knew it instinctively. And also, because of the laugh of the sworn enemy.

However, that warning came late.

「Eh? Wh, why!?」

「Tsu, since when the space was locked!?」

Enti was shaken, while Barahu noticed and yelled.

Ahead of their gaze, the hoisted up crimson fog crashed on the invisible ceiling. The fog was carried furiously by the wind and spread out all at once.

「Just fall down already!」

Laila fired a storm of shadow spear. As though to declare that in any case, it wouldn’t matter what he was trying to do if they killed him.

But, the next instant,

「Gofuh……eh?」

Laila was dumbfounded with her mouth staying half open at the fact that she was vomiting blood.

"Ouch, wha, what? My body feels hurt-"

"What's this? Inside my body, something……"

Enti and Barahu also stopped moving because of the bewilderment from the pain suddenly running through their body.

In addition,

"Gahah"

The army leader also vomited a lot of blood. No, not just him, all the celestial people also started to writhe in agony.

That abnormality didn't stop at just the celestial people and divine spirits, it also reached the spirit beasts. The enormous and powerful beasts were starting to rage in agony on the whole.

It was like they were in a nightmare. The countless crows flying around right beside or above them were furthering the disappearance of their sense of reality.

"Dispel your materialization! Reconstruct your form! Don't inhale the fog!"

The roared advice came from Merees who spoke out words for the first time since coming here. He was the most taciturn among the divine spirits, even his brethren almost never heard his words. And now his voice was filled with anxiety.

Just as they were told, the divine spirits transformed, Laila into black fog, Enti into whirling wind, Barahu into ice and snow, and Merees into water current. Then they immediately reconstructed their physical body. After that, they shut out the mist in their respective way.

By doing that, the pain just now was gone as though it was only a lie.

Because of the barrier, even the space inside the sea became limited, so his body meandered to the land and crawled up.

And then, his eye glint stabbed at Hajime who was calmly standing in the center of a flock of crow.

「You bastard, as expected you aren't human. What terrifying thing you've done」

「Hee, as expected from a god. To think you'll resist by reconstructing your body.」

Hajime didn't sound as disappointed as his words suggested, he replied with a really leisurely tone.

「You bastaarrd, what did you doo-」

The army leader tried to throw a spear of light that he instantly constructed with spirit art. But, Hajime only gave it a glance and lightly waved his hand. In that instant the army leader fainted in agony from the pain inside his body.

Laila watched that sight loathingly while answering in exchange.

「This is……metallic fragment……so small it cannot be seen by eyes」

□Right answer□

The metal dust that had invaded into the body penetrated until inside the blood vessels, shredding the target from inside. If Hajime wanted, he could also use the crow type artifact “Ornis” as relay point to adjust the dust using “Convergence Transmutation”, making the metal dust inside the body reacted and gave only intense pain without killing the target. By the way, the crimson light was optional!

The metal dust was clad with crimson light, becoming heavy fog that covered the world. The living organism inside that territory would have the inside of their body within the grasp of the demon king, at the same time their right to live or die was also wrestled away from them.

This was named,

——108 Harassment Demon King-style The Demon King is So Red Like This

The demon king’s gentle binding that made them hovering between life and death was completed here.

At the very least, the tens of thousands of spirit beasts and the whole army of celestial people were completely neutralized =.

Shudders ran through their whole body. Everyone instinctively escaped from accepting this kind of reality. The spirit beasts instinctively accepted their defeat and they could only tremble.

Amidst that,

□Don’t worry, you guys won’t die, I also won’t kill you. That’s why, accompany me for a bit more. Until those guys

accomplished their objective, okay?□

The invitation of the man who was even more demonic from the demon himself reached the divine spirits who were the only ones able to move inside this crimson hell.

□……Mother. Our deepest apologies. It doesn't look like we will be able to go to where you are.□

Those words of Laila told the state of the mind of the divine spirits more eloquently than anything.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

When I started writing Hajime-san, I had fun that the number of words unconsciously inflated.

No, well, I always had fun every time that no matter what I wrote the number of words would increase though (sweat)

I'm sorry but, Shia arc will continue for a bit more.

※Introduction of the inspiration material

– Everyone died here you know

=> The lovely line from the Bi○ Hazard movie's Red Queen-chan

– The demon king is so red like this

=> From the paralyzing line of a certain charisma vampire lady of Touho○

Setting that aside, it’s the information of new books launching at 25 December!

- Left: The front cover of volume 9 of the main story. It’s the ice and snow cavern. From the main cover it goes without saying who the main character will be. This time other than correction and modification, there is also new extra story too included. It will make me happy if you’re looking forward to it. Especially those who like Shizuku!
- Right: The front cover of the comic’s volume 4 of the main story. It reaches until VS Miledy. This time I also write an SS at the end of the volume. Just like usual, it’s a story from Yue’s POV. Please look forward to RoGa-sensei’s overwhelming drawing ability, etc!

- Left: Nichijou volume 2! Shia's cover is cute! However, when you open the front cover……Mori-sensei, as expected lol. The world of nichijou that is a treasure trove of material for reimportation, I wish that you readers will obtain them no matter what!
- Right: Comic verson Zero volume 2. There is the final battle of Oscar arc. The impact is amazing. Miledy is annoying as usual, but in the comic version with Kouchi-sensei's skill she look cute. Kouchi-sensei, I'm overwhelmingly grateful!

It's also published at Overlap-sama's homepage.

Also, as usual, there will be special perk of SS included in each bookstore. When I learn the detail I will tell you readers.

Shirakome will be really happy if you have them as accompaniment around the New Year's holiday.

Best regards!

Arifureta Chapter 341

Arifureta After III　Brutal Hero Shia Arc　Decisive Battle Desuu!　First Part

.

Feelings of weightlessness attacked them at the time they were passing through the gate.

Shia and others were falling to the forest below them with the large army behind them, but as expected from the elite force. Not even one of them made a blunder that injured them, everyone safely landed inside the forest.

「Now! We are rushing through right away!」

Shia vigorously ordered with the roaring sound of battle behind. Without pause she took the lead and ran inside the forest.

The cloudy sky and the leaves of the thick forest interrupted the light of the sky. The inside of the forest was eerily dark. Louis immediately created light sphere that illuminated the front.

「GURYAAAAAAH」

A giant boar rushed from the side. It assaulted Shia with a charge that could destroy a five, six floored concrete building with one attack.

「Make wayyy! Desuu!!」

PAAN The sound of the air rupturing echoed while Shia unleashed an attack that surpassed the speed of sound with her war hammer. It crashed into the nose of the boar spirit beast. Terrific shock waves was produced and the boar resisted for an instant, but Vire Drucken was swung to finish right after that.

The giant body was sent flying while snapping through trees. It was literally hit back toward the path it came from.

Shia twirled around and advanced forward as though nothing had happened.

「It looks like not the whole force was heading toward Hajime-san's direction. Everyone, please be careful!」

「O, of course!」

Eric responded as the representative, but if he was asked whether they could instant killed a giant boar like just now, it was really doubtful. He was more or less the strongest of Balted Kingdom, and the demon king along with the beast king were also here. They would have no problem just driving it away but, doing it without even a pause was really……

「Although, we cannot whine here. Your majesty Arogan, can I leave the left side to you?」

「Who are you speaking to. We will take care of this side no matter what comes.」

「Then leave the rear to us of the beast kingdom.」

In respond to Louis’s words, Arogan slightly recovered his thoroughly broken pride and began to focus at the left side along with the elites of his country, while the people of beast kingdom under Gruelle started to take responsibility for the rear.

Eric pulled out the divine spirit arms, the great sword Tarnada while opening his mouth.

「Dahlia, we will take care of the offense. I’ll leave the enemy search and support to you. After all you’re the best in those.」

「Got it. I won’t let anything to hinder Shia-sama.」

「……Eh? Dahlia, just now, you talked casually――」

‘What?’ the gaze from Dahlia wasn’t filled with even a shred of respect. Eric averted his gaze from that. At the same time he thought, ‘This girl, she has completely changed who her master is……’. Just where the emotion as childhood friend and the bond they had raised together until now had gone to……

What’s more, what’s more, that man! Or rather is it true that he has a daughter! Is it a daughter with Shia!? Is that it!?

「Your majesty……I understand your feeling but, right now focus.」

「My, my bad, Louis.」

「No, I really, understand your majesty feeling so well it’s painful goddammit bastard-」

Louis who always had polite bearing, the calm and collected wise and strongest person of the kingdom was naturally

letting out a curse that no one had ever heard from him even once before.

At the same time, a super offensive flame spear naturally flew out, stabbing at the giant monkey that leaped out from the right bush. Furthermore, the spear immediately burst into brightly burning blaze. It seemed that the spear at least avoided the spirit stone but, it was filled with frightful amount of power, a single attack of extreme killing intent.

It was as though the spear was grandly filled with the outburst of anger of Louis-san.

Eric pretended to not see it.

Shia glanced at the members behind her who were like that before addressing the golden slime, aka Udar who was on her right shoulder.

「For the time being we're heading to the center of the island but, is it alright?」

「Hm. This direction is correct.」

There, Shia suddenly noticed.

「Eh? Come to think of it, the star tree-san……it's unexpectedly small?」

In Shia's mind, the star tree was the center of the world so she imagined it to be gigantic. And then, for Shia when speaking about large tree, it would be the grand tree in her birthplace, Uralt.

From the image of the grand tree in her birthplace that boasted the height of more than 400 meters from the

ground, it shouldn’t be strange for the star tree to be visible from that cliff.

And yet, she couldn’t see it.

Dahlia who heard Shia’s muttering answered her.

「Shia-sama! In the book it’s mentioned that the star tree-sama is a giant tree that pierced the sky!」

Then, why couldn’t they see it……

「Obviously because it’s in hiding.」

The one who brought the answer was the red slime, aka the divine spirit of fire circle Soare who was spreading limply on Shia’s head.

The condescending way of speaking caused the expression of Eric and others to turn complicated. They put up their guard vigilantly against the surrounding while lending their ear.

「Hah, it’s pointless even if you make that kind of face. The likes of you all――」

「Soare-san, Soare-san, what do you mean?」

「-!? Yo, you want me to teach you?」

For some reason, slime Soare was jiggling weakly. Her atmosphere was like a girl who was fidgeting when getting spoken to by a person she was interested to.

「Yes. Please teach me, Soare-san.」

「Wha, what to do now? I’m, not a cheap woman like that after all? Bu, but, if Shia really want to know no matter

what――□

□A barrier. Mother can interfere with space. She is distorting the space to hide her appearance.□

□Orosss-!!□

The earth colored slime――the divine spirit of earth Oros who was riding on the left shoulder easily gave the answer. The figure of Soare-san going □Mukiii~~~□ while biting on a handkerchief could be easily imagined.

It seemed she wanted to give the answer to Shia. The revenge for the snatching of that role came in the form of her materializing small fire balls with puffing sound *popopo* which she threw toward Oros.

Soare-san who received the whip of the demon king before being given the carrot from his wife was completely lowering her guard toward Shia……and it didn’t stop there, she was trying to attract Shia’s attention like a girl in puberty.

What an easy god. She should be called the divine spirit of fire circle Choare-san. (TN: Combination from choroi (easy/simple) and Soare.)

Shia smiled wryly at such Choare while and asked further in order to console & erase her worry.

□Er~r, Soare-san. That barrier, is it a type that won’t allow physical approach?□

□! Yes, yes, most likely it’s something like that. In order to protect herself from the ugly attack of that ugly man too, surely mother did something like that.□

‘How’s that, the one Shia is asking! The one Shia is relying on! Is this Soare-san!’ As though to say that, Choare puffed up her chest (?) *poyon* and answered. She had no eyes, but it was obvious that her focus was directed to Oros. Oros was emitting an atmosphere that seemed to say 「Annoying」 to a great degree.

There was already not a trace left of her vestige at the beginning. Over there was a really hopeless god.

Toward such hopeless Choare, Shia’s voice was……

「Ugly man?」

The word that was implicitly saying 「What are you doing dissing a person’s husband, huhh」 caused Choare to twitch and jiggle.

「–!? Wha, what!? That’s the truth! Aa!? You want to have a go-, youuu-! I’m telling you it’s pointless even if you make scary voice like that! Aa!?」

Choare hopped *pyon* and leaped to the chest of Dahlia who was running right behind.

Dahlia was completely bewildered from the divine spirit clinging on her. Even throughout history, a member of human race embracing a slime divine spirit was really rare. Dahlia was slightly trembling at the miraculous situation even while holding Choare firmly in her arms.

That Choare was trembling even more intensely than Dahlia. The parts that stretched out elastically from both her sides were covering her head (?) while she was shaking all over. It looked exactly like a divine spirit charis○ guard……

Rather than a bluff, it was already just an emotionally unstable god.

「Aa~, it’s alright, Soare-san. I’m not angry at you.」

「.....Really?」

「It’s true~」

As expected, seeing the figure of the extremely pitiful god (temp), Shia smiled wryly while beckoning with her hand. Choare glanced and jiggled several times as though asking 「Really, really? You aren’t lying? You aren’t planning to do terrible thing to me when I return after you told me you aren’t angry?」.

By the way, the spirit beasts were attacking even during this moment. Most of them were taken care of by Shia casually, but Eric and others were relatively desperate with their part.

It was a truly indescribable scene amidst the tension and the roaring sound of battle.

The one who first sighed was her brethren.

「Ah!? Udar!? What are you doing! I’m not that kind of cheap woman who will return that easily for he——ah, stop it, Oros! You are calling yourself a divine spirit while doing something like thi——Ah!?」

Leaving Shia’s shoulders, Udar fired electricity that paralyzed Choare, and using that opening Oros violently grabbed and threw her.

Poyon Choare returned to the top of Shia’s head. Like that she limply melted out *mojowa~* and became unresponsive, like a corpse.

「Sa, say, Oros-san? Udar-san? Soare-san is unresponsive there.」

「We directly pounded honesty into her to make her quiet.」

「Shia, don't mind it. We were just unable to watch her just now.」

「I, I see. No, but still. On my head a slime is spreading out like it's splattered there, so I'm normally bothered though……」

It was like she was being eaten by a slime from her head.

Eric who hit back a large divine spirit beast in the form of bee with his divine spirit arms muttered with a faraway look even while breathing slightly roughly.

「Hey, Louis. Can you believe it? Those people, the divine spirits……」

「Your majesty, I know what you want to say.」

「I, was desperate, for the sake of today, this day. Even now, I'm risking my life……」

「I knooow really well what you want to say. Please keep your composure.」

Right now they should be in the middle of mankind salvation plan. Ahead of this path, the answer whether human's fate would meet its end or not was waiting.

Within such critical moment, in such extreme situation, why were they watching an unprecedented strange occurrence like a comedy skit of divine spirits……

Arogan and others of the demon race, and also Gruelle and others of the beast race were feeling exactly the same like Eric and co. It was the moment when their heart became one in the negative place.

While that was happening, light came into view ahead of the forest.

「We're going out of the forest! Mother is right before our eyes! Ready your resolve, o children of man!」

Udar's yell blew away the conflicted feeling of Eric and others.

Like that, the moment Shia rushed out of the forest,

「Tsu!?」

A vision of death. What came into view was a compressed space. Shaking atmosphere. And then, the maximum impact that thoroughly blew away the outer edge of the forest and the ground.

Quaking Sky
(Yue-san's space blasting!?)

Shia knew very well of the threat from shock waves that are brought about by space itself. If it was Shia then it was possible to weather it using "half-teleportation".

But, what about Eric and others?

There was no time to hesitate. Even if there was nothing that could be done, they would die if she didn't do it. It would be a violation of her promise to guide them toward the door that opened to the future.

That's why,

□SHAORAAAAAAAAAAH!!!□

She stepped firmly on the ground, blazed out her faint bluish white magic power, and entered Level X instantly.

Vire Drucken was swung with speed far surpassing the speed of sound, pulverizing the sound barrier to smithereens.

Just the after wave from that blew away Eric and others who rushed out from the forest right after Shia at this time. Shia was literally hammering a result into being.

The distorted and compressed space returned to normal, which produced a severe quake at the same time. Vire Drucken was pounded into the center of that, however, it didn’t swing through till the end but crashing into space itself, dealing a severe vibration to it.

——Shia-style Space Magic　Pseudo Gura Gu○ Fruit TN: (One Piece reference?)

She struck a bursting space with a bursting space of her own. At the center of that clash, the ground was hoisted up and the air burst out.

Even while Eric and others were struck back into the forest, they barely managed to lie down on the ground and clung on the plants, then they used divine spirit arms or spirit art to create barriers to endure the shock waves.

They felt as though they were thrust with the fact that humans couldn’t do anything at all. In a situation like this was a nightmare. Humans were only permitted to grovel on the ground like this, that was how they felt.

However, they were thinking like that was the proof that they were still in good health, what brought that on was,

「Shia-sama! Are you safe!?」

When the rampaging wind and shock wave settled down, Dahlia was the first one to raise her voice. Ahead of the ground that looked like it had been ploughed, she saw Shia standing imposingly.

「Cough」

Seeing Shia coughing, she was convinced that she was alive. Relief ran through her whole body. But, the red stain making a splat on the ground caused not only Dahlia, but everyone to be horrified.

「Kuuh, she really got me……」

Shia vomited blood. It seemed the technique that she invented on the spot was unable to completely neutralize the attack. Her body received much of the impact and became damaged.

「Shia-sama!」

「Shia!」

「Honorific」

「……Shia-dono!」

Eric and Dahlia spontaneously yelled. Shia’s correction instantly interrupted. She unexpectedly seemed to be alright.

「Are you safe, Shia?」

It seemed Choare was awakened by the impact. She was wriggling around on Shia’s head.

「Yes, I’m fine. Just this much will heal by itself even if I leave it alone. More importantly, is everyone okay?」

「We are……all present. Thank you, Shia, dono. You saved us.」

Pulverizing a shock wave that overturned heaven and earth right from the front, and not just that, even though she vomited blood she would heal even if it was left alone, what manliness. Eric and others let out a dry laugh while Dahlia looked ecstatic.

Shia was vigilant against any additional attack while looking around.

(Uwaa, this isn’t caused by the attack just now isn’t it……)

The scenery she saw was truly horrible.

Most likely, surely, this place that was surrounded by forest was originally a verdant plain, a tranquil place where pure small streams of a slender river could be heard running. There was no doubt that it was a place that truly like heaven.

Such place, now its ground was ploughed, countless rocks lied here and there or stabbing on the ground. At the center of those rocks were several craters. The green plain was carbonized and blackened, with black smoke rising up from several spots. The river was destroyed messily, with the ground turned into muddy state like in a wetland. The surrounding forest also had some place where fire was still burning.

It was exactly a place of tragedy that was just visited by a cataclysm.

Of course, that cataclysm was meteor, and the culprit was Shia’s hubby. It could be said that it couldn’t be helped, at that point of time it was like an inevitability but, when Shia saw this disastrous scene, she couldn’t help from leaking out a strange voice 「Uboa」 .

「……No matter what kind of conclusion that mother decided, that man won’t bring destruction. That’s right isn’t it?」

Oros confirmed once more. ‘You can really, definitely, 100% hold back that demonic man right?’, he asked like that with a bit of desperation in his voice.

「If I’m beaten up viciously, or I die, or those kinds of thing happen, I won’t be able to guarantee it but……surely it’ll be fine!」

「…….I’m worried.」

Oros held his head like Choare before this. He thought, ‘Really, just what terrible existence the children of man called her’.

「Anyway, let’s go! After all I cannot cover for everyone from that kind of impact every time!」

Eric and others recovered from their speechless state hearing Shia’s order and they followed behind the running Shia.

Like before, they couldn’t see anything at the center of the plain. What was reflected on their eyes were only the river at the other side, the mountains, and the cloudy sky.

But, Shia certainly sensed it.

Her rabbit ears were twitching, listening to the sound of wind. The movement of the wind at the center zone was obviously strange. She could hear the sound of the wind being partitioned by an invisible wall and flowing to other direction.

「Shia, what'll you do?」

Udar represented the others and asked. He asked how would they entered to the place that was isolated spatially.

「I'll smash it.」

「……Of course it is.」

Udar jiggled as though to say 'Of course you'll say that~'.

Shia stood at the boundary line that her rabbit ears informed her the position of, and brandished Vire Drucken high above her. What she would do was the same like before, a strike technique that directly struck at the space.

「Good afternoon! We come visiting!!」

Knock knock knock

The war hammer was giving a knocking that was extremely troublesome for the residence behind the door. The first attack cracked space itself, but a panicked repair was done immediately. But, the second attack immediately came. The crack spread even further. The third attack caused the destructive sound like glass breaking to resound.

The sigh that came into view ahead of them caused Eric and others to hold their breath.

「That's……the star tree Lutria-sama……」

「What splendor……」

「Beautiful……」

It was a gargantuan tree. A giant tree that must be reaching 400 meter above ground. The trunk was extremely thick, and the root couldn’t be seen. It was as though the root was deep inside the earth, as though what could be seen from the ground was from the middle of its trunk.

The leaves and branches were extending largely, giving the impression of a broad-mindedness that would envelope everything.

It was imperturbable, solemn, like a tree of star towering high at the center of the world that anyone couldn’t help but watching it in fascination.

Although, it was also clear that it was exhausted. The leaves looked like they had lost their vibrancy, and even the number itself looked few. It was in a state that couldn’t be said as “thriving” at all.

The trunk and branches were also dry, giving impression that it was somewhat like a dead tree.

Because of that, after feeling moved, the emotion that surfaced next inside Eric and others was sorrow.

Eric and others were at a lost of word.

But, their stupor was erased by a flustered voice that they had never heard until now.

「……Eh? Ho, ho……w? Eh? No way, an accidental resemblance with another person, I mean other giant tree?」

Yes, it was Shia who was shaken.

The unexpected look of Shia who was unperturbed no matter what time it was caused wondering gaze to gather.

But, Shia looked like she had no presence of mind to care about that.

Perhaps that couldn’t be helped.

After all, the tree was just too similar. With the tree of her birthplace that she was familiar with. The giant tree that had continued to stay withered without rotting since far away in the past, so big that it contained a great dungeon inside it, which showed its solemn figure due to regeneration magic――the grand tree Uralt.

Was it a coincidence?

No, obviously it was a coincidence. If not then what would it be?

Eric and others were also bewildered seeing the bewildered Shia……

There,

「I’m unable to stop you……so, my fate has come to an end――」

A voice that echoed in the world resounded.

「My beloved children. Is that, the choice that you have made?」

It was a cool and clear voice that seemed transparent. However, it was a sad voice that emitted bitterness and despair somewhere in it.

“My beloved children”——anyone understood that those words weren’t directed to Eric and others.

The will of star tree Lutria was directed to the three divine spirits clinging on Shia.

Udar lightly floated while making his thought echoed.

「Mother, I abandoned my mission even while knowing of your anguish, I won’t ask you to forgive me for that. Still, mother, can you please listen to these children’s words just one more time?」

The star tree didn’t answer. Oros stepped forward at that interval of silence.

「I’m……I’m, unable to discover hope from the children of man. I’m here in this state because of my insufficient strength. If you believe that I’m unworthy as a divine spirit, then I will accept any kind of punishment that you decide. However mother, I only wish to ask you one thing. Are you really, not going to listen to the words of the children of man anymore?」

Actually, in this moment, wasn’t it the star tree Lutria who wished to listen to the words of the children of man one more time? That was the only source of hesitation that was remaining inside Oros’s heart.

But as expected, the star tree Lutria didn’t answer.

「I, I’m……」

Soare tried to say something, however, she was unable to find any words and held her tongue. In her heart, she didn’t believe in something like the children of man reforming

themselves. If she spoke honestly, she was simply in this situation because of her insufficient strength like Oros.

However, if she was asked whether she really didn’t feel anything at all, then she also wouldn’t be able to say anything. For the current Soare, she couldn’t find any reason to deny the wish of Eric and others who wished to express their atonement even if they wouldn’t be forgiven.

The hesitation that was shown for the first time by Soare who previously had no such doubt also wasn’t responded by the star tree Lutria.

In exchange,

「It can’t be helped」

She only made her voice that was colored with very deep sadness to resound,

「–!? Mother!」

「——tsu」

「Aa……」

「Wawah, Udar-san!? Oros-san, Soare-san!」

The three divine spirits scattered around particle while shining and vanishing. The surprised Shia anxiously thought if the star tree judged that the three might be betraying her and terminated them, but looking closer, she could see three faint lights inside the trunk of the star tree.

It seemed the star tree was taking in Udar and others into inside her.

She wondered just what was her intention……

That intention immediately became clear to see.

「I will resist, for the sake of the world. O woman of another world, know that my determination will never break.」

The star tree emitted light. Like the figure of brilliantly shining great tree in legend.

From the middle of that gigantic trunk, a human form appeared as though in substitution of Udar and others who were sucked in.

The converging light was gradually obtaining clearer form.

「……The star tree, Lutria's……avatar」

Someone whispered.

It was beautiful. It even made everyone held their breath. It was extremely sublime.

Pure white garment, and snow white long hair. The skin was also white like snow, with faint light enveloping it. A great number of white spherical lights were revolving around her, like a star that was being served by many satellites.

Within the star tree Lutria that was displaying pure white from her everything, there was just one point, it was only her eyes that were slightly shining silver. Inside those eyes were sadness, and despair, and then resolve.

They distinguished it at least.

That just words would be impossible to do anything at this late.

If that was possible, then something like a divine punishment wouldn't be handed down in the first place. A

lot of children of man wouldn’t be killed. The decision that was handed down to the children of man who wouldn’t stop no matter how many times she exhausted all her words, wasn’t something which was that simple.

That decision was truly, the very last method that the star tree Lutria passed with a feeling as though her own heart was torn apart.

Surely, for Lutria it was like tearing apart her own body in proportion of how many the children of man were killed. Because she loved them, no, surely she was still loving them even now.

However, the world was already cornered to a despairing degree.

That was why, the mother wouldn’t stop. There was no way, she could stop.

The children of man, the children that she loved, she would——destroy them.

In order to save all other living things. For the sake of the future.

「That kind of future, it’s just too sad.」

Future was something that should be weaved for the sake of happiness.

At the very least, Shia lived believing that.

That was why,

「Star tree Lutria, prepare yourself! This Shia Hauria will beat that kind of future to death!」

‘I’ll make you lend a rabbit ear with means of brutality desuu!!’ Such fighting spirit was boiling up.

The signal of the start of battle was the shower of white light that Lutria fired.

Shia stepped on midair while charging into that maelstrom.

「I’ll fulfill my promise! Please show me-, how you oppose the fate!」

The words that Shia yelled were transmitted.

Shia’s words, and her figure that was sending back the destructive white light was so heroic it stirred the soul. It gave a kick on the butt to Eric and others.

「Tsu, Louis! The offering and the ceremony of prayer!」

「By your will! Move toward the root of the star tree!」

Balted force started running. Eric turned a sharp gaze toward Arogan and Gruelle and their men who were about to break into a run too.

Even without words, what he wanted to say was conveyed. Arogan smiled bitterly.

「I get it. After losing Tyrant and seeing the hero has no intention to take down the god, we have no other way except changing our plan. We won’t harbor unneeded ambition at this time.」

Those were really calculating words. But, it was far better compared to them using transparent words like 「We are repenting」 at this place.

Gruelle also shrugged and nodded. Fitting for an opportunism, he seemed intent to protect the previous promise of fully following the lead of Balted Kingdom.

Eric nodded to that and immediately followed behind Louis and others.

The knights of Balted Kingdom were each carrying a baggage on their back. They took out several large orbs that were two sizes bigger than a fist.

Originally, even a big spirit stone would only be as big as the tip of a thumb. From that it could be seen how absurdly big they were, they were worthy to be called as “treasured orb”. Naturally, they were filled with enormous spirit element that was collected from the populace.

Eric kneeled in front of the star tree. He put his hands together in front of his chest in a praying posture and began to pray with closed eyes wholeheartedly. At the same time, Louis used the art of restoration toward the spirit element stored inside the precious orbs.

Light particles rose from the piled up orbs, returning back to the star tree.

「Mother of all, star tree Lutria-sama! I beg you, please listen to our repentance-」

Eric’s words resounded.

There was something responding.

「Tsu, your majesty!」

Louis’s voice was tinged with anxiety. When he looked back over his shoulder, there was a spirit beast dragon forming

from the ground right at that time. It opened its jaw and spirit element was visibly converging there.

「Prompt execution――”Wind’s Palisade”」

The one who moved the fastest was the demon king Arogan. The wind barrier that was focused on deployment speed blocked the dragon’s breath……but, as expected from a spirit beast existing in the turf of the star tree, it was in a different level.

Arogan’s barrier was easily scattered.

「The element is earth, compressed state, hardening formula triplication! ――”Rampart”!!」

Just before the barrier was blown away, a thick stone wall rose up like a rampart from the ground.

Surprisingly, the caster was Dahlia. It seemed she anticipated that Louis would be focused on the ceremony of offering and so she guarded the rear.

Dahlia’s barrier was firm, it was blocking the dragon’s breath even while it was getting shaved.

But, they couldn’t feel relieved from that.

「Tch, as expected we won’t even be allowed to make a single repentance huh……」

Arogan muttered with a bitter expression. Ahead of his gaze, the ground here and there was squirming. Those spots were taking shape, not just dragon, but also lion or bull. In addition, powerful spirit beasts were coming out in succession from the surrounding forest.

Eric’s expression twisted sorrowfully while he took the great sword Tarnada into his hand and stood up.

Since it had come to this, he was intending the other to continue the ceremony while they held back the assault of the spirit beasts. On the sky above, clashing sound and flashes were still flying around grandly. It was the proof of Shia fighting against the star tree, but conversely she had no leeway to face the spirit beast on the ground too.

「In the first place, the promise is to open the path until the star tree……we can only do this now.」

Eric who said those words was stopped by Gruelle’s hand.

「No, you continue your prayer. We will take them on.」

「……What?」

Gruelle smiled wryly at the suspicious Eric while transforming into dragon.

「……All this time, it was only you who was purely calling out for repentance and reformation. Rather than the prayer of a hundred of us, the prayer of you alone will be more resounding in the heart. In that case, we will at least do everything in our power for your sake.」

「……I’ll believe in those words. Take care.」

Eric nodded after a slight hesitation. He turned his back on the approaching spirit beasts and kneeled once more. And then, he began to offer his prayer wholeheartedly.

Gruelly’s wry smile deepened at that straightforward attitude. Arogan seemed to understand what was the

meaning of that smile, he made the same expression while starting to face the spirit beasts.

「Facing against the spirits beasts that are mighty without equal without breaking their spirit stone while they can revive endlessly, now then, how far we will be able to resist……」

While he muttered such thing.

.

.

.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I couldn’t make time because of my busy schedule due to moving home, so I was unable to write it to the finish.

With regard to how the story doesn’t really advance, it will be a great help if everyone can look at it magnanimously (sweat)

※Comic Gardo update information

– Nichijou chapter 29　Suzu really hit the bull’s eye from Shirakome’s view lol

It’s in the middle of free distribution at Overlap-sama’s homepage, so please go take a look no matter what.

※New book information

The four book below will be simultaneously released at 25 December

Improvement, revision, and extra story will be included in the main story’s volume 9 just like usual.

The main story comic version as well as Zero comic version also have side story at the end of the volume like usual. They will be from Yue’s view and Miledy’s view, story about recollection of their travel.

I’ll be happy if you can enjoy them.

.

※The information about the side story for each bookstore has come so I’ll report it.

– Chain store-sama

[Sky Hotspring Panic]

=>What a surprise, Fernir was equipped with a hot spring. Naturally a commotion occured when it was used. ‘Shizuku, you, saw it huh!’ It’s that kind of story.

– Animate-sama

[Fea Bergen’s Passionate Night]

=>That night, the jealousy of the female camp of Hauria exploded……

‘I am Yue. A woman who is prepared even for war if it’s for the sake of my friend’s lovely memory! Come at me, Hauria and everyone else!’It’s that kind of story.

[Arifureta Folk Tale ~Momotaro~] (※Joint special perk)

=>I hope everyone can enjoy the cast. A hint just for one person: 「Momotaro-san! I want thou to call me dog!」 Something like that.

– Tora no Ana-sama

[Fea Bergen’s Passionate Night]

[Arifureta Magic Academy ~The Club Invitation of the Academy’s Explosive Four~] (※Joint special perk)

=> Myuu who enrolled went to choose club activity. Papa’s recommendation is the cooking club that is led by Yuuka who isn’t a problem child and also family oriented……of course, there is no way the explosive girls will leave this alone. It’s that kind of story.

– Gamers-sama

[Fea Bergen’s Passionate Night]

[The Insane Transmutation Master-san Inside the Forest] (※Joint special perk)

=>The equipment of Kouki and others that were demonically remodeled before departing to the cave of ice and snow. It’s a story related to that creation.

[The Greatest Piece] (※Joint special perk)

=>It seems this is a special perk for those who purchased two of Zero series. The content is also the content of Zero.

It’s a reminiscence before meeting Nize while looking at the photo from Oscar’s artifact. Most are photo of Miledy committing terrorism but…the last piece that Oscar didn’t show is……it’s that kind of story.

– Melon Books-sama

[The Anniversary of Nightmare]

=>Everyone talked of the memory of anniversary related to Christmas. The trauma that is mentioned like it’s only

natural……it’s that kind of story.

[Fea Bergen’s Passionate Night] (※Joint special perk)

.

That’s all.

Is there any story that you are interested?

I’ll be happy if you can enjoy them.

Best regards!

Arifureta Chapter 342

Arifureta After III　Brutal Hero Shia Arc　Decisive Battle Desuu!　Second Part

.

「Hyowaaaaaah!?」

The space shifted. At the same time her own body was also split apart.

When Shia got goosebumps from such vision of death while twisting her body, a vision of death from getting swallowed by meteor shower of white light attacked her.

She stepped and stepped midair. The downpour of meteor passed through whiel grazing her clothes and skin sizzlingly.

――You won’t get away

The instant it felt like she heard such voice, she felt a jerking sensation of her getting pulled backward.

「Unnyiih!!」

When she looked back across her shoulder, a vortex of black shadow――a gravity field was deployed to swallow Shia. She

wrung out her strength and escaped from the gravity field using physical strength.

Shia leaped toward the sky, then even more vision of death came to her.

Without any ripple in the air or even any sound, a tranquil impact would burst at the deepest part of her body――it would shake her soul and made her fell into stupefaction. A spear of white light would pierce her at that time. Such sight surfaced before her.

「Dangerous-, desuu!」

She immediately entered Level IX. At the same time, she also strengthened her soul using soul magic.

Right after that, an impact that shook her soul caused Shia to catch her breath. Even so, her vast experience made her leaped aside in the subconscious level, allowing her to dodge the spear of white light.

「Doing something like that this late……」

The strained words of the star tree Lutria. Those words weren’t directed to Shia. Her gaze was taken off from Shia, and moved toward Eric and others who were performing the ceremony of offering and repentance at the root of the star tree’s main body.

One hand of star tree Lutria was waved. Just with that, an extremely thick lighting was generated and attacked Eric and others.

「I won’t let you!!」

Using “Revelation Sight” that was a derivation of characteristic magic “Future Sight”, Shia saw a few seconds ago the sight of star tree Lutria throwing lightning. She cut into the firing line with super speed.

Her body received the lightning strike as lightning rod substitution. She let out a pained voice 「Uguu」, but she activated “Fighting Spirit (Steel) Defense (Clothes)” so the wound was trivial.

But, the star tree Lutria wasn’t particularly bothered that her lightning strike was blocked and she produced a blazing light at the tip of her hand.

「Tha, that’s Soare-san’s――」

‘Sunlight beam attack’, without even any time to mutter that, the beam fell. For Shia who specialized in close quarter combat, protecting her ally from wide range attack was an area she wasn’t good at.

And so, attack was the greatest defense! She practiced that tenet. *Gashon* With that sound Vire Drucken was readied into the bombarding mode. The bursting slug bullets that were fired rapidly attacked the star tree Lutria accurately.

「――tsu」

Star tree Lutria immediately created a barrier using white light that she made to circle around her like satellite. But the quality ordnance that was made by demon king of another world blew away that barrier and forced back the star tree Lutria herself.

The sunlight beam attack was barely avoided. But, right after that a tornado of ice and snow along with several thousand black spears were fired toward the ground. In

addition, even a tsunami appeared from empty air as though to make doubly sure.

「A, as expected from the mom of everything……」

Without a doubt, the star tree Lutria could use the power of all divine spirit.

Perhaps that was only natural. But, it was a reality that she hoped wouldn’t be the case.

Anxiety surfaced on the expression of Shia who came to a stop midair.

What she had to do wasn’t simply to defeat the opponent before her eyes. To “protect” was something extremely difficult. It would be easy to say that this was simply not the role for her, but in this situation she really appreciated once more how difficult it was the thing that Hajime and others did while looking so nonchalantly, especially Tio with her vocation of “Protector”.

Although, she couldn’t complain here.

「If I have to do it, then I can only do it!!」

It didn’t matter what kind of hand she was dealt with. She was only deciding what she could do and what she couldn’t do by her own convenience here. She was simply being imprisoned by common sense that was limiting herself.

While the enormous and destructive attack of Lutria was rushing closer, Shia who desperately thought of a countermeasure within her consciousness that was accelerated with her concentration――

Stretched her limbs to be spread-eagled midair!

Perhaps she had resolved herself and intended to receive the attack with her whole body? She couldn’t protect the people on the ground by doing such thing, the star tree Lutria thought. But at the next moment,

「GET LOSTTTTTTTTTTT-, DESUU!!!」

Something came out. From Shia’s whole body, an intense light flashed blindingly.

And then, of all things to happen, the advancing tornado of ice and snow along with the thousands of black spears and tsunami were blown away altogether.

「……Eh?」

The star tree Lutria’s 「Eh?」 that might be her first time saying that since she was born echoed.

That was just how incomprehensible what happened was.

「Haa, haa, I, I can do it if I try!」

What had she done? The answer to that was,

——Shia-style magic power emission　Eternal Shia Fever

It was the imitation of an attack of a certain lump of muscles bugged character that was really incomprehensible but still really amazing.

More accurately speaking, it was an attack that dealt physical destructive power through emitting magic power and vibrating that emitted magic power……surely it was still really incomprehensible even with that explanation. Anyway it was a really amazing bugged technique.

If blood and hair could be controlled, than even magic power should be controllable too because it was also a part of herself! Then, I should be able to copy even Hajime-san's "Magic Shockwave"! That musclebrained thought of Shia gave birth to the technique just now.

The star tree Lutria was making an expression that wanted to say 「That's impossible」 really loudly, but even then she immediately changed her face to a grim one and prepared to attack again.

But, she witnessed it before that. For some reason Shia didn't use her war hammer, instead she drew back her right fist to the limit. The instant star tree Lutria was astonished seemed to give the opening for counterattack to the bugged rabbit.

「Shii~~aaa~~~……Impactttt-!!」

While she still hadn't forgotten the sensation of success just now! As though to say that the bugged rabbit's second bugged technique came. And as expected, it was the imitation of the technique of a certain bugged muscled warrior-sama.

The faint bluish white light that flew out from the thrust out fist rapidly approached the star tree Lutria. Perhaps she wasn't used to battle, because she didn't dodge as expected but deployed a barrier of space isolation, but that was a bad move.

「——Uguh」

There was a crunching sound as though a glass was broken, at the same time the shockwave directly hit Lutria's solar plexus with a nice force. Her expression twisted and her body bent forward while she was blown away.

Muh, my kneading of the power is still shoddy. It need to be trained.

Shia said such unbelievable thing while swinging her Vire Drucken.

Perhaps because this was her first time getting “punched” since she was born in this world, the star tree Lutria stopped moving in an expression of her wariness.

But, at the same time, her expression became vexed seeing that the spirit beasts were still unable to remove Eric and others.

Shia said to Lutria who was like that.

I won’t let you pass. I’ll be your opponent until their words reach you.

The will that was solid, unwavering, and straightforward to the end stabbed Lutria even sharper than the attack just now.

That unwavering state was like a huge tree.

Perhaps it was because of that. Lutria’s refusal to listen crumbled for the first time, whether intentionally or unintentionally.

After this late, mere words won’t do anything.

Cold words that cut down the opposition. However, as expected, inside star tree Lutria’s eyes was a color as though she was enduring pain……

There, a faint voice resounded, as though to slip into the particles of light that were released by the star tree’s main

body.

——We’re sorry-. We human has betrayed your love-. We’re sorry-

Those were really pure words. There was not a single embellishment, not a shred of ulterior motive mixed into it, those were words dyed with genuine guilt. We’re sorry, we’re sorry, it was echoing over and over.

On the ground, while being protected by Arogan and others who were gradually getting tired with ever increasing wounds on their body, Eric was wholeheartedly offering his prayer. The spirit element that was gathered from the people throughout the country was fluttering up like souls climbing up to heaven.

Even without turning her gaze there, because Lutria’s true body was that huge tree over there, she should be able to see the figure of the young king kneeling before her.

As the proof of that, star tree Lutria *became expressionless.* As though she was forcefully holding down the anguish oozing out from within with her willpower.

「Aren’t those the words that you wanted to hear?」

「……」

Shia quietly asked. Star tree Lutria didn’t answer. In exchange, she unleashed her attack severely once more. Space rupture, gravity bullet, raging lightning……visions of death filled Shia’s mind to the brim.

She dodged, repelled, or swept them away while forming even more words.

「Haven’t you been waiting for that all this time!? Your face is looking that pained! Actually you don’t want to harm human! Haven’t you been looking forward for the time when they finally repent!?」

The space around star tree Lutria distorted. Using “Revelation Sight”, Shia foresighted what would happen at the next moment and descended toward the ground like cannon bullet.

Instantly, star tree Lutria appeared right before Eric’s eyes. At the same time, Shia impacted on the back of Lutria. Before star tree Lutria could swing down the hand of judgment, she was blown away to the sky once more with Vire Drucken.

「Shi, Shia……」

「Honorific」

Shia grinned at Eric whose eyes opened wide from almost getting killed just now and she jumped up once more.

Once more Shia faced Lutria who was grimacing and she opened her mouth.

「I told you. I’ll be your opponent until their words reach you.」

Indeed, she surely wouldn’t be able to do anything to the ground as long as she didn’t defeat the girl before her.

She couldn’t help but be convinced of that. In front of Shia who was overflowing with resolve and confidence, the star tree Lutria finally replied with words.

「The children of human is going forward to a future of destruction. As though it’s their destiny to do that.」

Not only the words of god, even the scream that the world raised didn’t reach them anymore.

「I realized. That in this world, there is also seed that cannot be left to exist in order to form the future.」

Just how much she had exhausted her words?

How many times she had remonstrated them?

Even so human didn’t stop.

Because they didn’t stop, the world reached the limit. At this rate, it would reach a point where the spirits were destroyed.

And then surely, human would keep going forward like that. They would brush aside nature, devour the animals, and arrive at destruction.

The future of human, or the future of all other lives?

「Do you think, I discarded them so easily?」

The eyes of star tree Lutria that glared at Shia. Just from looking at them made Shia felt like she would also sink into a sea of sadness.

「Look. Even at this point, the hearts of the children of man cannot become one.」

Her gaze was directed at Arogan and others of the demon race, and toward Gruelle and others of the beastman race. Lutria had seen through the inside of their heart. Although there was a feeling of repentance in their heart, it wasn’t an

expression of pure feeling, there was the calculation of wanting to be saved mixed inside.

「There can be no more forgiveness. A future where everything is destroyed just for the sake of the children of man has to be avoided.」

That was her persuasion to Shia. Don't get involved with this world more than this. A child of foreign world that suddenly appeared shouldn't meddle with the decision that was made after much anguish. I'm begging you so……

Those were Lutria's words of persuasion.

In respond to that, Shia,

「I'm not telling you to forgive them or anything.」

Said that while making a troubled smile.

「I only want you to listen to the feeling of Eric-san and others.」

「……What meaning is there in――」

「Is it no good if it doesn't have meaning?」

Star tree Lutria closed her mouth at Shia's question.

Shia let out the tension left her shoulders for a bit and added more words still with a troubled expression on her face.

「It's just as Lutria-san said, they, we, are human. We are unable to unite our feeling into one without a single exception like god.」

Yes, that was human. It was a race with a great diversity that couldn’t be helped no matter what. That was the true nature of the race that couldn’t be changed no matter what.

「It’s so foolish it’s astonishing. It’s so stupid that it makes you laugh. They are so full of fault that they are beyond saving, really.」

But,

「Lutria-san, did you feel your heart beating fast at what those foolish, idiot, and full of fault human built in the past?」

Exactly because they were so diverse, that they were building a future that couldn’t be imagined.

Was all of that made up from nothing but tragedy?

There was no way that was true. Plowing the farm, raising a culture, forming a society, progressing in what they couldn’t do one by one until they could do it, surely it made even god felt their heart danced in excitement. It should be that persistent effort and ambition that made her and other divine spirits loved the children of man.

「I won’t tell you to forgive them. I can’t tell you that. After all, I’m just an outsider. But, even so, Lutria-san. Isn’t it sad?」

「……Sad?」

Shia’s words might be latching to something within Lutria’s thought. She replied with a question. Just what was it that the girl of another world who was only an outsider at the end found sad?

「It’s sad. To not have your feeling conveyed until the very end.」

That was why,

「That’s why I’m here. That’s why I’m standing in your way. To let the mother and her children properly express their feeling to each other, no matter what is the result.」

That was all. Because Shia Hauria couldn’t allow something like people struggling for the future to sink into the mud of grief and sorrow at the end.

And then, the people that were struggling for the sake of the future wasn’t just humans, even the god was the same……

「Lutria-san, please listen carefully, just one more time. Don’t lump them all into a bundle of “children of man”, please listen to the hearts among them that are thinking of you.」

She didn’t need to be told that. The star tree Lutria thought. The reason was, because she was already hearing that voice all this time since the battle started.

She did her best to ignore it, she desperately covered her ears, because if she didn’t do that then her existence would collapse, but, she could hear it all this time. No, there was also image conveyed to her along with the spirit element that was stored within the precious orb.

——Lutria-sama-, I’m sorry-. Human’s greed hurt you!

It seemed to be the words of a merchant somewhere. A man past middle aged was kneeling and rubbing his forehead on the ground. Around him were a lot of people that were most likely his family and employees, kneeling like him.

——For divine punishment to come down like this, what have we humans done……

There were villagers who although their faces went pale, they didn’t try to stop offering their spirit element. Their faces that were colored with strong remorse looked like they wished to just vanish right away.

——Please, let this repentance reach you. Even if you won’t forgive us, please……

People from all over the city were bowing their head in front of a church somewhere. No, the way they bowed looked like it was nothing but despair toward themselves human that caused them to hang down their head in despair.

——I pray, that I will be given the chance to atone to the spirits

People with nice outfit were standing in front of an altar. They seemed to be noble. The sight showed them mustering their spirit element surpassing their limit. The amount they produced far surpassed the common people.

——Will you be unharmed if humans are gone?

There were nuns shedding tears of atonement while worrying about the mother Lutria.

A great number or children were behind those nuns. They were also praying wholeheartedly like the nuns.

Surely it was difficult to explain to them about the sin of humanity with their young age. It was impossible for them to comprehend and compensate for the sins of their predecessors of long time ago.

However, even those children, no, exactly because they were children there was something that they understood.

——God……we’re sorry for making you sad

Surely the god was crying ‘it hurts, it hurts’. When they thought that it was human who caused that, it made their face contorted wanting to cry while they devoted their feeling through prayer.

「Stop……stop it-」

Perhaps because Shia’s words shook her, Lutria became unable to ignore the feeling of the people who recovered the good heart of the ancient days that was desperately chasing after her.

「It’s too late-, it’s too late-. Do you know just how many children the divine punishment has reached-」

It was a scream.

「If you can recover such feeling-, then why-, why won’t you do it faster-」

Tear didn’t fall because it was an avatar body. However, if she was able to cry, surely the star tree Lutria would shed tears that knew no end.

What was the meaning of those tears?

Was she thinking of the children of man whose life were scattered by the divine punishment? Or perhaps it was sadness toward the matter that reached to this point itself? Or perhaps, was it because of happiness that at the very end, they recovered the heart that was thinking of the world even if all humans would be gone from it?

The heart of the star tree Lutria was shaken. She swung her hand as though to drive away everything.

An invisible shockwave assaulted Eric and others. Shia cut in the path of that shockwave and similarly returned a shockwave with a swing of her war hammer.

While the air was shaking from the shockwaves neutralizing each other, Shia suddenly noticed some kind of image flowing in.

-, this is……the feeling of Lutria-san and others?

Her heart. Lutria’s shaken heart made the feeling she suppressed to flow out.

The white light transformed into meteor shower, the space burst, and super gravity space attacked. It was a storm of cold killing intent. And yet, the thing that was flowing in was shockingly warm.

At the ancient time, far far away from now, the time when the distance between human and god, the spirits was close, the star tree Lutria surprisingly would visit human settlement in her avatar body often.

She would enjoy the harvest festival together with humans, and when a new life would be born she would be swinging back and forth between joy and worry.

There was no race that loved the nature more than the beastmen. They would set forth seeking for nature that they hadn’t seen yet. She would watch over them in suspenseful feeling.

The race that the spirit liked and frolicked with was always the demon race. They who possessed the power to

communicate with spirit better than anyone would live together with spirit like family. The star tree Lutria always made a gentle and melting expression seeing that.

However, human’s time was moving far faster than god’s imagination.

War broke out.

Lutria felt a pain as though her own body was torn apart seeing people killing their fellow man.

She showed her figure in front of people, telling them that they shouldn’t quarrel, but the people turned their blade and hostility to her saying 「There is no way the god we believe in will say such thing!」.

Her heart chilled. Sharp pain tormented the star tree Lutria.

Period of war and peace kept repeating. The territory of human rapidly spread through the world. The fait to god and spirit died out in proportion of that progress. Or perhaps that faith would be interpreted to their own convenience. Sometimes they would even scorn the god and spirit as evil god.

The equilibrium of the world crumbled.

The wish for coexistence was vanishing.

Because the star tree was the world itself, Lutria continuously got torn to pieces by human’s greed.

「Kuh, this pain……this sadness, they’re really……」

Shia raised a pained voice in front of the fierce attack of the frenzied star tree Lutria.

But, that pained voice wasn’t caused by the fierce attack. It was because Shia was also feeling what the star tree Lutria was feeling from the image that was flowing into her.

It seemed that Eric and others were also experiencing the same thing. Their gazes were directed toward the star tree Lutria. Eric and others went without saying, but even that Arogan and Gruelle were making distorted expression from the pain and lamentation that were transmitted into them.

Even so, even within such pain and lamentation, there was one other feeling that was transmitted clearly.

――I love them, from the bottom of my heart

――I believe, that surely they will regain the heart to live together with the world

Those were emotions that she had conveyed many times through the spirits and divine spirits, and sometimes even by herself personally. She continued to remonstrate and explain the future to them. Her earnest feeling that tried to save the people from destruction was transmitted wholly to Eric and others.

That was certainly, a mother’s love.

But, however, her heart that believed in them, it was torn and smashed apart already.

「Tsu……」

The pain and lamentation as though they were torn apart into thousand pieces were transmitted. Arogan unconsciously looked down. He looked like a child that was unable to lift his face because he felt ashamed of himself.

「……」

Gruelle averted his face from the star tree Lutria. His face was colored with guilt that he showed for the first time.

Just how exhausted the star tree Lutria was at present? And who was the cause of that? And then, even when it had become such situation, she still loved human. Because she loved them, she felt her heart almost broke because of her own conclusion to give them the divine punishment. Their change in expression was because now they understood those feelings completely it made them sick.

「Stop, stop it already-, Lutria-san! Hurting and getting hurt, and yet in the one no one will be saved, that's just too much!」

「Everything will be saved-, everything except the children of man-」

「There is still time! Your feelings are transmitted, the feelings of the people are also transmitted to you! Both sides should be able to understand each other one more time!」

The star tree Lutria didn't answer.

「Lutria-san-」

「……」

White light burst up from the star tree Lutria. The cloudy sky above the hand that she lifted undulated.

At the same time, the outline of the star tree Lutria was starting to rapidly crumble. It was the proof of her exhaustion to the degree she couldn't maintain her avatar's appearance.

「There is, already no other choice. The future cannot be protected except by destroying the seed of destruction.」

Surely the heart of the star tree Lutria would die after mankind was destroyed. It could be seen from her face. She was at her limit no matter how anyone looked at it. But, she existed only to maintain the equilibrium of the world……

There was no doubt that since she made the decision to hand down the divine punishment, she was also became unable to stop anymore.

Shia closed her eyes and sighed. She swung her war hammer.

She slowly opened her eyes and took a deep breath, and yelled her will one more time.

「I won’t recognize that kind of future where there’s only sadness!!」

――Limit Break activation using Last Zell

――Sublimation magic activated

――Body strengthening Level X activated

Faint bluish white light pierced the sky to oppose the white pillar of light that the star tree Lutria generated.

At the center of the whirling cloudy sky right above the star tree Lutria, a vast white light converged. A pressure that rivaled the Meteor Impact shook the world.

Shia looked up to that while taking a stance with Vire Drucken in a low position.

――100 Ton Hammer deployed

——Gravity magic activated. Pseudo mass increase, increase, increase, increase

——Using metamorphosis magic for physical strength increase, increase, increase, increase

「O child of another world, I'll defeat you, destroy the children of man, and save the world!」

「God of another world. I'll stop you, protect them, and show you the future!」

The star of white light fell.

Toward that light that covered the sky, Shia was——

「SHAORAAAAAAAAA!!」

Rushing to smash it from the front!

At the moment of impact, a violent shockwave shook the world. Explosion blast blew ragingly. Eric and others on the ground screamed. The spirit beasts were blown away like pebble, the trees at the surrounding forest were falling in radiating shape.

「UNGIIIIIIIH!!」

She couldn't push back. The flat surface of the 100 Ton Hammer held back the star of white light on its track, however, it couldn't go forward any further!

zuzu-zuzu-, her feet that was stepping firmly on midair was getting pushed toward the ground. Anxiety formed on Shia's expression at her disadvantage.

——Shia!

——Shia-sama!

She felt like she heard voices. Voices of Eric, Dahlia, and others that were worried for Shia, and praying at the same time.

——Don’t make me destroy this world okay?

The voice of her beloved person that passed by her rabbit ears. Shia’s lips drew a wide grin.

「No, way, I’ll, LOSEEEEEEEEEEE!!」

——Space impact strike activated

Shia Impact
——Pseudo magic shockwave using magic power manipulation activated

——Soul magic activated surpassing the limit, and further beyond that……body strengthening Level XI activated!!

——And last, guts-!!!

「URYAAAAAAAAAAAAH!! DESUUUUUUUU-!!」

DON An impact surged out. At the same time, the star of white light was hit back toward the sky.

「……What in the world」

Her greatest trump card was literally knocked back right from the front.

The star of white light was sent back toward the sky. It opened a great hole in the cloudy sky while dispersing. Lutria muttered in small voice seeing that.

So I’m powerless to resist……

In the first place, she was already resigned by the time a man who dropped down something like star appeared.

But, she simply couldn’t stop now after she had made the decision to destroy her beloved children.

That must be why, Lutria who arrived at her limit was unable to maintain her human shape and turned into faint white light that looked like disembodied soul, her expression gave a glimpse of relieve somewhere in it……

And then, she slowly closed her eyes, as though resigning herself to be destroyed by the hero of another world.

.

To be continued to the next chapter.

Arifureta Chapter 343

Arifureta After III　Brutal Hero Shia Arc　Epilogue Desu!

.

AN: Warning!

Today there is two chapters update. The chapter「Decisive Battle Desuu! Second Part」is posted as the previous chapter.

For those who still haven’t read it, please start from there!

「Geez, what’s with that look. Didn’t I say that I won’t do anything like destroying Lutria-san?」

「……Eh?」

Something warm gently wrapped around her body. And those words. When she directed her consciousness to the outside world in her state of faint white light, she noticed that she was being gently wrapped on the palms of Shia’s hands.

「Why?」

「Actually, I only planned to hold you back while the words of Eric-san and others reached for you but……if I’m assaulted

with the resolve to die honorable death while you made that kind of face, I couldn’t just leave you alone.」

While the star tree Lutria turned speechless, a voice called at her.

「Yo, looks like you’re safe.」

「Ah, Hajime-san!」

Hajime opened a gate and appeared. Shia smiled brightly at him, at the same time her lips slightly spasmed.

「Ah, stop it! Don’t rub me like that! Ah」

「Thi, this damn monster! Treating a divine spirit like me this roughly-」

「Mo, mother, are you safe!? I have no face to meet you with in this kind of state-」

「Nuguu……」

As though to say「Punishment for this cheeky girl who don’t know when to shut up」, Hajime’s right hand was thoroughly rubbing the (the) divine spirit of (green) flowing sky Enti (slime). For some reason, the movement of Hajime-san’s right hand looked really obscene.

At the same time, slime Laila (black), Barahu (transparent), and Merees (light blue) were getting juggled *pon pon* by the left hand.

「Hajime-san, the divine spirits and the spirit beasts are……」

「They are wallowing in pool of blood. Of course they’re safe.」

That was, absolutely not safe. Shia thought, but they were alive so let’s just say that they were alive.

「……So you cannot be stopped even by those children and an army of tens of thousands.」

An atmosphere of losing strength drifted from star tree Lutria. From the way she spoke she was relieved that there was no death, at the same time she was also ruled by resignation of having running out of plan.

Shia arrived at the root of the star tree accompanied by Lutria, Hajime, and others. There Eric and others ran toward them.

Every single one of them was wounded all over. It could be clearly seen that they were only barely surviving the situation just now.

Shia raised her guard toward Arogan and the others just in case. She pulled Lutria close to her chest in case the worst happened. Lutria focused her consciousness toward Shia and flickered. But before she could show her intention, Eric and others of the kingdom side came forward.

「Star tree Lutria-sam! Our deepest apologies. Human was foolish-」

The people of Balted simply bowed deeply without asking any forgiveness or wishing for the future of mankind.

「……I will accept that feeling.」

The feeling was received――however, there was no salvation. Those words of Lutria implicitly conveyed that.

Even with them exhausted to this point, the star tree and the divine spirits were enormous existence as far as human was concerned. If Shia and Hajime didn’t meddle further than this and returned home, then they would be able to destroy human after a bit of time passed.

There, Arogan moved. He didn’t react to the wary gaze of Shia and Eric and others. He kneeled in front of Lutria with a bitter expression.

And then, he rubbed his forehead on the ground.

A beat later, his underlings also simultaneously bent their knee and lowered their head.

「I believed that it’s the power to advance forward that is the power of human. But, it seems that without noticing it we became unable to look anywhere else but forward.」

The past where it was the demon race that was the existence nearest to spirit. The lamentation of the star tree Lutria who continued to get wounded. The fact that they kept getting loved even when the situation had become like this. All of those was a shock that pierced through Arogan’s heart.

He believed that human’s future should be created by nobody else but human. He thought that gods unreasonably controlled human’s future on their own convenience, that was why he considered them enemy that couldn’t be forgiven.

But, now that he had seen, had learned the feeling in her heart……

「Forgive us……is something that we can’t say even if you tear open our mouth. But, I beg you, please give us one

more chance. Even our people, surely will be able to become like the people of Balted! Everything is the result of my leadership-, that’s why please at least give only the people a chance-. I don’t mind if you use my life as an example of the most foolish king in history!

Those were words with ambition hidden behind them, said only to pull through this situation……was something that no one could possibly think of after hearing his yell.

The divine spirits who were making ruckus also fell silent. The place was filled with silence.

Amidst that, someone made a crunching sound from stepping on the ground and kneeled beside Arogan. It was Gruelle.

Just as the demon king said, please hand down the divine punishment to my life. However, I’m begging you, please grant a future to my people-. I swear that we will absolutely, absolutely become the people who love the nature the most once more-. Therefore, please-

The voice was covered in guilt without any trickery.

Both of them were unable to apologize without any regard about the future like Balted’s king. However, anyone was able to become convinced that their feeling of repentance was something definite.

……I wanted, to hear those words sooner.

The voice of star tree Lutria was shaking. The words that she really wanted to hear all this time from her beloved children made the emotion that was unclear whether it was a moved feeling or sadness to well up from inside. Her voice sounded like she was desperately pushing down that feeling.

No further word came out. Hesitation could be seen intermittently. Conflicted feeling was further driving her to the wall.

In exchange, unable to watch her mother in that state, the divine spirit of everlasting darkness Laila spoke.

「There is no way we can trust you.」

The equilibrium of the world couldn’t be taken back anymore with just the repentance of the people of a single country. If they were forgiven in this place, and the result was the people of demon kingdom and the beast kingdom were unable to reform themselves? If the people concluded that the change of heart of Arogan and Gruelle was a betrayal and the pushed on the path that was making light of nature?

This time for sure the spirit would become extinct, the equilibrium of the world crumbled, and the lives of every living thing would be threatened.

The situation now came to be because the heart of god that believed in the children of man was broken. There was no way they could pardon the danger of breaking the world with just words.

Arogan and Gruelle, along with their subordinates made an expression of despair together.

Eric and others also couldn’t say anything.

Their words of repentance reached.

Their heart also connected with each other.

Even so as expected, the decision of divine punishment was really the last way that couldn’t possibly be overturned. That fact was thrust before them.

That was the conclusion in regard to this world.

.

.

.

And so, a man tried speaking out the conclusion of another world.

.

.

.

「Oi, we’re pressed for time for dinner here. Stop being repetitive, just take the spirit element from human already and resolve this.」

The bewildered gaze of everyone including Shia stabbed at the voice’s owner——Hajime. Hajime seemed to get tired of it and tossed away the divine spirit slimes like they were trash while continuing his words.

「You guys are saying that the problem is the consumption of spirit element without giving any consideration to the world, and even if they said that they’re going to live green there ain’t no way they can be trusted, that’s it right? Then, you can just confiscate the spirit element from human, then god and spirit can just draw back to this island and completely sever relationship from each other.」

Like that,

「What kind of path human will walk in a world now that they have lost the thing that they have been given for free as though it’s only obvious until now. You gods can just become spectator of that.」

Noticing how important something was for the first time only after they lost it……such story was common.

Would they just forget it? Or would they be able to treasure what remained to them? That would depend on the person.

「……What are, what are you saying?」

The star tree Lutria asked in bewilderment.

That was only normal. In the first place the premise was strange. Spirit element existed within nature and also within people. It was impossible to separate them.

「There is no way such thing is――」

「What if it’s possible?」

Impossible……it was not? Was such absurd talk possible to be realized for this man of another world who dropped star down, and suppressed an army of tens of thousands without causing a single casualty?

Even a talk that sounded like a joke couldn’t be denied when it was said by the demon king of another world that was Hajime.

「Ha, Hajime-san?」

Shia was also bewildered. She found it a bit hard to believe that Hajime would lend a hand for the sake of a world that

was unrelated with him, no, it wasn’t just unrelated, it was a world that kidnapped Shia and tried to harm her even.

Hajime shrugged while,

“It’s because it feels like there’ll be a lot of compensation for me, like spirit stone, or spirit armament, or spirit, or hell even the divine spirit itself.”

The divine spirits simultaneously twitched and jiggled. ‘No way, are we going to get sold to an evil god of another world?’, they snuggled close to each other while shaking from such thought.

But, looking at Hajime’s appearance, Shia immediately saw through that it was nothing more than an excuse on the surface.

“What is your true intention?”

“I want to take measure so that Shia won’t get summoned for the second time.”

That seemed to be the case.

If Shia was just teleported due to an accidental incident, then he could leave it alone. However, it was a summoning. And then, the reason why it was Shia was also unclear.

Actually Hajime wanted to bring Shia home and ensured her safety, after that he would go fully prepared to destroy everything and crushed the possibility of another summoning, but there was no way he could do that in consideration of Shia’s feeling.

And so, he guessed that it would be fine if he solved the problem of this world with a salvation plan or whatever to

make any summoning became unnecessary. But this plan was also doubtful.

No one could guarantee that there wouldn’t be any more person in this world who wouldn’t perform the summoning ceremony again.

And so, the plan that Hajime thought up to sever the worry of the future after taking Shia’s feeling into consideration was the suggestion just now.

「Well, in reality I don’t know whether it’s possible or not. At the very least I’ll need Yue and Kaori’s cooperation. But, if it’s possible, that will be the best way to make you go home with a refreshed feeling right?」

「Hajime-san……」

Even though she didn’t have the intention to offer her life for the sake of this world, her personality wouldn’t allow her to be able to go home with a smile while knowing that people she knew were dying.

Because Hajime knew that, he suggested this in order for Shia to be able to talk about this other world summoning incident at dinner with a smile.

Realizing Hajime’s thinking, Shia’s feeling already became 「Waaa――」 and without delay she leaped onto Hajime’s chest.

Hajime embraced Shia who was rubbing herself on him while asking 「So what’ll you do?」 with his gaze. His gaze was testing them, especially Eric and others.

In a manner of speaking, it was a way that was like telling the society of the present earth to not use electricity at all

anymore. It was a deed that would cause unavoidable collapse of the current society.

「If that's possible, then please do so. Rather than a future where the consumption amount of spirit element has to be regulated to the utmost minimum, the way of surviving to a future where we aren't using it all will surely be preferable for mankind.」

It was Eric who answered without hesitation.

And then, the next one who opened his mouth with a resolved expression was,

「I don't have the slightest idea what has to be done to achieve such thing but, if that's possible then I have no objection. Here I swear that we will once more live together with nature.」

Unexpectedly it was Gruelle.

The last one, Arogan who had build a society that was the most dependent to spirit element strongly closed his eyes for a moment, imagining the collapse of the current society and the chaos that would result with a pale face before he,

「The demon race will also swear once more. We will show to the gods how the demon race is also a race that can wish for coexistence with the world in the world without spirit element.」

He agreed while opening both his eyes that were filled with strong resolve.

Hajime's gaze turned toward the star tree Lutria.

「……Are you saying that you will change the way of this world?」

「If so then so what?」

He asked with his gaze, ‘will you destroy mankind once more?’. The star tree fell silent. But, that was only for a brief time.

「……If the children of man, doesn’t need to be destroyed with that then」

She said that and weakly flickered.

Hajime nodded.

「Is that so, glad that you all agree. After all in order to cut off the worry about the future, I intended to do it even without anyone’s agreement so, in that case, it would be necessary to make all you guys die once so no one will get in the way.」

He said such terrifying thing while giving a crisp laughter.

Seeing that, the star tree Lutria, the divine spirits, and then Eric and others too were,

「You aren’t really some kind of evil god aren’t you?」

「Another world……it’s really a terrifying place.」

They all raised a terrified voice. It was the moment when the heart of the god and human became one.

.

.

.

After that, Hajime and Shia rose to the sky while snuggling close to each other. Hajime took out a magic crystal stone from his treasure warehouse.

「Now then, the gate can be opened for around ten minutes. We've got to ask Yue and Kaori to reform the world during that time.」

「Reforming the world in ten minutes. Those are really amazing words.」

Hajime-san would even change the world if it was for the sake of his wife. Shia made a dry smile to that.

「Is it really possible?」

「If it's not possible then I also have plan B.」

Hajime was thoroughly prepared for everything, or rather he created ideas as though they were growing from tree. Even Shia who knew that this was exactly what Hajime's strength was couldn't help but felt bewildered.

By the way, that idea was to toss away――no, to migrate the people of this world to some random another world. The points that the star tree and company wouldn't need to destroy mankind and the people would need to live in a place without the world's blessing were the same.

Of course, in case the spirit element separation plan failed, Hajime had decided to send the people to another world whether they agreed or not.

「Well, we also have the cooperation of the star tree and the divine spirits. From my investigation, it seems that spirit

element is like an energy that is produced from the soul of living thing, so if it’s Yue then she should manage somehow……perhaps, surely.

Ahaha, we’re asking Yue-san for something unreasonable here~. I’ll have to thank her a lot when returning home.

She is a vampire princess who is bothered about being NEET after all, I think she will feel happy and sing Work♪ Work♪ .

If possible he didn’t want to see Yue-sama who would say ‘To work is to lose!’ while puffing her chest.

Then, let’s do this.

Yes!

Amidst the half in doubt gazes looking up at them from the ground, Hajime took out the crystal key and thrust it into the space. At the same time, a vast magic power was taken out from the magic crystal stone.

Just from that a torrent of magic power that caused the air to rumble caused Eric and others, and even the star tree Lutria and the divine spirits to gulp.

An optional illusion of solemn and grandeous double-leafed door appeared while emitting sparks. It made a heavy sound *gogogog-* which was also optional while gradually opening. From the gap of the door, an optional sublime light started to illuminate the world.

Hajime-san, are all these necessary?

……Of course it’s necessary.

Hajime-san suspiciously averted his gaze, but according to him it seemed to be necessary. Shia’s expression turned really gentle.

While they were doing that, Hajime raised his voice to the other side of the completely opened door.

「O~i! Yue~! Kaori~, come over here!」

Right after that.

From the other side of the shining gate, golden light overflowed like a raging stream. And immediately after that, even a silver and jet black magic power also overflowed.

「Wha, what……that’s」

「Is that……the family of the other world hero? ……How」

Eric and others, and also the star tree Lutria and others all gulped.

It was like the sky was covered with aurora. An aurora of gold and silver and jet black.

An enormous pressure descended on the island. It was difficult to even breath and the skin couldn’t stop feeling goosebumps. It was exactly the same sensation like when Hajime appeared……

「Goddess……」

The one who whispered that was one of the divine spirits. They unconsciously whispered that while having a goddess that was star tree Lutria as mother, was because of the appearance of the peerless beauty with golden halo of light on her back at the sky.

「Wings of light……the heavenly king of the far off past?」

That whisper came from the king of celestial people Astrus who collapsed on the outer edge of the island. All the other celestial people also thought the same thing at the back of their mind wordlessly. It was the figure of the first generation sky king that was only left in legend. Yes, it was an existence that was like a god with wings of light that were shining silver.

「……I see, so that's. Fuh, I looked so childish compared to that.」

It was Gruelle who let out the self-depreciating voice. There was an enormous and soul-stirring figure that grasped the sky and changed it into a sea of fire and lightning in the blink of eye while coiling in midair. That figure was truly the form of dragon that equaled a god.

The divine figure of the girls caused everyone to wholeheartedly harbored a feeling of awe in their heart. Then, a beat later.

「……Hajime, who should be killed?」

「Hajime-kun! Who should be disintegrated!?」

「Goshujin-sama, who is it who want to get hit with a breath?」

It was a proclamation of annihilation filled with killing intent to the max.

It seemed that Hajime and Shia unexpectedly didn't get back for too long. Even though they thought that they had finally opened the gate. Hajime also said「Come over here」

just now, so the blood rushed to their head and they ran to this side thinking that something happened to Shia.

Yue was in her adult mode, Kaori was in her angel mode, and as for Tio, it was unclear how much pleasure she obtained in this short time but she was in her black divine dragon mode. There was a limit in even getting serious.

Also, Shizuku and others were tasked with defending Nagumo house in case the worst happened.

「Wa-wa-wa~~it a second, please calm calm down! I'm safe and sound!」

Even now, Yue and others were just a hair-trigger finger away from dealing atrocity, especially toward the splendid great tree that seemed to be familiar from somewhere and the trashes that were giving off moderately strong presence on the ground. The three of them were thinking to clean those up first thing first because they were standing out the most. But Shia's voice made them returned to their senses.

「……Nn-, Shia!」

「Shiaaa-」

「Fuu, what, so thou art safe. Thou made us worry.」

Yue used "Heaven Existence" to teleport through space, while Kaori used "Godspeed" through regeneration magic's time shortening to instantly rush to Shia's side.

「Mokya!?」

Shia spontaneously screamed from eating a tackle on the face and then a hug from Yue, while she also ate a headbutt on her solar plexus and then an embrace from Kaori. But,

tears immediately spilled from her eyes because she made them so worried like this and from the happiness that she could finally meet them.

「……Uu, Yue-saaan, Kaori-saaan. I wanted to meet you all desuu」

「……Nn-, this stupid rabbit! The next time you easily got kidnapped summoning, it will be the five element dragons for you!」

「Me too! I'll disintegrate you if this happen again!」

「Yeesss! I'm sorry! At that time I'll do my best to defend with guts desuu!」

The three people hugged each other tightly with tear-stained face. Combined with their beauty it was truly a beautiful scene. It was so beautiful to the degree that Hajime couldn't make the tsukkomi「It's impossible to defend against the five element dragons and disintegration with guts……it's impossible, right?」.

「All is good, all is good. The feeling of getting left out alone is also good, haa haa. And so goshujin-sama, just what hath happened?」

「Oi, perverted dragon. It's not like I called for you so you can just go home, house!」

「!! Go, goshujin-sama, what art thou intending by strengthening me more than this? Haa haa, nnfuu, it's overflowiiing~――and, is it alright to blow away the uncommon presence over there with mine breath?」

Hearing that conversation of Hajime and Tio caused the other three to return to their senses.

「……Hajime, what’s going on?」

「Ah, about that……」

Hajime explained the situation shortly, blah-blah yadda-yadda.

「How’s that, can you do it?」

「……Nn. I am Yue. A woman who make the impossible possible if it’s for Shia.」

For some reason Yue-sama winked & posed the side peace finger gesture with photo model expression. Ignoring that, Kaori and Tio also offered their cooperation.

「There is no time. We’re going to finish it before the gate closed. First Kaori, heal all those guys along with this island.」

「Leave it to me!」

Her wings flapped once. Silver magic power dyed the world. Ripples that contained gentleness somewhere within passed through the island several times.

「Oo, this is」

「How, even our strength」

Each time the power of the goddess at the far away who closely resembled the first generation sky king was spreading, the celestial people were healed as though they were liberated from the nightmare. They began to harbor a feeling that was close to worship along with feeling moved.

At the same time, the desolated island was recovering its original nature. The divine spirits that were turned into slime

also recovered their former human form.

The star tree also wasn’t an exception. The exhaustion before this was like a lie and she turned into her human avatar once more.

The star tree’s expression turned tearful seeing the holy land getting regenerated in the blink of eye while she arrived at the location of Hajime and others with the divine spirits following behind her.

Yue silently entered between Shia and the star tree Lutria. Even without words, it was clear what she wanted to say.

「……If it’s for the sake of the world, then I will do the same thing no matter how many times.」

Those words were like pouring oil on fire. Yue’s eyes were tinged with ruby light. Unconcealed anger could be seen from her narrowed eyes.

The star tree Lutria stared straight into Yue’s eyes that were like that and,

「But, because your important person was here, a third path might be opened……I’m thankful from the bottom of my heart. And, I apologize from the bottom of my heart.」

Saying that, the star tree Lutria bowed her head. The divine spirits all opened their eyes wide, however, after a bit of hesitation they followed their mother and lowered their head respectfully to Shia.

Gods lowered their head. The unprecedented act caused Yue to sigh once in resignation and,

「……Yue Punch!!」

□Nguu!?□

She punched the face of the mother of all! It was a wonderful right straight with the twist of the waist supporting it, as though to say that everything was equal before this punch. Yue was not good at hand-to-hand fighting, but she was a master of magic that literally entered the territory of god easily. If she used the age of god magic at the same time, then she could also launch a powerful right fist.

The star tree Lutria who got punched on the stomach by Shia and on the face by Yue went through her first experience since she was born in this world twice in a row. She became a bit tearful. Her hand pressed on her cheek and she skillfully fell down in pitiful posture with both her legs pressed on each other despite on midair. It felt like her figure was saying□Even though even my parent never hit me before……□.

The divine spirits spontaneously got “!?” above their head and they took their stance, but Yue didn’t even pay attention to that and she used her punching hand to elegantly brush away her hair. And then,

□……For now I’ll satisfy myself with that. ……One day I’ll get on top of you and punch you until you cry.□

□!?□

‘It’s pointless no matter where you hide. After all I already remember your face and also this world’s coordinate. Eh? Eh?’, with a yakuza face that seemed to say that, Yue-sama crouched beside the star tree Lutria and glared at her.

The star tree Lutria entered charism○guard state. Looking at her trembling while shaking, it seemed that Yue had

instantly beaten into her which was the superior one between the two of them.

It seemed the NEET vampire princess obtained anger and job and became yakuza vampire princess.

「Th, the man is like this, so of course his first wife is like this, huh……」

Udar's muttering that was shuddering in fear caused all the divine spirits, especially Choare to tremble while completely agreeing.

「Oi, star tree. What are you doing shrinking like that. Stand up and do your job right away. Yue, Tio, I'm counting on you.」

「Yue-san, Tio-san, please help-. Also, Lutria-san, that's…… fight!」

「……Nn, you can leave it to me.」

「Thou can leave assisting Yue to me.」

「……I'll do my best.」

For some reason Yue made a posed serious look while spreading both her hands widely. Golden magic power burst up once more. Matching that gold, Tio's jet black magic power also burst out and both mixed with each other. They formed a spiral that pierced to the sky.

――Soul magic activated

――Effect increase using sublimation magic

「I'll connect it to the world.」

The star tree Lutria was spreading her ripple of will to the world. Just like how she was able to send her oracle, divine spirit, and spirit to anywhere in this world, there was no place or person that the star tree Lutria couldn’t grasp as long as they were in this world.

That power was making Yue’s power to permeate to the whoel world.

「……Nnh, kuu~」

As expected, even with the assistance of Tio in her black divine dragon mode, it was really difficult to grasp the whole world, whether in the aspect of magic power amount and also the thought capability. A vast amount of information was weighing Yue’s brain and soul.

「——”Time Eternal”!」

Kaori applied regeneration magic to regenerate Yue each second back to her state a second before. At the same time she was transferring her own magic power plentifully.

「Masked pink is Shizuku, so for Yue it’s this.」

Hajime supported Yue from behind with an embrace while gently placing a glasses on her.

Glasses Yue-sama descended. It was an artifact that increased the perception ability and thinking speed and so on by five times.

Furthermore he used the compass at the same time to shoulder the processing to a certain degree. In addition, Hajime took out some kind of syringe and placed it on his own neck before injecting the liquid inside with *pshew* sound.

「Come on, you can suck to your heart content.」

「……Nn, itadakimasu!」

Yue turned around and without any reservation she sucked!!

Right away, pulsating sound *dokun dokun* echoed, then crimson magic power was added even further to the mix of golden and jet black magic power.

――Yue’s personal artifact　Nagumo Hajime

One of the trump cards that was used at the last decisive battle against Ehito. Hajime’s blood was already the supreme restorative medicine for Yue even at normal time thanks to the “Blood Pledge”, but by pouring Cheatmate and iron content that granted Limit Break effect into his blood, Hajime’s blood would heighten Yue’s strength explosively.

The golden light that was mixed with crimson and jet black was pulsing. It shrunk for a moment. Then it instantly spread to the whole world from the center of the island as though in explosion.

If this world had a method to observe the planet using something like a satellite, surely the sight of a wave of light crossing the sea, crossing the mountain, crossing through the continent and covering the planet could be seen.

And then, after that light ran its course, the sight of glittering particles climbing to the sky would surely become visible. Yes, it was the radiance of spirit element being forcefully extracted from inside the nature and from inside the people.

「……Nn, I’ve grasped it. Carrying out the change.」

Yue muttered with a small voice that sounded enchanted from drinking the blood of her beloved.

For a moment, the magic power that was a mix of three colors undulated and spread to the whole world.

――Soul – sublimation combination magic　Soul Transformation

In the past, when Hajime and others were summoned to Tortus, they were granted with the skill “Language Comprehension” without their agreement. That skill that allowed them to understand all kind of language wasn’t something that was influenced by their individual ability, but something that was attached to everyone without exception. The reason was because the summoner Ehito meddled with the souls of Hajime and others when they were summoned and granted them that skill……

The current Yue could do everything that Ehito could do, and with the help of Hajime and others she could surpass him by far. Even though Ehito’s limit, the strength of the current Yue enabled her to go as far as transforming the soul.

If Shia was a bugged character in physical ability, then Yue was the one who was a cheat (unfair) in regard to magic.

The people who received the power of the cheat vampire princess who surpassed even the god of another world were……

「Aa, no way……this is a lie……」

The people in the demon kingdom helplessly felt the spirit element leaking out from their body. At the same time, they made an expression of despair. What was going on and what

was the decision made by their king and the gods were wholly transmitted to them in the shape of an oracle.

They were dumbfounded at the fact that they were losing the foundation of their society. People falling to their knees wondering how they would live from now on appeared one after another.

□……How could this be□

The people of the beast kingdom covered their face, they also felt the emotion of the star tree Lutria that was conveyed to Gruelle and others. It was engraved into them. A lot of people fell into panic from anxiety and terror, wondering whether they would really be able to live together with nature in a world where spirit element was gone.

□One day……will we be able to obtain forgiveness after overcoming this trial?□

The pious people of Balted kneeled. They were shedding tears at the anguish of star tree Lutria. At the same time, the flame of resolve and determination dwelled inside their eyes. They intended to literally start over from the beginning again to walk on the long and harsh path from here on. And they would also do it together with the people of the demon kingdom and beast kingdom without forsaking htem.

With the interference to the soul and the power of sublimation magic to meddle with information, the power to produce spirit element was erased from inside the people and nature. The power was climbing to the sky and gathering while coloring the sky like a “river of heaven” that was flowing toward the island of star tree that was the center of the world.

The people saw the light dancing inside that river of heaven. Those were the countless spirits that were hiding themselves.

Seeing that, and feeling the sense of loss as though their other half was plucked from them, they keenly felt it.

That the world, the era was changing right in this moment.

.

.

.

「……Haa haa, ho, how’s that」

Yue was exhausted. She was sweating like river, her breathing was also rough, and she couldn’t even maintain her adult mode anymore. But even in that state where she was held in princess carry by Hajime, she still said that with a posed serious look.

「To think, that you really changed the world……」

The words that were said by star tree Lutria with voice that was trembling from the feeling of awe was representing the voice of the heart of the divine spirits, celestial people, and also Eric and everyone else.

「Good job Yue. Thanks for the hard work.」

「……Nn, you can praise me more.」

Yue narrowed her eyes pleasantly within the gentle embrace of Hajime.

「Yue-san, thank you very much! With this Dahlia-san and everyone else won't need to die. Lutria-san and others also won't need to kill everyone!」

Shia's body covered over the carried Yue and she hugged her.

Yue's nose slightly twitched toward such Shia.

「……Shia, I'm, amazing? A capable woman?」

「Heh? Ye, yes-, of course you are! That's obvious!」

「……Say it specifically. Now, say it more specifically! Say it in great detail what is great about me!」

「E, err, Yue-san really is like a goddess. It's unbelievable that you can really change the world.」

「……Nfu」

「You are always kind, paying a lot of attention to me, and reliable……」

「……Louder」

「You're truly the first wife of Nagumo family! Wife Number One! As long as Yue-san is here then almost everything will go well, you're our reliable Onee-san!」

「……Correct! I'm absolutely not a NEET! Normally I'm only guarding the house! But when the time comes I'll get serious! I'm amazing when I get serious!」

It seemed that Yue-sama's greatest reason in cooperating was to show her cool side to Shia and erased the dishonor as NEET vampire princess. Shia herself wasn't thinking like that at all but, Yue's heart was unexpectedly delicate.

Hajime thought, 「You are that bothered by it huh……」

The tired Kaori and Tio who dispelled her dragon transformation were staring with an exasperated expression at Yue whose feet were swinging back and forth in good mood. While that was going on, Hajime saw that the time limit of the gate's opening would approach soon and he sent a gaze at Yue.

Yue guessed his intention just from that and lightly waved her finger. On the ground, Eric and others who were uneasy wondering whether Shia would go home right away without saying anything to them lightly floated. They screamed 「Waaaah」 while approaching their location.

And then, the moment they were going to speak to Shia first,

「Now then, it'll be time soon. Oi, you guys, for now leave behind everything that you have.」

Hajime-san said that with a vicious face. It was as though he was a yakuza extorting for money.

「We will express our gratitude to you as much as possible so, can you do something about that way of asking?」

The star tree Lutria who looked like she had aged drastically within these few minutes held out her palm. Behind her the star tree's main body shined and light gathered toward Lutria's palm in respond.

「It's a precious orb filled with spirit element. ……Please don't use it for something bad.」

For example, using it to drop meteor down. Or torturing tens of thousands people by scattering metal dust. The star tree

Lutria-san seemed to want to say that.

「Muu, I greatly wish to stay at Shia's side and become your strength but, I am the one governing the thunder cloud of this world, so I'm unable to be by your side――」

「No, rather please don't come. It will be troubling.」

「……」

Udar's eyes snapped wide open. Oros sighed.

「Shi, Shia! Please think of this as me and bring it with you.」

Choare suddenly thrust her hand into her own chest. And then she shrieked 「NNAAAAAH」 that was unclear whether it was a scream or a voice of anguish while taking out something――she pulled out a red slime.

「Hii hii, zee zee」

「So, Soare-san? Are you alright? Somehow you're making a face that a god, or rather a woman must not show just now!」

「I, I'm fine! I was only making a soul fragment by shaving off my soul a little after all!」

From the expression of the star tree Lutria and the other divine spirits, it was clear that the ominous words of shaving off the soul were an act that was as bad as it sounded.

「Wi, with this we'll always be together-. Fuhih, even if we are worlds apart, my other self will always be together with you after all……hehehe」

「……I, I'll have to refuse. Such important thing should be properly keep inside your ches――」

「It’s fine! This me-, the divine spirit of fire circle Soare is, spe – ci – a – llyyy, giving you permission! After all, that’s how my relationship with Shia is like!」

‘What kind of relationship’, the one thinking that wasn’t just Shia but everyone. The act of tearing apart one’s own soul and then telling other person to carry it while thinking of it as them, was a really dreamy and sick thing to do.

The easy god Choare seemed to be a yandere-san too. It was really worrying if she would be able to keep her divinity while possessing that many attribute within her.

Shia was making a twitching expression at the yandere hopeless Choare who was holding out her soul fragment while smiling with bloodshot eyes. Even so, she accepted it thinking that it would surely be useful for Hajime. Right away, the soul fragment slime jiggled. She almost threw it away spontaneously.

After seeing Soare’s action, Udar displayed a sense of rivalry 「Then I too」. There was also the pressure of Hajime who was in the camp of wanting to receive anything that could be received without any reservation even if he had to pillage them. In the end, all the divine spirits handed over their soul fragment.

Like that, by the time the time limit of the gate’s opening was finally approaching.

「Shia, dono. ……I’ve never regretted the deficiency in my vocabulary as much as now.」

With a face that was about to cry, Eric took off the divine spirit arms Tarnada along with its sheath and held it forward.

「Forgive me for using this kind of simple word but……thank you. Thank you, very much. You have taught us the way to live. You taught us to walk toward the future amidst the despair. Thank you-」

His voice that was trembling from the overflowing emotion certainly proved that it was Eric's true feeling. At the same time, he also deeply bowed his head toward Hajime and others saying 「As the representative of my country, I thank all of you」.

Next Louis and others of Balted Kingdom presented their divine spirit arms and spirit tools while speaking their thanks. Their feeling of love toward Shia almost came out from their throat, but they swallowed back those words after looking at Hajime. Because their body that was really naturally snuggling close to each other left no room for outsider to enter in between. They couldn't help themselves from making a bitter smile.

「Perhaps we won't meet each other anymore but……if there is a second miracle, then please let us show our gratitude with the whole country present.」

「My proud brethren from another world. I've learned the meaning of "pride" from you. I thank you from the bottom of my heart for this future that you have given us.」

Arogan and other demon kingdom's people along with Gruelle and other beast kingdom's people were also handing over their respective divine spirit arms and spirit tools while saying that with calm expression as though they were completely different people.

Before Shia could accept the gifts, they were all rapidly absorbed into the treasure warehouse, breaking the solemn

atmosphere, but Hajime didn’t care at all. Shia glanced at such Hajime at the corner of her eyes while,

「I didn’t do anything. I was only rampaging around because I can’t stomach the future of this world.」

Shia said that with a wry smile, then before Eric and others could say 「That’s not true」 in denial toward her,

「But, if everyone can get closer to a slightly better future by me doing that, then I’m also happy!」

She said those words. With a soft that was bright like a sun, and warm like a sunny spot.

Seeing that smile, it tightly grasped the heart of the male faction and the yandere hopeless Choare who prattled 「Mother, as I thought is it alright if I come along with Shia?」.

They were doing nothing but staring earnestly at Shia, as though they were being tossed about by their overflowing emotion. But then a quiet tearful voice resounded from beside them.

「Shia-sama……」

「Dahlia-san」

She was without a doubt the person who had gotten along the best with Shia in this world. She was already a friend for Shia.

Dahlia was also one of the people of this world that had to overcome this trial, so she wouldn’t say anything like wanting to come along with Shia. But, her feeling wasn’t something that could be hidden……

When Shia gently hugged her, Dahlia also strongly hugged Shia back.

The yandere hopeless Choare was making face that was saying 「Kii~h, a mere little girl dare to!」. She should just butt out already from this scene but, for some reason even Yue was making a face that said 「……Shia, even though you already have me as best friend!」, so no one could say anything.

「Oi, it will really be the limit soon. Let's go Shia.」

Hajime called out seeing the gate was starting to flicker. From the other side of the gate, Shizuku's voice 「Wai-, wait is you guys over there alright!?」 and the voices of Myuu and others getting noisy could be heard.

「I cannot cry or anything, for the sake of the future. Isn't that right, Shia-sama?」

「Exactly, Dahlia-san.」

Shia imitated Dahlia and made a double clenched fist pose. Dahlia smiled happily and nodded strongly. As though to say that no matter what happened from here on, she absolutely wouldn't forget her.

Shia let go. Yue, Kaori, and Tio leaped into the gate that was starting to shrink. Hajime was reaching out his hand from the edge.

At the end, Shia hopped *pyon* like a rabbit and turned around,

「To everyone who will be struggling for the sake of the future, good luck! Desu! Sayonara!」

Saying that, she was hugged by Hajime with one hand.

Eric and others waved their hand energetically. They were calling Shia’s name while saying their thanks many times. That was a powerful sight that made her believed they would surely be able to overcome the harsh path before them.

The star tree Lutria deeply bowed her head, Udar and Soare were staring at Shia with reluctance to part from her, while the other divine spirits were waving their hand slightly with a wry smile.

That was the last sight that Shia saw.

.

.

.

「SHIA-ONEECHAAAAAAAAANN! NANOO!」

「Wappuh!」

The air changed, and Myuu’s rocket headbutt ran into her stomach.

Remia, Shizuku, Aiko and the classmates, Shuu, and Sumire were unanimously showing expression of relieve while calling out to the returning Shia.

‘Aa, I’m home’……she keenly felt it and tear welled up once more.

「I’ve made all of you worried! I’m sorry! Thanks to everyone, Shia Hauria can return safely like this! Thank you very much!」

Shia lifted up Myuu, her rabbit ears stretched up energetically *usa-*, and her rabbit tail shook full of happiness.

‘Wah’ Cheers were raised and Shia was mobbed by everyone in the blink of eye.

Hajime smiled seeing such Shia while quietly sending telepathy to her.

【Shia.】

【? Hajime-san?】

‘Why telepathy?’ She thought while turning her gaze to Hajime. Hajime turned a gentle gaze toward her while saying.

【The prospect to store magic power efficiently even in earth is looking bright. I’ll complete the way to easily come and go between worlds before long. For sure.】

【Err?】

【The time difference is four times after all……well, at the very least I’ll make it so you can meet again within one year. With the friend you made in other world.】

【! Hajime-san……】

‘Really, just how sweet he could be’, Shia thought with an entranced expression. Happiness was overflowing that she spontaneously let out her voice.

Hajime shrugged his shoulders, thinking that it was only natural to want to do something somehow if he was shown

the two of them hugging at each other so closely at the end like that.

Shia was greatly moved and opened her mouth to say something……

「……Hajime. Are you aiming at that maid? You loveee maid?」

「!? Yu, Yue? What’re you saying?」

「Hajime-kun. Right now, you’re thinking about that maid-san aren’t you? Aren’t you?」

「No, well, I am but……」

「Whaaat! Son! You, even though you have this many lovely wives, you got ensnared with a maid wife at other world!?」

「Wait Hajime! What’re you doing fooling around so brazenly like that! Okaa-san doesn’t remember raising you to be this kind of child……looking back, perhaps we have failed in raising our children?」

The misunderstanding that the demon king had laid his hand on a maid of another world spread like wildfire. Kaori was approaching with eyes that were losing their light, Yue was pulling out a maid uniform from her room, while Shizuku and Aiko and the classmate bunch were demanding explanation about what was going on.

While making an expression of headache at that, Hajime started preparing “Gag Bullet” ——even though the impact was terrific, by using regeneration magic the target would be able to stand up again in three seconds as though nothing had happened, it was a bullet to make gag situation

in real life――which was one of 108 harassment demon king-style.

Seeing such ruckus that was just like usual, Shia felt the feeling of happiness welling up again inside her……

「Right right-, everyone~~! The demon king of our home is going to completely snap you knoow!」

Shia said that and clapped her hands, then a beat later.

「The story of other world summoning of brutal hero Shia! If everyone want to know it so much like that, then I'll tell it to your heart's content!」

While eating delicious meal with everyone.

Her rabbit ears moved *myon myon*. And her rabbit tail shook once.

It went without saying that cheers 'Wah' rose once more.

After that, with Shia's super physical ability that made her looked like she had made shadow clones, she made a large amount of cooking as apology for making everyone worried as well as for the number of guests that had abruptly increased.

Like that, the dinner of Nagumo family at that day became like a party with Shia's tale of adventure and extravagant meal.

.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

.

With this the arc of brutal hero Shia is finished.

Honestly, I had too little time to write so there are setting and development that are a bit doubtful I think.

About Shia too, I’m wondering if I might be able to write her better that this.

I might revise it if I have time. Or perhaps, if by any chance this story can also get published into book, then it might also be possible to give a try writing it to a more different development.

Anyway, it will be great if everyone can enjoy reading this.

.

※New book information

Four books will be simultaneously released at 25 December. It looks like the books are already released at some early place.

9
白米良
ありふれた職業で
ARIFURETA SHOKUGYOU DE SEKAISA
世界最強
OVERLAP

4
RoGa
ありふれた職業で
ARIFURETA SHOKUGYOU DE SEKAISAIKYOU
世界最強
GARDO COMICS

Improvement, revision, & extra story are compiled in volume 9 of the main story. Hajime from before until after

summoning will be talked from Shizuku’s point of view. Please take the book by all means! Best regards!

The main story comic version volume 4 as well as Zero comic version volume two also have side story compiled at the end of the volume. They will be from Yue’s view and Miledy’s view. It will be great if you can enjoy Yue who is a relatively happy person at the inside and Miledy who is unexpectedly not anoying at the inside.

As for Nichijou volume 2……there is already no more need for words. Please read and laugh to your heart content!

.

Regarding the special perk’s information, the detail is published at Overlap-sama’s homepage.

I was also asked to write a lot of side story, so if it pleases you check them out.

※Just in case I’ll also list them here.

– Chain store-sama

[Sky Hotspring Panic]

=>What a surprise, Fernir was equipped with a hot spring. Naturally a commotion occured when it was used. ‘Shizuku, you, saw it huh!’ It’s that kind of story.

– Animate-sama

[Fea Bergen’s Passionate Night]

=>That night, the jealousy of the female camp of Hauria exploded……

‘I am Yue. A woman who is prepared even for war if it’s for the sake of my friend’s lovely memory! Come at me, Hauria and everyone else!’It’s that kind of story.

[Arifureta Folk Tale ~Momotaro~] (※Joint special perk)

=>I hope everyone can enjoy the cast. A hint just for one person: 「Momotaro-san! I want thou to call me dog!」 Something like that.

– Tora no Ana-sama

[Fea Bergen’s Passionate Night]

[Arifureta Magic Academy ~The Club Invitation of the Academy’s Explosive Four~] (※Joint special perk)

=> Myuu who enrolled went to choose club activity. Papa’s recommendation is the cooking club that is led by Yuuka who isn’t a problem child and also family oriented……of course, there is no way the explosive girls will leave this alone. It’s that kind of story.

– Gamers-sama

[Fea Bergen’s Passionate Night]

[The Insane Transmutation Master-san Inside the Forest] (※Joint special perk)

=>The equipment of Kouki and others that were demonically remodeled before departing to the cave of ice and snow. It’s a story related to that creation.

[The Greatest One Piece] (※Joint special perk)

=>It seems this is a special perk for those who purchased two of Zero series (including the one already published). The

content is also the content of Zero.

It’s a reminiscence before meeting Nize while looking at the photo from Oscar’s artifact. Most are photo of Miledy committing terrorism but…the last piece that Oscar didn’t show is……it’s that kind of story.

– Melon Books-sama

[The Anniversary of Nightmare]

=>Everyone talked of the memory of anniversary related to Christmas. The trauma that is mentioned like it’s only natural……it’s that kind of story.

[Fea Bergen’s Passionate Night] (※Joint special perk)

.

※Anime information

The anime’s new key visual has also been published.

You can see it at Overlap-sama’s homepage as well at the official site of Arifureta.

It’s cool. Please check it out!

.

※PS

Looks like Arifureta’s goods would be sold at comiket.

Wedding dress Yue is really lovely.

You can check this too at Overlap-sama’s homepage (the public relation room page), so please!

Arifureta Chapter 344

Arifureta After III The Two At That Time First Part

.

Crimson spark surged in the underground workshop of Nagumo house.

The many tools placed on the wall, numerous materials stuffed into the steel shelves, and then the unknown things forming huge mound on the floor. *Mojo* (TN: Some kind of jiggling sound effect)

Chih. The way to use it is too lacking in utility. The replenishment rate is also slow. Perhaps I should rethink it from the beginning……

The one who muttered that was the master of this workshop——Hajime. He took off his goggle and let it dangled from his neck while he dropped himself on the chair with a thud.

Mojori

In front of Hajime, there was an orb that was placed above the working table. Yes, it was the orb that was filled with spirit element that he received from star tree Lutria, a god of another world.

「Although there wasn’t any time, it still hurt that I don’t really know about the technique or theory of that world.」

Hajime scratched his head. It was fine and all to get charmed by an unknown power and received what could be received thoroughly, but because it was an energy that was inherent to that world, Hajime currently had reached the limit of the method to use that energy.

He tried mixing it with magic power, or used it as energy source of artifact, or experimenting whether it could be converted into electricity or magic power, etc. He experimented various things repeatedly, but it didn’t really go well.

The orb itself was producing spirit element. If the content was reduced, it had the power to resupply after some time passed. It seemed that a small foliage of the star tree was inserted into the orb.

And so, it could activate spirit tool and divine spirit armament but……put in another word, he couldn’t find another use for it other than that.

The conclusion.

Right now there wasn’t really any way to use it.

As an engineer, he wished to work out a method to use it effectively by all means but……

Mojorun

Since then Hajime continued to rack his brains over this problem for a while, trying this and that.

Mojomojo~. Mojo! Mojo!

「DAAAAAAAH, you're irritating since some time ago!」

Hajime stood up from his chair and seized the green slime that climbed on the chair's hand rest and attacked him with poking tentacle. And then without delay he threw it with all his strength.

Splat~ The green slime got stuck on the wall, and then it slid down to the floor. It jiggled back to its comrades position. Yes, back to its comrades――the yellow, ashen, red, black, transparent, light blue slime comrades.

「They said that it's a soul fragment of a divine spirit, so I completely thought that it would have clear consciousness, and yet. Really, they're just slimes aren't they?」

Hajime made a long sigh while his hand reached toward the twitching slime. The green slime whose atmosphere seemed to clearly say 「That guy is angry! He threw me, horrible!」 went 「……Eh? He isn't angry?」 and dragged itself toward Hajime with jiggling motion.

The divine spirit's soul fragment――an existence that was like the other half that was created by the other world's gods who governed the nature by shaving off their own soul.

The yellow slime was "divine spirit of lightning cloud Udar", the ashen colored slime was "divine spirit of earth Oros", the red slime was "divine spirit of fire circle Soare", the black slime was "divine spirit of dusk Laila", the transparent slime was "divine spirit of ice and snow Barahu", the light blue slime was "divine spirit of sea current Merees", and then the green slime was the soul fragment of "divine spirit of flowing sky Enti".

Hajime completely thought that they would be like a clone with the will and personality of the original dwelling inside

them, and he would be able to communicate with them just like with their main body, but in reality it was like this.

They could only communicate using gesture, and their movement also often gave the childish impression. On top of that, although they properly inherited the authority of the original, their handling was really poor.

The soul fragment slimes, especially Soare slime were separated from Shia and stayed in this underground that was spatially isolated from the outside also because the risk of them accidentally discharging their power.

After all, at the first day lightning cloud was generated at the sky above Nagumo house, then wind and rain and ice and snow blew violently, and yet the temperature continued to climb, earthquake occurred, and so on. Everything happened because the power of the soul fragment slimes was accidentally disharged.

It was a complete miscalculation of Hajime who thought he would be able to ask them how to use spirit element anytime.

The green slime who got on his palm——the main body was a teenage beautiful girl wearing clothes that looked like dancer outfit and her hair done into twintail——went *mojo? *, most likely it was focusing on Hajime with an upward gaze.

For some reason Hajime tried poking it with his finger. It pushed back by stretching out a small slime hand as though to say「Stop that!」.

Then, at that time a voice「Hajime-sa~n」 resounded from outside the workshop.

The one who entered was Shia. Instantly Soare slime and Udar slime leaped toward Shia……lightning and flame surged midair. They blew away each other and went *Splat!* on the walls of opposing side before falling to become a stain on the floor.

「It will be dinner soon~, eh, what are you doing with Enti-san on your hand?」

Hajime and Enti slime were touching their fingertip together and pushed at each other. Seeing that Shia tilted her head while ignoring everything else.

「No, I'm reaching a dead end about how to handle spirit element. So I observed these guys once more but……」

「Isn't she really hating it?」

Hajime was pushing and rubbing with his finger tip even now. The Enti slime lightly hopped to run away. But, Hajime tightly grasped it and didn't let go.

Laila slime tackled him looking like it was saying「This outrageous persooon!」. Hajime ignored it and also ignored what Shia pointed out while saying.

「Based from what I observed from the reaction of the red and yellow slime, it's certain that it's not the case they don't inherit the inside of the original at all. A soul fragment is shaved from the soul after all, so perhaps existentially they're inferior in quality?」

Hajime pinched Enti slime with both hands and stretched it while tilting his head. Barahu slime also joined with the tackling. It seemed that it couldn't bear to see Enti slime jiggling in resistance.

‘Hm~m’ Hajime groaned. Shia tilted her head.

「You said inferior……they were just born, so isn’t it natural that they cannot communicate and their control of their power isn’t going well?」

「……」

‘If they’re baby then it’s normal right?’ Shia said. Hajime’s mouth opened wide in astonishment.

「The scale has fallen from my eyes.」

「I, is that so?」

「Because, they’re still god even like this you know? Treating them as baby isn’t normal.」

Hajime’s expression turned really conflicted at Shia who solved the question in one go.

He sighed once.

「Well, in that case, I can only wait for these guys to grow until we can communicate, or quickly establish a method to come and go to that world in order to master the spirit art theory. At this point it’s difficult to handle the spirit element well enough……」

「I wonder how fast the growth rate of god? After growing will Soaresan’s consciousness sprout? ……Can’t we correctly raise her starting from now to become a pure and proper divine spirit of fire circle?」

「Hm~……」

Soare slime who drew close below Shia with jiggling motion, it also threw a ball of flame to Udar slime at the same time.

Shia looked down at that while saying so. Hajime showed a pondering face.

And then,

「Yosh, I'll suspend the research for spirit element's use for now. In exchange, Shia, I'm thinking to strengthen your Vire Drucken.」

「Strengthening Drucken?」

「Yeah. You told me that Udar once attempted to turn it into divine spirit armament right?」

They already had the full line-up of soul fragments along with many divine spirit armaments as example. If Vire Drucken could be turned into divine spirit armament using soul fragment's power, Shia's battle strength would be increased. Furthermore it might also quicken the growth of the soul fragments. At the very least that was better rather than getting confined in the underground workshop.

「Oo! That'll be nice! From the incident this time, I painfully felt how lacking I am in annihilation power! Even if I can dodge lightning by sight, it's difficult to do that while protecting someone behind me!」

「O, ou, yeah. ……Yeah. You now can dodge railgun bullet by sight huh……」

'Could it be, I'm making this bugged rabbit to be even more bugged? I'm trying to make her dash to an absurd direction? Am I being rash…….' Hajime thought with cold sweat.

Although, there was also the situation with the sudden summoning this time. No matter how much he strengthened his family, there was no such thing as overdoing it. Besides,

「I’m really looking forward to it desuu~. My new partner! Hajime-san Hajime-san! When is it going to be finished!?」

Shia hopped around and waved around her rabbit ears while sending hopeful gaze to Hajime. In front of that sparkling bright gaze, Hajime-san who was completely spoiling his bunny wife could only answer「I’ll do my best to finish it ASAP」 with a wry smile.

.

.

.

.

Time passed.

Hajime and Shia who went to an oversea travel date unexpectedly discovered an ancient ruin and through some chain of events they threw various jobs to Kousuke. After that,

The two of them visited a forest in Britain at their date to search for fantasy on earth.

「This forest is really quite and lovely isn’t it~. The atmosphere is different from Japan’s forest.」

「You’re right. Britain’s forest might be the forest with closest atmosphere to sea of tree Haltina.」

Shia breathed in the clear and air of the forest that was damp like after a rain. They were quite deep inside the forest and there was no one around them, so she didn’t hide her rabbit ears. It wasn’t like it felt uncomfortable using the

camouflage, even so felt relaxed as though there was this feeling of liberation.

The two of them advanced even further inside the forest feeling that it wouldn’t be bad to just camp inside the forest like this.

As expected perhaps because she was a forest bunny, Shia’s footsteps was more springy compared to when she was in a middle of city. Hajime’s footstep also naturally became more lively seeing Shia having fun like that.

Like that, they had a great fun with their forest date.

「Eh?」

「Hm?」

The instant they took that one step, Shia and Hajime raised their voices at the same time and stopped walking.

「Hajime-san too?」

「That means Shia too huh. Then, this doesn’t seem to be just my imagination.」

Shia’s rabbit ears twitched in wonder. Hajime made a face that said 「Seriously……」 while he changed the direction of his body. Toward the direction he thought to advance to from the beginning.

「Aa, as I thought. Our focus got directed toward the north.」

「Even though we were going east, our step was changing direction really naturally toward the north.」

Shia took a step forward toward the east and she got flustered, saying 「Oo, when I’m aware of it, it feels really

uncomfortable!□.

□Hajime-san! This is!□

Shia’s eyes shined bright with excitement. Her heart throbbed hard and her rabbit ears and tail shook.

□Seriouslyy~, I was half joking coming here though. After an ancient ruin it’s a forest labyrinth huh. Just how fantasy earth can be huh.□

Hajime looked up to the sky feeling a bit of headache. The sun would come down soon, in addition, there was also the dense vegetation, obstructing the light of the sky from reaching down here as consolation to them.

□Is this good luck or bad luck□

□Obviously it’s a good luck!□

□……It’s only vaguely but, this guidance, I’m feeling malice from it you know?□

□Isn’t that right!□

The bugged rabbit-chan of the forest couldn’t be stop with mere malice. Hajime smiled slightly saying □Of course you’re, I knew it□ and took the path to the north.

He felt really complicated at the height of his encounter rate with fantasy……or rather with trouble, even so he was a boy. If he switched his feeling, as expected his heart danced when an adventure was in front of him.

Within the air that felt like coiling around them stickily somehow, Shia advanced forward in a good mood with

skipping footsteps. It made Hajime’s footsteps to become light too.

After a while, mist descended. It rapidly turned gloomy and even the trees with strange shape increased in number, it even felt like stepping into the jaw of a gigantic beast――normal people would surely feel that.

「The atmosphere is really amazing isn’t it~. Ah, we’ll have to show this to Yue-san and others too later.」

「I’ve prepared a glasses with camera function installed thinking that something like this might happen. Verdandi Glass. In short Vel Glass.」

Shia who was handed a beautiful sunglasses with glittery decorative illumination for use of clubbers thought 「Do you want me to wear a sparkling glasses no matter what?」 with a conflicted face while putting it on obediently.

The sunglasses shined radiantly in seven colors inside the deep eerie forest. Hajime-san’s expression looked really satisfied.

Like that they advanced for a bit further and came out to an opened place. The empty plot of land with an unnaturally perfect circle shape didn’t even have weed growing on it. The mist became thicker and enshrouded above their head.

Hajime stepped into there while making a thinking face.

「If there is a place with unnatural lack of vegetation like this inside a forest, normally it will be some kind of famous place or a mysterious place that will become a popular topic……」

「Mysterious place of the world! The TV will make a show like that for this kind of place isn’t it」

Of course, they had never heard anything like that. In this era where satellite had been invented, there should be almost no place in the world that couldn’t be observed but……

Hajime crouched and tried touching the ground’s soil. He tried appraising it. The ground couldn’t be said to have humus like other spot. It had really dry quality but it was still a normal soil.

「The circle’s diameter is around fifteen or sixteen meter…… just what is this place――」

Hajime stood up and tilted his head, but he suddenly cut off his words.

――Sacri, fice

Because of that eerie voice.

「Hajime-san!」

「Ou」

Shia took out Vire Drucken, while Hajime took out Donner and they stood back to back.

――Sacri, fice. Offe……

「Sacrifice? Sacrifice it said? Offer a sacrifice? To who?」

It was a first meeting, so although he raised his voice, Hajime-san asked with a polite way of speaking. The reply to that was really rude. The surrounding trees wriggle and branches swiftly stretched from the crazily twisting trees, turning into spear from all direction.

「Oi oi, there’s no talking with this guy.」

「We have no hostility! Let’s talk calmly!」

Hajime and Shia said that while accurately shooting or swinging the war hammer to pulverize the attacking branches.

The ground bulged up, and right after that roots flew out from the ground and approached like a wall of spear.

Hajime and Shia separated to left and right with Hajime tossing an explosion grenade. Crimson shockwave burst out at the same time with the explosion, turning the countless roots that were wriggling like tentacle into small pieces.

Finally the opponent seemed to notice that the two weren’t normal lost people.

——That power……are you two Vatican’s people?

It was a woman’s voice. The voice was beautiful and broadcasted as though it resounded through the whole area like before. It smoothly entered into their ear. However, at the same time, it was a repulsive voice that was boiling with malice.

「Vatican? That place again……」

——You aren’t? Then, what are you two?

「Just a traveler. It’s you who invited us right? First can’t you introduce yourself as the host?」

Beside him, Shia said 「Oo~, even though he is attacked, Hajime-san is holding a proper talk!」 with an expression of admiration and shock.

——Impossible. That woman’s ears……are genuine? Don’t tell me, there is still survivor in this era?

「Oi~, will you play ball with the conversation?」

Now that the voice mentioned it, Shia’s rabbit ears weren’t concealed since they entered the forest. Hajime clicked his tongue inside his heart while attempting further discussion. As a civilized person, he should always began with talk and ended it with talk. War is no good, absolutely!

——A man with power who isn’t affiliated with Vatican, and a survivor of the age of god, no, atavism?

「Hello? Miss? Is my voice reaching you?」

——Interesting. You two are the most interesting things in this one thousand of years. It will be a waste to use you two as sacrifice

「It’s great that you have a good time. Will you make “conversation” soon in order to have even more fun?」

The answer came from inside the forest. *Slither slither* the sound of something crawling was approaching. *Splat splat*, there was also a sickening voice that fanned up the visceral disgust in their guts.

「……Hajime-san. I already know from the start but, as I thought the malice of this voice’s owner isn’t half-baked.」

「So this is what she mean as sacrifice huh.」

What showed up was a terribly blasphemous something. If they had to describe it in few words, they would call it a “meat lump”. The cluster of flesh crawled and squirmed on the ground while digesting the soil, the twisting trees, and

also the animals. Limbs of various sizes were jutting out from everywhere on its body. Countless eyes were rolling around restlessly like a Dodomeki yokai.

Hundred-eyed demon

It wouldn’t be strange for normal people to go crazy seeing the repulsive thing there.

——*IIaAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH*

A shriek that rubbed human nerves the wrong way and disturbed the mind shook the air. Right after that, countless tentacles flew out from the meat lump. Those tentacles branched further in midair and approached Hajime and Shia like thin wires.

Shia moved between Hajime and the tentacles.

「Funnuh! Desuu!」

BANGG Her speed broke the sound barrier, in exchange it created a wall of shockwave. The tentacles were simultaneously deflected, and instantly, Hajime leaped up and sniped through between Shia’s rabbit ears.

A defense by the vanguard and an offense by the rearguard were done in harmony. The result, Donner’s shot splendidly hit the center of the meat lump. The exploding bullet released its might and crimson ripple burst from within the meat lump.

There was one result. In front of the destruction that couldn’t be resisted, the meat lump was blown away as though from getting hit by explosion.

「It’s like the super inferior version of Ehito.」

Hajime muttered with a low voice. Shia was going to reply——but before she could,

——*IIaAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH*

——*IIaAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH*

——*IIaAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH*

Meat lumps poured out from all directions.

「No way」

「A type of enemy that crowd with number huh」

It was a sight like a cylinder wall of meat had been formed. After the open space was surrounded with meat wall, it made one didn’t want to think about what would happen to what was inside at all.

——Welcome to the forest of the immortal witch

The woman voice——the so called witch’s voice echoed with overflowing scorn and malice.

——Don’t worry. I won’t turn you two into sacrifice. I’ll make you into prisoner of my sorcery

A laughing voice that was really offensive to the ear echoed.

Inside the meat wall that covered even the sky, Hajime opened his mouth without any unease at all.

「Shia. It looks like this woman is only putting her consciousness inside that meat lump. With that this disgusting meat lump assimilate with the surrounding forest area with this place as the center.」

——!?

「In other words, this open space is the core? Like a monster.」

「No, I don’t understand the reason why this spot is the center. But, well, this woman’s territory is around the diameter of half kilometer. It’s likely she searched for immortal life and ended up like this.」

「She invited human into forest, absorbed them as sacrifice, and continued to prolong her life, and this is the compensation for that……it’s really ugly.」

——How……

That single word eloquently indicated that they hit the bull’s eye. She would never imaging that someone would use magic eye stone to follow the flow of power and used the compass to investigate.

At the same time, it was also completely outside of her imagination that the people she lured would be monster that far surpassed herself.

Unreasonableness was always the closest neighbor for those living in this world.

The cruel and inhuman witch who survived until this age by making sacrifice no matter what it was since far away in the past, from the age where human and mystique were living together, seemed to have completely forgotten that truth through her long life.

Hajime spoke with a gentle expression to the astonished witch.

「Witch-san, let’s calm down for the moment. Be cool. Speaking of witch, they are the synonym of coolness. …… No, well, recently there is also development of becoming magical girl in exchange of a wish, and in the end they despaired and became witch that spread disaster though……」

「Hajime-san, Hajime-san. You’re getting out of topic.」

Hajime got a faraway look recalling the recent magical girls who shook free from various things because of the severity of life, but Shia lightly slapped his cheek repeatedly, pulling him back to his senses. He coughed once and added more words.

「Cough-. Anyway, witch-san. We are also people who is knowledgeable of the mystique, in other words, we’re your comrade. Can’t we hold a communication here in order to know each other better?」

The witch spilled out concerning words. Or rather, she was a fairytale existence that existed for real in this modern era. There was a lot of information he wanted to wring out——not that, he wanted to talk out with her.

If the meat lump was just a familiar then there would be no problem, but if the meat lump that assimilated with the forest was this witch itself, then the available method would be limited. So Hajime-san did his best to make a smile. He also aimed to project a calm atmosphere.

——You shouldn’t even compare yourself with the mystery that I contain

It was a bit dangerous atmosphere.

——The will of you two is unnecessary for the research

In other words,

——There is no need for reservation. You two can accept my hospitality to your heart’s content

That seemed to be the case. Wall of meat oozed out from the ground and started to cover the area until above.

Hajime held his head saying 「Whether it’s this guy or that guy, everyone is trampling on my pure good will……」 on his wits’ end. Shia consoled him 「The day will come when Hajime-san’s words will get through! ……Perhaps!」 with a wry smile.

Shia patted Hajime’s shoulder consolingly. Hajime said 「It will be great if that time come」 to her while his eyes turned cold at the next moment.

「I have enough of your hospitality. We’re going home now.」

A crimson light flashed bright.

——What are you-

「It’s my thanks for the hospitality. Take it without reservation.」

What appeared was rocket & missile launcher “Agni – Orcan”. At the same time, all the fired rockets were incendiary bomb that was filled plentifully with tar from another world.

As soon as the countless flying rockets hit the meat wall, the wall was blown away by the impact, holes were opened, and hellfire was scattered grandly.

The forest itself was enemy? Then, he would dye the whole forest crimson.

And so, thinking rationally, it would be better to capture the witch alive seeing that she seemed to have various fantasy information and interrogated her but……Hajime didn’t want to expose Shia to this repulsive creature even more than this just for the sake of such information. Naturally, it was also out of the question to capture and brought it home to his family.

Incidentally, Hajime more or less also thought to not let this witch roam free so that no more victim would appear.

――Yo, u-, YOUUUUUUU-

「Ha, Hajime-san, Hajime-san. Is there no problem with the fire spreading?」

「I’m not going to make that kind of blunder. The area from that place where the mind manipulation started until here is half foreign world, this is the best way to sterilize filth.」

「We, well, thinking of how many people has become sacrifice until now, this can’t be helped……isn’t it」

That was the conversation between the composed Hajime who had quickly stayed inside the four point barrier of Cross Velt and Shia who went 「Awawa, this will absolutely become news……」 with slightly twitching face.

Even during that conversation, heavy rain of tar was pouring through the variable chakram Orestes that was sent outside the barrier. And then, the witch of the forest was shrieking.

As expected she couldn’t win against the sticky 3000° Celcius hell fire.

The witch that was burned to ash in the blink of eye raised a cry of death agony while――

――Unforgivable-, you two can fall to hell!

She said such clichéd line. But, it seemed that it wasn’t a simple parting threat.

「Ah?」

「Eh?」

Hajime and Shia’s voice slipped out at the same time. Because under their feet, more accurately the whole open space was shining intensely.

――O dregs of the rotten world tree! Open the door toward the overlapping worlds!

Right after that, it was like the ground exploded with how explosively light was spreading……

「No good-」

「Wawawah!?」

Hajime immediately attempted to escape using crystal key to teleport, but he was obstructed by the madly frenzied space itself and he was a bit late in activating it.

Before he could make up for that delay, the two of them were enveloped in light.

An intense light completely filled the two’s field of vision while the shriek of death agony of the witch was echoing――

(? That’s……)

Hajime held a question seeing the scene that he hallucinated for an instant while his figure vanished from above earth together with Shia.

.

.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

This one is a story that is like a sequel but, it’s also the Hajime side of Abyss Lord’s second arc.

There was also request for it, so I wrote it thinking that it’s a better place to start rather than beginning a new story at the end of the year. Well, it ended with a cliffhanger to be continued to the latter part though……

However-, I think I’ll be able to post the latter part at the afternoon of New Year. I hope you will be able to read it to kill time inside kotatsu while eating orange at New Year!

.

Please also use these books for your kotatsu and orange accompaniment by all means.

9
白米良
ありふれた職業で
ARIFURETA SHOKUGYOU DE SEKAISA
世界最強
OVERLAP

4
RoGa
ありふれた職業で
ARIFURETA SHOKUGYOU DE SEKAISAIKYOU
世界最強
GARDO COMICS

Putting that aside, everyone of Narou.

Thank you very much for this year too.

I’m thinking it every year but, the year passed in the blink of eye it makes me think how time flies. Also, thanks to everyone’s willingness to get into the mood, I felt that writing felt twice as joyful.

How is everyone’s year?

I think various things surely happened but, it will please me if this story can become one of everyone’s fun memory even if only slightly for this one year.

And then, I’m wishing from my heart so that next year we will be able to have fun together again.

Once again, thank you very much for this one year!

Please take care of me next year too!

Arifureta Chapter 345

Arifureta After III　The Two At That Time Were Second Part

.

「That forest witch really have done it now――wait, Shia! Stop breathing!」

The light that dyed their field of vision settled down and Hajime spontaneously cursed, but the wasteland where red wind that was like blood was blowing and the pain he felt in his throat and lung right after that made Hajime raised a warning.

「Hajime-san, this air……」

「Yeah, it’s harmful. It must be some kind of poison gas but……I’ve never seen anything like this blood colored wind. Or rather, this isn’t earth no matter how you cut it.」

Hajime drank recovery medicine while deploying Cross Velt’s barrier and exchanged conversation.

Even when he looked around, there was only a wasteland, a mountain that as making rain of magma from its eruption right at that moment, lightning cloud that continued forever, and flames dancing between that cloud’s gap like magma. It

was a hellish scenery. They weren’t on earth no matter how they looked at it.

Hajime stared at the sight while asking Shia.

「Come to think of it, Shia. Did you see just now?」

「Just now? Err, it was really bright and I couldn’t see anything but……was there something?」

「Yeah, a little bit. If you couldn’t see it then it might be my imagination though……」

「Hajime-san has that special eye, isn’t it because of that? What did you see?」

「Aah, I see. That might be the case. No, it was only for an instant……it felt like I could see a large tree.」

「Large tree……was it Haltina sea of tree’s Uralt?」

Hajime nodded.

To be more accurate, it was an illusion of a gigantic tree that looked really similar. The sight was similar like a hologram floating in the middle of light. Hajime felt like he saw the vision of a huge tree that was similar with the grand tree Uralt when it was growing luxuriously after regeneration magic was applied to it.

「Now that you mentioned it, that witch-san, at the end she yelled “world tree” wasn’t she?」

「She did didn’t she~」

Hajime groaned ‘Hm~’ and fell into thought. He fell into his sea of thought as though the dangerous looking atmosphere

of the surrounding world wasn’t a big matter at all. He began to mutter to himself.

「The diameter of that open space, it’s almost the same with the diameter of the great tree……don’t tell me, there is a stump under the ground? No plants can grow because of some kind of effect from it? World tree……the one from Norse mythology? Yggdrasil? It’s a standard of a tale but…… did it exist for real? No, that’s impossible……no no, even though that was what I thought, earth is quite full of fantasy……there is also a witch……is it possible? Wait…… come to think of it the star tree Lutria also looked exactly the same……if I remember right in the myth, the world tree contained nine worlds wasn’t it? The worlds are connected? Don’t tell me, even that world I went with Tio too? …… Perhaps what summoned us could be――」

「Hajime-sa~~n! Please don’t enter your own worl~d! Look, a guest is coming heree!」

Hajime’s shoulders were grabbed by Shia and he was shaken back and forth before he finally returned to his senses. He put aside the various questions rising within him for the time being and turned his gaze toward the direction Shia pointed at.

Certainly, something was rapidly approaching.

――Humans?

Seeing the other party flying on the sky,

「……」

「……」

Hajime and Shia were speechless. Or rather they were dumbfounded. The reason was because, the humanoid male? Female? They had fire bursting out from their whole body. Didn’t they feel hot?

Furthermore, their appearance was like gargoyle wearing armor. They looked really fiendish. And then, their voice was also rubbing the nerves the wrong way, it also sounded like a sweet whisper instead. The voice was indescribably strange and resounded directly inside the brain.

In any case, this was the first villager that the two encountered in this foreign world. No, it was unknown whether the other party was villager or not though.

Hajime coughed once. Then he patted his face. What appeared there was a magnificent smile like a veteran salesman.

「Nice to meet you. The two of us are just humble travelers. Haha, this place is really lovely isn’t it!?」

Harmful bloody wind blew violently, the ground was dry and cracked, at far away there was a mountain that endlessly erupted, the sky was decorated with lightning cloud and flame. Shia leaked out an admiring voice 「A, amazing. Even though Hajime-san shouldn’t be thinking of such thing at the slightest, but that sentence just now sounded like he was saying his honest feeling desuu!!」.

‘Shut up for a bit’, Hajime said and covered Shia-chan’s mouth *mugyu*.

「By the way, are you someone from a nearby town? Embarrassingly, this is our first time coming here without even any prior investigation, so if you can be so kind――」

――I don’t know how can humans be here but, this might be good!

Amicable words came back with eagerness. At the same time a flame spear was gifted. The way the other party presented the spear was really sharp. It even looked like they unleashed a thrusting technique that was filled with killing intent. Drool was dripping from their mouth, making it looked like their appetite was gushing out but, yep, surely it was just his imagination without a doubt.

Gakin Hajime’s four point barrier deflected the fervent gift.

――What!? Mere human is deflecting my spear!?

The first villager-san mentioned a spear attack. It seemed that it wasn’t just a bit intense gift like saying 「Please take this as the proof of us being acquainteddd!!」.

「……Hahah. The skinship of the people here is a bit intense perhaps? Let me say it first just in case, but we don’t have any hostility. I wish to hold interaction between different race by all means――」

Shia whose mouth got covered appealed to Hajime 「Hajime-san……I think it’s pointless you know?」 with a side glance, but the self-alleged model Japanese person Hajime-san wasn’t negligent with his endeavor of holding a dialogue till the very end!

――Then how about this!

A gigantic lump of flame swallowed Hajime and Shia along with the barrier.

No question asked.

□’How sad that my good will doesn’t go through as expected’ Punch□

At the same time with such words,

——Buberah!?

The steel punch of sadness from Hajime who teleported behind the villager (?) using a gate assaulted the opponent’s back of the head. The villager (?) spun while crashing on the ground.

Hajime shook off the something that got stuck on his fist like a filth. He observed the something got carried by the wind and became dust in the blink of eye while landing beside Shia.

□Why is it that human cannot understand each other?□

□Because the other party isn’t human?□

‘Then it can’t be helped!’ Haijme nodded deeply.

Then, at that time, a great amount of presence from the direction of volcano was……

□……Shia, could it be that this is a situation that create various misunderstanding?□

□No, it’s not misunderstanding or anything, it’s the fact that Hajime-san punched the local villager-san.□

□I’m not bad! I’m not bad! The bad one is that villager-san!□

The villager-san was still twitching and convulsing. Shia said □Well, it’s that side that attacked without listening to here after all. Hajime-san has done his best□ and he expression turned gentle.

And then, her expression immediately turned bright and,

「Hajime-san, Hajime-san. There is a lot of unknown and danger here!」

Shia-chan's eyes sparkled bright. Even in this situation, no, exactly because it was this kind of situation that she went "We have to go in adventure now it's like this!'.

「You're right. ……We still have some leeway with the schedule of our travel date. From investigating using the compass, it looks like we can also return to earth using crystal key anytime.」

Then there was only one answer.

「Let's have an adventure date!」

「Let's do an adventure date!」

They high-fived.

The countless presences were rapidly approaching, pushing their way through the volcano's eruption. And so, for the time being Hajime-san dug a hole on the ground using transmutation and quietly buried the first villager-san (?) into it. There was a hole for air so it was fine!

Like that, it was obvious even without using anything like future sight. The two hurriedly ran away from that place in order to escape from the situation that would surely accelerate the misunderstanding. Run run♪ Thrill thrill♪.

They leaped into a crack on the ground and ran randomly to hide from the countless presences.

The bloody wind was gnawing on their body, so Hajime drank recovery medicine while on the way he improved the cold protection artifact “Air Zone” that he used in ice and snow cavern to create air purification artifact “Air Zone Revised”.

「……Yosh, I managed it somehow. Here, Shia, this one is for you.」

「Ah, I’m fine you know?」

It was a harmful material that would erode from the skin even when they didn’t breath. Hajime wondered just what she meant by alright and turned a dubious expression toward her. There,

「I’m already used to it!」

「Ah, is that so.」

Shia said that with a radiant smile. To be more accurate, she used metamorphosis magic and obtained resistance by adjusting it many times. Even so the harmful substance still eroded her body, but the recovery of regeneration magic counterbalanced it.

The bugged rabbit could heal mere little wounds and moderate abnormal status with guts. It seemed that she finally even obtained a method to acquire resistance rapidly even against toxic substance.

Hajime didn’t think too deeply about it.

Through this and that, there was no sign of the countless presences seething in killing intent were chasing them, so the two immediately started their foreign world sightseeing.

The worn-out ground with many craters smashed on it. Or rather, it was a dead land where it felt like breath of life was nonexistent.

River of magma. Boiling lake. A great number of crows with rotten body. A swamp that looked like slime. A tornado of lightning flame. The trees of a burning forest and yet they didn’t turn into ash. Creature with blasphemous appearance that couldn’t be comprehended fully……

Hajime and Shia took selfie of the two of them with those backgrounds and a wide smile on their face.

Just how much they were having fun with the adventure date in this place that was like hell?

「Oh? That’s……a village?」

「Is that an abandoned village?」

They discovered a place that was like a village with weathered and half destroyed stone houses crowded in disorderly fashion. At the same time, Shia’s stomach pleaded *kyuu~~* of its hunger. Shia’s rabbit ears flopped down and her hands pressed on her stomach while she looked down in embarrassment.

Haijme launched a yakuza kick to pulverize a monster that was hard to be described looking like a praying mantis that attacked them while his expression smiled.

「Come to think of it, it will be dinner time soon. I forgot because I got absorbed into this world that is like hell but, I’m also hungry.」

「Ehehe……then, it’s nice timing, let’s borrow a house in this deserted village.」

The two of them searched for the house that was in the best state. They casually beat or shot to death the slime thingy that launched tentacles or a spider thingy that they had never even seen before that rushed at them from inside the deserted houses while looking around the deserted village. Then they finally found a house that looked better.

Hajime reinforced it with transmutation, took out things like sofa inside, and also put air purification filter through the whole house using Air Zone Revised.

He left the unknown thingy sticking on the window outside like a gecko and the pack of Bio Hazar○ dog look-alike Chidori-sensei roaming outside the house's wall to sentry gun and arachne squad before taking warm meal.

The two relaxed while staring at the bloody wind outside the window with the BGM of Chidori-sensei's beautiful sound and the war cry of the arachne swarm □*Iiiiiiii*□ that sounded motivated for some reason.

They finished their meal. The two snuggled close to each other on the sofa while drinking tea and checking their selfie pictures.

——GISHAAAAAAAAH

——*Iiiiiii*

——GISHA!?

——*Iiiii*REGULAR REMOVAL *Iiiiii*

□What are we going to do Hajime-san? Will we camp here? Or, will we return to earth for the moment?□

Shia suddenly asked. Perhaps because of the relaxing atmosphere, her eyes were blinking repeatedly with sleepy look.

‘Now then, what to do……’, Hajime showed a pondering gesture. It was then,

「Hm? It became silent?」

「Ah, arachne-san returned. ……Somehow, they have this atmosphere as though they has accomplished something amazing.」

Without anyone noticing the arachne-san group entered inside using the created small door with rustling sound. Erst and Neunte came forward as representative and stared fixedly at their master Hajime.

Could it be they wanted to be praised……no, such program wasn’t written into them……’What’s with that round and cute eyes pleading at me!?’ Hajime thought. He also stared back at Erst and Neunte for a few seconds.

At the next moment.

「Tsu!! Hajime-san!」

「! Ou-」

Three layers of four point barrier were instantly laid out. Hajime did that because his instinct raised a sense of danger, but Shia’s voice also told him to do that.

From the result it was the correct action.

An invisible attack instantly blasted the house, furthermore it pulverized the first layer of the barrier and the Cross Velt.

The second layer was similarly pulverized after a slight resistance. And then the third layer was cracked before the attack dissipated.

――As to be expected from someone who defeated my subordinate

A voice resounded directly inside their brain. It had a similar reverberation with that first villager-san (?). Even so, this voice was far heavier, far more terrifying, and indescribably shook the soul.

Right after that,

「O, oo?」

「Wawah!?」

The space distorted, and immediately after it their field of vision suddenly switched.

In front of the gaze of the surprised duo was someone clad in extravagant outfit. He looked like an old man in a glance. However, it needed to be added that he floated in the air and rode a monster that looked like a giant crocodile.

There was a thunderous sound behind them. When the two spontaneously looked behind, surprisingly the volcano that was in the middle of eruption was right there.

(We were teleported? If we are forcefully sent back to the former place……ah, crap. The matter of villager-san got exposed and we were searched huh……)

Hajime grumbled inside his heart and returned his gaze to the front. His eyes met the old man who was calmly emitting

terrifying presence. Behind the old man, there was also a giant castle made of stone.

Hajime swallowed the fact that he was the one who got attacked first with effort and formed a wide smile that was evaluated by both his classmates and government people as shady.

「Nice to meet you. Are you someone from that castle? This is quite a novel way to invite someone! Furthermore, that's one splendid castle! By the way, perhaps there is some kind of misunderstanding, so I'll say this first but, we are just a virtuous tourist――」

――Mixed person who isn't human or demon, I'll receive your soul as the compensation of your sin invading my territory

「Hajime-san!」

A vision of death attacked once more!

Hajime immediately opened a gate behind him and the two of them teleported by falling back. The two who went out behind the old man saw the sight of a part of the volcano ahead got severely shaken.

It was an attack in the level that instantly changed the landscape.

「O, oi oi. It has been a long time since I feel death so near. Ain't you really energetic for a gramps?」

「Wha, what to do? It feels like no dialogue can be held just like usual though.」

Even while they were talking, killing intent became intense quake that attacked them. They teleported again to evade. But,

「Uoh!?」

「No wayyy! Desuu!」

It seemed their teleportation's destination was predicted. A shadow hung over them, and right after the teleportation a jaw was opened wide behind them. It was that giant crocodile.

Just before the jaw was closed, Shia's magic power burst out. The closed jaw was held open with both her legs and both her arms supporting it. Hajime drew out Donner and Schlag at that opening and fired. A thunderous roar resounded, at the same time crimson flash trampled the inside of the crocodile's mouth.

――GIAAAAAAH

――Nuh

The crocodile rampaged. Hajime and Shia were thrown out.

But, they couldn't feel relieved at all. Because they could see it at the corner of their gaze right after they were thrown out. The sight of monsters with strange shape were approaching them in preposterous number.

「Hm~. He said that this is his territory, and if we're the intruder, massacring this many local is……I'm a Japanese after all.」

「Hajime-san won't give that up huh!」

Compressed shockwaves flew at them like a barrage. While Shia hit them back with Vire Drucken, Hajime took out his compass. And then, with an 「Oh?」 his face became surprised.

「Shia, it seems this place we are at is an underground world. There is bedrock above that lightning cloud. There is a stair to the floor below at the foot of that mountain's other side. Want to try going there for a bit seeing that we're free?」

「What! That sounds really exciting! Roger desu!」

What a peaceful decision. Hajime carried Shia in his arm while opening a gate. They instantly teleported to the foot of the mountain far away.

In front of them, a pitch black space that connected to underground was spreading. Hajime fixed the space in place using Cross Velt to obstruct forceful teleportation like before and said 「Haha, it has been so long since I'm in a situation this bad」. He then moved to go down the stair……

——You won't get away

The next instant, the old man was in front of them.

「Se, seriously?」

「A, amazing.」

The old man's "summon" seemed to be effective even with the teleportation obstruction using space fixation.

(This ain't in the level of space interference. This is already in the level of "boundary interference")

It was a power that interfered with boundary which was the essence of space magic. Hajime’s expression twitched slightly seeing the opponent not only in possession of age of god magic, his strength even reached the origin of that magic.

Intense space quake attacked them once more without even any time to shudder.

Hajime just barely laid out a barrier but the attack couldn’t be defended fully. The two of them were blown away.

——Don’t think that you will be able to escape from an archduke like me

「Chih, Shia! This isn’t really the time to be considerate!」

「Right! It can’t be helped in this situation!」

While the army of monsters was approaching, Hajime pulled out Metzelei Disaster while Shia took out Vire Drucken and activated body strengthening Level VI.

The two’s fury was unleashed. A crimson falling star mowed down the army of monsters in an instant. At the same time, Shia stepped forward toward the old man in a manner that was like instant teleportation. She launched a full swing of Vire Drucken.

But, as expected, it seemed the existential status of the army and the old man was completely different. The old man dodged Shia’s attack with an instant teleportation. On the contrary he launched a counterattack with large scale space shockwave that was impossible to escape from.

「Ukyaaa——!?」

Shia was blown toward the castle. Hajime tried to follow after her, but the giant crocodile that separated from its master unnoticed had circled toward Hajime’s back and its jaw snapped at Hajime with a terrific speed.

「Don’t think you can get carried away forever you bastard.」

The binding artifact “Bola” materialized from empty air. It entangled the upper jaw and got fixed in space. At the same time, Hajime turned around and fired the rail cannon Schlagen AA.

The bullet pierced through the giant crocodile’s throat, mercilessly trampled the inside of the body, came out from its ass while pulverizing the giant body. Hajime hit the giant crocodile that stopped moving with a spinning kick. The giant body was blown away like a joke and sent flying a part of the approaching army.

――You bastard

「Now is your only chance to pull back you know?」

A huge lion of steel――Grim Reaper Nemea was behind the old man when anyone noticed. The function that was installed in its jaw was “biting off the target along with the space”.

――Nuu!?

The old man slipped out a shocked and uneasy voice for the first time. He barely dodged using teleportation, but his shoulder was grazed. That wounded part was rapidly crumbling.

But, he wasn’t given any time to pay attention to that.

——Rocket & missile launcher Agni – Orcan

The unleashed tyranny mercilessly attacked the army and the old man. Even so, charging through the gap, a part of the army attacked Hajime in waves and the old man also launched an immense shockwave.

Violence and violence fought in a direct confrontation, like two boxers hitting each other from close range.

If the classmates and the people of Tortus were here, surely they would escape from reality by thinking that they were seeing a nightmare, or their jaw would drop down from shock without a doubt.

Because the old man was unbelievably meeting Hajime's tyranny right from the front with his own tyranny even if Hajime still wasn't using his full power.

But, the head on fight stopped there.

Hajime's mouth split open into a grin. Because through telepathy, his bunny wife energetically replied to him 『Hajime-san! I'll let him have it!』.

『SCREW OFFFFFFFF-! DESUU!』

A war cry rose from the castle. The old man who was blocking the random pounding of missiles using space isolation type barrier opened his eyes wide.

The cause was obvious. An extremely huge war hammer that was out of common sense was lifted up right above the castle.

『Get away from Hajime-san-, desuuu!』 (TN: Here Shia used yagare in her talk, which was derogatory suffix that

indicated hatred and contempt according from dictionary. Will it be too rude if I add ‘fuck’ so that it becomes ‘get the fuck away’?)

The 100 Ton Hammer was swung down mercilessly.

——Stop-

No, no stopping. The 100 Ton Hammer crashed onto an invisible barrier right above the castle, however, the space impact blow that Shia unleashed right after that smashed down the barrier and directly hit the castle.

Earthquake and shockwave rushed through, blowing away the bloody wind in radiating shape. Dust cloud rose up like a volcano eruption. The large and solemn castle was crumbling. It vanished as though it was driven into underground.

——LITTLE GIRLLLLLL-, YOU DARE TO DO SUCH OUTRAGE KNOWING THAT IT’S THE CASTLE OF THIS ARCHDUKE AGARES-

A severe quake erupted. The space screamed, cracked, and the ground split with the old man at the center.

Hajime teleported toward Shia just an instant before that storm of destruction reached. He sent a lot of grim reaper toward the old man that lost its senses from his rage to hold him back while the two of them teleported toward the stair and jumped down this time for sure.

.

.

.

「Haha, that was dangerous. Just what in the world that guy was? His name felt familiar somehow……」

「Hajime-san, you made that serious face after so long.」

Even though they should have just gotten through a battle that was quite grand, a conversation with really light atmosphere was echoing. The two's footsteps were lively even while they were going down the stair toward the dark underground.

There was one reason.

「An adventure have to be like this as expected!」

「An adventure without risk is just silly isn't it!」

It seemed that their capability to return any time and the presence of an important person at their side made this situation no different from an adventure date, no matter what kind of astounding opponent that would appear in front of them.

From the view point of the local, they were an outrageously bothersome visitors, but seeing how the other side attacked them without any intention to listen, no side here could blame the other.

「But you know, Shia. As expected, isn't flattening the castle going too far?」

「Oh my-, really Hajime-san, why are you speaking like a person with common sense!? If you say that, Hajime-san also shot that grandpa's pet to death first!」

「……Because, our heart couldn't connect even though our words could connect so……」

While they were making talk that was unclear whether they were serious or joking, they came out into an underground space.

「O, oo? A, city?」

「Is this an underground city?」

Ahead of the stair was a cliff. From that cliff they could see an unobstructed view of a city below. The scale of the city was really big. Even though they were underground, they couldn’t see the edge of the city. Even so, the city was quiet like a ghost town. It was in a really ruined state.

「For now, let’s camp here today.」

「My sleepiness has been blown away completely though.」

The two of them turned their gaze around restlessly in curiosity while jumping from building to building. They were heading toward the center of the city. They were also taking selfie everywhere on the way.

「Hajime-san, that! Isn’t that really amazing?」

「Certainly that’s amazing……is that, a palace? This place is like a ghost town, could that be a royal palace in the past?」

At the deepest part of the city was a huge palace with splendid appearance. No, with the solemnity that it also possessed, perhaps it should be called as a sanctuary. It possessed a dignity of different kind from the huge castle before this that spontaneously stole their gaze.

In front of this they had no other choice but to take selfie.

「Excuse me~, is anyone home~? We're normal tourist you can find anywhere! Can we take photo here~?」

Shia called out loudly. Manner should be kept. They should restrain themselves in a place where selfie wasn't allowed! She thought, showing a pretense as someone with common sense at this late.

「There is no way anyone is here. It's a ghost town no matter how you look――」

――Hou, human? A brat called out for invasion to the surface world, is this an adverse effect from that?

Unexpectedly there seemed to be a local person here.

――Kukuh, for the archduke to be outwitted……this is interesting

A different voice resounded. There was sneer within the voice.

――Don't you all dare to interfere. They're mine

There was another different voice. It was tremendously overbearing. Ordinary people would have their consciousness blown away instantly if they heard it.

The space flickered. Something like black mist gathered and an old man with spider lower body appeared. A humanoid with lion head seeped out. Flame suddenly burst up from empty air, and from inside it a huge wolf that breathed fire was created.

Other than them, from the inner part of the sanctuary, from the buildings inside it, strangely shaped existences flooded out with various method. Every single one of them looked

terribly destructive, blasphemous, repulsive, and mysterious. And yet, they were vaguely clad in sweet air.

. They were existences with absurd “status” that rivaled or surpassed the old man from before.

「Nice to meet you all, we are travelers who came from far away land.」

「Ah, so Hajime-san is still doing that.」

He was a Japanese.

Of course, Hajime-san’s friendly attitude as Japanese person never went through. It was really mysterious.

――Human soul after so long-, I’ll greatly enjoy it!

It was a total disregard. The huge wolf charged ahead. That act wasn’t because of any thinking like victory went to the swift or the like, but more like it couldn’t think of anything other than winning the scramble for the treat that suddenly appeared before them.

「Wa-, wait! Let’s talk! We only want to sightsee here!」

――Hah, that’s really an amazing sarcasm for a human-

「Why!?」

The witch had mentioned where she was throwing them to. If only Hajime accepted her words literally, then he would certainly be aware that his word was sarcasm. After all for human this place was a place that they wouldn’t approach the most and should be avoided.

The huge wolf’s jaw approached.

For now, Hajime opened a gate using the variable chakram Orestes and passed through to the paired chakram behind.

「Haa, it can’t be helped if we are rejected so much like this. We wil lonely kill the locals again in vain like this, let’s explore a different place.」

「Right desu, whoops!」

Shia also agreed while launching a full swing at the monster that suddenly appeared behind them.

Like that, Hajime immediately tried to teleport to escape but……

「Ah? Chih, we’re obstructed?」

——You bastard-, how dare you do that to my castle! I won’t forgive you!

「The gramps from before!?」

The one who obstructed the teleportation and appeared with a demonic look was the old man from before.

Space quake & space isolation suddenly attacked them. The killing intent was high. Tremendously. The attack also dragged the residences of the same world, but the old man didn’t look concerned at all.

He somehow endured using barrier, but the opponent’s attack was also using space interference. It couldn’t be defended fully and the shockwave attacked Hajime and Shia.

There, another invisible attack that shook the soul came. Hell fire, thunder, ice hell, scream that invited madness

came attacking like tsunami. Furthermore, half of the attacks penetrated the barrier, and not only that, they also ignored physical resistance and directly dealt damage to the soul.

「Ouch ouch. This is bad, this world-, it’s seriously bad news!」

「The one just now, it’s like from Yue-san’s divine punishment series isn’t it!? Or rather, just from their basic spec, they are equal or surpassing apostle you know!? What is it with this world!」

Right after they said that, a horse approached using “Godspeed” that was Kaori’s favorite trick. The knight riding the horse bisected the Cross Velt that was clad in “Vajra” while rushing toward Hajime.

「Chih」

Hajime clicked his tongue. Using super precise sniping through quick draw, he diverted the trajectory of the knight’s sword while twisting his body to dodge.

But, because Hajime used the minimum movement to dodge, when they passed each other the knight’s foot slightly touched Hajime’s shoulder.

In that instant,

「–!?」

「Hajime-san!?」

Blood burst out from Hajime’s body.

Shia swung around a huge metal ball to mow down the surrounding while leaping toward Hajime.

「Are you alright!?」

「No problem! But, it's troublesome.」

Hajime's mouth caught the recovery medicine he took out from empty air, bit off the ampoule and drank. His wounds vanished right away, but the places of the wound were problematic. A lot of the wounds were in familiar places.

「Wound's……playback?」

「Yeah, it was only for an instant so the playback didn't really go far, but it would be dangerous if all the wounds got rewound.」

It was superpower of age of god magic on parade. Hajime smiled bitterly.

The two's equipment was fairly worn out just from a short battle. If the classmates were here, they might fainted from shock.

Local people who couldn't be talked to, boasting spec that rivaled or even surpassed god's apostle, and the superpower they used was age of god magic level. In front of that, Hajime was about to open his mouth toward Shia that they should escape first from here――

――Nice struggle. That's a wonderful radiance of soul. Especially the woman's soul is wonderful

「……Hm?」

Hajime's eyes narrowed hearing the voice.

——What a really good woman. Her quality surpassed that of the saint. She will make a good womb

——Indeed. It’s a bit wasteful to merely eat her

——What a tough body. Such body can be impregnated no matter how many times.

Shia fixed her grip on her war hammer with disgusted expression. But, right after that, 「Fuwa!?」 she screamed.

「It can’t be helped isn’t it? Our talk won’t get through after all.」

Crimson magic power burst out. It spiraled and pierced the sky. The pressure that was like a water pressure of a great waterfall accompanied with a shockwave caused the local people to change their expression for the first time.

It seemed they finally noticed. That the human they faced, was outside the category of human. That the existence they threatened was being considerate for them until now.

Of course, it was already too late to notice that now.

What appeared from empty air, was seven Burst Hyperion.

Hajime himself wasn’t doing it intentionally but, that was their archenemy. Yes, the light of sun was.

GOU- The atmosphere groaned and seven sunlight convergence lasers swallowed everything on their path. There were also those who barely dodged using teleportation or godspeed, but nearly thirty percent of them was undoubtedly swallowed.

And then, the aim of that tyranny wasn’t really them. It was an important existence of Hajime that got aimed at, so of course, his aim was also an important existence for the opponent——in other words, the sanctuary that was the symbol of this underground city.

Earthquake and white flash filled the underground space.

There wasn’t even any explosive sound. There was only annihilation from the light of the sun swallowing everything.

Furthermore,

「All units, release the second compression furnace」

The tyranny didn’t end! It wasn’t satisfying with just annihilating the sanctuary, he would turn the surrounding area into an empty lot with moving attack. The local people who were late to run away got reduced by further twenty percent.

Even the people who possessed vast battle ability were focusing on evasion or defense right now. It seemed that was just how weak they were against flash of sunlight.

Hajime trounced the underground city while saying to Shia.

「Shia. Teleportation is still obstructed even while I’m doing this much. I don’t know if it’s that old man or someone else.」

「Eerr, what should we do?」

「For now how about we try climbing until the surface? It looks like these guys are weak against sunlight, if it’s at the surface then we might be able to open a gate to earth. It will be troubling if we fight at full power and this place cave in,

and I also want to prepare escape route just in case of the worst.

I see. Let’s find stair again……that’s troublesome! Let’s smash through desu!

Right. And then at the end, I’ll incinerate the whole underground space.

Hajime would toss an extra large sunlight bomb into the opened hole. By doing that the heat wave would incinerate everything wholesale without causing any cave-in. That method was kind to this world, what a truly clean way that he thought of.

And also, Shia. No need for anymore consideration just because they’re the locals. Thinking of what they want to do to you, even the slightest possibility should be crushed. Just prioritize yourself.

Roger desu. They’re really strong that we can’t let our guard down. I’d rather die then ending up like the girl in the doujinshi in Hajime-san’s room! I’ll also go full power!

Shia, let’s have a bit of talk later. That’s not what you think. It’s related to Tou-san’s company see? It’s for the newest game’s data gathering——

Now, let’s go!

As though to show that this wasn’t the time for Hajime’s rage to be dampened, the instant Burst Hyperion’s light settled down, faint bluish white magic power burst up from Shia. She went until body strengthening Level VIII in one go.

At the same time,

「It’s inadvertently the chance to show this in real battle for the first time! Vire Drucken――divine clad mode!!」

The head part of Vire Drucken revolved in a full circle, then the seven small orbs that were embedded into it systematically got covered in radiance. Right after that, seven patterns were drawn on Vire Drucken’s surrounding, and a formula shining with seven colors appeared with round shape.

Shia jumped toward the ceiling and readied Vire Drucken in lower stance while yelling its name. The new power that was installed in Vire Drucken was unleashed!

「Mode Oros!! Blast!!」

The formula turned like a roulette. The formula that was rotated to the front of the hitting part was the ashen colored formula.

When Shia swung up with all her strength, the hitting part of Vire Drucken broke through the formula and the formula clung on like a stamp.

「URYAAAAAAAAH! DESUU!」

A violent sound of impact roared. The hitting part that had the ashen colored formula pasted on it hit the ceiling.

It happened instantly. The ceiling’s wall of rock was pulverized as though it was blasted. It didn’t stop there, the collapse headed deeper and deeper, higher and higher in a chain reaction. In addition, the rubbles themselves were stuck to the surrounding wall.

When they looked into the hole, the innermost depth was burst open and a small light could be seen there. With just

one attack, a path until the upper floor was created instantly.

「As expected from Oros-san!」

The ashen colored orb flashed bright. For some reason the red colored orb also flashed as though in protest. It looked as though when the ashen colored orb coolly replied 「Hmph, it's just a trivial task」, the red orb said 「Kiii-, frustrating! Even though it's enough for me to be the only one useful for Shia!」.

「Let's go right away while we can.」

Hajime used the auxiliary weapon of Burst Hyperion, the Mirror Bit——the option to attack from multiple directions in super wide range by reflecting the laser and dividing it into many branches——to hold back the local people.

「Oops, before that! Mode Soare!」

The red orb shined as though it was feeling really proud *nuffuu~*. The formula circle that was materialized once more rotated and the red formula arrived in front of the hitting part.

The war hammer was fully swung through that formula toward an empty space that had nothing.

The next moment,

——Nuu!?

The old man who specialized in teleportation had just materialized there. He ate the attack of shining red war hammer and was blown away. Furthermore, that wasn't all,

——!? This is-, let go-

Like the prominence serving the sun, the light of the sun coiled around the old man and wouldn’t let go. He tried to teleport, he tried to launch shockwave, but the flame clung on the old man tenaciously like a certain someone’s disposition to burn him continuously.

「It’s amazing you noticed him. Was it “Hypothetical Future” just now?」

「No? It’s instinct desu!」

「……I see」

Setting aside Shia’s bugged state for now, the two of them dashed to the upper floor without stopping.

In respond to the pursuer, they dropped explosive or fired flame bomb filled with compressed sunlight using Vire Drucken’s bombardment mode to hold them back. Hajime asked midway.

「It looks like Vire Drucken is working well. Do you feel any malfunction?」

「For now it’s alright. The god clad mode……as expected should I call it Soare-san and others? They too are absurdly effective.」

Isn’t that right, isn’t that right! You can rely more on me you know? You can rely on me more and more you know? Don’t be reserved! Because, that’s how our relationship is like isn’t it!

The red orb was irritatingly shining as though to say that. Electric shock flew from the yellow orb. The red orb fell

silent.

Now then, the seven colored orbs that were newly equipped into Vire Drucken and gave back really humane reaction like this……their true identity was the seven colored slimes——not, but the seven soul fragments of the divine spirits who ruled over nature.

Or to be more accurate, the orbs were treasure warehouse that was their new dwelling. Inside each orb there was a world that was modeled after nature to their preference, in addition, the orb of star tree that was set up at the deepest part of Vire Drucken was connected to all the orbs. Like that, through the orbs, the power of spirit element and the power of soul fragment could be manifested.

With god clad mode the war hammer entered activation state. By calling the name of the divine spirit, the hammer would change into a mode that ruled over each nature. Rather than saying that it was Shia herself who invoked the phenomenon, it was the divine spirits who were made to activate the phenomenon that Shia wished for.

By the way, the formula and the crest were optional from Hajime. If asked whether it was necessary or not, it was completely unnecessary. But, it was cool so it was necessary! It was so necessary that even the soul fragments needed seven days and seven nights to invent their own crest with Hajime’s suggestion!

Also, the nature inside the orb, it became like that on its own. At first Hajime’s idea was for the soul fragments to enter into the orb only when it was time to fight. So to speak, it would be like a pilot entering the cockpit.

But……as expected from the soul fragments of divine spirits and the star tree’s foliage that governed over nature. When

they noticed, nature was born inside the orb and the inside became more comfortable to live in instead of outside, so they settled down inside there.

They were free to come out but……at present, everyone had become a splendid shut-in NEET soul fragment.

After various things, Hajime and Shia jumped out to the upper floor.

Their main objective was to escape to the surface, but even after their encounter with a group of powerful enemy, they were feeling excited from the adventure in this world. They smashed through the ceiling rapidly with such feeling.

――You bastards-, YOU BASTARDDDDD-

――It’s already not enough just eating you two-

――The myriad devil palace of the seven kings-, our symbol, how dare you do such thing to it!!!

The local people who had gone past being infuriated were pursuing Hajime and Shia. They already didn’t care just how astounding their strength was or just how many of their brethren had been done in.

They were completely in the state of being unable to draw back. They were in a state of 「We aren’t gonna pull back even if you pay us, assholeee!!」.

「――Mode Udar!! Thousand Lightning!!」

Perhaps the locals had contacted the upper floor by some kind of method. The instant they smashed through the next floor and rushed out, a great swarm of monster that could be mistaken as black cloud rapidly approached.

The formula switched to the yellow one. When the hammer was swung onto midair using space magic like pushing a stamp, tens of thousands of lightning strikes were unleashed to the sky.

The monsters were turned to ash. Their shape crumbled while their remains became a black rain.

The two broke through that black rain and Shia smashed the ceiling with mode Oros once more. Right after she jumped out to the upper floor she rotated.

【Mode Barahu and Entii! Ice Storm!!】

The white and green formulas were each set to both sides of the hitting surface. When Shia swung her war hammer like a spinning top, a snow tornado of absolute zero was instantly produced.

【Mode Meeres! Tidal Wave!】

If she poured water current like a great waterfall into there……the big hole got instantly blocked with ice.

Even so, several locals who could teleport or strong against freezing form the beginning broke through with demonic look but……

【Mode Laila! Derangement & Black Spear!】

The black formula was set, then when Shia walloped the local who looked like a snake man who rapidly approached in godspeed, the snake man was blown away and screamed in frenzy while starting to attack his fellow locals.

On the other hand, black spears rained down like a torrential rain toward a knight riding black horse that generated a

large amount of repulsive evil spirits. The black spears moved to all directions before homing to the target with acute angle, creating an attack with unparalleled accuracy.

The black spear unleashed by that the divine spirit of everlasting darkness Laila, was a physical attack but also improvised divine spirit arms created from spirit element. Because of that it could easily pierce opponent that lacked corporeal body and dealt damage to them.

The evil spirit thingies and the local who looked like a knight riding on black horse dispersed like mist.

Shia swung the god clad Vire Drucken once, then put it on her shoulder while lightly tapping it. She then said,

「Now now, Hajime-san. Let's go at once!」

「O, ou……」

She urged Hajime and leaped into the wall on the ceiling.

The bugged rabbit finally obtained wide ranged power of annihilation by borrowing the power of the soul fragments.

Hajime who completely lost any need to interfere midway said 「It's even more than expected……well, it's a good thing that Shia become strong, right……let's train when we get home……」 with slightly convulsing expression……

In any case, against the pursuit of the absurdly strong local people, the two of them were,

「Wait Laila! Isn't it unfair that you're the only one who got a turn!? Shia! Please use me more!」

「Oh my, Soare, really. I’m sorry, it looks like that I’m more in demand.」

「You two. Let me say this, I’m the one who got used the most in training or mock battle okay? Shia’s favorite is none other than this divine spirit of lightning cloud Udar――」

「Who cares about that! More importantly, you demon over there! You properly watched my active role right!? I properly protected Shia just like you said! That’s why prepare a reward for me! Also, act kinder to me!」

「……You guys, don’t get noisy for every single thing.」

「Recently even Laila become like Soare……haa」

「……What a situation」

With such boisterous conversation of the soul fragments and the deep sigh of Barahu and Meeres who couldn’t get along with the others as BGM, Hajime and Shia enjoyably shook off the locals while climbing up to the surface.

After that, they learned where they were and what the local people were through an unexpected reunion but……

That was another story.

.

.

.

.

.

Omake

「……Don’t tell me, you two are sulking?」

Right after the commotion in Vatican settled down, Hajime turned an indescribable gaze toward two arachnes.

――*Iiii

When Hajime tried to put them back inside treasure warehouse, the two would escape in high speed. He tried telling them to enter like this.

Good grief, what a hopeless master. I'll forgive you this time, good grief.

Was it just imagination that it felt like the two were saying that to him?

In any case, the two obediently allowed themselves to be stored inside the treasure warehouse this time. At this time it was also after Hajime learned about the existences inside the Deadly Sins Ranger.

□……Is that seriously the case? No, but, hm~……good grief, even though I also want to investigate various things about the great tree, things keep on coming one after another.□

He muttered while holding his head.

AN: Everyone of Narou! Happy New Year!

Please take care of me again this year too!

.

※Additional explanation

- Air Zone

Artifact that came out in the modification of volume 9

- God clad mode

I think that the Innoce○ce of a certain eyepatched exorcist hammer user-san is lovely.

- Great tree’s story

Please pardon me this time with just groundwork. Before long I’m planning to write about a story revolved around the great tree.

- *Iill*

Reimportation from Nichijou. Mori-sensei, I’ll be in your care too this year-

- A bit of revision
- Just in case, the last explanation of Abyss Lord’s second episode

=>Right after coming out to the surface, Hajime made the lord to wait, dropped a sunlight bomb into the underground where the pursuers were approaching, making the great demons went *pichun* along with the underground city. Then he opened a gate and returned to earth. There he learned the true identity of the people inside the Deadly Sins Ranger.

.

.

※There is update at Gardo.

For you who haven’t read it, please read no matter what as your accompaniment in New Year!

Arifureta Chapter 346

Arifureta After III
Shizuku’s Wish

.

Around noon of a holiday.

A pair of man and woman who seemed to have finished their lunch went out from a restaurant.

「The name of the restaurant is like that, but the taste is normally delicious.」

「It really has everything huh……」

The one who was making a satisfied smile with a sigh was a beautiful girl with black hair tied into ponytail and dignified look——Yaegashi Shizuku. Beside her was Nagumo Hajime looking over his shoulder at the restaurant’s signboard.

Also, ahead of Hajime’s gaze was the arch shaped wooden signboard that decorated the above of the entrance. The name of the restaurant was carved there.

It said “Restaurant　We Have Everything”.

Actually, the current owner of western restaurant Wisteria, the backbone of Sonobe family——Sonobe Hiroshi apparently trained in this restaurant when he was young. The two of them came here out of curiosity.

Just as the name of the restaurant said, it had everything. The owner was like the master of that bar that catered to certain bunch of public prosecutors, he would say 「We have it」 no matter what anyone ordered and served it.

By the way, Hajime contended himself to Shizuku's exasperated face while giving a try saying 「Grandma's meat and potato stew」 because he wanted to make the restaurant owner said 「We don't have it」 but……

In the end, Hajime ended up saying 「I, impossible!? This taste is certainly!」 with his eyes opened wide. It could be easily guessed from that attitude of Hajime. It made Hajime became really curious just who in the world the master of Sonobe Hiroshi was.

Putting that aside, if asked why Hajime and Shizuku were spending their holiday together just the two of them……

「Let's head to the meeting place now. There is still time until the scheduled time but, this is our first time, so I want to come with time to spare.」

「Even though you said that, it's only taking photo right?」

Taking photo.

Yes, that was the reason why the two of them were spending their holiday like this. Today Shizuku was going to work as model for a certain fashion magazine.

It seemed the photo was for a pair of man and woman, and Hajime was chosen as Shizuku's partner……or rather, for Shizuku who wasn't a pro model, being told to snuggle with other male was something that she firmly refused to do. Rather it was the client who requested her to make an offer

to Hajime instead, because her smile would surely look better if she was together with him.

「Even if you said that, I’m still feeling nervous. I want to go there quickly and prepare my heart.」

「Well, if that’s what Shizuku want to do then it’s fine.」

Hajime started walking without looking particularly nervous. Shizuku wanted him to slightly share that thick nerves with her while recalling what happened several days ago.

.

.

「You there-! What’re you doing getting exhausted like that! The enemy won’t care about your exhaustion at all! Do you want to get killed!?」

Inside the dojo of Yaegashi-style, a scolding thundered loudly. The voice’s owner was Yaegashi-style’s instructor——Yaegashi Shuuzou.

Just now Shuuzou raised a violent voice 「ZEAAH」 while throwing a sickle and chain to one of the disciple who was on his knee.

「——Tsu, my apologize, sensei!」

That disciple barely jumped aside to dodge. He said that while throwing shuriken to Shuuzou in a counterattack. At the same time, while still kneeling he used his wooden sword that had steel core inside to block the vertical slash that made him wanted to say 「You’re attacking with the intent to absolutely kill me aren’t you?」 from another disciple who was his training opponent.

The disciple number 2 exerted his strength to the limit while saying to the disciple number 1.

「Die here! Yamasaki-kun-」

He yelled so while launching a front kick. Unnoticed there was a small blade held between his bare foot's fingers. As expected it completely looked like murder attempt.

「You're the one that'll die-, Chief Tsuchi-!!」

Disciple number 1 guarded against the approaching deathly kick with his gauntlet. He used the impact to let out an assassin blade came out with *schwing* sound. Then he thrust toward the crotch of disciple number 2. It seemed he planned to kill his opponent's life as man.

Disciple number 2 groaned 「Nuuh」 while protecting his son's life with high speed back step.

「……Fuh, you aren't half bad anymore, Yamasaki-kun!」

「Haah, haah, thank you very much, Chief Tsuchi! Haa, haa, but let me say one thing-. You got more stamina than me who is in active duty even though you're already past fifty, are you a monster!?」

「The disciple of Yaegashi at least should be able to do full marathon while humming even when your work is behind the desk!」

「Kuh. The path to become fully qualified is still endlessly long-」

The disciple number 1 and 2 who were making such conversation were actually a young detective and the police chief of the police station that had jurisdiction over this city.

The two who belonged under the organization that cracked down on crime yelled 「Die!」 to each other but……

Unfortunately, there was no one in that dojo who would make tsukkomi at such thing.

Yaegashi dojo――it consisted of the front kendo dojo and the dojo to learn the Yaegashi-style sword technique. The dojo for sword technique was also giving martial art instruction for organizations like the police or security firm and the like. It was quite famous in the industry.

There weren't many people who could became official disciple of such Yaegashi-style, but once someone had become a disciple of Yaegashi-style, deathly training would become like their daily routine irrelevant of their occupation.

And so, even if the chief of police station was trying to kill a young detective, or the opposite where the young detective was trying to kill the chief of his office, it wasn't strange at all!

「You cannot call this anything else but a mysterious space.」

A reproachful stare was piercing the police duo who was laughing 「Hahahahah」 wit each other.

The one who stood dignifiedly with her hand on her waist and her ponytail swaying was,

「Oh, Shizuku-chan.」

young miss
「Many thanks for the service, Ojou.」

「Please don't call it service.」

The “idol of the heart” for the young disciples, and “everyone’s beloved daughter” for the elderly disciples——it was no ne other than Yaegashi Shizuku-ojousama.

「Haa. I think there is no bloodthirstiness like this in the past though……」

「That’s because we didn’t teach you the reverse side of Yaegashi-stye.」

Even though she was only giving instruction as assistant instructor, they talked to her in a way like she was someone atoning for sin behind the wall, making her feeling weary. Her grandfather Shuuzou said that to Shizuku while approaching her. He also gave the command 「Rest!」 loudly at the same time. (TN: Don’t know what is the reference for this)

The disciples sat down on the spot and started taking rest in meditating posture. Shizuku gave a glance to them while asking Shuuzou.

「Reverse side……you mean the ninja thing?」

「It’s not ninja.」

Everyone of Yaegashi family obstinately wouldn’t recognize the “ninja” matter for some reason. For Shizuku, no matter how she looked at it, this was a “ninja group” but…… according to Shuuzou, it seemed that to the end it was “only acrobatic that accompanied the sword technique, and they only did a bit of handyman work using that acrobatic”.

grandpa
「Ojii-chan. At the places that you brought me to before this, there were a lot of people there with terribly familiar family name, like Ig○ or Kog○ though.」

「I told you that it was only a gathering of sword technique dojo association. Their family name also isn’t unusual name.」

「……Everyone was dressed in black though.」

「That was because the place of the gathering was deep in the mountain. The choice of black is inevitable because the stain on the clothes won’t stand out with that.」

「…….Midway it became like deathly battle with each other though!」

「Houses that inherited ancient martial art gathered in one place like that. It’s only natural that they wanted to pit their skill against each other right?」

「Lies! Those people said it clearly! Don’t think that Yaegashi will be able to stay as the leader of the shinobi clan forever, they said!」

「……They have nice sense of humor right?」

「I got my life targeted like it was normal though!? They said 「Yaegashi’s princess! Prepare yourself!」, their killing intent was really fierce though! If that was humor, then the crimes in society can all be considered as humor you know!?」

「……Fumu.」

‘How’s that-, you can’t make anymore excuse right!?’, Shizuku-ojousama threw out all the inside of her heart that had been distressed since the incident from where she was taken deep into a mountain the other day.

Shuuzou put his hand on his chin and made a deeply pondering face, then……

「Those people with intense killing intent, in the end, they were taken care of by you alone though……」

「Wha, what? I didn’t kill them or anything……it was a legitimate self-defense.」

「No, there is no complain or anything. The opposite, everyone was impressed with your strength. Talk of marriage to welcome you as bride into their family no matter what, or for their son to become this family’s son-in-law is flooding here……」

「Perhaps I should cut them all along with their soul just as I thought.」

‘Wait, that’s not it!’ Shizuku noticed that the topic almost got diverted. She glared fiercely at Shuuzou-ojiichan.

The disciples of the dojo were pretending to recover with meditation while thinly opening their eyes and observed the way the talk was going. Shuuzou let out a deep sigh.

‘So you finally give up’, Shizuku thought and sharpened her ear to listen to the truth of her family. But,

「Shizuku. There is no way ninja exist in this age. Stop running from reality already.」

「Okay, Ojii-chan. You’re asking for war aren’t you?」

When she thrust her hand in a ‘come on’ gesture, a black katana flew in by pulverizing the dojo’s wall. The young detective Yamasaki-san got blown away by the impact and he fainted.

By the way, the disciples of Yaegashi-style were treated like family of Yaegashi house, so they inevitably got told of

Shizuku’s fantastic circumstance. Even when a black katana came flying, they weren’t shocked because their perception had been chopped off from normality.

Even the police duo prioritized their Yaegashi comrades rather than police rule so there wasn’t any problem. Rather, they were dreaming of the day where they would deal the death penalty to Hajime who stole away their beloved “Ojou” and trained themselves day and night.

Like that, the war of Ojii-chan and granddaughter finally began――

.

.

.

「Oi, Shizuku. Why are you in a daze? Do you feel like crashing on a power pole?」

「Hah!?」

Her arm was pulled. When she noticed, she was being embraced by Hajime, with that she returned to her senses. ‘What she wanted to recall wasn’t that!’ she thought and shook her head……「Kyah」 she raised her voice.

There was a power pole right beside her. If her arm wasn’t pulled by Hajime she would be in a crash course with it.

「So, sorry. When I tried to recall the time when I was asked to do this, I got filled with killing intent toward the absurd daily life with the disciples or to Ojii-chan instead.」

「Yaegashi familyy~」

Each time Hajime intruded to their house, he would get attacked by everyone of Yaegashi house as though it was an act that was as natural as breathing. Hajime's expression looked pained remembering that.

People like police officer in active duty, or lawyer, or SDF officer, even though they were people whose occupation was to protect, they would say 「Nagumo Hajime! Death penalty!」 or the like and attacked to kill. He believed that lot ought to change their occupation.

Or rather, Hajime wanted to make tsukkomi 'How's it going with the work of you guys!?'.

Cough He cleared his throat once. While heading toward the photo shot venue, Hajime asked in order to change the atmosphere.

「If I remember right, the request this time came from Amanogawa's mother right?」

「Yes, that's right. When I was about to duel Ojii-chan, Kouki's mother――Miya-san came to deliver refreshments and also asked me a request.」

Amanogawa Miya――the empress of the former Yankees. Right now she was working as editor for a famous fashion magazine. Kouki's mother.

「Refreshments……aa, I see. I was wondering how Amanogawa entered Yaegashi-style that is a ninja group like that behind the scene. So his mother is the one behind it huh.」

「Ah, now that you mentioned it I never told you before. That's right, before auntie Miya was a disciple of Yaegashi-style.」

Hajime said 「Was?」 and tilted his head. If he remembered right, when he intruded into Yaegashi house, Miya wasn't among his attackers. She was someone who worked seriously. Unlike a certain police chief and young detective somewhere.

Shizuku continued the story with a wry smile.

「Although I said that, auntie Miya was a disciple only when she was at high school. I've never seen auntie training in our home. Though she often come bringing refreshments.」

「Yaegashi-style is a ninja group right? What kind of person Amanogawa's mother is?」

「Errr, anyway, auntie isn't a ninja.」

According to Shizuku, it seemed there were two paths in Yaegashi-style. First was the front Yaegashi-style. It was this side that was well-known in the business for giving martial instruction to police, security company, or even military of foreign country.

And then, the other one was the reverse side of Yaegashi-style. According to Shuuzou, it was this side that made use of the acrobatics to do a bit of handyman work. This side was made up from the employees among the disciples working as "handyman" under Yaegashi house's management.

Fundamentally the people of the front side didn't know the specific detail of the reverse side. The exception was disciple like a certain police chief, someone who had a job with quite high position at the surface, or disciple who was "handyman at heart" who was mixing in within the society, people like them also knew about the reverse side. Rather they would make use of their position to cooperate with the behind the scene work……

In any case, even though they were disciple of Yaegashi-style, Shizuku and Kouki and of course Miya were disciple of the surface side.

「It seems that in the past auntie Miya was considerably wild but……how should I say it, the bloodline of Amanogawa family seems to have trouble magnet nature from the beginning. Because of that, it seemed that she poked her nose into a bit dangerous incident while she was wandering all over Japan.

「So that guy Amanogawa took after his mother.」

At present her son was in the middle of roaming another world. Not just being a trouble magnet, he even had the disposition of being summon magnet. Far from just inheriting his parent's nature, he even properly developed it into a version up.

「And, she was already a disciple at that time. Auntie Miya and my mother who was also her friend asked for help from Ojii-chan. It seems that was the start.」

So to speak, Miya who was a child that was unable to trust adult got saved by her Kirino's friendship and Shuuzou's magnanimity. With that as the impetus she entered into Yaegashi-style.

「Although, that person, she was plainly strong……. In the end rather than sword, she is better at using metal bat and didn't master Yaegashi-style. I once saw it……she was able to equally fight someone who was top ranked even among our disciples using metal bat」

「Really, just what is Amanogawa family? If I trace their family lineage back, it feels like an absurd fact will come out.」

In the end, even after graduating she roamed around in a journey of self-discovery, became a magnet for trouble, and when she went back, she was saying 「Sensei! We are married!」 while dragging the neck of her husband. Before anyone noticed she found a job and displayed her charisma……

It seemed that Kouki entered Yaegashi-style was also because she was worried of such inherent nature of Amanogawa family and Kouki's own "infatuation to justice". As expected, if Miya who was free and uncontrolled and lived while practicing 'I'm not gonna dyed by the color of others no matter what yeah!' for real was bowing her head over and over, even Shuuzou wouldn't be able to refuse her.

「Wait, the talk got off course. About that auntie Miya you see, she asked me a request. One of the models who are scheduled for the photo shot today suddenly got sick and hospitalized, so she asked me whether I can be a substitute for her.」

「Why Shizuku?」

「It happened right yesterday, so surely it's because there's no time. Also, she said that I'm suitable with the image of model who got sick.」

When Shizuku said that, her cheeks reddened slightly and she averted her gaze.

She was feeling embarrassed not about doing this modeling job itself, but because of the detail of the photo shot.

「That's……sorry, to suddenly ask you to do this.」

Shizuku fidgeted while saying that with a small voice. Hajime shrugged to that.

「You're going to model for wedding dress right? I want to see it no matter what so there's no problem. And more importantly, even if it's only as a model, it's irritating if other man is standing beside Shizuku in wedding dress. I'm glad you asked me.」

「……Yes」

Yes, the photo shot this time had such theme. Shizuku too at first absolutely didn't want to do something like wearing the dress of her dream and snuggled close to other man even though it was a request from Miya. But there Miya too seemed to have read her and she ended up telling Shizuku that it would be okay to do it with Hajime, rather, they should be able to take the photo Shizuku's bashful smile like that! So please ask him to come by all means! Miya asked.

With that, Shizuku who was a maiden in the inside imagined having a photograph of her in wedding dress and Hajime taken……'I, I should accept it I think! I think!' she spoke in roundabout way like her best friend in the end while accepting the request.

「But, I'm feeling bad for Yue and others.」

「You'll have dinner at my home today. Prepare yourself to get thoroughly questioned there.」

「Hajime is already prepared with Kaori and others pressing you saying 'me too me too' aren't you?」

Hajime and Shizuku chuckled together. Shizuku was pondering that perhaps she should buy some kind of present for Yue and others who guessed her feeling and pleasantly sent her out with Hajime.

While they were doing that, the venue came into view.

It was a large building that was used not only for wedding ceremony, but also for various events. There was also a church inside.

Its corridor of thick stone pillars was beautiful, the appearance of the building’s entrance was like an art museum. They advanced toward it.

Hajime let out a small smile seeing Shizuku who was gradually getting nervous……

He suddenly stopped walking. They were in the middle of the stair in front of the entrance. The place where line of pillars was lining up at both sides.

「What’s wrong Hajime――wait……」

Shizuku turned a questioning face to him, but she immediately noticed the cause. Her face now looked like she had a really painful headache. Hajime also looked the same.

「Oi, come out right away.」

It was like a scene in movie. That scene where the main character said 「How about you come out already」, and then the enemy would come out while clapping and saying 「I’m amazed you noticed」 with a suspicious smile.

Clap clap clap

「I’m amazed you noticed, senpai.」

It was exactly like the template.

However, the one who came out wasn’t a spy or an assassin from some unknown country, but the kouhai-chan from the organization Soul Sister.

「Shizuku, let’s go.」

「Yes, let’s go.」

After sending a reproachful gaze at the twintail kouhai-chan who was making a bad face for some reason, Hajime and Shizuku sighed together and then they started walking while ignoring her.

「Ah, wait senpai! Please don’t ignore me! Or rather, I won’t let you bring Onee-sama with you!」

Kouhai-chan wouldn’t let them pass in a stance that was like saying ‘Kabaddi kabaddi!’.

Even so Hajime wouldn’t get along with her and kept ignoring her, but kouhai-chan laughed 「Fuh」 and created a circle with her index finger and thumb. She put the fingers into her mouth and whistled.

Piiii A high-pitched voice rang out. Right away, dozens of soul sisters crawled out from the shadow of the pillared corridor.

「You guys, are really idiot.」

「Ju, just because it’s holiday……how many of you will gather until you’re satisfied?」

Their exasperation reached the extreme here……toward the two of them,

——We won’t hand over, Onee-sama in her finest hour to the like of Nagumo-senpai

A voice that sounded like it resounded through space reached them. It wasn’t the voice of kouhai-chan.

From deeper in the pillared corridor, a person came with steady footsteps and amazing atmosphere――

「Mizuki-chan……so even you are here.」

「Even Endo’s little sister is here huh.」

The soul sisters reverently lowered their head at the entrance of the organization’s Don――Amanogawa Mizuki, Kouki’s little sister. Beside her was a girl pushing up her glasses with an atmosphere that was completely like a strategist, Kousuke’s little sister――Endo Manami was also there.

「Onee-sama! Please rethink this again! If you go through something like marriage ceremony with the wild beast there……you’ll get pregnant!」

「What in the world are you yelling on the street!?」

Mizuki-chan sharply pointed her finger at Hajime as though to say ‘There is only one truth!’ and carried out a bothersome act that was disguised as an advice. The soul sisters vehemently agreed 「That’s right, that’s right! It’s just as the president said!」 in splendid harmony.

All the passerby were looking at them with a dumbfounded expression.

「Haa, Mizuki-chan. Did you hear about this from auntie Maya?」

「No, Onee-sama. For some reason Okaa-san was acting suspicious, so I borrowed her smartphone and investigated!」

「Amanogawa family is strange in various ways as expected.」

Shizuku couldn’t deny Hajime’s impression. Seeing the little sis who was displaying an astounding sense of smell only when it came to Shizuku which told her 「Okaa-san, she smell like she is hiding something about Onee-sama……」 made her could do nothing except letting out a dry laugh.

「Anyway! Onee-sama, we won’t let you pass here! We soul sisters won’t recognize something like a marriage with Nagumo-senpai no matter what! We’re going to vomit blood!」

「It’s not marriage ceremony, it’s just model photo shot so calm down. Even if it’s not with Hajime, it will be a photo shot with unknown male model anyway you know?」

「There won’t be any problem if I dressed as man――」

「Wait president, that kind of stealing a head start is in violation of the third article of soul sisters’ ironclad rule though?」

「Mizuki-chan, do you want to cause an insurrection?」

Kouhai-chan’s eyes that were like wild beast pierced President Mizuki. Next Manami-chan was sending her a terribly cold unblinking gaze.

Soul sisters――even if their school or grade was different, or even when the prefecture they were living at was different, if it was for the sake of Onee-sama then they was a group that would display a power of solidarity of steel. But at the same time, if it was for the sake of Onee-sama then it was a mad group that would carry out betrayal or cleansing……without hesitation.

「A, anyway! I won’t recognize someone like Nagumo-senpai! ……Even though if it’s Onii-chan, then I would be able to

become Onee-sama’s true little sister-in-law and there won’t be any problem……how could he let Onee-sama got taken away-. Stupid idiot Onii-chan

Surely Kouki was sneezing hard at the other world right now. He was receiving the unreasonable insult from his little sister.

Now, my fellow kindred souls! We’ll take back our beloved Onee-sama from this demonic senpai!

‘Aye-aye ma’am!’ The soul sisters charged with that. This was truly a troublesome matter.

And so, Hajime-san prepared an example.

Ah!? Let me go-, senpai!

The one who got captured was Kouhai-chan. She was pinioned from behind and struggled frantically but, she couldn’t escape from Hajime-senpai’s binding.

You girls, go back home obediently now. If you don’t……

Hajime’s sharp eye glint caused Mizuki and the rest of the soul sisters to gulp.

If, if not then what? If it’s for Onee-sama’s sake then soul sisters won’t flinch even in front of death——

This’ll happen.

A groan Muguu!? came from kouhai-chan. Looking closer, an ampoule was put into kouhai-chan’s mouth. She was forced fed some kind of liquid!

Sto, stooop~, don’t make me drink strange thiinggg~

「Ora, don’t spit it out. Do you want me to thrust it deep into your throat huh?」

The exchange gave an extremely dangerous impression. If Hajime didn’t secretly place a group of arachne-san at the surrounding to lay out recognition obstruction barrier, polices would be rushing here in the blink of eye.

In the end, kouhai-chan couldn’t win against the demonic senpai and got forced to drink something. She tried to raise a complaint with tearful eyes……

「Yo, you brutish senpaiii! Just what did you make me drink……hau!? My, my stomach……」

「It’s working right? Don’t worry, it’s not harmful at all to the body. Rather, after you let out what need to be let out because of this lovely medicine, your intestine will become healthy as though it has been reborn.」

「Demooon-, you demonic senpaiiiiiii-!! Hahih, it, it’s coming out!」

Kouhai-chan was desperately enduring something while standing pigeon-toed.

No matter how anyone looked at her, she was forced to drink laxative. By the way, this was also one of 108 demon king harassments, “If you give up, it’s over for you”——it could be easily guessed what would be over.

Shudder ran through everyone. A man who forcefully made his female kouhai to drink lazative——Nagumo Hajime.

When his cold eyes looked around, the soul sisters simultaneously took a step back. ‘This guy, ain’t sane……’ Their eyes were saying that.

Hajime poked at the stomach of kouhai-chan who was trembling with tearful eyes. Kouhai-chan was yelling 「Stooop~, stupid senpaiii~, idioooot~, next time I'll put trash inside your shoe rackkk!」.

「Ora ora, what're you gonna do? Is it alright if you cause a sad incident at this kind of place? Your so called comrade is in great pinch here see? Oo?」

「Thi, this demon-! Beast! Pervert!」

「Amanogawa little sis. Do you want to become healthy so much like that?」

Mizuki-chan stiffened from the great inhumanity. Manami beside her strongly insisted 「President! We should withdraw here! Before the assault captain's dignity become unrecoverable!」.

Kouhai-chan was the assault captain and intelligence office of the soul sisters, a main battle force who was enrolled in the school of the demon senpai and always stood ready for battle. No matter how many times she was repelled, she would resurrect like an immortal bird and faced the great enemy with unyielding fighting spirit. She was a top brass that was hard to come by. It would be regrettable to let her die here.

Mizuki-chan who lost any way to make a move sent a gaze that asked for help from Onee-sama.

Honestly speaking, she thought Hajime was overdoing it, but it would be extremely troubling if they got kept here by the soul sisters, so Shizuku did her best to avert her gaze. Mizuki let out a frustrated voice 「Kuh」 and fell on her knees.

Hajime who took it as the defeat of the soul sisters caressed the stomach of kouhai-chan who was trembling with empty expression while saying 「I, I can’t, hold on……senpai, I’ll have you take responsibility, for this……」. It was as though he was saying ‘Pain, pain, go away~’.

「……E, eh? My stomach doesn’t hurt?」

「That’s great. You can choke in tears from my kindness, kouhai.」

The stomachache vanished as though it was a lie. And then, the ominous grumbling sound from the stomach that kept ringing vanished. Kouhai-chan’s expression became refreshed as though light descended from heaven and enveloped her whole body.

Also, Hajime caressing her stomach was just a diversion. The true reason the stomachache vanished was because the arachne-san that popped out its face from Hajime’s sleeve injected the antidote into kouhai-chan.

「Ora, if you don’t want to become a tragic victim in an incident that will make you don’t want to walk outside anymore, then go back home right away, all of you.」

Kouhai-chan got carelessly tossed away. Mizuki and others glared at Hajime resentfully, however, they were terrified by Hajime’s demonic deed so they quietly vanished into the shadow of the pillars.

「This is my revenge-」

「Cut it out.」

Kouhai-chan pretended to leave before launching a water pistol attack with a high speed turn. Her aim was the crotch

of the hateful senpai! Tremble in shame from getting thought as peeing in the pant! That must be her intention, but it was easily dodged and furthermore she ate an iron claw on her face and struggled.

Next Hajime tied her twintail into a reef knot, in addition she wrote a long sentence of 「I'm a bad child. Please punish me as you like no matter who you are」 on her face with permanent marker.

「Re, remember this-! Senpai you idioot~, idiooot~」

Kouhai-chan finally escaped quickly. Mizuki and Manami waited for her but……

「Recently, I have this thinking……you, aren't you looking a bit happy when you got bullied by Nagumo-senpai?」

「Pre, president!? What disgusting thing you're mentioning!?」

「Ah, I also think so. When I looked at you I thought, she looks like she's having fun in senpai's care isn't she.」

「Wro, wrong! Manami-chan, don't say such terrifying thing!」

An unbelievable thing was pointed out to her with fixed stare from them. Doubtful eyes from soul sisters stabbed on kouhai-chan. Even after she escaped from demon king Hajime, this time an inquisition from her kindred souls was waiting for her.

After the girls were gone from their sight, Hajime recovered the arachnes and dispelled the barrier.

「Can you believe it? That girl is older than Amanogawa little sis and Endo little sis even if she looked like that you

know?

He said such thing in amusement.

Haa, Hajime. You too, you’re actually having fun teasing that girl right? You said before that she is like Shia in the past.

Shizuku replied in exasperation.

Like that they entered into the venue and finally it was time for work.

Hajime finished changing first and observed the photo shot of the other model pairs. Other than the pair of Hajime and Shizuku, there was also other pairs wearing various type of clothes being photographed, so another pair was also sitting nearby Hajime.

The female staff helping with coordinating the clothes and other female models were strangely sending their gaze to Hajime.

It must be because of his peculiar atmosphere that was unlike other male model. His bearing has gone passed being calm, instead it should be expressed as “being cool and composed”. They were half overwhelmed by it. Their cheeks were somewhat red.

Then, at that time,

Ah, Hajime

A quiet and really shy voice reached him. When Hajime looked over there,

「I, it’s embarrassing, just as I thought. It feels like it’s me who is being worn by the dress……」

There was pure white Shizuku there.

The skirt had design like flower petals dancing in the wind overlapping by several layers. It spread out dreamily. A ribbon was wrapped around her waist, but it further emphasized Shizuku’s waist that was already lean even at normal time.

Her hands that were covered in white long gloves were entwined fidgetingly in front of her body. Her figure was so lovely that Hajime spontaneously felt like hugging her tightly.

In fact, Hajime wordlessly walked toward Shizuku and hugged her while being careful to not crumple the dress.

「Wa, wait Hajime!」

Due to the place they were at, gazes gathered at Shizuku with her entrance. Hajime’s action also caused even the cameraman to stop working and let out an admiring voice 「Oo」. Shizuku was going bright red it looked like she would explode.

「My bad. I can’t help it, my mind got blown away a bit.」

「Tsu, she, sheesh-」

That impression was more eloquent than anything. Shizuku couldn’t say anything in front of Hajime’s gaze that was meltingly sweet, but she was unable to hide her happiness and her lips couldn’t stop grinning. She couldn’t meet his gaze to hide her shyness.

A sweet atmosphere that should be expressed as ‘containing sugar content that would destroy your palate’ was spreading through the photo location. The female camp blushed when they got hit by that atmosphere. They were sending the two somewhat envious gaze.

「Err, could it be, the two of you are going out?」

A male model who was on standby near Hajime was glancing really hard at Shizuku while asking with an expression that looked as though he was betting his hope.

「Eh? Ah, yes, that’s right.」

「I, is that so……yeah, well, that’s how is it huh.」

The male model nodded while smiling bitterly at Shizuku’s answer.

Hajime shrugged and said.

「My bad but, I won’t yield this position as her partner. If someone other than me is standing beside Shizuku, then I’ll have to reproduce that one movie scene.」

「Movie scene?」

The male model tilted his head. Perhaps because they were gathering attention, the other people were also looking puzzled. Hajime shrugged his shoulders and said.

「The bride kidnapping and elopement scene.」

「Ahaha……I see.」

The male model’s bitter smile deepened along with a comprehending expression.

And then, Shizuku said 「Don’t say such embarrassing thing!」 with a small voice while hitting Hajime’s arm. That appearance caused everyone there to watch smilingly.

After that, they discovered the existences of Yue and others who were actually slipping between the staffs. When Myuu yelled 「Papa! Shizuku-oneechan!! That’s really lovely nano!」, the location was swallowed into a whirlpool of chaos with the thinking of 「They have child!?」. Even so the photo shot somehow ended even through all that.

It seemed the magazine received great evaluation. Talk to become model flooded Shizuku and Hajime. Of course, they asked Maya to refuse all of those for them.

And then after quite a long time since then.

「……Fufu」

It became a daily routine for Shizuku to stare at the bouquet of artificial flower the female staff of the photo shot secretly presented to her that was written with 「It looks like you’ve a lot of rival but, do your best」, and the photo with Hajime that she received.

It went without saying that her happily smiling expression heightened the intensity of the disciples’ training.

.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

Actually I planned to post this chapter as the special chapter for Christmas at 25 December.

I didn’t make it in time, so I posted it today (sweat)

The episode of Kouki’s mother appeared briefly at volume 9 when Kouki entered the dojo, so there is also the implication of adding on the content slightly to match the release of the book.

.

.

※Notification

I’m sorry! Because I’ll be working on the publication again, it will be difficult to update for a while.

At the very least I think it will be hard for a month.

I’m sorry to make this notice as soon as the new year begin, but it will help if you readers can patiently wait.

Best regards!

Arifureta Chapter 347

Arifureta After III
Valentine Day Planning ②

.

AN: It has been a long time.

And yet, this chapter’s topic is two days late, and it’s completed with quick pace. I’m really sorry but please enjoy-.

Inside a dimly lit room, there were vague silhouettes of people forming from the darkness.

The one who was putting both elbows on the table and taking a pose with two hands joined to hide the mouth——the so called Gendo○ pose was,

「……Ladies, thank you for coming.」

「Say, Yue. What character you’re acting out? Also, why is the curtain closed?」

Yes, it was Yue-sama. It was Yue-sama with a grave atmosphere for some reason.

Kaori let out a tsukkomi and a question without reading the mood. Yue-sama whose mood was harmed launched a fist of wind. Dodged!

「I can’t really see with the room this dark, and it’s already evening so turn on the light.」

When the switch was pushed *click* like it was nothing, finally everyone who were gathered at the dining table――or rather, the people kidnapped by Yue came into view.

「Say, Yue. I and Remia still hath work remaining though…… or rather, I was in the middle of inside a toilet. Art not this too forceful?」

「There was only document sorting left but……is this an emergency situation?」

Tio and Remia were working a job related with clothing and attire, but Yue who popped out when they were in the middle of working took them away with a pop too.

Especially Tio was in the middle of relieving herself so her lower body was in an awful state……of course, she was panting ‘haa haa’.

Also, the toile naturally was becoming a room that couldn’t be entered. It was the toilet of a venue where things like fashion show and the like were held. Ordinary people were also using it, so sooner or later the toilet would be opened up but, over there they would only find a piece of panties.

It was a mystery.

「Say~, I was also working though……I want to return to school……」

Similarly, Aiko was smiling wryly. She was in the middle of receiving the vice principal’s nagging preaching. She was teleported the moment he looked back, so it would be scary for her after this. No matter how he saw it, it looked like she

ran away the moment he turned around because she hated his preaching.

But, Yue-sama only shortly said to those working adults.

「……I and work, which one is more important!」

Tio and others together let out exasperated voice 「Ee~~」. 'What a really troublesome attention seeker…..' they thought.

「Yes yes, Yue-san is more important, so let's talk about what your business is.」

Yue, you, since coming to earth aren't you gradually regressing mentally?]

「Ah, that, I also thought that a bit.」

Shia soothed her down, while Shizuku and Liliana were looking at her as though they were facing a pain in the ass. Yue averted her eyes, perhaps she was slightly aware of it herself. She coughed once and then straightened up herself.

「……Ladies, next week it will finally come. This year's Valentine Day.」

Yue took the Gendo○ pose once more and started talking while her expression was turning grave.

「……Do you all remember? Of the defeat last year.」

「Yue, is your head fine? I don't know what you mean——ah, dangerous! Geez-, don't attack me every single time!」

Yue didn't even give a glance at Kaori who dodged the wind fist by a hair's breadth and continued her speech.

「……Yes, that defeat. Hajime who was asked by Ryutaro, whose chocolate he want the most, answered instantly! That it's Myuu!」

There, Shai and others raised their voice 「Aa~」.

Certainly there was something like that at the Valentine last year. Yue who was convinced without any basis that 'It's impossible that the chocolate Hajime want the most isn't mine!' crumbled at that time on all four inside the class when Hajime gave his answer without any hesitation.

After that, it went without saying that a mini war occurred with Kaori who was grandly provoking Yue 「Heey, right now, how are you feeling♪」 behind the gym. At the end both sides harmoniously entered double KO with cross counter.

By the way, last year it was their last Valentine Day at high school, so the classmates including Lily were university students right now. And so, Myuu who was a kindergartener was also already a first year elementary school student.

In other words,

「……There is a risk that Myuu has also powered up.」

In the end, for the chocolate itself, Myuu's quarter choco cake was number one.

Her pride as the first wife wouldn't allow for the first rank of Hajime both in expectation and taste to be stolen two years in a row! It seemed to be something like that.

「I think Yue who is trying to seriously win against an elementary school student in a sense is already los――wait, I told you already that's dangerous! Stop firing them in barrage like that!」

The wind fists that came flying like machine gun was avoided with godspeed while generating afterimages like Matri○ agent. Kaori was complaining, however, Yue didn’t even turn her gaze at her.

Anyway, it seemed Yue wanted to win against Myuu at this year’s Valentine Day.

「And, why art thou gathered us too for a meeting? Yue want to be number one correct?」

「……Honestly, I can’t see any chance of victory!」

The destructive power of Myuu who gave her all to make everyone happy whether it was birthday, or Christmas, or other events rivaled or even surpassed the age of god magic.

The purity that the dirty adult didn’t have pierced straight into Hajime’s papa heart! Like a pile bunker!

And so, it seemed Yue wanted to work out idea together with the wive~s in order to liven up this year’s Valentine Day too.

「……Also, Myuu’s chocolate was really delicious. Her cherry choco for personal use was also extremely delightful. And yet, my choco is completely normal……the sense of defeat is also severe in that sense too. This year I want to make Myuu to be the one dancing in wild joy instead.」

It seemed she wanted to win against Myuu in that kind of meaning too.

Certainly, the chocolates that were modeled after every single one of the Onee-chans had the shape and quality that were completely unthinkable coming from a kindergartener,

so Shia and others were dancing in wild joy receiving the choco that was filled with heart.

Just as Yue said, it wasn’t only about Hajime, it could be said that Myuu was the sole winner even against them.

「……What about everyone? Are you okay with Myuu being the sole winner this year too?」

Yue sighed ‘fuh’ while asking with a provoking smile. Kaori and others looked at each other’s face.

A beat later, everyone’s face was starting to be filled with motivation. ‘Preparing a chocolate that would secure Hajime’s number one and made Myuu danced in wild joy at the same time! Ain’t that interesting!’ They thought.

But, there, a voice that dashed cold water to the heating up mood was……

「He, hey. I understand the flow of the talk but……why am I also here?」

Actually, there was one other person here. A girl who wasn’t one of the wive~s. Yes, she was kidnapped by adult mode Yue-sama in princess carry from the vocational school that she enrolled at in order to obtain a chef license, which caused the classroom to be in commotion. She was wondering just what kind of face should she make tomorrow……the one who was at her wits’ end like that was——Sonobe Yuuka.

Yue-sama’s eyes pierced into Yuuka who was bewildered and getting headache like that.

「……Yuuka is a person requiring special attention.」

「Why!?」

「……Dance like a butterfly, and sting like a bee.」

「We're talking about Valentine right!? Right now you're talking about Valentine right!?」

Yuuka made a tsukkomi asking just what in the world with this. But Kaori went 「Aa~」 and made an understanding face.

「That's right isn't it. Yuuka-chan, last year you were actually the one whose chocolate got eaten by Hajime-kun first wasn't it?」

「!? Tha, that was just me asking him to sample the new product of the restaurant by chance……」

Her speech was faltering. Her gaze was swimming around like migratory fish without stopping.

「Now that you mention it, recently Hajime-san often go to Yuuka-san's restaurant.」

「Sonobe-san's restaurant is delicious after all.」

「It looks like Hajime is especially pleased with the coffee though……」

Inevitably,

「……The possibility of Yuuka who met with Hajime with nobody else present quite frequently coming with a surprise attack this year too is big.」

「Can you stop calling it a surprise attack!? It wasn't like I was aiming for it! Also, Otou-san and Okaa-san were also there! So we weren't alone!」

「Yuuka, still have popularity among the palace's servants or knights I think……your girl power is extremely high……」

「Lily!? Why did you say that now!?」

Her desperate excuse ended in vain. For the wive~s it became settled that Yuuka was an opponent that they couldn't let their guard down against.

Also, Yuuka's popularity in Heiligh Kingdom was a fact. After the invasion of the demon race to the kingdom and the departure of Hajime's party and Kouki's party to the sea of trees, to be frank it was Yuuka who became the center of the classmates and ran around making every effort.

The security of the royal capital that was in the middle of restoration was enormously hard and busy, in addition the knights and soldiers also lost a lot of their colleagues and their wounds weren't healed. At that kind of time, the one who took the initiative to help them was also Yuuka.

On top of that, she also became an advisor of the new pope and even encouraged the citizens by performing street performance like juggling and the like.

She never make a single reluctant face, she also didn't act high and mighty even while she had the status as an apostle of god publicly, on the other hand, she had a candid personality that didn't show any of currying favor with anyone.

And yet she was good at cooking, treated not only the classmates but also the knights in order to cheer them up, and she was also good at sewing so she remodeled her clothing by herself, and that fashion slightly became a fad……

And so, in reality, at that time the knights, soldiers, and then the servants endlessly confessed to her.

Kaori stared at Yuuka fixedly.

「Hey, Yuuka-chan.」

「Wha, what」

「Actually, this year too perhaps I will secretly make him eat it again~, are you perhaps thinking something like that?」

Yuuka quickly averted her gaze. Yuuka-chan was a honest person.

「So it's the correct action to apprehend her. As expected Yue! Good job!」

「……Stop that, you're making me embarrassed like that.」

Clap Yue and Kaori high-fived. They were really in harmony at this kind of time.

「……Now then, because of that, let's talk of idea with each other.」

Everyone made a pondering face at Yue's order.

「……By the way, a method unrelated with chocolate like Tio and Remia last year is rejected.」

「!?」

Remia opened her eyes wide. A black history that she didn't want to remember was showing up underneath her heart. 'You call? I don't call!'

「Remia-san……if I’m not wrong, you wore sailor uniform……」

「Please stop! Something was wrong with me at that time! Just like Tio-san!」

「Remia!?」

When Aiko recalled Remia’s black history that she heard afterwards and spoke it, Remia covered her ears and went ‘no no’ while yelling 「I don’t want to hearrrr!」

Her daughter’s warm gaze while asking her 「Mama, you’re tired」consolingly was creating a deep scar in Remia’s heart even now.

At the same time, she who let herself got persuaded by Tio to dress in sailor uniform like that and arrived at the kindergarten after that was……

「aAAAAAAAAAAH」

「Remia-san gone made!? It’s Tio-san’s fault! Remia-san isn’t like Tio-san, she is very much a normal person! Now, quickly apply the soul magic! Hurryyy-, hurryyy-」

「Shi, Shia. Recently thy words art getting sharp. Even though I hath only changed underwear just now……nnh」

The light of soul magic was showering Remia from the hopeless dragon who was exposing an ecstatic expression. Remia-san was filled with light. It was really rare that the woman who was usually making “my my, ufufu” smile and wouldn’t be agitated by most things would go mad like this.

「……Nn. Think seriously if you don’t want to become like Remia. Then, idea! Idea, now! An unprecedented! Never to

be seen again! Unparalleled! Valentine Day idea!

Ignoring Remia who was hugging her knees at the corner of the room while covering her face and then stopped moving at the slightest, the meeting of the wive~s + alpha began.

Also, the time limit today was until Hajime who went to pick up Myuu returned home.

.

.

The homeroom after school was over. The elementary school students went out of school.

There were also a lot of children who played at the courtyard after that, but the majority was going home. They headed home as quick as possible and then went out to play.

Among such going hope group, there was a strange crowd. Nearly twenty children at the center of the courtyard became one group to go hime.

Thos children were passionately talking to the person at the center of the group.

「Hey hey, Myuu-chan. Will you come to my home today?」

「Ee~, come to my house~」

「Rather than that let’s go play somewhere! Myuu-chan, do you have anywhere you want to go at?」

Yes, it was Myuu. The youngest princess of Nagumo family.

Her blonde hair that was mixed with a little bit of emerald color was sparkling like a dream each time it was fluttering

from wind. Those jade eyes looked like gems, and her cheeks were rose colored. She was unmistakably a beautiful girl.

It often happened. In a place like school, often just because someone was “different from themselves” a kid became a target of exclusion.

But, in regard to Myuu, such thing never happened. Rather, she was too popular that no matter where she went it would become like a daimyo’s procession.

One of the reason for that was that her friends from the kindergarten where she was acting as elder sister were also advancing to elementary school together with her, and,

「Kyah」

「Myu! Rie-chan, you alright?」

「Tha, thank you……」

Even after she entered elementary school, her handsome man personality was going strong.

Even now, the moment a girl who was at the edge of the circle stumbled, Myuu weaved through the kids and leaped to support her. Her figure with her hand going around the girl’s waist and smiling while saying 「I’m glad nano」 was……it made anyone wanted to make tsukkomi ’I see, are you a main character huh’.

She was someone who already received combat training from the demon king and his cheat wive~s. In addition, she was also someone who piled up overly thick experience at another world.

Although she was a little girl, from her abundant life experience and environment of education, she was certainly a cut above the other elementary school students. Whether it was physically or mentally.

The like of Rie-chan whose head was patted was already going so red until the verge of exploding.

Also, the majority of the group consisted of girls. Myuu's popularity among the boys was also high, but her popularity was especially amazing among the girls. Myuu who was strong and gentle even though she was cute made the girls crazy about her.

Although, it didn't mean that there wasn't any boy among the group……

「O, oi, Myuu! I, I don't mind if you come to my house okay! I just got a new game! I, I'll specially allow you to play it first!」

The one who said that was a boy who looked completely like a rascal with standoffish attitude. He was brusque and talked with Myuu with his gaze not even meeting hers, but from his bright red face it was obvious that he was conscious of Myuu.

Myuu opened her mouth to give a reply. But, before that,

「Renji-kun, you know――」

「Come to think of it Myuu-chan! What're you going to do for this year's Valentine Day!?」

「Myu!? Nagisa-chan, your voice is loud nano……」

Myuu jumped *pyon* from the voice that was raised close to her ear. Using that chance, the other girls sent a glare to the boy――Renji-kun fiercely.

Those gazes weren't gazes that elementary school girls should make. It was yakuza. It was a group of little girl yakuza!

However, Renji-kun who fell in love at the first sight in the day of the enrollment and blazed with the feeling of first love didn't lose! Even though around him his friends were tucking their tail or running away while crying or starting to tremble while holding their head, he was the only one to glare back fiercely.

Crackle crackle, the gazes of Renji-kun VS Myuu loving girls clashed in the air!

「Of course, I'll prepare it this year too nano! I'll make delicious chocolates so look forward to it! Nano!」

「Wah, really!? Myuu-chan's bite sized choco cake was delicious――」

「Oi, Myuu! If you are insisting then I'll accept it reluctantly because it's from you!」

'You bastard, what the hell you're doing cutting into the conversation aaah! I'm gonna kill youuu-……' Nagisa-chan made a wicked look that seemed to say that. Of course it was done from an angle that she calculated to be in Myuu's blind spot.

By the way, Nagisa-chan was normally a quiet girl who would look suited with pigtails and glasses.

「Don't worry, I won't forget Renji-kun's share nano.」

□Eh!? By, by that you mean, to you I……□

□If there is only one classmate who don’t receive one……it will be a trauma nano. Myuu won’t produce that kind of tragedy!□

‘It was enough for such sad incident to happen to Endou only nano’……Myuu said with a faraway look.

And then, Renji-kun who misunderstood a bit dropped his shoulders in disappointment, while Nagisa-chan and others went □Serves you righttt□ with a pose of a certain pirate empress who often looked down on others too excessively.

By the way, the sad incident of Mr. Endo wasn’t about the past year story, but the story of his elementary school and middle school era. Juugo and Kentaro who noticed Endo who was overcome with sadness shared half of Tiro○ Choco with him. It was something that he wouldn’t forget for his whole life. He also wouldn’t forget the bewildered faces of the girls that said □Eh? In the first place, was there any boy like that in our class……□.

Friendship banzai!!

Even while talking of that, Myuu’s group passed through the courtyard and arrived at the front gate.

In that instant,

□Welcome back, Myuu.□

□! Papa!!□

Myuu’s expression shined like sun hearing the voice that reached her. Right after that, she dashed with a speed like a fired arrow.

Her target was Hajime who was leaning on the power pole near the front gate.

Without even any braking, far from that she was accelerating as though to say that she wanted to leap toward her papa even for a fraction of second faster, she leaped *PYON*.

Hajime smiled wryly at Myuu who was like that while stepping aside with his one hand rotating her at midair. Myuu whose momentum was neutralized settled snugly in Hajime’s arm after that.

「You should fix that charging habit already.」

「I’ll put it under serious consideration! Nano!」

「……Recently you’re only remembering that kind of words huh.」

The greatly delighted Myuu rubbed her cheeks on Hajime’s chest with a smile that was like flower in full bloom.

While the conversation between Myuu who was famous in school and the papa who was too young was gathering attention, Nagisa-chan and others were running toward Hajime.

「Myuu’s papa-san, good afternoon!」

「Go, good afternoon!」

「Coming to pick up Myuu?」

Starting with Nagisa-chan, the girls who were especially close to Myuu had also come to play several times to Nagumo house. They had also met Hajime face to face, so

there was no one among the girls who was doubting that he was Myuu’s papa.

Even the children who met him for the first time understood from their reaction that Hajime was Myuu’s father. Muttering was spreading among them. Voices like 「He’s completely different from my papa……」「Yes, he’s cool……」 came from here and there.

The unique atmosphere that was brought about by Hajime’s return from another world as well as his demon king personality, added with the stylish attire that was a present from Remia were enough to make the eyes of the students to shine.

「Ou, good afternoon. Nagisa-chan, Madoka-chan, and Hitomi-chan. It’s just as Hitomi-chan said, I came to pick up Myuu.」

「I, is it for some kind of business?」

Nagisa asked a bit nervously. Myuu too was tilting her head asking 「Now that you mention it, why is papa picking me up nano?」.

「Yeah, for some reason there is a discussion in the house. It seems that it’s no good if I and Myuu return before dinner.」

「Eh, Myuu and papa are locked out of the house nano?」

「Exactly right. Well, they might be planning a surprise for us. You know, next week is Valentine right?」

「Ee~~~~h, why is Myuu being left out nano!」

「Perhaps because they got forced to yield by you last year. That Yue, her mental turn into tofu when facing Myuu.」

□……I see nano. Yue-oneechan said □……Myuu, you better resolve yourself! Next year you will dance wildly in great joy from my choco!□ with tearful eyes so……□

□Your choco was really delicious that time.□

‘You really did your best~’, Hajime said while patting Myuu’s head. Myuu was remembering Yue last year with a difficult expression, but she immediately relaxed and went ‘funya~’.

□This year I’ll prepare a special choco for papa again nano!□

□Oo, I see. I’m looking forward to that. Myuu has talent for making sweets. Perhaps you can become a patissier in the future.□

Hajime made a statement like an idiot parent with a really gentle expression. Myuu herself went □Ehehe~□ while rubbing her cheeks even more on him.

How should it be said, a parent-daughter world where it was hard for other people to enter was spreading.

Nagisa-chan who should be asking question was at a loss of words with her face going red. Or rather, most of the girls for some reason were red faced.

Amidst that, there was a single boy who went ‘I can’t endure this!’ and stepped forward. It was Renji-kun!

□Myu, Myuu! If you insist then I’ll also receive that special choco!□

The girl beside him struck with a body blow of □Read the atmosphere-□. But, Renji-kun only lost his breath for an instant and stood his ground!

「Hm? I’ve never seen your face. Myuu’s new friend?」

「Yep! His name is Ooyama Renji-kun nano! His sprint is fast, and he often helps Myuu like at the cleaning time for example nano!」

Renji-kun’s face went bright red hearing Myuu’s evaluation of him. At the same time the face of the girls were dyed in rage. The glint of their eyes seemed to say 「What the hell are you doing raising the affection point diligently like that, eh? If you like cleaning that much then just do it alone-」.

Hajime somehow guessed various things. As a papa, he couldn’t turn a blind eye at the harmful insect buzzing around his daughter. This was the time where he should give a single warning.

Even if for example he would end up getting told that he was an idiot parent, overprotective, like Tomoichi-san……etc, by Yue and others with an exasperated gaze, he had to do it.

Although, this was the front gate of a school with many students going home around them. If he showed his overprotectiveness too much, it would affect the school life of Myuu herself.

And so, he did his best to restrain himself!

「Myuu’s papa-san! You don’t need to worry! Us the elite guards will beat away the vermins!」

「Nagisa-chan……aa, I’ll leave Myuu to you girls.」

「Wait a second nano. Nagisa-chan, what do you mean by elite guards? Why are you having an understanding with papa nano? Myuu doesn’t know anything though!」

‘It’s something Myuu doesn’t need to know about you know……’ The girls starting from Nagisa-chan and also Hajime-papa were looking at Myuu with that kind of gaze. Let’s just say this beforehand, it was Myuu loving Nagisa-chan who formed this, and not Hajime inciting the children, not at all.

「He, hey, Myuu?」

Renji-kun who was ignored kept persisting. He tried requesting “Myuu’s special choco”.

Myuu’s answer toward that was,

「That’s impossible.」

「Fuguh」

Renji-kun made an expression of enduring an unbearable pain, but he raised his face.

「Wh, why……」

「Because Renji-kun isn’t special.」

It was a polite wording, but it was like the words were strengthened by support magic. It broke Renji-kun’s heart.

Renji-kun was shaking. But, Renji-kun was strong. He didn’t even feel discouraged from the word’s straight punch. He didn’t even let tear came out. He was a boy!

「Do, don’t think……」

「Hm?」

Renji-kun’s gaze caught Hajime. He glared fiercely while putting strength into his stomach~,

「Don’t think, that you’ll be able to become Myuu’s special foreverrr~~~」

The sharp parting remark echoed. And right after that he yelled 「DAMN ITTTTTTTTTT-」 while leaving with the ferocious dash of youth.

「The déjà vu is incredible……」

「Myu?」

The prince of a certain kingdom also often acted like Renji-kun. After this there was a plan to bring him here for playing due to Liliana’s request, so perhaps it would be nice to let him met Renji-kun……they were love rival, but surely they could become good friend, it should be. Hajime was thinking of such thing.

「Papa, if we can’t go home right away, what will we do now nano?」

Hajime returned to his senses at Myuu’s words.

「I was thinking to go somewhere to play but……」

Hajime’s gaze moved to Nagisa-chan and others. If she was planning to play with her friends, it would be boorish for a parent to interfere. In that case they would part here, and he would spend time on his own somewhere.

It would also be passable to go drinking coffee at Wisteria. If Sonobe was there, she would also keep him company for talking……he thought. The thought that she was kidnapped by his own wife into their house never even crossed his mind.

At the same time,

「No no, we don’t have any plan! Please have fun together with Myuu-chan!」

「We won’t get in the way!」

「Myuu, we’re looking forward to the report.」

Actually, Nagisa-chan and others knowing about Myuu’s future dream――becoming papa’s wife――was also something that never crossed his mind at all.

And he also didn’t know about them understanding that Myuu’s papa love wasn’t just in a childish sense, but that Myuu was completely serious, and they supported her even then, not in the slightest.

「I, I see? Then I can accompany you guys you know? We can go somewhere in the city to play. I’ll contact your parents to let them know in that case.

「Myuu’s papa-san, that’s terrible!」

「Please think of Myuu’s feeling!」

「Delicacy」

「Why!?」

He couldn’t understand the elementary school students recently……Hajime thought in perplexed.

「Myuu-chan! Have fun!」

「「「Myuu-chan, bye by~~e」」」

「Myu! Everyone, see you tomorrow nano~!」

The talk was progressing even while he was at his wits’ end. Hajime wasn’t completely freed from his perplexity, even so he set out to spend time with Myuu alone.

.

.

When the curtain of night was starting to lower down, Hajime and Myuu was on their way home.

「Even so, Myuu. You have become really famous huh.」

「I didn’t know that nano.」

When they went to look for Myuu’s clothes, the shop employees and guests badgered them to take Myuu’s picture. It was like she was a celebrity.

Actually, the company of Remia and Tio occasionally would hold a fashion show for children clothing. At that time Myuu would also appear as model.

Myuu didn’t know how big a deal it was, so she was really surprised when she was surrounded by people who seemed to remember her. Also, the shop employees were also taken aback by how young her papa was.

They could see the light of their house while making such talk.

What would be for dinner today……the two thought with their stomach growling while arriving in front of the house with their hands harmoniously connected. There,

「……What about this!? Five Heavenly Dragon Choco!」

「Kyaa!? Stupid Yue! Don’t use age of god magic just because you cannot think any idea!」

「……Ah!? Bakaori! Because of your disintegration magic the control is!?」

「Awawawah, that’s terrible! ——”Divine Severance”ee!」

Right after Kaori’s yell resounded and Liliana’s panicked voice echoed, *prang* the window was smashed and five brown tentacles flew out.

Looking carefully, they were dragon. Sniffing carefully, they smelled sweet. The five dragons that were made from chocolate were wriggling while trying to fly out to the neighborhood. From how the eye parts were dark red, they seemed to be monsterified using metamorphosis magic……

The choco heavenly dragons tried to escape as though to say 「Who will stay here to get eaten-」, but they were hindered by the barrier that appeared around Nagumo house. Choco breath sweetly decorated the barrier. Right after that, they were dragged back into the room.

「……」

「……」

Hajime and Myuu were speechless. Their gazes were completely dry. The two of them looked at each other and nodded, then they approached the fence stealthily. Myuu jumped *pyon* and caught the top of the fence while bringing up her face, Hajime also quietly peered into the living room.

「Eeei-, what’s wrong with mine life-sized choco!」

「That’s completely for 18 years old above! You’re just covering yourself with choco!」

「No matter how you look at it that’s only for Hajime right!? What are you going to make Myuu eat!?」

Ahead of the gazes of Shia and Shizuku who were busily punching and slashing the rampaging choco heavenly dragons was stark naked Tio slathered with choco. Hajime’s eyes died. Myuu’s cheeks were convulsing.

Deeper inside, Aiko’s desperate face came out from the kitchen.

「Geez-, everyone! Please help a bit here! Or rather, what did you put into the choco dish!? It’s wriggling! Why did you melt meat into it!?」

「Now wait a secondd~~~. Ai-chan-sensei! The cacao beans that sensei produced also strange somehow though!? Even though they are beans they have water moisture like vegetable! Aah, it’s stale!? Is this really cocoa beans!?」

「Eee? It shouldn’t be like……certainly I procured them from cacao beans for Hajime-kun’s sake but, they were goods on the market you know? Well, I used magic so it’ll be even more tasty though……」

「You didn’t use anything like soul magic or the like right!? Aaa, somehow it’s rolling by itself see!?」

「That kind of stupid thing……ah, come to think of it, I think I used it while having delusion of Hajime-kun……」

「Kyaah, what’s this!? Something like tentacles from the pot of the choco dish are……no moree~~~~~! I’m going homee!!」

Prang sound resounded. Yuuka smashed through the window’s kitchen and rolled out. From behind her, somehow slushy blasphemous brown tentacles were stretching out.

Interception by throwing knives! Yuuka didn’t pause and jumped over the fence with an acrobatic movement. She then vanished while yelling 「Nagumo house is a den of evilsssssss-」.

「Everyone-, get a hold of yourself! Hajime-kun and Myuu-chan will return soon with hungry stomach! Let’s put the finishing touch to the choco prototype dishes!」

Kaori’s order resounded. Tentacles were stretching out from the kitchen. Five heavenly dragons were rampaging inside the living room. Tio was going ‘haa haa’.

Myuu silently got down on the ground, then she looked at Hajime-papa with a grim face.

「Papa. Myuu will wait ahead at Valhalla, nano.」

It seemed for Myuu the choice to not eat didn’t exist. Because, no matter what kind of cooking it was, it was created by the Onee-chans for her.

But, she had no confidence of surviving. The expression of the little girl who saluted with determination was beautiful……

Hajime sighed.

「Myuu, let’s eat outside today.」

「I want hamburger nano.」

Instant reply.

「Onee-chans……what about them?」

「Leave them.」

Instant reply.

「Papa……mama is hugging her knees at the room corner nano.」

「I guess, she remembered the black history last year and collapsed ain’t she?」

Spot on.

Hajime looked at Myuu’s troubled expression and sent arachne-san into the living room that was turned into battlefield. It closed the distance until Remia’s side undetected and opened a gate beneath her.

「Hyaa~~~~」

The teleported Remia fell from above. Hajime caught her in a princess carry.

「De, dear? And Myuu too?」

「We’re home nano, mama. We’re retreating from the battlefield right away nano.」

「Oo, swiftly, and, safely.」

While Remia was going 「Eh? Eh?」, Hajime and Myuu left that place with synchronized action.

Like that, they directly headed to a hamburger specialist restaurant in front of the station.

Also, Remia who didn’t have any composure mentally from the shock of recalling the black history and the sudden happening stayed in the princess carry posture until they arrived at the restaurant but……

The next day, in the gathering of mama friends,

「I saw it you know, Remia-san! You were carried in princess carry by your husband!」

「It really stood out in front of the station! Sheesh, showing off like that!」

「Myuu-chan really is a good kid. She didn’t pester to be carried but looked warmly at her mama instead……」

She instantly sunk once more from the witness reports.

Furthermore, Yue and others were also harmoniously getting instantly sunk from receiving the “Divine Flame” class scolding from Sumire-okaasan who went home in a tired state.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

My deepest apologies, but this isn’t the return of update.

As expected I think that no update for two months will be bad, so I somehow posted this but, my lack of time is still not resolved.

I’m in a bit of situation where I cannot give any guarantee where I’ll be able to resume the regular update.

And so, for a while it will be an irregular update schedule (The update schedule itself is fixed in six P.M Saturday).

Best regards!

Also, there are updates at Gardo Comic too.

Main story, Zero, Nichijou, please have a look at them.

Arifureta Chapter 348

Arifureta After III　School Festival　First Part

.

AN: It has been a long time. Forgive me for the long wait.

I almost forgot the flow of the after story, so I’m returning to the starting point……well not really but I tried writing the story about the beginning when they just returned.

This was a story when Hajime and others the returnees when it hadn’t been really long since they started attending school once more.

As always, the people who were watching Yue while she was going to school were getting into man-made disasters, the insolent people were hammered with bullets of bloodlust like moth being lured into fly trap, Hajime himself almost becoming a victim of self-made disaster from getting distracted by the radiant Yue-san in uniform, etc. Like that Hajime who travelled the amusing road to the school entered into the classroom.

Then,

「Kuh」

「Fu, fuguh」

「Tsu–」

The classmates simultaneously averted their face. They clung on their desk with their body trembling all over.

「Oi, if you guys got something to say then say it.」

It was a phenomenon that was already changing into the morning custom since they started resuming coming to school. A pressure was released from Hajime.

Ryutaro answered as the representative.

「Nagumo, wearing uniform! It ain’t fitting at all-」

‘Puhah’ Tamai and others snorted.

“Nagumo Hajime before summoning” was already beyond faraway in the memory of the classmates.

White hair, eye patch, metal prosthetic arm, black coat. Large revolver on his thigh. That was “Nagumo Hajime”. That was everyone’s one and only “demon king-sama”.

This man who would kill even god if they became his enemy and saved the world while he was at it was……wearing school uniform now. Although his appearance had returned to look like normal human, it was just too surreal that everyone found it hard every morning to hold back their laughter.

The demon king who diligently went to school every day without even getting late……that was certainly surreal.

Although, as expected they were laughing too much. Kouki who seemed to think so spoke remonstrating words.

「O, oi, everyone. You all are laughing too much. Certainly, it doesn’t suit him at a――」

Pshew A stifled gunshot rang. By destroying an ultra-small treasure warehouse that was inserted into the bullet itself using the firing hammer, the compressed air was released and using that while it was a revolver, it made a silenced rubber bullet into reality.

In a civilized society――especially in this Japan that was a constitutional state, firing silently was important. He mustn’t cause trouble for the surrounding.

Because it was such quality product of Hajime, the “embodiment of consideration bullet”, brain matter wasn’t scattered from Kouki’s head. He was only falling from his chair.

「Why did you shoot!? Or rather, why me!?」

The demon king-sama completely ignored Kouki’s only natural protest and his gaze lorded over the classroom. His eyes explained it more eloquently than anything.

His eyes said, 「You all, want to get shot?」.

「……Nn, Hajime. Restrain, restrain.」

「Hajime-sa~n, aren’t you going to become an exemplary Japanese person? Or perhaps, making tsukkomi with bullet is actually the culture of Japan?」

「Hajime-kun, Shia is going to misunderstand so let’s keep that gun away okay?」

「It’s not just a problem of misunderstanding. Or rather, Kaori. Kouki is writhing around so go heal him. Look, his

back is bending like a bridge from the pain. That’s a beautiful back bending posture.」

Hajime who was persuaded (?) repeated to himself 「Oops I can’t do this. I’m a Japanese. A virtuous and model Japanese」 while transferring Donner back to the treasure warehouse.

A while after that the bell rang to inform the beginning of the first period of the class. The one who arrived then was the math teacher. His name was Asada Ichiro (32 years old). His trait was his eyes that were like fox, his hair that was properly combed down, and then the way he talked that vaguely sounded obstinate.

The gaze of Teacher Asada who was standing at the teacher podium flowed toward Yue and Shia while the students were giving a bow and sitting back. And then, his gaze moved to Hajime at the end and his fox eyes narrowed further into a slit. This too was a daily happening.

The class started and everyone dispassionately went through the content of their textbook. And then, as expected Hajime was named to solve a strangely difficult problem just as usual.

「Nagumo, answer it.」

「Yes, sensei.」

‘Bufuh’, several sounds of snort were……

Looking at the direction of the snorts, there was Ryutaro prostrating on his desk. Kaori was averting her gaze, while even Shizuku was looking down while shaking.

「~~~~And that’s the answer, sensei.」

‘Puhih!’ A laughter that sounded like a pig resounded. It was Shinji. It seemed he couldn’t hold it down anymore. Beside him Yoshiki was trembling too much his desk was rattling.

「Again-, you guys! Just what in the world is funny-」

Teacher Asada got into a bad mood. ‘Today is the day I’m running out of patience!’ The angry voice he raised sounded like that.

This always happened, but when he assigned Hajime a question, there would be laughter leaking out every time, so perhaps the teacher was feeling like it was him who was getting laughed at.

「Sorry, sensei. I’ll tell them later how bad their attitude is.」

‘Pupah!!’ Nana spouted. On the seat beside her Taeko was holding her stomach. Yuuka was pinching the back of her own hand until she got teary eyed.

Atsushi was holding his laughter too much that his thought slipped out with trembling voice.

「Na, Nagumo using polite language……it totally doesn’t suit him……」

That was the mutual sentiment of the classmates.

「It’s only obvious to use polite language when talking with teacher!」

「It’s exactly as you say, sensei. These guys are idiots. We will do something about it by ourselves. Really I apologize for them.」

‘Stop it alreadyyy~~’ The voices from the girls that sounded like a scream were raised.

No matter what, it seemed Hajime talking with polite language was “absurd” for the classmates.

He was more or less talking using polite language to Tio’s grandfather and the family of Kaori and others, so this wasn’t their first time seeing this, but for some reason the classmates couldn’t hold back when Hajime was using polite language to people other than the ones mentioned above.

They still reacted like this even after getting quite used to hear it but……it looked like they would still need some more time until they got completely used to it.

While the classmates were shaking from the strange occurrence of the demon king’s laudable attitude that would pass straight being a laughing matter and caused a pandemonium instead if they were in Tortus, Teacher Asada narrowed his eyes that it looked like they were completely closed already.

And then, he snorted in ridicule.

「Nagumo, I’ll teach you something important. The thing called “trust” you see, it’s something created from someone’s daily behavior.」

In other words, Hajime’s daily behavior wasn’t something praiseworthy, therefore, he couldn’t be trusted. It seemed that the teacher wanted to say that.

‘As an educator, telling a student 「You can’t be trusted」 is just……’. Making that kind of tsukkomi would just create more problem, so Hajime held back.

He was an exemplary and virtuous Japanese person!

Perhaps thanks to that patience, the classroom fell completely silent. Looking closer, half of the class were looking at Teacher Asada as though they were watching a stylish suicide applicant, while the remaining half was looking at Hajime like they were watching a nuclear bomb that was going to explode.

It was something greatly unexpected for Hajime-san! Was it thanks to his daily behavior?

Teacher Asada didn’t even notice the atmosphere of the class and continued with a sarcastic tone.

「All of you are called returnees as it is and the society are looking coldly. I’m worried about the future of you who are in the center of that. Even the nonsense of fighting in another world was also thought up by you right? Even if you’re making fun of adults there is limit to it.」

「I’m sorry, I’ll keep that in mind.」

「Do you really mean that? It doesn’t really seem so. Try looking up the word modesty in dictionary. If you do that, then even people like you all who are making a ruckus in the society will surely have a little feeling of gratitude toward the school that would accept you back welling up inside.」

This “special classroom” that was set up at the fringe of the school building wasn’t really because of the good will of the school’s side. They reluctantly set it up only after there was a notice from the government about social decency or whatever.

Although, retorting with that and making this talk devolved into an argument would be problematic. Hajime had no

intention to purposefully cause that. He nodded with an obedient expression.

Besides, it also wasn’t really a lie that he had a feeling of gratitude.

(……Hajime. This guy, should I strangle him?)

(Stop it. He is more or less a teacher who was teaching us from the beginning you know?)

Teacher Asada continued talking with a lot of sarcasm enveloped in his words. Yue sent Hajime a telepathy with a dangerous gaze. Her eyes were thinking 「Should I give him “Divine Statement”……」. Hajime admonished Yue to not do that.

Just as Hajime said, actually, after they resumed attending school, if they were asked if there was full lesson for the special class, then the answer would be “no”.

Due to fear, bewilderment, and suspicion toward the returnees, and then because of the protest toward the forceful demand from the government, there were teachers who refused to give them lesson, teachers who resigned because they got tired of the questioning from the mass media and parents that were like machine gun everyday, or teachers who transferred to other school.

It wasn’t unreasonable. The incident was far removed from being just a disappearance case. The time period of their disappearance, and then even their returning time too. Although they were teacher they weren’t saint. It was only natural that they were shaken.

Because of that, for Hajime, although Teacher Asada would be somewhat sarcastic like this, he was thankful to him for

his willingness to teach them right from the start.

「Besides, Nagumo. It seems your attitude toward girls is really slovenly isn't it?」

Teacher Asada's gaze moved toward Yue and Shia once more. His gaze also moved toward Kaori and Shizuku, but as expected his gaze then returned to the former two. Especially at Shia.

Shia twisted her body in discomfort.

The sermon of Teacher Asada regarding illicit sexual relationship began.

Certainly, having relationship with multiple girls was normally worthy to be a target of criticism from the perspective of common sense. And so Hajime resigned himself to listen to Teacher Asada's words even while feeling dubious at the gaze he made. But,

(Hajime-san, Hajime-san)

(Hm? What, Shia?)

(You see, I intend to ignore it right from the start so I forgot to say but……actually, Asada-sensei has been telling me various things from some time ago about my relationship with Hajime-san.)

(What? What kind of words?)

(If I'm going out with Hajime-san then break up that relationship, that kind of talk.)

At first Hajime thought that perhaps it was only a warning that a teacher would naturally make. From Hajime and Yue's

special atmosphere, the teacher must be thinking that he was only playing around with Shia, so he couldn’t overlook that as a teacher.

However, when he asked Kaori and Shizuku weren’t told anything like that by Teacher Asada.

(And also, before this he told me that he would give me consultation, so come to the student counseling room.)

(……And?)

(At that time it was my turn to prepare dinner so I refused and went home right away. But, even after that there were times when I was called after school. I refused all of them because I had things to do but……)

It seemed that Shia was also called for after school today. Furthermore it seemed the teacher was asking really strongly.

(If it’ll be just a normal counseling then, well, it’s not really a problem. But his gaze, it’s a little bit……)

(Enough, I get it.)

Hajime-san’s expression changed from obedience into a smile.

The eyes of the classmates now looked like they were watching a bomb that was approaching the countdown. Kouki was sweating like a waterfall while pleading 「Sensei! Asada-sensei! We should resume the class soon!」 but……

「Besides you are, everyday――」

「Sensei, I know really well that my way of living isn’t something praiseworthy.」

Teacher Asada scowled in displeasure that his words were interrupted. Hajime kept smiling while making suggestion to such Teacher Asada.

「I’m thinking to correct that using this chance. And so, can I receive your guidance by any means? After school, in the counseling room.」

「……The necessity for that」

「There is no way it’s not necessary isn’t it? Yes, according to sensei, it seems that I’m a really problematic child. However, what is it that I should fix and how should I do it……I don’t understand it. Please sensei, give me your advice to help this student by all means.」

Hajime-san grasped his chest as though he was mourning himself and sent a gaze looking for help.

It was actually really difficult to refuse a student that was saying something like this, especially when in front of the eyes of other students. As the result, Teacher Asada said 「……Very well. Come to the student counseling room after school today」 and stopped his preaching before resuming the lesson.

(Yue, come with me after school. We’ll search the inside of Asada-sensei’s heart.)

(……Nn-. Divine Statement ready to fire! He’ll confess everything.)

The classmates thought when seeing the motivated Yue.

‘The student counseling room after school will change into the interrogation room of the demon king and his first wife huh.’

What things were lurking inside the heart of this Teacher Asada……

After that he would say things like 「Boss-, while presumptuous please allow me to start the lesson for today-」 with a tone like a military officer toward Haijme. It could be easily guessed from that.

Putting that aside.

After that, they absorbed the lessons favorably and the English lesson for the fourth period was over. Right away, the English teacher——Yanagi Kazuko-sensei (45 years old) rushed out in a flash.

It wasn’t like she was bullied by Hajime and co.

Rather, the students were really diligent. Even when Hajime used polite language, the classmates didn’t laugh anymore. It wasn’t because Hajime told them 「The next time anyone laugh, everyone will get pile bunker into their ass」 or anything. It was simply because laughing during lesson wasn’t a good thing even if they weren’t laughing at the teacher!

Then, why did Kazuko-sensei left the classroom as though she was escaping?

There was one reason.

「As expected, Language Comprehension is just a cheat huh.」

「I think it’s fine to thank Ehito just for this.」

Just as Shinji and Yoshiki earnestly said, the cause was the cheat power of “Language Comprehension”.

After all, thanks to this everyone was like native speaker. Rather, they were even more skilled than Kazuko-sensei!

Because of that Kazuko-sensei would feel nervous and feel like running away every time she was giving lesson. Every time she would leave the classroom as though running away.

「How should I say it, the teachers refusing to teach our class also feel like our own doing……」

「Even the classic language or kanji are easy to understand……somehow the guilt is……」

Shizuku smiled wryly. Kaori too was making a troubled expression.

「Everyone is thinking that we’re abnormal because of things like this isn’t it……」

「Even though we haven’t study for a year, our knowledge improved instead, of course people will be like ‘what the hell!’.」

「But, it’s difficult to hide it.」

Yuuka made a bitter expression. Nana was staring at the door where Kazuko-sensei left from with an apologetic expression, while Taeko had a complicated look.

It seemed that it wasn’t just Hajime that was trying to get used to the life on earth.

In any case, the morning lessons were finished. It was afternoon break. The time for lunch.

Normally, there would be some who went to the school canteen to purchase lunch but……

Everyone took out their boxed lunch without exception. No one tried to go out of their class.

Far from that, *tatatatatata-* the sound of running resounded from the corridor. Right after that, *bam* the door was opened loudly. No sooner than that, a small silhouette rushed into the classroom.

「Ai-chan-sensei, so today you're eating in the classroom again.」

「Tha, that's right. For some reason, yes, for some reason……」

Aiko-sensei's gaze wandered around for a bit while the bag that was filled with her boxed lunch was swaying.

Since they went back into school, she would come at lunch without fail. With a rushing speed at that.

It was already something common, so Yue immediately gave up her seat and moved on Hajime's lap herself.

At the same time, an anxious voice echoed.

「No, no good. I forget my lunch……」

It was Nomura Kentaro. His chair clattered and he stood still in place from the shock. His shoulders dropped down in dejection just because he forgot his lunch. His face looked

like it was already decided that for today he would go without lunch.

「Kentaro, I'll share you mine a bit.」

「Juugo, my bad.」

「I'll give you mine too.」

「……Kousuke, so you're here.」

「Since the morning.」

Kentaro's expression slightly relaxed with Juugo and Kousuke sharing their boxed lunch with him while he sat back down.

「No, just go to the canteen to buy.」

A tsukkomi came from Hajime.

Since they started going to school, the classmates wouldn't leave the classroom only when it was lunch break. Hajime finally got really curious with that and spoke out. He thought that perhaps it was only because the other classmates just didn't like getting stared at with curiosity, but their action was too obstinate if it was just because of that.

Kentaro diverted his gaze away from that dubious gaze of Hajime.

And then, he muttered in a low voice.

「……I don't want to get away from Nagumo.」

「Do, don't suddenly said such disgusting thing.」

Hajime was creeped out. Kentaro hurriedly said 「Wro, wrong! That’s not what I mean!」 and gave his excuse.

「Because, you! What am I gonna do if another summoning happen again huh! Whether I get left behind or get summoned by myself, I absolutely don’t want either! The safe area at lunch break is at Nagumo’s side!」

「Haa?」

‘What is this guy saying……’, Hajime stared like he was looking at an idiot, but when he looked around, everyone quickly averted their gaze.

「Se, seriously? Ah, could it be, Aiko came to the classroom each time it’s lunch break is also」

「A, ahaha……」

Looking really close, there were countless small magic reactions in Aiko’s pocket. Most likely, they were seed. By combining Aiko’s power and soul magic, she would be able to use them to instantly create imitation Treant. So that she would be fine even if she fell into an unexpected situation anytime, her combat preparation was flawless! It seemed to be something like that.

「You guys……so you guys are completely traumatized by the lunch break huh.」

The classmates all showed a bitter smile. They obstinately wouldn’t leave the classroom was as expected, because no one wanted to leave the demon king-sama’s side.

Aiko changed the topic to dodge this matter.

「Tha, that’s right. Everyone, it will be the school festival soon. There will be other time for us to talk about it, but please start thinking of what do you want to do there from now.」

Suzu chewed *mokyu mokyu* on her salmon boxed lunch while nodding with 「Aah」.

「My friend from other class told me. It looks like there’re classes that has decided it already but……everyone apparently are curious of what our class is going to do.」

「The students are full of “curiosity” but……from the teacher’s side are they “filled with trepidation”?」

Shizuku lowered her eyebrows with a troubled look while asking Aiko. Aiko’s expression became the same while she nodded. And then, she clenched both her fists to fire up herself and,

「So it’s decided, the theme of our performance will be “Completely safe and secure! There’s nothing to fear! Let’s get along!”, there!」

She said that with a rough huff. ‘Let’s clear up the suspicion “they might be dangerous kids” toward the returnees!’ That seemed to be her intention.

There, Shinji said 「Here!」 and raised his hand.

「Yes, Nakano-kun!」

「Sensei! I think that target shooting will be good! Nagumo have guns after all!」

「Safety safety-, something not scary-! Not scary!」

It was refused.

‘A performance that’ll give favorable impression!’ Aiko yelled while glaring at Shinji. Shinji dejectedly backed away and bit into his sweetened bun. Choco cornet was delicious……

Next Atsushi expressed his idea full of confidence.

「As expected, here we should go with the simple approach, a maid café!」

「You just want to see girls in maid uniform.」

A gaze of absolute zero was thrown from Yuuka. But, the boys were getting spirited. Starting from Aikawa Noboru and Nimura Akito, Shinji and Yoshiki also raised their voice to somehow make the idea a reality. But,

「……Are you telling me, to call somebody else other than Hajime goshujin-sama?」

The classroom froze for real, not just in metaphor. Frost was forming on the window, while the floor and wall were freezing white with creaking sound.

「……Something like maid café is a heresy!」

「Yeah, for sure!」

「Your ulterior motive is transparent! Restrain yourself Atsushi!」

「This pervert-! I’m embarrassed as your friend!」

「Yo, you guys, turning your back so easily on me……」

The maid café was also rejected. Spring arrived inside the classroom, melting the snow. It was war~m.

「On the contrary, won't a butler café be better I wonder! I wonder!」

'I got some kind of a good idea!' Kaori strongly insisted with that kind of look. Shizuku who would see through everything if it was about Kaori got a deadpan stare.

「You just want to make Hajime a butler and got treated like a noble lady right?」

「!? The, the-the, there's no such thing you know?」

「Then, Kaori. If Kouki is the one who become a butler to serve the guests then it'll be okay isn't it?」

「I won't accept anyone other than Hajime-kun.」

Kaori-san was faithful on her own desire. And then, Kouki spouted out his rolled omelet saying 「Shizuku! Why are you dragging me into this!?」, and then he got a faraway look due to Kaori's instant reply. It seemed his soul was flying to somewhere. Ryutaro's gentle pat on his shoulder was pervading deep inside……

「Shi, Shizuku-chan said that but you yourself!」

「Wha, what?」

「Even though you want to be pampered by Hajime-kun dressed as butler!」

「I'm not thinking anything like――」

Shizuku-chan glanced at Hajime, imagined something, then her cheeks boiled red. It seemed she was thinking it. She

wanted to be pampered by butler Hajime.

「……But, that doesn’t sound bad. Getting treated like noble lady by the demon king. Right! Yuuka-chi!」

「Why are you turning the question to me!?」

Nana who was making a considering look grinned and said that. Everyone’s attention was turned toward Yuuka hearing that. The gaze of the flustered Yuuka met with Hajime’s.

「Wha, what! You want to have a go!?」

「Are you a delinquent from somewhere huh.」

For some reason Yuuka growled ‘garururu-‘ threateningly at Hajime. The atmosphere of the classroom turned lukewarm seeing them.

At the same time, the majority of the female camp seemed to get ideas from Nana’s words. Their gaze seemed to wander around in a daze. That “demon king” would, act kind to them……treating them gently like a noble lady……

「……nice」

「It’s nice……」

Voices like those were coming from here and there.

「Rejected-! Firm rejection! We won’t allow that kind of idea that will put a great burden to our dear friend no matter what!」

Shinji stood up from his chair and protested with bloodshot eyes. Yoshiki held up his chopstick like a mike and asked.

「Your true feeling?」

「Nagumo is going to be the only winner like that-. Do you want your school festival memory get dyed with the single color of defeat!? Don’t screw around-, I’ll cry out blood!」

The girls crowding around the demon king butler…… certainly, from the perspective of Shinji who spent his days wandering around the city looking for girl, it was an idea that he would firmly refuse. Atsushi and others also seemed to have the same feeling inside their heart.

Taeko half smiled feeling that it was somewhat troublesome while giving a suggestion.

「Then, isn’t it fine to just make a normal café? Something like Yuuka’s Wisteria.」

「Ah, now that you mentioned it Sonobe-san’s family has a western restaurant isn’t it?」

Aiko’s words made the classmates who didn’t know to say 「Hee」 while their attention gathered on Yuuka once more.

「So Yuuka-san’s family is managing a cooking business. I’m interested with that!」

Shia was interested. As expected from a cooking lover who had continuously added the cooking of various countries into her repertory since coming to earth.

「Yeah. Rather than telling me to be a butler, it’ll be far better to get teach by Sonobe how to cook and work at the back.」

「Eh? I, is that so?」

Yuuka’s gaze was wandering. At the thought of it, her gaze was turned to empty air.

——Both of them cooking side by side

——Her teaching Hajime the taste of her family

——Two hands overlapping in order to correct his hand movement

For some reason the scene changed,

——Her and Hajime standing side by side in the kitchen of Wisteria

——Both of them managing the restaurant, the regular customers jeering at their relationship……

——After the restaurant closed, the two of them would snuggle close to each other while drinking the coffee that she brewed

——And then……

「Yuuka-chan?」

「Hah!?」

The owner of the monotone voice was Kaori-san who was staring at her with lightless eyes. Beside her, there was also Yue-sama whose default deadpan stare was becoming even moo~~~rre deadpan.

At her wit’s end Yuuka-chan glared fiercely at Hajime for some reason.

「I, I absolutely won’t teach Nagumo anything! You’re ten years to early to enter the kitchen!」

「What the hell」

Yuuka’s face was bright red. Nana and Taeko were looking at her warmly while patting her head saying ‘good girl, good girl’.

Hajime shrugged and ignored the glaring Yuuka while continuing 「In the first place」.

「You guys might be forgetting it but, it might be difficult for this classroom to attract customers you know?」

The classmates went “?”. Hajime smiled wryly and said.

「It’s the location, the location. This spot is the fringe of the school building’s fringe. A “special classroom” that is half isolated you remember?」

Everyone went 「Ah」. It was exactly like that, it was impossible for anyone to pass through here “coincidentally” while heading to somewhere else. The location was at the edge with no path that was leading to anywhere else.

「With this kind of spot, in addition it’s a place where there’ll only be the performance of the returnees, I think the only people who would come here are only guys who want to satisfy their curiosity with no regard for any performance.」

On the other hand, there was also the possibility of people flooding this people with that kind of reason, but if something like that happened at this classroom that was located at the end of the hallway, the situation would surely become chaotic.

Especially when there wouldn’t be any limitation from outsider entering the school festival this year just because there were returnees here.

It was a measure so that the mass media and parents wouldn’t make any ruckus instead because of any limitation. There was a risk that they would go ‘As expected, there is really a problem with the returnees that has to be hidden no matter what isn’t it!?’.

「Tha, that’s, certainly true……」

Aiko’s expression turned conflicted at what Hajime pointed out.

Even after that they used the lunch break to exchange opinion but nothing was decided. They further used the time after school, the next day, and also the time that was originally set aside to decide the class’s program for the school festival for discussion. They used a lot of time, a lot, before the classroom of Hajime and co finally decided their programme.

Shia who was chosen as the school festival committee member――or rather she nominated herself because it sounded fun, attended the committee meeting.

Her beauty and personality that would treat anyone innocently without distinction tightly grasped the heart of the students in the committee meeting while they were reporting their respective class’s programme by turn. Then finally it became Shia’s turn.

「The, then Shia-san. Please tell us what your class’s programme will be.」

The male student who served as the committee chairman asked Shia with a slightly shrill voice. Shia smiled widely and said 「Yes desu!」. The face of the chairman blushed bright red seeing that. A part of the female students’ face looked entranced.

Like that, while everyone was focusing at Shia herself and the programme that the returnees class would do, the title of the programme that Shia announced was,

——South Cloud Circus ~There isn't any trick or contrivance in it~

That.

The vice principal who personally volunteered to take charge of the school festival committee stared unamused.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

The writing for Zero volume 3 is finally completed for the moment.

And so, I believe that I won't need to make everyone wait for nearly one month for the next update.

There're still a lot of things that I have to write so I can guarantee it but……perhaps it'll be fine.

I'll be happy if we can have fun together again.

.

※Asada-sensei is that person whose story came out for a bit in Arifureta After Downtown Date 2.

※Kouki-kun is still on earth. He will go to Tortus after several more months.

.

※The comics at Gardo are updated (at 2/25)

- Arifureta main story　chapter 30

So, somehow a dragon that look really like a last boss is…I’m looking forward to the pile bunker!

- Arifureta Nichijou Chapter 34

The cockroaches are cute.

- Arifureta Zero Chapter 11

The character in Kaori’s role at Zero is Suse isn’t it. Her pitch black eyes are wonderful.

.

※Zero volume 3 is planned to be released at 25 March.

You’ll be able to see a lot of no good Meiru-oneesan. Also, things like the full view of liberator organization, the creator

of ice and snow cavern that is in the middle of being conquered at main story’s vol 9 Van-chan, or a demon king will come out.

Please pick up the book!

It’s also announced in Overlap-sama’s homepage, so please go check there if you like.

Arifureta Chapter 349

Arifureta After III　School Festival　Second Part

.

Under the bright and clear sky.

The high school that Hajime and co enrolled in was showing bustling activity since early in the morning. The students were running to left and right in order to finish the final preparation for their class or club’s program. Loud voices were raised for this and that.

It was school festival. The reason for the unusual tumult was the proof of the long awaited school festival.

The atmosphere of the school was festive and joyful like that. However, there was one place that gave off atmosphere like it just had stayed up all night.

□……Finally, it came.□

The one who said that with a voice that sounded like it was wrung out from inside their stomach was placing both their elbows on the table, joining their hand together in front of their jaw, hiding his mouth with a Gendo○ pose, the vice principal.

Yes, the place with atmosphere of staying up all night was the staff room.

All the teachers with the exception of one person were having a pensive look. It was like the expression of the populace who were told that 「The world will end today」.

「Teachers. Today will be a difficult day. Most likely, it will be an unprecedentedly difficult day in our whole teaching career.」

The male teachers gulped their saliva audibly. The female teachers covered their face with both their hands with a sob. Kazuko-sensei looked like she would vomit from nervousness.

「With the police's cooperation there will be security of plainclothes police officers. The school is also hiring security guards. We cannot deal with this by ourselves. But, even so, we are the one who should stand against the brunt of outside attention. The teachers of this school have to step forward to deal with the problems that occurred.

Because, if they didn't do that the mass media would abuse them again. The lifespan of my few remaining hairs that is already short even now will be decreased even more.

The vice principal looked outside. People were already gathering outside the school's outer wall. They weren't the relatives of the students. They were the slaves of curiosity and the hyenas who made information as their source of income.

His gaze returned to inside the room.

「Also about the headmaster, yesterday midnight he vomited blood and sent to hospital in emergency. Today he cannot be present because he's hospitalized. ……It seems a hole with record breaking size was opened in his stomach due to excessive stress.」

‘Headmasterrr~’ Everyone’s feeling wanted to yell that. The tragedy of the supreme commander suddenly exiting the stage made everyone wanted to hold their head. Kazuko-sensei went 「Oee」 and covered her mouth.

Vice principal slowly ran his gaze through everyone. He saw the eyes of the teacher one by one, and then, he announced with a warrior face.

「I ask everyone to resolve themselves.」

‘What resolve!?’ The teachers shuddered. Kazuko-sensei quickly opened a vomit bag and vomited.

While the school nurse looked after Kazuko-sensei, the vice principal’s sharp gaze flew to a corner of the staff room.

「Are you listening, Hatayama-sensei?」

「!!」

Aiko-chan-sensei was shrinking her body that was already small even in normal time, desperately wanting to erase her presence. Her body jumped with a jerk. And right after that she started trembling all over like a small animal.

「I, I’m lhistening!!」

She bit her tongue. It seemed she mutilated her tongue with all her strenght. She became teary from the pain. The air of the staff room softened slightly. Though it didn’t work agains the vice principal.

「The fate of this school might be decided today. It’s a critical time! You understand don’t you!?」

「e, u…..ca, calling it fate might be exaggerating……」

Aiko-sensei questioned if it was a bit exaggerating with mumbling voice. The vice principal's eyes glinted hearing that. Not his head. His eyes. The vice principal knew that it would be meaningless if he wasn't properly equipped.

He suddenly stood up and approached the window with brisk steps. He pointed sharply at a corner of the ground.

「Who-, permitted-, that kind of huge set up!?」

Ai-chan-sensei averted her gaze wordlessly. The other teachers saw "that" and their eyes turned into the eyes of rotten dead fish.

Over there was a tent. It was a huge crimson tent with height that rivaled thee-storied building. On its prettily decorated signboard was,

——Welcome! To the returnees' exciting and thrilling South Cloud Circus♪

Such thing was written. It was really irritating how the "!" and "♪" were strangely elaborate. For vice principal.

「Bu, but, they were permitted to perform at the schoolyard……」

「Certainly, I recognize that.」

Vice principal took off his glasses with a trembling hand. He wiped it. As though he was suppressing the volcano inside him that was in the verge of erupting.

「Accidents might occur if people flood toward that special classroom. There's also a risk the argument toward the classroom's location might heat up once more without the masses even understanding that it's a measure that cannot

be avoided with the understanding of both the student’s families and government.

Thus, they were allowed to hold their performance outside the classroom. In the first place, holding a performance on the ground was completely inadvisable. Because depending on the wind’s direction on that day, there was a risk of dusts blowing on the people. There was the intention that the program would be a quiet one if the students were given the requirement that “they didn’t cause any dust to fly to the surrounding” and “the show would be only for a hour at the afternoon”.

Also if the location was spacious, it would be relatively easier to bring the situation under control. The danger would also be lessened. It was also considered that chaos would be harder to occur if Hajime and co were asked to scatter outside of the hour. Because of that, the vice principal gave his permission no matter how wary he was.

But, but still.

「Who would think-, that a tent like that can be raised in just one night!? Is this building a camp in one night like that story of building a fortress in one night!? Don’t screw around-!!」

「Vi, vice principal! Calm down! Didn’t you say that recently your blood pressure isn’t good!」

‘You’re going to get sent to hospital along with the headmaster!’, Teacher Asada pacified the vice principal who couldn’t endure his eruption as expected while pinioning him from behind.

「Shut up-, if it’s hospital then you go first! To the psychiatry! Immediately! Your act is like a completely different person

now! It’s scary-

His wig was beginning to shift out of place. The teachers did everything they could to not look at it while surrounding the vice principal and desperately calmed him down. If he collapsed right now then who would shoulder the responsibility——not that, who would take command of them? Kazuko-sensei sloo~wly fixed the position of the shifted wig. With soft touch! With soft touch! Just like affectionately petting a kitty that was just born!

Re, rest assured-, vice principal! There isn’t anything dangerous at all! It’s safe and secure! It’s not scary! Let’s get along! That’s the strategy after all!

Try speaking the definition word by word! Isn’t there a gap with your understanding of it!?

‘Aa, vice principal, don’t move! It’s sliding down again!’

It’s fine! Please have faith! Surely you will be able to see a dream-like world!

Rather I want to wake if this is a dream.

The vice principal said only the last sentence with a straight face. The other teachers were greatly in agreement.

Anyway for the time being he stopped moving, so Kazuko-sensei splendidly accomplished her mission. It wasn’t out of place for even an inch. Rather, his hair style looked more ordered than before. The teachers sent praises inside their heart toward the technique of soft touch Kazuko.

.

.

.

Even though the teachers were trembling with fear in the staff room, the time was mercilessly moving.

The school festival finally began.

Thanks to the capable local polices, or perhaps thanks to the notification of 「banning anyone related to the mass media in the school festival」 that was sent beforehand, the marching mass media people didn’t mess up the school festival from the start and cheerful hustle and bustle echoed through the school.

It wasn’t like someone somewhere had limited the visitors by taking measures beforehand……there was no such thing. That was the story they were sticking with.

That someone somewhere was walking toward the front gate brazenly. He was gathering attention whether he wanted it or not. That too was also something that couldn’t be helped. The reason was,

「Hoee~, we’re surrounded just as expected~」

「……Nn. Just as planned.」

「Although this is so we won’t get separated……as I thought I can’t calm down.」

「It can’t be helped, Shizuku-chan. I don’t want the long awaited school festival to be ruined because of our fault.」

Because beautiful girls who should be called as “first-rate” were assembled. Furthermore they were surrounding a single male student——Hajime.

Yue naturally entangled her hand with Hajime’s right arm. Kaori was holding the area around the elbow of the opposite arm. Shizuku and Shia were right behind them, but their distance was too close for them to be a simple friend.

It was truly a harem. The single man who was monopolizing the beautiful girls gathered the focus of not only the outsiders but also the attending students. The eyes of the reporters were shining bright as though they were looking at a treasure trove of news material.

By the way, it was intentional that they were brazenly displaying the harem situation without even using any perception obstruction. By gathering attention, the reporters and onlookers were focused on them. In this way it would also be easy to respond in case something happened.

The other classmates were surely enjoying the school festival on their own. It was only Shinji and Yoshiki who were evaluating the quality of the reporters outside the encirclement in order to be caught in a trap of beautiful reporter. But currently there wasn’t any beautiful reporter.

When they arrived at the front gate, Hajime and co walked toward the corner. They took position at the corner of the admission gate that was like a scaled down version of the arch of triumph the student council inherited for generations so that they wouldn’t obstruct the traffic.

There were also many other students who were doing the same like them. Their reason was the same with Hajime and co. In other words, they were going to meet the invitees.

They were having idle talk while waiting for the arrival of their family members. It was then a hawker aiming for the visitors came. It seemed the student wished to sell soft ice cream to them. They were really spirited seeing how they

were preparing ice cream for a school festival but, to even do travelling sales like this……they were really motivated.

Shia immediately stepped forward while holding such impression.

「Oo, one please! Desu!」

「Ah, ye, yes-, thank you for your business!」

The eyes of the male student working as hawker immediately acted suspiciously. When he accepted the ticket that they had converted their money into beforehand, his eyes looked charmed just from touching Shia's fingertip slightly.

The male student-kun kept staring with enraptured look at Shia who had immediately turned around. An elementary school boy was pulling at his sleeve while appealing 「Quickly sell the ice cream to me」. The male student-kun took out one ice cream from his cooler box and handed it to the boy without even asking for any ticket.

'Eh? Is it alright? For free?' The boy asked. The male student-kun nodded without even looking at the boy. It was like he had turned into an ice cream giving robot. The elementary school boy cheered 'waaa~I' while going back to his parent. After that many parents sent their kids to charge thinking that 「So it's welcome ice cream huh!」.

The ice cream was rapidly disappearing……

「Nn-, this is really delicious. Here, Hajime-san. Aa~nn」

「Nn. Ah, you're right. It's normally delicious.」

「……Nn. I'll take a bite too. Delicious.」

「Ah, this is nice.」

「……Is he alright? His products are rapidly getting taken away there……ah, it's delicious.」

Hajime and others shared the ice cream with each other without any hesitation. The surrounding were focusing on them looking like 「I, it feels like we're watching an amazing sight……」. The attention from the outside visitors were especially great. There were also conversations like 「Okaa-san, that's……」「Don't look at them!」.

In any case, the ice cream male student returned to his senses. He made a face that seemed to say 「Shit, shiitt-, I know already! But I can't accept this!」. At the same time, he saw inside his empty box and his face quickly turned pale.

Ignoring the male student who was returning to the school building trudgingly, the surrounding was getting noisy at Hajime and co who were naturally showing their flirting when finally, the cause for even more commotion arrived.

「Papaaa~~~~!!」

「They're here.」

Sutetetеteeee, the one who came running with a smile like flower in full bloom was Myuu. Without braking she dived on the chest of Hajime papa. Seeing that, 「A student is a papa!?」 Mutter mutter!! Whisper whisper!!

The reporters who had been told beforehand of the prohibition to take picture started taking picture secretly with a small camera!

The central character of returnees, Nagumo Hajime has a daughter!? A private life of indulgence!! Are the returnees

abnormal just as expected!?

They were surely imagining that kind of headline. Of course, their cameras were short circuited for some reason though.

「Geez, Myuu. Don’t leave mama behind.」

The one who came rushing with quick footsteps was again a beauty from foreign country who would make anyone stunned. The eyes of the male camp reflexively got pulled toward her.

「Myuu, it’s no good if you don’t properly show your admission ticket.」

Hajime welcomed Remia while lifting up Myuu with one arm. He approached the female students who were in charge of processing people’s admission who were looking on open mouthed at them.

「Myu, I forget. Onee-san, the ticket! Can I enter inside? Nano」

「Does Remia bring yours?」

「Yes dear. Fufu, the place is really lively.」

Seeing the figure of Remia snuggling close to Hajime with Myuu in between caused the female student in charge of the admission to move stiffly like robot while speaking「Yes, please. Enjoy, yourself, with your, family」 in halting language.

People were gathering at the admission gate. A male student with a daughter……furthermore, it was a girl around the age of five years old. In other words, that male student

when he was in middle school caused that foreign beautiful woman to……

Several male students yelled「Is this the stratified societyyyyyyyyy-」 while running away. The officers in plain clothes were itching to give some guidance despite the order from above to ignore anything like this.

「Goshujin-sama, it seems the situation art getting quite difficult.」

「What Tio, so you came too.」

「Wha, what. That sounds like I am singled as outcast…… cough-」

Even though usually she would go ‘haa haa’, Tio now only blushed slightly while looking completely like a composed adult woman……she smiled bewitchingly with such atmosphere. She was dressed in kimono that looked more proper than her usual appearance with her hair also arranged. It was as though……she was a wife of a yakuza boss.

Because she was at Hajime’s school, it seemed she more or less acted with consideration and suppressed her perversity. But on the contrary, that kind of adult woman calling Hajime as goshujin-sama was causing the perception toward Hajime to become dreadful instead.

Even though he was already being accompanied by an army of beautiful girl, he also had a foreign beauty with daughter and also a beauty in kimono too……

「This kind of world-, it’s mistaken-. GODDAMMITTTTTTT-」

The one who rushed out was a reporter of a major television station. It seemed he couldn’t endure the various things that he saw. Other than him there was also「Chieeef-, please don’t stop me! I’ll handcuff that bullshit brat hereee」「Stop-, I understand your feeling but don’t, don’t do that okay-」 The police officers were also in dire straits.

「Oh my, as expected, it become something amazing!」

「I’m correct to push my work to my subordinates and come here!」

「Kaa-san, Tou-san. So you two also came.」

It was obvious that it would become amusing thing. The best seller mangaka and the game company director wouldn’t possibly miss such chance. Sumire and Shuu were watching with sparkling eyes like kids.

There, a reporter who finally couldn’t endure anymore rushed forward.

「Do you have a bit of time? Please talk――」

「――「Turn right, don’t worry about face and have fun with the school festival」」

「Yes-, let’s have fun in the festival!」

The reporter smiled brightly and turned around with a smooth movement. Without stopping he skipped while vanishing inside the crowd.

The commotion suddenly fell deathly silent. The attention of the surrounding moved from the relation of Hajime and the female camp to focus on Yue-sama alone.

「……Nn, what?」

Her appearance tilting her head slightly was adorable like in a dream. Exactly because of that, she somehow felt slightly terrifying. Inside the sleepy looking unblinking eyes, something that couldn’t be touched was lurking……those eyes made them felt like that.

「Then, Myuu. Let’s look around randomly until the show time.」

「Yes nano!」

The lively and energetic reply of Myuu caused the surrounding people to feel really relieved for some reason.

.

.

.

After that, Sumire and Shuu quickly parted from them to go have fun. Midway, they discovered Kaori papa who abandoned his work and watched from behind a cover. Kaori sighed and parted from them. After that they joined up with Aiko and when she feed Hajime with 「Aa~nn」, vice principal ferociously came running. In front of that, Aiko said 「Leave vice principal to me and go ahead! Don’t worry, I’ll immediately catch up with you later」 with strange tension that was characteristic of festival mood and quickly parted from them. With such things happened, Hajime and co enjoyed the school festival in their own way for a while.

Shizuku called at Hajime who was lovingly wiping the mouth of Myuu that got dirtied from eating choco banana. She looked strangely reserved.

「Hajime. Actually, there is a class that invited me. They really want me to come no matter what.」

「Hm? Alright. What’re they doing?」

「A maid café it seems.」

「That’s the standard event in manga or anime but, to think that there is really a class that is doing it.」

「It’s that girl’s class after all……」

「That girl huh……」

It made sense. The one lying in wait at the classroom they visited was,

「Welcome home-, Onee-sama!! And then, so you come too, this accursed senpai-」

It was kouhai-chan. She was dressed as frilly maid. Her trademark twintail was swaying back and forth.

「Wait, did senpai kidnap a little girl!?」

「Do you want that twintail to be tied in reef knot again?」

The maid café became noisy. Strangely, there wasn’t a single boy among the café staffs or the customers. Even though a maid café felt like a place where boys would gather.

「Papa, who is this Onee-chan?」

「She is a hard to describe organism that Myuu has no need to know for eternity.」

「Who’re you calling a SAN point devouring monster! Wait, that’s not it! What does she mean by papa!? Hah, don’t tell

me……Onee-sama! Since when you gave birth!?

What are you saying with that loud voice!

Surprised gazes focused on Shizuku.

Yo, you’re right. From her hair color, could it be she is the daughter of that person there……miss, please don’t worry. I heard that today there are also a lot of polices here. Let’s hand over that devil to them! What’s necessary is the courage to ask for help!

My my, what an amusing person.

‘Ufufu’, Remia smiled warmly. Her soft and light atmosphere made kouhai-chan to recoil for some reason. Thi, this is an adult’s composure……She muttered something like that.

Anyway, show us our seating already kouhai.

Don’t order me around! Here, there’s your seat!

The customer should be a goshujin-sama, but the maid kouhai said not to order her around. Yue and others were used to her, but Myuu, Remia, and Tio who met kouhai-chan for the first time were looking at her like she was a rare animal. They thought, there had never been a girl who would oppose Hajime so strongly like this from the front.

Tap water will be okay for senpai right? Everyone, what will you have?

Kouhai-chan said that cheerfully. She really had guts. But, there, a purely innocent gaze attacked kouhai-chan.

Papa will only get water nano?

Uh

Kouhai-chan backed away. Hajime grinned while whispering to Myuu. 「That's right. Papa is getting harassed by this onee-chan」 He said.

「Wai-, senpai! That's cowar――」

「Onee-chan, you hate papa nano?」

「Fuguh」

「……Then, Myuu will also have water nano.」

Myuu was looking dejectedly at the delicious looking cake and juice on other table while saying such lovable thing. Critical hit on kouhai-chan. Her life gauge was at red zone.

「The, the-the-the, there is no such thing-. Hahahaaa, joking! Yes, I was just joking!」

「……」

Myuu whose mood was offended wouldn't even look to kouhai-chan who was pacifying her. 'Puih' she looked side. It was a scene of a high school girl picking on a young and sweet little girl. Kouhai-chan was fretful to a degree that she never felt until now.

「I'll prepare a special cake for Myuu-chan!」

Myuu gave a short glance. 'You can do this! Move right to the second arrow!' The surrounding was also backing kouhai-chan.

「Actually, there is also a corner to try on maid uniform! There's also a maid uniform in Myuu-chan's size there! Do you want to try wearing a cute maid uniform!?」

「……myu」

Myuu’s eyes moved to papa. It seemed she slightly wanted to try it. When Hajime nodded, her expression brightened radiantly.

「Now now-, Myuu-chan come over here! One customer for trying on the maid uniform!」

A voice 「Roger!」 came from deeper inside the classroom that was covered with a partition. Myuu was guided inside. While she was changing, the menu they ordered also came. Though kouhai-chan was gritting her teeth *gugigigigigi-* when she put down the coffee that Hajime ordered.

After a while, a voice 「Preparation finished!」 that sounded excessively vigorous came from inside. When everyone’s gazes were focused to the partition, a small maid came out form there with brisk small steps……

「My! Myuu, you’re adorable!」

「Ou, that really suit you, Myuu.」

「Myu……」

Myuu blushed shyly and fidgeted at the impression of her mama and papa. Yue and others also raised voices of praise seeing that overly lovable appearance. Enraptured sigh 「Hou」 leaked out everywhere inside the classroom.

Myuu walked toward kouhai-chan even while fidgeting. And then, with blushing cheeks and upward gaze, she smiled softly,

「Onee-chan, thank you nano.」

「Are you angel」

Kouhai-chan backed away. Like a demon who flinched back from the light of purification bathing her.

After that Myuu sat on Hajime papa’s lap and started eating cake in a good mood. Kouhai-chan was looking restless for some reason. Her gaze was wandering around frequently to the surrounding, as though to say 「Wha, what now. We’re going to do it in this situation!? We’re really going to do it!?」.

Before long, kouhai-chan confirmed that Hajime and co already had their fill of the cakes and drinks, and she said 「The war front against senpai is a path of carnageee!!」 with her expression became resolved.

Kouhai-chan stood in the way of Hajime who stood up from his seat.

「That was foolish of you, senpai!」

「Not as much as you.」

「Like a moth flying into the flame, that’s what senpai is!」

「It feels like bugs are constantly flying around inside your head though.」

‘Come on-‘, said kouhai-chan with a finger snap. Right away, the café staffs and customers surrounded Hajime in half circle. In addition, they took out water gun from inside their skirt and pointed the muzzles at Hajime.

「This is like the movie I saw before this nano!」

「Yeah, the one where everyone inside the restaurant is secret service agents.」

Kouhai-chan sighed in relieve seeing Myuu who watched in excitement instead of getting scared while snorting.

「Fuh, senpai never even imagined that this place is actually inside the trap of us Soul Sisters right?」

「You're really hopeless huh, kouhai.」

「Shut up! Now, senpai can have your lower body soaking wet and get looked with gaze of 「that person, he peed himself……」 by everyone! Senpai's reputation will fall to the bottom and Onee-sama will be liberated!」

That seemed to be their strategy. Shizuku's cheeks were twitching while saying 「You girls are really」. Before she could say her honest opinion to them, the simultaneous shooting from the merciless Soul Sisters was……

「Ah!? Wait, a sec――」

The scream came from kouhai-chan.

Kouhai-chan was captured in an instant and turned into a shield against the fired water bullet. Her lower body was soaked wet. And then, she was dragged and tossed outside the classroom.

A maid high school girl suddenly flew out of the classroom. Water was seeping out from around the butt of the girl who was sitting with girlish posture on the ground.

Silence visited the corridor that was filled with a lot of people following after Hajime and co. Kouhai-chan's face boiled red *puff~~~~*……

「Thi, this isn't how it look likeeeeee-!!」

She ran away pigeon-toed. While at the end she also properly left her parting threat 「Damn senpaii-, I'll remember thissss-」.

「And, what're you girls going to do now?」

That voice resounded inside the classroom. The Soul Sisters returned to their senses in surprise, and there they noticed. Without them noticing, the water gun had gone from their hand. And then, they saw at Nagumo-senpai's hands, water guns were pointed to them in dual wielding style.

Nagumo-senpai had locked-on at the lower body of the Soul Sisters!

「「「「Do, don't think you've win with thisssssss-」」」」

The Soul Sisters ran away with splendid synchronization.

「School is really a fun place nano. Myuu also want to go to elementary school quickly nano.」

Most likely, surely, she wouldn't be able to go through a school life as eccentric as here. While thinking that, Hajime and others shut their mouth so to not break Myuu's dream.

「Oh, it will be time soon. Let's go.」

The time for the program of the returnees class finally arrived.

.

AN: After this, the last part will also be uploaded within today.

Best regards.

(TN: That was the author note, the translator can’t guarantee that the next chapter will be today.)

Arifureta Chapter 350

Arifureta After III　School Festival　Third Part

.

AN: School Festival　Second Part was uploaded before.

Those who still haven’t read it, please start from there!

There was a crimson tent boasting a majestic appearance that was too splendid for something in a school’s courtyard.

The audience seating in stairway shape set up inside it was filled to the brim. Myuu and others were also sitting at the front row with eyes that were filled with expectation.

Among them, there were people who were making serious expression.

「It’s amazing that they built this kind of facility. This isn’t at the level of school festival.」

「Yeah. Besides……don’t you think it feels strangely spacious? I got the feeling that it doesn’t match with its outside appearance……」

「Perhaps, it’s their way of using space? I won’t doubt it even if I’m told that this is the work of pro. Perhaps it might even be the government that gave them the referral?」

The people who were talking with each other like that were the reporters——a senior and a junior of a certain weekly magazine. The senior reporter was someone who was famous in their business circle. His sharp assessment and investigation were acknowledged. Perhaps because of that, there were a lot of people of the same profession sitting near the senior reporter in order to pay attention to his behavior.

Inside the noisy tent where various sentiments wondering what in the world would happen were mingled, the buzzer that notified of the curtain raising finally rang. The lighting was turned off and a spotlight illuminated the back of the stage.

When they followed the source of the spotlight, there was the figure of Kouki there. From the appearance, the light was exceedingly splendid. There wasn’t any doubt that the equipment could be used even in theater or the like.

No one would even think that the lighting at the level of pro was only the outward appearance. In actuality Kouki who possessed unparalleled attribute in light element magic was in charge of the lighting using magical mean as well as camouflage.

The audiences focused at the spotlight.

Then

——No, no way-. I never heard about this! Why should I!

——To be more precise it’s not you. What we need is the “lord”.

——In the scenario it’s clearly written “Opening: South Cloud leader”!

——Endo……that’s a lie

——You, you guys, you schemed this!? Don’t screw around-, I absolutely won’t do it! Ah, this is binding light chain!? Shirasaki!?

——Nn, Endo. Will you relax?

——Even Yue-san……do, don’t tell me, you’ll force me with Divine Statement? No, no way-, stop-, stop ittttttt-

A scream burst out from within the darkness.

The venue fell completely silent in a good way.

A beat later, someone came out with an amaziiing rotation! Kouki’s lighting hurriedly chased after the silhouette that moved to the center of the stage while rotating in succession with high speed.

「Ladii~~es & gentlemeeen! Welcome, to South Cloud Circus group! To the world of dream!!」

A trademark pose while making the sound *kyu kyu* from the floor! The butterfly mask that was replacing the sunglass was pushed up smartly-. Without a pause the person brushed up his hair with a smooth hand motion while breathing 「Fuh」 with a superb leaning posture!

「Your guide of the waking dream——Kousuke E Abyssgate……no」

Another 「fuh」 was leaked out! One hand brushed up the front hair and stayed up while the other hand pointed sharply at the audience seats! The audiences jerked and shivered. In various senses.

「The Abyss Lord.」

Dododododo- A drum roll resounded and a music that sounded excessively solemn for some reason danced in the air.

「Today in this time, in this place, everyone here will surely taste the mystery of the world.」

Another meaningless rotation.

「Everyone will surely sense a fragment of the abyss and put a lid on your common sense!!」

Lighting, come onn-.

Kouki desperately responded to the instruction that wasn't in the plan. As the captain of the people in charge of the lighting, he gave instruction without delay and produced spotlights of seven color in conjunction with the other classmates.

In that instant, 「Ooo!?」 commotion spread.

From behind the guide of waking dream——Abyss Lord, another Abyss Lord with exactly the same appearance showed up as though they had split.

「「But, rest assured!」」

The voices that were in harmony were also completely the same. 'What trick is this!?' the senior reporter stared hard with his eyes opened wide like a dinner plate.

But, from behind that senior reporter……

「You can simply, simply, enjoy this moment to your heart's content!」

An Abyss Lord with exactly the same appearance appeared. Since when he was at the audience seating? Of course, the instant Abyss Lord appeared, the clones normally came. Without really hiding, the clones came normally.

The audiences were dumbfounded and the reporters were overcome with surprise. Even amidst that, Abyss Lord's multiplication didn't stop. Abyss Lords appeared from two more places. They went 「Oh, isn't this my beloved little sister and big brother」 and 「Fuh」 toward the middle school female student and the male university student who were nearby, but the two of them looked down until the limit and wouldn't meet the lord's gaze.

□□□□□An experience that will be only once in your life. This is the stage of wonder that you won't be able to see for the second time!!□□□□□

The outside appearance of the person who was smoothly multiplying was exactly the same. Even when it was seen from nearby no one could guess what kind of trick was behind it.

By the way, looking at how clones were further making more clones, it went without saying how deep the depth level of the lord was. Our vampire princess-sama was without mercy.

Right after that, scream rose from the audience seating. It wasn't because of synchronization with scathing opinion of 「Looking at the multiplication process once more……it's a bit scary huh」 from the classmates behind the stage.

It was because flame was suddenly spreading on the stage. A wing that was starting to blow from somewhere whirled and swept away the flame. It was as though the flame itself was spreading like it was dancing.

Then, a single young man appeared from inside the flame. With a way of walking that was like a model, he walked to the center of the stage while making a look that might be the best posed look the person himself could do――

Before he arrived at the center, he vanished. It was as though the young man received a tackle from a certain someone who flew out with godspeed and got sent flying.

‘What is he showing up for……’ The audiences questioned in their mind. The answer for that was, 「……Even I wanted to stand out…..I saw you on the stage! Please go out with me! I wanted someone to tell me that……」. With how the audiences couldn’t listen to that testimony of a certain Shinji, the answer would be forever covered in darkness.

The Abyss Lords pulled themselves together and gathered on the stage with acrobatic movements. While astonished voices were raised seeing the midair leaps, Abyss Lords became one once more on the stage and he spread put both his arms in a flash.

「Now, carve it into your memory! It’s the time of mystery!!」

With those words as the signal, the Abyss Lord vanished behind the curtain with super consecutive back somersault that would be impossible for most people. The one who leaped out as replacement was――

「Wha, what’s that-」

Someone yelled. Everyone held their breath. After all, what appeared by breaking through the wall of flame was a huge wolf. The howling figure was like the king of beast. The huge body and pressure that were impossible for existing organism in this world made the audiences to make noise ‘waa’ and ‘kyaa’.

That was why, no one hear any sound like the sobbing voice of a person who seemed to be the Abyss Lord resounding from behind the curtain.

Next,

「Everyone, please don't worry! The name of that wolf is "Karashio"-chan. He is a pet doggie that can be found anywhere.」

The heavenly voice in the role as presenter and commentary――Nana emphasized. 「No matter how you looked at it, that's a monster like Fenrir or Cerberus isn't it!?」「If there is any pet like that it will be an immediate report to the police!」 Right after those rapid pounding of tsukkomi from the audiences,

――Ka, Karashio she said!? Ah, metamorphosis magic huh!? I don't know anything about this y'know!? Shouldn't it be substitution using Grim Reaper or something!?

――Sakagami……that was a lie.

――So you schemed this huuuh-. Wait, Suzu, why won't you meet my gaze since some time ago. Don't tell me, it's you!? What the hell have you done to our Karashio!

――Ka, Karashio-chan also said that he want to become wolf! More importantly look! It's your turn now!

――God dammit-

Such voices also resounded, but even those yells weren't noticed.

Ryutaro leaped out from behind the curtain.

「Karashio-. I’m gonna return you to normal now!」

「It’s the entrance of the owner! The two of them are always together! They’re like close siblings!」

Ryutaro quietly held out his hand.

Haup, there was such sound. Karashio’s jaws were snugly covering Ryutaro’s hand. It was exactly the scene of a pet dog biting the hand of its owner.

Splurt The blood that was spurting out was surely paint, no doubt about it.

「Oops! Karashio-chan is trying to overthrow his owner! What will the owner do!?」

Nana was getting into the mood. Even though it was circus, she was becoming like a live commentator.

Originally it was a scenario of Grim Reaper versus werewolf, so Ryutaro transformed half in desperation.

「You’re being disobedient huh, KARASHIOOOOOOO-」

A stir surged from the audience seats. A high school boy was transforming before their eyes. That appearance was exactly like the werewolf in story.

「Se, senpai-, just what is this!?」

「The, the flame must be projection mapping or something! The clones and the wolf and the werewolf, they’re all special makeup!」

「That’s too forced-」

The reporters were also in chaos. In any case the gazes of everyone were fixed on the stage. It was truly just like the Abyss Lord said, it was like they were pulled into a world of dream. In addition, the vice principal who came to monitor the situation collapsed with the white of his eyes showing. Aiko who was also came to supervise hurriedly supported him.

「Garururu- (I won't return to be dog-)」

「Stupid idiot!」

Karashio who became a wolf that was his dearest wish and the werewolf Ryutaro clashed on the stage. Even the audiences who were in daze at the beginning, after hearing the voices like 「Both sides do your best~~」 from Myuu and others who conveniently turned into hired applauder, they gradually threw away their common sense 「Who cares about the detail!」 and began to get excited.

「Strong-, Karashio-chan is strong! As expected from the partner of the wolf boy! At this rate this might get out of hand!」

Nana might have talent as a live commentator. Sparked by her yell, the audiences sent out words of encouragement to Karashio and his owner in loud voices.

Nana raised her voice following the scenario of South Cloud leader toward those audiences.

「Is there any wild-animal tamer among the audiences!? Or perhaps, is there any zoo caretaker here who can manage somehow if they're against something at the level of Fenrir or werewolf!?」

Everyone thought, ‘No way there’s anyone like that!’ and ‘You raise the hurdle of zoo caretaker too much!’.

「There is!」

‘There is one!?’ while such tsukkomi echoed, the one who stood up from the audience seats was a high school girl who dressed like a gal. Or rather, it was Taeko.

Takeo got down on the stage with light and jaunty footsteps. Announcer Nana addressed her.

「Dear audience! Do you have a whippp!?」

「I have! I’m a high school girl after all!」

‘Where in the world there is high school girl who constantly carry around a whip’, such tsukkomi resounded inside everyone’s heart.

They also did their best to ignore Nana’s sales pitch 「That’s certainly natural! Whip is convenient. It can be used for taming, and also for taming, after that it can also be used for taming! If there are those who still doesn’t have one, after this show we will open a stand that display and sale the product, so please look around and purchase one there!」.

Taeko swung her whip *pishi- pishi-* loudly with a strangely good mood. Karashio’s gaze moved to behind the curtain. The leader’s thumb up came out suddenly. Karashio nodded and changed his target to Taeko while growling.

「Ei-」

A cute shout. However, the sound of slashing through wind that the whip generated wasn’t normal. It was to a degree that Karashio leaped back quite fearfully. *Hyugoh,

buruannn, shugoooo-*, the tip of the whip that made the pleasant sound moved with a speed that easily surpassed the speed of sound. It was already producing afterimages that it looked like it was splitting into many whips.

「Ei-」

「Owah-!?」

The whip flew toward the werewolf with a smile. The whip's ferociously attacked Karashio and werewolf Ryutaro like Yamato no Orochi.

The two of them dodged with splendid combination, but seeing Ryutaro and Karashio's desperate look, the whip handling of Taeko who was gradually looking more ecstatic was increasing in intensity……

Karashio left behind his master and quickly showed his belly. It was a posture that screamed 「I'm fine with being just a dog already」.

「Karashio!?」

Ryutaro let his guard down and the whip hit. 「Abii!?」 Ryutaro made a strange scream, however, he endured it with his inherent guts. He took a stance imposingly and grinned fearlessly,

「Come at me more! Get me even more heated up!」

Ryutaro intended to make the audiences even more excited with a lovely adlibbed line but……

When he accidentally looked, there was a small silhouette peeking out from the edge of the curtain——it was Suzu. Her eyes were expressing her feeling more eloquently than

anything. It said, 「……pervert」. At the same time, there was a cheering voice that was louder than anyone from the audience seats.

「Keep going-, Ryutaro! Thy should open that door-」

It was the hopeless dragon-san. When he turned his gaze to her, she gave a thumb up with a nice smile.

「I, I ain't like youuuuuuuu-」

At this rate he would be acknowledged as pervert. He ignored things like rousing the audiences and quickly moved to end the show of whip's superb technique and werewolf's godly dodging but……Taeko-san who was starting to get into the mood was unexpectedly strong!

The rampage of Taeko was really getting out of hand, so a new instruction came from South Cloud leader.

「This is a disasterrr-. Among the audiences, is there a wizard who can do something about this with just a few words of "because it's fantasy"!?」

The audiences weren't having any doubt anymore.

「There is one here! Today is the anniversary of the establishment Hogwar○ school of witchcraft and wizardry, so I'm accidentally here yeah!」

The one who stood up was Kentarou. He headed to the stage and waved a short wand. Instantly, thick white smoke rose up and covered the stage from view. It was the magic of petrification. Taeko and Ryutaro whose movement was forcefully stopped were recovered by Kaori in godspeed.

The flame and wind were also settling down along with the white smoke. During that time the leader gave Shia the go sign.

The one who leaped out from inside the white smoke was a rabbit eared clown riding on a giant ball. She was wearing a colorful clown costume that was arranged to look cute and a red cushion ball on her nose. It was a rabbit clown.

Cheers rose seeing the display of magnificent acrobatics that would make any acrobatic group went pale.

Then,

「Dear guests! Please look at below your seat!」

When they followed the words of announcer Nana, they found a basket there that was filled with a lot of rubber ball.

Right after that, the rabbit clown was,

「Try hitting me with that if you can desuu~~. Well, it'll be impossible for the ordinary people thoughhh! Pugyaaa—-」

She provoked with an annoying face and gesture as though she had a role model for it.

Tio who accepted the role as hired applauder stood up in order to make the guests discarded their hesitation,

「Thou shall die-」

She said and threw quite seriously. The ball that flew while making the sound of roaring wind caused the guests to instantly go pale, but the rabbit clown dodged with a nimble somersault. She grinned while standing upside down with one hand on the large ball.

「Eeeh? Did you do something just nooow? Ah, you threw just now eh! Slooo~~w! Coould it be you have stiff shoulders? Puu-giggle giggle-」

Even though she knew it was just an act, vein snapped on Tio's forehead. The rabbit tail that was shaking left and right to make fun of her looked excessively irritating.

「Dear guests~, what are you doing hesitating like thattt~. Even though you won't be able to even graze mee! Fuhyahyahyah」

Behind the curtain, Hajime and Yue spoke 「Uwaa, her copying rate is high~」 in admiration. One of the audiences stood up, then another……

They started to throw all at once!

「Funfufu~~n♪ Can't you quickly throw alreadyy~. Ah, I'm sorry! Everyone has actually started!」

Why won't the ball hit! You- you-! Don't get carried away damn you!

「It's fine for everyone to get serious soon you knoow? Ah, everyone is already serious? I'm sorry-, I never even thought that everyone's level is only to that degreee~, pupuh」

Match the timing! What're you all doing there! The barrage is thin!

A mysterious sense of unity was starting to form among the audiences. Even the reporters right now were getting absorbed with throwing balls.

However, the annoying rabbit clown was hopping *pyon pyon* from ball to ball, from the stage's pillar to pillar. She

moved around freely to every direction round and round, and it was just as she said, the balls didn’t even graze her. Coupled with her nonchalant face it was truly irritating.

And so, announcer Nana asked the audiences like every time.

「This is annoying! Isn’t there any master of throwing among the guests!?」

「If there is any then that clown will have been shot down already!」

「The, there is one here!」

「There is one!?」

The one who stood up was Yuuka. The angry yell of the senior reporter was only natural, so she went forward while twitching slightly.

「Do you bring anything to throoww-」

「I do!」

Yuuka crossed both her hands in a flash, and trump cards were spread out in a fanning shape.

「Go-, Funne○!!」

It was the leader’s instruction. It seemed he wanted her to say that no matter what. The trump cards were thrown all at once. Even though they were thrown simultaneously, all of them rotated in high speed while approaching from different directions. They didn’t stop there, right after the rabbit clown dodged, the cards made a U-turn and rushed from behind. The trump cards came from literally every direction.

The trump cards that returned to their owner were immediately thrown again. Two set of cards were already thrown into the storm of trump cards. A total of 108 cards were dancing wildly on the stage.

It was an omni-directional juggling by throwing more than a hundred cards.

In front of that godly feet, the audiences were watching with their anger toward the provocation vanishing without a trace.

However, as expected from the rabbit clown.

「I, is she splitting up her upper body?」

「I, is that, afterimage? That's impossible」

The voices of the reporters were astonished. Their mouths were fully opened as though their jaw had come off from beign shown the afterimage dodging like a certain Matri○ agent in real life.

「That was close-. It seems that the speed is insufficient by throwing cards! And so, is there any greengrocer among the guests here!?」

Why greengrocer? While such question was filling the audiences, naturally,

「There's one here!」

Kaori said while standing up and lifting up shopping bags with full capacity on both her hands.

「Next is there a master of old school of sword art here!?」

「There is one!」

Of course, Shizuku also stood up. It was really audiences seats that were filled by every kind of people.

Like that, Kaori threw vegetables——radish, carrot, celery, cucumber toward Shizuku. Shizuku shaped them into sticks with butter knife. Courteously, the vegetable sticks were then flying toward Yuuka from the impact of the cutting.

The electrifying sword art, or rather the butter knife art due to the consideration toward the swords and firearms control law didn’t even give the audiences time to raise their voice in admiration. The vegetable sticks that got settled between Yuuka’s fingers were thrown with speed that made them looked blurry.

It was the moment that the vegetable stick throwing skill that not only could pierce wooden plank, but even thin iron plate or smartphone was born.

At the same time, the side effect was activated.

□It’s a waste!□

The rabbit clown couldn’t dodge. She could only catch the sticks with her mouth and chewed *kari-kari, mokyuu-mokyuu* in high speed.

As the result, she couldn’t win against the quantity,

□Abaah□

The rabbit clown was toppled over while holding on the vegetable sticks. It was truly comical like a buffoon. ‘Waaaaah’ The audiences cheered in excitement.

Yuuka who helped the rabbit clown to stand up, and Kaori and Shizuku, the four of them bowed gracefully toward the

audiences. Everyone sent them applauses without holding back.

In front of the developments that were like raging waves from the start, there were already no one who could focus to question or doubt anything, right now anyone was boiling up to simply do nothing but enjoying the world of dream that was overflowing with godly feat.

After that.

The shows of the other classmates were completed, and at the end it was Yue.

The lighting was turned off temporarily on the stage and when the lighting showered down once more, there was the figure of a girl sitting on a chair floating there. That figure that wasn't twitching at the slightest while sitting limply without any strength, coupled with her beautiful face caused many audiences to misunderstand that she was a life-sized bisque doll.

Using telepathy, Yue's voice resounded directly into everyone's head. A tale of a doll that wished to become the lover of the young man it loved was spun.

Right after that, the space glittered. It was the beginning of a time of magic.

Countless fine fragments were tinged with light and glittered. Suzu who was one of lighting team produced them. It was a show using "Holy Severance – Cherry Blossom" (the technique to control the fragments of a broken up Holy Severance).

Doll Yue that received magic had life breathed into her and moved. There many audiences finally understood that she

wasn’t a bisque doll but a real girl. Enraptured sighs were leaked out from them.

But, the change didn’t end. Golden light enveloped Yue, and her figure changed into an adult woman. The peerless beauty caused everyone to forget to even breathe. Then right after that, the audiences cheered ‘waaah’.

It was because the beauty floated lightly. It was as though she wasn’t restraining by anything anymore, she drifted in the air lightly like a feather. The figure that was enveloped in golden light like aurora was so beautiful it would entrance anyone.

It should even be expressed with the word divine.

It was completely silent. The quietness came as though there was a tacit understanding that they mustn’t break the mystical time.

In the middle of that, Yue sang. The voice that was smoother, more charming, and more glamorous than any musical instrument rode on the melody and spread.

Anyone was intoxicated by the gentle and calm singing voice.

But, the song was gradually rising in tempo. When anyone noticed the musical tone had changed into a joyful song that would make anyone’s body naturally followed the rhythm.

It was the finale.

The people who had been performing until now were coming up on the stage one by one.

Even Kouki and others who were in charge of lighting came up on the stage and the one who came out last was the South Cloud leader aka Hajime.

Yue showed a happy smile from the bottom of the heart that anyone understood that only this smile wasn’t an acting. She got down and took Hajime’s hand.

The sprightly song excited the audiences to the peak……

Like that,

「With this the dream time is over. Thank you very much for coming to watch the performance of us returnees. Please enjoy the continuation of the school festival.」

Hajime came forward and bowed. Following him all the classmates also bowed.

Right after that, cheers shook the air as though there was explosion. The wild enthusiasm that was reverberating like an electric shock was surely without a doubt spreading throughout the school. Whistling resounded and applauses were playing out like heavy thunder.

Hajime and others smiled wryly, however they bowed once more with a face that showed a sense of accomplishment. Yue secretly opened the tent with magic, and from there light of reality shined in.

With that the audiences finally went out in droves as though they had woken up from their dream but……

The heat inside their heart didn’t feel like it would cool down for a while.

After that, perhaps that heat propagated.

The people who learned that the performance was only for one time rushed the school festival committee to protest. The vice principal said 「Do it until your limit!」 even while almost fainting. With that go sign, Hajime and co hurriedly performed nonstop until four times.

At the post-festival event after the school festival was over, as expected even the returnees from other world became totally exhausted.

「……Haa, in the end we couldn’t look around the school festival except at the morning. Even though I wanted to show Myuu around more.」

Hajime said that while sighing. Yue who was snuggling on him let out a chuckle.

「……Nn. You regret it?」

When Hajime noticed, all the classmates were looking at him. Hajime looked to be thinking for a bit before he shrugged. And then, he lied down spread-eagled and entrusted his body to the pleasant fatigue that he hadn’t felt for so long.

「There’s a sense of accomplishment that is equal with that last decisive battle. It’s not a bad school festival.」

He said such thing along with a gentle smile.

Seeing everyone’s demon king-sama like that, Yue and others were also lying down spread-eagled one after another while laughing in agreement.

「……You’re trying to end this with a good vibes but, Nagumo, I won’t forget the resentment of turning me into Abyss Lord.」

「……Endo? So you’re here.」

「Obviously I’m here! I’ll cry you know!」

Everyone jerked for a moment. When they recognized that it was the lord――or rather Kousuke, bright laughter spread once more.

.

.

.

Also, this matter of school festival was greatly publicized in the mass media. It also became a great commotion in the internet and Hajime ended up running around to deal with the fallout but……

It was the fault of the performance of South Cloud leader who knew no self-restrain――in other words he reaped what he sowed, so he worked hard even while shadow was forming under his eyes.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

※ Material introduction

– Funne○ The romance weapon that came out in Gunda○

– The last musical tone The image was from the movie Greatest Showman. It was a lovely movie for Shirakome.

.

※ I’m ashamed but this is an advertisement. Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou Zero volume 3 is planned to be released in 25 March.

You will be able to see a lot of no good Meiru-oneesan. Also, things like the whole picture of Liberator’s organization, Van-chan who was the creator of ice and snow cavern that was currently in the middle of being conquered at volume 9, or the demon king will come out.

I hope that everyone will obtain it no matter what!

It’s also announced in Overlap-sama’s homepage, you please check there if you like.

.

※Special perk SS

- Chain store-sama□Boys talk after, disciplining□

When men gathered, naturally they will also talk about the girl they like.

And then, even when they talked secretly, there is also an onee-san who can view the past. So after that it was inevitable. It’s that kind of story.

- Animate-sama【The wrong way to use metamorphosis magic】

If there is metamorphosis magic then it might be possible to remodel the body? Although, to listen to Miledy’s wish is a different problem.

It’s that kind of story.

- Tora no Ana-sama【Glasses x maid uniform x manly woman = war】

Even for a heavy maid lover, o manly woman, you bastard is out of the question. It’s that kind of story of O-kun.

- Melon Books-sama【Korin’s theory of the strongest】

There is nothing that will hurt an adult more than a little girl’s consideration and pure and straightforward opinion.

The one who stood last was only the strongest little girl. It’s that kind of story.

- Gamers-sama【Searching for the beloved transmutation monster through 3000 ri ②】

As usual, it’s the story of the poster girl of the restaurant at the low-lying part of the royal capital Welnika Asha-chan chasing after Oscar.

She pushed on until the sea and at the end of her being adrift she encountered a certain pirate group…….

.

That’s all.

Is there any that caught your attention? I’ll be happy if you look forward to it!

Best regards!

Arifureta Chapter 351

Arifureta After III　Tortus Travel Journal ⑩

.

AN: Last time in Tortus Travel Journal

- Chance meeting with Heiligh Kingdom member
- Sightseeing the royal capital’s guild
- Watching various shocking scenes in Orcus Great Dungeon
- Learning the edited newly-married life of Hajime and Yue in the hideout of Oscar. Kaori’s tongue clicking evolved.

↑ We’re here right now

A du~~ull atmosphere was hanging in the air at the terrifying execution place that would make even brutal criminal to sob——at the bottom of Raisen Grand Canyon.

The fixed stare of the parents was staggering. Kaori and Shizuku were hugging Shia tightly as though to sandwich her.

「I see. So this is the encounter that is so sensational it shakes the brain——」

「As well as paralyzing, that it make you feel like flying in the sky, isn’t it.」

The eyes of the Nagumo husband and wife that were looking at their son were truly cold. The son in question was looking at the sky saying 「It will be evening soon huuh」. He was obstinately avoiding to meet their gaze.

As expected Yue also didn’t show any sign of meeting their gaze anytime soon, however, she was trying to make excuse desperately.

「……Tha, that’s, Otou-sama! Okaa-sama! I also had the door almost closed on me! My scalp was also scraped! How should I say it, this couldn’t be helped for Hajime at this time so!」

「Yue-chan said that, but your attitude was also really cold there. You pulled the rabbit ears too hard that Shia-chan became like onion.」

「……Nn-. ……She clung close to Hajime so……」

Yue was mumbling excuse with small voice in respond to what her mother-in-law (Sumire) pointed out while turning her gaze to the sky. The sky was also pretty like this at that time huuh……her expression seemed to say that.

Now then, Hajime’s group that came to travel in Tortus. Why were they falling into complicated atmosphere like this at the bottom of the canyon of death……

After taking a break for the sake of the parents who learned various shocking scenes and past at Orcus Great Labyrinth, Hajime and co departed to Raisen Great Canyon.

The majestic sight that was like Grand Canyon and the brutal monsters that swiftly attacked made the parents to shudder and their heart beating fast in excitement.

Like that, Hajime and co swept away the monsters in a flash while showing the “past playback” due to Shia’s strong request. Of course, it was the scene of their encounter with Shia.

Hajime understood that the atmosphere would become like this, so he was extremely reluctant to show the playback, but Shia herself was,

「Tou-sama-, Kaa-sama-! It’s here desu! Here! We met each other here! Now now, Yue-san! It’s the long awaited turn of me! Please replay the moving scene! Come, do it quickly!」

Shia said while hopping around like rabbit. Her rabbit ears were flapping *wassa wassa*, her rabbit tail was swaying *bun bun* while she requested with her tension at the max. Not just Sumire and other parents, even Kaori and other wives also became interested in seeing it and in the end, the past was replayed.

Yes, the figure of Haijme elbowing, electrifying, and at the end throwing Shia who was desperately asking for help toward a flock of Hyveria (flying dragon) was displayed.

And, the atmosphere became like this.

「It’s really nostalgic desu~. Hajime-san who helped us in the end no matter whatever he said in the beginning was seriously tsundere! Isn’t it desuu~」

Dopan-

Dodge!

「Don’t call me tsundere.」

「……Nn. Hajime at that time was completely tsun.」

Seeing Shia dodging the bullet normally even while saying such thing, both Hajime and Yue said 「Even though she was a hopeless rabbit at that time……」 with an expression that was a mix of loneliness and nostalgia.

Kaori and Shizuku were still hugging Shia while,

「Uu, this kind of encounter is just too much. I can understand why Shia will beautify her memory.」

「Really, just what part of this kind of man that made you fell in love with him?」

「Shizuku-san, those words are seriously a boomerang to yourself you know?」

They were moved to tears full of sympathy that her encounter was so harsh she changed the memory inside her brain. Shia's cheeks were twitching. It was as though they were treating her like a pitiful person trying to overcome her trauma by convincing herself of something that wasn't true. For Shia it was really upsetting.

「Shia, thy art actually mine comrade. I'm happy.」

「I'll pile bunker your ass you know?」

Tio smiled happily. Shia's disdainful gaze stabbed Tio's heart like pile bunker. She couldn't help but panted 'haa haa'.

Shia's expression was displeased. Then next a small hand patted her.

「Shia-oneechan. "Problem is the future. That's why I don't look back at the past" nano.」 (TN: Seems to be a Bill Gates quote, but I can't find the English original.)

「What could you mean by that! Myuu-chan!」

Myuu's expression was kind. Her smile was like an adult woman filled with love. The saying that seemed to be obtained from TV or internet and that expression said it more eloquently than anything. It was a compassionate heart that said 「It must be a sad affair. Let's forget it? Nano」. Her rabbit ears stood straight in protest.

Although, Kaoruko, Kirino, and then Aiko and Akiko the female camps were also sending her gaze that looked comforting and cheering up as though to say 'Let's live in the future!', that she was losing confidence 「Eh? Could it be my encounter was too pitiful? That's impossible……」.

Tomoichi dealt another blow using his words with eyes that looked like a hitman.

「Hajime-kun. I don't think it's possible but, you didn't treat Kaori the same like this right? If that's actually the case, then I'll have to turn into Asura.」

「No, it's just as shown in Horuad, I rejected her normally.」

「I'll have to turn into Asura!」

Ignoring the conversation between Tomoichi-san who only had Asura route remaining for him and Hajime who was attempting to preserve the human route, Sumire who seemed to have pulled herself together patted Shia's head.

「Kaa-sama?」

「I'm really sorry for my son, Shia-chan. You've really worked hard.」

She didn’t speak in more detail. But everyone understood the true meaning of her words.

In order to save her family, she didn’t give up no matter how harsh the treatment she received. She believed that the future could surely be changed if she did her best.

She was told that it was a sin for her to be born. Her existence cornered her family to a predicament and made her lost some of them. Anyone realized that Shia herself had those things carved deeply into her heart more than anyone. She was called things like hopeless rabbit and acted somewhat comically, even so the desperation deep inside her eyes was conveyed fully.

「Ehehe」

Shia grinned sweetly in embarrassment and also happiness from the bottom of her heart.

The dry atmosphere was moistening along with the warm gaze from the parents and the other wives.

And so,

「Yosh, everything is alright. Let’s go to the next one.」

Hajime clapped his hand and gave the order. Everyone sent him gaze that said 「Read the atmosphere」.

It seemed he really couldn’t stand to be present at the atmosphere right now. Hajime-san wished to run away. The problem was the future. Hajime-san wouldn’t look back at the past.

「Wait wait, Hajime. Why are you that hurried? There are things that we still haven’t heard――」

「There isn’t anything like that. One hopeless rabbit showed her guts. That’s all.」

He drowned out those words. It was as though he was being ‘I won’t allow further question than that!’. Or perhaps he was being ‘I don’t want to touch the topic ahead of that!’.

The parents were taken aback by that. Even Yue, Kaori, Shizuku, Aiko, and then Shia herself and even Myuu, they all averted their gaze simultaneously. It was as though they understood Hajime’s feeling.

「The father of Shia-chan, he seemed like a kind person~. I’m looking forward to meeting him.」

She said it. Sumire-okaasan said it.

「How should I say it, the image of father and daughter is different. You know, Shia-chan gave the feeling of annoyi――cough. I mean aggressiveness and challenger spirit in the playback.」

「Tou-sama? Just now, were you about to say that I was a muscle brain? You almost said that!」

Ignoring Shia who was pressing the question on Shuu, Tomoichi also expressed his impression.

「Yeah, I thought that the rabbit people race will be more brimming with curiosity with character of fortitude but……」

Hajime and Yue looked at each other. They were making face that was saying 「Certainly, they’re brimming with curiosity with character of fortitude, right now」.

「They’re actually peaceful people with kind personality. I feels like they’re liking things like flower or animal.」

Kaoruko’s impression made Kaori and Shizuku to look at each other. Their face seemed to say「Right on. It seemed they loved those things, a long time ago」.

「Shia-san is special isn’t it.」

「She is truly the hero of her race.」

「The father and everyone else protect Shia-kun’s family, while Shia protect the body of her family who cannot fight. That’s how it is huh.」

Kirino, Koichi, and Shuuzou’s impressions made Shia and Tio to look at each other. Their face wanted to say「Rather they’re dealing damage to my heart though. Everyone is frontline addict though」.

「All of them are handsome man and beautiful woman. The small children are also really cute. Fufu, when I imagined that this kind of people are living in the house inside a forest, it reminds you of Sylvania○ isn’t it~」

Akiko’s dreamy impression made Aiko and Myuu and Remia to look at each other with an expression that said「Certainly it’s already just a dream」. Next, Hajime’s expression changed as though to say「If I have to say they’re □ □ □ □ □ Shiryuubania instead, I guess?」. (TN: Hajime changed the word Sylvania with kanji that has similar sound with it where the kanji has the meaning of ‘death style blade evil and good’.)

It couldn’t be helped that they looked like that. That “cute small kid” right now introduced himself with name like “Baltfeld of Certain Death” and found his meaning of life from shooting through his prey’s head, while the other child introduced herself as “Neastadtrm of Outside Massacre” who

if there was a chance would compete ruthlessly with the older women of the same clan daily in order to receive the affection of the boss.

(Ha, Hajime-san, what to do? Everyone is imagining a clan of “forest rabbit-san”! Even though in reality they’re head reaping rabbits who’re lurking in the forest! They’re a group of warmonger and assassin! They will be absolutely appalled desuu!)

(This is why I was reluctant to show those guys before their complete change.)

(It was Hajime-san who changed them though! Can’t we change the schedule? Like telling them they can’t meet my family because they’re a bit busy right now or something.)

(Try doing that and then get found out later on. We’re talking about those guys. Next time they’ll take initiative to introduce themselves. At that time it will be with an excessive show added……terrifying)

(……Certainly. This is father and everyone else. They’ll aim for our next visit and lie in ambush. No matter how many months, how many years, they will lie in wait at the palace’s gate.)

Hajime and Shia were both at their wits’ end. Shuu and others were looking puzzled seeing the two of them whispering to each other secretively.

「What’s the matter Hajime?」

「No, it’s nothing. We talked a bit about the time to introduce Hauria clan. Kaori, take care of the follow up using soul magic and regeneration magic.」

「Wait a second Hajime. What're you saying when we're going to meet the father and family of Shia-chan who looked that kind……wait, Kaori-chan!? Why is your expression that determined!?」

father-in-law
「I will protect Otou-san's heart-」

「What do you mean!?」

「It'll be a destructive power that made even Hajime-kun shocked and fell into stupor but-, I'll protect everyone-」

「Hajime is the godslaying demon king isn't he!? Shia-chan's family, what kind of people are they!?」

「Tou-san, steel yourself. Perhaps, among everyone here Tou-san'll be the one……in most danger.」

「I'm asking one more time here-. This is Shia-chan's family you're talking about right!? The rabbit-san who looked kind in the playback right!?」

Shuu was filled with trepidation. Inside his brain the image of Carm and others looking like a group of psychopath flashed. In a sense he wasn't mistaken.

By the way, it could be easily guessed that the reason Shuu was in most danger was because he was Hajime's father. Just like his son, he had various things sealed deep inside his heart.

「Let's put aside the matter of Tou-sama and others for now! Let's head to the next place, next!」

Shia pointed to the west of the canyon as though to avert her gaze from the unpleasant future. The problem was that it was a future that would come sooner or later.

Shuu and others didn’t feel fully satisfied, even so they obediently went through the gate.

.

.

.

Their destination was of course Raisen Great Labyrinth.

「So this is……the second great labyrinth?」

Shuu’s question was only natural. Tomoichi and others also stared wide-eyed.

――Welcome! To Miledy Raisen’s exciting and thrilling great labyrinth♪

「Right, of course you’ll react like that. We were also like that.」

「……Nn. It’s slightly irritating seeing this even now.」

「Right desu~. It’s already annoying right from the start.」

Hajime and others got a faraway look. Although they often heard about the story, Shizuku, Tio, and Kaori who hadn’t really experienced it themselves. The time for them to vicariously experience it had finally come and they were feeling excited and thrilled about it.

「When the story about this great labyrinth came up, the three would enter their own world so it made me curious.」

「It wouldst give us an odd sense of alienation when they art like that.」

「At the decisive battle I met with Miledy-san but……she overwhelmed the monsters with gravity magic……her voice at that time was really level-headed, so I couldn’t match her image with the character that Hajime-kun and others mentioned no matter what. Rather, she felt like a good person who was humorous――」

Kaori said such thing while staring at empty air and remembering Miledy who came as reinforcement at the decisive battle leading her golems. The instant she said those words, the eyes of Hajime and others snapped open intensely.

「Kaori, return to your sense. You’re brainwashed.」

「……Bakaori. You better polish your ability to judge people a bit more.」

「It was a really extreme situation that Kaori-san even got a strange delusion wasn’t it……」

「Why are the three of you going that far!?」

Everyone’s expression became 「Who in the world Miledy Raisen is……」 seeing the uncommon reaction of Hajime and others.

Hajime cleared his throat *cough* and pulled himself together before opening his mouth.

「From here we’ll explore this Raisen Great Labyrinth, but this place is a mountain of physical trap. We don’t know which is where, so be more careful than when you were in Orcus. Be very careful to not act by yourself and touch something carelessly.」

The parents nodded firmly after seeing the serious expression and warning of Hajime. Kaori immediately moved to begin the “past playback”. But, before she could,

「It’s still the entrance you know, Kaori-san.」

Shia grabbed her shoulder strongly.

「Eh? But……」

「But, what?」

「I, it’s nothing.」

Shia was smiling. But, the smile was strangely pressuring. It was plainly scary. In addition her grip on Kaori’s shoulder was like a vise. A vigor like ”I’ll absolutely hinder the past playback!” could be felt.

「……nn. I’m starting the past playba~~ck」

「Yue-san!?」

Yue-sama unexpectedly turned traitor. She quickly stepped forward, opened the revolving stone door, casually struck down the arrow that flew out right after the door was opened, and then replayed the past with smooth and flowing motion.

「Don’t tell me-, it’s retaliation for before this!? That should be invalid already after this longgg-」

「……Nn? What did you say?」

Yue’s hearing was suddenly becoming bad. Shia went mad ‘ugaaa~h’ and leaped at her.

By the way, what Shia meant by “before this” was her line of 「——I win if it’s breasts。The girl over there is flat isn’t she!」 that got replayed in the past replay at the canyon.

In front of Shia who was trying to hold her down, Yue was,

「……Hajime!」

「Ou」

「!? Hajime-san!?」

Shia was pinioned from behind. Her expression was saying ‘Unbelievable!’ and her rabbit ears stood on end.

「My bad, Shia. It’s my reflex.」

「Are you a trained dog!? Let goo~~, everyone don’t looook~~~」

Struggle-struggle-. Even though she was trying to get away from Hajime’s restrain, the past was projected before her body strengthening’s level was raised.

「Wha, what in the world it is? Hey, Yue. Shia is seriously disliking it, if it’s better not to see it then……」

「……Nn, I’m joking.」

The moment the regrettable scene of past Shia vanishing at the other side of the revolving door because of her carelessness, the image vanished at the same time. It seemed that even Yue didn’t have the intention to show Shia’s black history for real as expected. After all it was concerning a girl’s dignity.

「I, I’m glad desuu. If Yue-san was serious then I’ll have to become Asura after that.」

「There’re many people who almost become Asura huh.」

Tomoichi-san averted his gaze quickly.

「Well, if I hath to guess, Shia must hath done a great blunder. At that time Shia seemed to be still really inexperienced after all.」

Right now Shia was a person of firm character even among Nagumo family. Rather, Shia could pass as a reliable rabbit even more than Yue who was heading to become a NEET vampire princess in full speed. But here there was an embarrassing failure story of her in the past.

Everyone was terribly curious, but Shia who was folding her rabbit ears flat on her head and looking bright red until her neck was cute so no one asked further and in exchange they stopped after tasting the warm and relieved atmosphere.

But, being merciless in this kind of time was the quality of that person who was the number one most annoying person in the world.

The moment Hajime and co stepped inside the dungeon and the revolving stone door closed, behind that door bright letters floating in the air shined radiantly and brilliantly in an intensity that was never seen before.

——Were you scared? Hey, were you scared? You wet yourself.

——It’s fine you know! It’s only wetting yourself! There’s also rabbit girl that soaked herself wet so it’s fine! Ah, but remember to clean up okay! Manner is important doncha know? Pugyaaa——h

The letters were subtly different from before. Or rather, there was addition.

Everyone swallowed the voice「Ah」that almost slipped out from their throat. It was a good work in their part of being able to immediately pretend of not understanding what the words meant. Although, within the silence that even felt terrifying, it couldn't be helped that their gaze was slowly moving. Yes, moving toward the direction of the child who wet herself.

「……」

Shia-san was looking down. Her expression couldn't be seen. It was extremely eerie. Her rabbit ears too weren't moving at the slightest like the calm before the storm.

「I, I wonder what it talked about-! I don't get it at all!」

Aiko-chan desperately gave a follow up. But it became a lethal damage instead. Seeing Aiko's usual fruitless effort, Akiko said「You be quiet-」and hit her daughter's head.

「I, it might be talking about Myuu! Nano! Before Myuu met papa, Myuu often wet herself at night after all!」

「My my, mama is proud of Myuu. But, right now let's refrain from saying anything for a bit okay?」

Myuu desperately made a follow up with the mentality of self-sacrifice. But instead it made it hard for Shia to stay here. Remia quickly collected Myuu. She buried Myuu's face into her chest to zip close her mouth.

「Shi, Shia-chan? You know, Okaa-san and everyone else doesn't really――」

「Just you wait」(TN: Here Shia stop using polite way of speaking. Even though she still used desu even when facing the apostles, here she doesn't do so.)

Shia's tone that should be unassailable like iron wall broke. She held out her hand toward the worried Sumire to stop her, and then she started moving slowly. She equipped Vire Drucken so naturally like a flowing water.

The next moment,

「MILEDYYYYYYYYYYYYYYYY-, GET BACK TO LIFEEEEEEE-!! I'M GOING TO SMASH YOU TO PIECESSSSSSSSSS-!!!」

Pale bluish white magic power burst up! That was the proof of the activation of body strengthening Level X! With her rabbit furs standing completely on end and bloodshot eyes, the attack of Shia who went through character breakdown HIT the revolving stone door! The area near the entrance was exploded into pieces along with a thunderous roar.

Even the gigantic boulder that was like a camouflage outside was sent flying until it impacted the cliff wall at the other side. A part of Raisen Great Canyon collapsed! Without pause she began fighting against the monsters of Raisen that got lured by the thunderous sound to vent her rage.

The fierce quake and disastrous scene that was like cataclysm made Sumire and others screamed 「Kyaaaaaah」 while yelling 「Shia-chan calm dowwnnnnn」. During that time Hajime showed a cramping expression.

「Shia should have come here just before the last decisive battle but……looking at her state right now, this is the first time she saw that huh.」

「……Nn. In other words after Shia returned from here and before she departed to battle, Miledy intentionally added in the sentence.」

That must be how it was. When Hajime recalled Shia's state after returning from Raisen Great Labyrinth before the decisive battle, various things must have happened. This was undoubtedly Miledy's revenge.

As expected from the formidable person who undoubtedly would be the world champion for eternity if there was an Annoying Uzaledy World Championship. Even after her own death, she still left behind her annoyingness for future life……. He even felt like that right now Miledy was actually watching from somewhere while laughing hard holding her stomach too.

Unable to keep listening the impact sound that surged out without pause and watching Shia swearing while forgetting her 「desuu」, Tio departed to the battlefield for the time being.

「Shi, Shia. I understand thy feeling. But for now let's calm dow――」

「SHAORA-」

「Thank you very much-」

Tio vanished to faraway in the sky. Kaori was in a dither while pulling on Hajime's sleeve.

「Ha, Hajime-kun-, what now! This is the first time I saw Shia snapped like this!」

「The time before this she also snapped completely though.」

「Hajime! Do something about this! That's the role of a lover!」

「It's fine Kaa-san. Even if we leave her alone, she is in Level X so her magic power will dry out while we're talking and she'll collapse, so for now let her vent everything inside her.」

Just like Hajime said, it became quite a few minutes later. Shia-chan was on her knees limply above the sea of blood and mountain of corpse of the monsters. If they sharpened their hearing, they could hear the sad sobbing voice faintly.

Seeing that, Hajime and others who had refined the strategy to improve Shia's mood while she was venting looked at each other and nodded firmly.

Hajime turned his gaze to Myuu, she showed a really manly expression that said 「Leave this to Myuu! Nano」 and walked toward Shia.

At the foot of the mountain of monster corpses, she placed both her hands on her mouth like a megaphone and raised her voice.

「Shia-onee~~chaa~~n. What's the matter so suddenly nano~~? Why are you crying nano~~?」

「Hics, sniff, everyone learned it……it might be alright if it's only Tio-san and others……but even Kaa-sama and Tou-sama……fueh……and the families of Kaori-san and others too……」

「What did they learn nano?」

Myuu's puzzled question made Shia went 「Eh?」. Shia showed a bewildered expression seeing Myuu's big and

round eyes staring at her in puzzlement.

「Wha, what did they learn you say……that's of course, you know, the thing written at the entrance」

「Entrance? There was writing? What was written nano?」

「Eh? Eeh? Huuh?」

Shia tilted her head and even her tears stopped trickling in this mysterious situation. Myuu also tilted her head matching her. It was as though she really didn't understand anything.

Shia finally looked at the direction of Hajime and others wondering what was with this situation. Sure enough Kaori and others were also making puzzled expression. Even Tio who already returned when she noticed was tilting her head as though nothing had happened.

And then, Hajime and Yue secretly made a thumb up.

「Ah, co, could it be their memory with Yue-san's magic……」

She recalled that possibility and felt grateful as well as apologetic and various other emotions. Shia who finally returned to her senses timidly descended from the mountain of corpse.

「Err, Myuu-chan. You really don't remember anything?」

「Myu?」

Shia stared fixedly on Myuu. Myuu stared back questioningly. *Staree~~~.* *???~~~~~~?*

「……Shia-oneechan?」

「I’m sorry Myuu-chan. It’s nothing desu.」

Shia grinned and walked toward Hajime and others. Myuu instantly stroked her chest and let out a breath of tension 「fuhii~h」——

Shia turned around *whoosh* in a flash. It was a truly sharp movement like “Daruma doll tumbling”.

But, even Myuu wasn’t the demon king’s daughter just for show! When Shia turned around she already started walking with a smile *grin* returning on her face. Shia nodded 「fumu」 and walked again——

Whoosh

Grin

……fumu

fuii~

Who-whoosh!!

Grin grin-!!

……fu~mu

Myu~~, papaa-

「You two, what’re you playing?」

「Ah, I’m sorry Hajime-san.」

Shia responded to Hajime. Behind her Myuu was holding her chest. It seemed her heart was pounding hard even from before entering the great labyrinth. It was truly a situation that wasn’t exciting at all. A small thumb up came from

Remia mama. Myuu sent back a thumb up with an expression of a warrior who had acquired accomplishment.

「Er~r, everyone, did anyone see anything at the entrance?」

Shia asked with a smile. Even though she was smiling, deep inside the eyes that were narrowly opened, there was the sharpness of a veteran detective ascertaining the truth and falsehood. Aiko and Akiko twitched. Shizuku averted her gaze reflexively. Kirino sent them rebuking gaze.

Shia's eyes narrowed silently.

「Shia-chan, just what's with you since just now?」

「Are you perhaps feeling unwell? Should we stop with the sightseeing today?」

「Ah, no no, nothing like that! I'm sorry Tou-sama and Kaa-sama. How should I say it, I'm really sorry for various things desu.」

It seemed Shia had somehow guessed it. In other words, their memory wasn't actually modified, instead they were trying to make it looked like that was what happened. As expected, it was appalling to modify the memory of their own family, but they were trying to persist with the kind lie in consideration for Shia.

Shia's cheeks reddened slightly in embarrassment, but she had even made Myuu be considerate of her. This time she took advantage of that kindness and kept her sanity.

The parent~s sent a warm gaze seeing Shia's state. Yue and others also snuggled closer to console Shia.

With everything returning to normal, the group finally moved inside Raisen Great Labyrinth. Past playback was activated at a place where stairs formed in a complicated structure like trompe l’oeil.

But, Hajime and Kaori committed a sorrowful blunder there.

「Come to think of it, that Endo, he conquered this place by himself didn’t he?」

「Ah, certainly. Want to take a bit of look? It was slightly after the decisive battle if I remember right.」

Kaori set the time and performed “past playback”.

After a while, a man fully clothed in black outfit――Kousuke appeared in the projection.

After the decisive battle, he fell in love with a Hauria older woman――Ranainfe……Rana who perceived him even when he was in stealthy state and confessed. However, Rana gave conditions after much thought, which was a savage request of conquering a great dungeon and dealing a wound on Hajime. Kousuke came here to carry that out.

Doing such challenge that could also be called as mad in a sense, as expected Hajime and others thought that even Kousuke must be nervous. However, the image of Kousuke in the projection seemed strange. He was muttering to himself in a low voice.

Wondering what he was saying, they strained their ears and……

――A rabbit girl who soaked herself wet……the rabbit people race is originally a fainthearted race……and I think there won’t be anyone else of them coming here……eh, in

other words, it’s something like that huh. Shia-san, over there she――

「ENDO KOUSUKE, I’LL KILL HIM-!!」

「Calm down Shiaaa-」

Shia-chan lost her sanity once more. She was turning around while shouldering Drucken, so Hajime hurriedly grabbed her from behind. But, in front of Shia’s physical strength he was getting dragged!

Yue and others also jumped Shia in great panic to stop her, but they were all getting dragged together. At the end even the parents also joined to become like a human rope, but the bugged rabbit whose heart was burning to seal Kousuke’s mouth couldn’t be stopped!

「ENDOOOOOOOO-, KOUSUKEEEEEEEE-」

「CALM DOWWWWWNNN, YOU’RE SERIOUSLY BECOMING LIKE A BERSERKEEERRR-」

After that, Shia returned to her sanity after getting a promise that they would get rid of Kousuke’s memory.

Whether that measure was really carried out or not……

When the classmates asked Kousuke about his time conquering Raisen Great Labyrinth, at the beginning he would always go 「Raisen……the entrance……uh, my head-」, it could be easily guessed from there.

In any case, it seemed that Raisen Great Labyrinth was a place that couldn’t help but shave down Shia’s SAN point even though its master wasn’t there anymore. Perhaps it really should be called as the demon’s gate.

Although, they also had a bit of objective this time. And so they continued with the sightseeing of Raisen Great Labyrinth.

Hajime and co advanced deeper forward while playing the “past playback”.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

※Material introduction

– Myuu’s saying　It seems that it was the words from Mr. Bill Gates.

– Sylva○ian　Reimported from Nichijou

※I’m ashamed but this is an advertisement. Arifureta Shokugyou de Sekai Saikyou Zero volume 3 is planned to be released in 25 March. It seems it’s already released at some quicker place.

You will be able to see a lot of no good Meiru-oneesan. Also, things like the whole picture of Liberator's organization, Van-chan who was the creator of ice and snow cavern that was currently in the middle of being conquered at volume 9, or the demon king will come out.

I hope that everyone will obtain it no matter what!

It's also announced in Overlap-sama's homepage, you please check there if you like.

.

※Special perk SS

– Chain store-sama【Boys talk after, disciplining】

When men gathered, naturally they will also talk about the girl they like.

And then, even when they talked secretly, there is also an onee-san who can view the past. So after that it was inevitable. It’s that kind of story.

– Animate-sama【The wrong way to use metamorphosis magic】

If there is metamorphosis magic then it might be possible to remodel the body? Although, to listen to Miledy’s wish is a different problem.

It’s that kind of story.

– Tora no Ana-sama【Glasses x maid uniform x manly woman = war】

Even for a heavy maid lover, o manly woman, you bastard is out of the question. It’s that kind of story of O-kun.

– Melon Books-sama【Korin’s theory of the strongest】

There is nothing that will hurt an adult more than a little girl’s consideration and pure and straightforward opinion.

The one who stood last was only the strongest little girl. It’s that kind of story.

– Gamers-sama【Searching for the beloved transmutation monster through 3000 ri ②】

As usual, it’s the story of the poster girl of the restaurant at the low-lying part of the royal capital Welnika Asha-chan chasing after Oscar.

She pushed on until the sea and at the end of her being adrift she encountered a certain pirate group…….

.

That’s all.

I’ll be happy if you look forward to it!

Best regards!

Arifureta Chapter 352

Arifureta After III　Tortus Travel Journal

.

After they somehow calmed down the raging berserker Shia.

As expected perhaps they should stop with touring Raisen Great Labyrinth, if it was now they could teleport using Crystal Key or with Yue brute forcing her magic power until the deepest room……

That was Hajime’s suggestion, but Kaori, Tio, Shizuku, Aiko, and Myuu, the five of them firmly refused. It seemed they wanted to be able to share with the “feeling of understanding” that only owned by Hajime, Shia, and then Yue until now.

「Rather, perhaps we should conquer it in a normal way and obtain gravity magic too?」

「Indeed. There art also the feeling that it’s too late to obtain it now, but there art no disadvantage in obtaining it. This might be a good timing.」

「Right……Hajime and others will protect Okaa-san and other parents, so should we give it a try?」

「Eh? H, h~m, it feels a bit impossible for me though……」

「Myuu too nano……」

Kaori and others talked between them. For some reason Hajime’s eyes were wandering around hearing that. He showed a bit of pondering look, 「Well, it’s alright I guess…… it’ll be alright won’t it?」 he said with unusual lack of confidence. His expression was looking anxious.

「Geez, Hajime-kun worry too much. We aren’t that weak okay?」

「No, right, well, that’s true.」

Hajime really didn’t make himself clear. This was Hajime who was always bold and audacious with imperturbable mind, so seeing him like this made everyone to opened their eyes wide in surprise.

Shizuku tensed her expression.

「Even though you didn’t even make that kind of face in Orcus……we’re going to have brace ourselves like this. That’s why Ojii-chan and you two! Don’t start warming up! Don’t make that face that say 「Ee~, it’s unfa~ir that only Shizuku is going」! I’ll shred you all for real if you three are doing as you please!」

Everyone of Yaegashi family looked really dissatisfied. The adults in their age were sending booing ‘boo~boo~’ to their daughter in reality.

Shia who had returned to her sanity right now formed a wry smile to such hot-blooded Yaegashi family and opened her mouth.

「H~m, there is no problem with everyone’s capability but……this dungeon will change its internal structure within a certain period.」

「Eh!? Is that so?」

「Yes desu. It's a trick in order to laugh while rolling on the floor seeing the challengers feeling down after pointlessly mapping the area with hard work.」

「That's nasty!」

「Miledy was a damn contemptible human after all!」

It stood to reason.

'Because of that we also don't understand the path you know~', Shia said. Continuing after her Hajime also pointed out with a wry smile.

「In the first place, we planned to teleport after letting everyone touring this place to a degree. I think you will need one week at the very least if you want to conquer this dungeon in a normal way.」

「……Nn. Right now we have the compass, so if it goes well perhaps you'll be able to reach the goal easily? We don't know if you'll be recognized as having conquered this dungeon though.」

'I see', Kaori and co nodded. In that case, for the time being they would rely on the compass, if they weren't acknowledged in that case, then they would do it the normal way if there was another chance. They concluded of trying the challenge with such feeling.

Because of that, Hajime would only show the path with the compass, while Kaori, Tio, and Shizuku would go ahead of the group. The tour of Raisen Great Labyrinth stared like that. Aiko together with Myuu were observing from the rear. It seemed they didn't really have confidence. Though Myuu

was burning with combativeness while saying 「I'll be back nano」. (TN: In the raw Myuu said it in butchered English which is, 'Airu bii bakku nano')

「Yue, can I count on you for the past playback here? If it's necessary I'll share my magic power with you.」

「……Nn. It's fine. You can just leave it to this Yue-san.」

Right now Yue boasted magic power capacity that was equal or superior to a god, so even in Raisen that dispersed magic power, she was able to use magic with brute force.

Although, doing the same like in Orcus when she continuously projected the past without pause throughout the tour……as expected it was impossible to do something like that here.

The magic of "past playback" was already consuming magic power in proportion to the amount of time that was traced back even in normal situation. When it came to a scene that was more than a year in the past, even for the current Yue it was a consumption amount that she couldn't ignore. Also, Hajime sharing his magic power with her was referring to the kissing biting chuu~.

Yue fired up herself and began to proactively cast the past playback while licking her lips.

It wasn't just imagination that she looked to be much more motivated than usual. It wasn't because she could do the biting chuu~ with Hajime. They were doing that daily so there was no problem. There was one reason. It wasn't just Hajime who was asking her to do it, Yue also wanted to see it. The nostalgic scene.

――Hawawawah

There was the trembling Shia who got the fur on the tip of her rabbit ears cleanly cut by rotating blade that flew out from the wall.

――Uu~, I get a bad premonition somehow desuu~

There was also the weak-kneed Shia looking around restlessly.

――Ukyaaa!?

The stair became a slid and she rolled down while getting smeared with slimy liquid. Shia-chan who hit the back of her head hard and writhed around was priceless.

――This damn clumsy rabbit! Move away quickly!

――I’m shorry~, but my body can’t movee~

The rabbit-san who slipped with her legs making M shape and then straddling Hajime’s face with that splendid butt of hers looked really hopeless!

Even after that, she got hit by metal basin and her face got sloshed with mysterious muddy white liquid, getting hit with consecutive attacks of metal basins, getting a second helping of metal basin, the totally hopeless Shia rabbit was tripping all the traps like there was no tomorrow. She was sobbing, then snapping at Miledy’s writing……

「How nostalgic~」

「……It’s nostalgic~」

Hajime and Yue were nodding to each other with extremely satisfied expression. They were giving off air as though they

had reunited with old friend that they hadn’t met for a long time.

By the way, this “nostalgic hopeless show of Shia-chan” was the second time today. The first time needn’t be said. It was the past image of the encounter in Raisen Great Canyon. At that time everyone reacted to Hajime’s cold treatment, so they were unable to pleasantly enjoy Shia’s hopelessness.

□The hopeless Shia-chan is cute as expected eh.□

□Shia-chan of this time, is gone already huh……□

Sumire and Shuu smiled warmly. At the same time, they were showing a lonely atmosphere as though they were thinking of a daughter that they couldn’t meet anymore.

□Uwaa, she was really a hopeless rabbit wasn’t she?□

□She was already a bug when we first met her.□

□I think it was just barely with me. At that time there was still a slight scent of hopelessness fromst her.□

□Ah, it was also like that at my time. When we met at Ur, she was still treated relatively rough.□

A second of silence. Kaori and co looked at each other and grinned.

□□□□The hopeless rabbit is really nice~□□□□

‘Nice~♪’ They said and nodded to each other.

Myuu and others were also really enjoying seeing the pathetic and completely hopeless Shia. □How hopeless nano~□□My my, the hopelessness is cute□□That’s a hopelessness that is unthinkable from her current self□□But,

that’s a nice hopelessness□□That’s a hopelessness that you can’t really find in the recent years□□It’s the greatest hopelessness in this ten years□□That’s a fine quality hopelessness with abundant variation and the right amount of sharpness□ and so on, everyone exchanged their impressions that sounded like lines from somewhere.

□No, now see here, everyone. Calling me hopeless hopeless like that is, you know……□

Shia was flapping her rabbit ears wildly while trying to protest with sullen expression. But,

□Ah, amazing! That’s the cliché trap!□

A large rock was rolling down from above. Kaori said □I’ve seen this before in movie!□ with a slightly high tension before disintegrating it.

Right away, a ball made from metal was rolling down next while scattering melting liquid. As expected it couldn’t oppose Kaori’s disintegration.

Inside the past projection,

——Uwaaa~~hn, I’ll haunt this place if I dieee!

Shia was running past while screaming pathetically and yelling complaint as expected. And then ahead where Hajime had escaped from the trap, he crucified Shia on the wall to help her narrowly escaped death.

Also, Yue was being held in Hajime’s embrace importantly. Seeing her past self at that time protesting while sobbing, the present Shia was,

□……I was really hopeless huh.□

She got a faraway look. She was gritting her teeth saying 「You call yourself a rabbit when you can’t even pulverize a mere metal ball like that with your fist-」.

Sumire chuckled slightly seeing Shia in that state.

「Even so――to say something like “I swear, I’ll aa~bsolutely make Hajime-san fall in love me that you will want to save me in your embrace no matter what-“. Shia-chan, you really don’t know when to give up.」

Shia’s rabbit ears stood straight. When she moved her gaze, Sumire was there looking at her gently. It made her felt extremely embarrassed for some reason. Shia fidgeted restlessly while raising her voice to gloss it over.

「I wonder how is Kousuke-san doing around here!」

「……That’s right. Even though I also wanted to watch that guy’s capture too, I forgot it already without noticing. As expected, Shia. You did well reminding me.」

「I won’t forget even if I die. Until I send his memory flying.」

Shia’s serious look was really intense. Even the unprecedented lack of presence that Kousuke possessed could win against the obsession of the bugged rabbit who kept her eyes wide open it seemed.

「He is the next clan head of Hauria clan after all. I won’t acknowledge him if he display an unsightly appearance here! Now, Yue-san! Please do it desu!」

「……Nn-, leave it to Yue-san!」

Setting the time axis~, past playback GO!

「……Nn? Nnn?」

Yue leaked out a bewildered voice. There was no Kousuke. Hajime and others also looked around but they couldn’t find him.

「……I mistook, the time axis?」

‘Such thing shouldn’t be possible……’, Yue thought while starting to redo the past playback. But in that instant, a large rock was starting to roll down in the past projection.

Then,

——Sniff-, hics-……my heart hurts. I’d rather disappear instead

「Uoh, so you’re there Endou!」

He was there. He was sitting hugging his knee at the corner of the passage. Kousuke-kun there was wearing black clothes, but it was already tattered everywhere.

Or rather, it felt like his mind was even more tattered than his clothes. He was plainly crying. His eyes looked dead. It seemed he already messed up, to a degree that he had no presence at all to the degree that no one could catch sight of him even though he was inside a past projection. He was so ephemeral that it felt like he would literally vanish anytime now.

「Wait, it’s not the time to do something like that! Stand up Endou-kun! The rock is coming down!」

Kaori even forgot that it was a past projection and raised her voice anxiously.

Kousuke raised his face as though reacting to that. His empty eyes turned toward the large rock, and a beat. His face seemed to say ‘Uwaaah!?’ ——

——Come! My clones! Become my shield with that body!

He instantly took a pose. He stood at the middle of the passage and crossed his arms in the shape so that only his right hand was in front of his face. Of course he also didn’t forget to put on the sunglasses in a flash! Even though the large rock already right in front him, he also didn’t forget to rotate in place!

Pupupuff- Three clones appeared and stopped the large rock just for an instant. The clones were immediately dispersed due to Raisen’s magic decomposing effect, but using the time they bought, Kousuke dodged aside instantly.

「……If he has time to make a pose, he can use it to escape.」

「Yue, don’t say it. It’s necessary for the abyss lord.」

It was necessary for the abyss lord!

It seemed the “depressed Kousuke” just now was only an abrupt appearance while in the middle of break. The sinful depth of abyss lord was already in the state of Level V. His spec was rising with the passage of time, along with the increase of the painfulness of his behavior!

——O Miledy Raisen! O ancient protector! Know that my abyss will swallow everything!

「O, o……*aa*~」

The one who groaned was Shuu. He covered his face with both hands and fell on his knees. He was bright red from his

neck until his ear.

「O, oi, Nagumo Shuu! What's wrong!?」

Tomoichi called out in surprise, but Shuu papa didn't answer. It seemed he wasn't in the state to do so. Sumire mama was watching her husband with a truly nasty face! She was grinning really widely in enjoyment!

――Kuku-, the like of a large rock is a trifling matter. Muh, a metal ball!? Fuh, so I can't deal with it using ordinary means……

「NUAAAAAAAH」

「Are you alright!?」

――Very well-, come at me! Carnage is my favorite pastime-

「STOP IT ALREADYYYYYYY-」

「Hajime-kun! Something strange with your father! No, he is already strange from the beginning but……this is stranger!」

「Aa!, it's alright, Tomoichi-san. I'm also like that right now inside my heart.」

「Aren't you parent and so both overly strange!?」

It couldn't be helped. Both Shuu and Hajime were the kind of people who possessed a heavily sealed box deep inside their heart after all. The abyss lord was prying open the seal of that that sealed box really easily.

Inside Shuu, his young self wearing black history T-shirt was peering out saying 「You call?」. Hajime was someone experienced in facing the real abyss lord, so he was still able to barely push back the self inside his heart who was

wearing chuuni T-shirt and armed trying to crawl out saying 「You call right? You're calling again right?」.

They enjoyed the adventure of abyss lord in the degree that barely kept the seal in check……it was thrilling in its own way. That was something that couldn't be denied.

「Hey, dear. How are you feeling right now? You who was personally obsessed with sneering 'Fuh' at the past! You who would say 「You see……I have something that I have to do no matter what」 with a meaningful smile when I invited you for a date at holiday even though actually you didn't have anything to do, and later on you would invent some reason to invite me to a date♪」

「STOPPPPPPP-, STOP TALKING ABOUT THE STORY WHEN WE ONLY STARTED GOING OUT IN FRONT OF OUR SONNNNNN!!」

Sumire laughed while holding her stomach. Shuu who kept covering his face with both hands while trembling all over due to the serious damage.

「Hey, Kaa-san. What Tou-san mean by the time when you two started dating……」

「Of course. It was when we already finished graduating middle school for a long time. It was when we were at second year of high school. This person's sickness, it *went on for long*.」

「I, I see. But Kaa-san. Let's stop with that much.」

「Fufuh, At that time his intention was to show his cool figure to me isn't that riight~. How cute~」

「Seriously stop it! Tou-san's mind is dying!」

Shuu-otousan finally started sitting while hugging his knees and buried his face into his knees. Tomoichi consoled him with a really complicated expression, while Koichi showed understanding with an enlightened expression, but Shuu was locking himself within the hard shell of his heart.

Abyss lord’s savory lines echoed like BGM……

「How should I say it, Otou-sama and Okaa-sama really get along well aren’t they~」

「Right. They look more like best friend rather than spouses, that art really mysterious.」

「It’s fun just watching Ojii-chan and Obaa-chan nano!」

「It always give a warm feeling watching them, ufufu.」

Hearing Shia, Tio, Myuu, and Remia’s words made Kaori and others to nod too. As a matter of fact, this husband and wife always looked like they were having fun.

Kaoruko and Kirino watched Sumire playfully poking *poke poke* with her fingertip on her husband whose mind died and couldn’t move. And then Akiko also opened her mouth.

「……When Kaori and others were gone and we met in the 「family association」 that was started for the sake of the search, the two of them really gave the impression of “capable people” though. Fufu, certainly it’s fun seeing them right now.」

「Exactly. It was Miya-chan and others who took leadership, but they were really capable in noticing other small details……」

「They were really like the unsung hero of the family association. Thanks to the two of them, it was really easy to do activity.」

They didn't stand out, but they would do it when the times come. They casually accomplished the necessary things. The mothers conversed nostalgically while recalling the Nagumo husband and wife at that time. Kaori and others opened their eyes wide 「Hee~」 in interest.

「But, I like these two right now better than "the serious and capable duo" of that time.」

Kirino said with a smile while watching Shuu who somehow recovered due to the care given to him and Sumire who was lightly tapping his head repeatedly. Kaoruko also continued while smiling gently.

「You're right. It's troubling that it's us who feel embarrassed watching them though.」

Sumire and Shuu whose eyes were still dead were puzzled when they finally noticed the warm atmosphere of the surrounding. Perhaps it should be said that in a sense they had just entered the world of just the two of them.

「……Nn. I and Hajime also want to become husband and wife like the two of them.」

「Spare me from having a wife like Kaa-san okay? Yue is fine as you are.」

「! Hajime……」

「Yue……」

「Yes yes, both of you! Don’t enter the world of just the two of you! Okay!」

Hajime and Yue took each other’s hands and brought out a sickly sweet atmosphere. But a large sword swung down between the two of them. It was like the sword was splitting the pink heart enveloping the two of them into two!

「Both Hajime-kun and Yue, watch the time, place, and occasion! Good grief-」

Tomoichi matched her daughter’s peevish state by spitting ‘Keh’ peevishly too.

「With the parent like this, the son is also the same huh. Good grief-」

Then, a wall of text appeared in good timing……

――Hey hey, how are you feeling right now? How are you feeling? Puuh giggle giggle-

「「You’re annoying!!」」

Shirasaki father and daughter were beautifully in harmony.

――Fuhahahahahah!! Bring it on, liberator! For you to be able to seriously wound this abyss-. My blood is seething-. Fuhah, fuhahahahah!!

「「You shut up-!!」」

Nagumo father and son were also beautifully in harmony.

「……Hey, how about we move forward soon?」

The group finally continued forward after Shizuku talked with a deep sigh.

After that, they watched Kaori, Shizuku, and Tio fighting the golem knights, and as expected, at the first room, they were shaken around together with the room and returned back (they were in floating state using gravity magic so there was no damage), then they once more went through a mountain of nasty booby traps and the fierce attack of Miledy’s writing that easily rubbed people’s nerves the wrong way while advancing for a while.

As expected from the three of them. They weren’t harmed physically, but……

――Just now, you were totally surprised weren’t you!? Weren’t you!? You’re absurdly shaking in your bootsss~♪

――Congrats for overcoming the trap! It’s totally meaningless though! Pugyaaaah

――Eeeeeh? What’s the matter, making that kind of gloo~my expression! Are you getting on age alreadyyy? Pupuh

□□□Chih□□□

Not just Kaori, even Shizuku and Tio were unbelievably clicking their tongue.

□It’s really refreshing seeing Shizuku clicking her tongue.□

□Please look there. Shizuku-san’s eyes. Her eyes like a someone who will randomly kill passerby.□

‘Anyone is fine, I want to just cut……’, Shizuku-san’s face seemed to say that. Shia was trembling, not wanting to see such Shizuku. Beside her, Aiko was trembling when she looked at Tio.

「Ti, Tio-san making that kind of face, it’s the first time I see it……」

「……Ti, Tio~? Your pupils turn into slit like dragon. Calm down――」

「*Aa?* Whaat? Thy got any complaint aah?」

「……It’s nothing.」

「Yue-oneechan got silenced nano!? By Tio-oneechan!?」

In any case, it was great that they now could share in the feeling! Hajime, Shia, and Yue thought that while nodding at each other.

And then,

――I guess……it’s enough already……

Perhaps it was the limit of the abyss lord mode. Kousuke seemed to have returned to his sane mode looked dead in the eyes. He stayed lying down on the ground without making any twitch at the slightest.

Incidentally the past Hajime, Shia, and Yue were resting right beside him while huddling close to each other. Compared to Hajime who was holding extraordinarily lovely flower at both sides with a hint of calm atmosphere enveloping them, Kousuke’s state was really beyond any words to describe.

It seemed that Kousuke’s mental state was already riddled with wounds. The spring of his willpower was already dried up. Also, due to the traps his body was also like ragged cloth. His stamina was also at his limit apparently. It couldn’t be helped even if words of giving up slipped out from him.

——That’s right, let’s go home……no, perhaps it’ll be impossible to go back? I don’t know where the exit is

Mumble mumble, mumble mumble, the state of Kousuke who was continuing to mumble to himself wasn’t good. Even though he returned to his sanity he was already not sane at all. Some resemblance with Hajime who was trembling in the abyss could be seen from him.

——Even though I managed to survive that battle……am I going to die here? I’m, really an idiot huh

「Endou……」

Hajime looked at Kousuke who was in a state of broken heart with a troubled expression.

——Yaa~i yaa~i, this good for nothi~ng!! Fuhyahyahyahyah

「MILEDYYYYYYY-!!」

Hajime finally raised his voice roughly at the text that mercilessly attacked the already weakened enemy.

Or rather, it was a text that was right on the spot for the current Kousuke……

Thinking really really carefully, Miledy’s text toward Kaori and co was also like that. Even though Miledy wasn’t here anymore, how did the text can appear in real time?

Perhaps, soul magic or something was used to sense the challenger’s state, and then it automatically selected a text from the available patterns and displayed it. There was no doubt that it was Oscar who created this. What a terrifying ancient transfiguration master.

——That’s right, I’m a just a good-for-nothing anyway. A totally hopeless old guy madao that won’t be noticed by anyone……. Surely, when everyone return to earth, they won’t even notice that I’m gone……

「E, Endouu~, you’re reallyyy」

「I’m sorry that I sometimes forgot to call your name in the roll-call, Endou-kun-」

Tears were pooling at the corner of the eyes of Hajime and co hearing the monologue that was just too pitiful. Aiko raised her voice in repentance.

——Heheh, even though I have a life like in a manga like this……surely even if it’s turned into manga the main character will be Nagumo, while my character won’t even get a face……

「It sounds like it will really happen in reality-, so don’t say such a sad thing-」

Hajime spontaneously said. Sumire gave tsukkomi 「Calm down. This is just a past playback right」 to her son who was unusually unable to bear the situation.

Actually a few years later, the autobiographical manga that Liliana drew (the somewhat beautified and dramatized version) also had the appearance of Kousuke there but…… even though he appeared, for some reason only his face was hidden by his front hair and couldn’t be seen. It wasn’t like that when Liliana tried to draw his face, she wasn’t able to remember it at all……that wasn’t the reason. Surely.

——I simply, want a life when other people notice me……

「Endouu~~~~!!」

「……Nn~~~, do your best Endoou!」

「Kousuke-oniichan fight nano!」

「Kousuke-kun-, stand up! Stand up on your feet!」

「Endou-kun-, you are a capable person!」

「Kousuke-, does thy intend to give up on Rana-. Show that thy art a man!」

「I won't forget-, to call your name anymore in the roll-call-……perhaps!」

「You're the next clan head of Hauria aren't you! Please show your guts!」

In contrast with the parents who didn't know what to feel, Hajime and others were getting heated up in the same level like when they watched Inaba-san's rising up story.

Then, although there was no way their voices reached him……a faint light was lit in Kousuke's eyes.

――Nn? Nagumo is main character? ……Thinking carefully, if I die here there is possibility that Rana-san'll also get taken away by Nagumo?

「No, that's not gonna happen.」

「Right now is different but, Rana-san at that time was constantly in welcoming state. Or rather all of Hauria's females are like that.」

Hauria's female camp were always looking for opening to be granted with their boss's affection, even if they had to gang up on Shia with all of them.

——Rana-san will……my Rana-san is being approached by the demon king’s poisonous fang-

「Oi, don’t say something scandalous like that.」

——No way no way no way-. This ain’t the time to sleep at this kind of place-. Right now, even at this very moment, Rana-san might get attacked, and yet I-

「……Looks like I need to have a talk with Endou about his perception of me.」

Hajime’s eyes turned into demon king. The possibility of Kousuke getting attacked instead of Rana was high!

Although his eyes were still hollow, there were light lit inside them. Kousuke crawled on all four and stood up.

Kousuke showed his guts, but his state made everyone went ‘Oh?’……

——!? Tsu, what, a voice is speaking directly in my brain……

——Fuh, my other half. Do you want power?

——Yo, you are-, don’t tell me-

——Indeed. My name is the abyss lord “Kousuke E Abyssgate”!

——Abyss, lord……

——I shall ask you one more time. My other half! Do you want power-

——Yeah……yeah-. I want power! A power that will make Rana-san recognize me-. A power to protect Rana-san to the end from the demon king-

——Kukuh. So you finally accept me. Very well! Let’s go together! There is no end to abyss!

By the way, it wasn’t a conversation inside the head. Kousuke was simply talking alone like two people. It was something like one-man show. Inside the great dungeon where there was nobody else.

Everyone went 「Uwaa」 with an expression as though they had seen something that shouldn’t be seen. Or rather, they couldn’t watch this at all. This state that cornered Kousuke by this much wasn’t something so half-hearted.

It seemed that another personality was made inside him because of the absurd stress. Right now the scene they were watching was exactly like that.

So far as it went, Kousuke right now didn’t have anything like multiple personality, so he must have recovered his sanity properly, even so this scene was painful enough to make Hajime and co lost their words.

「Hajime. Call Kousuke to our house when we’re home and have a talk with him man to man.」

「I’ll do that, Tou-san. I’ll be a bit kinder to him.」

Nagumo parent and son were staring at Kousuke with their kindest expression to date.

Like that, Kousuke became the abyss lord once more and stood up. He damaged himself while advancing forward. Kaori and others were also smoothly conquering the dungeon at the same pace. They also had their fill enjoying Shia’s pathetic past at the same time. Two hours past like that.

As expected, because of the inner structure that continued to change, they couldn’t clear it within several hours. In the end, they ended teleporting to the last boss area using Crystal Key.

「We have properly conquer some part of the dungeon, it’ll be nice if we get recognized after defeating the boss……」

「You’re right Shizuku-chan. Other great dungeon also has shortcut, so the possibility isn’t zero.」

「Fumu……if mine memory serves me right, the last art a battle against a giant golem correct?」

While deploying the gate, Hajime averted his gaze with his all for some reason.

「Miledy golem you mean. It was powerful desu. Thinking back now, seeing that it didn’t directly use gravity magic, I think she held back a lot against us at that time but……」

「……Nn. Perhaps, she simply couldn’t use her strength in order to save her power for the end. But, they way she dropped the whole ceiling, or controlling the knight golems……she was strong.」

Yue and Shia commented. Shia then said 「Now that you mention it」 and hit her palm as though noticing something at this late hour.

「Miledy is now gone, so it became a half autonomous golem isn’t it? If I remember right, Hajime-san placed it here once more didn’t you?」

「We, well yeah. It was after Endou conquered the dungeon but……that was because at that time I didn’t know that

Endou was cornered to that degree. I thought that it would be problematic if dungeon conqueror show up so easily……□

□……You thought? What’s the matter Hajime? You’re acting strange since some time ago.□

□No, it’s nothing. Because I thought that, I added a little bit extra. Yeah, just a little but, you know.□

Hajime-san still keeping his gaze averted with all his effort and wouldn’t meet anyone’s gaze.

Even while feeling suspicious, maintaining the gate that kept getting dispersed was really difficult, so everyone shelved their question for later and leaped inside.

Although, there was no need to ask him later. Because the answer appeared right before them.

□□□……□□□

Kaori, Shizuku, and Tio stiffened.

Countless blocks were floating within a vast space……that was fine. It was just as they heard.

But, however.

They didn’t hear about this.

GOGOGOGO- Three pairs of mechanical wings on the back were emitting light, full load of weapons……it was a gigantic golem that looked like mobile sui○s they saw in robot anime of modern Japan. They didn’t hear anything about this!

Hajime deployed triple layers of eight points barrier with a natural movement. At the same time, the new golem-san

folded its arms in a savory pose and casually activated its gimmicks with *JAKO-!!* sound.

The arms that extended from its rear had cannon turret docked above the shoulders.

――Two 88 mm rail cannons. Stand b~~~y

The gigantic drills on both sides of the waist started rotating *KIIIIIINN*, at the same time six gun barrels from the inside that was split into four showed themselves.

――Two variable 30 mm gatling rail guns. Stand b~~y

The chest armor slid and from inside an armament that looked like beehive showed up.

――Heat seeker missile – 120 shots. Stand b~~y

Someone turned the golem into this appearance.

Of course, there was only one culprit.

Kaori and others were turning to look across their shoulder with stiff motion like a creaking machine that hadn’t been oiled.

Their faces were written with 「This is a lie right?」.

Hajime obstinately kept his gaze averted he simply said the necessary words frankly.

「Look to the front. ――You’ll die you know?」

At that instant, the sound of tyranny loudly resounded.

At the same time,

「NOOOOOOOOOOOO-」

「HAJIME YOU IDIOOOOOOTT」

「DRA, DRAGON TRANSFORMATION-!!」

A scream and an insult and a flustered voice resounded.

Flash and flame blast and shockwave trampled the space. Kaori took defensive posture with her disintegration wings along with Shizuku, while Tio guarded using her black scales while gasping ‘ahn ahn-‘.

「……Ha, Hajime-san? What’s that? It’s completely different from our fight though. That’s not a level of adding a bit extra though!」

「That’s Super Miledy Golem G .」

「I see. I don’t get it.」

Tio was blown away while they were talking. She raised her voice ‘Aha~~hn’ in anguish while the giant body of black dragon crashed on the wall. The scales she was proud of were tattered.

On the other hand with Kaori and Shizuku, perhaps it was just as expected from the disintegration defense, it was splendidly blocking the barrage, but they were unable to move from their spot.

Then, Super Miledy G seemed to lose patience and showed a new movement. It was posing savorily while swinging its right arm, then the arm morphed with *gashon-* sound into an electromagnetically accelerated pile bunker.

It charged forward while the gushing of dramatic light on its back fluttered like meteor.

「Ka, Kaorii! RUUUUUUUNNNN」

「Ha, Hajime-kun! It'll be fine right!?」

The Shirasaki husband and wife were completely panicked. Hajime nodded strongly.

「It will be fine. In the past, I broke through that disintegration defense using the same method. Even if it's Kaori, she won't be able to win against the sure-kill Pile Shot of my masterpiece Super Miledy G.」

「That's not what I meant!」

Kaoruko-okaasan unusually tsukkomi-ed with all her strength. The kindhearted Myuu screamed her warning 「Ruuunn! Kaori-oneechan! Super run awaa~~y nano!」.

Kaori too seemed to have sensed the sparking gigantic pile bunker. In a hurry she escaped from the back of the silver wing cocoon together with Shizuku, and then without delay she withdraw in godspeed.

Right after that, the fiendish barrier that would disintegrate everything was easily pierced through from the center with a thunderous roar.

「NAGUMO HAJIMEEE-, YOU BASTARD DOING THAT TO KAORIIIII-」

Tomoichi-otousan jumped at Hajime. Sumire-okaasan also yelled 「Kaoriii! Shizuku-chaaan-. Come back heree~~e」. But, the best friend duo didn't give up.

「We aren’t just going to keep getting done in-」

「Let’s go-, Shizuku-chan!」

Kaori and Shizuku appeared behind Super Miledy G when anyone noticed. Each of them moved to take away the arms of Super Miledy G with a slash of disintegration and space severing slash respectively.

‘Oo!!’ Cheers were raised but……

「Fuh, naïve. Do you two think that I’ll overlook its many blind spots that are created due to its huge size?」

「……Hajime, which side you’re on?」

The three pairs of protuberances that seemed like wings were purged from Super Miledy G. Those parts that were in the shape of triangle immediately floated in the air while turning around and pointed their tip to behind. Gun muzzle could be seen at the tips. All-range weapon was romance!

「Wai-!!?」

「It’s a lie right!?」

CHUDODODODON A storm of rifle bullet was fired. Kaori dodged with godspeed. Shizuku summoned a swarm of black katana and bundled them like flower petals, at the same time she activated space severance “Senka” in all the black katana.

「Eeei-, goshujin-sama! This art overdoing it!」

Tio made her comeback even while dropping complain like that. She rushed Super Miledy G with the black dragon’s huge body to seal its movement but……

「Wha-, a bea○ saber!?」

It was Shuu who yelled. Just as he said, Super Miledy G grasped two sticks that were attached on its thighs and mowed horizontally with another cool pose while activating the bea○ saber at the same time.

「The highest grade flame is heated even more using sublimation magic, and then it's compressed using gravity magic. It was a pain to recreate that.」

「……So this is the thing that Hajime made me helped with.」

Tio's scales were torn off right at this time and she tried to take distance in panic. But Super Miledy G docked the handle of the two bea○ sabers together to make them into a spear. Yue got a faraway look while looking at Tio who was being cornered by Super Miledy G that was making a savory pose.

「Hajime's bad habit came out.」

Sumire's convulsing expression told the story. Which was, the disposition of Hajime who would dash without knowing to stop when it came to creating things. Or rather, it was the karma of Nagumo family.

Even after that, there was space leap attack by bit weapon……

Or the opposite of countering by using the gate installed in the variable chakram to displace the attack of Kaori and co back to them……

Or an outrageous dodging method by purging the spot that would get cut and then immediately docking the parts back together……

Or external weapons flying out from several floating blocks which then docked with Super Miledy G, and then using the strengthened weapon a barrage was laid out like a storm……

Or the right hand burning bright red……

Or becoming battle mode by transformation……

Or drill……

「A, as expected isn’t this looking bad?」

「Is it just my imagination? It feels like Shizuku is half-crying though……」

Kirino showed her rare flustered appearance, while Shuuzou was sweating coldly.

Although, the three of them weren’t survivor of the holy precincts just for show. They had also grown stronger since then, so they wouldn’t allow themselves to keep getting done in forever.

The three of them got used to the movement of Super Miledy G and they had also recovered from their flustered state. They began to show teamwork in harmony.

Kaori toyed with the opponent using godspeed, Tio attracted its attention using large scale attack, and Shizuku took advantage of the instantaneous opening by stepping forward and cutting down its weapons little by little. Even if they got hit Kaori would immediately heal them.

Was Super Miledy G amazing that it could contend with the three of them right from the front? Or, were the three amazing that they could take on the embodiment of Hajime’s passion that was unrestrained?

It was extremely complicated. At the very least, it was a good fortune that abyss lord’s challenge was before Super Miledy G got deployed here. But considering that this thing was deployed here due to that abyss lord’s success, it could also be argued that right now Kaori and co were screaming in frustration was also his fault.

Putting that aside, Kaori and co were managing to shave down the opponent bit by bit like in a RPG boss battle. Their battle was quite an impressive sight.

Shia and Myuu, and then the parents starting from Yaegashi family were gradually cheering them on loudly. For some reason Hajime-san’s fearless grin was also deepening, and Yue’s exasperated gaze was also getting stronger!

「Haa, haa-, just a little bit more!」

「I, I thought we’re going to die but……looks like we’ll manage somehow.」

「Haa haa. Tha, that accursed goshujin-sama-. With something like this-, who wouldst be able to conquer this place in the future!」

Their exhaustion was fierce due to Raisen’s special characteristic. The three of them were already nearing their limit. However, Super Miledy G also got most of its weapons cut down by Shizuku. It also got hit by disintegration bombardment and dragon breath. It was damaged all over.

「Shizuku-chan! Tio! We’re going to finish it in one go!」

「Yes!」

「Understood!」

The three heightened their spirit so that this would be the last but……

Mass production of trump card was exactly Hajime quality.

「Naïve-, that's naïve you three! You're so naïve like Coca ○ola with plenty of sugar tossed in and then boiled until it's concentrated!」 (TN: Naïve in Japan is amai, which could also mean sweet.)

「……That's why, whose side you're on Hajime?」

Hajime-san was the ally of romance.

As though answering its creator, Super Miledy G emitted light. Crimson magic power was sparkling and enveloped Super Miledy G. The armor parts were purged with *bashun bashun* sound, and its gigantic body became slim.

Super Miledy G became two sizes smaller. It folded its hand and scattered vast amount of crimson particles around. It was shining as though its whole body was heated red hot.

「Do, don't tell me Hajime. You……」

Shuu turned a gaze that was mixed with awe at his son's deed that knew no compromise. Hajime let out a 「Fuh」 savorily like a certain lord somewhere. Yue-san's gaze was lukewarm. Her expression was saying 「How cute」 like what Sumire sent to Shuu before.

「The boss will become stronger when its HP gauge enter the red zone. That's common sense!」

「THAT KIND OF COMMON SENSE IS UNNECESSARRYYYYYYYYYY-」

Kaori’s yell echoed, at the same time Super Miledy G’s figure blurred. It seemed to be some kind of “Limit Break” state. It displayed a terrific mobility and instantly approached the three! The figure that blurred to two or three layers was just like Neunte in the past. Bea○ sabers flew out like assassin blade from the tips of its two arms and two legs! Cool!

「Trans-A○ Mode activate! Go-, Super Miledy G! Show them-, your power!」

「Hajime-, just which side you’re on!」

「Goshujin-sama-, let’s hold family meeting later on-. I wouldst not let thy get away with this!」

Intense quake burst deep underground Raisen once more. There were also angry yells and screams raised up.

After that, what was the result of the dungeon conquer of Kaori and co……

「Hey, Hajime-kun. Are you reflecting?」

「Hajime, who is telling you that it’s fine to stop sitting seiza?」

「Goshujin-sama, remake it. Back to the level of the original Miledy golem. Thy understand?」

「……Yes ma’am. I’m really sorry.」

It could be guessed from seeing Hajime who was sitting in seiza posture with his head hanging down, the Super Miledy G that became rubbish nearby after self-destructing, and the magic circle in Miledy’s hideout that wasn’t shining.

It seemed that Kaori and co obtaining gravity magic would still take a little while more.

.

.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

It has been announced at Arifureta's official homepage too but, volume 10 is planned to be released in June along with Drama CD.

In other words, Shirakome will have to get back into work again (sweat)

The update will be irregular again. I wish that I won't be absent for one month but, if that actually happen then I'm sorry. Please keep taking care of this work from here on too.

.

※ Material introduction

- I'll be back nano

It went without saying, the material is from Terminat○r. She also made a wonderful thumb up…

- Everyone's hopeless evaluation

It's reimported from Nichijou. From the evaluation of ???. (TN: Don't know which reference is this. Here is the raw □□□□○□)

- Super Miledy G

From the omake of comic volume 4. As expected from RoGa-sensei. The design was superb lol. The functions came from the frame of various certain robot anime. There won't be any end to it if I start introducing them, so I'm sorry but it's omitted! Only the last crimson one. Trans-A○. I super like it. There are also various other things inserted.

.

※ Updates in Gardo!

- Main story　chapter 31　Tio is bad news. She's damn strong, and also cool-
- Nichijou　chapter 35　Kaori lol. Especially the burning Kaori, it make me burst into laughter lol
- Zero　chapter 12　Nize's past came into light. There is also somewhat serious Miledy.

That's all. Those chapters are in the middle of publishing for free. Please go take a look at them!

.

※Publication　Zero volume 3　right now on sale.

Best regard for this one too!

Arifureta Chapter 353

Arifureta After III　Tortus Travel Journal

.

That man was in a horrible state.

——Guh, so my hidden secret technique is shattered-

His breath was short and gasping. One of his arms were limp and didn’t move at all as though it had been dislocated.

——So it can’t reach-. My strength-

The blood that was flowing out from his split forehead dirtied his face gruesomely. The black outfit was blackly dyed by his bleeding. He was literally wounded all over.

——So this is……as far as I go……

He ran out of weapon with only a single broken dagger remaining. His stamina was already at the limit.

However, but.

Only the oath he swore in his heart, was going strong!!

——Even if it’s hopeless by yourself, I’m still here

——My other half……

——We’ll go together-, isn’t that right!?

——Yeah, exactly. Exactly, partner!

That was why!

Although there wasn’t anyone watching! He played two roles alone like performing conversation!

——Not yet-. It’s still not over yet! You master of the deep labyrinth! My abyss has no limit-

Well, he was the abyss lord.

He swung around the limp arm forcefully while making a turn, the only action that he couldn’t possibly stop doing. Right after that, the abyss lord ate Miledy golem’s iron fist and he was blown away.

——Ogeeh, fuh, that was an, gofuh……afterimage!

It wasn’t an afterimage so he received great damage. He was literally vomiting blood.

And then, the current Miledy golem was an automatic type that didn’t reflect her personality, so it attacked further without the slightest mercy at all.

He desperately leaped from floating block to floating block desperately, but there the group of knight golem drew near.

——Wai-, sto-, don’-

He was ganged up and beaten black and blue. He was beaten up within an inch of his death. He was also kicked and grinded repeatedly. Next he also almost got everything he had torn off from his body.

The lord barely escaped with his life from the encirclement of the knight golems by jumping out. He was in a half naked state. He hugged the black outfit that had been reduced into a tattered scrap on his chest. His figure running in totter with teary eyes looked completely like a girl who was desperately running away from a rape.

Seeing such figure that was pathetic in a sense,

「He really doesn’t learn. As expected, Endou got guts.」

Words of praise echoed.

It was Hajime.

It was Hajime-san who prevented the great labyrinth capture of Kaori, Shizuku, and Tio as the result of his passion and romance gushing out excessively in developing and deploying the last boss in the style of series collaboration type Gun○m——Super Miledy G.

After getting hounded by the extremely enraged Kaori and co and made the Super Miledy G self-exploded tearfully, Hajime and co entered the deepest room. There, they got on Miledy’s magic circle, but as expected it seemed they weren’t recognized as successfully overcoming the last boss, so Kaori and others couldn’t obtain the gravity magic.

Naturally they pressed at Hajime in double extreme rage mode.

If asked how angry they were, it could be easily guessed when that Tio was starting her lecture with monotone voice that was filled with logic, prudence, moral, ethics, and sense. There was nothing more terrifying than a pervert who was scolding with composure as well as seriousness.

Also, Kaori was staring fixedly *jiii~~~* at him with eyes that were like whirling black hole, while Shizuku was starting to sharpen her black katana quietly. That sight was also absurdly terrifying.

It was to the level that Hajime displayed an astonishing scene of spontaneously taking seiza posture and said 「I'm really sorry for getting carried away……」.

And, that was why Hajime who was unable to endure the complicated gazes of the parents as well as Yue and others relied on our abyss lord at the same time when Tio's scolding finished.

If it's that guy then surely! He'll smash apart this atmosphere without a doubt! Hajime thought.

Like that she asked Yue to replay the past to observe abyss lord VS last boss golem that was still normal at that time but……

「Yeah, even though he has been beaten up like this for almost nearly one hour.」

Shuu agreed with Hajime. His expression was showing strong color of admiration as expected.

The lord's fragrant behavior was reaching the extreme when entering the climax of the labyrinth capture. At first both parent and son would cover their face with both hands while appreciating the playback from between their fingers, but right now they weren't being like that anymore.

The other people were also the same.

That was solely due to the deep impression they received from the strength of the lord's will that endured through this

far. He exhausted every possible mean, however he wasn’t a match against what he faced. Even though he was in abyss lord mode he was running around without regard to his appearance, screaming pathetically, and even became teary eyed. And yet apparently there was no option of giving up within the lord.

Even though Hajime aimed to “smash apart the atmosphere” with the fragrant act that would make anyone able to endure watching, the lord’s battle was unexpectedly tugging at their heart.

Right now there was no one who would make tsukkomi at every little fragrant action or getting red faced. They were purely cheering at the lord’s deathly battle.

「……Nn. It’s making us feeling thrilled like this even though we already know the result……Endou, keep going.」

「Doing something like this for someone she love, it’s really firing you up! Do your best~!」

Yue was feeling sweaty in their palm, while Shizuku, Tio, and Aiko were also cheering while making comment at the same time regarding the main culprit.

「Really, after seeing this I’m reminded once more about how absurdly brutal the requirement that was set up.」

「After this an even more brutal requirement would be waiting. Normally it wouldn’t be strange for someone to think that they’re indirectly being rejected from being given such requirement but……」

「From the atmosphere of Rana-san at that time, it was like she was *I unconsciously said that!* wasn’t it? Really, as expected from Hauria.」

「I’m sorry for our Rana-san-」

If it had to be said further, if this requirement was cleared it still didn’t mean that Rana would go out with Kousuke. She would simply just “considering” going out with Kousuke. It made anyone wanted to make tsukkomi, *Rana-oneesan, are you trying to act like a certain princess from a country somewhere huh?*

Of course, for the person herself it was the first super passionate wooing from the opposite sex in her life that made her embarrassed and flustered that her mouth unconsciously slipped but……that kind of thing was also related with “So it’s Hauria again huh” as expected.

「But doing this for the sake of a girl he love is wonderful isn’t it.」

「Really. Endou-kun is a mysterious kind who I can recall completely how he look even though I should have met him several times but, after seeing this I won’t be able to forget him anymore――perhaps.」

Kaoruko agreed to Sumire’s words. Akiko and Kirino also nodded deeply.

「Actually, before seeing the past image here I was thinking “Endou-kun? Who was that?”, but to think he is actually someone this amazing.」

「His battle technique is also splendid. I even want to make him learn the reverse side of Yaegashi style.」

Even the evaluation from the mama~s was extremely favorable. And it went without saying how Shuu and others the papa~s were feeling. Kousuke’s evaluation was rising explosively.

But, there Sumire suddenly tilted her head.

「Eh? But it’s strange. I can’t really remember his face……」

「Now that you say it……even while looking at him like this, mysteriously I can’t see his face.」

「Strange……. Things like his front hair, or the dust, or the golem, when his face almost come into view there will be something in the way and I won’t be able to see his face clearly.」

Kaoruko and Kirino were also puzzled by that profoundly mysterious phenomenon.

「Kousuke-oniichan, she is like the faceless god nano~」

「「「!!?」」」

The gaze of Hajime and Shuu and Sumire snapped at Myuu. Remia asked Myuu with her usual nonchalant tone.

「Myuu, what do you mean by faceless god?」

「He is a friendly uncle nano~」

「Myuu! Give me a bit more detail of that! What kind of uncle he is!?」

「? I can’t really remember nano. That’s why he is just like Kousuke-oniichan!」

「Right now Kousuke-oniichan doesn’t matter!」

「Wait Hajime! Myuu-chan is joking isn’t she? She is isn’t she!?」

「Pe, perhaps, she saw something at the internet right? Right? Myuu-chan, that’s the case right?」

「?」

In respond to Shuu’s question, *I don’t really get what you are saying……*Myuu made a puzzled expression that seemed to say that. Seeing that, the Nagumo parents and child’s expression spasmed together.

「It’s someone’s bad joke, obviously that’s the case. But Hajime! Just in case, do something about it!」

「Yeah, you’re right. That’s just a fiction after all! But Hajime! Just in case, do something!」

「Acknowledged!」

It seemed it was only the Nagumo parents and child who really got an idea about it. Everyone was making a puzzled expression wondering what they were so flustered about.

Then, right after that, the lord inside the past playback screamed. The blocks on the ceiling came off and fell down like heavy rain.

「Ah, that one huh. That was also dangerous for us wasn’t it.」

Even Hajime who was greatly worried by Myuu’s disposition to attract strange occurrences immediately returned to his senses and let out deeply emotional words. In the past he used Limit Break and Lightspeed to somehow slip through this, even so he couldn’t get away unharmed from this “ceiling drop”. In a manner of speaking, it was a last boss’s handbook all area attack.

「Eh? But unlike with our time, the way they fell is systematic isn’t it?」

「……Nn. Perhaps, without Miledy controlling it, they’re falling through the pattern that had been set beforehand.」

Just like Yue said, the ceiling blocks were only falling straight with their timing slightly off. So to speak, it was like high speed tetris. It seemed that it became something that could be slipped through somehow just barely.

Although, the lord had been wounded all over and past his limit from a long time ago. He desperately slipped through the heavy rain of ceiling blocks but his movement was lacking luster as expected. Finally he got hit by one block.

He raised a voice of anguish and his body was blown away. The lord fell toward the ground of the vast space. Just before he crashed on the ground, he somehow deployed a barrier in an instant and softened the impact. But, he vomited blood from the great damage.

While his expression turned despairing seeing the mercilessly falling blocks, he crawled and rolled on the ground, somehow shoving himself into the gaps between blocks and avoided becoming a stain on the ground.

Although, that was all. He was buried under the mountain of blocks and no matter how they looked it he had run out of option. He was also running out of strength too.

「……Oi oi. That guy, from here how did he……」

Hajime’s question was only normal. It was like the checkmate had been unspokenly declared from what they could see.

Then,

——Damn ittt……this is pathetic……

Kousuke’s mutter echoed. It was a small mutter that sounded hoarse and weak.

However, it was a voice that contained no resignation at all.

——But well, something to this degree……yeah

——If not, then dealing a wound on that guy……will just be a pipe dream

The automatic Miledy golem and the knight golems were surrounding him at midair. In the middle of that a disquieting presence was rising up from under the ceiling blocks restlessly.

——Because that guy……Nagumo……he didn’t give up a single thing

□……□

——He was against an opponent he was totally helpless against……against a god-……even so he fucking won-

□……□

——Then, even Iii-

Stir stir stir stir Something like a black mist was flowing out from between the gaps. It completely covered the ground in the blink of eye……

——Who the hell is going to give up at the end like this-, I’ll burn this soul until nothing remain-

Clone bodies were gradually rising from the black mist.

Naturally, Raisen’s degrading effect dispersed them.

Clone bodies were created again right after.

Disperse.

Appear.

Disperse, appear, further dispersion.

Disperse, appear, appear appear……

If it was dispersed then even more appeared! Appear appear appear disperse appear appear appear appear disperse appear appear appear appear appear appear appear appear appear disperse appear appear appear appear appear appear appear appear appear disperse——

The appearance rate of the clone bodies was suprassing Raisen’s magic power dispersion effect!

A sublime will was mastering the stunt of creating clone bodies from clone bodies at this eleventh hour, realizing multiplication at overwhelming speed!

Seeing that scene, seeing the friend who used his way of living as the support of his heart to rouse himself, Hajime was——

「Uwah, disgusting-」

Creeped out.

Next,

「Papaaa-, it’s scary nano~~」

Myuu hugged her papa with tearful eyes.

Because, it couldn’t be helped. They were crawling out rustlingly without end from the gaps of the blocks. The ground was completely covered with the stirring lords in the blink of eye.

That scene looked exactly like a great swarm of G (gokiburi?cockroach). It was the reappearance of nightmare in Haltina sea of trees.

「Hiih. No more of thaatt-」

「Shizuku-chan! Get a hold of yourself! That’s not G but Endou-kun!」

「Both of those things are the same!」

「I understand that you’re confused but-, Shizuku-san! As expected that’s too pitiful for him desuu!」

「Black thing, a lot, no!」

「Aa, Yaegashi-san is regressing into infant! Here-, soul magic!」

「Don’t return me to sanity! Ai-chan-sensei!」

「Shizuku, that’s pathetic. In our Yaegashi style, there is also ninjutsu――cough, acrobatics and torture――cough, questioning art that used cockroach.」

「Ojii-chan! Confess already that we’re ninja! I won’t be deceived at all!」

「I’ll teach it next time to Shizuku so you can conquer your weakness.」

「I’ll sever our parent and child relationship! Okaa-san!」

Shizuku recalled the gruesome pass of loving G at Haltina Great Labyrinth and slipped into small madness. But even during that time the abyss lord that had been truly awakened began his last battle.

Using the clone bodies as stepping stones, or sometimes throwing them, with the overwhelming quantity that continued to multiple endlessly he leaped toward Miledy golems and others.

The knight golems were wrestled by several dozen lords in a flash and taken down to the ground, or perhaps they were dragged into simultaneous self-destruction and got pulverized.

The clones plundered the shield or sword from those knight golems and shaved down the weapon of Miledy golem using wave attacks from all directions.

――Kuh, this black steel-, it’s too hard-

――There isn’t a scratch even with suicide bombing-

The azantium armor that protected the Miledy golem’s core. Although its power was reduced, it was a protective wall that blocked even Hajime’s railgun. The lord gritted his teeth before it. But, at the same time,

――Muh!? This is……so that’s how it is!

――Begone!

――I shall self-destruct! Glory to the abyss!

The piled up ceiling blocks were blown away. The ceiling blocks were pulverized with brute force using quantity of suicide bombing. Cutting across the cloud of dust, the clones carrying black sword or spear leaped up.

「That kind of thing huh……」

「……Nn? Hajime, what's the matter?」

Hajime showed a face of understanding. Yue tilted her head and asked him.

「No, it's the azantium chest armor protecting Miledy golem's core. It's practically impossible to destroy in a place where you can't use magic decently. It will be a checkmate if you can't brute force using magic with colossal magic power.」

「……Nn. Certainly.」

「Even though it's a place where you can't use magic, you can't clear it without using magic……as expected from Miledy! Dirty! You're dirty Miledy!」

「No, there was a relief measure after a fashion. You know, even my pile bunker, even if it has enough power it will be broken if it's only normal metal stake right? But mine was also manufactured from azantium.」

Right after that, the clone bodies hit Miledy golem's azantium armor dozens of times with the black swords or spears before it finally cracked. They were shaving off the armor bit by bit in order to widen the crack.

Kaori nodded in understanding.

「I see! The weapons that Endou-kun are holding are also made from azantium! The reward of enduring the rain of

ceiling blocks is obtaining those weapons from inside the blocks after destroying them!

It seems that originally it’s something like that.

That’s a lie! There is no way Miledy can have that kind of conscience!

Shia, you are really scathing toward Miledy huh. No, I understand your feeling though.

Even while making such conversation, the lord endlessly continued thrusting at Miledy golem exactly like hungry G swarming at just one food.

——We, still have this much strength!?

——This power that is welling up from inside……

——I see. This is, this is……the power of love-

That was just the special quality of abyss lord mode you know? That exposition was thoroughly explained from Kaori to all the parents.

Right after that, the clones finally succeeded in throwing the Miledy golem to the wall. The main body of the lord landed on the floating block right above it while holding a black spear. His last charge was fierce.

——Try to receive this-, o ancient protector! This is my abyss style final ultimate secret technique(Abyssgate Zero)————

He said such thing. No matter how much time passed boy would always love the cliché or chuuni……as though to proof that, not just Hajime and Shuu, even Tomoichi and others

were also going 「Oooh」 in excitement, and finally Kousuke E Abyssgate’s finishing attacK――

――BUURRRRRRRNIN○ LOOOOVE-!!!

Struck out. It was a normal thrust, but perhaps surely it was the final ultimate secret technique. Just to be clear, it reached Miledy’s core without fail.

Miledy golem turned limp, light was gone from its eyes, and it was crucified to the wall. Then the lord fell to the ground as though he had used up all of his energy and willpower and lied spread-eagled. Seeing that Hajime was――

「Was that a rip-off?」

「That was a rip off.」

「That was a rip off wasn’t it~」

Nagumo family was merciless. Certainly, it was like a certain fast battleship that was personified into human. Perhaps before long he would also speak 「YES! I will show you what Aby is made of!」.

「A, anyway he won! Endou-kun is amaziiing」

「Really. As expected from someone who is called “nonchalantly the mankind’s strongest” or “the demon king’s right arm”.」

When Kaori and Shizuku said that in order to repair the mood that was broken by the Nagumo family, words of praise were expressed as though they had just seen a great Hollywood movie.

「Yeah, really.」

Although he spoke few words, Hajime’s expression that formed a small smile expressed his praise more eloquently than anything.

「H~m, but is he really alright? Endou-kun, it feels like he really had spent everything he has……」

「He isn’t even twitching you know? Somehow it feels like he will die anytime now.」

The Hatayama mother-daughter worriedly looked at the lord on the ground.

――Hics hics hics hics, I did it, I did it me……I want to die……hics hics hics hics, with this I’m one step closer to Rana……I’m glad I came alone……hics hics hics hics…… what the hell did I mean by the inner me……why did I play two role by myself……I am me……ah, this way of speaking is also……shit-, my heart is invaded……I’m becoming not me……wait that’s why that’s not it, me! I cannot speak in that way! Ah, I’m talking to myself again! This is bad, really baad, even though the lord mode should have been dispelled my words are strangely fragrant like thiiss……

He couldn’t move from the damage, but, rather than the damage to his body, the damage to his heart was unbearable that the flood of tears couldn’t stop. The figure of Kousuke continuously muttering to himself could be seen there.

The impressed face of Hajime and co was overwritten with 「Uwaa」 to the expression of pity right away.

Although, it was the truth that the damage was serious, even the recovery medicine that he brought with him had been used up since a long time ago. If that was the case

then just how on earth Kousuke could advance forward from here and then returning back later?

While everyone was watching over him, that answer finally arrived.

One knight golem was regenerated and approached Kousuke with noisy footsteps.

Kousuke moved only his eyes to confirm that and his expression turned pale. He was extremely fatigued that he couldn’t even move a finger. He was truly in a hopeless situation. If he was attacked right now, he would be killed as easily as killing a baby.

But, that knight golem didn’t even unsheathe its sword and slowly kneeled beside Kousuke. Then at the next moment, it took a surprising action.

Shockingly, it took out a small jar filled with liquid from somewhere and gently placed it on Kousuke’s mouth. Due to that, Kousuke was healed to the degree that he could lift up his body.

It seemed, there was some healing bonus as the reward for clearing the great labyrinth.

Seeing that,

「Lies-, this is a lie-! There is no way that Miledy is someone this uprighttt!!」

「……Nn!? Shia, calm down! You forget your “desuu” desuu!」

「Yue too calm down! The end of your sentence got a “desuu” there!」

Shia was frenzied. Yue’s mind was in chaos that she snatched Shia’s end of a sentence. Hajime understood the two’s feeling and soothed them down.

That was just how shocking Miledy’s kind consideration was even now when they knew that she was a true protector who thought of the world. At the very least, it would be impossible for her to make him drank the potion like that. Even if she gave someone a recovery medicine, surely she would place it on a position that was just barely couldn’t be reached by the hand of someone who couldn’t move!

「That’s right desu! Surely, it was a paralyzing medicine or something that she dressed up as recovery medicine――」

「Ah, Endou-kun stood up! Looks like he recovered!」

「*I don’t want to admit iiit! I don’t want to aaadmit it!!*」

It seemed that Shia’s feeling toward Miledy was really strong whether for good or bad. Her rabbit ears and rabbit tail were shaking left and right wildly.

While everyone was soothing down Shia, a floating block came in front of Kousuke. It was the same with the one that Hajime and co rode. Kousuke’s step was unsteady but he somehow got on it and vanished into the deepest room.

Like that, around the time Shia somehow calmed down.

There was the sound of a lot of water flowing along with the scream 「Aa~~~~~~!!」 reaching their ears.

AN: Thank you very much for reading this every time.

Thank you very much too for the thoughts, opinions, and reports about misspelling and omitted words.

I could somehow update, but it is short because I wrote them hurriedly and in addition the story doesn’t progress, I’m sorry (sweat)

A part of me also want to do the travel journal slowly so please forgive me.

I hope that everyone can give me a little bit more time until the next update.

.

※Material

- BUURRRRRRRNIN○ LOOOOVE-

From Kongou-oneesama in Kancolle.

- Faceless god

From the god of Cthulhu Mythos. ※Not a certain girl who is hard to describe and fight using something like crowbar.

- *I don’t want to admit ittt*

From Gunda○’s Halo.